200

The title of this book is Flores Historiarum. This is the first edition (1567). It is dedicated to Archbishop Whitgift.

109-7
25

Theological Seminary,
PRINCETON, N. J.
Part of the
ADDISON ALEXANDER LIBRARY
which was presented by
MESSRS. R. L. AND A. STUART.

Case, Division P
Shelf, Section SCC
Book, No. 7775

✓

John Stow.

Annals of England

to 1603.

Authors out of whom theſe Annales are collected.

Abbe Floriacenſis.
Abraham Hartwell.
Abraham Ortelius.
Adam Bremenſis.
Adam Merymouth.
Aethicus.
Alfridus Beuerlacenſis.
Alfridus Riuallenſis.
Andreas Theuit.
Alexander Neckham.
Alexander Eueſham.
Amianus Marcellinus.
Antonius Archiepiſcopus.
Antiquitates Britan. eccleſ.
Antiquitates Glaſconiæ.
Antiquitates Calen. de Briſtow.
Antiquitates S. Pauli London.
Annales de Hide.
Annales Elienſes.
Annales de Aquitania.
Andrew borde.
Anthony Aſcham.
Anthony Anthonie.
Arnolds Chronicle.
Arbor Succeſſorum.
Aſſerius Meneuenſis.
Aurea Hiſtoria.
Baptiſta Platina.
Beda de geſtis Anglorum.
Blondus.
Brute Booke.
Canterburie Records.
Carodacus Lancauarnenſis.
Cæſars Commentaries.
Capitolinus.
Carta Regia.
Chronica de Dorobernia.
Chronica Chronicorum.
Chronica de Burgo S. Petri.
Chronica de Dunſtable.
Chronica de Wigmore.
Chronica de Bury.
Chronica de Dunmow.
Chronica de Eaton.
Chronica de Tewkesbury.
Chronica Glaſconiæ.
Chronica de Eoueſham.
Chronica de Tintern.
Chronica de Tinmouth.
Chronica Petri Colleg.
Chronica Briſtow.
Chronica Croxton.
Chronica de Colcheſter.
Chroniques de Normandie.
Chroniques de Britaine.
Chronica Colleg. Reginæ Oxon.
Chronica de Hautehprice.
Chronica de Holland.
Chronica de Bromholme.
Chronica S. Albani.
Conradus Mendenbar.
Cornelius Tacitus.
Cornelius Martin.
Conſtitutiones de London.
Dion Caſſius.
Doroſthus.
Edmond Haddenham.
Edmond Hamden.
Edmerus Doroberneñſis.
Engueranᵗ.
Encomium Emmæ.
Epiſtola Bonifacij.
Euſebius.
Eutropius.
Eulogium.
Eneas Siluius.
Eraſmus Roterodam.
Edward Hall.
Edmond Campion.
Frculphus.
Fortunatus Priſca.
Floriacenſis Wigornenſis, and
Flores Hiſtoriarum, I haue cauſed to be Printed.
Flaccus Albinus.
French Pamphlet.
Francis Guicciardine.
Galfridus Monemutenſis.
Galfridus Vinſalfe.
Geſperus Varerius.
Gerualius Doroberneñſis.
Gertuaſius de Mappa mundi.
Gertuaſius Tilberienſis.
Geſta Abbatis Albani.
Gildas Sapiens.
Giraldus Cambrenſis.
Giraldus Cornubienſis.
Guilielmus Malmesburienſis.
Guilielmus Nouoburgenſis.
Guilielmus Thorne.
Gualterus Couentrienſis.
Guilielmus Riſhanger.
Guilielmus Biholt.
Guilielmus Lambart.
Guilielmus Camden.
Gualterus Swinbroke.
Gualterus Hemingford.
Guilielmus Gemiticenſis.
Guilielmus Tailor.
Guilielmus Paſton.
Guilielmus Shepeſhed.
Gualterus Baker.
Guilielmus Dunthorne.
Georgius Lilius.
Georgius Cauandiſh.
Guilielmus Packington.
Geffrey Chaucer.
Gocelini Moni Bertin.
George Maior.
Guilielmus de Wilton.
Gualterus Haddon.
Herodian.
Henricus Huntingdonenſis.
Henricus Kniton Leceſtrenſis.
Henricus Blandford.
Hector Boetius.
Hiſtorie of Lois duke of Orlianee.
Hugo de Peterborow.
Humffrey Lhuid.
Henry Bradſhaw.
Henry Archer.
Iacobus Bergomas.
Iacobus Laſſabeus.
Ingulphus.
Iohannes Salisburienſis.
Iohannes Hanuile.
Ioſephus.
Iohannes de Vigney.
John le Taylour.
Iohannes Beuer.
Iohannes Rowland.
Iohannes Mandeuile.
Iuſtine.
Iohannes Rouſe.
Iohannes Maior.
Iohannes Bale.
Iohannes Fordon.
Iohannes Capgraue.
Iocelinus de Brakeland.
Iocelinus Furnenſis.
Iohannes Leilandus.
Iohannes Leoaffer.
Iohannes Taxtor.
Iohannes Pike.
Iohannes Beuerlacenſis.
Iohannes Euerſden.
Iohannes Blackman.
Iohannes Truklow.
Iohannes Lewenclaij.
Iohannes Pringeon.
Iohannes Brompton.
John Currar.
John Vowell.
Iohannes Frumentarius alias *Wheathamſted.*
John of London.
Iohannes Gower.
Iohannes Belandus.
John Froſart.
John Audley.
Iohannes Forteſcu.
John Reiſtall.
John Skelton.
John Caius.
Inſcriptiones Glocest.
John Lidgate.
John Harding.
Lampridius.
Leges Edwardi Regis.
Liber conſtitut. London.
Liber Kenilham.
Liber Dunalmenſis.
Liber Norwicenſis.
Liber Tutsberienſis.
Liber S. Martini magni.
Liber Lanthoni.
Liber Cane in Normandie.
Liber Roffenſis.
Liber Trinitatis London.

Liber

Liber Colne.
Liber Mona. Ely.
Liber Bermondsey.
Liber pont. London.
Liber Glocestrensis.
Liber Warwicensis.
Liber S. Mariæ de Southwarke.
Liber Kenelworth.
Liber Bernwel.
Liber Eborum.
Liber Richmount.
Liber S. Barthol. Smithfield.
Liber Collegij S. Petri.
Liber Edendon.
Liber Eastminster.
Liber Maior. & Vic. London.
Liber Ewelme.
Liber Lichfield.
Lilius Giraldus.
Liber Theokesbury.
Lodouicus Viues.
Marianus Scotus.
Martinus Polonus.
Matthæus Paris, I haue caused to be Printed.
Matthæus Westmonasterensis.
Matthæus Parkerus.
Marlin.
Melkin.
Monument in Colchester.
Nennius.
Nicephorus.
Nicholas Treuitus.
Nicholas Vpton.
Nicholas Perotus.
Nicholas Bromfield.
Nicholas Bubwich.
Old Records.
Oracula Sibil.
Orosius.
Osbernus de Clave.
Parliament Records.
Pausanias.
Panegyricus Constantio dictus.
Paulus Orosius.
Paulus Diaconus.
Paulus Aemilius.
Paulus Iouius.
Petrus de Ikham.
Petrus Ramus.
Petrus Pictauensis.
Peter Balthazar.
Perco de Longtoft.
Philippus Comineus.
Pliny.
Policraticon.
Ponticus Virunnius.
Polidorus Virgilius.
Petructio Vbaldino.
Quadrilogium.
Radulphus de Diceto.
Radulphus Niger.
Radulphus Baldoke.
Radulphus Cogshall.
Ranulphus Higden.
Record. ecclesiæ de Assaphe.
Registrum nouæ Mona.
Registrum fratrum minorum.
Registrum monast. de Hide.
Registrum de Woodbridge.
Registrum de ponte Rosensi.
Registrum de Clerkenwell.
Registrum monast. de Burie.
Registrum monast. S. Albani.
Record. ecclesiæ Christi Cantuar.
Registrum monast. Cantuarien.
Registrum fratrum Carmelitarum.
Registrum Maiorum London.
Registrum monast. de Batail.
Registrum de Garter.
Richardus Cirencestrensis.
Richardus Southwel.
Richardus Diuisensis.
Richardus Canonicus.
Rogerus Houeden.
Records of Donmow.
Roger de Windouer.
Richard Hakluit.
Roger Wall.
Radulphus Volateranus.
Robert Iueleafe.
Robertus Gaguin.
Robertus Glocestrensis.
Robertus de Auesburie.
Reinwels Testament.
Robertus de Brune.
Robert Fabian.
Robert Greene.
Richard Turpin.
Scala Temporum.
Scala Mundi.
Speculum Historiale.
Sebastian Munster.
Sigebertus Gimblacensis.
Scala Chronicon.
Simon Dunelmensis.
Solinus.
Suetonius.
Smart Falconer.
Spartianus.
Sulcardus.
Strabo.
Sozomenus.
Socrates.
Theodoretus.
Titus Liuius.
Thomas Castleford.
Thomas Clifford.
Thomas Sprote.
Thomas de Wikes.
Thomas Walsingham, I haue caused to be Printed.
Thomas Rudburne.
Thomas Delamere.
Thomas Yale.
Thomas Elmham.
Thomas Eliot.
Tertullian.
Thomas Smith.
Thomas Wall heralt.
Thomas Hocliue.
Thomas Moore.
Thomas Lanquet.
Thomas Cooper.
Thomas Churchyard.
Thomas Fenner.
Vita Berini.
Vita Aldelmi.
Vita Erkenwaldi.
Vigetius.
Vita Albani.
Vita Edwardi.
Vita Guilielmi Longocamp.
Vopiscus.
Vox Clamantis.
W. Paruus.
Wolfangus Lazius.
William Norwell.
William Caxton.
William Beare.
William Patten.
William Segar.
Ypodigma Neustriæ.
Zozimus.

A Table of the principall matters contained in these Annales.

A

Archflames. 18
Alban martyred. 45. Albans builded. 89
Albans towne spoyled by *Fulcatius*. 264. by the barons. 265
Ailesford. 56. 118
Andredsleage. 58
Arthur. 58. his table. 60
Austin in England. 65. threatneth the Britains. 66. deceased. 67
Andrewes in Rochester founded. 65. Rochester besieged. 103. Castle builded. 103
Atilbrough. 76
Adultry punished. 86
Articles for the Church. 88
Abbeies spoyled. 100
Andreds walde. 103
Apuldore. 104
Alfride king. 101
Athden. 118. 120
Abbot of S. Albons his pollicie against D.W. 134
Ancient lawes of England remaine in kent. 137
Ancient Charters. 144
Abbey of S. Albons new builded. 157
Abbot of Glastenbury murthered his monkes. 161
Abbot of S. Augustine some time a souldier. 183
Abbey of Chester. 185
Anselme Archbishop of Canterbury. 185. deceased. 194
Anglese-Ave an Isle. 186
Archbishop of Yorke with his crosse cast out. 202
Adrian Pope an Englishman his epistle to H. the 2. 211
Arthur Duke of Britaine taken & murthered in prison. 247
Albert de Vere Earle of Oxford. 248
Army into Wales. 251
Apostata circumcised. 268
Abbot of Westminster put to his shifts. 269
Archbishop of Canterbury visiteth Saint Bartholmewes in Smithfield. 286
Augustine friers. 286
Abbey of Hailes. 287
Alexander king of Scots came into England 290
Allaine de la Zouch slaine 303
Arthurs bones remooued. 306
Aucland Colledge. 331
Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford. 346
Abbey of Bury spoyled. 351
Alice Pierce. 437. banished. 444
Arondall a knight drowned. 448
Aldermen knighted. 463
Archbishop of Yorke fled the Realme. 485
Armes of E. the confessor. 4. Martilets. 501
Archbishop of Canterbury banished. 513
Alexander Poole slaine. 607
Against defacers of Monuments. 615
Adam Mollens Bishop of Chichester murthered. 638
Alexander Eden sheriffe of Kent. 647
Articles betwixt king *Henry* the sixt, and *Richard* Duke of Yorke. 679
Aldermen of London knighted. 706
Archbishop of Yorke spoyled and sent to prison. 708
Alcocke Bishop of Ely. 806
Allome deare. 811
Archers sent against the Moores, and to aide the Dutchesse of Sauoy. 818
Andrew Barton a Scottish pyrate. 820
Army into Biscay against the French. 821
Augustine doctor of physicke. 937
Abbeies visited. 963. small houses suppressed. 964
Articles of Religion deuised by the king. 965
Abbot of Whaly and other executed. 968. 973
Abbeies suppressed. 970
Anabaptists bare fagots and were brent. 971 brent. 974
Abbey of S. Albons surrendred. 973
Army into France. 988
Anne Askew and other brent. 997
Admirall of France came to London. 997
Arden murthered. 1020
An Arian brent. 1021
Ambassadours to Rome. 1059. to Calcis. 1060
Abbot of Westminster. 1063
Ambassador from Rousia and Muscouia. 1064
Ambassadours from Swethen. 1083
Aide giuen to the Scots against the French. 1085
Ambrose Earle of Warwike landed at Newhauen. 1022. deceased. 1263
Ambassadours from Muscouie. 1123
Anne Sanders, *Anne Drewry* hanged. 1143
Aide into Scotland against the castle of Edenbrough. 1143 yeelded to the English. 1145
Agnes Bridges, and *Rachell Pindar* counterfeited to be possessed. 1148
Anabaptists Dutch men. 1149. banished, brent. 1151
Ambassadour into Denmarke. 1170
Albertus Alasco. 1174. 1175
Ambassadour from the king of Denmarke. 1203
Almes houses founded by the Merchant taylers. 1271
Ambassador from Poland. 1299
Ambassador from Denmarke. 1300
Ambassadors into France. 1302

B

BRitaine described page 1. named England. 99
Bridge at London. 2
Bishops in Wales. 7
Bishops in England. 1
Brute. 11. his line extinguished. 16
Bambrough. 13
Bathe or Bathes. 15. Bathon hill. 59
Banner downe. 60
Bangor. 15. Monastery. 66
Bloud rained. 15
Brother traytor to brother. 13. 16
Belinus. 16. Gate. 18
Brennus. 16. 17
Britaines barbarous. 22. Warriours. 27. slaine, their state. 57. wasted. 63
Britaine house in Holland. 24
Bishops of London. 37. reproue the King.
Britaines placed in France. 47. 49
Blibrough. 73
Barking. 79
Boniface to *Ethelbald*. 85
Bensington. 95
Bloud rained. 98

Battails at Assindowne. 101. at Chipinham. 100. against the Welch men. 107
Battaile at Lewes, 296. at Euesham, 298. at Fankirke in Scotland. 318. at Chesterfield, 300. at Striuelen, 333 at Halidowne hill, 359 on the sea, 391. at Poyters, 408. on the sea 426. at Cressy, and of Durham, 380. at Halidowne hill. 531. at Shrewsbery, 532. at Otarborne, 482. at Vernome in Perche, 598 at S Albons the first 660. the 2, 686. at Wakefield, 654. at Mortimers crosse, 685
Battaile at Northampton, 678. at Chepam, 693. at Theoxbury. 704
Beaufleete. 104
Brimsbery. 107
Burton vpon Trent. 115
Bishop of Durham slaine. 158
Bishops and Abbots charged with keeping of soldiers. 163
Bermondsey in Southwarke. 160
Battaile Abbey. 165
Bishop of Durham the kings Chancelor in great danger of death. 187. 188
Bloud the likenesse thereof in a spring. 189
Bishopricks solde for money. 195
Bridges ouer the riuer Lee at Stratford. 197
Bedford besieged. 207
Boxley in Kent. 211
Becket Thomas Chancelor, 216. archbishop of Canterbury, 220. fled the Realme, 221. restored, and slaine. 223
Barnards castle. 224. 260
Blacke booke of the Exchequer. 225
Bread allowed for 100. men, xij. pence. 226
Beuerley brent. 231
Bones of *Arthur* found. 235
Baynards castle throwne downe. 254
Barons of England sworne to *Pandolph* the Legate, 255. require the charter of liberties, 257. excommunicated, 258. sent for *Lodowicke*. 259
Barons ouerthrowne at Lincolne. the City spoyled. 265. they tooke their voyage to Ierusalem. 266
Benevolence to H the third. 268
Bedford castle besieged. 271
Barons threat H. the third. 273. 276
Butlers at coronation. 278
Base coine. 284
Bygot Earle of Norffolke. 284
Barons in armour. 253. 339
Boeland Abbey. 305
Blacke friers. 305
Bridges borne downe. 308
Boston burned. 311
Breach at Ratherhithe. 316
Bewmarish Castle. 316
Bartram nephew to *Gaueston*. 332
Bruse beheaded. 337
Barwike betraied, 338. Barwike taken by the Scots, 404. and againe by the English, 401. by the Scots, 448. lost and woone againe, 477. Scottes besieged Barwike and Rocksborow. 580
Bikenings set vp. 345
Baibole resigned the crowne of Scotlande to *Edwarde* the third. 358
Barbican at London. 363
Blacke Prince his oration, 409. returning with his prisoners, 415 prince of Aquitaine, 418. deceased. 429
Beards of Englishmen shauen. 415
Beuchampe buried in Paules. 416
Bastard brother disheriteth the lawfull brother and murthereth him. 421
Burley belonging to the B. of Norwich. 464
Bull against the Cleargy for their temporalities. 479
Barly solde for xij d. the quarter. 482
Blanke Charters, 515. burned. 526
Bush Bagot and Greene. 509
Blewbeard hanged. 638
Burdeaux yeelded to the English. 654
Bloreheath field. 671
Banbery field. 700
Barnet field. 703
Banarets made. 706
Bowrnes brast out. 707
Banister betraied his master, the duke of Buckingham, which duke was beheaded. 779
Beacons set vp and watched. 801
Blackheath field 802
Brighthamsted in Sussex brent by the French. 831
Banquetting house prepared in Caleis defaced, the canuas heauen blowne away. 857
Broad seale of England left at Caleis. 898
Bread scarce at London. 904
Boners head broken. 936
Birth of Lady Elizabeth. 957
Bishops preach against the pope. 961
Bible in English in euery parish church. 970
Blocke houses builded. 972
Base moneies coyned. 988
Benevolence demanded. 990
Boleigne yeelded to the French. 1019
Booke of Common praier. 1027
Bridewell giuen to the citie of London. 1038
Bishops restored. 1036
Barge of Grauesend ouerturned. 1043
Beefe and mutton sold by waight. 957
Blazing starre. 1062
Bishops depriued. 1082
Burse in Cornhill builded. 1117
Bull from Rome hanged on the B. of Londons gate. 1129
Banquetting house at Westminster. 1166
Bay salt vi s. the bushell. 1049
Beare garden fall of a scaffold killed eight persons. 1173
Bren Oroioke of Ireland, 1267. executed. 1269
Bridges at Cambridge, at Ware almost borne down. 1278

C

COunties or shires. 1
Cornwall. 8
Canterbury. 14
Chesse a game. 16
Cesar Iulius. 21. 22
Christians in Britaine, 34. persecuted. 36
Chestar. 35. 107
Colchester. 35. 106
Churches ouerthrowne. 44
Constantine first christened Emperor. 46
Councell at Nice. 47
Constantinople. 47
Craford. 56
Cileester. 59
Camelot castle. 60.
Chertsey. 79
Credo and Pater noster in English. 88
Crowland. 88

Cups of brasse. 91
Cerdike shore. 94
Cirenceſter. 95.103
Church yardes. 98
Chastity preferred. 101
Cleargy slaine in praier. 118
Combat for the kingdome. 118
Combat at Reading. 221
Chalenge of combat by *Turnbull*. 389
Combat before king *Edward* the third, 392. at Weſtminſter, 448. 477 at Yorke. 527
Combat fought in Smithfield. 609
Combat in Smithfield, 630. 635. at Shine. 795
Combat appointed at Weſtminſter. 1132
Canute the Dane, 118. king of foure kingdomes. 119
Clements church without temple barre. 121
Caſtles at Nottingham and Yorke, 143 at Wisbech, 148. at Leedes in Kent, 150. at Oxford, 150. at Durham. 150 at Northampton. 155. at Rocheſter, 157. New caſtle vpon Tine, 160. Tuttbery, 160. at Stortford, 166. at Grantbridge. 184
Colledge S. Martin in London. 165
Creeples gate of London. 165
Councell at Salisbury. 185
Carliele Citie and caſtle. 185
Colcheſter S. Iohns a monaſtery. 193
Conſpiracie againſt king W. 193
Conſpiracie againſt king *Henry* the fourth, 530 againſt king H. the fourth by the archbiſhop of Yorke, 539. diſcouered, 564. againſt king H. the 5. 56
Conſpiracie at Abingdon, 610. at Couentry. 876
Caſtles at Briſtow and Cardiffe. 195
Chicheſter brent. 196.231.
Circeſter Abbey founded. 197
Cardinal inuayeng againſt prieſts concubines, was detected of whordome. 201
Carliele a Biſhopricke. 204
Creede in Engliſh. 219
Canterbury brent. 224
Caſtles raſed by H. the ſecond. 225
Caſtle at Ongar in Eſſex. 227
Cadwalen Prince of Wales trayterouſly ſlaine. 228
Crux Roiſia, or Roiſton, 236. hoſpitall there. 250
Colledge at Lambheath. 242
Corne deere. 248
Colcheſter beſieged. 259
Croxton abbey. 262
Councels at Oxford and Cambridge. 264.268
Caſtles yeelded to Lewes. 264
Caſtles at Chartley and Beeſtone builded. 268
Chriſt counterfeit. 268
Conſtantine with other hanged. 269
Carucage granted. 271.278
Charter of liberties confirmed, 271. cancelled. 272
Conuerts an houſe in Chancelor lane. 276
Couetous archbiſhop of Yorke. 277
Corne full of vermin. 277
County of Cheſter came to the king. 279
Cambridge ſchollers burne houſes. 286
Caſtle at Kingſtone and at Townebridge taken. 296
Caſtle of flint. 305
Carliele burned. 312
Charing Croſſe and other. 313
Canon law taught in Cambridge. 317
Children eaten, and theeues in priſon deuoured. 336
Cardinals robbed in England. 336
Caſtles fortified. 345
Commons of Bery executed, their towne amerced. 353
Chalenge of combat by *Turnebull*. 359
Copland tooke the king of Scots. 381
Commodities of peace. 384
Caleis woon 380 like to haue been loſt. 387
Charter houſe by London. 385
Cow fat for xvi d. 393
Corne brought from Ireland. 398
Carcaſon in France brent. 404
Cobham colledge. 419
Councell againſt *Iohn* of Gaunt. 433.435
Chaucer ſent into France. 437
Commiſsions into Eſſex. *T. de Brampton.* 451
Commons of Eſſex ſpoile the archbiſhops houſe at Lambheath, and brent the mannor of Highbery. Ibid.
Commons of Eſſex aſſembled at Billrica. 467
Cuſtome of Wales. 472
Chiefe Iuſtice taken and executed. 487
Crueltie of Scots. 489
Colledge and hoſpitall at Pontfract. 543
Colledge of Fodringay. 551
Cardinall of Wincheſter. 605
Cow for xii.d. a ſheepe for one peny. 616
Caleis beſieged. 617
Colledge at Tatſhall. 618
Commotion at Norwich. 630
Colledge and hoſpitall at Higham. 630
Cane deliuered to the French. 637
Colledge at Wye in Kent. 657
Coine enhaunſed. 695
Church robbers hanged, burned and preſſed to death. 717
Crosby place. 744
Colingborne making a libell, was executed. 780
Citie of Granado woon from the Moores. 795
Commotion in Cornwall 801
Colledge at Rotherham. 806
Cupbord of plate. 809
Chappell of H. the ſeuenth at Weſtminſter, 810. his Sepulchre. 814
Coine altered. 811
Cap of maintenance ſent to H. the ſeuenth. 811
Cap of maintenance to H. the eight. 831
Charles Brandon duke of Suffolke married lady *Mary* ſiſter to *Henry* the eight. 834
Charles the fift Emperor came to London. 868
Court to heare complaints of the poore erected. 847
Cardinall *Campagius* came into England. 852
Charles the fift Emperor came into England. 855
Charles duke of Suffolke entered France with a power. 874
Charles D. of Burbon reuoulted from the French king. 875
Cardinall *Campagius* came to London. 908
Cardinall *Wolſey* departed from Yorke place. 919
Cardinall *Wolſey* at Putneth. 920
Cardinall indighted in præmunire. 926
Colet deane of Paules. 933
Cardinall *Wolſey* ſickeneth, 988. dieth. 940
Cleargie condemned in præmunire. 942
Concluſions againſt the kings marriage. 942
Cooke boyled in Smithfield. 942
Coiners and clippers executed. 943
Chriſts church priory ſuppreſſed. 944
Croſſe in Cheape new guilded. 950
Ghauntries their names taken. 963
Counteſſe of Salisbury beheaded. 978
Curſe from Rome. 959
Charterhouſe monkes executed. 962. 963
Commotion in Lincolnſhire appeaſed. 966

Commotion in Yorke shire. 966 of the rebels there. 967. 968 978
Chantries, colledges, hospitals giuen to H. the eight. 992
Commotion in Somerset shire and Lincolne shire, Cornwall and Deuon, also at Norwich. 1005
Commotion in Yorke shire, rebels executed. 1006
Church plate and iewels called into the kings hands. 1029
Coines new. 1041
Cardinall *Poole*. 1043
Conspiracie against Queene *Mary*. 1044
Commotion in Kent by sir *T. Wyat*. 1044. *Wyat* strengthened with the queens ordinance. 1045. came into Southwark. 1046. went out of Southwark. 1047. into S. Iames field. 1049. taken, beheaded. 1050
Cat hanged in Cheape. 1054
Cardinal *Poole* came into England. 1057. archbishop. 1062
Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury brent. 1062
Conspiracie to haue robbed the Exchequer. 1062
Charles lord Sturton executed. 1067
Conspiracie in Norffolke. 1063
Calcis besieged, and taken by the French. 1069
Corne and wood deare. 1073
Conference appointed. 1077
Church seruice in the English toong. 1082
Citizens of London mustred at Greenwich. 1082
Commissioners appointed. 1082
Church Images burned. 1082
Churches in London smitten by tempest. 1083
Coines of siluer moneies. 1094. 1096
Captaine *Randall* knight marshall of New hauen his pitifulnesse. 1111
Charles Lames crowned king of Scots. 1119
Cardinall *Castilian* came into England. 1122
Conspiracie in Norffolke. 1129
Cassimere receiued. 1159
Crosse in Cheape defaced. 1167
Carter executed. 1176
Charles L. Howard, L. Chamberlaine, L. admirall. 1186
County *Holocke* shot into the mouth. 1237
Christopher Hatton L. Chancelor. 1241
Campe at Tilbery in Essex. 1244. Queene *Elizabeth* went to the campe. 1259
Copinger and other preached in Cheape. 1264
Commissions for inquisition to be made. 1267
Coyners executed. 1280
Charles Howard created earle of Nottingham. 1301
Calcis returned French. 1302
Corne of great price. 1279
Charles Blunt L. Mountioy towards Ireland lieutenant. 1305

D

DVnbretaine. 13
Douer. 61. spoyled. 317
Dorchester. 95
Danes arriued. 98. spoyled London. 99. east England. 115. their tyranny. 116. inuade England. 146
Drunkards condemned. 113
Durham a Bishops sea. 114
Dane gilt. 122. discharged. 124
Danes inuade England, and are compounded with. 146. made claime to the crowne of England. 147. inuade England. 156. 163
Domes day booke. 159
Diuels appeared to men. 189
Dunstable towne and priorie. 193
Ditch about London. 235
Dunstable spoyled by the Barons. 265
Delacresse Abbey. 268
Darkenesse in Paules church. 274
Dauid of Wales rebelled. 307
Draw the staffe. 321
Dogs flesh good meate. 335
Dagworth knight. 387
Dissension at Oxford. 399. townesmen indighted. 400
Dearth of corne. 423. 622
Discord in Paules church. 432
Dissension at Oxford. 485. 490
Dearth of corne here, relieued from beyond the seas. 491
Dolphin of the sea came to London bridge. 492
Dukes created. 513. 604
Dukes of Surrey and Excester executed. 526
Duke of Gloucester condemned after he was dead. 512
Dertmouth inuaded by the French. 535
Duke of Burgondy enamoured on the Countesse of Salisburie. 599
Duke of Gloucester goeth into Holland, chalengeth the combat. 601. married *Elianor Cobham*. 602. fell at debate with the Bishop of Winchester. 603
Doctor *Lunwode*. 672
Disgrading of a knight *Ralph Grey*. 693
Duke of Somerset and other beheaded. 694
D. Godard preached at Paules crosse against K. *Edward*. 701
Doctor *Shawes* sermon at Paules. 757
Duke of Buckinghams oration. 758
Drie sommer. 804
Duke of Buckingham his gowne. 808
Dudley arraigned. 816. executed. 818
Dearth and death in England. 865
Disgrading of a knight of the Garter. 863
Duke of Burbon champion for *Henry* the eight. 877
Duke of Suffolke his speech to the Cardinals. 918
D. of Norffolke to the Cardinal. 927. his bitter words. 931
D. of Bauier and Palsegraue of Rhine came into Engl. 973
Drie sommer. 977
Damport and *Champman* of the kings gard hanged. 978
Duke of Norffolke entred Scotland. 981
Daunee and Cloyster of Paules pulled downe. 1004
D. of Somerset sent to the tower. 1022. condemned. 1023. beheaded. 1024
Dagger throwne at the preacher. 1037
Duke of Northumberland arrested. 1034 arraigned. 1037 beheaded. 1038
Disputation at Oxford. 1054
Daniell and *Peckham* executed. 1063
D. of Norffolke sent to the tower 1134. arraigned. 1135. beheaded. 1138
Dearth without scarcitie. 1147
Declaration sent by queen *Elix.* to the king of Spaine. 1155
Deepe snowes, and great flouds. 1160
Desmons head set on London bridge. 1176
Deputies for the states of the low Countries. 1184
Desmond in Ireland peopled by the English. 1201
Disordered souldiers hanged. 1264
Disordered youthes punished. 1279
Declaration of causes why a Nauy was sent to sea. 1282
Duke of Boloigne came into England. 1290

E

EDenbourgh. 13
Eluetherius his Epistle. 36
Ethelbert first Saxon baptized. 65

East Angles. 72
Edmond the king martyred. 76
East Saxons. 76
Eouesham. 85
Egelsburge. 95
Egresha n. 95
Edburge poysoned her husband. 98
English Schoole at Rome. 99
Excester. 102. a bishops sea. 114. 124 besieged 143 207
Ethelingey. 103
Egbrights stone. 103
Edesbery. 107
Edwine depriued of his kingdome. 108
Edgar crowned at Bath. 109 his oration. 110. state of the church in his t me. 113. Wolues destroyed. 109. Kings eight rowed *Edgare*. 113
Edrike of Straton. 115. 117. 118. 119
Edmondsbery. 120 brent. 257
Edward Confessor. 122. healed the kings euill. 128. he sawe the diuell daunce. 125
English men giuen to drinking, and not to prayer. 131
Edwine and *Mercare* against king *William*. 148
Eies of men put out. 152. 154
Earthquake. 160. 204. 221. 284. 285. 179 303
Ely made a Bishops sea 195. besieged. 258 288
Earle of Glouceſter *Robert*. 195
Earthquake. 197 199. 217
Eaton Nuns. 222
English men transported into Ireland. 223
Exchequer at Northampton. 290
Exchequer and kings bench at Yorke. 321
Exchequer at Yorke. 339
Earle marshall W. died. 267 275
English Iewes. 287
Elephant sent into England. 289
Edward the first crowned. 304 went into Wales. 308. lay in the castle at Grantbridge. 315. entred Wales. 316. woon Berwike. 317. died. 327
Edward Carnaruan prince of Wales. 310
Edward the second. 327 crowned. 328. against his Barons. 329. hee sendeth for *Gauestone*. 330 his wife and eldest son into France. 344. the king flieth. 246. resigneth the crowne 348. his misery, crowned with hay, shauen with cold water 350 murthered. 352
Eltham mannor in Kent. 332
Earle *Waren* excommunicate. 336
Earle harueſt cheape corne. 337
Earle of Carliele 341. degraded and executed. 342
Ely an Ile commended. 341
Edward the third crowned. 353. his title to France. 354. hee woone Barwike. 359. entered Scotland. 360. founded kings hall in Cambridge. 365. made Vicegerent of the empire, inuaded France. 367. entered Scotland. 372. sayled into Normandy. 377
Elsing spittle. 359
Eastminster founded. 439
Earthquake. 472. 604
Earle of Arundale arraigned in the Parliament. 511. beheaded. 512
Earle of Warwike arraigned. 513
Emperor of Constantinople came into England. 529
Earle of Cambridge indighted. 565
England made one of the fiue nations. 575
Earle of Arondale wounded in France. 615
Eleanor Cobham 627. did penance. 628
Edmond duke of Somerset sent to the Tower. 657. Captaine of Caleis. 658. fled to Guines. 673
Edward the fourth elected king in S. Iones field, tooke on him the kingdome. 688. 689. crowned. 690 sate in the kings bench 691. his iourney into Scotland. 691. taken prisoner, he pardoneth and beheadeth. 701. fled beyond seas 702 landed at Rauenſporne. 703. pardoned many and cut off their heads. 704. his passing into France. 709. banquered the Maior of London and Aldermen. 720. deceased 721
Edward Mountacute Earle of Northumberland made marqueſſe Mountacute. 694
Earle of Warwike his house keeping. 700
Edward the fift. 722
Earle of Northumberland slaine. 794
Excester besieged. 803
Edward Plantagenet beheaded. 805
Edmond de la Poole Earle of Suffolke and his brother fled into Flanders. 807
Edmond de la Poole earle of Suffolke sent to the Tower. 811
Emſon and *Dudley* sent to the Tower. 815
Emſon arraigned and attainted 817. executed. 118
Edward Howard lord admirall drowned. 813
Edmond de la Poole beheaded. 823
Euill May day at London. 849. three Queenes obtayned pardon for the Londoners. 851
Edward duke of Buckingham beheaded. 863
Example of pride and arrogancie 941
Earles of Eſſex and Oxford deceased. 973
Earle of Kildare and fiue of his Vncles executed. 968
Edmond Knuuet knight arraigned for striking a man in the court. 978
Edenbrough brent. 987
Earle of Hertford sent into Scotland. 992
English men put to flight by the Reingrate. 995
Edward the sixt. 999. crowned. 1000. deceased. 1029
Earthquake 1021
Edward Courtney created earle of Deuon, sent to Fodering-hay. 1056. 1041
Earles of Northumberland & Weſtmerland rebelled. 1123
rebels rent the Bible. 1124. proclaimed traytors. 1124
Earth mouing. 1131
Earle of Lincolne Embaſſador into France. 1137
Earle of Northumberland beheaded. 1139
English men sent to Vlstar in Ireland. 1139
Earle of Darby *Edward* deceaſed. 1140
Earthquake. 1149. 1163. in Dorcetshire. 1173
Example of sorcerie. 1159
Edmond Campion Ieſuit and other executed. 1169
Edmond Grindall Archbishop of Canterbury. 1174
Earle of Northumb. found to haue murthred himselfe. 1182
Earle of Shrewsbery *Gilbert*, embaſſador into France. 1290

F

F*Elix* Bishop of Dunwitch. Stow. 72. 73
Fulnham. 103
Fernham. 104
Flux of men. 114
Fier and light forbidden to the Engliſh. 137
Froſt great. 156
Foreſt new, in Hampshire. 161. 165
Famine and death of men. 165
Fire and light restored to the Engliſh. 190
Flemings sent into Wales. 194
Flemings voided England. 216
Fish like to a man. 239
False accuſer of his elder brother hanged. 240

Froſt great. 248.277.302
Feete and hands of men cut off. 269
Friers minors arriued here. 271
Fifteenth of all mens goods to the king. 271
Fiſhes monſtrous. 280
Friers of the ſacke. 315.321
Friers Carmelites in Oxford. 334
Fight on the ſea with the French. 369
Florens of golde coyned. 373
Feaſt of S. *George* at Windſor. 890
Founders of the Garter. 391
French king priſoner in England releaſed. 417. died in England. 419
Froſt great 8. moneths. 419
Fobbing, Curringham and Samford in Eſſex aſſembled. 451
Flemmings beheaded. 459
Frier tormented to death. 475
Frier in ſtrange forme appeared. 484
Fable reproued. 494
French king in danger to be breut by his trayterous brother. 495
Frier ſtout, the diuell appeared in likeneſſe of a frier. 530
Fifteenes granted to the king. 537
Fray in S. Dunſtans church. 575
Foway brent. 665
Flemiſh merchants with their wares baniſhed England. 798
Falſe accuſers committed to priſon. 816
Flodon field. 826
French king taken priſoner. 878
French Craier chaſed to the Tower. 908
Frier forreſt brent. 969
Fier in Roode lane. 969
Frith brent. 962
Frier houſes ſuppreſſed. 962.970
Firſt fruites and tenths giuen to the king. 962
Fier at Elſing ſpittle. 980
Falſe accuſer ſet on the pillory. 991
Firſt and ſecond fals of moneies. 1021
Firſt fruits and tenths reſtored to the cleargie. 1061
Falſe accuſer ſet on the pillory, and brent in both the cheekes. 1062
Firſt fruites and tenthes granted to the crowne. 1075
Fall of the baſe moneies. 1094
Felton and others executed. 1130
French Embaſſadors. 1138
Froſt great. 1140
Fiſh monſterous. 1148
Flies in February. 1149
Family of loue. 1151
Foure children at a burden. 1152
Ferry at Lambheath drowned. 1163
Francis Drake his voyage. 1164. 1165
Furbuſhers firſt voyage to Catay. 1152. ſecond voyage. 1154. third voyage. 1160
Francis Throckmorton executed. 1177
Francis Ruſſell earle of Bedford deceaſed. 1187
Francis Drake his voyage to S. Domingo. 1187
Ferdinando Earle of Darby deceaſed. 1275

G

G*Vindolen* Queene. 13
Germany. 13
Glamorgan. 15
Grantham. 19
Glaſtenbury. 34. 97. brent. 230
Gurmonchester. 63
Glouceſter. 85. ſpoyled by the Welch. 285. brent. 200. Caſtle taken. 253. beſieged. 255
Glaſing to the Saxons. 93
Guy of Warwicke. 107
Godwine his petigrew. 115. dieth. 126
Gillingham forreſt. 117
Guarnerus le Rich. 155
Gawens bones found. 166
Glamorgan and Morganocke. 180
Godwine Sands. 189
Grantbridge deſcribed. 184. burned. 315
Giles church at Criple gate. 191
G. Maundeuile earle of Eſſex ſlaine. 212
Gerendon. 222
Geffrey earle of Britaine died. 230
Geffrey Ridle the proud Biſhop of Ely. 233
Geffrey Archbiſhop of Yorke, drawne from the aulter to priſon. 235.256
Gaſcoigne ſubdued. 271
Griffith of Wales. 283
Gilbert de Clare earle of Glouceſter. 283
Grauesend Biſhop of London. 321
Gilbert earle of Glouceſter. 333
Guiſnes. 383. gotten by the Engliſh. 394
Groates and halfe groates. 393
Grauesend brent by the French. 449
Guns inuented. 449
Great taxe the cauſe of great rebellion. 449
Greeneſield beheaded. 459
Gouernors of this realme. 13. appointed. 481
Gnats fight a great battaile. 490
Geffrey Chaucer Poet. 529
Gods houſe at Newelme in Oxford ſhire. 639
George Duke of Clarence, and the earle of Warwike fled into France, and againe landed at Plimouth. 701
George duke of Clarence, the earle of Warwike and other reſtored *Henry* the ſixt. 702. Duke of Clarence agreed with his brother. 703. attainted by parliament. 716. put to death. 717
Great Harry a ſhippe made. 822
Great payment to *Henry* the eight. 822
Golden roſe ſent from Rome to *Henry* the eight. 876
Gardiner Secretary to H. the eight. 918
Gold enhaunſed. 886
Gerard Fitz Gerard deputy of Ireland. 891
Griffith Clearke Vickar of Wanſworth and other executed. 972
Going to Landarſe. 984
Galleies taken from the French. 995
Great watch at midſomer. 1003
Gernſey and Ierſey inuaded by the French. 1005
Grige a counterfeit phyſition puniſhed. 1020
Great feare vpon ſmall occaſion. 1025
Grey friers church in London made an hoſpitall. 1026
Gilbert Pot puniſhed in Cheape. 1030
Gun ſhot at the preacher. 1056
Gun ſhot out of a ſhip into the court at Greenwich. 1064
George Saunders murthered. 1141
George Browne hanged. 1142
Gunpouder blew vp houſes. 1174
Ground and trees ſunke and ſwallowed vp. 1187
Gunpouder houſe blowne vp. 1241
Gates of Paules Church blowne open. 1263

H

Hvmbar a Riuer. 2.13
Heraults. 12
Helen mother to *Canstantine*. 47
Horsted. 56
Honorius archbishop deuided his prouince into parishes. 68
Hereford. 75
Hunstanstone. 76
Hereford. 89
Hubbeslow. 101
Hadley. 103
Hokenorton. 106
Hugoline the kings chamberlaine. 129
Harold son to earle *Godwine* tooke on him the kingdome. 130. his standard. 131
Harding son to *Ednothus*. 143
Hereward made knight. 144. tooke the Ile of Ely. 148. chased the abbot of Peterborow, and tooke *Ivo Talbois*. 154
Henry the first borne in England. 145
Hands and feete cut off. 152. 154
Hilbert Lacie lord of Pontfract. 156
Hereford monastery burned. 157
Hospitall at Chetham in Kent. 157
Herlewin married *Arlote*. 161
Hospitall of S. Iohn at Harbaldowne. 178
Henry the first crowned. 190. sayled into Normandy. 192. put out the eies of his elder brother. 193. sayled into Normandy. 197. he made peace with France, his children drowned. 199. builded castles in Normandy. 201. troubled in his sleepes. 203. in danger of drowning. 204 measures reformed. 190
He died. 205. his issue. 206
Hugh Lacie founded Lanthony. 192
Hyde of land taxed iii. s. to the king. 194. 242.
Hospitall at Keper. 202
Hospitall S. Crosse. 204
Hospitall S. Katherine by the Tower. 212
Henry the second crowned. 216. he went against the Welch, reedified castles. 217. lord of Ireland. 223. curseth himselfe and his sons, and died, his treasure, his issue. 232
Henry of Essex. 217. ouercome. 221
Henry the kings sonne crowned. 223. rebelled. 224. reconciled. 229. died. 230
Heraclius patriarke of Hierusalem. 230
Honorable buriall forbidden to aduouterous women. 235
Hugh Brune rebelled. 246
Hedges burned and ditches made plaine ground. 250
Homage of freeholders. 250
Hospitall S. Thomas in Southwarke, 256
Henry the third crowned at Glocester. 263. at Westminster 267. exacteth money of the Londoners. 272. feasted the king of Scots. 274. retained Pictauians. 276. in danger. 280. sayled into Normandy. 282. forced to sel his plate and iewels. 285. sate in the Exchequer. 290. taken prisoner. 296. deceased. 304
Hubert the Iusticiar earle of Kent accused. 272. 274. sent to the Tower. 276. died. 282
High waters. 278. 282
Hertford Castle. 28
High waters. 287. 288. 472.
Halfepenny coyned. 306
Hot sommer cheape graine. 313
Hugh Spencer. 329. 333. banished, executed. 347. 339
Henry Lacie earle of Lincolne. 331
Hoardmen and women pretend a voyage to Ierusalem. 338
Hospitall at Leicester. 358
Henry earle of Lancaster died. 377
Hay. 383
Harlots apparell appointed them. 398
Hugh Calueley. 437. his iourney towards Boloigne. 445
Hastings burnt by the French. 444
Henry Spencer Bishop of Norwich, his boldnesse against the rebels. 464
Henry duke of Hereford accused the duke of Norffolke. 514 a combat granted them at Couentry, both banished. 515
Henry duke of Hereford returned into England. 517
Henry the fourth crowned. 524. conspiacre against him. 525. inuadeth Scotlande. 527. escapeth great danger. 530. went into Wales. 531. writeth to the Pope. 546. ayded the duke of Burgundy. 551. gaue ayde to the duke of Orliance. 556
Hospitall at Rome for English men. 546
Henry Prince of Wales strangely disguised visiteth his father being sicke. 553
Henry the fift. 557. crowned. 559. he heareth al suites. 559. Richmount, Shene, and Sion built. 559. kept the field by S. Giles without Oldborne. 561. builded at Kenelworth, sayled into Normandy. 562. Proclamation in his hoste. 565. Herflete surrendred to him. 568. wan the battaile at Agen court. 570. arriued at Douer. 574. he besieged Cane. 578. won it. 579. he besieged Louars, and Pontlearch, and Roane. 583. hee besieged Melune. 590. hee died. 593
Halfe pence of *Ianua* forbidden. 574
Henry the sixt king of England and of France. 595. crowned. 609. crowned at Paris. 611. he went against the rebels of Kent. 643. he went to Killingworth. 644. rode into Kent with an army. 648. fled into Scotland. 690. taken. 695. restored. 702. sent to the Tower. 703. murthered. 705. his exercises while he liued. 706
Henry duke of Warwike. 635
Humphrey duke of Glocester died. 635
Harlow Castle won. 700
Henry earle of Richmond landed at Milford hauen. 783. won the battaile at Bosworth, was crowned in the field. 787 married *E.* daughter to *Edward* the fourth. 789. sayled into France, and besieged Boloigne. 796. lodged in the Tower. 799. rode to Paules on Saint *Georges* day. 811. died. 813
Hospitall of the Sauoy. 813
Henry the eight. 814. crowned. 815. speares appointed to waite on him. 816. besieged Turwine. 823. besieged Turney. 825. procureth *Maximilian* the emperor to war vpon the French. 848. tooke shipping towarde Caleis. 856. landed at Caleis and rode to Boloigne. 944. married lady *Anne* Boloine. 946. preparation for hir coronation. 947. crowned. 953. beheaded. 965. married lady *Iane Seimor*. 965. married lady *Anne* of Cleue. 973. was diuorced. 977. married lady *Katherine Howard*. 977. beheaded. 980. his progresse to Yorke. 980. king of Ireland. 980. married lady *Katherine Par*. 984
Henry the 8. went to Boloigne. 989. Boloign yeelded. 990
Henry the 8. wrote against *Luther*. 865. king *H.* in danger of drowning. 881
Hampton Court builded. 885. 536
Hospitall of S. Iohn of Ierusalem suppressed. 974
Holy maide of Kent. 959. 960. headed. 961
Henry duke of Richmount died. 966
Hollanders condemned for heretikes. 963
House blowne vp with gunpowder. 986
Hadington brent. 987
Haile stones strange. 991. 1170

Henry Howard Earle of Surrey arraigned and beheaded. 997
Henry the 8. his gift to the Citie of London. 997. died his tombe made. 998
Hadington beſieged and taken. 1003
Hoſpitals giuen to king E. the ſixt. 1002
Holds loſt in Scotland. 1013
High altar in Paules pulled downe. 1019
Houſe blowne vp with gunpowder. 1025
Henry Gray duke of Suffolke beheaded. 1053
Henry Stewart Lord Darnley married the Queene of Scots. 1115. was murthered. 1118
Hey ſold by waight. 1121
High waters drowned many. 1130
Hall and *Wilkenſon* executed. 1140
Horſe ſtealers hanged. 1176
Henry earle of Darby his Embaſſage into France. 1178
Henry Sidney knight deceaſed. 1203
Horſe-men and foote-men trayned and muſtered at London. 1304

I

Reland. 18
Ieruſalem. 47. woon by the Chriſtians. 187. taken by the Saraſins. 231
Ithancester. 78
Iewes brought into England. 137. raunſomed. 251. ſpoyled. 257
Ingar Baynard lady of Donmow. 192
Iames at Briſtow a priory. 195
Ipſwich beſieged. 214
John the kings ſon, lord of Ireland, ware a crowne of peacocks feathers. 230
John Earle Morton. 233. vſurpeth the kingdome. 235. rebelled 237. his ſubmiſſion. 239
Iewes ſlew themſelues. 234
John Earle Morton lord of Ireland, procured an othe of all men. 242. ſeaſed on the kings treaſure, tooke on him the dukedome of Normandy. 243. elected king of England, crowned, prophecie of him. 244 diuorced from his wife, married another. 245. ſummoned to the French kings court. 247. moued to repentance, tooke an othe. 255. reſigned the crowne, abſolued. 256. tayled into Britain. 256 returned, croſſed to Ieruſalem. 257. inuaded the lands of his Barons 259. flieth. 260. died. 262
Iohn de Courcy earle of Vlſtar. 247
Iſabell mother to H. the third went into France. 268
Iewes Synagogue in London. 275
Iewes at Norwich ſtole a childe. 277
Iſabell ſiſter to H the thiad married to the Emperor. 277
Iuſting at Rochester. 287. at Reading and at Langley. 371
Iewes hanged. 189 drowned. 291. ſpoyled for Vſurie. 253. executed. 306. 311. Synagogue deſtroyed. 308. baniſhed England. 313
Iewes Synagogue. 321
Iuſtices committed to the Tower. 312. puniſhed. 420
Iohn lord Eury. 322
Iewes and Leapers poyſoned waters. 339
Iſabell the queene ſent into France. 344. returned. 345
Iohn Shordich knight. 368
Iohn of Gaunt borne. 369
Iuſting at Lincolne. 384. at Windſore. 386 at Woodſtock 400. in Smithfield. 415
Iuſting in Smithfield. 418
Iohn duke of Lancaſter chalenged to combat. 397
Ireland yeelded corne to England. 398
Iohn Philpot of London. 435. his oration. 440. 447. his good ſeruice. 449. deceaſed. 476
Iohn Miniſarworth. 436
Iurers heads chopped off. 451
Iohn Tiler of Dartford ſlew a collector. 452
Iuſtices, Lawyers and Iurers beheaded. 453
Iohn Ball a wicked prieſt chaplain to the rebels. 453. taken brought to S. Albons, his doctrine. 468. ſermon and libels. 469. hanged. 473. commons of Kent came to black heath. 453. into Southwarke and to London, brent the Sauoy. 454
Iohn Newton ſent to *Wat Tiler.* 460
Iohn Cauendiſh ſlew *Wat Tiler.* 401
Iohn Wraw a rebell. 463. hanged. 472
Iohn Cauendiſh lord chiefe Iuſtice, the Prior of Bery and other beheaded by the rebels. 463
Iohn Liteſtar of Norwich ſerued by knights. 464. his end. 465
Iacke Straw his confeſſion at the gallowes, and purpoſe of the rebels. 465
Iohn Burley, Simond Burghley, and *Rich. Burghley* knights. 472
Iohn of Gaunt duke of Lancaſter accuſed. 475. tayleth into France. 476. king of Spaine. 480. returned. 490
Iohn Northampton conuicted. 476
Iohn Newton that bare the kings ſword. 461
Iuſtices arreſted as they ſate in parliament. 486
Iuſting in Smithfield. 491. 496
Iewe baptized at London. 492
Ile of Man purchaſed by *W. Scrope.* 495
Iohn Hawkwood, his actes, life, and death. 496
Iriſh people to auoide England. 498
Iohn of Gaunt duke of Lancaſter returned out of Gaſcoigne 502. died. 516
Iuſting on London bridge. 504
Iuſting and feaſting. 515
Iuſting in Smithfield. 549. in the Tower of London. 669. in Smithfield. 698
Iohn Gower Poet. 527
Ile of Man giuen to the earle of Northumberland. 524
Iohn Benet Woolman beheaded. 575
Iohn Lord Talbot ſayled into Normandy. 614. ſlaine. 655
Iohn Duke of Bedford Regent of France. 615
Iohn de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Iacke Cade Captaine of Kent. 640. headed. 647
Iohn Holland duke of Exceſter ſent to Pontfract caſtle. 663
Iohn Markham lord chiefe Iuſtice. 690
Iohn Dany had his hand ſmitten off in Cheape. 691
Iurers falſe, ſet on the pillory. 699
Iohn Tiptoft Earle of Worceſter cruell. 701
Iohn Vere Earle of Oxford kept S. Michaels mount. 708
Iuſting at Shine. 795
Incloſures about London pulled downe. 804
Iuſting in the Tower of London. 807. Iuſts. 831
Iames king of Scots betrothed to *Margaret* daughter to *Henry* the ſeuenth 809. married. 810
Iurers for money. 813
Iames king of Scots beſieged Norham. 826. ſlaine at Bramſtone. 829
Ile of Rhods beſieged by the Turks. 869. yeelded to the. 871
Iohn Ruſſell. 877
Iohn Iohen. 877
Iuſtes at Greenewich. 885
Iudge *Shelley.* 927
Iuſting at Weſtminſter. 957. at Greenwich. 964. at Weſtminſter. 965. 974. 1166. 1167
Iohn Nicholſon, or *Lambert* brent. 971
Iohn Fiſher Biſhop of Rocheſter beheaded. 963
Iron pieces firſt caſt. 983

Iohn Dudley L. Admirall brent Trayport. 992
Iohns church by Smithfield blown vp with gũpouder. 1004
I. Dudley E. of Warwike against the rebels at Norwich. 1006
Ioan butcher brent. 1019
Iohn Rogers brent. 1059
Jnogo de Can. 1059
Iohn Bradford burned. 1060
Iohn Throckmorton and other executed. 1062
Iohn Lord Burke murthered. 1270
Iohn Parret knight arraigned. 1271
Iohn Puckering Lord Keeper. 1271

K

KIngs deuoured by beasts. 13
Kimeushore. 58
Kentish Saxons. 64
Kenchester. 74.75
Kenssham Abbey founded. 195
Kenelworth Priory and Castle. 195
Knighten guilde, now Portesoken ward. 196
King *Iohn* deceased. 252
King of Ierusalem came into England. 270
Kenelworth Castle besieged. 300. yeelded. 301
Kings palace at Westminster brent. 318
King E. the third besieged Turney, returned into England, entred the Tower. 371
King E. besieged Calcis. 380. yeelded. 383. elected king of Almaine. 384
King E. sayled towards Flanders. 387. into France. 400. inuaded Burgundy. 416. borrowed sums of money. 423. dieth. 438. his issue. 439
Kings three came into England. 419
Knights of the starre. 397
King of Ermony came into England. 480
Kings bench and Chancery remooued to Yorke. 495
King *Richard* his conquest of Ireland, the same described. 500. sayled to Calcis. 505. sayled into Ireland. 516. returned. 518 betraied. 520
Kings Colledge in Cambridge. 624
Knights of the bathe. 695
Kentish men robbed Flemings. 702
Knights made. 713
King of Castile landed in England. 811
King and quene of Denmarke arriued in England. 874
Katherine Dowager diuorced 947. deceased. 964
King H. supreme head of the church. 942
Knightes of the Bathe. 949
Knights made at Lieth. 987
King H. the eight his oration. 992
Kets hanged as rebels. 1013
Kentishmen pardoned. 1053
King *Philip* and Cardinall came to Paules Crosse and heard the Sermon. 1058
King E. the sixt counterfeit. 1060. 1062
King *Philip* went into Flanders. 1061. returned into England. 1067
Kat burned at Norwich. 1261

L

LEgion of souldiers. 14
Leicester. 15
Lawes. 11. 16. 18
Lud fortified London. 21. repayred. 103
Lichfield. 82. 92. 107
Lincolne minster founded. 91
Library at Yorke. 93
Liganburge. 95
Ley a Riuer. 104
Leicester repayred. 107. brent. 224
London bridge. 124. of timber. 221. with arches of stone. Page. 225. 250
Lincolne a Bishopricke. 165. brent. 200
London and Paules church brent. 165. 204
London with the bridge brent. 207. besieged. 266
Lightening at Winchelcombe. 182
Lewes in Sussex. 185
Line of the Saxons restored. 216
Lesuose in Surrey. 227
Lewes king of France came into England. 227. offered at *T. Beckets* shrine. 228
Legate from Rome 251. Pandolph. 255
Lewes arriued in England, Scots did homage to *Lewes*. 260. his power vanquished, agreed, & returned, Douer Castle besieged. 260. 266
Leopards sent to H the third. 278
Legate put to his shifts. 279
London liberties seased. 288. taken by the Earle of Glocester. 302. Riot in London. 302
Ludlow Castle taken. 297
Legate accursed the Barons. 301
Lectures of Diuinity in Cambridge. 313
Londoners riding to meete the Queene. 320
Leedes Castle besieged. 339
Lunday an Ile described. 346
Late haruest. 358
Library in Oxford. 377
Lalbastie by Gwines. 396
Lawes pleaded in the English toong. 419
Leonell Duke of Clarence marrieth, his wedding feast. Page. 422
Lightning and thunder. 473
Londoners slighted without cause. 481
Lords came to the king in the Tower of London. 485
Libell against the Cleargy. 499
Lord Strange and his wife did penance. 576
Ludlow spoyled. 672
Lords fled the Realme. 677
Lord *Scales* murthered on the Thamis. 679
London the kings especiall chamber. 760
Lone to *Henry* the 7. 789
Langton B. of Winchester. 807
Lady *Katherine* of Spaine arriued in England. 807
Lady *Hungerford* hanged. 871
Lincolnshire men executed. 968
Latimer preached at Bristow. 961
Lords sworne to the succession. 961
Lord *Dacres* of the North arraigned and acquited. 962
Leonard lord *Gray* beheaded. 979
Lithe spoyled. 986
Lord *Sheffild* slaine. 1005
Liberties of Southwarke purchased. 1019
Liberties of the Stilyard seased. 1022
Lady *Iane* proclaymed. 1029
Latin seruice. 1041. in the church. 1043
Land waters great. 1061
Lady *Lineaux* sent to the Tower. 1115
League with France confirmed. 1138
Land waters bare downe houses. 1146
Londoners receiue the queene. 1177
Londoners trayned vp with shot 4000. 1182
League with the Scots. 1203
Lotterie at London. 1203
Ledowicke Grinell pressed to death. 1263
Londoners slighted by fiers. 1263

M

Marcreds borne. 58
Mordred slaine. 61
Maurdine. 74
Mercians. 80
Medeshamsted. 84
Medeswell. 84
Malmesbury. 96
Monkes brent. 102
Medway Riuer. 103
Milton. 103
Mersey an Iland. 104
Maldon. 106
Mancheſter. 107
Malmesbury built. 114
Murrian of cattaile. 114
Mens fleſh eaten for hunger. 146
Monaſteries rifled. 147
Monkes of Ely to W. Conqueror. 151
Money paid by waight. 152
Man an Ile ſubdued. 185
Mary Ouerey in Southwarke. 193.250
Merton priorie. 197
Money makers puniſhed. 201
Maud the empreſſe returneth into England. 202. fled. 210. beſieged. 211. fled into Normandy. 212. deceaſed. 230
Men contended with women for length of haire. 203
Marleborow beſieged. 208
Miles Earle of Hereford fled. 210
Malmesbury towne and caſtle woon by *Henry* ſon to *Maud* the Empreſſe. 214. adopted by king *Stephen*. 214. *Euſtace* king *Stephens* ſonne died. 214
Monſter ſtrange. 249
Mint in Ireland. 251
Matild the faire poyſoned. 254
Morgan a baſtard elected Biſhop of Durham. 250
Mountſorell Caſtle. 264.265
Mountgomery caſtle founded. 270
Meaſures amended. 273
Mary hoſpitall at London. 278
Marſhall *Gilbert*. 281
Mart at Weſtminſter. 285
Marke of gold or ſiluer. 287
Magnus king of Man. 290
Manſell one of the kings chaplains feaſted the king. 290
Macy Conſtable of Gloceſter. 253
Monmouth Caſtle raſed. 298
Mercers chappell in London. 302
Monaſteries rifled. 317
Mortalitie of men. 335
Mortimer ſent to the Tower. 340. 342. breaketh out of the Tower. 344. apprehended. 356. headed. 357
Men brent in a Church. 3000. 364
Markes. 383
Maior of London feaſted foure kings. 415
Maundeuile deceaſed. 425. his Epitaph. 426
Mewes by Charing Croſſe. 442
Men of Rie ſpoyle Peters hauen in France, and fetch their bell out of Normandy. 446
Mercer a Scot tooke ſhips of Scarborow. 447
Murther in the Church of Weſtminſter. 447
Mannor in Eſſex belonging to the Prior of S. Johns ſpoyled. 451
Marſhall of the Marſhalſey beheaded. 459
Michaell de la Pole Chancelor and earle of Suffolke. 480. deceaſed. 490
Maior and Sheriffes of London committed, and the Londoners called before the king, &c. 493
Mawdelin a prieſt counterfeited king *Richard*, was executed. 526
Monſtrous ſights at Bedford. 532
Many men hanged and ſome brent for rebellion. 561
Men forſware the land. 563
Mayden of God in France. 606
Men hanged and their liues ſaued. 635
Mountford Captaine ſlaine. 674
Markham chiefe Iuſtice, loſt his office for doing iuſtice. 698
Morton Archbiſhop of Canterbury. 806
Men brought out of the new found Ilands. 816
Maſſie chaines of gold. 808.809
Mary ſiſter to H. the eight married to the French king. 832
Margarets queene of Scots came into England. 847. returned. 851
Marriage of *Henry* the eight in queſtion, 908. argued in open court. 912
Marchioneſſe of Pembrooke. 944
Muſter great at London. 972
Mary Queries Priory made a pariſh church. 973
Men of 40. l. land knighted. 946
Mary king *Henries* ſiſter deceaſed. 957
Mewes by Charing croſſe brent. 962
Maide boyled in Smithfield. 981
Mortar pieces caſt for ſhooting wilde fier. 983
Men brent in the Hedgehogge. 991
Mary Roſe drowned. 992
Muſcleborow field. 1001
Martiall law. 1005
Muſter of horſemen before king *Edward*. 1024.1025
Monſtrous fiſhes. 1026
Merry diſports at Chriſtmas in the Court. 1027
Muſcouie voyage. 1029
Marriages three at Durham place. 1029
Men drowned at London bridge. 1030.1036
Mary proclaimed queene at Norwich, preparation againſt her. 1030. *Iohn* Duke of Northumberland ſent againſt her. 1031. proclaimed at London. 1033. crowned. 1041
Marriage of king *Philip* and queene *Mary*. 1057
Men brent at Stratford. 1063
Margraue and Marqueſſe of Badon. 1116. returned. 1117
Martin Bullocke hanged. 1137
Mathew Parker Archbiſhop of Canterbury deceaſed. 1150
Men hanged at Barnet. 1161
Mathew Hamont brent at Norwich. 1161
Mounſieur D. of Aniow. 1168
Miſe denoure graſſe. 1166
Man hanged for dead and liued after. 1241
Marſhall of London ſir *T. Wilford*. 1280
Meanes for intreatie of peace to be had. 1306

N

NOrthumbers. 90
Natanleod. 94
Normans of name came in with the Conqueror. 138
Norman Hunter lands giuen him. 145
Normans valiant. 168. their faces ſhauen. 130.136
Normandy pawned for 6666. pounds. 186
Norham Tower builded. 202
Nottingham brent. 209. beſieged. 214
Norwich increaſed. 214. ſpoyled. 301. periſhed by fier. 560

Norwich Minſter brent. 223. Riot at Norwich. 303. walled. 321. brent. 620
Night-walkers in London murthered men. 225
Normandy yeelded to the French. 248
Noble men diſherited by king *Iohn*. 253
New caſtle burned. 285. drowned. 367
Newham in Deuonſhire. 292
Northampton beſieged. 255
New coyne of golde. 551
Nicholas Burdet ſlaine. 623
Normandy loſt by the Engliſh. 638
Newbery ſpoyled. 677
Norwich defaced with fier. 813
New Teſtament printed in Engliſh. 932
Nicholas Carew knight beheaded. 971
New hauen in Suſſex inuaded by French. 992
New coynes of gold and ſiluer. 1022
Nicholas Throckmorton knight arraigned. 1055
Neceſſitie of the poore relieued. 1060
Nicholas Bacon L. Keeper deceaſed. 1160
Noble men of France arriued in England. 1167
Nauntwich brent. 1176
Nauy to the ſea. 1245

O

Oppreſſors hanged. 20
Oundall. 84
Oxford Vniuerſitie. 105
Outlawes. 144
Odo Biſhop of Bayon. 161. 162. put in priſon. 163
Order of knighthood amongſt the Saxons. 164
Othe to *Mawd* the Empreſſe. 202
Oſney by Oxford. 203
Oxe fat xij. d. the piece. 226. ſixtie ſpent at a dinner. 288
Outlawes in England. 234
Oxford forſaken. 250. townes men, and ſchollers at diſcorde. 255
Oxford in diſcord. 317
Othe to the king. 292
Oſney North. 307
Oliuer Ingham. 345
Officers remooued from the kings Court. 486
Owen Glendouerdew and the Welch men rebell. 527. tooke *Mortimer*. 531
Olde Caſtle ſir *Iohn* taken. 581. his anſwere. 582
Owen Tewther priſoner. 620. 670
Order of Feaſt. 714
Order taken againſt encloſures. 858
Orations and anſweres. 909
Owſe bridge borne downe. 1115
Oſweſtry brent, Milnall brent. 1119

P

Pictes. 19
Pickering. 19
Prodigious ſignes. 20
Pelagius. 49. 52. 53
Pictes wall. 51. 81
Porteſmouth. 58
Paules in London founded. 65. 77
Penda his ſong. 81. 55
Peterborow. 84. burned. 192
Priory of Stanes. 64
Peter pence. 97
Penham. 117
Paules Church in London new founded. 166. Paules croſſe. 291. the new Wirke. 334
Priory of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem. 190
Priory of Clerken well. 191
Priory and hoſpitall of S. Bartholmew. 191
Priory of the Trinitie in London. 194
Parke ad Woodſtocke the firſt in England. 197
Pater noſter in Engliſh ſent from Rome. 220
Publicans whipped. 221
Price of wines. 244
Peter of Ponfract. 252. 255. hanged. 256
Peter of Sauoy E. of Richmond. 281. keeper of Douer. 282
Popes wardrobe brent. 283
Peſtilence. 284. 291. Peace. 904. 418. 423. 717. 800
Pirates hanged. 285
Parliament at Salisbury. 196. at Gidington. 231
Parliament at London. 285. called Mad. 291. at Weſtminſter 291. at the newe Temple. 292. at Winchester. 299. at Kenelworth. 301. at Marleborow. 302. at Glouceſter. 306. at Acton Burnel. 300. at Glocester. 311. at Yorke 318. at Stebenheath. 318. at Carlile. 323. at Northampton. 328. at London. 330. 335. 343. at Yorke. 341. at Northampton. 355. at Salisbury. 355. at Wincheſter. 356. at Nottingham 556. at Yorke. 360. at London. 360. at Northampton. 361. at London. 363. at Weſtminſter. 369. as London. 372. at Weſtminſter. 373. at Weſtminſt. 393. 398. 400. at London. 419. at Weſtm. 423. Parl. 427. called Good. 428. at London. 430. 444. 448. at Northampton. 449. at London. 471. 475. at Salisbury. 475. at London. 477. at London. 481. at Weſtminſter they wrought wonders. 486. at Cambridge. 489 at London. 491. at Winchester. 495. at London. 495. at London. 498. at Weſtminſter. 505. at London. 508. at Weſtminſt. 509. at Shrewsbery 51. at Weſtminſt. 522. at London. 529. 532. 534. at Couentry. 536. 543. at London. 545. 549. 551. 556. Lay mans Parl. wherein was required the temporalties of the cleargy anſwered by the Archbiſhop. 536. 549. at Leiceſter. 563. at London. 581. at London. 596. at Weſtm. 597. at London. 600 at Glocester. 603. at Weſtminſt. 605. 613. 619. at Reading. 622. 634. at Bery. 635. at Weſtminſt. 638. 647. at Couentrie. 673. at Weſtminſt. 679. at Weſtm. 697. 699. 709. 716. Parl. at the Blacke friers. 926. at Weſtminſter. 943. 946. 964. 1002. 1028. 1043. 1054. 1070. 1132. 1165. 1240. 1247. 1261. 1272. 1301. 1177. diſſolued. 1181
Pierce of Gaueſtone. 328
Pierce of Gaueſtone baniſhed. 329. abiured. 330. returned. 331. beheaded. 332
Priories alians taken to the kings vſe. 316
Priors alians their goods confiſcate. 365. reſtored. 417
Poultry the price. 319
Priuiledges to Clothworkers. 364
Plimmouth ſpoyled by the French. 366
Proceſſion bloudy. 387
Prieſts became theeues. 419
Peace with France. 417
Peter pence forbidden to be paid. 420
Prieſts officers to the king. 420
Pariſh churches in England, common opinion reproued. Page. 424
Pembrooke earle taken priſoner. 426
Proceſſion of the Londoners. 436
Peſtilence in the North. 448. 490. 491. 542
Pride of *Wat Tiler*, his anſwere to the doubled maker, and to the king. 460

Piked shooes, high heads, long traines, and women riding aside, first vsed in England. 471
Pirates of Denmarke robbe the English. 502
Patricks purgatory in Ireland. 499
Plimouth spoyled by the Britains. 534
Play at Skinners well. 549
Porter of the Tower hanged. 563
Priories of alians suppressed more than 100. 563.591
Paris yeelded to the French. 617
Printing first inuented. 669
Priuie seales for money. 677
Price of graine, wheate ij s. the quarter. 693
Piked shooes forbidden. 696
Prince *Edward* son to H. the sixt cruelly slaine. 704
Penall lawes looked to. 717
Perkin Warbecke. 767. 797. arriued in Kent. 800. went into Ireland, spoyleth Northumberland. 801. landed in Cornwall. 803
Parliament at Westminster. 789 793. 801
Perkin Werbecke brought vp to London. 804. executed 805
Prince *Arthur* married. 808. deceased. 809
Parliament at Westminster. 811
Prisoners of the Marshalsey brake out. 811
Promoters and false Iurers. 812
Promoters apprehended. 815
Parliament. 817. 821. 822. 834. at the Blacke friers. 871
Palace at Westminster brent. 822
Pestilence. 830. 851. great. 1004
Peace with France proclaimed. 831
Periury and other vices punished. 847
Palace builded before Guisnes. 853
Prescription generall of the Realme. 866
Peace with France. 885
Pope fled to Castle angell. 888
Pompous riding of Cardinall *Wolsey* to France. 896
Patch the Cardinals foole. 921
Posterne of the Tower. 949
Procession great in London. 963
Pensioners appointed. 973
Priests, three brent and three hanged. 977
Popes authoritie abrogated. 962
Powled heads. 962
Priest and a butcher hanged at Windsor. 966
Procession in English. 988
Prises taken. 990
Peace proclaimed and generall procession. 996
Paules steeple lay at an anchor. 1000
Proclamation against E. duke of Somerset Lord protector. 1010. brought to the Tower. 1011. his submission. 1016. 1017. deliuered. 1018. sworne of the counsell. 1019
Peter Gabo & other murthred. *Gauaro* & other hanged. 1017
Prest of money taken of the merchants. 1026
Prest to the queene. 1041. 1070
Prince of Piamount and prince of Orenge came into England. 1059
Piercy made earle of Northumberland. 1067
Prior of S. Iohn by Smithfield. 1069
Procession, gospell and pistle in English. 1075
Preachers at the Spittle and Paules Crosse came from beyond the seas. 1077
Peace with France with condition that Calcis should be deliuered to the English. 1081
Paules steeple fiered by lightning. 1097
Prises of wine taken. 1023. 1105
Prest at New hauen, the towne surrendred to the French. page. 1111
Pestilence at London. 1112
Peace with France proclaimed. 1113
Paules gate blowne open. 1116
Pensioners mustred. 1123
Pikemen and shot trayned vp in London mustred at Greenwich. 1136
Pirates executed. 1141. 1143
Peter Burchet hanged. 1147
Priests saying masse apprehended. 1147
Patrike Brumton ouerturned. 1153
Proclamation against Iesuits. 1166
Philip Sidney gouernour of Flushing. 1189. wounded to death. 1233 deceased. 1237
Philip Howard earle of Arundall condemned to pay 10000. pound. 1223. arraigned. 1260
Pirates executed. 1175
Proclamation against the Queene of Scots. 1140. beheaded. 1087
Proclamation against Iesuites. 1266
Purueyer hanged. 1263
Penry executed. 1273
Pestilence great. 1274
Peper eight shillings the pound. 1361

Q

Qvatbridge. 104
Quaffing forbidden. 113
Queenes atturney slaine. 669
Quest mongers for money set on the pillory. 815
Queene of Scots came to London 1022. returned. 1023
Queene *Mary* came to the Guild hall of London, bruted to be with childe, 1058
Quarterne agues. 1073
Queene *Mary* died. 1073
Queene *Elizabeth*. 1074. crowned. 1075
Q. *Eliz.* hir progresse to Cambridge, 1113. to Oxford. 1117
Queenes oration in the parliament. 1181

R

Rome builded. 15
Romans niceneesse. 27
Redford. 71
Radham. 73
Ripendune. 102
Runcorne. 107
Ramsey Abbey. 113
Robert Cumine Earle of Northumberland. 145
Role of Winton. 159
Richard son to *W.* Conqueror his death. 160
Robert Bellasme Earle of Shrewsbery rebelled. 191
Robert Beamount Earle of Leicester. 191
Reading Abbey founded. 200
Robert Courtehos died. 104
Rochester brent. 207. besieged. 258. 296
Robert Earle of Glocester taken. 210. deceased. 212
Robert Earle of Leicester rebelled. 224. taken prisoner. Page. 238
Rosamond king *Henries* Concubine. 226
Richard Lucy chiefe Iustice. 227
Richard the first. 232. crowned. 233. tooke his voyage towardes Ierusalem. 234. taken prisoner, builded the wals of Vienna. 236. his raunsome. 237. again crowned. 238. died. 242
Robert Fitz Walter fled into France, his valiancie, restored to the kings fauour. 254

Richard earle of Cornwall. 272. 282. king of Almaine. 290.
taken prisoner. 296
Robert and *Roger Bacon*. 276
Robert Grosted. 283. 288
Robert Bacon. 285
Rot of sheepe in England. 305
Round table at Kenelworth. 306. at Windsore. 374
Rhodes woon by christians. 332
Richard de Bery B. of Durham. 376
Risebanke. 383
Robert Knoles. 396. 416. 446
Richard the second. 439. crowned. 442. he sent to the rebels, he tooke the Tower of London. 453. he raysed a power and rode into Kent. 466. entred Scotland. 478. renewed his othe of coronation. 488. received into London with great ioy. 493. went into Ireland. 498. Rie a towne in Sussex brent. 442
Rokesborow burned by Scots. 443
Rebellion in England. 451. &c.
Robert Belknape Iustice. 451
Rebels mured vp in a sellar at the Sauoy, brake vp the fleet, burnt Fleetestreete, spoyled the Temple, murther one an other in their drunkennesse. 455. went to Westminster, brake vp Newgate, behead many, besiege the Tower of London, brent the hospitall of Saint Iohn by Smithfield. 456. commande the King to come to them, they enter the Tower, set out the Archbishop. 457. beheaded him and other. Ibid.
Robert Trissilian Iustice sate at Chelmesford. 468
Robert Vere Marquesse of Dublin. 479
Rochester bridge beaten downe. 481
Rorchell wine for xiij. s. iiij. d. the tunne. 482
Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland and other banished. 486
Royston brent. 543
Robert Knoles died. 543
Rochester bridge. 546
Robin Mend market. 550
Richard Duke of Yorke Regent of France. 615. 622
Richard Beauchampe Earle of Warwike. 620
Richard witch brent at Tower hill. 622
Roger Bolinbroke. 627. executed. 628
Roane yeelded to the French. 637
Rebels of Essex pight their fielde on the miles ende. 644. pardoned. 646
Rebels in Kent and Suffex executed. 648
Richard Duke of Yorke pretended title to the crowne. 648. his declaration. 649. his letter to the king. 650. his submission and oth to the king. 653. his practise. 656. marched to London. 657. attainted. 673. his othe. 681. slaine at Wakefield. 684
Robert Poynings sworde bearer to *Iacke Cade* proclaymed traytor. 666
Reginald Peacocke B. of Chichester. 666. his bookes. 667
Robert of Riddal. 700
Richard Duke of Gloucester went with an army into Scotland. 719
Richard the third elected king in the Guildhall of London. 763. crowned. 767. slaine. 787
Richmount and Baynards Castle new builded. 807. Richmond fiered. 811. gallery fell. 812
Regent of England a shippe brent. 822
Richard Hun hanged in Lollards Tower. 833
Rome sacked. 879. 887. 889
Register booke in euery church. 970
Roode of Grace shewed at Paules. 969
Richard Farmer in the præmunire. 975
Ralph Euars his good seruice. 967
Robert Pakington murthered. 969
Roade made into Scotland. 985
Rebels executed. 1017
Ralph a Vane and other knights executed. 1025
Ridley and *Latimer* brent. 1061
Religious houses suppressed. 1082
Royall exchange. 1131
Rogues burned through the eare. 1137
Reinald Grey Earle of Kent deceased. 1141
Robert Dudley Earle of Leicester transported ouer to Flushing, L. Lieutenant. 1189. installed and the states sworne. 1193. went againe into the low Countries. 1143. deceased. 1259
Rodericke Lopez arraigned. 1274. executed. 1278
Robert Earle of Essex Lieutenant Generall rode towardes Ireland. 1304
Richard Bancrafi Bishop of London sent by commission to Emden. 1306

S

Scotland. 3
Seuerne a Riuer. 13
Shafte-bury. 14
Stamford. 15
Seuernes wall. 39
Stonehenge. 59
South Saxons. 69
Seelesey. 70
Stonestat. 71
Soham. 73
Sutton Wallis. 74
Stourford. 77. 56
Sebba king. 79. buried in Paules. 80
Streneshals. 82
Scriptures to be read. 88
Segisiwald. 88
Shereborne. 97
Selsey. 97
Starres blasing. 98. 186. 196
Sudbery. 104
Stafford. 107
Shrewsbery. 107
Saxons described, their apparell. 133
Stigand Archbishop deposed. 147
Scots inuade England. 149. did homage. 150. spoyle Northumberland. 157
Synod at Windsor. 150
Symon Senlis. 155
Shrewsbury in Shropshire. 157
Salisbury the olde Minster. 183
Shireborne. 200
Stephen crowned king. 106. taken prisoner. 209. deliuered by exchange and fled. 211. died, his issue. 215
Scots inuade Northumberland. 208. their king taken prisoner. 224
Stanford besieged. 214
Sheepe satte 4 d. the piece. 226
States created. 244
Sterling money. 239
Scots did homage. 246
Stephen Langton elected Archbishop of Canterbury and England interdicted. 249. released. 256
Stortford Castle ouerthrowne. 251
Stephen Archbishop of Canterbury and other complaine of king *Iohn* to the Pope. 253. returned. 256
Strangers banished. 267

Subsidie demanded and denied. 275
Salisbury brent. 277
Statutes of Merton. 278
Salisbury new. 279
Symon Mountford earle of Leicester. 279. slaine. 298
Schollers did penance. 279
Sauoy place in London. 284
Sheepheards pretended a voyage to Ierusalem. 287
Strangers banished. 291
Scutage paid 291. of euery knights fee. 310
Starre blasing. 297
Scots did homage. 314
Sterling money. 329
Scotland subdued. 320
Somerton Castle. 331
Scots inuade England, burne the suburbs of Yorke. 338. 341
ouercome. 377. entred Northumberland. 473
Spoile in England. 479
States created & knights made. 363. 630. 632. 636. 637. 690. 830. 1114. 1136. 1139
Southampton spoyled. 365
Suruey of the whole realme. 373
Serpent in Oxford shire. 387
Stephens Chappell at Westminster. 398
Subsidie of Wales. 419. 488
Sir *Symon Burley* commissioner in Kent, sent a man of Graues end to Rochester Castle and the people rose for his deliuerance. 451
Symon Burghley and many other committed to prison, beheaded. 487
Scots inuade England. 531
Subsidie granted. 600. 605
Strangers to be lodged within English hostes. 600
Strangers to pay to the king. 622
Sandwich spoyled by the French. 664
Spanish ships taken by the earle of Warwike. 669
Statute against stuffed garments. 692
Sheepe transported. 696
Sir *Thomas Cooke* his troubles. 697
Shores wife one of E. the 4 concubines prisoner in Ludgate. 750. begged ere she died. 752
Stoke field. 790
Sanctuary men executed. 799
Shine the kings mannor brent. 804
Sebastian Gabato his voyage. 804
Shoomakers sonne fayned to be Earle of Warwike. 805
Sir *Iohn Wallope* brent Trayport. 831
Strangers in London their number misliked. 848
Sweating sickness. 852
Subsidie great to H. the eight. 873
Sir *Ralph Sadler*. 925
Sir *Iohn Russell*. 925
States created. 932. 971. 1000. 1016. 1022
Suite to Rome forbidden 932. 946
S. Iames hospitall made the kings house. 943
Stout Frier tolde the preacher he lied. 943
Subsidie of ij s. the l. lands, & xij. goods, & 4. fifteens. 974
Seauen persons executed. 977
Sheriffes of London sent to the Tower. 981
Somerset herault killed. 983
subsidie great. 984
Stewes put downe. 995
Surueyers sent out. 1003
Stephen Gardner sent to the Tower. 1004. his letter 1012. depriued. 1026. L. chancelor. 1041. his library & goods spoyled. 1047. deceased. 1061
Sweating sickness. 1021
Sir *Iohn Gates* and sir *T. Palmer* beheaded. 1039
Subsidie pardoned. 1041
Spirit in a wall. 1056
Siluer Bohon brought to the Tower. 1057
Spaniard hanged. 1057
Subsidie granted. 1061
Souldiers transported into Ireland. 1118
Ships sent to the seas. 1121
Sir *T. Sackuile* sent into France. 1131
Shon Oneale slaine. 1119
Starre strange appeared. 1159. 1165. 1169
Sickness at Oxford strange. 1154
Stubs and *Page* lost their hands. 1168
Seminaries executed. 1170
Somerule and *Arden* arraigned and executed. 1176
Seminaries executed. 1177. banished. 1188. executed. 1201 1203. 1239. 1259. 1263. 1270. 1274. 1303
Souldiers transported to the low Countries. 1187
Sickness and death strange at Excester. 1202
Seruice in Ireland by sir *Richard Bingham*. 1204
Souldier throwne from an high tower. 1236
Spanish fleete discouered. 1249. flieth. 1255. ouerthrown. Page. 1158
Sermon of thankesgiuing. 1259. 1260
Souldiers sent into France. 1271
Saylers executed at the Tower wharffe. 1271
Souldiers pressed on Easter day, sent to Douer, and discharged. 1281
Ships prepared to the seas and men trayned for the warres by the Londoners. 1304

T

THam's a riuer. 2
Trent a Riuer. 3
Tonge Castle. 55
Tilbery. 78. 44
Theoksbery. 85. 191
Tamworth. 88
Tenthe giuen to the Church. 99
Tocester. 106
Thilwall. 107
Trench cast about London. 117
Tower of London builded. 157
Theeues punished. 165
Tempest of winde at London ouerthrew 600. houses. 182. thunder. 246. 247. 495
Thamis and Medway dried vp. 196
Templars knights. 198
Theobald Archbishop of Canterbury shut vp in prison. 213
Toades deuour a man. 228
Templars slaine and headed. 231
Taxe iij. s. euery plow land. 245
Taxe ij. marks & halfe of a knights fee. 248. 251. 252. 316
Taxe grieuous. 534. 543
Thunders and lightnings. 249
Tempests. 270. 276. at Middleton. 330
Tower of London fortified. 280
Templars on great glory. 281
Templars apprehended. 328. condemned. 331
Tempest at sea 287. of winde. 418
Tempest of thundering. 287
Tenthes granted. 309
Turniament forbidden. 320
Traylebaston. 322. 340. 371
Tanners sonne claimed the crowne. 335
Theeues in habit of friers. 337

Thomas of Lancaſter beheaded. 340
Turniament at Dertford. 357. in cheape. 358
Tower Royall in London. 463
Three ſchiſmaticall Popes. 564
Tower of Greenwich. 619
Thomas Wilde Eſquire pardoned. 636
Tower of London beſieged. 678
The Brake or Racke in the Tower. 697
Tower of London yeelded to the maior of London. 702
Thomas the baſtard Faulconbridge beſieged London. 704.
beheaded. 707
Thomas Burdet beheaded. 715
T. Burdet eſquire of Arrow. 759
Truce with Scotland. 781. 791
Tree of common wealth. 818
Thomas Wolſey Cardinall his aſcending, &c. 834
T Wolſey ſuppreſſed priories. 880
T. Cromwell his councell. 922. his comfort. 924. 925. his riſing. 930 946. 952. 966. knight of the Garter. 968.
Earle of Eſſex. 974. beheaded. 976
T. Moore chancelor. 931. diſcharged. 943. beheaded. 963
Tower of London repaired. 944
Thomas Audley L. Chancelor. 943
T. Beckets ſhrine taken downe and his bones brent, 970
Thomas lord Howard ſent to the Tower. 966. died. 969
T. Fines lord Dacres of the South arraigned. 979
Terme kept at S. Albons. 985
Thomas Howard D. of Norffolke and H. earle of Surrey ſent to the Tower. 997
Thomas L. *Grey* beheaded. 1016
T. Stafford tooke Scarborow Caſtle, beheaded. 1067
Terme at Weſtminſter ſmall. 1069
Treatie of peace about the deliuery of Calcis. 1073
Tempeſt at Nottingham. 1073
T. Finch knight drowned. 1108
Terme kept at Hertford. 1113
Thamis frozen ouer. 1115
T. Howard D. of Norffolke ſent to the Tower. 1123
Thomas Earle of Suſſex Lieutenant in the North againſt the rebels, the earle of Warwike ſent againſt them, they fled, rebels executed at Durham. 1125. *Leonard Dacres* fled into Scotland. 1125. Earle of Suſſex made a iourney into Scotland. 1126
Tilt boate drowned. 1152
T. Apletree his trayterous fact. 1161
Thomas Bromley lord Chancelor. 1161
Two men of ſtraage ſtature. 1168
Terme kept at Hertford. 1170
Thomas Ratcliffe Earle of Suſſex deceaſed. 1174
Thomas Cauendiſh his voyage. 1204
Thomas Bromley L. Chancelor died. 1241
Thames nigh voide of water. 1271
Tilt boate drowned. 1271
Terme kept at Hertford, 1272
Triumph at London for good ſucceſſe on the ſea and at Cadez. 1288
Tempeſt in the Church of Wels. 1299
Tilt boate drowned. 1305

V

Vineyardes in Britaine. 43
Vrſula and the virgins. 49
Vlfercester. 84
Vlfere ſlew his ſonnes. 84
Vlfinus Spilcorne. 129
Vicount of Milaine his confeſſion. 361
Vſury forbidden. 305
Victuals prized. 335
Vſe of Guns. 335
Vfford Earle of Suffolke, lacky to ſir *Roger de Bois.* 464. died ſodainly. 471
Victorie againſt the Iriſh. 1165
Voyage to Portingale. 1263
Vulfrunhamton brent. 1264
Vnruly youthes executed at the Tower hill. 1280

W

WAles. 6
Wincheſter. 14. Monaſtery. 96. ſpoyled. 100. Biſhop his ſaying. 110. brent. 210
Waies notable. 18
Walbroke. 44
Wepped fleete. 56
Wight an Iland. 71
Weſtminſter. 78. 128
Worceſter. 85
Winchelcombe. 89. 107
Weſt Saxons. 94
Wodnesbury. 97
Wels a Colledge. 97. a Biſhops ſea. 98
Ware. 104. builded. 106
Wodneſſield. 106
Wulfrunehampton. 106. Colledge founded. 114
Witham. 106
Wigmore. 106
Warwike. 107
Watersbury. 107
Warwell. 110. Warwell founded. 114
Wilton. 128. brent. 211
William Duke of Normandy arriued in England. 130. crowned. 135. his othe. 136. conquered Ely. 152. he waſted France, and fell ſicke. 167. his gift to the Abbey of Cane, his words before his death, and Confeſſion. 167. he held not England by right of inheritance, but by conqueſt, he commendeth his prelates, counſelleth his children. 171. of his ſonne *Robert*, commendeth *William*, gift to *Henry* and words to him. 172. his ſons left him, to helpe themſelues, he releaſed all priſoners except his brother *Odo*, his ſodaine deceaſe. 174. body deſpoyled left naked, buried by a poore ſouldier. 175. towne of Cane fiered, ſermon at his buriall, his buriall forbidden till his graue were purchaſed. 176 his laſt farewell with a foule ſauor, and could not bee found vncorrupted. 500. yeeres after his death (as ſome haue fabuled) his monument defaced, bones broken and diſperſed, his iſſue. 177. his treaſure giuen to the poore. 178
William Biſhop of London, his Epitaph. 142
Weremouth burned. 149
W. his offering at Ely. 152
Wichford in Grantbridge ſhire. 152
Waltheofe or *Walden* beheaded. 154
William Conqueror curſeth his ſonne *Robert*. 157. his oration to his Nobles. 162
Water flouds. 165. 189
Wels a Riuer by London. 165
Walbroke. 165
Weſtminſter hall. 187
William Rufus, crowned, price of his hoſen iij. s. his nobles rebell. 178 abuſes of his time. 179. he inuadeth his elder brother *Robert*, his brother *H.* inuadeth him. 182. he inuaded Wales, his cruelties. 185. his worde. 189. ſlaine. 189
W. Earle Morton diſherited. 192

Windsor towne and Castle. 194. Colledge. 205. wine made at Windsor. 205
Watwike with the Colledge. 201
Worcester Citie and Monastery brent. 196
Watham Castle besieged. 211
Wallingford besieged. 209. 212
Worcester brent and wasted. 209. besieged. 213
Waltham Abbey. 226
William Longshampe B. of Ely. 234. put to his shifts. 236
William with the beard, seditious, a false accuser of his brother, &c. 240
William Longespe Earle of Salisbury. 241
Welch men did homage. 250. inuade England, their pledges hanged. 252
Wrastling at London, a tumult there. 269
Women monstrous. 284
William Winchelsey drowned. 287
Wales subdued to the lawes of England. 287
Worcester besieged. 255
Westcheape in London brent. 297
Water flouds. 307. 311. 361. 538
Wales subdued, deuided into shires. 309
Windsor Castle burned. 316
William. Wales of Scotland. 322
Wheate forbidden to be made into malt. 336
William Stapleton B. of Excester beheaded. 346
Wooll forbidden to be transported. 364
William de la Poole made knight Banaret. 368
Wight assayled by the French. 370. 534 535
William Mounsacute Earle of Salisbury crowned king of Man. 373
Wooll granted to the king. 375
Walter Mayny knight. 385. deceased. 425
Walter Bentley. 396
Wooll staples in England. 398, at Caleis. 418. in England. Page. 423
Windsor Castle enlarged. 416
Winchelsey Inuaded by the French. 416
William B. of Winchester. 421. depriued. 429. 431. recouereth. 436. Chancelor of England. 489. his Colledge. Page. 538
Whot sommer. 428
Wicliffe John 431. 450. died, and his letters testimoniall of him from Oxford. 474
Wight taken by the French. 443
Winchelsey defended from the French. 443. taken by them. 449
Wheate and wine cheape. 448
Whirlecote to ride in. 457
William Walworth Maior of London arrested *Wat Tiler* and wounded him. 461. relieued the king, and was knighted. 462
Water flouds. 495
Westminster hall repayred. 514
Witch of Eye brent. 628
William Lichfield preacher. 636
William de la Poole Duke of Suffolke banished and murthered. 639
William Ascoth B. of Salisbury murthered. 647
Wheate for xij. the quarter. 957
Walter Walker beheaded for a word speaking. 689
William Stanley beheaded. 799
William Capell put in suite. 800
Wine, salt, and wheate cheape. 805
Weathercocke of Paules blowne downe. 811
Warre betweene the Emperor and French king. 864
Waters great. 886
Wauering of newfangled multitude. 920
Wolsey Cardinall sicke. 929. lay at Richmond 933. his last Maundy. 934. prepared for his stanlation. 935. arrested. 937
William Fitz Williams knight, treasurer of the kings house. Page. 934
Westminster and Bristow made Bishoprickes. 980
White meates licensed to be eaten in Lent. 983
Wight inuaded by the French. 992
William Foxley slept more then 14. daies, and as manie nights. 995
Weathercocke of Paules. 1043
William lord Howard lieutenant of the Citie. 1046
William Thomas executed. 1050
William Flower brent at Westminster. 1059
Warre with France. 1068
William Geffrey a fayned Christ whipped. 1095
William Pawlet lord treasurer deceased. 1136
William lord Howard Baron of Effingham, lord priuy seale deceased. 1140
William lord Somerset Earle of Worcester sent into France. 1140. robbed on the sea. 1141
Walter Deuereux Earle of Essex sent into Ireland. 1146. died. 1153
Water flouds great. 1162
William Bruister and *Mary Breme* smouldred to death. 1173
W. *Parrey* executed. 1180
Wall falling slew fiue persons. 1187
Women brent in Smithfield. 1271. 1275. 1279
Windes great. 1274
Water flouds great. 1277
W. *Cecill* lord treasurer deceased. 1303
Windes boisterous. 1305

Y

YOrke builded. 13. cathedrall Church. 91. Yorke besieged. 259
Yoonger brother beguileth the elder (ofte.) 192
Yorke minster burned. 207 Citie brent. 227
Yarmouth and Dunwich spoyled. 308
Yarmouth. 386
Yorke monastery repayred. 227
Yorke minster burned. 695

FINIS.

fertur si [illegible] Iupiter pedem dextrum eiymo[illegible]
sit potius nobis Anglia terra fuit

TO THE RIGHT REVEREND FATHER IN GOD MY LORD ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBVRIE, PRIMATE AND METROPOLITANE OF AL ENGLAND, AND ONE OF her Maiesties most honorable priuie Councell,

IOHN STOVV wisheth increase as well of *all heauenly graces, as worldly blessings.*

TIS NOW NIGH FORTY yeeres (Right reuerend Father) since I first addressed al my cares and cogitations to the studie of Histories and search of Antiquities: the greatest part of which time I haue diligently imploied in collecting such matters of this kingdome, as I thought most woorthie to be recommended both to the present and succeeding age. These laborious collections in so long a time haue now at length grown into a large volume, which I was willing to haue committed to the presse, had not the Printer, for some priuate respects, been more desirous to publish Annales at this present. Wherein I haue condescended to him to publish these, which I submit to your gratious and graue consideration, and to the censure of the courteous Reader and learned Antiquaries: relying wholy vpon this comfort, that the truth and credit of my Authors is in no point iniuried, how simple and naked soeuer the stile may be iudged. Neither doe I doubt but they may haue free passage in the world, if they be countenanced vnder your honora-

ble name and protection. Vnto whom I offer, and with al dutifull affection I dedicate both my ſelfe and them: being hereunto induced, both for that your woorthy predeceſſor, and my eſpeciall benefactor Archbiſhop PARKER animated me in the courſe of theſe ſtudies, which otherwiſe I had long ſince diſcontinued; and alſo that your great loue and entire affection to all good letters in generall, and to the Antiquities in particular hath beene ſo ſingular, that all which like and loue good ſtudies, doe iuſtly eſteeme you their principall and gratious patrone.

Thus hoping of your fauourable acceptance of this, as but part of that which I intended in a more large volume, I humbly take my leaue.

London this 24. of Nouember 1600.

To the gentle Reader.

Mongst other Bookes which are in this our learned age published in great numbers, there are few, either for the honestie of the matter, or commoditie which they bring to the Common wealth, or for the pleasantnes of the study & reading, to be preferred before the Chronicles and Historics. What examples of men deseruing immortalitie, of exploites woorthy great renowne, of vertuous liuing of the posteritie to be imbraced, of wise handling of weightie affaires, diligently to be marked and aptly to bee applied: what incouragement of Nobilitie to noble feates, what discouragement of vnnaturall subiects from wicked treasons, pernitious rebellions, and damnable doctrines: to conclude, what perswasion to honestie, godlines and vertue of all sorts, what dissuasion from the contrarie is not plentifully in them to bee found? So that it is as hard a matter for the Readers of Chronicles, in my fansie, to passe without some colours of wisedome, inuitements to vertue, and loathing of naughty facts, as it is for a well fauoured man to walke vp and downe in the hote parching sunne, and not to be therewith sun-burned. They therefore which with long studie, earnest good will, and to their great costs and charges haue brought hidden Histories from duskie darkenesse to the sight of the world, and haue beene diligent obseruers of Common wealths, and noted for the posteritie the fleeting maners of the people, and accidents of the times: deserue (as the least) thankes for their paines, and to be misreported of none, seeing they haue laboured for all. I write not this to complaine of some mens ingratitude towardes me (although iustly I might) but to shew the commodities which ensue of the reading of Histories, that seeing they are so great and so many, all men would (as they ought) imploy their diligence in the honest, fruitfull, and delectable perusing of the same, and so to account of the Authors, as of men carefull for their Countrie: and to confesse, if neede require, by whome they haue taken profite.

Note that the vngrateful backbiter slayeth three at once, himselfe by his owne malice, him that creditteth his false tales, and him that the backbiteth.

It is nowe nigh forty yeeres since (I seeing the confuse order of our late English Chronicles, and the ignorant handling of ancient affaires) leauing mine owne peculiar gaines, consecrated my selfe to the search of our famous Antiquities. What I haue done in them before time, the former editions of my Summarie, and other my Chronicles, as also of other mens, wherein I haue bestowed no small labours, may well testifie, but how farre (be it spoken without arrogancie) I haue laboured for the truth more than some other, this last edition (an abstract of a farre larger worke which I haue gathered, and meant to haue published) will euidently declare. Wherein, that I differ from the inordinate and vnskilfull collections of other men, it is no maruell, seeing that I do not fully agree with my selfe, as some malicious persons haue fondly

fondly charged me: but let it be considered, that there is nothing perfect at the first, and that it is incident to mankinde to erre and slippe some times, but onely the point of fantasticall fooles, to persever and continue in their errors. Wherefore, seeing that the perusing of ancient Records and best approoued Histories of all times (not without great difficultie obtained) doe not onely moove me, but for their authority driue me to acknowledge both mine and other mens errors, and in acknowledging to correct them, I trust to obtaine thus much at your hands, that at the least you will call to remembrance a most gentle and wise lawe of the politike Persians, wherein it was enacted, that a man accused to be in their lawes a trespasser, and found guilty of the crime, should not straightway be condemned, but after a diligent inquirie and search of his whole life and conuersation (no slaunder imputed vnto him as of importance) if the number of his laudable facts did counteruaile the contrarie, he was full quit of the trespasse. The same law doe I wish the Readers of these my Chronicles to put in vre, that if the errors be not so plentifull, as Histories truly alleadged, they will beare with them: for as I promised, so haue I tried all matters woorthy of immortalitie, by the certaine touchstone of best allowed Historiographers: and yet notwithstanding, some faults by misprinting haue escaped the correction, which easily may be seene and amended by the diligent Reader.

A BRIEFE DESCRIPTION OF ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, WALES, AND CORNWALL.

BRITAINE, or Brutanne which by two names is called England and Scotland, is an Iland in the Ocean Sea, situate right ouer against France: one part of which Ile Englishmen do inhabit, another part Scots, the third part Walshmen, and the fourth part Cornishmen. All they either in language, conditions, or lawes, doe differ among themselues.

England (so called of Englishmen, which did winne the same) is the greatest part, and is diuided into xl. Counties, which wee call Shires: whereof tenne (that is to say) Kent, Sussex, Surrey, Southampton, Barkshire, Wiltshire, Dorsetshire, Somersetshire, Deuonshire and Cornwall, doe containe the first part of that Iland: which part bounding toward the South, standeth betweene the Thames and the Sea. Fourtie Counties or Shires.

From thence to the riuer of Trent, which passeth through the middest of England be sixteene shires, whereof the first fiue (standing Eastward) are Essex, Middlesex, Hartfordshire, Suffolke, Northfolke, and Cambridge shire: the other ten which stand more in the middle of the Country are these: Bedforde, Huntingdon, Buckingham, Oxford, Northampton, Rutland, Leicester, Nottingham, Warwicke, & Lincolne. After these there be fiue which border Westward vpon Wales, as Glocester, Hereford, Worcester, Shropshire, Stafford, Chester, & Monmouth. About the middle of the Region lie Darbishire, Yorkshire, Lancashire, and Cumberland. On the left hand toward the West is Westmerland. Against the same is the Bishoprieke of Durham, & Northumberland, which boundeth vpon the North in the Marches of Scotland.

These shires be diuided into xvii. Bishoprickes, which by a Greeke worde, be called Dioceses. Of which Dioceses, Canterburie hath Kent. Rochester hath part of Kent. London hath Essex, Middlesex, and part of Hartford. Chichester hath Sussex. Winchester hath Hampshire, Surrey, & the Ile of Wight. Salisburie hath Barkeshire, and Wiltshire. Exceter hath Deuonshire and Cornwall. Bathe and Wels hath Somersetshire. Worcester hath Worcestershire, and part of Warwickshire. Glocester hath Glocestershire. Hereford hath part of Shropshire, and Herefordshire. Couentrie and Lichfield hath Staffordshire, Darbishire, part of Warwickshire, & part of Shropshire. Lincolne which is the greatest, lying betweene the Thames and Humbre, hath Lincolne, Leycester, Huntington, Bedford, Buckingham, and the residue of

Hartfordſhire. Ely hath Cantabrigeſhire, and the Iſle of Ely. Norwich hath Suffolke and Norffolke, and part of Cantabrigeſhire. Oxford hath Oxfordſhire. Peterborow hath Northamptonſhire and Rutland. Baſſelowe hath Dorſetſhire. And this is the prouince of the Archbiſhop of Canterburie, which is the Primate of all England, with Wales. The Archbiſhop of Yorke, hath Yorkeſhire, Nottinghamſhire, and a peece of Lancaſhire. The Biſhop of Durham hath the Biſhoprick ſo commonly called, and Northumberland. Cheſter hath Cheſhire, moſt part of Lancaſhire, Richmonde, part of Flintſhire, and part of Denbighſhire. Carliſle containeth Cumberland and Weſtmerland: and this is the other Prouince of the Archbiſhop of Yorke, which is another Primate of England, & was of long time alſo Primate of all Scotland: but theſe Dioceſes take their names of the Cities where thoſe Seas bee placed, the chiefe whereof, is London, where in the beginning was the Archbiſhops Sea, but afterwardes tranſpoſed to Canterbury, a citie in Kent, placed in a ſoile amiable and pleaſant.

The Riuer of Thamis.

London ſtandeth in Middleſex, on the North ſide of the Thames. That moſt excellent and goodlie Riuer hath firſt the name of Iſe, and beginneth in Cotelwolde in Glocetterſhire, about a mile from Titbery, and as much from the hie way called Foſſe: and it taketh firſt the name of Tamiſe, nere to Dorcetter bridge, where the Riuer Tame and the foreſaid Iſe meete, and ſo with a marueilous quiet courſe it paſſeth by London, and then breaketh into the French Ocean by maine tydes, which twiſe in foure and twentie houres ſpace doth ebbe and flowe more then threeſcore miles, to the great commoditie of trauellers, by which all kindes of Marchandiſe be eaſily conueied to London, the principall ſtore and ſtaple for all commodities within this Realme. Upon the

London bridge.

ſame Riuer is placed a ſtone bridge, a worke verie rare and marueilous, which bridge hath (reckoning the draw bridge) twentie arches made of foureſquare ſtone, of height threeſcore foote, and of breadth thirty foote, diſtant one from another twentie foote, compact and ioined together with vaults & cellers: Upon both ſides be houſes builded, ſo it ſeemes rather a continual ſtreet then a bridge.

The Ocean ſea doeth bound England, the firſt part of Britaine, Eaſt and South, Wales & Cornwall Weſt. The Riuer of Twede diuideth England and Scotland, North. The length of the Iſlande beginneth at Portſmouth in the South part, and endeth at Twede in the North, containing 320. miles.

This Realme aboue other is moſt fruitefull on this ſide Humbre: for beyond it is fuller of mountaines. And although to the beholders of that Countrey a farre off, it maie ſeeme plaine, yet it is full of manie hilles, and thoſe for the moſt part voide of trees, the valleis whereof bee verie delectable, inhabited for the moſt part by noble men, who according to ancient and olde order, deſire not to dwell in Cities, but nere vnto valleis and riuers in ſeuerall villages, for auoiding of vehement windes, becauſe that Iſland naturally is ſtormie.

The Riuer of Humber.

Humbre hath his beginning a little on this ſide Yorke, and by and by runneth Southward, and then holdeth his courſe Eaſt ward, and ſo into the maine ſea, greatly encreaſed by the riuers of Dune and Trent.

Trei

Trent beginneth a little from Staffoꝛd, running thꝛough Darbiſhire, and Leiceſterſhire, paſſing by Lichfield and Nottingham on the right hande, and Dune on the left hand: ſo that both thoſe Riuers doe make an Ilande which is called Auxolme, and then ioyning together on this ſide Kingſtone vpon Hull, a godly marchant towne, they fall into Humbꝛe: by which Riuer they may aꝛriue out of France, Germanie and Denmarke. The Riuer of Trent.

England is fruitfull of beaſts, and aboundeth with cattell: whereby the inhabitants be rather foꝛ the moſt part graſiers then plowmen, becauſe they giue themſelues moꝛe to fæding, then to tillage. So that almoſt the third part of the Countrey is emploied to cattell, Dœre red and fallowe, Goates, (whereof there be ſtoꝛe in the Noꝛth parts) and Conies: foꝛ euerie where there is ſolly maintenance of thoſe kindes of beaſts, becauſe it is full of great woods: whereof there riſeth paſtime of hunting, greatly exerciſed, ſpecially by the Nobility and Gentlemen. (Andrew Bourd ſaith, there be moe Parkes in England then in all Europe beſide.) Andrew Bourd.

Scotland another part of Bꝛytaine, (whereof in this place I haue thought good to treat at large, that no further mention of the ſituation thereof might be made hereafter) beganne ſometime at the hill called Grampius, nowe called Gꝛantelbeine ſtretching to the furtheſt coaſt Noꝛthward, but after the ouerthꝛowe of the Picts, it beganne at the Riuer Twede, and ſometimes at the Riuer of Tyne, the foꝛtune of warres altering the ſame, as it doeth all other thinges. Wheꝛefoꝛe the length of Scotland from Twede to the furtheſt coaſt, is eſtæmed to be 480. miles: but as Scotland is longer then England, ſo it is narrowe, and endeth like a wedge. Foꝛ the mountaine Grampius is euill fauoured and craggie, which Tacitus in the life of Iulius Agricola doth remember, peaꝛcing thꝛough the bowels of Scotland, from the coaſt of the Germaine ſea, that is to ſay, from the mouth of the Riuer of Dœ to the Iriſh ſea, euen to the lake of Lomunde, which lieth betwæne that countrey and the ſame hill. Scotland. Cornelius Tacitus.

The Riuer of Twede (which ſpꝛingeth out of a little hill, not farre beyonde Noꝛboꝛough) is mingled with the Germaine Ocean, ioyning Southwarde with that countrey which is called the Marches, being the Eaſt boundes betwæne England and Scotland. The ſaide Riuer of Twede ſeparateth the Marches from Noꝛthumberland, the furtheſt Countrey of England, hauing pꝛoſpect to the Germaine ſea, the chiefe towne whereof is Barwike, nowe in poſſeſſion of the Engliſh.

The Weſterne limit of Scotland whilom was Cumberland, which the Riuer of Solue diuideth from Annandale. Betwæne theſe two Regions the Cheuiot hilles appeare. Nert to the Marches Picland boꝛdereth, nowe tearmed Loughdean, bounding vpon the Eaſt, a verie hillie Countrey, barreine almoſt of anie trées. The moſt famous townes of the ſame bee Dunbarre, Badington, Leith, Noꝛthberwicke, and Edenboꝛough the Kinges ſeate, where alſo is the Caſtell of Paydens, a verie ſtrong and defenſible place. The ſame citie the riuer of Foꝛthea (commonly called the Frith) doth water & paſſe by: which being caried into the Germane Ocean, maketh great armes oꝛ meres, commonly called the Scottiſh ſea; wherein beſides other is the Ilande

of Saint Columbe, by name called Aemonia. The ſame riuer againe deuideth from Loughdean a countrey adioyning (abundant of all thinges) called the Fiſe, in which country are many townes, as Donfermile, Cupre, but the notable towne of Saint Andrew, ſpecially famous for the Vniuerſitie, and beautified with the Sea of the Archbiſhop and Primate of all Scotland. On the other ſide towardes the Iriſh ſide Northward, is Nidiſdalia, ſo called of the Riuer that paſſeth thereby, where be the ſtrong townes of Douglaſſe and Donfriese.

Upon the South adioyneth Galloway, more aboundant of fodder for Cattel, then of Wheate, where is the Towne of Candida Caſa, nowe called Whitherne, and the anetent Temple of ſaint Ninian, adorned alſo with an Epiſcopal Sea. In thoſe partes beſides the towne of Wighton is a lake of a wonderfull nature, becauſe the one ſide in Winter doth freeſe, and the other not. By that ſtandeth the countrey of Caricta, once renowmed with the Towne Caricton, whereof perchance it toke the name. Aboue Caricta towardes the Weſt, is Elgonia (by which name Ptoleme calleth the countrey) bordering vpon the Ocean, wherein is the lake Lomunde, which is verie broad and large, containing manie Ilands, ſituate at the foote of the mountaine Grantelbeine, eight miles from the caſtell of Donbryton, beſides the riuer Bodotria, nowe named Leuinus, entring into the Riuer of Glota or Glude. Here ſome do contend that the name of Bodotria is not well applied to Leuinus, becauſe it appeareth by Cornelius Tacitus, that Bodotria and Glota haue ſundry paſſages into the ſea, and are clearely diſtempt one from the other, as Leuinus and Glota, are not: wherefore they iudge rather the Riuer now called the Frith to be that which of old time had to name Bodotria, and to proue the ſame they adde many other reaſons, which here I omit. But a good ſpace on this ſide Grampius riſeth the Riuer of Taus, the greateſt in all Scotland, taking his name of a lake from whence it ſpringeth, which falleth by Atholia and Calidonia by manie places, but chiefely by Perthum nowe called Saint Johns towne, and laſtly by Dunde, in time paſt called Alectum, and there breaketh into the German ſea, and at the mouth forceth great effuars or armes of the ſea, whereof Tacitus maketh mention. Againſt Taus is Anguiſe, which by meanes of that riuer is fertile and proſperous, and is deuided from Fiſe.

To the ſame vpon the North adioyneth Athol, not the barrenneſt countrey, as well for water as for plentie of ſoile. On the other ſide Argaile ſheweth it ſelfe, which being full of lakes, yeeldeth greater plentie of fodder then frutte, whoſe vttermoſt bounds ſtretch ſo farre, as Ireland is not diſtant paſt ſixteene miles, about which the promontorie or foreland called Lands head ſtandeth. That coaſt whilome the Silures did inhabite, as Polidor gathereth by theſe wordes of Plinie in his 4. booke, the 16. chapter.

Ireland being ſituate ouer againſt Brytaine, is diſtant from the nation of Silures by the ſhorteſt cut twentie miles. Howbeit, ſome other, for that it is manifeſt by the ſame Plinie in the ſame Chapter, and alſo by other writers, that Brytaine was not in his time well knowne ſo farre North, ſuppoſe hee meant not by this, that the Silures ſhould inhabite Argaile, but rather South-

Wales,

Wales, from whence the passage ouer was better knowen (and as hee might haue vnderstanding) shortest. Where also as well Tacitus as Antoninus séeme to place that people.

Betwéene Argile and Leniox Westward lieth the Countrey of Sterling, so called by a towne there. Here the forrest of Calidonia began on the left side, which within stretcheth farre and broad. This forrest sometimes bredde white Bulles, long maned like Lyons, which were so wilde as they could not bee tamed, but because the flesh was pleasant and daintie to the mouth, the whole race of them almost is extinguished. There likewise is the Castle of Calydone, situate by Taus called Doucheldine. From a little hill of the forrest riseth Glota, or Cluid, which by a broad channell falleth into the Irish Ocean, for stayed in a manner by the bankes of the mountaine Grampius, it slideth into the Sea by great tides, so (as witnesseth Tacitus) the Romanes thought it to be another Iland. Of that riuer the Dale was called Gloteuale, which Countrey that Riuer runneth by: and in the same is the Citie of Glasco, a goodlie Vniuersitie.

Againe towardes the East is ioyned the Countrey of Anguish and Merne vpon the Sea coast, wherein Fordune by situation is verie strong, and for the reliques of S. Palladius the Scottish Apostle, famous.

Of the same side of Scotland, is the Countrey of Marre, garnished with a Citie called Aberdone, standing betwéene the two riuers of Dona and Dea, with a Schoole also adorned. Then followeth Morrey, which the two notable Riuers doe compasse about, called Nessa and Spea, At the mouth of this last Riuer, standeth the Towne of Elgin, about the banks whereof be huge woods replenished with all sortes of wilde beastes. There is a Lake also called Spina, stored with plentie of Swannes: but in the middle part standeth the broade Country of Rossia, now called Beane Rozen, stretching to the vttermost angle euen to both the Seas, and the further it goeth Eastward, the better it is inhabited. In the same is a bosome of the Sea, now and then so conuenient for Sailers, as commonly it is called the port of Health, (or the Hauen of Safety) and the towne Thana. The breadth of the Iland is verie short, for falling into the forme of a wedge, it is scant xxx. mile ouer, which defended with thrée promontories like towers, repelleth the great waues and surges of the Sea: and inuironed with two gulfes, which those promontories doe inclose, the entries be quiet and calme, and the water peaceable. The straite of that land is at this day called Cathanes, coasting vpon the Sea Deucalidon.

Thus much of the particulars of Scotland. But the same is in euerie place full of good Hauens and nauigable entries, Lakes, with Marshes, flouds, fountaines, verie full of fish, and mountaines, vpon the tops whereof be pleasant plaines, yéelding great store of grasse, and plentie of fodder for Cattell, woods likewise full of wilde beastes. That part of the land is well sustained with commodities, and therfore the people hard to be vanquished at any time, by reason the woods and Marshes be at hand for refuge, and hunger eased with venison and fish. Without Scotland in the Irish Seas, are manie Ilands nowe discouered, to the number of one hundred and fourtie; some of these in

length are thirtie miles, but in breadth not aboue twelue. Amongst them is Iona beautified with the Tombes of the Scottish kings. The Ilanders generally speake Irish, which declareth them to take their originall of the Irish nation. Beyond Scotland toward the North, be the Iles of Orchades, which (as Ptolomie saieth) bee threescore in number, some lying in the Deucalidon Sea, and some in the Germane Ocean, the principall of which Ilandes is Pamonia, because it is a Bishoppes Sea, and is vnder the gouernement of Scotland. The Ilanders vse the Gothes speech, which argueth them to proceede from the Germanes. They be tall of stature, but verie healthie and lustie of bodie and minde, liuing verie long, although their chiefest foode is fish, for the land almost continually beset with cold, in many places is not able to beare corne, and generally almost without tree or bush. Beyond the Orchades be the Ilandes of Scotland, vnder the king of Scots obedience, and beyond those standeth Thule, in the frosen sea now called Island, to which our marchants repaire for fishing once euerie yeare in the Summer. And thus much haue I to saie of the site of Scotland: now of the nature and manners of the people.

The Scots which inhabite in the Southerne part, be well nurtured, and liue in good ciuilitie, and the most ciuill vse the English speech. And for that wood there is geason and scant, their common fewell is of a blacke stone, which they dig out of the earth. The other part Northerne, and full of mountaines, a verie rude and homely kinde of people doth inhabite, which are called the Redshankes or wilde Scots. They be clothed with a mantell and shirte saffroned after the Irish maner, going bare legged to the knee. Their weapons are bowes and dartes, with a verie broad sword and a dagger, sharpe only at the one side. All speake Irish, feeding on fish, milke, cheese, and flesh, hauing a great number of Cattell. The Scots differ from the English in lawes and customes, because they vse the ciuill lawe as almost other Countries doe. The English haue their owne lawes and edictes. In certaine other conditions they be not farre vnlike, but their language is one, their habite and complexion like, one courage in battel, and in the Nobilitie one desire & pregnancie in hunting. The Countrey houses bee narrowe, couered with straw and reede, wherein the people and beastes doe lodge together. Their Townes besides Saint Johns Towne are vnwalled, which is to be ascribed to their animositie and hardinesse, fixing all their succour and helpe alwaie in the valiancie of their bodie. The Scottes are verie wise, as their learning declareth. For to whatsoeuer Art they do applie themselues, they easily profite in the same. But the idle and slouthful, and such chiefly as shun and auoide labour, liue in great pouerty, and yet will not sticke to boast of their nobilitie & gentrie, as though it were more semely for the honest to lacke, then comely (by exercise of some honest Arte) to get their liuing. But the Scots generally be deuoute obseruers of Religion. And thus much of Scotland.

Wales. Wales the third part of Brytaine lieth vppon the lefte hand, which like a Promontorie or foreland, or an Ile (as it were) on euerie side is compassed with the maine sea, except it be on the Southeast part with the Riuer of Sabrine,

bzine, commonly called Seuerne, which deuideth Wales from Englande, although some late writers affirme Hereford to be a bound betweene Wales and England, and say, that Wales beginneth at Chepstowe, where the Riuer Wey (augmented with an other Riuer called Lugge) passing by Herefozde, doth runne into the sea, which Riuer riseth in the middle of Wales out of that hill (but uncertaine whether out of that spzing that Sabzine doth,) foz euen to that place there goeth a great arme of the sea, which passing through the land westward, on the right hand leaueth Cozne wall, and on the left Wales: which Topographie oz description, although it bee newe, yet I thought good to followe. Therefoze Wales is extended from the Towne of Chepstowe, where it beginneth almost by a straight line a little aboue Shzowlburie, euen to Westchester Northward. Into that part, so manie of the Bzytaines as remained aliue after the slaughter and losse of their Countrey, at the length being dziuen to their shiftes, did repaire, as ancient wzitings repozt, where partly through refuge of the mountaines, and partlie of the woods and marishes, they remained in safetie: which part they enioy euen to this daie. That land afterwards the Englishmen did call Wales: and the Bzytaines the inhabitantes of the same, Walshmen: foz amongst the Germains, Walshman, signifieth a stranger, an alien, an outbozne oz strange man, that is, such a one, as hath a contrarie language from theirs, foz Wal in their tongue is called a stranger bozne, as an Italian oz Frenchman, which differ in spæch from the Germaine. Man signifieth *Homo*, which is a man in English. Therefoze Englishmen, a people of Germanie, after they had wonne Bzytaine, called the Bzytaines, which escaped after the destruction of their Countrey, after their Countrey manner, Walshmen, because they had another tongue oz spæch besides theirs: and the lande which they inhabited Wales, which name afterward both to the people and Countrey did remaine. By this meane the Bzytaines with their kingdome lost their name. But they which affirme that name to be deriued of their King oz Quæne, without doubt be deceiued. The Country soile towards the sea coast, and in other places in the valleis and plaines, is most fertile, which yældeth both to man and beast great plentie of fruite and grasse: but in other places foz the most part it is barraine and lesse fruitfull, because it lacketh tillage: foz which cause husbandmen doe liue hardly, eating Oaten cakes, and dzinking milke mixt with water. There be many Towns and strong Castles, and foure Bishopzickes, if the Bishopzicke of Herefozd bee counted in England, as the late Writers declare. The first Bishopzicke is Menene, so called of Meneua, which at this day they call Saint Dauids, a Citie verie auncient, situated vpon the sea coast, and boundeth Westward toward Ireland. Another is Landaffe, the third Bangoz, and the fourth Saint Asaph, which bee vnder the Archbishop of Canterburie. The Walshmen haue a language from the Englishmen, which (as the saie that fetch their pedegræ from the Troians) doth partly sounde of the Troian antiquitie, and partly of the Gzæke. But howsoeuer it is, the Walshmen do not pzonounce their spæch so pleasantly and gently as the Englishmen do, because they speake moze in the thzoate: and contrariwise, the Englishmen rightly following

This arme of the Sea, as I iudge, is now called Auft, where is a passage betweene the village of Auft and Chepstowe.

Giraldus Cambrensis.

Foure Bishops in Wales.

lowing the Latines, doe expresse their voice somewhat within the lips, which to the hearers seemeth pleasant and sweete. And thus much of Wales, the third part of Britaine.

Cornwall. Now followeth the fourth and last part of Britaine named Cornwall. This part beginneth on that side which standeth toward Spaine Westward: Toward the East, it is of breadth fourescore and ten miles, extending a little beyond S. Germains, which is a verie famous village, situate on the right hand vpon the Sea coast, where the greatest breadth of that Countrey is but twenty miles: for this parcell of land on the right hand is compassed with the coast of the maine Sea: and on the left hand with that arme of the Sea, which (as before is declared) parteth the land, and runneth vp to Chepstow, where the country is in forme of a horne: For at the first it is narrow, and then groweth broder a little beyond the said towne of S. Germain. Eastward it bordereth vpon England: West, South, and North, the maine sea is round about it: it is a very barren soile, yelding fruit more through trauell of the tillers and husbandmen, then through the goodnesse of the grounde: but there is great plentie of Lead and Tinne, in the myning and digging whereof doth specially consist the liuing and sustentation of the inhabitants. Their tongue is farre dissonant from English, but it is much like to the Walsh tongue, because they haue many words common to both tongues: yet this difference there is betwéen them, when a Walsh man speaketh, the Cornish man rather vnderstandeth many words spoken by the Walshman, then the whole tale he telleth; whereby it is manifest, that those three people doe vnderstand one another, in like maner as the Southern Scots doe perceiue and vnderstand the Northern. But it is a thing very rare and maruellous, that in one Iland there should be such variety of spéeches. Cornwall is in the Diocesse of Exceter, which was once worthie to be counted the fourth part of the Iland, for the contrarietie of the language. Afterwards the Normans, which constituted a kingdome of al those 3. parts, reckened Cornwall to be one of the Counties or shires of the Countrey. Thus much of the particular description of Britaine, that the whole bodie of the Realme (by the members) maie bee the better knowne to some peraduenture that neuer heard the same before.

Strabo lib. 4. The forme of the Iland is Triquetra, or three cornered, hauing three corners, or three sides: two whereof, that is to say, the corner toward the East, and the other toward the West (both extending Northwards) are the longest.

The third side which is the South side, is farre shorter then the other: for the Iland is greater of length then of breadth. And as in the other two partes is conteined the length, euen so in the last, the breadth, in which place the breadth beginneth: and so continuing from the South part to the North, it is but narrow. The first and right corner of which Iland Eastward, is in Kent, at Douer and Sandwich. From whence to Caleis or Boloigne in France, is the distance of thirty miles. From this Angle, which is against Fraunce, to the third Angle, which is in the North in Scotland, the maine whereof boundeth vpon Germanie, but no land séene, (and there the Ilande is like vnto a wedge euen at the very Angle of the lande in Scotland,) the length is seauen hundred miles. A-

gaine,

gaine, the length from this corner at Douer in Kent, to the vttermost part of Cornwall, being S. Michaels mount (which is the West part or West Angle) is supposed to bee three hundred miles. From this left Angle being the West part and the vttermost part of Cornwall, which hath a prospect towardes Spaine, in which part also standeth Ireland, situate betweene Brytaine and Spaine to the North Angle in the further part of Scotland, in which part the Iland doeth end, the length is eight hundred miles, in which part there be very good hauens, and safe harborroughes for shippes, and apt passages into Ireland, being not past one daies sayling: but the shorter passage is from Wales to Waterford, a towne in Ireland vpon the Sea coast, much like to that passage betweene Douer and Calais, or somewhat more: but the shortest passage of al, is out of Scotland. From this last Angle to Hampton, which is a Towne vpon the sea coast, with a hauen so called toward the South, and therefore called Southampton, betweene the Angles of Kent and Cornwall, they do measure by straight line the whole length of the Iland, and doe saie, that it containeth eight hundred miles, as the breath from Menenia or S. Dauids to Yarmouth, which is in the vttermost part of the Iland towardes the East, doth containe two hundred miles, for the breath of the Iland is in the South part, which part is the front and beginning of the land, and endeth narrow, or as it were in a streight. So the circuite or compasse of the Iland is, 1800. miles, which is 200. lesse then Cæsar doeth reckon or accompt.

Of

Of the first habitation of this Iland,

a short note to the Reader.

Genes. 10.

WHere it is recorded by the sacred and most auncient Historie, that after the vniuersall flood, the Isles of the Gentiles were diuided by the posterity of Iapheth the son of Noah, we doubt not but this Isle of Brytaine was also then peopled by his progenie, the history of whome, as it is to bee wished and appertinent to this purpose, so sith it is irrecouerable, not onely vnto vs, but also to other nations, I thinke it better to say nothing therein, then to set downe here Samothes, Magus, Sarron, Druys, and Bardus for his successours, which are vpholden and boulstered onely by the credite and authoritie of a newe small pamphlet falsely forged, & thrust into the world vnder the title of the ancient Historian *Berosus*. For that is the censure of all the best learned as concerning our common *Berosus*, which at his first appearing, about one hundred yeeres since, was partly suspect by *Lodouicus Viues*, afterward conuinced to be fabulous by the learned *Gas. Varrerius*, in a seuerall Treatise, and nowe vniuersally reiected of all skilfull Antiquaries, as a meere fable, vnworthy the name of *Berosus*. Therfore I dare not ground the beginning of our Historie vpon the credite thereof, vnlesse I would be preiudiciall to the truth, whereunto I leuell all my indeuour. I hope it shall be sufficient in this History for the Brytaines time, to follow the authoritie of the receiued Brytish History, which *Geoffrey* Archdeacon of *Monmouth* translated out of the Brytish tongue about 400. yeeres since, beginning with Brute, who after the progenie of Iapheth seemeth to be first discouerer, namer, and Ruler of this land. Yet before we enter into the Historie of Brute, it shall not bee impertinent to note here, that whereas *Pomponius Mela* mentioneth that one Hercules killed Albion a giant about the mouth of Rhosne in France, many learned men haue iudged the said Albion to haue ruled here, (sith the Greeke monuments doe alway call this Isle *Albion*,) and after his death that Hercules came hither, *Lilius Giraldus* writeth. An ancient Altar also containing the inscription of a vow found in the vttermost North part of Brytaine 1500. yeeres since, as *Solinus* reporteth, plainly prooued that Vlysses the renowmed Græcian in his tenne yeeres trauels, after the sacking of Troy, arriued in this our countrey.

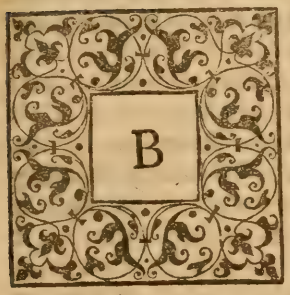
Lodouicus Viues, Gasparus Varrerius.

Nicol. Perotus. Lilius Giraldus. Solinus.

And thus much is found onely in approued Histories, as concerning Brytaine before the arriuall of Brutus.

The

The race of the Kinges of Brytaine after the common *receiued opinion since* Brute, *&c: and in the margent are placed* the yeeres before Christ his birth, when euery King began their raignes, till *Cunobelinus*, in whose time Christ the Sauiour of the worlde was borne, and then following, the yeeres from Christ his birth are placed.



BRVTE the sonne of Syluius, the sonne of Ascanius the sonne of Aeneas, after the death of his father, being banished into Grèece, deliuered there the remnant of the Troians from the long captiuitie, wherein they were deteined vnder the Grecians, with whom he departed thence for to sèeke some habitation: and associating to himselfe Corineus with his Troians whome he found in the waie, after a long and wearie iourney, and manie notable actes atchieued in Aquitaine, hee arriued in this Iland, which was called Albion at a place nowe called Totnes in Deuonshire, the yeere of the world, 2855. the yéere before Christes natiuitie, 1108. wherein hee first beganne to raigne, and named it Brytaine (as some write) or rather after his owne name Brutaine, as Aethicus that wonderfull Philosopher (a Scythian by race, but an Illirian by Countrey) translated by Saint Hierom aboue a thousand yéeres past, termeth both it and the Iles adiacent *Insulas Brutanicas*. And for more proofe of this restored name, not onely the said Philosopher (who trauelled through many landes, and in this land taught the knowledge of mynerall workes) may be alleadged, but sundrie other, as the Sibils Oracles, wherein the name of the Brytaines is written with y that is the Grèekes little u, which Oracles although they were not the Sibils owne worke, as some suspect, yet are they verie auncient indèede, and that they might sèeme more auncient, vse the most auncient name of Countries and peoples. And some English writers more then two hundred yéeres since, vsuallie doe name it Brutaine, and not otherwise, through a large historie of this lande, translated out of French. Brute builded the citie of new Troy, now called London, hee stablished therein the Troian lawes, and gaue the vttermost Westerne part of the Realme to his companion Corineus, of whose name it was called Corinea, and to this date Cornewall. Iohn Harding saieth, that Brute bare Gules, two Lyons rampant endorsed Or. Also a banner vert, a Diana of gold stitchel crowned and inthronized, that were Aeneas armes, when he entred the land of Latins. Iohn Han-uile in Architrenio, and Nicholas Vpton, and other our auncient Heraults saie hee bare Or, a Lyon passant, Gules, &c. Manie are desirous (saieth Aeneas Siluius) to knowe howe the name of Heraults came first in vse, who first ordeined them, and what office, and authority they beare amongst men. Of the which thing I once stoode in doubt my selfe: but

1108 Gaufride.

Aethicus.

Oracula Sibil.

I. Mandeuil.

Iohn Harding.

Iohn Hanuile. Nicholas Vpton.

Aeneas Siluius.

Beginning of Heraulds.

but as the nature of man is to desire knowledge of many things, and seking to be satisfied therein, I found in the reuestrie, or treasurie of S. Paules Church in London, (in anno 1451.) an olde history written (as the Title did specifie) 600. yeares before. Which if it be true, it may both satisfie my desire, and others in the premisses: the Authour of the booke, was Thucydides the Grecian, but the translatours name was not therein noted: but truly it was right eloquently set forth in the Latine tongue. The content of the wordes I doe not nowe well remember, but the tenure of the sentence, was well neere in this sort, as I shall declare. Heraulds be they, which our Elders were wont to call Heroes, that is to saie, those which were greater or surpassing all men in maiestie, and yet inferiours to the gods. For whom the people of antiquity did perceiue to be notable, and surmounting all others in his acts, and feates, renowned in vertues, and friendly, or gracious vnto them: him would they magnifie and exalt in the highest degree, and as it were, with their good words make them cousins to God almightie, placing them amongst the Gods, if it so were, that they had wrought some miraculous feate aboue the common course of nature. But if there were no such miraculous or wonderfull dædes, but that through their vertues they semed wonderfull and honourable: then thought they to call such persons, not altogether gods, nor yet simple men, but inuented out a meane worde and name for them, calling them Heroes, as it were halfe gods. And of this worde Heroes or Heros, groweth by corruption of vse this name Herauld. Albeit some saie that those Heroes were olde souldiers, that had spent all their age welneere in the warres: out of the which sort the Heraulds ought to be chosen, and so the terme Herauld semeth to bee a Dutch worde, and to sounde as much as an olde souldier, or man of war. But the first that begunne and ordeyned this order, was Dionysius, the which was the first also that inuaded India with an armed power, and gathered the rude people there together, which liued in woodes and desartes like wilde beastes, feeding on leaues, barkes of trees, and rawe flesh: teaching them to liue after a ciuile order and fashion: also to build Townes and villages, to worship the gods, to till and plowe the earth, to plant vineyards, and make wine, to weare apparel, to anoint and trim their bodies, and to be short, to liue after a humaine maner. And now following the common opinion, after Geffrey Monmouth.

Brute deuided the whole Iland among his three sonnes, which hee had by Innogen his wife, Locrine, Camber, and Albanact. Vnto Locrine he gaue the middle part betweene Humber and Seuerne, which of him was called Loegria. To Camber he gaue all the region beyond Seuern, which of him tooke the name of Cambria, and is now called Wales. To Albanact he gaue all the landes beyond Humber, which of his name was called Albania: after which partition he deceased, when he had raigned foure and twenty yeares, and was buried at new Troy.

1084. Gaufride.

LOcrine, the eldest sonne of Brute, reigned twentie yeares: hee chased the Hunnes, which inuaded this realme: and pursued them so sharply, that many of them with their king, were drowned in a riuer which then parted England and Scotland. And for so much as the king of Hunnes, named Humber, was

was there drowned, the riuer is til this day named Humber. This king Locrine had to wife Guendoline, daughter of Corineus, Duke of Cornwall, by whome he had a sonne named Madan. He also kept as Paramour, the beautiful Lady Estrilde, by whom he had a daughter named Sabrine. And after the death of Corineus, he put from him the saide Guendoline, and wedded Estrilde: but Guendoline repaired to Cornwall, where shee gathered a great power, and fought with King Locrine, and slewe him. He was buried at new Troy. She drowned the Lady Estrilde, with her daughter Sabrine in a riuer, that after the yong maidens name is call Seuerne.

How Humber tooke that name.

Seuerne.

1064. Gwendoline a Queene raigned. Gaufride. Flores Historiar.

GVendoline the daughter of Corineus and wife to Locrine (forsomuch as Madan her sonne was too yong to gouerne the land) was by common assent of all the Brytains, made ruler of the whole Ile of Brytan, which she wel and discreetlie ruled, to the comfort of her subiects, fiftéen yeares, and then left the same to her sonne Madan.

1049. The king deuoured by Wolues.

MAdan, the Sonne of Locrine and Guendoline, was made ruler of Brytaine: he vsed great tyranny among his Britons: and being at his disport of hunting, he was deuoured by wild Wolues, when he had reigned xl. yeres. He left two sons, named Mempricius and Manlius.

1009. A traytor to his brother deuoured of wilde beasts.

MEmpricius, the sonne of Madan, being king, by treason slewe his brother Manlius, after whose death hee liued in more tranquilitie, where through he fell in slouth, and so to lechery, taking the wiues and daughters of his subiects: and lastly, became so euill, that he forsoke his wife and concubines, and fell to the sinne of Sodomie with beasts, whereby hee became odible to God and man. And going an hunting, hee lost his companie, and was destroied of wilde Wolues, whereof the land was then full, when he had reigned twentie yeres.

989. Gaufride. Flores Historiar.

EBranke, the sonne of Mempricius, was made ruler of Brytaine, he had xvi. wiues, of whom he receiued xx. sonnes, and xxx. daughters: which were sent by their fathers to Alba Siluius, the fourth king of Albanois in Italy, to bee married to the Albanes. This Ebranke first after Brutus attempted to inuade France with an armie, as Iacobus Bergomas saieth in his first of his Chronicles, and Iacobus Lessabeus in the description of Henault affirmeth the same, and that he was driuen backe by Brunchildis Lord of Henault with no small losse of his men. Assaracus the second sonne of Ebranke, with the rest of his ponger brethren 18 at the least, by the aide of Alba Siluius, conquered all Germanie, which was then no great matter, for then Europe was verie smally inhabited, saue onely about the Sea coasts, as Dalmatia, Italie and the coasts of France, as in reading the histories may easily be séene how the East people at sundry times came swarming into Europe. Of these brethren had Germanie the name, *à Germanis fratribus*, that had subdued it. Ebranke was a founder of manie Cities (saieth Bergomas) as Alcluid in Albania (nowe Scotland) which is after Hector Boetius, Dunbretaine, but other thinke the same to bee cleane destroied. He made the Castell of Maidens called Edenbrough. Hee made also the Castell of Bamburgh. In the xviii. yeere of his raigne he builded Kaerbranke, since by the Saxons called Euorwike, now corruptly Yorke, wherein

Iacobus Bergomas. Iacobus Lessabeus.

Germanie tooke the name of Ebranke his sonne, who conquered the same. Bergomas. Hector Boetius.

Dunbretain. Edenbrough. Bamburgh. and Yorke builded.

therein he builded a Temple to Diana, and set there an Archflame, and was there buried when he had raigned lx. yéres.

Iohn Rouse saieth hee builded Caier Pennir, after it was called Bellesitum, at length Caier Bossa, Rhydohen, and Drenforde, of a centaine Forde, which Iohn Leiland calleth Isis, in English Ouse, and saieth it is nowe called Dreforde for Ouseforde.

929 BRutus 2. the eldest sonne of Ebranke, succéded in the kingdome, and for that his father had receiued such a repulse at the handes of Brunchildis Lorde of Henault, he in reuenge thereof inuaded Henault with a great armie in the Fennes and Parishlande at the mouth of the Riuer Scaldis (of olde time named Stadus) and encamped himselfe vpon the Riuer Yanta, where betwéene Brutus and Brunchildis, was foughten a strong battaile in that place, which to this day is called Ettam-bruges, of the station and campe of Brutus, as Iacobus Lessabeus writeth in his description of Henault. This Brute of his lusty courage was surnamed Gréneshielde, hee raigned xii. yéres, and was buried at Yorke.

Iacobus Lessabeus.

917 LEill the sonne of Brute Greeneshielde, being a louer of peace, builded Carleile and repaired Carleon, which was since by the Romaines reedified, when a legion of souldiers was sent thither, and by them named The Citty of Legions, nowe called Chester, of the auncient building with vaultes and towers, each house like a Castell, which sometime had béene of great pleasance.

Henry Bradshaw.

A legion of souldiers. Vigetius.

A legion of the Romaines (as Vigetius reporteth) contained 6000. warriours or moe: which legion was deuided into tenne bandes, but the first passed all the rest, both in number of souldiers, and also in estimation: for this bande bare the Eagle, which was the chiefest standarde of the Romaines. This first bande contained 1105. footemen, heauy armed horsemen 132. and was named *Cohors milliaria*, that is to saie, a companie of a thousand and moe souldiers. This bande is the head of all the legion: whensoeuer they must fight, these begin the battaile, and are first set in order in the front of the battaile. The second bande containeth 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen of heauie armour, and this bande is called *Cohors quingentaria*, that is to saie, a companie of 500. and moe souldiers. The third bande likewise hath 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen. The fourth bande hath 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen. The fift bande hath as manie. These fiue bandes are set in aray in the first battaile. The sixt bande hath 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen. The seauenth bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. The eighth bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. The ninth bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. The tenth hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. These tenne bandes make a full and perfect legion, containing, 6100. footemen, and 728. horsemen. King Leill in the ende of his raigne fell to sloth and lust of the bodie, by meane whereof ciuill strife was raised, and not in his daies ended. Hee raigned xxb. yéres, and was buried at Carleile alias Chester.

Canterburie. Winchester, and Shaftesbury built.

RVdhudibras, *alias* Cicuber, the sonne of Leil, builded Caergant, of the Englishmen called Canterburie, (that is to saie, the Court of the Kentishmen) Caerguent, now Winchester, and Caersepton now called Shaftesburie

burie, wherein he builded three Temples, and placed in the same Flamines. He raigned xxix. yeeres.

BLadud the sonne of Rudhudibras, who had long studied at Athens brought with him foure Philosophers, to keepe schole in Brytaine: for the which hee builded Stamford, and made it an Universitie, wherin he had great number of schollers studying in all the seuen liberall Sciences: which Universitie dured to the comming of S. Augustine. At which time the Bishop of Rome interdicted it for heresies that fel among the Saxons & Brytains together mixt, so saith Harding. He builded Caier Badon or Bath, and made there a temple to Apollo, and placed there a Flamine: he made also the hote Bathes, and practised his Necromancie: hee decked himselfe in feathers, and presumed to flie, but by falling on his temple, he brake his necke, when he had reigned xx. yeeres. 863 Stamford an Universitie. John Harding. I. Rouse. John. Bale. Bath with the hote Bathes built. The king attempteth to flie.

LEire sonne of Bladud succeeded his father. He builded Caier Leir vpon the Riuer of Soze, now called Leycester, and made there a Temple of Ianus, placing a Flamine to gouerne the same. He had three daughters, Gonoril, Regan, and Cordeilla, which Cordeilla for her vertue and wisedome towardes her father, succeeded him in the kingdome. When he had reigned xl. yeeres hee deceased, and was buried vnder the channel of the Riuer Soze, within Leicester. This vault vnder the earth was built in honour of Ianus Bifrons. There all the Workmen of that Citie, when the solemnitie of the daie came, begunne all things that they had to do the yeere following. 844 Leicester built. I. Rouse.

COrdeilla, the youngest daughter of Leire, succeeding her father, was seuered by her two nephues, Morgan of Albany, and Cunedagius of Camber and Cornwal, who at the length tooke and cast her in prison: where shee being in dispaire of recouering her estate, slewe her selfe, when she had raygned v. yeeres, and was buried at Leycester. 805

MOrgan, the eldest sonne of Dame Gonorilla, claimed Brytain, and warred on his nephewe Cunedagius, that was king of Camber (that nowe is Wales) & of Cornwall: but Cunedagius met with Morgan in Wales, & there slew him: which place is called Glamorgan til this day. And then Cunedagius was king of al Brytain. He builded a Temple of Mars at Perthe, that now is S. Johns towne in Scotland, & placed there a Flamine. Hee builded another of Minerua in Wales, which nowe is named Bangor. The thirde hee made of Mercurie in Cornwal, where he was borne. He raigned xxxiii. yeeres, and was buried at new Troy. 800 How Glamorganshire tooke that name. Saint Johns towne builded. Bangor built.

RIuallus, sonne of Cunedagius, succeeded his father, in whose time it rained blood 3. daies: after which tempest ensued a great multitude of venemous flies, which slewe much people, & then a great mortality throughout this land, caused almost desolation of the same. This Riuallus raigned ouer this whole Iland xlvi. yeeres, & then deceased, & was buried at Caierbrank, ỹ now is Yorke. Rome was builded in Italy, by Remus and Romulus 356. yeeres after Brute arriued in this land. 766 Blood rained. Flores Historiar. Rome builded.

GVrgustius, sonne of Riuallus, succeeded in the kingdome of Brytaine, who raigned quietly, but was a common drunkard, wherof followed al other vices. When he had raigned xxviii. yeeres, he deceased, & was buried at Yorke. 721

Scicilius,

684 SCicilius, brother of Gurguſtius, ſucceeded in the kingdome: of whome is left but little memorie: he raigned xlix. yeres, and was buried at Bathe.

636 IAgo or Lago, Couſin of Gurguſtius, raigned xxv. yeres: for his euill gouernment he died of a Litargie, and was buried at Yorke.

Iohannes de Vigney. Game of Cheſſe deuiſed. Iohn de Vigney, in his Booke named The Moralization of the Cheſſe, ſaieth, that the ſame game of the Cheſſe, was deuiſed by Xerxes the Philoſopher, otherwiſe named Philometor, to reproue and correct the cruell minde of a famous Tyrant called Euilmerodach King of Babylon (as is ſuppoſed) about the yere before Chriſts birth, 614.

612 ¶ Kimmacus raigned liiij. yeres, and was buried at Yorke.

559 GOrbodug raigned threeſcore and three yeeres, and was buried at newe Troy.

Flores Hiſtoriar.

496 FErrex with his brother Porrex, ruled Brytaine fiue yeres: but it was not long ere they fell at ciuill diſcorde for the ſoueraigne dominion, in which Ferrex was ſlaine, and Porrex afterwards by his mother, whoſe name was Idoine, was killed in his bed. Thus cruelly was the blod and houſe of Brute deſtroied, when this Realme by the ſpace of 616. yeres had béene gouerned by that lynage.

The brother ſlue the brother, and the mother murthered her owne ſonne. Brutes line extinguiſhed.

After this Realme was deuided with ciuill warres, for lacke of one ſoueraigne gouernor, vntill Dunwallo reduced the ſame into one Monarchie.

442 MVlmutius Dunwallo, the ſonne of Cloten, Duke of Cornwall, reduced this Realme into one Monarchie, being before by ciuill warres and diſſention ſeuered and brought into diuers dominions: he was the firſt that ware a crowne of gold: hee conſtituted good lawes, which long after were called Mulmutius Lawes. Theſe lawes holy Gildas wrote out of the Britiſh ſpeech into Latine. He gaue priuiledges vnto Temples, and ploughes, and began to make the foure notable waies in Brytaine. He raigned xl. yeres, leauing after him two ſonnes, Belinus and Brennus.

The ſecond lawes were Mulmutius lawes. Flores Hiſtoriar.

401 BElinus and Brennus, ſonnes of Mulmutius and Cornouenna, deuided this whole Ile of Brytaine betwéene them. Vnto Beline the elder brother was appointed England, Wales, and Cornwall. Vnto the other the North part beyond Humber. This Brennus, a yong man, deſirous of glory and dominion, raiſed warre againſt Beline. But in the concluſion by the meanes of their mother, they were accorded, and Brennus being wholly giuen to the ſtudie of warres, left his countrey to the gouernance of his brother, and went into France amongſt the Galles, where for his excellent qualities he was greatly eſtéemed, & made of them their ſoueraigne Captaine, with whom he paſſed into Italy, ſacked Rome, and expelling the Tuſcanes, builded Millaine, Breſcia, Como, Bergamo, Vincenza, Trent, and Verona, which he called after his own name Brenona. After this (as writeth Trogus Pompeius, abridged by Iuſtine) Brennus leader of the Galles, (he nameth him not a Brytaine) raiſed an hoſt of 150000. footemen, and 15000. horſemen, and inuaded Macedone againe. Whom when Softhenes ſawe how they waſted the Countrey and villages, he met them with his hoſt of Macedones well appointed. But by reaſon they were fewe, and their enemies many, they were ſone put to the worſer. Wherefore while the

Flores Hiſtoriar. I. Leiland. Gaufride.

Trogus Pompeius.

Macedones

Macedones being beaten, kept them within the walles of their cities, Brennus like a conquerour, against whome no man durst shewe his head to make resistance, forraged all the Iles of Macedone. And from thence as though those bootes and spoiles seemed to base and simple in his eie, he turned his minde to the Temples of the Gods immortall, malapertly scoffing that the Gods were rich, and ought to depart liberally to men. Therefore hee toke his iourney towards Delphos, setting more by the gaine of the golde that had bene offered to the Gods, then by their displeasure.

The Temple of Apollo at Delphos, is situate in the mount Parnassus, vpon a cliffe on euery side falling steepe downe. There the confluence of men hath made a populous Citie. Moreouer both the Temple and the towne are enclosed with the steepenesse of the rocke. The middle part of the rocke inwarde is in fashion like a Theatre, by meanes whereof when men make anie shouting, or any trumpet is sounded, the same breaketh and redoundeth in such wise vpon the stones from one to an other, that the Eccho is heard double and triple, the noise resounding farre lowder then it went forth. The which causeth the ignorant to stand in more feare, thinking it to be the presence of the Godhead. In the winding of the rocke, almost midwaie to the toppe of the hill, there is a little plaine, and in the same a deepe hole into the ground, which seemeth to giue oracles: out of the which a certaine colde breath ascending vpward, stirreth the mindes of the Prophets into a madnesse, and so compelleth them to giue answere to such as come for counsaile. In the same place therefore, there are to be seene manie and rich giftes of kings and peoples. Wherefore when Brennus came within the view of the Temple, he was in doubt a great while, whether he were better to attempt the matter forthwith, or giue his souldiours that nights respite to rest them. Euridanus and Thessalonus, who for couetousnesse of the pray, had ioyned themselues with him, willed to cut off all delaie, while their enemies were vnprouided, whereas by giuing them that nights respite, their enemies should perchance get both courage and succour: but the common souldiers of the Frenchmen, when after long penurie, they found a Countrey replenished with wine, and all other kinde of victualles, they dispersed themselues in the fieldes, making hauocke of all things like Conquerours, by which meanes the Delphians had respite to lay for themselues, and manned the Towne by the helpe of their neighbours, ouer the Frenchmen could be called from the Wine fat to the standard. Brennus had threescore and fiue thousand chosen fotemen of the best in all his host, whereas the Delphians were in all but 40000. fighting men. In disdaine of which small handfull Brennus to the intent to sharpen the mindes of his men, shewed them all, what a rich and plentifull praie they shoulde haue. The Frenchmen being by this vouching of their Captaine, or rather by their owne beholding, stirred vp, and also wounded with the wine they had powred in the day before, without respect of any danger ran headlong to the encounter. On the contrarie part, the Delphians putting more trust in God then in their owne strength, resisted their enemies, and what with stones, and what with their weapons, threw the Frenchmen (as they scaled) headlong from the

top of the mountaine. While the two parts were thus striuing one with another, sodainelie the Priestes of all the Temples, and the Prophets, with their haire about their eares, &c. like men distract and out of their wits, came running into the forefront of the battaile, crying out, that while they were all making their supplications to God for aide, they met a young man of beauty and personage, far excelling anie mortall creature, and in his company two Virgins in armor, wherefore they besought them, seeing the gods did garde their standarde, they should not sticke to dispatch their enemies. And therewithall they forthwith perceiued that God was present on their side. For both a peece of the mountaine being broken off, by a sodaine earthquake, ouerwhelmed the French hoste, and the thickest of their enemies (not without great slaughter) were opened and put to flight. In the necke whereof there ensued a tempest, with haile, thunder and lightning, consuming as manie as were anything sore wounded. The captaine Brennus himselfe not being able to abide the smarte of his woundes, toke a sword and killed himselfe. Thus farre abridged out of Iustine.

Brennus killeth himselfe.

Beline in the meane time (saieth Gaufride) both in ciuill iustice and also Religion, greatly increased his Realme. He made three Archflamines, whose Seas were at new Troy, Kayrbranke and Kayrlegion. He finished the foure great waies begunne by his father: he subdued and made tributary vnto him Denmarke. In newe Troy he made the hauen, which at this day retaineth the name of him, called Belines gate: He maried his daughter Cambria vnto a Prince of Almaine called Anteno, of whom these people were called Cymbri, and Sycambri.

Archflames.
Foure notable waies.
Belines gate builded.
Iohn Leyland.

Finally, after he had raigned with his brother and alone xxvi. yeres, he died: and after the Pagan manner, with great pompe was burned, and his ashes in a vessel of brasse set on a high pinacle ouer Belines gate. He builded Carlheon vpon the riuer Vske, which since by a legion of the Romanes there placed, was named Caerlegion, now cleane destroied.

Flores Historiar.

375 Gvrgunstus sonne of Beline succéded his father. I. Rouse saith he builded Caier Werith, that is, Longcastra: he subdued Denmarke, compelling them to continue their tribute, and in his returne home, mette with a fléete of Basdenses comming from the parts of Spaine, which were séeking for habitations, because their countrey was so populous, and not able to sustaine them, to whom the king granted the Isle of Ireland to inhabite, and to hold the same of him as their Soueraigne Lorde: But the Scots write, that Spaniards arriued before this time in Ireland. This Gurgunstus builded Porchester and Warwike in the middle of the Realme (saith I. Rouse.) He raigned xxix. yeres, and was buried at Caerlheon.

Giraldus.
Ireland inhabited.
Hector Boetius.

356 Gvinthelinus sonne of Gurgunstus, was crowned king of Brytaine. A Prince sober and quiet, who had to wife a noble woman named Mercia, of excellent learning and knowledge. Shee deuised certaine lawes, which long time among the Brytaines were greatlie estéemed, and named Mercian Lawes. This Prince raigned xvi. yeres, and was buried at newe Troy.

Mercian lawes the third.

Cecilius

CEcilius the sonne of Guintheline and Mercia, raigned vii. yeres, (as the Scots write.) In the first yere of his raigne, a people called Pictes, arriued here in Brytain, & possessed those parts, which now be the Marches of both realmes, England and Scotland. Cecilius was buried at Caerlheon. 350

The Pictes first inhabited the Marches.

KImarus succeded Cecilius, who being a wilde young man, and liuing after his owne lust, raigned but three yeres, and was slaine as he was hunting of wild beastes. 323

Elanius, called also Danius, was king of Brytaine nine yeres. 321

MOrindus, the bastard sonne of Danius, beganne to raigne in Brytaine: hee fought with a king who came out of Germanie, and slewe him with all his power. Moreouer, out of the Irish seas in his time came forth a wonderfull Monster, which destroied much people: whereof the king hearing, would of his valiant courage needes fight with it, by whome he was cleane deuoured, when he had raigned eight yeres. 311

Gaufride.

GOrbomannus, eldest sonne of Morindus, raygned xi. yeres: a Prince iust and religious: he renued the Temples of his gods, and gouerned his people in peace and wealth. This Gorbomannus builded Grantham in Lincolneshire. Our English Chronicle saith, he builded both the townes of Cambridge and Grantham: but seeing that Cambridge in ancient Chronicles is called Grant (as it is also Grancheter, Caiergrant, and Grantbridge) it was an easie matter (as Grammarians know) to translate Grantham into Cambridge, and so ascribe the building of both Townes to him that builded but one, or neither of them both. 303

Caxton. Grantham builded. I. Rouse.

ARchigallo, brother to Gorbomannus, was crowned king of Brytaine: he was in conditions vnlike to his brother: for he deposed the noblemen, and exalted the vnnoble. He extorted from men their goods to enrich his treasurie: for which cause by the estates of the Realme he was depriued of his royall dignitie, when he had raigned v. yeres. 292

The king deprimid.

ELidurus, the third sonne of Morindus, and brother to Archigallo, was elected king of Brytaine: a vertuous and gentle Prince, who gouerned his people iustlie. As he was hunting in a forrest, by chaunce he met with his brother Archigallo, whome most louinglie he embraced, and found the meanes to reconcile him to his Lords, and then resigned to him his royall dignitie, when he had raigned v. yeres. 286

ARchigallo thus restored to his royall estate, ruled the people quietlie and iustlie ten yeres, and was buried at Yorke. 282

ELidurus aforenamed, after the death of his brother Archigallo, for his pietie and iustice, by the generall consent of the Brytaines was againe chosen king. But he raigned not passing ii. yeres, for his yonger brethren Vigenius, and Peredurus raysed warre against him, toke him prisoner, and cast him in prison, where he remained during their raigne. 272

270

VIgenius and Peredurus, after the taking of their brother, raigned together seuen yeres. Vigenius then died, and Peredurus raigned after alone two yeres. Hee builded the Towne of Pickering in the north partes of Yorkeshire.

The Towne of Pickering built. Caxton. I. Rouse.

261 ELidurus, the third time was made King, who continued his latter raigne honourably and iustly: but being sore bruised with age and troubles, he finished his life, when he had now lastlie raigned foure yéeres.

258 Gorbonian raigned in Brytaine ten yéeres.

248 Morgan guided the Realme peaceably foure téene yéeres.

224 EMerianus his brother, when he had tyrannously raigned seauen yéeres was deposed.

227 IVal was chosen king for his iustice and temperance, which gouerned peaceably twentie yéeres.

207 Rimo gouerned this realme sirtéene yéeres, his time was peaceable.

191 Geruncius raigned in Brytaine twentie yéeres.

171 CAtellus raigned peaceably ten yéeres, hee hung vp all oppressours of the poore, to giue example vnto other.

A good example.

161 Coilus succéeded Catellus, who quietly raigned twentie yéeres.

142 Porrex, a vertuous and gentle Prince, raigned fiue yéeres.

136 Chirimus, through his drunkennesse, raigned but one yéere.

135 Fulgen his sonne raigned two yéeres in Brytaine.

133 Eldred raigned in Brytaine but one yéere.

132 Androgius likewise raigned but one yéere.

131 VRianus the sonne of Androgius wholy gaue himselfe to the lustes of the flesh, and raigned thrée yéeres.

126 Eliud raigned fiue yéeres, who was a great Astronomer.

124 Dedantius king of Brytaine raigned fiue yéeres.

120 Detonus raigned in this land two yéeres.

118 Gurgineus raigned thrée yéeres in Brytaine.

115 Merianus was king of Brytaine two yéeres.

113 Bladunus gouerned this land of Brytaine two yéeres.

111 Capenus raigned king of Brytaine thrée yeeres.

108 Ouinus ruled this land of Brytaine two yeeres.

106 Silius raigned in this land of Brytaine two yéeres.

104 Bledgabredus raigned ten yeeres, and gaue himselfe to the studie of Nullcke.

94 Archemalus was king of Brytaine two yéeres.

91 ELdolus raigned foure yeeres. In his time diuers prodigies were seene, as globes of fire, bursting out of the aire with great noise, &c.

Prodigious signes.

88 Rodianus was king of Brytaine two yéeres.

86 Redargius raigned king of Brytaine thrée yéeres.

83 Samulius raigned king of Brytaine two yéeres.

81 Penisellus was king of Brytaine thrée yéeres.

78 Pyrrhus ruled this land of Brytaine two yeeres.

76 Caporus was king of Brytaine two yéeres.

74 DInellus the sonne of Caporus, a iust and vertuous prince, gouerned this realme foure yéeres.

70 HElius his sonne raigned not fullie one yéere. Of this prince the Ile of Ely toke the name, saith Geffrey.

Lud

66

LVd the eldeſt ſonne of Hely ſucceéded his father: he amended his lawes, and toke away all vſages that were naught: moreouer he repaired the Citte of newe Troy with faire buildings and walles: and builded on the weſt part therof, a ſtrong gate, which vnto this time retaineth the name of him and is called Ludgate. Finally, he died, leauing after him two ſonnes Androgius, or Auaroius, and Theomantius: who not being of the age to gouerne, their vncle Caſsibelane obtained the Crowne. London toke the name of Lud, and was called Ludſton, as ſaieth Geffrey.

Lud repaired and fortified London. Flores Hiſtoriar.

Ludſton, or London toke the name of king Lud.

58

CAſsibelanus, the ſon of Hely, after the death of his brother Lud, was made gouernour of Brytaine, which ruled xii. yéeres. In the viii. yeere of his raigne, Iulius Cæſar comming vnto that part where Caleis and Bologin now ſtand, determined to make warre into Brytaine, which vntill that time remained vnfrequented and vnknowne of the Romanes. His quarrell was, becauſe that in the warres of France, he perceiued the Frenchmen to haue much ſuccour and aide from thence: And becauſe hee coulde not vnderſtand nor learne the greatneſſe or ſtate of the Iland, neither what Nations they were which inhabited the ſame, nor what lawes, cuſtomes, or kinde of gouernment they vſed, nor yet what Hauens they had able to receiue any number of ſhippes, he ſent Caius Voluſenus before with a galley, to diſcouer as much as he coulde, concerning thoſe matters, who within fiue daies after returned to Cæſar, declaring ſuch things as he had learned by coaſting alongſt the ſhore, for he durſt not for feare of the Brytains ſtirre out of his galley. In the meane ſpace there came Embaſſadours from many Cities of the Iſle, and deliuered him Hoſtages, with whome hee ſent Comius of Arras, charging him to exhort and perſwade the reſt of the Cities and Counties to do the like. And he himſelfe ſhortly after hauing prepared lxx. ſhips, ſailed into Brytaine, where at the firſt being wearied with an hard and ſharp battaile, and after with ſodain tempeſt his nauy almoſt deſtroied, he returned again into France, there to winter his mē.

Iulius Cæſar his firſt voyage into England. Eutropius. Cæſars Commentaries.

The next Spring (which was the yeere before Chriſt 51.) his nauie being newe rigged and encreaſed, he paſſed the Seas againe with a greater armie: but whiles he went towardes his enemies on land, his ſhippes lying at anker, were driuen on the ſandes, where they ſtacke faſt: or elſe through beating one againſt another, with force of the tempeſt, they were deſtroyed, ſo that fourty were loſt, the other with much labour were ſaued. In the meane ſpace Scæua, one of Cæſars ſouldiers, with foure others, who before in a ſmall veſſell were conueied to a rocke néere the Iſle, and by ebbing of the Ocean being forſaken, a great number of Brytains fell on a few Romans, and ſome of his companions (though but few) found meanes to returne by boate, but Scæua remained without feare in the middeſt of his enemies darts: firſt with his ſpeare he reſiſted them, after with his ſword he alone fought againſt many of them, and when he was both weary and wounded, and had loſt his helmet and ſhield, with two light harneſſes, he ran to Cæſars tents, and aſked pardon of the Emperor for his ouerboldneſſe, who not onely forgaue him, but honoured him with the office of a Centurion. Vpon land Cæſars horſemen at the firſt encounter were vanquiſhed, and Laberius Durus the Tribune ſlaine in a place now called Che-

Two voyages of Cæſar.

Eutropius.

Chro. Wygmore. ſton wood neare vnto Rocheſter, as ſaieth the Chronicle of Wygmore. At the ſecond conflict, not without great danger of his men, he put the Brytaines to flight, from thence he went vnto the riuer Thamis, on the further ſide whereof Caſſibelanus with a great multitude of people was keeping the bankes, who had ſet all the ſayd bankes, and all the ſhallowe places, vnder the water with ſharpe ſtakes, euery one of them as bigge as a mans thygh, bound about with lead, & driuen ſo faſt into the bottome of the riuer, that they can neuer be remoued, (ſo ſayth Bede and Aſſer) who affirme that in their times the ſaide ſtakes were eaſily perceiued to remaine as aforeſaid. But Caſſibelanus and his Brytaines not being able to reſiſt the violence and force of the Romanes, hid themſelues in woodes, and with ſodaine eruptions oftentimes inuaded them: but in the meane time, the Trinobants, which is the ſtrongeſt Citie welneere of all thoſe contries ſubmitted it ſelfe, and deliuered hoſtages to Cæſar, who at their requeſt placed Mandubratius to bee their gouernour, whoſe father called Imanentius, being chiefe Lord or ruler of the Trinobants, Caſſibelane had before ſlaine, wherewith Mandubratius fled, and comming to Cæſar, not only ſubmitted himſelfe, but alſo was a great meanes (as manie do write) for Cæſar to ſubdue the reſt: yet did Caſſibelane ſend meſſengers to the foure kinges that ruled in the quarters of Kent, that with all their puiſſance they ſhoulde ſet on the Romans that late nere them: their names were Cingetorex, Caruilius, Taximagulus, and Segonax, who obeying his requeſt were diſcomfited, and Cingetorex taken, wherewithall Caſſibelane being diſmaied after manie loſſes, was conſtrained to giue pledges, and to agree that Brytaine ſhould become tributarie to the Romans. Thus Brytaine became tributarie to the Romanes, the yeere of the world 3913. after the building of Rome 698. before Chriſts birth 53. Then Cæſar like a conquerour, with a great number of priſoners ſayled into France, and ſo to Rome, where after his returne out of Brytaine, hee conſecrated to Uenus a ſurcote of Brytaine pearles, the deſire whereof partlie moued him to inuade this Countrey: ſhortlie after he was by the Senate ſlaine in the Councell houſe.

Cæſars Commentaries. Bede. Aſſer. London ſubmitted to Cæſar. Iulius Cæſar ſlaine with bodkins. Eutropius. Plinie. Suetonius.

Cæſar in his Commentaries deſcribeth the Brytains thus. The inner part (ſaith he) is inhabited of ſuch, as by witnes of their ancient Records were borne and bred in the Ile, and the ſea coaſt by ſuch as haue paſſed thither out of Belgike to fetch booties, and to make war. All the which welneere, are called by the names of the Cities where they were borne, and from whence they firſt came, remaining there ſtill when the warre was done, and tilling the ground. The country is marueilouſly well repleniſhed with people, and there be very many buildings, almoſt like in faſhion to the building of Gallia. There is great ſtore of cattell. The coine they vſe is either of braſſe, or elſe ringes of yron ſized at a certaine waight in ſtead of money. In the inner parts of the Realme groweth tinne: and in the ſea coaſt groweth yron, but thereof is ſmall ſtore. The braſſe that they occupy is brought in from beyond the ſea. There is timber of al kinds as in Gallia, ſauing beech and firre. They thinke it a hainous matter to taſte of a hare, a henne, or a goſe: nerthelelſe they cheriſh them for their pleaſure. The aire is more temperate in thoſe places then in France, & the colde leſſer.

Cæſars Commentaries, touching the barbarouſnes of Brytaines.

Of

Of all the inhabitants of this Ile, the ciuilest are the Kentishfolke, the which Country marcheth altogether vpon the sea, and differeth not greatly from the manner of France. Those that dwell more into the hart of the Realme, for the most part sowe no corne, but liue by milke and flesh, and clothe themselues in lether. All the Brytaines doe die themselues with woad, which setteth a blewish colour vpon them, and it maketh them more terrible to beholde in battaile. They weare their haire long, and shaue all parts of their bodies sauing ỹ head and the vpper lippe. They haue x. or xii. wiues a péce, common among themselues, specially brothers with brothers, and parents with their children, but the issue that commeth of them, is accompted his that first married the mother when she was a maide, &c.

THeomantius the sonne of Lud, and nephewe to Casibelane, succéded in the Realme of Brytaine, and raigned quietlie xviii. yéres, paying the tribute to the Romans which Casibelane had granted. 37

OCtauius Augustus desiring to bee like Iulius Cæsar his father (for so he alwaies termed him) prepared an expedition into Brytain, but being come forward into France, vnderstanding that the Pannonians lately subdued, rebelled, he turned his power against them, and altered his minde as touching our Countrey. 34 Dion. Cassius lib. 49.

The fourth yéere after, hee opened the Temple of Ianus at Rome, fullie determining to inuade Brytaine, but when he had marched on his way, as far as Ariminum, Ambassadors of Brytaine met him, humbly suing for peace, and submitting themselues vnto his obedience and protection. Wherfore he stayed againe to settle some troubles then raised in France. 25 Dion. 53. Golezius.

The yére following, because the couenants betwéene him and the Brytains could not be agréed vpon, hee made prouision for a third expedition into this Ile, but an actuall rebellion in Biscay and Sauoy withheld him then also. But shortly after Ambassadours came from Brytaine to Rome, intreating for peace, swearing fealtie in the Temple of Mars, offering giftes in the Capitol to the Gods of the Romanes: and submitted part of the Ile vnto Augustus. Now the Brytaines began first to paie tolles and tribute without grudging, for all wares which they traded, which were for that time, Iuorie bores, tongues, owches, and other trinkets of Amber and Glasse. And all here were so quiet, that one band of soldiers and a few horsemen, were sufficient to kéepe the Ile in the Romane possession. 24 Strabo. lib. 4.

CVnobelinus, for so is the inscription of his coine, which I haue séene, and read, and therefore corruptly called Kymbeline, the sonne of Theomantius raigned king in Brytaine xxvb. yéares. In the xliii. yéere of his raigne Christ our sauiour was borne in Bethlehem of Iuda. 14

From this place following, the yeeres from Christ his birth are placed in the Margent.

WHen Cæsar Augustus the second Emperour by the will of God had stablished most sure peace through the world, our Redéemer Iesus Christ verie God and man, was borne in the xlii. yére of the raigne of Au- *Anno Christi.* 1

Ex Eusebi. Paulus Orosi. Baptista Platina. Martinus Polonus.

gustus, he beganne to preach the xv. yeare of Tyberius, and suffered his passion the xviii. yeare of the same Tyberius, according to the prophecies. But here is to be noted, that the first yeare of our Lord hath but seuen daies, after some computation, for he was borne the xxv. day of December, and the first of Januarie following, began the second yeare.

21. Guiderius, the first son of Cunobelinus, was ordained king. This man was valiant, hardy, wealthy, and trusted much in his strength. And for that he thought the Romans had their tribute wrongfully, he of great courage denied to paie the same.

Wherefore Tyberius the Emperour purposed to come hither in person, but death preuented him. Guiderius raigned xviii. yeares. Aruiragus, or rather (as the Brytains tearme him) Monrigus, the yongest son of Cunobelinus, & brother of Guiderius was ordained king of Britaine he slew Hamon neare to a hauen of the sea, and threw him gobbet meale therein, it is now called South-hampton. He strengthned the castel of Douer, & also the castel of Richbourgh, neere vnto Sandwich in Kent. He raigned 28. yeares, and was buried at Glocester.

Geffrey Mon. Humfrey Lhuyd. Geffry Mon. Chro. Douer.

40 Suetonius. Albeit the Brytaine historie doth here place Aruiragus, yet it is probable that Cunobelinus as yet liued, for about 40. yeares after Christ, Admimus the son of Cunobeline banished out of Britain by his father, was receiued into protection by Caius Caligula the fourth Emperour, who was then set forwarde with great preparation against Brytaine, but when he came into the partes of Holland against Northfolke he staied, writing vaunting letters to the Senate, that all Brytaine was yelded vnto him, because Admimus had so done. Afterward as though he would immediatly fight a field, he cast his men into battels and squadrons vpon the sea coast, disposing all his Engines in most warlike manner (no man knowing what he meant:) this done, he himselfe in a Galley launched into the sea, and immediatly returning, he caused the Trumpets to sound to battaile, and sodainelie commaunded them to gather Cockles and Muscle shelles, and therewith to fill their helmets, saying, they were spoyles due to the Capitoll, and in these spoyles hee greatlie triumphed, as though he had subdued the Ocean. He rewarded his souldiours and returned to Rome, after he had built a high watch Tower in token of his victory against the sea. The ruines whereof are great remaining in Holland, but ouerflowed by the water, & to this day called the Brytons house, in remembrãce of this ridiculous expeditiõ against Brytain, by the perswasion of Bericus banished out of Brytaine.

Dio. Lib. 59.

The ridiculous expedition of Caligula into Brytaine.

Brytaine house in Holland.

45 Claudius the Emperour dispatched Aulus Plancius with an armie into Brytain, where after diuers conflicts when he had receiued part of the Boduni into his tuition, and had slaine Cataracus and Togodumus sons of Cunobeline, and thereby had made the Brytains more eager to reuenge, he sent for Claudius himselfe, who with great preparation and Elephants came into Brytain to his army, then incamped neere the Thames, with which he passed ouer into Esser, fought with the Brytaines, obtained the victorie, toke the chiefe citie of Cunobeline, and all weapons from the Brytaines, and so returned to Rome the sixth moneth after hee set forth from thence, where hee triumphed, surnaming his sonne Brytanicus: to which triumph hee permitted not onelie

Dio. Suetonius.

the

the presidentes of prouinces, but also certaine banished prisoners to repaire to Rome: and amidst the spoiles taken from the Brytaines, he fired on the top of his pallace a crowne of gold beset with stemmes and forepartes of shippes, in token he had vanquished the Brytish Ocean. He behaued himselfe very courteously towards diuers of his friends, in so much that when Plancius (a notable man) who in his voyage which he made into Brytain, atchieued diuers notable acts, and should triumph for the same, the Emperor himselfe accompanied him, and (the vse being such that with his triumph hee should go vp into the Capitoll) Claudius gaue him the prehemmence, and went on the left hand.

At this time Vespasian who was after Emperor, was sent by Claudius into Brytaine, where he fought 30. times with the Brytains, subdued to the Roman Empire two worthy nations, aboue 20. townes, and the Ile of Wight.

OStorius was appointed lieutenant in Brytaine for the Romanes, who at his first entry in the beginning of Winter asspleth the Brytains, & purposeth to pen them vp and include them with riuers & fortifications, wherefore the Iceni made an insurrectiõ, which when he had pacified with some slaughter, he marched against the Gangi, foraging al the countries as he passed, but was forced by new tumults to turne from thẽ against ẏ Brigants, whome with some slaughter, and promise of pardon, he pacified. Then he made prouision against the Silures which inhabited Southwales, bearing themselues bolde vpon the puissance of Caratacus a valiant Brytaine, who being skilfull of the Countrey, remoued the war into Shropshire, where he fortified amongst craggie mountaines a place strong by situation, where neuertheless the Romans prevailed. The wife, daughter, and brethren of Caratacus were taken, & he flying to Cartismandua a Q. ruling in Yorkeshire, was by her deliuered captiue to his enemies, yr. yeares after the wars began, who sending him to Rome, was there in open assemblie brought before Claudius, with his wife, daughter, brethren, and friends, and such spoiles as had bẽn taken from him, where hee (nothing dismaied in spirit or countenance,) spake after this sort to Claudius. 50

If my moderation of prosperous successes had bẽne correspondent to my state and nobilitie, I might haue come to this Citie, rather a friend then a captiue: neither you haue disdained to admit me into league, being descended of noble parentage, & soueraigne ouer many nations. This present state of mine, as it is villanous toward me, so it is honorable to you. I had horse, men, money, munition, and what wonder is there, If I had lost them vnwillingly? For if you will rule and raigne ouer all, of necessitie all must come into slauery: if I had yelded at the first, neither my fortune nor thy glory had bin renowmed, and the oblituon of me had ensued immediately after my execution: but if you saue my life, it shall be an euerlasting exãple of your clemency. At these words Claudius remitted his offence, granted him life, & the Senate adiudged Ostorius worthy to triumph: but in the meane time ẏ inhabitants of South-wales to reuenge Caratacus captiuity intercepted and discomfited certaine bands of the Romans, amidst which new wars, Ostorius tired with trauel, departed this life.

In Ostorius time certaine Cities were giuen to Cogidunus a Brytish king, and a Colonie of Romanes was placed here.

CLaudius sent Didius to supply the place of Ostorius now departed, but in the meane time the Silures fought fortunately against the legions which 52 Tacitus 3. Hist.

was

was vnder the conduct of Manlius Valens. In this time warre brake out betwéene Cartismanda Q. of the Brigants, and Venutius her husband, whome shée refused, and matched her selfe with Velocatus his Esquire: whereupon Venutius fauored of the people, assailed her territory, and she succoured by the Romans, after she had intercepted by trechery Venutius brother and allies, fought with him. Where after a sharpe fight, she by the aid of the Romans, preuailed, as also Cæsius Nasica did with his legion against the Brytaines in another place: for Didius vsed others in these matters, because he was aged, and onely kept that which others had heretofore conquered.

61 CLaudius being now poisoned by Agrippina his wife, Nero her sonne obteined the Romane Empire, and about the 7. yéere of his raigne Verennus was appointed lieutenant here, who died within the first yéere of his gouernment, saying that hee woulde haue subdued prouinces, had he suruiued but two yéres, but about this time great slaughter was here of the Romans.

62 SVetonius Paulinus was then sent hither, who at his arriuall purposing to subdue Anglesey, whither many Brytains had withdrawne themselues, hee in vessels with flat keeles ferried ouer his footmen, bringing ouer his horsmen by some fourds, whereas on the shores stood closely together great numbers of Brytans, and among them women gadding vp and down frantickly in mourning weedes, their haire hanging about their eares, and shaking firebrands: the Druydes also casting vp their hands towards heauen thundred out cruell execrations, with which vncomely sights the Romans at first stode dismaied, but after encouraged by the Generals perswasion, they brust in among them, made great slaughter, got the possession of the Ile, and felled downe the woods consecrated to superstitious vses: two cities belonging to ỹ Romans were taken, 80000. of their people slaine, and the whole Iland reuolted, and to the Romans reproch, the slaughter was cõmitted by a woman, being foretold then by many strange signes & tokens. For in the court was heard a noise with much slaughter. In the Theatre a great tumult and much wondring, when there was no man there, that either spake or mourned. Besides, in ỹ riuer of Thames certain houses or buildinges were séene. The Image of the goddesse Victoria in the Temple of Camulodunum (which is Maldon in Essex as W. Camden writeth) turned her backe as though she had yéelded to her enemies: the women ranne as mad here and there, saying, and singing, Destruction is at hand.

Dion. Cassius.

Finally, betwixt the Iland and France, the Ocean sea appeared as it flowed with bloud. The occasion of this warre was a confiscation of the Brytans goods, which being remitted by Claudius the Emperour, Decianus Catus then Procurator of the Ile, said that it ought to haue beene renued. To this cause was added, that whereas (against their wils Seneca had lent them fourty Sestercies vpon great vsurie) he now with great force and all kind of violence compelled them to pay all the whole summe at one paiment, and also perswaded them to make warre on the Romans.

Bunduica of Brytaine, a woman of noble byrth, not onelie with much honour ruled amongst them, but also was the soueraigne in their wars, and had

in

in déed a ſtomacke more manly then womanlike: who hauing gotten together an army of 120000. men, got her vpon her ſeat made of Parith turues, after the manner of the Romanes, and being a tall woman, of comely ſhape, and ſeuere countenance, ſharpe voice, with yellowe haire hanging downe to her ſkirtes, (Ponticus Virunius ſaith to her thighs) ſhe ware a great chaine of golde, and had on her backe a coate of ſundrie colours, and a plaited kirtle. When ſhe was thus apparelled, and had in her handes a great ſpeare, ſhe ſpake vnto them to this effect. Ponticus Virunius.

Firſt ſhée commended libertie, ſhewing them how pouertie with libertie, was farre better then great riches in miſerie and bondage: on the other ſide, with great eloquence ſhe declared the miſchiefes and calamities they ſuffered at the handes of the Romanes, who exacting Tributes of paiments, ſo oppreſſed them, that much better it were once to die, then long to liue in ſuch extreme ſeruitude.

Secondly ſhe reproued them, for not expelling their enemies, as their forefathers had done Iulius Cæſar, Claudius and Caligula: And againe ſhe praiſed them for their preſent readines to helpe her, and recouer their ancient ſtate.

Thirdly, ſhe diſabled the Romanes, for that they were fewe, combred with armour, and ſo faint of courage, that they had rather fight a farre off, then encounter with them by hand ſtrokes: ſhe commended the Brytanes, to be more in number, of greater valour, and farre more able to abide hunger, cold, thirſt, raine, winde, heat, &c. ſhe added the vantage of the place, as being at home, where the woods and riuers, lakes, and all other thinges were well knowne to euerie one of them.

Laſtly, ſhe exhorted them to ſhew themſelues as Dogs and wolues among fearefull Hares and Fores: wherewithall, ſhe let out of her lap a quicke Hare, thereby to learne the euent of her enterprice. The Hare hauing a proſperous paſſage, all the multitude gaue a great ſhowte, and Bunduica clapping her hands, gaue thanks to her Gods, that ſhe ruled not the Romans, as did Nero, (who though he were a man, yet was in déede but a woman, for that he ſang and plaid on the Harpe) but the Brytains, who eſtéemed it better to be Warriours then Ploughmen, who, as they had all things in common, ſo had they both wiues and children, and that hauing a kingdome amongſt ſuch a kinde of people, ſhe praied their diuine aides againſt a ſpitefull and wicked kinde of men, if they were to bee called men, who vſed hote bathes, dainty fare, wine, ointments, lay in ſoft beds, and were vaſſals to ſuch a wanton Minſtrell as their Emperour Nero was. What the Brytans were giuen to. Niceneſſe of the Romanes.

Bunduica hauing ſpoken theſe and ſuch like amongſt her people, withall her hoſte ſhee ſet forward againſt the Romanes, who at that time were without head or gouernor, for that Paulinus was gone with his armie into Angleſey, (as is before rehearſed,) which is an Iland nere Brytaine, by meanes whereof Bunduica toke two of their Cities, and committed the notable ſlaughter before remembred.

She exerciſed all kinde of crueltie on ſuch men as ſhe toke. As for the noble women that ſhe gate, ſhee hanged them vp, and cut off their pappes, and ſewed

fewed them to their mouthes: besides this, the stretching their bodies out at length, thrust sharpe stakes cleane through them: all which thinges were done in despight, when they sacrificed and feasted in their Temples, but specially in the wood called Andates.

Paulinus, who had now subdued Angleſey, hearing of the foresaid slaughter, returned to Brytaine, yet would he not aduenture the fortune of battaile with them, fearing their number, but when he wanted victuall, and that his enemies approched, he was compelled to abide the battell. Bunduica, who had in her army 230000. men, was her selfe placed in a Charlot, and ordered her men at length: but Paulinus could not stretch his companie so long, for that they were not of ante such number; but at length he deuided his armie into three partes, so that at one time they might fight in sundry places, exhorting them not to be abashed at the multitude of their enemies, for both they and their forefathers, had with lesse number atchieued greater matters, and gotten greater victories. Adding, that nowe was the time to plaie the men, to enioy that in quiet, which before their ancestours had won, and recouer that which they had lost, or else to liue for euer in miserie and shame. Againe, hee shewed that crueltie their eies had seene, by those barbarous people, to such as they had ouercome, exhorting them in reuenge thereof to fight manfully, and there was no doubt but the Gods (who were alwaies fauourable to such as had suffered cruelty) would helpe them: and better it were to die fighting valiantly, then with reproch to be taken, and die in their enemies hands like dogges. Finally (saith he) whether we liue or die, Brytaine shall bee ours; for, though the other Romanes lose it, yet shall our bones continually keepe it. When he had thus spoken, the signe of the battell was giuen, and eache part prepareth himselfe: the Brytains with great and strange noise, the Romans in silence came so nere, that they might throwe their dartes to them: and perceiuing their enemies to approach, with great violence, rushed in amongst them, and brake their aray: but after being compassed with the multitude of their enemies, the battell wared doubtfull. The light harnessed men began to smite eache other, and those of beaute armour together with the horsemen encountred, and the Roman Archers fought against the Brytish Charlots. They which fought without breastplates, were slaine with Darts. This encounter was made in three seuerall places, and was fought with great courage on both sides. At the last the Romans departed Conquerors, many were slaine in the battaile, and many were taken. Great numbers which escaped, prepared to fight againe, but in the meane space Bunduica died of a disease which shee had, and they mourned, and buried her verie honourably. After those that remained were easilie ouercome and dispersed.

Cornelius Tacitus.

Tacitus saith, that Prasutagus King of the Iceni, a Prince of great wealth, appointed, that Cæsar and his owne two daughters should inherite his lands, hereby thinking all his life to be more quiet, and being deceased, his wife and daughters should be the more safer by meanes of such protection: but it fell out farre otherwise, for the Centurions gat his Realme, their seruants spoiled his house, beate his wife, and deflowred his daughters: besides, the chiefest men

of

of his land were displaced of their inheritances, and handled extremelie. In reuenge whereof Bunduica raised the warre, and committed the slaughter before remembred, and at last her armie once ouerthrown by Paulinus, being afraid to fall into her enimies hands, she poisoned her selfe.

Policletus then a seruaunt of Nero, was sent hither to surueie the state of Brytaine, who discharged Paulinus Suetonius of the gouernement.

64 Petronius Turpilianus.

PEtronius Turpilianus was sent into Brytaine as a man easie to bee entreated, and being not altogether acquainted with offences of the enimies, was the readier to receyue them to grace: who setting matters in their former stay, and attempting no farther, deliuered the Prouince vnto Trebellius Maximus. Trebellius being both faint hearted and too sluggish, and also vtterlie vnacquainted with experimentes of armes, ruled ỹ prouince with a certain mildnes of gouernement. Now had the barbarous people also learned to wincke at inticing vices, and the ciuill warres of the Romanes then happening, was a cloake to his cowardise: but there presentlie arose discord betweene Roscius and Cælius, legates of the xx. legion, when the souldiours (accustomed to bee employed in expeditions) gaue themselues to lasciuiousnes: whereuppon Trebellius tooke his flight, and hid his head, to auoide the furie of the armie, and in most base and beastly manner, gouerned (as it were) by entreatie, so as they might seeme to haue compounded, that the souldiours should liue in all liberty, and the Generall at his safetie. This time for a yeere and halfe there was deadly ciuill warre among the Romanes for the Empire, betweene Galba, Otho, and Vitellius.

69 Aletius Volanus.

VEctius Volanus, then was sent hither by Vitellius, he did not vse anie discipline or correction in Brytaine, so as there continued the like slouth and cowardise in the souldiers, toward their enimies, and the Campe still as full of wantonnesse, sauing that Volanus was a good and milde man, and thereby made himselfe beloued where hée shoulde haue beene feared. In this time Vitellius aduanced manie Souldiours in the Brytaine legions, and Herdonius Flaccus brought vnto him 80000. chosen men of warre out of Brytaine. The Brytaines seeing the Romanes thus encombred with ciuill warre, began to trouble them, wherefore Volanus would send no succor to Vitellius at his commandement, when Vespasian warred against him for the Empire, and all the Brytaines fauoured Vespasian. Tacitus.

70

VVHen as (with the rest of the world) Vespasian had recouered Brytaine, then were there placed great Captaynes, and notable armies, the enemies hope abated, and Petilius Cerealis brought great feare vppon the Brytaines. The Citie of the Brigantes (which was accounted one of the greatest of the land) being by him assailed, he hadde many encounters, and some not without slaughter, whereby hee either conquered or assayled a great part of their Countrey. Petilius Cerealis.

Iulius Frontinus, a man as worthie and valiant as was possible, take then the charge vpon him, and subdued the nation of the Silures, being both valiant and warlike, notwithstanding the valour of the enemie and difficulties of the places. Iulius Frontinus.

This

Julius Agricola.

This was the state of Brytain, and course of the wars, which Agricola found arriuing in the middest of Sommer, the souldiers euen then beginning to retire to their strengths, and the enemie searching for his most aduantage.

The Citie of the Ordouices fewe daies before his arriuall almost wholy defeated a company lying vpon their borders. This beginning stirred vp the prouince, seruing for an example to them, who coueted the warres, and yet desired to see what was in their newe Gouernour. Agricola, although the Sommer were nowe well spent, the bandes dispersed all about the prouince, the souldiers had determined to rest for that yeere, the time being late and incommodious to commence the war, thinking it would be better to man the places most suspected: yet he determined neuertheleſſe to preuent daunger, and gathering together the Standardes of the Legions, with a fewe of his forraine aides, for that the Ordouices durſt not take the fielde, marched forth against them himselfe in the vauward of his armie, that others might take like courage in the same danger, and put almost that whole nation to the sword: then following his good successe, hee inuaded Angleſey, (which Suetonius had before attempted) causing certaine Brytaines that serued him, and knewe the shallowes and maner of swimming, with horse and harneſſe to passe ouer into the Ile on a sodaine, wherewith the inhabitants were so amazed (who fearing nothing because they sawe no naule) that they submitted the Ile vnto him immediately. Now hauing some quietneſſe, and perceiuing that warre would little preuaile against the Brytaines, if they were iniuriously handled, he purposed to cut off all causes of quarrell, and first reforming his own familie, did nothing partially, onely respected the vertue of men, lowered tributes, and behaued himselfe most honourably. And thus much the first yeere.

Tacitus.

When the Sommer began, he assembled his armies, trained his souldiers, forraged the enemies Countries with sodaine inuasions to their great feare, and yet so fauorably, as manie Countries willinglie yelded vnto him, and suffered Castels to bee built among them. The Winter following he spent in ciuill administration, counsailing the people priuatelie, and helping them publikely, to build houses, Temples, and Court houses. He procured noble mens children to study liberall Sciences, and then began the Brytaines to conforme themselues to Romane fashions and attyre.

The third yeere he discouered people in the North hitherto vnknowen, euen as far as Tau, terrifying the people, and placing fortreſſes most wisely to the annoyance of the enemie.

The fourth Sommer he employed getting those Countries which hitherto hee had passed through, euen to Edenborough, Frith, and Cluid, the narrowe space betweene the which waters he fortified.

The fifth yeere by Sea he discouered and vanquished further nations in the North, and placed garrisons in the coast toward Ireland, whereunto hee also aspired, and to that ende retained an Irish Prince with him, that was driuen out of his Countrey by ciuill dissention.

But in the Sommer which began the first yeere of his gouernment, he searched the Hauens by a naule for that purpose sent to the Sea, fearing least all those

those nations beyonde had united themselues and kept the passages by lande: but afterward he marched forward, his naute coasting with his army by land, so as sometime in the same Campe, he had horsemen, footemen, and Seamen, lodged together. It was reported by such as were taken prisoners, that the sight of the naute much astonied the Brytaines as men from whom all refuge was cutte off, the secretes of their Seas being discouered: wherefore determining to trie it with hand blowes the inhabitantes of Calidonia with great preparation, although the report thereof were greater (as it often happeneth in vnknowen matters,) of their awne accorde, assayled some Castles, and seeing themselues rather to bee assaylantes then defendantes, put the Romanes in some doubt: whereupon the cowardes pretending policie, aduised to retyre on this side Bodotria, rather then to bee driuen thereto by force. when as in the meane while, Agricola knowing that the enemie would charge him in seuerall troupes and companies, and fearing to bee ouermatched and couped in with number, or deceiued by the ignorance of the place, diuided his army into three battels, and so marched forward: which order marked by his enemies, made them alter their purpose, and in the night killing the watch, brake in vpon the ninth legion, halfe a sleepe and halfe affrighted, which (as they toke it) was the weakest, and so the fight continued within the Campe till it was day light, at which time the Romanes began to gather courage, and the Brytains were discomfited, so as, had it not bin for the woods and bogges, that victorie had ended the whole strife, after which battell the Roman souldiours grewe to be of hautie courage, crying out to pierce the countrey of Calidonia, that they might finde out the vttermost portes and boundes of Brytaine. The Romanes on the other side, ascribing the praise of this victorie, not to the prowesse of the Roman souldier, but to Fortune and the wilinesse of their Captaine, vsed all meanes possible, to hearten vp and arme their youth, bestowing their wiues and children in places of safegard, and by sacrifices and holy assemblies vnite al their Cities together: vpon these resolutions they remoued.

In the beginning of the nert sommer which was the viii. yeere of his charge, Agricola sending his fleete before him, which often put a land and spoyled the Countries, thereby causing a great and vncertaine feare: himselfe with a picked army, whereunto he added of the valiantest Brytains, came to the mountaine Grampius, whereon his enemies had encamped, (for the Brytaines nothing quailed by the successe of the former encounter, and expecting nothing but a reuenge, or bondage, learning at length, that common danger is onelie to be resisted with common consent) by leagues and embassages had stirred vp the mindes of all the Cities about. Nowe were there to be in armes thirtie thousand and vpwarde, vnto which number, the youth, and all such as were of strong and lustie yeares, euerie man bearing his tokens of praise about him, continually repayred from all sides. When amongst many other Captains, Calgacus a man both in nobilitie and valor aboue the rest, spake to the assemblie in this manner: As often as I behold the causes of this warre and our necessitie, my minde giueth me great hope, that this day and your mutuall con-

sent

sent shall be the beginning of libertie to all Brytaine; for, euery one of you hauing tried seruitude, and hauing no other land nor sea, which can saue vs (the Romanes nauie being at our elbowes) the verie warre and weapons which are the honour of the worthie, must be the onlie safetie of the faint-hearted. With these and manie such reasons drawne from the calamitie of their future seruitude, the pride and tyrannie of their gouernors, the fickle friendship of the strangers seruing in their enemies campe, ready to change vpon any high occasion, and the present remedie of al misery, which, as he said in the beginning, was onely valiancie, he so stirred vp all mens minds, that they applauded his Oration after their manner, with songs and diuers kind of noises. This Oration being ended, as also Agricola his speech to his Souldiours, the two armies beganne to encounter. Agricola placed his battailes in this order: hee made his maine battaile of the strangers (his aides) which were in number viii. thousand, on each side thereof, for winges he placed his horsemen to the number of three thousand, and his legions he caused to guarde the trenches of his Campe, that if it were possible, the victorie might be gained without the shedding of Roman bloud, or if his main battaile were broken, they might be gathered againe, and the fight restored by his legions. The battaile of the Brytaines (to terrifie their enemies, as also to make their braueft shewe,) stood on higher ground, so as their vawarde being come vpon the plaine, the rest were on the foote of the hill, their Chariots, in the meane time galloping vp and downe the fielde, making great showtes and cries. Then Agricola perceiuing the number of his enemies to bee greater then his owne, and fearing to bee charged both on the face and flanke of his battaile at one time, and that manie thought necessarie to haue the legions aduanced forwarde, remained notwithstanding firme in his first resolution, causing his battaile to bee somewhat drawne in length, himselfe alighted from his horse, and stode on foote before his standards. The first fight was with shotte of arrowes and dartes, during which time, the Brytaines, both skilfullie and couragiouslie with their huge Swords and small Bucklers, either bare or brake the Romanes shotte, and answered them with an infinite number of the like, vntill Agricola was perswaded by bands of Hollanders, and Brabanders, that the matter might be brought to swords and hand-strokes, which kinde of fight they were acquainted withall, by long haunting the wars, and the same was verie incommodious for their enemies, bearing but small shieldes, and vnmeasurable swordes: For the pointlesse swordes of the Brytains, were vnfit for a throng, and where they wanted rome. Wherefore the Hollanders strake thicke together, and thrust them ouer the Bucklers, wounding them in the faces, and hauing broken that battaile, passed forward towarde them which kept the hill, which seene by the rest of the Romanes bandes, they partly moued by enuie of the others glorie, and partlie by heate of their owne courages, cutte in pieces those that they first encountred, leauing notwithstanding, some halfe dead, and others not touched, for haste to obtaine a perfect victorie. In the meane while, the troupes of the Brytaine horsemen, did take their flight, but the Chariots put themselues pæcemeale among the foote bandes, which kinde

of

of fight, (at first) seemed somewhat terrible to their enemies, but it long serued not their turnes, being assayled with a thicke preasse of their enemies, and the grounde not commodious for the Chariots, nor their riders all of the best. So as at the last, their Chariot horses, courling vp and downe the fielde without guiders, ouerranne many of their owne companie, as they fled for feare from one place to another. The Brytaines, which all this while kept the hill, and came not to the fight, making little reckoning of the small number of the Romanes, beganne by little and little to descend, intending to hemme them in, in the middest of their conquest, which surely they had done, if Agricola, suspecting the same, had not dispatched foure companies of horsemen (which he kept for all sodaines) to encounter with them, who, the more fiercely they assailed, so much the more sharpely repulsed them, and sent them to flight: whereupon the deuice of the Brytaines turned to their owne harme. Moreouer, by Agricola his commandement the winges of the horsemen were taken from the front of his battell, and were made to charge vpon the battell of his enemies, standing ouer-against them. Then might you behold in the open fielde, a grieuous and lamentable spectacle, some followed the chase, some toke prisoners, and after killed them to take others. Nowe the enemies as euerie one thought best, fledde, some in heapes and armed fled from a smaller number: other, though vnarmed, tarryed and were slaine: euerie where late weapons, carkasses, and lyms cut off, the ground all bloudie: sometime the vanquished approching neare to Woods, would make head, and entrappe the heedelesse followers, so as, if Agricola had not caused certaine lustie bandes in the manner of a search, and also diuers horsemen, leauing their horse where the Woods were thicke, and other on horsebacke, where the Woods would suffer, to raunge them all about, there might haue béene some detriment receiued by too much hardinesse. But when the Brytaines saw themselues pursued in order of battaile, they toke againe their flight, not in companies as before, nor tarrying one for another, but here and there, euen as men glad to escape, sought long and by wales. Night and wearinesse of slaughter ended the chase. There were slaine of the Brytaines about tenne thousand: of the Romane armie, three hundred and fortie, among whom Aulus Atticus, Captaine of a bande, whome the heate of his youth, and courage of his horse brought into the hands of his enemies. That night the victors made merrie with the spoile, but the Brytaines wandring vp and downe, men and women lamenting together, reliued and fetcht away their hurt men, assembled together the whole, forsoke their houses, and for anger set fire on them, chosing themselues lurking places, which straight they forsoke againe: sometime conceiuing good hope, which straightway quayled againe: and some were knowen to kill their wiues and children, as though they had therein taken compassion vpon them. The nert day made the victorie more manifest, in which there was nothing but silence, the hils being then forsaken, and also the houses smoaking a farre off.

Agricola sending abroad his espialles, coulde finde no enemie to make head, wherefore Sommer being too farre spent to proceede any farther in the

warre, hee had his Souldiours into the coastes of the Horesti, and there taking hostages, caused his naue to coaste about Brytaine, which at last arriued at the hauen called Trutulensis, afterwarde hauing bestowed his souldiours in their wintering places, departed Brytaine, and left the prouince in quiet to his successour.

First Christians in Brytain. Nicephorus.

Diuers authors affirme, that about this time, the Gospell of Christ our sauiour was first preached in this Iland. Nicephorus a Greeke author in his second booke the 40. Chapter, hath as followeth. Simon borne in Cana Galilei, who for his feruent affection to his Maister, & great zeale he toke by all meanes to the Gospell, was surnamed Zelotes, he hauing receiued the holy Ghost from aboue, trauailed through Aegypt and Affrike, then through Mauritania and all Lybia, preaching the Gospel. And the same Doctrine he brought to the Occidentall sea, and the Iles called Brytaniæ, &c. And in the third Booke the first Chapter, he saith. The holie Apostles (like as we haue declared alreadie) being dispersed throughout the whole earth, did diuide the prouinces amongst them by lot, to preach the Gospell in. Peter vndoubtedly first at Jerusalem, then in Galatia, Bythinia, with the higher Asia, Cappadocia, and all Italie, taught the Gospell: Iohn in Asia, who ended his life there: To Andrew fell the Prouinces on the coaste of Euxine, all Scythia, Byzans, Macedonia, and the firme land of Greece: Thomas amongst the Parthians, Indians, and the Ile of Taproban did publish the Gospell: Another chose Aegypt and Lybia: another the vttermost coastes of the Ocean, with the Iles of Brytaine, &c. Dorotheus. Dorotheus writeth thus. Simon Zelotes passing through Mauritania, and Affrica preached Christ, at length was crucified, slaine and buried in Brytaine, or rather Bythania. Also he saith, Aristobulus, whom the Apostle to the Romans remembreth, was made a Bishop in Brytaine or Bythania. George Maior writeth in a preface, that immediatlie after Christs resurrection vnder Claudius the Emperor, the light of the gospel was kindled in Brytaine by Ioseph of Arimathea that buried the body of Christ. Tertullian writing against the Iewes of those times, saith: The Brytaines inhabitants of places vnknowen to the Romanes, yet did obey and were subiect to the kingdome of Christ. William of Malmesbury, in his booke of the antiquities of Glastenburie, alleageth Freculphus to write in his second booke and fourth Chapter, as followeth: Philip the Apostle, preaching the worde of God in Gaule (nowe called Fraunce) chose out xii. amongste his Disciples, whome hee sent into Brytaine to preach the worde of life, and vpon euerie one of them, he most deuoutly stretched out his right hande: ouer these he appointed for chiefe, his deare friende Ioseph of Arimathea, that buried our Lorde. These (saieth Iohn Capgraue, who alleageth Melkin and Merlin) came into this lande the yeere of Christes incarnation fiftie three, in the time of Aruiragus who gaue to them the Ile of Aualon, where they builded an Oratorie of wythen wandes, and after there were buried: which place being since encreased, and newely builded by diuers Princes, was named Glastenburie. For confirmation whereof, King Henry the second (as himselfe in his Charter affirmeth) hauing diligentlie perused the Priuiledges and Charters, which hee caused to bee presented and read,

Antiquities of Glastenburie. Freculphus.

Glastenburie first Church of Christians in Brytaine. Iohn Capgraue. Melkin and Merlin.

Charta Regia.

not

not onely of William the first, of William the seconde, and Henry the first his Grandfather: but also the Charters of the Princes his predecessours, of more ancient time, to wit, of Edgar, Edmond, Edward, Elfred, Bringwalthius, Kenthwin, Baldred, Ina, Arthur, & that noble man Cudred, & many other Christian Kings beside, also of Kenewalla, sometime a Heathen and Pagan King, concerning the house of Glastenburie found, that in some of those Charters it is called the Mother of Saintes, of some other, the Graue of the Saintes, and that the sayde place was first builded euen by the verie Disciples of Christ themselues, and by them dedicated to our Lorde, as the first place which hee chose to himselfe in this Realme: all which so to be the foresaid King Henry established by his Charter: which Charter my selfe haue seene and read.

MArius sonne of Aruiragus, an excellent wise man, was ordained King of Brytaine. At this season Rodrike King of the Pictes, (which were people of Scythia) accompanied with the Scots inuaded Brytaine, and spoiled the country with sword & fire, against whom Marius with his knights assembled in al hast, & gaue them sharpe battel, wherein Rodrike was slaine, with a great number of his souldiors vpon Stanesmore, in token of which victory, there was a stone not farre from Carlile erected, with this inscription, In token of Marius victorie. To them which remained Marius gaue inhabitance in the further part of Scotland. And forsomuch as the Brytaines disdained to giue to them their daughters in marlage, they acquainted them with the Irishmen, and maried their daughters, and grew in processe of time to a great people. He repayred, walled, and fortified the citie of Caerlegion, now called Chester. He rayned liii. yeares. 73 Gaufride. Flores Historiar. Ran Hig. Henry Bradshaw. Chester repayred.

DOmitianus the Emperor sent Salustius Lucullus into Brytaine, whome hee shortly put to death, for that he suffred certain lawes to be called Lucullen, after his name. Some write that Cneus Trebullius was now gouernor, here. 94 Suetonius.

What Lieutenants were in Brytaine for the time of Nerua and Traiane, I find not recorded: but when Adrian was possessed in the Empire, Iulius Seuerus gouerned here vnder him, whom Adrianus called out of Brytaine, to warre against the Iewes, and came hither himselfe in person, pacified the tumultes, reared a wall, which should seperate the barbarous from his subiectes, and returned to Rome, Iulius Seuerus. 120 Spartianus.

COilus the sonne of Marius was ordained king, hee was brought vp euen from his youth in Rome among the Romans, and therfore fauoring them, paid the tribute truely: he builded Colchester, and raigned lv. yeares. 124 Galfridus. Colchester builded.

ANtonius Pius succeeded Hadrianus in the Empire, and gouerned this prouince by Lollius Vrbicus, who ouercame the Brytaines, and raysed another wall of turffes to keepe out the inrodes of the Northerne Brytaines. 139 Capitolinus.

ANtonius Philosophus now ruled the Romane Empire, and Calphurnius Agricola was sent hither with authority against the Britains then repining at the Romanes, but with what successe it is not specified. 162

LVcius the sonne of Coilus, was ordayned King, who in all his actes and deedes followed the steps of his forefathers, in such wise as hee was of all men loued and dread. He sent his two Embassadors Eluanus and Meduuinus, 179 Florent. Wigorn.

England receiued the faith. Beda. Asser. Flores Historiar. Liber. S. Alaphs. John Capgraue, Marianus Scotus London Yorke, and Carlein.

two learned men in the Scriptures, with his louing letters to Eluthérius Bishoppe of Rome, desiring him to send some deuout and learned men, by whose instruction both he and his people might bee taught the faith and Religion of Christ: whereof Eluthérius beeing verie glad, baptized these two messengers, making Eluanus a Bishoppe, and Meduuinus a teacher, and sent also with them into Brytaine two famous Clarkes, Faganus and Deruuianus, by whose diligence Lucius and his people of Brytaine were baptized and instructed in the faith of Christ, Temples were made Cathedrall Churches, and Bishops placed, where Flamines before had béene: at London, Yorke, and Carlion vpon Vske, (now saint Dauids in Wales) were placed Archbishops: thus far after the common opinion, & writers of that time. True it is that till this date, there remaineth in Somersetshire, in the Deuerie of Dunkor, a parish Church, bearing the name of S. Deruuian, as a Church either by him founded, or to him dedicated. To the confirmation whereof, the reuerend Beda writeth thus. In the yére 156. Marcus Aurelius Verus, the 14. Emperour after Augustus gouerned the Empire, with his brother Aurelius Comodus. In whose time Eluthérius, a holie man being Pope of the Church of Rome, Lucius King of Brytaines wrote vnto him, desiring that by his commandement he might be made a Christian: which his request was granted him, whereby the Brytains receiuing then the faith, kept it sound and vndefiled in rest and peace, vntill Diocletian the Emperours time. Thus farre Beda of that matter, which maie suffice to proue the Christian faith, then to bee receiued here, but Beda speaketh nothing of such an Epistle, sent by Eluthérius to Lucius, as some haue fathered vpon him, I onelie find the same entered in a booke intituled, Constitutions, pertaining to the Guildhall of London, misdated in the Latine, as the English following sheweth.

Beda falsely alleaged, by R. Grafton.

Epistle of Eluthérius to Lucius king of Brytaine. Lib. Consti. Lon.

The yére after Christes byrth 202. Pope Eluthérius did write to Lucius king of Brytain, for the amendment of the kings and the nobilitie of Brytain as followeth. You required that we should send you the Roman and Imperiall lawes, ỹ you might vse thē in your kingdome of Brytain, but those lawes we may disproue, & not the lawes of God. You haue receiued lately through Gods goodnesse in your kingdome, the faith and law of Christ, you haue there in your kingdome both Testaments, out of them by Gods grace, and the aduice of your realme take a lawe, and therby patiently gouerne the kingdome. You are the Vicar of God in your kingdome, according to the kingly Prophet. The earth is the Lordes, and his fulnesse is the whole world, and all that dwell therein: and againe, Thou hast loued righteousnesse, and hated iniquitie, therefore God (euen thy God) hath annointed thée with the oyle of gladnesse aboue thy fellowes. They are the kings children, christian nations, and people of your kingdome that liue and consist vnder your protection, peace, and kingdome according to the Scripture, as an Hen gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, the people, and nations of the kingdome of Brytaine is yours, such as are diuided you should gather them together to the lawe of Christ: his holy Church, to peace and concorde: and cherish, maintaine, protect, gouerne, and defend them from the iniurious, malicious and their enemies. Woe be to that

Psalm. 45.

kingdome,

kingdome, the King whereof is a childe, and the Princes eate early in the morning. I doe not call a King a childe for his youth or minoritie, but for his follie, iniquitie, and madnesse, according to the Kingly Prophet. The bloudthirstie and deceitfull men shall not outliue halfe their daies. By eating we shall vnderstand Gluttonie; by Gluttonie Luxurie; by Luxurie, all filth, wickednesse and mischiefe, according to King Salomon: Wisedome will not enter into a spitefull soule, nor inhabite in a bodie subiect to sinne. A King hath his name of gouerning, and not of his kingdome, so long you shall be a King, as you rule well, otherwise, you shall not bee so named, and lose that name, which God forbid. God graunt that you may so rule your Realme of Brytain, that you may raigne with him euerlastingly, whose Vicar you are in the saide kingdome. To whome with the father, &c. Psalm. 55. Sapience, 1.

There remaineth in the Church of Saint Peter vpon Cornhill at London, a Table, wherein is written, that Lucius founded the same Church to bee an Archbishops sea, and made it the Metropolitan and chiefe Church of his kingdome, which so endured the space of 400. yeares, vnto the comming of Saint Augustine.

The Archbishops names, I finde onely to be set downe by Iocelyn of Furnes, in his booke of Brytish Bishops, and not else where. Iocelyn of Furnes.

1 Thean (saith he) was the first Archbishop of London, in the time of Lucius, who builded the saide Church of S. Peter in a place called Cornehill in London, by the aide of Ciran, chiefe butler to King Lucius.

2 Eluanus was the second, and he builded a Librarie to the same Church adioyning: and conuerted manie of the Druides (learned men in the Pagans lawe) to the Christian faith.

3 Cadar was the third.

4 Obinus.

5 Conan.

6 Paludius.

7 Stephan.

8 Iltuta.

9 Dedwin.

10 Thedred.

11 Hilary.

12 Guidelinus.

13 Vodinus slaine by the Saxons.

14 Theanus, fled with the Brytaines into Wales, about the yeare of Christ 587. Thus much out of Ioceline of the Archbishops: the credit whereof I leaue to the iudgement of the learned: for I read of a Bishop of London (not before named) in the yeare of Christ, 326. to be present at the second Councell holden at Arlas, in the time of Constantine the Great, who subscribed thereunto in these words: *Ex prouincia Britaniæ ciuitate Londinensi Restitutus Episcopus*: as plainlie appeareth in the first Tome of the Councelles. He writeth not himselfe Archbishop, and therefore maketh that matter of Archbishops doubtfull, or rather ouerthroweth that opinion.

Lucius raigned xii. yéeres, and was buried at Glocester.

181 COmodus after his father Antonius Philosophus succéeded in the Empire with most cruell tyrannie. In his time the Northerne Brytaines burst in through the wall, forraged the Countrey, and slew the Romane General with his souldiers, wherefore Vlpius Marcellus was appointed here a carefull vigilant Captaine: he sore annoied the Brytaines, which were enemies to the Roman state, and purchasing enuie by his vertue, was shortly dismissed. Dion.

Lampridius. Dion. Then Ceronnis who ruled all vnder Comodus, appointed certaine men of base estate to gouerne the Romane enemies here, wherewith the souldiours being grieued, sent 15000. chosen men out of their number to Rome, who accusing him before Comodus to compasse the Empire, for his sonne, was deliuered vnto them, who immediately mangled him and slew his wife with his two sonnes.

Lampridius. Comodus then sent Holnius Pertinax into Brytaine, and surnamed himselfe Brytanicus thereunto perswaded by flatterers, when the Brytaines were so euill affected toward him, that they would haue nominated some other Emperour against him, and namely Pertinax: but these tumults were appeased by Capitolinus. the wisedome of Pertinax, to his great danger, for he was well nére slaine in tumult, and left among the dead, which iniury he after seuerally reuenged, and sued for his discharge, being afterward preferred to the Empire.

Capitolinus. Clodius Albinus was then sent hither by Comodus, who at the first so greatly esteemed of him, that he honored him with the title of a Cæsar, which Clodius refused: but afterwards when a false rumor was dispersed, that Comodus was slaine, hee made an Oration to the legions of Brytaine, impeaching the gouernment of Emperors, and preferring the Senate, whereupon Comodus being sharpned against him, sent Iunius Seuerus to rule here, and shortlie after Comodus was slaine.

194 PErtinax then was chosen Emperour, and within iii. moneths was slaine through the perswasions of Didius Iulianus, who enioyed the Empire two moneths, and the practise of Clodius Albinus, which then returned into Brytain, and (as it séemeth) recouered his former gouernment.

194 SEuerus after the death of Pertinax was saluted Emperor: he immediately slewe Didius Iulianus, and because he feared Clodius Albinus with his Brytaine legions, he created him Cæsar, and partaker of the Empire, and sent Heraclitus to gouerne this Ile: but after he had subdued Niger who also vsurped the Empire, he moued warre against Albinus, who passing hence into France with the Brytish armie, encountred with Seuerus neare Lions, and was there slaine. Henceforth Seuerus quietly enioyed the Romane Empire, and made sharpe warres into the Eastern partes of the world, with great glorie.

209 But returning to Rome, he vnderstood of a war raised in Brytaine. Wherfore he hasted hither with his two sonnes Bassianus and Geta: at his arriuall peace was offered, which he refused, and leauing his yonger sonne Geta to gouerne the prouince, (being the hither part of the Ile) he with Bassianus his eldest sonne entred into the North, & passed the further part of this Iland without any resistance: yet by ambushes, difficultie of the waie, and other inconue-

niences,

nience, he loſt 50000. men, and then returned, enforced the enemies to conclude a league, and yéeld ſome part of their Countrey.

At concluſion of which league, when hee and his ſonne rid to treat with the Caledonians or Northerne Brytaines, Baſſianus his ſonne drawing his ſworde in the ſight of the enemie, was ready to haue ſlaine him, and had done it, had not ſome of the companie made an outerie: yet this fault was remitted.

After this league, the Brytaines of the North reſorted to the Emperours Court, where Iulia, Seuerus wife, obiected to a woman of Brytaine, the wife of Argentorix the Caledonian, that the Brytiſh women accompanied with men diſhoneſtly: yea quoth the Brytiſh woman, wee ſatiſfie the naturall luſt in better ſort then you Romanes, for wee accompanie our ſelues openlie with the beſt men, and you commit adulterie cloſely with the moſt vile perſons. But after this league there was a generall reuolte of the Brytaines againſt the Romanes, which yet was pacified with great ſlaughter, and then hee built a wall of turfe, to inhibite the Northerne Brytaines, from whence when hee returned, at the next lodging, a blacke More that ſerued him, a notable ſcoffer, met him with a Crowne of Cypres: he moued with the colour of the man, and the Cypres (which was then vſed at all burials,) as with ſignes of euill lucke, commanded the man to be ſent awaie, wherewith he cried: Thou haſt béene all in all, and haſt vanquiſhed all, and now of a Conqueror be thou a God. Then comming to the Citie of Yorke (as is ſuppoſed,) he was by miſtaking brought to the Temple of Bellona: blacke beaſts alſo being ordained for ſacrifice, followed him home to his pallace: which things theſe did then accompt to be ominous. Seuerus wal. Spartianus.

Shortly after he departed out of this life at Yorke, partly through ſickneſs, and partly through griefe conceiued of his ſonnes euill demeanour. At his laſt gaſpe he vttered theſe words: I found the ſtate troubleſome euerie where, and leaue it quiet euen vnto the Brytaines.

Herodian writeth that in theſe warres of Seuerus againſt the North Brytaines, he found their Countrey full of watery Marſhes: by thoſe Marſhes did the Brytains ſwim and ſkirmiſh with their enemies, being couered with water vp vnto the Nauell, not caring that men ſawe the priuie parts of their naked bodies. Neither did they know the vſe of apparell, but accuſtomed to compaſſe their bellies and necks onlie with yron, which they eſtéemed an ornament and token of riches, as other barbarous people ſuppoſed of Golde. They painted their bodies with diuers pictures and formes of beaſts, and therefore ware no garment, leaſt the painting ſhould be hidden, being a nation very valiant, and warlike, gréedie of ſlaughter, and content onely with a ſmall target, a ſpeare, and a ſkain hanging by their naked ſides, ignorant of the vſe of ſhirts of maile and helmets, for they reckned the ſame comberous vnto them, when they ſhould ſwimme ouer the lakes, &c. Herodian.

A grieuous diſeaſe came vpon Seuerus, being ſore appalled with age, ſo that he was conſtrained to kéepe his chamber and ſend Antonius vnto the warres: but Antonie not regarding the buſineſſe of Brytaine, endeuoured by all meanes he coulde, to win the hearts of the ſouldiers vnto him, deprauing his brother,

to the intent they should onely aide him to the attaining of the soueraignty. The long malady of his father, caused him to perswade Physitions to rid the old man out of the world, vntill that Seuerus, being consumed, ended his life, who was the most famous of all Emperours in warlike affaires: For none other had obtained so many victories and conquests, either ciuill against his aduersaries, or forraine against the barbarous nations. Thus deceased hee, after hee had gouerned the Empire the space of xviii. yéeres, leauing his sons for successours in the same: vnto whome he left also great abundance of riches, as none of his predecessours had before him done. When Antony had gotten the supreme authoritie, he put to death the Phisitions, because they obeyed not his commandement in hastning his fathers death: and slewe all his owne and his brothers bringers vp and instructers, for that they went about to reconcile them, leauing none aliue, that was either of dignitie, or had reuerenced his Father. The Captaines of the armie hee enticed, to perswade the souldiours to proclaime him onely Emperour: imagining dailie manifold mischiefes against his brother: but hee could not win the souldiours good willes. Wherefore Antony, hauing taken truce with the Brytaines, remoued towardes his mother and brother. Their mother laboured to bring them to agreement, wherein also many prudent counsellours earnestly trauelled, Antony thereby was induced, rather of force, then good will, to counterfaite loue. After which done, the two brethren gouerning the Empire with equall honour, launched out of Brytaine, and sailed with the reliques of their Father toward Rome. For when they had burned the bodie (as was the custome of the Romanes) they carried the ashes, intermedled with pleasant odours, in a Bore of Alabaster) to Rome, that it might bee there interred amongst the monuments of other Princes. Themselues led thus their armie, as conquerours of Brytaine, and passed ouer the Ocean vnto the nert coast of France, and so hasted towards Rome. When they were entred into Rome, all the people crowned with Laurell, receiued, and the Senate welcommed them. Formost road the Emperors themselues, clothed in Emperiall purple. And next vnto them followed the Consuls bearing the vessell with Seuerus reliques. Which vessell, the people, after they had saluted the new Emperour, did reuerently worship. The Emperours and Consuls being thus accompanied with Princely pompe, caried the same into the Temple, where the diuine monuments of Marcus, and other Emperours are séene. After they had finished the solemne sacrifice, and according to the auncient vsage, celebrated the Funerall ceremonies, both the brethren departed into the Emperiall pallace: which they deuided betwéene them, closed vp all backe dores, and priuie posternes, and met together only at the outer gates. They chose besides either of them vnto himselfe a sundrie guarde, and neuer came together vnlesse it were somtime for a little while to be séene of the people. Neuertheles, first of all, they accomplished the due Funerals of their father. For the Romans accustome to consecrate with immortalitie, such Emperours, as at their death, leaue either children, or successours in the Empire behinde them. And those which are endued with that honour, they canonize amongst the Gods. There is through

the

the Citie, a certaine dolefull lamentation, mixed with fearefull soie. And they vse to interre the dead corpes verie sumptuously. But then, they haue an Image, made as like the dead Emperor, as may be. The same, within the porch of the Emperiall Pallace, they laie in a great and high bedde of Iuorie, couered ouer with cloth of golde. The same Image lokeeth verie pale, like a diseased patient. About the bed on either side, a great part of the daie, do certaine persons sit: that is to wit, on the left side, the Senate, clothed in blacke garments: and on the right side, many matrons. None of these are seene to weare any owches, or chaines of gold, but being clad with thin white vestures, they shewe the countenance of mourners. And thus doe they continue the space of 7. daies: during the which, euery day the Emperors Phisitions do repaire vnto the bedde, and, as though they had felt the patients pulses, declare that hee waxeth more sicke then before. Finally, when it seemeth that hee is deceased, certaine of the most noble and worthy young men, of the orders of knightes and Senators, doe take vp the bedde on their shoulders, and carrie it through the streete, called *Sacra via*, vnto the olde market place, where the Romane Magistrates are accustomed to render vp their offices. There on both sides, are certaine stages made with steps, vpon the which, on the one side, is a quire of boies, being noble mens sonnes; and on the other side are many beautifull women, singing hymnes and ballades, in praise of the dead Emperour, measured with diuers lamentable verses. When these are finished, the young men doe take vp the bed againe, and beare it out of the Citie, into the field called Campus Martius, in the broadest part whereof, there is erected a Tower foure square, with sides of equall height builded of great tymber, like vnto a Tabernacle. The same within forth, is filled with drie chippes and reedes: and on the outer side, it is hanged with Arras clothes of golde, and decked with Images of Iuorie, and sundrie painted pictures. Within it also, is an other lesse Towre, but like in forme, with doores and portalles opened. And ouer that, the third and fourth, with manie other roomes ascending continually, vntill they reach vnto the highest, which is lesse then all the other. A man may compare this building vnto Towres, which are set in Hauens with fire on the toppes, to direct shippes which saile by night on the Seas, into their perfect portes. The same are commonlie called Phari. Now when they haue put the bed in the second Tabernacle, they gather al kinds of spices and perfumes, with diuers odoriferous fruites, hearbes and iuyces, the which they throwe on heapes in the tabernacle. Neither is there anie Nation, Citie, or person, which excelleth in honour or dignitie, but at that time will to the vttermost of his power, most honourably celebrate the last funeralles of the Emperour.

When they haue couched a great heape of spices together, and stuffed the building therewith, all the Roman knights do ride about the Tower, with a iust course and order to and fro: Chariots are also drawne about, wherein many do sit clothed in purple, representing the persons of al noble men being magistrates and captaines of Rome.

The ceremonies being throughly ended, the successor in the Empire, taketh a brand

a brand of fire in his hand, and fireth therewith the tabernacle. After whome, all other that are present, do throwe fire likewise into the same. And immediatly, all the building being filled with those drie sticks and spices, beginneth to burne vehemently. Then out of the highest and least towre, as out of a high steeple, is let forth an Eagle, the which they beleeue, doth beare the Emperours soule into heauen. And from thenceforth is that Emperour worshipped as the other gods.

From this time to the raigne of Diocletian, for the space of 72. yeeres, there is nothing recorded in our Histories hitherto published concerning Brytaine: but whereas it is manifest that the soueraigntie of Brytaine rested in the Romane Emperors all that space, I will set them here downe successiuely.

212 Herodian. After Seuerus, Basianus surnamed Antonius Carracalla, murthering his brother Geta, succeeded in the Empire. He was cruell to his people: hee founded the Bath in Rome, which is called Antonians: he was out of measure giuen to sensualitie, and carnall concupiscence, insomuch, that he espoused his mother in law Iuba. He was murdered by Martialis when he had gouerned six yeeres.

218 Macrinus one yeere.

Antoninus Heliogabalus three yeeres.

223 Lampridius Victor. Alexander Seuerus, who was slaine by his souldiers here in Brytaine, in a village called Sicila, but other say in France, thirteene yeeres.

236 Iulius Maximus three yeeres.

238 M. Antonius Gordianus one yeere.

239 Antonius Gordianus the sonne sixe yeeres.

245 Iulius Philippus the first christian Emperor fiue yeeres.

250 Decius two yeeres.

252 Trebonianus Gallus, and Vibius Hostilianus two yeeres.

252 Iulius Aemilianus foure moneths.

254 Licinius Valerianus sixe.
Licinius Gallicinus fiftene.

At this time there arose in diuers countries thirtie vsurpers, which are called, the thirtie tyrants, of the which Lollianus Posthumius, Victorianus Tetritius, as it is supposed, kept Brytaine from Gallicinus.

269 Flauius Claudius two.

Aurelianus fiue.

276 Tacitus sixe moneths.

Florianius three moneths.

277 Vopiscus: Aurelius Probus fiue yeeres. In which time Bonesus a Brytaine borne, but brought vp in Spaine, fearing lest he should be executed because the Germans had burnt certaine vessels in the Rhene, wherof he had charge, vsurped ỹ Empire with Proculus at Colen, & would haue exempted from the Romanes, Brytaine, Spaine, & part of France, but being vanquished by Probus in a long and sore battaile, he strangled himselfe. Some sedition was then raised in Brytain and appeased by Victorinus, a Woman, by whose motion Probus had made him Regent of Brytaine, which was causer of this trouble. This Probus permitted

the

the Brytains and others that they might haue vines and make Wine. After he had raigned fiue yéares, he was slaine of the souldiours. Vineyards permitted to the Brytaines.

CArus was created Augustus, hee made Carinus and Numerianus his sonnes Cæsars, to which Carinus he assigned Brytaine, Gaule, Illyricum, Italie, and Spaine, but Carus was slaine by lightning, and the other two within thrée yéares space lost their liues. 282 Vopiscus.

DIocleſian was then chosen Emperour, who adioined Maximianus vnto him in like gouernement. 285

Carausius was appointed to bee admirall of the Brytaine seas, which were sore troubled by the pirates of the Frankes and Saxons: but when he had oftentimes apprehended the pirates, and neither reserued the Prizes, or was accomptable for it, neither to the Emperours, nor their deputies, it was suspected, ỳ of set purpose hee permitted those rouers to haue recourse through those seas, to the end hee might rifle them, and enrich himselfe. Maximianus therefore sent part of his armie to suppresse him, in which were manie of the Thebane legion, who in this iourny were slaine by his commandement, and made Martires, because they professed Christ. Carausius vnderstanding of the preparation made against him, passed out of Gaule into Brytaine, where bringing the countrie to his obeysance, he vsurped the roabe of an Emperour: whereupon they which were sent to surprise him, returned to Maximianus, who then was incumbred with newe warre in Gaule. In the meane time Carausius built shippes in Brytaine, intercepted certaine companies of souldiours, assembled a great number of barbarous people with spoyle, with hope of whome he purposed to trouble the sea coasts of Gallia and Spaine. Holland also (then holden by certaine Frankes) reuolted to Carausius.

Then purposed Maximianus the second time to make warre against Carausius, but by stormy weather, and want of Pilotes, he was enforced to defer his purpose. Shortelie after, the two Emperours elected two Cæsars, Valerius Maximus, and Constantius Chlorus, to which Constantius they committed the recouery of Brytaine. He immediatly passing through Gaule hitherward, sodenly surprised Gesforiacum (now called Bullein) which Carausius had manned, and so stopped the hauen, that it could stand Carausius in no steade. Then building Shippes to passe ouer hither, hee first assayled luckilie the Hollanders, which had reuolted to Carausius, and then staying for conuenient winde, hee houered a while on the sea coast, and in the meane time Carausius was traiterously slaine by Alectus his familiar friend. Panegyricon Constantius dictus.

ALectus then vsurped the empire here in Brytaine, against whom Constantine with his former preparation made readie for warre, and launched out in haste, though the wind was contrarie: which when his souldiers vnderstood, they set out also with side winds out of the same and other portes, in such foggy and milky weather, that they passed by Alectus naue, then houering about the Ile of Wight, the one not seeing the other. The Romanes as soone as they landed burnt their Shippes, determining eyther to winne, or lose their liues. Which when Alectus vnderstoode, hee left the shore, and prepared himselfe for battaile with his mercenarie barbarous souldiours, in which he was slaine. 292 Alectus slaine.

slaine by Asclepiodatus Lord great master of the Emperours house. In this fight none of the Romanes perished, but here all the field was ouerspread with dead bodies of the enimies, among whome lay Alectus himselfe without anie Empertall ornaments, and scantlie knowne. Other Romane souldiours also which had lost their company in the mist, arriued at London, slewe in the Citie a great number of barbarous people which escaped from the battaile, and purposed to haue sacked London. Then when Constantius came a land, the Brytaines with their wiues & children flocked vnto him, and submitted themselues totallie, being nowe deliuered out of a long thraldome. This expedition of Constantius into Brytaine is ascribed by some to Maximianus, into which error, a false inscription of the Panegyriks hath led them.

290 Asclepiodatus hauing recouered Brytaine, as is before touched, he beside the Citie of London with a strong siege (saieth Geffrey Monmouth) and ere it were long by knightlie force and violence, entred the Citie, and slew the Romans Captain named Liuius Gallus, neere vnto a broke there at that time running, into the which broke he threw him, by reason whereof it is called in Brytish Nant Gallon, since in the Saxon tongue Gallus or Wallus broke, and to this day the streete where sometime the broke ran, is called Walbrooke. The Romane Histories speake nothing of this Gallus, but of Galerius, which was ioined in the empire with Constantius, after the decease of Asclepiodatus, & also of the Brytish king Coill, as shal be shewed in place conuenient. True it is I grant, that a certaine broke, dreined, I know not from what heads, but much encreased by the mirish grounds, without the Citie of London on the North side, passed through the same Citie southward to the riuer of Thames. And therefore of comming through and from the wall, and so through the Citie, was since called Wallbrooke: which brooke in olde time had diuers places, Bridges ouer it, as appeareth by inquisition made in Anno. 1300. Elius Russell being Maior of London, William Iordane, and I. de Beuer then Maisters of those Bridges founde, who were bound to repaire them so oft as need, and then was the same broke vaulted ouer with brick, as it now remaineth.

Walbrooke whereof it tooke that name

301 Coill, after Asclepiodatus, (as saieth Geffrey) tooke on him the kingdome of Brytaine: Peter de Icham saieth this Coill was Duke of Caire Glow, or Gloceſter. But to returne to the Romanes: who had now recouered Brytaine within ten yeares after Carausius first toke it. Diocleſian (saieth Eusebius) persecuted the Church of God. In the nenetenth yeare of his raygne, hee beganne to ouerthrowe the Churches downe to the grounde, yea, and the very foundations were digged vp, the holie and sacred Scriptures burned to ashes in the open market place, the Pastors of the Church were persecuted. When he had raigned together with Maximianus, who persecuted with him xx. yeares, he deposed himselfe voluntarily, and liued a priuate life. From that time to his end he pined away with diseases: but Maximian hanged himselfe.

Eusebius Christians in Brytaine persecuted, Churches ouerthrowne, and the Scriptures burned.

Bede.

Of this persecution, Bede hath thus: Diocleſian in the East, and Maximianus in the West, raised the tenth persecution, after Nero, against the Christians, he commaunded the Churches to be spoyled, the Christians to be tormented

ted and killed. Which persecution was both longer, and also crueller then all the other: for whole tenne yeres together it continued in burning the Churches, in banishing the innocents, in murdering the Martyres, and neuer ceased. Wherefore, among other places, it made Brytaine to bee honoured with the glory of manie holie Martyres, which constantly stode and dyed in the confession of their faith. Among other suffered S. Albane, of whome Fortunatus Prisca in the booke he wrote in the praise of Virginitie, speaking of the Martyres, which from all the coasts of the world came vnto God, saith: The Martyrdome of Alban and other in Brytaine.

Albanum egregium fœcunda Brytannia profert.
The fertile land of batefull Brytannie
Bringeth forth Alban a martyre right worthy.

S. Alban for professing Christ, beeing led from the Citie of Verolamium, vnto Holmehurst, since called Werswold wood, where now the Towne of S. Albans is builded, suffered martirdome in the yeere of Christ 293. who is specified to be the first Martyr of Brytaine: and shortly after to the number of one thousand Christians were martyred at Lichfield, where Amphabele Instructer of Alban was taken, brought to Verolamium, and there tormented, by slitting vp his belly, whipping him about a stake, winding his bowelles out of his body, and stoning him to death. The life and martyrdome of these two, to wit, of Alban and Amphabele was recorded and written in Latine at large, by one, who wrote himselfe by none other name, then, of all wretches the simplest man: since by Mathew Paris, a Monke of S. Albane, turned out of Latine prose into French verse, both which Bookes I haue seene, and was since translated out of the Latine and French, into English meetre by Iohn Lydgate Monke of Burie. John Capgrave. Mathew Paris. Iohn Lydgate.

CONstantius beganne his Empire with Galerius, the Empire was diuided betweene them: so that Constantius shoulde possesse Affrica, Italie, France and Brytaine: Galerius should haue Illyrica, Asia, and the East parts: which done, they substituted vnder them two Cæsars. Constantius holding himselfe content with the dignity of Augustus, refused to sustaine the trouble which he should haue endured through the administration of the affaires of Italy and Affrike: he sought by all meanes howe hee might enrich the people of the Empire. He abolished the superstition of the Gentiles in his dominions, so that afterward Brytaine felt no persecutions. The yeere following he passed out of France hither against the Pictes, at which time his sonne Constantine, who then serued Galerius, perceiuing his destruction to be compassed, posted to his father in all haste, houghing and killing all the post horses, which way soeuer he passed, that he might not be pursued, and came to his father the verie houre that he went aboorde to come into Brytaine: but Constantius as soone as hee came to Yorke, sodainlie sickened, and perceiuing his day to draw neere, when he was asked to whom he would leaue the Empire, answered, to Constantine, and shortlie after departed. 305

This Constantius begot Constantine on Helena his host, daughter of Dripona in Bythinia, as he was passing through ỹ countrey, being one of the Romane legates, sent into ỹ east parts: Constantine was created Emperor in France.

Constantine

311 Eusebius. CONstantine surnamed the Great, sonne of Constantius borne in Bithinia by Helena, the Inkéeper (saith William of Malmesburie) first consecrated, as is aforesaid: his father being now dead, did with so great sorow, and shedding of teares solemnize his buriall, that the souldiers hoping he would resemble his father, saluted him Emperour at Yorke against his will: but at Rome Socrates, li. 1. ca. 2 Maxentius the sonne of Maximianus Herculius, is chosen of the Pretorian souldiers, not to gouerne the Empire, but rather to practise tyrannie.

Maximianus being chiefe Emperour, after he had crowned Emperour Licinius, (by originall a Dane, his ould fellow souldier and familiar friend) departed himselfe rather a tyrant then an Emperour, abusing the spouses of noble personages, slaying manie with the sworde, and putting in vre other such like practises.

Constantine the Emperour, being certified hereof, deuised with himselfe which waies possible he might ridde the Romanes from vnder this grieuous yoke of seruitude, and dispatch the Tyrant out of this life: Deliberating thus with himselfe, he forecasted also what God he were best to call vpon for aide to wage battaile with the aduersarie. He remembred how that Diocletian, which wholy dedicated himselfe vnto the seruice of ỳ Hethenish Gods, preuailed nothing therby: also he perswaded himselfe for certaine, ỳ his father Constantius, who renounced the Idolatrie of the Gentiles led a more fortunate life, musing thus doubtfully with himselfe, and taking his iourney with his souldiers, I wot not whither, a certaine vision appeared vnto him, as it was strange to beholde, so in déede incredible to be spoken of. About noone, the date somewhat declining, he saw in the skie, a lightsome Pillar in forme of a Crosse, wherein these wordes were ingrauen: In this ouercome. The which Vision so amazed the Emperour, that he mistrusting his owne sight, demanded of them that were present, whether they perceiued the Vision: which when all with one consent had affirmed, the wauering mind of the Emperour was settled, with this deuine and wonderfull sight. The night following in his slepe, hee séeth Christ, which saith thus vnto him: Frame vnto thy selfe the forme of a Crosse after the example of the signe which appeared vnto thee, and beare the same against the enemies, as a fit banner or token of victorie: He being fully perswaded with this oracle, commandeth the victorious signe of the Crosse (which as yet is reserued in the pallace of the Emperour) to be made, and therewith procéedeth forwards with great courage, and ioyning with the enemie, right ouer against Rome, about the bridge commonlie called Vulbia, hee got the victorie, for Maxentius being drowned in the riuer died: it was the seauenth yéere of his raigne, when he ouercame Maxentius. After these thinges, when as Lucinius his fellow Emperour, and his brother in lawe, hauing married his sister Constantia, led his life in the East: Constantine enioying ample benefites receiued at the handes of God, shewed himselfe gratefull in offering of thankes and praises vnto the author of all goodnes, his practises were these, To deliuer the Christians from persecution: to call againe ỳ exiled vnto their natiue soile: to set at libertie such as were in prison: to restore againe the goods of the confiscated, to build againe the Churches that were ouerthrowne: all

The godly studie and practises of Constantine.

which

which things he accomplished with great promptnesse of minde. But Licinius persecuting the Christians, Constantine waged battaile against him, & meeting oft by Sea and land, in the end, at Chrisopolis a Citie of Bithinia, to witte at the Hauen of Chalcedon, Licinius was ouercome, and yeldeth himselfe to Constantine.

After hee had repressed the ciuill warres, vanquished the Gothes in manie places, and woon great memorie among the Barbarians, he placed the Brytaines that had done him so good seruice, in a part of France towards the west shore of the Ocean, hee applied himselfe wholy to the studie of the liberall Artes. He summoned the Nicene Councell, which was holde at Nicea, a Citie of Bythinia, for the debating of the controuersie about the feast of Easter, & the rooting out of the heresie of Arius. Which Councell being ended, he lined in great tranquilitie and turned himselfe wholy to the building of Churches, as well in other Cities as in that Citie which he called after his owne name, Constantinople. In this Citie he erected from the foundation two Churches calling the one of Peace, the other of the Apostles.

W. Malmes. Brytaines placed in France.

Councell at Nice.

Constantinople builded.

Socrates.

Helena the Emperours mother (which of the village Drepane made a Citie, the which afterwards the Emperour called Helenopolis) tooke her iournie to Jerusalem, which when she found lying waste in a heape of stones, she searched diligently for the Sepulture of Christ, and at length she found it, but with great difficultie; for as they which imbraced the faith of Christ, highly esteemed of that Sepulchre and monument after his passion: so such as abhorred Christian Religion, heaped in that place much earth, and raised great hillocks, and builded there the Temple of Venus, and set vp her Idoll. But when the Emperours mother was made priuie thereunto, she threw downe the Idoll: caused the great heape of earth to bee hurled downe, where vnder shee found three Crosses in the graue, one vpon the which Christ suffered: other two, whereon the two theeues ended their liues, together with the table of Pilate, wherein he had written that Christ was crucified king of the Iewes: the Emperors mother builded ouer the Sepulchre a gorgious Church, calling it New Jerusalem, right ouer against that olde and waste Jerusalem. She builded a second Church nothing inferiour to the first, at Bethelem in the hollow rocke, where Christ was borne. Also the third, vpon the mount, where Christ ascended vnto the Father, manie things she gaue to Churches, and to poore people, she lined godlie and religiously, and departed this life being fourescore yeres olde: her bodie was buried at Constantinople. Symon of Durham writeth, that shee builded walles about the Citie of London, and the Citie of Colchester.

Helen mother to Constantine.

New Jerusalem builded.

About this time Octauius, whome Constantine had left gouernour in Brytaine, rebelled against whome Constantine sent Traherne with a legion of Romans, who (after diuers conflictes) was slaine: Gracianus surnamed Funarius was at that time gouernour of the Roman legion in Brytaine.

Constantine at the age of 65. yeres died, and was buried at Constantinople, he left behinde him three sonnes, to wit Constantious, Constance, and Constantius, to succeede him in the Empire.

Constantinus

337 CONstantinus beganne his Empire and raigne ouer Brytaine: with him his Father Constantine had appointed by his last will, that his two brethren Constans and Constantius should participate and haue their portion of the Empire, but not long after, when Constantinus attempted warre against his brother at Aquileia, and demeaned himselfe vnaduisedly therin, he was slaine, and then was the Empire reduced vnder the gouernment of the two brethren onlie.

340 CONstans then ruled Brytaine, which he administred with great iustice: but after, whē he failed of his health, he associated vnto him in stēd of friends, euill disposed persons to afflict him, through whose euill counsell he declined into horrible vices, by meane whereof, waxing scant tolerable of the inhabitants of the prouinces, he was slaine by Magnentius, who vsurped the Empire in France, Spaine and Brytaine.

353 CONstantius then had the regiment of Brytaine, who sent hither a Spaniard called Paul, a Notarie by profession, to bring out certaine men of warre which had conspired with Magnentius: but he vpon false surmises grieuouslie molested the guiltlesse, fettering and manacling whome he pleased. Whereupon Martinus then lieutenant in Brytaine, being mooued with compassion, desired him to forbeare the harmlesse: but he was so rigorous, that he also charged Martinus himselfe of conspiracie with Magnentius, and was earnest to Martinus. bring him before the Emperour: whereupon Martinus drawing his swoorde smote at him, and because he could not slaie him, he sodainly slewe himselfe, and this Paul embrued with bloud, haled a great company (linked in chaines) to the Emperours presence, which were either banished, executed, or attainted.

Constantius after this appointed Iulianus to gouerne Gaule, at which time great spoile was made in Brytaine by the Scottes and Pictes, wherefore Iulianus busied with warre against the Almaines, sent Lupcinus hither with an army, in whose absence Iulianus vsurped the Empire: whereof when Constantius heard, he returned from the war (against the Parthians) against Iulianus, and died in the way.

362 IVlianus (called the Apostata) began his raigne ouer Brytaine and the Empire, a man seene passing wel in the Liberall Sciences, but an earnest aduersarie of Christian religion: he banished Palladius a great and honorable person Ammianus. Marcellinus. into Brytaine vpon a suspition: he sent Alipius who had beene a lieutenant of Brytaine to repaire Ierusalem, but terrible flashes of fire issuing out of the earth, when they laide the foundations, enforced them to leaue their purpose. This Iulian with great preparations made warre vpon the Parthians, he spoiled Assiria, and returning from thence a Conquerour, he was slaine by his enemies, as he praised vnaduisedly into the battels. After him succeeded in the Empire Iouinian, and held it nine moneths.

365 VAlentinian was then chosen Emperour by the souldiours. The Pictes, Scots, Attacotes, and Saxons, grieuously molested the Brytaines. Nectaridius who had the charge of the sea coasts here, was slaine by them, and Bulchobandes a great captaine was enclosed by them: wherefore after diuers captaines

taines Theodosius was sent hither, who discomfiting the enimy, and recouering the spoile, entred triumphantlie into London, and the nert yeere went into the north, suppressed the enimies, recouered the prouince, and repaired Cities & fortresses: he oppressed Valentinus an Hungarian, who being banished hither, practised newe tumultes, deliuering him to Dulcitus to be executed, without any enquirie of his confederates, because hee woulde not renewe the tumulte: which done he returned to Rome. Shortlie after Valentinian sent hither Fraomarius (which he before had ordained king of the Buccenobants in Germany) to be Marshall of the Almaines which serued in Brytaine. And not long after Valentinian died. Dulcitus.

GRatian with his brother Valentinian was then created Emperour. Hee to the intent he might better repaire the decaied state of the Empire, made Theodosius a copartner with him in it. 375

MAximus a valiant and worthy man, was shortly after forced here in Brytaine to take the Empire vpon him, who passed into France, and immediatly al the Germane legions and Roman souldiors reuolted vnto him from Gratian, so that he being destitute of men of warre, fled to Lions, where he was slaine by treason: for Maximus gaue out that Gratians wife was comming to her husband, which Gratian entirelie louing his wife, lightly credited, and therefore accompanied with a fewe, went forth to mete her: but in the coach where he supposed to haue founde his wife, was Andragatius a desperate man, who leaping out of the coach killed Gratian. 383

Then Maximus created his sonne Victor a Cæsar, and vsed some crueltie against Gratians Captaines. Valentinian being herewith terrified, sent S. Ambrose vnto him to treat a peace, which he accepted, and Theodosius permitted him to vse the title of Augustus. Then he setled himselfe at Trier in Germanie, empouerished the Countries round about him, executed certain heretikes called Priscillianists, and then entred into Italy, breaking the peace, i thought to haue intercepted Valentinian, but he with his mother fled to Theodosius, and perswaded him to take reuenge of Maximus. In the meane time Maximus came to Aquileia, all Italie and Affrica submitted themselues vnto him, when sodainely Theodosius comming from Constantinople, moued warre against him, corrupted his souldiours with bribes, and after one or two skirmishes inforced Maximus to flee to Aquileia, where his owne souldiours deliuered him to Theodousi, by whose commandement he was shortlie after beheaded. Andragatius also who kept the seas, vnderstanding this, drowned himselfe, and Victor the sonne of Maximus was slaine in France by Arbogustes. The Brytaines which serued him returned into France, and setled them in the country there, which is now called Brytaine, so was Brytaine recouered againe to the Romane Empire. Sigebertus. Brytaine in France.

S. Vrsula with the 11000. virgins, which were sent into Britaine to bee maried to Conon and his knights, were slaine and martired of the barbarous people being on the sea. But, as some write, by Attila king of the Hunnes. The 11000 virgins.

HOnorius the sonne of Theodosius succeeded in the Empire, in whose time Pelagius a Brytaine borne, disparkled the venome of his faithlesse 395 Pelagius hereste.

doctrine verie farre abroad, holding, that a man might liue well without the helpe of the grace of God: vsing herein the aide of Iulianus of Campania, who was intemperatly stirred with the losse of his bishoprieke, to whome S. Austen and other fathers also haue answered in most ample maner, but yet they would not be amended thereby, but being convicted of their falsehode, they rather would encrease it by defending and maintaining it, then amende it by returning to the truth.

This time Marcus was chosen Emperour by the souldiers in Britaine, fearing the invasion of the Vandales, but immediatly they slewe him, and elected Gratianus, whom also they murthered within foure moneths.

Then Constantine, a souldier of base estate, onely vpon confidence of his name, was elected here Emperour, who passing hence into France, with all the youth of Britain, got al the men of warre there to take part with him. Honorius sent therefore Sarus to withstand him, who in a foughten field slewe Iustinian Constantines Captaine, and so pursued Constantine, that he made him take Valentia, wherein he sharply besieged him, vntill Gerontius with his Britaines, and Edebrichus with the Franks raised the siege.

Then Constantine fortified the Alpes and Rhene with garrisons, sent Constans his sonne (whom of a Monke hee had made a Cæsar) with a great armie into Spaine, where he toke, and afterward slewe certaine noble personages allied to Honorius, and returning to his father, left Gerontius to gouerne Spaine. Constantine himselfe then craued pardon of Honorius for vsurping the Empire, saying, that he did it by compulsion, which when Honorius heard, he so well liked of him, that he sent an Imperiall robe vnto him.

In these troubles Britaine was greatly endangered by Picts and Scots, and sued to Honorius for succour, but he sending them onely Letters, willed them to looke to their owne state. Shortly after Constans, that was Monke, was slaine by Gerontius his owne Captaine, at Vienna in France: and Constantine himselfe being besieged at Arles by Honorius Souldiours, entered into holy orders, and fled into the Church, thinking thereby to saue himselfe, but was drawen out from thence, and slaine. Gerontius who had trayterously killed his master, was beset round about with Spaniards in his lodging, wherefore he first slew Allanus his tried friend, then Nunichia his wife, and lastly himselfe, and now Honorius recouered Britaine. In his time (saith Bede) Rome was destroied of the Gothes, the 1164. yere after it was builded: after which time the Romans left off to rule in Britain, almost 470. yeres after that Iulius Cæsar first entred the said Ile. The Romanes dwelt within the trench, which as we haue saide, Seuerus drewe ouerthwart the Iland at the south part, which thing may appeare by the cities, temples, bridges, and paued streets to this day remaining, notwithstanding they had in possession, & vnder their dominion the farther parts of Britaine, and also the Ilands which are about Britaine. By meanes (as is aforesaid) the Romans had vsed to transport with them ouer into France the floure of al the youth of Britaine, to serue them in their forraine wars, their men of war were consumed, and was not now able to defend thē selues against the invasions of their enemies: wherupon many yeres together they

they lyued vnder the oppreſſion of two moſt cruell nations, the Scots & Picts: which were of the circuite of Brytaine, but diuided from the land of Brytaine by two armes of the ſea, running betwixt them, of the which one from the eaſt ſea, the other from the weſt, runneth in far and wide into the land, though they may one reake to the other. In the middle of the eaſt creke, there is a city builded called Guidi. Aboue the weſt creke toward the right hand ſtandeth a citie called Alcluith, which in their language is as much to ſay, as the rocke Cluith, for it ſtandeth by a flood of the ſame name. The Brytaines then being thus afflicted by ỹ ſaid nations, ſent their embaſſadors with letters vnto Rome, with lamentable ſupplications, requiring of them aide and ſuccour, promiſing their continuall fealty, ſo that they would reſcue them againſt the oppreſſion of their enemies: whereupon there was ſent vnto them a legion of armed ſouldiours from Rome, which comming into the Iland, and encountring with the enemies, ouerthrew a great number of them, & draue the reſt out of the frontiers of the countrey, and ſo ſetting them at libertie, and free from the miſerie with which they were before ſo grieuouſly ouercharged, counſelled them to make a wall betweene the two ſeas, which might be of force to keepe out their euill neighbours: and that done, they returned home with great triumph. Now the Brytaines building the wall which they were bid to make, not of ſtone, as they were willed, but of turfe, as hauing none among them, that had ſkill therein, made it ſo ſlender, that it ſerued them to little purpoſe. This wall they made betweene the two armes or creekes of the ſea, many miles long, that where the fence of the water lacked, there by the helpe of the trench they might keep their countrey from the breaking in of their enemies, of which piece of worke, there remaineth euen vnto this day moſt aſſured tokens yet to be ſeene. This trench beginneth about two miles from the monaſtery of Abercuring, in a place which in the Picts language is called Penuahil, and in Engliſh is called Panwelt, and running out weſtward, is ended by the city Alcluith. But the former enemies, when they had once perceiued that the Romane legion was returned home againe, forthwith being ſet on land by boats, inuaded the borders, ouercame the country, and as it were beate downe all before them: whereupon Embaſſadors be ſent againe to Rome, beſeeching them they would not ſuffer their miſerable Country to be vtterly deſtroyed. Againe, there is ſent an other legion, which comming vpon a ſodain, made a great ſlaughter of the enemies, & chaſed them ouer into their owne country. Then the Romanes tolde the Brytains, that it was not their eaſe to take any more ſuch trauellous iournies for their defence, and therefore bade them to practiſe their armour themſelues, and to learne to withſtand their enemies. Penuahil.

They builded vp a wall of hard ſtone from ſea to ſea, right betweene the two Cities, which there were made to keepe out the enemie, in the ſelfe ſame place where Seuerus before had caſt his trench, with publike and priuate charges: the Brytaines alſo putting to their helping hands, they then builded it eight foote broad, and twelue foote high, right as it were by a line, from eaſt to weſt, as it doth to this day appeare, which being perfected, they giue the people ſtraight warning to looke well to themſelues, they teach them to handle their weapons, Picts wall.

and instruct them in warlike feates. Also by the sea side southward, where their ships lay at harbor, least their enemies should land thereabouts, they made up bullwarks along, one somewhat distant from another: and this done, bid them farewell, as minded no more to returne. At this time almost all the treasure of Brytaine was hid under ground, or transported over into France.

As sone as they were gone, the Scots and Picts hauing intelligence that they had made promise they would come no more, they taking heart of grace, returne againe to their businesse: and first, all that was without the wall, they toke for their owne. After that, they giue assault vnto the wall, where the Brytaines were with grapples pulled downe, and otherwise so assaulted, that they leauing both the Cities and the wall also, were dispersed and put to flight, the enemies following, killed and slayed more cruellie then euer they did before, whereupon being driuen out of their owne houses, and possessions, they fall a robbing and spoyling one the other of them, so farre forth, that all the whole country was brought to that exigent, that they had none other sustenance, but that they got by hunting and killing of wilde beastes.

408 THeodosius the younger, sonne of Arcadius, succéeded his vncle Honorius, and appointed Valentinianus his cousin, Emperour in the West partes.

At this time, Timotheus here in Brytaine, vnder a pretence of religion, and great continencie, drew many into a dangerous heresie.

Chrysanthus the son of bishop Martian, a Consull of Italy was made viceroy and Lord deputy of Brytaine: he was afterwarde made Bishop of Constantinople.

446 Now the poore remnant of the Brytains directed letters to Aetius, whereof this was the beginning: To Aetius thrise Consul, the mourning of the Brytains. In the processe of which Epistle, they thus set forth their pittifull estate. The barbarous enemy driueth vs vpon the sea: the sea againe vpon the enemie: betweene these twaine riseth two maner of deaths, either we are killed or drowned. And yet for all their suite, they coulde obtaine no aide of him, as he which had then both his hands full of businesse and battaile at home with Bleda and Attila, Kings of the Hunnes.

Pelagian heresie. The Pelagian heresie being brought in by Agricola, the sonne of Seueranus a Pelagian bishop, about this time did sore corrupt the faith of the Brytaines, but the Brytains being neither willing to receiue their lewd doctrine, as blasphemous against the grace of God, neither able to refute their wily and wicked persuasions, they deuised this wholsome counsell, to séeke for aide of the Bishops of France, against these their spiritual enemies. And they calling a common councell, consulted among themselues, whom of thē all it were best to send to help their neighbors faith. By the assent of them al there was chosen two worthy prelates, Germanus Altisiodorensis, and Lupus Bishop of the Citie Trecassa, which should passe ouer into Brytaine to confirme them in the faith, which with readie obedience accepting the commandement of the synode, toke shipping thitherward, and had prosperous windes, which set them a shore in place where they themselues desired. Thither a great multitude of people be-

ing

ing assembled, receiued the Priestes of God, and the worde of God was preached by them, not onely in their Churches, but also in the open stretes, and in the Countrey, in such sort, that in all places both the sound and faithfull were confirmed, and they that before swarued out of the right faith, were amended. The Authors and head professors of this heretical errour, lay lurking all this while, and much spited to see the people daily to fall from them. After long aduisement vsed, they take vpon them to trie the matter by open disputation, which being agreed vppon, they come forth richly appointed, gorgeously apparelled, accompanyed with a number of flattering fauourers. The people were present both to see and iudge the matter. The parties were farre vnlike of condition: on the one side was the faith, on the other, mans presumption: on the one side, meekenesse, on the other side, pride: on the one side, Pelagius, on the other, Christ. First of all Germanus and Lupus gaue their aduersaries leaue to speake, which vainely occupied both the time and eares of the people with naked wordes. But after the reuerend Bishoppes powred out their wordes confirmed with Scriptures out of the Gospelles and Apostles. Thus the vanitie of Heretikes was conuicted, and falsehod confuted, so that at euerie obiection, they were forced to confesse their errour, not being able to answere them: but after their departure, the heresie beganne againe to reuiue. Wherefore Germanus returned into Brytaine with Seuerus, banished the heretikes, and restored the faith. Pelagians heresie confuted.

The end of the Romans gouernment in Brytaine.

Brytaines and Saxons.

THe Brytaines continued in doubtfull war with the Scots and Picts, sometime bearing away the victorie, and sometime leaning it to the enemie. But considering the ambitious minds of men, and fearing least some should vsurpe the kingdome at home, while they were deteined with warres abroad, thought good to appoint ouer them some king: and so with one consent they elected Vortiger.

VOrtiger raigned in Brytaine, in whose time hunger more preuailing against the Brytaines, droue many of them to yeld themselues vnto the hands of their enemies. Other there were which could neuer be brought thereunto, but from the hilles and brakes where they lurked, many times inuaded their enemies, as trusting so much the more in the helpe of God, how much the lesse hope they had of aide of men, and by such meanes, first of all both resisted and ouerthrew them, which many yeeres together had liued by the spoile of the Countrey, whereby for the time they drew homeward with shame enough, intending not long after to returne. 447

The Picts then, and long time after, kept themselues quiet at home, saue onely they would nowe and then make inuasions into the lande, and driue away bootes of cattell. After that they drewe to a quietnesse, there ensued

such plentie of graine as neuer was séene the like before, as farre as any man could remember, whereof the people grewe to lose and wanton liuing, whereof al manner of lewdnesse followed, specially crueltie, hate of trueth, and loue of lying, insomuch, that if any were gentler and more giuen to trueth then other, the other would worke him all the hurt and spite they could. This did not onely the Seculars, but also the Cleargie, and the heads thereof, giuing themselues ouer to drunkennesse, pride, contention, enuie, and such other, casting from them the yoke of Christ.

In the meane season, a bitter plague befell among them for their corrupt liuing, consuming in short time such a multitude of people, that the quicke were not sufficient to burie the dead: and yet for all that, the remnant remained so hardened in sinne, that neither their friendes death, nor feare of their owne, could cure the murreine of their soules, which daily perished through their sinnefull liuing: whereby a great stroke of Gods vengeance ensued vpon the whole sinnefull nation: for being now infested againe with their old neighbours the Scottes and Pictes, they deuised with themselues what was best to doe, and where they might séeke rescue to withstand and repell the feare of the Northerne nation: and they agreed all with their king Vortiger, to demaund aide of the Saxons beyond the Seas, which thing doubtlesse (saith Bede) was done by Gods owne appointment, that the people might be thereby plagued, as by the ende it manifestly appeared.

W. Malmes. The people of the English or Saxons, being sent for of the said king into Brytaine, landed here in three long ships, and by the kings commandement, were appointed to abide in the east part of the land. And the Ile of Thanet was giuen to them, they to defend their countrey like friends: but indéed, as it proued afterward, minding to destroy the Countrey as enemies. Wherfore incountering with the Northerne enemie, the Saxons had the better, whereof they sending word home into their Countrey, as also of the fruitfulnesse of the land, the Saxons sent ouer a great naup and number of men better appointed for the warres, which being nowe ioined with the former band, drewe to a stronger army then all the power of the Brytaines was able to ouercome. Those by the Brytains were allowed a place to dwell among them, with that condition, that they should warre for them against their enemies, for wages of the Brytaines.

These Saxons, English, and Iuites that came from beyonde the Seas, were three of the strongest Nations in Germanie. Of the Iuites came the people of Kent, and the Ile of Wight, and also they in the prouince of West Saxons are called Iuites right ouer against the Ile of Wight. Of the Saxons (that is, of the Region now called olde Saxons) descended the East Saxons, the South Saxons, and the West Saxons. Of the English descended the East English, the Mercies, and the Northumbers. The chiefe Captaines of the Saxons are saide to be two brethren, Hengist and Horsus. This Hengist (saieth Geffrey Monmouth) on a time required of King Vortiger, so much ground as mought be compassed with a thong of a bulles skinne, thereupon to build a place to rest in, which the king granted, where Hengist built a

Castell,

Castell, which hee called Thong Castell, and therein feasted king Vortiger with great royalty, and when night was come that the king shoulde go to rest, Rowen the daughter of Hengist by commandement of her father, came with a cuppe of gold in her hand, and kneeling before the king, said to him, Wassaile, and he againe, by counsell of an interpreter, answered, Drinke haile: at which time king Vortiger seeing the beauty of this Rowen, hee was enamoured, and desired to haue her to wife, which was graunted by her father on condition, the king should giue him al the country of Kent, for him and his people to dwel in, which the king willingly, but vnadvisedly graunted, and espoused the Damosell. Thong Castell in Kent.

Thong Castell in Kent, is now a small village, litle more then halfe a mile from Sidingborne. The ditches, and the keepe hill of Thong Castell appeare in a little wood a two flight shote by south from Thong Church. Thong is a mile from the mouth of Pelton creeke, and about halfe a mile from Pelton towne, if passage were through the Marishes the nert way.

For the loue that Vortiger bare to Rowen the Saron, he was diuorced from his lawfull wife, by whom he had three sonnes, for which deede, welneere all the Brytaines forsoke him.

Vodine Archbishop of London, a man of singular deuotion and good life, by the aduise of Vortimer, went to Vortiger, and saide to him, that hee had not done as a christian Prince, in departing from his lawfull wife, and taking another woman, whose father was an enemie to the christian faith, and also went about to conquer the Crowne of Brytaine. Then saide Vortiger, I was not wise when I brought the Sarons to help me against mine enemies, but I was more vnwise, when I was taken with the inordinate lust of the daughter of Hengist, I knowe that mine Empire will be terrible, except I repent me with speede and turne to God. Archbishop of London reproueth the king.

Hengist hearing Vortiger make this lamentation, blamed him, for that hee beleeued the perswasions of a prophane man, of fained life (as he termed him) and forthwith slewe the good Archbishop Vodine, and many other priestes, and religious persons. All the Churches in Kent were polluted with blood, the Nuns, with other religious persons, were by force put from their houses and goods, and constrained to pollution of their bodies. Archbishop of London slaine.

The Brytaines considering the dailie repaire of the Sarons into this Realme, shewed to their king the ieoperdy that might thereof ensue, and aduertised him of the danger, but all was in vaine: for Vortiger, by reason of his wife, bare such fauour to the Sarons, that he would in no wise heare the counsell of his subiects, wherefore, they with one minde deprined him of his royall dignitie, when he had raigned fiue yeeres, and ordained to be their king Vortimer his eldest sonne.

VOrtimer pursued the Sarons, and by his martiall knighthode fought against them foure battelles, besides diuers skirmishes, vntill at length he was poisoned by the means of Rowen his stepmother, after he had raigned fiue yeeres. The first battell Hengist and Horse, who were (saieth Bede the sonnes of Wiglise, whose father was Vecta, whose father was Woden, fought 454

Aeglesthorpe, or Aelsford in Kent.

with Vortimer, and his brother Catigerne in a place called Aeglesthorpe, nowe Aelsford in Kent: and notwithstanding that Horse was slaine in this battel, yet Hengist bare away the victory. Bede saith that Horse was buried in east Kent, where his tombe or monument, bearing his name was in his time to be seene.

Horstede in Kent.

And true it is, that in Kent is a place, to this daie called Horstede, about two miles from Aelsford, in the parish of Chetham, where the people of that countrie say the said Horse was slaine. There was also slaine in the same battaile at

Catigerne slaine.

Aeglesthorpe Catigerne brother to Vortimer, whose monument remaineth till this day, on a great plain heath in the parish of Aelsford, & is now corruptly called Cits cotthons, for Catigernes. (I haue my selfe in companie of diuers worshipfull and learned Gentlemen beholde it in Anno 1590.) and is of foure flat stones, one of them standing vpright in the middle of two other, inclosing the edge sides of the first, and the fourth laid flat aloft the other three: and is of such height, that men may stand on either side the middle stone in time of storme or tempest, safe from wind and rain, being defended with the breadth of the stones, as hauing one at their backes, one on eyther side, and the fourth ouer their heades. And about one coites cast from this monument lieth an other great stone, much part thereof in the ground, as fallen downe where the same had beene fixed.

The second battaile Hengist and Eske fought with the Brytaines in a place

Crayford in Kent.

called Crecanford, or Crayford in Kent, of the Brytaines many perished by the sworde, the rest of them abandoned Kent altogether, and with great feare fled to London.

The thirde battaile, Hengist and Eske fought with the Brytaines in a place

Wippeds fleete

called Wippeds fleete, that is to saie, the fleete of Wipped, where they killed Dukes or Captaines of the Brytaines, with manie other, whereas on the partie of the Saxons there was one onelie man slaine, whose name was Wipped.

The fourth battaile was fought by Hengist and Eske against the Brytaines, neere to a Poole called Colmoore, the which was sore fought by the Saxons, and long continued with great danger to the Brytaines, because that the said Poole inclosed a part of their hoste so stronglie, that the Brytaines coulde not approch to them, beeing beaten off with the enimies shotte, albeit in the ende, the Saxons were put to flight, and manie of them drowned in the same Poole.

460 VOrtiger obtained againe the kingdome, & shortly after Hengist, which was chased into the Ile of Thanet, entred the land with a number of Saxons, but when he heard of the great assembly the Britains had made against him, he treated for peace, which in fine was concluded. Shortlie after Hengist (by a

W. Malmes.

guile which before he had deuised) bid his sonne in law, and three hundred of his

The Barons of the Brytaines slaine at a banquet.

Nobles vnto a feast or banquet, where when he had ouerlaide his guestes with ouermuch wine, hee fell to quarelling, and with taunting talke, pinched euerie one of them, and straight fell to fighting, where through the Brytaines were slaine euerie one. The king was taken prisoner, and forced to giue for his ran-

The king taken prisoner.

some, Kent, Sussex, Suffolke, and Northfolke. This murther of the Brytaines

taines was on the plaine of Salisbury. Then Hengist beganne his dominion ouer Kent, & Vortiger fled into Wales, and builded there a Castell, of which building, and long let of the same, and of his Prophet Merlin, Geffrey Monm. and others speake many things. Great companies of the Saxons daily flocked into this Iland, and grew so strong, that the people of the countrey which sent for them, stode in great feare of their puissance, for those Saxons had taken league with the Picts, & began to turne their force vpō the Brytains: and to be short, the fire once kindled in the lands of the Pagans there, toke iust reuenge of the wickednes of the people, raging first vpō the cities and country next adioyning, after from the east sea to the west, ouerwhelming all the whole Iland without resistance: both publike and priuate houses were ouerthrowne to the ground: the priests were slaine stāding at the altar: the bishops with their flock were murthered, without respect of their dignity, nor there was any that would bury the slaine: some of the miserable leauings being taken in the hils, were there killed: other being sterued with hunger, were faine to crepe out of their caues, & buy their victual at their enemies hands, with sale of their libertie for euer, if yet they were not killed out of hād: other fled ouer the seas with an heauy hart: other tarrying still in their country in feare of death, and lacke of food, liued full miserably in the mountaines, woods, and cliffes. Aurelius Ambrose, and Vther (brethren of Constantine that was before slaine in France) landed with a nauie of ships at Totnes, made warre vpon Vortiger, and burned him in his castell in Wales, when he had secondly raigned fiue yeares.

Hengist king of Kent. Bede. A miserable state of the Brytaines.

AVrelius Ambrose was ordained king of Brytaine, in whose time the Brytaines by little and little began to take strength and courage vnto them, comming out of their caues in which they lurked before, and with one consent, calling for heauenly helpe, that they might not for euer be vtterly destroyed; they hauing for their captaine and leader, the foresaid Ambrosius Aurelius, assembled themselues together, and prouoking the victors to fight, through Gods assistance atchieued the victorie, and from that day forward, were the men of the country. Now the enemie had the victorie, vntill the yeare that Bathe was besieged, where they gaue their enemies a great ouerthrow, which was about the foure and fortieth yeare of their comming into the land. But of this wee shall speake more hereafter.

466

Bede. W. Malmes.

Of this Ambrosius, William Malmesburie writeth thus: Surelie, euen then (saieth he) the Brytaines had gone to wracke, if Ambrosius, who onelie and alone of all the Romanes, remained in Brytaine, and was Monarch of the Realme, after Vortiger, had not kept vnder the proude Barbarians, with the notable trauaile of the warriour Arthur. Now it followeth in Geffrey, that this Ambrosius caused Churches to bee repaired, which had beene spoyled by the Saxons: hee caused also the great stones to bee set on the Plaine of Salisburie, which is called Stonehenge, in remembraunce of the Brytaines that were slaine and buried there, in the raigne of Vortiger, at the banquet, and communication of Hengist with the Saxons. This ancient monument is yet to be seene, and is a number of stones, rough and of a gray colour, 25. foote in length, and about 10. foote in breadth, they are ioy-

W. Malmes.

Stonehenge beside Salisbury.

ned

ned by two and two together, and euerie couple sustaineth a third stone lying ouerthwart, gatewise, which is fastened by the meanes of tenons that enter into mortaises of those stones, not closed with anie cement. It appeareth, that there hath beene three ranks going round as circles one within another: whereof the vttermost and largest, containeth in compasse about 300. foote, but the other rankes are decaied, and therefore hard to reckon how many stones there be.

Geffrey mon. Giral. Cam. Gerua. Doro.

The Chronicles of the Brytains do testifie, that whereas the Saxons, about the yeere of our Lord 450. had slaine 480. of the Brytaines nobility by treason, and vnder colour of a treaty, Aurelius Ambrose now king of the Brytains, desirous to continue their memorie, with some worthy monument, caused these stones to be set vp in place of their murther and buriall, the which stones hadde beene first brought from Affrike into Ireland, and placed on Mounte Kyllare, and from thence by the industrious meanes of Merlin, were conueyed to this place to the foresaide end. There are about this place, certaine little hilles, or banks, vnder the which are found sometimes bones of bigge men, and peeces of armor, also not far from thence remaine old ruines of the maner of a fortresse, which the Romans (as it is not vnlike) did build there in times past.

Kingdome of the South Saxons. Marianus. Kimenshore. Andredsleage. Mercreds borne.

Alla, and his three sonnes, Kimon, Plineing, and Cissa, came into Brytaine with three ships, and landed with them, in a place called Kimenshore, and there slewe manie of the Brytaines, forcing the rest to make their flight into a wood called Andredsleage, this Alla fighting with the Brytaines in a place neere vnto Mercreds Borne, or Mercreds Rilear, slewe many of them, and put the rest to flight.

Andredsester.

Alla and Cissa his sonne, after long siege, brake into the Citie of Andredsester, and slew the inhabitants from the greatest to the smallest.

Portesmouth.

Porte, and his two sonnes, Byda, and Moegla, arriued in Brytaine with two ships, in a place called Portesmouth, and there slewe a yong gentleman, one of the nobilitie of the Brytaines, and diuers others.

The same yeere two Dukes, to wit, Cerdic and Kenric, his sonne came into Brytaine with v. Ships, and arriued in a place called Cerdics shore, the same day they fought with the Brytaines, and put them to flight, Cerdic and his son Kenric slewe Natanland king of the Brytaines, and 5000. men, of whose name that countrie as far as Cerdics ford, was called by the name of Natanleed.

Aurelius Ambrose, being poysoned died when he had raigned 32. yeeres, and was buried at Stonehenge, then called Chorea Gigantum.

498 Gaufride. Arbor Succes.

VTher Pendragon, so called, for that hee caused alwayes a Dragon to bee born before him in his battailes, was crowned king of Brytain: he vanquished Otta and Oza at Windgate by Coquet Riuer. He was enamored vpon Igren the Dukes wife of Cornwall, and to obtaine his vnlawfull lust, made warre vpon her husband Goilen, and slew him in battaile at Duuilioc. On her he begate Arthur. He raigned xviii. yeeres, and was buried at Stonhinge.

516 Nennius.

ARthur the sonne of Vther borne in Cornewall, at the age of xv. yeeres was crowned king of Brytain, as some say at Caerleon, other at Winch. one old nameles pamphlet saith at Cilicester, by Dubricius Archbishop of Legions.

This

This Citie of Ciliceſter in Brytiſh is called Caerſegent, and was ſituate néere Reading. It was ſo called, for that Conſtantius, the ſonne of Conſtantine the great dyed there: his Sepulchre might once haue bene ſeene there beſides the Citie, as the letters engrauen on it in ſtone did declare. Thus farre the ſaid nameleſſe author. Sea. Cro.

The Towne of Ciliceſter is yet to be ſéene in Hamſhire, euen in the verie edge of it, as the broke deuideth, it is 6. miles or more from Reading, and containeth within the wall of ſtone about 80. acres of ground, deuided into three fieldes, beſide the ground about the manner place it ſelfe, and the Church. The wall is about 2. miles compaſſe, with foure places where gates haue béene, on the which wall grow ſome Oakes of 10. cart loade the péece, the ground within the wall is almoſt leuell with the toppe of the ſame wall, but without, the wall is 6. or 7. foote of height, aboue the ground within the wall at this preſent is one farme houſe, and a parith Church, the pariſhioners whereof dwell without the Towne, there is in digging and plowing much Romane money found, the ground there beareth good corne, ſaue in ſome place, the corne being marueilous faire to the eye, and ready to ſhew perfecter, it deceiueth. The lande of the towne, after the conqueſt came to one Blewith, & then one of the Blewiths leauing no heyre male, the land not entailed to the heyres generall, came by marriage to one Peter de Cuſance Knight: and after to one Edward Baynard, comming out of the houſe of the Baynards of Eſſex, whoſe name is now obſcured there, thus much of Ciceſter. And now againe to Arthur, who, as is reported, toke to wife Guineuer, couſin to Cador Duke of Cornwal, and daughter to the king of Biſkay. Of this king Arthur there be many fabulous reportes, but certaine he was (ſaith W. of Malmesbury) a Prince more worthy to haue aduancement by true hiſtories, then falſe fables, being the only prop and vpholder of this his countrey. Ciliceſter an ancient Citie. Leyland. Sea. Chron. W. Malm.

In the beginning of his raigne, Lotho and Conradus his allies, enuying his proſperity, made war againſt him, but he valiantly vãquiſhed them with their Picts and Scots, and at his pleaſure appointed them a gouernor named Anguiſel. He fought xii. battels againſt the Saxons, and alwaies bare away the victorie. Theſe battels (ſaith Nennius) were fought in places following. Anna. Hiſto. Nennius.

The firſt battell was fought in the mouth of the water Gleyne or Gledy.

The ſecond, third, fourth, and fift, nie vnto the riuer Douglaſſe, which is in the Countie of Lincur.

The ſixt vpon the riuer Baſſas.

The ſeauenth in the Wood Calidon, or Carcoite Calidon.

The eight beſide the Caſtell called Guinien.

The ninth at Cairelien in Wales.

The tenth by the ſea ſide, in a place called Trachenrith, or Richorwode.

The eleuenth vpon an hill named Agned Cathergonien.

The twelfth at ẏ hill or towne of Bath, then named Bathen hil, where many more were ſlaine by ẏ force of Arthur, for he alone (ſaith W. Mal.) hauing the Image of our Lady ſowed vpõ his armor, ſet vpon 900. of his enemies & with an incredible ſlaughter put thẽ to flight. But now cõcerning this Bath before mẽtioned Bath or Bathen hill.

tioned, it is to be noted, that Bath in Somersetshire standeth lowe, compassed about with hils, wherby it is euident, that either it is remoued from that place where it stood in Nenius time, or els that ẏ place which he called Badonicus mons, was not this town it selfe, as Leiland and other coniecture, but some other high place neere, which is not vnlikely, for at this day within a mile of it, euer a town called Bannar downe, which is so called, either corruptly for Bathen downe, or els in memory of the Banners displaied there, Banner downe, and semeth to me both vpon the sight of the place, and report of such as haue gathered caps full of mens teeth in following the plow there, to be the same that Nenius (corruptly called Gildas) or Bede meaneth, though Polidor mistakes it for Blanchemore. Thus much for Badon hill: now to the history.

W. Lamb. Banner downe

Afterward Arthur raised the siege which the Saxons had planted about Lincolne, & slew them in great numbers. On the other side (saith W. Mal.) though the English Saxons were tolled with ẏ variable dalliance of fortune, yet they did alwaies supply their armies when they were decayed with their countrimen which came to him, and therfore with the better courage they ran vpon the weapons of their enemies, & when the inhabitants by little and little quailed and gaue ouer, they spread themselues through the whole Iland. Gods pleasure being so, in whose hand & power the alteration and change of al kingdomes is, and doth consist, but these things came to passe in processe of time and yeeres.

Arthures round table.

Arthur hauing abated the rage of the Saxons as is afore shewed, and reduced his countrey to quietnesse, he constituted the order of the round table, into the which order he only retained such of his nobilitie as were most renowmed for vertue and chiualrie. This round table he kept in diuers places, especiallie at Carlion, Winchester, and Camalet in Somersetshire. This Camalet

Camalet castle.

somtime a famous towne, or castle standeth at the South end of the Church of south Gadbury, the same is situat on a very hor hil, wonderfully strengthned by nature, to the which be two entrings vp, by very steepe way, one by north, an other by Southwest. The very roote of the hill, whereon this fortresse stood, is more then a mile in compasse. In the vpper part of the top of the hill be foure ditches or trenches, and a balky wal of earth betwirt euery one of them. In the very toppe of the hill aboue all the trenches, is Magna area or campus, of 20. acres or more, where in diuers places men may see foundations, and rudor of wals. There was much darkie blew stone, that people of the village there by hath caried away. This top within the vpper wal being more then 20. acres, hath often beene plowed, and borne very good corne, much gold, siluer, & copper of the Romans coines hath bin found there in plowing, & likewise in the fields about the roots of this hil, with many other antique things especially by East.

Leyland.

There was found in the memory of men a horse shoe of siluer at Camalot. The people can tell nothing there but that they haue heard say ẏ Arthur much resorted to Camalot. The old Lord Hungarford was owner of this Camalot, since, Hasting Earle of Huntington by his mother, &c.

There is yet to be seene in Denbigh shire, in the parish of Lansanan, in the side of a stonie hil, a place compasse, wherin be foure and twenty seats for men to sit in, some lesse, and some bigger, cut out of the maine Rock by mans hand, where

where children and yong men, comming to seke their Cattell, vse to sit, and plaie: they commonly call it Arthures round Table.

While Arthur was valiantlie occupied in his wars beyond the Seas, (where he wrought many wonders, as some haue written, but far vnlike to be true,) Mordred, to whome he had committed the gouernement of Brytaine, confederating himselfe with Cerdicus first king of the West Saxons, traiterously vsurped the kingdome, of which treason, when relation came to Arthur, hee speedilie returned into Brytain, and at Richborow neere to Sandwich, gaue battel to him, and wanne the fielde. Anguisell of Scotland, Gawin and Cador were there slaine: then pursuing him into Cornewall, gaue him battel there againe by the Riuer of Alaune, of some histories called Cablan, where Mordred was slaine. And Arthur being deadly wounded, was conueied to Glastenburie, where he died on the xvi. day of May, in the yere of Christ 542. and was there buried after he had victoriously gouerned this Realme 26. yeres, hee gaue Brentmarsh (saith Rowse) with other possessions to the value of 500. Marks, to the Abbete of Glastenburie.

Flores Historiarum.

Battaile at Doues.

Mordred slaine.

Anti Glasco. Gualter couen. Antiqui. Glast.

More then 600. yeres after his death, to wit, about the yere of Christ 1189. which was the last yere of the raigne of king Henry the second, his bodie was founde, buried in the Churchyarde, betwixt two pillars, vi. foote deepe vnder ground, but those that digged the ground there to find his body, after they had entred about 7. foote deepe into the earth, they found a mightie broade stone, with a leaden Crosse fastened to that part which laie downe wardes towardes the corpes, containing this inscription.

Hic iacet sepultus rex Arturius in insula Aualonia.

This inscription was grauen on that side of the Crosse which was nert to the stone, so that til the Crosse was taken from the stone, it was not seene. His body was found, not inclosed within a tombe of stone, but within a great tree made hollowe like a trough, the which being digged vp and opened, therein was found the bones of Arthur, which were of a maruellous bignesse, as Giraldus Cambrensis, a learned man that then liued, reporteth to haue heard of the Abbot of Glastenburie, of whome he was enformed that the shin-bone of Arthur being set vp by the leg of a very tall man, came aboue his knee the breadth of three fingers. The skull of his head of a wonderfull bignesse, in the which head there appeared the prints of x. wounds or mo: all the which were growne into one seame, except onely that whereof hee died, which being greater then the other appeared verie plaine. Also in opening the tombe of his wife Guineuer, that was buried with him, they found the tresses of her haire whole and perfect, finely platted, of colour like to gold, but being touched fell to dust: the Abbot of that house (sometime Prior of Bermondsey) was named Henry Bloys, and was nephew to king Henry the second, by whose commandement the buriall of Arthur was searched for and found. Whose bones, with the bones of Guineuer his wife being found, were remoued into the newe great Church, (for the old was burned in Anno, 1171.) and there buried in a faire Tombe of Marble, laying the bones of the king at the head of the Tombe, and the bones of the Quéene at his féete toward the West. The Crosse of leade with the inscription,

ſcription, as it was found, and taken off the ſtone, was kept in the treaſurie or reuelles of Glaſſenburie Church, till the ſuppreſſion thereof, in the reigne of King Henry the eight.

542 Brute booke. CONſtantine kinſman to Arthur, and ſonne to Cador Duke of Cornewall, was ordained king of Brytaine, and raigned three yeeres.

This man was by the two ſonnes of Mordred greeuouſlie vexed, for they claimed the Land by the right of their Father, but after manie battailes they fled, the one to London, the other to Wincheſter, which Cities they obtayned, and toke them: but Conſtantine followed, and ſubdued, and toke the foreſaid Cities, and one of the yong men hee found in an Abbey at London, ſlew him neere the Aultar cruellie, and buried him nigh Vter Pendragon, at Stonehinge. The other yong man he found at Wincheſter, and ſlew him, flying into the Church of S. Amphibalus.

Mordreds children ſlaine.

Gildas. Arbor ſucceſſi.

Aurelius Conanus a Brytaine, raiſed mortall warre againſt Conſtantine the king, and after ſore fight ſlew him in the field, when he had raigned three yeeres, and was buried at Stonehinge.

545 AVrelius Conanus, Nephewe to Arthur, was Crowned King of Brytaine.

He cheriſhed ſuch as loued ſtrife and diſſention within his Realme: and gaue light credence to them which accuſed other, were it right or wrong.

Flores Hiſtoriar.

Hee impriſoned by ſtrength his Vncle, which was right heyre to the Crowne. He raigned three and thirty yeeres.

The firſt kingdome of the Saxons.

The kingdome of Northumberland began firſt in Brytaine vnder a Saxon named Ida.

578 Gildas. Gaufride. VOrtiporus the ſonne of Conanus, was ordained King of Brytaine, a vicious king, and cruell tyrant, who put from him his wife, and kept her daughter for his Concubine. In diuers battels he diſcomfited the Saxons. He raigned foure yeeres.

581 MAlgo Pulcher Canonus of Northwales, began his raigne ouer the Brytaines, and gouerned them fiue yeeres.

This Malgo was in proportion of body, greater then all the Dukes of Brytaine, but he delighted in the foule ſin of Sodomie. He ſlew his firſt wife, and then toke to wife his owne brothers daughter.

Gildas.

586 CAreticus began to rule the Brytaines. This man loued ciuill warre, and was odible both to God and to his ſubiectes. They moued the Saxons (being accompanied with Gurmundus king of Ireland) to make warre vpon Careticus, in ſuch wiſe, that hee was fayne to take the Towne of Ciceſter, where they aſſaulted him ſore, and fired the corne, by tying fire to the winges of Sparrowes, that he with his men fledde from thence into Wales: by which meanes, he left a great part of his dominion, and ended his life, when he hadde raigned three yeeres.

Sea. chro.

This Gurmund burned vp the land of Brytaine from ſea to ſea, and the more part of that Iſle called Leogrea he gaue to the Saxons. The Brytaines gaue place, and fled into the Weſt partes of Cornewall, and Wales. Theanus Archbiſhop of London, and Thadeocus Archbiſhop of Yorke, when their Churches were

were all destroyed to the ground, they with their Cleargie fled into Wales, and many of them into little Brytaine. This plague came on the Brytaines for their couetousnesse, ranine, and Lecherie. Gurmund builded Gurmundchester. Gurmonchester builded.

613

CAdwane Duke of Northwales, was made soueraigne of the Brytaines, who gaue strong battel to Ethelfride king of Northumberland, and forced him to intreate for peace: After which concorde being made, they continued all their life time louing friends. He raigned xvii. yeres. Paulus Diaconus

The kingdome of the East Saxons began vnder Erchenuinus, about the yere of Christ, 614. Sixt kingdome of Saxons.

The kingdome of Mercia, or middle England, began vnder Penda, 626. Seuenth kingdeme of Saxons.

CAdwalin, the sonne of Cadwane, raigned ouer the Brytaines, he warred strongly vpon the Saxons, and made Penda king of Mercia tributarie to him: He raigned xviii. yeeres, and was buried at London, in a Church of S. Martine nere vnto Ludgate, which Church was then newe founded, and builded by the Brytaines, in Anno, 677. 635

Cadwalladar (saith Geffrey) was ordained king of the Brytaines, and ruled only iii. yeres: he vanquished and slew Lothier king of Kent, & Athelwold king of south Saxons: and then forsaking his kingly authoritie, hee went to Rome, there to be christened, who after became a Monke, and was buried in S. Peters Church at Rome. He was last king of Brytaine, (saith Geffrey) but Bede sheweth, that Lothier king of Kent was slaine by Edrike, who succéded him in that kingdome of Kent, and Ethelwold he saith was slaine by a Saxon called Ceadwalla K. of the West Saxons, which Ceadwalla went to Rome, and was there buried as ye may read in the historie of the West Saxon kings. 685

NOw are we come to the time wherein God (who for the sinnes of the people translateth kingdomes) dispossessed the Brytains of their ancient habitation, and rule of this land, who by the victorie of Saxons were enforced, either to miserable seruitude, or diuorce into the Westerne partes of the Ile, now called Wales and Cornwall, (where they now inhabite,) or els to their countreymen the Brytains in France. They also called the Brytains Walshmen, as who should say strangers, that vse an vnknowen tongue. This happened in the raigne of Ceadwalla king of the West Saxons, whome Geffrey Monmouth calleth Cadwalladar king of the Brytains about the yere of Christ, 685. when the Brytaines being wasted with ciuill dissention, pestilence and famine, lost all that small that they had long time painfully kept, and were couched in a corner. Thus much for the Brytaines, and now shall be shewed the raigne of the Saxons, who enioying the fertile soile of this Realme, parted it in processe of time into seauen kingdomes: Kent, Southser, East-angles, East-saxons, Mercia, Nothumberland, and West-saxons, which the learned call the Heptarchie of the Saxons, of which kingdomes, I purpose (for auoyding of confusion) to treat seuerally, setting downe the limits of these Countries, with the succession, actes, and ciuill bat tailes of their pettie kings, vntill the time that this Heptarchie, or gouernment of seauen, was reduced to a Monarchie, or regiment of one.

456 KEnt the firſt kingdome, poſſeſſed by the Saxons, contained that countrey that ſtretcheth from the Eaſt Ocean to the riuer of Thamis, hauing on the Southweſt ſide Southrey, on the Weſt London, and vpon the Northeaſt the ſaid riuer of Thamis. It hath the Archbiſhoprick of Canterbury Metropolitane and primate of al England, and the Biſhoprick of Rocheſter, and had kings as followeth.

HEngiſt the ſonne of Widgils, the ſonne of Victa, the ſonne of Wecta, the firſt ſonne of Woden & Frea, was the firſt of the Saxons that made himſelfe king of Kent, as before ye haue heard, eight yéeres after his firſt entring into this Iland, in the yéere from Chriſts byrth 456. He raigned xxviii. yéeres, and died honorably ſaith Marianus, others haue written, that by the counſell of Elded B. of Gloceſter, Edell Duke of Gloceſter cauſed his head to be cut off, at Conesborow. But this hath no likelihood of truth, for certaine it is, that Robert baſe ſonne to Henry the firſt, was made the firſt Earle of Gloceſter, and Henry the eight made the firſt Biſhop of Gloceſter.

490 ESke or Vske, ſucceeding his father Hengiſt, raigned peaceably twenty foure yéeres.

514 Otta ſonne of Eske raigned xvii. yéeres.

536 Ermericus the ſonne of Otta raigned xxv. yeeres.

562 EThelbert the ſonne of Ermericus had the gouernment of this kingdome, by
W. Malmeſ. the ſpace of liii. (or after Beade, lvi.) yéeres. This Ethelbert in the beginning of his raigne being but a childe, was troubled with warres on euerie ſide, that he could hardly defend his owne coaſts. In his firſt battaile againſt Ceauline king of the Weſt Saxons & Cuthe his ſonne, he was forced to make his flight into Kent, hauing two of his Dukes Oſlaue and Cnebbano ſlaine in a place called Wibadunt: but when he came to more age, and was more cunning in warre, in ſhort ſpace he ouercame all the kingdomes of the Saxons round about him, ſaue the Northumbers. And to the ende hee would haue acquaintance with forraine princes, he made affinity and alliance with the king of Fraunce by the marrying of his daughter Berta, a Chriſtian woman, to whom he permitted to vſe the lawes and rites of her Countrey, and to haue a Biſhop, whoſe name was Letardus, to remaine with her, for her better inſtruction in the lawes of God. By this meanes the barbarous and Heathen Saxons keeping company with the French, did agree to haue all one lawe and like cuſtomes: beſides this, the chaſt and vertuous life of Letardus the Biſhoppe, and the other French, which came with the Quéene; changed the kings minde vnto the knowledge of Chriſt, whereby it came to paſſe, that afterward hee did
Beade. ſo ſome giue place to the preaching of Auguſtine. At this time (ſaieth Beade) the Brytaines being at quiet, little regarding the ſtormes paſt in their fathers daies, and hauing reſpect onely to the preſent proſperous eſtate in the which they then liued, were ſo ſet to breake all good orders of trueth and iuſtice, that

that scant any token or remembrãce therof remained, but only in a few, amõg manie other of their doings, which their owne Historiographer Gildas, doth lamentably set forth in writing (he saith of them thus) that they neuer toke care to preach the Gospell of Christ vnto the Angles and Saxons, which inhabited the land among them. But yet the goodnes of God prouided for the said nation of the Angles, much more worthy preachers, by whome they might be brought to the faith. Gildas.

In the yere 596. Pope Gregorie moued of godlie instinction in the hundred forty and seuen yeere after the arriuall of the Angles in Brytaine, sent Augustine, Melitus, Iustus and Iohn, with sundrie other Monkes that liued in the feare of GOD, to preach the Gospell, to the nation of the Angles in Brytaine, which landed in the Isle of Thanet, and were first receiued by Ethelbert king of Kent, whom they conuerted to the Christian faith with diuers of his people in the 34. yeere of his raigne: and king Ethelbert delaying no time, gaue vnto Augustine the Citie of Canterburie, who furthered thus by the king, receyued at his handes an olde Church, sometime founded there by the faithfull Romanes, and dedicated the same to our Sauiour Iesus Christ, which since was called Austins Marianus. Floriacen. Bede. Austine came into Brytaine. Ethelbert was the first Christian king of the Saxons. S. Austines at Canterbury builded.

Augustine consecrated Melitus and Iustus Bishoppes, and appointed Melitus to preach vnto the East Saxons, who with their king Sebert the nephewe of king Ethelbert, at the preaching of Melitus receiued the word of life.

King Ethelbert founded the Church of Saint Paul in London. Iustus was made Bishop of Rochester, where Ethelbert builded for him and his successors the Church of S. Andrew. S. Pauls in London founded. S. Andrewes in Rochester founded. Bede.

This yeere 603. died Pope Gregory the first, vpon the fift of March, being the seconde yeere of Phocas the Emperour, after hee had gouerned the Romane Sea 13. yeeres, 6. monethes, and 10. daies, after whome succeeded Sabinian the first.

About this time (saith Bede) Austine (by the aide of king of Ethelbert) called together the Bishoppes and Doctors of the greatest prouince and nerest to him, which were the Brytaines, to commune with them, in a place which to this daie is called Augustines Oake, as yee woulde saie the power and strength of Austin, beeing in the borders of the Viccians and West Saxons. There hee beganne with brotherlie admonition (saieth Bede) to perswade them to peace, and Catholike vnitie with him, and to communicate with him for Gods sake the labour of preaching the Gospell to the Heathen of England: for as yet they kept not the Easter Sundaie in due time, but from the fourteenth to the twentieth Moone, which compt is concluded in compasse of eightie foure yeeres. They vsed moreouer, manie other things contrarie to the vnitie of the Church, which when they had beene with long discourse declared, and these men, neyther for prayers, rebukes, or threates of Augustine and his companie woulde giue their assent, but rather preferred their owne traditions before all other Churches which throughout the worlde, agreed with Austine in Christ. Whereupon Austine fell to prayer, and also restored a blinde man to sight (sayeth Bede) which the Brytaines Augustine exhorted the Brytaines to a vnitie with him.

coulde not bee, and therefore confeſſed indeede that to bee the true waie of righteouſneſſe which Auſtine had preached and ſhewed them, but yet they ſaide they coulde not alter their olde cuſtomes without the conſent of their Cleargie and people. They deſired therefore to haue a ſeconde Synode of a greater multitude. Which when it was appoynted to bee ſo, there came by report ſeuen Brytaine Biſhoppes, and many other well learned men, eſpecially out of their greateſt Monaſterie of Bangor, where at that time Dinoth was Abbot.

Second Synode

Monaſtery of Bangor.

Theſe men beeing nowe readie to goe to the foreſayde Synode, came firſt to a certayne holie and wiſe man (which liued there about an Anchorites life) to aſke his counſell, whether they ought at Auſtines preaching and exhortation leaue their traditions or no, who aunſweared them: if (quoth he) hee bee a man of God, followe him. But howe ſhall wee proue (ſayde they) that hee is a man of God? The Anchorite aunſweared, our Lorde ſaieth, take on you my yoke, and learne you of me, for I am milde, and humble of heart: it is likelie that himſelfe beareth the yoke of Chriſt, and will offer you the ſame to beare; but if he be curſt and proude, it is certaine, that he is not of God, neyther muſt we much eſteeme his wordes.

The Brytaines counſell of an Anchorite.

March 11.

Then they enquired of him howe they might knowe whether this Auſtine were proude or not, marie (quoth hee) proude yée that hee with his companie come firſt to the place of the Synode, or Councell houſe. And if when yée approch neere, he ariſeth courteouſly to you, thinke ye that hee is the ſeruant of Chriſt, and ſo heare yée him obedientlie: but if hee deſpiſe you, nor will vouchſafe to riſe at your preſence, which are the more in number, let him likewiſe bee deſpiſed of you.

And truelie as this Anchorite bade them, ſo did they, for it happened that when they came thither, Auſtine was alreadie there, and ſate in his chayre, which when they ſawe, ſtraightwaie waxing wroth, they reuiled him of pryde, and therefore endeuoured to ouerthwart and gaineſay whatſoeuer he propoſed, his Oration briefelie was thus: Although deare brethren in many other points yée doe contrarie to our cuſtome, or rather contrarie to the cuſtome of the vniuerſall Church of Chriſt; yet notwithſtanding, if yée will in theſe three things conſent vnto me: that is, to celebrate the Eaſter in due time, to accompliſh the miniſterie of Baptiſme, according to the Romane and Apoſtolike Church, and laſt of all to preach with vs to this Engliſh nation the worde of our Lorde, all your other Ceremonies, Rites, and Cuſtomes, though they bee contrary to ours, yet we will willinglie ſuffer, and bee contente to beare with them. But they anſwered, they would doe none of the thinges requeſted, neither would account him for their Biſhoppe: ſaying nate, if hee would not ſo much as riſe to vs, truelie the more we ſhould now ſubiect our ſelues to him, the more woulde hee hereafter deſpiſe vs, and ſet vs at naught. To whome Auſtine threatfullie prophecied, that if they woulde not take peace, and bee at accord with their brethren, they ſhould receyue and feele warre from their enemies. And if they would not preach to the Engliſhmen the waie of life, they ſhould ſuffer at their hand, and by their power the vengeance of death, which

Auſtine requireth 3. thinges of the Brytains

The Brytaines refuſe Auſtine to be their Archbyſhop, or to obey him in anie thing.

Auſtine threatneth the Brytaines.

thin

thing came to passe afterwarde, as shall bee shewed in the raigne of Edilfride king of the Northumbers.

The saide yéere of Christ 603. also died Augustine the Archbyshop, the xvi. day of May, after the decease of Saint Gregory, two monethes, two weekes, & two daies. And after himselfe had béene consecrated Archbyshoppe of Canterburie, eyght yéeres, fiue monethes, and 21. daies, but before hee deceased, he ordained Laurence to succéede him in the Archbyshoprieke, which hee sawe in his life time the rather performed, least that after he was deade, the state of the Church (being as yet but rude and latelie conuerted) might begin to wauer and fall, if it shoulde haue lacked a pastour or ruler neuer so little a while: his bodie was for a time layde in the porch of the forenamed Church of Saint Peter and Paul, because the Church was not yet finished nor dedicated, but shortlie after the dedication of the same, (which was done by Laurence his successor) hee was translated into the Church, and layde on the North side therof decentlie. And vppon his Tombe was written this Epitaph. *Hic requiescit Dominus Augustinus Dorobornensis Episcopus primus, &c.* Here resteth blessed Augustine, the first Archbyshoppe of Dorobornia, who being sent hither of holie Gregory, Byshoppe of Rome, and strengthened of God by the working of miracles, conuerted king Ethelbert and his people from the worshipping of Idoles, to the faith of Christ, and fulfilling in peace the dayes of this office, he died the 26. day of May, in the raigne of the same king Ethelbert.

Augustine the Archbishop deceased.

Gocelini monachi tiniani.

Epitaph of Augustine.

The noble king Ethelbert, making prouision for them that should come after, brought the lawes of his countrey into the mother tongue, thereby to reward the good accordingly, and to withstand the wicked by seuere meanes, and left nothing whereof his posteritie néeded to doubt in any matter, and then after his temporall raigne, which he had kept most gloriouslie ouer the Kentish Saxons, the space of 54. (or after Bede 56.) yéeres, he entred into the eternall blisse of the kingdome of heauen vpon the foure and twentieth day of Februarie being the eleuenth yeere after that he had receiued the faith of Christ, and the nineteenth yéere after S. Augustine with his company were sent to the English nation to preach: he was the third king, and raigned ouer all the South prouinces, which are separated from the North by the Riuer of Humber, and the borders adioyning thereunto. King Ethelbert being married to the Ladie Bertha a Christian woman, and daughter of the king of France, receiued of her a sonne named Edbald, (who married Emma the daughter of the king of France) and a daughter named Ethelburge otherwise called Tate, that was married to Edwin king of Northumberland, which Edwin was conuerted to the faith by Byshop Pauline. The place of king Ethelberts buriall was in Saint Martines parish within the church of the blessed Apostles Peter and Paul nere Canterburie, on the North side of the same church, which he builded from the ground as before is declared, where also the noble Ladie Quéene Bertha his wife was buried before him, and the byshop Lutardus that came out of France with her, and vpon his graue was left this inscription.

W. Malmel.

Register Canter. W. Thorne.

Rex Ethelbertus hic clauditur in poliandro.
Fanapians certus Christo meat absque meandro.

EDbald when he had taken vpon him to rule the Realme, and ſtode no longer in awe of his father, he did not only refuſe to accept the faith of Chriſt, but was alſo polluted with ſuch a fornication as the Apoſtle witneſſeth neuer had been heard of among the Gentiles, which is, that he had maried his fathers wife, with the which two haynous facts he gaue occaſion to his ſubiects to returne to their former filth, which vnder his fathers raigne for fauor or feare of the king had yeelded to the lawes of chriſtian faith, & chaſtity: but the ſcourge of God, and vengeance from heauen wanted not to the puniſhment of this vnfaithfull king, for he was plagued with often frenſie of minde, and raging furie of an vncleane ſpirit, but by Laurence Archbiſhop of Canterbury, he was at length conuerted from his Idolatry, and vnlawfull ſinne, and was turned againe to the faith, and being baptized, he endeuoured to maintaine the ſtate of the Church in all points to the vttermoſt, he builded a Chappell within the Monaſtery of S. Peter and Paul, and gaue to that Monaſtery a great portion of land, he is ſaid to be the firſt founder of Fulkſtone in Kent, but I haue ſeene no Charter thereof, he raigned 25. yeeres, and was buried by his father in the Monaſtery of S. Peter and Paul.

640 ERcombert the ſonne of Edbald by Emma his wife, hee firſt ſuppreſſed the Temples of the Idoles, and becauſe his people were giuen to exceſſe, commanded a ſolemne faſt of fortie dates long, to bee obſerued throughout all his kingdome, and raigned twentie fiue yeeres. It is recorded in the antiquities of Chriſtes Church in Canterburie, that about this time Honorius Archbyſhop of Canterburie diuided his prouince into Pariſhes. Which Honorius deceaſſed in Anno 653. when hee had ſate Archbyſhoppe twentie yeeres.

The prouince of the Archbiſhoppricke of Canterbury diuided into Pariſhes.

667 EGbert his ſonne ſucceeded, whoſe quiet gouernment for a long ſeaſon was afterward defaced by the cruell murder of Ealbert, and Egelbright his couſins Germans, whom either he ſlew himſelfe, or procured to be ſlaine by a traitor named Thunor: he raigned nine yeeres.

W. Malmeſ.

The Ladie Dompneua next true heire to the Crowne from Edbald, erected a Monaſterie called Minſter in the Iſle of Thanet, and became firſt Abbeſſe there.

674 LOtharius ſucceeded his brother Egbert, who being aſſaulted oftentimes by Edrike the ſonne of Egbert, in a cruell fight was ſhot through with a dart, whereof he died vnder his Surgeons handes, when hee had raigned thirteene yeeres, and was buried with his predeceſſors kings, in the Monaſtery of Peter and Paul by Canterburie.

EDricke the ſonne of Egbert, within the ſpace of two yeeres loſt both life and kingdome. After his death the kingdome being ſometime gouerned by vſurpers, and ſometime by forreiners, began to decay.

The Kentiſhmen, by caſting of fire, did cruellie burne Moll the brother of Cedwall King of the Weſt Saxons, and twelue of his Knightes with him: wherewith Cedwall being moued to furie, did miſerablie harrie and ſpoile all Kent, ſo that by the ſpace of ſixe yeere, there was no king in that Countrey.

Withredus

WIdredus the sonne of Egbert purchasing peace with money, was then established king, in which state he behaued himselfe very honourably, both in peace and warre. He founded the Priorie of Saint Martin at Douer, and raigned xxxiii. yéeres, with whom king Swebhearde raigned iointly in one part of his kingdome. 698

EDbert the sonne of Withred walked in his fathers ordinances, and had like successe, and raigned three and twentie yeeres. 731

The yéere 729. two dreadfull Starres appeared, the one before the Sunne rising, the other after the Sunne setting, both which appeared in the moneth of Ianuarie, the space of 15 daies, and carried with them the likenesse of a bundle of fire against the North, and somewhat towardes the West, at which time the Pagans infested France and Spaine.

EDelbert his brother succéeded, in whose time the Citie of Canterburie (as is to be thought) was burned by chance: he raigned not xi. yéeres, and was buried in the Monasterie of Peter and Paul at Canterburie. 754

ALricke the thirde sonne of Withred ruled Kent after his brethren, and was vanquished in a fought fielde against Offa king of the Mercians: he raigned foure and thirty yéeres, and was the last of the line or succession of the kings of Kent. 765

EDelbert or Egbert otherwise called Pren, then vsurped the kingdome, and leuied warre against the Mercians, by whome he was taken prisoner, and not long after resisted, but the Kentishmen would not receiue him, Cuthred then vsurped, and bare a title of a Kentish king for the space of eight yéeres. 799

BAlbred the heyre of Cuthred then toke on him the Princely dignitie, but Egbert king of the West Saxons so discomfited him in battell, that he fled ouer the Riuer of Thamis, and forsoke his kingdome, when he had raigned xx. yéeres, and was neuer heard of afterward, whereby this kingdome of Kent was united to the kingdome of the West Saxons. 807

The yéere 829. Wilfred Archbishop of Canterbury deceassed, and was buried in Christs Church in Canterbury, when he had sate 27. yéeres, after whom succéeded Fleogild.

South Saxons.

SOuthsex the second kingdome, contained the Counties of Southsex and Surrey, which had on the East side Kent, on the South side the Sea, on the West side Hampshire, and on the North the riuer of Thamis: it containeth the Dioceses of Chichester, and part of Winchester.

AEle the eight from Woden, with his three sons Cimen, Plencing, and Cissa, came into Brytaine with 3. ships, & landed in a place called Kimenshore, and there slew many of the Brytains, & forced the rest to make their flight into a wood which is called Andredsleage. Afterward fighting with the Brytaines in a place nére vnto Pacrodes burne, slewe many of them, and put the rest to 478

slight. Then he and Cissa his sonne after long siege, brake into the City of Andreds Cester, and slew the inhabitants from the greatest to the smallest, and so began the kingdome of Southsex: he raigned xxvi. yeres.

514 Cissa his sonne succeeded, he built the citie of Cissacester now called Chichester, & named it after his owne name, he raigned, as it is said, lxvi. yeres.

590 Ethelwulfus (whome Bede nameth Edelwach) was christened in the prouince of the Mercies, in the presence and at the exhortation of K. Wulfhere, who also at the font was his godfather, and in signe of that adoption, gaue him two prouinces, that is to say, the Ile of Wight, and the prouince of Manures, in the West part of England.

Bede. First christened King in Southsex.

Wilfride the Byshoppe came to the prouince of the South Saxons, vnto them did he minister the worde of Faith, by the permission and great reioicing of the king. This Byshop christened the chiefe Lordes and Knightes of the Countrie: and the rest of the people at the same time, or soone after were christened by other Priestes. The Quéne Ebba was christened in her Ile which was in the prouince of the Viccians: for she was the daughter of Eanfride, who was Eanheres brother, where were both Christian men, and all their people. But all the prouince of South Saxons had neuer before that time heard of the name of GOD, nor the faith. Yet there was in that countrie a certaine Monke, a Scot borne, named Dicub, which had a very little Monasterie in a place called Bosanham, all compassed about with woods and the sea, and therein v. or vi. brethren seruing GOD in humble and poore life, but none of the people there did giue themselues either to followe their life, or heare their preaching: but when Byshoppe Wilfride came and preached the Gospell vnto them, he deliuered the people not onlie from the perill of damnation, but also from an horrible murrain of temporall death. For in 3. yeres before, it had not rained in all those quarters, wherby a famine destroied the people by heapes, in so much that diuers times 40. or 50. in a company being famished for hunger, would go together to some rocke or sea banke, and cast themselues all downe, either to be killed with the fall, or drowned in the sea: but on the same day they receiued baptisme and faith, there fell a plentifull shoure of rayne, wherewith the earth florished again. This Byshop also taught the people there to get their sustenance by fishing.

Bellee Monasterie in Southsex.

Edilwach gaue vnto Bishop Wilfride the land of 87. tenementes, where he might place his company, the name of the place was Seolesey. In this place he founded a Monasterie, to be his Episcopall Sea.

605 Ceadwall a valiant yong man of the West Saxons, being banished from his Countrey, came with an hoste of men and slewe King Edilwach, wasted that prouince, cruellie murdered and spoiled euerie where. Edilwach raigned xxv. yeres.

And soone after Ceadwall was driuen out by two Captaines of the Kinges, Bertham and Anthun, which from that time did holde and kepe the Dominion of that prouince, the chiefe of which two, was afterwarde slaine of the same Ceadwall, (being then king of the West Saxons,) and the prouince subdued and brought vnto more grieuous subiection then it was before. Againe Ine that

raigned

raigned after Ceadwall oppreſſed it with like miſery & bondage many yeres, whereby it came to paſſe, that the people of Suſſex in all this time could haue no Biſhop of their owne: but were faine (their firſt Biſhoppe Wilfride being called home to Yorke) to be vnder the Dioces of the Geniſes which belonged to the Weſt Saxons, as many as were in the territorie of Selſey.

After that Ceadwall had thus obtained the kingdome of the Weſt Saxons, hee toke the Ile of Wight alſo, which was ſo altogether giuen to the worſhipping of Idoles, that he intended vtterly to baniſh and driue out thence all the olde native inhabitants, and to put people of his owne Countrey in their place. For though he was not yet at that time baptized, and regenerate in Chriſt, yet he bound himſelfe with a vow, that if he toke the Iſland, he would giue vnto God the fourth part thereof, and of all the pray. Which thing he ſo performed, that Biſhoppe Wilfride happening to bee there at that time, a man of his owne countrey, he offered and gaue the ſame vnto him, to the vſe and ſeruice of our Lord. The ſaid Iſland contained as the Engliſh did rate it, 1200. tenements, whereof was giuen to the Biſhop, the poſſeſſion of the land of three hundred tenements, which portion the Biſhoppe gaue and committed to one of his Clearkes named Bernemi, and appointed ther to a Prieſt named Hildila, to miniſter the worde and baptiſme of life to all that would bee ſaued. Two children of the bloud Royall, being brethren to Drualde King of that Iſland, being fledde into the next prouince of the Vites, where they had hidden themſelues in a place called Stoneſtat, were betraied and found out, whome the king commanded to be put to death. Which thing when a certaine Abbot named Cimberth had heard of, whoſe monaſterie was not far from thence, at a place called Redford, he came to the king, and deſired him that if hee would néeds haue the children put to death, yet they mought firſt receiue the Sacraments of Chriſtes Church. The King granted his requeſt, and then hee toke and Catechiſed them in the faith of Chriſt and waſhed them with the font of Baptiſme, made them ſure in perfect hope to enter the kingdome euerlaſting, then were they put to death by the hangman, when after this order all the prouince of great Britaine had receiued the faith of Chriſt, the Ile of Wight receiued the ſame alſo: In which notwithſtanding, becauſe of the miſery and ſtate of forraine ſubiection, no man toke the degrée of the Miniſterie and place of a Biſhoppe, before Daniel, who was Biſhoppe of the Weſt Saxons, and of the Geniſes, Suſſex and Hampſhire.

The Ile of Wight.

Stoneſtat.

Redford.

The Ile of Wight the laſt that receiued the faith.

The ſituation of this Ile is ouer againſt the mids of the South Saxons and Geniſes, the ſea comming betweene, of the breadth of three miles, which ſea is called Selent: in which, two armes of the Ocean Sea, that brake out from the maine North Sea about Britaine, doe daily méete and violentlie runne together beyond the mouth of the Riuer Homelen, which runneth along by the Countrey of the Vites that belong to the prouince of the Geniſes, and ſo entreth into the foreſaid Sea, and after this méeting and ſtriuing together of the two Seas, they goe backe and flowe againe into the Ocean from whence they came.

Nowe at length (ſaieth Bede) it was determined by a decrée in a Synode,

Suſſex and Hampſhire deuided.

node, that the prouince of South Saxons, which to that date appertained to the Dioces of Winchester, where Daniel was Bysshoppe, should haue a Sea and Bysshoppe of their owne seuerally, whereupon Cadbert Abbot in the Monasterie of Bysshoppe Wilfride was made and consecrated first Bysshoppe of that Dioces.

After his death Ceolla toke the Bysshoprieke vpon him: after whose departure the Sea stode vacant many yeres.

East Angles.

EAst Angles the third kingdome, contained the Countries of Norfolke and Suffolke, Cambridge, and the Ile of Ely, which had on the East and North sides the Sea, on the West, Saint Edmondes Dike, with a part of Hertfordshire, and on the South side Esser. It containeth the Dioceses of Norwich and Ely.

492 VFfa the eight from Woden first King of the East Angles, raigned seuen yeres.

499 ¶ Titulus raigned xx. yeres.

519 REdwaldus the tenth from Woden, as men write: this is hee that for the
W. Malmes. fauour of Edwine, killed Edelfride king of Northumberland. The same Redwalde was by the perswasion of Edwine baptized, but in vaine, for after by his wiues counsell he fell from the faith againe, his sonne Dorwaldus in pure and uncorrupted Christianitie was slaine by the heathen Rochbert. Redwaldus raigned xxv. yeres.

554 GErpenwalde sonne to Redwaldus, succéded in the kingdome of the East Angles, raigned xii. yeres.

569 SEebert brother to king Carpewalde, toke vpon him the kingdome, a man in all pointes learned, and most Christian, who whilest his brother was yet liuing, being himselfe banished into France, was there baptized and instructed in the faith, of which faith he laboured to make all the Realme partakers, as soone as hee came to the Crowne. To whose good indeuour, Bysshoppe Felix did greatly applie himselfe. Who when hee came from Burgundy (where hee was borne) into Bryttanie to Honorius the Archbysshoppe, and had obtained licence of him to preath the worde of God vnto the foresaid East Angles, his zeale and vertuous desire prooued not in vaine, for he found in that nation plenteousnesse of fruite, and encrease of people that beléeued him. For he brought all this prouince vnto the faith, and workes of iustice, and in the ende to reward of perpetuall blessednesse, according to the abodement of his name, which in Latine is called Felix, and in our English tongue, Happie, he was made Bysshop of Dunmocke, or Dunwich, an ancient Citie in Suffolke nowe sore decaied, and as is supposed more then halfe swallowed vp in the Sea.

East Angles receiued the faith.

Felix Bysshop of Dunwich.

Liber Eli. The common fame, and report of the inhabitants is, that before the towne came

came to decaie, there belonged thereunto two and fiftie deuine houses, as Parish Churches, Priories, Hospitalles, and Chappels, as manie Windmils, and as manie toppe Shippes. But certayne it is, as appeareth by manifest and sounde recorde which I haue seene, that euen of late time, there was within the sayde Towne fiue parish Churches, two houses of Friers, an house which had béene of Templars, two Hospitalles, and three Chappelles, foure of these parish Churches are now of late swallowed vp in the Sea, and but two of them remaining on the land, to wit, Saint Peters, and all Saintes. The men of Dunwich desiring succour for their Towne against the rage of the sea, affirme that a great peece of a Forrest, sometime thereby, is deuoured and turned to the vse of the Sea. Records Dun.

There hath béene a Mynt, manie men of that Towne can yet shewe of the coines, which are Starling pence, with this inscription, Ciuitas Dunwic, twenty of which pence waighed an ounce, 12. ounces a pound Troy, and so being 11. s. in money, was both a pound in payment, & also a pound in waight, as is afore said. This City was gouerned by a Maior and three Bailiffes besides inferiour officers, Felix their first Bishop sate 18. yéares, and ended his life there in Anno 649. and was buried at Soham, a place where sometime a great famous monastery stode replenished with religious persons, vnder their Abbat Warfred, which house was founded by a Noble man named Lutingus, and was wholie subuerted by the Danes: the bodie of Felix was remoued to Ramsete. Soham, now called Some foure miles from Ely.

Bishop Felix founded a Church at Radham, which was also amongst other destroyed by the Danes. Felix also founded Schooles at Felixstowe, nowe called Filchestow. After Felix succéeded Thomas, a Deacon, borne in Gerwy, hee sate fiue yéares. After him Beretgilsus surnamed Bonifacius, a Kentish man borne, sate seuentéene yéares. After him succéeded Bisi, who diuided the Sea into two Bishoprickes, to wit, Dunwich, and Helmham. Thus much for Dunwich. Radham. Felixstowe.

Sebert the king being desirous to followe the godlie order which he had seene in France, set vp Schooles in his kingdome (by the ayde of Felix, whome hee had taken out of Kent for that purpose) appointing maisters and teachers to bring vp children in learning and vertue, after the manner of the Kentishmen. This Sebert was so inflamed with the loue of heauen, that leauing at the last all affaires of his Realme to the gouernement of his cousin Egrike, he became a Monke, and entred a monasterie by him builded, wherein hee bestowed his time in diuine studies, and contemplation: but the vplandish Englishmen with their old Captaine Penda, inuaded his dominions, so that his people after long resistance, finding themselues too weake, they pluckt Sebert out of the monasterie, and brought him against his will vnto the field, whereof the cruell heathen people he was killed, with king Egrike, and the whole armie discomfited, about the yeere of Christ 652.

ANna the sonne of Ewide brother to Edwald succéeded Egricus, and was likewise slaine by the furie of Penda, Captaine of Marches, or Uplandish Englishmen, then heathen and vnchristned people, when he had raigned nineténe yéares, and was buried at Blidriburgh, in which place also 637 Blibrugh.

was

was buried his sonne Firminus, but was after translated to S. Edmundsburie. He had issue by his wife Hereswida daughter to Hererícus the nephewe of Ardwine King of Northumbers, sister to Hilda, Etheldred, Ethelburga, and Saxburg. Etheldred daughter to Anna founded the Church of Saint Peter in the Ile of Ely, in the yere of Christ 674. placing there an hundred persons of both seres, vnder monasticall habite, and she her selfe became their first Abbesse. This Countrey of Ely is a prouince of the East English, and containeth about two hundreth housholds, and is compassed on eche side, as an Iland round about with fens or waters: and for that many Eeles are taken there, some suppose the said Ile to be called Ely: but other thinke the same to take name of Willowes, whereof the Ile aboundeth. The ground here is verie plentifull of all kinde of fruites, full of pleasant woods and vines, replenished with manie kindes of wilde beasts, foules and fishes, &c.

Athelhere brother to Anna, succéeded, and both hee and Penda were slaine by Oswinus king of the Northumbers, and that deseruedlie, because he had ayded Penda against his owne brother, and his kinsman.

Adelwaldus his brother succéeded him with like fortune, and left the kingdome to Aldulfus, Elohwoldus and Hisberna, sonnes of the same Athelhere.

Ethelbert succéeded him; he had by his wife Laonorine a sonne named Ethelbert.

790 ETHelbertus his son succéeded in the kingdome of the East Angles. This man in his youth much profited in learning, not giuen to voluptuous pleasures, but to prayers, almes, and other good workes, hee was profounde in counsell, mercifull in iudgement, and sober in spéech, he was at length perswaded to marry, for ẏ encrease of children, whereunto he assented. At length, Offa king of the Mercies, vsing deceit, when strength failed, for this king Ethelbert, promised him manie great things, but when he had got him into his Pallace, which was at Sutton Wallis three miles from Hemeforth Northward vpon Lugge in Herefordshire, by the counsaile of the said Offaes wife, for ambition of his kingdome, caused his head to be stricken off, by one Grimbert a familiar to king Offa, on the eighteenth daie of Maie: his bodie was buried on the banke of the riuer Lugge, where now standeth the parish Church of Maurdine. And so Offa vniustly inuaded and obtained the kingdome of the East Angles: but when a Virgin named Alfride, daughter to Offa, whome Ethelbert should haue married, vnderstode thereof, shee willed his seruants to hacke them into their Countrey, for their Master was beheaded. And being taught by the Holy Ghost, prophecied to her mother in this manner, quoth she, Thy sonne shall not liue three yéres, and the kingdome shall be vnstable, and thou thy selfe shalt not liue in the confession of God ouer three moneths, but shalt be possessed with a wicked spirite, and shalt eate thine owne tongue, and die an euill death: And it followed (saieth mine Author) as the Virgine had spoken: which Virgine vowed to liue a religious life, and became an Ancrelle at Crowland.

When king Offa heard hereof, he repented him, and caused the bodie of Ethelbert to bee remooued to Hereford three miles from Kenchester, and foure miles

John Capgraue.

Giraldus Cambrensis.

Osbert de Clere.

Sutton Wallis.

Maurdine.

Kenchester.

miles from Sutton Wallis, where afterward ouer him was builded a goodly Church by king Milfride, which Church he endowed with great possessions, and made the same a Bishops Sea: since which time the Church is dedicated to the said Ethelbert.

At Sutton Wallis there appeareth yet notable ruines of some ancient and great building, and therefore great likelyhood that it was sometime the mansion house of king Offa, at such time as Kenchester stode, or else Hereforde was a beginning. Maurdine village is about a mile from Sutton Wallis, and hard by is a hill whereas men saie Saint Ethelbert was beheaded. At this village is now a faire Church dedicated to Ethelbert. I thinke he was slaine at Sutton in king Offaes house, but ꝯ name of Maurdine seemeth to expresse the martyrs hill.

Kenchester three miles from Hennesorth Westward, a mile from the banke of Wie riuer. There was a pallace of Offaes (as some say) the ruines yet remaine, there hath bene found ditches and flores. This towne is farre more ancient then Hereford, it standeth on the same side of the riuer Wie, and three miles or more aboue Hereford, and was in the Romans time, as appeareth by many things, especially by antike mony of the Cæsars very often found within the towne, & in plowing there about, the which, the people there calleth dwarfe money. The compasse of Kenchester hath bin by estimation as much as Hereford, excepting the Castell, the which at Hereford is very spacious: peeces of the walles and towres yet appeare from the foundation: the people of Hereford haue fetcht much awaie from thence to build withall. The place where the towne was, is all ouergrowne with brambles, hazles, and like shrubs, there hath bẽn found in our time Brytaine bricks, conduites for water, stoned pauements, peeces of golde, and other strange things. To be short, of the decay of Kenchester Hereford rose and flourished. Kenchester.

The towne of Hereford is large and strongly walled. Also hauing a maine Castell, hard by the ripe of Wie: the Castle is thought nigh as great of circuite as Windsore. The dungeon of the Castle is high, and strong, and in the dike not farre from it is a faire spring called Saint Ethelberts well. Within the Castle in digging hath beene found bones of men of great bignesse, and harde by in the ripe of the banke also is found the like bones: the wall of the town is compassed with a dike, alway filled with moisty water descending into it: this water resorteth to the bottome of Wie. There be in the town foure parish Churches, one being the Cathedrall Church of a very strong building, S. Ethelbert was buried there (but since the Welchmen destroyed the Towne in king Edward the Confessors time, his Reliques haue not bene seene there) there be in the suburbes two parish Churches, there hath beene a cell of blacke Monkes, and two houses of friars black and gray. Some say that this towne toke the name of an olde ford or passage ouer Wie, not farre from the castle: some say it was called Fernelege, or Fernehill: and the place where the cathedrall church now is, was a chapell of our Lady called Fernelege. Thus much for Hereford. Hereford.

After Ethelbert, few men of might raigned in east England, by meanes of the violence

violence done by the Mercians, vntill Edmund borne in Saxonie, in the Citie of Norhenberge sonne to king Alkemond and Quéene Syware. In which time raigned in East Angle a king named Offa, who minding a voyage to the holy land, toke his iourney through Saxonie, there to visite his cousin Alkemond, and his nephew Edmond, which Edmond hee adopted to be his heire of East Angles. Nowe so it happened, that the saide Offa, hauing accomplished his voyage at the holy sepulture, and returning, deceased at Port Saint George, hauing before sent his ring to Edmond, making him gouernor of the East Angles, his father Alkemond prouided him of men famous by experience, both in armes and gentlenes; he had also clearkes circumspect & wise, to counsell him, he stuffed his ships with men and victuall: which thing done, and leaue taken of his father and mother, he sailed, and landed in East England, at a place called Haydenboure, where falling on his knées, he made deuoute prayer vnto God, that his comming thither might be to him acceptable, and to all the countrey profitable. And not farre from thence he builded a royall Towre, which to this day is called Hunstanstone, which betokeneth swéetnesse and great might: there he helde his householde nigh one yeare, and then remoued to Athelbrough, where he remained one whole yéare and learned his Psalter in the Saxon tongue, which Booke was reserued in the Reuestrie of the Monasterie of Saint Edmundsbury, till the same Church was suppressed in the raigne of king Henry the eight, as I haue béene credibly informed.

I. Prington.

Hunstonstone.

Athelbrough.

870 EDmond raigned xv. yéares, in whose time Hinguar and Hubba, Danish kings, entring the prouince of the Northumbers, raged ouer all the same, and made great spoiles. Hinguar hauing gotten a great pray, left Hubba, and with his nauy sailed into East Angle, and arriued at a certaine City thereof vnawares to the Citizens, set it on fire, and slewe both man, woman and child. This wicked Hinguar toke Edmond king of that prouince, in a village then called Heglisdune, néere to a wood bearing the same name, where this holie Edmond being constant in the Christian faith, [illegible] by the Pagans beaten with bats, then scourged with whips, he still ca[illegible] the name of Iesus: his aduersaries in a rage shot him full of shafts, and then smote off his head and threwe it into a bush: after which time the Angles ceased to raigne in the East Angle, but the same was possessed by Danes, till fiftie yéares after, that Edward the sonne of Etheldred did expulse the Danes, and ioyned that prouince, and also the East Saxons, to his kingdome of the West Saxons.

Asserius.

Albo Florl. acensis.

king Edmond cruelly martired by the Danes.

East Saxons.

ESser the fourth kingdome contained Esser, Middlesex, and Hertfordshire, being bounded on the East, with the Germane Ocean, on the South with the riuer Thamis, on the West with Colne, and on the North with Stowre, which at this date parteth Suffolke from Esser: it containeth the diocesse of London.

Erchenwine,

ERchenwine, the eight from Woden, from whom all the Saxons deriued their genealogies, first erected this Countrey to a kingdome, which neuer the lesse he held as feodarie to the kings of Kent, who were as yet the very soueraigns of the whole Countrey from Thames to Humber. And as we haue specified, Vortiger yelded seizon to Hengist for his deliuerie, when the Peeres of the Brytaines were slaine on Salisbury plaine, and he taken prisoner. 527 Beade.

SLedda the sonne of Erchenwine succeeded his father in the gouernment, and to establish the state more sure, married Ricula the daughter of Ermenrich king of Kent, and enioyed his gouernment so quietly, that he ministred small matter to Historiographers. 587

SEbert the sonne of Sledda by Ricula, ruled this kingdome after his father. The second yeere of his raigne, which was the yeere of Christ 604. Augustine Archbishop of Canterbury, consecrated two Bishops, the one named Miletus, the other Iustus, Miletus hee appointed to preach to the people of the East Saxons, which are separate from Kent with the riuer of Thamis, & are fast ioyned to the East sea, whose chiefe Citie is London, a princely port town, of many people, arriuing thither by sea and land. Nowe as sone as this prouince, by the preaching of Miletus had receiued the word of truth. 603 Sebert first christian king of the East Saxons.

Ethelbert king of Kent builded in the Citie of London S. Paules Church, wherein Miletus and his successours were appointed euer after to haue their Sea. Iustus was ordained Bishop of Rochester in Kent, where king Ethelbert builded the Church of S. Andrew the Apostle, and gaue many godly giftes to the Bishops of both Churches. Which Ethelbert in his Charter to the Church of S. Paul, hath these words: *Ædilbertus Rex, Deo inspirante, pro animæ suæ remedio dedit Episcopo Mileto terram quæ appellatur Tillingham ad monasterium siue solatium scilicet S. Pauli. Et ego Rex Athelbert ita firmiter concedo tibi præsuli Mileto potestatem eius habendi & possidendi, vt in perpetuum in monasterij vtilitate permaneat, &c.* Saint Paules church in London founded.

Afterward king William the first, surnamed Conquerour, by his Charter, confirming the lands giuen by the saide Ethelbert king of Kent, to the saide Church of Saint Paul in London, hath these wordes: *Wilhelmus Rex Anglorum omnibus fidelibus suis Francis & Anglis de Middlesex salutem. Sciatis, quod concedo Deo & sancto Paulo suisque seruitoribus 24. hidos quos Rex Ethelbertus dedit ecclesiæ sancti Pauli iuxta ciuitatem London, quando eam fundauit, in perpetuum liberas esse, & solutas & quietas de Dane-gildis & omnibus aliis gildis, & ab omni expeditione, & ab omni opere, & volo, & firmiter præcipio, vt benè & honorificè, & in pace teneant, & ne aliquis super hoc eis iniuriam vel contumeliam faciat. Teste Lanfranco archiepiscopo, &c.* Moreouer, besides this confirmation aboue saide, the same king William gaue vnto the Church of Saint Paule in London, and vnto Mawrice then Bishoppe thereof, the Castell of Stortford, or Stourforde in Esser, and all thinges which belonged thereunto, and namely, the land which William the Deacon, and Ralphe his brother held of the king. Thus much for the foundation of Saint Paules Church in London, founded by Ethelbert king of Kent, and confirmed by king William the Conquerour. Stourford in Esse.

King

King Sebert, by the perſwaſion of king Ethelbert his vncle, and through the preaching of Miletus, hauing embraced Chriſtianitie, was baptized by the ſame Miletus, and immediately, to ſhewe himſelfe a Chriſtian, built a church to the honour of Saint Peter, on the weſt ſide of London in a place, which becauſe it was ouergrowne with thornes, and enuironed with waters, the Saxons at that time called it Thorney, and now of the monaſterie, and weſt ſituation thereof, is called Weſtminſter. In this place long before was a temple of Apollo (as Sulcardus writeth) which being ouerthrowne with an earthquake, Lucius then built thereon a Church for the Chriſtians. Sebert (when he had raigned thirteene yeares) died, and was buried in the Church which he had built, with his wife Aethelgoda, whoſe bodies manie yeares after, to witte, in the time of Richard the ſecond (ſaieth Thomas Walſingham) were tranſlated from the olde Church to the newe at Weſtminſter, and there entered.

Weſtminſter founded.

Sulcardus.

T. Walſingham.

616 SErred, Seward and Sigbert, ſonnes of Sebert, iointly (as it ſéemeth) then ruled Eaſſex, men wickedlie giuen, irreligious, and deadly enemies to the Chriſtian profeſſion: who preſumed contemptuouſly to the Table of the Lords ſupper, being not baptized: and becauſe Miletus would not permit them to be partakers of the chriſtian ſacrament, they expelled him from his Sea at London, but ſhortly after Serred encountring with the Weſt Saxons, was ſlaine with both his brethren by king Kinegils.

SIgebert ſurnamed the Little, ſonne of Seward ſucceeded in this kingdome, and left the ſame to Sigebert his kinſman.

Bede.

SIgebert ſonne to Sigebalde, brother to Sebert, then ruled in Eaſſex, hee by the perſwaſion of Oſwy king of Northumbers, abandoned all ſuperſtition, and became a chriſtian, and toke an holie man Ced with him, who did mightily beate downe errours, and wanne many by preaching the chriſtian religion in his dominions, whereupon Ced was by Finan conſecrated Byſhop of the Eaſt Saxons, and then proceeded with more authoritie in his function, ordering prieſtes and Deacons in all places of Eſſex, but eſpecially at Ithanceſter and Tilberie.

Ithanceſter and Tilberie Cities in Eſſex.

This Citie of Ithanceſter, ſtode on the banke of the riuer Pante, that runneth by Maldone in the Hundred of Danſey, but now that Citie is drowned in Pante, ſo that nothing remaineth but the ruines of the Citie in the ſaid riuer. Tilbery ſtandeth on the Thames ſide.

Ralph Cogſhal.

In the good proceedings of Sigebert, he was ſlaine by a kinſman of his own, vpon none other occaſion, but for that he vſed too much clemencie towards his enemies, as the murtherers themſelues confeſſed.

Swidhelin ſon of Sexbald ſucceeded then in his regiment, who was baptized by Ced in a town of the kings called Kendleſham in Eaſt England: Edelwald king of the Eaſt Angles, brother to Anna, was his godfather at the font.

SIgher then ruled with Sebba or Sebbi, although they were alſo vnder the allegeance of Wulfhere king of the middle Engliſhmen. This prouince being viſited with a great plague and mortalitie, Sigher with the people ouer whom he ruled, forſaking Chriſtes religion, fell to Apoſtaſie, for both the king himſelfe,

himselfe, and many of his people, as well of the Nobles as of the meaner sort, beganne to renue their temple, which had stood desolate, they worshipped their Idoles, as though they could by that meanes haue escaped the mortalitie. But Sebbi, his companion, with all vnder him, perseuered deuoutly in the faith, and he ended his life in great felicitie, as we shall hereafter declare. Wulfhere the king vnderstanding part of his dominions to fall from the faith, for to call them backe againe, sent vnto them Iarumanus the bishop of Lichfield, successor to Trunihere, who by much labour and diligence, being a man of great vertue, painefull and zealous (as a certaine Priest waiting then vpon him, and helping him in preaching the Gospell reported vnto Bede) brought them to the faith againe, both the king and all his people, so that abandoning, and throwing downe their Temples and Altars, they opened againe the churches, confessed gladly the name of Christ, and chose rather in hope of resurrection to die, then in the filth of idolatrie to liue. Which being so brought to passe, their priestes and instructers returned home with much ioy and comfort.

Theodore Archbishop of Canterbury appointed Erkenwald to be bishop of the East Saxons in the citie of London. This Erkenwald, in the yere of Christ 677. before he was made bishop, had builded two goodly monasteries, one for himselfe at Crotsey in the Ile of Crote in Surrey, by the riuer of Thames: and another for his sister Edilburge, in a place called Berching in Essex, for his sister Ethelburge she was first Abbas there. Sebbi king of the East Saxons (as is aforesaid) a man very deuout and godly, being giuen to often prayer, and charitable almes giuing, esteeming the solitary and monasticall life, before al the riches and honors of a kingdome, which kind of life he had long time before taken, & had giuen vp his kingdome, had not his wife refused to be separated from him. And therefore some men thought (as it had bene often said) that a man of such a nature and well disposed minde, was more mete to be made a bishop then a king. Now when this souldier of the Ecclesiasticall kingdome had passed a xxx. yeres in his temporall raigne, at length he died: but first he admonished his wife, that then at the least they should wholy giue themselues both together to serue God, whereas they could no longer now enioy or serue the world together. Which thing, when he had with much ado obtained of her, he came to ỹ bishop of Londō, named Waldhere, who had succeeded Erkenwald, and at his hands receiued the habite of religion, which hee had long desired, to wit, of a Monke, for at that time were Monkes in the Church of S. Paule in London, as writeth Radulphus Dediceto and other.

Chertsey and Barking founded.

King Sebbi a Monke in Paules Church. Radul. Dediceto.

To this Bishop he brought a great summe of money to be bestowed and giuen to the poore, reseruing nothing at all for himselfe, but rather desiring to remaine poore in spirite for the kingdome of Heauen. And when he perceiued the day of his death to be at hand, because his foresaide sickenesse grewe still vpon him, for the princely and hautie courage that he had, he beganne to feare least at his death, through bitter paine, he might hap, either to vtter with his mouth, or with his body do any thing that were not decent for his person, he sent for the bishop of London, where he also then continued, and desired him that at his departing out of this world, there should be no moe present but himselfe,

selfe, and two of his Chaplaines: which thing when the Bishop had prosperously gladlie to do, the third day after he gaue vp the ghost, and was buried in a coffin of stone, and laid in the Church of the blessed Apostle Saint Paul, by whose good lessons hee had beene taught to labour, and long for the ioyes of Heauen.

King Sebbi buried in Paules church at London.

SIgeherd sonne of Sebbi, then raigned ouer the East Saxons for a time, and after him his brother Seofride.

SEofride sonne to Sebbi, and brother to Sigeherd, raigned next successiuelie, of whome I find nothing recorded of his acts.

Offa the sonne of Sigher then ruled this prouince, hee enlarged with building, and enriched with lands the Church of Westminster, and then forsaking his wife Geneswede Pendaes daughter, lands, kinne, and countrey, he went to Rome with Kenred king of Mercia, and Edwine Bishoppe of Worcester, and there in a Monkes coule ended this life, leauing Selred to rule his country.

Rich. Cicestr.

718 SElred (whome other call Colred) peaceablie after Offa raigned in Essex thirtie yeeres, and at length was slaine.

Ri. Grincastri.

748 SVthred after Selred was slaine, raigned in Essex: but Egbert king of the West Saxons, the verie yeere that hee conquered Kent, subdued also this Suthred, & annexed Essex to his kingdome: yet London with the countrie confining about it, came not in subiection to the West Saxons, but obeied the king of Mercia, as long as that kingdome continued.

Sigehrike and Sigehard afterward aspired to the kingdome of the East Saxon, but with no good successe, and so that kingdome ceased.

Mercians.

MErcia the first kingdome and greatest of the other, contayned Glocester, Hereford, Chester, Stafford, Worcester, Oxford, Warwike, Darby, Leicester, Buckingham, Northampton, Nottingham, Lincolne, Bedforde, Huntington, and part of Hartford shires. It had on the West side, the riuer Dee fast by Chester, and Seuerne fast by Shrouesbery vnto Bristowe: in the East, the East sea: in the South, Thamis vnto London: in the North the riuer Humber, and so Westward, downe to the riuer Perce, vnto the corner of Wyrhall.

This kingdome of Perce in the beginning was departed into three partes, into West Mercia, middle Mercia, and East Mercia: it containeth the dioceses of Lincolne, Worcester, Hereford, Couentry and Lichfield.

586 CReda (the eleuenth from Woden) first king of the Mercies raigned tenne yeeres.

596 Wibba his sonne raigned twenty yeeres.

616 Ceorlus his sonne raigned ten yeeres.

626 PEnda the sonne of Wibba, a man actiue in warres, a frantike and most wicked man, toke on him the kingdome of the Mercies, when he was fiftie yeeres olde: he shooke the Cities, and disturbed the borders of the kings, that

W. Malmes.

were

were his owne countreymen borne: hee slewe Edwine and Oswald, kinges of Northumberland, (where Oswald was slaine is nowe situate the Towne of Oswaldtre, which of him toke that name) he also slew Sigebert, Egfride, and Anna, kinges of the East Angles, which all were of holie life and conuersation: hee banished Kenwallus king of West Sarons, but in the ende, himselfe was slaine by Oswin which succeeded Oswald his brother, when hee had raygned thirtie yeeres.

PEda the sonne of Penda, succeeded in part of the kingdome which was called middle England, who comming after to Oswine king of Northumberland, required his daughter Alflede to wife, which sute he obtained, vpon condition he would receiue the christian faith, and be baptized: and so hee receiued Baptisme at the hands of Byshop Finan, in a famous Towne of the kinges called Ad murum, by the Picts wall, twelue miles from the East Sea, from whence he returned home with 4. priestes, notable for learning and vertue, which should instruct and baptize his people. These preached the worde of God, and were gladly heard, whereby manie daylie, as well noble, as of the base sorte, renounced their filthie idolatrie, and were baptized. Neither king Penda father to the yong Prince did withstand the preaching of the Gospell in his dominion, but persecuted such as bare the names of christians, and liued not accordingly, saying, that such men were wretched which regarded not to serue the God in whom they professed to beleeue. These things began thus two yeeres before the death of Penda.

Ad murum by Barwike.

A notable saying of a Heathē Prince.

In these daies king Oswine, after often and cruel inuasions of the heathen tyrant Penda, forced of necessitie offered manie and most precious iewels, with an infinite summe of treasure, to redeeme quiet and peace to his Countrie, but the barbarous tyrant, pursuing his deadly enterprise, and protesting bitterly to extinguish the whole nation from the highest to the lowest. King Oswine called to God for help against his enimies, vowing, that if he had the vpper hand, his yong daughter should be consecrated to God in perpetuall virginitie, and twelue farme places with the land, should bee converted to the erecting of monasteries. Then preparing himselfe to battell, with a verie small armie, the army of the Heathen reported to be thirtie fold as manie, hee ouercame them: and this is to be noted as a great helpe to the Christians, that whereas the field was fought nigh to the riuer Iuruent, the saide riuer did at that time so ouerflowe the bankes and fieldes about, that in the flight of the heathen more were drowned then perished by the sword. And thus was king Pendaes power ouercome, and himselfe slaine, when he had raigned or raged cruellie thirty yeeres.

This Penda (saith Ingulphus) had sonnes that were most deuout maintainers of Christian religion, to wit, Peda, Vlfere, Ethelred, Marwald, and Mercelini, and daughters, Kinisburge and Kenelwith, both for holie conuersation excelling. The foresaid battell was fought by king Oswine, in the countrey of Leid, the thirteenth yeere of his raigne, the yeere of Christ 659. the fiftenth date of Nouember. Oswyne hauing obtained this victorie, rendred due thanks therefore to God, gaue his daughter Elflede to bee brought vp and consecrated to perpetuall virginitie, and also the twelue possessions promised hee performed.

Ingulphus.

The Lady Elfiede entred the monaſtery of Hartsey, to bee brought vp vnder Hilda the Abbeſſe, and afterward builded for her ſelfe a monaſterie in a place called Strenſhalt thirty miles from Yorke, and was there buried.

Strenſhalt founded.

OSwine nowe raigning ouer the Mercies, and ouer the South people of England, ſubdued alſo the Pictes, for the moſt part, to his allegeance: he founded Lichfielde, and procured it to be a Cathedrall Church of that prouince: Dwina was firſt Biſhop of Mercia, & alſo of Lindeſſerne, for there were then ſo fewe Prieſtes, that one Biſhop was compelled to gouerne two prouinces. This Dwina was a Scottiſh man, and gouerned the Church of Lichfield two yeere, and died at Fepping. The ſeconde Biſhoppe was Cellach, a Scot, who ere long lefte his Biſhoprieke, and went to Lindeſſerne. The thirde was Thrumhere an Engliſhman, who was alſo Abbot of Ingethling, a monaſtery builded where this king Oſwine was ſlaine. The fourth was Iarimam. The fift was Cedda, who was buried at Lichfield, though hee had founded an Abbey at Lindſey, in a place called Echeare. The firt was Winfrothus. The ſeuenth Sexulfus a great builder of Peterborowe Abbey: after whoſe deceaſe, two Biſhops ruled the prouince or kingdome of Mercia, to wit, Winifrede at Cheſter, and Heda at Lichfield, after Winefled was reiected: and Hidda ſate alone, and died in the yeere of Chriſt 721. &c. Nowe concerning the name of Lichfield. Iohn Rouſe ſaieth there was in Britaine a great number of Chriſtians, which hearkened to the preaching of Amphibale (inſtructer of Albon) martyred and ſlayne in a place at Lichfielde, called *Cadauerum campus*, a place of dead bodies, &c. This towne, for the moſt part, ſtandeth vpon a lowe and equall ground, onely the cloſe and the cathedrall church, with a long ſtreete, that lieth north on the bridge of the Towne, is ſomewhat vpon a high ground: there is no token that euer the Towne was walled: a ditch was made in a part of the Towne by Langton Biſhop of Lichfielde. There hath béene a caſtell of auncient time, but no part of it ſtandeth: the place of the ditch is ſéene, and is yet called Caſtel-fielde. In the maine Towne, which is a faire large thing, be three pariſh churches, S. Maries, a right beautifull peece of worke, in the verie market ſteade, whereas was a Guilde or brotherhood, begunne about king Edward the thirds time, and ſince much encreaſed by one Heywood, Deane of Lichfield: Saint Nicholas in the Southeaſt ende of the Towne: Stowe Church in the Eaſt ende of the Towne, whereas is Saint Ceddes Well, a thing of pure water, where is ſéene a ſtone in the bottome, on the which (ſome ſaie) that Cedde was wont to ſtande and praie. At this ſtone Cedde had his Oratory in the time of Vlfere king of the Mercians: at which time, all the countrie about Lichfielde was a foreſt and wilderneſſe. There was an houſe of Saint Iohn in the verie South ende of the Towne, wherein was a Maſter and Fellowes. Smith Biſhop of Couentrie and Lichfielde, in king Henrie the ſeuenths dayes, and afterwardes Biſhop of Lincolne, beganne a newe foundation at this place, ſetting vp a Maſter, two Prieſtes, and tenne poore men in an Hoſpitall, hee ſet there alſo a Schoolemaſter and an Vſher to teach a Grammar ſchoole. King Henrie the ſeuenth gaue vnto it an olde Hoſpitall called Denhall in Wyrehall in Cheſſhire, with the landes and

Lichfield founded, and made a Biſhops ſea.

Lindſey.

I. Rouſe.

Lichfield.

and the impropriation of Burton Church in Wyrehall: there was an house of gray Friars in the Southwest parte of the Towne, Alexander Bysshop of Lichfield was the founder of it. There commeth a conduite of water out of an hill to the Towne, and hath two castelets, one in the East wall of the Friars close, and the other about the market place, besides water to serue the close and the Prebendes houses. There was a faire olde Crosse, enuironed with steppes in the Market place: Denton Deane of Lichfielde compassed this Crosse with eight faire Arches of stone, making a rounde vault ouer them for market folkes to stande drie in, it did cost him a hundreth and threescore poundes. The North part of Lichfield is diuided from the South part with three pondes or lakes, whereof both the two first lying by west, are nothing so great as the thirde that lyeth by East: there bee diuers Springes in these poles, but the principall Spring is a broke that entereth into them and feedeth them, comming from Dwe about a mile and halfe by West from Lichfield: the first westward pole is diuided from the second pole by a great maine causeway, walled on eche side with stone, and in this causeway be Arches of stone for the water to issue into the second pole: and this causeway serueth to come out of the South part of the Towne into the North. This causeway was last made by Langton Bysshop of Lichfield. There is also a stone causeway, and an issue for the water betwixt the second pole and the third, leading out of the Towne hard to the South gate of the close of the Cathedrall Church: and on the East side of it, is a faire Spil, this causeway is little more then a quarter so long as the first. The third pole that lyeth by West, is a verie faire thing, and plentifull of fish, and goeth in length about halfe a mile or euer the whole water be drawne into a narrowe bottome, that three miles lower goeth into Trent, by the right ripe.

The Cathedrall Church of Lichfield being first erected by king Oswyne, was of later times renouated and dedicated to Saint Mary and Saint Cedde. The whole close of the cathedrall church was newly ditched and walled by Bysshop Langton, and he made one gate of a maiestie, and great strength at the West part of the close, and an other, but a lesse gate, at the Southeast part of the close: he made also the Bysshops pallace, at the East end of the close: he made Cokleshall castle, Shobdrowe manour place, and the pallace by Strond at London, besides many other great actes, he was treasurer to king Edward the first. The Prebendaries in the close be very faire builded. The Choristers haue a goodly house lately builded by Bysshop Blythe. Fairewell a small priorie of Nunnes, suppressed by Thomas Wolsey Archbishop of Yorke, and giuen to Lichfield, in recompence of a pension that should haue béene giuen out of his college in Oxford, was impropriate to the Choristers of Lichfield. The Librarie, at the Northwest part of the Cathedrall Church was erected by Thomas Haywood, Deane of Lichfield. The glorie of the Church is the worke of the West ende, that is exceeding costly and faire. There be three pyramides or steeples of stone, two at the west ende, and one in the middest of the church. That parte of the Towne that lyeth by North the great causeway or bridge, is but one faire streete in length. And thus much for the Citie of Lichfield: all

which sprang of the Monasterie there. King Oswyne gaue to Peda sonne to Penda, because hee marryed king Oswynes daughter as is afore shewed, the kingdome of the South marches, diuided by the riuer of Trent from the north marches.

Hugo de Peterborow. Peda the first Christian king of Mercia.

Peda nowe king of Mercia, beeing also the first Christian king of that kingdome, beganne to plant Christianitie, throwing downe, and destroying the Idoles, and erecting Churches of Christian Religion. Among the which, hee beganne the foundation of Medishamstede, nowe called Peterborow: but hee raygned not long, for hee was trayterouslie slaine, by the meanes of Alflede his wife, in the feast of Easter in the yéere of Christ 657. And king Oswyne three yéeres after his great victorie ouer the cruell Pagan Penda, the Nobilitie of the Mercians Iumin, Eaba, and Eadbert rebelled against him, aduancing to the Crowne Vlfere brother to Peda.

662 VLferus brother to Peda, earnestly preferred christianity, which his brother had begunne, but he was the first (sayeth William of Malmesburie,) that through the sinne of Symonie, solde the Byshopricke of London vnto Wyna.

Vlfercester.

I reade in a Legar Booke of the Monasterie of Peterborowe, that Vlferus king of Mercia, remaining at his Castell of Vlfercester in Staffordshire, and vnderstanding that his sonne Vlfade, had led his brother Rufin to Chad (vnder colour of hunting) by whome they were both instructed in the Christian faith, and had receiued Baptisme, hee by perswasion of Werebode, goeth to the Oratorie of the Holie man, where finding both his sonnes in deuout contemplation, hee killed them with his owne handes, whose Bodies Ermenhelde the Queene their mother did burie in a Sepulture of stone, and in processe of time, caused a Church of stone there to bee builded: which place was after called Stones, by reason of the stones which the multitude brought thither for the building thereof, when they came to frequent the place.

Vlfere slew his owne sonnes. Priory of stones in Staffordshire

Medishamstede or Peterborow.

But Vlfere after, repenting thereof, destroyed all the Temples of the Idoles, and in place of them did build Churches and Monasteries, among the which hee bestowed great cost on Medishamstede, enriching it with large possessions.

This Church standeth in the Prouince of Gerwy or such as inhabite the Fennes, and maie not bee come vnto, except on the East side: on the South side whereof doth run the Riuer of Nenne, in the middest of the which course is a place, as it were, a Whirlepoole, which is so déepe and colde, that in the Summer none can swimme or diue to the bottome, and yet it is neuer frozen in the Winter: for (as they saie) there is a Fountaine, out of the which issueth water, which place the Ancients did name Medeswell, of which the Monasterie built hard by was called Medeshamstede, which the three brethren, Peda, Vlfere, and Ethelred, the sonnes of Penda, with their sisters, Kenesburg, and Keneswith, and king Oswyne did build from the foundation. But Peda in the yéere of Christ 675. with the deuout multitude, by the help of Sexulfus first Abbot there, began this monastery, & laid ye foundation there, of such stones as 8. yoke of oxen could scarse draw one of them, which stones were séene when the monasterie

Medeswell.

monastery was burned. This Church was destroied by the Danes, as all other monasteries were, & so remained 96 yeres, til the time that Ethelwald bishop of Win. cõming into a place called Undal or Dundal, begã there to make a new foundation, but after comming to Medilhamsted, which he found desolate, by the helpe of king Edgar and Adulphus his Chancellour, hee did newe repaire the monastery there: and the monastery at Dundal was made a parish church. In Anno 1117. this monastery of Medilhamsted with the whole Towne was burnt, but in the yeare after begunne to bee newe builded by Abbot Iohn from the foundation, and the Monkes entred againe in the yéare 1140. King Vlfere raigned 17. yeres, and was buried at Lichfielde: Ermineld his wife, after his decease became a Nun at Ely, vnder her mother Sexburg.

Dundall in Northamtonshire.

ETheIred brother to Vlferus succéded in the kingdome of the Mercians: he obtained a Bishops Sea to be in the citie of Worcester: Bosellus was first Bishop there: Egwinus was the second. This Egwinus, by the helpe of Kenredus king of the Mercies founded the monastery of Euesham, in a place then called Couesham, of the Shepheardes field and house, purchased by the said Bishop. The Towne in the Sarons time was called Hothelholme. About the same time two Noblemen Odo and Dodo founded the priory of Tewkesberie. Also Osricke Duke of Glouceſter founded the monasterie of Gloceſter, then for nuns: since the same is a Bishops Sea. Ethelred became a Monke at Bardonay in Lincolneshire, when he had raigned 30. yéares.

675

Bishops sea of Worcester. Ex Carta. Euesham.

Lib. Tewk. Tewkesburie. Monastery of Glouceſter Inscriptiones Glouceſtriæ.

KInredus sonne to Wolferus, in the 6. yéare of his raigne went to Rome, & became a Monke in the Church of S. Peter the Apostle, where he continued in fasting, praier, and almes giuing, vntill his dying date.

706

CElred the sonne of Ethelred, who as he was maruellous in prowesse against Ina of the West Saxons, so was he miserable by vntimelie death, for hee raigned not past 8. yeres, and was buried at Lichfield.

710

ETheIbald raigned in continuall peace many yeres, and then by the procurement of Beruredus, was slaine of his owne subiectes. Vnto this Ethelbald Boniface, the second Bishop of Utriche in Holland, after Archbishop of Mentz vpon the Rhene an Englishman borne, who was afterward martyred, for the profession of Christ and his holie Gospell, sent an Epistle, of the which I will here set downe a péece to bee seene, for that it sheweth partlie the state of that time then present, and serueth for example in time to come.

718

Chronicle of Holland. Ro. Mai.

Epistle of Boniface to Ethelbald.

TO his most déere Lord, and to be preferred in the loue of Christ aboue all other kings of England, Edbaldus, Boniface Archbyshop, the Germane Legate, perpetuall health of charitie and loue in Christ. Wée acknowledge before God, that wée did reioice to heare of your prosperitie, your fayth and good workes: and wée bée sory when we heare any thing that goeth against you, eyther in succesſe of warre, or in danger of your soule, for we haue heard, that you forbid theft and robbery, that you loue peace, defende the widowe and the pore, for the which wée giue God thankes: but in that you refuse lawfull marriage; which if it were to the preferring of chastitie, it were commendable: and sith you wallow in lecherie and adultery with Virgins consecrate to God, it is both shamefull and damnable, for it doeth confounde you renowne, both

before GOD and man, placing you among Idolators, because you violate the Temple of GOD. Wherefore my deare sonne repent, and remember how filthy a thing it is, that thou, who by the gift of God raignest ouer so many nations, shouldest to the great displeasure of God, make thy selfe a bondslaue to thine owne fleshly lust. We haue heard also, that the more part of noble men and people of the Mercians, by thine euill example, haue left their lawfull wiues, and haue defiled the wiues of other, and also Virgins, which, howe sarre it differeth from all good order and honestie, let the Lawes of strange Nations teach you: for in the ancient Countrey of the Sarons (where was no knowledge of GOD) if either a maide in her fathers house, or being married to an husband, were become an aduoutresse, she should be strangled by her owne hand closed to her mouth, and the corrupter should be hanged vpon the pit where the aduoutresse was buried. If she were not so vsed (her garments being cut awaie downe to the girdlestæde) the chaste Matrones did scourge and whippe her, and pricke her with knives, and so was sent from Towne to Towne, where other fresh and new scourgers or whippers did meete and whip her, vntill they had killed her. Likewise the Womendeans, who are the most vncleane kinde of people, had this manner of vsage with them, that the husband being dead, the woman, together with the dead body should cast her selfe headlong into the fired stacke or pile of wood prepared for the burning of their bodies. If therefore the Gentiles (not knowing God) had so great zeale to chastitie, how much more (my deare sonne) is it to be required at thy handes, who art a Christian and a King? Haue therefore compassion of thine owne soule, and spare the great number of the people, that by thy fatherly example yet maie beware to offend God, for whose soules thou shalt giue an account. Consider also, that if the English Nation, despising lawfull matrimonie, doe encrease by aduoutrie, (as the Frenchmen, Italians, and also the verie Pagans doe cast in our teeth and vpbraide vs withall,) of such conjunctions and copulations, shall spring vp a peakish dastardlie people, which shall despise God, and with their wicked qualities vndoe the Countrey, as it came to passe to the Burgundians, the people of Prouance, and the Spaniardes, whome the Saracens haue manie yeeres assaulted for their sinnes which in times past they had committed. Besides this, it is tolde vs, that you take away priuiledges of Churches, and thereby giue euill example vnto your noble men to doe the like: but I pray you remember howe terrible vengeance God toke vpon the kings your predecessors, which committed such offences as we rebuke you for.

Aduoutry among Infidels punished by death.

A wicked spirite came vpon Solredus your predecessour, which was a defiler of Virgins, and a breaker of Ecclesiasticall Priuiledges, for sitting rotally among his Barons at a dinner, the Diuell plucked awaie his soule without confession of his sinnes. The Diuell also drewe in such a rage, Ofredus king of the Northumbers, which was guiltie of the same crimes, that with a vile death he lost both kingdome and life in his lustie young age. Also Charles king of Fraunce which ouerthrewe Churches, and altered the Church money to his owne vse, was consumed with a long torment and fearefull death.

It

It followeth therefore (my deare beloued sonne) that with fatherlie and earnest prayers wee beseech you, that you will not despise the Counsell of your fathers which diligentlie doe admonish your Highnesse, for nothing is more commodious to a good king, then willingly to amend such faults when hee is warned of them, as Salomon saith, Who so loueth Discipline, loueth Wisedome. Therefore (my deare sonne) declaring our aduice, we beseech you by the liuing God, by his sonne Iesus Christ our Lorde, and by his holie spirite, that you will remember howe transitorie this present life is, and howe short and momentane the pleasure of this filthie flesh is, and how vile and shamefull a thing it is, that man shall leaue euill examples to his posteritie for euer: beginne therefore to frame your life in better waies, and amend the errours of your youth, that you may obtaine praise with men in this life, and eternall glorie in the life to come: We wish your Highnesse well to fare, & to encrease in all goodnesse.

Moreouer, the same Bonifacius sent an Epistle of the like tenor vnto Cuthbert Archbishop of Canterbury, adding thereunto, that he should rebuke the Clearkes and Nunnes for their finenes, and pompe of apparel and garments. He also willed Cuthbert not to marualle that he medled with other mens matters, nor to thinke it no part of his charge, to deale with the English Nation, but to vnderstand that Gregorie Bishop of Rome had bounde him, by the Sacrament thrise receiued, to let him vnderstand, of the maners and vsages of the Nations about him: which indede (he saide) he woulde doe, if his gentle admonition toke not good successe.

The Epistle of Boniface to Ethelbalde toke such effect, that Ethelbalde forthwith sending to the Archbishop Cuthbert, and other his Cleargie and nobilitie, by their counsell, amongst other things he caused to be published, as followeth:

I Ethelbalde King of the Mercians, foreséeing that I ought to prouide for the kingdome euerlasting, and the remedie of my soule, that I may deliuer it from the bondage of sinne. And forasmuch as Almightie GOD, by his mercifull clemencie, without anie of my deserts going before, hath giuen me the Scepter of the kingdome, gladly therefore will I render vnto him of the things which he hath giuen me, and for this cause I giue this gifte by my life time.

That all Churches of my kingdome shall be discharged of all manner of tribute, in workes, and burdens, except it be in the building of Towers, Castles, and Bridges, which cannot be released vnto any. Moreouer, that seruitours of Monasteries and Churches, shall haue their owne proper libertie in the profite of woods, & of fieldes, and shall not be bound to giue any reward vnto the King or Princes, except they will, but shall be free that they maie serue God, &c.

This Councell or conuocation was holden by Cuthbert the Archbishoppe of Canterburie, and the other Bishoppes and Prelates, in the yeere of our Lorde and Sauiour Iesus Christ, seuen hundreth, fourtie, and seuen, and was in the three and thirtieth yeere of Ethelbalde king of the Mercians, who then

W. Malmes. Articles for the Church of England.

was present with his Princes and Dukes, where then there was assembled out of diuers prouinces of Brytaine, Bishops and other spiritual persons, and the writings of Pope Zacharie were read in two partes, therewith he did admonish the people of England to liue more continently, and threatned that the despisers of his commandements should be excommunicated: whereupon the Bishops and Prelates agréed vpon certaine Articles, as followeth:

That the Prelates should liue more carefully and warne their subiects.

That they should liue in one peaceable mind, although they liued separate in bodies.

That euery yéere they should visite their parishes and charge.

That euerie one in his iurisdiction warne the Abbots and Monkes to liue orderly, and the Bishops not to oppresse their subiects, but to cherish them.

That they also sée that the Monasteries, the secular men that can not be taken away, be decently ordered.

That none be admitted to orders, vnlesse his life before be well examined.

Holy Scriptures to be read in the Church.

That the reading of holy Scriptures be frequented in the Monasteries.

That the Priests be not buyers and sellers in worldly affaires.

That the Priests receiue no reward for baptizing of children and other Sacraments.

The Lords praier & Créede in English.

That they learne and teach in English the Lordes prayer and the Créede.

That al do finish their ministery after one & ỹ same maner in their churches.

That they sing seruice in the Churches with sober voice.

That the solemnization of our Lorde, and the byrth daies of Saintes be solemnized at one and the same time.

That the Sunday be kept honourably holy.

That intercession be made for kings and rulers, &c. In all xxx. Articles.

The monastery of Crowland founded.

Ethelbald founded the Monasterie of Crowland, and because the marish of this Crowland, as the very name declareth (for it signifieth crudy ground and myre) was not able to beare a stone building, the forenamed king caused many and mighty piles of Oake to bee driuen into the ground, and commanded hard earth to be brought thither nine miles off by water in boates, from the higher ground, and to be mingled with the marish, and in this sorte he laid the foundation, and finished the Church of stone.

When Ethelbald had raigned xli. yéeres, fighting against Cuthered, in the war not prudentlie begun, vpon Segiswald, or Secondone (as some say) three miles from Tamworth, he was slaine of the tyrant Barred, and was buried at Ripendine or Ripon, at that time a famous monasterie.

Segiswald by Tamworth.

749 Beraredus the murtherer of Ethelbald did nothing worthy the remembrance, but was slaine by Offa, and had an end méete for a traitor.

Offa nephewe to Ethelbald succéeded: hee ioyned battell with Kineulfus king of the West Saxons, and got the victorie. He sent for Ethelbert king of the East Angles, promising great things by flatterie, but when he had gotte him to his Pallace, hee caused him to be beheaded, and then vnlustlie vnuaded the kingdome of the East Angles, as is shewed in the raigne of the East Angles.

Vita Albani.

He

He caused the reliques of S. Alban to be taken vp, and put in a Shrine adorned with golde and precious stones, and builded there a Princely Monasterie, enduing the same with lands by his Charter, dated the yere of Christ, 793. in the yere of Offaes raigne, 33. in the famous place called Celchyth, with the witnesse of himselfe, his sonne Egfride, 9. kings, 15. Bishops, 10. Dukes, &c. S. Albones builded.

He founded the Abbey of Bath.

He translated the Archbishops Sea to Lichfield.

He made a Dike betweene Wales and the kingdome of the Mercies, which ditch extendeth by South from the partes about Bristow, ouer the mountains of Wales, and so North toward Flint, and vnder a hill of coale, euen to the mouth of Dee, or the North Sea, which dike is yet to be séene, and manifestlie appeareth in diuers places. He raigned xxxix. yeres, and died at Offay, and was buried in a Chappell which then stode on the bancke of the Riuer Ouse, without the towne of Bedforde. Which Chappell with the Sepulture of the king, the said Riuer hath swallowed vp, whose tombe of lead (as it were some phantasticall thing) appeareth often to them that séke it not, but to them that séke it (saith Rouse) it is inuisible.

EGbertus or Ecfride his sonne raigned one yere. Alquine writ to Osbert of the Mercians, that the noble young Ecfride died not so sone for his owne faultes, but because his father was a great shedder of blood. 796

KEnulfus, Nephewe in the fifth degrée vnto Penda, warred on the Kentish Sarons, punished their Countrey very sore, and caried away bound their king Egberthus, but not long after, when he had builded a church at Winchelcombe, on the day of the dedication thereof, he deliuered him, declaring a worthy example of clemencie. He founded the church of S. Ethelbert in Hereford, and raigned xviii. yeres. Flaccus Albinus. 796 W. Malmes. Winchelcomb founded. Bishops sea at Hereford founded.

KEnelmus sonne to Egbertus a childe of seauen yéres, was innocentlie slaine by his sister Quenda, whereby he obtained the name of a Martyre. 820

CEolwulfus, brother to Kenulfus, raigned one yere, and was expulsed by Bernulfus. 820

BErnulfus in the third yere of his raigne was ouercome by Egbertus King of West Sarons at Elyndune. 821

LVcanus after hee raigned two yéres, was oppressed by the East Angles. 824.

WIthlafnus, being at the first subdued by Egbirth, raigned viii. yéres, paying to him and his sonne a tribute. 826

BErthulfus raigned viii. yéres, in the same estate, till at the last he was chased beyond the Seas, by the sea-rouers of Denmarke. 829 W. Malmes.

BVrdredus paying the Tribute, enioyed the same twentie yéres, and then he being deposed, and driuen out of his Countrey, fled to Rome, and there was buried at the English schole. Then that kingdome was by the Danes deliuered to Ceolwulfus, and in fewe yéres after that, Alphred the Nephewe of Egbirth gate it. So the kingdome of the Mercies fell awaie in the yere of Christ, 875. 852

Northum-

Northumbers.

THe firſt kingdome was of the Northumbers, which contained Lankeſhire, Yorkeſhire, Cumberland, Weſtmerland, Northumberland. It had on the Weſt the Sea, by South the Riuer of Humber, and ſo downeward toward the Weſt by the endes of the Shires of Nottingham and of Darby, vnto the Riuer of Merce, & hath the Dioceſſes of Yorke, Durham, and Carleile.

At the beginning, it was deuided into two kingdomes, Bernitia, and Deira. Bernitia ſtretched from Edenborough Frith to Tine: and Deira, from Tine to Humber, but theſe two were ſhortly vnited.

W. Malmeſ. When Hengiſt had eſtabliſhed himſelfe in Kent, he ſent his brother Octa, and his ſonne Ebuſam to poſſeſſe the North partes of Britaine, where manie times they put the men of that prouince to flight, and for the ſpace of ninetie nine yeares, they and their ſucceſſours aſcribed to themſelues the names of Dukes, and bare themſelues vnder the kingdome of Kent, but in the yeare of Chriſt. 547. the yeare after Hengiſtes death 60. that Dukedome was changed into a kingdome.

547 IDa, the ninth from Beldegius, and the tenth from Wodden, continued xiiii. yeares in the kingdome of Deires.

559 AElla his ſucceſſor of the ſame kindred, but by another line, ſtrongly aduanced his kingdome xxx. yeares.

In his time, children of Northumberland were caried to bee ſolde in the Market at Rome, where when the Citizens beheld them, and wondred at their comelineſſe and beautie of face, amongſt other, Gregory the Archdeacon of the Apoſtolicall ſeate being one, aſked of what Nation they were, vnto whome it was anſwered, that they were the children of Engliſh men, of the prouince of Deires, and ſubiect to Alla their king, but were Painims, whereunto Gregory ſaid, they ſhall be taught to ſing Alleluia there, during the raigne of Alla ouer the Deires.

¶ Adda the eldeſt ſonne of Ida raigned ouer the Bernitians vii. yeares:
¶ Elappea fiue yeares:
¶ Theodwald one yeare:
¶ Frethulfe ſeuen yeares:
¶ Theodrike ſeuen yeares:
¶ Aethelfride two yeares, and all in the life of Bernitians.

582 AEthelrike, the ſonne of Ida, raigned in both prouinces of Deirie and Bernicia fiue yeares.
W. Malmeſ.

587 EThelfride, brother to Ethelricus, made greater ſpoile of the Britaines, then all the kings of the Angles, and vnpeopled and ſubdued more of their Countries, and made the ſame tributary and habitable for Engliſhmen: wherfore Aadan king of the Scots being greatly moued with this happie ſucceſſe came againſt him with a mighty army, but was ouercome and put to flight of a few Saxons, which battell was fought by Ethelfreth, in a place called Degſaſtan,
Marianus. Floriacenſis.

saſſan, in the xi. yeare of his raigne, and in the firſt yeare of Phocas the Emperour, which was the yeare of Chriſt, 603.

This king alſo not long after this time, leuyed a newe power, and according as Auguſtine the Archbyſhop of Canterburie had before ſpoken, marched toward the Citie of Legions, which of the Brytaines is called Cairlegion, and there firſt ſlew 1200. Monks, aſſembled to make praier vnto God, for the good ſucceſſe of their Souldiors in the battaile: and afterwarde he ouerthrewe the whole power of the Brytaines hoſt. He was ſlaine by Redwald king of the Eaſt Angles in a battaile neere vnto the Riuer which is called Idle, in the yeare of Chriſt 616. when he had raigned xvii. yeares.

617 EDwyne ſucceeded Ethelfride, and droue out the ſeuen ſonnes of king Ethelfride.

First Chriſtian king of Northumberland. Marianus. Florilegen. W.

In Anno 626. Paulinus being the third Byſhoppe of Rocheſter, was conſtituted by Iuſtus then Archbyſhoppe of Canterburie, to be Byſhoppe ouer the Northumbers, and ſent by Eadbald to Edwine the King of that nation, with his wife, being the daughter of king Ethelbert, and ſiſter of the ſaid king Eadbald.

A certaine deſperate fellow, named Eomer, was ſent vnto king Edwine, by Guicheline king of the Weſt Sarons, who came vnto him on Eaſter date, and hauing a naked weapon vnder his garment, aſſayled the king, but Lilla his ſeruaunt thruſt himſelfe before the ſtroke, yet notwithſtanding the king was with that ſtroke wounded through the bodie of his faithfull ſeruaunt.

The ſame night the Q. his wife was deliuered of a daughter, which vppon Whitſonday next after, was the firſt that was baptized of Paulinus the Byſhop, and named Eanfleda.

In the yeare of Chriſt 628. Edwine the moſt mightie king of the Northumbers, and his people, receiued the word of God, at the preaching of Paulinus the Byſhop: this was done in the xi. yeare of his raigne, and in the 230. yeare after the arriuall of the Angles in Brytaine.

Cathedrall Church of Yorke founded.

Edwine gaue vnto Paulinus a Byſhoppes Sea in the Citie of Yorke, and began the Cathedrall Church of S. Peter there, which Church was after finiſhed by king Oſwald his ſucceſſor, after this, in encreaſing of the Chriſtian faith and heauenlie kingdome, his earthlie poſſeſſions did wonderfullie encreaſe, for he firſt of all the Angles brought Brytaine wholie vnder his ſubiection, ſauing the kingdome of Kent.

Lincolne Minſter founded. Bede.

Edwine in the 17. yeare of his raigne, and the 48. of his age, was ſlaine in a battaile which he fought at Heathfielde, with the moſt valiant Painim Penda king of the Mercies, and Ceadwalla king of the Brytaines. Paulinus the Byſhoppe builded the great Church at Lincolne. In the raigne of king Edwine, ſuch was the peace and tranquilitie through all Brytaine, which waie ſoeuer king Edwines dominions lay, that a weake woman might haue walked with her new borne babe ouer all the Iſland without anie damage. Moreouer for the refreſhing of waifaring men, he ordained Cups of yron or braſſe, to be faſtned by ſuch cleare Wels and Fountaines as did runne by the waies ſide, which

Cups of braſſe by the high wayes.

which cuppes no man durst touch further then to his owne present vse and necessitie, for the loue and good will they bare to their Prince, who was for the time of his raigne so honoured and loued, that the triumphant banners were borne before him, not in warre onely, but in peace to, where soeuer hee went abroad.

After the death of Edwine, the kingdome of Northumberland was againe diuided.

633 OSriche sonne of Elfrike, who was Edwines vncle, succéeded in the gouernance of Deira. And Eanfride the son of Ethelfride, ruled the Bernicians: but both these forsaking the Christian profession, wherein they were instructed, yéelded themselues to be defiled with the filth of Idolatry: but this Apostasie was reuenged by Cedwall king of the Brytaines, who slew them both, & with tragicall slaughter spoiled Northumberland.

634 OSwald brother to Eanfride, then gouerned this kingdome, who with a small armie ouercame the Brytaines, and slewe Cedwall their king at Denisseburne. He sent for Aidan a Scot to aduance the Christian Religion among his people, assigning to him the Ile of Lindisfarne or holie Iland, for his Sea. He greatly enlarged his kingdome, reconciled the Deirians and Bernicians, which did deadly hate one another. And when he had raigned viii. yéeres, was slaine in a cruell battell at Maserfielde, by Penda king of Mercia, and canonized a Saint.

642 OSwine brother to Oswald, succéeded: he buried the head and armes of Oswald, which Penda commanded to be hanged vpon poles. His gouernment was greatly disquieted by inuasion of the Mercians, rebellion of his owne son Aelfride, and insurrection of Adilwald sonne to Oswald. He murthered Oswy, the sonne of Osrike, who ruled Deira, being traiterously deliuered vnto him at Ingethling, where afterward a Monasterie was erected. But at length he deliuered his Countrey from forraine inuasion, vanquished the Mercians with Penda in a fought fielde, neere the riuer Iewet, brought them to his subiection, and caused them to be instructed in the Christian faith.

Liber Lichfield. T. Rudburne.

He builded a Church among the Mercians called Lichfielde, and procured the same to be a Bishops sea, in Anno, 657.

Lichfielde Church a Bishops sea founded.

Duina was first Bishop there of Mercia, and also of Lindesierne: for there were then so fewe Priests, that one Bishoppe was compelled to gouerne two Prouinces. King Oswine ended his life quietly, when he had raigned xrrii. yéeres.

670 EGfride his lawefull sonne, then inherited Northumberland: hee deposed Wilfride of the Bishoprieke, and appointed two Bishops ouer the Northumbers. Mildred, otherwise called Etheldred, his wife would by no meanes accompany with her husband, but continued a Virgine, and after she had bin maried twelue yéeres, toke at the handes of Wilfride the vaile and habite of a Nunne, and built the Monasterie of Ely, where she was Abbesse.

Egfride her husband fought a battell with Edilfride king of Mercia, but after they were reconciled by Theodore the Bishop. Then turning his power against Ireland, he sent Berte thither, who miserably destroyed the sely people.

ple. But the yéere following, he marched against the Pictes contrarie to the good counseile of S. Cuthbert, whom hee made Bishop) & was slaine by them in an ambush, in a place called Nectansmere, when he had raigned xv. yéeres, and was buried in S. Columbes Island.

ALfride, bastard sonne of Oswine, succéeded after his brother Egfride. Hee did repaire the decayed state of Northumberland, but could not recouer al that Picts, Scots, and Britaines tooke from the Northumbers at the death of his brother. He raigned xix. yéeres. 685

OSred his sonne, a child of eight yéeres succéeded, who, when he had wickedly raigned xi. yeres, was murthered by his kinsmen Kenred and Osricke. Kenred, when he had slaine Osred, ruled Northumberland two yéeres. 704

OSricke obtained the kingdome after xi. yeeres, and elected Ceolnulph brother of Kenred to be his successor. 715

CEolnulph raigned in this prouince with great pietie, and victory viii. yeres, and then forsooke the state of a king, and tooke the habite of a Monke in the holie Island. 728

Benedict, who first brought Masons, Painting, and Glasing into this Realme to the Saxons, flourished at this time. Beda also that famous learned man, liued at this time, who dedicated his historie of the Church of England to the forenamed Ceolnulph. Glasing brought among the Saxons. Bede famous.

EGbert, cousin germane to Ceolnulph, raigned in Northumberland twentie yeeres peaceably, and then forsaking the worlde, entred into Religion, and became a Monke: his brother bearing ẏ same name, was Archbishop of York, which Sea he greatly aduanced, and founded there a most worthy Librarie, replenished with all good Authors. 736 Wt Malmes. Librarie at Yorke.

OSwulfe succéeded his father, who was slaine by the people in the first yeere of his raigne. 757

MOllo then tooke the regiment, and after xi. yéeres was traiterously murthered by Alered. 758

ALered raigned after him xi. yeres, and was enforced by the people to leaue the Countrey. 769

AThelred or Etheldred the sonne of Mollo, was aduanced to the regiment of Northumberland by the people, and the fifth yeere after was by them depriued. 780

AElfwold then was proclaymed king of Northumberland, and when hee had raigned xi. yéeres, was slaine by his subiects: he lieth buried at Haugustald. 785

OSrede, the sonne of Aelerede then succeeded, but the first yéere he was depriued. 796

AEthelred or Etheldred, who was before deposed, now receiued the kingdome, and when he had ruled foure yeeres, was also miserably slaine. After his death, this kingdome decayed, and was pitifully ransacked by ciuill sedition, and forraine inuasions, for the space of 30. yéeres, in which space, there ruled here without title of kings.

¶ Eardulfe,

¶ Alfwold,

¶ Alfwold,
¶ Eandred,
¶ Ethelred,
¶ Readulfe,
¶ Osbert, which two last, to wit, Readulfe, and Osbert, were slaine at Yorke, by the Danes, in a place yet to this daie called Elle Crofte, because Elle was there also slaine.

This Osbert rauished a Ladie of his Countrey, wife to Bernebokard, in reuenge whereof, the same Bernebokard fleeing into Denmarke, returned againe with the Danes Hinguar and Hubba, and arriued in holy Iland, and so came to Yorke, and there slewe king Osbright, and Elle the newe elected king of Northumberland.

800 ¶ Egbert king of the West Saxons, then obteined Northumberland.

Ricsy then vsurped it, and after him Cuthred, from whome Sitricke the Dane got it, vnto whome king Athelstane the Monarch gaue his daughter in mariage.

T. Oterborne. Iohn Currar. Thus ended the race of the kings of Northumberland, & was since counted an Earldome, the succession of the Earles whereof set downe by T. Oterborne, I ouerpasse for brenity, as also the names of Castles & Forts, in the said county, with their owners, set downe by Iohn Currar, to the number of 78.

West Saxons.

The seuenth kingdome was of the West Saxons, which contained the Countries of Barkeshire, South-hampton, Wiltshire, Dorcetshire, Somersetshire, Deuonshire, and Cornwall, and hath Dioceses, Bath and Wels, Sarisburie, and Excester: hauing on the East side Southsex, on the North side Thames, on the South and the West the Sea Ocean.

This kingdome, although it toke beginning long after the first comming of the Saxons, yet the same endured longest, and ouercomming all the other kingdomes, brought them againe to one Monarchy.

CErdic, the tenth from Woden, with his sonne Kenrike, and other Saxons in fiue shippes, in Anno Christi. 499. landed in Brytaine, at a place called Cerdikeshore, and slewe Natanleod king of the Brytaines, and fiue thousand men, of whose name the Countrey as farre as Cerdikesford, was called by the name of Natanleod. From thencefoorth hee kept the Brytaines in great quiet, for they thought not good to stirre, where they wanted hope to preuaile.

519 CErdike and Kenrike beganne to raigne as kinges, and the same yeare they fought with the Brytaines in a place called Cerdikesforde, and departed vanquishers.

After that, they fought with the Brytaines in a place called Cerdicksflege. These two kings to wit, the father and the sonne, toke the Isle of Wight, and gaue

gaue the same to their Nephewes, Stuffe and Withgare, and slewe the Brytains in a place called Withgarberg. He raigned 17. yeeres. Withgare the Nephewe of Cerdic was king of the Ile of Wight, and was buried at Withgarberg, or the Citie of Withgar in the Ile of Wight.

KEnrike the son of Cerdic fought with the Brytaines at Searesberige, and afterwards at Beranbrige, and at both times put them to flight, and raigned xvb. yeeres. 526

CEauline the son of Kenrike toke vpon him the kingdome of the West Saxons. 560

In the beginning of his raigne he discomfited Ethelbert king of Kent, and slewe his 2. Dukes, Oslaue & Cnebban at Wibbandune. Afterward his brother Cutholfe vanquished the Brytaines at Bedford, and wan from them the townes of Liganburge, Egelsburge, Bensington, and Egnesham. Liganburge.

Sixe yeeres after, Ceaulin slew 3. kings of the Brytaines, Commeaile, Condidan, and Fariemeile, at Deorham, and toke three Cities from them, Glocester, Cirrencester, and Bathancester.

After he fought with the Brytaines at Fethanleah, in which he had the victorie, but lost his sonne Cutha: for now his fortune changed, and when hee had raigned 33. yeeres, he was ouercome at Wodnesbeorhe, or Wannes ditch in Wiltshire, and expelled out of his kingdome by the Brytains, by the meanes of Cealrike his brother Cuthas sonne, that now rebelled against him, and expulsed him the kingdome, when he had raigned xvi. yeeres. Tho. Redborne. Leyland.

Cealrike the sonne of Cutholfe ruled the West Saxons v. yeeres. 591

CEolnulfe sonne of Cutha before named succeeded, who had continuall wars either with the Englishmen, with the Brytaines, with the Scots, or with the Picts, and lastlie moued war against the South Saxons, and there died, when he had raigned 14. yeeres. 598

KInegilsus the sonne of Ceolrike succeeded. He brought his host against the Brytaines into Beandune, and there slew of them 2046. 611

He also fought with Penda king of Mercians nere vnto Cirrencester, and after made peace with him. Marian. Floria. Wigor. Wessex baptized.

And shortly after in the yeere of Christ six hundred thirtyfiue, by the preaching of Berinus, king Kinegilsus, and all his people receyued the Christian faith, to whome king Oswald was Godfather at the Font, of which kinges, the sayde Berinus had graunted to him the Citie of Dorchester, & builded there an house of Canons for his Bishoppes Sea. Vita Berini. Dorchester a Bishops Sea.

Kenegilsus raygned sauen and twentie yeeres.

GVicheline the sonne of Kinegilsus was baptized by Berinus the Bishoppe, in the Citie of Dorchester, and deceased the same yeere. 638

CVthedrus the sonne of king Guicheline, was baptized at Dorchester, by Berinus the Bishop, who was his Godfather at the font. Hee raigned xiii. yeeres. About this time Honorius Archbishoppe of Canterburie deuided his prouince into parishes. 639

KEnnewalcus the son of king Kenegilsus, toke on him the kingdome of the West Saxons. 643

He

Winchester a Bishops sea. Malmesbury builded. Vita Adelm.

He founded the Cathedrall Church in Winchester, placing there a Bishops See.

He gaue Meydulfus burgh to Aldelmus the Abbot, there to build a Monastery. Afterward being infested with warres by Penda King of the Mercians, because he had forsaken his wife, sister of the said Penda, was by him driuen out of his kingdome, and fled to Anna king of the East Angles, where he was baptized of Bishop Fœlix, and after was restored to his kingdome by the helpe of the forenamed Anna. He raigned xxv. yeares. After whom Quéene Sexburgeo his wife gouerned a while. She founded a Monasterie of Nunnes in the Isle of Shepey, and became her selfe a Nunne, and after Abbesse of Ely.

673 EAscwinus Nephewe to Kinegilsus succeeded, hee forght a battaile against Wulfere king of Mercia, in a place called Bidanheafod. He raigned two yeares.

676 KEenewinus, sonne to Kinegilsus, chased the Brytains euen to the sea shore, and raigned ix. yeares.

685 ¶ Ceadwalla, Nephew to Ceauline succeeded in the kingdome.

Marianus. He slewe Berthune Duke of the South Saxons, and brought that province vnder grieuous bondage.

After that, he & his brother Mull wasted Kent, and subdued the Isle of Wight, which till that time was giuen to Idolatry, wherof he purged them, giuing the fourth part thereof to Bishop Wilfride, who appointed Preachers to conuert the people of that Isle to Christianitie. Ceadwalla once againe spoiling the countrey of Kent, his brother Moll, and vii. of his knightes were slaine by fire cast vpon them, after which time, euen before he was baptized, hee gaue for the or tenth to God all the pray and spoiles he had gotten to his owne vse: in whome W. Malmes. (saith Malmesbury) although we praise his affection, we allow not the example: for it is written, that who so offereth the sacrifice of poore folkes good, doth as it were sacrifice the sonne in the sight of his father.

After this he went to Rome, when Sergius was Pope, he was there baptized on Easter Euen, the yeare after Christs birth, 689. and falling sicke he died on the 20. day of Aprill, and was buried honorably in S. Peters Church, with an Epitaph in Latine verse, and another in Latine prose, which maie be Englished thus.

Ceadwall buried at Rome. Here Ceadwall is buried, otherwise named Peter, king of the West Saxons, who died the 20. of Aprill in the second indiction, and liued 30. yeares, or thereabouts, when that noble and mightie Prince Iustinian was Emperour of Rome, and had raigned 4. yeares in the Empire, and Sergius a true paterne of the Apostles, had sate 2. yeares in Peters seate.

687 INe raigned among the West Saxons, a noble man, of great power & wisedome, and therewith valiant and hardie, in feates of armes very expert: he maintained such warre against the Kentish Saxons, that he constrained them to séeke and intreat meanes of peace, giuing to him for the same great giftes 30000. Mancas (peeces of gold so named.)

Asser.

Floriacensis. This Ine was the sonne of Kenred, the sonne of Ceadwolde, brother to Keadwold, and sonne to Chenling, sonne of Kenri, sonne of Cirdic, the first king of the

the West Saxons. This man was more for his industrie and naturall prowesse, then for his succession of the right line, called to be King. He was a Patrone of strength and manlinesse, an image of wisedome, and his like was of no man knowne at that time, for religion in profession, and framing himselfe thereafter in his living.

About the 26. yeere of his raigne he fought a great battell against Celred king of Mercia, at Wodnesburie. And the same yeere he invaded the South Saxons with a mightie armie, and fetche in battaile Anthun King of the South Saxons, and joined that kingdome unto his. He builded a Colledge at Wels, dedicating it to the honour of God, and Saint Andrewe the Apostle, in the yeere of Christ 704. which Church was since translated into a Bishops See, by Kenulphus king of the West Saxons. He new builded the Abbey of Glastenburie, in a fenny place out of the way, to the end the Monks mought so much the more give their mindes to heavenly things, and chiefely use the contemplation meete for men of such profession; this was the fourth building of that Monasterie. Besides which the said king did also erect a Chappell of gold and silver (to wit garnished) with ornaments and vessels likewise of gold and silver, to the building of the which Chappell, he gave 2640. pounds of silver, and to the Altar, 264. pound of golde, a Chalcis with the patten, tenne pound of gold, a Sensar eight pound, and twenty Mancas of gold, two Candlesticks, twelue pound and a halfe of silver, a Layar for the Gospell booke twenty pound, and 60. Mancas of gold, vessels for water to the Altar, thirteene pound of golde, a Vason eight pound of gold, an holy water Bucket 11. pound of silver, Images of our Lord, our Ladie, and the twelue Apostles 175. pound of silver, and 28. pound of gold, a Pall for the Altar, and ornamentes for the Monks, of gold and precious stones subtilly compacted, all which treasure he gave to that Monasterie. In the yeere of Christ, 705. Hedda Bishop of the West Saxons departed this life, after whose death, king Ine caused that bishoppricke to be divided into two parishes, the one to Winchester which he gave to Daniel, the other, to wit Shireborne, was given to Aldethelme, where he ruled foure yeeres.

Wodnesbury.

Colledge of Welles.

Glastenbury new builded with a Chappell of gold and silver.

Bede.

Bishoppricke at Shireborne.

Also Eadberte Abbot, was made Bishop of Selsey by Chichester.

Bishoppricke at Selsey or Chichester.

This Ine king of the West Saxons, was the first that caused the mony called Peter pence to be paid to Rome, & this was called the kings almes, & was levied in this maner, every man that had 30. pennieworth of good of one maner cattel in their house of their own proper, should give a peny at Lammas yerely. And when he had governed the West Saxons by the space of 37. yeres, by the earnest labor of his wife Ethelburge, he left this worldly kingdome to his cousin Echelard, and went to Rome, and there ended his life in poore estate.

Peter pence paid, and how levied.

ETHELARD kinsman on the fathers side to Ine, succeeded in the kingdome, notwithstanding Oswald a yong man of the kings bloud did disturbe the beginning of his raigne, for he stirred up rebellion among the inhabitants, but not long after, he died, and then Ethelard raigned quietly xiiii. yeeres.

CVthrede his kinsman made warre on Echelwald king of Mercia against the Brytaines, and had of them the victorie. 749

Blasing Stars. In his time there appeared 2. blasing Starres, casting as it were burning brands towards the North. He raigned xvi. yeares.

Antiqui. Britan. Eccles. Buriall in Churchyards. The Englishmen buried not the bodies of their dead in Cities, vntill the time of Cuthbert Archbyshop of Canterburie, who procured of the Pope that in Cities there shoulde bee appointed Churchyards, for Honorius then hee deuided his prouince into parishes, appointed not to them Churchyardes for buriall.

757 W. Malm. Sca. Cro. SIgebert was king of the West Saxons. Hee was cruell and tyrannous towards his Subiects, and changed auncient Lawes and Customes after his owne lust and pleasure, and because a certayne Noble Man some deale sharpelie aduertised him to chaunge his manners, hee put him to cruell death: and for so much as hee continued in his malice, and would not amend, hee was depriued of all kinglie authoritie, and lastlie as a person forlorne, wandring in woods, and hiding himselfe in caues of wild beasts, he was slaine in Andreads Walde by a Swineheard, whose Lord & master called Cumbra, he had wrongfullie put to death, when he had not raigned one yeere.

A tyrant came to a miserable end, and shamefull death.

757 KEnulphus of the blood of Cerdicus, appeased certaine murmours and grudges that were amongst the people, for the deposing of his predecessor Sigebert.

Byshops sea at Wels founded. He founded the Cathedrall Church of Welles. As he haunted a woman which he kept at Merton, he was slaine by the treason of one Olio, the kinsman of Sigebert late king, when he had raigned nine and twentie yeeres, and was buried at Winchester.

786 BRithricus of the blood of Cerdicus, was made king of West Saxons, a man more desirous of peace then of warre.

He married Eadburga the daughter of Offa king of Mercia, by whose power hee expelled Egbert, that was an vnder king in the Lordship of the West Saxons.

Blood rayned. In his time it rayned blood, which falling on mens clothes, appeared like Crosses.

The Danes first arriued in this land. Marianus. In An. 800. the Danes arriued in the Ile called Portland, but by the puissance of Brithricus, and other kinges of the Saxons, they were ouercome at Teignemouth, driuen backe, and compelled to auoide the land.

The king poisoned by his wife. Brithricus was poisoned by his wife Ethelburga, when hee had raygned 17. yeeres, and was buried at Warham. For this deede the Nobles ordained that from thenceforth the kings wiues should not be called Quenes, nor suffered to sit with them in place of estate.

Eadburge with infinite treasure fledde into France, where offering a great portion of her golde to king Charles of France, hee sayde vnto her, chose Eadburge whome thou wilt haue to thy husbande, mee or my sonne: and shee answered, if choyse be graunted me, I chose your sonne, because he is yonger then you: then (quoth Charles) if thou hadst chosen me, thou shouldest haue had my sonne, but because thou hast chosen my sonne, thou shalt haue neither him nor me: and then gaue to her a Monasterie, wherein she professed her selfe a Nunne, & became there Abbesse a few yeeres, but afterwards committing a-

After a wicked life followed a miserable end to Queene Eadburge. Houeden.

dultery

dultery with a lay man, and cast out of the Monastery, she ended her life in pouertie and miserie, as of many that haue seene her we heard, saith mine Author Asserius.

Asser.

EGbrichus obtained the gouernement of the West Saxons. Hæ tamed the Welchmen, vanquished Bertulphus king of the Mercians at Hellendune, and subdued to his obeysance the Kentish Saxons, East Saxons, and Northumbers. He caused the brasen Image of Cadwaline king of the Brytains to be throwne downe, and this land no more to bee called Brytaine, but Anglia or England. He was crowned at Wincheſter. 802 W. Malm. Scal. cron. Brytaine first named England.

In the 33. yéare of his raigne the Danes arriued at Lindesferne, and fought with the Englishmen at Carham, where two Bishops, two Earles, & a great number of the English people were slaine. Two yéares after the Danes arriued in West Wales, where Egbright ouercame them at Hengistendon. In Anno 832. the Danes spoyled the Ile of Shepey in Kent, and yet were they expelled out of the Ile of Thanete. Hé raigned ouer the most part of England the space of seuen and thirtie yéares and seuen monethes, and was buried at Wincheſter. Danes arriue here. Sca. cron.

AEthelulfus the sonne of Egbrichus, late Bishop of Wincheſter, (saieth Iohn Brompton Abbot of Iaruaux) began his raigne ouer the most part of England. He toke to wife Osburghe his Butlers daughter, and after her Iudith, daughter to the king of France, and had by his first wife 4. sonnes, which were kings after him. 839 W. Malmes. I. Brompton.

In his time there came a great army of the Pagan Danes with 350. ships into the mouth of Thamis, and so to London, spoyled it, and put to flight Beorthulfe king of Mercia, with all his power which came to bid them battaile: Then the Danes went with their armie into Southry, where Adhelnulfus with his sonne Adhelbald, and a great armie came against the foresayde Danes, and at a place called Aolea they fought a cruell battell, wherein the most part of the Danes were slaine. Ardus Riuall. Danes spoile London.

The same yéare Adhelstane the sonne of Adhelfus, and Calchere the Earle slew a great army of the Pagans at Sandwich in Kent, and toke nine of their Shippes. Sca. Cro.

Adhelnulfus sent his sonne Alfride to Rome with a great number of Noble men and other, at which time Pope Leo confirmed the sayd Alfride, and toke him to his son by adoption, and also consecrated him king.

This Adhelnulfus did make the tenth part of his kingdome frée from tribute and seruice to the king, and gaue it to them that did serue Christ in the Church: and the same yéare hee went to Rome, where hee repayred the English Schoole, which was first founded by Offa king of the Mercies. Hee confirmed that graunt of the Peter Pence to Rome, and as hee returned home through France, he toke to wife Iudith, the daughter of Charles the bald king of France. Tenth giuen to the Church by king Adelnulfus. English schoole at Rome repayred.

In the meane season, his Sonne Adhelbald rebelling, vsurped the kingdome, so that when Adhelnulfus returned, hee was forced to deuide the kingdome, and to take the worse part. Hé raigned eight téene yéares, and was

buried at Winchester, where sometime he had béene Bysshoppe (elected belike) but was after the decease of his father, of necessity taken from thence & made king.

857 Flori. Wigor. Adhelbald raigned after his father: against God, and the worthinesse of Christianitie, yea, and contrarie to the custome of all Pagans, he presumed to his fathers marriage bedde, and with great infamie, married Iudith the French kinges daughter. Hée raigned after his father ii. yéeres, and was buried at Shirborne.

860 Danes inuade and spoile Winchester. Athelbricke, brother to Athelbald, toke vnder his dominion Kent, Southery and Suller.

In this time, the great Armie of the Pagans inuaded and spoiled the Citie of Winchester, who when they returned with a great praie, towardes their Ships, Osrike Earle of Hampton, and his folke, and Adhelmulfus the Earle with Barkeshire men, met them, and farre from ante Towne they ioined battaile, where the Pagans were slaine in euerie corner, and the Christians kept the field.

Danes make a league, and breake it. The Normans and Danes made a firme league with the Kentishmen, who promised them monie to kéepe the league, but notwithstanding the Pagans brake priuilie out of their Castels by night, and spoyled all the East partes of Kent.

Athelbrict raigned fiue yéeres, and was buried at Shirborne.

866 Etheldred brother to Adhelbrict, receiued the kingdome of the West Saxons. In the first yéere of his raigne, a great Naup of Pagans came into England, and remained all the winter in the kingdome of East England.

Ingulphus. The Pagans departed out of Northumberland, came to Nottingham, and there wintered, but Beorede gathering a great armie against them, strengthened besides with Ethelreds power king of the West Saxons, forced them to leaue Nottingham, and to go back againe to Yorke, where remaining til winter was passed, they then passed ouer by Boate into Linsey, and comming vp to Humberstane, spoiled the whole Countrie, they destroied the most famous and auncient Monasterie of Bardeney, slaying all the Monkes without mercie, they ranging the Countrey, slewe the Abbot and Monkes of Croyland, and fiered their Church, with the houses belonging to the Monasterie. At Medshamstede or Peterborough, they made the like slaughter, hauocke, and spoile, and so proceeding toward Huntingdon, praying and spoyling the Country, euen vnto Grantbridgeshire, and to the house of Nuns in the Ile of Ely, where they murdered all, as well women as men. Thus entering into East Angle, they slewe the most valiant Earle Walketulus, and all his companie that resisted. The king also of the same prouince, hotie Edmond they toke, bound him to a stake, shotte him full of Arrowes, and strake off his head, by meanes whereof they possessed all east England, and soiourned there all the winter.

Humberstane. The Abbots of Bardney. Croyland, Peterborough, and other spoiled.

The yére 871. the said army of the Danes came to Reading a towne of the kinges situate on the South side of the Riuer Thamis in Barkeshire, and there two of their Earles with a great power rode forth to spoyle the Countrie,

trie, in the meane time, the other cast a trench betweene the Thamis and Cinitun or Kynet, on the right side of the same Towne, with whome Ethelwolfe Earle of Barkeshire did meete in a place called Englefield, (or field of the Englishmen) where one of the Earles being slaine, and the rest chased awaie, the Christians obtained the victorie.

The Christians within 4. daies fought a battell with the Paganes, in Aslendune, but the Paganes deuided themselues into two battels, for then they had two kings, which when the Christians saw, they likewise deuided their armie into two companies. Battaile at Aslendune.

It was determined that king Ethelred with his battell, shoulde go against the two Pagan kings with their battell, and that his brother Aelfrede with his armie should set on al the Pagan dukes and their army. All things thus ordered, when the king tarried long in his prayer, and the Paganes being readilie prepared, came to Chipenhane where the battell was pitched, Aelfred seeing hee must either retire, or set on his enimies before his brother did come, he straightwaies set vpon them, though the place of battell was vnequall, for the Pagans had gotten the higher grounde, and the Christians brought their battell from the valley. There was in that place one onelie thorne tree, verie short, about which tree the battels met and ioined, where when they had a long time fought, Hubba one of the kings, 5. Earles, and many thousands mo of the Paganes being slaine, the other were chased. Battaile at Chipenhane. Sca. Cro.

A great heape of stones was laide copped vp where Hubba was buried, and the place called Hubbeslow. Hubbeslow.

This being done, king Ethelred and his brother Aelfrede shortlie after gathered their power againe to fight with the Pagans at Basing, where after a long and sore battayle, the Paganes had the victorie. Sca. Cro. Paganes banquished.

After this battayle, came another armie of Paganes from beyond Seas, and ioyned with the first.

When king Ethelred had raigned 5. yeeres, he was slaine of the Paganes at Whitingham, & buried in the monastery of Wimburne, with this Epitaph:

In hoc loco quiescit corpus sanctæ Ethelredi *regis West Saxonum martyris, qui Anno Domini. 872. 23. die Aprilis, per manus Dacorum Paganorum occubuit.* Sca. cron. Marianus Scotus

His armes a crosse Florie.

An. 870. Saint Ebbe Abbesse of Coldingham, vi miles North from Berwike, cut off her nose and vpperlip, and perswaded all her sisters to do the like, that they being odible to the Danes, might the better keepe their Virginity, in despite whereof the Danes burned the Abbey, and the Nuns therein. Flores Historiar. Chastity before beautie preferred, a rare example.

872

Aelfrede borne in Barkshire, at a village called Wanting, the 4. son of Athelwolfe, receyued the gouernement of the whole Realme, and within one moneth after, with a very small number fought a sharpe battell against the whole armie of the Paganes, in a place called Wilton (which lyeth on the Southside of the Riuer Wily, of which Riuer the whole shire taketh his name) and after they had fought a great part of the daie, the Pagans fledde, but seeing the fewnesse of them that pursued, they set themselues in battaile againe, and got the field. Marianus Scotus Florentii. Cro. Asser. Speculum Histo. Wiltshire. Ricardus Cirencestrensis.

The West Saxons made a league with the Pagans, vpon condition they should depart out of their Countrey.

The nert yére they wintered at London, & made league with the Mercies.

The nert yére they wintered at Lindesey, which was in the kingdome of Northumberland.

Burgoredus death. The nert yére, at Kipendune: they constrained Burgoredus king of Mercies, to flée beyond the seas, who went to Rome, where he died, and was buried in the schole of the Saxons.

The Pagans subduing the whole kingdome of the Mercies, which they committed to Ceonulfus: The nert yere one part of ẏ Pagans wintered in Northumberland nére to the Riuer Tine, subdued the whole Countrey: the other part went with Guthram, Osketellus, and Amandus, thrée kings of the Pagans, to Grantbridge, and wintered there.

The yére following, the Pagans going from Cambridge in the night, entred the Castel of Wareham, where there was a Monasterie of Nuns, situate betwéene two riuers Fraw and Trent, in the Countrey called in the Saxon Thornseta, a most sure seat, except the West only, where it ioyneth to the land, with whom king Aelfrede made a league that they should depart his kingdom, but contrary to their othe, they rode into Deuonshire, to Exanceter, and there wintered. Exceter.

Hinguar and Halfdene with 23. ships, came out of Northwales, where they had wintered, and like fierce Wolues had shed much christian blood: setting fire to diuers Abbeies, and made them equall with the ground, neuer kingdome or countrey suffered greater calamity, at the hands of any nation, then did the English, especially the Monkes and religious women, for them they burnt in their houses, or otherwise tormented them to death. Monkes and other religious people burnt.

The nert yére 120. of the Pagans ships were drowned at Suanaling: And king Aelfrede pursuing an armie that went by land to Exceter, toke of them pledges, and also an oth to depart with all spéd.

In the yére following the Danes came to Chipingham, a manno^r of the kings, situate on the left side of Wiltshire, and there wintred, compelling many of the West Saxons to leaue their Countrey and to go beyonde the seas: the rest that remained they subdued. King Aelfrede himselfe was oft times brought into such misery, that none of his people knew where he was become. On a time being forced to hide himselfe with a Cowheard in Somersetshire, as he sate by the fire, preparing his bowe and shaftes, the Cowheardes wife baking bread on the coales, threw the kings bowe and shaftes aside, and said, thou fellow why doest thou not turne the bread which thou sest burne, thou art glad to eate it ere it be halfe baked. This woman thought not that it had bin king Aelfred, who had made so manie battels against the Danes, and gotten so manie victories. For God did not only vouchsafe to giue him victorie ouer his enemies, but also to be wearied of them in the sight of his owne people, to the end he should know there is one God of all, to whome all knées shall bow, and in whose handes the hearts of kings consisteth. The brother of Hinguar and of Healfden, who had wintered in Mercia, and had made great slaughter

Asser. Spe. Histo. Ri. Ciren.

of

of the Chriſtians, ſayled with 23. ſhips into Deuonſhire, where doing great miſchiefe, he and the moſt part of his people were ſlaine, the reſt eſcaped by flying to their ſhips. In this battel among many rich ſpoiles was taken a banner or enſigne called Reafan, which among the Danes was had in great eſtimation, for that it was imbroidered by the three ſiſters of Hinguar and Hubba, the daughters of Lodbroke. The enſigne of the Danes was a Rauen. Alredus Riuall.

King Aelfred made a caſtell in Aethellingei, from thence he went to Petram Egebrichti, which is on the Eaſt ſide of the chaſe called Sal nudum, in Latine *Silua magna*, the great wood: there met with him all the inhabitants of Hampſhire, which when they ſawe the king, reioyced as though he had been riſen from death to life. Ethelingey, the noble Iſland. Egbrights ſtone.

The king with his armie went to Ethandune & fought againſt the Pagans where he made great ſlaughter, and purſued the reſt to their Caſtell, who after fifteene daies deſired peace, gaue pledges and toke oth to depart this realme: and Gythram their king receiued baptiſme hard by Ethelingſey, in a place called Alre, whom Aelfrede receiued to be his God-ſonne. Gythrem king of Danes chriſtened. Chichiſter.

In the yeare 879. the Pagans went from Chipnan to Cirenceſter, & there remained one yeare after. The ſame yere a great army of Pagans came from beyond the Sea, and wintered at Fullanham hard by the Riuer of Thamis. Fulham.

The next yeare, the Pagans went from Circeſtre to the Eaſt Engliſh, deuiding that Countrey among them, and there inhabited. The Pagans that wintered at Fullanham, went into Eaſt France. Marianus Scotus

In the yeare 885. an army of Paganscame into Kent, and beſieged the citie of Rhofeceaſter, which lyeth on the Eaſt ſide of the riuer Medowege, and before the gate of the ſame citie they made a ſtrong Caſtell, but Aelfrede with a great army chaſed them to their ſhips. Rocheſter beſieged. The Caſtell builded. Medway.

The next yeare Aelfrede reſtored, and honorably repayred the Citie of London (after it had been amongſt other Cities deſtroyed with fire, and the people killed vp,) he made it habitable againe, and committed it to the cuſtodie of his ſon in law Adhered Earle of the Mercies, vnto whom before he had giuen his daughter Ethelfleda. And now vnto king Aelured, all the Engliſh, Mercians, Kentiſhmen, South and Weſt Saxons (which before were in captiuitie vnder the Pagans) willingly came and ſubmitted themſelues. Aſſerius. Floriacen. London builded and made habitable. Marianus Scotus

In the yeare 890. Gythram the king of the Pagans (whoſe name in his baptiſme was changed to Athelſtane) died, he was buried in the Kings towne called Headleaga in Suffolke among the Eaſt Engliſh. Hadley.

In the yeare 892. the great armie of the Pagans, came from the Eaſt kingdome of France vnto Adbon, and from thence with 250. ſhips into Kent, arriuing in the mouth of the Riuer Limene, which riuer runneth from the great wood, which is called Andreads Weald, from whoſe mouth foure miles into the ſame wood they drew their ſhips, where they deſtroyed a Caſtel, and fortified another more ſtrong, in a place called Apultrens, nowe Apuldor. This wood was from the Eaſt to the Weſt 120. miles in length and more, in breadth 30. miles. Andreads weald in Suſſex and Hampſhire.

The ſame yeare, Haſtings came with 80. ſhippes into the mouth of Thamis, and made a ſtrong towne called Middleton in the South ſide of the Thamis, and another on the North ſide, called Beamfleete. Milton. Beamfleete.

The yeare following, the Citie of Yorke was taken by the Normans, but Seber the Byshop, by Gods prouision escaped.

Fernham. The same yeare also Aelfred fought against the Normans at Fernham, in Kent, in the parish of Aelesford, where he slew them, wounded their king, and chased the remnant through the Thames into Eastser, whereby many of them were drowned, they which escaped fled to an Iland called Brekelesey, situate in a streame of the Riuer Colne.

Aelfrede hearing that a great number of the Pagans were arriued at Exanceastre, he tooke with him a great armie, and by battaile ouercame, and chased them awaie.

Beaufleete taken from the Pagans. In the meane season Adhered Earle of the Percies, and the Citizens of London with other came to Beaufleete, & besieged the Castle of the Pagans, and brake into it, where they tooke exceeding rich spoiles of gold, siluer, horses, and garments, among which was taken the wife of Hastings and his two sons, which were brought to London, and presented to the King, who commanded them to be restored againe. But Hastings came againe into Beaufleete, and repayred the Castle, which they had broken downe. From thence hee went to Sudbury. Sceabridge, and there builded a strong Castle: there was ioyned vnto him the armie that remained at Apuldrane, and other that came from the East English, and from the Northumbers, who altogether spoiled and robbed, till they came to the banke of Seuerne, and there at Bultingatune, they made a strong towne, but by Adhered Earle of the Percies, and other, they were besieged, and shortly through famine forced to come out, where many on both sides were slaine, but the Christians had the victorie. Florentii. Cro. Marianus Scotus.

Apuldor.

In the yeare, 895. the Pagans wintered in a little Ile called Mersig, in the East part of Esser, situate in the sea, and ỹ same yeare they sayled by the Riuer of Thames, after by the Riuer of Ligea, and twenty miles from London began to build a Fortresse. In the summer following, the Londiners and other neere adioyning, did seeke to destroy the fortresse of the Danes, but they being put to flight, king Aelfrede pitched a field not farre from the Citie, least the Pagans should take away the Haruest of the Countrey, and viewing the riuer one daie, perceiued that the Chanell might bee in one place dammed vp, that the Danes should not get out their shippes, he forthwith commanded on both sides of the riuer a damme to be cast, and deuided that riuer into 3. streames, so that where shippes before had sayled, now a small boate could scantly row, which when the Pagans perceiued, they leauing their wiues and ships, fled a foote to Quatbridge, and there building a fortresse, lodged there the Winter following, whose ships the Londiners bring, some to London, the other they brake downe and destroyed.

Isle of Mersey. Ley, a riuer that bare ships vnto Ware. Asserius.

Now called Catwarbridge, or Catwalbridge.

Anno 897. the Pagans came from Quatbridge, part into East England, part into Northumberland: some got them shippes and sayled into France. After all these verations, by the cruell Danes committed, followed far greater, the space of three yeares, by death of cattell, and mortalitie of men: twentie Danish ships were taken being Pyrates, and the Pyrates slaine or hanged on the gallowes.

The

The victorious Prince, the studious prouider for widowes, orphanes and poore people, most perfect in Saxon Poetrie, most liberall, endued with Wisedome, fortitude, iustice, and temperance, the most patient bearer of sicknesse, wherewith he was daillie vexed, a most discreete searcher of trueth in executing iudgement, a most vigilant and deuout Prince in the seruice of God, Alfrede, the xxix. yéere and first moneth of his raigne, departed this life, the xxviii. daie of October, and is buried at Winchester, in the new Monasterie of his foundation. He founded a Monasterie of Monkes at Ethelingsey, and an other for Nunnes at Shaftesbury. He ordained the hundreds and tenths, which men call Centuaries and Cupings: hee sent for Grimbald to come into England, that by his aduise he might erect the studie of good learning, cleane decayed. By the counsell of Neotus, hee ordained common schooles of diuers Sciences in Oxenford, and turned the Saxon lawes into English, with diuers other Bookes.

Praise of king Alfred.

Alfred deceased

Florlacensis. Reg. Hig. Scal. cron. Regist Hyde. T. Rudburne. Antiquitie in Oxford. Marianus Scotus. Regist. Hyde.

He established good lawes, by the which he brought so great a quietnesse to the country, that men might haue hanged golden bracelets and iewels, where the waies parted, and no man durst touch them for feare of the lawe. He carried euer the Psalter in his bosome, that when he had any leasure he might read it ouer with diligence.

He diuided the foure and twenty houres of the day & night into three parts: he spent 8. houres in writing, reading, and praying: eight in prouision of his bodie: and eight in hearing and dispatching the matters of his subiects. Hee diuided his yéerely reuenues into two parts, and the first he diuided into three: one part he gaue to his seruants, the second part to his workemen which were occupied in building, the third part to strangers. The second part of the whole he deuided into foure parts, the first part wherof he gaue in almes to the poore, the second to Monasteries by him founded, the third to Schooles which hee had erected, and gathered of manie both noble mens and other mens sons of his nation, the fourth part he distributed to the nert monasteries in al the English Saxon. Alhswido wife to king Alfrede founded the Monasterie of Nunnes in Winchester.

Asserius. Marianus Scotus.

EDward surnamed Senior, the son of Aelfred, was crowned and annointed king at Kingstone, and shortly after Adhelwoldus, cousin germane vnto king Edward, reuolted and went to the army of the Pagans, who forthwith chose him to be their king in Northumberland.

900 Speculum histor. Ri. Ciren. Adhelwolde reuolted.

Ioannes Leoafer in his thirde Booke of the description of Affrica, writeth, that about this time (to say) about the yéere of our Lord 905. the Englishmen at the perswasion of the Gothes, besieged the great Citie Argilla in Barbary, which the Affricans call Arella, being 70. miles distant from the streight of Marrocho southward, hoping thereby to withdrawe the Saracens out of Europe, where they fought with so great courage and good successe, that they wanne the said towne, and so ransacked it with fire and sword, that scant one escaped there, and the Towne late desolate and without inhabitantes for the space of thirtie yéeres. Wee account this to haue happened in the aforesaid yéere, because the Authour, after the fashion of the Saracens, doth referre it

Io. Leoafer.

to

to the 314. yeare of Mahomets Hegira, which by conference of their places doeth seeme to beginne in the yeare of our Lord 591. which number being added, doe bring forth 905.

Adhelwoldus king of the Pagans brought a great army from Eastser, and the East English, which robbed and spoiled through all Mercia, and the West countrey, vntill they came to Cerikelade, and there went ouer the Thames, and toke great spoiles about Bradney.

King Edward gathered an army and went toward the Danes, but while he tarried for his army out of Kent, Adhelwolfe king of the Danes came vpon him with a great power, and bade him battell, wherein Cochricus, and Adelwolfe kings of the Pagans were slaine.

Wodnesfield in Staffordshire Wiltrune Hampton.

In the yeare 910. a battell was fought at Wodnesfield, a mile north from Wolfrune Hampton in Staffordshire, where Cowilfus and Healidene kings of the Pagans, with many Earles and nobles were slaine, but of the common people innumerable.

Aethered Earle of the Mercies died, and king Edward toke into his Dominion London and Drenford, and all the Countrey adioyning thereunto.

In the yeare 913. by the kings commandement, at Hertford, betwixt the riuers of Memeran, Benefician, and Legian, in the north side a Citie is builded.

Hokenorton.

In the yeare 914. the Pagans of Northumberland, and Leicester, in the countie of Oxforde toke spoiles, and in the kings towne called Hokenorton, and in many other places they slewe many people, and returned home againe: another army of the Danes, being horsemen, were sent into Hertfordshire, towardes Legeton, with whom the men of the country encountred, and slaying manie of them, put the rest to flight, taking their horses and armour, with a great pray. King Edward leauing certaine to build a citie in the south part of the riuer Liges, to wit, the towne of Ware, with more part of his army went into Esser, and encamped at Mealdune, where hee tarried till a towne was builded at Witham.

The towne of Ware builded. Maldon in Esser. Wytham.

In the yeare 915. a great naule of Danes sayled about the west country, and landed in diuers places, taking great prayes, and went to their shippes againe. The king for strengthening of the Countrey, made a Castell at the mouth of the water of Auon, and another at Buckingham, and the third fast by, that is, on either side of the riuers course one, & then went into Northampton and Bedfordshires, and subdued the Danes there, with their leader called Turketils.

Tocester. Wigmore.

King Edward builded or newe repayred the Townes of Tocester and of Wigmore.

Cogshall. Colchester in Esser.

In the yeare of our Lord 918. the Kentish, Southry, and East Sarons, besieged Colchester, and wanne it by force, and slewe all therein, a few excepted that escaped by flight. The same yere king Edward went to Colchester with an armie, repaired the walles, and put a great garrison of souldiers into it.

The next yeare died the noble Princesse Elfleda (wife to Etheldredus Duke of

of Mercia) and was buried in the Monastery of Saint Peter, which her Lorde and she before had builded in the towne of Gloucester, which Monasterie was after throwne to the ground by the Danes, but Aeldredus Bysshoppe of Yorke and of Worcester, made there an other, which is nowe the chiefest Church in the Towne. Henry Bradshaw Reynul. Hygden.

This Noble woman Elfleda, rædified the Citie of Chester, shee repaired the Towne of Tamworth, beside Lichfield, Stafford, Warwike, Shrewsburie, Watrisburie, Eldisburie, Legeceaster, with a Towne and Castell in the north ende of Mercia, vpon the Riuer of Merce, that is called Runcorne: she builded a Bridge ouer Seuerne called Brimsberie Bridge, &c. Chester. Tamworth. Lichfield. Stafford. Warwike. Shrewsburie. Watersburie. Eldersburie. Leycester repaired. Runcorne towne and Castel, and Brimbery with the bridge builded. Marianus Scotus W. Thorne. Hen. Hunting. Alredus Riual.

When shee had once allayed the paines that women suffer in trauailing with childe, she euer after refused the embracing of her husband, saying it was not seemely for any noble woman to vse such fleshly liking, wher of should insue so great sorow and paine: she tamed the Welshmen, & in diuers battels chased the Danes, after whose death, Edward held that prouince in his owne hand. Chilwal built. Manchester repayred.

King Edward builded a newe towne against the old Towne of Nottingham on the south side of the riuer of Trent, and made a bridge ouer the said riuer betweene the two townes: he subdued the kings of Scotland & Wales: he builded a towne in the north end of Mercia, by the riuer of Merce, and named it Chilwal, and repaired the towne of Manchester: after all which deeds by him done, he deceased at Farington, and was buried at Winchester in the newe church, which his father Alfred had builded when he had raigned xxiiii. yeares.

ADelstane, after the death of Edwarde Senior his Father, was crowned at Kingstone by Athelmus Archbyshop of Canterbury. His coronation was celebrated in the market place vpon a stage erected on hie, that the king might be seene the better of the multitude. He was a prince of worthy memory, valiant and wise in all his actes, and brought this land into one monarchie: for hee expelled vtterlie the Danes, and quieted the Welshmen. Hee caused them to paie him yerelie tribute twentie pound of gold, three hundred pound of siluer, and two thousande fiue hundred head of neate, with houndes and hawkes to a certaine number. 924 Alfredus Beuerl. To Leiland. Spe. Histor. Ri. Cirenc. W. Malmes.

And after that he had by battell conquered Scotland, he made one Constantine king of Scots vnder him, adding this princely word, that it was more honour to him to make a king, then to be a king. He made seuen coining mints at Canterburie, foure for the king, two for the Archbyshop, and one for the Abbot: at Rochester three, two for the king, and one for the bishop: besides these, in London viii. in Winchester vi. in Lewes ii. in Hastings two: in Chichester one: in Hampton two: in Warham two: in Exceter two: in Shaftsburie ii. and in euery good Towne one Coiner. Cant. Record. W. Lambert. Saxon Lawes.

He founded S. Germanes in Cornewall, which was since a Byshops Sea: he founded S. Petrocus at Bodmin: he founded Pilton priory, Wideton and Michelney. He walled the citie of Exceter with squared stone, of which Citie more shall be shewed in my larger Booke. T. Rudborne. Girardus Cornubius.

In this time Guy earle of Warwike, in a combate, slew Colbrond the Danish Giant in Hide meade, neere vnto Winchester. Guy of Warwike slew Colbrond.

Athelstane

Athelstane raigned xb. yeeres, and was buried at Malmesburie.

Iohn Lydgate.

940 EDmund the brother of Adelstane toke vpon him the gouernement of this Realme, whose short raigne toke from him the renoune of moste high praises that should haue redounded to this posterity: for he was a man disposed of nature to noblenesse and iustice: he toke out of the Danes handes the townes of Lincolne, Nottingham, Darbie, Leicester, and Stanford, and brought all Mercia to his dominion: he expulsed the two kings, Anlafus the sonne of Sithricus, and Reginald the sonne of Cuthbert, out of Northumberland, and subdued the Countrie to his dominion. He granted the priuiledge vnto S. Edmund, in which the limites of the Towne of Edmundsburie are contained.

Marianus.

Io. Taxter.

W. Malmes.

On Saint Austines day, in the kings towne named Pucklechurch, the king (whilest he would haue saued his Sewar from the handes of a wicked theefe called Leofe) was slaine, when he had raigned v. yeeres, and vii. moneths, and was buried at Glastenbury.

946 EAldred succeeded Edmund his brother: for his sons Edwyne and Edgar were thought too yong to take on them so great a charge. He toke on him but as protector, but afterwards he was crowned at Kingstone.

Spe. Histo.

Ri. Ciren.

This Eldred had the earnest fauor of the commons, because he was a great maintainer of honestie, and also most abhorred naughty and vnruly persons: for his expertnesse in feates of armes, he was much commended, whereby he quieted and kept in due obeysance the Northumbers and Scots, and exiled the Danes

He placed the Bysshop of Cornwall at S. Germans, where it continued till the time of Edward, next before the conquest, in whose time it was translated to Excester.

Marianus. Cantuar. Record.

In the yeere of our Lorde, 951. hee committed to prison Wolstane, Archbyshop of Yorke in Lushaberie, because hee often had beene accused to haue commanded manie Citizens of Thetford to be slaine, in reuenge of the Abbot Adelme vnlustlie by them slaine: he was a yeere after released, and restored to his See.

Asser.

King Eldred builded Wich at Abindone, gaue great landes, and confirmed them Charters with seales of golde.

He raigned nine yeeres, and was buried in the Cathedrall Church at Winchester, in the olde Monasterie.

EDwyn succeeded his vncle Eldred in the kingdome: hee was crowned at Kingstone, of whome is left no honest memorie, for one heinous act by him committed in the beginning of his raigne.

A vicious king. W. Malmes. Speculum Hist. Ri. Cirencest.

In the selfe day of his coronation, hee sodainelie withdrewe himselfe from his Lords, and in the sight of certaine persons rauished his owne kinswoman, the wife of a noble man of his realme, and afterward slewe her husband, that he might haue the vnlawfull vse of her beautie. For which acte, and for banishing Dunstane, hee became odible to his subiects: and of the Northumbers, and people of middle England, that rose against him, was depriued, when hee had raigned foure yeeres. Hee died and was buried in the new Abbey of Winchester.

The king deprined.

Edgar

EDgar the Peaceable, brother to Edwyne, was crowned at Bathe. He was so excellent in iustice, and sharpe in correction of vices, as well in his Magistrates, as other subiects, that neuer before his dales was vsed lesse felonie by robbers, or extortion or briberie, by false officers. He chastised the great negligence, couetousnesse and vicious liuing of the cleargie, and brought them to a better order. Of stature he was but little, yet of minde valiant and hardie, and verie expert in martiall politie. Dunstane was ordained Metropolitan and Primate of England, by whome, and other wise men the king being instructed, did in euerie place oppresse euill persons, reprooued rebels vnder sharpe correction, the iust and modest man he loued and cherished, Churches that had beene destroyed, hee repaired; casting out of monasteries secular Priestes, and gathered together companies of Monkes, and of Nunnes, giuing good admonition to the Pastors, whome he appointed to haue rule ouer them. He was in his gouernment discreete, ciuill, liberall, gentle, mercifull and valiant; in warres hardie, defending with warlike power the right of his kingdome, bringing his people vnder the obedience of their gouernours, framing his Magistrates to iustice, ordaining rightfull lawes, whereby hee enioyed a quiet kingdome, so that hee needed not to prouoke other to warre, nor anie warre was procured against him, but kept the bounds of his kingdome, so long as he liued, with prudence, fortitude, iustice, and temperance: not onely the Princes of the Iles being tyrants stode in feare of him, but also the kings of manie nations, hearing of his wisedome, and valiancie, did all honour him. Hee caused Widwall king of Wales to paie him, in name of tribute, three hundreth Wolues yearely (or rather their skinnes) which thing when he had performed for the space of three yeares, the fourth yeare, was none there to be found.

959 King crowned at Bathe. Alfridus Beuerlac. Marianus. Wolues destroied in England.

King Edgare prepared a nauie (as diuers authors haue written) of three thousand and fiue hundreth shippes, of the which, after Easter euery yeare, one thousand two hundred, he appointed to come into the East part of the realme; one thousand two hundred into the West parts, and one thousand two hundred into the North parts: This number of shippes being incredible, peraduenture one author following another, the first being deceiued by mistaking the same, the rest haue erred, but William Thorne a Monke of S. Augustines by Canterburie, setteth downe the whole number of ships to be 300, and this hath a more likelihood of truth. But to the matter, with the East nauie, he sayled into the West, and sending that backe, hee would saile with the West nauie into the North, and that being sent backe, with the North nauie he would saile into the East partes; and after this sort, hee vsed to saile round about the whole Island euerie sommer, by the which doing, hee prouided for the defence of his kingdome against strangers, and practised himselfe, and his people in exercises of warre. Marianus.

In the winter season and spring of the yeare, hee trauailed through all the parts of his Realme, diligently searching howe the lawes and Statutes were obserued by the Lords, and men of greatest authoritie, least the poore should be oppressed, by the mightie and rich men.

Thus

Thus Edgare notwithstanding his manifolde vertues before rehearsed, was reported (saith W. Malmesbury) to be a cruell Prince, and also giuen ouermuch to the lustes of the flesh, and for example they saie, that Edgare hearing tell, that Orgare Earle of Deuonshire had a daughter of passing beauty, named Alfred, he commanded Ethelwold an Earle, and also his secretarie to go loke vpon her, and so to prouide, that if she were according to the common bruted fame, she mought bee his wife. Which Ethelwold toke his iourney, and founde it to be true: whereupon, (being himselfe taken with her loue) leauing his message from the king vndone, he laboured to obtaine her to bee his wife: and returning to the king, reported the damosell to be such a one as passed not the common beauty of women, and therefore not meete for so great a Maiestie as he: So that after, when the king had set his loue vppon another, Ethelwold obtained the saide damosell in mariage, to his owne destruction, for when the fame of her passing beauty was spread through the whole realme, the king desiring to see her, and by deceit to deceiue the deceiuer, shewing a great countenance to the Earle, appointed a daie to go loke on the woman, which he heard so much commended.

The Earle being in great heauinesse, went before to his wife, and desired her that shee should, for the safegarde of his life, disfigure her selfe with some homely apparell, and otherwise as she might: but the breaking promise with her wretched husband, dressed her selfe in a glasse as curiously as she mought, omitting nothing that mought tempt the king, and prouoke his desire, and according to her meaning it came to passe; for the king no sooner sawe her, but he was taken with her loue, and to obtaine his purpose the sooner, shewing a good countenance to the Earle, hee called him to go with him to hunt in the wood of Warwell, where he shot him through with an arrowe, into the which place, a bastard sonne of the dead Earle came, euen as the deed was done, whom the king asked, how he liked such hunting, who(as men saie)made this answere, I like it well, my Lorde, that liketh you: with which saying he so appeased the kings angrie mind, that the king neuer loued any man better then him, and made amends to the sonne for the cruell act against his father. The king toke Ladie Alfred to wife, and she builded an house of Nuns in the same place where her first husband Ethelwold was slaine.

Warwell founded.

963. Ethelwald Bishop of Winchester, in a great famine, solde awaie all the sacred vessels of his Church for to relieue the almost starued people: saying that there was no reason, that the senceless temples of God should abound in riches, and liuely temples of the holie ghost lacke it.

B. of Winchester his saying.

The yeare 969. king Edgare, gaue commandement to Dunstane Archbishop of Canterbury, Ethelred Bishop of Winchester, and Oswold Bishop of Worcester, that expelling secular Priests out of the great Monasteries, builded through Mercia, they should place Monkes, and to that effect he made the like Oration as followeth.

Aluredus Riuallensis.

Oration of Edgare.

Because our Lord hath magnified his mercie to worke with vs, it is méet (most reuerend fathers) that with worthie workes, we answere his innumerable benefites: for neither by our owne sworde possesse we the earth, and our owne

owne arme hath not saued vs: but his right hand, and his holie arme; for that he hath bene pleased with vs: meete therefore it is, that we submit both our selues and our soules to him, that hath put all thinges vnder our feete; and that we diligently labour that they whome he hath made subiect vnto vs maie be made subiect vnto his lawes. And truely it is my part to rule the laitie, with the lawe of equitie, to doe iust iudgement betwixt man and his neighbours, to punish church robbers, to represse rebels, to deliuer the weake from the handes of his stronger: the poore and needie from them that spoile them. And it also belongeth to my care, to haue consideration to the health, quietnesse, or peace of the ministers of the church, the flocke of Monkes, the companies of Virgines, and to prouide the thinges needefull for them. The examining of whose manners belongeth vnto you, if they liue chastly, if they behaue themselues honestly towardes them which be abroad, if in diuine seruice they bee carefull, if in teaching the people diligent, if in feeding sober, if moderate in apparell, if in iudgement they bee discrete: If ye had cured these thinges by prudent scrutine (by your licence I speake O reuerend fathers) such horrible and abhominable thinges of the clearkes had not come to our eares. I omit to speake, that their crowne is not large, nor their rounding conuenient, but wantonnes in apparell, insolencie in behauiour, filthinesse in wordes, doe bewray the madnesse of the inward man. Furthermore, howe great negligence is there in the diuines, when in the holy vigils, they will scarce vouchsafe to be present; when at the holie solemnities of the diuine seruice, they seeme to be gathered together to plaie and to laugh, rather then to sing?

I will that which good men lament, and euill men laugh at, I will speake with sorrowe (if so bee it maie be spoken) how they flowe in banquetings, in drunkennesse, in chambering and wantonnesse, that now clearkes houses maie be thought to bee brothell houses of harlots, and an assembly of players. There is dice, there is dauncing and singing, there is watching till midnight, with crying and shouting. Thus the patrimonie of kinges, the almesse of Princes, yea, (and that more is) the price of that precious bloud is ouerthrowne. Haue our fathers, therefore, for this purpose emptied their treasures? for this intent, hath the kings erchetours by withdrawing of manie reuenewes bene giuen? hath the kings bountifulnes giuen landes and possessions to Christian Churches for this ende? that Clearkes harlots should bee pampered with delicious dainties, that riotous guests maie be prepared for, that houndes, and hawkes, and such like toies maie bee gotten? Of this the souldiours crie out, the common people murmure, the iesters & scoffers sing and daunce, and you regard it not; you spare it, you dissemble it: Where is the sworde of Leuie, and zeale of Symeon, which killed the circumcised Sichimites being the figure of them that defile the Church of Christ, with polluted actes, abusing Iacobs daughter as a harlot? Where is the spirit of Moyses, that spared not his bousholde kinsefolke, worshipping the head of the Calfe? Where is the dagger of Phinies the Priest, who killing him that plaied the harlot with the Madianite, with this holy emulation pacified Gods wrath? Where is the

spirite:

spirite of Peter, by whose power couetousnesse is destroyed, and simoniall heresie condemned: Endeuour to imitate O yée Priestes, in God: It is time to rise against them that haue broken the lawe of God. I haue Constantines, you haue Peters sword in your handes, let vs ioine right handes, let vs couple swordes to swordes that the Leapers maie be cast out of the Church, that the hallowed place of our Lord maie be purged, and the sonnes of Leuie may minister in the Church, who saide to his father and mother, I knowe you not, and to his brethren, I am ignorant of you. Go to carefully I beseech you, least it repent vs to haue done that that we haue done, and to haue giuen that wee haue giuen, if we shall sée that not to bee spent in Gods seruice, but on the riotousnesse of most wicked men, through vnpunished libertie. Let the reliques of holie Saintes, which they scorne, and the reuerende Aultars before which they rage, moue you. Let the marueilous deuotion of our auncestors moue you, whose almes the Clearkes furie abuseth.

My Great grandfathers father Ethelwlfus (as you knowe) gaue the tenth part of all his landes to Churches and Abbeies: my great grandfather Alfred of holie memorie, thought not meete to spare his treasures, his patrimonie, no coffres, nor reuenewes that he might enrich the Church: my graund father, the olde Edward, howe much he gaue vnto the Churches, your fatherhod is not ignorant. It becommeth you to haue in remembrance, with what giftes my father and vncle enriched Christs Altar. O Dunstane, father of fathers, beholde, I praie you, the eies of my father shining on thée, from the bright coast of heauen, heare his complaining wordes with a certaine pitie thundering in thine eares. Thou O my father Dunstane! Thou gauest me wholsome counsell to build Abbeies and Churches, thou wast my helper and fellow worker in all things. Thée I elected as a shéepheard, father and bishop of my soule, and kéeper of my manners, when did I not obey thee? what treasure did I preferre before thy counsels? what possessions despised I not, thou commanding me? If thou thoughtest meete to giue anie thing to the poore, I was readie. If thou iudgedst anie thing to be giuen to Churches, I deferred not. If thou complainedst any thing to bee wanting to Monkes or Clearkes, I supplied. Thou saidst that almes was euerlasting, and none to bee more fruitfull then that which was giuen to Abbeies and Churches, wherewith Gods seruants maie be sustained, and what remaineth maie be giuen to the poore.

O pretious almes, worthie price of the soule! O wholsome remedie for our sinnes! which from the Priestes Leman slinketh in the little skin of a strange mouse, which adorneth her little eares, which garnisheth her small fingers, which trusseth vp her delicate bodie in silke and purple. Beholde O father the fruit of mine almes, and the effect of thy promise. What wilt thou answere to this complaint? I know, when thou doest sée a theefe, thou runnest not with him, neither hast thou put thy portion with adulterers. Thou hast rebuked, thou hast intreated, and blamed them, wordes are condemned, thou must come to stripes, and thou shalt not want the kings authoritie. Thou hast here with thée ỹ venerable father Ethelwold Bishop of Winchester. Thou hast the reue-

rend

rend Prelate of Worcester Oswold: to you I commit this businesse, that both by bishoply censure, and kingly authoritie, filthy liuers maie be cast out of the Church, and they that liue in order brought in.

King Edgare, hauing restored and new founded fortie seuen Monasteries, which before his time had bene destroyed by the Danes and other Pagans, and intending to continue that his intent till the number of fifty were accomplished, he confirmed the Monasterie of Worcester, which Oswold then Bishop of Worcester, by the kings consent, had enlarged, and made it the cathedrall church of that shire.

Ethelwold Bishop of Winchester, renewed the Monasterie of Elie, and Edgare confirmed his foundation, with great priuiledges, as by his Charter may appeare. Liber Ely.

More concerning the state of the Church of England in those daies maie appeare by the wordes of Edgare in his Charter to the Abbey of Malmesbury, which are to this effect: All the Monasteries in my Realme, to the outwarde sight, are nothing but wormeeaten, and rotten timber and bordes: and that worse is, within they are almost emptie and voide of deuine seruice. W. Malmes. Church of England, the state thereof.

The Danes and all other people in England, vsed the vice of great drinking. The king therefore by counsell of Dunstane put downe manie alehouses, and would suffer but one in a village or towne, except it were a great Borough: hee ordained certaine cuppes with pinnes or nailes, and made a law, that whosoeuer dranke past that marke at one draught, should forfeit a certaine paine. Against quaffing. Lawes against drunkards.

Alwinus Alderman Earle of East Angle, kinsman to king Edgar, founded the Abbey of Ramsey: King Edgar confirming the same on Christmas daie, the yeere of our Lorde God nine hundred seuentie and foure, in the presence of all the Nobilitie. The same yeere was an earthquake through all England. Ramsey founded. Ex charta regia.

Edgar being at Chester, entred the Riuer of Dée, hee toke the rule of the helme, and caused eight kings to row him vnto Saint Iohns Church, and from thence vnto his pallace, in token that he was Lord and king of so many prouinces. The names of the 8. kings were, Rinoch king of the Scots, Malcoline of Cumberland, Macone king of Man and of many Ilands, Dufnal king of Demecia or South Wales, Siferth and Huwall kings of Wales, Iames king of Galaway, and Iukil of Westmerland. King Edgar raigned xvi. yeeres, and was buried at Glastenbury. Eight kings rowed king Edgar. Florilegus. Iohn Pike. Eulegium. W. Malm. Alfrid. Beuer. Speculum histor. Ri. Cirencest. Rog. Houed. Flores Historiar. Reynulf. Hygd. Henry Bradshaw Edmerus. Osbernus. Antonius Archi. Marianus Scotus

By his first wife Egelflede (as some doe write) or by a religious votarie, as some other doe write, he had issue Edward surnamed the Martyre, who succeeded after his father. Of his wife Elfrith daughter to Ordgarus, Duke of Deuonshire, he receiued another sonne named Ethelred, and a daughter named Wolfrith.

975

EDward the sonne of Edgar was crowned at Kingstone, by the handes of Dunstane Archbishop of Canterburie, and Oswald Archbishoppe of Yorke. This man might well bee compared to his father for his modestie and gentlenesse, so that he was worthely fauoured of all men, except onely of his step- John Pike. W. Malm. Alfredus Beuerl. Speculum Histo. Ri. Cirencest. Flores Historiar.

mother, and other of her alliance, which euer bare a grudge against him, for so much as she desired to haue the gouernance of the Realme for her owne sonne Ethelred.

The king murthered.

This Edward while he was hunting in a forrest (by chance) lost his company, and rode alone to refresh himselfe at the castel of Corfe in the Ile of Porbecke, where, by counsell of his Stepmother Elfrede, he was traiterously murthered as he sate on his horse, when he had raigned iii. yeres. He was buried at Warham, and after at Shaftesburie. Elphred did after that take great penance, and builded ii. Monasteries of nuns, Almesburie and Warwell: in which Warwell she after liued a solitarie life till she died.

Warwell and Malmesburie built.

978 W. Malmes. Speculum Hist. Ri. Cirencest.

ETheldred commonlie called Unreadie, the sonne of king Edgar, by his second wife Elphred, was crowned at Kingstone. But because hee came to the kingdome by wicked meanes, and by killing his brother, hee coulde neuer get the good will of the people, who had conceiued an ill opinion of him: of this arose ciuill wars within the Realme, and often dissention and discords, as well of the Nobles as of the common sort.

In the yeere 982. a great part of the City of London was brent, which City at this time had most building from Ludgate toward Westminster, and little or none where the hart of the city is now, except in diuers places was housing, that stode without order: so that manie cities, as Canterburie, Yorke, and other in England, passed London in building: but after the conquest it encreased, and now passeth all other.

T. Rydburne.

988. Dunstane Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and was buried at Canterburie. Ciricus Bishop of Sarum succeeded.

Asserius. Flixe of men, and murreine of cattell.

A disease not knowne in England in time past, to wit, feuers of men, with the flixe, and murreine of cattell killed many.

Bishops sea at Exceter.

In the yeere 994. king Ethelred erected a Bishops sea at Exceter.

The same yeere Anlafe king of the Norwales, and Sweyne king of Danes on the date of the nativitie of our Lord, in xviii. Galleis came vp to London, which the attempted to breake into, and to set on fire: but they were repulsed, not without their great detriment and losse by the Citizens, whereupon they being driuen with furie, leauing London, set vpon Eastser and Kent, by the Sea coasts brent townes, and wasted the fieldes, without respect of sere or age killed all, and wasted with fire and sword all what they mate not carry awaie. At length being pacified with a tribute of 16000. pounds departed to their ships, and wintered at Southampton.

In the yeere 995. a Comet appeared. The Bishoprieke of Lindisfer or Holie Iland was remoued to Durham: and there Aldwine the Bishop first builded a small Oratory of wiethen wands or hurdles, where the body of Cuthbert rested for a time, till a larger Church were builded.

Bishops sea of Durham.

In the yeere 996. the Lady Vlfrune widow, sometime wife to Athelme duke of Northampton, obtained licence of king Ethelred to giue lande to the church which she had founded at Hampton in Staffordshire, whereby the said town of Hampton toke the addition of Vlfrune, and so was called Vlfrunehampton.

Vlfrune Hampton.

In

In the yeare 1002. king Etheldred caused all the Danes in England to be slaine vpon the daie of Saint Brice. The same yeare Vlfricus Spote founded a Monasterie at Burton vpon Trent. King Etheldred confirmed this foundation in these words: *1004. Inductione 2. horum testimonio sapientium quorum nomina inferius annotata cernuntur.* The Danes murthered. Burton vpon Trent.

Ego Ethelred rex Anglorum, hoc donum perpetuum diuui libertate.
Ego Ethelstan filius regis.
Ego Eagbright filius regis.
Ego Edmund filius regis.
Ego Aedred filius regis.
Ego Ading filius regis.
Ego Aidgar filius regis.

xii. Archbishops and bishops, xii. Abbots, iii. Dukes, &c.

In the yeare 1003. Swaine king of Denmarke with a great armie inuaded England with fire and sword: 1004. they fought a great battell at Thetford against Vlfketell Earle of East Angle.

In the yeare 1006. The deceitfull Edrike of Straton, bade the noble Duke Alfhelmus to a banquet at Shrobsbury, from thence he had him out to hunt, where a certaine Butcher of Shrewsbury named Goodwin Northurd, whome Edrike long before had hyred, leapt out of a place, where he had laine in waite for him, and wickedly slewe Alfhelmus. And within a while after, his sonnes, Wulfeagus, and Wegate, by commandement of the king Ethelred, at Coham, where the court then lay, had their eies put out. Edrike of Straton Duke of Mercia and his brethren.

In the yeare 1007. king Ethelred made Edrike of Straton duke of Mercia, and gaue to him his daughter Edina to wife. This Edrike the son of Egelricus was but a man of low kinred, to whome nenertheles, his eloquent tongue had purchased riches and nobility: wily he was of wit, pleasant of speech, and passed all men in those daies in enuie, falsehode, pride, and crueltie, he had to his brethren Britricus, Alfricus, Beda, Agelricus, Agelwardus, Agelmarus, father to Godwine Duke of West Saxons. Pedegrew of Godwine.

In the yeare 1009. Swaine king of Denmarke, with the Danes fought a great battell against Vlfketell at Rengemore.

In the yeare 1010. The army of Danes march through the wood called Cilltron to Oxford, which towne they brent & destroied. Then marching about into East Angle, spoyled that country, brent Thetford, Grantbridge. Then they spoiled the shires of Hertford, Buckingham, and Bedford. Then they wasted Northamptonshire, Wiltshire, &c. The Danes hauing spoyled the East Angles as is afore shewed, Ailwine bishop of Helmham, brought the bodie of K. Edmund from Bedrisworth through Eastser, ouer Stratford bridge, and so to London in at Criplegate, (a place so called of cripples begging there) at which gate (it is said) the bodie entring, myracles were wrought, as, some of the lame to go vpright praysing God. The body of king Edmund rested for the space of three yeares in the parish church of S. Gregory, adioyning vnto the cathedrall church of S. Paul, from whence it was conueyed backe againe to Stapleford in Eastser, and so to Bedrisworth, nowe called Bery in Suffolke, where bi- The Danes spoile East Angles.

shop Ailwyne builded for him a new Church.

In 1011. East Angle, East Saxon, Middlesex, Bedfordshire, Oxfordshire, Grantbridgeshire, halfe Huntingdonshire, and Northamptonshire: and on the south side of Thames, Kent, Surrey, Southsex, Southampton, Wiltshire, and Barkeshire, being destroied with swoorde and fire, king Ethelred required peace with the Danes, promising to them stipendes and tribute: to the which they feininglie assented, but yet they neuer left their cruelties: at length they besieged and destroied Canterburie, and for that the Archbyshoppe Elfegus would not yelde to them, he was first imprisoned there, and after conueied to Greenewich, and there stoned to death. Christs Church is spoiled and burnt: the Monkes with all other men are tenthed, ir. of euery r. being put to death, the tenth suffered to liue in miserie: the number of them that were left aliue, was 4. monks, & of lay people 800. so that the number slain was 36. monks, & 8000. of the lay people.

The Danes destroied Canterbury.

Tyranny of the Danes in England.

Recor. eccle. Cant. Marianus. Floriacensis.

In the yeere 1012. they toke tribute of 48000. poundes, and at the last, after diuers ouerthrowes giuen to the men of this Iland, they possessed the same, and put king Ethelred to flight, constraining him to liue in exile among the Normans.

Ethelgina and Emma wiues to Ethelred. Alured and Edward the son of Ethelred.

This Ethelred had two wiues, Ethelgina an English woman, and Emma a Norman: of the first he had two children, of which, sauing of Edmund, who succeeded him in the kingdome, it were nothing to our purpose to speake: of the second that was Emma sister to Richard Duke of Normandie, there were borne two sonnes, to wit, Edward and Alured. And that I doe here (contrary to that is commonlie vsed) set Edward before Alured as elder brother, I am moued thereunto by no small authoritie, which I haue taken out of the Historiographers of that age, out of Gemeticensis, a most diligent writer of genealogies, and one other Author, who in his commentarie written in praise of Emma the Queene, affirmeth, that Edward was the elder brother, whome I do the better beleeue, because it is not like, that he seeing the thinges with his eies, shoulde mistake the matter, especiallie writing to the Q. who was mother to them both.

W. Gemeticensis Encom. Emma.

Swanus in the meane time subdued all Englande, and the people for feare yelded vnto him on euerie side, ouer whome most cruellie he triumphed. But not long after he departed this life at Geinsburge, and left Canutus his sonne successour in the kingdome.

Ethelred hearing that Swanus was dead, leauing in Normandie with Duke Richarde his Sisters Sonne, Emma his Wife, and the Children that hee had by her, returned with all speede into Englande with Edmund his Sonne by his first Wife, beeing then at Pans state, and by the trustinesse of his owne men, and the ayde of the Normans, moued warre against his enimy.

Canutus finding himselfe vnable to match with him, went into Denmarke, minding to returne hither immediatlie againe.

Ethelred being, contrary to his expectation thus restored to his kingdome, shewed great cruelty vpon the Danes that remained in England, sparing neither

ther man nor woman, young nor olde. Therefore Canutus being verie desirous to revenge the same, prepared a new army, and came into England against Etheldred with all spéede he coulde, raging wide and side with fire and swoorde. Etheldred in the meane season, whether by sickenesse or for sorrowe, died, when he had raigned 38. yéeres, and was buried in the north Ile of Saint Paules Church in London. Io. Taxter. W. Malmes. Alfredus Beuerl.

EDmond the son of Etheldred by his first wife, succéeded in the kingdome, who (whether it were for the great strength of his bodie, or for that hee alwaies used to go in armour) was surnamed Ironside. 1016

Canute in the meane time, with all his nauie came vp to London, & on the south side the Thames, he caused a trench to be cast, through the which he caused all his ships to be towed or drawne into the west side of the bridge. And after with a déepe and large trench and siege they compassed the Citie round about, and so shut vp all going in or out, of all manner of persons: and after attempted to haue wonne it by assault, but that would not serue, the Citizens made so valiant resistance, that in the end, the enemies were repulsed farre from the walls: whereupon the siege for a time being dismissed, part of the army being left to kéepe the ships, the other part went into the West Saxonie, with such spéede, that they gaue no leisure vnto king Edmund to gather his armie, notwithstanding, with that small army which he had, he boldly met with them in Dorsetshire, and joyning battel with them at Penham nére to Gillingham, he ouercame them, and put them to flight. A trench cast, and ships towed about the south end of London bridge. Gillingham forrest in Dorsetshire. Penham.

After this, king Edmund determining manfully to giue battell vnto Canute with a greater hoste then before, mette with his army at a place called Sherestane in Worcestershire, where he in the forward fiercely fought, executing the office both of a hardie souldiour and valiant Captaine. But because Edrike of Straton, the otte named Traitor, and the beloued Almaricus, and Algarus the sonne of Meaninus, which ought to haue ayded him with the Southamptonshire men and Wiltshire men were of the Danes party, hee was sore wearied, but yet the first day of the battell, the fight was so extreame and bloudie, that both the armies were so wearied, they were not able longer to fight.

The next day the king had ouerthrowne the Danes, but for Edrike of Straton, who séeing the Englishmen haue the better hand, he cutte off the head of a certaine man, named Osmearus, like to king Edmund in face and haire, and holding it vp, cried out, that the Englishmen fought in vaine, and held vp the head, saying: Your master king Edmund is dead, flie as fast as you can: which the Englishmen had no sooner heard, but they were readie to flie. But shortly after vnderstanding the king to bee aliue, they toke courage againe, and are carried vpon the Danes, and beate downe a great number of them. After this about midnight Canute commanded his people to depart with silence, and hasting toward London, went to their ships, and shortly after besieged London. Duke Edrike sued for pardon, and obtained it.

King Edmund hasted toward London, and deliuered the Londoners from the siege, chasing the Danes to their ships.

About two daies after, king Edmund passed ouer the Thames at Brentforde, but passing the riuer manie of his men were drowned. He encreasing his armie, hasted toward the West Saxons. And the Danes againe go vp to London, but coulde there profite nothing: wherefore going from thence with their nauie, they enter the riuer of Areine, and passe into Mercia, there to fetch spoiles, slaying all they mette, and burning Townes, and so laden with spoyle returne vnto their shippes. After this their footemen passe in shippes into the riuer of Medway, but their horsemen toke praye vpon the land.

Aelsford in Kent.

Ashden in Essex.

King Edmunde againe passed the Riuer of Thames at Brentforde, entred Kent, and fought with the Danes at Otford, and put them to flight: and if the false Edrike had not staied him at Eaglesforde or Aelsforde, hee had that date gotten the full victorie. To bee shorte, the first and last battell was at Aellenden in Esser, nere to Rochford, here he put his army into three battels.

In the meane time Cnute bringing his men into order, a sore battell was fought, and manie slaine on both sides. But Edrike perceiuing the Danes to giue ground, he with his power fledde, as he had promised to Cnute, and so king Edmund and the English armie had the worst: there was slaine in that battaile, Duke Alfrike, Duke Godwine, Vlfekettell Duke of East Angles, Athelwardus Duke, sonne to the Duke of East Angles, Athelwine called Gods friend, a duke: and almost all the compante of the English nobilitie. Cadnoth also bishop of Lincolne, sometimes Abbot of Ramsey, and Wolsey the Abbot, which were come together with their clergie to praye to God for the soulsiours that fought, were slaine. And Edmund went almost alone on foote to Glocester, where he gathered a newe force to set vpon his enemies, but Cnute pursued him as he fled. And hauing prepared their armies, both the kings themselues attempted to fight hand to hand for the right of the kingdome in the Ile of Olania in Seuerne, in the which combate, they both being wearied, fell to a couenant to deuide the same, so that the one halfe of the kingdome should be vnder Canutus, and the other halfe vnder Edmund, which Edmund not long after died at London, slaine by the treason of Edrike of Straton, and was buried at Glastenburie, leauing Edmund and Edward his children very young.

Bishop, Abbot, and Clergie slaine in praier.

Combate for the kingdome.

England deuided.

1018 The Danes possessed all England.

CAnutus the Dane, taking an occasion, because in the couenant that was concluded concerning the deuiding of the Realme, no assurance was made for the children of Edmund, he chalenged all England to himselfe alone by lawe as they call it, of growing to, which was a most easie thing for him to doe, because there was no man that durst erect himselfe as patrone to defende the childrens right and title, and by this subtile and craftie interpretation of the couenant the Dane got the Monarchie of England, and slewe the brother of Edmund, and conueied the children farre awaie out of England, least they shoulde at ante time be brought againe and receiue their right. Some say, they were sent to a certaine man that was a Prince in Swethland, there to be dispatched out of the waie: and that the Prince vnderstanding they were kings

The Kings children conueied into Swethen.

children,

childzen, ſpared them, contrarie to the credite and truſt that was committed vnto him: which appeareth to bee true, in that the ſame forraine Lorde kepte and brought vppe the childzen honorablie, the yongeſt of which, whoſe name was Edwarde, did afterwardes marrie Agatha, the daughter of Henrie the fourth, Emperour of Rome, of whome he had manie childzen, of which wee ſhall ſpeake hereafter. And the other, which was the elder brother, whoſe name was Edmund, died without childzen.

Agatha the Emperours daughter the wife of Edwara.

In the meane ſeaſon Canutus, becauſe he had no heyre that lawfully might ſuccéede him in his kingdome (for Harolde and Swaine were begotten of a concubine) partlie that hée might eſtabliſh in time to come the kingdome that he had gotten vnto his owne kindred that came by lawful ſucceſſion; and partlie that he might purchaſe to himſelfe the friendſhip of the Engliſhmen, and of the Normans, procured to haue giuen him in marriage Emma, the widow of king Etheldred, who at that time was with Edwarde and Alured her Sonnes in exile with Duke Richarde in Normandie, which marriage ſéemeth to bee made euen by Gods prouidence, who had determined to reſtore the common wealth in England, whereby, as by the Lawe and Title of Recouerie, and returne out of exile, the monarchie of all England, which the Danes had taken from the Engliſhmen, and had poſſeſſed fiue and twentie yeares and more, did returne agayne to the Engliſhmen that were the right heyres. For Emma concluded marriage with the Dane, vpon condition that the kingdome of England ſhoulde remaine vnto none other but vnto the childzen that were begotten of her, if anie of them did remaine aliue: by reaſon of this marriage, ſhortlie after ſhe did beare Canutus a ſonne of his owne name, commonly called Hardycanutus.

Harolde and Swaine concubines childzen.

Marriage made vpon condition.

This ſecond name was giuen him becauſe of his great courage, like as his brother Harolde was named Harefote, that is to ſaie, Lightfote, becauſe of his notable ſwiftnes of fote.

How 2. names were giuen to kings.

By this affinitie and aliance, the Danes became of the more ſtrength and power. He kept the Engliſhmen in his ſeruice ſo long as he liued.

At the feaſt of Chriſtmaſſe, king Canute being at London, commaunded the traytour Edrike of Straton to bee put to death in his Pallace cloſelie for feare of tumulte. Some ſaie, hee was tormented to death with firebrandes and linkes: ſome ſaie one waie, ſome another, but diſpatched hee was: for the king feared, through his treaſon to be circumuented of his kingdome, as his predeceſſors had béene before, to wit, Ethelred and Edmund. His bodie hee cauſed to bee layde forth on the wall of the Citie, there to remaine vnburied, to bee ſéene of all men. With him alſo were ſlaine, Northman a Duke, ſon to duke Leofwinus brother to Leofricus, and Ethelwardus the ſon of duke Eglemore, and Brithricus ſonne of Elfegus prince of Deuonſhire: theſe died without fault (ſayeth mine Authour.) The King made Leofrike Duke in his brothers place, and he loe him afterwardes verie deare. King Canute ſubdued the Scots, whereby he was king of Englande, Scotlande, Denmarke, and Norway.

Edrike of Straton the traitor rewarded.

Marianus.

Canute king of 4. kingdomes.

After that, king Canutus went to Denmarke, and ſo to Rome, and returned

turned againe into England, where hee kept good iuſtice all his life, and did many charitable deedes: whereof more ſhall be ſpoken in my larger Chronicle.

S. Edmundſ-burie newe founded and priuiledges graunted.

Canute founded anew the Monaſtery of Saint Edmund at Bury, reſtoring to the ſame, the donation which Edmund king of the Weſt Saxons had giuen to Saint Edmund the king and Martyr, who was there buried: he diſplaced the ſecular Prieſtes for their diſſolute life, and placed there an Abbot with Monks, he gaue to them many great liuelodes, and made a ditch ouerthwart Newmarket heath, it is nowe by ſome called, the Diuelles ditch, to encloſe the lands ſometime belonging to king Edmund, and diſcharged the ſame of all tribute.

Record Exchequer, y. 32. of H. 3.

King Edward the Confeſſor, ſince that time, not onely confirmed the ſaide liberties of S. Edmund, but alſo gaue to Abbot Baldwin a ſtampe, and authoritie to haue an exchange or minte, and to coine in his Monaſterie: And more to encreaſe their franchiſe, gaue the manour of Mildenhall and ꝧ towne, with eight hundreds to their poſſeſſion (ſaith Iohn Lydgate) and true it is, that I find in record, the franchiſe of Saint Edmundsbury, to containe theſe hundreds following, Blackborne, Riſebridge, Thedwardeſter, Babbar, Colford, Thingo, Lackeford, and Erning halfe hundred. Thus much for the liberties of that Towne. Now Baldwine a Monke, of Saint Dionys, phyſition to the ſaid king Edward, being made Abbot of Bury in the ſpace of nine and twenty yeares, erected a newe Church of ſtone, by licence of William Conquerour, brought from Cane in Normandy, landed at Ratliſden, and from thence brought by land to Bury: the foundation was accompliſhed, and the bodie of the Martyr, was tranſlated out of a chappell called Rotund, into a ſhrine prepared for him in the new Church of Bedrilworth or Bury, in the yeare of our Lord God 1095. Thus much for Bury.

John Lydgate.

Aſhendune in Eſſex.

The church which king Canute, and Earle Turketell builded on the hill of Aſſen in Eſſex, was dedicated with great honour, of Wolſtane Archbiſhop of Yorke and other biſhops, the king and nobles being preſent.

Hee appointed to be king of Norway Swanus his ſonne (as was ſaide) by Alfgine daughter to Athelme Duke of Northampton, and Lady Vulfrune: but other ſaide hee was a Prieſtes ſonne. He alſo appointed his ſonne Hardicanutus by Emma to bee king of Denmarke, and deceaſed at Shaftesburie, when hee had raigned twentie yeares, and was buried in Saint Swithins at Wincheſter. After whoſe deceaſe and burtall, Quéene Emma made her abode there.

Henry Huntingron.

Henry of Huntington of this Canute hath as followeth: Men (ſaieth hee) doe ſpeake of the great deedes that hee did: firſt, that he married his daughter to the Emperour Conradus: that he went nobly to Rome, and came againe with pretious giftes: that he ſet his féete on the ſea ſtrond while the ſea was flowing, and commanded the Sea not to riſe, to wet his Lordes féete or clothes: but the Sea kéeping his olde courſe, roſe, and wet both his féete and his thighes: whereupon the king ſtarted away, and ſaide: All men ſhall wéete and knowe, that the power and might of kings is vaine, and vanitie: and that

none

none is worthy to haue the name of King, but hee that hath all thinges subiect to his commandement and lawes. And after this, this Canutus neuer bare Crowne vpon his head, but hee set the same vpon the head of the Crucifix at Winchester. Peter Pictaui, once chancellor of Paris, saith, that the custome to hang vp the armour of kings and noblemen, and other in churches, sprang of that this Canutus refused to weare his crowne, and offered the same as is shewed. Peter Pictaui.

HArold, for his swiftnesse called Harefote, whome Canutus had by a Concubine Alice of Hampton, a Shomakers daughter (affirming himselfe to be sonne of Canutus, and Alfgina the Earle of Northamptons daughter) slept not vpon the occasion and opportunitie offered, but vsing the force of the Danes that dwelt in England, inuaded the realme, while his brother Hardicanute gouerned in Denmarke. 1038 Peter de Icham. Marianus. Floriacenſ.

He toke from his mother in law Emma, the most part of the riches and treasure that Canute his father had left her, and then with consent of the great lords beganne to raigne, but not so mightily as his father Canutus did, for a more iust heire Hardicanutus was looked for, whereupon the kingdome was deuided, the North part to Harold, and the South to Hardicanute.

Edward and Alfred Sons to king Ethelred, with manie knights, came out of Normandy, to see their Mother at Winchester, which sore troubled the mindes of many great men, who bare more fauour to king Harold. Especially Godwyne Earle of Kent, fayning to receiue Alfred as a friend, came to meete him, but in the end put him in prison, part of his company he put in fetters, and after put out their eies. Of some hee caused their skinne to bee plucked ouer their eares, chopping off their hands and feete. Some he commaunded to bee sold, and diuers were murthered at Gilford.

Queene Emma hearing of this dealing, shee sent her sonne Edward backe againe into Normandy.

After this, Alfride was conueied to the Ile of Ely, where his eies being first plucked out, hee was deliuered to the Monkes to be kept prisoner there, where shortlie after hee departed this life, and was buried in the south Ile of the west part of the Church. Because Hardicanutus delaied to come ouer being sent for, hee was vtterlie reiected, and Harold, who before was king of the Mercies and Northumbers, was chosen king of all England, who shortly after expelled his mother in lawe Emma out of the Realme. Hee raigned three yeeres, died at Oxford, and was buried at Westminster, and after at S. Clements without Templebar at London.

HArdycanutus the lawfull begotten Sonne of Canutus and Emma, as soone as hee had gotten his fathers kingdome, fetched home his mother out of exile: and in reuenge of displeasure that was done to her, and of the murther of his brother Alured, hee commanded the carcasse of Harold to bee digged out of the earth, and to be throwne into the Riuer of Thames, where by a fisher it was taken vp, and brought to the Danes, who buried it in a church yard, which they had at London. 1041 This is supposed to bee S. Clementes Church without Temple Barre.

With done, the king appointed eight markes to be paied to euerie sailer in his

his name, and twelue markes to euery pilote or maister, which tribute was to be paid of all England, so grieuous, that scarce any was able to beare it.

Shortly after, he sent for Edward the sonne of Etheldred his brother on the mothers side, to come into England, and embraced him with al loue and fauor. Being at a marriage feast pleasantly drinking with the Bride and other persons, in the middest of his cups hee fell sodainly downe to the ground, and so remaining dumbe, departed this life the third yeere of his raigne, and was buried by his father at Winchester.

1043 Alfredus Beuerl. I. Rouse.

EDward borne at Islip beside Oxford, the son of Etheldred, whome Hardicanutus had sent for into England at the age of almost fourty yeeres, was by the helpe of Godwine crowned at Winchester.

Danegilte.

This Edward for his excellent holinesse, is vntill this day called Saint Edward, who so soone as he had gotten his fathers kingdome, of his owne frée will released the tribute of fourtie thousand poundes called Danegilt, which the English people, euen from the verie beginning of the raigne of the Danes, was compelled to paie to their kings euerie yeere. He was also the chiefe author and cause, that the law which we call the common Law, was first brought vp, being gathered together out of the lawes and ordinances of foure nations, which were receiued when the Iland was subiect to diuers regiments and gouernances, to witte, of the Mercies, of the West Saxons, of the Danes, and of the Northumbers. He was hard to his mother, because she was hard to him in his minoritie, and also suspected with Alwine bishop of Winchester, whom he put in prison by counsell of Robert Archbishop of Canterburie: but after his mother had purged her selfe, Alwine was deliuered, and Robert the archbishop conueied himselfe out of England. He toke to wife Edgitha, the daughter of Earle Godwine, who was a Virgin most chaste, in whose breast there was a Schoole of all liberall Sciences (saieth William of Malmesbury.) And for a further testimony of the said Quéene, Ingulphus writeth thus: Vnto this Edward was giuen to wife, the daughter of Earle Godwine, a very beautiful Damosell, verie well instructed in learning: and for behauiour, and the rest of her life, a virgin most chast, & for humility most holy, named Edgitha, in no point sauouring of her father or brothers barbarousnes, but milde and modest, faithfull and honest, enemy, or hurtfull to no bodie: whereupon this verse was spoken of her:

The first comming vp of the common law. Mercies, West Saxons, Danes, and Northumbers.

Sca. cro.

W. Malm.

Ingulphus.

Sicut spina rosam, genuit Godwinus Editham.

I haue séene her (saieth Ingulphus) often, when being yet but a boie, I came to sée my father, dwelling in the Kings Court. And often, comming from Schoole, when I metте her, shée would appose mee touching my learning and lesson, and falling from Grammar to Logicke, wherein she had some knowledge, would subtilly conclude an argument with me, and by a hand maiden giue three or foure péeces of money, and send me vnto the place where I should receiue some victuals, and so be dismissed.

Now concerning this Edward, he was borne in England, as is afore shewed, but brought vp in Normandie, and continuing there a long time, was in a manner

manner become French, bringing hither, and drawing out of Normandy verie manie, whom he promoted to diuers dignities, and exalted aboue measure. Among whome chiefely was one Robert a Monke of Gemitefence, made by him first Bishop of London, and after Archbishop of Canterbury. And William the kings Chaplaine made bishop of Dorchester.

Then beganne the whole land vnder the king, and other Normans brought in, to leaue off the English rites, and in manie things to imitate the maners of the French. All the noble men take it to be a great point of gentrie in their courtes to speake the French tongue, to make their Charters and dedes after the manner of the French, and to bee ashamed of their owne custome and vse, as well in this, as in many other things. But hereof more in another place.

He sent for home into England his nephew Edward the sonne of king Edmund his brother, who by reason of his long absence out of the countrey, was commonly called the Outlawe. This is that Edward the sonne of king Edmund surnamed Ironside, which remained aliue, whome Canutus when hee had gotten England, had sent into Swethen with his brother. He knowing the aduise of his vncle, came againe into England, and brought with him Agatha his wife, and Edgar, Margaret, and Christian his children, borne in Pannonia, in hope of the kingdome, where hee liued but a while. Thus Saint Edward being disappointed, both of his nephew and his heire, for that Edward the Outlaw was both by nereneſſe of blood, and by lawfull succession right heire vnto the kingdome, without delaie pronounced Edgar the Outlawes sonne, and his great nephew, to be heire of the kingdome, and gaue him to surname Adeling, which name in those daies was peculiar onely to kings children, which were borne in hope and possibilitie of the kingdome: for this word Adeling, in the English tongue is as much to say, as Prince or Lord, the contrarie of which word is Vnderling, that is to say, a seruant or bondman: or, according to the Welsh speech, Adeling signifieth heire: but because this Edgar was but young of yeeres, and within age, by his testament he made Harolde the sonne of Godwine (a stoute man both in warre and peace) Regent, vntill the young Edgar should bee of age to receiue the kingdome, and that then hee should be made the king: which thing Harolde with a solemne othe promised to see so performed and done. Notwithstanding, he like a Traytour (by force of armes) immediately after ỹ death of Edward, refused the name of Regent, and pronounced himselfe king, which thing shortly after brought destruction both to himselfe, and to all England.

The signification of the word Adeling.

Alfredus Beuerl. Speculum Hist. Ri. Cirenceſt. Flores Historiar.

In the yeere of our Lorde one thousand foxtie and fiue, King Edward gathered a mightie nauie into the Hauen of Sandwich, against Magnus king of Norway, that meant to haue come into England, but through the warres that Swanus king of Denmarke moued against him, his iourney was broken off.

In the yeere of our Lord one thousand foxtie and fiue, Leuingus Bishop of Worcester, Deuonshire, and Cornewall deceased: and the bishoppicke of Cridington and Cornewall was straight giuen to Leofrike Baton the kings chancellour.

The kings Chancellour Bishop of Crediton.

cellour. And Alfredus a Monke of Winchester was made Bysshop of Worcester.

Magnus king of Norway, sonne to Vlanus, hauing chased Swaine king of Denmarke out of his realme, subdued that kingdome to himselfe.

In the yeere 1047. Swaine king of Denmarke sent Embassadors to king Edward, requiring of him a naute against Magnus king of Norway, but none were sent.

In the yeere of our Lorde 1048. Magnus being dead, Swaine recouered Denmarke, and Harold Haruager sonne to king Swadus of Norway, returned into Norway, and shortly after sent Embassadours vnto king Edwarde, offering to him peace and amitie, which hee accepted, and promised the like againe.

Townes brent by lightening. Great dearth of wheate.

A great earthquake chanced on the first of March: a mortalitie of men and beasts followed, and lightning brent vp townes, and corne in the fields, where through rose such a dearth, that one horse loade of wheate was solde for fiue shillings.

In the yeere 1049. the Irish pirates with 36. ships entring into the mouth of Seuerne, arriued in a place called Willcaspham, and with the help of Griffith king of Southwales, spoiled about those coastes, and did much mischiefe. After this the saide Griffith, and those Irish pyrates ioyning their powers together passe ouer the riuer Wie, and brent Dumenham, and slew all that they there found. Against whome Aldredus bysshop of Worcester, and other of Glocester and Herefordshires hastely went, but the Welshmen whome they had in their company, sent messengers to Griffith, willing him to make speed against the Englishmen, which hee did, and slewe many of them, and put the rest to flight.

In the yeere 1050. Edsine Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, in whose rowme the king placed Robert a Normane, late bishop of London, a great enemie to Duke Godwine, as shall be shewed in my larger Chronicle.

Excester a Bishops sea. Ex charta, Histor. Eccl.

This yeere king Edward and Edgitha his wife translated the bishops Sea from S. Germanes at Cridington, and placed the same at Excester: the king laying his right hand vpon the Altar of S. Peter, instituted one Leofrike bishop there, whom the king taking by the right hand, and the Quæne by the left hand, stalled him in his bishops seate, in the presence of fiue dukes, and manie other noble men: al which king Iohn established, confirmed, and augmented by his Charter, the first yeere of his raigne.

Ingulphus.

In the yeere 1051. when the earth yelded not her fruites after the accustomed fertilenes, but famine consumed very many inhabitants, insomuch that through dearth of corne, and want of bread, many thousands of men died: the good king Edward moued with compassion ouer the poore, released for euer all

The Dane Gilt discharged.

England of the most grieuous tribute called Dane Gilt. It is reported that the kings clemencie was moued to compassion, vpon occasion as followeth. When his exactors (for so were they then called) or treasurers (as we cal them) had collected that grieuous tribute called Dane gilt, and brought it into the kings chamber, the king being called to see the heape of so great treasure, was

at

at the first beholding thereof much afraid, protesting, that he did see a Diuell dancing vpon the heape of money, and making ouermuch ioy. And thereupon geue cõmandement, it should be forthwith rendered againe to the former owners thereof, & of so cruell an exaction, he would not keepe one farthing, but released the said tribute for euer. Eustace Earle of Bulloigne the elder, which had to wife Goda the sister of king Edward, arriued at Douer in Kent with a fewe ships, in the which Towne whilest his Souldiers rashly tooke vp their Innes, they slewe one of the townesmen, in reuenge whereof, not only the quarreller, but other of his company, with many of the Towne were slaine, which doing so much offended Godwine Earle of Kent, that hee assembled a great power out of all his Countries, of Kent, Sussex, and Westsex, and his eldest sonne Harold out of his Earldomes of Dreford, Glocester, Hereford, Somerset, and Barkshires, & his son Swaine out of Eastsex, East England, Huntington and Cambridge shires, so that he had a great armie, wherwith he marched towards Glocester, where the king then lay, vnto whom he sent messengers to denounce warre, except he would deliuer Eustace, and his fellow Normans and Bolonians, which held a Castell vpon the Cliffe of Douer: but king Edward when he vnderstoode that the armies of Leofrike Earle of Chester, Siward Duke of Northumberland, and Randulph Earle of Hereford were comming to his aide, he answered stoutely, that hee would in no wise deliuer Eustace or the other demanded. But after this, Godwines armie entring into Glocester, it was there agreed, that at a daie appointed, the king and Earle Godwine should meete at London: & thus departing for the time, the king increasing his army, led the same to London, and Godwine with his power came to Southwarke on the other side of the riuer Thamis into his own house, but there because his army by little & little slipped from him, he fled, and the king forthwith pronounced him, with his fiue sonnes, to be banished, who straight waies with his wife, and two of his sonnes came to Thorney, where his Shippe being laden with gold, siluer, and precious things, he sailed toward Flanders: his other sonnes tooke ship at Watsow, and sayled into Ireland. King Edward did see the Diuell dance. Marianus.

The king forsaketh his wife Quéene Edgitha for displeasure conceiued against her father duke Godwine, and sent her with one maiden vnto Wilton, in no honourable wise, where she was committed to the custody of the Abbesse, William of Malmesbury addeth, that her goods being taken from her to the vttermost farthing, she was sent to Wilton there to bee kept vnder the kings sister, least whilest all her parents were in sorrow for their Countrey, she alone should rest in ease: but a nameless author, that wrote a booke intituled Vita Edwardi, which he dedicated to the same Edgitha writeth thus. The king pretending this honest cause of diuorce, that in the Monasterie of Wilton, where she had bin brought vp, she should be, to quiet such troubles of the realme. Thus therefore with kingly honor, and princely company (yet sorrowfull) shee was brought to the bondes of the Monasterie of Wilton, where almost one whole yéere in praiers and teares she expected the day of comfort. W. Malmes. Vita Edwardi.

At this time the most noble Earle, or Duke of Normans, William, with a great traine came into England, to king Edward, whom the king honourably

receiuing,

receyuing, and for a while keeping him, caried him about to his Cities, and kinglie Castels, and with condigne humanity shewed, at length gaue him many giftes, and dismissed him to his owne, but of the succession of the Realme, hope as yet or mention betweene them was not made.

William a Norman the kings Chaplaine toke vpon him the Bishoprick of London.

1052 Emma late wife to the kings, Etheldred and Canutus, and mother to two kings, Hardicanutus and Edward, departed this life at Winchester, on the 1st of March, and was there buried.

Griffith king of Wales wasted a great part of Herefordshire, against whom, the men of that country & Normans out of the castel, went; but Griffith obtained the victory, slaying many of them, and toke a great pray.

In the next yeere, Harold and Leofwine, sonnes of Earle Godwine, returning out of Ireland, entred Seuerne, arriued with many Ships in Somersetshire and Dorsetshires, spoiled manie Townes in the Country, slew many people, and returned with pray, then they saile about Portesmouth, &c.

Earle Godwine landed in Kent, gathered a power, sayled to the Ile of Wight, wasting along the Sea coastes, till his sonnes Harold and Leofwine came with a Nauie, which being come together, they take their course vppe the Riuer of Thamis, came to Southwarke, and there staied for the tide, and then

London bridge. weied vp Anchor, and finding none that offered to resist them on the bridge, they sailed vp by the south side of the riuer, & his armie by land, placing it selfe vpon the banks side, made shew of a thicke and terrible battaile.

After this, the Nauie turned toward the North shore, as though it would haue compassed in the kings Nauie: but they that were with the king, and with Godwine, abhorred to fight against their owne kindred and countrymen, therefore a peace was made, Godwine with his sons were restored to all their

Marianus. former honor, and the Normans were banished the land. Such as had giuen the K. euil counsel against the English, a few excepted, as Robert the deacon & his Son in law, Richard fitz Scroby, Alfride the kinges sewer, Anfridus surnamed Geeresset, and other whom the king before the residue loued, & had been faithfull to him and his people, these were permitted to remain in England. Rob. Archbyshop of Canterbury, Wil. Byshop of London, Witso B. of Lincolne & other Normans with much ado passed the sea, but Wil. bishop of London, for his honest conuersation being shortly called back again is restored to his bishoprick. Osberne Penticoste, and his fellow Hugh yelded vp their Castelles, and by licence of Earle Leofricus went through his Earledome into Scotlande, and were receiued of Machuta king of Scots.

1053 Rese brother to Griffith king of Southwales, for the often prayers which hee had taken at Bulenden is slaine by commandement of king Edward, and his head sent to the king being then at Glocester.

Duke Godwine dieth. Vita Edwardi. Marianus. Simon Dunel. Alfrid Beuer. On the second day of Pasch, Earle Godwine as he sate at meat with the king, being suddenly stricken with a grieuous sickness, he shranke down domb in the seat where he sate, which his sonnes, Earle Harold, Tosti, & Girthe beholding, bare him into the kings chamber, hoping that he should haue recouered,

but

but when his strength failed him, on Thursday following he died in miserable torment, and was buried in the olde Monasterie of Wincheſter, whose Dukedome his sonne Harold toke vpon him, and his Earledome is giuen to Algarus the sonne of Leofricus Earle of Chester, thus hath Florens of Worcester. Now to adde somewhat out of Vita Edwardi, Duke Godwine (saieth he) and his sonnes being reconciled to the king, and the Countrey being quiet, in the second yere after, died the said Duke of happie memorie, whose death was the sorrow of the people, him their father, him the nourisher of them and the kingdome, with continuall weeping they bewailed: he was buried with worthie honor in the old Monasterie of Wincheſter, giuing to the same Church giftes, ornaments and rentes of lands. Harold succeeded in his dukedome, which was a great comfort to the whole English nation, for in vertue both of bodie and minde he excelled all people, as an other Iudas Macchabeus, and was a friende to his Countrey, diligently supplying his fathers place, and walking in his steppes, that is to saie, in patience, mercie, and affabilitie to well willers, but to disquiet persons, theeues and robbers, with a lyons countenance he threatned his soft seueritie, thus much out of the auncient monument intituled Vita Edwardi.

Touching his issue (saieth William Malmesbury) Godwine in his first age had to wife the sister of Knute king of England, Denmarke, and Norway, of whome hee begate a sonne, which when he was past his childes age, whilest hee prowdly did ride vpon an horse, which the king his grandfather had giuen him, the horse bare him into the Riuer of Thamis, where he was drowned, his mother also was slaine with a thunderbolt. After her he maried another, by whome he had sixe sonnes, to wit, Harold, Swaine, Toſtine, Woolnod, Girthe, and Leofwine, &c.

Siward Duke of Northumberland, ouercame Machute king of Scots, and made Malcolme the king of Cumberlands sonne king of Scots. 1054

Siward Duke of Northumberland departed this life at Yorke, and was buried in the Monasterie of Golmanho, dedicated to S. Olaue the Martyr, which he had builded. 1055

Griffith king of South Wales, and Algare spoiled the Monasterie of Hereford, slew the Canons and brent the whole Citie. Duke Harold repaired, but Remelinus the Bishop reedified it of his owne proper expences.

Clito Edgare son to king Edmund Ironside, by procurement of his uncle king Edward came into England, out of Hungarie, where he had long remained, being now sent by the Emperour honorably accompanied together with his wife Agatha, and their issue to wit, Edgar Adeling, Margaret and Christian, king Edward was purposed to haue made this Edward his heire of his kingdome, but he died, of Edgar Adeling his son ye shall heare more in the raigne of W. Conquerour, Margaret his daughter was maried to Malcolme king of Scots, by whom she had issue, sixe sonnes and two daughters, Edgar, Alexander, Dauid, Edmond, Ethelred, and Edward, three of the which were kings, to wit, Edgar, Alexander and Dauid, Matild their sister maried to H. Beauclarke king of England, her sister Marie was maried to Eustace Earle of Bologne, 1057

of

of Matild, came a daughter named Matild the Empresse, mother to king Henry the second, Mary had a daughter named Matild also, maried first to the earle of Mauritaine, and after vnto king Stephen.

1061 S. Mary Otery. King Edwarde founded the College of Saint Marie Otorie in the Countie of Deuon: hee gaue vnto it the Village of Otorege, being of the Citie of Rhoane.

1064 Griffith king of Wales was killed by his owne people, his head with the head of his Ship, and his armour was sent to Earle Harold, which he straightwaie bringeth to king Edward.

Westminster. T. Clifford. Without the walles of London, vpon the riuer of Thamis, there was a little monasterie with a few Monks vnder an Abbot, here the king intended to make his Sepulchre, he commanded therefore, of the tenthes of all his rentes the worke to bee begun euen from the foundation, which happilie proceeded till the same was finished, he also caused the Parish Church of Saint Margaret to bee newe builded without the saide Abbey Church, for before the saide Parish Church stode within the olde Abbey, in the south Ile: This Church of Saint Margaret that king Edward builded, continued till the daies of king Edwarde the first, at what time the staple of wols was at Westminster, and then the parishioners and staplers builded a new the said Church of S. Margaret, the great chancell excepted, which was now lately made before by the Abbot of Westm.

Vita Edwardi. Wilton The Q. also hauing beene brought vp in the auncient Monasterie of Nunnes at Wilton, which Church was but of wood, began there a princelie worke of stone, and feruentlie persisted till the same was in princelie sort finished, dedicated, and indowed it with large possessions in Anno 1065.

This king Edward of famous memory (saith mine Author) before the date of his natiuitie was elected of God, who perseuering in chastitie, led all his life dedicated vnto God in true marriage, wherefore as we haue knowne proued by good and sufficient men being witnesses, God greatlie glorified him in his life with wonderfull signes, amongst the which, this that followeth was one.

King Edward healed a woman of a disease in her throate, since called the kings euill. Vita Edwardi. W. Malmes. A young woman married, but without children, had a disease about her iawes, and vnder her cheeke, like vnto kernels, which they termed akornes, and this disease so corrupted her face with stench, that shee coulde scarce without great shame speake to anie man, this woman was admonished in her sléepe, to go to king Edward, and get him to wash her face with water, and she should be whole. To the Court she came, and the king hearing of this matter, disdained not to do it, and hauing a bason of water brought vnto him, he dipped his hand therein, and washed the womans face, and touched the diseased place, and this he did often times, sometimes also signing it with the signe of the Crosse, which after he had thus washed it, the hard crust or skinne was softened and dissolued, and drawing his hand by diuers of the holes, out of the kernels came little worms, whereof they were full, with corrupt matter and blood, the king still pressed it with his handes to bring forth the corruption, and disdained not to suffer the stench of the disease, vntill he had brought forth all the corruption with pressing, this done, he commanded her a sufficient allowance euery day for all thinges necessary, vntil she had receiued perfect health, which was within a weeke after,

and

and whereas she was euer before barren, within one yéere she had a child by her husband. And although this thing séeme strange, yet the Normans said that he often did the like in his youth, when he was in Normandy.

Alfunius Spilcorne.

Next after this, mine authors affirme, that a certaine man named Vlfunius Spilcorne, the sonne of Vlmore of Nutgarshall, who when he hewed timber in the Wood of Brutheallena, laying him downe to sléepe after his sore labour, the blood and humours of his head so congeled about his eyes, that hee was thereof blind, for the space of 19. yéeres, but then (as he had béene moued in his sléepe) hee went wolward, and bare soted to manie Churches, in euerie of them to pray to God for helpe in his blindnesse, and then last of all hee came to the Court, where a long time hee stood at the entrie of the kings Chamber, an earnest suiter, till at the length the king hearing of the blindmans dreame, hee said, by our Lady Saint Mary, I would doe much with a good will, if it would doe please God through me to haue mercie vpon the poore wretch, and thus being driuen to it by his seruants, he laid his hande & the water vpon the blind mans eies, and straightway the blood dropped plentifully from him, and being healed, he cried with a chéerefull voice, I sée thée, O king, I sée thée, O king. Thus hauing recouered his sight, he kept the kings Pallace at Windsore a long season (for there hee was healed) after king Edwarde was dead, and deceased in the raigne of William Conquerour.

King Edward sickening on Christmas Eue, deceased on the fourth of Januarie, and was buried at Westminster, on the day of Epiphanie, when he had raigned 23. yéeres, 6. monethes, and odde daies. 1066

Aluered. Riual.

Alluridus Riuallensis writing the life and death of this king, reporteth him to be a man bold of pride, a louer of peace, a vanquisher of Ire, a contemner of couetousnes, &c. And for example he writeth, that as king Edward on a time lay waking in his bedde, it chanced that his Chamberlain or Steward, taking monie out of one of the kings coffers, left the same coffer open after him, and went his waies about the kings businesse, which thing being espied of a yong fellow that was wont to wait on the kings table to beare away empty vessell, he came to the coffer, thinking the king had béene a sléepe, and thrust a great quantitie of monie into his bosome, and going awaie laid it where he thought best, and comming againe did the like, but when he came the third time, and that the king knew (as was thought) that his Chamberlaine was at hand, and willing the théefe to be voyde of danger, Thou art importunate saide the king, if thou wilt beléeue me, take that thou hast, & get thee hence, for by Gods mother, if Hugelin come (for so was his Chamberlains name) he will not leaue thée one pennie, whereupon the yong fellow ran his way, and was neither vttered nor pursued by the king, and behold, when the Chamberlaine came, and perceiued much monie to be gone through his negligence, he was in such sorrow, that his sighes and other noise that he made bewraied him, whereupon the king rising, and séeming not to knowe the matter, asked what hee ailed to bee so troubled, which when the Chamberlaine had tolde what had happened, holde thy peace said the king, happily he that hath taken it hath more nede then we haue of it, let him haue it, that which remaineth is enough for vs.

Hugelin the kings Chamberlaine or Treasurer.

1066 HArold, the eldeſt ſonne of Godwine, Earle of Kent, hauing obtained faith of the nobilitie toke the Crowne, and that hee might in ſome behalfe ſéeme to make the yong Edgar amends for the wrong he had done him, gaue him the Earledome of Oxford, and ſo from a king, he made him an Earle. But in the meane ſeaſon England began to bee toſſed & turmoiled with wars within and without: for the diſheriting of the right heire is alwaies wont to be the beginning of ciuill wars.

The yeere of our Lord beginneth here at Chriſtmas.

The 24. day of Aprill, a Comet appeared, not onelie to the people of this land, but alſo in other parts of the world ſeauen daies. Toſtus enuying (as men ſaide) the proſperitie of his brother, ſtirred vp troubles in the Realme, for hee ioining himſelfe to Harold the king of Norway, aſſaulted England in warlike ſort, both by Sea and Land. Whoſe attempt whiles Harolde of England prepared to withſtand, William Duke of Normandie, who notwithſtanding hee was a baſtard, was of kinne to Saint Edward in the third and fourth degrée of conſanguinitie, ſéeing a conuenient time and occaſion offered to take the kingdome in, gathered a nauy of 896. ſhips, and came into England with a verie well appointed armie, alledging, that by all right and title it was due to him, by the gift of king Edwarde his kinſman, and alſo by the couenant that was made, and by oth eſtabliſhed betwixt Harold and him. Hée landed at Pemſey, néere vnto Haſtings in Suſſex, on the 28. daie of September, where in going out of the ſhip, the dukes foote ſlipped, but he recouered it well inough, and one of the ſouldiers that were nert him, cried vnto him, & ſaid, O Duke thou haſt gotten England, and thou ſhalt be king: he fortified there a peece of ground, and intrenched it, leauing there a competent number of his men to kéepe the ſame, went then to Haſtings, where he built another fortreſſe, notwithſtanding hee reſtrained all his hoſt from roming, and by the ſpace of fiftéene daies, hee kept himſelfe ſo quietly, that a man would haue thought he had meant nothing leſſe then to haue warre.

Rog. Houed. Simon Dunel. Gualter Couen.

William Conquerour couſin to king Edward by the mothers ſide.

William duke of Normandie arriued at Pemſey in Suſſex.

Caſtels of Pemſey, and Haſtings builded.

Harold, notwithſtanding he was bare of men by reaſon of the battel that he had fought againſt Toſtus and the menne of Norway, yet hearing of Williams comming euen ſo bloody as he was in his armour he went towards Haſtings, being garded with a very ſmall company of ſouldiors, his fatal deſtinies ſo driuing him forward headlong. Notwithſtanding hee ſent out before, them that ſhould ſpy and view the number and force of the enimies, which when they were perceiued to be among the Dukes tents, Duke William cauſed them to be led about the tents, and then made them good cheere, commanding them to be ſent home to their Lord ſafe without harme. When they were returned againe, Harold aſked them what tidings they brought, and they with long commendation extolled the clemencie of the Duke, and in good ſadneſſe declared that all the hoſt almoſt did ſéeme to be prieſts, becauſe they had all their face & both their lippes ſhauen. For the Engliſhmen did leaue their vpper lips vnſhauen, with the haire growing alwaies, which thing alſo Iulius Cæſar in his commentaries declareth to be an heathen faſhion of the old Britaines.

The Normans faces al ſhauen. Engliſhmen ſhauen all ſaue the vpper lip.

The king laughing at their follie, ſaide, they be no prieſtes but men of warre, valiant in armes and ſtoute in courage, Girthe his brother tooke the

Girthe brother to Harold.

worde

worde out of his mouth, and saide, forasmuch as the Normans be of such great force, me thinketh it were not wisely done of you to ioine battel with them, you cannot denie but that with or against your will, you made vnto him an othe, therefore you shoulde do more wiselie, if you kéepe you out of this present necessitie and strait, and do but onely ieopard vs, and let vs abide the daunger to make a shew of battaile, wée which neuer sware to him maie iustlie draw our weapons in defence of our Countrie, you may iustlie assist, and restore vs if we flie, and you maie auenge our death, if wée be slaine. But such was the hardinesse of Harolde, that he woulde giue no god eare vnto his counsaile, because he thought it shame and reproch to turne his backe vnto any danger whatsoeuer, and with the same vndiscrétenes, he draue away a monke that was duke Williams Ambassador, onely he wished that God would be iudge betwixt duke William and him.

Offers made by Duke Wil. to K. Harold. challenge of Duke William

The Monke brought 3. offers, to wit, that either Harolde shoulde vpon certaine conditions giue ouer the kingdome, or to be king vnder duke Wil. or else ỹ in the sight of both the armies, they two should try the matter with the sword betwixt them, for Duke William chalenged the kingdome (as hée sayde) because king Edward by the counsaile of Stigand Archbyshoppe of Canterburie, of Earle Godwine, and Earle Swardus, had giuen it vnto him, (a thing vnlike to bee true) if Harold would denie this, hee offered to stande to the iudgement of the sea Apostolike.

Of which message, the Ambassadour had none other answere giuen then I told you, whereupon he departed, and incouraged the harts of his countrymen to battaile.

English men more giuen to drinking then to prayer.

Then the route Captaines on both sides set in order their battailes, according to the fashion of their Countries. The Englishmen (as was reported) when they had spent the whole night in drinking, singing and daunсing, not sléeping one winke, in the morning, without delay fell vpon their enimies, all the fotemen with their poleares being intrenched with their targets before them, made a ranke that nothing coulde enter vpon them, which thing without doubt should haue bene for their safegarde, if the Normans had not fained as though they would haue fled, and by that meanes caused them to breake the arraie wherein they had set themselues. The king himselfe stode a foote by the Standard, and his brethren Girthe and Leofwine with him, to the ende that in such a common perill and ieopardy, no man should once thinke to flie or run away. Duke William after he had got the victory, sent this standert to the Pope, which was made after the shape & fashion of a man fighting, wrought by sumptuous art with gold & pretious stones: on ỹ other side the Normans gaue themselues to acknowledging their sins, and to prayer al the night, & in the morning they communicated the lords body. The fotmen with their bowes & arrowes defended the first front, & the horsemen were set in the rereward deuided into two wings. D. William then with a loud voyce, declaring vnto them that God would be with them, because his quarrell was iust and good, called for his armor immediatly, and through the tumult and hastie running of his seruants, he put his coat of fence on the wrong way, to wit, the inner side outward, at which

Standert of king Harold.

chance he laughed, and turning the right side outwards, said the powres of my dukedome shall bee turned into a kingdome. Then they beganne to sing the songs of Rowland, to the intent that the example of that man of armes should inflame them that should fight, then after they had called to God for aide, they beganne the battell, fought fiercelie, neither of both parts giuing place till the daie was farre spent, which thing when duke William did perceyue, hee gaue his men counsaile to make as though they would fly, & to withdraw themselues out of the fielde, by which deuice the ranke of the Englishmen was broken, and whiles they meant to smite their enimies on the backes, the Normans turned themselues in good order, and set vpon the Englishmen, being dispersed and out of array, and so put them to flight. Thus the Englishmen died a faire death in defence of their country, and yet they were not slacke in reuenging of themselues, for they stood hard to it, and made great slaughter of them that pursued them, for hauing gotten a hill, they ouerthrew the Normans into the valley, as they couragiously did clime to attaine the said hill, and with their dartes which they shot, and stones which they cast vpon the Normans, that were vnder them, with small labour beat them al into the bottome. Also the Englishmen with a spœdy, and to them wel knowne passage, running through a certaine ditch, did ouerthrow so many of their enimies following them, that with the dead bodies, they made they valley euen with the higher ground, thus it continued all that whole daie, that one while the English, another while the enimies had the better, so long as Harold was aliue, but in the closing of the euening, when he by the shot of an arrowe (which pierced his braine) was killed, the Englishmen fled awaie in the night season: one of the souldiors when Harold was slaine, did cut him in the legge with a sword, for the which deede duke William blaming him for his cowardlinesse and shamefull act, put him out of the wars. Also duke William whilest he shewed his fiercenes in euerie place, three of his best horses were slaine vnder him that day, the power of God so defending him that the enimie did drawe no blod of his bodie, notwithstanding the number of dartes throwne at him. The two brethren of king Harold, to wit, Gerthe & Leofwine were there slaine, with almost all the Nobles of England, and the Normanes had the victorie, especially (saith Rowse) by meanes of their wodden bowes and arrowes (which the Englishmen had not then in vse) for Duke William commanded his men that some of them should shote directlie forwarde, and other some vpward, by reason whereof, the arrowes shot vpward, destroied the Englishmen as they stouped, and the arrowes shot directly aforehand wounded them that stood vpright. And king Harold himselfe (valiantly fighting) as afore is said, was shot through the braines, whereof hee died, when he had raigned nine monethes and odde daies. This battell was fought nine miles from Hastings in Southsex vpon the 14. day of October being Saturday, in the yeare of Christ 1066. There was slaine of Englishmen 67974. saith I. le Tailour in his history of Normandy, or 47944. after other. And of the Normans 6013. besides such as were drowned.

Marianus.

I. Rouse.

Sigebertus. W. Gemiticen. Gualter Couen. Li Woodbridge. I. le Tailour.

This was (saith Mathew Paris) the dolefull destruction of this sweete and pleasant lande, the kinges whereof (meaning the Saxons) at their first com-

Chronicle of Normandy.

ming,

ming, with barbarous countenance and gesture, in warlike sort, prouoked all men to malice and hatred towardes them, who ouercame all men by warre and subtiltie: but after they had receyued the Christian fayth, and by little and little applyed their diligence vnto Religion, they neglected the exercise of armour, for the kings did change their habite, and some at Rome, and some in their owne Countrie, sought to change their temporall kingdomes for euerlasting kingdomes: and many which al their life time embraced worldly things, did yet distribute their treasures vnto all the works of mercy: but afterwards when charitie waxed colde, all their studie and trauaile in religion slacked, and then came the destruction of the inhabitantes: first at the comming of the Danes, and now in the expulsing of the Englishmen by the Normans: for the noble men giuing themselues to gluttonie and lecherie, did not goe to the Church in the morning, as Christian men vse to doe, but lying in their Chamber dallying with women, did heare the Priest hastily rattel vp diuine seruice. The Clerkes also that had taken orders, if one had learned but his Grammar, euerie one wondred at him, the Monkes made a mocke of their role, and were both finelie apparelled, & meetelie well fed. The common people were brought to bee a praie to the mightier sort, so that either their goods were tooken from them, or else what was worse, their bodies were sent into farre Countries, to encrease the riches of the great men that oppressed them, many when they had fulfilled their lust, and had got their maides with child, they sent them out to bee common harlots, all men in generall gaue themselues to drinking and gulfing, and in that kind of exercise they continued sometimes night & day. These vices made the Englishmen effeminate, & womanish, wherof it came to passe, that running headlong against Duke William, they lost themselues and their country, with one, and that an easie and light battaile. The description of the Saxons. Mathew Paris. W. Malmes. Flores Historiar.

To conclude, the Englishmen were then apparelled in garments to the mid knee, their haire rounded, and their beards shauen, all saue the vpper lip, their armes adorned with golden bracelets, and their skin marked, painted, and printed, at meat they forced themselues to surfet, and dranke til they vomited, these last qualities they dealed to them that ouercame them, but I would not (saieth mine author) you should thinke I speake these euilles of all Englishmen, for I know that many of the Cleargie, did simply obserue the path of holinesse, and also of the lay people that did endeuour to serue God, &c. Apparell of the English.

When Duke William had gotten the full victory, hee caused his men that were slaine to be buried, and also gaue leaue that if any man would they might burie their enimies in like manner, he gaue the body of Harold vnto Haroldes mother, at her request, taking no mony, although by messengers shee offered much, thus shee receiuing his bodie, buried the same at Waltham in Eassex, in a Colledge which hee himselfe had founded to the honour of God and Saint Crosse, and had placed there a Deane and xi. Canons.

The death of Harold beeing knowne, Edwine and Morcare, two brethren of great towardnes, Earles, the one of Mercia, the other of Northumberlande, which with their people had withdrawen themselues from the battayle, came now to London, and sending the Quæne Edgitha, the late kinges sister vnto

the city of Chester, they solicited the citizens to erect either of them to the kingdome, which enterprise of theirs being frustrated, they departed into Northumberland, supposing that Duke William would neuer haue come thither. The rest of the nobles with the Citizens of London woulde haue erected Edgar the nephew of Edmond Ironside to the kingdome, and promised with him to giue a new battaile to Duke William, but through the daunger that was at hand, and the discorde that was among themselues, they did neyther. So that the Englishmen if they had agreed together, might haue reformed the decay of their Countrey, but whilest they would haue none of their owne Countreymen to be king, they brought in a stranger. In this meane time Duke William determining to passe to London, turned forth of the right waie, ouer the West coastes of England, wasting and destroying through Sussex, Kent, Surrey, Hampshire, & Barkeshire, till he came to Warringford, or Wallingford, from thence he passed ouer the Riuer of Thamis, commanding his army to settle themselues there for a while, from thence he passed through Oxfordshire, Buckinghamshire, and Hertfordshire, not ceasing to burne townes, and to slaie the people, till he came to Bercham, or Berkehamstede, where staying for a time, (for cause as shal be shewed) thither came to him Aldred Archbyshop of Yorke, Wolstane Byshoppe of Worcester, Wilfire Byshop of Hereford, Cito Edgare, and all other the noble men about London, with many other, who altogether submitted themselues giuing pledges, and sware fealtie vnto him, with whome also he made a league, but notwithstanding he permitted his men still to burne Townes, and to take spoyles.

W. Gemeticen.

Lib. 8. Albani. Abbot of Saint Albones his policie against Duke William.

The cause that Duke William staied at Berkehamstede, was this, there was at that time an Abbot of Saint Albones named Frederike, who when he hearde of duke William his comming into Hertfordshire, hee caused the woods belonging to his Church round about Saint Albones, and so in the waies towardes London to be felled, so that no man could passe that way for the trées that were layde crosse one ouer an other, and thus this Abbot for the time, kept his Monasterie from spoiling, for duke William coulde not come there, but was forced to coast about, to the Castell of Berkhamstede (as is afore sayd) whither vnder suretie he sent for Fretherike the Abbot, and demanded of him, why such felling of woods was made about him more then in other places: whereunto Fretherike answered, and said, I haue done but as becommeth me, for if the Spirituall persons throughout this land had done their endeuour against thee as they mought and ought to haue done, it shoulde not haue béene in thy power to haue entred the land so farre: quoth duke William, is the spiritualtie of England of such power? If I may liue and enioy that which I haue gotten, I will make their power lesse, and especially I mind to begin with thee. The Abbot perceiuing hee had saide too farre, as sone as hée coulde departed home to his monastery, where calling a chapter of his brethren, he told them of duke William, what he had said, and then taking his leaue of them, departed and went to the Ile of Ely, from whence he neuer returned to his Abbey.

When Christmasse approched, Duke William marched with all his armie towardes London, whose scoutes comming together before him, to see the manner

manner and behauiour of the people, found them assembled in the streetes, determined to resist Duke William with all their might; but when the Duke came thither, he made a great slaughter of the Citizens, till perceiuing themselues not able to resist him, they submitted themselues, and gaue pledges vnto him.

And thus ended the raigne of the Saxons, who were first sent for by Vortiger king of the Brytaines, as is aforesaid, about the yeare of our Lord 450. and had continued sometimes in wars with the Brytaines, then with the Danes, and now with the Normans the space of 600. yeares.

Verses of the Blazing Starre, which appeared on the 24. of Aprill last before passed, as is shewed.

A thousand sixe and sixtie yeere, it was, as we doe read,
when that a Comet did appeare, and Englishmen lay dead.
Of Normady Duke William then, to England ward did saile,
who conquered Harold with his men, and brought this land to baile.

¶ King William the Conquerour.

WIlliam Duke of Normandy, surnamed Conquerour, Bastard sonne of Robert the first, Duke of that Duchie, and cousin germane vnto king Edward on the mothers side, hauing slaine king Harold, and obtained the victory in the battaile neere vnto Hastings in Sussex, on the 14. day of October being Saterdaie, in the yeare of our Lorde 1066. And also now hauing obtained the Citie of London (as is afore shewed) was there both by the Normans and English men chosen and proclaymed king on Christmasse day, which that yeare fel on the Sunday, and forthwith the same day crowned, not by Stigand Archbishop of Canterburie and Primate of all England, who refused (as some saide) to crowne K. William, for that by bloud and crueltie hee had obtained the kingdome; but other affirme, that William would not take the crowne at his hands, because hee was chalenged of Pope Alexander, not to haue receiued the Pall Canonically, Robert a Norman, some time from London by king Edward translated to be Archbishop of Canterburie, as then liuing: wherefore Aelred Archbishop of Yorke, associating vnto him Wulston Bysshop of Worcester, and Walter Bysshop of Hereford, with others of the nobilitie of England, annointed and crowned him king at Westminster: but before he was consecrated the Archbishop required an othe, which

Anno reg. 1.

1067

W. Malmes.

Oth of King William.

which he toke on the Altar of S. Peter, where he promised before the Cleargie, and all the people, to defend the holy church of God, the Pastors therof, and all the people subiect vnto him, he should iustlie gouerne: he should ordaine good lawes, and obserue true iustice, and to the vttermost of his power to withstand all rapines, and false iudgements.

Normans beards alwaies shaven.

This William was of a good stature, prowde of Porte, verie corpulent, and bigge bodied, with a cruell countenance, and a balde forhead, his beard alwaies shaven, for so was the custome of the Normans, hee had great strength in his armes, so that manie did wonder at him, because no man coulde drawe his bowe, which hee would bende sitting on his horse backe, stretching out the string with his foote: Hee made great and costlie feasts vpon high and principall daies, keeping his Christmas offering at Glocester, his Easter offering at Winchester, and his Whitson offering at Westminster, in eche place being crowned, and this he vsed euerie yeere so long as he continued in England. He caused all his nobles of what estate soeuer they were to come to those feasts, to the ende that the Embassadours of forreine countries might wonder at the sight of such a multitude of people and preparation of delicate, and daintie fare, and hee was at no time more courteous, or readie to grant pardon to anie that had offended, then at such times, onely couetousnesse of money was the thing, whereof he mought worthily be blamed.

King William crowned thrise euery yeere.

Thomas Spot. Wil. Thorne.

King William toke his iourney towardes the Castle of Douer, to subdue that, and the countie of Kent: which when the Archbishop Stigand, and Eglesine the Abbot of Saint Augustines (being as it were the chiefest Lordes and gouernours of all Kent) did perceiue and consider, that the whole Realme was in an euill state, and that whereas in this Realme of England, before the comming of the foresaide Duke William there were no bondmen, now all, as well noble men, as the common people, were without respect made subiect vnto the perpetuall bondage of the Normans, taking an occasion by the perill and danger that their neighbours were in, to prouide for the safegard of themselues and their Countrey, they caused to assemble at Canterburie all the people of the Countie of Kent, and declared to them the perils and daungers imminent, the miserie that their neighbours were come into, the pride and insolencie of the Normans, and the hardnesse and griefe of bondage and seruile state: whereupon all the people rather choosing to ende their infortunate life, then to submit themselues to an vnaccustomed yoke of seruitude and bondage, with common consent determined to méete duke William, and to fight with him for the lawes of their Countrey. And the foresaide Stigand, the Archbyshoppe, and the Abbot Egelsin, chosing rather to die in battaile, then to sée their nation in so euill an estate, being incouraged by the examples of the holy Maccabees, became Captaines of the armie. And at a daie appointed all the people met at Swanescombe two miles west from Grauel-ende, and being hidden in the woods, lay priuilie in waite for the comming of the foresaid Duke William. And because it can not hurt to be very wary in such cases, they agreed before hande, that when the Duke was come, and the passages on euerie

side

side stopped, to the end he should no waie be able to escape, euerie one of them, as well horsemen as footemen, should beare boughes in their handes. The next daie after, when the duke was come into the fields & territories neere vnto Swanescombe, and sawe all the Countrey set and placed round about him, as it had beene a stirring and mouing wood, and that with a meane pace they approched and drewe neere vnto him, with great discomfiture of minde hee wondered at that sight. And assoone as the Captaines of the Kentishmen sawe that Duke William was inclosed in the middest of their armie, they caused the Trumpets to be sounded, their banners to bee displaied, and threwe downe their boughes, and with their bowes bent, their swordes drawne, and their speares and other kinde of weapons stretched forth, they shewed themselues readie to fight: Duke William and they that were with him, (as no marualle it was) sore astonied, and amazed, and hee which thought that he had already al England fast in his fist, did now dispaire of his own life. Therfore on the behalfe of the Kentishmen were sent vnto Duke William, the Archbishop Stigand, and Egelsin Abbot of Saint Augustines, who tolde him their message in this sort.

My Lorde Duke, beholde the people of Kent commeth forth to meete you, and to receiue you as their liege Lord, requiring at your handes the thinges which pertaine to peace, & that vnder this condition, that all the people of Kent may enioy for euer their auciēt liberties, and may for euermore vse the lawes and customes of their Countrey, otherwise they are readie presently to bidde battaile to you, and them that be with you, and are minded rather to die here altogether, then to depart from the lawes and customes of their Countrey, and to submit themselues vnto bondage, whereof as yet they neuer had experience. The Duke seeing himselfe to be driuen into such a straite and narrow pinch, consulted a while with them that came with him, prudently considering, that if he should take any repulse or displeasure at the handes of this people, which be the key of England, all that euer hee had done before, should be vndone againe, and of no effect, and all his hope and safetie shoulde stande in daunger and iopardie: not so willingly as wisely hee graunted the people of Kent their requeste. So when the couenant was established, and pledges giuen on both sides, the Kentishmen being ioyful, conducted the Normans (who also were glad) vnto Rochester, and yelded vp to the Duke, the Earledome of Kent, and the noble Castle of Douer. Thus the auncient liberties of England, and the lawes and customes of the Countrey, which before the comming of Duke William out of Normandy, were equallie kept throughout all England, doe (through this industrie and earnest trauell of the Archbishoppe Stigand and Egelsin Abbot of Saint Augustines) remaine inuiolably obserued vntill this day, onely in the County of Kent. Thus farre Thomas Spot, after him William Thorne.

The ancient liberties and lawes of England, remaine in Kent only.

King William brought the Iewes from Rhoane to inhabite here: he receiued homage, oth of fidelitie, and pledges of the nobles, and commanded that in euerie towne and village a bell should be rong euerie night at eight of the clocke, and that all people should then put forth their fire and candle, and goe to bedde, which

Iewes brought into England. Fire and light forbidden to the Englishmen.

which order was obserued through this Realme during his raigne, and the raigne of William his sonne. Thus were the English men forced to imitate the Normans in habite of apparell, shaning off of their beardes, seruice at the table, and in all other outward gestures.

The Historiographers of that time accompted the yeere to begin at Christmas, after which accompt then beganne the yéere 1067. but after the accompt of England nowe obserued, the yéere beginneth not till the twentie fiue of March following.

And now because those houses maie not be vnremembred vnto whom king W. disposed the landes and possessions of this Realme for their good seruice, I haue thought good to publish the names of them as heretofore I haue done, out of the Chronicles of Normandy, gathered by William Tayleur of Rhoane.

To wit, Odo Bishoppe of Baion: Robert Earle of Mortaigne: These two were brethren to Duke William by his mother: Bandonni de Buillon: Roger Earle of Beamont, that was surnamed with the Beard, of him came the linage of Mellent.

The Chronicles of Normandy written in French by Guillem Tailleur.

Guillam Mallet
Guilliam Fitz Osberne
Le sir de Mõtfort sus Rille.
Guillam de vielz Põt
Neel de saint Saueur le vicont.
Le sire de Feugiers
Henry sire de Ferrers
Le sire Dambemare
Guilliam sire de Romare
Le sire de Lichare
Le sire de Tonque
Le sire de la Mare
Le sire de Nehabon
Le sire de Piron
Le sire de Beauson
Le sire Damnon
Le sire de Soteuile
Le sire de margneuille
Le sire de Tankeruille
Eustace Dambleuille
Le sire de Magneuille
Le sire de Grimsuille
Guillam Crespin
Le sir de sainct Martin
Guillem de Moulinous
Le sire de Pins
Gieffray sir de Mayenne
Affroy de behunt
Affroy & Mauigr. de Cartaict.
Guillam de Garennes
Hue de Gournay sire le de Bray.
Le conte Hue de Dournay
Enguemount le Laigle
Le vicont de Touars
Richart Donnemchni
Le sire de Biars
Le sire de Salligny
Le Boutellier daubegny
Le sire de Marre
Le sire de Victry
Le sire de Lacy
Le sire du vall Darie
Le sire de Tracy
Hue sire de Montfort
Le sire de Piqgny
Hamon de Brayen
Le sire de Spinay
Le sire de Port
Le sire de Torchy
Le sire de Iort
Le sire de Riuers
Guilem Moyon
Raoul Tesson de Chignelois.
Rogier Marmion
Raoul de Gael
Aue Neel de Biars
Parnel du Monstier
Bertram le Tort
Hubert Robert
Le sire de Seukee
Le sire de Dormal
Le sire de Brenal
Le sire de sainct Iehan
Le sire de Bois
Le sire de Homme
Le sire de Saussay
Le sire de Cailly
Le sire de Semilly
Le sire de Tilly
Le sire de Romely
Martell de Basqueuill
Le sire de Praux
Le sire de Gonys
Le sire de Sainteaulx
De Mullox

These Arebers of the vale of Rueill, *and of* Bretueill, *and of manie other places.*

Le sire de seinct Saen
Le sire de la Rimer
Le sire de Salnarinlle

Le

Le ſire de Tony
Eude de Beaugien
Le ſire de Ollie
Le ſire de Sacy
Le ſire de Vaſſye
Le Biſquams de Chaymes.
Le ſire de Sap
Le ſire Dugloſſe
Le ſire de Nime
Le ſire de Blamuille
Le ſire de Brencon
Le vidam de Partenay
Raoult de Mormont
Pierre de Bailleul
Sir de Feſcamp
Le ſir de Beaufault
Le ſir de Tillieres
Le ſire de Pacy
Le ſeneſchall de Torchy.
Le ſir de Gacy
Le ſir de Doully
Le ſir de Sancy
Le ſir de Bacy
Le ſir de Tourneur
Le ſir de Praores
Guillem de Colombiers
Hue ſir de Bollebec
Richart ſir Dorbec
Le ſir de Donnebos
Le ſir de trois gros
Le ſir Mont Fiquet
Hue le Vigot alias Bigot de Maletot.
Le ſir de la Haye
Le ſir de Bracy
Le ſir de Moubray
Le ſir de Say
Le ſir de Laſert
Bonteuillam Tronſebours.
Guillem Patris de la land.
Hue de Mortemer
Le ſir Donuiller
Le ſir Donnebant
La ſir de ſaint Cler.
Robert le fitz Herneys duke Dorlians.
Le ſir de Harecourt
Le ſir Creuecure
Le ſir de Dancourt
Le ſir de Brunetot
Le ſir de Cambray
Le ſir Dauncy
Le ſir Fonteney
Le counte Deureux
Le ſir de Roberchil
Alan ſergent Counte de Britaigne.
Le ſir de ſainct Wallery
Le counte Deden
Gualtar Guiſart, counte de Longeuille.
Le ſir de Scouteuile
Le counte Thomas Danbinale.
Guillem de Hoimes & Darques.
Le ſir de Barreuile
Le ſir de Breante
Le ſir de Freanuile
Le ſir de Panilly
Le ſir de Clere
Toſtamdubec
Le ſir de Mangny
Roger du Mont Gomery Comes.
Almary de Touaers.

Beſide a very great number of knights and eſquires that were vnder them. Thus farre out of the Chronicle of Normandy, *the other following are taken out of a Table ſometime in battaile Abbey.*

Aumerle
Audeley
Angilliam
Argentoun
Arundell
Auenant
Abel
Awgers
Angenoun
Archer
Aſperuile
Amonerduile
Arey
Akeny
Albeny
Aſperemound
Bertram
Buttecourt
Brædhus
Byſeg
Bardolf
Baſſet
Bohun
Bayliſe
Bondeuile
Barbaſon
Beer
Bures
Bonylayne
Barbayon
Berners
Braybuf
Brand
Bonuile
Burgh
Buſſny
Blundell
Breton
Belaſyſe
Bowſer
Bayons
Bulmere
Broune
Beke
Bowlers
Baneſtre
Belomy
Belknape
Beauchamp
Bandy
Broyleby
Burnel
Belot
Beufort
Baudewine
Burdon
Berteuyley

Berteuyley
Barre
Buſſeuile
Blunt
Beawper
Bret
Barret
Barneuale
Barry
Bodyt
Berteuile
Bertine
Belew
Buſhell
Beleners
Buffard
Boteler
Botuile
Braſard
Belhelme
Braunche
Boleſur
Blundel
Burdet
Bagot
Beawpount
Bools
Belefroun
Barchampe
Camos
Canuille
Chawent
Chancy
Couderay
Coluile
Chamberlaine
Chambernoune
Cribet
Corbine
Corbet
Coniers
Chaundos
Coucy
Chaworthe
Claremaus

Clarell
Camuine
Chaunduyt
Claruays
Chantilowe
Colet
Creſſy
Courtenay
Conſtable
Chaucer
Cholmelay
Corneuile
Champeney
Carew
Chawnos
Clarunile
Champaine
Carbonell
Charles
Chareberge
Chawnes
Chawmont
Cheyne
Curſen
Conell
Chayters
Cheynes
Cateray
Cherecourt
Chaunuile
Clereney
Curly
Clyfford
Deanuile
Dercy
Dine
Diſpencer
Daniel
Denyſe
Druell
Deuaus
Dauers
Doningſels
Darell
Delabere

De la Pole
De la Lind
De la Hill.
De la Ware
De la Watche
Dakeny
Dauntre
Deſnye
Dabernoune
Damry
Daueros
De la Vere
De Liele
De la Warde
De la Planch
Danway
De Hewſe
Diſard
Durant
Drury
Eſtrange
Eſcutauile
Eſcriols
Engayne
Euers
Eſturney
Foluile
Fitz Water
Fitz Marmaduk
Fibert
Fitz Roger
Fitz Robert
Fanecourt
Fitz Phillip
Fitz William
Fitz Paine
Fitz-Alyne
Fitz Raulfe
Fitz Browne
Foke
Freuile
Faconbrige
Friſſel
Filioll
Fitz Thomas

Fitz Morice
Fitz Hughe
Fitz Warren
Faunuile
Formay
Formiband
Friſon
Finer
Fitz Vrcy
Furniuall
Fitz Herbert
Fitz Iohn
Gargraue
Graunſon
Gracy
Glaunuile
Gouer
Gaſcoyne
Gray
Golofer
Grauns
Gurly
Gurdon
Gamages
Gaunt
Hanſard
Haſtings
Haulay
Huſie
Herne
Hamelyn
Harewell
Hardel
Hecket
Hamound
Harecord
Iarden
Iay
Ianuile
Iaſparuile
Karre
Karron
Kyriell
Le ſtrange
Leuony

Latomere

Latomere
Loueday
Logenton
Leuel
Le Scrope
Lemare
Litterile
Lucy
Liſlay, or Liele
Longſpes
Longſchampe
Laſtels
Lind-Sey
Loterel
Lindſey
Longuaile
Le Vawſe
Loy
Laue
Le diſpenſer
Marmilou
Moribray
Moruile
Manley
Malebranche
Malemaine
Muſchampe
Muſgraue
Menilebillers
Mortmaine
Muſe
Marteine
Mountbocher
Maleuile
Mountney
Maleherbe
Muſgros
Muſard
Mautrauers
Merke
Murres
Montague
Mantalent
Mandute
Manle
Malory
Merny
Muffet
Menpincoy
Mainard
Morell
Morley
Mountmartin
Myners
Mauley
Mainwaring
Mantell
Mayel
Morton
Neuile
Neumarche
Norton
Norbet
Norece
Newborough
Neele
Normanuile
Otenel
Olibef
Oliſaunt
Oyſell
Oliford
Oryoll
Pigot
Percy
Perecount
Perſhale
Power
Paynel
Peche
Peuerell
Perot
Picard
Pudſey
Pimeray
Pounſey
Punchardon
Pynchard
Placy
Patine
Pampilion
Poterell
Pekeney
Peruinke
Penicord
Quincy
Quintine
Roſe
Ridle
Rynel
Rous
Ruffel
Rond
Richmond
Rocheford
Reymond
Seuche
Seint Quintine
Seint Omer
Seint Amond
Seint Leger
Soueruile
Sanford
Somery
Seint George
Seint Les
Sauine
Seint Clo
Seint Albine
Seint Barbe
Sandeuile
Seint More
Seint Scudemor
Towrs
Toget
Talybois
Tuchet
Truſlot
Trusbut
Traynel
Taket
Talbot
Tanny
Tibtote
Truſſell
Turbeuile
Turuile
Totet
Tauers
Torel
Tirell
Totels
Tauerner
Valence
Vancord
Vauaſour
Vender
Verder
Verdon
Aubrie de Vere
Vernoune
Venables
Venoure
Verland
Verlay
Vernois
Verny
Vilan
Vmframuile
Vnket
Vrnall
Wake
Walenger
Warde
Wardebus
Waren
Wate
Wateline
Wateuile
Woly
Wyuell.

This yére through the great ſute and labour of William the Norman, then biſhop of London, king William granted the charter and liberties to the ſame

William

Wherefore the Mayor and Citizens of London repaire to Pauls.

William Bythop, and Godfrey Portgreue and all the bourgies of the Citie of London, in as large forme as they enioyed the same, in the time of S. Edward before the conquest: in reward whereof, the Citizens haue fixed on his graue, being in the middest of the great West Ile of S. Paules church in London, this Epitaph following:

Epitaph of William bysop of London.

Gvilielmo viro sapientia & vitæ sanctitate claro, qui primùm diuo Edwardo regi & confessori familiaris, nuper in episcopum Londinensem erectus, nec multò post apud inuictissimum principem Guilielmum Angliæ regem eius nominis primum, ob prudentiam fidémque singularem in consilium adhibitus, ampliſſima huic vrbi celeberrimæ priuilegia ab eodem impetrauit: Senatus populúsque Londinensis bene merenti posuit. Sedit Episcopus Annos 20. Decessit anno à Christo nato 1070.

Hac tibi, clare pater, posuerunt marmora cives,
Præmia non meritis æquiparanda tuis:
Namque sibi populus, te Londonienſis amicum,
Sensit, & huic vrbi non leue præsidium.
Reddita libertas duce te, donataque multis,
Te duce, res fuerat publica muneribus.
Diuitias, genus, & formam breuis opprimat hora,
Hac tua sed pietas, & benefacta manent.

The same in English.

TO William a man famous in wisedome and holines of life, who first with S. Edward the king and Confessour being familiar, of late preferred to be bishop of London, and not long after for his prudencie and sincere fidelitie, admitted to be of counsell with the most victorious Prince William king of England, of that name the first, who obtained of the same great and large priuiledges to this famous citie: The Senate and citizens of London to him hauing well deserued, haue made this. He continued Bishop twenty yeres, and died in the yere after Christ his natiuitie 1070.

These Marble monuments to thee thy Citizens assigne,
Rewardes (O Father) farre vnfit to those deserts of thine.
Thee vnto them a faithfull friend, thy London people found,
And to this towne, of no small weight, a stay both sure and sound.
Their liberties restorde to them, by meanes of thee haue beene,
Their publike weale by meanes of thee, large gifts haue felt and seene.
Thy riches, stocke, and beauty braue, one houre hath them suppreſt,
Yet these thy vertues and good deedes, with vs for euer rest.

Marianus. Ypodigma. Neustr.

King William (leauing his brother Odo bysshoppe of Bayon, and William Fitz Osberne whome he had made Earle of Hereford, to be wardens of England) returned into Normandie, which at that time was bent to shrinke from him. He toke with him, Edgar Etheling, Stigandus archbishop of Canterburie,

W. de Wilus.

Frederike Abbot of S. Albons, Egelnothus Abbot of Glastenburie, Edwine Duke of Mercia, Morcarus duke of Northumberland, Walden Earle of Northampton

hampton and Huntington, Roger late Earle of Hertford, Renulph Earle of Cambridge, Gospatrike Earle of Cumberland, Gualter the son of Siward, and many other nobles of England, thinking they would be truer to him in a forreine countrey then in their owne: by their diligence he subdued the rebelling Normans.

When winter was at hand, king William returned, and set an importable tribute on the English men.

William Conquerour gaue to Geffrey Magnauile the Earledome of Essex, to the which Earledome, of auncient right belonged bearing of the kings standart, saith the Chronicle of Waltham.

After this, going into Deuonshire, he besieged Excester, which the Citizens and other Englishmen held against him. The Countesse Githa mother of king Harold, and sister to Swanus king of Denmarke with many other fleeing out of the Citie escaped, and got them ouer into Flaunders, and the Citizens yelded to the king. *Excester besieged.*

Mathild wife to king William came forth of Normandie, and on Whitsondaie, was consecrated Queene by Aldred Archbishop of Yorke. Marleswine, Gospatrike, and other noble men of Northumberland, to auoyde king Williams rough and boisterous dealing, and fearing to bee put in warde, taking with them Edgar Etheling, with his mother Agatha, and his two sisters, Margaret and Christian, went by sea into Scotland, where they were receiued, and well entertained of Malcolme king of Scots, who toke Margaret the sister of Edgar to wife. King William with an army went to Nottingham, and there builded a Castell. He also went to Yorke, and there caused two Castles to bee builded, and put in them garrisons: he commanded also Castles to be made at Lincolne, and in other places. Whiles these things were in doing, Godwine and Edmund surnamed the Great, sons to king Harolde, returning forth of Ireland, landed in Sommersetshire, where Ednothus that was maister of the horse to king Harolde, mette them with a great army, and fighting with them was slaine amongst many other. The two brethren hauing got the victorie, toke manie great praies in Cornewall and Deuonshire, and returned into Ireland. *Anno reg. 2. 1068*

Ypodigma.

The king of Scots married Margaret sister to Edgar.

Castles at Nottingham and Yorke builded.

It was the practise of king William to put the Englishmen into all places of danger, by that means to weaken their force: for against certaine Englishmen that after the battel at Hastings fled into Denmark & Ireland, and came againe the third yere after with a great power, he set an English captain with an hoste of Englishmen, so both the armies fought, and brought the victorie to the king: the strangers were chased into Ireland, but with great slaughter of themselues, and losse of their captaine Ednothus, a man excellent in the time of the English men, both at home in his own countrey, and also abroad. He was the father of Harding, who liued in the time of king Henry the second. Thus when the power of the lay people was ouerthrowen, he also established, that no clarke of the English nation should be suffered to come to any promotion. He abhorred much the gentlenesse of Knouth which sometime had béene king of England, for that he restored them, whome he had ouercome, vnto all their promo-

Harding the sonne of Ednothus.

promotions and honours: whereby it came to passe, that when hee was dead, the inhabitants did easily expulse the strangers, and chalenge their olde right, and title.

Ingulphus. But king William deposing them, distributed the Earledomes, Baronies, Byshoprikes and dignities to his Normans: onely Hereward afore mentioned in the yeere of our Lord 1062. had reward with a prosperous end. For being in Flanders, and hearing, that the realme was subdued by strangers, and that his fathers inheritance (his father Leofrike being dead) was given to a Norman, and that his mother a widow was much troubled and injuried, commeth with spede into England with his wife Thurfride, and gathering together a compante of his kinred, chased them out of his fathers inheritance. Then goeth to his uncle by the fathers side, then Abbot of Peterborowe, and first making confession of his sinnes, and absolution receiued, watcheth all night in the Church, in prayers and fasting, and the next date offered his swoorde vpon the Altar: and after the Gospell, the Abbot put the same halowed swoorde about Herewardes necke, with a benediction, and communicating the holy mysteries of Christ, from thencefoorth remained a lawfull souldiour or knight.

Hereward returneth into England.

Hereward made knight.

This custome of consecration of a souldiour, the Normans abhorred: and not onely this custome, but manie other they did alter and change: for the English men making deedes and charters, which to the time of king Edward had beene firme, by the subscriptions of the faithfull with Crosses of Golde, and other holie seales, the Normans did condemne those charters and deedes, and appointed them to make their charters and deedes firme, with a printe, set vpon ware by the spectall Seale of euerie one, vnder three or foure witnesses.

Ancient deedes.

At the first, many farmes and manors were giuen by bare woordes without writing: onely with the sword of the Lord, or his headpeece, with a horne, or standing goblet: and manie tenements, with a quill, with a horse combe, a bow, or arrow, to wit in the beginning of his raigne: but in the yeeres after this manner was changed. They did so much abhorre the very speech, that the lawes of the land were pleaded in the French tongue. And boies in Schooles were taught their letters, and principles in Grammar in French, and not in English, &c.

Of outlawes. Li. customes.

Among the lawes of William Conquerour, there is one of the Church as followeth. If any man breake the peace of the Church violently, he is in the iurisdiction of the bishops to haue iustice, but if the partie that is guiltie, flie from it, or arrogantly refuse the Byshops order, the king within fortie daies shall be enformed of it, who will presently take suretie of him, that he shall satisfie God first, and then the king: but if within thirtie daies hee can not bee found, the king by the woordes of his owne mouth shall outlawe him, and if after he be found, and maie be kept, he shall bee deliuered to the king aliue, or els his head if hee defend himselfe, for hee beareth the head of a Wolfe, after the date of his outlawrie, this is the generall law concerning outlawes.

This

This yere Henrie the kings sonne was borne in England: his other sons, Robert, William and Richard were borne beyond the seas in Normandy, before he conquered England. *Anno reg. 3.* Henry the first borne.

King William gaue to Robert surnamed Cumin, the Earledome of Northumberland, of whose comming thither, when the men of that country heard, they made themselues ready to forsake their houses, and to shift for themselues abroad: but sodainly there fell such abundance of snow, and roughnes of weather, that they could not in any wise flie, wherefore they toke a deuice and concluded, either to flie the realme, or else to die all together for the libertie of the country. The which thing when the Bishop of Durham vnderstoode, hee went out to meet the earle, and exhorted him to turne backe againe: but he suffering his souldiers to robbe and spoile, woulde not heare anie counsell of health, but forthwith entred Durham with seuen hundred men, spoiling like enemies through the house of Durham euery where what they liked for the time, which lasted not long, for on the next morning early the men of Northumberland being gathered together, burst open the gates, and running vp and downe, slate all that they found in that Citie, that toke part with the Earle, whereby al the streetes were filled with bloud and dead bodies: some there were that defended the entrie of the house, wherein the Earle was, and had thought to haue saued himselfe, but the other by fire endeuoured to burne the house, with al that were therein, whereby the west tower of the church was burnt, but through the wind that then blewe out of the East, the church escaped burning: notwithstanding the house yet burning as it began, some of them that were within were burnt and other some, whilest they burst out to saue themselues, were immediately slaine, so that the Earle himselfe was dispatched, and all his souldiours sauing one that hardly escaped being wounded. King William taking great displeasure with these doings of the Northumbers, directed a certaine Duke with an army, to reuenge the slaughter of Earle Robert: but when they were come to Aluerton, and was in the next morning setting forward towardes Durham, there arose such a darkenesse of weather through thicknesse of clouds, that they could vnneth see one another, so that they could not find their waie, whereupon they returned, and so it came to passe, God hauing pitie vpon them, that they heard of the departure of their enemies before they heard of their comming towards them. 1069 Lib. Dunelm.

About the same time, by the testimonie of an old Chronicle in the Librarie at Richmont, king William gaue such a gift of lands as followeth: Lib. Richmont.

King William gaue lands to the Norman hunter.

I William king, the third yeere of my raigne,
Giue to the Norman Hunter, to me that art both life and deere,
The Hop and the Hopton, and all the boundes vp and downe,
Vnder the earth to hell, aboue the earth to heauen,
From me, and from mine, to thee, and to thine,
As good, and as faire, as euer they mine were:
To witnes that this is sooth, I bite the white waxe with my tooth,
Before Iugge, Mawde and Margery, and my youngest sonne Henry,
For one bow and broad arrow, when I come to hunt vppon Yarrow.

Lib. Ebor. The Danes inuade England.

Somewhat before the feast of the nativitie of our blessed Ladie, Harold and Canutus sonnes to Swanus king of Denmarke, Earle Esborne, Earle Turkellus, Christerne their bishop, and many other, with 204. ships comming forth of Denmarke, landed in the mouth of the riuer Humber, where Clito Edgar, earle Waltheus, and Merleswine, with many other, and the nauie which they had assembled came to them, of whose comming Aldred Archbishop of Yorke being verie sorowfull, made earnest intercession to almighty God, that he mought not see the vtter ruine and destruction of his countrey, fell sicke, and ended his life in the yeere next following, as shall be shewed.

The eight day after the landing of the Danes, to wit, on the nineteenth day of September, the Normans that kept the Castle of Yorke, fearing least the houses that were neere to the Castle should be a furtherance to the enemies, to fill vp the ditches, beganne to set fire on them, and to burne them vp: which fire encreasing too exceedingly, inuaded all the Citie, and consumed the Monasterie of S. Peter, together with the city, but this acte was grieuously reuenged on them very speedily, for before al the city was burnt, the Danish nauy came, to wit, on the Monday, being the 21. of September, and breaking the castles, the same day slewe aboue 3000. Normans, sauing William Mallet and his wife, two of their children, and fewe other: which done, they returned to their ships with innumerable booties. Which doing, when it was signified to the king, he forthwith assembled an army, & hasted with an angry minde towards Northumberland, not ceasing to waste that Countrey all that winter, to kill men, and to doe all the mischiefe that was possible. In the meane time, messengers being sent to the Danish Earle Esborne, king William promised to giue to him no small summe of money, and to permit his army freely to take victuals, by the sea coast, with this condition onely, that winter being past, hee should depart without battell. Esborne being too greedie of golde and siluer, not without great shame, yeelded to his requests, and departed without more claime of this kingdome for that time.

King William compounderh with the Danes to depart without battaile.

By reason that the Normans had wasted England in Northumberland, and in certaine other places in the yeere before, nowe this yeere, and the next that followed, such a dearth encreased through all England, especially through Northumberland, and the countries next adioyning, that men were faine to eate horse flesh, cattes, dogges, and mans flesh: for all the land that lay betwixt Durham and Yorke, late waste without inhabitantes, and people to till the ground, for the space of nine yeeres, except onely the territorie of Saint Iohn of Beuerlake.

A great dearth so that mans flesh was eaten of men.

When Egleſine Bysshoppe of Durham heard of the comming of King VVilliam, hee and the elders taking aduise together, fledde to the Church of holy Iland: but in the meane season the kings armie being scattered throughout all places whatsoeuer betwixt Tese and Tine, found nothing but emptie houses euerie where: and then was brent the Church of Saint Paule at Jarrow.

Anno reg. 4. 1070

The Church of Durham being bereft of all ecclesiasticall seruice, was lefte like a desert, but Lent being at hand, when peace was made, the bishop returned

ned againe, and entred the church the first of Aprill, where he found the Image of the Crucifer cast to the ground, and altogether spoyled of the ornamentes. Through the counsell of William Fitz Osberd Earle of Hereford, and certaine other, in the Lent season king William caused the monasteries of all England to be searched, and the money which the richer sort of the English people, for the cruell spoiling which they saw in him had laide vp in the same Abbeies, he caused to be brought into his treasurie. Roger of Wendouer saieth, he bereaued al the Monasteries and Abbeies in England, of their golde and siluer, sparing neither Chalis nor Shrine, appropriating the said monasteries and Abbeies to himselfe: he brought vnder knights seruice, all those Bishoprickes and Abbeies that held baronies, which had beene free from all secular bondage, appointing them how many souldiours they should finde him and his successors in time of warres.

Marianus.

Monasteries rifled.

R. Windouer.

A great councell was holden at Winchester by commandement of the king, who also was present at the same, Pope Alexander consenting thereunto, sent by his Legates Ermenfred bishop, and the Priestes, Iohn and Peter Cardinals of the sea Apostolike, who exhibited there his authoritie. In which councell Stigand Archbishop of Canterburie was degraded for three causes, to wit, because he did possesse vniustly the byshopricke of Winchester, together with his archbishopricke, and because that whilest the Archbishop Robert was yet liuing, he had not only taken vpon him the archbishopricke, but also in celebrating of diuine seruice, for a time vsed the Pall, which remained at Canterbury, when he was expulsed vniustly by violence out of Englande, and after receiued the Pall of Benedict, whom the church of Rome did excommunicate, for that hee had inuaded the Apostolike Sea by money. His brother also Agelwine Bishop of the East Angles, and diuers Abbots were there degraded by the kinges meanes, that other of his nation might bee placed in their roomes, for the confirmation of his kingdome, many, aswell Bishops as Abbots, who for no euident cause were depriued of their honour, and by the king vnto their liues end holden in prison.

Marianus. Stigand Archbishop of Canterbury is deposed.

When the feast of S. Iohn Baptist was at hand, Earle Esborne with his nauy which had wintred in Humber, (according to appointment made) returned into Denmarke, but his brother Swain king of Denmarke banished him that realme, for the money which (against his will, and the will of the Danes) hee had receiued of king William: whereby it appeareth, that Swaine K. of Denmarke surceased not his claime to the crowne of England, as some haue affirmed, namely in a table, vntruely intituled, The true portraiture of the countenances, and attires of the Kings of England, &c. collected by T. T. wherein his wordes be these, Will. of Normandie, &c. toke the crowne vpon him by election of the estates (the contrarie whereof is true) then seeking to stoppe titles, he imprisoned Edgare Etheling, the onely true heire of the Saxons bloud, and by meanes of Ethelbert Archbishop of Hamborow, for mony procureth Swaine king of Denmarke to surcease the claime of the Danes; hauing thus established his affaires, &c. which errour the saide T. T. hath framed by misinterpreting of his Authour Adam Bremensis, whose wordes be these: *Inter Suen & Bastardum*

Earle Esborne returneth toward Denmarke.

The Danes made continuall claime to the crowne of England many yeeres, as by the history following may appeare.

Adam Bremensis.

ſt ardum perpetua contentio de Anglia fuit, licet noſter pontifex muneribus Guilielmi perſuaſus, inter reges pacem firmare voluerit. Which is to be Engliſhed thus: betwæne Swene and the baſtard, there was continuall contention, although our Biſhop being perſwaded with the giftes of William, would haue eſtabliſhed peace betwéene the kings. Marke how little this authour ſerueth to his interpretation, and now to our hiſtorie.

King William hauing placed a Canon of Bayon, named Thomas the elder, in the Archbiſhoppes Sea of Yorke, doth alſo now call for Lanfranke Abbot of Cane in Normandie, that was a Lumbard, borne in the citie of Papia, a man skilfull in ſcience, prudent in counſell and gouernment of thinges, and for religion and life moſt holie, him he made Archbiſhop of Canterburie. This Lanfranke being conſecrated archbiſhop of Canterbury, he conſecrated Thomas Archbiſhop of Yorke, but not before he had made profeſſion of ſubiection to the ſaid Lanfranke Archbiſhop of Canterburie, which the ſaid Thomas was ordered by the king to do, and did before his conſecration.

An. reg. 5. 1071 W. Malmeſ.

Lanfranke Archbiſhop of Canterbury being in ſuch fauour with king William, that the ſame William thought not good to deny any thing that he requeſted, procured by his induſtrie that the ſaid king left his euill cuſtome of ſelling his priſoners, which he toke in Ireland: which was a thing hardly granted to him, and to Wolſtane Byſhop of Worceſter, the gaines that the king had by the ſale of thoſe Iriſhmen was ſuch.

Edwine and Morcare with other rebell againſt king William.

R. Windouer.

The Earles, Edwine of Mercia, Morcare of Northumberland, Siward ſurnamed Bran, Eglewine Biſhop of Durham, with many knights and ſouldiors, both of the cleargie and lay people, fearing that king William would put them in priſon, ſecretly fled out of the court, and for a time rebelled againſt him, till they perceiued the thing they had taken in hand, went not well with them, and

Edwine Earle of Mercia ſlaine.

then Earle Edwine determining to goe to Malcolme king of Scots, was in the way thitherward ſlaine through treaſon of his owne people.

Hereward.

Eglewine biſhop of Durham, Earle Morcare, Siward ſurnamed Bran, and Hereward, a right valiant perſon, with many other, went into woods and wild places of the countrey, becauſe they were not able to abide the force of King William: and after they had done much harme in many places, at the laſt, they came into the Ile of Ely by boate, and choſe there a place in the Fennes, they make Hereward their Captaine of the warre, where hee did manie warlike feates, ſo often ouercomming his enemies, ſo manie times deluding them, that he deſerued perpetuall commendations, for as long as he could, he ſuſtained the ruines of his countrey decaying.

Whereof when as king William was aduertiſed, hee gathered a great power, marched thitherward, and ſtopped their going out of the Ile on the Eaſt ſide thereof, and cauſed a bridge or cauſway of two miles in length to bee made in the Weſt part. Hee alſo (ſaieth Roger of Wendouer) builded a Caſtle from the ground vppe, in a place called Wiſbech. Whereupon they of the Ile perceiuing themſelues ſo incloſed, they raiſed a Forte or Caſtle of turffes and timber in the mariſhes, which by the inhabitantes of that countrey, is called the Caſtle of Hereward: this caſtle they raiſed againſt the

Wiſbech Caſtle builded.

Hereward caſtle builded.

aſſaulting

assaulting of the kings hoste, and fought with their enemies many daies together. From thence the king went to the castle of Grantbridge, from whence, as the necessitie of the time required, set forth diuers companies to besiege and trouble the next places vnto the Ile, for the king himselfe was called vnto other businesse, and enforced to repaire into Normandie, to speake with Philip king of France. In the meane time Hereward, and the nobles of England obtained by price, which they were not able to doe by praier, and wan the Scots to take their part against the Normans. And also the Danes fauouring them, did greatly desire to triumph ouer the Normans. Further, there were within the Realme great commotions on euerie part, as well by the Normans, as other against the king, by perswasion of Earle Ralfe de Walser, calling Hereward into that faction, and others the nobles of England, as Morcare, Ethelm, Walcheum, Siward, and Edgare. At which time Hereward leauing the Ile of Ely, committed to him for safegard, went towards the English, to whom a valiant company of young souldiers did ioine themselues, which no man durst encounter.

Malcolme king of Scots with an innumerable multitude of Scots, passing through Cumberland, and turning aside towards the East, did cruelly forrage all Tesdale, and the places nigh adioyning: but when they came to a place called Hundredskeld, after they had there slaine certaine noble men of the English nation, the king of Scots sent home part of his army laden with spoiles. Then he set vpon Holderneſſe and destroied the same with a sodaine desolation: then raging through the grounde of Saint Cuthbert of Durham, he cruellie depriued all men of their goods, and manie of their liues. At the same time also did he consume with fire, the Church of Saint Peter at Weremouth, and diuers other Churches, with them that were thither fledde to saue themselues. And whiles the saide Malcolme rode about the riuer bankes, delighting his eies with the cruell actes committed against the English people: it was tolde him that Edgar Etheling with his sisters of the blood royall, and manie other noble men, banished from their lawfull inheritance, were arriued at that hauen: he came to them, and shaking hands with them, gaue them and al theirs licence with his assured peace to dwell in his kingdome as long as they would.

Ro. Houeden. The Scots inuade England.

Church at Weremouth burned.

Besides these robberies of the Scots, Gospatrike of Northumberland did assaile Cumberland, and made there great slaughter and burnings, and after returned with great bootie, to a strong fortresse at Babbanbrigh, where hee with his fellowes inclosed themselues: for at that time Cumberland was vnder the iurisdiction of king Malcolme, who when he heard what was done by Gospatrike, he charged his souldiours to spare none of the English nation: whereupon, pitifull it was to beholde, olde men, and women, some were killed with swordes, some pierced with speares, the young babes taken from the mothers pappes were cast vp into the aire, and falling downe againe, were receiued on their speares, and then the speare staues striken into the ground in a bushment together: but the young men and maidens, such as were thought meete to labour, were bound, and forced to be slaues. Malcolme beholding the teares of

these, to encrease his tyrannie, commanded them to be scourged in their going forward.

Ex tab. Osney. *Anno reg. 6.* At this time (saith Houeden) Scotland was so replenished with bondslaues, men and women of the English nation, that no village or cottage could bee found without them.

Castle at Leeds in Kent builded. The Castle of Lædes in Kent was builded by Creuicure, a noble man, a Norman.

Orford Castle builded. The Castle of Orford was builded by Robert de Olly the first, a noble man that came into England with king William the Conquerour.

Cro. Osney. Also William Earle Warren, that came in with William the Conquerour,

1072 and married Gundred daughter to the saide William, this yeere founded the Priorie of Lewes in Suller.

W. Malmes. R. Wendouer. This yeere, by the commaundement of Pope Alexander, and consent of king William the Conquerour, in the presence of the saide king, his bishops, Prelates, and nobilitie, the title of Primacie, the which Lanfranke Archbyshoppe of Canterbury did claime ouer the Church of Yorke, and concerning the ordering of certaine Byshops, whome men were vncertaine vnto which Archbishoppe they shoulde especially belong, was examined and tried out: where, by the authoritie of olde Writings it was proued and declared, that the Church of Yorke ought to bee subiect vnto the Church of Canterburie, and ought faithfully to obey the same, in all matters pertaining vnto Christian Religion, as being Primate of all England. And the Archbishop of Canterbury, as Metropolitane, graunted the Archbishop of Yorke and his successours, to haue vnder their iurisdiction, the bishoprieke of Durham, that is to saie, Lindisferne, and from the great Riuer of Humber vnto the vttermost part of the borders of Scotland, and also all whatsoeuer doeth appertaine to the parish of Yorke vpon the side the Riuer, so that if the Archbishop of Canterburie doe summon a councell in any place, the Archbishop of Yorke and all his Suffraganes, Subiects and Clearkes shall be there present at his commaundement, and shall be obedient vnto his canons and orders, &c. at Windsore.

A synode wherein was prooued that the archbishop of Yorke should be subiect to the archbishop of Canterburie.

King William went into Scotland, and Malcolme king of Scots did homage vnto him. King William hauing in his companie Edrike surnamed Syluaticus, or Wilde, marched towardes Scotland with a naule by Sea, and with an armie of horsemen by land, to haue subdued Scotland, for that Malcolme had in the yeere last before passed, so cruelly desolated the borders of his kingdome.

In the which iourney, when king William came vnto Durham, hee entred the Church with great deuotion for to pray, and afterwardes hee inquiring of the life and conuersation of the Confessour Cuthbert, and also of the antiquitie of that Byshoprieke, hee confirmed all the Liberties of that same Church, &c.

This being done, king William went into Scotland, against whome king Malcolme came vnto a place called Aberinthey, and became his man. And after king William deprined Gospatrike of his Earledome, laying vnto his charge, that he had consulted with them that slewe the Earle Robert Co-

men

men of Durham, and that hee was among the enemies, when the Normans were slaine at Yorke: who being expulsed, Waltheus was restored vnto that Earledome, being due vnto him both by father and mother, for he was the son of Earle Siward by Elfred the daughter of Aldred sometime Earle.

At the same time when king William returned from Scotland, he builded a Castle at Durham, wherein the Bishop might keepe him and his safe, from such as made assaultes. Castle at Durham builded.

This yeere Eglewine Bysshop of Durham, who had béene by king William committed to prison first at Abindune, and since at Westminster deceased, and was buried there in S. Nicholas chappell.

King William went into Normandie, which Dukedome was then rebellious against him, but with strong hand he subdued the Citie of Payne, and the whole Countrey, especially by the helpe of Englishmen, whome he applied in these affaires, they spoiled the cities, townes, vineyards, and cornefields, whereby they greatly weakned and empouerished that prouince. Clito Edgar at this time came forth of Scotland, and passing through England, went into Normandy, and was there agréed with king VVilliam. *Annoreg. 7.* 1073 R. Wendouer. Clito Edgar.

About this time the Monkes of Ely, séeing the miseries of themselues, and of the whole Iland, determined to trie the kings clemencie, for there was such a dearth in the land, as the like had not béene séene, for al prouision being spent, many thousands died through hunger, since it was now the seuenth yere since they had béene besieged, wherfore taking their iourney to Warwike a famous towne, they came to the king with great reuerence, commending themselues, and all that they had to his clemencie. Thurstane and his Monkes standing before king William, besæched him for the mercy of God to turne his displeasure from their Citie, promising faithfully hereafter to obey him. The Abbot said, that if the king would restore vnto the Abbey their possessions, violently taken from them, hee might haue sure entrance into the Ile: which the king granted, and commanded William de Warren, and Gilbert de Clare, that they shoulde become pledges for the same. Whereupon the Abbot conferred with them about the regathering together of their possessions, who (going after to his owne) did first instruct Gilbert de Clare, and Earle VVarren of the manner of the rebellion, willing them not to feare for the often repulse of the enemies, for they should haue his counsell and helpe, whereby the king might vnderstand that the power of the enemies was weakened. The Monkes of Ely submit themselues to king William.

Whereupon the king began to triumph, as though he had alreadie got the victorie: hee assembled therefore as great an armie as he coulde both of horsemen and footemen, he toke his iourney to Ely, he prepareth his engines, laieth siege to the place which was of most defence, and daily laboured to ouerthrow that which Canutus neither with wit, or strength, with pollicie, or swoorde could at any time subdue.

At length, though with difficulty wonderful to be declared, he safely brought his army nérer then anie one thought he could haue done, which was euen to the waters of Ely, the Normans passed Cottinglade, neither did it grieue the king first to passe ouer many riuers, although he was almost drowned at the point King William in perill of drowning at point Sale.

point Gale: hee ceased not for marishes or other never so dangerous, till the sounding voice of victorie quickly drawe the enemies out of the Iland, but the Normans compassing the enemies, did in a moment slaie a thousand of them, wherefore the king as soone as he had entred the Iland, went about the moores, marishes, and crooked waies, and doth with siege inclose the whole company of his enemies. These armed men are brought forth, first the Captaines, then the better sort of the other, whereof he imprisoneth some, and put out the eies, cut off the hands and feete of other some, and suffered the multitude of the common people to depart.

King William conquerred the Ile of Ely.

Mens eies put out, and their hands and feete cut off.

In this Ile he found abundance of beasts and cattell manifolde to recompence his slaine horses and other domages. Edwine is taken, and with him many persons of name & power, who were bound in streit prison, but Morcare was escaped: forthwith the king sent a great company to kéep the gates of the monastery, to the end the Monks with crosses and other ceremonies should not mæte him, and entreate for pardon at his hand, whereunto hée must néedes haue graunted. Wherefore when he came to the monasterie, he stoode aloofe from the tombe of Saint Etheldred, and hurled a marke of golde vpon the Altar. Which done, and hauing placed a garrison within the walles of the Monkes: he disposed of Grantbridge, Huntington, and Bedford shires, committing them to such men as he had brought out of France: and likewise placing a strength of Frenchmen in the Castle of Alreched, he went out of the Iland, the same way by which he entred into it: there was no diuine seruice since that vnto the xxvii. of October, the time was so troublesome. After the king was departed, the Church doores were fast locked: and Gilbert de Clare entering the monastery to sée the monks places of offices, in the end came into the refectory, & finding the Monks at dinner, said to them, Oh wretches and slouthfull persons, had you none other time to dine in, but whilest the king remained in your Church: With which wordes they all rising, ranne to the Church: but when they found not the king there, they were greatly troubled: wherefore hauing no hope but in God, they required Gilbert de Clare, that by his meanes they might obtaine a firme peace, which in the ende taking vpon him to doe, he went to the king, and with great difficultie obtained the same: with condition, that when the Monkes came before him, they should by prayer or price pacifie his displeasure against them.

King William his offering to S Etheldred of Ely.

King William lay at Wichford.

This done, he brought the Monkes before the king to Wichford, where he then soiourned, who being with much adoe brought in fauour with the king by the saide Gilbert, and other noble men, promised seuen hundred markes of siluer. For the prouiding whereof, the Monkes were enforced to spoile and sell the iewelles and ornamentes of their Church, and then repayre to Grantbridge to paie that money to the kings officers: but one groat being lacking of the said summe, by the deceit of such as did tell it, the waight was not full, by so much. Whereof when the king had vnderstoode, hee was greatly offended with them, denying vnto them all manner of hope of anie further peace. Whereupon they were driuen to make an other composition of a thousand markes, for the which they were faine for to spoile, and to sell

Money paide by weight.

whatsoeuer

whatsoeuer other kind of ornaments that were left, and yet notwithstanding, lacked that peace which they so much sought, and so dearely bought. Walter borne at Lorraine, was elected by the king, and then consecrated Bishop of Durham.

King William the Conqueror with a great power of Englishmen went into Normandie, which rebelled, and subdued it, spoiling the cities, townes, vineyardes, &c. W. Malmes. *Annoreg. R.* 1074

Gregorie the seuenth, Pope, excommunicated all committers of Symonie, and remoued married Priestes from executing diuine Seruice, whereof rose great troubles in England.

Radulph whom lately before king William had made Earle of Norffolke and Suffolke, or, as some write, of the East Angles, nowe toke to wife (against the kings commaundement) the daughter of William Fitz Osbert, sister to Roger Earle of Hereford, and celebrating most royally the marriage feast, with a great multitude of noble men at Erningham in Cantbridgeshire, conceiuing a pride of his marriage, for that his wife was the Kinges kinswoman, euen vpon the marriage daie, when the feast was solemnly kept, and the riotous superfluity of the Englishmen was entred into the Normans throates, the guests being drunken and full of wine, with a long circumstance of words, he opened his minde and purpose, whereunto the guests consented with a great showt. There was Roger Earle of Hereford, Radulphes wiues brother: there was Waldeofus Earle of Northampton and Huntington, and many other, who all conspired the kings death. But on the next morrow, when the heat of the wine was disgested, and the mindes of some of them come to better temper, the most part of them repented of that they had promised, and slipping away from the feast, Waldeofus as sone as hee coulde went to Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury, and toke penance for his othe which he had receiued against his will, and through his aduise went to the king, then being in Normandie, and opening the matter vnto him, yelded to his mercie. The other Nobles proceeding in their begunne conspiracie, went to their Castles, and raised their people to open rebellion. But Wolstane Bishop of Worcester, with a great bande of men of warre resisted the Earle of Hereford, so that hee might not (passing the Riuer of Seuerne) ioine to Earle Radulph at the appointed place with his campe, in whose companie was Aglewine Abbot of Euesham, with his people, hauing called to his aide Vrse sheriffe of Worcester, and Walter de Lacie with their men, and other multitudes of common people.

Conspiracie against king William, by Radulph Earle of Norffolke and Suffolke.

Vrse sheriffe of Worcestershire. Walter Lacie.

But Odo Byshoppe of Bayon, and Godfrey Bishop of Constance assembling a mightie armie as well of Englishmen as of Normans, came to encounter Earle Radulph being encamped at Cantbridge, where earle Radulph perceiuing that his enterprise wanted force, fearing the number of them that came against him, he secretly fledde from thence to Norwitch, where committing the Castle to his wife and knights, he getteth himselfe to shippe, and fled into little Brytaine, whom his enemies pursuing, slewe all those of his men that they might come to: and after this they besiege the Castle, till that peace

was

was granted, and licence to the Countesse and her people to depart the realme, and so the followed her husband.

King William returned out of Normandy.

These thinges being done, the king in the harnest returning forth of Normandie, put Earle Roger of Hereford in prison, wherein hee remayned all the dayes of his life: and all the Welshmen that had beene at the marriage, hee caused to haue their eies put out, their handes cut off, hanged on gibbets, or to be banished at the least. Earle Waltheofus also was committed to prison, although that hee went to the King, and had obtayned of him a promise of pardon.

Eies put out, handes cut off, &c.

R. Wendeuor.

Cnute the Son of Swaine king of the Danes, his name against England.

Cnute the sonne of Swaine, and Hacon the Earle came out of Denmarke with two hundred ships full of men of warre: but when they heard that their fautors were ouercome, and vanquished, they turned their backes, and sailed into Flanders, and durst not fight with king William: but William of Malmesburie saieth that king William did likewise bribe earle Hacon, as before he had bribed earle Elborne.

Anno reg. 9.

1075

W. Malmes. Iohn of Lond.

Edgitha late Quéene of Englande, wife to king Edwarde, called (of some) the Simple, or (of other) Confessor, daughter to Duke Godwine, and sister to Harold late king of England, departed this life at Winchester, whose corps, by the kings commandement was brought to Westminster, and there by her husband solemnelie enterred: shee had a Tombe of siluer and golde curiouslie wrought. This Quéene Edgitha professed on her death bed, that notwithstanding shee had béene manie yeares wife vnto king Edward, yet now shee died a pure virgine.

Ingulphus.

King William banished certaine rebelles, others hee dismembred, as by putting out their eies, and chopping off their handes. The earles Waltheofus, and Roger, by iudiciall sentence, hee condemned vnto more streite prisons.

At this time (saieth Ingulphus) Brand, Herewards vncle, Abbot of Peterborowe, being dead, succeeded Thorold a stranger, by the gift of king William, which thing Hereward taking in ill part, that a stranger should rule ouer his kinred, he inuaded Peterborow, and chased awaie the Abbot. And though in the sayde Abbots defence, Iuo Talbois a most mightie Norman, and by the gift of king William made Lorde of all Holland in Lincolneshire, Hereward tooke the sayde Iuo in open battell, and set him free for a great summe of monete. To this Iuo Talbois king William had giuen to wife Lucie, the Sister of the earles Edwyne and Morcare, with all the landes and tenementes that to the said earles had appertained.

Hereward chased the Abbot of Peterborow.

Hereward tooke Iuo Talbois and ransomed him.

At this time moreouer, to encrease the calamitie, happened the cruel beheading of earle Waltheofe or Walden: and although Lanfranke Archbyshoppe of Canterburie his Confessour, affirmed him to be free from the conspiracy and faction, and that if it chanced him to die in that case, he should for his innocencie be counted a martyre, yet his most wicked wife, coueting to be married anewe, did most hainously hasten the death of her husband. Certaine Normans also gaping after his Earledomes, namely of Northampton, and Huntington, and Iuo Talbois Earle of Angew, most greedy to make those landes and tene-

A wicked wife hasteneth the death of her husband.

mentes

mentes his owne, by bloudshedding, this innocent and harmeleſſe man was beheaded without the Citie of Winchester, vpon the laſt day of the moneth of May, and was there baſely buried, in a place, where ſince was builded the chappell of Saint Giles: but fiftéene daies after by permiſſion of the king, his body was conueied vnto Crowland, and was there honorably buried. Iudith Earle VValtheoſes widow, after the deceaſe of her huſband, with her two daughters, had the Lordſhippe of Huntingtón giuen to her in the name of a dowrie, and there made their abode, vntill ſuch time as the king was willing to marrie her to a knight borne in France, named Simon Syluaticus or Seintliz. For hither came two brethren to the aide of the king, and to ſerue him with forty ſoldiers horſemen, their names were Guarnerus le Riche, and Simon de Sentliz, and their fathers name was Ranulph le Riche, after whoſe death the eldeſt ſon, Guarnerus went backe into his native Countrey, and ſucceéded in his fathers poſſeſſions: but Simon the younger ſonne remained here with the king, vnto whom the king gaue the Towne of Northampton, and the Hundred of Fackeley, hee builded the Caſtle of Northampton, and alſo the Abbey of Saint Andrewes there. The king would haue giuen vnto him Iudith the widowe of Earle Walcheoſus, but ſhée refuſed him, becauſe that hee halted on the one legge: in wrath whereof, king William beſtowed vpon him the whole honour of Huntington, and ſo was he called Earle of Northampton and of Huntington, &c.

Simon Sentliz.

Guarnerus le Rich.

Caſtle of Northampton builded.

This yéere mine oft alleadged Authour Ingulphus, was by the kinges gift made Abbot of Crowland, which Ingulphus, of himſelfe, and his vocation to the Abbacie of Cropland writeth thus: I Ingulphus, an humble ſeruant of God and Saint Guthlake, and of the monaſtery of Cropland, borne in England, and of Engliſh parents, in the moſt beautifull City of London, for to attaine to learning, I was firſt put to Weſtminſter, afterward to Oxforde to ſtudie. When I had profited in reading Ariſtotle aboue manie mine equals in age, I ſtudied alſo Tullies Rhetorikes: waxing elder, loathing the baſe eſtate of my parents daily more and more, I deſired to leaue my father and mothers houſe, and to be in kings and princes pallaces, to be attired in ſilkes and gorgious apparell. And beholde, noble William, nowe our king of England, then Duke of Normandie, came to London, to talke with his couſin king Edward then king of England, with a great traine attending vpon him, vnto whome I ſoone ioyned my ſelfe, thruſting forwarde, to diſpatch all buſineſſe arriſing, I became in a little time knowen to Duke William, and was of him verie well beloued, and with him I ſayled into Normandie, there was I made his Secretarie, I ruled the whole court of the Duke at my pleaſure, to the enuie of manie.

Ingulphus borne in London, brought vp in learning at Weſtminſter and at Oxford, made abbot of Croiland.

At length it was noyſed, that many Archbiſhops and Biſhops of the Empire, and many other Princes woulde go to Ieruſalem, I among other, as well ſouldiers as clearkes, with the licence of my Lorde the Duke, prepared my ſelfe. Comming vnto Conſtantinople, wee did reuerence to the Emperour Alexes, &c. Departing from thence through Licia, we fell into the hands of Arabian robbers that toke from vs much money: wee came at the length

to

to Jerusalem, where the Patriarke Sophronius receiued vs honourablie, and brought vs to the Church of the holie Sepulture, and so to other places. In the spring returning home by Rome, and so into Normandie, I hasted to the Abbey of Fountauill, where I receiued the habite of a Monke, meaning to purge and amend, as the grace of the holy Ghost inspired mee, the offences of my youth, and ignorances, &c. At what time duke William vnderstanding of the death of king Edward his cousin expected a fauourable wind in the port of Saint Walarike, to saile ouer into England, I presented vnto him the Abbots gift, to wit, twelue young men chosen on Horsebacke and armed, with an hundred markes towards his expences in that voyage, and I returned to the Monasterie. After certaine yéares Walketelus Abbot of Croyland was deposed of his office; king William sent to the Abbot of Fontauill for me, &c. To London I came to the king, there inuested of the staffe and pastorall office of Cloyland Monastery, and consecrated on the day of the nativity of our Lord. On the day of the conuersion of S. Paul I first came to Croyland, and was installed, 1075.

The king passing ouer the sea, went into little Brytaine, and besieged there the Castell of Dolence, belonging to earle Ralph, but Philip king of France came with a great power vpon them, and tooke all victualles from them, so that king William was forced to leaue his siege with the losse of manie souldiours and horses, with much other substance: and not long after king William made peace with them.

An. reg. 10. 1076 R. Windouer. Walter Bishop of Durham, contrary to his Bishoplike dignity intermedled himselfe with secular and worldly matters, and bought of king William the earledome of Northumberland, and then playing the part of a Shiriffe, set in a secular and lay court, determining of matters, extorting infinite Summes of money, as well of the Noble men, as of the others of that same Prouince, &c.

A great frost. T. Castleford. The earth was hard frozen from the first day of November, vntil the midst of Aprill.

Hilbert Lacie Lord of Pontfracte. King William the Conquerour gaue the Castell, with the Towne of Pontfracte, and the lande lying thereabout, to Hilbert Lacie a Norman, the which Castell, Towne, and lands before the Conquest belonged vnto one Richarde Ashnalde, who had issue Ailricke, who had Swayne, who had Adam, of whome came two daughters, one of the which two daughters was married vnto Gawfride Neuell, and the other vnto Thomas Brough, but neyther of them had anie parte of the Towne or landes about the Towne of Pontfracte, Robert Sonne to Hildebert Lacie founded the Priorie of Pontfract.

An. reg. 11. 1077 About the same time, Robert the kinges sonne, vnto whome, when as hee had conquered England, hee had giuen the Dukedome of Normandie, in the presence of Philip king of France, because nowe his Father would not suffer him to possesse the Dukedome of Normandie, the saide Robert went into France, and by the ayde of the same king Philip, committed great robberies, and tooke great praies in Normandy, and burned Townes

and

and slewe the people, doing no small vexation vnto his father, so that king William the Conquerour fighting a battaile against his sonne Robert before the Castell of Gerborie in France, was vnhorsed himselfe, and his Sonne William was wounded, and manie of his familie were slaine. Wherefore king William the Conquerour cursed his sonne Robert, the which curse hee felt euidentlie before hee dyed, for there did nothing prosper with him. William Conquerour curseth his sonne Robert.

Paul a Monke of Caen, is made Abbot of Saint Albones, who in short space by the counsell and ayde of Lanfranke Archbyshop of Canterburie, he builded verie trimmelie a newe Church and Cloyster there, and all offices, and adourned the same Church with manie good Bookes, and rich ornaments. *An. reg. 12.* 1078 Abbey of Saint Albons new builded.

This yeare on Palme Sundaie about the first houre, the aire being cleere and faire, a great Starre appeared, and was seene of manie neere vnto the Sunne,

This yeare Malcolme king of Scottes, on the fiftenth of August, with an army wasted Northumberland vnto the riuer of Tine, slewe manie, and toke great praies, and spoile of the Countrey, which they returning, conueied into Scotland. The Scots spoile Northumberland.

Also in the same yeare the Cathedrall Church of Hereforde was burned by Gryffith the Prince of Wales, and Algar son vnto Leofrike Earle of Mercia. Marianus. Church of Hereford burned.

Roger de Belesme, or Mongomerie, founded of an olde Church in the Suburbes of the Towne of Serobsburie an Abbey of blacke Monkes, dedicated vnto GOD, Saint Peter, and Paul: he made Fulchardus his sonne first Abbot there. Hee also placed Monkes at Wenloke, in the Priorie sometime founded by Milbrough sister to Mildred, and by Leofrike Earle of Chester for Nunnes. Serobsbery. Edmond Hamden.

Gundulphus Byshop of Rochester was surueiour of the great workes of the Tower of London, which Tower was builded by the commandement of king William. And this Gundulfe founded the Abbey of Mawling in Kent for nuns: he builded part of the Castell of Rochester, and founded the Hospitall of Saint Bartholomew without the East gate of that Citie, which is in some Records called Chetham, &c. Tower of London builded. Rochester castle builded. Hospitall of Chetham, &c.

Walter Byshop of Durham, borne in Lorraine as is aforesaide, is slaine by the Northumbers, in a place called Gatesled, in reuenge of a Noble man named Leulfus, before slaine by meanes of the Byshoppes Chaplaine named Leofwinus. The sayde Leulfus in manie partes of England inioyed great possessions by right of inheritance, but because the Normans euerie where practised their cruelty, he got himselfe with all his family to Durham, he had to wife Algitha, daughter to Earle Aldred, of whome hee begate two sonnes Vtred and Morcare. *An. reg. 13.* 1079 Marianus.

This Leulfus was so beloued of the Byshoppe, that without his counsell, hee would doe nothing of anie great weight, for the which cause the Byshops Chaplain Leofwinus greatly hated the said Leulfus, and therefore on a time going

ing out of the courthouse, or mote hall called vnto him Gilbert, a man to whom the bishop had committed the earledome of Northumberland vnder him to be gouerned, he required him to reuenge his displeasure against the said Leulfus, and as soone as he could to put him to death, which hee performed in this manner, gathering together his men of warre, one night went vnto the village where Leulfus dwelt, and there in his owne house, together with all his family, slew him, which thing being knowne, the Bishoppe sore vered in displeasure therewith, toke his hoode from his head, threwe it to the ground, and saide to Leofwine his Chaplaine, these thinges are done by thy meanes Leofwine, and therefore I will that thou know for certaine that thou hast killed me, and al my familie with the sword of thy tongue. Hauing this said, he got him straight into the Castell, and forthwith sending messengers through Northumberland, he caused to be declared to all men, that he was nothing priuie to the death of Leulfus, but was now desirous to banish his slaier Gilbert and all his fellowes in that action, and for himselfe he was ready to purge himselfe according to the Ecclesiasticall lawes. This being signified, the Bishop and the friends of him that was slaine, professing to be at peace together, appointed a day and place of meeting together, where they might establish a more firme peace; nowe when the day came, they met at the place appointed, but the Bishop refusing to talke with them abroad, abode in the Church thereby with his Cleargy and knights, and when the talke was began, once or twise he sent out to them of his counsailers, to make an attonement, but they would not agree, because they beleeued that Leulfus was slaine by the Bishops consent, for the night after the slaughter of Leulfus, not onelie Leofwine did receiue Gilbert and his complices into his house familiarlie, but also the Bishoppe did the like. Whereupon, all those that were found out of the Bishops place they slew, verie fewe excepted, that gate awaie by flight, which thing perceiued by the Bishoppe, he to satisfie the furie of his enimies, commanded his cousin Gilbert (whose life was sought) to depart out of the Church, whome as hee went, the men of armes followed with speare and sword, till they had slaine him and all their enimies, sparing onlie two Englishmen that were seruants to the Bishop, they also slewe Leofwine the Deane of Durham, and other of the Priestes, as they couldo finde them out of the Church. When the Bishop perceiued that by no meanes their fury mought be pacified, except the head of the author were cut off, he besought Leofwine to go forth, which when hee couldo not get him to doe, hee went himselfe to the Church doores, and besought them to graunt him his life, which when they refused to doe, hee couering his head with the skirt of his garment, went forth, and straight waies with the enimies swordes hee was dispatched out of his life: after this they bade Leofwine come foorth, but hee wouldo not, whereupon they set the Church walles and rouffe on fier, which hee continued a while, but when he felt the bitter flames about him, and began to smart, he lept out, and being cut in peeces, suffered for his wickednes.

Bishop of Durham slaine.

Lib. Dunelm.

This detestable slaughter of the Bishop was committed on the 14. daie of May, when he had sate Bishop nine yeeres, and two monethes, the Monks of Yarrow sailed to the place, toke the bodie of their Bishop into their Shippe, which

which body they could hardly know for the number of woundes, being also spoiled of his garments, the body they cary to their Monasterie, which being translated thence to Durham, was there buried, but with no such solemnitie as other Bishops had bene buried, for his murderers roued vp and downe all the Citie, and assaulted the Castell, but could not prevaile; whereupon at length they dispersed themselues here and there, and were consumed with many calamities, wandring like runnagates, and banished people, for when king William had knowledge of these things, he sent his brother Odo Bishop of Bayon, and manie Nobles of his realme with a great army, to destroy Northumberland, who whilest they sought to reuenge the death of the Bishoppe, brought all that land to desolation, many of the seely people that remained at home, they either commanded to be beheaded, or otherwaies to be dismembred, many being vniustly charged, were forced to raunsome themselues with money. Northumberland againe spoiled.

The said Odo toke certaine ornaments of the Church, among the which there was a Bishops staffe, marueilous for the matter and workmanship, for it was made of Saphyre stone, who hauing set a garrison in the Castell returned.

This yeere was finished the booke named Domes day, or Domus Dei, being a perfect suruey of the whole land, which booke remayneth in the kings Exchequer at Westminster, of the which booke a making thereof, Ingulphus writeth thus. *An. reg. 14.* 1080 Domes daie booke, a register of the whole realme, howe manie acres of land, &c. Ingulphus.

King William for the taxing of his whole lande, toke this order in all England, there was not an hide of land, but he knewe the valewe thereof, and the possessor also, neither meirenor place there was, but it was valued in the kings role, the rents and profits, the possession and the possessor, were made manifest and knowne vnto the king, according to the fidelitie of tayors, which being chosen out of euerie Countrey, tayed or seised their owne Territories, or made their owne rent role. These men well willers and friends to our Monasterie, weighed not our Monasterie to the full price, nor to the true measure thereof, preuenting and prouiding vpon zealous affection towardes vs, for the kinges taxations, and other burdens that after might befall.

This role is called the role of Winton, and of the Englishmen for the generalitie thereof, containing wholie all the tenements of the whole land, it is named Domesdaie. Such a role and very like, did king Aelfred once set forth, in which he tayed all the land of Englande by Shires, Hundreds, and Tythings.

And this role, as is before noted, was called the role of Winton, because it was laide in Winchester to bee kept. Which Citie was the head of the West Sarons kingdome, comming vnto him by inheritance: At this time among all the particular kingdomes of England most noble and famous. In this role of Winchester, so most of all called, because it was made after the example of the other, were tayed and set downe, the Earledomes, Hundreds, Tythings, Woods, Parks, and all Farmes, in euery territory, or precinct, howe manie carneates of lande, howe manie ploughlandes, and acres, what pastures and fennes, or marishes, what tenements and tenants were conteined, &c. Thus much Ingulphus. The Role of Winton.

The

Lib. Bermond. The Booke of Bermondsey, saieth this Booke was laid vp in the kings Treasury (which was in the Church of Winchester, or Westminster) in a place called Domus Dei, or Gods house, and so the name of the booke, therefore called Domus Dei, and since shortly, Domes day.

New Castell vpon Tine. The same yeere king William sent his sonne Robert into Scotland against Malcolme, but when he was come to Egglesbirth, hauing in no point atchieued his enterprise, he returned againe, and builded the new Castell beyond the riuer of Tine.

William Bishoppe of Durham. *An. reg. 15.* 1081 After that fiue monethes were past, since the murdering of Walter Bishoppe of Durham, William Kairliphe Abbot of Saint Vincents was by king William chosen to bee Bishop of Durham, the 9. of November, and on the third of Ianuarie hee was consecrated at Glocester, by Thomas Archbishop of Yorke, the king being present, and all the Bishops of the realme, for he was an excellent man in wisedome, learning and vertue, and therefore welbeloued of all men.

Henry Earle Ferrers founded a priorie within his Castell of Tutsbury.

Lib. Tutburi. Tutbury Castell and Priory builded. The late newe Church was founded and builded in Anno 1407. when the Normans were put out, and the Priors aliants suppressed.

William Archbyshop of Roome, held a councell at Lisbone, king William being present with manie other Princes and Byshops.

Earthquake. A great earthquake, and roaring out of the earth was heard in the first of Aprill, about the third houre of the night.

Bermondsey in Southwarke. Lib. Bermond. Alwine Child a citizen of London, founder of the Monastery of S. Sauiour at Bermondsey in Southwarke beside London, in the Countie of Surrey, by licence of king Wil. gaue vnto the Monks de charitate there, diuers rentes in the citie of London. William Rufus afterward gaue them the maner of Bermondsey, and builded them a new Church.

Queene Matild deceased. Matild the Quéene, Daughter to Baldwine Earle of Flanders, and wife to King William deceased, King William had manie children by this Matild, whereby shee prouoked him to loue her, certaine it is a little variance was growne betweene them in their latter yeeres, for his sonne Robert, whome men said his mother, out of the kings coffers did maintaine with a warlike power, but king William himselfe declared that the fauour of matrymoniall loue was not diminished by that, whereas she died 4. yeeres before him, he did honour her with roiall obsequie and funeralles, and did with teares mourne for her death manie daies after, and from that time forth (it was said) he abstained from all voluptuousnesse: The Quéene was buried at Cane in Normandie in the Monasterie of Nunnes, which she had founded and dedicated to the holie Trinitie,

Richard the kings sonne died. Richard the kings sonne Duke of Beorn died in the new Forrest, and was buried at Winchester with this Epitaph. *Hic iacet Ricardus Filius Whilelmi senioris Beorniæ dux.*

An. reg. 16. 1082 This Richard king Williams seconde sonne was a goodly ladde, and such a one as of his age did attempt great matters, in whome his noble father had a very good opinion: but a bitter death did sone deuour him in his yong age,

men

men said that the Déere in the new Forrest, by reason of a cloude or mist of infected aire, got a disease of goring, and so spoyled him. This new Forrest is a place which king William the father of Richard, had laid wast, ouerthrowing townes, villages, and Churches, by the space of 30. miles and more, bringing the same into a chase for déere, an horrible thing it was to sée, that where before men did inhabite and dwell, and where God was honored: now Déere, Goates, and such other kind of wild beasts do wantonly course about, & not so much as made to the vse of men. Wherefore it is declared for certaine, that in the same Forrest, William his son, and his nephew Richard the son of Robert Duke of Normandy, did by the seuere iudgement of God find their death, Wil. with an arrow that was shot in his breast, and Richard had his neck broken, or as some say, as he rode through the wood on horse backe, he was hanged vp by the chaps vpon the bough of a trée.

New forrest in Hampshire.

King William in his life time shewed great fauour vnto his mother, who before his father was dead, had married a certain man of mean substance called Herlewinus of Canteruile, by him king William had brethren, one named Robert, whome he made Earle of Morton, a grosse and dull witted man: The other brother was called Odo, who when he was Duke, he promoted to the Bishoprike of Bayon, and when he was king, he made him Earle of Kent, he being a man of subtill wit, was vnder the king Vicelord of al England, after the death of William fitz Osberne, insomuch that hee being wonderfull craftie and subtill in heaping vp of treasure, and one of a maruellous obstinacie, being absent from the citizens of Rome, had almost bought the Papacy by stuffing the bagges of straungers with letters and money. And (by reason of the opinion, that all men had of him, that he should go to Rome to bee Pope) all matters of controuersie throughout the whole Realme were brought vnto him, which matter the king tooke verie euill, and laid him in prison as shall be shewed in place conuenient, saying that he would not apprehend the Bishop of Bayon, but that he would apprehend the Earle of Kent, his seruantes being constrained thereunto with threats, bewraied such plenty of golde, that the heape of yellow mettall did exceede the opinions of all men: moreouer, mane bagges full of grounden gold were drawne out of Riuers, which hee had buried in certaine places.

Herlewine married Arlote mother to king William.

Odo Bishop of Bayon.

William Bishop of Durham, by licence of the King and the Nobles of the Realme, went to Rome and obtained of Pope Gregorie the seuenth, to bring the Monks from Parrow, and Wermouth into the Cathedrall Church of Durham, he gaue to them lands, Churches, ornaments &c. all which king William confirmed by his Charter. *An. reg. 17.* 1083

A wicked sedition arose betweene the Monkes, and Thurstane the vnworthie Abbot of Glastenburie, which Thurstane king William had taken forth of the Monasterie of Cane in Normandie, and (being a man furnished with no wisedome) made him Abbot of Glastenburie. This man among other his fellowes, despising the song called Gregories song, began to counsell the Monkes to learne the song of one William of Festamps, and to sing it in the Church, which to doe when they refused, as they that had béene euer vsed not onelie

Marianus. Thurstane Abbot of Glastenburie slew his Monkes.

in this, but in other seruice of the Church to follow the maner of the Romane Church, sodenly on a day with a company of armed men, (the Monkes not aware thereof) brake into the chapter house, and the Monkes flying through excesse feare into the Church, euen to the high Altar, the men of warre pursuing with their darts and arrowes, shot, not sparing to hit the Crosses, Images and shrines, and ran one Monke through ẏ body with a speare, as he embraced the altar, and so slew him, an other was slaine with an arrow, lying as it were hidden vnder the altar, the other constrained of necessity, defended themselues with formes and candlesticks of the Church, so that although they were sore wounded, they draue all the men of armes behinde the quére, and so it fell out, that two being slaine, 14. were hurt of the Monkes, and some of the men of armes, were hurt also, this matter cõming to iudgment, because it was found that the Abbot was in all the blame, the king remoued him, and set him in his house againe in Normandy, manie of the Monkes were bestowed in Bishops houses, but after the Conquerors decease, the Abbot got his Abbey againe, at his sonne William Rufus hands, buying it with 500. pound of siluer, and wandring through the possessions of the Church, certaine yéeres together from the Monasterie, ended his life miserably as he well deserued.

An. reg. 18. 1084

Of Odo Bishop of Bayon.

About this time many tempests raging in this world, certain Southsaiers of Rome declared, who should succéde vnto Hildebrand in the Popedome, they affirmed after the decease of Gregorie, Odo to bee Pope of Rome. Odo Bishop of Bayon, hearing this, who (with his brother) gouerned the Normanes and Englishmen, little estéeming the power and riches of the West kingdome, vnlesse by right of the Popedome, he might largely rule all the inhabitants of the earth, he sendeth to Rome, he buyeth a pallace, he séeketh out the Senators, whome with great gifts giuen he ioyneth with him in amitie, and his pallace he adorneth with much cost, and superfluous trimmings, hee sendeth for Hugh earle of Chester, and a great company of the chiefest knights, and hartely prayeth them to goe with him into Italy: and the prodigall man, vnto his prayers addeth great promises. They, for that the Normans were light, and desirous to sée forraine Countries, straightwaies assented vnto the presumptuous Bishoppe, to whome the Princedome of Albion, and Normandie sufficed not, and consented also to forsake their huge landes, which they possessed in the West Climate, and promised by their faith to accompany the foresaide Prelate beyond the Riuer of Poo. Prudent king William, when he heard of such great preparation, allowed not thereof, but thought it to bee hurtfull to his kingdome, and many others, wherefore he hastely sayleth into England, and sodenly vnlooked for in the Ile of Wight met with Odo the Bishoppe, now desirous with great pompe to saile into Normandie, and there the chiefest of his Realme being gathered together in the kings hall, the king spake in this sort.

Vita W. Con.

King William returneth from Normandy to the Ile of Wight.

His Oration to his nobles.

Excellent Péeres, hearken my woordes diligently, and I beséech you giue vnto mee your wholsome counsaile. Before I sailed ouer the Sea into Normandie I commended the gouernment of England to my brother the Bishop of Bayon.

In

In Normandie manie haue risen vp against me, and, as I may say, inward friends, and forraine foes haue invaded mee, Robert my sonne, and certaine younglings, whome I haue brought vp, and to whome I haue giuen armes, rebelled, and my false clientes, and bordering enemies cleaued vnto them, but they profited nothing, God whose seruant I am, defending me: neither yet obtained they any thing of mine, but yron in their wounds.

They of Angeow gathered together against me, whom with feare of preparation to warres I pacified, with these businesses I haue beene prouoked beyond the Sea, and there I haue staide long, and laboriously haue giuen all my endeuour to publike commodities. In the meane time my brother hath greatly oppressed England, and hath spoiled the Churches of their lands, and rents, hath made them naked of the ornaments giuen by our predecessours, and hath seduced my knights, who ought to defend England against the Danes, Irishmen, and other enemies ouertroublesome vnto me, and contemning me purposeth to traine them out beyonde the Alpes into forraine kingdomes, an ouer great dolour grieueth my heart, especiallie for the Churches of God which he hath afflicted.

Christian kings that haue raigned before mee, haue loued the Church of God, with honours and gifts of manie kindes, they haue inriched it, wherfore now (as we beleeue) they rest reioycing with a happy retribution in a pleasant seate. Adelbert, and Edward, Saint Oswald, Althulph, Aelfred, Edward the elder, and Edgar, and my cousin and most deare Lorde Edward haue giuen riches vnto the holy Church the spouse of God, and my brother to whom I haue committed the gouernement of the whole kingdome, violently plucketh away their goods, cruelly oppresseth the poore, with a vaine hope, stealeth awaie my knightes from me, and hath exasperated the whole Realme, by oppressing it with vniust tarations. Consider you worthily what is to bee done hereupon, and I beseech you insinuate it vnto me.

And when all they fearing so great a personage, doubted to pronounce sentence against him, the valiant king saide, hurtfull rashnesse is alwaies to bee repressed, oftentimes heretofore hee straue against his father, and then likewise stomached for certaine follies, presently departed awaie to the king of France, &c. now the king committed his said brother Odo to prison, where he remained about the space of foure yeeres after, to wit, to the death of king William.

Odo Bishop of Bayon put in prison.

King William taketh of euery hide of land throughout England 6. shillings, and then sayled ouer into the parts beyond the Seas. *An. reg. 19.* 1085

Canute king of Denmarke, with a mightie Nauie by the assistance of his father in lawe Robert Earle of Flanders, was ready to haue come into England, whereupon king William hyring Souldiours out of all Fraunce, manie thousandes of footemen and archers, and taking some forth of Normandie, in the haruest time returned into England, and deuided his Souldiours throughout the Realme, charging the Bishoppes, Abbots, Earles, Barons, Sheriffes, and prepositors to find them meat and drinke, but after, when he vnderstoode that his enemies were impeached, and let of their purpose, hee sent

Canute king of Denmarke prepareth to inuade England.

Bishops, Abbots, &c. charged with the keeping of souldiours.

backe part of his armie, part he kept with him all winter, and in the feaſt of the Natiuitie he helde his Court at Glouceſter, where vnto three of his Chaplaines hee gaue three Biſhoprickes, to Maurice the Biſhopricke of London, to William that of Thetford, and to Robert the Biſhopricke of Cheſter.

Three of the kings Chaplaines made Biſhops.

An. reg. 20. 1086

King William cauſed all England to bee deſcribed, to vnderſtand what land euerie of his Barons did poſſeſſe, how manie knightes fées, how many plough landes, howe manie villans, how many beaſtes, or catteil, yea how much readie money euerie man poſſeſſed within his kingdome, from the greateſt to the leaſt, and howe much rent euerie mans poſſeſſion might yéelde, thus the land was replete with manie miſchiefes, that came of this doing.

King William made Henry his ſon knight

The order of knighthoode among the Saxons.

In the Whitſon wéeke king William honoured his ſonne Henry at Weſtminſter, where he then held his Court, with the order of knighthood, which order of knighthood, how the ſame was miniſtred I read not, but as writeth Ingulphus, In time of the Saxons before the conqueſt of the Normanes, The Engliſh mens cuſtome was, that he that ſhould be conſecrated to lawfull warfare, ſhould the euening going before the daie of his conſecration, to ſome Biſhoppe, Abbot, Monke, or Prieſt, contrite and compunct, make confeſſion of his ſinnes, and abſolued, ſhould continue all night in the Church, and giue him ſelfe to prayers, deuotions, and afflictions: And on the morrowe hearing the deuine ſeruice, ſhould haue a ſworde put about his necke, and communicating at the ſame ſeruice the holie myſteries of Chriſt, ſhould thenceforth continue a lawfull knight, which cuſtome of conſecrating a knight the Normans deſpiſed.

Shortly after king William commanded that Archbiſhops, Biſhops, Abbots, Earles, Barons, Vicounts, with their power of men of armes ſhould mæte him on the firſt daie of September, at Saliſbury, whither when they were come, hee cauſed the men of armes to ſweare to him fealtie againſt all men.

The ſame yére Clito Edgar with licence obtained of the king paſſed the ſea with 200. men of armes, and went into Apulia, whoſe ſiſter Chriſtine entred in to the Monaſterie of Rumſey and was made a Nunne.

R. Windouer.

When the Normans had accompliſhed the will and pleaſure of their Lord vpon the Engliſhmen, & that there was ſcantly any noble man left of the Engliſh nation to beare any rule ouer them, but was come to paſſe ỳ it was a reproch to be called an Engliſhman: There ſprang vp wicked tolls, & cuſtoms, & the more people ſpake of equitie, the more wrong was done. Thoſe that were appointed Juſtices were the authors of all vnrighteouſneſſe, who ſo euer did take a Déere or a Goate had his eies put out, and no man durſt ſpeake againſt it, for the cruell king loued wild beaſts, as though he had béene father of them, and by wicked counſell he brought to paſſe, that where men were woont to inhabite in townes and villages, and where God was wont to be honoured, there all kinde of wilde beaſtes did ſport themſelues, ſo that men ſaide for certaine, that for the ſpace of more then xxx. miles, good profitable corne ground was

turned

turned into a chase for wild beasts: this was called the new Forrest in Hampshire, wherein be 9. walks, 9. keepers, 2. rangers, a bow bearer, and the Earle of Arundale is lord Warden by inheritance. In building of Castels this king exceeded al his predecessors. Normandy came to him by inheritance, Cenomania he got by force of armes, he made Armorica or Britain obedient vnto him, in England he raigned alone. Scotland and Wales he subdued, he loued peace so well, that a yong wench might without daunger carrie a burden of golde through all places of England safe. John Leyland. Roger of Wind. Theeues so punished, that all people might passe safe.

King William hauing giuen vnto Remigius a Monke of Fiskimee, the Bishopricke of Dorchester, he nowe mistiking that the Bishoppes seat stood in a small Citie, whereas in the same diocese was the citie of Lincolne, which seemed to be more meete for his seate, he bought lordshippes in the top of the hill, and builded there a Church, and notwithstanding that the Archbishop of Yorke affirmed that place and Citie to bee part of his Diocese, Remigius not regarding his words procéeded and finished the worke which he had begun, and when he had finished the same, he adorned it with Clarkes that were approued both in learning and manners: he was but small of stature, but stout of hart, brown or darke of colour, but cleare and excellent in workes: hee was once accused of treason to the king, but a certain seruant of his, by iudgment of the fiery sword, purged him, and returned him to the kings fauour. Bishoppricke of Dorcester remooued to Lincolne. Iudgement by the fiery sword.

There was a great water flood through abundance of raine, so that diuers hilles being softened fell, and ouerwhelmed manie villages. About the same time king Wil. had builded the Abbey of Battail in Sussex, on the place where he ouercame Harold, in which place he set Monkes, and dedicated the Church to the holie Trinitie, and to Saint Martin. He also founded Selby Abbey in Yorkeshire, and the Priorie of Saint Nicholas at Excester, and the Abbey of Saint Stephen in the Citie of Cane in Normandy, where he was buried, hee gaue priuiledges to Saint Martins le Grand in London (which Church was founded before the conquest, by Ingelricus and Edwardus his Brother, cousins to king Edwarde the Confessour) hee also gaue to that Colledge all the lande and more, without the Posterne called Créples gate of London, on eyther part of the Posterne, that is to sate, from the North corner of the Wall, as the Riuers of the welles there remayning depart the same Poore from the wall, to the running water which entreth the Citie (to wit, through the wall, and so through the Citie, though vnder grounde, to the Riuer of Thamis, and is called Walbrooke, of comming through and from the wall.) The description of king Williams seale, with the names of the tables, (among the which is R. fitz Gilbert prince, Willi. Weller prince, Arfastus the kings Chancellour, &c.) I omit for breuitie. Water flooded. Battayle Abbey, and other builded. Colledge of S. Martin le grand. Créeples gate of London. The riuer of the wels came down from and by Clarks wel, and so by Oldborne to the Thamis. Walbrooke, of comming through and from the wall of the Citie.

This yeere was a great death of cattell, and a sore distemperature of the aire, whereupon a great mortalitie of men happened, so that manie died first of the feuers, and after of famine. Famine and death of men. Marianus.

In the meane time a deuouring fire spread abroad ouer almost all the principall Cities of Englande, the Church of Saint Paules in London was burnt, with the more part of the Citie, which fire beganne at the entrie of the West London and S. Pauls Church burnt.

Vita Irkenwald. A new foundation of Paules church.

gate, and consumed to the East gate. Maurice then Bishop of London, afterward began the foundation of the new Church of S. Paul, a worke that men of that time iudged would neuer haue béene finished, it was to them so wonderfull, king William gaue toward the building of the East end of this church, the choice stones of his Castle, standing néere to the banke of the riuer of Thamis, at the West ende of the Citie; he also gaue to God and Saint Paul, and to Maurice the Bishop and his successors the Castle of Stortford with all the appurtenances, namely the lande which Will. Diacon, and Radulph his brother, held of him, that they maie possesse it for euer.

Stortford Castle in Essex.

After Maurice, Richard his successor did also wonderfully increase the same Church, purchasing of his owne cost the large stréetes about it, where were wont to dwell manie lay people, which ground hee began to compasse about with a strong wall of stone and gates.

King Henry the first gaue to the saide Richard Bishop of London so much of the mote or wall of the Castle on the Thamis side, to the South, as should bee nédefull to make the saide wall of the Church, and so much as should suffice to make a way without the wall on the North side, &c. It should séeme that this Richard inclosed but two sides of the saide Church, or Cemiterie of Saint Paul, to wit, the South and the North sides, for king Edward the second graunted that the Churchyard should be inclosed with a wall, for the murders, and robberies that were committed there. And when the Citizens of London claimed the East part of the Churchyard to be the place of their assembly to the folkemote, and that the great steeple at that time there situate, was to that vse, that all the inhabitants of the City might heare. They claimed also the West side, that they might assemble themselues together with the Lorde of Baynardes Castle, for viewe of their Armour in defence of the Citie. This matter was in the Towre of London referred to Herwins de Stanton and his fellowe Iustices Itenerantes, but I finde not the iudgement of that controuersie, wherefore it is like the Church preuailed, for the wall euen to this time continueth, although nowe on both sides hidden with dwelling houses.

An. reg. 20. 1087

This yeere in a prouince of Wale[illegible], was found the Sepulchre of Wawyn or Gawen, vpon the sea s[illegible] sisters sonne to Arthur the great king of the Brytains, being a [illegible] by many of the length of xiiii. foote, he raigned in the partes of Brytaine, which to this day (saieth Windouer) is called Walwyth, a most famous man in war, and in all maner of ciuilitie, as in the actes of the Brytaines is declared.

Gawens bones found of great length.

The Bishop Stigand of Chichester, Scoland Abbot of S. Augustines at Canterburie, Alfius Abbot of Bath, and Thurstan Abbot of Pretor, deceased.

This yeere king William remaining in Normandy, being at variance with Philip king of France, continued there a long while, whose patience the saide Philip did (as men said) abuse, with these or like words.

The king of England lieth at Roane, and keepeth his chamber as women doe when they be deliuered of childe, and nourisheth his fatte belly, with which talke king William being offended, saide, when after my childbirth I goe to

Church,

Church, I will offer a thousand candles with him, swearing by Gods resurrection and his brightnes, &c. King Williams oth.

About the latter end of August, king William in a great displeasure entred France, where he wasted and spoyled all as he passed. King William wasted France.

Last of all he fiered the city of Mewre, & burnt it with our Lady Church, and two Anchors that were inclosed there, who perswaded themselues they ought not to forsake their house and caue in such extremitie, whereat the king reioycing, chered his men to fed the fire, and came himselfe so nere, that with the heate of his harnesse he got a disease, and to the increase of his sickenes (it was said) his horse leaping ouer a ditch, did burst the inner part of his bellie, with the paine whereof he was sore afflicted, and returned to Roane, where shortlie after he ended his life. King William fell sicke to the death.

This wise noble man feling himselfe grieuouslie diseased, deferred not to do good vnto himselfe in time to come, & also to many others, wherefore he commaunded all his treasure to bee distributed vnto Churches, poore folkes, and ministers of GOD, and politikelie assigned howe much hee woulde giue vnto euery one, and commanded the same to bee written out by notaries before him.

Amongst the which giftes I finde that hee gaue to the Church of Saint Stephen in Cane, and the Monks there, two mannors in Dorsetshire with their appendantes, one Manno in Deuonshire, one other in Esser, manie hides of land in Barkeshire, some in Norffolke, and a mansion house in Woodstrete of London, with manie auowsons of Churches, but specially to be noted, he gaue his Crowne and ornaments to the same belonging, to the saide Church, which hee before had founded, for the redeming of the which Crowne and kingly ornaments, king Henry the first, sonne to the said Conquerour, gaue to the saide Church of Saint Stephen, the manno of Brideton in Dorsetshire. King William also sent great summes vnto the Cleargie of Meure, that thereby the Churches which he had burned, might be repaired. Gift of king William to the Abbey of Cane in Normandy.

Of keeping faith and iustice, of holding the lawe of GOD, and peace, of obseruing the priuiledges of the C[illegible]es and Statutes of the fathers, hee admonished all those that were [illegible] and his sayinges worthie to bee remembred, mixed sometime with [illegible], hee eloquentlie vttered in this sort. Liber vitæ Wil. Conquerour.

Being laden with many and grieuous sinnes (O Christ) I tremble, and being readie to be taken by and by vnto the terrible examination of God, I am ignorant what I should do, for I haue béene brought vp in the feates of armes, euen from my childhood, I am greatlie polluted with effusion of much blood. I can by no meanes number the euils which I haue done, this 64. yéeres, wherein I haue liued in this troublesome life, for the which I am now constrained without faile to render an accompt to the iust iudge. Wordes of William the Conquerour before his death. King William 64. yeeres old.

When as my father (of his owne free will going into banishment) committed vnto me the Dukedome of Normandy, I was but a tender boie, that is to wit, of eight yéres olde, from which time, euen vntill this present I haue alwayes sustained the weight of armour, and haue gouerned the same Duke- Confession of K. William.

dome almost 56. yéeres, in great danger of enemies. Those whome I haue gouerned, haue often laide snares for mee, and wickedly haue brought vnto me domages and great iniuries.

Turchetill my nourisher, and Osberne Herfastus sonne, the Dapifer or Sewer of Normandy, and Earle Gilbert the father of the Countrey with many other necessary for the common wealth, they haue fraudulently slaine, with these things therefore I haue tried the faith of my Countrey: oftentimes in the night for feare of my kinsfolke, I haue beene secretly carried by my vncle Gualter out of the principall chamber, and brought vnto little houses and lurking corners of poore men, lest by those traytors that sought my death I should be found: The Normans if by a good and hard gouernement they bee ruled, they are most valiant, and in doubtfull thinges inuincible, they excell all men, and for their strength, they contend to ouercome all their enemies. Otherwise they teare in pieces and consume one another, for they couet rebellions, they desire seditions, & are ready to al mischiefe, let them therefore be constrained with a strong censure of gouernement, and with the bridle of discipline compelled to walke by the path of iustice, for if at their pleasure, without a yoke they be permitted to go, like a wilde vntamed Asse, they and their prince shall be ouerwhelmed with penurie and reprochfull confusion. And this I haue latelie learned by manie trials, my neighbours and kinsemen that ought by all meanes to defend me against all mortall men, with often conspiring haue risen vp against me.

The Normans valiant if they be wel gouerned, otherwise readie to all mischiefe.

Guy Harold the duke of Burgundy his son by my aunt Adaliza rendred me euill for good, for I receiued him courteously comming out of a strange countrey, and honoured him as a brother, and gaue vnto him Vernoun and Bironand, not a little part of Normandie, he hath derogated much from me both in his wordes and actes, detesting and declaring me to bee a bastard, to degenerate and to be vnworthie gouernement, and as an enemie hath defamed mee, what néede I say more, he hath falsified his faith vnto mee, he hath rebelled against me, and my Péeres, Ranulph of Bayon, and Haimo Teothed, and Nigel of Constantine, and many other more he hath withdrawen from me, and hath constrained them by his wicked perswasions to be periured persons with him, vnmindfull therefore of his homage and fidelitie which he ought vnto me, hee went about to take all Normandie from me.

Thus therefore being yet without a beard I was constrained to take vp armes against him, and in the plaine at Valesoune to fight against my kinsman and owne seruant.

Then God assisting me, betweene Caine and Argters I ouercame my enemies, who by Gods appointment being ouerthrowen, I freely possessed my fathers right.

That done I besieged a fort of Bayon, and therin included Guy sore wounded, and fled from the battell, nor I suffered him to depart with them vntill I had expelled him as a common enemie out of Normandy, and obtained all his strong holds. Not long after this an other grieuous aduersitie came vnto me, for my vncles Malgerius Archbishoppe of Roane, and William his brother, to whome

whome I had fréelie giuen Arches and the Earledome of Calegi, condemned me as a baſtard, and called Henry the king, and Engelram Earle of Pontine againſt me. Preſently after I had heard of ſuch rumors in Conſtance I entred into the Seyne, many rumors diſſwading me, and ſent before me to Arches a fewe ſouldiers which were more feruenter to fight, and I followed after not with a great army, & beſieged the ſtrong fort, but before I could come vnto the Countries betwæne the two Riuers, Sedan and Gerene, my ſouldiours had preuented Earle Engelram hasting to enter the Caſtle, and had ſlaine him manfully fighting, (for he was a moſt ſharpe Souldiour) and had put to flight all his companies.

Thoſe of the Caſtle I bridled with an harde beſieging, and forced the periured Earle to exile, neither yet permitted I him in all his life to returne to that which hee had loſt. And alſo the froward Prelate that was neither deuout to God, nor truſtie vnto mee, I depaſed by decrée of the Pope from his Biſhoppes ſeate, and placed for him Maurice the venerable Monke, whome God gaue vnto me from the city of Florence in Italie. Henry delighted with his kingly power, & hot with warlike boldneſſe, and greatly pricked forwards with the derogations of mine enemies oftentimes hath endeuoured to treade me vnder as one vnarmed, and by many meanes to feare me, and to appoint vnto me vnlawfull facts. Often with a huge armie he hath entred my land, but hee neuer reioyced of the praie of my ſpoiles, hee often entred my lands, but hee neuer merie, nor without ſhame returned home to his owne, manie ſtrong men he brought hither with him, whome for that by my ſworde and my Souldiours (woe worth the griefe,) they were ſlaine, he neuer carried back againe. Heretofore king Henry ouermuch inflamed againſt mee, deuided his huge hoſt into two partes of France, that he might oppreſſe our landes with a double burſting in with violence, for hee himſelfe brought an armie of eight hundred fotemen into Ebroicene Dioceſſe, that they might deſtroy all euen vnto the Riuer of Some, and the other companie hee committed to Odo his brother, and to Raynold of Clarimount, and to two Conſuls Ralfe of Pontdefire, and Widon of Pontine, that by the ſhallow places, they ſhoulde ſome enter into Normandie, and inuade Drani Calcegi, and the whole Towne of Roane, and ſhould vtterly deſtroie with ſword, fire, and robbing, euen to the Sea.

This therefore I vnderſtanding, on the other ſide, I went forwardes, not ſluggiſhly againſt the kinges tentes, and repoſed my ſelfe and my Souldiours by the thore of Some, and whereſoeuer hee endeuoured to deſtroie my lands with weapons and ſworde, I prepared a reproch, but Robert Earle of Ankeuſe, and Roger Mortimer, with other moſt tried Souldiours I ſent againſt Odo, and his legions, who when almoſt at Caſcus, which is called the dead Sea, they met with the Frenchmen, the companies on both partes being prouided, a terrible battell was fought, and on both partes great effuſion of bloud, for euerie where there were moſt valiaunt fighters, and euen vnto death ignorant to flie, here were the Frenchmen for deſire of gaining, there ſtrike the Normans with a feruant hope of eſcaping, and defending themſelues.

ſelues and their dwelling houſes, at the laſt God helpeth, the Normans vanquiſhed, and the French men fledde away. And this battaile they had beyond Some in Winter, before Lent, the eight yeere after the battaile at Valeſdonne.

Then Wido Earle of Pontine was taken, and Odo with Raynold and others that were luſtie in quickneſſe of foote were driuen away, Raulphe alſo the Earle had likewiſe beene taken vnleſſe Roger the Prince of my warre had ſupported him, for lately he had done homage vnto him.

Therefore in ſuch neceſſitie he requited him with a faire competent ſeruice, when he protected him three daies in his Caſtle, and after permitted him to go ſafe home to his owne, for this offence I caſt Roger out of Normandie, but a little after, being reconciled vnto him, I reſtored him the reſt of his honours, yet the Caſtle of Mortimere, wherein he kept mine enemie, by right, as I ſuppoſe, I tooke from him, but I gaue it to William de Warren his kinſeman and lawfull vaſſall.

Wido Earle of Bayon I held in priſon ſo long as it pleaſed me, and after two yeeres I receiued againe homage of him, with ſuch honour, that from thenceforth hee ſhould alwaies be faithfull vnto mee, and ſhould euerie yeere giue vnto me Souldiers ſeruice, whereſoeuer I commanded with an hundred Souldiours.

This done I gaue him great rewardes, and ſo honoured, ſent him away in peace. After this fight ended, by and by as I certainly had tried the rumours, I ſent by Ranulph of Oeen thoſe things that had chanced on the farther ſide of Some vnto the king of France, which thing hee hearing, ſtraightwaies roſe vp, and with his horſe ſpeedely fledde, and neuer after did lie one night in my land, and thus euen from my childhood with innumerable preſſures on euerie ſide I haue beene letted, but by the grace of God, I haue beene honourably deliuered from them all.

Therefore I was made hatefull to all my neighbors, but God aſſiſting me in whom alwaies I put my truſt, I was ouercome of none.

This oftentimes haue the Britaines, and them of Angeow, and Cenomania grieuouſly tried.

Godfrey Martell Earle of Anioy, and Conan Prince of the Britaines, and Robert Friſe Prince of Waterell, haue laide waite to entrap me by many ſubtill inuentions, but God keeping mee, they were neuer ſatisfied of their deſire.

King William held not England by right of inheritance.

A Royall Diademe that neuer any of my predeceſſors did beare, I haue gotten, which only heauenly grace, not right of inheritance hath giuen to me. What labours, and perilous conflictes I haue ſuſtained beyond the Seas againſt thoſe of Exceſter, Cheſter, and the Northumbers, the Scottes, the Gaules, Norwegians, and Danes, and againſt other aduerſaries that endeuoured to ſpoile me of the Realme of England it were hard to declare, in all which the lot of victorie hath come vnto mee: And although manly greedineſſe vpon ſuch triumphes reioyceth, yet inwardly a carefull feare pricketh and byteth mee, when I conſider that in all thoſe, cruell rathneſſe hath raged.

Where-

Wherefore I humbly beseech you, O Priestes, and Ministers of Christ, that you will commend me to the almightie God, with your praiers, that hee will forgiue me my sins, wherewith I am greatly pressed, and by his vnspeakeable mercy, will make me safe amongst his.

My treasures I commaund to bee giuen to the poore and to Churches, that those thinges that haue bene heaped vp by wicked deedes, maie bee disposed to holy vses of the Saints, for you do remember howe sweetely I haue loued you, and how stronglie against all emulations defended you.

The Church of God, that is do wit, our mother, I neuer violated, but in euerie place where reason required did willingly honour, I haue not solde Ecclesiasticall dignities, simonie alwaies detesting I haue reiected in election of Pastors, I euer searched out the merite of life, and his learning of wisedome, and so neere as I could committed the gouernment of the Church to the most worthie.

And this maie bee faithfully proued in Lanfranke Archbishoppe of Canterburie, this in Anselme Abbot of Becco, this in Gerebert of Fontanell, and in Durand Trearne, and in manie other Doctors of my kingdome, whose famous praises (as I suppose) sounding in the vttermost corners of the earth may be tried.

King William commendeth Lanfranke, Anselme, and other Doctors his counsellers.

Such fellowes I chose to talke with, in the fellowship of these I found truth and wisedome, and therefore reioycing I wished euer to enioy their counsels. Nine Abbeies of Monkes, and one of Nunnes, which by my fathers were founded in Normandy, I helping by the assistance of God haue encreased, and with augmentations of many things, which I haue giuen them they are gloriously magnified.

Moreouer, in the time of my gouernment, seuenténe Monasteries of Monkes, and fiue of holy Nonnes are builded, where great seruice vnto God, and much almes to the poore is daily bestowed for the loue of the chiefest king. With such camps Normandy is fenced, and in these fortes let the younglings learne to fight against the deuill, and vices of the flesh. Of these truely either I by Gods inspiration haue bene builder and founder, or els a feruent helper, and well willing intender.

All things also which my Noble men in lands or rentes, haue giuen to God and his Saintes for their spirituall health in Normandie and England I haue courteously granted, and the Charters of the giftes, I haue freely confirmed with princely authoritie against all emulations and troubles.

These studies I haue followed from my first yéeres, these I leaue vnto my heires to be kept in all times. In this, my children, follow me continually, that here and for euer before God and men, you may be honoured.

This chiefly, O you (my very bowels) I warne you that you continuallie cleaue vnto the companie of good and wise men, and bee obedient to their gouernment in all things if you will long gloriously prosper. It is the doctrine of godly wisedome, to discerne good from euill, to kéepe iustice at all times, and with all force to shunne wickednesse, to saue and helpe the sicke and poore, to suppresse and banquish the proud and vniust, and to bridle them from trou-

King William his counsell to his children.

bling

bling of the simple, to frequent deuoutly the holy Church, and aboue all things to loue the worshipping of the diuinity, and to be obedient without any wearinesse day or night, in aduersitie and prosperitie vnto the law of God.

The Dukedome of Normandie before I fought against Harold in the vale Senlac, I granted vnto my sonne Robert, for that he is my first begotten, and hath now receiued homage almost of al the Barons of this country: the honor granted cannot be taken away again, but without doubt I know that truly it will be a miserable region that shall be subiect to his dominion or gouernment: for he is a prowd and foolish knaue, and to be long punished with cruell fortune.

King William of his sonne Robert.

England not king Williams by inheritance but by conquest

I doe constitute none heire of the realme of England, but commend it vnto the euerlasting creator whose I am, and in whose hands be all things, for I possessed not such an honor by right of inheritance, but by the instinct of God, and with much effusion of mans blood I toke it, and the periured Harold being slaine, or his fauourers driuen away, I made it subiect to my dominion.

The naturall sonnes of the Realme I hated more then right required, the Noble men and vulgare sort I cruelly vexed, manie vniustly I disherited, innumerable, especiallie in the Towne of Yorke, with hunger and sword, I brought to death, for the which the Countrey men beyonde Humber toke in against mee the armie of the king of Sweueland, and slew Robert of Cumin, with a thousand souldiours within Duresme, and other of my Nobles and most approued young Schollers in diuers places. Wherefore moued with an immoderate rage, like a wood lyon, I hasted vnto the Northerne English men, their houses, their corne, and all their prouision and housholde stuffe I commaunded to be burned, and great droues of beastes, and flockes of sheepe euerie where to be killed: therefore I punished with the sword of such horrible hunger the multitude of both sex, and so manie thousandes both of yoong and olde of the most beautifull Countrey (Oh woe worth the griefe) I cruellie killed. The offices therefore of this Realme, that with so manie sinnes I haue obtained, I dare not giue to anie but to God, lest after my death, they be made yet worse by my occasion. William my sonne, who alwaies from his first yéeres hath sticked vnto me, and according to his power hath willingly obeied me in all things, I wish in the Spirit of God long to liue in health, and if it be Gods will, happely to flourish in the throne of the kingdome. These and many such like wordes William spake, and an amazednesse inuaded the standers by, that politikely measured things to come.

King William commendeth his sonne William.

After that Henry the yoonger sonne heard nothing to be giuen vnto him of the kingly treasure, lamenting with teares, he saide vnto the king: And what (father) doe you giue vnto me? To whome the king saide, Fiue thousand poundes of siluer out of my treasure I giue vnto thee. To this Henrie saide, What shall I doe with that treasure, if I shall not haue a dwelling place of habitation? Whereunto his father answered, Be of a patient minde my sonne, and comfort thy selfe in God, quietlie suffer that thy elder brother goe before thee. Robert shall haue Normandie, and William England, thou in thy time shalt haue all the honour that I haue gotten, and shalt excell thy brethren in riches and power. These wordes thus spoken, the king fearing

King Williams gift to his sonne Henry.

Words of king William to his sonne Henry.

lest

leſt in ſuch a wide Realme ſodaine trouble ſhould ariſe, wrote a Letter vnto Lanfranke Archbiſhop of Canterburie, and being ſigned with his owne ſeale, gaue it vnto William Rufus his ſonne, commanding him preſently to ſaile ouer the Sea into England, and that done, he kiſſed and bleſſed him, and ſpœdilie directed him to take the Crowne, who in ſhort time came to the porte called Whitſand, and there he heard his father to be dead. Henry alſo haſted diligently to receiue the nominated ſumme of money, and to call neceſſary fellowes, in whom he might truſt.

King Williams ſonnes left him and ſought to helpe themſelues to his poſſeſſions.

In the meane time, the Phyſitions, and the kings ſeruantes that kept the languiſhing Prince and the Nobles that came to viſite him, beganne to ſpeake vnto him for the priſoners that hee kept in holde, and humblie beſought him to haue compaſſion vpon them, and to releaſe them. To whome hee ſaide, Morcare the noble Engliſh Earle I haue long kept in priſon, and that vniuſtlie, but it was for feare, leſt by him, if he were at libertie, the Realme of England ſhould bee troubled. Roger alſo of Britole, for that he verie ſtubbornely raged againſt me, and prouoked Raulph of Guadar his ſiſters ſonne and manie others againſt me, I haue ſtraitely kept in priſon, and ſworne, that in my life he ſhould not come forth. So many I caſt in priſon deſeruing it, through their owne peruerſitie, and ſundrie others mo, for feare of ſedition to come; for this is the rule of righteouſneſſe, as the diuine Law by Moſes giuen vnto the gouernours of the world requireth, that the wicked be oppreſſed, leſt they deſtroy the innocent. But now being at the point of death, as I deſire to be ſaued, and abſolued by Gods mercie from my ſinnes, ſo I preſently command al priſon dores to be opened, and all priſoners except my brother, the Biſhop of Bayon, to be releaſed, and for the loue of God to be freelie diſmiſſed, that hee maie haue mercie on me. Notwithſtanding, I haue decreed that they depart out of priſon with this condition, that firſt for more ſecuritie they giue their othe to the officers of the common wealth, that they will by all meanes keepe peace in England and Normandie, and according to their power manfully reſiſt all aduerſaries of the ſame.

All priſoners to be releaſed except his brother Odo.

And when Robert Earle of Morton heard his brother to bee commaunded by the kings ſentence to perpetuall priſon, he greatly ſorrowed: for Herliwinus of Canteruill toke vnto wife Herlewine duke Roberts concubine, of whom he begate two ſonnes, Odo and Robert. And Duke William, who afterwards was king, enriched his father in law with manie great honours in Normandie and England, and ſet vp with great poſſeſſions his ſonnes, Ranulph whom he had gotten of an other wife, and Odo and Robert, his brothers by the mother: for after that hee had for ſmall offences expelled out of Normandie William ſurnamed Werelenge Earle of Morton, ſonne vnto Earle Magenis, hee gaue the Earledome of Morton vnto his brother Robert Herliwinus ſonne.

Herlem Dukes Roberts concubine.

Hugh alſo Biſhoppe of Bayon ſonne of Ralfe Conſule, being dead, he graunted the foreſaid Prelates dignity to his brother Odo, whom afterwards in England he made ruler of the Earledome of Kent. To conclude, him, for his exceſſiuenelle (as before is plainely related) king William toke in the

Ile-

Ile of Wight, and kept foure yeres in prison, neyther yet at his death for his insolencie would release him. Wherefore the foresaide Earle of Morton greatly sorrowed, and for his brother both by himselfe, and by his friends humblie intreated, and with praiers wearied the languishing king. And when manie had earnestlie desired him for the Bishop of Bayon, the king wearied with the requests of so many, said: I maruell that prudentlie you shew not, whome, or what a man he is, for whome you intreate: do you not aske for such a man, as latelie hath bene in appearance, a contemner of religion, and a crafty stirrer of sedition? haue not I corrected him now these foure yeres? a Byshoppe, who ought to haue bene a most iust gouernour of the Englishmen, and was in deede the worst oppressor of the people, a Monke, and a destroier of Abbeies. In deliuering a seditious person, you doe euill, and desire a great herte vnto your selfe, it is plainely seene, that my brother Odo is light, and ambitious, following the desires of the flesh, and vnmeasurable cruelties, and he will neuer bee brought from bawdrie, and hurtfull vanities. And this I haue in manie thinges tryed, therefore I haue imprisoned, not a Byshoppe, but a tyrant, and without doubt the destruction of manie thousandes. These thinges I speake, not of hate as an enimie, but as a father of the Countrey, I prouide for the Christian people, for if hee behaued himselfe chastlie and modestlie as of very right becommeth a Priest and Minister of God, a greater ioie woulde bee at my heart then I can declare. Euerie one promising the amendement of the Byshop. The king said againe, Will I, nill I, your petition must be graunted, for that I beeing dead, sodainelie a vehement mutation shall bee of all thinges. Against my will I graunt, that my Brother bee deliuered out of prison: but knowe you, that by him death, or a great impediment shall bee brought to manie. From Baldricke also the sonne of Nicholas, for that he foolishlie left me my seruice, and without my licence went into Spayne, I toke all his landes for a punishment; but nowe, for the loue of God, I restore them to him agayne. A better young Souldiour in armes then hee is, I suppose is not to be founde, but hee is prodigall and light, and wandereth to dyuers places.

King William of Odo Byshop of Bayon.

Thus King William, although greeued with ouermuch paines of the inward partes of his bodie, yet effectuallie enioied his wit and liuelie speech, and vnto all demaunders gaue prompt and profitable counsell of matters of the realme.

To conclude, the Ides of September on a Thursdaie, the Sunne nowe clearely spreading his beames throughout the round world, the king raised vp, hearde the sounde of the great bell in the Metropolitane Church, and asking wherefore it sounded, his seruantes answeared, Sir, it ringeth now to prime of our blessed Ladie. Then the king with great deuotion lift vp his eyes vnto heauen, and holding abroad his handes, sayde: I commend my selfe to our blessed Ladie Mary mother of God, that shee by her holie praiers maie reconcile mee to her most deare sonne our Lord Iesus Christ. And these words spoken, hee presentlie yelded vp the ghost, on the ninth day of September, when he had raigned twentie yeres, eight monethes, and sixteene daies, at the age of

The sodaine decease of king William.

thrée score and foure yéeres. The chiefe Physitions, and others that were present with them that had kept the king all the night without groaning or calling, nowe séeing him vpon a sodaine to haue presentlie departed, were greatlie astonished, and made almost madde. Furthermore, the richer sort of them scraygnt, taking their Horses, departed awaie, and hasted home to defend their owne. The inferiour sorte, or clientes also, séeing their Maister in such sort to haue departed, snatched awaie the armour, vessell, apparrell, linnen, and all the kinges houshold stuffe, leauing the kings dead bodie almost bare in the floore of his house, fledde awaie. Beholde, I praie you, what worldlie fidelitie is, euerie one as a kite snatched what hee coulde of his stuffe, and presentlie fledde awaie with their praie. Impietie therefore (Iustice falling downe) impudentlie commeth forth, and exercisech rauenous pillage vpon the reuenger of rauenous pillers.

The amasednes of the beholders of the kinges death, and their flying.

The kings dead body spoiled and forsaken.

The fame of the kinges death flewe abroad, with swift wings, and wyde and broad brought feare or feare to the hearts of the hearers. For the death of king William the verie selfe same daie that hee died at Roane, was vnto his kinred in Rome, and Calabria also shewed, as afterwards by them in Normandie it was truelie related. Truelie the euill spirite greatlie reioiced, when hée sawe the seruants that vehemently gaped to snatch and take away al by death of the iudge to be frée. O worldly pompe! how contemptible art thou, because thou art euer vaine and slippery? Rightly thou maiest be compared to a bubble in the water, that in a moment so prowdelie settest vp thy selfe, and sodainlie thou shalt be brought into nothing. Behold the mightie prince vpon whome aboue a hundred thousande Souldiours willinglie waited, and whome manie Countries with trembling feared, nowe is in his owne house by his owne seruauntes shamefullie spoyled, and from the prime, vnto the third houre left vpon the bare ground. For the citizens of Roane hearing of the death of the prince were greatlie feared, and almost all like drunken men, were so troubled, as if they had séene a multitude of enimies to be nére vnto the Citie, euerie one departed from the place where hée was, and asked counsaile of his wife, or his companions that hee mette, what were best to doe. Euerie one either carryed or decreede to carrie their goods from one place to another, and with feare hid them, least they shoulde bee founde. At the last, the religious men, Priestes, and Monkes, gathering their powers and senses together, ordayned a procession, and decentlie went forwarde vnto Saint Geruasius Church: and according vnto the custome of holy christians commended the soule of the king to God.

Fame of the kings death sodainly spread.

Example of worldly pomp.

Then William the Archbyshop commanded that his body shoulde bee carried to Cane, and there in the Church of Saint Stephen the first Martyr, which hee had builded should bee buried. But his brethren and kinsmen were nowe gone from him, and all his seruants had wickedly left him as a barbarous person, wherefore there was not one of the kings knights to be found that would take care for the exequies of his bodie.

King William's body forsaken of all his professed friends and followers.

Then Harluinus a certaine countrey knight, being pricked with his owne good nature, manfullie, for the loue of God, and honour of his countrey, toke

A certaine poore knight prepareth for the kings burial.

vpon

King Williams body conueied to Cane, where the same was honorablie receiued.

vpon him carefullie to see the kinges funerall solemnized. Therefore the diressers with ointmentes, and carriers of the dead bodie, and a Wagon hee hyred at his owne proper costes, they carried the dead bodie of the king to the hauen of Sone, and putting it in a Shippe, by Sea and drie lande, brought it vnto Cane. Then the Lord Guslebert Abbot, with the couent of Monkes reuerentlie came forth to meete the corpes: to whome, weeping, and praying, cleaued the whole multitude of the Cleargy and laity: but presentlie peruerse fortune powred out vpon al together a great terrour, for straightwaies a terrible fire burst out of a certaine house, and cast vp huge flames, and hurtfullie inuaded a great part of the towne of Cane. All the Clearkes therefore, with the laie people run to represse the fire, only the Monks ended the office begun, and singing, brought the kings bodie to the Abbey Church.

The Towne of Cane fiered by casualtie.

To conclude, to bury this great duke and father of the country were gathered together al the bishops and abbots of Normandy, of the which was William Archbyshop of Roane, and manie other Byshops and Abbots which were long to name.

All they came together at the solemne funerall of the famous King, and buryed him in the Presbytorie betweene the quiere and the Altar. The masse ended, when the Coffin was nowe set in the earth, but the bodie yet remained on the Bere: The great Guislebert Byshoppe of Ebroicen, went vp into the pulpet, and eloquentlie pronounced a long Sermon of the magnificence of the dead king that he valiantly had enlarged the bounds of Normandy, and had extolled his Countrey more then all his predecessours, peace and iustice he kept throughout all his dominions. Theeues and robbers hee manfullie chasticed, with the rule of righteousnesse, and the secular Priestes, Monkes, and vnarmed people hee stronglie fenced with the Swoorde of vertue. The Sermon ended, and for pitie manie weeping and protesting his woords to be true, he required the people with this addition, for that no man mortall can liue in this life without sinne, in the loue of GOD wee praie you all for the dead Prince, that you will make intercession for him vnto Almighty God, and if he haue offended anie you, charitablie to forgiue him.

Sermon at the kings burial.

Then Anselme fitz Arthur rising from the companie, with an high voyce vttered such a plaint. This ground whereon you stande, was the flore of my fathers house, the which that man for whome you doe make intercession, when as yet he was Duke of Normandy, violentlie toke from my father, and all right denied, mightilie founded this house. This ground therefore I challenge, and openlie reclaime, and in Gods behalfe I forbid that the bodie of the taker awaie by violence be couered in my earth, neither yet shall he be buried in my inheritance.

Burial forbidden to the dead King.

After that the Bishops and other noble men heard this, and vnderstood by his frendes, who testified him to haue saide true, they sent for the man, and all violence set aparte, mollified him with gentle praiers, and made peace with him: for, for the place of his burial, they presently gaue him threescore shillings, and for the rest of the ground which hee claimed, they promised him an equiualent price, and so in a small time, for the saluation of their special friende whome they

Place of burial for the king purchased.

they loued, they made an agreement, and (by the consent of Henry his sonne) 100. pound of siluer was giuen. Further, when the bodie should bee put in the tombe or coffin, and was violently prested, that the same, through the follie of the rough masons, was shorte, and streight, his fat belly (not bowelled) cracked, and an intollerable stinke filled the standers about, and the rest of the communaltie, so that the smoake of frankencense, and other gummes or spices, copiously ascending from the sensars preuailed not to exclude the worse smell: wherefore the Priestes hasted to finish the buriall, and presentlie with feare to get them to their celles. And thus haue I truely shewed the fall of the Duke, and not a vaine Comedie, to make men laugh: which also sufficeth to proue, that the bodie of king William could not bee found vncorrupte more then foure hundred yéeres after the same was buried (as some haue fabuled) neither yet his bodie to be of eight foote length: for then, such as wrote of his life, raigne, and description, would so haue noted, who all agrée in one, that he was a man of meane stature, bigge bellied, &c. And last of all, for a full confuting of the saide fable, when his restlesse bones, which so hardly had obtained entombing (as ye haue heard) did afterward as vnluckely againe lose it in the yeare of Christ, 1562. to wit, when Chastillion, conducting the remnant of those that escaped at the battell of Dreax, tooke the Citie of Cane, certaine sauage souldiours, as well English men as others accompanied with foure Captaines, did beate downe, and vtterly deface the noble tombe and monument of that renowmed Conquerour, and victorious king, pulling out all his bones, which some of them spitefullie threwe away (when they could not finde the treasure they falsely surmised had béene laide vppe there) and others, to wit the English snatched, euery one to haue some piece of them, not making anie wonder of them, as they would haue done, if the same had exceeded the length and bignesse of mens bones of latter yéeres, where as in déed, there was no such thing noted in them, as I haue béene certainly informed by English men of good credite, who were present eie-witnesses at the spoile of of that monument and bones, and brought some part of them into this realme. Theuit maketh mention of this matter in his vniuersall Cosmographie writing of Cane.

king William by burning of his body, gaue his farewell with a fowle sauour.

The body of king William could not be found vncorrupted 500. yeeres after his death.

Monument of king William defaced, and his bones dispersed.

Andreas Theuit.

Now to speake of the issue of this noble Conquerour, whereof I haue before partly touched: He had by Matild his wife daughter to Baldwine Earle of Flaunders, Robert surnamed Curthos, as some write, but as saieth Cornelius Martin, and Peter Balthazar, in their booke of the Earles of Holland, Courtecaise, to wit in English, short thighe, who after his father was Duke of Normandie. Richard that died young in the new forest, as he was a hunting in the place where his father had ouerthrowne Churches, and Townes to make harbour for beastes, hee was buried at Wincheller, on whose monument, hee was written Duke of Bologne. William surnamed Le Rouse, or the Red, who succéeded in the kingdome of England. And Henry, vnto whome he gaue 5000. pound of siluer out of his treasurie (as yee haue heard before.) He had daughters, Cicilie Abbesse of Cane. Constance maried to Allan Earle of Brytaine. Adela wife to Stephen Earle of Bloyse. Margaret

Issue of Will. Conquerour.

Cornelius Martin. Peter Balthazar.

promised to Harold king of England. And Aelianor betrothed to Alfonso king of Gallia.

King Williams treasure giuen to the poore.

William the Redde fetched from Winchester the treasure, which all the peeres of his fathers raigne had beene gathered, and gaue the golde to the Monasteries, and to the parish Churches, euerie one fiue shillings of siluer, and to euerie borough towne he gaue an hundred pounds to bee dealt to the poore. He also adorned a memoriall of his father with a great heape of siluer, and golde, and pretious stones.

King Williams tombe adorned with golde.

William Rufus.

Anno reg. 1.

William le Rouse or Redde the third sonne of William Conquerour, beganne his raigne the ninth daie of September, in the yeere of our Lorde 1087. and was crowned at Westminster by Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterburie, the first daie of October. He was of person a square man, redcoloured, his hayre somewhat yellowe, his forehead foure square like a windowe, his eies not one like the other, not of anie great stature, though somewhat big bellied, he was variable, inconstant, couetous and cruell, hee burdened his people with vnreasonable tares, pilled the rich, and oppressed the poore, & what he thus got, he prodigally spent in great banquetting and sumptuous apparel, for he would neither eate, drinke, or weare any thing, but that it cost vnmeasurably deere. As for example it was in those daies written (and for vs now to be noted) that in a morning his Chamberlaine bringing him a new paire of hosen, hee demanding what they cost, and the chamberlaine answering three shillings, the king being wroth, said, Away beggar that thou art, are those meet hose for a king to weare, bring me a paire of a marke, or thou shalt sore repent it; then his chamberlaine fetcht an other paire that were much worse then the first (for a better paire could not be got) and said they cost a marke, wherewith K. William was well pleased. Thus farre haue I noted the saying of K. William, because it importeth the simplicitie of apparell in those daies vsed, so farre different from the excesse of this present time.

R. of Glocest. S. Albons chron.

The best paire of hose three shillings.

1088

The nobles rebell.

Odo bishop of Bayon, and Earle of Kent, with his brother Robert Earle of Mortaigne and Hereford, and almost all the nobles of England, raised war against king William, and would haue had Robert his eldest brother to be king: but king William by faire words pacifying some of the principall conspirators, besieged the residue in the Castle of Rochester (which Odo Earle of Kent had lately repayred) and with much labour lastly ouercame them.

W. Malmes.

An. reg. 2.

1089

Hospitall of Saint John and Harbaldowne.

Lanfranke archbishop of Canterbury deceased. He renued the great church of Canterbury, restoring vnto manours to the same. He repaired the wals of that Citie, builded two Hospitals, the one of Saint Iohn, the other at Harbaldowne. He restored the church of Rochester from foure secular Clearkes, to fiftie Monkes. He alwaies attended his Booke, and trauelled to correct the corrup-

corruption of Writers. He was a great benefactour to the Abbey of S. Albons, giuing towardes the reparations thereof 1000. markes, and also got Redborne to be restored thereunto. Moreouer by his testament he gaue to that church a hundred pounds of siluer, besides ornaments.

When Lanfranke was dead, king William kepte in his owne handes the Churches and Monasteries of England, after their Pastours were dead, making great spoile, and letting them out to farme to such as would giue most for them. Mathew Paris. G. Lilly.

This king William, so long as Lanfranke liued, seemed to abhorre all kinde of vice, so that hee was accounted a mirrour of kings: But now when Lanfrank was dead, he first shewed himselfe for a while variable, as it were, betwixt vice and vertue, and after, to wit, toward his later dates, al indeuor of vertue waxing colde, the heate of vices increased in him, he set his mind to cracing: and one Ranulph a Clearke (or Secretarie) a man of base kinred, by his faire tongue and subtill wit, being come to promotion, did pricke forward his couetous heart. This Ranulph was a poller of the rich, and an vndoer of the poore, a confiscatour of other mens inheritances, an inciuil lawyer, the king would ofte laugh at him, and say, he was a man alone, which could compasse his matters so well to please his Maister, he being the Authour: Churches were set to sale, so soone as the Incumbent was dead: for straightway this Ranulph was sent to take inuentory of al that was found, and the same to be confiscate to the kings vse, and inquirie was then made for one meete to be set in the place of the Bishop, Abbot, or other deceased, not for their worthinesse, but for their money that would giue most, who at the length should haue that promotion naked and bare, notwithstanding they paied deare for it. There was no man rich but Collectors of money, no clearks but men of law, not of conscience, no Priests but Farmours. What crime soeuer any man had committed, so soone as he did appeale for the kings aduantage by accusing other, he was heard, yea the rope was taken from their neckes. The courtiers deuoured the substance of the husbandmen their tenants: Then the laying out of haire, and the superfluitie of garments was found, the tendernesse of the body, and wrestling with women, nice going, with dissolute behauiour was in vre, there followed the court a number of effeminat persons, and great companies of ruffians, whereby the same court was not a place of maiesty, but a brothell house of vnlawfull things, such as ought to be abolished. W. Malmes. Abuses of this kings time.

This was a token of great insolencie in the king, that when the Iewes at London came to him, and brought him presents, he encouraged them to fight against the Christians, swearing by Lukes face, that if they did ouercome, he would become one of their secte. king Williams othe, and vnfaithfulnesse.

On the eleuenth day of the moneth of August, about three of the clocke in the afternoone, a great earthquake made all England afraide, with a terrible wonder, so that all buildings did (as it were) leape vpwards, and immediatly set themselues in their olde place: after the which there followed great scarcitie of fruite, and late haruest of corne, so that the same was scarcely inned at S. Andrewes tide. Earthquake.

Robert de Ollie the second, founded the Priorie of Osney besides Oxford.

An. reg. 3. 1090

King William being desirous to take Normandie from his eldest brother Robert, and to bring it vnder his dominion, he first bought the castle of S. Valery of one Walter, and the castle of Albemarle of Odo, and put into them men of armes to waste Normandy. Which thing being knowne to duke Robert, he sendeth messengers vnto his soueraigne Philip king of France, requiring him to come to aide him in Normandie, who indéede shortely after brought a great power, and besieged one of the forenamed Castles, wherein king William had placed a number of men of armes. Of which siege when king William vnderstode, hee sent ouer no small portion of money vnto king Philip, requiring him to withdrawe his siege, who receiuing the money returned home.

The winning of Glamorgan and Morgannoke out of the Welch mens hands.

About this time, one Iustinus sonne to Gurguntus Earle of Glamorgan, and Morgannoke, refusing to obey Rhesus, sonne to Theodore Prince of South-Wales, sent Aeneas sonne to Gedinorus, sometime Lorde of Demetia into England, to take muster of souldiers, and there receiued a great army, vnder the conduct of one Robert Fitzhamon, and ioyning with other rabbles out of Went and Brecinia, met with Rhesus in Blacke hill, and there slewe him, and so paying the Englishmen their wages, discharged them. But they taking regarde vnto the goodnesse of the soile, and the great variance which was then amongst the Welchmen, as in foretime the Saxons had done, they turned their force of armes against those which had intertained them, and sone displaced them wholy of all the champion, and the best of the Countrey, which Robert Fitzhamon diuided amongst twelue knights which he brought with him, reserning the better part to himselfe, who building there certaine Castles, and ioyning their power together, defended their Farmes and Lordships which they had taken and possessed, whose heires peaceably enioy the same vnto this daie: but Iustinus scarcely reserued to himselfe and his, the hillie Countrey. The names of the twelue knights were these:

1 William Lowdon.
2 Richard Granuille.
3 Paganus Turberuille.
4 Robert Saintquintine.
5 Richard Siward.
6 Gilbert Vmfreuill.
7 Roger Berkerowle.
8 Reynald Sully.
9 Peter Soore.
10 Iohn Fleming.
11 Oliuer Saint Iohn.
12 William Easterling: now for shortnesse called Stradling.

Thus was the Lordshippe of Glamorgan and Morgannoke won out of the Welchmens handes, which Lordshippe contained in length from Kimin bridge on the East side, to Pallekinan in the West side seauen and twentie miles. The breadth from the hauen of Aberthawe on the South side,

to

to the confine of Brecknokeshire, about Powlets Castle, is two and twentie miles.

In this prouince are neere vpon a riuer of the same name Pantsaine, that is to say, Stonebridge, sometimes called Cowbridge, Lantwid, Wenny, Dinwid, townes, and castles, besides Caer Phili, a most ancient Castle and fortresse, which by report was erected by the Romans, and Caerdid the principall town of the shire, standing vpon the riuer Tafe, Englishmen terme it Cardid or Cardike. Also, within the body of the said Lordship were eightéene Castles, fiue and thirtie knights fées & a halfe, that held of the same Lordship by knights seruice, besides a great number of freeholders. Also, the saide Lordship being a Lordship Marcher, or a Lordship Royall, and holden of no other Lordship, the Lordes thereof, euer since the winning of the same owing their obedience only to the Crowne, haue vsed therein *Iura regalia* with the triall of all actions, as well reall as personall, and pleas of the crowne, with authoritie to pardon all offences, treason only excepted. Humfrey Lhuyd

Now to returne to king William: he in this meane time making warre against his brother Robert duke of Normandie, toke the Castles of Walerike and of Albemarle, then sending his souldiours into his brothers country, he began to spoile and robbe. But through the diligence of friends, agréement was made betweene them, vpon condition, that Robert his brother should giue vp into the kings hands, the castles that he had gotten of him, to wit, the countie of Owe, the Abbey of Fescampe, the Abbey of S. Michaels Mount, and Hereforough, &c. And those Castles which were reuolted from the duke in the county of Maine, with the Castles which stode against him in Normandie, the king should subdue them, and restore them to the duke, and all the lands in England pertaining to the Normans, which for their loyalty to the Duke they had lost, he should restore to the Normans. Also he should giue to the duke so much land in England as was couenanted betweene them. Moreouer, it was agreed, that if the Duke died without issue male, the king should be his heyre; and in like case, if the king died without lawfull issue male, the Duke should be his heyre. Which couenants were confirmed by the othe of twelue Barons on the kings part, and as many on the Dukes part. king William inuadeth Robert his elder brother.

In the meane time Henry yonger brother to the king and Duke, with a power of men of armes entred Saint Michaels Mount, and wasted the kings landes, taking prisoners, and robbing other. Wherefore the king and Duke with an army besieged mount Saint Michael, all the Lent season, oft times fighting with their brother Henry, where they lefte both men and horses, but preuailed little. The king on a time comming out of his pauilion, and seeing the enemies a far off riding in a brauerie, he alone rode against them, and set vpon them, thinking that no man durst bee so bolde as to withstand him: but straight way his horse was slaine vnder him, and himselfe drawne by the one foote: and when the knight that had ouerthrowne him, toke his sworde in his hand to smite him, he cried out, Hold thy hand knaue, I am the king of England. The whole company of men of armes knowing his voice, straight way they reuerently toke him vp from the ground, and brought him another horse: Henry inuadeth his elder brother.

Henry inuadeth his elder brothers lands.

King William foole hardie.

and hee looking for no stirrope, sprang vpon the horse backe, and with an angrie countenance beholding all that stode about him, said: Who was it that ouerthrew mee? And the knight which had done the déede, saide: I not thinking that you had bene the king, but a knight, did ouerthrow you. With the which answere the king being pleased, swore by Lukes face, thou shalt be my knight, and shalt bee written in my white Booke, with the reward of a worthy knight.

Malcolme did homage to king William.

Malcolme king of Scottes, with a great armie inuaded Northumberland, meaning if he had sped well to procéede further, but he was disappointed in his first attempt, notwithstanding he returned with great praies. Whereof when king William vnderstode, hee returned into England with his brother Robert, and shortly after with no small nauy and army of horsemen and footmen, he went into Scotland to inuade king Malcolme, but before he could come thither, almost all his nauy was drowned, and many of his horsemen perished through hunger and colde. King Malcolme mette with king William, which when Duke Robert beheld, he called to him Clito Edgar, whome king William had expulsed out of Normandie: vpon trust of whose helpe, he made peace betwixt the two kings, with condition, &c. Duke Robert also pacified the kings wrath against Clito Edgar.

An. reg. 4.

Malcolme did homage to king William.

Tempest of lightning at Winchelscombe.

On the nineténth of October, a vehement stroke of lightning, shaking the steéple of the Abbey at Winchelscombe, made a great hole in ỹ stone worke thereof nére to the toppe, rent one of the beames in the church, and cast downe to the ground the head of the Crucifer with great violence, and brake the right legge of the same Crucifer, the Image of our Lady also, that stood by the crosse, being shaken with the blowe, fell to the ground. Also a great smoake afterwards with a maruellous filthie smell, filled all the church, which continued long after: although the Monkes with holy water, and incenses, went about the houses of the Monasterie, singing Psalmes, &c.

Tempest of wind at London, more then fiue hundreth houses blowne downe.

And on the seuententh day of November, a mighty tempest of wind out of the South west, beat downe in London fiue hundred and six houses, and shaked the Churches, especially the Church of Saint Mary Bowe in Cheape, where the winde brake in with such a vehement force, that two men were therewith slaine in the Church, and the roofe being raised with the beames thereof were carried in the ayre a great while, and at the last fire of the saide beames were driuen with their fal so fast into the ground, that there appeared of some of them the seuenth, and of some the eight part, to wit, but foure foote aboue the ground: which beames or rafters were seauen and twentie or eight and twentie foote long, which was a wonderfull thing to sée them so pierce the ground (not paued then with stone) and there to stand in such order, as the workemen had placed them on the Church, vntill such time as they were cut euen by the ground. The Tower of London was also broken, &c. When king William had repaired such Castles as the Scottes had impayred, and builded the newe Castle vpon Tine, hee returning forth of Northumberland, came through Mercia into Westsex, and kept the Duke with him till Christmas, but he woulde not performe anie promise made with him, which the Duke taking grieuously passed

New Castle vpon Tine builded.

ouer

ouer into Normandie with Clito Edgare the twentie three of December.

Osmond Bishop of Salisbury founded the Cathedrall Church of old Salisbury and on the morrow after the dedication thereof, the steeple was fiered by lightning. 1091 Olde Salisburie Minster.

This yeere deceased Wido the 42. Abbot of S. Augustines by Canterburie. After whose buriall, the monkes of S. Augustines went to king William to obtaine licence to chose a new Abbot, which request was not onely denied them by the king, but he also charged them vpon a great paine, not to elect any, saying, that he would holde in his hands, all the Spirituall liuings in the whole realme, and would dispose of them at his pleasure: so the Monkes of Saint Austines returned frustrate of all hope vainly. Now it happened at the same time, there was in that Monasterie a certaine Monke, in religion yong, but graue in discretion, a Norman borne, and king Williams kinsman, by name called Hugh de Floriaco. This Hugh hauing beene a valiant souldier, had long serued king William the elder, and the saide king William Rufus, as well in Normandie, as in England. Hugh, as yet by profession a souldiour, on a certaine time comming to Canterbury with king William Rufus, vpon deuotion did visit S. Augustines church, where by Gods spectall grace, rauished with the loue of God, and delighting in the chaste life of the Monkes, he would not goe out of the limits of the monastery before he had procured to be made a monke and brother of the said monastery. Which being granted, the said Hugh went into Normandie, distributed his goods vnto his kinsemen, and to the poore, because he had no wife nor childe, and returned vnto the monastery, and put on the monkish habite, and so remained a Monke. The Abbot Wido being dead (as it is said) at the last it was decréed that two circumspect Monkes, together with the said Hugh, who had scarce continued one yéere of probation should bee sent to the king to procure his fauour by prater or price, that he would graunt them licence to elect an Abbot. When these presented themselues vnto the kings sight, and saw his cousin, who in time before had serued him in the brauerie of a souldier, to be now cloathed in habite of a monke, he was so dismaied in minde, that gushing out with teares he said, I do grant you this cousin of mine to be your Abbot, and at your petition I doe giue him the gouernement of the Abbey of Saint Augustine, neither do I permit you to chose any other, whom, vnlesse you doe presently receiue, I will shortly burne your Abbey to ashes. Then the Monkes seeing no remedy, submitted themselues to the kings will in the premisses. But the foresaid Hugh long time refused the honour, saying, that he was as well vnworthy, as insufficient, because he was a man in a manner vnlettered, and one that had verie little skill, aswel in religion, as in ecclesiasticall ordinances, but the king and the monkes forced him to accept the honour offered, neither did the king suffer him to depart from the Court before he were consecrated Abbot, which was done in the kings Chappell at Westminster, by Maurice Bishop of London. This Abbot did manie laudable acts to the great commodity of that church. King William moued warres against the Welchmen, but preuailed not, for he lost many of his best knights, and much cattell, as well at this time, as at other. W. Thorne. A souldiour became a monke, and was Abbot of Saint Augustines. *Anno reg. 5.*

1092 Iohn Bishoppe of Welles a Turon borne, by consent of king William for a great summe of money translated his bishops sea to Bathe.

This yeere a noble man of the Normans bloud named Picot, *vicecomes* or sherife, at ỹ request of Hugolin his wife, founded a church to the honor of God & S. Giles, neere vnto the castle of Cambridge, but afterward, to wit, *in an. 1102*, the Chanons were remoued to Barnwell, by Paine Peuerell. The Towne of Cambridge toke name of a fair large bridge, made ouer the riuer Grant there running, and so named Grantbridge (corruptly Cambridge:) it encreased by meane of this bridge, which was the ruine of Grantcester, sometimes a famous citie, situate little more then a mile from Grantbridge. The Castle was builded in the first yeere of William Conquerour, as maie appeare by the description in Doomes day Booke in the Exchequer, which hath thus. The borough of Grantbridge defended it selfe for one hundred in the time of Edward the K. In this borough haue bin, and yet are wards: in the first ward are 54. mansions, of them 2. be wasted: In this first warde Allan hath 5. burgesses that pay nothing, ỹ earle Norton hath 3. mansions of the land of Ludichel: and there be 3. burgesses, which in the time of Edward the K. paid 5. shillings and 8. pence halfepeny, at this day they pay nothing: Ralfe of Bant hath 3. burgesses that pay nothing. Roger seruant to Bishop Remigius hath 3. burgesses that paie nothin, Erchingor hath 1. burges that paieth nothing: this ward was accounted in the dates of king Ed. for 2. wards, but for the castle 27. houses were throwen down. In the second ward were 48. mansions in the time of king Ed. whereof 2. be wasted, of them 13 yéeld nothing, the other 32. pay all customes, Earle Allan hath of them 5. burgesses that yéeld nothing, and 9. remaine in the hands of the Englishmen. In the third ward were 41. mansions, of them 11. be wasted, the other 30. pay all customes. In the fourth ward were 45. mansions, of them 24. be wasted, the other 21. pay all customes. In the fift ward were fiftie mansions, one of them is wasted, all the rest pay the customes. In the seuenth ward were 37. mansions, 3. of those 37. Frenchmen haue, and pay nothing. In the eight ward were 37. mansions, a Priest holdeth one & paieth nothing, 3. are wasted. In the ninth ward were 32. mansions. In the tenth ward were 29. mansions, 7. of them are wasted, but yet they defend themselues. The customes payable for this towne were 7. pounds by yéere. And for Landgable 7. pounds, and 2. ores and 2. pence. The burgesses in the time of king Edward lent the sheriffe their carts thrise in the yéere: now they are demaunded nine times. They found neither boates nor wagons in the time of K. Edward, which they doe nowe by custome set vpon them. They claime of the Earle Picot a common pasture, which he hath taken from them. The same Picote hath made there three Milles, which taketh away the pasture, and destroieth manie houses, and one Mill of the Abbot of Ely, and an other of the Earle Allan, the Milles yéelde nine poundes the yéere. The same Earle Picot hath of the heriot of the Lagemans seuen pounds, and one palfrey, and one knights armor. Alurike Godricson when he was sheriffe had of one of them twenty shillings for a heriot. Thus much Doomes day for Grantbridge, whereof more shall be said in place conuenient.

The towne of Cambridge described.

Castle at Grantbridge builded in the time of William Conqueror.

Hugh

Hugh Lupus earle of Chester, sent into Normandy for Anselme, by his counsell to build an Abbey of S. Werbridge at Chester. Abbey of Chester.

King William lying sicke at Glouceſter, and thinking he ſhould haue died, his Barons put into his head, his promiſe to God and the world, that he would amend his life. And forthwith he gaue vnto Anſelme Abbot of Becco, the archbyſhoppricke of Canterburie: and to Robert Bloet, his chancellor, the biſhoppick of Lincolne. But when the king had recouered his health, he repented him that he had not ſold thoſe biſhoppricks for a great peece of money. Anſelme Archbyſhoppe of Canterburie.

Malcolme king of Scots comming into England was met withall, and ſodainely ſlaine, with his ſon and heire alſo, by Robert Mowbray Earle of Northumberland.

William Waren firſt earle of Surrey, and Gundred his wife, founded the abbey of Lewes in Suſſex. *An. reg. 6.* Lewes in Suſſex.

King William builded againe the Citie of Carlile, which was deſtroied by the Danes 200. yeres before: hee alſo builded a Caſtell there, and out of the South parts of England ſent men to inhabite. 1093 Carlile Citie & Caſtle builded.

This yere was a great famine: and after, ſo great a mortalitie, that the quicke were ſcante able to burie the dead.

King William made great wars in Normandy againſt his brother Robert, through the which both Englande and Normandie were ſore oppreſſed with exactions.

The Welſhmen ſpoiled the Citie of Glouceſter, with a part of Shrewſbury and won the Ile of Angleſey to their ſubiection. The Citie of Glouceſter ſpoiled by Welſhmen.

The Biſhoppricke of Thetford was tranſlated to Norwich, by Herbert being Byſhop there, ſometime Abbot of Ramſey. *An. reg. 7.*

King William ſent his brother Henry into Northumberlande with a great power, becauſe Robert Mowbray Earle of that country refuſed to come to the kings court: the countrey was ſpoiled, the Earle was taken, and many were diſherited, ſome had their eies put out, &c. 1094.

King William with a power entred Wales, but not being able to follow the Welſhmen among the hilles, he builded two Caſtelles in the borders, and returned. King William inuaded Wales.

Great preparation was made by the Chriſtians to go againſt the Infidels at Jeruſalem: Peter the hermite being their firſt leader, and after Godfrey of Lorraine, called Godfrey of Bolloigne. *An. reg. 8.* 1095

In a Councell holden at Saliſburie, William de Owe was accuſed to the king of treaſon, who whiles hee prouoked his accuſer to fight with him in combate, by the kings commandement his eies were plucked out, and his ſtones cut off. Manie innocent men were alſo accuſed, of which number was William de Aluerie, a man of goodlie perſonage, godfather to the king, his Aunts ſonne, and his ſeluer, yet the king commanded him to be hanged: which William making his confeſſion to Oſmond Byſhoppe of Saliſburie, was firſt whipped throughout by all the Churches of the citie, who dealing his garmentes to the poore, went naked to hanging, bloodying his fleſh with often kneeling vpon the ſtones: and at the place of execution, he ſatisfied the Biſhop and people, Councell at Saliſbury. Cruelty of W. Rufus.

ſaying,

saying, So God helpe my soule, and deliuer it from euill, as I am guiltlesse of the thing that I am accused of: and after the Bishop had commended him to God, he was hanged.

Annoreg.9. 1096 Marianus. Normandy pawned.

Robert duke of Normandy toke his iourney towards Ierusalem, and laid the dukedome of Normandie to gage to his brother King William for 6666. poundes of siluer. Paulus Aemilius sayeth 136oo. pound.

Blazing Star.

The 22. of September, a blazing starre was seene, and for the space of xv. daies after, the greatest bush whereof pointed toward the east, and the lesser toward the west. There were also starres seene, which did, as it were, shote out dartes one at another.

The Dukes Godfrey, Beamond, and Robert besieged the Citie of Nice with fiue thousande Horsemen, and tenne thousande Footemen, and toke the same, with the Wife of Soliman, and his Sonnes. They also toke the Citie of Antioch.

An. reg. 10. 1097

The Church of the holie Trinitie in Norwich was founded by Herueus, being first Bishop there.

King William went against the Welshmen.

King William returned out of Normandy into England, and after Easter with an army of horsemen & footemen, went the second time into Wales, that he might kill all the male kinde there, but hee coulde vneth kill or take one of them, notwithstanding of his owne people hee lost diuers, and also manie horses.

Clito Edgar sent against the Scots.

After this king William sent Clito Edgar into Scotland with an army, that he might make his cousin Edgar the son of king Malcolme king, and expulse Donwalde, which had inuaded the kingdome.

An. reg. 11. Abbots dyed.

About the feast of Saint Andrew, king William went into Normandie, and shortly after, to wit, in the moneths of December and Ianuary, deceased the Abbots of S. Edmundsbury, of Abindune, of Peterborow, of the new monastery at Winchester, and Walcherus Bishop of Winchester.

Peter Pictaui. 1098

This yeere king William builded Westminster hall.

King William making great warres in Normandie, subdued to his dominion the city of Mants, and a great part of that prouince: but in the meane time with tares, exactions, and tributes, he did not only poule, but shaue and flay the Englishmen.

Ile of Anglesey besieged, and the Welshmen slaine.

Hugh Earle of Chester, and Hugh Earle of Shrewsburie assailed the Ile of Anglesey with an armie, and slew manie Welshmen, whome they toke in it, and some they dismembred, by cutting off their handes and stones, and putting out their eies: and a certaine Priest called Kenredus, a man of great peeres, of whome the Welshmen toke their counsell, for all matters that they toke in hand, they drew him out of the Church, pulled out one of his eies, and cut out his Tongue.

Magnus king of Norway subdued the Ile of Man.

The same time Magnus king of Norway, the sonne of Olauus, the sonne of Harold Haruager, when he had subdued to his dominion the Iles of Orkeney, and of Man, with a few shippes hee arriued in the Ile of Anglesey, but when he would haue come a land with his vessels, Hugh earle of Shrewsburie with manie armed men of warre on the sea shore met him, and as it was then repor-

ted,

ted, by a shafte he was striken: he ended his life, and his brother Robert de Bellasme succeeded in his Earledome.

The Princes of the pilgrimes with their armies toke their iourney toward Ierusalem, besieged it, and toke it on the tenth of July, placing there a king, and a patriarke, and afterward fought with the Souldan of Egypt (who besieged them in Ierusalem) and ouercame him. *An. reg. 12.* 1099 The Christians wan Ierusalem

King William being returned out of Normandie into England, kept his feast of Whitsontide very royally at Westminster, in the new hall, which hee had lately caused there to be builded, the length whereof was 270. foot, and 74. foot in breadth: and when he heard men say that the hall was too bigge, and too great, he answered and saide, This Hall is not bigge ynough by the one halfe, and is but a bed chamber, in comparison of that I minde to make. A diligent searcher might yet finde out the foundation of the Hall, which he had purposed to build, stretching from the Riuer of Thames, euen vnto the common high way. As writeth H. Huntington, he chalenged the inuestiture of Prelates, he pilled and shaued the people, with tribute, especially to spend about the Towre of London, and the great Hall at Westminster. Westminster hall. T. Woodbridge. Mathew Paris.

King William hauing transferred into his treasurie three hundreth pounds by yere forth of the Bishoprieke of Durham, and fiue moneths being past of the fourth yere, from the death of William Bysshop of Durham, gaue the Bishoprieke to Ranulph, who for certaine excellent parts about the king was named the kings Chaplain, but some haue written that he gaue the king a thousand pound for that Bishoprieke. This Ranulph was first familiar with Maurice bishop of London, but falling at variance, because the Deanry was taken away from him, he went to the king in hope of a higher place, in which point his hope was not deceiued, for being admitted, and hauing a good wit and readie tongue, in short time he obtained to be preferred afore all other estates of England, who being called to be Procurator or Chancellor of the whole realme, did manie times behaue himselfe so prowdly, abusing his authoritie, that he little estéemed to offende many, who laboured with continuall accusations to cloud the cléere minde of the king toward him, whereof when they failed with vaine labour, they imagined how to haue killed him. For which cause, one Gerald, armed with audacitie and deceit of other, taking a boate with a fewe persons, met with the Chaplaine Ranulph at London, humbly requesting him that he would make spéed vnto his Master Mauricius Bishop of London, lying very sicke at his house vpon the riuer of Thames, who being almost readie to depart the world, greatly desired to speake with him. In affirming the trueth where of, he had brought a boate for him from his Master, wherein hee might more spéedily be carried. Lib. Dunelm. Ranulph Bysshop of Durham. The kings chancellor. The kings chancellor in great danger of death on the sea.

Ranulph suspecting nothing, entred the boat with a fewe of his companie, which boat Gerald with a straight course directed in the middle of the streame vnto the sea: and when the Chaplaine demanded why they rowed so long, and did not turne to the shore, they fayned that the port was further off, where they should haue conuenient place to land.

In the meane time the Chaplaine perceiuing a great shippe to lie at an-

chor

The kings chancellour cast the great and priuie seales into the sea.

thor in the midst of the floude, which, as it seemed, awayted for his comming, did presentlie suspect the deuise of their deceit. And beeing transported vnto the suspected Shippe, in the which was harboured a great number of armed men, perceyuing no hope to escape, hee cast the Ring which he ware on his finger into the Sea: and his Secretarie did throwe his Seale into the midst of the floude, lest throughe those Seales the state of thinges might bee disturbed by counterfeyte processes, and Writtes set foorth by the deceyuing enemie. After this his men are set ouer, beeing first bounde with an othe, not to disclose anie thing of the stealing awaie of their Maister.

Nowe the Shippe leauing the Riuer, with hoised sailes, entred the déepe Sea, directing their course towardes the South, and Ranulph sitting in the foreparte of the Shippe. There arose a contention among the shipmen for the manner of his death: and two are chosen forth, either to heaue him into the sea, or to knocke out his braines, who shoulde for rewarde obtaine those garments wherewith hee was clothed: of which persons, when the one woulde haue his roabe or vppermost garment, and the other woulde also possesse the same, this contention protracted time of his death. At length there sodaynelie arose a fierce winde from the South, which troubled the Sea from the verie bottome, and the Heauens were couered with darkenesse. Which tempest so tossed the Boate hither and thither, that they coulde neyther goe forwarde, nor returne backe againe to land. And when the Mast and Cables were broken, the ship was not onelie carried on the water, but she also carried in her the water, nothing being more certaine then death to them all, which they looked for, onelie such was the course of the Sea, that the shippe was returning to the place from whence she came, and yet the waues beating her backe, the murderers, a new determine for the death of the chaplaine, lest he escaping shoulde reuenge such iniurie.

But one which was next to Gerald in the shippe, abhorring this wickednes, and beeing néere to the Chaplaine with sorowfull repetition sayde, Out alas, Ranulph, thou shalt nowe be murdered, but if thou wilt pardon me this wicked conspiracie, I will stand by thee to thy defence, as a companion of thy life or death. Whereunto he (as he was alwaies bold spirited) with great noise calling vpon him, saide: What dost thou thinke Gerald? What dost thou request of vs? Thou art my man, thou owest faith to me, call backe thy mind from the wicked déede thou intendest, demaunde what thou wilt, for I am he that giue more then thou canst demaunde. Then Gerald, not so much allured by words, as feared with the authoritie of the man, did consent, and bringing him out of the shippe, nowe beaten to the shore, did procure him honourable furniture, at his owne house. But not trusting the former promises, he procured his owne safetie by banishment into perpetuall exile. Ranulph therefore calling knights together, is brought to London with manie armed men, and a great noise of people, to the astonishment of all men, supposing him to haue béene slaine, he as then was sodainly reuiued, and set againe as executor of the kings affaires, and receiued the Bishoprieke of Durham, being consecrated in the Church of Saint Paul in London.

The kings chancellour escapeth death and is made B. of Durham.

The

King William being a hunting in the new Forrest, word was brought him that his people were besieged in Maine: he forthwith tooke shipping, though he were vehemently perswaded to the contrary, for that there was at that time a great tempest: to whome he answered, he neuer heard that anie king was drowned. At this time he got more honour then euer he did in all his life, for he chased his enimies, and returned with victorie. King Williams courage, and his words.

This yeere, as well in Scotland as in England, on the third day of November the sea brake in ouer the banks of the Thames and other riuers, drowning manie townes, & much people, with innumerable numbers of oxen and sheepe: at which time, the lands in Kent, that sometime belonged to Duke Godwyne, Earle of Kent, were couered with sandes and drowned, which are to this daie called Godwyne sandes. *An. reg. 13.* Hector Boetius. Great waterfloods. Godwyne lands.

Osmond Bishop of Salisburie deceased.

King William returning out of Normandy, kept his Christmasse at Glocester. 1100

The Monasterie of Glocester, which Abbot Serle had builded from the foundation, was now dedicated. W. Malmes.

This yeere many strange things came to passe, the diuell did visible appeare vnto men, and sometime spake vnto them. Diuels appeared to men.

Moreouer, in the Towne of Finchhamsted in Barkshire, neere vnto Abindune, a spring did continuallie by the space of fifténe daies flowe plentifullie with blood (or the likenesse thereof) so that it did colour and infect the next water brooke vnto it. Of which thinges, when men tolde the king thereof, hee laughed them to scorne, and gaue no credite to them, neither yet to his owne dreames, nor the visions that other men told him of. A spring ran the likenes of blood.

King William on the morrowe after Lammas daie, hunting in the newe Forrest of Hampshire, in a place called Chorengham, where since a Chappell was builded, sir Walter Tirell shooting at a deere, vnawares hit the king in the breast, that he fell downe stark dead, and neuer spake word. His men (especially that knight) got them away, but some came back again, & laid his body vpon a Colliars cart, which one sélie leane beast did draw vnto the Citie of Winchester, where he was buried on the morrow after his death, at whose buriall, men could not weepe for ioie. King Williams slayne.

This king was taken out of this world in the midst of his vnrighteousnesse, who being wicked to his owne people, and to strangers, was most wicked to himselfe. The countries about him he prouoked with wars, and England was so miserably oppressed vnder him, that it could not recouer, for he and his traine spoiled and subuerted all thinges. William Rufus troubled the lands about him with wars, and oppressed his owne people.

He died in the yeere of Christ, 1100. and in the 13. yeere of his raigne, on the second day of August, when he had raigned 12. yeres 11. moneths, lacking eight daies, and was buried at Winchester, in the Cathedrall Church or Monasterie of Saint Swithen, vnder a plaine flat te marble stone, before the lectorne in the quére, but long since his bones were translated in a Coffer and laide with king Knutes bones. He gaue vnto the Monkes called de charitate in Southwarke, the great newe Church of Saint Sauiour of Bermondes-eye, which

which he had caused to be builded for them, and also his manor of Bermondsey it selfe, with all the pertinances, and confirmed vnto them all whatsoeuer Alwyn Child their first founder, Robert Bysshop of Lincolne, (who also gaue to them the towne of Charleton) or other had giuen vnto them.

Lib. Bermond. He also of an olde Monasterie of Monkes in the Citie of Yorke, founded an Hospitall, and dedicated it to Saint Peter, for the sustentation and finding of the poore as well men as women, which Hospitall was since greatly augmented by king Stephen, and by him dedicated to Saint Leonard.

Henry Beauclerke.

Annoreg. 1. Io. Rouse.

HEnry, the yongest sonne of William Conquerour, borne in England, at a place called Selby in Lincolneshire, brother to William Rufus, and the first of that name, for his learning called Beauclerke, brought vp in the studie of the liberall artes at Cambridge, chiefly through the trauaile of Henry Newborow Earle of Warwike, (who appeased all debates of that time to the contrarie) obtained the dominion ouer this Realme of England, and began his raigne the second of August, in the yeare of our Lord 1100. and was crowned at Westminster on the first day of August, by Maurice Bysshoppe of London, because at that time Anselme Archbishop of Canterburie, was by persecution of William Rufus exiled.

Tho. Rudborne, W. Malmes.

Gerua. Dore.

This Henry was a noble Prince, strong and mighty of body, high of stature, and amiable of countenance, blacke haired, and that somewhat long about the eyebrowes, faire eies, broad breasted, well in flesh, full of merie conceites. Hee was excellent in wit, eloquent in speech, and fortunate in battaile, and for these three hee had three notable vices, Couetousnesse, Crueltie and Lecherie.

Hee maried Mawde the daughter of Malcolme and Margaret, King and Quæne of Scots, of whom he begate William and a daughter named Mawd. At the beginning of his raigne, he restored the state of the Cleargie, allwaged the grieuous paiments, reduced againe Saint Edwards lawes, and amended them. He put out of his Court all nice and wanton persons.

Measures reformed. He reformed the olde vntrue measures, and made a measure by the length of his owne arme, which was then called Vlno, an Elle, and now the same is called a yard, or a metwand, &c.

Vse of fire and lights restored. He restored to his subiects the vse of lights in the night, which lights and also fire, had been forbidden by his father to be vsed, after the ringing of a bell, at eight of the clocke at night.

Edgar king of the Scots did homage to this Henry.

Priory of S. Iohn of Hierusalem. This yeare Iordan Briset Baron, the sonne of Rause, the sonne of Brian Briset, founded the house of Saint Iohn of Hierusalem, neere vnto London, by Smithfield.

The

The same Iordan gaue 14. acres of ground lying in the field next adioining vnto Clerkenwell, to build thereupon a house of nuns, wherein he with Muriel his wife, were both buried in the Chapter house. Clerken well.

Robert Shorthose Duke of Normandie, the kinges eldest brother, which was now returned from Hierusalem, made warre vpon his brother Henry for the Crowne of England, who assembled a strong armie, and landed at Portesmouth, but by mediation a peace was made, on condition, that Henry should pay 3000. marks yerelie to duke Robert: and if the one died without issue, the longer liuer should inherit. Winchester was brent the 17. of May, and Glocester was brent the 20. of May. 1101 *An. reg. 2.*

Robert Fitzham, who came with the Conquerour out of Normandie, with Sibell his wife, sister to Robert Belasme Earle of Shrewsburie, founded anew the Church of Theukesburie, with the offices thereto belonging, and inriched it with large possessions, and was there buried. Theukesburie builded.

Robert de Belasme Earle of Shrewsburie, eldest Sonne to Roger Mountgomerie, strengthened the Towne and Castell of Shrewsburie, so did hee the Castels of Bridgenorth, Tichile, and Arundell, with victualles and armed men against king Henrie: but the king being warned thereof, he gathereth his power and besiegeth Bridgenorth, which Towne was yelded vnto him. And this being knowne to them of Arundell, they forthwith submitted themselues, with condition, that their Lord Robert de Belasme, might be permitted freelie to passe into Normandy. Also they of Shrewsbury sent the keies of their castell, and pledges of their obeisance, and then Robert, with his brother Ernulfus and Roger of Poytiers abiured this land for euer. 1102 Earle of Shrewsburie rebelled. *An. reg. 3.*

This yere the Priorie and Hospitall of S. Bartholomew in Smithfield was begun to be founded by Rahere (a man of a singular and pleasant wit, & therefore of many called the kings iester and minstrel) in a place which before had beene a marish ground, a common laistaw of all ordure & filth, & the place where felons and other transgressors were executed. This Rahere ioined vnto him a certain old man named Alfune, that had (not long before) builded the parish church of S. Giles, nigh a gate of the city of London, then called Creeples gate: this man he vsed as a counseller & companion in his building of the Church and Hospitall, and the one of them, to wit, Rahere, became the first Prior of that priory, & the other, to wit, Alfune, became hospitaller or proctor for the poore, & went himselfe daille to the shambles, & other markets, where he begged the charitie of deuout people for their releefe, promising to the liberall giuers (alleaging testimonies of holy scripture) reward at the hands of God. Priorie and hospitall of S. Bartholomew. Saint Giles at Creeple gate of London.

King Henry inuested two of his Chaplaines, Roger his chancellor, in the Bishopricke of Salisbury, Roger his Larder, in the Bishopricke of Hereford, at Westminster. 1103

King Henry gaue the earledome of Leicester to Robert Beamont earle of Pilent, that came in with William Conqueror. This Robert new founded the colledge of secular Chanons in the castel of Leicester, before by wars defaced, Rob. the second surnamed de Bosu, his son Earle of Leicester, and Amicia his wife, for Robert his father, and Isabell his mother, founded an Abbey to the honour Robert Beamont, Earle of Leicester.

of

of God, and the virgin Mary, in the meadowes without the north gate of Leicester for Canons Regular, naming the same Church S. Mary *de prato, in Anno. 1144.* he indowed it with lands, &c. Robert duke of Normandie comming into England, through the subtiltie of king Henry his yonger brother, released to him the tribute of three thousand marks of siluer, which he should haue receiued yerelie.

Yonger brother beguileth the elder. *An. reg. 4.*

Hugh Lacy founded the monasterie of S. Iohn at Lanthony, the Chanons of which place were since translated by Miles, high constable, and earle of Hereford, to a place nere vnto Glocester, then called Hide, since called Lanthony.

Lanthony by Glocester.

Iuga Baynard ladie of little Donmow, caused Maurice Bishop of London to dedicate the church of Donmow which she had founded, and the same day she gaue to it halfe a hide of land. This lady Iuga was late wife to Baynard, that first builded Baynards castell in London.

Dunmow in Essex.

1104

William earle of Morton was disherited of all his lands in England, and all his castels made leuell with the ground, and the countrey sore vexed with the kings exactions.

William earle Morton disherited. W. Malmes.

Now the flames of wars being translated into Normandy, preuailed there, being kindled by the assemblies of traitours, as with fire which catcheth in all thinges that is about it. Normandie is a patient sufferer of mischiefes, though it be no large region: it doeth tolerate sedition verie long, and by restoring of peace ariseth into a fertile state of substance, letting out the broylemaker into France with free passage. Contrariwise, England doth not suffer rebels long. Robert de Belasme earle of Shrewsbury comming into Normandy, hauing confederates of his wickednes, among whom was W. Morton, the son of Robert the kings vncle, who from his childhood euer enuied the glory of Henry, for not content with two earledomes of Morton in Normandy, & Cornwall in England, he required the earledome of Kent, which his vncle Odo held, being so presumptuous, ý he would say, he would not put on his vppermost garment, except he might obtain of his vncle his desired possessions. But the K. delaying him with subtil answeres, did not onlie denie him that which he demanded, but began to challenge from him such things, as he said, he held vnlawfully: whereupon the said William being disherited of all his landes in Englande, in a rage got him into Normandy, where besides the daine assaults he made against the kings Castels, he raged against Richard Earle of Chester, the sonne of Hugh, inuading, taking, and spoiling such things as appertained vnto him, who was then but a child in yeres, and in the kings wardship.

There appeared about the Sun foure circles, and a blazing star.

An. reg. 5.

1105

King Henrie raised a great armie, and passed the Sea into Normandie, against his brother Robert, and got the Towne and Castell of Cane, and brent Bayon, with the Church of S. Mary, by the help of the President of Angeow, & many Castels more he wan, whereupon the Prioures of Normandy submitted themselues vnto king Henry. The Flemings hauing a great parte of their countrey drowned, came vnto England, and obtained a place to inhabite in, nigh the Riuer of Twede, but afterward they were remoued thence, and sent into West Wales.

King Henry sayled into Normandy.

Endo

Endo Dapifer or Sewer to king Henry, founded the Monasterie of Saint John in Colchester of regular Chanons of Saint Austens rule, commonly called blacke Chanons, and this house was the first that euer was erected in England of that order. King Henry hauing set things in an order in Normandie, he sailed and returned into England, that hee might increase his strength and returne againe. *An. reg. 6.* S. John of Colchester.

Robert duke of Normandy came to his brother at Northampton, and friendly required him to beare brotherlie loue toward him, but king Henry feeling his conscience accusing him, for obtaining the kingdome by defrauding of his elder brother, and fearing men more then God, first hee reconciled the nobles of the Realme with faire promises, thinking afterwards to make amends for his great wrongs, by founding of an Abbey, which he purposed to build. 1106 *An. reg. 7.*

The Duke returning into Normandy, the king followed with a great power, where betweene them were manie sore battayles fought, but at the last the valiant and most stout man Robert was taken, and William earle of Morton, Robert de Belesme, William Crispine, & other, to the number 400. men of armes, but Robert de Belesme escaped, when hee sawe that manie of his men were taken.

This yéere appeared a blazing starre, from three of the cloke till nine, and on the Maundie Thursdaie was séene two full Mones, one in the East, and an other in the West.

The first Chanons entred into the church of our Lady in Southwarke called S. Mary Ouery, founded by William Pountlarge knight, and William Dancys Normans, William Gifford Byshoppe of Winchester assisting them in that worke. Algodus was first Prior there. S. Mary Ouery.

When king Henry had set in order Normandie according to his pleasure, he returning into England, brought with him his brother Robert, and William of Morton, and put them in perpetuall prison: from whence shortlie after duke Robert deceiuing his keepers, sought to scape, but he was taken as he fled, sitting on his horse in a deepe mire and tough clay where he stucke fast: and by his brothers commaundement had his eies put out, and kept straiter till his dying daie, which was about 26. yeares after, when hee pined awaie for sorrowe and griefe of mind. 1107 *An. reg. 8.* K. Henry put out the eies of his elder brother Robert.

It appeareth by the priuate historie of Dunstable, that in the ioining of the two high wales of Watling and Ikening, there were great woods, which were felled by king Henrie, to represse the euilles that were there committed by one Dunne, a most famous theefe of that time, of whom the place was called Dunstable, the said king therefore built there a Borow, by the which he also erected a pallace for himselfe, making the Burgesses there as free as anie other Burgesses of the Realme were, to the which towne the king granted both Faire and Market. Histo. Dunsta. The towne and Prior of Dunstable.

And this yéere he began there to build a faire church or priory, placing therein regular Chanons, and gaue to Peter the first Prior, and his successors there seruing God, the towne of Dunstable and 4. cultures of land about the towne, with great priuiledges, as appeareth by his Letters Patents, this Priory was Record.

valued at the generall suppression to dispend by the yeere, 3441l. 14.s. 3.d. &c.

Towne and castle of Windsor.

Also this yeere king Henry began to builde the newe Castell with the Chappell and Towne of Windsore, on the hill, one mile from the olde Towne of Windlesore.

This yeere Maurice Byshoppe of London, Robert Fitzhamon, Roger Bigot, founder of the monasterie of Monkes at Thetford, Richard de Reduers Counsellers to the king, Milo Crispen, and manie other Noble men of England deceased, Richard de Bewmes was elected Byshoppe of London, and was consecrated by Anselme at Pageham, Gundulphus Byshop of Rochester deceased, after whome succeeded Radulphus.

1108 Gerard Archbyshop of Yorke deceased at Southwell, when he had sate archbyshop 7. yeeres, and almost 6. moneths, and was buried at Yorke. Thomas the yonger, the kings Chaplaine, provost of Beuerlake succeeded.

Priorie of the Trinitie in London founded.

This yeere the Priory of the holy Trinity, within Aldgate of London, was founded by Matild the Queene, in the parishes of Mary Magdalene, Saint Michael, Saint Katherine, and the holy Trinitie, all which are now but one parish of Christs Church: in old time called holy Rode parish: she gaue to the same Priorie the port of Aldgate, with the Stocke thereunto belonging, which was of her demaines, and is now called Aldgate ward.

Flemings sent into Wales. *An. reg. 9.*

King Henry with sundrie expeditions brought vnder him the Welshmen, and to pull downe their stoutnes, he sent al the Flemings that inhabited England thither, which Fleminges of late were come hither, when a great part of Flanders was drowned, & also in time of his father, by alliance of his mother, in so much, that through their greate multitude they séemed grieuous to the realme: wherefore he sent them al with their substance and kindred into Rose in Penbrokeshire, a country in Wales, as into a sinck, that he might cleanse the realme of such noisome people, and also suppresse the wildenesse of the enimie: and not long after hee made expedition thither, compelling the Welshmen to giue him for pledges the sons of the Nobilitie, with some mony, and much cattell, and returned.

1109 Henry Emperour of Rome, sent Messengers into England, requiring to haue Mawde the kings daughter giuen him in marriage, which was granted by the king, who then tooke three shillinges of euerie hide of lande through England.

Three shillings of euery hide of land to the king

Canterburie recordes.

Anselme Archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

The 21. of Aprill Anselme Archbyshop of Canterburie deceased, and on the next morrow after being on thursday was buried at Canterburie, when he had sate archbishop 12. yeeres, being of the age of 76. yeeres, he bestowed on Christs Church in Canterburie much money, as well in building, as in ornaments, he wrote many bookes vpon the holy Scriptures, he was twise expelled the realme, at the first for three yeeres, and wanted the whole profites of his Byshoppricke. The seconde banishment was almost foure yeeres long, and liued onelie two yeeres after the second returning. After whose decease, King Henrie assumeth the custome of his father, and brother, and inuadeth as well the possessions of the archbyshop of Canterburie then void, as of al. & ante that fell void. And putteth extremely in execution the decrees of the Synode at London, touching priests wiues,

wiues, eracting of them great summes of money, and at the last without respect, alloweth imposition in that respect vpon euerie Church, which diuers therein not guilty did euill like, and much curse. The archbishoprick was void, after the death of Anselme fiue yéeres and fiue daies, the king receiuing the reuennes, as from the beginning. He made saleable all spirituall promotions, selling to his Chaplaine Ragnolph the bishoprick of Durham for a thousand pounds, and Harbert losing the bishoprick of Thetford, &c.

Bishoprickes & other spirituall promotions sold for money. *An. reg. 10.*

Richard the tenth, and last Abbot of Ely deceased, and was buried among his predecessours at Ely. This Richard being a man of great wit, perceiuing that the ancient priuiledges of his house were dailie violated, by sundrie great personages, especiallie, by the Bishop of Lincolne, who challenged episcopall iurisdiction ouer the house, notwithstanding that the same was clearly exempt therefro by their auncient priuiledges, went to the king, and dealt with him in such sort, that he obtayned his regall consent, to chaunge the Abbey into a bishoprick: vnto the which place was named for the first bishop one Harueus then bishop of Bangor. And because there was yet no prouince assigned, where this new bishop should haue iurisdiction, the king sent for the Bishop of Lincolne Robert, and of him obtained, that the countrey then called Grantbridge might bee his Prouince, and gaue vnto the Bishop of Lincolne the manor of Spaldwicke, in recompence of the iurisdiction which hee before had ouer the countie of Grantbridge, and so Haruie was placed in the Bishoprick.

Lib. Eliì.

Ely made a bishops See.

A Comet appeared after a strange fashion, for it was risen out of the east, and ascended vpwards.

1110

A great Earthquake was at Shrewsbury, and the water of Trent at Nottingham was dried vp from one of the clocke, till three, by the space of a mile, that men might passe ouer the chanell drie shod.

An. reg. 11. Floriacen.

King Henry married Robert his bastarde sonne to Mawde, daughter and heire to Robert Fitzham, and made him the first Earle of Gloceſter, who after builded the Castelles of Bristowe and Cardiffe, with the Priorie of Saint Iames in Bristowe, where his bodie was buried. And his sonne Earle William began the Abbey of Kensham.

Earle of Gloceſter. Castles at Bristow and Cardiffe. Saint Iames at Bristow. Kensham.

King Henry went into Normandy to make war against the earle of Angew, which kept Maine against the kings will, and spoiled the whole countrie.

1111

An. reg. 12. Mathew Paris. Cro. Dun.

William Baynard, vnder whome Ladie Iuga held the title of Dunmow, by misfortune lost his Baronie, and king Henrie gaue it wholie to Robert Fitz Richard the sonne of Gilbert Earle of Clare, and to his heires, together with the honour of Baynardes Castell in London, and the appurtenances. This Robert was Cupbearer or Butler to the king. Robert fitz Richard marryed Mawde de Saint Licio, Ladie of Bradham, shee gaue two partes of the towne of Bradham to the Chanons of Dunmow.

Robert Fitz Richard.

About this time, Geffrey Clinton, Treasurer and Chamberlaine to king Henry the first, founded the Priorie at Kenelworth of regular Chanons, Gefsery Clinton the yonger, confirmed to the Chanons all which Gefferey his father gaue them, except those Landes which his father reserued, to make his Castell and Parke on in Kenelworth.

1112

An. reg. 13. Kenelworth Priorie and Castell founded. Lib. Ken.

Mathew Paris.

This yere was a sharpe Winter, great dearth and mortalitie of men, and murraine of beasts of the field, and also of the house, and a great destruction of fowles.

1114 *An. reg. 13.* Floriacen. Cro. Hautenprice.

The Citie of Worcester, the chiefe Church, the Castell and all other buildinges, one of the Monkes, with two seruants, and fiftéene Citizens, were all burnt the twentith daie of July. The Cathedrall Church of Exceter was new builded, by William Warwast Bishop of Exceter, he also founded the monasterie of Plimpton in Deuonshire.

The king subdued the Welshmen.

1114 *An. reg. 14.* Maude daughter to Henry the first, married to Themperor.

The king caused all his nobles to sweare to William his sonne, whome hee had by Quéene Matilde. He also gaue his daughter Matild, she being but fiue yéeres old, vnto Henry the Emperour, she was maried to him at Ments, and there consecrated Empresse.

Thames and Medway dried vp. Tho. de Wike. Walter. Couen. Iohn Taxtor. William Shepheard. Lib. Roffensis.

The tenth of October, the riuer of Medway, by no small number of miles, did so faile of water, that in the midst of the Chanell the smallest vesselles and boates could not passe. The selfe same daie the Thames did suffer the like lack of water, for betweene the Tower of London and the Bridge, and vnder the bridge, not onelie with horse, but also a great number of men and children did wade ouer on foote, which defect of water did endure the space of two daies.

Chichester burnt

The city of Chichester, with the principall monastery was burnt.

A blazing starre.

There was manie stormes, and a blazing Starre.

Thomas Archbyshop of Yorke deceased, and Thurston the kings Chaplaine is elected to that See.

1115 *An. reg. 16.* Liber Trinitatis Knighten Gild, now Portsoken warde.

This yére through an hard Winter, almost all the Bridges in Englande were borne downe with yce.

Edgar sometime king of England graunted vnto thirtéene knights a portion of ground without the walles of the City of London, left voide in the East part of the same Citie, together with a gilde, which he named Knighten Gilde, that now is called Portsoken warde, and now the Church of the holie Trinity being founded within Aldgate of London by Matild then Quéene, as is afore shewed. The successours of those knightes, to witte, Radulphus Fitz Algode, Winiard le Douersne, &c. Gaue the foresaide landes called Knighten Gild, to the same Church: but Othowerus, Accoliuillus, Otto, and Geffrey Earles of Eassex, Constables of the Towre of London by succession, withheld by force a portion of the same land, that is to say East Smithfield, néere to the Towre, to make a vinepard, and would not depart from it by any meanes til the second yeere of king Stephen, when the same was adiudged and restored to the church of the holie Trinitie.

1116 First Parliament at Salisburie.

This yeere on the 19. day of Aprill K. Henry called a councell of all the states of his realme, both of the Prelates, Nobles, and Commons, to Salisbury, there to consult for the good gouernment of the common Wealth, and the waighties affaires of the same, which Councell taking the name and fame of the French, is called Parliament. And this doe the Historiographers note to bee the first Parliament in England, and that the kings before that time were neuer wont to cal any of their commons or people to councell or lawmaking, &c.

King

King Henry sayled into Normandy with a great army against the king of France, who with the Earle of Flanders, and other went about to make William sonne to Robert Courroyce Duke of Normandy, but at king Henries arriuall, they returned home without honour. King Henry lay at Roane, and had great exactions out of England. *An. reg. 14.* Cro Peter.

This yeere king Henry began the foundation of the Abbey of Cerceſter, or Churnecheſter, which ſtandeth vpon Churne riuer. There was in this place before the Conqueſt, a faire and rich Colledge of Prebends, Reimedus Chancellor to king Edward the Confeſſor was Deane of this houſe, and buried in the body of the church of Churnecheſter, as appeareth by ẏ Epitaph on his tombe. King Henry also builded there the hoſpitall of S. Iohn, &c. Cerceſter Abbey founded.

The Towne of Peterborow with the ſtately Church there, was burned downe to the ground. Also the Citie of Bath was burnt the ſame yeere. Peterborow burned.

In March was exceeding lightning, and in December thunder and hayle: and the Mone at both times ſeemed to be turned into blood. 1117

The Priorie of Merton beganne to be founded in Anno 1092. by Gilbert a Norman, Earle of Surrey, Cambridge, and Huntington, this yeere he put Chanons regular there vnder Prior Robert. Merton priory.

This yeere in Lombardy was an Earthquake, continued forty daies, which ouerthrewe many houſes, and that which was marueilous to be ſeene, a towne was moued from his ſeate and ſet a good way off. Tempeſt and Earthquake. Florilegus.

King Henry had Morcard king of Ireland, and his ſucceſſours ſo obedient vnto him, that they would do nothing but what he commanded.

King Henry for his pleaſure deſired the wonderfull things of other Countries, as Lyons, Leopards, Linces, and Camels, of the which England hath none, craning them from kings, with great pleaſure, hee had a Parke called Woodſtocke, in which he kept ſuch ſtrange things, he put there amongſt other, a beaſt called Stryr, or otherwiſe called a Porpentine ſent him from William of Mountpillar, which beaſt amongſt the Affricanes is counted as a kinde of Hedgehogge, couered with pricking briſtles, which they ſhote out naturally on the dogges that purſue them, &c. *Annoreg. 18.* Wild beaſts in Woodſtocke parke.

Mathilde the Queene wife to king Henry of England, deceaſed at Weſtminſter, and was there buried in the Queeneſtrie of Saint Peters Monaſterie. She was in her tender yeeres brought vp amongſt the Nunnes at Wincheſter and Rumſey, in the exerciſes of learning and vertue. She founded the Priorie of Chriſtes Church within the Eaſt gate of London, called Aldgate, with an Hoſpitall of Saint Giles in the fielde, without the Weſt part of the ſame Citie. 1118 Matild the Qu. deceaſed. Mathew Paris. Mathilds Hoſpitall.

This Matilde, when ſhe ſawe the waie to be dangerous for them that trauailed by the Olde forde ouer the riuer of Lue (for ſhe her ſelfe had beene well waſhed in that water) cauſed two ſtone bridges to bee builded, in a place one mile diſtant from the Olde forde. Of the which, one was ſituated ouer Lue at the head of the towne of Stratford, nowe called Bowe, becauſe the bridge was arched like vnto a bow, a rare piece of worke, for before that time the like had neuer beene ſeene in England. The other ouer the little broke, Bridges, and an high way made ouer the riuer of Lie at Stratford.

commonly called Chanelsebridge. She made the kings high waie of grauell betwéene the two bridges. Moreouer, she gaue Manors, and a Mille, commonly called Wiggon Mille to the abbesse of Barking, for the repayring of the bridges and high waie. But afterwarde, Gilbert de Mountfichet builded the Abbey of Stratford in the marishes, the Abbot therof by giuing a piece of money, purchased to himselfe the Manors and Mill aforesaide, and couenanted to repaire the bridges and waie. Till at length, hee laide the charge vpon one Godfrey Prat, allowing him certaine loaues of bread daily, that he should repaire the bridges and way. Who being holpen by the aide of trauailers, did not onely performe the charge, but also was a gainer to himselfe: which thing the Abbot perceiuing, he withholdeth from him parte of the bread promised. Whereupon, Godfrey demaundeth a tole of the wayfaring men, and to them that denied, hee stopped the waie, till at the length, wearied with toyle, hee neglecteth his charge, whereof came the decay and ruine of the stone bridges and way.

Now concerning these three middle bridges of Lue, of the which, two be builded of stone, they be proper to three milles: whereof, one the Maister of S. Thomas of Acres in London made, the other the Maisters of the Bridgehouse of London, two of them which belong to Eller, the Abbot of Stratforde is bound to repaire. The third the Bridgemasters of London, for the land was escheated the 37. of Henry the third.

An. reg. 19. Knights of the Temple. About this time, certaine noble men of the horsemen being religiously bent, bound themselues in the hands of the Patriarke of Hierusalem, to serue Christ after the manner of regular Chanons, in chastitie, and obedience, and to renounce their owne proper will for euer. Of which order, the first was the honourable man Hugh Paganus, and Gawfride de Saint Andemare: and where at the first, they had no certaine habitation, Baldwine king of Hierusalem graunted them a dwelling place in his pallace by the Temple, and the Chanons of the same Temple gaue them the streete thereby to build their houses of office in, and the Patriarche, the king, the Nobles, and Prelates gaue them certaine reuenues out of their Lordships. Their first profession was for safegarde of the Pilgrimes, to kéepe the waies, against the lying in waite of théeues. About 10. yéeres after, they had a rule appointed them, and a white habite by Pope Honorius, at that time, where they had béene nine in number, they began to increase into great numbers.

Afterward in time of Pope Eugenius, they had Crosses of red cloth sowed on their vppermost garments, to be knowen from others thereby: and in short time, because they had their first mansion hard by the Temple of our Lorde in Hierusalem, they were called knights of the Temple.

1119 This yere deceased Robert Beaumount Earle of Leicester, and William earle Morton was deliuered out of the Tower of London.

Many sore battels were fought in France, and Normandie, betwéene the king of England, and of France.

King Henry made peace with Fulco the Earle of Angewe, taking his daughter to bee wife to his sonne William, whome he had now made inher-

tour

tour of all his kingdoines. After that, by the aduice of all his Lords, hee made peace with the king of Fraunce, and with the Earle of Flaunders: in the which peace, his sonne William toke Normandie into his possession, to hold the same of the king of France. Peace with France *An. reg. 20.*

This yeere was a great Earthquake in manie places of Englande, on the eight and twentie daie of September, about the thirde houre of the daie. 1120 Earthquake.

King Henry in the euening of the 24. day of Nouember, minding to returne into England, losed from land at Barbefleete, and the wind brought him prosperouslie to his kingdome. *An. reg. 21.*

But William his son, somewhat more then 17. yeeres of age, who through his fathers kingdomes, lacked nothing but the name of a king, commanded an other ship to be prepared for him, all the yong sons of the nobilitie flocking thither for the company of him, as their play-feere: and the sailers also tippled with to much wine, in lustines bragged that they would quicklie leaue the other behind, that went out before them. So in the darknes of the night, the youth lacking wisedome, and ouercharged with drinke, discharged the ship from the land: the saileth swift as an arrow, and cutting through the dauncing floods, by the negligence of the drunken sailers, dasheth vpon a rocke aboue water, not far from land. The poore soules rose with great crie, bestirred them with their pyned staues, long labouring to get the shippe from the rocke: but fortune was against them, bringing their paines to no purpose: so the side of the shippe, leaning against the rocke, cracked, and the broken Sterne hung downe: nowe it did cast some into the sea, and the water comming in, drowned other, when with casting out a boate, the kings sonne was taken in, and might haue beene saued by returning to land, had not his base sister the Countesse of Perche, wrastling with death in the great ship, craued her brothers helpe. He moued with pitie, commanded the boate to be rowed to the shippe, that he might take in his sister, and straightwaie the Boate did sinke, being ouerladen with the great companie that leaped in, and so drowned them all, onelie one clowne escaped, which swimming all night vpon the Mast, shewed all the chaunce of the tragedie in the morning. There was neuer Shippe so miserable to England, nor so famous abroade. There was drowned with William, Richard the kinges other Sonne that hee begate before his kingdome, of one of his Subiectes. Richard earle of Chester, & his brother Otwele the kings sons Tutor, the Countesse of Perche, the kings daughter named Marie, and his niece the Countesse of Chester, sister to Theobald, William Bigot, Geffrey Riddle, Walter de Curcie, Geffrey Archdeacon of Hereford, and also manie the best knightes, ant Chaplaines that were in the Court, and noble mens sonnes fit to be knights, to the number of 160. persons, they came together to shew the kings son sport, or do him anie seruice they could: but they made the miserie the more, that they could not bee easilie founde, for searchers being placed all along vpon the sea coasts, found scantlie one of them. For the bodies were gone to be fode to the Monsters of the Sea. W. Malmes. The kings children drowned.

King Henrie marryed Adalisia, daughter to Godfrey Duke of Louan, at Ely King Henry married the duke of Louans daughter.

1121 Ely on the third day of January, who was consecrated and crowned at London in the feast of Whitsontide.

King Henry prepareth a great armie against the Welshmen, and came to Powesland: which when the Lords of the land, Meridith Apblithin, and the three sons of Cadogan, Eneon, Madoc, and Morgan saw, they sent to Griffith ap Conan prince of Northwales for succour: which he denayed them, for that he had made peace with the king.

Thus they having no hope of aide from him, purposed to defend themselues within their owne lande after the best manner they coulde, setting men to defend the straites, whereby their enemies must needes passe. And as it chaunced, the King himselfe with a small number, came vnto one of those defended places, for his whole armie had gone a further way about, because of their cariages.

An. reg. 22. At whose comming, the men which kept the straites, skirmished with the kings men, and hauing the vantage of the ground, slew some, and wounded many, amongst the which, the king himselfe was smitten with an arrowe on the brest, wherewith hee being wonderfully abashed, sent to parley with them that kept the passage, and at length being agreed with them for a thousand head of Cattell, returned into England.

Reading Abbey founded. K. Henry having suppressed an house of Nunnes in the towne of Reading, founded by Elfiede mother in lawe to king Edward the martyr, founded there an Abbey of Blacke Monkes to the honor of God, our Ladie, and Saint Iohn Euangelist.

1122 The Citie of Gloucester brent. The Citie of Gloucester with the principall Monasterie, was brent againe, as it before had beene in the first yeare of this kings raigne.

Radulphus archbishop of Canterbury, died at Canterbury, on the twentieth day of October, and on the third day after, he was buried there.

An. reg. 23. Also Iohn bishop of Bathe, deceased, and was buried at Bathe.

Sherborne made an abbey. The same yeare, Sherborne and Horton, were ioyned together, and made an Abbey by the gift of the King, and of Roger bishop of Salisbury.

1123 King Henry hauing kept his Christmas at Dunstable, went from thence to Barkhamstead, hauing in his company his Chauncellor named Ranulph, he had beene sicke the space of twenty yeares, and yet notwithstanding was prompt to all euill, delighting in oppressing innocents: and as he brought the king home, minding to haue lodged with him, in the verie top of the hill that the kings Castle stood on, he fell from his horse, and ended his life in great misery fiue yeares after. And Robert Blothe Bishop of Lincolne, in the moneth of January, whilest at Woodstock he sate on horsebacke talking with the king, he began to shrinke downe speechlesse, and being brought to his lodging, died sodainly.

The citie of Lincolne brent. Cro. Peterbo. The Citie of Lincolne for the most part was consumed with fire, which raged in such violent and furious manner, that it deuoured sundrie men, and women, and did so much harme besides, that no man was able to report it vnto other, this happened on the 18. day of June.

William de Corboyle Prior of Saint Oliue in Esser, was by the king appointed

pointed to be archbishop of Canterbury, and was consecrated there on the 16. of Februarie. The bysshoprick of Bathe was giuen to Godfrey the Quéenes Chaplaine. And Alexander Archdeacon of Salisburie, was made Bysshop of Lincolne.

King Henry sayled ouer the seas into Normandie, at which time, Robert Earle of Millaine went from the king: Wherfore the king besieged his castle called Pount Andomer, and the same time he builded a great broad and high wall about the tower of Roane: he repayred the castle of Cane, he also fortified and made inuincible the castles of Arches, Gisors, Falace, Argentine, Donfront, Orine, Anbyos, Nanroy, Iuta, and the towne of Vernon. Roger Wind. King Henry builded castles in Normandy. *An. reg. 24.*

He also builded the Castle of Warwike.

Henry Earle of Warwike, and Margaret his wife, founded the Colledge of Saint Mary in the towne of Warwike, and Roger de Belemounde his sonne Earle of Warwike, and Aelin his wife, translated the same Colledge out of the Castle of Warwike into the parish Church of Saint Mary, in An. 1123. At that time were nine Parishes in Warwike, Saint Sepulchre, Saint Hellens, of these twaine were made one Priorie of Saint Sepulchre: Alhallowes, S. Michael, Saint John, Saint Peter, S. Lawrence, Saint James, these fiue last were ioyned to Saint Maries, in Ann. 1367. Saint Nicholas. Thus much for the towne of Warwike, whereof more shall be spoken in my larger booke. Warwike with the Colledge. Lib. Warco.

Robert Earle of Mellene, ioyning to him Hugh de Mountfort his sisters sonne, and Hugh Geruase his sonne, entred by force of armes into Normandy, but William de Tankeruile the kings chamberlaine, setting his men of armes in aray, fought with them, toke them and brought them to the king, who committed them to straite prison at Roane. Henr. Hunting.

William Archbishop of Canterbury, as the king commanded him passed the seas, but to what purpose mine author declareth not. *An. reg. 25.*

Mony makers throughout all England, being taken with false money, had their right hands cut off, and also their priuie members. After this, by changing of the money, all things became most deare, whereof a right sore famine arileth, and afflicteth the multitude of people euen to death. Mony makers punished. 1125

Henry the Emperour died, and was buried at Spire with his grandfather, Lotharius the 98. Emperour succéeded.

Iohn Cremensis Priest cardinall, by the kings licence came into England, and for the time of his abode here, lodged in the Bysshops pallace, and in Abbeies, not without great giftes and rewards taking of them, he kéeping a solemne Synode or Councell at London, when he had there most seuerely entreated of Priestes concubines, saying, that it was much wickednesse, to rise from an harlots side, to consecrate the bodie of Christ: And hee himselfe the same day had consecrated the body of Christ: After the which, in the euening, he was detected of whoredome, the matter was so plaine, that it could not bee denayed, and thus hee turned his great honour, into the greatest shame that might be. Roger Wind. *An. reg. 26.* A Cardinall, inueying against priests concubines was detected of whoredome.

Henry the Emperour being dead, Mawde the Empresse returned to her father 1126

Mawde the Empreſſe returned into England.

ther king Henry, and dwelt with the Quéene in her chamber, becauſe ſhe was ſuſpected of her huſbands death. For he went awaie by night, and choſe to liue in pouertie.

Florlacen.

An. reg. 27.

Archbiſhop of Yorke with his Croſſe caſt out of the kings chappell.

King Henry held his court with great magnificence in his Caſtle of Winſore, and there aſſembled all the nobilitie of his Realme, where when the archbiſhop of Yorke would haue crowned the king equally with the archbiſhop of Canterburie, by the iudgement of all men he was repulſed, the bearer of his Croſſe, together with the Croſſe, was throwne out of the kings Chappell: for it was affirmed that no Metropolitane out of his owne prouince might haue any Croſſe borne before him. The feaſt being ended, the king with al the ſtates of the realme together came to London, and there at the kings commandement, William the Archbiſhop, and the Legate of the Romiſh Church, and all other biſhops of the Engliſh nation, with the nobilitie, tooke an othe to defend againſt all men the kingdome to his daughter, if ſhe ſurmounted her father, except that before his deceaſe he begate ſome ſonne to ſucceéde him.

Othe to Mawd the Empreſſe.

The king alſo graunted to the Church of Canterburie, and to William and his ſucceſſours, the cuſtodie and Conſtableſhip of the Caſtle of Rocheſter for euer.

The Archbiſhop of Canterburie aſſembled a councell of Byſhops, Abbots and other Prelats at Weſtminſter, where they determined many cauſes concerning Eccleſiaſticall buſines: & the king with his councell confirmed them.

1128 King Henry of England being beyonde the Sea in Normandie, had great wars againſt William Earle of Flanders that was his nephew.

King Henry with a warlike armie inuaded France, becauſe Lewes king of France did defend William Earle of Flaunders, the kings nephew, and lodging at Yeſperdune, the ſpace of eight daies, as ſafe as he had béen in his own Realme. He kept the king of France, from giuing helpe to the ſaide Earle of Flaunders.

There came a certaine Duke out of Germanie who was named Theodorick, with a warlike power into Flaunders through the procurement of King Henry, to take his part and ioine with him: but Earle William with a ſmall companie, through his inuincible manhode, with his bloudie ſword did cleaue and breake their great battaile, and cauſed them to flie: but when this William beſieged the Caſtle of Angew, or Alburſt (as other haue) againſt king Henry, ſo that it ſhould haue béen yelded vnto him, through one wound in his hande,

An. reg. 29. he died, but not without immortall fame.

Ranulph biſhop of Durham deceaſed, he raiſed the wals of the bodie of the Church of Durham vnto the roofe, hee tranſlated the bodie of Saint Cuthbert into that new Church, he compaſſed the citie of Durham with a wall, he continued diuers bankes along the riuer of Wier, and built a great ſtone bridge vpon the ſame riuer with arches. He alſo built a Caſtle vpon a ſteepe hill called Norham, vpon the riuer of Twide, to reſiſt the enemies. He built the Hoſpitall of Kepar, and the bridge of Framwelgate. After the death of this Ranulph, the Biſhoprieke of Durham was committed to two Barons, Iohn de Maunde-vile and Geffrey Excomband the elder, to the vſe and profite of the king,

Tower of Norham builded, and the Hoſpitall of Kepar.

1129 Lib. Dunelm.

King, for the space of fiue yeeres and eleuen moneths.

King Henry returned out of Normandie into England.

And in the first of August, the king beganne a great councell at London, in the which councell, by authoritie of the Pope, the feast of the Conception of our Ladie was confirmed, the which councell of the Cleargie, (through the simplicitie of the Archbishoppe of Canterburie) were by the king deceiued, for they graunted the king to haue the execution of Iustice concerning the focarie of Priestes, for their keeping of concubines which the Bishoppes afterwarde repented too late: but they could not helpe it. For the king toke infinite summes of money of Priestes, and suffered them to doe what they would.

About this time, men forgetting their byrth, transformed themselues by the length of their heares into the habite of women kinde. One of the knightes of the Realme, a man very prowd of his long heare, at the length stricken in conscience, it seemed vnto him in his sleepe, that one did choake him with the heares of his head (for all men were shauen of their faces.) Wherefore, being awakened, he caused forthwith the superfluitie of his heares to bee cut off. Which example toke place throughout all England for the time, and almost all the knightes were contented to haue their heares cut off. But one yeere was scarcely past, when all that thought themselues courtiers, fell into the former vice, & so contended with women in their long heares, that when they were decayed, they knitte about their heads, certaine roles, and couerings, being ignorant, or forgetting the Apostles saying. Let it be a reproch vnto a man, if he endeuour to haue his heares grow long.

Men contend with women in long heares.

An. reg. 30.

This yeere Robert de Olley and Edith his wife, founded the Priorie of Olney by Oxforde.

Olney by Oxford.

The seuenth of May the Citie of Rochester, in presence of the king was sore defaced with fire. 1130

King Henry gaue his daughter Matild the Empresse, to Geffrey Plantagenet Earle of Angewe, to be his wife.

An. reg. 31.

King Henry in the moneth of August passed the sea into Normandie, where he remained for a time. 1131

This yeere King Henry returned into England. And Matild the Empresse also, the same yeere, and calling a great assembly of noble men at Northampton, the former othe was renued by them that had receiued it before.

A great murraine of cattell went ouer all England, so that the like had not beene seene in many yeeres.

King Henry being sore troubled ofte times in his sleepe, declared the same vnto Grimbalde his Phisition, the effect whereof was, that some time it seemed to him, that he sawe a great multitude of husband men with their rusticall toles stande about him, threatning him, for wrongs done by him against them: Sometimes hee seemed to see his knightes and Souldiours in armour, threatning him. Sometimes the Bishops, Abbots and Clergie, with their pastorall staues threatning him: Which sight so feared him in his sleepes, that oft times he rose naked out of his bed, toke weapon in hand, and

King H. sore troubled in his sleepes.

and sought to kill them, he coulde not finde. Grimbalde his Phisition being a notable wise man, expounded his dreames by true coniecture, and willed him to reforme himself with almes and prayer, as Nabuchodonosor did by the counsell of Daniel.

King Henry in danger of drowning on the sea.

In the moneth of June, when King Henry was entred his shippe to returne into England with his traine, the sea was sore troubled, so that the shippe was in manner ouerwhelmed with the floodes, and the winde was contrarie vnto him, so that seeing death at hand, hee vowed that the tribute called Dane gilt, should not for 7. yeeres be exacted. He also vowed to repent him of his former life, to reconcile himselfe, and euer after to obserue iustice.

An. reg. 32.

The eight of October, a Comet appeared, and was seene fiue daies together.

1132 Bishoprieke at Carlile.

King Henrie made a Bishoprieke at Carlile, and made Athulphe, Prior of S. Oswald his confessor bishop there, he placed there Chanons regular and indowed it with manie honors.

Henry the second borne.

Mawde the Empresse did beare a son to Geffery Plantagenet, earle of Angeu her husband, and named him Henry, which when the King her father knew, he called his nobles together at Oxford, where he kept his feast of Easter, in his newe hall with great royalty: He there ordained, that shee and her heires should succeede him in the kingdome.

The 14. day of May, a great fire beginning at Gilberts house in West Cheape of London, consumed a great part of the same city, from thence Eastward to Aldgate, with the prior of Chanons of the holy Trinitie there, and many houses of office thereto belonging, and Westwarde to Ludgate, consuming the great Church of S. Paul, &c.

An. reg. 33.

London with Powles burnt.

Hospitall of S. Crosse.

Henry Bloyse Bishop of Winchester, new builded the hospitall of S. Crosse, neere vnto Winchester, which Hospitall had of olde time beene spoiled by the Danes.

The second date of August there was great darkenes in England, the Sun became like the Mone in the third quarter. And the same date manie Starres appeared.

1133 Great Earthquake.

The 4. date of August earlie in the morning, in manie parts of England an earthquake was felt, so that it was thought that the earth would haue sunke vnder the feete of men, with such a terrible sound, as was horrible to heare. The King at that time of the eclips, passed ouer the sea into Normandy: but neuer returned againe aliue into England.

In the Moneth of November, the citie of Worcester as oftimes before was burned and sore defaced by fire.

An. reg. 34.

Geffery the kings Chancellor was made Bishoppe of Durham, and Haruie the first Bishop of Ely being dead, Nigelus the kings Treasurer was made bishop there.

Matild the Empresse brought forth a son named Geffery.

1134 Robert Courtquise dyeth

This yeere, when our Lorde Iesus, who willeth not the death of a sinner, had giuen vnto Duke Robert of Normandie a sufficient space of repentance, wherein to humble himselfe, that is to witte, almost 30. yeeres, which time hee

An. reg. 35.

liued

liued in blindnes of eies, and also in straite prison in the Castle of Cardiffe, he died and was buried at Glocester.

Godfrey Bishop of Bath deceased on the 16. of August. After whom succéded Robert a Fleming by kinde, but borne in Normandie. 1135

K. Henry remaining in Normandy, vpon a day did eate Lampraies, whereof he toke a surfeite, and deceased the first day of December, Anno 1135. when he had raigned 35. yeres 4. monethes: his bowels, braines, and eies, were buried at Roane, the rest of his bodie was powdered with salt, and wrapped in Bulles hides, because of the stincke, which poysoned them that stode about him. The Phisition which being hyred with a great reward to cleaue his head to take out the braine, with the stincke thereof died, so that he enioyed not the reward that was couenanted. Thus among a great manie that king Henrie slew, this Phisition was the last. *An. reg. 36.* Death of king Henry. Mathew Paris.

King Henry was buried at Reading, which he had founded. He also founded the Priorie of Dunstable, hee conuerted a rich Colledge of Prebends in the Towne of Cirencester, into an Abbey of Chanons regular: hee also builded there an Hospitall of Saint Iohn: and new builded the Castle of Windsor vpon the hill, with a Colledge there, one mile from the old towne of Windlesor. King Edward the third builded much of this Castle, encreased the number of Chanons in the Colledge, adding to the 8. Chanons, a Deane, and 15. Chanons more, and foure and twentie poore impotent knightes, and other Ministers, as appeareth by his Charter dated the two and twentieth of his raigne, hee founded there the order of the Garter. King Edwarde the fourth toke from the Colledges of Eton, and Cambridge founded by king Henry the first, almost a thousand pound by yere, and gaue to Windlesore. He also builded the faire newe church now vsed, saue onely the toppe and roofing, which was since finished by the Lord Reinold Bray, and other knights of the Garter. In place of the olde Colledge church, king Henry the seuenth builded a Chappell, where he meant to haue béene buried: but altering his minde, lefte the same vnfinished, and builded his Chappell at Westminster, he made the faire causway betweene Windsore and London. King Henry the eight made the outer gate-house, which is called the Exchequer of the Honour, where hath béene, and yet continueth a moneth court, kept by the Clearke of the Honor and Castle, for the pleas of the forrest and honors. In which, amongst other thinges, is to be séene the yerely account, of the charges, of the planting of the Vines, that in the time of king Richard the second growe in great plenty within the little parke, as also of the making of the wine it selfe, whereof some part was spent in the kings house, and some parte solde to his profite, the tythes whereof were paide to the Abbot of Waltham, then parson both of the olde and new Windlesore. Colledge at Windsor founded Iohn Leyland. Wine made at Windlesore, as in other partes of this realme.

King Edward the first beganne to bring water to the Castle: Quéene Marie brought it thither in conduits, the house was before serued by welles: shee also for her parte, added the lodgings for the almes knights, and placed there to the number of twelue, for there had not béene anie of manie yeres tofore, to wit, in the memorie of men then liuing, whereby it was supposed, neuer any

ny to haue béene there. But true it is, I haue read in the Tower of London, a patent, graunted by Edward the fourth, in the two and twentieth yéere of his raigne, to one Thomas Crabbe Esquire, to be admitted one of the almes knights at Windlesore. Quéene Elizabeth hath also much inlarged with buildings the saide Castle. All which, whether you regarde the wholesomenesse of the ayre, and beautie of the soyle, or the beauty, strength, and situation of the place, or the pleasant passime arising out of the forrest, chase, and fouretéene parkes that wayte vppon it, or the good neighbourhode of the rich Riuer of Thames that runneth by it, I haue thought it good to set downe thus much.

This Henry the first also builded the manor of Woodstocke, with the parke, which he walled with stone seuen miles compasse, destroying for the same, diuers villages, churches, and chappels. This is the first parke that euer was in England; he placed there, besides great store of deere, diuers strange beastes to be kept and nourished, such as were brought or sent to him from farre countries, as Lyons, Leopards, Linces, Porpentines, &c. By his example, Henry Earle of Warwike, made his parke of Wadgenoke, neere vnto Warwike, since called the old parke. He had issue by Matild his first wife, a sonne named William, that was drowned in the Sea, and a daughter named Matild, whome with her sonne he appointed to inherite the Crowne and Realme. He had also issue by his concubines, a sonne named Richard, and a daughter named Mary, which were both drowned with their brother William, Robert fitz Roy, whome he made Earle of Glouceſter, Reginald afterward made Earle of Cornewall, in the fift yéere of the raigne of king Stephen, a daughter married to Alexander king of Scots, and other.

Rad. Dediceto.

W. Malmes.

King Stephen.

An. reg. 1. W. Malmes. Floriacens, eeruas. Doro. Ypodigma.

STephen Earle of Morton, and of Bologne, sonne to the Earle of Bloys, and Adela, William Conquerours daughter, and nephew to king Henry the first, claymed the kingdome in the month of December, *Anno 1135.*

He comming into England, was repulsed by them of Douer, shut out by them of Canterbury, but receiued of the Londoners, and peeres of the land, admitted king, and crowned at Westminster on S. Stephens day, by William Archbishop of Canterbury, Henry bishop of Winchester, and Roger bishop of Salisburie.

This was a noble man and hardy, of passing comely fauour and personage, he excelled in martiall policie, gentlenesse and liberality toward all men, especially in the beginning: and although he had continuall war, yet did he neuer burden his commons with exactions: but vniustly, and contrarie to his othe made to Mawde the Empresse, daughter to king Henry, he toke on him the crowne of England.

A fire

A fire kindled in the house of one Ailward neere vnto London stone, consumed Eastward to Aldgate, and Westward to S. Erkenwalds shrine in Paules church. The Annales of Bermondsey, say, that London bridge was also at that time burned: which might well be, for then, and long before, there was a bridge of timber, as before I haue touched. And further, to confirme the same, I finde in the Annales of Bermondsey, that in *anno Christi 1122.* the 22. yeare of king Henry the first Thomas Arderne gaue to the Monks of Bermondsey the church of S. George in Southwarke, &c. with fiue shillings rent by the yeare out of the land of London bridge. 1136 Lib. Trinitatis. Lib. Bermond. London with the bridge brent.

Flemings entred into Deuonshire, and besieged the Castle of Exceter a long time, which Baldwine de Reduers held against them, but at length when they within the Castle wanted necessary things to liue by, they compounded. Baldwine with his wife and children are disherited and expulsed the land. From hence king Stephen went to the Ile of Wight, and tooke it from the said Baldwine de Reduers. Exceter besieged. Ger. Dorob.

A battell was fought at Goher, betwixt Normans and Welchmen, where a hundred and fiftéene persons on both sides were slaine, whose bodies lay in the fields, and were horribly torne and deuoured of wolues. Battell against the Welchmen.

After this were made great eruptions by the Welchmen, who destroied churches, townes, castles, corne, cattell, slewe men, women, and children, rich and poore, or solde them in forraine countries.

In October a sore battel was fought at Cardigan, in the which, such slaughter of men was made, (that the men except which were ledde awaie captiue,) were of women taken and led away, that there remained to the tenth a thousand, their husbandes with their small children partly drowned, partly brent, partly slaine, so that the bridge being broken ouer the riuer of Tinde, there was a bridge made of mens bodies and horses drowned.

In March king Stephen passed the Sea to subdue Normandie, where hee tooke manie Cities and strong Castles, and made peace with the King of France. *An. reg. 2.* 1137

The third of June Saint Andrewes in Rochester was brent, with all the Citie, and the bishops and monkes stalles in the church. And on the fourth day of June S. Peters the Archbishops Sea in Yorke, S. Maries without the walles, and an Hospitall which the Archbishop Thurstone had builded, with 39. other Churches: also the Trinitie church in the suburbs of the same Citie, within a small time after were brent. Also S. Peters Church at Bathe, and all the Citie, the 27 day of June was brent. And the same moneth the Citie of Leogere was consumed with fire. Ypodigma. Rochester brent Richard Diuiens. Saint Peters in Yorke brent.

England began to fall into great troubles, which caused king Stephen to returne out of Normandy before he had finished his businesse there, so that he came ouer into England in the moneth of December. *An. reg. 3.*

King Stephen besieged Bedford and wonne it, then he went with a strong power into Northumberland, where he staied not long, but went to Gloucester, where the citizens receiued him with great reioycing. Miles the kings constable brought him into the kings pallace there, where all the citizens were 1138 King Stephen besieged Bedford.

to

to him sworne. From whence he went to Hereforde, because that he heard the Castle was holden against him: and on Whitsonday hee sate crowned in the church of Hereford. When they that kept the Castle saw the kings power to increase, they yelded themselues. The king toke also the Castle of Webbelege, which Geffrey Talbot had holde against him.

The same daie that the king departed out of Hereford, all beyond the riuer of Wie was brent by the said Geffrey.

The king returned to Oxford, where he toke Roger the bishop of Sarum, with the bishop of Lincolne, and his sonne Roger: the bishop of Ely escaping, went to the castle of Wies, and kept it against the king: but at length it was deliuered.

The same time Robert Earle of Gloucester renounced his allegiance to king Stephen, fortified Bristowe, and other castles. Also Miles the kings constable reuolted.

Wherefore the king besieged the castle of Bristow, but at length being wearied, he turned to other of the earles castles, and seeing his enemies stil increasing, hee called out of Flaunders men of warre with William de Ypres their leader, whose counsell he chiefly followed.

An. reg. 4. The same yeere Roger bishop of Salisburie, a great builder of Castles and houses, departed this life. There was found in his coffers fourtie thousande markes of siluer, besides much golde, and diuers iewels that came to the kings hand, so that he had gathered treasure, but wist not for whom.

Ioceline a knight of Lincolnshire, hauing to his son one Gilbert, whome for some imperfection of his lims, he thought vnmete for the world, made him a Priest, gaue him a benefice in a towne of his owne in Lincolnshire called Semperingham. This man was author of a religious order, which were called
1139 Gilbertins, and began in the raigne of K. Stephen, he inclosed within one house both men and women, but seuered them by such high wals, that the one neither saw, nor heard the other. This order in his life time encreased to 25. houses, containing in all to the number of 700. brethren, and 1500. sisters.

Dauid king of Scots inuaded Northumberland. The Nobles sent for Mawd the Empresse, promising her the possession of the realme according to their othe made to her. In the meane time, Dauid king of Scots, promising to recouer the crown of England for the Empresse Mawd his neece, in most cruell wise inuaded Northumberland, where, by Thurstone Archbishop of Yorke, the Standert being set vp at Aluerton, the Scots had an ouerthrow at Conton, more then foure miles Northwest from Aluerton, and were slaine aboue ten thousand, on the 22. day of August.

In the moneth of July Robert Earle of Gloucester returned into England with his sister the Empresse, and a great army, which arriued at Portsmouth. The Empresse was receiued into Arundell castle by Adelize late wife to king Henry, as then wife or concubine to William Earle of Arundel.

Earle Robert went to Walingforde, and thence to Gloucester, and raised those countries.

Marleborow besieged by king Stephen. The king helde his siege before Marleborough, but aduertised of the Empresse arrival, he hasted towards Arundel, where being by faire speech pacified,

he

he commanded his brother Bishop of Winchester to bring the Empresse vnto Bristow, and he himselfe followed earle Robert with his armie. The Empresse staied at Bristow till October, and then went to Gloucester, her comming thither being knowne, Miles the high Constable, and manie other Nobles toke part with her against king Stephen.

The king besieged Wallingford castell, but profited not, and therefore raising a Towre of wood before it, stuffed it with men of war, and went to win the castell of Malmesburie. king Stephen besieged Wallingford.

The army of earle Robert wan the citie of Worcester, brent the most part of it, and laden with the spoile, departed thence. Worcester brent and spoiled.

The shiriffe of that citie, in reuenge hereof, destroied the towne of Sudley, and with the spoile thereof returned to Worcester.

After this the King with a great armie, came from Orford to Worcester, where he gaue the honour of high Constableshippe (being taken from Miles of Gloucester) vnto William the sonne of Walter Beauchampe, shiriffe of Worcester, and then returned to Orford, and so to Salisburie. *An. reg. 5.*

The king went to Reding, and after with his armie towards Elie, but the Bishop fled to Gloucester, to earle Robert, and the king wan the castell of Ely, and spoiled Nigellus the bishop (who was fled to the Empresse) of all that to him appertained, and then returned. 1140

Robert earle of Gloucester with a great power inuaded the towne of Nottingham and spoiled it: the Townes men were taken, slaine, or brent in the Churches whereunto they fledde. One of them more rich then the others was taken and led to his owne house by his takers, to shewe them where his treasure laie: hee bringing them into a lowe Sellar, whilest they were busie to breake open lockes and coffers, hee conueied himselfe awaie, and shutting the doores after him, set fire on the house: and so the theeues to the number of thirtie, were brent, and by reason of this fire all the Towne was set on fire, and brent. Nottingham brent. *An. reg. 6.*

King Stephen besieged Lincolne against Ranulph Earle of Chester, but Robert Earle of Gloucester, came with a greate power, and rescued the same, chased the kings army, and toke him prisoner on Candlemas day: first he was had to Gloucester, and after to Bristow, and there committed to prison, and put in yrons. 1141 king Stephen taken prisoner at Lincolne.

The Empresse reioicing at this her good hap, departed from Gloucester, and came to Cicester, with Bishoppes, Barons, and other in great number, from thence she went to Winchester, where met her Lords spirituall and temporall in great number, the city with the Towre and Crowne of the realme was deliuered into her hands.

The Bishop of Winchester, that was K. Stephens brother, accursed all that stode against the Empresse, and blessed those that toke her part. From thence she departed to Wilton, where the archbishop of Canterbury came and saluted her. When Easter was past, she went to Reding, where she was receiued with all the honour that might be: thence she went to Orford, where the castell was deliuered vnto her by Robert de Olly: then went she to S. Albons, and was

receiued with all honour. Here the citizens of London came and yéelded their citie to her, whereupon she went to London, and so to Westminster, where she being receiued with procession, remained certaine daies, taking order for the state of the Realme, and there she gaue the Bishoprickе of London to Robert de Sigello a Monke of Reding.

King Stephens wife, and many Péeres of the realme, made suite to the Empresse to haue the king restored to libertie, and not to the kingdome, promising to perswade with him to become a Monke, but she would not heare. The Bishop of Winchester requested her to giue vnto Eustace his nephew, king Stephens son, his fathers Earledome, but it would not be. The citizens of London required her to restore king Edwards lawes, but she being puffed vp with pride, would not grant their request, whereupon they conspired to take her prisoner: but she aduertised hereof, fledde with shame, leauing behinde her all her furniture of housholde and apparell.

Henry Bishop of Winchester, casting which way to deliuer his brother, perswaded the Londoners to aide him. The Empresse got her to Oxford, and from thence to Gloucester, and thence with her assured friend Miles again to Oxford: because she trusted most in him, she to do him honor, gaue him the earledome of Hereford. And now hauing got a great army, about Lammas went againe to Winchester, and lodged in the Castle there. The Bishop abashed of her sodaine comming, departed out at one Gate, as she came in at another. He getting a great army, with the helpe of the Londoners besieged the citie, and the second of August committed the Citie to the fire, with the which, the Nunrie, and houses of office, with more then twenty churches (some write fortie) and a great part of the city, with the monastery of S. Grimbald, and the houses thereto belonging, were brought to ashes.

Winchester burnt.

About the exaltation of the Crosse, the Empresse being wearied of long siege, got her to horsebacke with her brother Reginald earle of Cornewall, and many other. Erle Robert followed with a great number of lords and knights, but the bishops men setting on them, slew and toke a great number.

The Empresse fledde.

The Empresse fled to the castle of Lutegershall heauie and almost dead for feare: from thence she was brought to the Castle of Ules, and from thence to Gloucester, bound in a horselitter like a dead carcasse.

Earle of Gloucester taken.

Erle Robert being pursued, was taken at Stobbridge with erle Waren, & many other, and presented to the quéene, as then newe entred into Winchester.

Earle Robert was deliuered to William de Ypres, who put him in prison in the castle of Rochester.

Earle of Hereford fled.

Miles erle of Hereford hardly escaped, and came to Gloucester almost naked.

The bishops men brent the monastery of Nunnes at Warwel, &c. the books and ornaments of the Nunnes were taken and borne away, and men slaine euen before the Altar. These things thus done, the bishops wrath was somewhat appeased, but his couetousnesse encreased, so that being prompted thereto by the Prior of the newe monasterie in Winchester lately brent, he toke off of the Crosse that was burnt fiue hundred pounds of siluer, & thirtie marks in golde, three crownes, with as manie seates of fine Arabike golde, set with

pretious

pretious stones: all this he laide vp in his owne treasurie.

King Stephen and Earle Robert being straitely kept, at length through mediation of friends, a peace was concluded, that they should bee deliuered, the king to his kingdome, and the Earle to his libertie. King Stephen and Robert Earle of Glocester deliuered by exchange.

Geffrey Mandeuile fortified the Tower of London: and Robert Bishop of London was taken at Fulham by Geffrey Mandeuile. Alfridus Beuerla.

Geffrey bishop of Durham deceased, when he had sate bishop of Durham 13 yéres: he builded the Castle of Aluerton, which he gaue to his nephew William, whom he ioyned in mariage with the Earles néece of Albemarle.

The king and earle being set at libertie, did not onely renue, but multiplie their malice: the king repayred his power and expences, the Earle went ouer the Sea to Geffrey Earle of Anion, whome he found occupied in warres against certaine of his subiects of Anion, so that he could not come into England with him: whereupon he taking Henry, eldest sonne to Geffrey Earle of Anion, and Mawd the Empresse, with certaine chosen men of armes, returned into England. *An. reg. 7.* 1142

King Stephen hearing that earle Robert was gone out of the realme, and the Empresse to lie at Orford, with a great power came and besieged her two moneths space. The Empresse besieged.

Earle Robert with Henry sonne to the Empresse, and other his complices, landed at Warham, where he besieged the castle, which was defended by Hubert de Lucie, who at length yéelded the same. In the meane time, the Empresse séeing that she was void of all helpe, with a womanish subtilty deceiued the kings scowt-watch, clothing her selfe and her company, fiue in number, all in white, and vpon a night went ouer the Thames on foote, which was then hard frozen, and white with snow: that night she went to Wallingford, and the Castle of Orford was yéelded to the king. After the winning of Warham castle, Robert went to visit his sister the Empresse, who was not a little ioyfull to see him and her yong son Henry, which Henry remained at Bristow for the space of foure yeres, and there was brought vp in learning. Warham castle besieged. The Empresse flieth. Geruasius. *An. reg. 8.* 1143

King Stephen after the robbing of many churches, burning and robbing of townes and villages by the hands of the Fleming souldiers, he and his brother Henry bishop of Winchester, builded a castle of the Munry at Wilton, to represse the incursions of them of Salisbury. Earle Robert the first of July fell sodainely vpon them in Wilton, and set the towne on fire. The king with the bishop fled with shame, the earles men tooke the kings people, and sackt his plate and other things: there were taken of the kings men verie many, and among other, William Martell sewer to king Stephen, who was sent to Wallingford, there to be kept prisoner. William de S. Barbara was made bishop of Durham. Wilton burnt. King Stephan fledde.

Miles earle of Hereford died and his eldest son Roger succéeded him. *An. reg. 9.*

William of Ypres founded Borley Abbey in Kent. Borley.

King Stephen tooke Geffrey Mandeuile Earle of Essex, at Saint Albons: which Geffrey could not be set at libertie till hee had deliuered the Tower of London, with the Castles of Walden and Plecy. When the Earle was thus 1144 Gernas. Dore.

Geffrey Mandeuile earle of Essex slaine.

spoiled of his holdes, hee toke the church of Ramsey, and fortified it: as hee besieged the castell of Burwell, he was smitten in the head with a dart, wherof he died. Robert Marmion was also slaine at Couentry, and Ernulphus earle Mandeuiles sonne, that held Ramsey Church as a fortresse, after his fathers death, was taken and banished.

An. reg. 10. 1145 Wallingford besieged.

King Stephen besieged Wallingford, but could not preuaile. The earle of Chester was reconciled to the king, and was at this siege with him, but shortly after when he came to the Court, the king lying at Northampton, hee was taken and kept prisoner, till he had rendred the castell of Lincolne and other fortresses, whereupon he was the kings enimie euer after.

An. reg. 11. 1146

Geffrey earle of Anion, and now duke of Normandie, sent foure noble men with furniture of warriours to Robert earle of Glouceſter, requesting him to sende ouer his sonne Henry, and if néede required, hee would send him backe againe with all spéede. The earle agréeing to his request, brought the yoong Henry to Warham, where he toke shipping towardes his father, of whome he was ioifullie receiued, there he abode two yeres, and foure monethes. In the meane time earle Robert deceased, and was buried at Bristow, in the quier of the Church of S. Iames, which he had founded.

Robert Earle of Glouceſter deceased.

King Stephen entred Lincolne, and there ware his Crowne, after whose departure from thence, the earle of Chester came to recouer the town, but could not bring his purpose to passe, the citizens shewed such defence. The Empresse being wearied with the discord of the English nation, went ouer into Normandy, chosing rather to sit vnder the defence of her husband in peace, then to suffer so manie displeasures in England. King Stephen banished Theobald Archbishop of Canterbury, and the archbishop interdicted al the land that was subiect to the kings dominions, till peace betweene them was made.

An. reg. 12. 1147

An. reg. 13. The Empresse went into Normandy.

1148

An. reg. 14. S. Katherins. W. Dunthorne. Lib. Trinitatis London.

The Q. lay at S. Austens in Canterbury, because she was desirous to se the Abbey of Feuersham finished, which she & her husband had begun to build: shee also builded the hospital of S. Katherin by the Towre of London, for poore brethren and sisters. Robert Fitz Harding sometimes Maior of Bristowe, whose father was a Dane, hauing founded the Monasterie of Saint Augustine in the towne of Bristow, this yeere placed Chanons there, which foundation was after confirmed by king Henry the second.

1149 Roger Houeden.

In the moneth of May, Henry the Empresse sonne, with a great companie of chosen men of armes and other came into England, vnto whome forthwith manie Castels and strong holdes were deliuered, and hee made a newe coine, which was called the Dukes coine, and not onlie he, but also all the potentates of the Realme, as well bishops, as earles and barons, had each one his owne coine: but afterward the duke did inhibite the most part of these coines. The Duke taking with him Ranulph earle of Chester, Roger earle of Hereford, and diuers other, he went to Dauid king Scottes, of whome he was ioifullie receiued, & made knight. When king Stephen heard, that Dauid king of Scots, with his strength, and Henry son to the Empresse with his westerne Lords, were together at Carlile, he came to Yorke with a great army, for feare they should attempt anie thing against that Citie, and so laie there the moneth of August:

at

at length the one partie as well as the other departed: but Eustacius the kinges son being made knight, exercised many cruelties in the lands of the earles, that toke part with Henry the Empresse sonne.

Henry the Empresse son, being made knight, sailed into Normandy. All England was full of trouble and noise of war, set forth to fire and rapine, through discord betwixt king Stephen, and certain earles that toke part with Henry the son of the Empresse. *An. reg. 15* 1150 Ex charta regia.

Robert earle Ferrers, founded the Abbey of Pertuall.

Geffrey Plantagenet earle of Anjow, and duke of Normandie deceased, and left his son Henry to be his heire. Ypodigma. Geruasius.

A diuorcement was made betwéene Lewis king of Fraunce, and Elianor his Quéene, because they were a kin in the 4. degrée. Moreouer, she was defamed of adultery with an Infidell, &c. *An. reg. 16.* 1151 Mathew Paris. Geruas. Doro.

King Stephen besieged the Castell of Worcester, which hee coulde not winne the last yéere, and when he sawe nowe also that hee coulde not obtaine his purpose, he builded two Castelles before the same, stuffing them with garrisons, and went from thence, but by counsell of Robert Earle of Leicester, the kinges castelles were ouerthrowne, and the castell besieged, deliuered from danger. Worcester besieged.

Henry Duke of Normandie, toke to wife Elianor, sole daughter and heire to William Duke of Aquitaine, shee was first married to Lewes, the seuenth of Fraunce, by whome shee had two daughters, whereof, Mary the eldest, was married to Henry the Large, earle of Champaigne: Ales the second, to Theobald, earle of Bloys. Lewes king of France, was diuorced from Elianor, and yet was not content with this second marriage, because hee was loath, that anie other should beget Sonnes by her, whereby his daughters might bee disherited. *An. reg. 17.* 1152

King Stephen called a Parliament at London, declaring to Theobald archbyshop of Canterbury, and the other byshops, howe he would vtterlie disherite Henry duke of Normandie, and confirme his owne sonne Eustace to be his successor by crowning him king: but the Pope had sent a commandement to the Archbyshoppe, prohibiting him to crowne king Stephens sonne, because his father had vsurped the kingdome, contrarie to his Othe. Which thing (as was thought) was brought to passe by the subtile policy of Thomas Becket, a Chaplaine borne in London.

King Stephen and his sonne, being not a little offended therewith, caused the bishops with their Primate to be closed vp in an house, threatning with terrors to extort of them, that which with praiers or price they could not obtaine. The Archbyshop stifflie standing in his purpose, some of the Byshops through feare went from him, at length the archbishop by a maruellous hap escaping, got ouer the Thames, and so to Douer: and thence transporting ouer the seas, escaped the threates of the king and his son, and depriued his sonne of his coueted honour. Archbyshop shut vp in prison.

Quéene Mawde deceased at Haningam castel belonging to Alberik de Vere, Earle of Norfolke, and was buried at Feuersham in Kent.

Norwich increased. Chronicle of Bromholma. *An. reg. 18.*

The people of Norwich obtained of the king to haue coroners and bailiffes; for before that time, they had no other officer, but a Sergeant for the king that kept Courts, and after this, that is to say, in the seuen and thirtith yere of Henry the third, they had licence to inclose that towne, with ditches got of sundrie hundreds, &c. William de S. Barbara Bishop of Durham deceased, when he had sate Bishop there 9. yeres.

1153

Malmesburie Castell and Towne wonne by Henry duke of Normandie.

Henry duke of Normandy furnished with an army, came into England, and at his first comming wan the castell and towne of Malmesburie, from thencefoorth Robert the noble earle of Leicester, beganne to take the dukes part, and to furnish him with things necessary, 30. castels or mo (through his counsell with them that kept them) submitted themselues to the duke: At length it was decreed, that the king should talke with the duke touching peace to be had: and so they met in a place where the Thames was most narrowe, the one standing on the one side, and the other on the other. After long talke they returned, the duke to his men, and the king to his, and so laying downe weapon, euery man departed in peace. The Towre of London, and the Castell of Windsore, were deliuered to Richard de Lucy to be safelie kept.

Polycronicon. Iohn Sarisb. Iohn Taxtor. Mathew Paris.

Eustace the kinges sonne was angrie with his father, for agréeing to this peace, and therefore in a rage departed from the court towards Cambridge, to destroie that Contrey. Comming to S. Edmundsbury, he was there honorablie receiued and feasted, but when he could not haue such monie as he demanded, to bestow among his men of warre, he went awaie in a rage, spoiling the corne in the fields belonging to the Abbey, and carried it into his castels thereby: but as he sate him down to dinner, he fell mad vpon receiuing the first morsell, and miserablie died, and was buried at Feuersham.

Eustace king Stephens sonne dyed.

Elianor wife to duke Henry did beare him a son named William, which was a name proper to the dukes of Aquitaine and Anion.

Stamford, Nottingham, and Ipswich besieged. Ex charta regia. *An. reg. 19.*

The duke besieged Stamford Castell, and wan it, and then he went to Nottingham and wanne that. The king in the meane time besieged Ipswich and wanne it. At length, through the great labor of the archbyshop of Canterbury, and the other bishops, the king commanded the nobles to méet at Winchester, where the duke beeing receiued with great ioie, the king, in sight of all men adopted him his sonne, and confirmed to him the principalitie of all England. The duke receiued him in place of a father, granting to him all the daies of his life to enioie the name and seate of the kings preheminence.

King Stephen adopted Henry.

1154

William Archbyshop of Yorke, about the feast of Penticoste, died at Yorke of poison, as some supposed, and was buried in his Cathedrall Church of Saint Peter.

Duke Henry in the Octaues of the Epiphanie, came together with the king to Oxford, where the earles and barons by the kinges commandement sware fealtie to duke Henry, sauing the kings honor so long as he liued. This assurance being made, they departed asunder, but shortlie after they met againe at Dunstable, there to intreat of the state and peace of the kingdome.

Shortlie after duke Henry with king Stephen and certaine Lords of England came to Canterburie, and from thence to Douer, where they had communication

nication with Theodrike Erle of Flanders, and the countesse the dukes Aunt. When the king and the Duke had dismissed the Earle of Flaunders, and were turning towards Canterbury, the slaughter of the Duke was prepared by a conspiracie of the Flemings which enuied both the Duke and peace: but behold, sodainly the kings yonger son William priuie with the conspirators, on Barham Downe fell off his horse, and breaking his legge, he gathered all the company about him in sorrow. The Duke in the meane time vnderstanding the appointed treasons got him to Canterburie, and so escaped his enemies hands: from thence by Rochester and London, he came to the sea, and passed ouer into Normandie.

Hugo de Puteaco, treasurer of Yorke and Archdeacon of Wincheſter, was made bishop of Durham.

In October the king met the Earle of Flanders againe at Douer, and talked with him.

After the earle was dismissed, the king was taken with a sodaine paine of the Iliake passion, and with an olde disease or running of the Emerodes, and there in the house of the Monkes died the fiue and twentieth of October, when he had raigned eightéene yéeres, tenne moneths, and odde dates. He founded the Abbeies of Cogshall in Eſſex, of Furnelle in Lancashire, and Feuersham in Kent, where his bodie was buried for the time, but since the suppression of that house, for the lead that inclosed his bodie, the same bodie was throwne into the next water. Hee founded an house for Nunnes at Carew, and an house of Nunnes at Higham, foure miles from Grauesend. He also founded an Hospitall by the West gate of Yorke, whereunto he gaue all the oates that had béene vsed to be gathered betwixt the riuer of Trent and Scotland, for finding of the kinges houndes, which was foure and twentie sheaues of euerie plowland by yeere, he appointed the Deane and Chanons of S. Peters church in Yorke, to gather them to the releife of the said Hospitall, and caused Nigell Maior of Yorke to deliuer that place by the west wall for to receiue the poore and lame, &c. Matild his wife founded the hospitall of Saint Katherine by the Tower of London, in a portion of land, which pertained to the Priorie of the holy Trinity in London, but then purchased with the Mill, by exchange of fiue pounds the yéere land out of the kings manor of Braking. He had issue first a bastard son named William Earle of Warren, then Mathew earle of Beame, Mary, first Abbesse, and then a Countesse, and Eustace that died before his father, as also Baldwine his sonne, and Matild his daughter, wife to the Earle of Pillent, which two last named were buried in the Priorie of the holy Trinitie in London. He had also a sonne named Geruasius de Bloys, hee was abbot of Westminster xx. yéeres, and was there buried, with this Epitaph.

King Stephen died. Gerua. Doro. Rad. Cogshall.

Issue of king Stephen.

John Flete. Prior of Westminster.

De regum genere pater hic Geruaſius ecce,
Eſt & defunctus, mors rapit omne genus.

King Henry the second.

An. reg. 1. HEnry the second, son of Geffrey Plantagenet and Mawd the Empresse, at the age of twenty three yeres, beganne his raigne ouer this Realme of England, the fiue and twentieth date of October, in the yere of our Lorde 1154. hee was crowned at Westminster the seuententh date of December, by Theobald Archbishop of Canterbury: he was somewhat red of face, short of body, and therewith fat: of speech reasonable, well learned, noble in chiualrie, and fortunate in battell, wise in counsell, one that loued peace, liberall to strangers, but hard to his familiars: vnstedfast of promise, giuen to pleasure, and a wedlocke breaker: by his manhod and politie the crowne of England was much augmented, with the annexing of Scotland, Ireland, the Iles of Orcades, Britaine, Poytiers, Guyen, and other prouinces of France.

Thomas Becket Archdeacon of Canterbury, was made the kings Chancellour, and was now in such fauour, that he was accounted the kings gouernor, for he was chiefly directed by him in all things.

Gerua. Doro. 1155 Flemings voided out of England.

He held his Christmas at Bermondsey, where hauing conference with his nobles, for the state of the kingdome, hee promised to banish all strangers. Whereupon William of Ypres, and all the Flemings that had flocked into England, fearing the indignation of the new king, departed the land. And the castles that had beene builded to pill the rich, and spoile the poore, were by the kings commandement, and counsell of his Chancellour throwne downe. The king visiting the citie of Yorke, in that countrey receiued diuers castles into his hands, namely amongst other he toke the Castle of Scarborow, from William earle of Albemarle.

In March Quéene Elianor did beare a son at London called Henry after his father.

Line of the Saxons restored. Geru. Dorob. Rad. Dedicero.

King Henry was sonne to Mawd the Empresse, whose mother was Mawd Quéene of England, wife to king Henry the first, and daughter to Margaret Quéene of Scots, who was daughter of Edward, which he begate of Agatha, the sister of Henry the Emperour.

Edward was the sonne of king Edmund named Ironside: whose father was king Etheldred, whose father was the peaceable king named Edgar, the son of Edmund, the son of Edward the seignior, the sonne of Alured, &c.

An. reg. 2. Geru. Dorob. 1156

A councell was holden at Wallingford, where the nobles were sworne to the king and his issue.

King Henry went ouer into Normandie, to whome when he was at Roane, came Toricus earle of Flanders with his wife the kings aunt, that he mought reconcile vnto him Geffrey his brother, which was then come thither also for that purpose: but Geffrey not accepting the pointes offered by the king, they departed without any agréement, Geffrey expulsing Hoele out of Britaine, toke the Citie of Nants, by yelding of the citizens. And king Henry afterward

ward with long siege toke the Castles of Mirable, and Chinon, which Geffrey his brother had holde, whereupon there was a peace concluded betwixt them, that the king should giue to Geffrey, euerie yeere a thousand pound of English money, and two thousand pound of Angeow; and thereupon the third Castle called Lowdune was yeelded to the king, and so was the dissention appeased, and king Henry obtained homage, and pledges of all Aquitaine, and Gascoine, and prepared to returne towards England.

This yeere Quéene Elianor brought forth a daughter named Matild. And the same yeere died William the kings eldest sonne, and was buried at Reding.

King Henry coyned new money, which onely was currant in this Realme, and all other coines were forbidden. *An. reg. 3.*

Conon Earle of Richmond comming out of England into Brytaine, toke the Citie of Redonens, expelling Eudo, which Conon afterward was receiued as Duke ouer almost all Brytaine. Nicholas Tre.

King Henry hauing ouercome his brother Geffrey returned into England, then with an army went against the Welshmen, where he felled their woods, fortified the castle of Rudland, and recouered many strong holdes. He reedified the castle of Basingwirke, &c. but he lost many of his men, for Henry of Essex that bare the kings standert, as he was assailed amongst his enemies, let fall the standert to the ground, which incouraged the Welshmen in such sort, that the king being sore distressed, had much ado to saue himselfe, and was faine to flie: of whose part, Eustace fitz Iohn, and Robert Curcis, two worthy knights, with diuers other noble men and gentlemen were slaine. After that Owen incamped and intrenched himselfe at Bryantpine, and skirmished with the kings men daily. And in the meane while that the king was fortifying the Castle of Rudland, his nauy which was guided by Madoc ap Meridith prince of Powesse, anchored in Man or Angleley, and there spoyled two Churches, and part of the Ile, but as they returned, were all slaine. In the meane time there was a peace concluded betwixt the king and the prince. 1157. King Henry went against the Welshmen. Reedified castles. Henry of Essex.

Quéene Elianor brought forth a son named Richard, at Orford in the kings pallace there, which pallace was since made a church of white Friers.

William Earle of Gloucester was taken by the Welshmen in the Castle of Cardike. Giraldus Cam.

On Christmas day, king Henry ware his Crowne at Worcester, where, after celebration of diuine seruice, he set his Crowne vpon the Altar, and neuer ware it after. 1158

King Henry went into France, and at Paris was ioyfully receiued of king Lewis, who required to haue his daughter Margaret to be maried to his sonne Henry, which suite he obtained, and king Henry obtained, that as Seneschall to the French king hee might enter into Brytaine, and call afore him such as made warre one against another, to appease them, whereby he brought the Citie of Naunts to his dominion.

An earthquake happened in many places through England: and the riuer of Thames was dried vp, that at London mē might walk ouer the same dryshod. Earthquake.

Quéene

An. reg. 5. Quéene Elianor brought forth a sonne named Geffrey.

Ypodigma. A new coyne was made in England. King Henry tooke reuenge of the Englishmen, the summe whereof grew to 12400. pounds of siluer. Of other countries subiect to him hee gathered also an infinite exaction, and then passed toward Tholouse with an huge armie, and besieged that Citie from Midsommer till Hallontide. There were with him Malcolme king of Scots, and a certaine king of Wales, and al the Earles and Barons of England, Normandy, Aquitaine, Anlow, and Gascoine: but Lewis the French king so defended that city, that the kings purpose was frustrate, and the siege raised: and after great good peace and concord betwixt them made, a great discord shortly after followed.

1159 Geruasius.

An. reg. 6. King Henry returned from Tholouse, and Henry the king of Englands son,

1160 not 7. yeares olde, maried Margaret the French kings daughter, that was not

Geruas. Dorob. yet 3. yeares olde.

An. reg. 7. In this meane time the king, although he were much troubled with wars, yet was he not vnmindfull of Ireland. For directing his messengers to Rome with the letters of abuses, gotten at the councell of Cassels, he also obtained by their suite, of Pope Adrian (an Englishman by birth) a priuiledge, both to haue the dominion of the Irish people, with his authoritie and consent, and also to instruct them in the rudiments of faith and ecclesiasticall rites, after the order of the church of England. Which priuiledge, being sent ouer into Ireland, by Nicholas of Wallingford, then Prior of Walmesbury, and afterward Abbot, and also by William Fitz Adelme, Immediatly there was a synode of Bishops assembled at Waterford, wherein it was read in publike audience, with generall consent of all, by Iohn Bishop of Salisbury, afterward Bishop of Chartiers, who was sent to Rome for that purpose, and by him the foresaide Pope Adrian sent a ring of golde to the king of England in token of the inuestiture, which was incontinently laide vp with the priuiledge in the arches of Winchester. Wherefore, I thought it not superfluous to set downe here the tenure of that priuiledge, but first a word or two of Pope Adrian, because I haue saide, he was an English man, his name was Nicholas Breake-speare, borne at Langley in the Countie of Hertford, sonne to Robert a yonger brother of the house of Breake-speares, which Robert after the death of his wife, professed himselfe a Monke of S. Albons, leauing his son to prouide for himselfe. This yong man passed into France, was shorne a Monke, and after chosen Abbot, went to Rome, was consecrated Bishop of Alba, made Cardinall, sent Legate to the Norwaies, where he reduced that nation from Paganisme to christianitie, and after returned to Rome, when Anastasius was dead, he was chosen Pope, by the name of Adrian the fourth, and now followeth the priuiledge.

Giraldus Cam.

The licence of Pope Adrian the fourth, to king Henry the second to enter Ireland, out of an ancient written booke intituled, Topographia Hiberniæ, &c. by Giraldus Cambrensis, and dedicated to the said king Henry the second.

Adrian Pope his Epistle to king Henry.

Adrian Bishop, seruant of the seruants of God, to his deere sonne, the most excellent king of England, health and Apostolike Benediction, your highnes resolution in the lawdable, and fruitful spreading abroad your glorious name on earth, and in obtaining the reward of eternal felicitie in heauen, while you determine

determine like a Catholike Prince to enlarge the boundes and limits of the church, to declare to the vnlearned and rude people, the truth of the Christian faith, and to rote out of our Lords ground the plants of wickednesse; and towards the performance thereof, you require the counsell and fauour of the Apostolike seate: In which action, with how much the more graue counsell, and deepe consideration, you doe proceede, so much the more fortunate successe therein (God assisting you) we nothing doubt you shall haue, for that alwaies they are wont to attaine to a good and happy ende, which take their beginning from the zeale of faith, and loue of true religion. For Ireland, and all other Ilands, to the which Christ the sonne of iustice hath giuen light, and which haue receiued the instructions of the Christian faith, there is no doubt but they doe appertaine and belong to the right of Saint Peter and the holy church of Rome, which also your excellencie acknowledgeth: wherfore how much the more plentifully we do seate in them the faithfull plant, and graffe the bud acceptable to God, so much the more doe we see that shall bee more strictly required of vs in our inward thoughts: You haue signified to vs (most deere son in Christ) that you will enter into the Ile of Ireland to subdue that people vnto lawes, and that there you will enterprete the plantes of vices, and that you will paie a yeerely pension of one penny for euerie house there to S. Peter, and that you will preserue the rightes of the churches there, whole and inuiolated. And we following with a great fauour your godly and laudable desire, doe gratefully accept, and willingly consent that you do enter into that Iland to enlarge the bounds of the Church, to restraine the course of wickednes, to correct maners, to plant vertue, and augment the Christian religion, and that you doe put in execution those things that shall appertaine to the honour of God and saluation of that land, and the people there shall receiue you honourably, and as their Lord shall reuerence you, the churches right remaining sound, and no way infringed, and alwaies reseruing to S. Peter, and the holy church of Rome, the yeerely pension of euerie house there. If therefore you bring that to passe, which in your mind you haue conceiued, indeuor to informe that nation in good maners, and court as well by your selfe as by others to instruct such as you perceiue capeable in this faith, in this word, and in this life, that the church there may be adorned, the religion of the Christian faith may be there planted, and may there rest, and that those things that pertaine to the honour of God and saluation of soules be so ordered and disposed of, that of God you may receiue the full measure of euerlasting reward, and in earth obtaine a glorious name for euer.

This that followeth is adioyned to the former Epistle of Pope Adrian the fourth, being an English man, written to king Henry the second.

I beleue in God Fadir almichty shipper of heuen and earth,	Petrus.
And in Iheſus Criſt his onlethi ſon vre Louerd,	Andreas.
That is iuange thurch the holy ghoſt: bore of Mary maiden,	Iacobus.
Tholede pine vnder Pounce Pilat, picht on rode tree, dead and yburiid,	Iohannes.
Licht into helle, the thridde day from death aroſe,	Thomas.
Steich into heauen, ſit on his fadir richt honde God almichty,	Iacobus Alphei.

Then

Philippus. Then is cominde to deme the quikke and the dede.
Bartholomeus. I beleue in the holy goſt,
Matheus. All holy chirche.
Simon. Mone of alle hallwen: forgiuenis of ſine,
Thadeus. Fleiſſ vpriſing,
Mathias. Lif withuten end, Amen.

Eſt ſimbolum triplex, ſc. illud qui in prima dicitur ſc. quicunque vult. Et illud eſt Athanaſij patriarchæ Alexandrinæ. Aliud quod dicitur in miſſa, ſc. Credo in vnum deum. Et illud fuit ſanctorum patrum in Niceno concilio. Tertium quod eſt commune omnium fidelium, & illud ex 12. apoſtolorum continens 12. articulos fidei.

The Nicene counſell.

Paternoſter in Anglico.

Vre fadir in heuene riche,
Thi name be halijd euer iliche,
Thou bring vs to thi michilbliſſe,
Thi will to wirche thu vs wiſſe,
Als hit is in heuene ido,
Euer in earth ben hit al ſo,
That holi bred that laſteth ay,
Thou ſend hit ous this ilke day,
Forgiue ous all that we hauith don,
Als we forgiuet vch other mon,
He let vs falle in no founding,
Ak ſcilde vs fro the foule thing, Amen.

Ex ſilueſtri Giraldo Cambrenſ. in ſua Topographia Hibernia ad regem Angliæ Henricum 2.

1161 Mathew Earle of Bolonia maried Mary abbeſſe of Rumſey, daughter to king Stephen, and had with her the county of Bologne.

Thomas Wikes. I. Beuerla. Theobald Archbiſhop of Canterbury deceaſed, and the church of Canterbury was voide one yéere, one moneth, and foure téene daies: he had ſate Archbiſhop 22. yéeres, and was buried at Canterbury.

Mathew Paris. King Henry cauſed all his ſubiectes to ſweare fidelitie to his ſonne Henry concerning his inheritance. Thomas the kings Chancellour toke his othe, firſt, ſauing his fidelitie to king Henry the father, ſo long as hee liued. This Thomas was elected Archbiſhop of Canterbury, and when he was conſecrated, he forthwith refuſed to deale any more with matters of the court, renouncing the chancellorſhip, &c.

Thomas Becket archbiſhop of Canterbury.

An. reg. 8. 1162 Wilh. Nouobur. Ralph. Cogſhall. There came into England 30. Germanes, as wel men as women, who called themſelues Publicans: their head and ruler named Gerardus, was ſomewhat learned, the reſidue verie rude. They denied matrimonie, and the ſacraments of baptiſme, and the Lords ſupper, with other articles. They being apprehended, the king cauſed a councell to be called at Oxford, where the ſaid Gerard anſwered for all his fellowes, who being preſſed with Scriptures, anſwered concerning their faith, as they had bin taught, and would not diſpute thereof. After they could by no meanes be brought from their errours, the biſhops gaue ſentence againſt them, and the king commanded that they ſhoulde bee

marked

marked with an hote yron in the forehead, and whipped, and that no man should succour them with house-rome or otherwise: they toke their punishment gladly, their captaine going before them, singing, Blessed are ye when men do hate you: they were marked in the forehead, and their captaine both in the forehead and the chinne. Thus being whipped and thrust out in the winter, they died with colde, no man relieuing them. Publicans whipped.

Quæne Elianor brought forth a daughter at Roane, and named his Elianor, after her owne name.

Robert de Mountfort accused his nére kinsman Henry of Esser of high treason before the nobilitie, affirming that he in an expedition into Wales, in a narrow and hard passage at Colleshell, most fraudulently threw awaie the kings standert, and with a lowd voice pronounced him to be dead, and turned back those that came to the kings succour. (Indéed the foresaid Henry of Esser was perswaded that king Henry was slaine, which undoubtedly had come to passe, if Roger Earle of Clare had not with quick spéed come to with his retinue, & raised againe the kings standert, to the incouraging of the whole armie.) *An. reg. 9.* 1163 Joceline of Bracland.

Henry withstood the foresaid Robert, and denied all his accusations, whereby, in processe of time, the matter came to be tried by combate. They mette at Reding to fight, in an Ile nére to the Abbey. Thither also came much people, to sée what end the matter would come to. And it chanced, that when Robert had manfully powred out many and heauy strokes, Henry turning reason into rage, toke vpon him the part of a challenger and not a defender, who, whilest he manfully strooke, was more slowtly stricken againe, and indeuoring to conquer, was conquered himselfe: he being ouercome, fell downe for dead, and when he was thought to haue bén slaine, at the instance of such of the nobilitie as were of kinne to him, it was granted vnto the Monkes there that his body should be buried, but afterwards he reuiued, and hauing recouered his health, became a Monke in that place. Combate at Reding. Henry of Esser ouercome. Flores Historiar.

London bridge was new made of timber, by Peter of Colechurch a Priest Chaplaine. *An. reg. 10.* London bridge made of timber.

Malcolme the Scottish king, and Resus prince of Southwales, and other, did homage to king Henry and his sonne Henry at Westminster. 1164

A Councell was holden at Claringdon, in the presence of the king, and the Archbishops, Byshops, Lords, Barons, &c. wherein was recognised, and by their othes confirmed many ordinances, too long here to recite, Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury being sworne to the same, shortly after sore repented, and fled the realme, and went to the court of Rome. Gernasius Doro. A councell at Claringdon.

The 26. day of January was a great earthquake in Ely, Norfolke, and Suffolke, so that it ouerthrewe them that stood vpon their féete, and made the bels to ring in the steeples. *An. reg. 11.* 1165 An earthquake.

The king hauing seazed into his hands all the Archbishops goods and rents, and banished all his kinsmen, women and children, Randol de Biot had the custody of the archbishoprick: this man was very cruell against the Archbishop. Mathew Paris. Gernas. Dorob.

The king led an innumerable army against the Welchmen, of Flemings, Scots, Picts, Anjowans, and other, but with so great a multitude he could not ouercome them. Rad. Cogshall.

The

The Welshmen tooke the castell of Cardigan.

In a certaine assiege at Bridgenorth, against Hugh de Mortimere, when the king was shotte at by one of the enimies, a valiant man Hubert de Saint Clere Constable of Colchester, did thrust himselfe betwixt the king, and the danger of the stroke, and so receiued death for him, whose onlie daughter the king taking into his custodie, hee gaue her in marriage to William de Languale, with her fathers inheritance, who begate on her a son, bearing the name and surname of his Grandfather.

An. reg. 12. 1166 The king passed ouer into Normandie, and there holding a Councell, appointed a collection to bee made through all his Countries, two pence of the pounde of moueable goods for the first yeere, and one pennie the pounde for foure yeeres after: the same to bee receiued likewise of arable landes, and of Vines, so that the charges and cost of them be not reckoned. Also euery man hauing a house, and the value of a pounde, shall giue a pennie, and he that hath not the value of a pound, but some office agent, shall giue a penny, this to be the reliefe of the cast parts.

Ataxe.

The same yeere Q. Elianor did beare a son named Iohn.

An. reg. 13. 1167 Robert sonne to William Earle of Gloucester deceased.

The warre was renued betwixt the king of England, and the French king, for the city of Tholouse: and Mathew earle of Bulloigne, brother to Philip earle of Flanders manned 6. hundred ships, to haue come into England, but by such preparation as Richard Lucy gouernor of England made, he was stopped wel ynough.

An. reg. 14. 1168 Mawde king Henries daughter was married to Henry duke of Saxony.

Conan earle of little Brytaine died, and left for his heire a daughter named Constance, which hee had by the king of Scottes Sister, which Constance king Henrie married to his sonne Geffrey, and trauayling earnestlie to set all things at peace and quiet in Brytain, reconciled vnto himself both the cleargy and the laitie of that Countrie.

Iohn Textor. Geru. Dorob. Ypodigma.

An. reg. 15. 1169 Robert de Boscue earle of Leicester dyed, hee founded the Monasteries of Gerendon of Monkes: of Leicester called Saint Marie de Prat of Chanons regular: and Eaton of Nuns, was founded by Amicia his wife, daughter of Ralph Montford.

Sca. Cro. Gerendon. Leicester and Eaton.

King Henry caused the castell of Warwike to be builded.

Sca. Cro. Giraldus Cam.

Deruntius the sonne of Morcardus, called Macke Murgh king of Leynster, being expelled out of his kingdome, came into Guyen to king Henry humblie requiring aid for his restitution, who vnderstanding fully the cause therof, gaue free licence to all Englishmen that would, to aid the said Deruntius: whereupon he returning into England, couenaunted with Richard earle of Chepstowe, to giue him his daughter in marriage, and with her the succession of his kingdome, so that he would helpe him in the recouery of it: and shortly after hee promised to Robert Fitz Stephen, and Mawrice Fitz Gerald large reuenues in Ireland for the like helpe.

An. reg. 16. 1170 King Henry helde his court at Nants, where the bishops and Barons of Britaine being present, sware their fidelitie to the king, and to his sonne Geffrey:

and

and then the king sailed into England, but manie of his company were drowned by the waie. Giraldus Cam.

Robert Fitz Stephen first of all Englishmen after the conquest entred Ireland the first day of May, with 390. men, and there tooke Wexford in the behalfe of Deruntius. Englishmen transported into Ireland.

King Henry caused his sonne Henry borne at London to be crowned by the hands of Roger Archbyshop of Yorke, as he thought to the great quietnesse of himselfe and his realme, but it proued farre otherwise: the yoong king receiued the fealties of the earles and barons. Henry the kings son crowned.

Thomas archbishop of Canterbury, by the mediation of Pope Alexander, and Lewes the king of France, was restored to his sea of Canterbury, and returned from exile.

In the moneth of September, Richard earle of Chepstow, surnamed Strongbow, sailed into Ireland with 1200. men of war, and by force tooke Waterford and Dublin, and married Eue, Deruntius daughter. Gualter Couen.

Thomas Becket Archbishop of Canterbury, in his church at Canterbury, the 28. of December was slaine by William Tracy, baron of Braines and Morton, Reginold fitz Vrse, Hugh Moruilt, and Richard Briton knights. *An. reg. 17.* 1171 Death of Thomas Becket. Chro. Colchest. Ex Record.

There was seene at Saint Osythes in Eastsex a Dragon of a maruellous bignesse, which by mooning burned houses.

King Henry returned from beyond the seas, and landed at Portesmouth in the moneth of August.

King Henry hauing caused Richard earle of Chepstow to giue into his hands all the land which he had conquered in that realme, tooke ship at Penbrooke, and sailed thither, where the king of Conach, Deruntius king of Corke, Morice king of Methe, the king of Vriel, Duuenald king of Ossery, Duuenald king of Limerike, Machachelin, Ophelon, Machaleny, Othnethely, Gillemehelmach, Ocadecie, Ocaruell, with other princes, and the bishops, submitting themselues and theirs to the king of England and his successors, builded for him a greate pallace at Dublin, where he held his Christmas. King Henrie Lord of Ireland. Gesta. Abbat. S. Abani. Regist. Mon. S. Albani. Cimphrius. *An. reg. 18.* Giraldus Cam. Rad. Cogshall. Geruas Dorob.

The church of Norwich, with the houses thereto belonging was brent, and the Monkes were disperkled. The Church of Norwich brent. 1172

The king returned into England on Mondaie in Easter weeke, and about the ascension tide sayled into Normandie.

At Andouer a Priest praying before the Altare, was stricken with thunder and slaine.

Likewise one Larke and his brother were brent to death with the lightning. Chro. colchest.

King Henrie the sonne, with his Wife, the French kings daughter, were both together crowned at Winchester the seuen and twentith daie of August, by the handes of Rotrod Archbyshoppe of Roane. Thus was hee twise crowned, (as yee haue hearde.) Geruassius.

King Henrie the elder was assoyled of the death of Thomas the Archbyshop vpon his othe made, that hee was not priuie to it, but that those Malefactoures tooke occasion to kill him by certayne wordes which the King in his anger vnaduisedlie spake. *An. reg. 19.* 1173 Ypodigma.

King

King Henry married the eldest daughter of Hubert Castle of Wotton, vnto his son Iohn surnamed Without-land.

He also made Mary the sister of Thomas Becket Abbesse of Berking.

Henry the yoonger rebelled.

Henry the yonger rebelling in Normandie against king Henry his father, manie Earles and Barons fledde ouer to him, whereby diuers strong battels were fought, as well in England as in Normandie, Poytow, Guyen and Britaine.

There toke part against the Father, Lewes king of France, William king of Scots, Henry, Geffrey, and Iohn his sons, Robert Earle of Leicester, Hugh of Chester, and others.

Robert Earle of Leicester with three thousand Flemings comming into England, arriued at Walton, and after were receiued by Earle Hugh into Framlingham Castle. They burnt the castle of Hagoneth, the citie of Norwich, &c. but by Richard de Lucy the kings Iustice, both hee, his wife, and as

Iohn Textor.

manie Normans and Frenchmen as were with him were taken, but the Flemings were all slaine, or drowned. This battell was fought without the

An. reg. 20.

Towne of Saint Edmondsburie, neere to a place called Saint Martins of Farneham.

William king of Scots with many Flemings entring into England, wan the Castles of Appleby, Brough, and Prudehow.

1174

Leicester burnt.

King Henry the elder, returning into Englande, in short time subdued his Rebels. The citie of Leicester by his commandement was burnt, the walles and Castle raced, and the inhabitants sparckled into other cities. Robert de

Barnards Castle.

Stoteuile, Radulph de Mandeuile, Barnard Baylole, of whome Barnards Castle toke the name, and William de Vescy came to Newcastle, and after toke king William prisoner, and sent him to London, from whence king Henry toke him and the Earle of Leicester with him into Normandie, and there imprisoned

King of Scots taken prisoner. Gemaf. Dorob. Sealcroni.

them at Roane, where king William compounded for his ransome, and after was deliuered at Yorke for 4000. pound. The nobles of Scotland came no nearer than Pembles in Scotland to meete with their king, wherefore he toke with him many of the yonger sonnes of noble men in Englande that bare him good will, and gaue them landes in Scotland, which he toke from such as were Rebels to him there. The names of those Gentlemen that he toke with him, were Bayelliol, Brewse, Soully, Mowbrey, Saintclere, Hay, Giffard, Ramsey, Lanudell, Bisey, Berkeley, Wellegen, Boys, Montgomery, Vale, Colenille, Friser, Grame, Gurlay, and diuers other.

Gemaf. Dorob. W. Thorne. Canterburie burnt.

The fift day of December, Christes Church in Canterbury was burned, with certaine houses of Office in the court.

King Henry the son, with his brethren, and other, were reconciled to king Henry the father.

An. reg. 21.

The Archbishop of Canterburie, held a Councell in S. Peters at Westminster on Sundaie before the Ascension day, at which Councell were present all the suffragan Bishops of his Prouince, Worcester excepted, that was sicke, and so excused himselfe, and the Bishop of Norwich which was deceased.

1175

Rog Houed.

A brother of the Earle Ferrers was in the night priuily slaine at London, which

which when the king vnderstood, he sware that he would be auenged on the Citizens: for it was then a common practise in the citie, that an hundred or more in a company of young and old, would make nightly inuasions vpon the houses of the wealthy, to the intent to robbe them, and if they found any man stirring in the Citie within the night, they would presently murther him, in so much, that when night was come, no man durst aduenture to walke in the streetes. When this had continued long, it fortuned that as a crew of yong and wealthy Citizens assembling together in the night, assaulted a stone house of a certaine rich man, and breaking through the wall, the good man of that house hauing prepared himselfe with other in a corner, when he perceiued one of the theeues named Andrew Bucquinte to leade the way, with a burning brand in the one hand and a potte of coales in the other, which he assayed to kindle with the brande, he flewe vpon him, and smote off his right hand, and then with a loud voice cried theeues, at the hearing whereof the theeues toke their flight, all sauing he that had lost his hand, whome the good man in the next morning deliuered to Richard de Lucy the kings Iustice. This theefe vpon warrant of his life, appeached his confederats, of whom many were taken, & manie were fled, but among the rest that were apprehended, a certaine Citizen of great countenance, credite, and wealth, surnamed Iohn the olde, when hee could not acquite himselfe by the Watardome, offered the king for his life 500. markes, but the king commanded that he should bee hanged, which was done, and the citie became more quiet.

Night walkers in London, did murther all they met.

Gual. couen.

The kings of England both father and sonne did eate and drinke at one table, lay in one chamber, and went together to visite the Tombe of Thomas late Archbishop of Canterburie, accomplishing indeede the peace which they had promised.

An. reg. 22. 1176

The king caused to be razed and ouerthrowen the Castles of Huntington, Walton, Groby, Tutsbury, Hay, and Trest, with many other, in reuenge of the harme the Lordes of them had done to him.

Castles razed.

This yeere, or rather in the yeere 1173. after Rouse of Warwike, the stone bridge ouer the riuer of Thamis at London, was began to be founded, in place where before had bin a bridge of timber, first builded and long since repaired by a colledge of Priests, which colledge stood where now S. Marie ouries church standeth, in Southwark. The king assisting this work of the bridge, a cardinal late Legate here, and Richard then Archbishop of Canterburie, gaue one thousand marks towards the same foundation. The course of the riuer for the time was turned another way about, by a trench cast for that purpose, beginning in the East about Radrife, and ending in the West about Batterſey.

London bridge founded with arches of stone. Lib. S. Mar. ouer. Iohn Leyland.

This yeere was compiled a booke of the orders and rules of the Exchequer, now commonly called there the Blacke booke: the authour whereof (as diuers affirme) was Gerualius Tilberiensis nephew to king Henry the second. In this booke is described the reason and cause of the first institution of the same court, & why it was called Scaccarum, the names of the officers resident in the same, aswel on the higher side, called the Chequer, as on the lower called the Receipt, or treasurie, their places and dueties incident to the same, their priuiledges and

Gerualius Til. beliens. Blacke booke in the Exchequer.

dignities, with diuers of their fees. The order & forme of making tailes, rolles, writs, and other like. The maner of accounts, & paiments of rents vsed in those daies, whereof some were yelded in mony, & some in victuals, prised according to the valuation of the mony of that time, whereof mine Author maketh mention. For prouision of the kings houshold vsed within his owne remembrance (as he saith) from the time of K. Henry the first, wherein the officers of the kings houshold reducing their victuailes into an estimate of money, did value for a measure of wheat to make bread for the seruice of 100. men, 1. shilling: for the carcase of a fat Ox, 1. shilling: for a fat sheepe 4. pence: for the prouender of 20. horses 4. pence: many other speciall notes there are contained in these bookes worthy of memory, which for breuitie I ouerpasse.

Allowance of bread for an hundred men, xii. pence. For a fat oxe. xii. pence. A fat sheepe, iiii. pence.

In March the king called a Conuocation of the Cleargie at London, when the Popes Legate was set, and the Archbyshoppe of Canterburie on his right hand, as primate of England, the Archbishop of Yorke disdaining to sit on the left hande, came and swapt him downe to haue thrust his taile betwixt the Legate and the archbishop of Canterbury, which archbishoppe beeing loathe to remoue, the other sette his buttocke in his lappe, but he had vnneth touched him with his bumme, when the Bishops and other of the Cleargie and Laitie stept to him, pulled him, threwe him to the grounde, and began to laie on him with fistes and battes, so that the archbyshop of Canterburie (yelding good for euill) was faine to defend the other Archbyshoppe, who with his rent Coape got vp, and awaie strayght to the King with a greate complaynte: but when the trueth of the matter was once knowne, he was well laughed at for his remedie.

I. Beuerla. *An. reg.* 23 Ypodigma.

Richard Strongbow earle of Chepstow, deceased, and was buried at Dublin in Ireland.

William earle of Arundell also deceased, and was buried at Wimondham.

William earle of Glouceſter, because he had no son to inherite his lands, and being loth to distribute them amongst his daughters, he made Iohn the kings son his successor.

Cron. Tinmouth. Waltam Abbey 1177 Ypodigma. Gerualius.

A showre of blod raigned in the Ile of Wight two houres space.

The Church of secular Chanons at Waltam in Esser, founded by Harolde, was by the K. commandement new builded and regular Chanons placed there, to the number of 24. Richard the first augmented it, and so did Henrie the third, with Faires and Markets, a Faire for seuen daies, and at Epingburie a Market euerie Mundaie, and a Faire for three daies. This Abbey at the generall suruey, and surrender, was valued to dispend yeerelie 900. pound, 4. shillings and 4. pence.

Rosamond concubine to king Henry.

Rosamond the faire daughter of Walter, Lord Clifford, Concubine to Henry the second (poisoned by Q. Elianor as some thought) died at Woodstock, where K. Henry had made for her an house of a wonderful working, so that no man or woman might come to her, but if hee were instructed by the king, or such as were right secrete with him touching the matter. This house after some was named Labyrinthus, or Dedalus worke, which was thought to be an house wrought like vnto a knotte in a garden, called a Maze, but it was commonlie saide,

ſaide, that laſtly the Quéene came to her by a clewe of thredde, or ſilke, and ſo dealt with her, that ſhe liued not long after, but when ſhe was dead, ſhe was buried at Godſtow, in an houſe of Nunnes, beſide Oxford with theſe verſes vpon her tombe:

Hic iacet in tumba, Roſa mundi, non roſa munda,
non redolet, ſed olet, qua redolere ſolet.

In Engliſh thus:

The roſe of the world, but not the cleane flowre
Is now here graué, to whom beauty was lent,
In this graue full darke now is her bowre,
That by her life was ſweete and redolent.
But now that ſhe is from this life blent, *An. reg. 24.*
Though ſhe were ſweete, now foully doth ſhe ſtinke:
A mirrour good for all men that on her thinke.

After the death of this Roſamond, King Henry toke priuily the daughter of Lewis king of France, (that was maried to his ſonne Richard Earle of Poytow) for his Leman, and had practiſed for a diuorce betwixt him and Elianor his Quéene: whereupon followed great diſcord betwixt the king of England, and of France: but K. Henry ſayling ouer into Normandie, the K. of France and he, had talke together, and entred into amitie. Ludouicus Viues.

Richard Lucy the Kinges Iuſticiar laide the foundation of the couentuall Church in the honour of S. Thomas, in a place which is called Weſtwood, otherwiſe Leſnes, in the territorie of Rocheſter. 1178

Leſnes. Gerualius. Walter Couen. Geru. Tilberien.

This Richaid Lucy builded the Caſtle of Anger in Eſſex, in the dioceſſe of the Biſhop of London.

The Citie of Yorke was brent.

On Chriſtmas day at Drenhall, in the territorie of Derlington, in the Biſhopricke of Dureſme, the earth lifted vp it ſelfe in the maner of an high Tower, and ſo remained from the ſpring of the day vnmoueable, vntill the euening, and then fell with ſo horrible a noiſe, that it feared the inhabitants thereabout, and the earth ſwallowed it vp, and made there a déepe pitte, which is ſéene vntill this day. For a teſtimonie thereof, Leyland ſaieth, he ſaw the pittes there commonly called Hel-kettles. *An. reg. 25.* 1119 Cron. Tinmoth. Iohn Leyland.

The tenth day of Aprill the Church of Saint Andrew in Rocheſter, with the whole towne was conſumed with fire.

Richard de Lucy chiefe Iuſtice of England deceaſſed in the Abbey of Leſnes, which he had builded, and where hee had changed his habite, and was become a Monke. Richard Lucy chiefe Iuſtice died.

The 19. day of Auguſt at night, ỹ Mone was eclipſed, which was ſéene of K. Henry and his company, as he rode all night, to méete the king of France comming into England, to viſit the tombe of Thomas Becket the Archbiſhop. The king of France came into England.

On the 21. day of Auguſt, Lewis king of France entred into Englande, which neither hee, nor any his predeceſſors had euer done, and king Henry of England méeting him, as he entred out of ſhippe.

On the 23. of Auguſt, both the kings came to Canterbury, where they were with due honour receiued of the Archbyſhop Richard, and other Byſhoppes of England, the Couent of Canterburie, and a multitude of noble men. Lewes king of France offered vpon the Tombe, and to the ſhrine of Thomas Becket a rich Cuppe of golde, he gaue alſo that renowmed precious ſtone, that was called the Regall of France (king Henry the 8. put the ſame in a ring, which hee woze on his thumbe) he gaue to the Monkes by his Charter one hundzed meaſures oz tunnes of wine, to be paide them yeerely at Paris in France, he continued all one night in watching and praier at the tombe, and in the morning required to be made a brother there, and was admitted. Then king Henry ſhewed the ſaide king Lewes all the treaſures of his Realme, which he and his predeceſſours had gathered together, but the Frenchmen refrained from taking of gifts, but taking leaue of the king, receiuing ſome thinges in token of amitie, returned to Douer, and ſo ouer into France.

A precious ſtone called the Regal of Fráce offered to Tho. Beckets ſhrine.

Cadwallan a prince of Wales. *An. reg. 26.*

Cadwallan a prince of Wales, being accuſed, was brought to appeare before the king, but clearing himſelfe, as he went homward vnder the kings ſafe conduct, was ſlain, which thing redounded greatly to the kings diſhonoz, notwithſtanding he profeſſed to be ignozant thereof.

1180

The Trapozites oz Uſurers in England were grieuouſly puniſhed foz corrupting the coyne, the which beſides other berations, were fettered two and two together, and carried in carts to the kinges court, there to receiue their iudgement.

Ro. Houeden.

A new coine was made in England, by commandement of king Henry the father, it was made rounde, but not without great burden to the poze inhabitants of the Realme. He put all the coiners in England to great ranſome, foz corrupting of the old money.

An. reg. 27.

Geffrey the kinges baſtarde ſon, reſigned the Byſhoprick of Lincolne, and was made the kings Chancellour.

1181

Itinerarium Cambriæ Giral.

This yeere Giraldus Cambrenſis wrote his Booke of the deſcription of Wales, wherein hee noteth to haue happened in his time, in the Prouince of Kemmeis, a yong man (borne in thoſe parts) to be ſo perſecuted with Toads, as if all within that country had come crawling together to ber him, and when innumerable numbers of them were killed by thoſe that kept him, and other of his friends and kinſmen, yet came they ſtill as if they had ſprong like Hydraes heads numberleſſe: at length when his friendes were wearied with watching, they cauſed him in a Coffin to be hoiſed vp into an high tree that was ſhred of all the boughes, and made ſmoth: but there was hee not preſerued from his venemous enemies, which aſſaulted him, creeping vppe into the tree, till they had eaten him to the bones that he died, his name was Sciſillus Elker her (that is) long legge.

A man deuoured by Toads.

Gemaſius de mappa mundi.

An. reg. 28.

Barnewell with the Priory, neere vnto Cambridge, was fired and brent.

1182

King Henry at Waltham, in preſence of his nobles of the Realme did liberally aſſigne to the aid of the holie land 42000. marks of ſiluer, and 500. marks of gold, which was worth in money 47333. pound, 6. ſhillings, 8. pence. This being done, he went ouer into Normandie, at which time alſo Henry, duke of

Saxonie,

Saronie, the kings sonne in law, was by the Emperor banished, and came into Normandie to the king, and brought with him the Dutchesse, and his two sonnes Henry and Otho, and the king receiuing them, did liberally finde them all things necessary for their maintenance. K. Henry remaining in Normandie, made his Testament, giuing amongst other Legacies, much to houses of Religion. Also to the marriage of poore maides of England, he gaue 300. marks. To the marriage of poore maides in Normandy, 100. markes, and to the like in Angew, 100. markes. *An. reg. 29.*

King Henry the father kept his Christmas at Cane in Normandy, with his three sonnes, King Henry the yonger. Richard Earle of Poytow, and Geffrey earle of Britaine: there was also Henry Duke of Saronie, with his wife and their children, the Archbishops of Canterbury and Bolaine, with other bishops, earles and barons in great number. Here would K. Henry the father, that his sonne Henry the young king, should haue receiued homage of his brethren, Richard earle of Poytow, and Geffrey earle of Britaine, whereunto the earle of Britaine did not stay to graunt, but the Earle of Poytow vtterly refused to doe it, saying it was not conuenient so long as their father liued, to acknowledge any superioritie to his brother: for as the fathers inheritance was due to the eldest sonne, so he had to claime the lands which belonged to his mother. This denial much offended his brother the young king, whereupon Richarde departed from the Court in great displeasure, and comming into Poytow, he began to fortifie his Castles, that he might be in a readinesse to stand at defence for his safegard, if his father or brethren shoulde come to pursue him. But not long after, king Henry the sonne, by counsell of his father followed him, being also incouraged thereunto by the earles and Barons of Poytow, which for the sharpe and cruell gouernment of earle Richard hated him. And shortly after commeth their brother Geffrey with a great armie in aide of his brother the young king, insomuch that earle Richard not knowing how to shift the present danger, sent to his father for aide. Who being sorry to see such vnnaturall dealing amongst his sonnes, gathered an armie, and came forward, and did so much, that all the three sonnes came to Angeres, and there sware to be obedient to their fathers will. Whereupon a day was appointed them to meete at Myrable. In the meane while, king Henry the sonne obtained licence of his father to goe vnto Limongs, vnder pretence that hee might there labour to reduce both his brother Geffrey, and the Barons of Guyen to quietnesse, but all was dissembling, so that when their father followed with an armie, and came to Lymongs in stead of receiuing him with honour, they shot at him, so ỳ they pierced through his vppermost armor, &c. At length, when K. Henry the yonger, and his brother Geffrey had done against their father what they could, & yet could not obtaine their purpose, for that their power was far vncomparable to their wils, K. Henry the yonger, through indignation and displeasure, fell into a grieuous sickness, in a village called Martell, not far from Limonge, where his father lay at siege. At the first he was taken with an extreme feauer, and after followed a flure, where through perceiuing himselfe in danger of death, he sent to his father, confessing his trespasse, requi- 1183

ring him of forgiuenes, and alſo to come to him, but the father fearing to commit himſelfe into the hands of ſuch vngratious perſons, as were about his ſon, refuſed to come at him, ſending him his ring in token of his bleſſing, and as it were a pledge or witneſſe, to ſignifie that hee had forgiuen him. The young king receiuing it with great humilitie kiſſed it, and ſo ended his life, without iſſue. Thus was the vnobedient child cut off, as it had beene a weauers threed, at the age of 28. yeares, his body being wound in thoſe linnen clothes, that at his coronation were imbrued with holie Criſme, hee was roiallie buried at Roane, in the Cathedrall Church.

King Henry the yoonger deceaſeth.

An reg. 30. 1184

King Henry returned into Englande, and ſent manie men of warre into Wales, for the Welſhmen imboldened by the kings abſence, had broken forth and ſlaine manie Engliſhmen.

Glaſtenbury brent.

The Abbey of Glaſtenburie was brent, with the whole Towne and Church of Saint Iulian.

An. reg. 31. 1185

Heraclius Patriarch of Jeruſalem came to king Henry, deſiring him of aid againſt the Turks, but the king becauſe of the crueltie of his ſons, was counſelled not to leaue his dominions in hazard, and to go ſo far off: wherefore hee promiſed the Patriarke 50000. marks of ſiluer.

Heraclius the Patriarke. Gerual. Dorob.

This Patriarke dedicated the church of the new temple, then firſt builded, in the Weſt part of London, by the knights Templars in England, he alſo dedicated the Priorie of S. Iohn of Jeruſalem by Smithfield.

New Temple.

Iohn the kings ſon, Lord of Ireland. Ypodigma.

King Henry ſent his ſonne Iohn into Ireland, that he might be made Lorde theroof. The Pope ſent him a Crowne of Peacockes feathers, brayded with Golde.

This yeare died Hugh Mortimere founder of Wigmore Abbey. Q. Elianor at the ſuit of the Archbyſhop of Canterburie was releaſed out of priſon in the which ſhe had remained almoſt xii. yeares.

Richard Archbyſhop of Canterbury, deceaſed at Hawling, in the Dioces of Rocheſter, when he had ſate xi. yeares.

The Empreſſe deceaſed. Rouſe of Warſaith, ſhe deceaſed at Roane, in anno. 1167. and was buried in the Monaſterie of Becco in Normandy.

Mawde the Empreſſe, mother to K. Henry the ſecond deceaſed, ſhe founded the Abbey of Bordeſley, and was buried at Reading, with this Epitaph.

Ortu magna, viro maior, ſed maxima partu,
Hic iacet Henrici filia, ſponſa, parens.

The daughter, ſpouſe, and Parent eke, of Henry lyeth here,
Great of parentage, higher by marriage, moſt high by childbirth deere.

King Henry kept his Chriſtmas at Danfront in Normandy, and ſhortly after, came to a communication with the king of France, at the which time hee

An. reg. 32 1186

tooke a ſolemne oth, that he would deliuer the Ladie Alice, the king of France his ſiſter (whome he had yet in his cuſtodie) vnto his ſon Richard earle of Poytow in marriage.

Geffery Earle of Britaine dieth. Giral. Cam. Mathew Paris. Rog. Houed. Iohn Textor.

Geffrey earle of Britaine the kings ſon of England, died at Paris, about the beginning of Auguſt, and was there buried. He left iſſue 2. daughters which he had by Conſtance (daughter to Conan earle of Britain) who alſo at the time of his death was great with child, and after brought forth a ſon named Arthur.

A

A great earthquake shrew downe many buildinges, amongst the which the Cathedrall Church of Lincolne was rent in peeces the 25. of Aprill.

The Cathedrall Church of Chichester, and all the whole citie was brent the 20. of October: king Henry gaue Constance, Countesse of Britain, mother of Arthur, to Ranulph earle of Chester to be his wife. Chichester brent.

Neere vnto Orforde in Suffolke, certaine Fishers of the sea toke in their Nettes a Fish hauing the shape of a man in all pointes, which Fish was kept by Bartlemew de Glaunuile, Custos of the Castell of Orforde, in the same Castell, by the space of six monethes and more for a wonder: he spake not a word. All manner of meates he gladlie did eate, but most greedilie raw fishe, after he had crushed out all the moisture. Oftentimes he was brought to the Church, where he shewed no tokens of adoration. At length when hee was not well looked to, he stale away to the sea, and neuer after appeared. *An. reg. 33.* 1187 A Fish like a man. Ralph. Cogshall. Monument in Colchester.

Saladine chiefe prince of the Saracenes won a great battell against the Christians, and toke Guido king of Jerusalem with the Crosse that Christ died on, and all the christians were either slaine or taken. There escaped among other, Theodoricus Agastas of the knights Templar, notwithstanding 230. of his brethren were beheaded, that had been taken prisoners: besides 40. that were slain. The citie of Jerusalem was taken, by composition euerie man to giue ten besants, euery woman 5. euery child 1. All the rest to the number of 14000. men and women became subiect to perpetuall bondage. Knights Templars slaine, and beheaded.

The kings of England and of France met betwixt Gisors and Trye, where they toke on them the Crosse, and diuers other with them. The king of England landing at Winchelsea, hasted towards Northampton, where at Gedington, about eight or ten miles from Northampton he held a Parliament, about the voiage into the holie lande, where manie Articles concerning that voyage were concluded, and the whole Realme troubled with paying of tithes toward that voyage. The Christians were appointed to paie aboue threescore and 5. thousand pounde, and the Jewes threescore thousand, without any delay: but by meanes of a discord that fell betwixt the two kings, that voiage was staied. *An. reg. 34.* 1188 Parliament at Gedington. Richard Southwell. Roger Houeden. Gual. couen.

The Towne of Beuerley, with the Church of Saynt Iohn there, was brent the twentieth of September. Beuerley brent.

The kings of England and of France, with Richard earle of Poytow, the Legate, and the archbishops of Canterbury, Roane, Rhenes, and Burges, met at Nants the ninth day of June. There Philip the French king required, that his sister which had beene kept in England two and twentie yeeres, might bee restored vnto earle Richard as his Wife, and earle Richarde desired the same, but king Henry denied this request, and so they departed asunder, and got them to armour. The French king, and Earle Richarde pursued the king of England so hard, that he was forced to yeeld to al the requests, as wel of the French king, as of his sonne Richard. This was done at Gisors, and so departing came to Agai. When all matters were accorded as is aforesaid, betweene the two kings of England and of Fraunce, the king of Englande required of the king of France to haue all their names deliuered him in writing, which had promised to take part against him, and were ioined as confederates with the king of *An. reg. 35.* Gerualius. 1189 Lodouicus Viues Death of king Henry the 2. Richard cambr.

France, and earle Richard, which request was granted, and when the rolle was presented vnto him, he found his sonne Iohn the first person that was named in the register, wherewith he was so sore troubled, and disquieted in his minde, that comming to Chinon; he felt such griefe hereof, that he cursed euen the very day in which he was borne, and gaue his sonnes Gods curse and his, the which he would neuer release, although he was admonished to do it by manie Bishops, and religious persons. Whereupon being brought to such extremitie as ye haue heard, he was taken with a grieuous sickenesse, which bringing him to vtter desperation of returning to health, he finally departed this life on the 6 day of July, in the yeere 1189. and the 61. of his age, when he had raigned 34 yeres, 7. moneths lacking 11. daies, and was buried at Founteuerard in a monasterie of Nunnes, which he had founded. He had also founded the Priories of Stanley, of S. Martin in Douer, and of Basingwarke, he made of an olde Colledge of secular Chanons, an Abbey of regular Chanons at Waltham in Esser. He builded many Castles in England, and he beganne the stone bridge ouer the riuer of Thamis at London. Hee left in his treasurie more then a hundred thousand markes.

K. Henry curseth himselfe and his sonnes.

Monasteries founded by K. Henry.

Issue of king Henry.

He had issue by Elianor his wife, William that died young, Henry that was crowned king, and died before his father, Richard that raigned next after him, Geffrey Duke of Britaine, that died before him (but left issue Arthur and Elianor) and Iohn that after the death of his brother Richard, toke on him the kingdome, disheriting his nephewes Arthur and Elianor the true heires: daughters he had Matilde, married to the Duke of Saxonie, Helene Quéene of Castile, and Ioane Quéene of Sycile.

Roger Wind.

This king, when he was carried forth to be buried, was first apparelled in his princely roabes, hauing his crowne on his head, gloues on his hands, and shoes on his féete, wrought with golde spurres on his héeles, a ring of gold on his finger, a scepter in his hand, and a sword by his side, and so was laide vncouered, hauing a pleasant countenance, which when it was told to his sonne Richard, hee came with all spéede, to sée him, and as sone as hee came nére him, the bloud gushed out of the nose of the dead corpes in great plentie, euen as if the spirite of the dead king had disdained, and abhorred the presence of him, who was thought to be the chiefe cause of his death, which thing caused the said Richard to wéepe bitterly, and he caused his fathers bodie to be honorably buried at Fonteuerard as is afore said.

King Richard Cuer de Lion.

Am. reg. 1.

Richard the first borne at Orford, for his valiantnes surnamed Cuer de Lion, or with the lions heart, the third son of Henry the second, began his raigne the sixth day of July, in the yéere of our Lord 1189. at the age of 35. yéres.

He was bigge of stature, with a merrie countenance. To his

his souldiers fauourable: bountifull to his friends: to strangers a grieuous enemie: hard to be pleased: desirous of warre: abhorring idlenesse.

Elianor the olde Quæne, mother to Duke Richard, who at the commandement of her husband, had bæne long kept in prison, was set at libertie. And then the with the Lordes of the Realme abode the kings comming at Winchester, where Geffrey Ridle the proud Bishop of Ely fell sicke, and departed this life intestate, leauing in his coffers great treasure, to wit, 3060. markes of siluer, and 205. markes in gold, which was bestowed on the new kings coronation, for the bishops soule. Lib. Elii. Bishop of Ely deceased.

Duke Richard hauing receiued Adelisia, or Alice his wife, vpon suspition that she had bæne dishonested whiles she was in his fathers custodie, sent her home with her Dowrie, hauing concluded a marriage with Ladie Berengaria, daughter to Geruas king of Nauarre, he returned into England, and landed at Southampton the twelfth of August, and on the fourteenth was receiued into Winchester, with him also came his brother Iohn, vnto whome hee gaue the Earledomes of Morton, of Cornewall, Dorset, Summerset, Nottingham, Darby, and Lancaster, with the Castles of Marleborow, and Ludgarshall, with the forrest, and the appurtenances, the honors of Wallingford, Tichill, and Eye, to the value of foure thousand markes by yeere. Hee also gaue him in marriage with Isabel his second wife, daughter to Robert Earle of Gloucester, the Earledome of Gloucester, although Baldwin Archbishoppe of Canterbury forbad the marriage, because they were Cousins in the third degree of consanguinitie. To Robert earle of Leicester, he restored all his lands, which had bæne taken from him. He came to London, and on the third of September, was crowned at Westminster, by the hands of Baldwine Archbishop of Canterburie. John Earle of Morton.

He commanded that no Iewes nor women should be at his Coronation, for feare of enchantments which were wont to be practised: for breaking of which commandement, many Iewes were slain the same day. For the Iewes dwelling about London, and other partes of the Realme, being there assembled, meaning to honour the same Coronation with their presence, and to present to the king some honorable gifte, one of them was stricken by a Christian, who alleadged the kings commandement to keepe them backe, which some of the vnruly people perceiuing, supposing it had bæne the kings commandement, fell vpon the Iewes with clubs, bats, and stones, beate them to their houses, and after assailing their houses, set them on fire, and burnt them in their houses, or slew them at their comming out.

The Archbishoppe of Canterburie being sore offended with Earle Iohn the kings brother, for taking to wife Isabel Countesse of Gloucester, his cousin in the thirde degree, wrote a threatning letter to the same Iohn, commaunding him not to touch the virgine, and to appeare at a peremptorie day before him to answere the matter. The 15. of December at Pipwell, in presence of the king, the Archbishop and prelates were elected, Geffrey de Lucy to the sea of Winchester, Richard Archdeacon of Ely, the kinges treasurer, to the sea of London, Hubert Walter to Salisbury, William Longshampe, the kinges

Cham-

Chancellor to Ely, and Geffrey the K. ballard brother, to the sea of Yorke.

Ro. Houeden. K. Richard gaue, or rather solde, the Castles of Berwike and Rokesburgh to the Scottish K. for the summe of x M. marks esterling: he also sold to Hugo de Puteaco B. of Durham, his own prouince for a great piece of mony, & created him earle of the same, and then said in game, I am a wonderous craftesman, I haue made a new earle of an old bishop. He sold the Priory of Conentrie, to Hugh Bishop of Chester, for iii. C. marks, which Hugh with a power of armed men, inuaded the Priorie, chased the Prior away, brake the Monkes, lamed some, cast some into prison, and spoyling the other, droue them awaie, brake the hutches of the Church, brent their Charters and priuiledges.

The king also fained to haue lost his signet, and made a new, and then caused to be proclaimed, that who so euer would safely enioy those thinges which before time they had enrolled, should come to the new seale, whereby it came to passe, that many which could not finde him in England, went ouer sea to fine with him at his pleasure.

John Maior. Outlawes in England. In this time were many robbers and out-lawes, among the which, Robert Hood, and little Iohn, renowmed theeues, continued in woods, dispoyling and robbing ỹ goods of the rich. They killed none but such as would inuade them, or by resistance for their owne defence.

The saide Robert intertained an hundred tall men, and good archers, with such spoiles and theftes as he got, vpon whome foure hundred (were they neuer so strong,) durst not giue the onset. He suffered no woman to be oppressed, violated, or otherwise molested: poore mens goods hee spared, aboundantlie relieuing them with that, which by theefte hee gotte from Abbeies & the houses of riche Carles: whome Maior blameth for his rapine and theft: but of all theeues hee affirmeth him to bee the Prince, and the most gentle Theefe.

1190 King Richard betooke the guiding of this lande to William Longshamp Bishop of Ely, Chancellour of England, and the foure and twentieth day of February, he tooke his scrippe and staffe at Canterbury, and the 6. of March tooke the Sea at Douer, and transported ouer.

Gouernour of England William Bishop of Ely.

K. Rich tooke his voiage ouer to Jerusalem. Gerualius. Ypodigma. The second of July the two kings of England and of France met at Towers, and from thence set forward on their iourney towards Jerusalem.

The Towne of Pawling in Kent with the Nunnery was consumed with fire.

Jewes slue themselues. The Jewes in the townes of Norwich, Saint Edmundesburie, Lincolne, Stamforde faire, and Linne, were robbed and spoyled. And at Yorke to the number of 500. besides women and children, entred a tower of the castle, which the people assailing, the Jewes proffered money to be in safety of their liues, but the Christians would not take it: whereupon their men of law said to them, it is better for vs to die for our lawe, then to fall into the hands of our enemies: and they all agreeing to that Counsell, cutte the throates of their wiues and children, and cast them ouer the walles on the Christians heads: the residue they locked vp in the Kinges lodging, and burnt both the house and themselues.

Geffrey

Geffrey Archbishoppe of Yorke, returning from Rome, and now consecrated, arriued at Douer with his traine, whome Mathew de Clare by the commaundement of the kinges Chancellour, entring with violence into the Church of Saint Martins, drewe from the Altar, and so carried him to prison. Baldwin Archbishoppe of Canterbury deceased at the siege of Acres, and was there buried.

Archbishop of Yorke drawen from the Altar to prison. Ralph. Cogshall.

William Byshop of Ely, builded the vtter wall about the Tower of London, and caused a deepe ditch to be made about the same, thinking hee could haue caused the riuer of Thamis to go round about it, but hee bestowed great cost in vaine.

An. reg. 2. W. Dunthorne. A ditch made about the tower of London

King Richarde subdued the Ile of Cyprus, and then ioyning his power with Philip the French kings in Asia conquered Acon, where there grewe betweene the two kings a grieuous displeasure: for which cause Philippe shortlie departed thence, and comming into France, inuaded the Countrie of Normandie.

Rich Southwell. Mathew Paris. Rog. Houed. Galfrid. Viniſal.

Iohn brother to king Richard, toke on him the kingdome of England in his brothers absence. He raised powers of men and with small adoe won the Castles of Nottingham and Tickhill.

Arbor. succeſſionis. Iohn the kings yoonger brother vsurpeth the kingdome.

Robert Earle of Leicester died in his iourney to Hierusalem.

K. Richard restored to the Christians the city of Ioppa, and in many battels put the Turkes to great sorrow.

1191

The bones of the most famous king of Brytaine, Arthur, were founde at Glastenburie, in a goodly olde Sepulchre, about the which stood two pillars, in which were letters written, which, by reason of the great barbarousnesse of the language, and the foulenesse, no bodie could reade: vpon the sepulture was a crosse of lead, whereon was written, Here lyeth the noble king of Brytaines Arthur.

The bones of Arthur the Britaine found.

Hugh Bishop of Lincolne, came to the Abbey of Nunnes called Godstow, betweene Oxford and Woodstock, and when he had entred the church to pray, he saw a tombe in the middle of the quire, couered with a pall of silke, & set about with lightes of ware. And demanding whose tombe it was, hee was answered, that it was the tombe of Rosamonde, that was sometime Leman to Henry the second of that name, king of England, who for the loue of her had done much good to that Church. Then quoth the Bishop, take out of this place the harlot, and bury her without the Church, least Christian Religion should grow in contempt, and to the ende that through example of her, other women being made afraid, may beware, and keepe themselues from vnlawfull and adoulterous company with men.

Honorable burial forbidden to adulterous women.

An. reg. 3.

William Bishop of Ely, did commonly ride with 500. horses, and grieued Abbeies by meane of his lodging with them: he withstood Iohn the K. brother, who said, he will not if his brother Richard were aliue or not. To whome the Bishop answered, if king Richard be yet liuing, it were vntruth to take from him the Crowne. If he be dead, Arthur the elder brothers sonne, must enioie the same.

Iohn the kings brother rebelled.

King Richard exchanged Cyprus, with Guy of Lesingham, for the kingdome

1192

Ex annalib. Elie. Vitæ G. Iango. Cam. Ro. Houeden.

dome of Hierusalem: wherefore the king of Englande a long time after, was called king of Hierusalem.

The Bysshoppe of Ely Legate to the Pope, Chancellour of Englande, and Gouernour of the Realme, was forced to take the Tower of London for his refuge, wherein Earle Iohn besieged him, at length the Bysshoppe getting licence to depart, went to Douer, but hee was there forced to sweare that hee woulde not departe the Realme: yet beeing in a marueylous disquietnesse of mind, he put off his mans apparrell, and put on womans, meaning soe to escape, whilest hee goethe vppe and downe on the shore, bearing a Webbe of clothe on his arme as though hee woulde sell it, still waiting for a ship, a sort of women pulled off his kerchiefe, and threwe him to the grounde, and after beate him, and drewe him along the sandes, whereupon greate crie beeing made, the Burgesses ranne, and with much adoo, gotte him from among them, and kept him streightlie till he had obtained licence to depart the Realme.

The Bysshoppe at Crux Roisia, or Rotstane.

An. reg. 4. When the Archbyshop of Roane, with the consent of earle Iohn, tooke vpon him the rule of the land, as Vicechancellour.

A certaine Ladie named Roisia, daughter to Paine Peuerell, or Counteſſe of Norfolke (as shee might bee both) hauing in the raigne of king Stephen, rayſed a stone Crosse in the kings high waie, on the North limites, by the which Hartfordeshire toyneth on Cambridge shire, which Crosse was then called Crux Roisiæ of Roisia. Nowe Eustachius de Marke Knight, Lorde of Fuscelles about this time, founded thereby a Priorie in honour of GOD and Saint Thomas, for Chanons Regular. After which time, there were manie houses built, by meanes whereof the Towne beganne to rise, and by little and little to encreaſe, so that in place of Crux Roisiæ, it is called the Towne of Roisia, or Royston. Unto the which king Richarde graunted a Faire, and a Market, with other Liberties. This Priorie was since renewed, and augmented by Radulph de Runceſter, and other: so that at the suppreſsion, the same was valued at 89. pounds, sixténe shillinges. There was an hospitall of S. Iohn, and S. Iames, Apostles, also suppreſſed and valued but at 5. li. 6. s. 10. pence.

1193 *An. reg. 5.* Richard taken prisoner.

King Richard hauing knowledge that Philip of France inuaded Normandie, and that Iohn his brother had made himselfe king of England, made peace with the Saladine for three yeeres, and with a small company returning homeward, was taken prisoner by Leopold Duke of Austria, who brought him to Henry the Emperour, and there kept him in prison a yéere and fiue moneths. He was enuied for his valiancy, in that he had shewed more proofe of his prowesse, than all the other had.

Wolfan. Lazius. King Richard of England builded the wals of Vienna.

Wolfangus Lazius in his booke de Romano Imperio, affirmeth that Leopolde of Austria, when he had taken king Richard, for some iniurie done to the house of Austria, he compelled him to build the wals about Vienna, the chiefest citie of Austria, the which wals within our memory defended all Germany from the inuasion of the Turke.

The rumour being spread that K. Richard was taken as ye haue heard, forth-

with

with the French king and earle Iohn made a great conspiracy together, meaning to take the kingdom of England, hereupon a great number of Flemings were assembled at Wittsand, readie to come ouer, but their messengers being taken, their treason was bewraied. Earle Iohn rebelled against king Richard.

Elianor the olde Quéene caused the Sea Coastes to bee watched ouer against Flaunders, but notwithstanding Earle Iohn came secretlie into Englande to raise the Welshmen and Scottes, but the king of Scottes would not aid him. The Welshmen in the partes about Kingstone and Windsore take praies abroad.

The French king entred Normandie, founde small resistance, wan diuers townes, Euro was deliuered to him, then he hasted towards Roane, and besieged it, but through the great industry of Robert erle of Leicester, he profited little there, and so returned into France. Earle Iohn perceiuing his treason was discouered, fortified his castelles, and passed ouer into France, and ioined with the French king.

King Richard sent for his mother and the archbishop of Roane to come vnto him to Almain, being now in great hope to be deliuered, & in the meane time the archbishop of Canterbury was made regent of England.

Ambassadors were sent from Philip king of France, and the like from earle Iohn to the Emperor, offering great sums, vpon condition that king Richard might remaine still in prison, vntil the feast of S. Michael next comming, or els to deliuer him into their hands. The Emperor shewed these letters to K. Richard, which draue him into great dispaire of deliuerance.

The kings friends intreating for his deliuerance, his ransome was set at 100000. pound, to witte to the Emperour 100000. markes, to the Empresse 30000. markes: and to the duke of Austrich 20000. marks: whereupon commandement was directed from the Kinges Iustices, that all Bishoppes, Prelates, Earles, Barons, Abbots, and Priors, should bring in the 4. part of their reuenues towards the kings raunsome, and besides this, the Cleargy brought in their golden and siluer chalices, and fleeced their shrines, al which was coined into money. The kings ransome. Geruas. Dorob. Rad. Cogshall.

This imprisonment of king Richard was procured by Sauaracus Bishoppe of Bath and Glastenburie, to the intent to haue Glastenbury abbey, to be united to the seate of this Bishoprieke, for confirmation whereof I thought good to set downe the beginning of the Certificate of Henry the thirde to the Pope in this sort.

Significauit Sanctitati nostræ Henricus Dei gratia, Rex Angliæ, quod cùm Filius memoriæ (rege Richardo auunculo suo in carcere in Alemania detento) sc. quondam Bathonius Espisc. per ipsum cuius carcere Dominus Rex tenebatur, Abbathiam Glasten. &c.

The order of the Cistercencles did giue their woll for one yéere, &c. all the money gathered for the kings raunsome, to remaine in the custodie of Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard Bishop of London, William earle of Arundell, Hameline earle of Waren, and the Maior of London. Mathew Paris. Rog. Houed.

The king was restored to libertie, the most part of his ransome being paid, and

and pledges left for the reſidue. In the meane time letters were intercepted of Earle Iohn which hee had ſent into England touching treaſon, one Adam of Saint Edmond Clearke, being ſent by earle Iohn, to prouide that his Caſtle might be fortified againſt King Richard, came to London, and dined with Hubert Archbiſhop of Canterburie, where he bragged of Earle Iohns proſperitie, and familiaritie with the French king, for the which being ſuſpected, he was after dinner apprehended by the Maior of London, who take from him his letters, and deliuered them to the Archbiſhoppe of Canterburie, who on the next morrow called a Councell of the Earles and Barons, and ſhewed them the letters, whereupon they all conſented that Earle Iohn ſhould bee diſpoſſeſſed of all his land in England, and that his Caſtles ſhould be beſieged. The ſame day the ſame Archbiſhop and Biſhops excommunicated earle Iohn and al his fauourers, which troubled the peace of the kingdome. And forthwith the Archbiſhop beſieged the Caſtle of Marleborough, which belonged to Earle Iohn, and take it. After this he beſieged Nottingham Caſtle.

Record. canoni.

1194

The king taking ſhip at Antwerp, landed at Sandwich, on the 12. of March, ſhortly after he beſieged the caſtle of Nottingham, and wan it, and after that the Caſtle of Tickehill, and then rode to Wincheſter, where hee was againe ſolemnly crowned on the xvii. of Aprill. After this he called into his hands, all ſuch things as hee had either giuen or ſolde by patentes or otherwiſe, by wich meanes he got a great ſumme of money.

Godfri. Viniſalf. Geru. Dorob.

K. Richard the ſecond time crowned.

An. reg. 6.

King Richard hearing that the king of France had beſieged Vernaile, hee take the ſea together with his mother Quéene Elianor, on the tenth of Maie, and tranſported ouer into Normandy, and arriued at Harflew with 100. ſhips fraught with men, horſe, armour, &c. The king of France hearing hereof, plucked vp his tents, lefte the ſiege, and departed. King Richard herewith entring the French dominions, ſent three bandes of Souldiours towarde Vale Ruell, and went himſelfe vnto Lochis, and beſieged the Caſtle and wanne it: about the ſame time Robert Earle of Leiceſter iſſuing forth of Roane in hope to worke ſomewhat, vnaduiſedly in the landes of Hugh Gourney he fell within danger of his enemies, who take him priſoner with other of his company, king Richard wanne the ſtrong caſtle of Taplebridge by ſurrender, hee wan by force the citie of Engoliſme, and other holdes: at length a truce was taken for a time.

Robert Earle of Leiceſter taken priſoner.

1195

King Richard being in Normandie kept his Chriſtmas at Roane, whileſt both the king of Englande and Fraunce were bent to trie their malice by dint of ſworde, there came meſſengers to eche of them from the Pope, exhorting them to peace, but they preuailed not, for as ſone as the truce was ended, they got them to the field, King Richard drawing toward Iſeloune, a towne in the confines of Burie, from thence he went to Briſen, and take the Caſtle there, then went hee to a towne called Nouen court, this he beſieged and it was yelded,

In the meane time the K. of France beſieged Albemarle, whereupon K. Richard came to raiſe the ſiege, & there was a ſharpe fight, but the Engliſh men wearie with trauaile of their iourney, and being raſhly entred into the battel,

were

were not able to endure the French mens violence, and so not without great losse, were constrained to retyre.

King Richard sent messengers to the Pope, complaining vpon the Duke of Austrich, for misusing of him and his, as they came by distresse of weather through his Countrey: whereupon the Pope excommunicated the Duke, and enioyned him to release the couenants that hee constrained the king to make and to send home the pledges: but the duke refused this order, contenning the Popes authoritie, who shortly after hauing broken his legge, and in extreame anguish ended his life, and was kept vnburied till his sonne had released the English pledges that lay in hostage for the money behind of K. Richards raunsome, and further sware to stand to the iudgement of the Church for that offence of his Father.

Thus were the pledges restored, and the residue of the money behind released, which thing to king Richard was both pleasant and profitable, for taking occasion thereof to amend his former life, into a better order, he put away his Concubines, and toke him to his wife, whom of long time he had not known. Moreouer, the Emperour gaue to the Cisteaux Monkes, 3000. markes of siluer, parcell of king Richards raunsome to make siluer censars in euery church of that order, but the Abbots refused the gift, being a portion of so vngodly and wrongfull gaine, at which thing king Richard greatly maruelled at the first, but after commended the Abbots in their doinges chiefly for shewing that they were voide of the accustomed greedinesse, that men noted to haue béene in them.

Hugh Bishop of Lincolne gaue to the king a thousand markes for his mantel of Sables, which his predecessors were wont yéerely to haue giuen them by the king. *An. reg. 7.*

Robert Earle of Leicester, offered to the king of France for his raunsome a thousand marks sterling, and to quit claime to him and his heires for euer, the right which he had to ỹ castle of Pasay, with the appurtenances, but for that they were still continued, there was no answere giuen. Starling money.

King Richard hauing refreshed his souldiours, went to Piligio, and by assault wanne it at the first brunt, and made it leuell with the groond. After this, there was a motion made for peace betwixt the two kings, being now wearied with long wars. Whereof, when Earle Iohn was aduertised, hee beganne to doubt, lest by agreement made, he might be betraied by the king of France, vpon couenants passing betwéene them, and therefore determined to commit his whole safety to his naturall brother: whereupon comming to king Richard hee besought him of pardon for his offences, and though hee had not dealt brotherly towards him, yet, that he would brotherly forgiue him his rebellious trespas, &c. Vpon whose submission, and by the intreating of Elianor his mother and other, in the ende king Richard did not onely pardon him his life, but vpon his o'he, restored him to the Earledomes of Mortaigne in Normandie, and Glocester in England, with the honor of Eye, the Castles except, and in recompence of his other earldomes, his brother gaue him yéerely 8000. pounds of Anglow money. Submission to Earle Iohn.

King

King Richard pardoned Hugh Nouant bishop of Couentry, and restored him to his bishopricke for the summe of 5000. marks of siluer: but Robert Nouant his brother, died in the kings prison at Douer.

M with the beard. Roger Houeden. W. Paruus. Iohn Textor. Gernas. Dorob. Cant. Record. Gualter Couen.

William Fitz Osbert a citizen of London, poore in degrée, euill fauoured of shape, but yet verie eloquent, mooued the common people to séeke libertie and fréedome, and not to be subiect to the rich and mighty, by which meanes he drew to him many great companies, and with all his power defended ẏ poore mens cause against the rich. 52000 Londoners he allured to him to be at his deuotion and commandement.

The king being warned of this tumult, commanded him to cease from those attempts, but the people still followed him, as they before had done: he made to them Orations, taking for his theame this sentence, *Haurietis aquas in gaudio de fontibus saluatoris*, which is to say, Ye shall drawe in ioy, waters out of the welles of your Sauiour. And to this he added: I am (saide he) the Sauiour of poore men, yée be poore, and haue assayed long the hard hands of rich men. Now drawe yee wholsome water foorth of my welles, and that with ioie, for the
1196 time of your visitation is come. This William was commanded to appeare before the kings counsel to answere for himselfe in such causes as should be laid against him, where he appeared, but with such a multitude of people, that the Lordes were afraid, and remitted him with pleasant wordes for the time, appointing some priuily when he was alone to apprehend him. He tooke the steeple of Bowe Church in Cheape, and fortified it with munition and victualles. The archbishop of Canterbury then being at London with other Iustices sent to him, and willed him to come forth of the church & he should haue his life saued: but hee refused to come forth, wherefore the Archbishop talking with the citizens of London called together a great number of armed men least anie sturre should be made.

The Saterday therefore being the Passion Sonday euen, the steeple and church of Bowe were assaulted, and William with his complices taken, but not without bloudshed, for he was forced by fire & smoake to forsake the church: he was brought to the Archbishop in the Towre, where he was by the Iudges condemned, and by the héeles drawne from thence to a place called the Elmes, and there hanged with nine of his fellowes. Where because his fauourers came not to deliuer him, he forsooke Maries sonne (as he termed him) and called the diuell to helpe and deliuer him.

Ralph Higden.

This counterfait friend to the poore, who named himselfe to be the sauiour, perswading them against the rich, was a man of an euill life, a murderer, who slew a man with his owne hands: a fornicator, who polluted Bowe Church with his concubine: and amongst other his detestable facts, one that had falsly accused his elder brother of treason, which elder brother had in his youth broght him vp in learning, and done many things for his preferment. Yet after the death of this wicked malefactor, the simple people honored him as a Martyre, insomuch that they steale away the gibbet whereon he was hanged, and pared away the earth, that was be-bled with his blood, and kept the same as holy reliques to heale sicke men.

A false accuser of his elder brother, in the end was hanged: God amend or shortly send, such an end to such false brethren.

King Richard granted licence vnto Philip his chaplaine late made Bychop of Durham, to coine money in his Citie of Durham, which liberty none of his predecessours had enioyed of long time before. Robert earle of Leicester gaue Philip king of France two thousand markes of siluer, and the quite claime of his Castle of Palley, for his liberty, and to be cleane released. *An. reg. 8.* Roger Houeden.

Philip king of France, besieged Albemarle, and at length won it, and rased it downe to the ground, and king Richarde gaue vnto him three thousande markes of siluer, for the ransome of his men of armes, and other taken in that fortresse. After this the king of France wan Moncourt, and earle Iohn tooke the castle of Gamages. Rog. Houed.

About the same time king Richard gaue vnto his nephew Otho, the Earledome of Poytow. Also, as the countesse of Brytaine, the mother of Duke Arthur came into Normandie, to haue spoken with king Richard, Reinulph earle of Chester, her husband meeting her at Pontolson, tooke her as prisoner, and shut her vp within his Castle of S. Iames de Beuineman: and when her son Arthur could not find meanes to deliuer her out of captiuitie, hee ioined with the French king, and made great hauocke in the lands of his vncle king Richard. Whereupon the king gathered a mightie power, and inuaded Brytaine, cruelly walking that countrey.

This yeare died William Earle of Salisburie, the sonne of Earle Patrike, whose daughter and heire, king Richard gaue in marriage together with the Earledome of Salisbury vnto his base brother surnamed William Longespe, W. Longespe base sonne to Henry the second.

The Welshmen brake forth and did much hurt by spoyling of the marches. 1197
The Archbishop of Canterbury calling together an army hasted thither, besieged the castle of Polie, and tooke it, and chased the enemies, established peace, and returned.

Rise ap Griffeth the Welch king departed this life: after whose departure there fell discord betweene his sonnes for the succession, till Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury went to the marches of that country, and made an agreement betwixt them.

King Richard and the Earle of Flanders confedered together. The French king entring vnwarily into Flanders, was intercepted and taken by the erle of Flanders, but giuing pledges vpon couenant to make peace, he was suffered to depart. *An. reg. 9.*

The eight day of September they met at Lisle, where, by mediation of the Archbishop of Canterbury, they tooke a truce. The Archbishop of Roan returned from Rome, where he had complained on king Richard for taking from him a plot of ground, whereon he builded a strong Castle, but at the request of the archbishop of Canterbury, the king gaue him in recompence, the towne of Dæpe.

The Welshmen on the marches tooke booties, and did much hurt, but Hubert the archbishop of Canterbury being lord chiefe Iustice, lieutenant, or warden of England, found meanes to resist them, so that they being fought with, were ouerthrowen, and 5000. of them slaine. The Archbishop hauing got this victorie, returneth to London, where calling together a great number of the 1198 Gernasius.

nobles of the land, he resigned his office of being head ruler, in whose place the Lord Geffrey fitz Peter succéded in August.

An. reg. 10. King Richard tooke of euery Carucata plough land, or hide of land through England fiue shillings. Commissioners were appointed in euery shire, with the assistance of the Shiriffes, to see the same assessed, and rated after 100. acres of land to a hide, according to the custome. The French king was intercepted by the army of king Richard, so that with much ado he escaped into Cipres, his army was dispersed, and almost an hundred knights taken, beside other common souldiours, without number. The Charters which the king had before made with his new seale were changed.

100 acres of land to an hide.

Mathew Paris.

Hubert archbishop of Canterbury, through the procurement of the monkes of Canterburie, and by the commaundement of the Pope, brake downe euen with the ground the Chappell or colledge at Lambeth which his predecessours had founded, and he had finished in the honour of Thomas Archbishop of Canterburie.

Colledge at Lambeth.

1199 King Richard wounded to death. Paulus Aemilius. Gualt. Couen. Ralph. Cogshall. Gaufrid. Vinesalf.

King Richard turned his army against the Barons of Poictow that rebelled against him, he set their cities and townes on fire, spoyled their country, & slew many of his aduersaries cruelly, at the last came to the dukedome of Aquitaine, and besieged the Castle of Chalne, and brought it to that, that they within offered to yéelde vpon conditions, but hee would not so receiue them, but would haue them by force: whereupon a certaine yong man named Bertram de Gordon, standing on the castle wall, leuelled a quarell out of a crosbow, and smote him with a venomed dart in the left arme or shoulder: which stripe the king little regarded, but inuading the castle, wan it, and put the souldiours in prison. Of this wound aforesaid, he died the 6. of Aprill, in the yere of our Lord 1199. when hee had raigned 9. yéeres, and 9. moneths, and was buried at Fonteuerard at his fathers féete, whom he confessed he had betrayed, his hart was buried at Roane, in testimonie of the loue hee had euer borne vnto that citie, for the stedfast loyalty he had alwaies found in the citizens thereof, and his bowels at the foresaid Chalne.

King Iohn.

An. reg. 1. IOhn Earle of Morton, and Lord of Ireland, aged 34. yeeres, a person of an indifferent stature, but of melancholy complexion, after the decease of king Richard, tooke vnto him, and reteined all the knights and souldiours which had serued his brother, he kept them in wages, and promised them large giftes. Moreouer, he sent Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, William Marshall, and Geffrey fitz Peter chiefe Iustice into England, to proclaime his peace to be kept amongst the rest of the Nobles of the Realme. These, when they came into England, caused all men to sweare to be true to Earle Iohn, and so went forward to Northampton, where they called together all those noble,

bles, whome they doubted, and promised in the name of Earle Iohn, that hee shoulde restore vnto them, and to all men, their right: and vpon that condition they gaue to him their fidelities. Also they sent worde by Eustace de Vesey, to William king of Scots, that earle Iohn at his returne into England should content him for all his right which hee claymed in England, and therefore willed him in the meane season to be faithfull to the said Earle, and to keepe his peace, which hee promised, by which meanes all strife and debate in Englande was appeased.

Earle Iohn tooke the kings treasure.

Whilest these things were a doing in England, earle Iohn went to Chinon where king Richards treasure late, which treasure, with the Castle, was deliuered to him by Robert de Turnehame. But Thomas de Furneis deliuered vnto Arthure Duke of Brytaine, the citie and Castle of Angiers, for as well by him, as by all other the nobles and peeres of the countries of Angiew, Maine, and Turon, Arthure was receiued as their soueraigne Lord. Moreouer, Constantia mother to the said Arthure, deliuered him to the king of France at Turon: whom he sent to Paris to be kept, and toke into his hands all the Castles and Cities that appertained to the said Arthur: but Earle Iohn and Elianor his mother, came with a great army to the Citie of Paris, and won both it and the Castle, destroyed all the stone houses there, and carried the citizens away captiues. This being done, Earle Iohn entring into the countrey of Anlow held his Easter at Beaufort, and on the morrow after, he sent Quéene Elianor and Marchadius vnto the Citie of Anlow, who with a warlike power spoyled it, and carried the citizens away captiues.

Earle Morton duke of Normandy.

In which meane time earle Iohn came to Roan, and there by the ministerie of Walter Archbishop of Roan, he was girt with the sword of the dukedome of Normandy, in the Cathedrall church, where the Archbishop before the high altar, did set a Crownet of golde vpon his head, artificially made with Roses of golde, &c. Duke Iohn sware vpon the holy Euangelists to defend the Church and liberties thereof, to see Iustice ministred to the people, good lawes put in execution, and euill lawes suppressed.

Then Iohn Duke of Normandie sayled ouer into England, and arriued at Shoreham on the fiue and twentieth daie of Maie, and came to London on the Ascension éuen, where the Archbishops, Bishops, Earles, Barons, and other being present, Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury standing vp in the middest of them all, said in effect as followeth:

Archbishop his Oration.

Your discréete wisedomes doe knowe (right honorable) that by most reason none ought to succéede in the kingdome, except by the vniuersall consent of the whole realme (praying for the grace of the holy ghost) he be chosen according to the excellencie of his qualities and behauiour, by the example of the first annointed king Saul, whome our Lord appointed vnto his people, not being the son of any king, neither of the progeny of any king. Likewise, after him, he made Dauid king, the sonne of Ishai, who was a stoute man, apt and méete for the worthy dignitie of a king, and that because he was holy and humble, so that he which doth in such sort excel in prowesse all other in the kingdome ought to be chosen to gouerne the same: but if there be any of the kings linage that

John duke of Normandy elected king of England.

doth excell other, we ought to be readie to elect and chuse him. This I speake touching the noble Duke Iohn, brother to our late excellent king Richard now deceased, which had none heire proceeding of his bodie. Which Duke Iohn appeareth plainly vnto vs, to be both wary and stowt, whom therefore beseeching the holy ghost of his grace, we doe with one consent elect and chuse, as being both of the same worthines, and also of the same bloud and kindred that king Richard was of.

Roger Wend.

This archbishop indéede was a man of déepe vnderstanding, a singular pillar of stabilitie, and of incomparable wisedome, so that no man was so bold as to make any reasoning of the matter at that time, because they knowe well ynough that he did not without cause define in such sort of this thing: wherefore the Duke Iohn, and all other there présent did accept of the choise, crying, *Vivat Rex*. But afterwards, the archbishop being demaunded, why he made this election, he answered, and said, that by certaine Oracles, and by the gift of prophecie, he was certified, that this Iohn should once take to himselfe the realme and crowne of England, and should bring the same into great confusion: wherefore, to the end he should not haue so much occasion to bring these thinges to passe, he saide, that he was so to be elected to the kingdome, though the same by succession of inheritance belonged not to him, and so he set the crowne vpon his head, and annointed him king at Westminster in Saint Peters church, vpon the Ascension day, which was the fire and twentieth day of Maie: he was sworne to loue the catholike church and ordinances thereof: to kéep and defend the same harmeles from the inuasion of euill disposed persons: to disanull peruerse lawes, and erect good lawes, and according to the same to minister true iudgement throughout his kingdome.

Prophecy of king Iohn.

John duke of Normandie crowned king of England.

States created.

The same day king Iohn inuested William Marshall with the sword of the earledome of Striguile, and Geffrey fitz Peter with the earledome of Essex, and they serued that day at the table with their swordes girt to them. Also Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, was made Lord Chancellour of England.

Whilest these thinges were in doing in England, Philip king of France with an army, brake into Normandy, and tooke the citie of Eureux, the towne of Argues, and diuers other places from the English, and passing forth into Maine, recouered that countrey. Also the Brytaines, wanne the townes of Gorney, Butenant and Genfoline: they tooke also ỹ city of Angiers, &c. Which being signified to king Iohn, he went ouer into Normandy, where many submitted themselues to him: but a truce was taken betwixt the king of France and him, vntill the 26. of August. In the meane time, king Philip of France made Arthur Plantagenet duke of Brytaine, knight of the field, and receiued of him homage for Anlowe, Poitiers, Turon, Maine, Brytaine, and Normandy: for the which the said king Philip promised by othe to aide him in recouerie thereof.

Philip of France bound by othe to aide duke Arthur.

Price of wines.

King Iohn made a law, that no tunne of Rochell wine should be sold dearer then xx. shillings, of Anlow for xviii. shillings, & of France xxv. shillings, and not aboue, vnlesse the same were of such principal goodnes, that some for their vse would giue xxvi. shillings viii. pence for the tun, and not aboue in any case.

A

A gallon (by retale) of Rochel wine to be sold for iiii. pence, the gallon of white wine not aboue vi. pence. It was also ordained, that in euery citie, towne and place where wine was vsed to be solde, there should be xii. honest men sworne to haue regard that this assise should not be broken: and if that they found any Vintner that should sell any wine by small measures contrary to the same assise, his body should be attached by the shiriffe and detained in prison, till order were taken for his further punnishment, and his goods seized to the kings vse: and the like punishment was appointed for such as shoulde sell by the tunne, hogshead, or otherwise, contrary to the assise.

Philip king of France, and Iohn king of England met betwixt the castles of Waylun, and Butenant, where they agreed vpon a peace, that king Iohn should quite claime vnto the French king, and his heires for euer, all Vilgewin, Gisors, and other castles. Also king Iohn gaue in marriage with his neece Blanch, daughter to Alfonse, King of Castile, vnto Lewis, sonne and heire to Philip king of France, all the castles which the same Philip had taken in Normandy, that is to say, Vernon, Passey, Puery, and Nonancort, and many other cities, townes, castles, &c. besides to king Philip 30000. markes. King Philip then restored Arthur to king Iohn, and receiued of him homage, for Britaine and Richmond, both kings sware to obserue this peace firme with their seale for euer. 1200

Philip of France deliuereth duke Arthur to his enemy.

An. reg. 2.

King Iohn hauing made peace beyond the seas, returneth into England, where he requireth an aide of his realme to pay the thirty thousand marks, and edict was made, that euerie plowland should paie three shillings, which troubled the land sore, considering the escuage that went afore, which was for euery knights fee two marks, which before time was neuer but twenty shillings. King Iohn went ouer, and hauing paid his thirty thousand marks to the king of France, he was there by the hands of Helias Archbishop of Burdeaux, and the Bishops of Poitiers, and Scone, diuorced from his wife Isabell, daughter to Robert Earle of Glouceſter, because of nearenesse of blood, as touching her in the third degree: And then he married Isabell daughter to Amerie Earle of Angolesme; which Isabel before Hugh surnamed Brune Earle of Marches had taken to wife.

A taxe.

A taxe of iii. s. euery plowland.

King Iohn diuorced from Isabel his wife, married another Isabell.

This being done, king Iohn returned with his new wife, and crowned her Queene at Westminster on the eight of October. And the same day king Iohn commaunded Hugh Neuill chiefe forrester, and the other forresters to warne all the Monkes of the Cisteaux order throughout England, that from the Octaues of Saint Michaell, vnto the Quindem, they shoulde remoue all their horses, their swine, and other cattell whatsoeuer off the forrest ground: and if any were after found vpon ỳ forrest ground, they should be sold to the kings vse. The monkes prouided for themselues, and patiently bare the kings displeasure.

The archbishop of Canterbury sent to all the Abbots of that order, aduising them to mete the king at Lincolne on the xv. of November, that being together, by his helpe they might attempt to appeale the kings mode, they did as they were willed. The archbishop counselled them, the nexte day to mete the

king without the city, and to humble themselues vnto him, but they thought not this to bee the best waie, lest those that rode before the king should abuse them.

King of Scots did homage to king Iohn.

The next day king Iohn talked with William king of Scots that was come to Lincolne, with Rotland Lord of Galloway, and many other noblemen, to doe homage to the king.

The next day the Archbishoppe moued the king in the matter touching the Abbots, but the king willed him not to vexe his spirits, for he meant that day to be let bloud.

On Sonday next following, the archbishop caused the abbots to come into the kings presence at masse time: wherupon, after the king had heard masse, and comming forth of the church, the Archbishop besought him to heare their sute, and then they falling downe at the kings feete, besought him to haue pity vpon them: the king commaunded one to bring the Abbots into his chamber, and he with the Archbishop, bishops, and Nobles went into the same chamber before them, where, when they had sate a while, the king rose vp, and went into an inner chamber, there to conferre with the noblemen, such as pleased him; and after comming forth, called for the archbishop and certaine other bishops, with whome he talked secretly: and after the Abbots being called, the king appointed the Archbishop to declare vnto them his pleasure, which was, that although the king had shewed himselfe in wordes to be offended with them, yet he neuer meant hurt to that order, and now had put away al rancour and malice towards them: herewith they fell downe on the ground, and gaue humble thanks to the king, and withall, the archbishop inferred, that the king requested them to forgiue him: and the king herewith fell downe, watering his cheekes with teares, and they likewise at his feete. The Archbishop, after both partes were vp on their feete, said, that the king required, that by their intercession he might be made a brother in the chapiter of the Cisteaux, and that they would procure him to be admitted: Moreouer, the king, he saide, minded to build a house of that order, that he might be had in memorie, and would be a patron and defender of their order. The Abbots being greatly reioiced, departed, praising God.

1201 King Iohn going into Ireland toke a great piece of money there, and returning into England, was crowned together, with his Quéene at Canterburie on Easter day.

King Iohn with Isabel his Quéene sailed into Normandie, fell in communication with Philip king of France, where they agréed so well, that they passed together into France, where king Iohn was honorably receiued at Saint Denys, and into Paris, &c.

An. reg. 3. Hugh Brune rebelled.

A nobleman of Aquitaine named Hugh Brune, rebelling against king Iohn inuaded diuers parts of the prouince, because the king had maried the daughter of the Earle of Angolesme, whome the said Brune had affied, and had in his custodie, wherefore they passed ouer, and restrained the rebelles from their attempts.

Prodigia. Tempus.

The fiue and twentieth of June there arose a cruel tempest of thunder, lightning,

ning, and haile, with a vehement raine, that destroyed corne, cattell, men, and houses, by burning them, &c.

The tenth of July, another tempest much like to the former hapned, so that the medowes could not be mowed, and the hay that was downe, was carried away by the outragious course of waters that ouerflowed the ground, great numbers of fishes through the corruption of the waters died, manie bridges borne downe, corne and hay carried away, and many men drowned, so that al men thought a new deluge had beene come.

King Iohn sharply warred vpon the Earle of March, Hugh Brune, and the earle of Eue his brother, who being not able to resist, they complained to Philip king of France, as to their soueraigne and chiefe Lord, who sent oft times to king Iohn, moouing him to cease from vexing them, but that would not serue: wherefore he was sommoned by the nobles of France as duke or earle of Aquitaine and Anion, to come vnto the court of the French king, and to stand to the iudgement of his peeres, all which king Iohn denied; whereupon the same court adiudged him to be depriued of all his lands, which he or his predecessours helde of the king of France, &c. 1202 Ralph. Cogshall. *An. reg. 4.* King Iohn sommoned to the French kings Court.

King Philip forthwith assembled an army, and inuaded the castle of Buteuant in Normandy, which K. Richard had builded, he raced it to the ground. He tooke the land of Hugh Gorney, and all the Castles thereabout. He tooke the Castle of Albemarle, with the countie of Eue, and all the land to Arches, none resisting him. Also Arthur earle of Brytaine being made knight by the French king, whose ponger daughter he had affianced, he being but sixteene yeres old, went to Hugh Brune, and Geffrey of Lucingham, and with two hundred and fiftie knightes, besieged the Castle of Mirable, in which Queene Elianor his Aunt was inclosed: but king Iohn came with a power, and deliuered his mother from danger. He tooke there his Nephewe Arthure, William de Brawsa, Geffrey de Lucingham, Hugh Brune, Andrew Caueny, Saluaricus de Mauleon, and diuers others. Arthur earle of Brytaine taken.

Great thunder and lightning, with haile as bigge as hennes egges, &c.

The waters increased, and did much hurt in England: Arthur earle of Brytaine, from Falaise was brought to Roan, and put in the Tower vnder the custodie of Robert de Veypont, where shortly after he was dispatched of his life, some say by the handes of his vncle Iohn. 1203

The king of France inuaded the castles of Normandy, tooke Lisle, Dandeley, with the Castle, and the vale de Ruell, in the which were Robert fitz Walter, Sayer de Quincy, and manie other. Hee tooke the strong Castle vpon Seine, builded by king Richard, which had beene valiantly kept by the constable of Chester.

Among many other that found themselues agreeued with the shamefull murder of duke Arthur, sonne to Geffrey duke of Brytaine, king Iohns elder brothers sonne, and therefore rightfull heire to the crowne and realme of England, was Iohn Courcy the valiant conqueror, and earle of Vlster in Ireland: Which being brought to the kings eares, he cast the saide Courcy into the Tower of London. But the matter fell out hoter betweene the king of France Paulus Aemilius. Of Iohn de Courcy a valiant and hardy man.

and K. Iohn (as ye haue heard) so that the king of France bereft him of all the lands that he held in the fée of the Crowne of France, and among other matters, he sent hither a mighty man, who should try that quarel with an English champion by combat: To vndertake the which, the king mooued Courcy, who flowtlie answered him, that in his quarrell, whose murtherous vile minde, cowardlines, traiterous conditions, and tyrannicall gouernement deserued not the aduenture of losing one droppe of blod, hee would not fight one stroke, but for the honour of the realme, wherein many a good and honourable man liued, to his great griefe, he would willingly leopard his life, and chérefully accept the combat, yea with a gyant. But no harme was doone, for the Frenchman, as soone as he salwe the mightie limbs, and fierce countenance of Courcy, went awaie.

King Iohn doubting treason in his owne men, in December returned into England, where he gathered great aids of money.

1204 Rad. Cogshall. *An. reg. 6.*

Elianor daughter to the earle of Poitiers, that had béene wife to Lewis king of France, and after to K. Henry the second of England departed this life, and was buried in Fonteuerard.

Allerike de Vere Earle of Oxford.

King Iohn gaue to Allerike de Vere the earledome of Oxford, and made him earle, by girding him with the sword. King Iohn sent Ambassadours to treate a peace with the K. of France, but he, because the world went with him, would not agrée in anie wise, except Arthur might be deliuered to him aliue, or if hee were dead, he would haue his sister in marriage with all the lands on that side the Seas.

Normandie yeelded to the French.

Shortlie after he tooke Falaise, Caen, and so forth all the countrey to Barflot, Charburgh, and Dunfront, Roane, Vernoll, and Arches: and so prowde Normandy, Anlow, Brytaine, Maine, Poitow, and Thoraigne, were within a short time deliuered to king Philip.

Lib. Bernewell.

King Iohn married Iane his bastard daughter to Lewlin prince of Wales, and gaue with her the Castell and Lordship of Elingsmore, in the Marches of Southwales.

Robert Fitz Parnell earle of Leicester died without issue, and then Simon de Mountford, and Sayer de Quincy, diuided the earledome betwixt them, because that Sayer de Quincy, and the father of Simon Mountford had married the sisters of the said Robert.

Great frost. 1205 Dearth of corne.

The fourtéenth daie of Januarie beganne a frost, which continued till the two and twentith daie of March, so that the ground coulde not be tilled, wherof it came to passe that in summer following, a quarter of wheate was sold for a marke of siluer in manie places of England, which for the more parte in the daies of king Henry the second, was sold for twelue pence: a quarter of beanes or pease for halfe a marke: a quarter of oates for fortie pence, that were wont to be solde for foure pence. Also, the money was so sore clipped, that there was no remedie, but to haue it renued.

An. reg. 7.

King Iohn gathered great armies of men to haue gone ouer the Seas, but being failed onward of his botage, he returned againe, and tooke escuage, two

Iohn Textor. Great taxe.

markes and a halfe of euerie knightes fée throughout Englande, pretending a quarrell

quarrell against his barons, because they would not follow him into the parts beyonde the Seas.

The earle of Salisburie, the kings brother, Geffrey the kings son begot on a concubine, and manie other knightes, were gone ouer before, but al in vaine: the charges was inestimable that had beene layde out about the preparation made for this iourney. 1206 Ralph Cogshall. *An. reg. 8.* Geffrey the kings base son.

Great thunders and lightninges burſting out of the clouds were ſeene, ſo that men thought that the day of Doome had bin come, many men and women were deſtroied, beſide cattell, and houſes that were ouerthrowne, and burned. The corne in the fields was beaten downe with haileſtones as big as geeſe egs. Great thunders, lightnings, and hails.

About Maidſtone in Kent, a certaine monſter was found, ſtricken with the lightning, which monſter had an head like an aſſe, a belly like a man, and all other parts farre diſcordant from any one liuing thing. This dead bodie no man might vneth come neere vnto for ſtench. A ſtrange monſter.

King Iohn toke the thirteenth part of all moueable goods, both of lay and religious through England, at which all men murmured.

The 27. day of Ianuary a great wind ouerthrew many houſes and trees, and a great ſnow deſtroied manie beaſts. 1207

The monkes of Canterburie, by the aduiſe of the Pope, elected Stephen Langton to be their Archbiſhop, and then Pope Innocent intending to obtaine the fauour of king Iohn towardes this election, becauſe hee knewe that hee did make diligent ſearch for precious ſtones, ſent him an eloquent Epiſtle, with diuers precious Iewelles, which were of king Iohn well accepted: and Stephen Langton was conſecrated at Rome. Then the Pope ſent letters to king Iohn, humblie exhorting him to receiue the ſaide Stephen Archbyſhop of Canterburie, being thereunto canonicallie elected, the rather becauſe hee was an Engliſhman borne, and a doctor of diuinitie, &c. But king Iohn being greatlie offended with the promoting of the ſaid Stephen, ſent men in armour to expell the monkes of Canterburie, to the number of three ſcore and foure out of the Realme, and condemned them of treaſon, the monkes went into Flaunders, and their goods, and lands of their church was confiſcate. Alſo king Iohn ſent threatning letters to the pope, whereunto the pope made a large anſwere. *An. reg. 9.* Mathew Paris.

Q. Iſabel vpon the firſt of October was deliuered of her firſt ſon at Wincheſter, and named him Henry.

The 23. of March, William Byſhop of London, Euſtachius Byſhop of Ely, and Malgor Byſhop of Wincheſter by the popes commandement executed the interdiction vpon the whole Realme, and they ceaſed through all England from miniſtring of Eccleſiaſticall ſacraments, ſauing to them that were in perill of death, and baptiſme to children. All the bodies of them that died, were buried like dogs in ditches and corners: Manie Biſhops, eſpecially they that pronounced the interdiction, fled the Realme. 1208 England interdicted. Nic. Triuet. Mathew Paris. Rad. Cogshall.

The king ſet all the biſhoprickes and abbeies in the realme into the cuſtody of lay men, and commanded all Eccleſiaſticall reuenues to bee confiſcated. Alſo doubting leſt the Pope ſhoulde excommunicate him by name, or diſcharge the nobles of England of their allegeance towards him, he laid holde vpon them, *An. reg. 10.*

ſpecially

Mathew Paris. specially such as he had in suspition, and toke pledges of them. King Iohn requiring to haue the sons of Will. de Brause, his wife made answere, she would not deliuer them vnto him, who had alreadie slaine his owne nephew Arthur, for which speech, both William de Brause and his wife, were faine to flie into Ireland.

Philip bysshop of Durham deceased, and was buried by the hands of lay men without the church and churchyard, because the land was interdicted. The Bysshops that executed the interdiction, had their houses ouerthrowne, their woods cut downe, and their manors destroied by the kings commandement.

W. Packington. Richard the kings second son by Isabel his wife was borne.

1209 By the procurement of Stephen Langton archbishop of Canterbury, licence was granted to the conuentuall churches in Englande to celebrate diuine seruice once euerie weeke, but the white Monks had not this priuiledge, because they had disobeied the interdiction.

Exchequer at Northampton. The Exchequer was remoued from Westminster to Northampton by the kings commandement. Hee also gathered a great armie, and went towarde Scotland as far as the castell of Norham, where the king of Scottes came to him, and treated a peace, for the which he gaue 11000. marks of siluer, and deliuered his two daughters for a pledge.

Chro. Dun. Hedges burned Homage of freeholders. By the kings commandement, throughout all the fortresses of England, all the ditches were made plaine ground, and the hedges brent. After this he toke homage of all Freeholders, and sware all men to his allegeance from twelue yeres old vpward. The Hospitall of S. Iohn and S. Iames at Crux Roise or Roisstone Crosse was founded the 10. yere of king Stephen.

Welchmen did homage. The Welchmen came to Woodstocke, and did homage vnto the king, which was neuer heard tell of before.

An. reg. 11. A clarke of Orford by chance killed a woman, and then ranne away, wherefore his three chamber fellowes which knewe nothing of the matter, were hanged at the towneende, which caused three thousande maisters and schollers to forsake the vniuersitie of Orford, so that there tarried not one in that vniuersitie, but some went to Cambridge, some to Reding, some to Maidstone to schole, and left Orford emptie.

Orford forsaken.

Rad. Cogshall. A prodigious sight was seene one morning in the beginning of Lent, the clouds seemed to fight with the Sun, from the Sun rising, till one of the clocke of that daie.

London bridge builded of stone Ex lib. Pontis Londinensis. The arches and stone Bridge ouer the Thames at London, hauing beene three and thirtie yeres in building, since the foundation thereof was layde, to witte, in the yeere of Christ 1176. and the 22. of Henrie the seconde, was this yere finished by the worthie Merchantes of London, Serle Mercer, William Alman, and Benet Botewright. Maister Fowle a learned man, last Prior of S. Mary Oueries Church in his life time, reported, that at the first, breing no bridge at London, but a ferrie, the ferrier and his wife deceasing, left the same ferrie to their daughter, a Maiden named Marie, who with the goods leste by her parents, and the profites which came by the saide ferrie, builded a House of sisters, which is the vppermost end of S. Maries church aboue the quier, where

Saint Mary Oueries.

Iohn Leyland.

the

ſhe was buried, vnto the which houſe ſhee gaue the ouerſight and profite of the ſame ferrie: but afterwarde the houſe of Stikers was conuerted vnto a Colledge of prieſts, who builded the bridge of timber, and from time to time kept the ſame in reparations, but conſidering the great charges in repairing, laſtly by the great aide of the Citizens of London, and others, they builded the ſame of ſtone. King Iohn gaue certaine vacant places in London to builde on, the profites thereof to remaine towardes the charges of building and repairing of the ſame bridge. A Maſon beeing maſter worke man of the Bridge, builded from the foundation the chappell on London bridge, of his owne proper expenſes.

The king commanded all the Iewes both men and women to be impriſoned and greeuouſlie puniſhed, becauſe he would haue all their mony, ſome of them gaue all they had, and promiſed more, to the ende they might eſcape ſo manie kinds of torments as he did put vpon them, for euery one of them had one eie at the leaſt pulled out: amongſt whome, there was one, which being tormented many waies, would not ranſome himſelfe, till the king had cauſed euerie daie one of his great teeth to be pulled out by the ſpace of 7. daies, and then he gaue the king 10000. markes of ſiluer, to the end they ſhould pull out no more. Iewes ranſomed. 1210

King Iohn at that time ſpoiled the Iewes of 66000. markes.

In the moneth of June, the king ledde an Armie into Irelande, expulſed Hugh Lacy, and brought all Ireland vnder his ſubiection. He cauſed the lawes of England to be executed there, and money to bee coined according vnto the waight of Engliſh money, and made there both halfepence and farthings: he returned with great triumph in the moneth of September, and then raiſed a great tare vpon all the religious in Englande, whome hee cauſed to paie ſuch a raunſome, and to ſpoyle their Churches, that the ſumme came to an hundred thouſande poundes, beſides fourtie thouſande poundes of the white monkes. *An. reg. 12.* A mint in Ireland. Taxe. Nich. Triuet.

Another ſight betwixt the Sun and the cloudes was ſéene.

Matild a noble woman, wife to William de Brawſe, and his ſonne and heire William, periſhed miſerablie with famine in the caſtell of Windſore. William her husband changing his apparell, paſſed ouer the ſea at Shoram, and ſhortlie after died at Gorboile, and was buried at Paris. I. Beuerla. Ralph Cogſhall.

The biſhop of Londons caſtel called Stortford, is ouerthrowne, and the kings houſe at Writle in Eſſex is builded. Stortford caſtell. 1211

The king went into Wales againſt Lewlin his ſonne in law, that had married his baſtard daughter, with a great force, euen to Snowdon, and ſubdued all the princes and nobles, without any gaine-ſaying. He toke eight and twenty pledges for their ſubiection, and returned. When he came at Northampton, there met him meſſengers from the Pope, Pandolph and Durand, which came to make an vnitie betwixt the king and the Biſhop of Canterburie with the Monkes which were baniſhed, but the king graunting their returne, denied to make them ante amendes for their loſſe which they had ſuſteined, or to reſtore their goods which he had confiſcated, ſo that the Ambaſſadours returned without ante end concluded. Army into Wales. Mathew Paris. Legates from Rome. *An. reg. 13.*

After

A great taxe. After this, the king toke of euerie knight which was not with him in Wales, two markes of siluer of euery shield.

Pope Innocent absolued all, both princes and other, which pertained to the crowne of England, from their fidelitie and subiection to king Iohn, and commanded them to eschue his company.

Gualter Couen. A heard of Harts comming forth of the forrest, leapt all into the Sea at the mouth of Seuerne.

Archbishop of Yorke deceased. Geffrey archbishop of Yorke, bastard brother to king Iohn, because he would not giue his consent vnto a taxe of the thirteenth penny of all mens goods, departed this realme in the yeere 1207. whose possessions were forthwith seized into the kings hands, and now 5. yeres after his banishment, he ended his life beyond the seas: after whose decease the sea was void by the space of 4. yeres.

Lib. Bernewell. William king of Scotland being aged, was not able to quiet the inner parts of his realme, troubled with sedition, wherefore he fled vnto the king of England, and committed himselfe, his kingdome, and onely sonne vnto his protection, who making the young man knight, went into those parts with an army, and sending forth his men into the inner parts of that kingdome, hee toke Cuthred Mac William Captaine of the sedition, and hung him on a paire of gallowes, for he was of the olde ancient race of the Scottish kings, who assisted with the aide of the Irish and Scots, did exercise long enmitie against the moderne kings of Scotland, as his father Donald had done before him, sometime secretly, sometime openly: for the moderne kings of Scotland confesse themselues to be rather Frenchmen, as in stocke or linage, so also in maners, language, and apparell, and hauing brought the Scots vnto extreame seruitude, they admit onely Frenchmen into familiaritie and seruice.

1212 Welshmen inuaded England. The Welshmen toke diuers Castles of the king of Englands, cut off the heads of all the souldiers, burned many townes, and with a great pray returned without any harme.

Pledges hanged. The king gathered a great army, minding vtterly to destroy all the coastes of Wales, but when he came to Nottingham, he caused eight & twenty pledges of the Welshmen to be hanged, and immediatly after, whilest he sate at meate, there came a messenger, that brought him Letters from the king of Scots, informing him, that he should be betraied; and likewise also came another messenger out of Wales, from the kings daughter, wife to Lewline king of Wales, certifying him of the same conspiracie, that is to say, that if he did not leaue off and desist from that he had begun, his nobles would either kill him themselues, or else betray him to his enemies to be killed.

Wherefore, when the king came backe to London, he sent messengers to al the great men whome he suspected to be vntrue to him, and demanded pledges of them, who daring not disobey the kings commandement, sent to him their sonnes, nephewes, and kinsfolke to be at the kings pleasure.

Peter of Pontfreite. About this time in the prouince of Yorke, there was an Heremite named Peter of Pontfract, who was also called the Wise, because hee had declared vnto many diuers strange things that were to come. This Heremite prophecied openly of king Iohn, and said, that vpon the Ascension day next comming, there

there should be no king, nor from thencefoorth, but he said the crowne should at that day be translated to another. Whereof, when the king heard tell, hee commanded this Heremite to be brought vnto his presence, and demanded of him, whether the king shoulde die as that day, or no, or else, in what order the king should be depriued of his raigne. The Heremite answered, Knowe this most certainly, that at that day, thou shalt not be king: and if I be found a liar, then doe with me what ye will. And the king said it should be euen so, as thou hast saide, and so committed him to William de Hartcourt to kéepe, and he kept him in streight prison, vntill he sawe the end.

There were at that time manie noble men in England, whose wiues and daughters the king had oppressed, and othersome, whome with extreme exactions hee had brought into great poouertie, and othersome, whose parents and friendes the king had banished, and had turned their inheritance vnto his own vse: so that king Iohn had almost, as many enemies as hee had nobles, and great men, and the report was that they did send their writing and charter to the king of France, sealed with their seales, wherein they promised him, that if he would come and inuade England, they would receiue him, and crowne him with honour.

Archbishop of Canterbury and other bishops complaine of king Iohn.

About this time, Stephen Archbishop of Canterburie, William Bishoppe of London, and the Bishop of Ely, went to Rome, and informed the Pope how many enormious déedes king Iohn with great contumacie had done against God and his holy Church: wherefore they humbly besought him to helpe and succour the church of England, which now was in great danger. Whereupon the Pope determined, that king Iohn should be deposed, and another more worthy set in his place: Toward the execution whereof, the Pope wrote his letters to king Philip of France, willing him to expulse the king of England, and he should for euer possesse the kingdome.

An. reg. 14.

London bridge perished with fire

Ex record. S. Mariæ de Southw.

The tenth daie of July at night, a maruellous and terrible chance happened, for the Citie of London vpon the South side of the riuer of Thames, with the Church of our Lady of the Chanons in Southwarke being on fire, and an exceeding great multitude of people passing the bridge, either to extinguish and quench, or else to gaze, beholde, sodainly the north part, by blowing of the South winde was also set on fire, and the people which were euen now passing the bridge, perceiuing the same, would haue returned, but were stopped by fire, and it came to passe, that as they stated, or protracted time, the other end of the bridge also, namely the South end was fired, so that the people thronging themselues betwixt the two fires, did nothing else expect or looke for then death. Then came there to aide them many ships and vessels, into the which, the multitude so vndiscréetly pressed, that the ships being drowned, they all perished: it was said, though the fire and the shipwracke, that there were destroyed about three thousand persons. William Packington writeth, that there were found in part or halfe burnt three thousande bodies, besides those that were quite burned that could not be found.

Arbor succesio. Gual. couen.

W. Packington.

1213

Noble men disherited.

King Iohn disherited some noble men without iudgement of their peeres, and he would haue destroyed Ranulph Earle of Chester, for that he reproched him

him with this, that he should vse the wife of his brother Geffrey Earle of Brytaine, whome Ranulph earle of Chester had married, and from whome Ranulph was diuorced by the counsell of king Iohn, and the saide earle had married the daughter of the earle Ferrers.

Lib. Roffenſ. Gualt. Couen.

King Iohn being now in extremity, and minding to impute the fault to them that would not appease his furor afore time, reprehended sometimes one, and sometimes another of his nobility as traitors, calling them iealous, whose beds (as he bragged) he had defiled, and defloured their daughters.

Chron. of Dun. Mawde the faire, daughter to Robert fitz Walter.

The Chronicle of Dunmow saieth, this discord arose betwirt the king and his barons, because of Mawde called the Faire, daughter to Robert Fitz Walter, whome the king loued, but her father would not consent, and thereupon ensued warre throughout England. The king spoiled especiallie the Castell of Baynard in London, and other holdes and houses of the barons. Robert fitz Walter, Roger Fitz Robert, and Richarde Mounte Fitchet passed ouer into Fraunce, some also went into Wales, and some into Scotland, and did great domage to the king. Whilest Mawde the Faire remained at Dunmow, there came a messenger vntoher from king Iohn about his suit in loue, but because she would not agree, the messenger poisoned a boiled or potched Egge against she was hungrie, whereof she died, and was buried in the quier at Dunmow.

Baynards Castell throwne downe.

Robert fitz Walter fledde into France.

Mawde the faire poisoned.

At this time also king Iohn subtillie, to excuse himselfe withall, demanded and obtained of all religious persons, a writing, wherein they acknowledged, that they had willingly giuen the king al that he had with violence taken from them.

About this time, the king of France warred the king of Englandes landes beyonde the Seas, and the king of England likewise warred his: but at the length a truce was taken, and an arme of the Sea being betwirt either hoste, there was a Knight in the Englishe hoste that cryed to them of the other side, willing some one of their knightes to iust a course or twaine: whereupon without staie, Robert Fitz Walter made himselfe readie, ferried ouer, and got on his horse without anie man to helpe him, and beeing readie against the face of his enimie, at the first course hee stroke the other so hard with his great speare, that horse and man fell to the ground, and when his speare was broken, he went backe againe to the king of France: by Gods toth (quoth king Iohn) he were a king inow de that had such a knight. Roberts friendes hearing that, kneeled downe, and saide, O king he is your knight, it is Robert Fitz Walter: and the nert daie he was sent for, and was restored to the kings fauour, and by his meanes peace was concluded, and he receiued his liuinges, and had leaue to repaire his castels, &c. Thee the most forcible and valiant knights of England in those daies were Robert Fitz Walter, Robert Fitz Roger, and Richarde Mount Fichet.

Robert Fitz Walter his valiancie.

Robert Fitz Walter restored to the kings fauour.

King Iohn caused a great armie to be gathered at Douer in the Lent season, and gathered together a great naue of Ships, and whilest he remained about the Sea coast with his force to withstande the French king when hee should come, there arriued two brethren of the Temple at Douer, which came to the king and in friendlie manner saide vnto him: We bee sent vnto thee (most

mightie

mightie king) in the behalfe of Pandolph, who for the commoditie of you & of your realme desireth to haue talke with you, for he hath to propound vnto you a certaine forme of peace, whereby you may be reconciled to God, and to the Church, notwithstanding that you be condemned by sentence in the courte of Rome to be deposed from the title of your realme.

When the king had considered well the message of those templars, he gaue them commaundement to cause Pandolph to come ouer vnto him. And not long after, Pandolph came to the king at Douer, and said vnto him: Behold, the most mighty king of France lieth with an inuincible number of ships, and a great multitude of knights, horsemen and footemen in the hauen, readie to come ouer to inuade, and depose you, as a rebell vnto God, and vnto ỹ Pope: there come with him also the Bishops that of late were banished out of England, with the clearkes and lay men, to the end, that whether ye will or no, they hauing the French king to their captaine, they may receiue their bishoprickes and goods. Pandolph the Legate.

The king of France also doth boast that he hath Charters almost from all the Nobles of England of their allegeance and subiection vnto him, so that thereby he doubteth not but to bring his purpose to passe. Nowe therefore at the last looke to your owne commodity, that you may come to repentance, and make no delay to reconcile you to God, whom you haue prouoked to take vengeance vpon you. For if you make assurance, that for his sake, which humbled himselfe for you, you will humble your selfe to the iudgement of the Church, you may recouer your realme: from which, for your contumacie you be adiudged and condemned by the court of Rome to be deposed. Nowe therefore that your enemies doe not reioice ouer you, turne into your owne heart, and take hæde that you doe not bring your selfe into such a distresse as you shall not be able to ridde your selfe out againe.

With these words K. Iohn was moued to repentance, chiefly considering 4. things. The first, for that he stood excommunicate the space of fiue yéeres. The second, he feared the comming of Philippe king of Fraunce, which lay round about the Sea coastes with a great force, prepared to depose him. Thirdly, he feared, that if he should ioine battell with his enemies, the nobles of England would either leaue him in the fielde, or deliuer him to his enemies. And the fourth, which he feared most, was because Ascension day was at hand, when according to the prophecie of Peter the Hermite, he should lose both his life, and kingly authoritie, both spirituall and temporall. For these and such like causes, King Iohn being fallen into desperation, did followe the perswasion of Pandulph, and toke his othe vpon the Euangelists, that in the presence of Pandulph, he would stand to, and obey the iudgement of the Church, and 16. of his Earles and Barons did sweare the same, and couenanted that if he peraduenture should repent him of his othe, they would compell him, so much as lay in them to performe it. Thus on the 13. of Maie, on Munday before Ascension day, the K. and his Nobles, Earles, and Barons, mette with Pandulph at Douer, where with one consent they agréed vpon a forme of peace. King Iohn moued to repentance.

K. Iohn tooke an othe.

The Barons tooke an othe.

King Iohn, and Pandolph, with the Nobles of the Realme, came together at

at the house of the knights of the Temple, by the town of Douer, on the 19. day of May, being the Ascension Euen, where the king, according as sentence was giuen at Rome, did resign his Crowne, with the realmes of England and Ireland into the Popes handes: whose Viceregerent at that time was Pandulph a. foresaid; and when he had made this resignation, hee gaue the aforesaide kingdomes to the Pope, and to his successors, and confirmed his gift with a Charter, dated the 15. of May, in the 14. yeere of his raigne. When the Ascension day was past, he commanded the foresaid Peter the Hermite to be set out of the castle of Corke, to be bounde to a Horse-taile, drawne through the streetes to Warham, and there both he and his son to be hanged on a gibbet.

K. Iohn resigned the crowne of England.

Pierce of Pontrace. *An. reg. 15.*

Stephen Langston returned.

The 17. of August, Stephen Langton Archbyshoppe of Canterburie, and all the other that were banished, arryued at Douer, and wente to Winchester to the king, who meeting them in the waie, fell flatte vpon the earth before their feete, and with teares besæched them to take pittie on him, and of the Realme of England. The Archbyshop and Byshoppes likewise, with teares tooke him vp from the ground, and brought him vnto the doores of the Cathedrall church, and with the Psalme of Miserere absolued him: then the king toke an othe to call in all wicked Lawes, and to put in place the Lawes of king Edward. Diuine seruice being ended, the king, the archbishop, bishops and nobles, dyned al at one table.

The king absolued.

Lib. Bermond. S. Thomas Hospitall.

Richard Prior of Bermondsey, builded an house (against the wall of the said house of Bermondsey) called the Almory or Hospitall of conuerts and children, in the honour of Saint Thomas.

Gilo de Brawse the son of William de Brawse, receiued all his Fathers inheritance into his custodie, together with his Nephew, till the child came to lawfull age.

Morgan a bastard elected Byshoppe of Durham.

Morgan Prouost of Beuerley, brother to K. Iohn was elected byshop of Durham, but he comming to Rome to be consecrated, returned againe without it, for that he was a bastard, and K. Henry father to K. Iohn, had begotten him of the wife of one Radulph Bloeth, yet would the Pope haue dispensed with him, if he would haue called himselfe the son of the knight, and not of the king. But he vsing the aduise of one William of Lane his Clarke, answered, that for no worldly promotion, he would deny the kings blood.

Lib. Bermond. A ditch about London. Chro. Dun.

The fifteenth of October, was begun by the Londoners, the ditch without the wals of London, of 200. foote broad, causing no small hinderance thereby to the Chanons of Christs Church neere vnto Aldgate, for that it passed through their ground.

Byshop chiefe Iustice.

1214

Geffery Fitz Peter dieth, chiefe Iustice of England, and the Bishop of Winchester in that office is placed, the nobles of England murmuring, that a stranger borne, should be made ruler ouer them.

Interdiction released. Nic. Triuet.

Pope Innocent sent his letters to Nicholas bishop of Tusculane his Legate, to release the interdiction, which had continued 6. yeeres, 3. monethes, and 14. daies.

King Iohn sailed into Brytaine.

The seconde daie of Julie, king Iohn sayled towarde Brytaine, intending to besiege Nauntes, in the which warres hee had the aide of Otho the Emperour,

rour, and of the Dukes of Louaine, Brabant, and Hollande, of Reignolde Earle of Bologne, and Ferrandis Earle of Flaunders, so that there was a greate Fielde fought, in which the French King escaped narrowlie, but being rescued, hee tooke the forsayde Earles, put Hugh de Bones to flighte, and droue the Emperour out of the Fielde, and then a Truce was taken betwixt King Iohn and the king of Fraunce for flue yeeres, by the Popes commandement, as some saide, but as other said, this truce was agréed by meanes of 6000. marks, which the king of England gaue, fearing to incounter with the great multitude of Frenchmen.

King Iohn hauing finished his warres beyond the Seas, as yée haue heard, came ouer into England, about the fourtéenth of November. And the same time the Earles and Barons of the Realme, especiallie them of the North, came to talke with the king, hee being then at Saint Edmundesburie, but their intent was not only to talk with him, as well appeared: for after they had a long season handeled the matter among themselues, they brought forth the charter of king Henry the first, which they had receiued of Stephen the Archbish. whereof we haue made mention here before. And so they came together into S. Edmonds Church, where the chiefest of them beganne, and they all sware by the High Altar, that if the king woulde not graunt the forsayde Lawes and Liberties, they woulde make warres against him, and withdrawe themselues out of his allegeance, vntill hee did with his Seale confirme and ratifie the same. And they consented all on this, to come to the king after Christmas, and in the meane season they would prouide themselues both of armor, horses, and munition.

K. Iohn returned into England.

The Barons require the Charter of Liberties.

Fishes of vnwonted shape were taken in England, for they were armed with helmets and shields, in outward shape they resembled, and were like vnto armed knights, sauing that they were far greater in proportion.

Almost the whole towne of S. Edmondsbury was consumed with fire.

S. Edmondsbury brent. Iohn Textor.

The king beeing lodged in the newe temple at London, there came to him, the foresaid noble men in warlike order, demanding of him to confirme the liberties of king Edwards Lawe and other: the king requiring respite till Easter, was faine to put in sureties the Archbyshop of Canterburie, the Byshop of Ely, and other, to satisfie all men in that behalfe, and then the Noble men returned. The king in the Church of Saint Paul at London, at the handes of William Byshop of London, toke on him the signe of the Crosse of the holie Land, by meane thereof to be in the better safegard: the earles of Chester and Darby did the like. In the Easter weeke the noblemen in armor met at Stamford, and after at Barkeley, whither came to them from the king, the Archbyshop of Canterburie, William Marshall with other, to demaund of them what they would haue confirmed, and the nobles deliuered to them a scedule, conteining the olde Lawes and customes, which except the king woulde graunt, they would take the castles of his lands, and so compell him.

The Barons in armour.

1215

K. Iohn crosseth to Ierusalem.

An. reg. 17.

The 17. date of May being Sundate, the Barons came to London, and entred through Aldgate, in the seruice time, where they toke such as they knewe fauoured the king, and spoyled their goods. They brake into the Houses of

Iewes spoiled in London. Gualt. Cotan.

Walles of London repaired. Rad. Cogshall.

the Iewes, and searched their Cofers, to stuffe their owne purses that had béene long emptie. After this Robert fitz Walter, and Geffrey de Maundeuill Earle of Eſſex, and the Earle of Glouceſter, chiefe leaders of the armie, applied all diligence to repaire the gates and walles of the citie, with the stones of the Iewes broken houses. The Tower of London yet held out, though there were fewe within to defende it. When it was noysed that the Barons had London, all (except the Earles of Warren, Arundell, Cheſter, Pembroke, Ferrers, and Saliſburie, and the Barons, William Brewer with other) went to those Barons that were against the king, who called themselues the Armie of God, whereby such a feare came on the king, that hee durſt not pépe out of Windsore Castle: at length he appointed to méete with the Barons in a meddowe betwixt Stanes and Windsore, which appointment hee obserued, and there graunted the liberties, without anie difficultie, the charter whereof is dated: Giuen by our hand in Runningmede, betwixt Stanes and Windsore, the 16. of June, the 17. of our raigne, vnto which, all the whole Realme was sworne.

Mathew Paris. The K. meeteth the Barons.

Whiles the Barons returned home, the king being left almost alone, hee sent Pandolph the Legate with other to Rome, to the ende that by the Apostolike authoritie, he might make frustrate the purpose of the Barons. Also hee sent Walter Bishop of Winchester, and Iohn Bishop of Norwich, with other, vnto the Realmes next adioyning, to procure him souldiers, promising them lands, and large possessions: By meanes of Pandolph, the Pope disanulled the foresaide Charter and liberties graunted, and also excommunicated the Barons. By the other messengers were procured a great number of men of war, which landing at Douer, the king forthwith besieged Rochester, coueting to burne the Bridge, that no aide should come to the besieged: but Robert Fitz Walter defended the Bridge, and quenched the fire, neuertheles after long assault the castle was yéelded.

The Pope excommunicateth the Barons. Rochester besieged.

Strangers drowned. Mathew Paris.

As a great number of strangers were on the Seas, minding to haue landed at Douer, to haue ayded the king against his Barons, through a sudden tempest they were all drowned, so that about the coast of the Sea, was cast vp such a multitude of men, women, and children, that the aire was sore infected with their putrified bodies: It was saide that of fourty thousand, there escaped not one aliue. The king had promised to this people, the Countries of Norfolke, and Suffolke.

Rad. Cogshall.

King Iohn deuided his army, the one halfe whereof he put vnder the leading of Sauarike de Maulion a Poictouin, Fulco a Norman, the Earle of Saliſbury his bastard brother. Gerard de Sotingham a Fleming, and Walter Buc a Brabander. He himselfe went against the Northerne men. Sauarike besieged the castle of Plashy, that belonged to Geffrey Maundeuill, the other gaue themselues to waste the Countrey about.

Rad. Cogshall. Lib. Bernewell.

On Christmas day they spoyled the Abbey of Tilty, and caried away much treasure that there was laid vp in trust by diuers of that countrey. On New yéares day they did the like at Cogshall Abbey.

Isle of Ely besieged.

From thence they went to Saint Edmondesbury, and so to the Ile of Ely, which

which Ile they besieged, because diuers Knightes and Ladies were fledde thither with their substance: and those robbers entring the Ile, spared neither sexe nor state, but by tormentes compelled them to tell where their treasure laie.

About the Epiphanie Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, and other, returned from beyonde the seas, bringing with them one and fortie ships laden with souldiers: and about the feast of the Purification of our Ladie they besieged Colchester Castle, but hearing that the Barons that were at London made hast to come and succour the Castle, they went backe to Saint Edmondesburie. Colchester besieged.

The king with his army was long time on the Scottish Seas, and ofttimes inuaded the Lands of his Barons in those coasts, burning their Castles, and spoyling their goods; in which expedition he went so farre, that it was not well knowen what was become of him, insomuch, that he was noysed to be dead, and secretly buried at Reding. King Iohn inuaded the lands of his Barons.

Geffrey Mandeuill died at London of a wound receiued in iusting: he was buried in the Priorie of the Trinitie at London.

The Pope excommunicated the Barons by their peculiar names, but the Chanons of S. Paul in London, and many other Ecclesiasticall persons, with the Barons that remained at London, appealed against this sentence, taking exceptions against it, as pronounced by false suggestion. The Barons excõmunicated.

The Barons sent Sayre de Quincy and other, to Philip king of France, earnestly requesting him to send his sonne Lewis into this Realme, promising to make him king thereof, which the French king refused to doe, till the Barons had sent him foure and twentie pledges of the best mens sons in the kingdome, and then hee sent them aide. Gwalo the Legate was sent from the Pope into France, to forbid Lewis to go into England, but his perswasions nothing preuailed, wherefore he excommunicated them. Also the Abbot of Abingdon, renewed the excommunication against the Barons, the citizens of London, and the French, which came to their aide. About Midlent the king besieged the Castle of Colchester, and after a few daies it was deliuered to him by the Frenchmen that kept it, with condition that they might depart free, with all that belonged to them, and that the Englishmen should be suffred to depart vpon reasonable ransome, notwithstanding the Englishmen he put in streight prison. After the K. had taken Hidingham castle, belonging to Robert de Vere Earle of Oxford, he made haste to besiege London, but the Londoners set open their gates, and were ready to mete with the king ten miles off the city: the king vnderstanding their boldnes and multitude, he withdrew himselfe, but Sauaric de Malione, being sodainly set vppon by the Londoners, losing many of his men, was sore beaten and wounded almost to death. The Barons sent for Lodowike. 1216 Colchest taken.

The Northren Lords recouering their strength, besieged Yorke, at length receiuing aboue a thousand markes granted truce to the Citizens, till the Octaues of Pentecost. Yorke besieged.

The Londoners also toke the 65. ships of Pirates besides innumerable other that were drowned, that had besieged the coasts on the riuer of Thamis.

In the meane time the king hauing knowledge that Lewis meant to come into England, he sent ouer to the French king, the Bishoppe of Winchester, William Marshall the elder, and other, to try if they could perswade the French K. to stay his son from that iourney, but they returned without audience. The king therefore marching along the Sea coast fortified his Castles, and getting pledges of the fiue Ports, gathered a great multitude of ships of Yarmouth, Linne, Dunwich, and other hauens, fraught them with men of warre, and determined to encounter the Frenchmen by Sea, when they came to arriue in England, but by tempest that arose from the North, those shippes were brused, drowned, or driuen into the South parts of the sea, Lewis hauing al his power ready at Caleis, Grauelinge, and Whitsand, the Northeast winde comming about, he set forward toward England, and with some difficulty, because it was a side winde, he landed at Stonar, in the Ile of Thanet, the 21. date of May. From which place hee directed his Epistles of title and claime, &c. as are set downe in my larger Historye. King Iohn being then at Douer, because his soldiers were strangers, durst not go against Lewis, but fledde towards Gilford. Lewis went straight to Canterbury, where he receiued both castle and citie into his subiection, and after all the other castles in Kent, Douer only excepted: then came he to London, where he was honorably receiued of the Nobles and Citizens, who altogether sware fealty to him, and did him homage at Westminster: after this taking the castles of Rygat, Guldford and Fernham, hee hasted forward to take the king, who as he heard was at Winchester, and had raised vp the standard of the Dragon, as he had meant to giue battel to Lewis, if he came to offer it. But when king Iohn heard that Lewis approched, he laide downe his Dragon, set fire on foure parts of the citie and fledde. The Citizens quickly quenched the fire and went forth to méete Lewis, receiuing him ioyfully into their Citie, and sware fealtie to him. Here came to him in manner all the Earles and Barons of the Realme: then taking the castle of Odiham, and the Tower of London, he returned into Kent, and the 22. of July he besieged the castle of Douer, and continued the same till the 14. of October: then Hubert de Brugh and Gerard de Scoting, being not able longer to abide the assaults, obtained truce, that they might send to king Iohn for succour. Whilest this siege remained, king Iohn went about the land, consuming with fire and sword the possessions of the Barons.

Lewes arriued in England.

King Iohn fleeth. *An. reg. 18.*

Douer castle besieged. W. Packington.

Alexander king of Scots hauing subdued to Lewis all Northumberland, saning Barnard castle, with the Barons of the North, came vnto Canterbury to Lewis, and did him homage, for that which he ought to hold of the king of England, and as he came towards Lewis with a great army, for feare of king Iohns power, as he passed by Barnard castle, which was in the fée of Hugo de Bailioll, in the County of Holyharke folke, he with his Nobles of that countrey went round about the Castle to sée whether it were weake in any place, and assaultable, and a certaine archer within the Castle shot a dart, and smote Eustach de Vesay vpon the fore head, and pierced his braine, so that he died immediatly. This Eustach was a noble and mighty man, and had married the K. of Scots sister, so that the king, and the noble men were sore abashed: and when

King of Scots did homage to Lewes.

Barnards Castle.

Holy warkfolk.

the

the king of Scots had done his homage, he returned home into his countrey.

The Vicount of Melin his confession.

About this time it chaunced that the Vicount of Melin a noble man of France, which came with Lewis into Englande lay very sicke in the Citie of London, who when he knew that death approched, called to him certaine of the Barons of England, vnto whom he declared in effect as followeth: I am sorie brethren, for your subuersion, and desolation, whereof you know nothing: for Lewis and sixteene of the Earles and Barons with him haue sworne, that if it be his chance to subdue England, and to be crowned king, he would banish out of the realme for euer, al these which now doe take his part, and persecute king Iohn, as traitors to their king, and will rote all their kinred out of the earth, and to the ende, you shall not doubt hereof to be true, I which now lie here a dying, vnder perill of my soule, affirme this to be true, and that I was one that did sweare the same with Lewis. Now therefore from henceforth prouide for your owne commoditie, and profit, and keep this secret which I haue told you, and when he had said this, he died. The Barons perceiuing what danger they were in by Lewis, who had giuen to the French men the lands and castles which pertained to the Barons, and when anie murmured against Lewis, he cast in their teeth, that they were traitors, &c. they beleeued what the noble man had told them. This did also much increase their heauinesse, that they were euerie day excommunicated, and depriued of all earthly honour, so that they were in great anguish both of body and soule: Wherefore many deuised how to returne into the allegeance of king Iohn.

The king marched through Norfolke and Suffolke, till he came to Linne, where the Townesmen receiued him with great ioy, and honoured him with large giftes, there hee appointed Sauarike de Malion to bee Captaine, who beganne to fortifie the Towne: but here (as it was saide) filling his belly too much, as he was thereto greatly giuen, he gotte a surfeit, and therewithall fell into a Flure. Afterward taking his iourney towardes the North, in the water which is called Wilfreme (they saide) hee lost sodainely all the Cartes and chariots, with his treasure, and precious princely vessell, and furniture of his chappell, which he set most by, for the earth opened in the midst of the waues on the marshes, and the whirlepit of the deepe so swallowed vp both men and horses, that none escaped to bring king Iohn tydings. The king with his army going before, escaped very narrowly, and men said, that night he lay at the Abbey of Swinshene, where he remained two dales, and there (as men supposed) he toke such heauines of heart for the losse of his treasure in the washes, that he was taken with an extreame ague, and began to be verie sore sicke, the pernicious greedy eating of peaches, and drinking of new cidar, increased his sicknes, and kindled the heate of the ague the more strongly, notwithstanding in the very breake of the day, with great paine, he went to the castle of Sleford in Lindsey, belonging to the Bish. of Lincolne. There he was let bloud (saie some) but so it happened, that about this time, to wit, on the 14. of Octob. Hub: de Burgo & Gerard de Soting, being not able longer to abide ỹ assaults of Lewis & his complices, obtained of him truce, that they might send to K. Iohn for succour, which messengers, when they were come to Sleford and had declared their

case, that is, that except he would rescue them in the castle of Douer, the same must be deliuered vp to Lewis: his disease with griefe conceiued thereat, increased much, so that on the next morning, he could scantly on horsebacke come to the castle of Newarke, which castle also belonged to the said Bish. of Lincoln, in which place the sickenes so increased in the space of 3. or 4. daies, that he toke the counsell of his Confessor, and receiued the Sacrament at the hands of the Abbot of Croxton, and then he made Henry his eldest sonne, the heire of his kingdome, causing all that were about him to sweare to him, and sent Letters sealed with his own seale, to all the sheriffes of England, & castle keepers, willing them to be attendant and diligent to the said Henry. When these thinges were thus done, ỹ abbot of Croxton asked him if he should chance to die, where he would haue his body buried: To whom the king answered and said, I commit my soule to God, and my body to S. Wlstane, and afterward, to witte, in the night which followed next after the feast of S. Luke, he departed this life in the said castle of Newarke, from whom his seruants taking al that was about him fled, not leauing so much of any thing (worth the carriage) as would couer his dead carkase. At the time of king Iohns death, there came to him messengers of certaine Barons of England, to the number of 40. with letters requiring to haue come againe to his peace, & allegeance, but he lying in the extremities of death could not giue attendance to them, he deceased on the nineteenth of October, Anno 1216. when he had raigned 17. yeres, fiue moneths, lacking eight daies, at the age of 51. yéeres. The Constable of the castle, caused the kings body to be bowelled by ỹ Abbot of the Chanõs at Croxton, which Abbot was expert in Phisicke, and also at that time, the kings Phisition, to the end it might be the more honourably caried, his bowels being powdered, were buried in the Abbey of Croxton, vnto the which Abbey, king Iohn had on his death-bed giuen tenne pound the yéere of good land for euer, his body was honourably conueyed to Worcester, and there buried in the Cathedrall Church, néere vnto the body of Bishop Vlstone.

In Leicestershire were Chanons. In Staffordshire were Cistercian monks.

Thus haue I set downe the life (though much abridged) and death of king Iohn, after the writing of Rog. Windouer, Rad. Niger, Rad. Cogshall, a nameless Chanon of Barnewell, Mathew Paris, and other, who all liued when the king raigned, and wrote for that time what they sawe, or heard credibly reported. Notwithstanding, I thinke good (as heretofore) to set downe concerning his death, as is reported by a nameless Authour, a continuer of Geffrey Monmouth, in the raigne of Edward the third, and since increased, printed by William Caxton, and therefore called Caxtons Chronicle. This booke (I saie) and other after-commers report, that K. Iohn was poysoned by a Monke of Swinsted abbey in Lincolnshire, for saying that if he might liue halfe a yéere, he would make an halfe penny loafe of bread, worth 11. shillings, &c. as ye may reade in the said common English Chronicle. But to conclude, howsoeuer he died, certaine it is, that he raigned with trouble ynough, as by the premisses may appeare.

Issue of king Iohn.

He had issue two sonnes, Henry and Richard, and three daughters, Isabel the Empresse, Elianor Quéene of Scots, and Iane: Geffrey a base sonne gotten on a con-

a concubine, Richard and other: hee founded the Abbey of Bowley, in the new forrest in Southamptonshire: the Monasterie of Farendon, and the Monasterie of Hales Owen in Shropshire, he reedified Godstow by Oxford, & Wroxhall by Warwike, and increased the Chappell of Knaresborough, &c.

Farendon, Hales, Godstow, and Knaresborough. Ex charta regia. Ioh. Rouse.

King Henrie the third.

HENRIE borne at Winchester, the eldest sonne of Iohn, of the age of nine yéeres, began his raigne the nineténth of October, in the yeere 1216. hee was crowned at Glocester on the 28. day of October, by Peter Bishop of Winchester, and Iocelyne Bishop of Bathe, in the presence of Walo the Legate, Sylvester Bishop of Worcester, William Bishop of Couentrie, and many other Prelates, Isabell the Quéene, Ranulph Earle of Chester, William Marshall Earle of Pembroke, William Earle Ferrers, William de la Bruere, Sauaric de Maulion, Iohn Marshall, Philip de Albineto, with the Abbots and other in great number: being crowned by common consent, the Gouernment of the king and kingdome was committed to the Legate, to the Bishoppe of Winchester, and to William Marshall Earle of Pembroke. These thinges being knowen abroade, those that were of the contrary part, toke great indignation thereat: and because there should be no hope left to the new king to preuaile against them, they toke a solemne oath, and swore they would neuer holde any lande of any heire of king Iohn; but the Legate maintaining the kings part, admonished, prayed, and commanded them that were disobedient to the king, to doe the like as he did, he calling a councell at Bristow, caused the bishops and prelates to incline to his part: Notwithstanding, Lewis did what he could to the contrary, spoyling their goods, and possessions, yet could he not get one of the Prelates to doe him homage, or feaultie. William Marshall Earle of Pembroke perswaded the Vicountes, Castle kéepers, and other to doe their seruices to the young king Henry, promising them great gifts, and large possessions, whereby they serued king Henry much more faithfully then they did K. Iohn his father, for they thought ý the iniquity of the Father ought not to be imputed vnto the son. This did also greatly incourage them, when they vnderstood that euery sunday Lewis and his complices were excommunicated: Lewis and the Barons being not able to winne Douer Castle, determining therefore to subdue the smaller castles first, they remooued their siege, and came to London where on the first of Nouember, the Tower of London was deliuered to them. From thence Lewis with the Barons went and besieged the Castle of Hartford, from the twelfth of Nouember, till the first of December, on which day the castle was yelded: about the same time his men had won the Ile of Ely, all, except a fortresse within the same, wherin the kings people were inclosed. The citie of Lincolne also being won againe by his partakers, & the castle besieged, Lewis wét to Barkhamsted, and besieged

An. reg. 1.

the castle there. In time of which siege, there went out of the castle certaine knights and souldiers, who with violence entred vpon the Barons, tooke their Chariots with their carriages, and the standard of William de Mandeuill, and returned into their castle therewithall: but in the end, after long siege, by the kings cõmandement, they yelded the castle to Lewis on the 20. of December.

On the next morning Lewis came to Saint Albons, and demanded of the Abbot to doe vnto him homage, which the Abbot refused; but Lewis swearing he would set the Abbey on fire, the Abbot after manie threats, by the perswasion of Sayer de Quincy Earle of Wincester, fined himselfe and the whole towne for 80. markes of siluer. Which being done, Lewis returned to London:

1217 And a truce was taken till the Octaues of the Epiphanie. The feast of Christmas being past, the truce yet continuing, Lewis called his Fauourers vnto a Councell at Cambridge, and the Gouernors of the king called the like councell at Oxford. All these laboured to haue compounded vpon a peace, or at the least to haue prolonged the truce, but when truce could not be prolonged, Lewis besieged the Castle of Hedingham, and at one selfe same time, the saide Castle, and also the Castle of Oxforde were both rendered, and so likewise were the Castles of Norwich and Colchester, for to haue the truce continued till a moneth after Easter: And by this meanes all the East partes of England fell to Lewis.

Councels at Cambridge, & at Oxford.

Castles of Hedingham, Oxford, Norwich and Colchester yeelded to Lewis.

In this meane space, to wit, on the 20. day of January, the knights and souldiers of the Castle of Mount-sorell in Leicester shire went out to robbe, which when the knights and souldiers of Nottingham vnderstood, they met & fought with them, tooke tenne of their knightes, foureténe of their souldiers, slewe three of them, and returned.

Castle of Mount-sorell.

The 22. of Januarie, Falcatius de Brent, a wicked robber, hauing gathered a number of ruffians out of the Castles of Oxford, Northampton, Bedford, and Windsor, came to the abbey of S. Albons in the euening, spoiled the towne, tooke men, women and children, and bound them verie sore, and slew some, so that the Abbot to saue the abbey and towne from burning, was faine to giue to Falcatius one hundred pound of siluer.

The towne of S. Albons spoiled by Falcatius.

About this time, the ambassadours of Lewis, which were at Rome about his businesse there, did giue him to vnderstand, that except he went out of England, the sentence of excommunication, which Walo the Legate had pronounced against him, should be confirmed by the Pope, vpon Maundie thursday: for this cause therefore truce was taken betweene Lewis and king Henry vntill one moneth after Easter, all thinges to remaine in state as they then were.

A truce taken.

Philip king of France called his sonne Lewis by speciall commandement, to returne into France, vnto a councell at Lions, to be holden about Midlent, which thing the English men tooke heauily, but hee receiuing an othe on the Euangelists to returne before the truce should be expired, they were somewhat pacified. He being passed ouer, straight way William Earle of Salisburie, William Earle of Arundell, William Earle Warren, and many other, reuolted to the kings side. Also William Marshall reclamed William his eldest

sonne

sonne vnto the kings allegiance: and thus became the part of Lewis weakened very much, and the kings power was greatly encreased: And being diuided into diuers places, they besieged many castles at one time, recouering the castles of Marleborow, Fernham, Wincester, Cicester, and other which they demolished.

In the feast of Easter, by procurement of William Marshall the elder, Rainulph Earle of Chester, William Earle of Albemarle, William Earle Ferrers, Robert de Veteriponte, Brienus de insula, William de Entelope, Philip de Mere, Robert de Gangy, Falcatius de Brent, with his Castle keeper and manie other were gathered together, to besiege the Castle of Mount-sorell in Leicester shire, the chiefe keeper of which Castle was named Henrie de Braybrooke, who sent to Sayer de Quincy Earle of Wincester, then at London with the French men, and requiring him to come to their aide: whereupon the saide Earle of Wincester, to whome the Castle belonged, went to Lewis, then lately returned out of France, requiring him to sende some aide to remoue the siege, and so a power was sent out of London 600. knights, and 2000. armed souldiers, they had for captaines, Earle Patricius, the marshal of France, Sayer de Quincy, Robert fitz Walter, and other, who marching forward, spoiled S. Albons, the church at Rudborne, Dunstable, and so forth, toward the north, to raise the siege before Mount-sorell; but Ranulph Earle of Chester, and other left off their siege, and went to the Castle of Nottingham. The Barons aforesaid finding the siege to be remoued, they march toward Lincolne, where Gilbert de Gaunt and other had laide siege: they assaulted the Castle sharpely, but W. Marshall the elder sent thither a great power, such as would be in this place too long to write, and therefore I referre the same to my larger booke. But to be short, these with much difficultie brake the gates of the Citie of Lincolne, and entring the towne, they boldly smote vpon their enemies, and fought there a cruel battel, wherin the kings part so vnhorsed the barons, that they slewe and toke the most part of them: which being done, the kings company fell vpon the earle of Perch, & smote him through the braines, so that he fel downe dead. Thus when the greatest part of the French men were slaine, the residue toke them to flight, the Barons on the kings side following them that fledde, toke manie in the chase, amongst the which was taken Sayer de Quincy Earle of Wincester, Henry de Bohune Earle of Hereford, Gilbert de Gaunt whome Lewis had lately made Earle of Lincolne, Robert fitz Walter, Richard de Mountfichet, William de Mowbray, William de Bellocampo, William Manduite, Almaricus de Hacary, Roger de Crasse, William de Caluile, William de Rose, Robert de Resperse, Radulph Chanduite, and many more. The kings souldiers spoiled the citie to the bare wals. This battell was fought on the 19. daie of Maie.

Mount-sorell.

S. Albons, Rudborne and Dunstable spoiled by the Barons.

The Barons ouerthrowen and taken at Lincolne, and that citie spoiled.

On the next morrow there came newes to the king, that the castle of Mount-sorell was forsaken: whereupon the shiriffe of Nottingham shire was commanded to lay the same flat with the ground.

Castle of Mountsorell ouerthrowne.

Lewis through this misfortune that fell to him at Lincolne, fell in despaire of any good end to come to his purpose, and therefore sent messengers to his father,

father, and to Blanch his wife, who forthwith dispatched to him a power: But the coasts by Will. Marshals commandement were kept. And now vpon S. Bartholomews day the Apostle the nauy of Frenchmen were committed to the wicked man Eustach the moyne or monke, to be conducted to the aid of Lewes then being at London. These being entred into the sea, had a faire winde, which draue them vpon the English coast: where when they were sailed a great waie on their voiage, Hubert de Burgo, and they of the ports, espying them to be twentie shippes, and a great number of smaller vesselles, and galleies wel armed, they durst not ioine battaile with them on the sea, hauing themselues not past fortie Galleies and Shippes, but hauing the aid of the kings Souldiours, fell stoutlie vpon them on the backe part, made great slaughter of them. The Englishmen also had Galleies with yron hookes, which gowged the Ships of their enimies, whereby they were drowned in a moment, there was a cruell fight betweene them, but the Frenchmen in shorte space were vtterlie vanquished: Eustach le Moyne was slaine by Richarde a bastarde sonne of king Iohn.

Lewes of France his power of French vanquished.

London besieged.

These thinges beeing thus doone, William earle Marshall besieged the City of London round about, as wel by water as by land, so to cause them within to yeelde: wherupon Lewes beeing in so greate a straite, gaue vnderstanding to the Legate, and to earle Marshall, that he woulde bee ruled by their Counsell in all thinges vpon condition, that sauing his honour, and auoiding slaunder of his men he might haue peace conuenient: whereupon both parties met, & talked together, neere vnto the towne of Staines, hard by the riuer of Thamis, K. Henry, the Legate, the Marshall, and many other on the one part, and the said Lewis, the barons, & noble men on the other side, where by the operation of gods grace, they did fullie agree to the forme of peace on the xi. date of September. First Lewis & the excommunicate persons of his side, did sweare by the holy Euangelists, they should stand to the order and iudgment of the church, and should be faithfull, &c. Lewis returned into France. From the benefit of the absolution and peace were exempted, Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and all of the Cleargie, which had borne arme fauor to Lewis, and the Barons, were all depriued from their benefices by the Legate.

King Henrie and Lewes agree vpon articles.

An. reg. 2.

Lewis returned into France.

The cleargy depriued of their benefices by the Legate.

Hugh Bishop of Lincolne, gaue 1000. marks to the Pope, and 100. marks to the Legate; whose example many other did follow.

1218 This yeere deceased William Vernon Earle of Deuonshire. Ranulph Earle of Chester, Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, William de Albeneto Earle of Arundell, William Earle Ferrers, with the Barons, Robert Fitz Walter, Iohn Constable of Chester, and William Harcourt, with a greate traine, toke their iourney toward Ierusalem. Walo the Legate being sent for by the pope to returne, departed toward Rome with an infinit quantity of money gotten by one meane or other, and Pandolph elected Bishop of Norwich succeeded Legate. About this time king Henry did obtaine, and gate the proper seale of the realme into his custodie.

Barons of England tooke their iourney toward Ierusalem.

An. reg. 3.

1219 King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, to whome Peter Bishoppe of Winchester ministred all things necessarie.

This yeere died Hugh Bishoppe of Hereforde, Hugh Foliote Archdeacon of Salisbury,

Salisburie, William Marshall Earle of Pembroke, Gouernour of the kings person and Realme, and Dauid Earle of Huntingdon, brother to William king of Scots. William Marshall was honourably buried at London in the newe Temple, vppon the 15. of Aprill, concerning whome a certaine Versifier made these verses: W. earle Marshall died. Chro. Tint. Tho. Rudborne.

Sum quem Saturnum sibi sensit Hibernia: Solem
Anglia: Mercurium Normannia: Gallia Martem.

He was a noisome tamer of the Irish men, & honor vnto the English men, he had béene a merchant vnto the Normans, for he had purchased many things in it: vnto the Frenchmen he was a warriour, and an inuincible knight. He left after him fiue sonnes, and fiue daughters, which daughters were thus married. Mawd to Hugh Bigot, Ioane to Warren de Mounthensey, Isabell to Gibert de Clare, Sibill to William Earle of Darby, and Eue to Will. de Bruse, betwixt which fiue, all his great inheritance was after diuided, for all his sonnes died without issue, and were euerie one after other Earles of Pembroke. After the death of William Marshall, the king remained in custodie of the Bishop of Winchester. Caradacus.

About the same time, Lewis sonne to Philippe king of Fraunce, at the instaunce of his Father, went with a great army to the City of Tholouse, there to assaile the Heretikes called Albigenses, but hee preuailed nothing at all against them.

In the siege of that city, Simon Mountfort earle and captaine of Lewis army was slaine, and at another castle not far off, was slaine the brother of the said Simon, for the death of which two noble warriours, great lamentation was made, and Lewis returned againe into France without any victorie. *An. reg. 4.*

King Henry kept his Christmas at Marlebrow. 1220

About midlent Pandolph the Legate called a councel at London, the archbishops, bishoppes, Abbots, and other being present, the Abbot of Welles was consecrated Bish. of Ely. Vnto the which Councell Robert sometime Abbot of Thorney brought the Popes letters, which commanded his Legate Pandolph and Steph. Archb. of Canterbury, that they should see the K. to be newly crowned, because his first coronation, by reason of the troubles, was not so solemnly done as was decent: whereupon order was taken, and on Whitsunday he was crowned at Westminster by Stephen Langton archbishop of Canterbury. King Henry newly crowned.

Ralphe Earle of Chester returned from Damata in the siege whereof hee had set forth himselfe and his people, with most large expenses, whereby hee wanne praise and honour before God and men: But Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, with Robert fitz Walter and other arriuing at Damata, after the same was wonne, died there.

This yéere on Whitson Euen, was the new worke of our Ladies chappel at Westminst. begun, king Henry being the founder, who laid the first stone. *An. reg. 5.*

Proclamation was made, that all strangers should auoide the realme, except such as came with Merchandise, and to make sale of them vnder the kings safeconduct. All strangers to auoide the realme.

Ranulph the third Earle of Chester, Lincolne, and Richmond, and Lorde of Little

Castels of Chartley and Beskone builded.

little Britain, came out of the holy land into England, and builded the castles of Chartley, Beskone, and the Abbey of Delacresse.

Abbey of Delacresse.

William of S. Maries Church, bishop of London, did of his owne free will resigne his bishoprieke, the morow after the conuersion of S. Paul, Eustach de Fawconbridge then treasurer of the Exchequer, was elected bishop of London, whose election was confirmed by Pandolph the legate. And the same Pandolph ceased from executing the office of legate, and returned to Rome.

1221

Nicho. Triu. Antiq. Calend. in Bristolia.

The Frier Preachers, thirteene in number were sent into Englande, and hauing to their Prior Gilbert de Fraxineto in companie of Peter de Roch Bish. of Winchester came to Canterburie, and there presenting themselues before the Archbishop Stephen, he commanded the said Prior to preach before him, and liked him so well, that he euer after loued their order. On Saint Laurence daie they came to London, and so to Oxforde on the daie of the Assumption, in whose honor they builded an Oratorie, and also those Schooles which since were called S. Edwards schooles, in whose parish they toke a place and there for a time remained, and after that remoued to the place without the wals, which the king assigned them.

King Henry subdued the Welchmen which rebelled.

A benevolence. Nic. Triuet.

The noblemen graunted to the king two markes of siluer of euerie hide of land.

Isabel the K. mother went into France.

Isabel the kings mother, without making her sonne or his Counsell priuie to her purpose, went ouer into Fraunce, and there married with the earle of March Hugh Bronne, vnto whome she had beene betrothed before her first marriage with king Iohn.

King Henry gaue his sister Iane to Alexander K. of Scots, who married her at Yorke: and Hubert de Burgh earle of Kent, and chiefe Iustice of England, married the king of Scots sister Margaret. William de Albeneto earle of Arundell, died comming from the holy land, who was conueied into Englande, and buried at Wimondham, a Priorie of his foundation.

An. reg. 6.

1222

Prouinciall Councell. Radulph. Cogsh. Gualter Couen. Lib. Bermond.

A Prouinciall councell was holden at Oxforde, by Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterburie, and his Suffragane bishops and others, in the conuentuall Church of Osney fiftéene daies after Easter, where were degraded a priest and a Deacon, the Priest for homicide, the Deacon for sacrilege and theft committed. Another Deacon offending more depely, denied the profession of Christian religion, and for the loue he bare to a Iewish woman, caused himselfe to bee circumcised, following the Iewish rites and customes: hee was degraded, and being left as a laie person and Apostata, was condemned and committed to the fire, by the seruauntes of Falcatius, wherein he miserablie ended his life.

An Apostate burnt.

A counterfait Christ.

Radulph Cogsh.

There was also a young man and two women brought before them, the young man would not come in anie Church, nor be partaker of the Sacraments, but had suffred himselfe to be crucified, in whome the scars of all the wounds were to be séene, in his hands, head, side, and féete, and he reioiced to be called Iesus of these women and other. One of the women being old, was accused for bewitching the young man vnto such madnes, and also (altering her owne name) procured herselfe to be called Mary the mother of Christ: They being conuict of

Gualt. Couen. Nic. Triuet.

these

these crimes and other, were adiudged to be closed vp betweene two walles of stone, where they ended their liues in miserie. The other woman being sister to the yong man, was let go, because she reuealed the wicked fact. Counterfaite Mary & Christ.

On Saint Iames daie, the citizens of London kept games of defence and wrestling, neere vnto the Hospitall of Matilde, where they gotte the maisterie of the men of the Suburbes. The Bayliffe of Westminster deuising to bee reuenged, proclaimed a game to be at Westminster vpon Lammas day, whervnto the citizens of London repaired, & when they had plaid a while, the Bailie with the men of the Suburbelles harnessed themselues and fell to fighting, that the citizens being foullie wounded, were forced to runne into the Citie, where they rang the common Bell, and assembled the Citizens in great number, and when the matter was declared, euerie man wished to reuenge the fact. The maior of the citie being a wise man and a quiet, willed them first to moue the Abbot of Westminster of the matter, and if hee woulde promise to see amendes made, it were sufficient: But a certaine Citizen named Constantine Fitz Arnulph, willed that all Houses of the Abbot and Bayliffe shoulde be pulled downe, which woorde beeing once spoken, the common people issued out of the Citie without anie order, and fought a ciuill battaile (for Constantine the first) pulled downe manie houses, and oft times with a lowde voyce cryed, in praise of the said Constantine, the ioy of the mountaine, the ioy of the mountaine, God helpe, and the lord Lodowike. Wrestling. Mathew Paris. A tumult in London.

A few daies after this tumult, the Abbot of Westminster came to London to Philippe Dawbney, one of the kings councell, to complaine of the iniuries done to him, which the Londoners perceiuing, besette the House about, and toke by violence twelue of the Abbots horses awaie, cruellie beating of his men, &c. But whiles the foresaid Dawbney, laboured to pacifie the vprore, the Abbot gotte out at a backe doore of the house, and so by a boate on the Thames hardlie escaped, the citizens throwing stones after him in greate abundaunce. Chro. Dun. Abbot of Westminster put to his shifts.

These things being thus done, Hubert de Burgo, Iusticiar of England, with a great army of men came to the tower of London, and sent for the Maior and Aldermen, of whome hee enquired for the principall Authours of this faction. Then Constantine, who was constant in the sedition, was more constant in the answere, affirming that he had done it, and that he had don much lesse then he ought to haue done: The Iusticiar toke him and two other with him, and in that morning early sent them to Falcatius by water, with a great number of armed men, who brought Constantine to the gallowes, and when hee sawe the rope about his necke, he offered for his life 15000. marks, but that woulde not saue him: so he was hanged with Constantine his nephewe, and Galfride, that proclaimed his proclaimation on the 16. of August. Chiefe Iusticre entred the citie of London with an army. Constantine with others hanged.

Then the Iusticiar entring the Citie with a great army, caused to be apprehended as many as he could learne to be culpable, whose feet and hands he caused to be cut off, which cruelty caused many to flée the Citie. Mathew Paris. Feete and hands of many cut off.

The king toke of the Citizens fiftie pledges, which he sent to diuers Castles: he deposed the maior, appointing a Gardien or keeper ouer the cittie, and caused a great gibbet to be made, & after heauy threatnings, the citizens were Maior of London deposed.

reconciled,

reconciled, paying to the king many thousand marks.

An. reg. 7. Tempests and dearth.

On holie Rod daie was great thunder and lightning throughout all England, and such great floods of water followed, with great windes and tempest, which continued till Candlemas, that the yere following wheat was solde for twelue shillings the quarter.

Great tempests ouerthrewe Churches and Castels.

On S. Andrewes day a great thunder ouerthrew Churches, Castelles, and houses, so that scantlie anie bodie escaped frée from harme by this tempest. A knight and his wife and 8. men of his household, with the fall of his house were slaine, in Pilardstune a village in Warwikeshire.

1223

King Henry kept his Christmas at Oxford, and after returned to London. In a councell holden at London the Archbyshop of Canterburie and other the Nobilitie and Barons of the Realme, required the king to confirme the Liberties, for the which the warre was moued against his Father, and that himselfe at the departing of Lewes out of Englande, sware to obserue: whereupon foorthwith the king sent his Letters to all the Sheriffes of the Realme, commaunding them to inquire by the oathes of twelue lawfull men in euerie Countie, what Liberties were in Englande in the time of king Henry his Grandfather, and to send the inquisition so made to London 15. daies after Easter.

Radul. Cogshall. Great tempests at Barnewell and Chelmesford.

As the Bishop of Ely was giuing orders, at Barnwell in the first weeke of Lent, there rose such a tempest of raine and thunder, that all in the church were readie to fall to the grounde, and such flashes of lightning entred the Church, that ech man thought it had béene set on fire, and such a filthy stench arose withall, that manie of the companie fell sicke thereof, and hardelie escaped death. Likewise whilest the Bishop of London was at Chelmesford giuing orders, a greate tempest of winde and raine annoied such as came thither at that time: whereof it may be gathered (saieth mine author) how highlie God is displeased with such as come to receiue orders, to the end they may liue incontinently, and at ease, of the stipends appointed to Church-men, and the offerings of the faithfull, giuing themselues to banqueting and vncleannes, and so with vnclean and filthie bodies (but more vncleane soules) presume to minister vnto God the author of all puritie and cleanenesse.

King of Jerusalem came into England.

Iohn de Brennes king of Jerusalem, and chiefe master of the Hospitall there, came into England, and required aid to win Jerusalem, but hauing rich gifts giuen him, he returned with small comfort.

An. reg. 8. Tho. Wikes. Mount Gomery castle founded.

Leolyn prince of Wales founded the castle of Mountgomery, and there with certaine Englishmen, Hugh Lacy and his retinue, in despight of the king, attempted to constrain William Marshall earle of Pembrooke, and other, to yéeld to them: but the whole countrie rose in armor, and ouercame them.

1224

King Henry kept his Christmas at Northampton, with the Archbyshop, and a great number of knightes, but the earle of Chester with other conspiratours against the king, kept their feast at Leicester, threatning the king and his officiars, for the custodies of lands and castles, which the king required of them. The archbishop of Canterbury and his suffragane bishops, excommunicated all the disturbers of the king and Realme.

Disturbers of the king excommunicated.

The

The earle of Chester and his complices, perceiuing that the king had a greater number of men of armes then they, and also fearing the excommunication, came to the king at Northampton, yelding their Castels and honours which appertained to the crowne. Then the king laid siege about the castle of Bedforde, that Falcatius had long kept by strength, which siege hee continued by the space of eight weekes, and tooke the Castle on the fifteenth of August, on which date he caused to be hanged to the number of eightie two men of armes and other Souldiers, Falcatius de brent, who was fledde into Wales, hearing that the Castell was taken, and his men slaine, vnder the conduct of the Bishop of Couentrie, came to Bedford and fell at the kings feet, requiring mercy. The king deliuered him to Eustace bishop of London, and the castle was made an heape of stones. There was granted to the king throughout England two shillings for euerie caruecate of land. Rad. Cogshall. Bedford castell besieged. Caruecage granted.

The Friers minors first arriued at Douer nine in number, fiue of them remained at Canterburie, & did there build the first couent of friers minors that euer was in England: the other foure came to London, and lodged at the preaching friers the space of fifténe daies, and then hired an house in Cornehill, of Iohn Trauers one of the Shiriffes, they builded there little celles wherein they inhabited. The deuotion of the Citizens towardes them, and also the multitude of the friers so increased, that they were by the Citizens remooued to a place in Saint Nicholas Shambles, which Iohn Iwyn Citizen and Mercer of London appropriated vnto the communaltie of the Citie, to the vse of the saide friers, and became himselfe a lay brother. Grey Friers. Reg. ft. Fratrum minorum.

William Ioynar builded their quier, Henry Wales sometime Maior of London, the bodie of the church, Walter Potter Alderman, the Chapterhouse: Gregorie Rokslie the Doctar: Bartholomew of the castle made the Refectory. *An. reg. 9.*

The fiftenth part of all mens goods moueable within the Realme, as well of the Cleargie as of the Laitie, was graunted to the king to ayde him in his right beyond the Seas, and the king granted to the barons and people, the liberties which they long time had sued for: hee caused charters to bee made, and sent into euerie countrie twaine, one of the common liberties, and the other of the forrest. 1225 Fifteene. Great charter confirmed.

Richard the kings brother, and his vncle William Longa spey earle of Salisbury and many other, were sent into Gascoigne, who subdued the same, and recouered Poitiers. Gascoigne subdued.

This yere died Hugh Bygot earle of Eastangles, or Canbridgeshire, &c. al whose lands and honors the king appointed to the custody of Hubert de Burgh the Iusticiar. *An. reg. 10.*

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Winchester, from whence hee remoued to Marleborow, where he was taken with a grieuous sicknes, and lay there manie daies like to die. 1226

In the meane season, while the king at Marleborow recouered his sicknes, there came to him William de Longa spata, bastarde sonne to king Henry the second, that by gift of king Richard had maried Ela the daughter and heire of the earle of Salisburie, who after long and dangerous trauailes on the Seas, had

had with much adoe arriued in Cornewall, he being ioyfully receiued of the king, made a grieuous complaint of the Iusticiar Hubert de Burgo, because, whilest he was in partes beyond the Seas in the kings seruice, the said Iusticiar had sent a lewd man, of base birth, and euill race, to haue committed fornication with his wife, and would by force haue contracted an adulterous mariage with her. He said further, that except the king did throughly punish the Iusticiar, for that fact he himselfe with disturbance to the whole realme, would seeke to auenge it.

Greeuous complaint made against Hubert the Iusticiar.

The Iusticiar being present, confessed his fault, and with great horses, and other costly gifts, obtained the earles fauour, so that he bade the said Earle to a dinner, in the which (as men thought) the Earle secretly poysoned, went to his castle at Salisbury, where hee late sicke, and died, and was buried in the new Cathedrall Church of new Salisbury, with this Epitaph:

An. reg. 11. Tho. Rudborne.

Flos comitum Guilielmus obiit stirps Regia: longus
Ensis vaginam cœpit habere breuem.

This yeere Richard de Mariseo bishop of Durham like an olde persecuter of religious persons, for the maintenance of his most filthy quarrell he picked against them, came with a great rowt of men of Lawe towardes London, and lodged in the Abbey of Peterborow, after he had daintily refreshed himselfe with costly meates, he went to bed in health, but was found dead in the next morning, he was buried at Durham, when he had sate Bish. nine yeres. Also Benedict bishop of Rochester, and Pandolph bishop of Norwich deceased: vnto the which Pandolph succeeded T. de Blundeuile, clearke of the kings Exchequer, through helpe of Hubert de Burgo the Iusticiar.

Bishops died.

The same yeere also deceased William Brewer Lord de la Hithe, Lorde of Ermintter in Deuonshire, and was buried at Dunkeswell an Abbey which he had founded. He had beene a worthy captaine in the holy land vnder king Richard.

1227 King Henry kept his Christmasse at Reading, and in the holy daies died William Earle of Esser, for whom many sore lamented, because he was a lustie young man.

King Henry exacteth money of the Londoners.

The king blaming the citizens of London, because they had giuen to Lewis the French king (now deceased) at his departure out of England 5000. marks, he compelled them to pay the like summe to him, beside the fiftéenth parte of their moueables: and of the burgesses of Northampton he toke 1200. marks.

Charters cancelled.

In a councel at Oxford the king proclaimed, that forasmuch as he was now of lawfull age, he would rule himselfe at his pleasure, and forthwith made all the charters of the liberties & forrests to be frustrate, alledging, that they were granted whiles he was vnder warde of other, and had not power of his owne body: so it followed, that whoso would enioy the liberties afore granted, must renue their charters of the kings newe seale, with such a price as the Iusticiar awarded them.

An. reg. 12.

Richard Earle of Cornewall.

Richard the kings brother returned into England, and was made Earle of Cornewall at Westminster, Hubert de Burgo was named Earle of Kent.

Shortly

Shortly after the Barons declared vnto the king, that except he would restore the charter of liberties of the forrest, which lately he had cancelled at Orford, they would compell him by the sword. Barons of England threat the king.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Yorke, and from thence went straight to London, but by the way, finding fault with the measures of corne, wine, and oyle, he brake some of them, and caused other to bee burnt, commanding greater measures to be made, and the waight of bread to be made heauier, and the transgressors to be grieuously amerced. 1228 Measures and waights amerced.

Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury deceased at his manor of Slindon in Sussex, and was buried at Canterbury.

This yeere during all the summer were great thunders and lightnings, which burned many houses in sundrie places, and slew both men and beastes: and in the harueſt following, fell great raines which did great hinderance to the inning of the corne. Great tempests

Eustace Bishop of London deceased, in whose place succeeded Roger Niger, a learned man, and of much worthines, a chanon of the church of Saint Paule. *An. reg. 13.*

Also Geffrey de Burgo bishop of Ely deceased, he gaue 200. acres of more in the march of Wilbich to the augmentation of the Priory of Ely. In whose place succeeded Hugh Norwold Abbot of S. Edmundsbury.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Orford, the nobles of the realme being there present, where there came vnto him the Archbishop of Burdeaux being sent from the nobles of Gascoigne, Aquitaine, and Poytow, whome the K. receiued honorably; there came also other solemne embassadors out of Normandie of the like arrand, that was to sollicite the king on the behalfe of the noble men of those partes, that he would vouchsafe to come thither in proper person, promising him that they would all come to him with horse, harneſſe, and all other furniture, and that all the people of those Countries should stedfastly abide by him, by whose helpe he might get againe all his inheritance. The king taking no other counsell then onely Hubert de Burgo his Iusticiar, gaue them answere, that he would defer that matter till he saw a better time, and so sent away the embassadors. 1229

Robert de Bingham was made bishoppe of Salisburie, who did stowtly (by the helpe of God, the king, and good people) prosecute the building of the new church, which his predecessor Richard Poore lately translated to Durham, had begunne.

King Henry dubbed knight, Iohn the sonne of Hubert de Burgo Iusticiar of England. Richard Wetharset, alias Richard the Great, Deane of Paules, was made and consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury.

This yeere the Vniuersitie of Paris endured great afflictions and iniuries at the citizens and lay mens hands, whereupon the K. wrote his letters to the maisters and scholers that if they would come into England and there continue their study, he would appoint them cities and townes with priuiledges and liberties for their abode, as should be to their contentations, 16. of Iuly.

About the feast of S. Michaell the Archangell, the king gathered together at Portsmouth, all his nobilitie of England, Earles, Barons, and knights, with Great preparation to small purpose.

so great a power of horsemen and footmen, as neuer any of his predecessors at any time had the like, where there came vnto him out of Ireland, Scotland, and Galloway, that the number was marueilous, thinking to haue transported ouer such a power as were able to haue won againe into his dominion all those lands that his father had lost: but when they came to take shipping, they wanted carriage for halfe the army; whereof when the king vnderstood, he imputed al the fault to Hubert de Burgo Iusticiar, and openly called him old traitor, casting him in the teeth, that hee had taken fiue thousande markes of the quæne of France, to hinder his purpose, & in his rage, drawing out his sword, would haue slaine the Iustice, had not the Earle of Chester and other runne betwæne, and voyded him away till the kings wrath was appeased.

Hubert de Burgo in the kings displeasure called olde traitor.

At that time in the same hauen arriued the Earle of Britaine, who by othe *An. reg. 14.* was bound to conduct the king into his land: but the said Earle and other perswaded the king to deferre that matter till Easter following, and the Iusticiar was made friends with the king.

1230

King Henry kept his Christmas at Yorke with the king of Scots, whome he had bidden to that feast, the Archbishop of that Citie being present, with the Earles and Barons, and a great family. This feast was royally kept three daies: and on the fourth, when the Sermon was ended, the king of Scots returned homeward with diuers rich giftes, and king Henry hasted towardes London.

King Henry feasted the king of Scots at Yorke.

Mathew Paris. Darkenesse in Pauls church.

Vpon the day of Saint Pauls conuersion, when Roger Niger bishop of London was at Masse in the cathedrall church of S. Paul, a great multitude of people being there, sodainly the weather waxed darke, that one could scantly see another in ỹ church, and sodainly an horrible thunderclap lighted on the church, that the same was shaken as though it should haue fallen, and out of a darke cloude came such lightning, that all the church seemed to be on fire, and such a stincke that all men thought they should haue died. Thousands of men and women ranne out of the church, and being astonied, fell vpon the ground voide of all vnderstanding, none of all the multitude tarried in the church, saue the bishop and one deacon, which stode still at the high Altar awayting the will of God. And when the ayre was cleansed, the multitude came into the church againe, and the bishop made an end of his masse.

An. reg. 15. King Henry with a great army sayled into Britaine, where, after hee had ranged the country, and made many spoiles, besieged the City of Maunts, and did nothing but spend great summes of treasure, the earles and Barons also, seeing that Hubert the Iusticiar would not suffer them to do any thing against the enemies, they made bāquets & feasts as they were wont to do in England, and tended nothing but eating & drinking: but the poorer sort of men, to maintaine themselues, sold all that they had, and beggered themselues for euer.

King Henry sailed into Britaine, but lost his time to no good effect.

King Henry returned out of Britaine with great losse.

King Henry set all thinges in order for the keeping of the countrey of Britaine, and so tooke shipping, and on the 25. of October landed at Portsmouth, hauing spent and wasted an infinite summe of mony, & giuen ouer vnto death an innumerable number of noble men, or at the least brought them low with sickenesse and extreame pouerty. But Gilbert de Clare earle of Glocester died

by

by the way as hee came homeward, and was buried at Tewkesbury, whose lands and honours the king granted vnto Hubert de Burgo the Iustice.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Lambeth, where Hubert the Iusticiar prouided all things for the feast, which being ended, the king called the prelates and nobles of the realme to a councell at Westminster, where hee demanded of them a great subsidy, which would not be granted. 1231 Subsidy demanded and denied.

Richard the kings brother married Isabel Countesse of Glocester, late wife to Gilbert Earle of Glouceſter lately deceased, and sister to William Marshall earle of Penbroke: and the marriage being scantly finished, the said William died, and was buried in the new Temple at London by his father. His brother Richard succeeded him in the Earledome. William earle of Penbrooke buried in the new Temple.

The 3. of May, the king sent his letters to the townesmen of Oxford, and Cambridge, rebuking them for their ouer high renting of their houses vpon the scholiers of the vniuersities: commanding them therfore to temper themselues in their said rents, and that the same be rated according to the auncient custome of the said Vniuersities by two maisters, and two burgesses. Likewise the king hearing that the Vniuersities were pestered with many that fained themselues to be scholers, the which were none indeede, he commanded the shiriffes of Cambridge shire, and Oxford shire to make proclamation that no clearke should abide in any the said Vniuersities, except he liued vnder the discipline and tuition of some maister of a schole, vpon paine of imprisonment of all such as should so remaine in any of the said townes aboue 15. daies after the proclamation.

Leolin prince of Wales spoyled the lands of the Barons that were on the borders of Wales, wherefore the king gathered a great power at Oxford, and went against the Welshmen, and builded the castle of Matild, which before had béene destroyed. Nic. Triuet. *An. reg. 16.*

The Iewes builded a Synagogue at London very curiously, but the christians obtained of the king that it should be dedicated to our blessed Lady, and was since by the same king Henry, granted to the brethren of Saint Anthony of Vienna, and so called Saint Anthonies Hospitall in London, and since annexed to Windsor Colledge, by Edward the fourth, about Ann. 1485. Shortly after which time, the same church of S. Anthony was new builded by Iohn Tate maior of London. Iewes Synagogue.

King Henry being informed of the hard dealing of the townesmen of Cambridge against the scholiers, in rating their house rents, directed his Writte to the Maior and Bailiffes, remembring vnto them the multitude of scholiers repairing to their towne for cause of studie, as well from diuers partes beyond the seas, as at home, whereof themselues ought not to be a little ioyfull, considering also that himselfe and his whole realme receiued thereby great honour and commoditie: And therefore in the ende commaunded them to measure themselues more temperatly in rating their saide houses, to be rated by two masters, and two burgesses, according to the ancient custome of the Vniuersitie, behauing themselues in such wise, as no further clamour came to him for that businesse. I Shepheard. Record. & to the townesmen of Cambridge.

1232 King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, Peter Bishop of Winchester, ministring to him all things necessary to the saide feast, did also giue to the king, and to all them that were with him festinall garments.

Ranulph earle of Chester, Lincolne, and Huntington, deceased at Wallingford, from whence his bodie was carried to Chester to bee buried. Unto this Ranulph succeeded in the Earledome of Chester, Iohn the sonne of Dauid, the brother of William king of Scots his sisters sonne. This Ranulph had foure sisters, the eldest named Matild, married to Dauid an Earle of Scotland, by whome she had this Iohn: the second named Mabell married to the earle of Arundel: the third named Agnes, married to William Ferrers earle of Darby: the fourth named Hauisia, married to Robert de Quincy earle of Winchester.

Hubert the chiefe Iusticiar sent to the tower

Through many complaints made against Hubert de Burgo, chiefe Iustice of England, the said Hubert fled to the chappell of Brendwood in Esser, where he was taken, and the king sent him to the Tower of London.

Great tempest.

The morrowe after Saint Martins day began thunders very horrible, which lasted fiftéene daies. Great harme was done in London by fire, which began first in the house of Dauid Ioner a Lumbard.

Historia Aurea. *An. reg. 17.*

Ela Countesse of Salisbury widow, founded the monasterie of Chanons at Lacok in Wiltshire, for William Longespey her late husband, and William their sonne and heire.

1233 The king kept his Christmas at Worcester, where hee remoued all his officers and counsellers, as wel bishops as earles and barons, and sent for Pictauians, whome he retained into his seruice, and committed to them the kéeping of the castles and his treasures.

Pictauians placed about the king. Mathew Paris.

The likenes of fiue Sunnes.

The vii. of Aprill there appeared as it were foure sonnes beside the naturall sunne, of a red colour, and a great circle of cristal colour, from the sides whereof went out halfe circles, in the diuisions whereof, the foure sonnes went forth.

There followed that yéere great warre and cruell bloudsheds, and generally great disturbance throughout England, Wales, and Ireland.

Dragons.

In the moneth of June in the south part of England by the Sea coast were séene two great Dragons in the aire, flying and fighting together a whole day, the one chasing the other to the dæpe sea, and then were no more séene.

Robert and Roger Bacon.

The king being at Oxford, Robert Bacon openly preached against Peter bishop of Winchester, for that he euilly counselled the king to spoile the realme with Pictauians. Also Roger Bacon his brother both earnestly and pithily perswaded the king to leaue the counsell of the said Peter. Also the Barons sent messengers to the king, requesting that he would put from him Peter Bishop of Winchester, and the Pictauians, or else they would depose him from his kingdome, and create a new.

The Barons threat the king.

Houses of conuerts.

The king builded a faire church and many houses adioyning thereunto in the Citie of London, not farre from the olde Temple, but betwixt the old temple and the new: In the which house all the Iewes and Infidels that did conuert to the faith of Christ might haue vnder an honest rule of life sufficient liuing, whereby it came to passe, that in shorte time there was gathered a great number of conuerts, which were baptised and instructed in the lawes of Christ,

and

and did liue laudably vnder a learned man appointed to gouerne them. He also builded the hospitall of S. Iohn without the east gate of Oxford for sick folke and strangers to be relieued in. Hospitall at Oxford. Hist Aurea.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Glocester, with a very small company, because many nobles were gone from him. At the which time there was such a frost, that the corne was destroyed in the ground, and the rotes of herbes in the gardens: this frost continued till Candlemas without any snowe, so that no man could plow the ground, and all the yere after was vnseasonable weather that barennesse of all things ensued. *An. reg. 18.* Ioh. Rouse. 1234 Great Frost.

Richard Marshall and Leoline prince of Northwales, with a great force inuaded the kings lands, and destroied the same with fire & sword, from the coasts of Wales to Salisbury, which towne also they set a fire. By the perswasion of Edmund Archbishop of Canterbury, the king commaunded Peter Bysshop of Winchester to go to his bishopricke, and also expulsed all the Pictauians into their owne Countrey, and making peace with Richard Marshall and Leoline prince of Wales, he called againe his naturall subiectes, and submitted himselfe to their counsell. Salisbury brent. The Pictauians expelled.

Richard Marshall in Ireland raising a warre there, by Geffrey de Marisco, was slaine and buried at Kilkenny, Gilbert his brother succeeded him in the earledome. Nic. Triuet.

This yere was a great dearth and pestilence, so that many poore folkes died for want of victuals, and the rich men were stricken with couetousnes that they would not relieue them, amongst whom is to be noted, Walter Grey Archbishop of Yorke, whose corne being fiue yeres olde, doubting the same to bee destroyed by vermine, hee commanded to deliuer it to the husbandmen that dwelt in his manors, vpon condition to pay as much new corne after haruest, and would giue none to the poore for Gods sake. And it fortuned that when men came to a great stacke of corne nigh to the towne of Ripon belonging to the said archbishop, there appeared in the sheaues all ouer, the heads of worms, serpents and toads, and a voice was heard out of the corn-mowe saying, Lay no hands on the corne, for the archbishop, and all that he hath, is the diuelles: to be short, the Bailiffes were forced to build an high wal round about the corne, and then to set it on fire, lest the venemous wormes should haue gone out and poysoned the corne in other places. Mathew Paris. Couetous Archbyshop. Corne full of vermine. *An. reg. 19.*

The same yere died Hubert Foliote bishop of Hereford, vnto whome succeeded maister Robert de Maydenstone, a famous learned man.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster in presence of the bishops and nobles of the realme. 1235

The same yere was brought before the king seuen Iewes, which at Norwich had stolen a boie, and kept him from the sight of the Christian people, by the space of one whole yere, and had circumcised him, minding also to haue crucified him in the solemnitie of Easter, as themselues confessed before the king, and were conuicted thereof, wherefore their bodies and goods were at the kings pleasure. Iewes stole a child at Norwich.

Frederike the Emperour married Isabell the kings sister. The Emperour sent Isabel the kings sister married to the Emperour

Three leopards sent to K. Henry

sent to king Henry three leopards, in token of his regall shield of armes, where in three leopards were pictured: he also afterward sent him a camell.

Carucage.

The same time king Henry tooke carucage, that is to say, two marks of siluer of euerie knights fée, towards the marriage of his said sister Isabel to the Emperour, with whome he gaue 30000. marks, besides her ornaments, crowne and other goods of inestimable value.

Richard heire to the earledome of Gloucester married the daughter of Hubert de Burgo earle of Kent.

S. Mary Spittel. An. reg. 20.

Walter Brune a citizen of London, and Rosia his wife, founded the Hospitall of our Lady without Bishopsgate of London, a house of such great reliefe to the needie, that there was founde standing at the suppression a hundred and foure score beddes for the poore well furnished, and the lands thereof were then valued at foure hundred seuentie and eight pounds, fiue shillings, and fiue pence by the yéere.

1236

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester with great ioy and solace, loking for the returne of certaine messengers, whome hee had sent into Prouence to contract a marriage with Elianor the daughter of Raymond Earle of Prouence: she was married at Canterbury by Edmond Archbishop of Canterbury, and crowned at Westminster the twentieth daie of January. To this coronation resorted so greate a number of all Estates, that the Citie of London was scarce able to receiue them. The citie was adorned with silkes, and in the night with lampes, crescets, and other lights, without number, besides manie pageants, and strange deuises which were shewed. The citizens rode to meet the king and quéene, being clothed in long garments, embrodered about with Golde and silke of diuers colours: their horses finelie trapped in arraie, to the number of 360. euerie man bearing golden or siluer cups in their hands, and the kings trumpeters before them sounding. The Archbyshoppe of Canterbury did execute the office of Coronation. The citizens of London did minister wine as butlers. The citizens of Winchester tooke charge of the kitchen, and other citizens attended their charges.

Mathew Paris. Hist. Aurea. W. Packington. King Henry married the earle of Prouences daughter. Elianor.

The citizens of London butlers at the coronation

Ioan the kings Sister, wife to Lewlin prince of Wales died at Hauering in Esser, and was buried at Tarent in Dorset.

High waters.

About this time fell such abundance of raine the space of two monethes, that the Thamis ouerflowed the bankes, causing the marshes about Wisbich to bee all on a Sea, whereon the boates and other small vessels were carried with the streame, so that besides cattell, the greatest number of men, women, and children inhabiting those parts were drowned: in the great palace of Westminst. men did row with wherries in the middest of the hall, and they rode on horseback to their chambers.

An. reg. 21. Statutes of Marton.

A parleament at Marton, wherein were made the statutes of Marton.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

1237

Richard Pore byshop of Durham, after he had sate byshop twelue yéres, a man of great vertue and profound learning, deceased: he was first Bish. of Chichester, then of Salisburie, and then of Durham, hee deliuered the last named from the debt which Richard de Marisco his predecessor had bounde it in, for the summe

summe of 40000. marks. He also did translate the church of Salisburie from a barrain dry place, nere to the earles castle, vnto a more competent place, and by the aduise of his excellent artificers, whome hee fetcht out of farre countries laide a wide and large foundation of a new church in a more plentiful soile. To the furtherance of which worke, not only the bishop, but also the king, and manie noble men did put their hands. More, he builded an house of Nuns named the Charnell at Tarent in Wiltshire and gaue it to the quæne, in which she chose her Sepulture. Hee also founded an hospitall for the poore, by the colledge of Maulr in Salisburie. New Church of Salisbury.

Iohn surnamed Scot earle of Chester was poisoned by his wife, daughter to Leoline prince of Wales, and died thereof. The countie came to the king for lacke of heires. County of Chester came to the kings hands.

Otho cardinall, by the commandement of king Henry came into England as Legate from the pope, the nobles of the realme not knowing thereof till his landing: wherefore manie conceiued great indignation against the king, and said he peruerteth all things, he breaketh promise, law and faith, in all points, and hath married a stranger without our consent, or knowledge of his friends, and naturall subiects: now he giueth a thing, and by and by reuoketh it againe: and nowe secretelie hee hath called in the Legate: it was saide, that Edmund Archbishop of Canterburie did blame the king, especially for calling in the Legate, whereby he knew that great prejudice of his dignitie would ensue, to the great detriment of the whole Realme, but the king not regarding the Archbyshops counsell or anie other his subiects, would by no meanes call backe what he had intended. *An. reg. 22.* Murmuring against the king.

This yeare passed on a stormy and troublesome weather, and very vnhealthfull, so that no man could remember so many folks to be sicke of the ague.

Simon de Mountfort, son to Simon earle of Mountfort, for doubt that Q. Blanch mother to the French king was offended with him, fled into England, and was made earle of Leicester, and steward of England by king Henry. Simon Mountfort earle of Leicester. 1238

K. Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, and on the morrow after S. Stephens day, he gaue in solemne marriage to Simon de Mountfort, Elianor his sister, K. Iohns daughter, widow of William Marshall earle of Penbroke.

Richard de Clare toke to wife Matilde, the daughter of Iohn Lacy earle of Lincolne.

Octobone being lodged in the Abbey of Olney, the Schollers of Oxforde slew his master cooke, who was also the legates brother, and the legate for feare gate him into the steeple of the church, where he helde him till the kings officers comming from Abingdon, conueied him to Wallingforde, where he accursed the misdoers. Mathew Paris. Ypodigma. Legate put to his shifts.

Odo de Kilkenny, as standertbearer of the schollers, was taken with 12. other, and cast in prison, and long after went from S. Pauls church in London to the Legates house (which was Durham place) vngirded, without gowne, bareheaded and barefoted, whereby they asked him forgiuenes, and then the legate restored them to their Vniuersitie. Schollers did penance at London Iohn Brewer.

A scholler of Oxford fayning himselfe madde, enterprised to haue slaine the king in dan-

 ger.

An.reg.23. king in his chamber at Woodstocke: but he was taken, and after long imprisonment plucked in peeces with horses at Couentrie.
Nic. Triuet.

1239 Simon de Mountfort, whome the king had made earle of Leicester (after hee had agreed with his elder brother earle Almericus for the same earledome) being also steward of Gascoigne, induced the king of England to recognise, that hee would holde of the king of France the land of the Baseles, the chiefe Towne whereof is Baion, and was in times past a kingdome of it selfe, and so by acknowledging to be of the fee of the king of Fraunce, excluded the king of Castile, who chalenged the said fee to belong to the king of Spaine.

The tower of London was fortified, which the citizens fearing least it were done to their detriment, complained to the king, who answered, that he had not done it to their hurt, but (saith he) I will from hence forth do as my brother doth, in building and fortifying of Castles, who beareth the name to be wiser then I am.
Mathew Paris. Tower of London Ypodigma.

An.reg.24. Quéene Elianor bare a son named Edward at Westminster, the 22. daie of June.

1240 The king kept his Christmas at Winchester, where he made Baldwine de Riparis knight, and also earle of Wight, in presence of Richard earle of Cornewall, in whose custodie Baldwine had béene manie yéeres, and had married him to his wiues sisters daughter, the Lady Amicia.

Mathew Paris. Bulwarke by the Tower. Richard earle of Cornewall, the kings brother, toke his iourney towards Ierusalem, with many other noblemen of England. Upon S. Georges night, the stone gate and bulwarke which the king had caused to be builded by the Tower of London, was shaken with an earthquake, and fell downe, but the king commanded the same to be builded againe stronger then before. Leoline Prince of Wales deceased, and then betwixt his bastard sonne Griffin, and his legitimate sonne Dauid, nephew to the king of England by his sister, great and grieuous destruction rose for the principalitie, but at length Griffin being taken of his brother, was committed to prison.

Wonstrous fishes. Manie strange and great fishes came ashore, whereof eleuen were Seabuls, and one of huge bignesse passed vp the riuer of Thamis, through the Bridge at *An.reg.25.* London vnhurt, till he came as far as the kings house at Westlake, where hee was killed.

1241 King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, and many noble men with him, where, when the solemne seruice was done in the church, the king dining in the great hall of Westminster pallace, did there place the Legate in the most honourable place of the table, to wit, in the middest (which the noblemen tooke in euill parte) the king sate himselfe on his right hand, and the Archbishop of Yorke on the left (for the Archbishop of Canterburie Edmund was dead) and then all the prelates and nobles according to their degrees, for so the king would haue it, and did himselfe set the ghests.
King Henry dining in Westminster hall, placed his ghests there.

The fourth day after Christmasse the Legate was by the Pope called home to the court of Rome: whereupon taking his leaue of all the Prelates, he toke his iourney towardes the sea, whome the king with great pompe and an innumerable companie of the nobles, with trumpets sounding before them brought

to

to the Seas; so that on the morrow after the twelfth daie, the Legate (after the king with great sorrowe for his departure, had imbraced him) tooke shipping, at Douer, at whose departure no man was sorie but the king, and such as the Legate had inriched.

About the same time Peter of Sauoy, vncle to the Quæne of Englande, to whome the king had giuen the earledome of Richmond, came into England. Peter of Sauoy earle of Richmond.

The Iewes were constrained to pay 20000. markes at two tearmes in the yéere, or else to be kept in perpetuall prison.

Gilbert Marshall Earle of Penbroke, dyed without the Towne of Hertford, being bruised in turneament, and was buried at London in the new Temple. Walter his brother hardlie obtayned the earledome, because hee procured that turneament, contrarie to the kinges will and pleasure. This Walter dying without issue, his heritage was diuided betwixt the sonnes of his fiue sisters. I. Beuerla. Gilbert Marshall buried at the new temple. Nic. Triuet.

The walles and bulwarkes that were newlie builded about the Tower of London (in the building whereof, the king had bestowed more then twelue thousande markes) were againe vnrecouerablie throwne downe, as it were, with an earthquake, for which chaunce the citizens of London nothing sorie, were much amazed, for they were threatned, that the saide walles and bulwarkes were builded in despight of them, to the end, that if any of them would presume to contend for the liberties of the city, they might there be imprisoned, and to the end, that many might be laid in diuers prisons, many lodgings were made there, that no one should speake with another. Bulwarks by the tower. Mathew Paris.

The same yéere Gilbert Basset, through the stumbling of his horse, fell in a certain wood, as he went a hunting in the haruest time, and brake all his bones and sinewes, whereof in a few daies after he died, and shortlie after his only son being but a child, died, whereby his inheritance came to Fulco Basset deane of Poyke, brother to the said Gilbert. Gilbert Basset dyed.

Also about the same time Iohn Byseth chiefe forrester of England, departed this life.

The Templars in London, at this time in great glory, entertained the nobilitie, forraine Embassadors, and the prince himselfe verie often, insomuch, that Mathew Paris crieth out on them for their pride, who beeing at the first so poore, as that they had but one horse to serue two of them (in token whereof they gaue in their scales two men vpon one horsebacke) yet sodainelie they waxed so insolent, that they disdained other orders, and sorted themselues with noblemen. The Templars at London in great glory.

Radulphus Niger bishop of London deceased, a man of worthie life, excellentlie well learned, a notable preacher, pleasant in talke and countenance, liberall at his table: he fell sicke at his manor called Bishops hall in the parish of Stepen heath, one mile east from London, and there died, and was buried in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul in London. Fulco Basset Deane of Poyke, succeeded Bishop of London. *An. reg. 28.*

King Henry kept his Christmas in the great hall at Westminster, at which time, when tidinges came of Richard earle of Cornewalles comming home 1243

into

Peter earle of Richmond keeper of Douer Castle.

into England, Peter of Sauoy Earle of Richmond, vpon Newyéares daie, like a discréete man, resigned into the kings hands, the most famous Castles of England, considering he had taken more vpon him then hee was able to beare, lest any disturbance should arise in the realme by any complaints: hee asked licence of the king to goe to his owne Countrey, but before he had taken shipping, the king sent for him with spéede to returne, and against his will hee receiued the Castle of Douer to kéepe.

Nicho. Triu. Ypodigma. King Henry sailed into Normandie.

King Henry with a great army sayled into Normandie, purposing to recouer Poytiers, Guyen, and other Countries; but after manie bickerings, to the losse of Englishmen, he treated a peace.

Elianor daughter to Geffrey Earle of Brytaine, and sister to Arthure, ended her life prisoner in the Castle of Bristow, famished to death.

Hugo de Albeneto Earle of Arundel died, and his inheritance was diuided among foure sisters, he was buried at Wimondham.

An. reg. 27. Gerual. Dorob. Hubert de Burgo died.

Also Hubert de Burgo Earle of Kent died at his mannour of Wanstede in Surrey, and was buried in the Church of the Friers Preachers at London, which Church was then in Holborne, vnto the which Church he gaue his noble pallace at Westminster, which afterwards Walter Grey the Archbishoppe of Yorke bought of them, and made it his Inne, since commonly called Yorke place, now white hall.

Great floudes.

The Thamis ouerflowed the bankes about Lambeth, and drowned houses and fieldes, the space of fiue miles, and in the great Hall at Westminster men toke their horsebackes, because the waters ranne ouer all.

1243

King Henry kept his winter in Burdeaux, being so deluded by the Pictauians and Gascoines, that he was greatly empouerished, notwithstanding all the scutage he had extorted, and treasures that were giuen him, all was spent without profite, for he had lost all his lands and honors as well in Pictauia as in Gascoigne.

King Henry hauing set thinges in order beyond the sea in Gascoigne, toke shipping and arriued at Portsmouth in the 25. day of September.

Boniface, sonne to Thomas earle of Sauoy, brother to Peter earle of Sauoy, and vncle to the Quéene Elianor was confirmed Archbishop of Canterburie, and was consecrated at Lions.

Richard earle of Cornewall tooke to wife Cincia.

Beatrice Countesse of Prouance and Narbone, mother to the Quénes of England and of France, a comely, wise, and ciuil woman, being sent for by the king, arriued at Douer, sumptuously and costly apparelled, and in great estate, whom the nobles of England receiued with great honor: also the city of London was gorgeously prepared against her comming: she brought with her her daughter Cincia, to be married to Richard Earle of Cornewall the kings brother, which marriage was celebrated at Westminster vpon the 23. day of November, with great royalty, and companie of noblemen, insomuch that there were tolde 3000. dishes of meate at his dinner. At the which feast, by the deuise of the king, and the said Earle his brother, the brides name was turned, and *An. reg. 28.* of Cincia, was called Scientia.

1244

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Wallingford, where hee finished the bridall

bridall feast of Earle Richard his brother, to the which were bidden almost all the nobles of the realme.

Rainulph de Noua villa Bishop of Chichester, and Chancellor of England deceased on the first of February in his noble pallace at London, which he had builded from the ground, not farre from the Newe Temple, and the house of Conuerts. Lincolns Inne.

Griffin the eldest sonne of Leoline Prince of Northwales, which was kept prisoner in the Tower of London, deuised subtilly howe to escape: wherefore one night hauing deceiued the watch, made of the hangings, sheetes, towelles, &c. a long line, and put himselfe downe from the top of the Tower: but as hee was sliding a good pace, with the weight of his body, being a very big man and a fat, the rope brake, and he fell on his necke, whose miserable carcasse in the morning being found by the Tower wall, was a pitifull sight to the beholders, for his head and necke were driuen into his breast betweene the shoulders: the king hearing hereof, punished the watchmen, and caused Griffins sonne that was imprisoned with his father to be more streightly kept. Miserable death of Griffin. Mathew Paris.

The king toke of the Citizens of London 1500. markes, for that they had receiued into their citie againe Walter Bokerell, who had beene banished twenty yeeres, notwithstanding the citizens had proued that before that time the said Walter and his brother Andrew by their suite to the king, had gotten him to be reconciled and restored to the kings fauour. Robert Grosted Bishop of Lincolne, with other prelates, complained vnto the king of waste made of the church goods, by aliant Bishops and Clearkes of this lande, whereupon they were shortly voided. Citizens of London fined to the king. Robert Grosted *An. reg. 29.*

King Henry kept his Christmasse at London with great solemnitie, manie nobles being present. 1245

On the vi. day of January Queene Elianor brought forth an other sonne, named Edmond.

Isabell Bulbecke Countesse of Orford deceased, and was buried in the preaching Friers church at Orford, because she was the foundresse there. Also Baldwine de Riparis Earle of Deuonshire deceased in his nonage.

The Popes Wardrobe in the citie of Lions was burned, with all that was therein: and manie men did say that the detestable charter of the tribute of England, which king Iohn did make, was brent in that fire. Thomas Sprote. W. Thorne. The Popes wardrope brent

King Henry being at London, made Richard de Clare sonne to Gilbert de Clare, (so called, because he was borne at Clare in Suffolke, who was alreadie Earle of Glocester) knight, and to the number of fortie. The same Richard de Clare toke to wife the sister of the Earle of March, by whome he had issue Gilbert de Clare. Gilbert de Clare earle of Glocester.

The king inlarged the church of S. Peters in Westminster, pulling downe the olde wals and steeple, and caused them to be made more comely. *An. reg. 30.*

Robert Ros otherwise called Fursan, being made a Templar, died, and was buried at London in the new Temple.

Walter Marshall earle of Penbroke deceased, and was buried at Tintarne, and shortly after, his brother Anselme that succeeded him in the inheritance deceased

ceased also without issue: and so all the fiue sonnes of William Marshall being dead, their heritage was diuided amongst their sisters.

Sauoy place builded. Peter earle of Sauoy vncle to the Quéene, whom the king had made earle of Richmond, builded a sumptuous house by the Thamis at London, which place after his name was called, and is to this day, Sauoy, now an Hospitall founded by king Henry the seuenth.

1246 King Henry kept his Christmasse at London, accompanied with many nobles, who had béene with him in Wales.

This yere by much intreatie the office of the Marshalship, & the honor thereunto belonging, was giuen to Roger Bigot Earle of Norfolke, by reason he married the eldest daughter of the great William Marshall.

Bigot earle of Norfolke made Marshall.

Harold king of Man. King Henry kéeping his Easter at London, dubbed knight Harold king of Man, who had done him homage. And at that time certaine of the noblest Welchmen came into the kings allegiance.

Hermofrodite. Monstrous. *An. reg. 31.* In the diocesse of Lincolne, there was a woman of noble birth, welfauoured and beautiful, which was married to a rich man, and did beare him children, she also got another gentlewoman with childe, and begate three sonnes of her one after another, or euer it was knowen: the womens names were Hauisia and Lucia, as Henry Knighton affirmeth.

1247 King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, and dined with the bishop on S. Stephens day.

Earthquake. Vpon S. Valentines éuen there was a great earthquake in many places of England, especially at London, about the bankes of the Thamis.

Three halfe brethren to king Henry. There arriued here in England the three halfe brethren to the king, to witte, Guy de Lusignan, William de Valence, and Athelmare clearke, with their sister Alice: this was the issue of Isabel sometime Quéene of England, Countesse of March, which she had by Hugh Brune Earle of March. These being wearie of tarrying in Pictauia, which the Frenchmen had taken, the king went out to méete them, promising them great gifts and possessions, which he after performed more largely then he promised.

The Lady Iane daughter of Gwarin de Moncheney was married to William de Valencia the kings brother on the mothers side, for the said Lady was heire to Gwaren, and was a rich marriage. And Alice daughter to the Earle of March the kings sister on the mothers side was married to Iohn earle Waren.

Castle of Hertford giuen to William Valence. King Henry made William de Valence knight, and gaue him the Castle of Hertford, and the honor thereunto belonging with great treasure.

Base coine. Record of Bery. The coyne was so sore clipped, that it was thought good to change the same, and to make it baser: Whereupon stampes were grauen, of a new incision or cutte, and being sent to the Abbey of Bury in Suffolke, to Canterbury, Diuelen, and other places, forbidding to vse any other stampe then was vsed in the exchange or minte at London, all the olde stampes were called in.

Pestilence. Mathew Paris. *An. reg. 32.* A great plague was in England, so that in September there was euerie day nine or tenne buried in the churchyard of Saint Peter at Saint Albons, William Earle Ferrers and Matild his wife deceased, and William his sonne succéeded.

King

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester. Beatrice the widow of Reimond sometime Earle of Prouance, came into England, with Thomas of Sauoy sometime earle of Flanders, to get some releefe of the king. 1248

A parliament was called at London, wherein a subsidy was demanded, but denied, as before it had beene diuers times. Parliament at London.

Walter Manclearke sometime bishop of Carlile, Robert Bacon, and Richard Fisacle, all preaching Friers died this yeere, which were the best learned in Diuinitie, and other sciences at that time in England. Robert Bacon.

The parliament beganne againe at London, wherin the king declared that he would not at the appointment of the nobles admit a Treasurer, Chancellor, or Iusticiar, whereunto the nobles answered, neither would they impouerish themselues to enrich strangers their enemies, and so the parliament brake vppe. Wherethrough the king for want of money was faine to sell his plate and iewels, greatly to his losse: and when the king demaunded who had bought it; and being answered, it was solde at London, he saide, I know that if Octauians treasure were to be solde, the citie of London would suppe it vp, and by it those rusticall Londoners (quoth the king) abound in wealth, and cal themselues Barons. Parliament at London. King Henry forced to sell his plate and iewelles.

The towne of Newcastle vpon Tine, for the most part, with the bridge was burned with an vnquenchable fire. *An. reg. 33.* New Castell burned.

Foure daies before Christmas was a great earthquake in England, so that the tops of houses were shaken and thrown downe, walles did cleane, and the heads of chimnies and towers were shaken, but the bodies and foundations stirred not. Earthquake.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London, in which solemnitie, Richard earle of Cornwal, went to Wallingford, where with great number he celebrated that feast. And Richard earle of Glocester, not farre from Glocester, with no small glory kept the like feast. But the king (the feast of circumcision drawing neere) demaunded of the citizens of London new gifts, &c. 1249

The king deuising how to erect money from the citizens of London, made a mart at Westminster to last fiftene daies, and commanded that all trade of Merchandise should cease in the Citie those fiftene daies, which the Citizens were faine to redeeme with two thousand pounds. Besides this, the king toke victuals and wine, where any could be found and paid nothing for it. Mathew Paris. A mart at Westminster.

Two Merchants of Brabant complained to the king at Winchester, that they had beene robbed by men of that countrey, who had taken from them to the value of two hundred markes, which theeues they had seene in the Court, whereupon such as were suspected, were taken to be tried, but the countrey purged them by othe, because they were for the most part all infected and giuen to theeuerie: the merchants therefore continuing their suite, saide, that if they could not haue iustice, they would staie so much of English merchants goods in Brabant. Then the king caused twelue men of Winchester to be chosen, who also did quitte them that were accused, which thing when the king did see, he caused those twelue to be imprisoned, and sware, that in short space they should be hanged as accessarie and periured, and caused other twelue to Mathew Paris. Strangers robbed, and pirates hanged.

be

be empanelled, which laſt Queſt found all, and appeached manie, eſpecially of Hampſhire, which were hanged.

Diſtord at Cambridge. Great diſſention aroſe in Cambridge betwixt the Scholers and Townes-men, ſo that houſes were broken downe and ſpoyled, and many men wounded and ſlaine.

An. reg. 34. In the moneth of June fell great raines, eſpecially about Abingdon, which carried away many trees, houſes, beaſts, milles, bridges, and one chappell, not farre from Abingdon.

1250 Mathew Paris. King Henry kept his Chriſtmas at Wincheſter with great ſolemnitie.

The Friers Auguſtines began to inhabite at Woodhouſe in Wales.

Mathew Paris. Boniface Archbiſhop of Canterbury in his viſitation came to the Priorie of Saint Bartholomew in Smithfielde, where being receiued with proceſſion in moſt ſolemne wiſe, hee ſaide he paſſed not vpon the honour, but came to viſite them: vnto whome the Chanons anſwered, that they hauing a learned biſhop, ought not in contempt of him to be viſited by any other, which anſwere ſo much miſliked the Archbiſhoppe, that hee forthwith fell on the Subprior, and ſmote him on the face with his fiſt, ſaying, Indéede, indéede, doeth it become you Engliſh traytors ſo to anſwere mee? Thus raging with othes not to be recited, hee rent in pieces the rich coape of the Subprior, trode it vnder féete, and thruſt him againſt a pillar of the Chancell, that hee had almoſt killed him, but the Chanons ſéeing, that their Subprior was almoſt dead, they ranne and plucked off the archbiſhop with ſuch a violence, that they ouerthrew him backewards, whereby they might ſée that he was armed and prepared to fight.

Archbiſhop of Canterbury viſiteth Saint Bartholomewes in Smithfield, beateth the Subprior and Chanons, &c.

The archbiſhops men ſéeing their maiſter downe (being all ſtrangers, and their maiſters countriemen borne in Prouance) fell vpon the Chanons, beat them, tare them, and trode them vnder their féete: at length the Chanons getting away as wel as they could, ranne bloudy and myrie, rent and torne, to the biſhop of London, to complaine, who bade them goe to the king at Weſtminſter, and tell him thereof: whereupon foure of them went thither, the reſt were not able they were ſo ſore hurt: but when they came at Weſtminſter, the king would neither heare nor ſée them, ſo they returned without redreſſe.

In the meane ſeaſon the whole citie was in an vproare, and readie to haue rong the common bell, and to haue hewed the Archbiſhop into ſmal pieces, but he was ſecretly got away to Lambeth.

The friers of the order of preachers through chriſtendome, and from Jeruſalem, were by a common conuocation aſſembled together at their houſe in Holborne by London, to intreat of their eſtate, to the number of foure hundreth, hauing meat and drinke found them of almes, becauſe they had no poſſeſſions of their owne. The firſt day the king came to their chapter, found them meate and drinke, and dined with them. An other day the quéene found them meate and drinke, and afterwardes the Biſhop of London, then the Abbot of Weſtminſter, the Abbot of S. Albons, the Abbot of Waltham, and ſo of other.

The king taking ineſtimable ſummes of money of all the rich men in his realme, tooke of one Aaron a Jew borne in Yorke 14000. marks for himſelfe, and

Engliſh Jewes.

and 10000. markes for the Quéene, and before hee had taken of the same Iew so much as amounted altogether to 30000. markes of siluer, and 200. marks of gold to the Quéene. A marke of gold or siluer was 8. ounces.

In October the sea flowing twise without ebbe, made so horrible a noyse, that it was heard a great way into the land. Besides this, in a darke night, the sea seemed to be on a light fire, and the waues to fight one with another, so that the mariners were not able to saue their shippes: and to omit to speake of other, in one hauen called Hureburne, besides small vessels, three noble and famous shippes were swallowed vp of the waues. And at Winchelsea, besides cotages for salt, and fishermens houses, bridges and milles, aboue 300. houses in that towne, with certaine churches, through the violent rising of the sea, were drowned. Tempests on the Sea. Winchelsea drowned.

A great earthquake at S. Albons on S. Lucies daie. *An. reg. 35.*

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester without any great roialtie: and the same Christmas day at night, great lightning and thunder happened in the Bishopricke of Norwich. 1251

Athelmare the kings brother was made Bishop of Winchester, although he were neither of learning, or age sufficient.

In this season Wales was brought to be subiect vnto the English Lawes, and that part which ioineth to Chesshire, was committed to the custodie of Alan de Zuche, the which gaue for the same to farme it 1100. markes, whereby hee supplanted Iohn de Grey, which should haue had it for 500. marks. Wales brought to be subiect to the lawes of England.

The Abbey of Hailes was dedicated, which was founded by Richard earle of Cornewall, the building whereof had cost him 10000. markes: at this dedication was kept a solemne feast, at the which was present, the king, the Quéene, and almost all the nobilitie of England spirituall and temporall. Hailes Abbey.

On S. Dunstanes daie, a marueilous tempest of thunder and lightning to the terrour of many, beate downe to dust the chimney of the chamber, wherein the Quéene and her children then were, the whole house was sore shaken in the castle of Windlesor, where also in the parke, oakes were rent asunder, and turned vpwards, mils with their millers, sheepe folds with their shepheardes, and plow men were beaten downe and destroied. Great Tempest of thunder and lightning.

About the same time the sea on the coasts of England, rose with higher tides then the naturall course gaue, by the height of 6. foote. *An. reg. 36.* High Waters.

On the 8. of December, at a iusting holden at Rochester, the strangers were put to the worse, and well beaten by Englishmen of armes, so that the dishonor which they did to the Englishmen at Barkeley, was now recompensed, wherof sprang great hatred betwixt the Englishmen and the strangers. Iusting at Rochester.

The shepheardes of France and Englande toke their iourney towardes the holy land, to the number of 30000. but their number vanished in short time. Shepheards pretend a voyage to Ierusalem

King Henry kept his Christmas at Yorke, whither came Alexander king of Scots, and was there made knight by king Henry. And on Saint Stephens day, he married the Ladie Margaret, daughter to the king of Englande, where was kept a sumptuous feast, the number of knights that were come thither on the kings part of England, were reckoned to be about a thousand. The king of 1252 King of Scots tooke to wife Margaret, daughter to king Henry of England.

Scots

Scots had 60. knights, & a great number of other gentlemen, and did homage to the king of England: this assembly was no small charge to the Archbishop, in feasting them, and their traines, for it was reported that he spent at the first course of one dinner 60. fat oxen.

60 fat Oxen spent at a dinner. Lib. Elii.

The Cathedrall Church of Ely was dedicated, which the Bysshop of that sea, named Hugh de Norwood had now builded of his owne proper costs, together with the palace there, the king and the peeres of the realme, both spirituall and temporall, being present, who were all feasted in plentifull maner. This Hugh Norwood builded the Bysshops palace in Ely, and reedified diuers mannors belonging to that house in other places. He builded the new worke of the church of Ely, towarde the East, euen from the foundation, called the Presbytery, which was finished in the space of seuentéene yéeres, with the expenses of 3350. pounds 18. s. 8. pence. He also builded the new Tower of timber neere to the Galilean. King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

Church of Ely. *An. reg. 37.*

1253

Iohn Texter.

The king toke fourtie shillings of euerie knights fée, to make his eldest sonne knight. He purchased the tenthes of all spirituall liuinges at the Popes hands for fiue yéeres, as it had béene in aid of the holie land, but indéede it was to make his sonne Edmond king of Naples and Sicill. The Liberties of London were seazed by the meanes of Richarde earle of Cornewall, who charged the Maior that hee loked not to the Bakers for their sizes of bread, so that the citie was forced to please the earle with 600. markes, and were restored. The king imprisoned the Shiriffes of London in the Tower a moneth and more, and after deposed them of their office, because of the escape of Iohn Offrom, a Clarke conuict, that was vnder their ward in Newgate, for the death of a prior that was the kings allie.

Liberties of London seazed.

Ypodigma.

Great flood. *An. reg. 38.* Rob. Grosted.

A great flood happened in Holland, Lindsey, and Holdernes, countries of Englande, the tenth of October, which came vnto Alnigham, wherethrough, a great portion of lande, with houses and people were drowned. Robert Grosted Bishop of Lincolne, in Greeke, Latine, and other languages, did by an Epistle reproue Pope Innocent, affirming, that the preaching Friers, and minorite Friers were infected with heresies. This Robert Grosted deceased at his manor of Bugedenam, he was an Englishman born in Suffolke, whose learning (in Hebrew, Greeke, Latine and other languages) ioined with vertue, and good life, wan to him perpetuall commendation, he was a manifest blamer of the Pope, and king, a reprouer of Prelates, a corrector of Monks, a director of Priests, an Instructer of Clarks, a Sustener of Schollers, a Preacher to the people, a persecuter of vnchast liuers, a diligent Searcher of the Scriptures, a Mallet to such straungers as sought preferment in the Realme by the Popes prouisions. In house-keeping liberall, in corporall refection plentifull, and in ministring spirituall foode, deuoute and godlie affected: in his bishops office diligent, reuerend, and neuer wearied, he gaue his bookes to the Friers minors in Oxford.

William de Vescie a noble baron of the North, died in Gascoigne.

1254

King Henry kept his Christmalle in Gascoigne, and the Quéene kept her Christmalle at London, where shee laye in childbedde of a daughter named Katherine,

Katherine, and was purified on the Euen of the Epiphanie, making a royall Feast: at the which were present, the Archbyshoppe of Canterburie, the Bishoppe of Ely, the earles of Cornewall and Glocester, and manie other Nobles: at which time she sent ouer to her husband for a newyeares gift, the sum of fiue hundred markes out of her reuenues, towarde the maintenaunce of his wars. The Queenes newyeares gift to the king.

Edward the kings eldest son wedded the kings daughter of Spaine Elianor: his father gaue him the earledome of Chester, and the gouernance of Guyen and Ireland. Edward the kings eldest son.

Peter de Egeblanke Bishoppe of Hereford in the court of Rome, feigning himselfe Procuratour for the Cleargie of Englande, bounde the small houses of Religion in one hundred or 2. hundred markes the peece, the greater houses in three hundred, or fiue hundred markes the peece: Saint Edmundesburie was bounde in seauen hundred markes, to bee payde to certaine Merchaunt straungers, and all this money was collected to expulse Manfrede out of Naples, Apulia, and Sicill, which the Pope had giuen to Edmond sonne to king Henry of England. Radul. de Diceto Textor. *An. reg. 29.*

After king Henry had continued certaine daies at Bologne, hee toke the Seas and returned into England, landed at Douer in Chrismas weeke. This iourney into Gascoigne was right costlie, and to little purpose, for the kinges charges amounted to the sum of seauen and twentie hundred thousand pound, besides landes and rents which he vnaduisedlie gaue to those, which little deserued. In two iourneies that king Henry made, the one into Poitowe, which countrey he left, the other into Gascoigne, which he hardly kept, he spent more treasure (saith mine Author) then a wise Gouernor would haue giuen for them both. 1255 A chargeable iourney into Gascoigne.

The 5. of June the king by his writ commanded the Shirife of Cambridgeshire to see a due obseruation of all such ordinances and prouisions, as he before had granted to the vniuersitie of Cambridge, by his letters patents, for the assise of bread and ale, for house rents, for imprisonment of Clarks, and deliuery of them againe at the Chancellors commandement.

Lewes king of France sent vnto king Henry of England, for a present, an Elephant, a Beast most straunge and woonderfull to the Englishe people, for that seldome, or neuer anie of that kinde had beene seene in Englande before. An Elephant sent into England.

The 22. daie of November were brought vnto Westminster 102. Iewes from Lincolne, that were accused for the crucifying of a child of 8. yeres, named Hugh, in despite of Christs religion, these were vpon examination sent to the Tower: the murther came out by the diligent search made by the mother of the child: 18. of them that were so brought vp to London, were hanged, the other remained long in prison. Iewes hanged.

The earles and barons of England, with assent of the prelates, caused proclamation to be made through all England, that the Charters of liberties and forests should be kept, at their instance Boniface archbi. of Canterbury accursed all those that shoulde breake them. Lewlyn prince of Wales, gathering a Nicho. Triu. *An. reg. 40.*

mighty band of men, inuaded Cheshire, which the K. had latelie giuen to his son Edw. and destroied al things with fire and sword, til he came to the gates of the citie of Chester, to represse whose violence, a valiant and famous knight called Stephen Bancan was sent of the king with an army, who entring the lands of a noble man of Wales called Rise, surnamed Vaghan, that is, little, beeing circumuented and beset of his enimies in marish grounds, was slaine, the remnant of his army likewise either slaine, or taken aliue, and put in bands, fewe excepted that escaped by flight.

Magnus king of Man.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester: king Henry made Magnus king of Man knight, and bestowed on him great gifts.

1256

King of Scots and his Queen.

Alexander king of Scottes with Margaret his wife, came into Englande about the beginning of August, who found the king of England at his manor of Woodstocke, where the king of Scots sported himselfe for a season, and had the lands of the earledom of Huntington restored vnto him, and here he did homage to K. Henry. On the feast day of the decollation of S. Ioh. the two kings and queens came to London, where they were honorably receiued and conueied to Westminster. Iohn Mansill the kings Chaplin besought the two kings and other states to dine with him, whereunto they graunted, where they were intertained with marueilous chéere, there were 700. messes serued vp, but the multitude of ghests was such, that vnneath the same sufficed, nor ỹ house could receiue them, so that tents were set vp abroade, the like dinner had not béene made by ante chaplaine before.

One of the K. chaplaines feasted two kings.

K. Henry sate in the Exchequer.

Sheriffes fined

An. reg. 41.

King Henry came into the Exchequer, and there set downe order for the appearance of sheriffes, and bringing in of their accounts, there was fiue marks set on euery sheriffes head for a fine, because they had not distreined euery person that might dispend 15. pound land by péere, to receiue the order of knighthood, as was to the same Sheriffes commanded.

Radul. Baldok.

New worke of Paules.

This péere the new worke of Pauls, to wit, the crosse yles were begun to bee newe builded. K. Henry kept his Christmas at London, and on Childermas day came messengers vnto Richarde earle of Cornewall, who declared vnto him that he was elected king of Almaine.

1257

Hugh Bigot chiefe Iustice of England, and Roger Thurkelby kept their Courtes in the Guilde Hall of London, and punished the Bakers vpon the Tomberell, and did manie other things against the lawes of the citie. Richard

K. of Almaine.

earle of Cornewall went ouer into Almaine, and was there crowned king of Almaine at Aquisgraine.

Bridges borne downe.

Textor.

Wals of London repaired.

An. reg. 42.

The 6. daie of July fell such abundance of raine, that many houses, bridges, and trées were borne downe. The king caused the wals of the citie of London, which were sore decaied, and destitute of Bulwarkes, to bee repaired in more seemelie wise then afore they had béene.

Great scarcitie of Bœues and horses in England, whereof they were wont to haue many thousands out of Wales yéerely, and al the Marches were made as it were a desart.

1258

King Henry kept his Christmas at London with great solemnity.

For so much as the king had oftentimes promised the restitution of certaine auncient

auncient lawes which he neuer performed, the Lords murmuring against him, held a Parliament at Oxford, which was after called the madde Parliament, because manie things were there enacted, which turned to the death of manie Nobles. In confirmation of these acts were chosen twelue Peeres, which had authoritie to correct the breakers of them, the king his brethren, the Noblemen and Barons, taking their oathe to see the same obserued. Shortlie after, they banished William of Valence, Galfrede, Guidon, and Ailmer the elect of Winchester, al foure brethren to the king on the mother side, and other strangers.

Mad Parliament. Ypodigma. 12. Peeres. Strangers banished.

Great dearth followed the wet yeere passed. A quarter of wheate was solde for fifténe shillings, and 20. shillings, but the worst was, there coulde bee none found for money, where-through many poore people were constrained to eate horse flesh, and barkes of trees, but many starued for want of foode: 20000. in London as it was said. Cro. Euesham.

Dearth of corne.

A Iew at Tewkesburie fell into a priuie vpon the Saturdaie, and would not for reuerence of his Sabboth bee plucked out, wherefore Richarde of Clare earle of Glocester, kept him there till Munday, at which time hee was founde dead. The said Richard Clare earle of Glocester died, and also his brother William, by poison as was thought. *An. reg. 43.* Ex Record. Tho. Wikes.

A Iew drowned.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London, with great solemnitie.

1259

Richard Gray Constable of Douer, and Lord Warden of the ports was this yeere removed by the Lord chiefe Iustice Hugh Bigot, who toke into his owne hands the custodie of the said castle and ports.

This yeere a great mortalitie of pestilence reigned, whereof died many thousands of christian people, amongst whome deceased Fulco Basset bishop of London, and was buried in Pauls church at London.

Great pestilence.

In a parliament at Westminster, the ordinances made at Oxford with certaine other articles annexed, were reade, and ratified by a curse pronounced against the breaker of these statutes, or anie of them. In the same Parliament was granted to the king a taske, called Scutage, to wit, 40. shillings of euerie knights fée throughout England, the which extended to a great sum of money: for as diuers writers affirmed, there were in England in the possession of spirituall and temporall persons more then 40000. knights fées, some saie 60000. knights fées. Iohn Rouse saieth, that in the 15. yeere of William Conquerour, there were found in England 60211. knights fées, &c. K. Henry had now taken Scutage since his coronation eleuen times.

Parliament at Westminster. Scutage taken.

The king commanded a generall assemblie at Paules Crosse in London, where he in proper person commanded the Maior that the next daie following, he shoulde cause to bee sworne before the Aldermen, euerie stripling of twelue yeeres of age or vpwards, to be true to the king and his heires kings of England, and that the gates of the city should be kept with harnessed men.

Powles crosse in London. Oath to the K.

King Henry of England kept his feast of Christmas at Paris in France. Two Romanes striuing for Prebends in Pauls church at London, the one killed the other there. *An. reg. 44.*

1260

Iohn Duke of Brytaine married Beatrice, King Henry the third his daugh-

ter, and was made knight, and with him Baldwine de Reduers Earle of the Ile of Wight.

Hugh Bigot chiefe Iustice. W. Packington.

This yeere Sir Hugh Spencer was made chiefe Iustice of England, and Nicholas of Ely Chancellor to the king, and the Abbot of Peterborow Treasurer of the Eschequer, by ordinance of the Barons.

The king repenting that he had at Oxford graunted such large Lawes and Liberties to the Nobles and people of the Realme by counsell of Edward his sonne, and Richard his brother, hee sent to the Court of Rome to bee absolued of his oath. The Barons and Nobles of the Realme, helde a Parliament at London in the newe Temple, and the king helde himselfe in the Tower of London.

Parliament.

An. reg. 45. Reignold de Moun, Earle of Somerset and Lord of Dunster, founded the Abbey of Newham in Deuonshire.

Newham.

This yeere great strife befell at Cambridge betweene the schollers & townsmen: and likewise betweene schollers and schollers of the north, and south parts. Wherefore the king sent thither Mast. Giles of Argenton, Mast. Henry of Bozham, and Mast. Laurence Broke the 24. of November, authorized by his commission to appease those tumults: but they vsing ouermuch extremity to one part, and fauour to another, that commission was shortly after reuoked, and a new charge giuen to Master Nicholas at Tower, and Nicholas Handlo, two of his Iustices Itinerants for ceasing of those debates. The contention still continuing at Cambridge betweene the scholler, and the townesmen in most hatefull maner, mante of the schollers by agréement among themselues departed to Northampton, and there raised a new Vniuersitie by the kings consent, which continued not aboue foure yéeres, before it was altered, and the vniuersitie returned home to their olde place at Cambridge.

1261 King Henry kept his Christmas at Windlesore with his wife, the Quéene of England, and his daughter Quéene of Scots.

Vniuersity of Cambridge remoued to Northampton.

In the moneth of February contention continuing betweene the schollers of Cambridge, and the townesmen, many of the schollers agréed among themselues to depart from thence, to the towne of Northampton, and there to raise a new Vniuersitie. Whereunto the king gaue his consent, and granted them pasport, but it was not long ere the Vniuersitie returned to their olde place.

K. Henry comming to the Tower of London, fortified it greatly, and caused the gates of the city to be warded, sending forth commandement to his Lords to come to the Tower, and there to hold a parliament, which they denied to do.

An. reg. 46. The Barons discharged Sir Hugh Spencer, of his office of chiefe Iustice; and placed in his roome, Sir Philip Basset without the kings consent.

The Barons discharged the Sheriffes and Iustices, which the king had appointed, and they placed other in their roomes.

1262 King Henry with his Quéene and Councell, kept his Christmasse in the Tower of London.

On the second Sunday in Lent, King Henry caused to bee read at Paules crosse, a Bull obtained of Pope Vrbane the fourth, as an absolution for him, and for all his that were sworne to maintaine the articles, made in the parlia-

ment

ment at Orforde: then hee with the Quéene sayled into Fraunce, to make a finall concorde betwéene him, and the king of Fraunce for Normandie, where the composition was, that Normandie should remaine to the king of France, paying to the king of England and his heires yéerelie 30000. poundes Tournois, which is 3000. pound sterling.

The Barons of England (Simon de Mountfort being their chiefetaine) armed themselues against the king, and all this yéere houered about London, and other places, without anie notable act of rebellion, sauing that they robbed aliants, and such other persons as they knew to be against their purpose, especiallie they slew the Iewes in all places. There was slaine Iewes at London to the number of 700. the rest were spoiled, and the synagogue defaced, because one Iew would haue forced a christian man to haue paid more then 2. pence for the vsurie of 11. s. a weeke. The Barons in armour. Iewes spoyled for vsury.

Richard of Clare earle of Glocester, son of Gilbert of Clare, being with king Henry in France, deceased, and was buried at Tewkesbury, and Gilbert his son succéeded him. W. Packin. *An. reg. 47.*

King Henry with his Quéene, and councell, landed at Douer on S. Thomas daie, and kept his Christmas at Canterburie. Io. Euersden. 1263

Sir Macy de Besile, a Frenchman, was by the king made Shiriffe and Constable of Glocester, wherewith the Barons beeing offended, they chose to bee Sheriffe, and placed there a knight of that countrey, called Sir William Tracy, which Sir William kéeping Court vpon a daie in the Towne of Glocest. Macy the Frenchman, with a number of armed men came sodainly vpon him, drew him to the ground, and so to the castle, and cast him in prison, whereof when the Barons vnderstode, they sent Roger Clifford, and Sir Iohn Gifford with a great power to Glocester, who besieged the castle, brent the bridge, and entred at the last, where they tooke the sayde Macy, with all his companie, and for that a Carpenter from the Castle with a quarrell, had slaine an Esquier of the Barons partie, Sir Iohn Gifforde made the same Carpenter to leape from the toppe of the castle, where through hee was crushed to death. Sir Roger Clifford toke the kéeping of the castle vpon him, and sent Macy into the March, Sir Iohn Gifford toke all Macies goods at Shereftone, and elsewhere. Macy a French man Constable of Glocest. Rob. of Glocest. Glocest castle taken by the Barons.

Peter de Egblanuch a Frenchman, Bishoppe of Hereforde, was drawne out of his Cathedrall Church by Thomas Turberuill, and other, and sent to the Castle of Erdesley, where hee and Sir Macy were both committed to safe warde: his treasure was spoyled, and his Chanons sent to prison, and thus were Frenchmen serued through the lande where they might bee founde, by them that were on the Barons part. Bish. of Heref. a French man.

Simon de Mountfort with the barons pitched their tents in Istlewoorth, or Thistlewoorth parke. The manor of the same Istlewoorth belonging to Richard king of Almain, was burnt by the Londoners. They also burned another house of his nere to Westminster. Tho. Wikes.

In this meane while, the king and Quéene remained in the tower of London, and when the Quéene would haue gone by water vnto Windsore, the Londoners The Queene chased. Nic. Triuet.

Londoners getting them to the bridge in great numbers, vnder the which she must passe, cried out on her, vsing many vile reprochfull words, threwe durte and stones at her, that she was constrained to returne again to the Towre. The citizens fortified the citie with yron chaines, drawne ouerthwart their streets, munited the citie, and did marueilous things.

Streetes of London chained. Annales of Hyde.

There was a peace concluded betwixt the king and the barons, with these conditions, that Henry, sonne to the king of Almaine, that toke the Barons part, and was in prison, shoulde bee deliuered, that all the kinges Castles throughout England shoulde bee put into the Barons handes, that the prouisions of Oxforde shoulde bee kept, and that all Straungers within a certaine time shoulde depart the lande, those except, whose abode the faithfull persons of the Realme with one assent shoulde accept: lastlie, that the Englishmen borne, and such as were faithfull men to the kingdome, shoulde order and rule the businesse of the Lande vnder the King. But this notwithstanding, certaine knights of the kings part fortified the Castle of Windsore with victuals and armour. Edward the kinges sonne came to Bristowe, where discord rose betwixt his knights and the Townesmen, so that the Townesmen were minded to haue besieged the Castle: which when Edwarde vnderstoode, hee sent for Walter Bysshoppe of Winchester that tooke the Barons part, that in his companie hee might goe to the Court of his father, promising to perswade his father to peace. Hereupon going forth with the Bysshoppe, till they came to Windsore, hee entred the Castle, to the great misliking of the Bysshoppe: but Edwarde shortlie returned, and went to meete Simon earle of Leicester, who with his adherentes were comming to besiege Windsore Castell. Edwarde the kings sonne met with the saide Simon about Kingstone, and offred meanes of peace: but Simon trusting to Bysshoppe Walters counsell, detayned Edward with him, and woulde not suffer him to departe till the Castell was yelded, they that were within, hauing Libertie to depart whither they woulde: and the Straungers that minded to passe the Seas, had safe conducts graunted them. Lewlin prince of Wales confederate with earle Simon, in the meane time wasted the Countrey of Chester, and the marches of the same, and ouerthrew to the grounde the Castles of Diffard and Gannoke. After this, a Parliament was holden at London, in the which, many that had holde with the earle, went to the kinges part, as Henry of Almaine, Sonne to Richarde king of Romanes, and other. The kings partie beeing encreased, hee went to Douer, and endeuored to haue gotten that castle out of the earles hands, but he trauailed in vaine.

Peace concluded betwixt the king and his barons.

An. reg. 48.

1264 King Henry kept his Christmas at London with the K. the king of Almain and many other great estates.

Lewes king of France, through procuring of Boniface Archbyshop of Canterburie (who in politike Sermons at Paris, as well at the Friers preachers, as minors, declared the doings betwixt the king of England, and the earle of Leicester) toke vpon him to make a peace betwixt them: Whereupon the king of England, with his sonne Edward, and diuers other of the English nobilitie, came to Paris about the 22. of Januarie, but the earle of Leicester, fearing

the

the French kinges displeasure for his mothers sake, or some other cause not knowne, staied at home in England and proceeded in his businesse: wherefore Roger Mortimer beganne to destroie the possessions which the earle of Leicester held, against whom the prince of Wales went, and besieged the castle of Kadnore, and brought it to yéeld.

Edward the kings son, after his returne from Paris, about Lent, toke his iourney toward the March, and passing by Oxford, the Burgesses shut vp their gates against him, whereby he was forced to lie at the kings Hall without the towne till the next morow and then departed. The schollers of Oxforde being shut within the Towne, brake vp the gate that leadeth toward Beaumont, for which déede the Maior sent some of them to prison: and not long after, while the schollers were at dinner, the Maior and Commons with banners displayed, thought to haue spoiled the Clearkes ere they had béene aware, but beeing espied, the schollers ran together, and with bowes and other weapons slew and wounded the Burgesses and Commons, brake vp manie houses, spoiling the goods, and set the houses of the Portriues (William Spicer and Geffrey Hencley) on fire, on the Southside of the towne. Moreouer, because the Maior (Nicolas Kingstone) was a Wintener, they brake vp the Wintrie, dranke the wines, and spoiled them, for the which fact the king caused the Clearks and schollers to bee banished the Vniuersitie.

The Scholers and Burgesses of Oxford the one spoile the other.

Clarks of Oxford banished.

Edward the kings Sonne toke the Castle of Hale and Huntington, belonging to the earle of Hereford, and the Castle of Brecon being also rendered to him, he deliuered to Roger mortimer to kéepe, with the territorie adiacent. Robert Ferrers earle of Darbie (who toke parte with earle Simon) besieged Worcester, and entring by the olde Castell, spoyled the Citizens of their goods, and compelled the Iewes to be christened. The towne of Gloucester, that before was taken by the Barons, was now assailed by Edward the kings sonne, who entred the castle by great force, and in the next morning by meanes of the Bishoppe of Worcester, and Reignolde Abbot of Gloucester, a truce was taken betwixt the Barons in the towne, and the kings sonne in the Castle: but shortlie after the Barons fled, and the Burgesses submitting themselues, were some of them hanged, the residue cast in prison, grieuouslie raunsomed, and the town destroied, from whence the kinges sonne departed, spoyling and wasting the countrey (contrarie to his othe made to the Barons) till he came to Oxforde, where he lodged in the house of the Frier preachers, and ioined his power with the king his father, who was lately come thither to make his offering to Saint Friswide, (not fearing the superstitious opinion, that if anie king entred that towne, the virgin there would be auenged on him.) The king hauing now with him his brother Richarde king of Almaine, his sonne Edward, William de Valence his brother on the mothers side, and Iohn Cumyn of Scotlande, with a multitude of Scottishmen, Iohn de Bailliol Lord of Galloway, Robert le Bruse Lord of Anandale, Roger de Clifford, Philip de Marmion, Iohn de Vallibus, Roger de Laborne, Henry Percy, Philip Basset, Roger de Mortimer, with an armie went and besieged Northampton, and the fourth of Aprill breaking the wal, toke the town, and in it xv. knights bearing banners, Simon Mountfort the

Worcester besieged.

Gloucester besieged.

Northampton besieged.

ponger, William de Ferrers, Peter de Mountfort, Baldwyne Wake, Adam de Newmarch, Roger Bartrand, Simon Fitz Simon, Berengario de Wateruile, Hugh Gubion, Thomas Maunſell, Roger Bonteuileyn, Nicol, Wake, Robert de Newenton, Philip de Derby, Grimbald de Paunſeuent: of whome Simon the ponger was ſent to Wincheſter, the reſidue to other places to be ſafely kept. Other knights of meaner degree were taken, to the number of fourtie, and not a few Eſquires: from thence ỹ king went towards Nottingham, walking with fire and ſword the manor places of the Barons, and there hee gathered his Lordes and great men.

Rocheſter beſieged.

Earle Simon went to London, and from thence to Rocheſter, which Iohn Earle Warren defended, the bridge and firſt gate thereof when he had won, being informed that the king was comming towards London, he left the ſiege and went backe to mete him: but the king turning his waie from London toke the caſtle of Kenington or Kingſton, which was the Earle of Glocesters, and then going to Rocheſter, chaſed away ſome that remained at the ſiege, but ſlew many mo: from thence he went to Tonbridge, the caſtle whereof he toke, and the Counteſſe of Glocester within it: leauing a garriſon there, he went to Wincheſter, where he receiued them of the 5. ports to his peace, and paſſing further to Lewis, was receiued into the priory, and his ſon into the caſtle, where whiles he remained, the barons writ to him letters, as ye may read in Mathew Paris, and Nicholas Triuet: but they taking no effect, the Barons in armes approched towards Lewis, inuading the kings people that were gone forth for forage, whereof the king being warned, he goeth forth to mete them with his armie deuided into three ſortes: The firſt was led by Edw. the kings ſonne, hauing with him William de Valence Earle of Pembroke, and Iohn de Waren earle of Surrey and Suſſex. The ſecond was guided by Richard K. of Almaine with his ſonne Henry. The third the K. himſelfe had in gouerning. The Barons army was deuided into 4. wards. The firſt ledde Henry de Mountfort with the earle of Hereford. The ſecond ledde Gilbert de Clare with Iohn fitz Iohn, and William de Mountchance. The third in which the Londoners were, Nicholas Segraue. The fourth earle Simon himſelfe led with Tho. de Pelueſton. Edward the kings ſonne with his battell brake on his enemies that hee made them to giue backe, of whom many were drowned.

Caſtle at Kingſtone or Kenington taken.

Caſtle of Tonbridge taken.

Battell at Lewes.

The Londoners were put to flight, whom whileſt the kings ſonne purſued for the ſpace of foure miles, he made great ſlaughter, but being ſeparate from the reſt of the army, he weakened his part ſore.

The K. of Almaine taken.

In the meane time many of the kings battell were ſlaine, & the king of Almaine taken in a windmill by ſir Iohn de Beuis, ſo was Robert le Bruis and Ioh. Commyne, which had brought the Scots. King Henry alſo hauing his horſe ſlaine vnder him, yelded to the earle of Glocester, who ſent him priſoner to the Priory. Edward returning, is receiued with ſharp battel, and the earle Waren, William de Valence, Guy de Luſignan, the kings halfe brethren, Hugh Bigot with men of armes to the number of 400. habergeons got then the caſtle of Pemſey, and when many were ſlaine on either ſide, the Lord Edward riding about the towne, found his father in the priorie.

King Henry taken.

In

In the meane time an assault being giuen to the Castle, which was valiantly defended, the Barons withdrew them: whereupon the Lord Edward being greatly incouraged, and hauing gathered his people about him, would haue made a new battell, so that the Barons sued for peace, which by the meanes of the Friers preachers and Minors, was brought to passe, that on the Friday following, the Lordes, Edward and Henry, for their Fathers, of England and Almaine kinges, deliuered themselues to Earle Simon, vpon hope of quietnesse and peace that might bee concluded. On the Saterday the king licenced them that were about him to depart to their houses, and writ vnto them that were in Tonbridge Castle, that they should not molest the Barons, as they returned homewards: but they notwithstanding being in armes, when they heard that the Londoners which were fled from the battell were receiued into Croydon, they hasted thither, & slewing many of them got great spoiles. From thence they went to Brikstow, where they remained till Edward the kings son was deliuered. There was slaine in the battell at Lewes, (which was fought on the 12. of May) about 4500. men. About that time a great part of Westcheape in London was brent by treason.

Edward the K. sonne taken.

Rob. of Glocest. Westcheape in London brent.

Earle Simon ledde the king and his sonne Edward about with him till hee had got all the strong Castles of the land into his hands, and then put Richard king of Almaine in the Tower of London, and Edward the kings sonne in Douer Castle.

W. Packin. Chro. Glasten.

In the meane time, Roger Mortimer, Iames Audely, Roger Leyborne, Roger Clifford, Haymo Lestrange, Hugh de Turberuile, with many other, rose against Simon, who to restraine their boldnesse, allocating to him the Prince of Wales, entred the Castle of Hereforde, and caused Edward the kinges sonne to bee brought thither from Douer: after this he wanne the Castle of Hey, which belonged to the Earle of Hereford, and toke the Castle of Ludlow, and after walking the lands of Roger Mortimer, goeth towards Mountgomerie, and there taking pledges of peace of the said nobles, hee turneth to the South parts, to méete the power, which was saide to come out of France to the kings ayde.

Castle of Ludlow taken.

Pope Vrbane sent a Legate and Cardinall, the bishop of Sabzine into England, but they might not enter the Realme, the fiue portes prohibiting them: whereupon they called certeine English bishops first to Amience, and after to Bologne, to whom he committed the sentence of excommunication to be pronounced against the citie of London, the fiue portes, and all those that troubled the king of Englands peace: but the Bishops dissembled the matter.

This yéere about the 20. of June a notable blazing starre appeared, such a one as had not béene séene in that age, which rising from the East with great brightnesse vnto the midst of the Hemisphere drewe his streame, it continued till after Michaelmas.

Blazing starre. Nic. Triuet. Rob. of Glocest.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Woodstocke, and Simon Earle of Leicester kept his Christmas at Kenilworth.

An. reg. 49. 1265

The first of Februarie the king reuoked his grant of the newe vniuersitie at Northampton, by reason of great discommoditie thereby ensuing to the vniuersitie

vniuersitie of Oxford, whereof all the Bishops of the Realme had giuen him aduertisement by their writing.

The earle of Glocester forsooke the earle of Leicester.

Betwixt Simon of Leicester, and Gilbert of Glocester strife arose, for that Simon not only kept the king and other as prisoners, but also toke to himselfe the reuenewes of the kingdome, &c. which should haue bene equally deuided amongst them, so that Gilbert of Glocest. departing, ioined to him in league the noble knights of the marches, whome earle Simon had commanded to auoide the realme, but Ioh. de Waren Earle of Surrey and Sussex, and William de Valence earle of Pembroke, had brought a great power by sea in the West parts of Wales, & arriuing at Pembrok, earle Simon leading the king with him, went to Hereford, where he gathered a great power, to oppresse the said knights: but while the prelates laboured for peace, Edward the K. sonne being in the castle of Hereford is permitted to exercise himselfe on horsebacke in a medow without the city by his keepers, where after he had wearied diuers horses, and mounting on a fresh appointed for that purpose, he rode quite awaie, and passing the riuer of Wey, with two knights and foure Esquires, was followed harde by his keepers: but when they were aduised of the standarts of Rog. Mortimer and Roger Clifford comming to his reliefe, they returned, and he escaped to Wigmore. And this chanced in the Whitson weeke. Lord Edward being thus escaped, gathereth an army, confederateth and submitteth to him the Countries of Hereford, Worcester, Salop, and Chester, with the townes, cities and castles, he also winneth by force the citie of Glocester, which Earle Simon had lately fortified, the townesmen fled to the castle, who 15. daies after yelded it, and departed. The earle of Leicester wan the Castle of Monmouth, and laide it flat with the ground, and entring into the land of the earle of Glocester called Glamorgan, meeting with the prince of Wales comming to his aide, they destroyed all with fire and sword.

Edward the kinges sonne hearing that manie of Earle Simons partakers were come to the Castle of Kenilworth, taking with him the Earle of Glocester, hee departed from Worcester, and came vpon them at a sodaine, where hee toke the Earle of Oxforde, Sir William Mountchalsie, Sir Adam Newmarch, Sir Walter de Solenle and other: and Simon the sonne of Earle Simon hardly escaped in the Castle. The earle of Leicester hauing the king with him, returned out of South Wales, and on Lammas day came to Kemsey a place of the Bishop of Worcester, and there tarried the next day, Edward the kings sonne returned from Kenilworth to Worcester, whose returne being knowen, Earle Simon departing from Kemsey, by vnhappy chance stated in the town of Euesham, for on the morrow being the 2. of August, Edward the K. sonne departed from Worcester, passing the riuer neere to the towne called Clive, closed vp the passage betwixt earle Simon and Simon his sonne, who was at Kilingworth. In the next morning L. Edward approched neere to Euesham on the one side, & Gilbert earle of Glocest. on the other side, and Roger Mortimer on the two other sides, whereby earle Simon was so enclosed, that he must either fight or yelde: on Fridaie therefore the fift day of August, their armies encountred each other in a large fielde without the towne, where the Earles part had

Edward the kings sonne taken from his keepers.

Castle of Monmouth raced.

Battel of Euesham.

had the woꝛſt: the Earle was killed in the fielde, and Henry ſonne to earle Simon, Peter de Mountfort, Hugh Spencer Iuſtice of England, William de Mandeuile, Ralph Baſſet, Walter Creping, William de Yorke, Robert de Tregoze, Thomas de Hoſtile, Iohn de bello-campo, Guido de Baylolle, Roger de Roulens, with ſir Iohn de Saint Iohn, ſir William Troſſell, ſir Gilbert Einefield, and other of meaner ſoꝛt in great number, eſpecially of Welchmen, foꝛ almoſt none of them eſcaped thence, but they were ſlaine at Telwkeſbury. Lordes taken at Eueſham, ſir Vmfrey de Boune, ſir Iohn Saint Iohn, ſir Simons ſon, ſir Guy, ſir Baudwyn Wake, ſir Iohn Veſſy, ſir Henry Haſtings, ſir Nicol. Segraue, ſir Perce and ſir Robert, Mountforts ſons, and many other, Simon de Mountfort the ſonne comming to late to mete his father at Eueſham, turned backe againe to Kenilwoꝛth Caſtle, and the firſt of September he releaſed the king of Almaine, his mothers bꝛother, ſir Reimond Fitz Pierce, and many other.

Simon de Mountfoꝛt ſlaine.

Lordes taken. Lib. Eueſh.

The body of Simon Mountfoꝛt and Henry his ſon, Hugh Spencer, by licence of the k. were buried in the Abbey of Eueſham.

k. of Almaine deliuered.

Simon Montfort being ſlaine, his fauourers toke the Caſtle of Warwike, beat downe the wals, toke William Manduit, and Alice his Counteſſe, and ſent them pꝛiſoners to Kenelwoꝛth Caſtle, where they remained till they had paide 1900. markes.

A parliament was holden at Wincheſt. where all the ſtatutes made at Oxfoꝛd were diſanulled, and al the goods of them that were againſt the king ſeiſed. London was in great danger to haue bene deſtroyed by the king, foꝛ diſpleaſure he had conceiued againſt the Citizens, but the Citizens wholly ſubmitted both liues and goods vnto him. Eight perſons carying the ſame ſubmiſſion toward Windſoꝛ, met ſir Roger Leyborn knight at Colbꝛoke, who turned them backe againe, and after they had diſcourſed the whole matter with him, he willed them to deliuer to him their ſubmiſſion, and he woulde moue the king in it, which thing they did. After fiue daies this knight returned to the Citie, and ſaid the king had receiued their wꝛitings, willing them firſt to take away all the chaines that were in the ſtꝛeetes of the Citie, & pul the poſtes out of the ground that the ſame were fixed in, and bꝛing both chaines and poſtes to the Tower of London: then the Maioꝛ with foꝛtie Citizens ſhould the next day following attend vpon the king at Windſoꝛ to confirme their wꝛiting, and they ſhould go and come ſafe: in witneſſe whereof he deliuered them the kings letter and ſeale, foꝛ the ſpace of foure daies. The next day the Citizens being at Windſoꝛ, attended at the gate vntill the king came from hunting, at which time he woulde not once loke on them. After the king was entred, they would haue followed, but they were foꝛbidden: ſhoꝛtly after they were called into the Caſtle, where they were locked vp in a Tower with homely entertainment: the next daie the king gaue vnto pꝛince Edward the Maioꝛ and foure Aldermen, the reſt were committed to ſeuerall pꝛiſons.

A parliament at Wincheſter.

An. reg. 50.

1266

King Henry with Quéene Elianor his wife, Richard king of Almaine, and Othobone the Legate kept his Chꝛiſtmas at Noꝛthampton.

Pierce Longton, Robert Brune.

k. Henrie gaue vnto his houſhold ſeruants, diuers citizens houſes in London

King Henry came to Weſtminſt. and there gaue vnto diuers of his houſhold ſeruants about the number of thꝛeſcoꝛe houſholds and houſes within the citie, ſo that the owners were compelled to agrée & redeeme their houſes and goods,

of

oꝛels to auoyde them: then hee made Cuſtos of the Citie, Sir Othon Conſtable of the Tower, who choſe Bayliffes to bee accountable to him, Iohn Adrian, and Walter Haruy. After this the king toke pledges of the beſt mens ſonnes of the citie, the which were put in the Tower of London, and there kept at the coſts of their parentes. By great labour and ſuite made, all the foꝛeſaide perſons which were in Windſoꝛ caſtle, eight onelie except, were deliuered, and the king agreed with the citizens foꝛ 20000. marks to be paid, foꝛ the leuying of which fine, were tared as well ſeruants as houſholders, and manie refuſed the liberties of the city to be quit of the charge.

The caſtle of Douer was yeelded to Edward the kings ſon, into the which hee put Guy de Mountfort to be kept.

King Henry baniſhed his ſiſter.

The Counteſſe of Leiceſter, wife to Simon Mountfort, yeelded the caſtle of Pemſey to king Henry her bꝛother, who foꝛthwith baniſhed her the Realme of England foꝛ euer. About Alhalowntide the Quæne of England returned from beyond the ſeas, with her came the Legate, named Othobone, who ſhoꝛtly after his comming, in councel holden at Noꝛthampton, accurſed al the biſhops and pꝛieſts that had ayded earle Simon againſt the king, eſpeciallie hee curſed by name, Walter of Woꝛceſter, Henry of London, and Stephen of Chicheſter,

Rob. of Gloceſt. and the Byſhop of Lincolne. Woꝛceſter ſhoꝛtlie after deceaſed, the other thꝛee went to Rome, and were abſolued. The Legate alſo publiſhed the popes Bul, foꝛ the tenthes of Churches to bee paid to the king foꝛ the next yeere. Sir Simon the ponger fled from Kenilwoꝛth caſtle to the diſherited knightes, who then were in the Ile of Oꝛholme, where he remained not long, foꝛ thꝛough meſſengers with faire pꝛomiſes, and hoſtages giuen by Edw. the kings ſon, hee foꝛſaking them went to London to the king and his nobility, but being pꝛiuily warned of their guile, he made an eſcape and got ouer into France.

The keeper of Guy Mountfort about Eaſter being bꝛibed, let him go, and went with him into France: this Guy went into Tuſcane, and ſerued earle Rufus, in whoſe warre waxing famous, hee obtained to haue his daughter in marriage.

Battel of Cheſterfield.

Robert Ferrers Earle of Darbie, Henry Haſtinges, Baudwyne Wake, Iohn Danuile, and other with their power beeing in the Towne of Cheſterfield in Darbyſhire, there came againſt them Iohn earle Waren, Sir Henry of Almain, ſir Waren of Baſingboꝛn, and many other knights, who on Whitſon-eeuen met without the towne on hunting, Sir Baudwyne Wake, Sir Henry Haſtinges, Sir Gregorie Caldwell, Sir Iohn Clinton, Sir Roger Maundeuil, Sir Ric. Caldwel, and to the number of 22. knights al vnder one ſpeare, al which they chaſed and put to flight: whereof when Sir Iohn Danuil being in the towne had vnderſtanding, hee with a ſmall companie rode out, pierced thꝛough the hoſte, wounding many and eſcaped. Earle Waren entring the towne ſlew manie a man, and toke the earle Ferrers, who was ſicke of the goute, and had that daie bæne letten blood: him they ſent to the Towꝛe of London, from whence but lately he had bæne deliuered. Henry Haſtings and his companie comming to Kenilwoꝛth, founde there Sir Iohn de Eynuile and manie other valiaunt knights. Sir William de la Knowe, and Sir Iohn de la Ware, had well ſtoꝛed

Kenilworth caſtle beſieged.

the

the Caſtle of all things neceſſary. King Henry hauing thither, began his ſiege the morrow after Midſommer day, which ſiege continued till Chriſtmas after, for they within the Caſtle, not fearing his force which was great, ſelde open their gates, and neuer cloſed them date nor night, come who ſo would they came to their coſt, ſo that manie a man was ſlaine on both ſides, and manie were taken and ranſomed. At length the Legate, the Archbyſhoppe, and two other Byſhoppes, came to make accorde betweene the king and the diſherited, and alſo them of the Caſtle: but the diſherites, nor they of the Caſtle woulde graunt to the kings will, wherefore the Legate accurſed them, and all that were of their accord: but they of the Caſtle, not regarding the Legate nor his curſing, in mockage thereof, clothed a prieſt their ſurgeon, Philippe Porpeis, in a coape of white, and ſetting him on the caſtle wall, as a white Legate againſt the red, made him to accurſe the king, the Legate, and all their partakers. Whiles this buſines laſted at Kenilworth, the diſherites toke the Iſle of Ely, and ſtrengthened it in ſuch wiſe, that they held it long: they robbed Northfolke, Suffolke, and Cambridgeſhire, they ſpoiled the city of Norwich, and ranſomed the rich men at their pleaſure. At Bartholmewtide the K. held a Parliament at Killingworth, wherein by his Barons were choſen ſix perſons, which being ſworne, choſe to them other ſix, theſe xii. to make an accord betweene the king and the diſherites: the firſt 6. were, Walter Gifford biſhop of Bath, Nicolas of Ely, biſh. of Worceſter, and Walter biſhop of Erceſter, Roger de Sumerey, Robert Walrond, and Alaine de la Souch barons: theſe 6. choſe to them Gilbert earle of Gloceſter, Humfrey earle of Hereford, the biſhop of S. Dauids, ſir Iohn Bailiol, ſir Philip Baſſet, and ſir Waren de Baſingborn, if theſe xii. could not agree, the Legate, and Henry ſon to Richard king of Almain ſhould be Umpiers, theſe met and agreed at the laſt.

The Legate accurſed thoſe in Kenilworth caſtle, and they in the caſtle accurſed him.

The city of Norwich ſpoiled.

Parliament at Kenilworth.

By the kings commandement, the byſhops, Abbots, Priors, earles, barons, and knights of the realme were aſſembled at Northampton on the Tueſdaie next before Alhalowndaie, there to vnderſtand and confirme by ſtatute what the forenamed twelue ſtates had decreed for ẏ ſtate of the kingdome, which was for the barons, that none ſhould be diſherited, but the Mountforts and the Ferrers, the other ſhould redeeme their lands with money, at ẏ hands of them who had the ſame in poſſeſſion of the K. gift, ſo that none paid aboue 7. yeres value, nor vnder 3. yeres value, which was ẏ leaſt, & this ſhalbe aſſeſſed according to the quantity of their treſpaſſe. The ſiege of Kenilworth yet continuing, they within the caſtell began to be ſore troubled with the ſiege, and alſo were without hope of ſuccour to come to them, whereupon on S. Tho. day before Chriſtmas they yelded the caſtle to the king with condition to depart with life and lims, without loſſe of goods, or impriſonment, and not to be diſherited.

An. reg. 51.

Kenilworth caſtel yelded.

King Henry kept his Chriſtmas at Oxford. 1267

Such of the diſherited perſons, as liked not the ordinaunce of Kenilworth, whoſe captaine was Iohn Ciuil, after they had taken the city of Lincoln, & ſpoiled the Iewes, they fled again to the Iſle of Ely, whoſe comming abroade when the king with a great army had ſtopped, Edw. the kings ſon with bridges made of hurdles & boords, in place conuenient, as the inhabitants thereabout had inſtructed

structed him, hee entred vpon the Ile, some of them within yelded them to him, the other being dispersed by flight. Whiles these thinges were a doing a new trouble began, for the earle of Glocester taking part with the disherites, came with an army gathered in Wales, vnto London, the 7. of April: therein he builded bulwarks, cast ditches and trenches in diuers places.

The earle of Glocest. tooke the citie of London.

Annales of Hyde

The king gathered an army at Windsor, and the 5. of May, he with an 109. ensignes came towards London, he pitched his tents at Stratford, and tarried there the space of one moneth, where many entreated to make peace.

The 6. of June the earle of Glocester, in peaceable maner rendred the Citie vnto the king againe, and then many that were disherited were reconciled, at the instance of the Legate and the said earle. Foure that bare the cognisance of the earle of Darby were put in sacks and cast in the Thamis. Thomas Fitz Theobald and Agnes his wife, sister of Thomas Becket Archb. of Canterburie gaue to the master and brethren of the hospitall, called Saint Thomas of Acres beyond the seas, all the land with the appurtenances that sometime was Gilbert Beckets, father to Thomas Becker, in which land the said Thomas Becket was borne, to make there a Church.

Mercers chappell.

Nic. Triuet.

About Michaelmas the king came to Shrewsbury, to passe into Wales, there to vanquish the prince of Wales Lewline, who had aided Simon earle of Leicester, but he sending to the K. granted him 32. M. li. sterling to haue his peace, and by the Legates meanes there was restored to the prince, the land of foure Cantredes, which by law of armes the king had taken from him.

Peace with the Prince of Wales.

An. reg. 52.

1268

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster.

Othobone the Legate calling a councel at London, ordained many things in reformation of the English Church. In which Councell, he absolued Simon de Mountfort earle of Leicester, and other which had béene excommunicate by reason of the troubles passed.

A riot in London.

Variance fell betweene the fellowship of Goldsmithes and Taylors of London, causing great rushing in the Citie, and many men to be slaine, for which riot thirteene of the Captaines were hanged.

Parliament at Marlebrow.

The king held a Parliament at Marlebrow, in the which were made the statutes of Marlebridge.

An. reg. 53.

1269

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster.

Great frost.

The riuer of Thamis was so hard frozen, from Saint Andrewes tyde, to Candlemas, that men and beasts passed on foote from Lambeth to Westminster, the merchandize was carried from Sandwich, and other hauens to London by land.

Edmond the kings sonne married Auelina, the daughter of William de Albemarle Earle of Holdernes, the was heire both to her father and mother, by reason whereof, he was to haue with her the Countie of Deuonshire, and the Lordship of the Ile of Wight, but he deceased before both the father and mother, and left all.

A discord was raysed betweene Edward the kings sonne, and Gilbert de Clare Earle of Glocester, because of the ouermuch familiaritie, which the said Edward was saide to haue with the wife of the saide Earle. And shortly after

after, the Earle of Gloceſter toke one at Cardiffe, that went about to haue poiſoned him.

The thirteenth of October, king Henry did tranſlate with great ſolemnity, the body of king Edward the Confeſſor, that before late in the ſide of the quire, where the Monkes did ſing at Weſtminſter, into a newe Chappell at the backe of the high Altar, which he had prepared for him of a maruellous workmanſhippe, beſtowing on him a new tombe, or ſhrine of golde, on the day of his tranſlation. *An. reg. 54.*

King Henry kept his Chriſtmas at Wincheſter. The prior of Wilmondham was the kings treaſurer, Nicholas Leucanor keeper of his Wardrope, and Roger de Wanton was Marſhall. 1270

The Nobles of England, by the kings commandement, aſſembled at London to treat of diuers matters, amongſt the which one was, that al men ſhould before the Juſtices ſhewe by what right they held their lands, which matter did much moleſt the people, vntill Iohn Warren Earle of Surrey appeared, who being aſked by what right he held his lands, he drewe ſodainly out his ſworde, and ſaide, by this I holde my Grandfathers lands, and with this I will keepe them. Vpon multiplying of words, the Earle made an aſſault vpon Allen de la Zouch, Lord chiefe Juſtice of Ireland, before the other Juſtices of the bench, and cruelly wounded him, whereof he died. And ſhortly after the ſame Iohn earle of Surrey, by the oath of 25. knights at Wincheſter, affirmed, that he did not commit that fact vpon any pretended malice, neither in contempt of the king, and ſo for the ſumme of 1200. marks was reconciled. Annales of Hide. Edm. Campion. Tho. Wikes. 1270 Allen de la Zouch ſlaine.

Edward the kings ſonne with his brother Edmond and many other nobles ſayling into Aſia againſt the infidels, by his pollicy and manly actes ſo demeaned himſelfe, that oftentimes he put the Turkes to great diſworſhip, for deſpite whereof they ſuborned a Saracene to wound him with a venemous dart, whereof he was long ſicke. Henry ſon to Richard king of Almaine as he went through Tuſcane, at Viterbe was ſlaine by Guy de Mountfort. *An. reg. 55.*

King Henry kept his Chriſtmas at Wincheſter. 1271

The ſteeple of Bow in Cheape fell downe and ſlewe manie people, men and women, that then were in the Church, or dwelled neere there about. Wil. Rithanger.

The 28. of January Richard king of Almaine and Earle of Cornwall, brother to king Henry deceaſed in the caſtle of Barkhamſted, and was buried at Hailes an Abbey of his foundation. His ſonne Edward ſucceeded in the inheritance of his Earledome.

Diuers bournes ſodainly brake out of the hollowe places of the earth, and ouerflowed a great part of Canterbury citie, the ſtreame whereof was ſo ſwift and violent, that it bare downe buildings and houſes, and drowned manie people. *An. reg. 56.* Tho. de Wikes. W. Thorne. Lib. Kenſham.

Philip Baſſet Baron deceaſed.

In June began a great ryot in the citie of Norwich, through the which the monaſterie of the Trinitie was burned, whereupon the king rode downe, and making enquiry for the chiefe doers thereof, cauſed xxv. of them to be condemned, drawen, hanged and brent. 1272 W. Rithanger. Riot at Norwich.

King

An. reg. 57. Lib. Trinitatis. King Henry being sicke, called before him Gilbert de Clare, earle of Glocester, and caused him to be sworne to keepe the peace of the land, to the behoofe of Edward his son, and then died the fiftenth of November, in the yere 1272. when he had liued 65. yeres, and raigned 56. yeres, and 28. daies, he was buried at Westminster, which church he had newly builded: he left issue by Elianor his wife, Edward his eldest son, vnto whom he had giuen the earledome of Chester, who succeeded him in the kingdome, Edmund his second sonne, vnto whome he had giuen the earledome of Lancaster, and after the death of Simon Mountfort and Robert Ferrers, the Earledomes of Leicester and Darby; and two daughters, Beatrice and Margaret.

I. Treklon.

King Edward surnamed Longshanke.

An. reg. 1. EDward the first after the conquest, sonne to Henry the thirde, borne at Westminster, surnamed Longshanke, being aged thirtie three yeres, beganne his raigne the fiftenth day of November, in the yere of our Lorde 1272. being then in the partes beyond the sea towards Jerusalem. Of stature he was tall, and mightie of bodie, nothing grosse: his eies somewhat blacke, and in time of anger fierce, of such noble and valiant courage, that he neuer fainted in most dangerous enterprises: of excellent wit and great towardnesse.

1273

An. reg. 2. The Pope granted to king Edward, the tenth of all Ecclesiasticall benefices as well temporall as spirituall for one yere, and the like to his brother Edmund for another yere in recompence of their expenses made in the Holy land.

1274 King Edward with Elianor his Quene kept his Christmas in Gascoigne.

Robert Stichell bishop of Durham deceased when he had sate Bishop foure teene yeres, he founded the hospitall of Gristham. Vnto whom succeeded Robert de Insula. Laurence bishop of Rochester deceased: vnto whome succeeded Walter Merton, the kings Chancellor, that founded Merton College in Oxford. Also William Bishop of Bathe and Welles deceased: vnto whome succeeded Robert Burnell. Henry the kings sonne deceased, and was buried at Westminster. Auelicia wife to Edmund, brother to king Edward, Countesse of Albemarle deceased, and William de Howton Abbot of Crorton deceased, who amongst other gifts to that house, gaue a Bible in nine tomes faire written, and excellently well glosed by Solomon Archdeacon of Leicester, and paid for it fiftie marks sterling.

Bishops deceased.

The second day of August king Edward came into England from the Holy land, and on the fiftenth of August, he with Elianor his wife were crowned at Westminster by Robert Kilwarby Archbishop of Canterbury. At this coronation 500. great horses were turned lose, catch them who could.

Alexander king of Scots did homage to king Edward.

The king caused Leoline Prince of Wales to be commoned to his parlia-

ment

ment at Westminster, but he would not come, saying, he remembred the death of his father Griffin.

On S. Nicholas euen were great earthquakes, lightnings & thunder, with a huge dragon, and a blazing starre, which made many men sore afraid.

In a parliament at Westminster vsury was forbidden to the Iewes, & that they might be knowne, ỹ king commanded them to weare a tablet the breadth of a palme vpon their outmost garments. The king also commanded the treasurer and chamberlaine of his Exchequer, to deliuer out of his treasure vnto Giles de Andeward 200. markes, towardes the workes of the ditch about the Tower of London, of the fines taken of diuers merchants or vsurers of London. He also ordained, that Bakers making bread lacking weight, assigned after the price of Corne, should first be punished by losse of their bread: the second time by imprisonment: and thirdly by the pillory: millers for stealing of corne, to be chastised by the Tumberell. *An. reg. 3.*

Vsury forbid den. I. Rouse.

A rich man of France brought into Northumberland a Spanish Ewe, as bigge as a calfe of two yeares, which Ewe being rotten, infected so the countrey, that it spread ouer all the realme. This plague of murrein, continued 28. yeares ere it ended, and was the first rot that euer was in England. 1275

First rot of sheepe. Hen. of Leicester, T. Walsingham.

King Edward went towardes Chester, which is in the borders of Wales, that thither Leoline prince of Wales might haue more free accesse vnto him: But hee denying to come to doe his homage, the king gathered an host of men, minding to expell the Prince out of his heritage. Hee builded the Castle of Flint, strengthened the castle of Ruthland, and other, against the Welch men. I. Rouse. Castle of Flint.

Amicia countesse of Deuonshire, and Ladie of the Ile, founded the Abbey of Bocland, for Gilbert Clare Earle of Glocester and Hereford her father, Isabel her mother, and Baldwine Earle of Deuonshire. *An. reg. 4.* Bocland.

Iohn Briton the skilfull Lawyer, who was become Priest and Bishoppe of Hereford, deceased, he compiled a booke of the Lawes called Briton.

The eleuenth day of September, there was a generall earthquake, by force whereof, the church of S. Michaell of the mount without Glastenbury, fell to the ground, and peeces of many famous churches in England fell, by force of the same earthquake. 1276 Earthquake.

Gregory Rokesley, and the Barons of London, granted, and gaue to the archbishop of Canterbury Robert Kilwarby, two lanes or waies next the streete of Waynards castle, & the tower of Mountfichet to be destroied, in the which place, the said Robert builded the late new church of the Blacke Friers with the rest of the stones that then were left of the saide Tower. Cant. Record. Ex charta. Preaching friers church founded by Bainards castle, before which time, their church was in Holborne.

Edmund Earle of Lancaster the kings brother married the Queene of Nauarre.

Elianor the Queene brought forth a daughter named Beringaria.

The statute of Mortmaine was enacted. *An. reg. 5.*

Michael Tony was hanged, drawne and quartered for treason.

King Edwarde caused the Barons of the Exchequer, and Iustices of the bench to remoue from London to Shrewsbury, that he might the better be- 1277

ing neere to the Welchmen, tame them. He also sent a great army into Wales vnder the leading of Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne: at which time the king himselfe led an army toward Suffolke and Norfolke, and kept his Easter at Norwich, returning from thence to London by the sea coast of Suffolk and Essex, and shortly after Midsommer carried almost all the souldiours of England into Wales, as farre as Gamron, and tooke Anglesey, whither Leoline came to redéeme it. Finally, a peace was made: king Edward builded a Castle at Aberistwith, and returned into England with great honor, hauing receiued Leoline Prince of Wales with a kisse of peace, brought him vp to London; where after he had kept his Christmas with the king at Westminster, he departed toward his owne countrey.

An. reg. 6.

Lib Kensham. The same yéere the king gaue to Roger Mortimer, the lande of Karry, and Kidwy, with the Castle of Doluoron, the which Castle Leoline had founded.

1278 Toward the charges of these warres, the twentieth part of all mens goods was granted to the king.

Lib. Kensham. Leoline Prince of Wales tooke to wife the daughter of Simon de Mountford at Wircester.

Arthures bones remooued. In the moneth of Aprill, the King, the Quéene, and the Archbishop of Canterbury, with their traines, tooke their iourney toward Glastenbury, and there soiourned, where ẏ king caused the tombe of Arthur to be opened, whose bones he caused to be remooued out of the said tombe, to behold the length and bignes of them, and then returned towards London.

An. reg. 7. Parliament at Glocester. King Edw. held his parliament at Glocester, in the which parliament were certain statutes made, which vnto this day are called the statutes of Glocester.

Walter Merton Bishop of Rochester deceased, and was buried at Rochester.

Jewes executed. Reformation was made for clipping of the kings coine, for which offence 267. Jewes were put to execution.

1279 Round table at Killingworth. I. Rouse. The worthy souldier Rog. Mortimer, at Killingworth, appointed a knightly game, which was called the Round table, of 100. knights, and so many Ladies, to the which, for the exercise of armes, there came many warlike knights from diuers kingdomes.

Iohn Peckham a Frier Minor borne in Sussex besides Lewes, after the resignation of Robert Kilwarby, was made Archbishop of Canterburie.

Walter Gifford Archbishop of Yorke deceased, and was buried at Yorke, to whome succéeded William Wickwaine chancellor of the same Church.

Jewes hanged. The Jewes at Northampton crucified a christian boy vpon Goodfriday, but did not throughly kill him, for the which fact manie Jewes at London after Easter were drawne at horse tailes and hanged.

First halfe pence and farthings round. Where as before this time, the penny was wont to haue a double crosse, with a crest, in such sort, that the same might be easily broken in the middest, or into foure quarters, and so to bee made into halfepence, or farthings: which order was taken in the yéere of Christ 1106. the 7. of H. the 1. it was now ordained, that pence, halfepence and farthings, should be made round, whereupon was made these verses following:

Pierce Longtose.

Edward

Edward did ſmite round peny, halfe peny, farthing,
The croſſe paſſes the bond of all throughout the ring.
The Kings ſide was his head, and his name written,
The croſſe ſide, what citie it was in, coyned and ſmitten.
To poore man, ne to prieſt, the peny frayſes nothing,
Men giue God aye the leaſt, they feaſt him with a farthing.
A thouſand two hundred, foureſcore yeeres and mo,
On this money men wondred, when it firſt began to go. Robert Brune.

The olde money was not forbidden to goe with the newe: and beſides theſe moneys, there was coyned groates, conteining foure pence the peece.

The pound of eſterling money at this time conteined 12. ounces, to witte, fine ſiluer (ſuch as men make into foyle or leaues, and is commonly called ſiluer of Guthe rom lane) 11. ounces, 2. eſterlings, and one ferling, and the other 17. d. ob. q. to be alay. Alſo the pound ought to wey of money, 20. s. 3. d. by accompt, ſo that no pound ought to be aboue 20. s. 4. d. nor leſſe then 20. s. 2. d. by accompt. The ounce to wey 20. d. The peny to wey 24. graines, &c. Regiſt. of Bury.

This yéere was incloſed the firſt great Marſh at Plumſted by the Abbot of Leſneſe: the other part of the ſame Marſh was incloſed foure téene yeeres after in the yéere 1293. *An. reg. 8.*

King Edward kept his Chriſtmaſſe at Wincheſter. He cauſed his fathers ſepulture at Weſtminſter to be richly garniſhed with pretious ſtones of taſpar, which he had brought out of France for that purpoſe. 1280

Nicholas de Ely biſhop of Wincheſter deceaſed, and was buried at Wauarley, vnto whome ſucceeded Iohn de Ponteſſere. Alſo Iohn Cheſhule Biſhop of London deceaſed: vnto whom ſucceeded Richard Graueſend Archdeacon of Northampton: Walter Goade biſhop of Exceſter deceaſed, vnto whom ſucceeded Peter of Exceſter a chanon of the ſame church. Biſhops deceaſed.

The morrowe after Lammas day, and in the night following was made ſuch an inundation or flowing of waters, that therewith many men, women, and children were drowned, beſides beaſts in the fieldes, milles, bridges, houſes and trées were ouerthrowne: the hay and graſſe was ſpoyled. Water floods.

On S. Martins éuen a great thunder ouerthrewe many houſes and trées in England, to the marualling of many.

The cleargie of England gaue to the king a fiftéenth of all their goods for thrée yéeres.

Edmond Earle of Cornwall founded a new houſe for ſtudents of the order of Ciſtercians at Orford, he brought thither Monks from Thame, and for the firſt gift gaue them the manor of Erdington. Robert Burnell Biſh. of Bath and Welles the kings Chancellor dedicated that church, and that day the earle laide the foundation of the new church of North Diney. *An. reg. 9.* North Diney.

King Edward celebrated the feaſt of Chriſtmas at S. Edmundſbury. 1281

Dauid Lord of Denbigh being reconciled to his brother the Prince Leoline (againſt whom he had bin a traitor) vpon condition he ſhould neuer after ſerue the king of England, but become his bitter enemy, laide ſiege to the Caſtle of Hawarden and toke therein ſir Roger Clifford (a noble knight) ſlaying all Dauid of Wales rebelleth.

that resisted, and after spoyling all the Countrey, he with his brother the prince laide siege to the castle of Ruthland. The king hearing this, hasted thither with a great army to raise the siege, and in his iorny he celebrated the feast of Easter at the Vise in the Diocesse of Salisburie, from thence he went to Ambresbery, there to visite his mother, who remayned in that Monasterie. Which being done, he hasted after his army into Wales, whose comming being heard of, the Prince retired with his army. But in the meane time Ryce the sonne of Malgon, and Griffyth ap Meridith ap Owen, with other noblemen of Southwales, tooke the castle of Aberist with, the castle of Flint, of Ruthland, and diuers other, spoiling the kings people that inhabited thereabouts. Whereupon Iohn Pecham Archbyshop of Canterburie, after hee had visited his whole prouince, considering the great warres betweene the king and Lewline, he trauailed for the appeasing thereof, first to the king being at Ruthland, then to the prince being at Snowdon: which his whole trauaile therein, with the griefe, and causes of those wars be particularly set down word by word in the said archbishops records: all which I receiued at the hands of Doctor Yale, when he was Deane of the Arches, as I haue set downe in my larger Chronicle.

King Edward went into Wales. *An. reg. 10.*

1282 Bridges borne downe.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Worcester. From this Christmas till the Purification of our Ladie, there was such a frost and snow, as no man liuing coulde remember the like, where through, fiue arches of London bridge, & all Rochester bridge were born down, & carried away with the stream, and the like happened to many bridges in England. And not long after men passed ouer the Thamis betweene Westminster and Lambeth, and likewise ouer the riuer of Medway, betweene Stronde and Rochester dry-shod. Fishes in ponds, and birds in woods died for want of food.

King Edward did celebrate his feast of Easter in the Abbey of Aberconway in Wales.

1. Euersden. Parmouth and Donwich spoiled.

Pirats of Zeland and Holland about Parmouth and Donwich, did spoyle and rob whosoeuer they met, slew many men, and carried away not a few ships with all the goods in them.

W. Rishenger. W. Packing.

The king entred Wales with an army, appointing his footemen to occupie the enimies in fight, whiles his horsemen in a wing set on the rereward: himself with a power kept his place, where he pight his golden Dragon, vnto the which as to a Castell, the wounded and wearie might repaire: but Dauid fleeing, the king with his power followed, and as he passed by a wood, there issued out of the same a foure thousand Welchmen, which inuading the Kinges army, made great slaughter: but at length the king marching through by strong hand, entred the castle of Dre, and tooke Anglesey, where hee lost Syr Lucas Thany, sir William Linsey, William de Awdley, Roger Clifford the ponger, and 12. other of his chiefest captaines, 17. yong gentlemen, and two hundred footemen.

The Iewes synagogues destroyed.

Iohn Peckham Archbishop of Canterburie sendeth commandement to the Bysshop of London, to destroy all the synagogues of the Iewes within his diocesse.

T. Walsingham.

Leoline prince of Wales came downe from the mountaine of Snowdon, to Mountgomerie,

Mountgomerie, and was at length taken at Bwelth Caſtell, where vſing re- Wil. Rishanger. Nic. Bromfild.
prochfull words againſt the Engliſhmen, Roger le Strange ranne vpon him and cut off his head, leauing his dead bodie on the grounde. Sir Roger Mortimer cauſed the head of Leoline to be ſet vpon the Tower of London, crowned with Pale. This was the end of Leoline, betraied by the men of Bluith: and this was the laſt Prince of the Brytaines blood, that bare Rule and Dominion in Wales. *An. reg. 11.* Lewline prince of Wales ſlain.

The noble man Roger Mortimer died at Kingſleame.

Elianor Quéene of England was deliuered of a daughter named Elizabeth, at Ruthland, or Rudland.

King Edward kept his Chriſtmas at Ruthland in Wales. He toke the whole treaſure of the tenthes, which were granted vnto the Pope, to the reliefe of the holy land into his hands, and to his owne vſe, which had beene laid vp in diuers places of England, but he cauſed the lockes of cheſtes to be broken vp wherein the money had beene kept. 1283 The tenthes granted to the reliefe of the holy land, the K. tooke to his owne vſe.

After the death of Leoline Prince of Wales, his brother Dauid taking his flight, the reſt of the Welſhmen, aſwel nobles as other, yelded themſelues vnto the king, and then the king ſubdued all Wales euen to the ſea coaſts toward Ireland, and all the caſtles were yelded vnto him. Then he eſtabliſhed there the lawes of England, and did place Juſtices of Peace and other Miniſters. Alſo he placed the Exchequer for Wales at Cheſter. In the meane time, Dauid beeing deſtitute of helpe, wandering in vncertaine places, at length he returned to his owne confuſion: for hee was taken with one of his ſons, Packington ſaith 2. of his ſons and 7. daughters, at S. Mores, all which were brought before the K. by whoſe commandement he was committed to the caſtle of Cheſter. And afterwards in a parliament at Shrewſbury the ſaide Dauid was conuicted of treaſon, and was iudged to be hanged and quartered, which was done accordinglie. Then the king builded two ſtrong caſtles, the one at Conway, (after he had remoued the Abbey at Aberconway to an other place:) the other caſtell he builded at Cairnaruon. He gaue diuers caſtles to Engliſhmen. He diuided Wales into ſhires and hundreds: and ſo the king paſſed through all Wales, and annexed it to the crowne of England. Wales ſubdued. Wales diuided into ſhires and hundreds.

King Edward founded the Abbey of Vale Royall in Cheſhire for Ciſtercian Monkes. *An. reg. 12.*

King Edward held a parliament at Acton Burnell, wherein were made ſtatutes, named of that place. Parliament at Acton Burnell.

K. Edward kept his Chriſtmas at Ruthland in Wales. On S. Stephens daie was great thunder and lightnings verie ſtrange. And likewiſe on Eaſter day the 9. of Aprill was the like thunders and lightnings, ſuch as men could ſcarſe ſtand on their feete. 1284 Tempeſts.

On Saint Marks daie, or the fiue and twentieth daie of Aprill, at Cairnaruon in Wales was borne the kings ſonne named Edward vpon this occaſion: King Edward albeit hee had brought all Wales vnder his ſubiection, and a ſtatute made at Ruthland, in the twelfth yéere of his Reigne, incorporated and vnited the ſame vnto England; yet could he neuer win the goodwils of the Edward the K. ſonne borne at Cairnaruon.

common people of the countrey to accept him for their prince, vnlesse he would remaine himselfe in that countrey among them, neither could he bring them to yeeld obedience to any Prince, except he were of their own nation. For the Welchmen hauing experience of the gouernment of the English officers, and knowing that the king would rule the countrey by his deputies, could not abide to haue any Englishman to be their ruler: wherefore oftentimes, vpon the kings motion they answered, that they were contented to take for their Prince any man, whom he would name, so that he were a Welchman, and other answere could he neuer get of them by any meanes. Wherupon, hauing secretly sent for the Q. being then great with childe, caused her to remaine at Carnaruon: and when she was nigh her time of deliuerance, the king being at Ruthland, sent for all the Barons and best men of Wales, to come to him to consult concerning the weale publike of their country; and when they were come, he deferred the consultation, vntill hee were certified that the Quéene were deliuered of a sonne: Then sending certaine Lordes to the christening, hee called the Welchmen together, declaring vnto them, that whereas they were oftentimes suiters vnto him to appoint them a Prince; he now hauing occasion to depart out of the country would name them a prince, if they would allow and obey him whom he should name. To the which they answered, that they would so do, if he would appoint one of their nation. Whereunto the king replied, that he would name one that was borne in Wales, and could speake neuer a word of English, whose life and conuersation no man was able to detect. And when they all had granted, that such a one they would obey, he named his owne son Edward borne in Carnaruon Castle a fewe daies before. Then the king hauing the countrey at his will, gaue Lordships and townes in the middest of Wales vnto English Lords, as the Lordship of Denbigh to Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne: the Lordship of Ruthen to the Lord Reginald Grey, second sonne to Iohn Grey of Wilton, &c.

Policy of king Edward to winne the Welchmen.

Edward of Carnarnan prince of Wales.

An. reg. 13. Laurence Ducket Goldsmith of London was murthered in Bowe Church of Cheape, for the which fact, 28. men were hanged, and one woman burned.

1285 King Edward kept his Christmas at Bristow.

Westminster church finished. And this yéere was finished the newe worke of the church of Westminster, vnto the ende of the quier: by which reason it appeareth to haue béene reedifying aboue the space of fortie fiue yéeres since the third yéere of king Henry the third.

Scutage paid. King Edward tooke scutage forty shillings vpon euerie knights fée, toward his charges in his voyage against the Welsh.

Parliament at Westminster. About the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist began a parliament at Westminster, wherein were made the statutes called Additamenta Glouceſt.

An. reg. 14. William Wicwaine archbishoppe of Yorke deceased, vnto whome succéeded
1286 Iohn Romayne presenter of Lincolne.

Lib. Reinsham. King Edward, with Elianor his Quéene, kept his Christmas at Orforde, where he remained fiftéene daies, hee caused Alfred Maior of the Citie, and foure other to be hanged, and Iohn Picot to bee imprisoned, for the death of Walter Lechelade.

After

After the Purification of our Lady, king Edward held a great parliament at Westminster. Parliament at Westminster.

King Edward entred the sea at Douer toward Gascoigne on the 13. of May, passed ouer into France, came to Amiens with an honorable company, where the king of France Philip le Bewe, for honors sake met him: and after K. Edward did to him homage at Paris, and was present at the parliament.

Hugh Balsam bish. of Ely deceased in his manor of Downham, vnto whom succéeded Iohn Kyrkby the kings Treasurer, and deane of Winborne, Walter Bishoppe of Salisbury deceased, and Henry Brantestone Deane of the same church succéeded.

William Warren son and heire of Iohn Warren earle of Surrey, in a turnea- ment at Croyden, was by the Challenger intercepted, and cruelly slaine. *An. reg. 15.*

King Edward of England kept his Christmasse in the Ile of Oliron in Gascoigne. 1287

On Newyeares daie at night, as well through the vehemency of the wind, as violence of the sea, the monasterie of Spalding, and many churches were ouerthrown & destroyed, not onely at Yarmouth, Donwich, and Ipswich, but also in diuers other places of England, adioyning to the sea especially in the parts called Holland in Lincolneshire, all the whole countrey was for the most part turned into a standing pole, so that an intollerable multitude of men, women, and children were ouerwhelmed with the water, especially the towne of Boston or Buttolphs towne, a great part thereof was destroyed by reason of wrongs done by Payne Tiptot. Rice ap Meridith rebelled in Wales, and did much hurt, against whome came Edmund the kings brother: and at the siege of Durdan Castle vndermining of the walles, with the ruines were slaine William Mountchensey, Gerard de Insula, bannerets, Humfrey Hastings bachelor, and diuers other. Great inundations or water floods.

On the 2. day of May, all the Iewes in England were apprehended, by pre- cept from the king being then at Burdeaux, for what cause, it was not known, but they redéemed themselues for 12000. poundes of siluer. And at that time the Iewes had a synagogue at Canterbury. Iewes apprehended. W. Thorne.

A Iusts was proclaimed to be holden at Buttolphs towne or Boston, in the faire time whereof one part of the Iusters came as Chalengers in the habit of Monkes, the other as defendants in the habite of Chanons, both these sortes of Iusters had couenanted, after the Iusts to spoyle the faire: for atchieuing whereof, they fiered the towne in three seuerall places, on the morrowe after Saint Iames day, that they might more freely spoyle and sacke the residue, and whilest the merchants were busie to saue their goods, & to quench the fire, they were slaine downe by the said Iusters, and their partakers, by this fiering the blacke friers church was brent, and almost the whole towne, so that, as it was said, streames of gold, siluer, and other mettals molten, ran into the sea, as it was moreouer said, that all the money in ready coine within England would vneath recompence the losse then sustained. The captaine of which mischiefe was Robert Chamberlaine Esquier, who was afterward hanged, but would neuer confesse his fellowes. Iusts at Boston, and that towne burned.

An. reg. 16. On a day as the king and quéene sate together in a chamber, a thunderclap entring by the window passed betwixt them both, and slewe two of their houshold seruants, which stoode in their presence.

1288 King Edward kept his Christmas at Burdeaux in Gascoigne.

An. reg. 17. A hot summer, & cheape graine. The summer was so excéeding hote this yéere, that many men died through heate, and yet wheate was solde at London for three shillings foure pence the quarter when it was dearest, and in other partes abroad the same was solde for twentie pence, or sixteene pence the quarter, yea for twelue pence the quarter, and in the west and north parts for eight pence the quarter, barly for six pence, and otes for foure pence the quarter, and such cheapenesse of beanes and pease, as the like had not béene heard.

1289 King Edward of England kept his Christmas at Belegard in the land of Bierne.

King and Qu. returned out of Gascoigne after three yeeres and more. The king and Quéene after three yéeres, two moneths, and odde daies, being beyond the seas in Gascoigne, arriued at Douer on the fift of August, and remaining a while in Kent, he with his traine lay at Saint Augustines, from whence he passed ouer into Essex, and on Saint Lamberts day came to Saint Edmundsbury in Suffolke: from thence hee went into Norfolke, and from thence sayled by the Ile of Ely to London, where he was honorably receiued.

T. de Weyland Iustice, conuicted and committed to the Tower. Thomas de Weyland the kinges chiefe Iustice, being in the kinges lower bench indited, & by inquisition conuicted, vpon the discouery of certaine of his seruants which had slaine a certaine person before, and fearing to yéeld himselfe to the kings mercie, went to the Friar Minors at Babwell nére vnto S. Edmundsbury, where the king so commanding, for certaine daies hee was diligently kept by men of that country, he toke on him the habite of a grey frier, whereupon the king caused him to be better looked vnto, so that at length, after two moneths siege, when all the friers almost were first dispersed into sundrie places, he forsaking his friers cole, went out, and was taken and sent to the Tower.

An. reg. 18. Great haile fell in England, and after ensued great raine, that the yeere following, wheate was raised from three pence the bushell, to sixteene pence, and so increased yéerely, till it was lastly solde for twenty shillings the quarter.

City of Carlile burned. The citie of Carleile, the Abbey, with all the houses belonging to the friers minors was consumed with fire.

William de Brassa called the Senior, deceased at Findon, and was buried in the monastery of Sele.

1290 King Edward kept his Christmasse at Westminster with great solemnity.

Iustices punished. Adam Meri. Chron. Dun. Rad. Baldoke. Sca. Cro. I. Rouse. King Edward held a parliament at Westminster, wherein the transgressions of diuers Iustices were tried out, and punished accordingly: some lost their goods, and then were banished: some, as wel of the bench, as of the assises, were sent to the Tower, which with great summes of money obtained liberty. Sir Thomas Weyland had all his goods, both moueable and vnmoueable confiscate and was banished, sir Ralph Hengham, chiefe Iustice of the higher bench, offered seuen thousand markes, sir Iohn Louetet Iustice of the lower bench three thousand markes, sir William Bromtone Iustice, fiue thousand markes.

Of

Of their clearkes for their redemption: of Robert Littleburie 1000. markes: of Roger Leicester 1000. markes: of sir Salomon Rochester, chiefe Iustice of Assises 4000. markes: of sir Richard Boylond 4000. markes: of sir Thomas Sodentone 2000. markes: of sir Walter de Hopton 2000. markes: of Robert Preston 1000. marks: of sir William Saham Iustice 3000. marks: of a certaine clearke of the court called Adam de Stratton 32000. markes of olde money and new, beside iewels without number, and pretious vessels of siluer, which were found in his house, and a kings crowne, which men said was king Iohns. Moreouer, the king constrained the Iustices to sweare, that from thenceforth they should take no pension, fee, or gifte of any man, except onely a breakefast, or such like present.

All Iewes banished out of England.

Hee banished all the Iewes out of England, giuing them to beare their charges, till they were out of his realme, the number of Iewes then expulsed, was 15060. persons, whose houses being sold, the king made a mighty masse of money.

Record.

The Scottes by their Charter deliuered to king Edward the kingdome of Scotland, with the castles, rights and customes the fourth day of June, that vpon due discussing the matter, it might bee knowne who was lawfull heire thereunto.

The cleargie granted to the king, a tenth of all their goods for one yeere: the king also toke a fiftéenth of the temporaltie throughout England.

The last day of Aprill Gilbert de Clare earle of Glocester & Hereford, toke to wife, Ioane of Acres daughter to king Edward, at Westminster.

The same yeere Iohn duke of Brabant toke to wife Margaret daughter to king Edward of England.

Queene Elianor deceased.

K. Edward toke his iourney toward Scotland, there to decide of the right heire of Scotland as superiour Lord of that land. But as hee approched to the confines of Scotland, the Quéene his wife, being taken with a grieuous sicknes, departed this life at Yerdby a towne neere vnto Lincolne, on the eight and twentieth of Nouember, whereupon he returned to conuey the corps towards London, which he did with great sorrow, for he bewailed the losse of her all the daies of his life: she was in her life time a vertuous Lady, modest, pitiful, a louer of the English nation, & as it were a pillar of defence to the whole realme: her bowels were buried at Lincolne, and a tombe erected there, with ỹ armes of Castile thereupon, in our Lady chapple: her body was brought to Westminster, and there buried on the seuentéenth day of December. In euerie towne and place in which the bodie of the Q. was staied in the bringing vp to London & to Westminster, the king caused a stately Crosse to be erected, euery one of them being garnished with the Image of the same Q. also with his armes and hirs. The crosses erected were at Charing by Westminster, in Westcheape of London, at Waltham in Esser, at Saint Albons in Hartfordshire, at Dunstable, at Stony Stratford, and Northampton, without the towne south, at Woborne, Grantham, &c. Moreouer king Edward gaue vnto Walter Abbot of Westminster, and to his successors, the mannors of Knoll, and Grafton, with the hamlets, Culspath, Buley, Yaluerly, Wichlakefield, Bonnewaldbey, or:

An. reg. 19.

Charing crosse and other builded. T. Clifford.

Downe

Downewaldchay, Nutehurst, Longdon, and Dodington: all which were appointed for the keping of yerelie obites for the saide Quéene, and for mony to be giuen to the poore that should come.

1291 K. Edward kept his Christmas at Ashruge an Hermitage in Buckinghamshire, founded by Edmund Beauford earle of Cornewall.

After the feast of Easter king Edward going into Scotland, when he came to Yorke, hee tarried there a while, and then Rice ap Meridith before taken in *An. reg. 20.* Wales and brought thither, was by iudgement condemned, drawne through the citie to the gallowes, and there ended his life. On the xi. of May was borne Lib. Keinsham. Gilbert de Clare, after earle of Glocester and Hereford, at Theokesberie. The same yere deceased Elianor the kings mother, and was buried at Ambresburie, where she was buried.

After this, the king going into Scotland appointed all those that claymed anie right to the Realme of Scotland, that in the feast of S. Iohn Baptist nert ensuing, they should appeare before him, to declare plainly by what right they claimed the kingdome.

1292 King Edward at Westminster kept his Christmas, but Gilbert de Clare earle of Glocester with the Countesse his wife, Ioan of Acres the king daughter, kept their Christmas at Clare in Suffolke.

The Pope granted vnto the king of Englande, a tenth of all eccle Iasticall goods of Religious persons, onely Hospitallers and Templars excepted, for 6. yeares, towards the recouery of Ierusalem: whereupon a newe taration was made, through England, Scotland, Ireland and Wales.

Isabell de Douer, Countesse of Assise, deceased at Chilham in Kent, and was buried in Christs Church in Canterburie.

Roger Bacon a Franciscane, or Frier Minor, a learned man of Oxford deceased, and was buried in the grey friers Church at Oxforde. He compiled and wrote more then fourescore bookes, as Bale testifieth.

After the Feast of Saint Iohn the Baptist, king Edwarde comming into Scotland, and receiuing the allegeance of them which chalenged the Realme of Scotland, deferring his finall sentence vnto the feast of Saint Michaell nert ensuing. The Messengers of Elricus king of Norway, made their request otherwise then in their petition was declared, which was reade before them, and daie was giuen till Wednesday nert after the feast of Saint Martine: but *An. reg. 21.* in the ende, to wit, on the eightéenth date of Nouember, king Edward sate in his Tribunall seate at Berwik, and hauing heard the Assertions of the Com- Iohn Bailliol did homage for Scotland. petitors of the Crowne of Scotlande, hee adiudged Iohn Bailliol to bee true heire of Scotland, and therefore to enioy the same whole kingdome, with the appurtenances, and assigned him to do him homage, which was performed at Norham the 20. day of Nouember. Records.

1293 King Edward kept his Christmas at Newcastle vpon Tine, whither came to him the king of Scots. On S. Stephens daie the said king of Scots, Iohn Bailliol by name, did homage to king Edward.

Iohn Peckham Archbyshoppe of Canterburie, deceased on the eight daie of Januarie, and was buryed at Canterburie, when hee had sate Archbyshoppe

bysheppe thirtene yéares, foure and twentie weekes, and two daies: he was a verie diligente Preacher, and careleſſe of worldlie fauour: hee founded a College at Wingham in Kent, foure myles and a halfe from Canterburie.

The 9. of July a great part of the town of Grantbridge, with S. Maries church was conſumed with fire. Grantbridge burned.

The Carmelites or white Friers, that had firſt planted themſelues at Cheſterton, then at Newenham, this yeare came to Cambridge, and builded then a new Church in the parith of Saint Iohn in Milneſtreete, and then a Friar of that houſe named Humfrey obtained licence of W. de Luda biſhop of Ely, there to begin a reading of diuinity, and ſo he read ſolemnely in his ſchooles of that houſe. Diuinitie Lectures in Cambridge.

At the ſame time alſo the Chanons of the order of Sempelingham, were diligent in lectures and diſputations: theſe had their being at Saint Edmundes Chappell, manie houſes were deſtroied in the Towne of Cambridge for the ſetting vp of theſe Colleges, and of the Auguſtines.

Alſo about the ſame time, a certaine order of friars called de pœnitentia Ieſu Chriſti, beganne to builde them a Church, and other offices ouer againſt Saint Edmundes Chappell, theſe brethren de ſacco gathered together manie good Schollers, and multiplied exceedinglie, vntill the councell at Lions, in the which it was decreed, that from that time foorth, there ſhoulde no more orders of friars beggars be admitted, but the Preachers, Minors, Carmelites, and Auguſtines, and ſo from that time the begging friars decreaſed, and grew to nothing, ſaue them afore named. Friars of the ſacke. Councell at Lions, when was it quere.

And this yeare king Edward late two daies and two nights in the caſtle of Cambridge, as before that time neuer any king had don, that could be remembred of. The king had then a great ſtable of horſe at Barnewell, Adam de Riſton being maſter there. King Edward lay in the caſtle of Cambridge.

Edmund earle of Leiceſter & Lancaſter brother to king Edward, founded an houſe of nuns of the order of S. Clare, called the Minories in the parith of S. Buttolphs without Aldgate of London.

The 20. of September William earle of Barre toke to wife Elianor the kings daughter of England at Briſtow. Lib. Keinſham.

King Edward laid hardlie to the charge of the Archbiſhop of Yorke, for that he had excommunicated Anthony Beake biſhop of Durham, being then in the kings ſeruice, and one of his councell, the archbiſhop put himſelfe to the kings grace, and was pardoned for 4000. marks. *Ann reg. 22.*

King Edward kept his Chriſtmas at Canterburie. 1294

Three men had their right hands cut off in Weſtcheape for reſcuing of a priſoner, arreſted by an officer of the citie of London.

King Edward ſent Anthony Beke Biſhop of Durham, to moue Radulph the emperor to ioine with him in league. He alſo commanded an army to be made ready at Portſmouth, from thence to paſſe into Gaſcoigne, appointing his nephew Iohn de Brytaine earle of Richmond to be chiefetaine ouer the ſame, ioining to him Iohn de S. Iohn, and Robert Tiptot prudent knights. Moreouer, to

the

the kæping of the sea, he set forth 3. seuerall fleets, appointing the Admirals, to them of Yarmouth and those parts, Iohn de Botecart: to them of Portesmouth, William de Leiborne: to the Westernmen and of Ireland, an Irish knight.

A great taxation.

There was granted to the king for an aid in these wars, the one halfe of all the goods of the Cleargie, a first part of the Citizens, and a tenth of the Commons goods: the Abbey of Saint Augustines at Canterburie was charged and paid 596. pounds 7. shillings, and 10. pence, and also was charged with 6. horses and all their furniture, towardes the kæping of the sea coasts. There was in all lenied of the Cleargie at that time, to the sum of thrée score hundred thousand pounds, according to the account, and as it was valued in Gascoign, to wit, 8. s. siluer to the pound.

A power sent into Gascoigne.

The kings army passing from Portsmouth, arriued at S. Mathews in Byscaine, they entred the mouth of the riuer Giron towards Burdeaux, they toke two goodlie walled townes, Burgo and Bleya, and passing before Burdeaux, they came to Lions, where the towne being deliuered to them, they bring their horses to land.

King Edward entred Wales.

In the meane space the Welchmen making them Captaines, Madoc, and Malgon, they brent the castell of Carnaruon, slaying a great number of English men. King Edward entring Wales, called backe his brother Edmund earle of Leicester, and Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne into Wales, who were readie to haue passed into Gascoigne. The Welchmen with great strength came against them, and expulsed the earles.

An. reg. 23. Lib. Kensham. Priories alians taken to the kings vse.

King Edward toke into his hands all the Priories alians throughout England, with all their lands and goods any waie arising, committing the same to officers vnder him, allowing to euery monke eighténe pence the wæke, and all the ouerplus of their reuenues was appoynted towarde the charges of the kings warres, reteining also to his treasory, the pensions or annuities due to the principall houses. Also in the same parliament, he obtained againe of the cleargy and religious persons a loane of mony, to the value of halfe their goods and lands, according to the former exaction of the tenthes, which loane amounted to 100000. poundes, whereof the Abbot of Bury paid 655. poundes eleuen pence farthing.

Great Taxe.

1295

King Edward in his expedition into Wales kept his Christmas at Abergonway. The 19. of January, together with the night and day following, by the rage of winde with vehemente showers and stormes, such as the like had not béene séene in one hundred yéeres before, all the winter sædes were consumed, as well in Holland as in Yerland. At which time the water of Thames ouerflowed the banks, and a great breach was made at Radarhith beside London, and all the grounds about Yermondsey, Lambeth, & Bathil was ouerflowed.

Breach at Radarhith.

The last of Februarie there sodainlie arose such a fire in the castle of Windsore, that many officers of the same house were therewith consumed, and many goodly images made to beautifie the building, were defaced and deformed.

Castle of Windsore burned.

Castle of Beumarish. Iohn Rouse. Chron. Dun.

The king passing the water of Conoway, and so forth into Wales with an army against the Welchmen, builded the castell of Beumarish, in the Ile of Angleséy. The Welchmen were consumed by famine, their woods were

felled,

felled, and many castles fortified, their captain was taken and brought to London, and so for that time the wars ceased.

The Frenchmen arriued at Douer, spoiled the town, and brent a great part thereof, amongst other they slue Thomas of Douer, a monke of great holines. Douer spoiled.

The king caused all the monasteries in England to be searched, and the money in them to be brought vp to London. He also seized into his hands all their late fees, because they refused to paie to him such a tax as hee demanded. Moreouer, he caused the woll and leather to be staied in Englande, and there followed great dearth of corne and wine. W. Packin. Monasteries searched. W. Shephead.

There rose a great discord at Oxford, betweene the clearks and lay men, and all because of two varlets of diuers countries, which fell out about a small matter, for vpon that occasion, some toke one part, and some another, and so all were diuided into parties, insomuch, that learned and lewd by flockemeale ran to the fight, and when the Schollers or clearkes were gone out of their hostles, the laity perceiuing either none, or else verie few to be remaining at home, entred the clearks lodgings, and carried awaie a great deale and many kinds of stuffe, to the great and vnrecouerable damage of the schollers. In this skirmish was slaine sir Fulke of Peyrmouth, parson of Pichlesthorne, and manie other on either side. The king hearing thereof, sent Justiciars to restore the peace, and to condemne the murtherers, which when they came, forced the Townesmen to pay the schollers 200. pounds for domages down vnto them. Discord betwixt the clerks and townes men of Oxford. *An. reg. 24.*

Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester and Hereforde deceased at Monmouth, and was buried at Tewkesbury amongst his progenitors, on S. Thomas date the Apostle.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at S. Albons. 1296

About the conuersion of S. Paul, Edmund the kings brother earle of Lancaster, with Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne, the earle of Warwicke, Robert fitz Walter, and a mighty army taking shipping at Plimmouth in Cornwall with 360 ships sailed ouer into Gascoigne. Edmund the kings brother died there, and was brought ouer and buried at Westminster. After whose death the English army constrained through lacke of victuals, departed, and brake vp siege.

Iohn surnamed Romaine Archbishop of Yorke deceased, to whome succeeded Henry de Newarke, Deane of that Church.

Iohn Bailliol king of Scots, contrarie to his allegeance rebelled, wherefore king Edward hasted him thither, and wan the castles of Berwicke, and Dunbar: he slew of the Scots 25000. He conquered Edenborough, where he found the regall ensignes of Scotland, as crowne, scepter and cloth of estate, &c. In his returne he called a parliament at Berwike, where he receiued the fealties of all the great men of Scotland, and their homages. W. Packington. T. Walsingham. king Edward won Berwike. Regalles of Scotland. *An. reg. 25.*

William de Valence earle of Penbroke was slaine by the French at Bason.

This yeere was a great famine in England, chiefelie a default of wine, that the same could scarcely to be had to minister the communion with in the church. Lacke of wine in England.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Ipswich. 1297

Simon a monke of Walden, being notablie learned, began to teach the canon law in the Vniuersitie of Cambridge. Canon law taught in Cambridge.

King

King Edward offred to S. Edward at Westminster, the chaire, Scepter and crowne of gold of the Scottish king.

The king increased the tribute of the wolles, taking for euerie Sacke 40. shillings, where before that time they payd but halfe a marke.

An. reg. 26. The Scots by the instigation of William Walleis rebelled, and put the Englishmen to much trouble, and losse of manie men. In the feast of S. Bartholomew king Edward tooke the sea at Winchelsey towarde Flanders, and landed at Swyn, he went to rescue Guy their earle, which was greeuouslie ouerset by the French king, so that he had won much of his lands, but shortly after a peace was concluded for two yeeres.

1298 King Edward kept his Christmas at Gaunt in Flanders, and returning into England arriued at Sandwich on the xii. of March.

Kings pallace at Westminster burnt. The 29. of March, a vehement fire being kindled in the lesser hall of the kings palace at Westminster, the flame therof being driuen with the wind, fiered the monasterie adioining, which with the palace were both consumed.

Parliament at Yorke. The king preparing to represse the rebellion of the Scots, remoued the Barons of the Exchequer, and Iustices of the bench vnto Yorke, calling a parliament thither, he appointed his Subiects to be readie with horse and armour at Rokesborow on Midsummer daie.

Nic. Triuet. T. Walsingham. Sca. Cro. Battell at Faulkirke in Scotland. King Edward wanne the battell of Faulkirke in Scotland, vpon Saint Mary Magdalens daie, in which battell was slaine more then twentie thousande Scots, and William Walleis their captaine fled. Anthony Beke, Bishop of Duresme had at this battell such a retinue, that in his companie were two and thirtie Banners. The towne of S. Andrewes was destroied, no man there resisting.

Cron. Dun. The citizens of London hearing of the great victorie obtained by the king of England against the Scottes, made great and solemne triumph in their citie euerie one according to their craft, especiallie the Fishmongers, which with solemne procession passed through the citie, hauing amongst other Pageantes and shewes, foure sturgeons gilded, carried on foure horses: then foure Salmons of siluer on foure horses: and after fire and fourtie knights armed, riding on horses, made like Luces of the Sea: and then Saint Magnus with a thousand horsemen: this they did on Saint Magnus daie, in honour of the kinges great victorie, and safe returne.

An. reg. 27. This yeere the king paid to the merchants of Gascoigne 150000. poundes sterling, for his brothers expences there.

This yeere deceased William Beauchampe earle of Warwike, and William de Luda bishop of Ely, vnto whome succeeded Ranulph Walpole.

1299 King Edward kept his feast of Christmasse at Cadingham neere vnto Beuerley, after which time hee remoued towarde the South partes of his kingdome.

Humfrey de Boune earle of Hereford deceased, and was buried at Walden.

Also Iohn Gifford deceased.

Parliament at Stepenheath. In the beginning of Lent king Edward held a parliament at Stepenheath by London, in the house of Henry Walleis, then Maior of London, where being

being required by the earles and barons, that he would confirme the charter of liberties, according to that he had promised in Scotland, after certaine delaies, he agreed to their instance, with this addition: The right of our Crowne saued: which words of addition the earles liked not, and therefore departed. But being sent for againe, about the Quindene of Easter, all things were granted to them at their desire. Whereupon the perambulation of forests through England was committed vnto 3. bishops, 3. earles, and 4. barons, that they might see the execution of iustice done.

This yeere was made an act of common councell for prices of victualles to be sold at London, by consent of the king and nobilitie, concerning the price of powltrie. A fatte Cocke for three halfepence, two pullets for three halfepence, a fatte Capon for two pence halfepenie, a Goose foure pence, a Mallard three halfepence, a Partridge for three halfepence, a Fesant foure pence, a Heron fiue pence, a Plouer one pennie, a Swanne for three shillinges, a Crane for twelue pence, two Woodcockes for three halfepence, a fat Lambe from Christmasse to Shrouetyde sixteene pence, and all the whole yeere after for foure pence. Price of pultry.

A sodaine fire inclosed the monasterie of Glocester; the cloister, belfrey, the great chamber, with other buildings was consumed. Rob. of Glocest.

For the establishment of the peace betweene England and France, on the 10. of September, king Edw. toke to wife Margaret, sister to Philip le Bewe then king of France: they were married at Canterburie, and the feast was kept there in the great hall of the bishops palace. The king imprisoned his son Edward, because that Walter Langton Bishop of Chester had complained, that the foresaid Edward through counsell of Pierce of Gauestone, a squier of Gascoigne, had broken his parks, and that Edward was led and gouerned by the foresaide Pierce, wherefore the king did exile the said Pierce for euermore. W. Packington. king Edward married.

Henry Newarke Archbyshop of Yorke deceased, and was buried at Yorke, Thomas Corbridge succeeded him in the Archbishpricke. *An. reg. 28.*

Oliuer Sutton bishop of Lincolne also deceased, vnto whome succeeded Iohn de Adarley chancellor of the same church.

King Edward commaunded that all the manacles and chaines of yron that might be found within the whole Realme, to an inestimable multitude, should bee brought into the Tower of London, the cause whereof was vtterlie vnknowne to his subiects.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Berwicke, and the Queene at Windsore, within the solemnitie of which feast, to wit, vpon Saint Stephens day, king Edwarde forbade diuers false moneyes, as Crokardes, Pollardes, Rokaries, and others, coined in partes beyond the seas, and vttered here for sterlinges, so that manie thereby were deceiued. These moneies the king at the first commanded to be currant for halfepence, which was but halfe the value they were coined for: but on Easter euen next following, the same moneies were forbidden throughout all England, and after called in, and new sterling money coyned vnto ỹ kings great aduauntage. This sterling mony was so called of the Easterlings that were the first coiners of siluer of that fineneſſe in England. 1300. Sterling money.

King

A great part of Scotland subdued by king Edward.

King Edward made his voyage against the Scottes, wherein he subdued a great part of the land, toke the castle of Estrenclin, with other, and made the Lords sweare to him fealtie and homage. In the meane while, the Quéene on the first of July was deliuered of a son at Bzotherton in Yorkeshire, not farre from Pontfract, and therefore was he named Thomas of Bzotherton. Afterward the Quéene was conueyed to London, against whome, the Citizens to the number of 600 rode in one liuerie of redde and white, with the cognisance of their mysteries bzodered vpon their sleeues, and receiued her foure miles without the Citie, and so conueyed her to Westminster.

Citizens of London riding to meete the Quéene.

The first of October, Edmond Earle of Cornwall deceased without issue, by meane whereof his earledome fell to the kings handes. The king gaue the principalitie of Wales and the earledome of Chester to his eldest sonne Edward.

An. reg. 29. King Edward kept his Christmas with his Quéene Margaret at Northhampton, and after held his Parliament at Stamford, (some say at Lincolne)

1301 to the which the Barons came with horse and armour, for the purpose as was reported, that they might get of him by force the execution of the Charter of the forrest.

Li. Dunmow. A Tournament at Dunstable, *ad carnisprium.*

In the feast of Pentecost, the truce ended that had bin taken with the Scots,

K. Edward went into Scotland. whereupon, about the feast of S. Iohn Baptist, the king of England went with a great army into Scotland, where he spent the ende of Sommer, and also the Winter following, and left many horses there for want of forrage.

The church of Lanthony was brent.

An. reg. 30. Quéene Margaret was this yére deliuered of her second sonne, named Edmond at Woodstocke, the 5. day of August.

The 5. of October was borne Thomas the sonne of Raulphe de Mounthermer Earle of Glocester, and Ioane of Acres the kings daughter.

1302 King Edward kept his Christmas at Litheke in Scotland with a puissant armie, but afterward through the earnest suit of Philip king of France, whose sister he had lately married, he granted a truce with the Scots, till the feast of all Saints, and then he returned to London, and about Midlent, called a parliament, wherein he demanded a fifteene, and also fourtie shillings of euerie knights fée.

Parliament at London.

Elizabeth the kings daughter of England, Countesse of Holland, and Zealand, was ioyned in mariage to Humfrey de Bohun, earle of Hereford, and Essex, son and heire to Humfrey Bohun late deceased.

Turnaments forbidden. Turneies, Iusts, barriers, and other warlike exercises, which yong Lordes and Gentlemen had appointed for their passimes in diuers parts of the realm, were forbidden by the kings proclamations.

An. reg. 31. After the feast of all Saints, when the truce began to faile with the Scots, K. Edward sent Iohn Segraue knight with an army into Scotland, committing to him the custody of that land as Warden there.

1303 King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster.

Tho. de la More. The Scottes rebelling against king Edward, made William Wales their leader

leader, wherefore the king hauing his armie readie, passed by the Castle of Striueling, ouer the whole land, none offering them battell, but fleeing before the sword. Ex Record.

Richard Grauesend Bysshoppe of London deceased, who is reported by some to haue purchased the charters and liberties for the citie of London, in the yeere of our Lorde 1392. in the fiftéenth yeare of king Richarde the seconde. The vntrueth whereof I haue thought good thus much in this place to note. Ralfe Baldocke deane of Paules succéeded him in the Bysshoprieke. *An. reg. 32.* Adam Meri. Grauesend Bishop of London.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Dunfermelin in Scotlande, with the English nobilitie, and when winter was past, he went and besieged the Castle of Striueline, which William Clifforde kept the space of 90. daies with sundry valiant assaults: but being able no longer to resist, they put off their shoes, & with halters about their necks came forth of the castle and fel prostrate before the king, committing both liues and lims to his mercy, whome the king pardoned of life, but sent them prisoners into England. 1304 Tho. de la More.

The king returning out of Scotland by the citie of Yorke, commanded the Courtes of the kings bench and the Exchequer, which had nowe remayned at Yorke 7. yéres, to be remoued to their old places at London. Courts of K. Bench, and Exchequer at Yorke.

Iohn de Waren earle of Surrey and Sussex deceased, after whome succéeded his sonne also, named Iohn, who toke to wife the kings niece, by his daughter Elinor, whome the earle of Barre had married. Also Thomas Corbridge Archbyshop of Yorke deceased at Lanham, a singular Diuine, hee was buried at Southwell, to him succéeded William Greenefield a chanon of Yorke, and chancellour to the king, an eloquent man and pithie in counsell.

K. Edward taking a tallage of all cities, boroughes, and townes, the towne of Bristow gaue him 400. pound for a fine, out of their treasure. *An. reg. 33.* Lib. Kenilham.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Lincoln with the Quéene his wife, and there he ordained Iustices of Trailebaston against intruders into other mens lands, trucebreakers, extortioners, murderers, and such like offenders, by which meanes the K. treasure was maruellouslie increased. Roger Brabason and Robert de Reuer sate at the Guild hall in London to heare the complaintes made concerning the foresaid articles of Trailebaston. 1305 Draw thy Rake. Adam Meri.

The Citizens of Norwich made petition vnto the king, that like as it had pleased him heeretofore, to graunte them his helpe and licence certayne yeeres, for the walling about of their Towne, which Tearme was nowe expired, to grant them a longer time, the same being not yet finished: whereupon fiue yéeres were graunted by him and his Parliament at Westminster. Norwich walled. Parliam. Record.

Iohn Leyland writeth that a merchant of Norwich (whome he nameth not) builded a great part, almost halfe of that Wall. Iohn Leyland.

Robert Fitz Walter requested the king that the Friers of the Sacke (commonlie called De pœnitentia Iesu) in London, might assigne to the sayde Robert one Chappell of olde time called the Synagogue of the Iewes, néere adioining to the place of the same Robert, which request was graunted. Robert Fitz Walter his house was then in place where now standeth the Grocers hall, Friers of the Sacke. A Synagogue of the Iewes.

and the synagogue of the Iewes was in place, where nowe is a wine tauerne
Parliam. recor. called the Windmill in Lothbury. These Friers liued altogether by begging, and had of late multiplied in number greatly, vntill the Councell at Lions, wherein it was decreed, that Friers beggers should receiue none into their order, except Grey and white Friers. They were also licensed to enter into religion of larger rule, from the which time forth all mendicant Friers began to decrease, and were in short time brought to nothing, except the Preaching Friers.

Wl Wales in Scotland. William Wales which had oft times set Scotland in great trouble, was taken and brought to London with great numbers of men and women wondring
Adam Merimo. Tho. de la More. vpon him: hee was lodged in the house of William Delect a Citizen of London, in Fanchurch streete. On the morrow being the euen of Saint Bartholomew, hee was brought on horse-backe to Westminster, Iohn Segraue and Geffrey, knights, the Maior, Sheriffes and Aldermen of London, and manie other, both on horsebacke & on foote accompanying him, and in the great hal at Westminster, he being placed on the South bench crowned with Laurell, for that he had said in times past that he ought to beare a crowne in that Hall (as it was commonly reported) and being appeached for a traitour, by Syr Peter Mallorie the kings Iustice, he answered that he was neuer traytour to the K. of England, but for other crimes whereof he was accused, he confessed them, & was after headed and quartered. There was opened to the king a conspiracy, wrought by the Archbish. of Canterbury and diuers earles and barons against him, at such time as he was in Flanders. The Earle marshall being examined of this, and being not able to purge himselfe, made the king his heire and
An. reg. 34. put him in possession of his landes to haue his grace, and thus doing, the king gaue him againe 1000. pound land by the yéere during his life.

1306 King Edward kept his Christmasse at London.

Robert Bruse an Englishman, presuming by the right of his wife to vsurpe the kingdome of Scotlande, called a Parliament of the Nobles of Scotland within the Church of the Friers Minors in Domfries, where hee slewe Iohn Comin, because he would not agree to the treason, and shortly after, to witte, in the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady, in the Abbey of Scone, he caused himselfe to be solemnly crowned king by the Bishops of Glasco, and Saint Andrewes first, and the third day after by the Countesse of Bowan, because her brother the Earle of Fife to whome by right of inheritance that office belonged, was then absent in England.

In the feast of Pentecost king Edward honored his eldest sonne, Edward of Carnaruan with the degree of knighthood, and with him also moe then a hundred noble young men, at Westminster.

About the feast of the Natiuity of our Lady, the K. went againe into Scotland, with a great armie, hauing sent his sonne Edward with Aymer de Valence Earle of Pembroke, Robert Clifforde, Henry Lacy, and many other noble knightes and Gentlemen, at Whitsontide before, also he sent before him
Trayle Baston. his iustices of Trayle Baston, two and two together into euery city and place into which he would come, giuing them power to kill traytors, draw and hang

perſured perſons, burne ſuch as worke deceite, deſtroy the wicked and ſette Engliſhmen in their places, and there were taken by them in the ſpace of two moneths by inquiſition of Iuries, hundreds and thouſands, breakers of peace and conſpiratours, amongſt the which Nigellus de Bruſe, brother to Robert de Bruſe, was drawne through Berwike and hanged: moreouer Chriſtopher and Iohn Seyton brethren were hanged: the Counteſſe of Bowan was cloſed in a Cage, whoſe breadth, length, height, and depth, was eight foote, and hanged ouer the wals of Berwike: the Biſhop of S. Andrewes and of Glaſco, with the Abbot of Scone, were ſent to ſeuerall priſons in England.

King Edward beſieged Simon Friſell in Lilyſcho, and tooke him and ſent him to London Tower, where he found many Scottiſh Lords in fetters of priſon, amongſt whom was Thomas Morham with Herbert his ſon, and Thomas Roy his Eſquier, who were all beheaded: Simon Friſell was hanged, drawne and quartred: Earle Iohn de Athol becauſe he was of the kings blood and an Engliſhman, was not drawen, but hanged and headed: Sir Ioh. Wallers was ſent to the Tower of London and after hanged and headed: Laurence de Megos Eſquire was taken at Douer and there beheaded. The earle of Stratherne yeelded to king Edward, who condemned him to remaine during his life in priſon fetters in the Caſtle of Rocheſter.

At this time, and long after, king Edward had Scotland in ſuch good obedience, as he gaue of the landes thereof to his ſeruants and ſubiectes in England, with Markets, Fayres, and Warens: amongſt others I haue ſéene vnder the broade ſeale of the ſaid king Edward a manno^r called Ketnes in the Countie of Ferfare, in Scotland, and néere the furtheſt part of the ſame nation Northward, giuen to Iohn Eure and his heires, anceſter to the Lord Eure that now is, for his ſeruice done in thoſe partes, with market euery Sunday, fayre for three daies euery yéere, at the feaſt of Saint Michael, and free Warren for the ſame, dated at Lauercoſt the 20. day of October, Ann. reg. 34. Ex charta regia. Lord Eure.

This yéere Margaret Quéene, ſecond wife to Edward the firſt, began to build the Quire of the church of the Gray Friers in London, to the building whereof in her life ſhe gaue two thouſand markes, and an hundred markes by her Teſtament: Iohn of Brytaine Earle of Richmond builded the body of the Church: Lady Mary Counteſſe of Pembroke, Gilbert Clare Earle of Glocester, Margaret Counteſſe, Lady Elianor le Spencer, & Lady Elizabeth de Brugh ſiſters to Gilbert de Clare, gaue great ſums of money towardes the ſame: Richard Whitington, ſometime Alderman and Maior of London founded the Libzary there, in anno 1421. Regiſt. fratr. min. *An. reg. 35.*

King Edward helde his Chriſtmaſſe at Carlile, with a great multitude of Engliſh people, and in the moneth of Ianuary next following, he called a great Parliament to be holden at Carlile vpon the Octaues of S. Hillary, to treate of matters concerning the ſtate of Scotland, whereunto were ſummoned many lords both of the ſpiritualty and temporalty, who either appeared in perſon or els by proxie. My ſelfe haue ſéene and read an ancient regiſter of good authoritie, conteining the names of 87. Earles and barons, 20. Biſhops, 61. Abbots, and eight priors, beſides many Deanes, Archdeacons and other inferiour 1307 Parliament at Carlile. Parliament records.

Clearkes of the Conuocation. The maſter of the knights of the Temple, of euerie ſhire two knights, of euerie Citie two Citizens, and of euerie borough two Burgeſſes, &c.

Biſhops.

Archbiſhop of Yorke
Of Lincolne
London
Chicheſter
Exceſter
Hereforde
Saliſburie
Landaffe
Saint Aſſafe
Bangor
Saint Dauids
Couentrie and Lichfielde
Bathe and Welles
Norwiche
Rocheſter
Durham
Carlile: and Ely
Worceſter
Wincheſter

Abbots.

Of Saint Auguſtine in Canterburie
Of Saint Edmond
Saint Albane
Weſtminſter
Waltham
Eueſham
Saint Marie at Yorke
Peterborowe
Ramſey
Winchecombe
Gloceſter
Briſtow
Malmesburie
Glaſtenburie
Selby
Cyrceſter
Reading
Furneys
Sawley
Alnewike.
Sainth Oſith
Barling
Tupholme
Biley
Dale
Newhus
Croxton
Cokerſande
Saint Radegound
Tichfielde
Torre
Holmecolthram
Welbecke
Hales
Newe Monaſterie
Iereuall
Fountaines
Bella lande
Meſſa
Kyrkeſted
Rupe
Rughforde
Valedeu
Grendon
Stanley in Arden
Pipwell
Combe
Baſingwerke
Crokeſden
Croyland
Werdon
Wimondham
Wauerley
Cherteſey
Quarrera
Leteley
Hyde
Wendon
Saint Agathe
Swineſhede
Stanley in Wilſhire.
The Maſter of the Knights of the Temple in England.

Barons.

Barons.

Edward Prince of Wales
Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne
Ralph Mounthermer Earle of Gloceſter and Hereford.
Thomas Earle of Lancaſter
Humfrey Bohun Earle of Hereforde and Eſſex.
Iohn Warren Earle of Surrey
Edmond Earle of Arundale
Iohn Brytaine Earle of Richmond
Guy Bello Campo earle of Warwike
Robert Vere earle of Oxford
Gilbert Vmframuill earle of Angeos
Henry of Lancaſter
Aymer of Valence
Iohn Ferrers
Henry Piercie
Hugh Spencer
Robert Fitz Walter
William Latimer
Robert Clifforde
Robert mount Alto
Iohn Haſtings
Iohn le Mare
Iohn de Ripaus
Iohn de Mohun.
Petrus de Malolacu
Rupart Fitz Pagani
Hugh Curtney
Edmond Deyncourt
Iohn Saint Iohn of Lageham
Galfride de Geynual
Thomas Furniual
Robert Tony
Thomas Berkeley
William de Bruſe
Peter Corbet
William Marton
Thomas Multon
Iohn ap Adam
Iohn Kyme
Iohn Segraue
Robert Fitz Roger
Hugh Veer
Walter Faulconbridge
Ralph Baſſet of Draiton
Roger la Warre
Iohn Paynell
Alexander Walliclo
Hugh Poynts
Roger Montomere
William Rithre
Reignald Grey
Walter Muncy
Robert Scales
Adam Welles
Almarice de Amando
William Cantalupo
Iohn Engaigne
Gilbert Pechy
Iohn Clauering
William Leyburne
Iohn Bello Campo of Somerſet
William Grandſtone
Iohn Extuens
Iohn de Inſula
Iohn Sudley
Simon Mountacute
Walter Tey
Edmund Haſtings
Iohn Lancaſter
Iohn Saint Iohn
Henry Treygoz
Iohn Louel of Tichmerch
Alan la Zuche
Henry Teyes
Nicolas Segraue
Fulco Fitz Waren
Iohn Fitz Reignald
Geffrey Camuile
William Vauaſor
William Ferrer
Robert Grendon
Edmund Baron of Stafford
Ralph Fitz William
Thomas de la Roche
Theobald de Verdon the younger
William Tuchet
Henrie Huſſey.

In this parliament many complaints were made of the oppression of churches and Monasteries, by the Popes Chaplaine named William Testa Archdeacon of Araine in the Church of Couentrie. The same Clearke was forbidden to vse anie moe such extortions, and diuers Statutes were ordained touching religious persons which had their principall houses in other realmes.

There came to this Parliament, sent from the Pope, a Cardinall called Petrus Hispanus, to treate of a marriage betwixt Edward Prince of Wales, and the French kings daughter.

The course of Fleete dike at London sore decaied, which sometime bare ships of small burden to Holborn-bridge, to the great commodity of the citie in that West part. T. Walsingham.

And amongst many other suites made there, Henry Lacy Earle of Lincoln complained, that whereas in times past, the course of water running at London vnder Holborne bridge, and Fléete bridge into the Thamis, had béene of such large breadth and depth, that ten or twelue ships at once with merchandises were wont to come to the foresaide bridge of Fléete, and some of them to Holborne bridge: nowe the same course (by filth of the Tanners and such other) was sore decayed. Also by rayling vp of wharfkes, but especially by turning of the water, which they of the newe Temple made to their milles without Baynards Castle, and diuers other perturbations, the saide shippes nowe could not enter as they were wont, and as they ought, wherefore he desired, that the Maior of London with the sheriffes, and certaine discréete Aldermen might be appointed to sée the course of the said water, and that by oth of honest men all the foresaid hindrances might be remoued, and to be made as it was wont of old time, &c. Which was answered and recorded, that Roger le Brabazon, the constable of the tower, with the Maior and Sheriffes are assigned, that taking with them other honest and discréet men, they make diligent search and inquirie, how the said riuer was in olde time, and that they leaue nothing that mate hurt or stoppe it: and to kéepe it in the same state that it was wont to bee.

King Edward remaining all the winter and summer at Carlile, disposed manie things of Scotland at his pleasure: but in the meane time Robert le Bruse going about the Countrey, léwe manie that would not obey him, and he sent with part of his army two of his brethren, Thomas that was a knight, and Alexander a priest, Deane of Glasco, into another part of the Countrey, that they might allure the people vnto them by gentle perswasions, which (by comming of Englishmen vpon them) were taken, ledde to the Justices, condemned, hanged and headed at Carlile.

Ioane of Acres Countesse of Glocester deceased.

King Edward sent messengers into England, commanding all that ought him seruice to bee readie at Carlile, within three wéekes after the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist: but himselfe being vexed with the bloudie flixe, hee sent vp to his sonne that hee should come with spéede to heare his last wordes, whome, among other thinges hee did counsell to bee mercifull, iust, and constant in all his wordes and déedes: hee commaunded him not to bee too hastie to take vpon him the Crowne of England, vntill he had reuenged the iniuries done by the Scottes, but rather to staie in those partes, and

to

to cause his fathers bones (being closed in a chest) to be borne about with him, till he had gone thorowe all Scotland and ouercome his aduersaries. He also commaunded him to honour his mother, and loue his two brethren, Thomas earle Marshall, and Edmund Earle of Kent. Moreouer he charged him on his curse, that he should not presume to call home Pierce of Gaueston, by common decree banished without common fauour: he declared to him also, that he had taken on him the crosse, for the seruice in the holy lande, to the which he had determined to haue gone in person, but troubled with the new and diuers attemptes of Robert le Bruse, he was hindered of his purpose, and was constrained, omitting that businesse, to turne the warre into Scotland. 32000. pound of siluer (said he) I haue prepared for the charges of an hundred knights to go honorably thither with their retinues: because it is not my happe to performe in proper person, what I had intended, let them yet take my heart, and carrie thither, which if they doe, I trust in my God that all things shall prosper with them. I therefore (saith he) doe streightly command thée in paine of my curse, that am thy Father, that the said money be not otherwise spent.

The king also called vnto him Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne, Guy Earle of Warwike, Aymer de Valence Earle of Pembroke, and Robert Clifford Baron, desiring them to be good to his son, and that they should not suffer Pierce of Gaueston to come again into England, to set his sonne in riot, and the seuenth of July he departed this life at Burgh vpon the sands, in the yeare 1307. when he had raigned 34. yeares, 7. moneths, and odde daies, and was 68. yeares of age. He was buried at Westminster. W. Packington.

He had issue by his first wife Elianor, daughter to the king of Spaine, fiue sonnes, to wit, Henry, Iohn, and Alfonse that died without issue, Edward that succeeded him in the kingdome, and Henry that died without issue, and tenne daughters, to wit, Elianor Countesse of Barre, Ioane of Acres Countesse of Glocest. Iulian that died yong, Margaret Dutchesse of Brabant, Alice that died yong, Elizabeth Countesse of Hereford, Elizabeth Countesse of Holland, Mary that was a Nunne at Ambresbury, Beatrice that died yong, Blanch that died yong: he had issue by Margaret daughter to Philip king of France his second wife, two sons, to wit, Thomas of Brotharton, and Edmond of Woodstocke Earle of Kent, and one daughter, named Elianor that died yong.

Edward of Carnaruon.

EDward the second sonne to the first Edward, borne at Carnaruon, began his raigne the seuenth day of July, in the yeare of Christ 1307. he was faire of bodie, but vnstedfast of manners, and disposed to lightnes, haunting the company of vile persons, and giuen wholly to the pleasure of the bodie, not regarding to gouerne his common weale by discretion and iustice, which caused great variance betweene him and his Lords. He toke to be *An. reg. 1.* Chro. Dun.

of his counſel Patricke earle of Lincolne, and Otho de Granſone with other. He ordained Walter Reignald to be his Chancellour, and cauſed Walter Langton Biſhoppe of Cheſter, Treaſurer of Englande, to bring the king his fathers bodie from Carlile to Waltham croſſe, and then to bee arreſted by Sir Iohn Felton Conſtable of the Tower, and ſent to Wallingford, there to be ſhut vp in priſon, and his goods confiſcate, becauſe in his fathers life time he had reproued him of his inſolent life, &c. Hee alſo called out of exile Pierce of Gauſton a ſtranger borne, which latelie in his fathers daies, had for certain cauſes beene baniſhed this land. He gaue to the ſaide Pierce the earledome of Cornewall, the Iſle of Man, and the Lordſhip of Wallingford, otherwiſe aſſigned to Quæne Iſabel.

Pierce of Gauſton reſtored called out of exile. Cro. Hautenpries W. Packington.

Parliament at Northampton.

A parliament was holden at Northampton, wherein it was ordained, that his fathers coine, which was counted baſe, ſhould not be refuſed vpon paine of life and lim, and that a fifteenth of the cleargie, and twentieth part of the goods of the Laitie ſhould be giuen to the king.

K. Edward the firſt buried.

The 27. of October king Edward the firſt was buried at Weſtminſter, at the head of Henry the thirde his Father, vnto the which Church hee had giuen lands to the value of 100 pound by yeere, twentie pound thereof yeerelie to bee diſtributed to the poore. Anthony Becke patriarke of Ieruſalem and Biſhop of Durham doing the exequies.

1308 King Edward kept his Chriſtmas at Wye in Kent, with a great traine of houſhold.

Knights of the temple apprehended. Tho. de la More.

After the Epiphany of our Lord, all the Templars in England were apprehended and committed to priſon in diuers places.

Adam Meri.

The king went ouer into France, and married Iſabel the daughter of Philip the faire king of France, at Boloigne the 22. of January. There were preſent at that marriage Philip king of France, his ſon king of Nauarre, the king of Almain, and the king of Cicile, with manie other. And on the 24. date of Februarie, king Edward with his Quæne were crowned at Weſtminſter, by Henrie Biſhop of Wincheſter, beeing admitted ſo to do by Robert Archbiſhop of Canterburie. The king offred firſt a pound of golde made like a king holding a ring in his hand, and after he offred a marke of gold (which is 8. ounces) made like a pilgrime putting forth his hand to receiue the ring. Sir Iohn Blackwell knight, was thruſt to death at his Coronation.

K. Edward crowned.

Chron. Dun. Pierce of Gauſton ruled the king at his pleaſure.

The king gaue vnto Pierce of Gauſton all ſuch gifts and iewels as had bin giuen to him, with the crownes of his father, his anceſtors treaſure, and manie other things, affirming that if he could, he ſhould ſucceed him in the kingdome, calling him Brother, not granting anie thing without his conſent. The Lords therefore enuying him, told the king, that the father of this Pierce was a traitour to the king of France, and was for the ſame executed, and that his mother was burned for a witch, and that the ſaid Pierce was baniſhed for conſenting to his mothers witchcraft, and that hee had now bewitched the K. himſelfe. They beſought the king to heare therefore their petitions, which ſhould be both for his owne honor, and for the wealth of his people.

1 Firſt, that hee would confirme and vſe ſuch ancient Lawes and cuſtomes, as

as are contayned in the Charters of the kings his Predeceſſors: and for that they woulde graunt him the twentieth part of their goods, and bee his true ſubiectes.

Secondlie, that he woulde take nothing of anie man, but at the price of the owner, the ſame to be paid for to the vttermoſt. 2

Thirdlie, that whatſoeuer was alienated from the crowne, ſince his fathers death, might be reſtored thereunto againe. 3

Fourthlie, that hee woulde obſerue the oathe hee made before his Father, as of the reuoking of Peter Gaueſton, the proſecuting of the Scottiſh warre, and that all that was amiſſe ſhoulde bee amended, leaſt his enemies reioice at it, &c. 4

That Juſtice and Iudgement mighte bee done in the Lande, as well to the Rich, as to the Poore, according to the auncient and olde approued Lawes and Cuſtomes of Englande, and that no man ſhoulde bee reſtrayned by the kinges Writte from proſecuting his Right, or to defende himſelfe by Laine. 5

Then the king taking counſell of Pierce, Hugh Spencer the Treaſurer, the Chancellour and others, hee appoynted to anſwere the Barons at the parliament on Hocdate. The barons being departed out of London, the city gates were ſhutte vp and chained, greate watch kept, and Hugh Spencer made Conſtable of London. The K. with Perer of Gaueſton went toward Walling ford Caſtle with a great companie of ſouldiers, as well ſtrangers as Engliſh, and Hugh Spencer tarryed ſtill at London. The Parliament on Hocdate was kept, the king and Barons being there when they decréed that the ſame Pierce ſhould be baniſhed the land to depart on the morrowe after Midſommer date, neuer to returne againe. The king gaue him two and thirtie Townes, and ſo manie caſtles in Gaſcoigne, and great ſummes of money out of his earledome of Cornewall during his life: The king accompanied him to Briſtow, ſent him into Ireland, aſſigning him the whole gouernement and reuenues of that countrey.

Hugh Spencer Conſtable of London.

An. reg. 2.

Pierce of Gaueſt. baniſhed.

In the feaſt of S. Michael, Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloceſter toke to wife Matild, daughter to Richard Brugh earle of Ulſter, at Waltham, the ſame day Iohn de Brugh, ſon to earle Richard was made knight by the king, and toke to wife Elizabeth ſiſter to the ſayde Earle Gilbert, in the ſame place.

King Edwarde kept his Chriſtmaſſe at Windſore with greate ſolemnitie. 1309

The king ſent William Lord Latimer with an hundred horſemen to fetch Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne, but he being forewarned, kept himſelfe in his caſtle, and ſo preuented their purpoſe, onlie the Lord Latimer and he talked, and ſo departed.

The king intended to giue Gaſcoigne to the French king, Scotland to Robert Bruſ, Ireland and Wales to others, hoping thereby to haue aid againſt his Barons. king E. againſt his Barons.

Robert Archbiſhop of Canterbury returned from Rome, and was reſtored to all his goods.

The

The. de la More. Ioh. Triklow. Gauestō sent for by the king and returneth.

The king sent for Pierce of Gauestō out of Ireland: he landed at Carnaruon, on the euen of S. Iohn Baptist, the king mette him at the Castle of Flint with great ioy: and gaue to him the earle of Glocesters sister in marriage, they were maried at Barkhamsted, which caused him again to rise in pride, scorning the nobles of the Realme, and to abuse the king, as before he had done, in conueying the treasure of the realme into forraine countries, amongst the which treasure, he conueied the table and trestles of gold from the treasurie of Westminster, and deliuered them to one Armery of Friseonband to be conueied into Gascoigne. The barons therefore declared to the king, that except he would expel the said Pierce from his company, they would rise against him as against a periured Prince: whereupon by the aduise of Pierce of Gauestō, the king sent for aide into Gascoigne, to the earle of Foys, and the Vicount of Henoy, and they came with three hundred horsemen through Fraunce, but Philippe the French king imprisoned the chiefe, and slewe and hanged the other. Also, the king of England had word from Robert Bruse of Scotland, and from Robert Fitz Thomas of Ireland, that they woulde not take part with the king against his Barons, whereupon the king being wroth, fortified Windsor castle, and began to build towres and other strange things.

Cro. Pet. Colege. The Barons threte the king.

Chro. Dun.

The Abbot of Saint Denis in France, being sent Legate from the Pope, to demand the Legacie that king Edwards father gaue to the holie Lande, did earnestlie request king Edwarde to remoue from him Peter Gauestō, with whose conuersation all the worlde was as it were infected. Then the king appointed a Parliament at Northampton, determining from thence to passe into Scotland: the Barons came to this parliament well furnished, but the king sent them worde hee woulde not come there, yet at the last he came to Stonie Stratford, whither were sent to him by the Barons, the earles of Warwike and Clare, who requested him to come for his owne profite, and the commodity of the Realme: at length he went in the habite of a squire, and the Barons met him without armor, and in the end they louingly embraced and were made friendes, and the voiage to Scotland was returned till another time. After Michaelmas, the Parliament was holden at London, vnto the which Parliament came Lewes the French kings brother, with the Bishoppe of Poytowe, from the king of France, to intreat vnitie betwixt the king and his lords: and there were diuers good ordinances made. And once againe, though sore against the kings mind, he caused Pierce to abiure, with condition added by the barons, that if he were found again in any land subiect to the kings dominion, he should be taken as a common enimy, and condemned. This being done, he passed into Flanders, and from thence to other countries, seeking rest, which hee could not find.

An. reg. 3.

Parliament at London.

Pierce of Gauestō abiured the land.

1310 The king kept his Christmas at Windsor, where Walter Langton Bishoppe of Chester, and the Bishop of S. Andrewes in Scotland, were released out of prison.

An. reg. 4. Tempest at Middleton.

The seconde daie of September at night, an horrible Tempest of thunder happened, so that hedges and trees lost their greenenesse, and the Church of Middleton in Dorsetshire, with the Steeple, Belles, Ornaments, and all other

monuments

monuments of that place, were consumed with the lightning, the Monks being at Mattins.

Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne, Constable of Chester, and Custos of England, died at London, in his house called Lincolnes Inne, in Holborne: hee was buried in the new Worke (whereof he was founder) of S. Pauls Church, betwixt our Ladies Chappel, and S. Dunstans Chappel, where a faire monument of stone was rayled for him, with his Picture in armour crosse legged, as a Templar bowed for the defence of the holie land, and Citie of Jerusalem. W. Shep. Lib. Kainsham. His monument is sonly defaced by bad people, and such as deserued no monument for goodnes in them.

A Prouinciall Councell was holden at London against the Templars in England, vpon heresie & other articles, whereof they were accused, who denied the fact, sauing one or two of them: notwithstanding all did confesse, that they coulde not purge themselues, and therefore were condemned to perpetuall penance in seuerall monasteries, where they behaued themselues verie well. I. Rouse. Templars condemned. Tho. Dele.

At Paris in France 54. of the Templars were brent, by the iudgement of Philip the French king.

Pierce of Gaueston conceiuing an affiance in the fauour of king Edward, and of the yong earle of Glocester, whose sister he had maried, taking with him many strangers, returned into England, and a little before Christmas came to the kings presence, whom the king, forgetting all oathes and promised pacts, receiued as a heauenlie gift. Pierce of Gauestō returned into England.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Yorke, where Pierce of Gauestō was present with his Dutlandish men, the king reioicing, and being in a greate follitie because he had receiued him in safetie, all the court and Quene being sorrowfull, because they sawe the king not verie sounde. The mightie men of the land therefore sought howe they might set an ende to the trouble at hande, for they feared to raise warre, and durst not disquiet the king, yet the perill being weied, they founde that so long as Pierce liued, there coulde be no peace in the kingdome, nor the king to abound in treasure, nor the Quene to enioy the kinges true loue. Thus after they had long considered the perilles past, present, and to come, they determined rather to trie all extremities, then to be despised and set at naught by a stranger, they chose a captaine then for their busines to come, Thomas of Lancaster, noble in lineage, valiaunt in armes, excellent in fame for his maners and iustice, he was son to Edmunde earle of Lancaster, and therfore by inheritance earle of Lancaster, Leicester and Ferrers. In proces of time he married the only daughter of the earle of Lincoln, to wit, Henrie Lacyes daughter, whereupon after the earles decease, of a great man, he was made a greater, for he was earle of Lincoln, and of Salisbury, besides the liberties of Pickering, and the honor of Cockermore, and other great lands in Wales, and the earledome of Artoys in France. 1311.

Anthony Beke Patriarch of Jerusalem, and Bishop of Durham, deceased at Eltham on the 28. of March, after he had sate Bishop 28 yeres and was buried at Durham. Hee encastelated the ancient Manor place belonging to the Bishops of Durham at Aukland, he made there the great hall, wherein be diuers pillars of blacke marble, speckled with white, and the great chamber with other buildinges there, hee also made the exceeding goodlie Chappell at Aukland Colledge at Aukland. Somerton castle.

land of well squared stone, and founded there a Colledge with a Deane and prebends, and a quadrant in the Southwest side of the Castle for Ministers of his Colledge: he builded or repayred castle Barnard, Gainforth and Cunclife: hee also builded Somerton Castle in Yorkeshire, which Castle hee gaue to the king, and the manor of Eltham in Kent, which hee gaue to the Quæne. The king shortly after gaue the castle of Somerton to Henry Beamount. The castle of Alnewike which William de Vesey had giuen vnto him by the said Bishop, trusting in him, that he would preserue it to the vse of the bishops young bastard, and deliuer it to him when he came to mans estate, he toke money therefore, and solde it to Henry Piercy, he had the Isle of man during his life by the kings graunt, Kellow was elect Bishop of Durham.

Manor of Eltham.

King Edward with Peter Gaueston his companion, went to Yorke, where the king was lodged in the pallace of the Archbishop, and Peter in the Castle: they caused the Citie to be fortified, and the walles to be repayred, and sent to Robert Bailliol of Scotland for aide against his Lordes; but Robert made answere, he would not forth of Scotland, neither would he disquiet any man: the like answere was made by the Welchmen. The earles assembled at Bedford, Gilbert the yonger Earle of Glocester being one of them was made Custos of England, they came to London, and ordained the Seas to bee kept, least strangers should enter to aide the king.

Lib. Kensham. Bartram nephew to Pierce of Gaueston taken.

After Easter Bartram nephew to Pierce Gaueston was taken in Cornwall with great treasure which he had conueied out of the kings Treasurie: his ship being tossed with tempest on the Sea, was driuen where it was taken, and the treasure was brought to London in Carts.

About this time king Edward for his recreation toke the Sea, leauing Peter of Gaueston at Yorke, whereupon the Barons brought their power, and entred the city of Yorke, but Peter fled to Scarborough: then the Barons besieged Scarborough, where they toke him, and committed him to the custody of Aymer de Valence earle of Pembroke, who brought him to the manor of Dedington which is betwixt Oxford and Warwike, and there left him to be kept safe: but the next day in the morning Guy earle of Warwike with a companie of armed men, toke him from thence, and brought him to Warwike castle: after deliberation taken, the earles of Lancaster, of Warwike, and of Hereford, caused in their presence in a place then called Black Lowe, since Gauers heathe, the 19. of June his head to be stricken off: his body by the Frier preachers was conueyed to Oxford, and there kept more then two yeres, till the king caused the same to be translated to his manor of Langley, and there in the Friers church (which he had builded) to to buried.

Ioh. Treklow. Pierce of Gaueston beheaded. *An. reg. 5.*

Quæne Isabel was deliuered of her first sonne, named Edward at Windsor, the 13. day of November.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windlesor.

1312

An. reg. 6. Tho. de la More.

The knights of the order of S. Iohn Baptist, called S. Iohn of Ierusalem, put the Turkes out of the Isle of Rhodes, & after that wan vpon the said Turkes daily for a long time after. This religion was greatly preferred by ỹ fal of the templars, whose possession was giuen to them by a councel holden at Vienna.

The Roades won by the Christians.

Robert

Robert de Bruse got againe almost all Scotland, the Castles with munitions (the English Garrisons beeing cast out) he tooke againe into his power. This yeere therefore by consent of the Prelates, and certaine Nobles, Hugh Spencer the sonne was appointed the Kings Chamberlaine in place of Peter of Gaueston, whom they the rather preferred, because they knew the King hated him: neuertheless, not long after, by his great diligence, he brought himselfe into the kings fauour. The father of this Hugh being old, was yet liuing, a knight of great vertue, in counsell wise, in armes valiaunt, whose confusion and shameful end he wanne vnto himselfe by naturall loue though disordinate towards his sonne, who was in bodie verie comely, in spirite proud, and in action most wicked, whose couetousnes and ambition, by the disheriting of Widowes and strangers, wrought the death of the Nobles, the fall of the king, with the vtter destruction of himselfe and his father.

Tho. de la More. Hugh Spencer the yoonger.

King Edward kept his Christmas at London. 1313

King Edward gathering a great power, marched towardes Scotland, to breake the siege of Striueling Castle, and lodged himselfe and his people thereabout in the fielde on the euen of S. Iohn Baptist: neuer afore that time was seene the like preparation, pride and cost in the time of warre, as affirmeth Robert Paston, a Carmelite Frier, being present, and taken of the Scots, which he sorowfully bewayled in his Heroycall Verse whiles he was prisoner. The first night (saith hee) ye might haue seene the Englishmen bathing themselues in Wine, and casting their gorges: there was crying, showting, wassaling, and drinking, with other ryoting farre aboue measure. On the other side, yee might haue seene the Scottes quiet still, and close, fasting the euen of Saint Iohn Baptist, labouring in loue of the libertie of their Countrey. On the morrowe, the Scottes hauing gotten the most conuenient place in the fielde for victorie, made ditches in the grounde three foote deepe, and the like in breadth, from the right wing of the army, vnto the left, couering the same with weake twigges or Heroles, and againe ouer with the Turfe and grasse, which was not of strength to beare horsemen. The army of the Scottes being deuided into certaine troupes, stode not farre off from this dike, which was betwixt them and the Englishmen. On the other side, the army of the Englishmen comming out of the West, the sunne rising, casting his beames on their golden Targets, bright helmets, and other armour, gaue such a reflection, as was both wonderfull and terrible to beholde. In the first warde were the light horsemen, and beaute coursers. In the second were the Archers, and other fotemen, who were appointed for the chase of the aduersaries. In the thirde was the king with his Bishoppes, and other Religious, amongst whome was Hugh Spencer. The horsemen of the first front making vppon their enemies, foundered with their fore feete into the ditch, and lay there tumbling, abiding the cruelty of the Scots, who comming vpon them, slew some, and tooke a great manie rich men for raunsome. There was slaine Gilbert de Clare Earle of Glocester, (whome the Scottes would gladly haue kept for raunsome, if they had knowne him, but he had forgotten to put on his coate of armes:) with him was slaine Sir Edmond Manly, Sir Robert Clifforde, Sir Paine

Tho. de la More.

Battell at Striuelin. Robert Paston.

Gilbert Earle of Glocester, and other noblemen slaine in Scotland.

Paine Tiptoft, sir William Marshal, sir Gyles Dargenton, and many other knights and Esquiers.

An. reg. 7. There was taken Humfrey de Bohun earle of Hereforde, Iohn Segraue, Iohn Claueringham, William Latimer, Sir Roger Northbrooke, bearer of the kinges shielde or Scale: but Sir Ralfe Mounthermer that had married Ioane of Acres Countesse of Glocester, the kings sister, being taken, founde such fauour, that his ransom was pardoned, and he returning into England, brought back with him the kings shield or scale: but sir Edmond Manly the kings stewarde drowned himselfe in Bannockesborne.

Almost three hundreth men of armes were slaine in that place, our Archers killing manie of them, who seeing the Scottes cruellie bent vpon our Horsemen fallen in the Ditche, shotte their Arrowes with a high compasse, that they might fall betwixt the armour of their Enemies, which was all in vayne: and when they shotte righte foorth, they slewe fewe of the Scottes, by reason of their armed breasts, but manie of the Englishmen, by reason of their naked backs.

White friars in Oxford. The king with the Bishoppes, and Hugh Spencer betoke themselues to flight; in which danger of flying, the king vowed to G D D, that hee woulde builde vnto the poore Carmelite Friers an house, in the which hee would place 24. Brethren, to be Students in Diuinitie, which he afterward performed in Oxford.

Robert de Bruse caused his prisoners to bee ciuillie intreated, and honorablie kept, he sent the bodies of the earle of Glocester, and of the Baron Clifforde, to the king of England, remaining then at Berwike, to bee buried at his pleasure, demanding no reward for redeeming of them. The earle of Glocest. was buried at Tewkesbury, his inheritance was diuided betweene 3. sisters of the saide Earle; the first whereof Hugh Spencer had to wife, the seconde Hugh Audley (whome Pierce de Gaueston before had married) the thirde Roger de Tamary (whome before Iohn de Brugh sonne and heire, to the heire of Vlstar in Ireland had married) and so the inheritance of that noble Earledome was deuided into three baronies.

1314 King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor, with many Prelates of the Land.

Chron. Tinc. Ralfe Baldocke bishop of London deceased, who in his life time gaue 2000. marks of siluer, toward the building of the newe worke of the Chappell on the South side of our Ladies Chappell in the East end of the church of S. Paul in London, and left much by his Testament to the same worke. And this is to bee noted, that in digging the foundation of this worke, was found more then 100. heads of oxen & kyne, which thing confirmed greatly the opinion of those which haue reported, that of old time it had been called the Temple of Iupiter, and that there was the sacrifice of beasts.

New worke of Pauls Church.

The king calling to him the Archbishop of Canterburie, 4. other Bishops and manie Abbots and ecclesiasticall persons, he caused the bodie of Pierce of Gaueston to bee translated, and honorably buried at Langley, but yet there were not manie of the nobles at his buriall.

The

The morow after Candlemas day there assembled a parliament at London, to treat of the state of the kingdome, and how to bring downe the prices of victuals, that were now growen to be so deere, that the common people were not able to liue. It was therefore ordained, and the kings writs were published for prices of victuals, that no Ox stalled or corne-fed, bee solde for more then foure and twentie shillinges: no grasse fed Ox for more then fiftéene shillinges: a fat stalled Cowe at twelue shillinges: another Cowe at tenne shillinges: a fat Mutton corne fedde, or whose woll is well growen, at twentie pence: another fat Mutton thorne, at fourtéene pence; a fat Hogge of two yeeres old, at thrée shillinges foure pence; a fat Goose, at two pence halfepenie, in the citie at thrée pence; a fatte Capon at two pence, in the Citie two pence halfepenie; a fatte Henne at one penie, and in the Citie thrée halfe pence; two Chickens a peny, in the citie thrée halfe pence; foure Pigeons for one penie, in the citie thrée Pigeons for a peny; foure and twentie egges a pennie, in the citie twentie egs a penie, &c. Parliament at London. Victuals prised. *An. reg. 8.*

Notwithstanding the statutes of the last Parliament, the kings Writtes, &c. all things were sold dearer then before, no flesh coulde be had, Capons and Geese would not be found, Egs were hard to come by, Shéepe died of the rot, Swine were out of the way; a quarter of wheat, beanes, and pease, were solde for 20. shillings, a quarter of Malte for a Marke, a quarter of Salt for 35 shillings, &c. T. Walsingham. Victuals deere. Chro. S. Albans.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Chepston in Sherwod. 1315

John Poydras, a Tanners sonne of Excester, in diuers places of Englande, named himselfe the sonne of Edward the first, and sayde, that by a false Nurse hee was stolen out of his Cradle, and Edward that now was king, put in his place; but shortlie after he was conuict of his vntrueth, and confessed that hee did it by the motion of a familiar spirit which hee had in his house in likenesse of a Catte, whome he had serued thrée yeeres, for the which seruice hee was hanged betwixt Southampton and Killingworth, in a place called the Copidthorne. A Tanners son claimed to be king.

The king in a parliament at London, gaue the rodde and office of Marshall vnto Thomas of Brotherton earle of Norfolke his brother. Hée also reuoked the prouisions before made for selling of Victualles, and permitted all men to make the beste of that they had; neuertheleste the dearth encreased through the aboundance of raine that fell in Haruest, so that a Quarter of Wheat, or of Salte, was solde before Midsommer for thirtie shillings, and after 40. shillinges. W. Pasthon. T. Walsingham.

There followed this famine, a grieuous mortalitie of people, so that the quicke might vnneath burie the dead. *An. reg. 9.* Mortalitie of men.

Robert Fitz Paine deceased, and was buried at Shireborne. Also Guido de bello campo earle of Warwike deceased.

The beastes and cattell also by the corrupt grasse whereof they fedde, died, whereby it came to passe, that the eating of flesh was suspected of all men, for flesh of Beasts not corrupted was hard to find. Horse flesh was counted great delicates: the poore stole fatte Dogges to eate: some (as it was saide) compel Dogs flesh good meate.

led

Children were eaten.

led through famine, in hidde places, did eate the flesh of their owne Children, and some stale others which they deuoured. Theeues that were in prisons did plucke in peeces those that were newlie brought amongst them, and greedilie deuoured them halfe aliue. A gallon of small ale was at two pence, of the better, 3. pence, and the best 4. pence.

Theeues in prison deuour one another.

The Londoners considering that wheat made into malt, was much consumed, ordained, that from thenceforth it should be made of other graine, and also, that a gallon of better ale should be sold for three halfepence, and of small ale for a penie, and not aboue.

Wheat forbidden to be made into malt.

The king according to the statute of London, sent his Writtes through the Realme, commanding, that as well within the Liberties as without, in cities, boroughes, townes and villages, a gallon of ale should be sold for a penie, and that from thenceforth no wheat should be made into malt: which if he had not the sooner caused to be proclaimed, the greatest part of the people should haue perished through famine.

Chro. Dun.

Earle Waren was excommunicated by the bishop of Chichester for adultery, whereupon the said earle came to the bishop with armed men, and 4. more hastie then the rest, threatned the bishop, whereupon the bishops men fell on them, and toke the earle and the rest, and imprisoned them.

Earle Waren excommunicated.

1316 King Edward kept his Christmas at Clipston in Sherewood, as he had done the yeere before.

Richard Killow Bishop of Durham deceased, vnto whome succeeded Lewes de Beaumount by the kings appointment, a man meanelie learned, and lame on both feete. The king also made Thomas Cobham Bishop of Worcester, that Sea being voide by the death of Walter de Maydenstone. Also Adam de Arleton was made Bishop of Hereford, that Sea being void by the death of Robert de Swinfield. Elizabeth Countesse of Hereford, daughter to K. Edward the first deceased, and was buried at Walden.

Bishops deceased.

The same yeere the king toke of euerie towne in England, a man to serue in his warres of Scotland, and foure markes of money towards his charges hauing no respect to the greatnes or littlenes of any towne, which seemed to be vndiscretelie done.

T. Walsingham.

There arriued in Englande by the kings request Gaustelinus and Lucas de Fliſco, two Cardinalles, to make peace betwixt the Realmes of England and Scotlande, and to reconcile vnto the king Thomas earle of Lancaster. They brought Bulles from the Pope to excommunicate the Scottes, except they returned vnto peace with the king of England. These Cardinals went into the North parts, to enstall Lodowike Beomond, to whome the Pope (at the kings instance) had giuen the Bishoprieke of Durham: and when they came neere vnto the Towne of Derlington, certayne Robbers breaking out of a valley, Gilbert Middleton and Walter Selby beeing their Captaynes, sodaynelie sette vpon the familie of the Cardinalles and of Lodowike on Wigelsleden Moore, robbed them of their treasure, and carried Lodowike Bishop of Durham to Morpeth, where they constrained him to pate a great raunsome: they brought Henry Beaumont to the castle of Kintford, and there kept him till he had paid a great

I. Trekton. Tho. de la more.

Two Cardinals robbed.

great ransome: but the Cardinals came to Durham, where they tarried a few daies for answere of the Scots, and so vnder the kings conduct they returned to Yorke, and left their businesse which they came for vndone. Gilbert Middleton after many domages done to the prior of Tinmouth and other, was taken in his owne Castle of Mitford, by William Felton, Thomas Hetton, and Robert Hornecliffe, carried to London, and there in the presence of the Cardinals drawne and hanged. *An. reg. 10.*

The 14. daie of Februarie, the king by his charter granted to the scholers of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, that whensoeuer the Maior of the towne shal take his accustomed othe, he shall be sworne in presence of the Chancellour of the Vniuersitie to vpholde and maintaine the liberties and priuileges of the Vniuersitie, and the same shall not maliciously or vndutifully impugne, and for lacke thereof, the othe to be of no force, but to be againe ministred to that effect.

The Cardinals vnder certaine conditions, made peace betwixt the king and Thomas earle of Lancaster, which conditions shortly after were vntruly broken.

Sir Gosseline Deinuile and his brother Robert, with two hundred in the habite of Friers did many notable robberies, they spoiled the bishop of Durhams pallaces, leauing nothing in them but bare wals, for the which they were after hanged at Yorke. Theeues like Friers.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Westminster, at which feast, few of the Nobles were present, because of discord mooued betwixt the king and them, for that he would not obserue the Articles so often demaunded and promised. 1317

Margaret, daughter to Philip, son to Lewes king of France, wife vnto Edward the first, deceased the 14. of Februarie, and was buried in the middle of the quier of the Grey Friers church at London.

Edward de Bruse the king of Scottes brother, who by the space of three yeeres had assaulted Ireland, and had crowned himselfe king, was taken by Englishmen, and was beheaded at Dundalke. Ioh. Treklow. Edward de Bruse beheaded.

In that battel were slaine 29. baronets of Scotland, and fiue thousand and eight hundreth other, the primate of Armakh being chiefe captaine for the king of England.

The 18. of March the king sent his letters to the Pope Iohn the 22. requiring of him a confirmation of all the ancient priuileges of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, which the Chancellor and scholers had of long time enioyed, by the benefit of the popes his predecessors, and also of his own predecessors the kings of England: whereunto the Pope assented, as appeareth by his bull granted in the moneth of June following.

This yeere was an early harueſt, so that all the corne was inned before S. Giles day. A bushel of wheate that was before for v. shillings, was solde for v. pence: and a bushel of otes that before was eight shillings, was sold for eight pence. Early harueſt cheape corne. *An. reg. 11.*

Earle Warren toke the wife of the earle of Lancaster, and shut her vp in his

Castell, for that he said she was betrothed to him before thee was married: the earles had either of them a wife, but neither of them cared for them.

1318 K. Edward kept his Christmas at Beuerley with many prelates, lords, and barons, at which time he prouided himselfe of a great army, that he might bring down the pride of the Scots, if by any meanes it were for him profitable, and to deliuer England from their eruptions.

Berwike betraied. About Midlent the towne of Berwike was betraied to the Scots, through the treason of Peter Spalding, and other Englishmen, whome the king of Scots caused to be hanged for being traitors to their countrie. The castle held out, till for want of victuals they within were constrained to deliuer it into the Scottishmens hands, who wan also at the same time, the castles of Harbotel, Wark, and Midford, so that they possessed the more part of all Northumberland, euen to Newcastle vpon Tine, sauing certaine castles that were defended against them.

The Scots inuaded England Rich. South. I. Treklow. In May they entred further into the land, burning all before them, till they came to Ripon, which towne they spoiled, and tarrying three daies, they receiued 1000. marks of those that were got into the church, because they should not put the towne to the fire, as they had don the townes of Northallerton, and Boroughbridge, &c.

In their returning backe, they brent Knaresburgh, and Skipton in Crauen, and al other afore them, carrying into Scotland a maruellous multitude of cattell, besides prisoners men and women.

T. Walsingham. W. Packington. *An. reg. 12.* The Yorkshiremen gathered together, to the number of 10000. mette with the Scots at the Towne of Pitton, tenne miles by Northweall from Yorke, where they lost 3000. men, and were ouercome by the Scots. Which when the king heard tel of, he left the siege of Berwich, and hasted to meet the Scots, but they returned another waie.

The Pope ordained, that Parsons should haue but one benefice a peece: whereupon patrons straight presented new parsons to the residue.

A murreine of kyne. A great murrein of kine hapned, which were so mortally infected, that dogs and rauens eating of the carrion of the kine, were poisoned, and did swell to death, so that no man durst eate ante beefe.

The Scots burne the suburbes of Yorke. Adam Meri. The king being at Yorke, the Scots entred England, came to Yorke, and brent the suburbs of the city, and toke sir Iohn of Brytain earle of Richmond prisoner, with manie other.

Herdmen and women go toward Jerusalem. Many herdsmen and certain women of England, and of other parts of the world, gathered themselues together, and would go seeke the holie land, to kil the enimies of Christ, as they said: but because they could not passe ouer the great sea, they slew many Iewes in the parts of Tholouse and Gascoigne, wherefor many of them were taken and put to death.

1319 King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Winchester.

Iohn Sendall bishop of Winchester deceased, vnto whom succeeded Reignald de Asser the popes Nuntio. Also Iohn Dalbred bishop of Lincolne deceased, and Henry Burwash Nephewe to Bartholomewe Badlesmere was chosen to his Sea.

This

This yeere the Pope granted to the king of England, the tenth of all ecclesiasticall goods for one yeere, as before he had done the like.

In the moneth of June king Edward went ouer into France, and came to Amiens, where he met with the king of France, and receiued of him the countie of Poytow. *An. reg. 13.*

The 15. of October the clarks of the Exchequer went toward Yorke with the booke called Domes day, and other Records and prouision that laded 21. carts, but within the space of halfe a yeere in the Kalends of March they did return againe to London. Exchequer kept at Yorke W. Paston.

The same yeere the kings Iustices sate in the Tower of London, whereupon Iohn Gisors late maior of London and many others fled the city, for things they had presumptuously done, and knew themselues guilty.

This yeere the Lepars were diffamed through all Christendome, for that they had couenanted with the Sarasens to poison the Christians in all places, which in diuers parts they brought to passe, putting poison into welles, fountaines, pits, and other places; vpon the which diuers of them in Prouance, and in other parts of France were brent, and the Iewes were detained in prison for consenting herein to them, there died in Almaine for this cause (after some Authors) aboue 12000. Iewes. Iewes and Lepars poisoned waters. Conradus Mendember.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster with great honour and glorie. 1320

The earle of Hereford bought of sir Wil. Bruse knight, a portion of land in the Marches of Wales called Gowers.

Roger Mortimer the Uncle, and Roger the Nephewe, not knowing of the foresaid bargaine, had also bought the saide ground of the saide William Bruse. Also the Lord Mowbray, who had married the daughter and heire of the sayde William, claymed it by inheritance of his Wife. Last of all, Hugh Spencer the ponger had bought that land, and put them all out, wherethrough the foresaid nobles were sore moued, and Humfrey earle of Hereforde complayned to Thomas earle of Lancaster, which two earles allured almost all the other earles and barons to take their part. Thomas earle of Lancaster being their captaine they came to Sherborne, and from thence with Banners displayed, to Saint Albons: from thence they sent to the king being at London, requiring him to banish the two Hugh Spencers, which were condemned by the communaltie in manie articles: which when the king woulde not grant, the barons came to London, where at length the king graunted their petition, so that Hugh Spencer the elder was banished, but the ponger Hugh fell to spoyling on the sea, taking out of two Dromidos about Sandwich, goods to the value of 40000. pounds. The barons in armour. *An. reg. 14.* The elder Spencer banished. T. de la More.

About the feast of S. Michael, Isabel the quæne came from Canterbury to the castle of Leeds in Kent, purposing to haue lodged there that night, but she could not be permitted to enter. Leedes Castell besieged.

The king herewith being offended, as being done in contempt of him, calling to him the Commons of Essex and London, besieged the Castell, which belonged to Bartholomew de Badelsmere, who hauing left his wife and child-

dren therein, was gone with the rest of the noble men to the ransacking of the Spencers goods.

In the meane time they in Leedes Castle despayring of their safegarde, the noble men with their army came to Kingston in the Vigill of Saint Simon and Iude, demaunding (by the Bishops of Canterburie and London, and the Earle of Penbroke, who were sent betweene them) that the king woulde giue ouer his siege, promising, that they after the next Parliament woulde deliuer the Castle into the kings handes, and become obedient vnto him: but the king would not graunt the noble mens petition, who being returned into other partes, the king with much labour obtained the Castle, and hanging fire of the chiefe of those whom he found therein, he sent the wife and children of Badelsmere to the Tower of London.

1321 King Edward held his Christmasse at Circester, and after Christmasse leauing Glocester and Worcester, he with his army went to Shrewsbury and Bridgenorth. Both the Mortimers meeting the king, reuerently and peaceably submitted themselues vnto him: but the king sent them both to the tower of London.

Mortimer sent to the Tower.

Mawrice Barkeley, and Hugh Audley in like sort submitting themselues, he sent to Wallingford Castle.

Humfrey Earle of Hereford, Gilbert Talbot, Rause Damary, and their adherents, fled into the north to the earle of Lancaster.

About the latter end of Februarie the king gathered an hoste & went against the rebels, and at Burton vpon Trent put them to flight. The king pursuing them the 16. of March, the hostes met againe at Borowbridge, where Humfrey de Bohune (by a certaine Welchman, who stode vnder the bridge) being thrust into the fundament with a speare, died. There were taken in the field Thomas earle of Lancaster, with the lordes, knights, and other to the number of 65. the rest sauing themselues by flight.

These, by the iudgement of Andrew Harkely earle of Carleile, were condemned.

The earle of Lancaster beheaded, and many other executed.

On the two and twentieth of March Thomas of Lancaster was beheaded: Waren de Lile, William Tochet, Thomas Manduit, Henry Bradebourne, William fitz Will. the yonger, and William Cheyney, Barons hanged & quartered at Pontfract: Io. Mowbray, Roger Clifford, Goceline Deinuile, Drawne & quartered at Yorke: Bartholomew Badlesmere at Canterbury: Henry de Mountfort, Henry Wilington at Bristow: Ioh. Clifford, Roger Elinbrough at Glocester: William Kerdife, Henry Chies at London: Francis de Aldham at Windsor, Thomas Culpeper at Winchelsey, Hugh de Audely the yonger, Iohn de Willington, Robert Talbot, Iohn Maidur, Edmund Heclude, Iohn de Sapy, Robert de Wacheuile, Philip de Labeche, Iohn de Becke, Henry de Laybourne, these ten, and xvii. knights more were bestowed in diuers prisons.

Iohn Treklow. W. Packington.

Chron. of Dun. Iustices of Trailebaston.

The Iusticiars of Trailebaston in Esser, sate vpon all complaintes, except Assises touching plées of fæde landes, and others, in the kings Bench to bee pleaded, who did abstaine their hands from all kindes of giftes. And would not be called to the feasts and banquets of any man.

The

The third weeke after Easter, a parliament was gathered at Yorke, where Hugh Spencer the father was made earle of Winchester, vnto whom the king gaue the castle and honor of Dunnington, which was parcell of the earledome of Lincolne. T. de la More. Parliament at Yorke.

About the feast of S. Iames, the king with a great army entred Scotlande, but the Scots hauing destroied all afore, were retired beyond the Scottish sea. So that the king being oppressed by famine, returned into England, whom the Scottes followed, and in a place of the forrest of Blackamore they sette on the king, so that he hardlie escaped. T. de la More. Hen. Blanford. Additions to Nic. Triuet. *An. reg. 15.*

There was taken, the Earle of Richmonde, and the Lorde of Silicico, the French kings Embassadour, and manie other: whereupon the Scottes spoiling all the Countrey, and burning euen to Yorke, they burned Ripon, and slew manie preests of the colledge there: but in Beuerley they hurt not a man, for the Burgesses and Chanons did redeeme the same with 400. pounds of sterling monie. And so the Scots by reason of winter made returne, beeing laden with spoiles. The Scottes burned in England to Yorke.

This yeere the K. made sir Andrew Herkley Earle of Carlile, and gaue him lands in the Marches of Scotland. Andrew Herkley earle of Carlile.

This yeere the Steeple of the Monastery at Ely fell downe in the night, but hurt no person: which steeple was afterwarde twentie yeeres and more in building, ere it were fully finished, and cost in the time of Allaine the sacrist of that church, 2406. pounds 16. shillings and eleuen pence: which steeple is builded by Architecture 8. square, of timber vpon 8. Pillars of stone, and called the Lanthorne. This is accompted one of the foure famous thinges that commendeth the Ile and Church: the other three beeing the Chappell of our Ladie, the Mill, and the Vineyard. Alicia Lady of the Ile, third wife to Robert Fitz Walter deceased, and was buried nigh to her parents in the church of the friars preachers of Cambridge. Commendations of the Ile of Ely.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Yorke, dissembling his losses lately receiued at the hands of the Scots. 1322

About the feast of the Purification of our Ladie, Andrew de Herkeley late made Earle of Carlile, vnder colour of peace, fayned that hee woulde marrie Robert Bruse his sister. Whereupon the king reputing him a Traytour, caused him to bee taken by his trustie friend sir Anthony de Lucie, who sent him in yrons straight to London, where he was iudged before sir Anthony de Lucy in this maner. He was ledde to the barre as an earle worthily apparelled, with his sword girt about him, hosed, booted, and spurred, &c. Vnto whom sir Anthony spake in this manner: Sir Andrew (quoth hee) the king, for thy valiant seruice hath done thee great honour, and made thee earle of Carlile, since which time, thou, as a traitour to thy Lorde the king, leddest his people that shoulde haue holp him at the battell of Weighland, awaie by the countrie of Copland, and through the earledome of Lancaster, by which meanes, our Lorde the king was discomfited there of the Scots, through thy treason and falsenesse, whereas if thou haddest come betimes, he had had the victorie: and this treason thou committedst, for the great summe of Golde and Siluer that thou receiuedst of

Earle of Carlile degraded.

Iames Dowglasse, a Scot, the kings enemie. Our Lord the king will therefore, that the order of knighthood, by the which thou receiuedst all thine honour and worship vpon thy bodie, bee brought to nought, and thy state vndone, that other knights of lower degrée, may after thee beware, and take example hereafter truely to serue.

Then commaunded hee to hewe his Spurres from his heeles, then to breake his sworde ouer his head which the king had giuen him, to keepe and defend his land therewith, when he made him Earle. After this, hee let vnclothe him of his furred Tabard, and of his Hode, of his coate of armes, and also of his Girdle: and when this was done, Sir Anthonie saide vnto him, Andrewe (quoth hee) nowe art thou no Knight but a knaue, and for thy treason, the king will that thou shalt bee hanged and drawne, and thine head smitten off from thy bodie: thy bowelles taken out of thy bodie and burned before thee, and thy bodie quartered; and thy head being smitten off, afterward to be set vpon London bridge, and thy foure quarters shall be sent vnto foure good townes of England, that all other maie beware by thee. And as Anthony Lucy had saide, so was it done in all thinges, on the last daie of October.

An. reg. 16.

In the moneth of Maie the Maior and communaltie of Cambridge, rose in great multitude against the schollers: In which tumult diuers schollers were maymed, and some slaine, and the Charters of their Priuiledges torne and throwne into the myre in miserable sort: whereupon the king sent thither Master Henry Spigurnell, Mast. Robert de Malberthorpe and others, with commission to punish the offence.

The two Mortimers committed to prison.

The second day of August the two Mortimers were adiudged to bee drawne and hanged at Westminster, for diuers robberies and murthers which the king laide against them, but no execution of that iudgment was done, by reason of a writ that the king sent to Sir Richard de Swardstone then Constable of the Tower, to stay the iudgement, and the king granted them their liues, to be in perpetuall prison.

1323 King Edward kept his Christmasse at Kenilworth Castle with great glorie.

The 30. day of May Aymer de Valence Earle of Penbroke Hugh Spencer the ponger, Robert Baldocke Archdeacon of Middlesex, Sir William Herle knight, William de Aizewine Chanon of Yorke, Galfride de Scroope, were for king Edward of England sent vnto Newcastle vpon Tine, where they met with William Byshoppe of Saint Andrewes, Thomas Randulfe Earle of Murrey, Iohn de Meterh, Robert de Lowther, the father, knights, and maister Walter de Tromant Clearke for the king of Scottes, there to talke of a finall peace: but when that would not be, they fell to a truce, which they agréed vpon for thirteene yeeres, which was proclaimed about the eleuenth of June, dated at Thorpe neere vnto Yorke.

Truce with Scotland.

This yeere Philip king of France died, and his brother Charles succéeded him.

About the beginning of August, K. Edward being at Pickering, there came

Embassa-

Embassadours from the new French king, the Lord Benuille and sir Andrew de Florentia, to cite the king to come to do homage for Guyen, Aquitaine, and other lands which he held of him: and though Hugh Spencer the son Lord Chamberlaine, and Robert Baldocke Lord Chancellour, had procured the said Embassadours, not to declare their message vnto the king, yet when they should depart, they did it, admonishing him for to come.

And the said sir Andrew de Florentia being a Notarie, made a publike instrument of the said citation and admonition.

Reginald de Asser bishop of Winchester, deceased, and Iohn de Stratford succeeded in that bishoprieke.

The French king made a proceese against the K. of England. And Charles de Valoys vncle to king Charles of France a most deadly enemy to Englishmen, did seize on the dukedome of Angiow, and the County of Poytow to the vse of his nephew the king. Tho. de la More.

At the length going forward to the towne of Kyall, he found it well defended by Edmond of Woodstock earle of Kent, betwixt whom a final truce being taken, to continue vntil such time as it could be determined betweene both the kings as concerning peace, and the towne being yelded vp, both the armies departed home. *An. reg. 17.*

King Edward kept his Christmas at Nottingham Castle with great magnificence, glory and resort of people. 1324

The next Lent in a parliament holden at London, Adam Tarleton bishop of Hereford was accused of treason, but by the Archbishoppes of Canterbury, Yorke, and Dubline, and their suffragan bishops, he was taken from the bar and had away: notwithstanding inquisition being made by lawful men of that Country, they found that he had ayded the Mortimers with horse and armour against the king, whereupon all his temporalties were seized into the kings hands. Hen Blanford. Parliament at London.

In this Parliament the king granted a petition of the Prelate, that all the bodies of the noble men that were hanged on galowes, should be taken down, and buried in ecclesiasticall sepulture.

The king also asked a subsidy of the cleargie and people, for the redeeming of Iohn Brytaine earle of Richmond.

Adam Tarleton Bishoppe of Hereford, being depriued of all his temporall goods, did hate the Spencers deadly, so did Henry Burwash of Lincolne, (whose temporalties by the space of two yeers had beene detained in the kings hands) of whom and of other were made these verses:

Nostri cornuti, sunt consilio quasi muti,
Et quia non tuti, nequeunt sermonibus vti,
Sunt quasi confusi, decreto legis abusi,
Sic perit ecclesia, legis & ipsa via. Hen. Blanford.

Our horned Prelates, in counsell are dumme,
And for feare of displeasure dare not say mumme,
They are so confounded, with abuse of the Law,
That Church, and right waye, are brought vnder awe.

In this parliament, the landes, lordships, and possessions of the Templars were giuen to the hospitallers of Saint Iohn of Ierusalem, through the whole realme, to be by them possessed for euer, for the defence of Christendome against the Infidels.

Mortimer of Wigmore breaketh out of the Tower.

On Lammas day Roger Mortimer of Wigmore, by making a solemne banquet to sir Stephen Segraue constable of the Tower of London, and the other officers, and giuing to his keepers a sleepe drinke, escaped out of the Tower, breaking through the wall, and comming into the kitchin neere adioyning to the kings lodgings, and getting out of the toppe thereof, came vnto a warde of the Tower, and so with the cordes knit ladder-wise, prepared afore hand by a friend of his, got to another warde, and so with great feare got to the Thamis, and with his helper and two mo of his counsell passed the riuer, and auoiding the high waies came to the Sea, and there finding a shippe at Porchester, he passed ouer into France to the king there, where he liued long, looking when he might be reconciled to the king of England: his vncle Roger being still kept in filthy prison, the space almost of fiue yeares very vncourteously, at length he died, and was buried at Bristowe: for the escape of the yonger Mortimer, the king being sore offended, put sir Stephen Segraue out of his constablelship of the tower. About the feast of S. Martin, were the Burgesses of London and of other townes attached by a Clearke, named Thomas Neubigging, who purchased a commission of the king, and by force thereof accused many, obiecting against them, that they had conference with sir Roger Mortimer, maintaining and sustaining him, on the other side the Sea, and that they ayded and counselled him to escape out of the Tower, of which inditements the good people did purge themselues, by all the course of law, before the kings Iustices, whereby that Clearke was compted a wicked man, and imprisoned as a false traytor. The king sent Embassadours to the French king, the Bishops of Winchester and of Norwich, with Iohn of Brytaine Earle of Richmond, to take order for the dukedome of Brytain, who after long debatings toke a certaine forme of peace with the king.

An. reg. 18.

T. de la More.

1325 King Edward kept his feast of Christmasse at Nottingham very nobly and royally, after that the truce had beene confirmed at Yorke, betwixt the Englishmen and the Scots, by the graue and wise persons of both the realmes.

The Queene sent into France.

King Edward sent the Quéene his wife vnto her brother the French king, to establish the peace, who went ouer with a small company. By her mediation a peace was fully finished, to wit, that the king of England should giue vnto his eldest sonne Edward, the dukedome of Aquitaine, and the earledome of Pontiue, and that the French king should receiue homage of him: whereupon Edward the kings sonne went ouer with a competent houshold about the feast of S. Mathew, and did homage vnder certaine protestations, to his vncle the French king.

King Edward banished his Queene, and eldest sonne.

Whiles the quéene with her son remained in France longer then the kings pleasure was, and would not come againe without Roger Mortimer and other Nobles that were fledde out of Englande, and especiallie for the hatred shee bare to the two Hugh Spencers, the king in displeasure banished them both, and

all

all other that tooke their partes: whereupon many fledde ouer the Seas to the Quéene, amongst the which was one, a subtill knight, sir Robert Walkefare, who slaying the Constable of Corffe Castle, brake from thence, where hee had long laine prisoner.

Sir Oliuer Ingham knight, whom the yoong duke Edward had made kéeper of Aquitaine, gathered a great army, and inuaded the Prince of Aniow (which the French king contrary to couenants, did withholde) and brought it wholie into the dominion of England. Oliuer Ingham. *An. reg. 19.*

Moreouer, the kings nauy tooke 100. shippes of the Normans, and brought them into England, for which cause great hatred grew betwixt the two kings and their realmes.

The quéene perceiuing that the nobles of France were corrupted with gifts sent out of Englande, so that shée could trust none of them, secretly conueyed her selfe and her son to the earle of Heynald, desiring aide of him: who receiued and intreated her very honourably so long as she remained there.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at S. Edmundsbury sore afraied of the Quéenes returne & of those exiled persons that were with her, lest they should with a power of Aliens put him downe from his kingly dignitie, wherefore he ordeined his Castles as well in Wales as in England, to bee furnished with victualles, munitions and men: he also let kéepe his riuers and coastes of the Sea, whereof the men of the Cinque portes tooke the charge to defend. He also commanded, that in euerie Citie, borough, towne corporate, hundred, and wapentake of England musters should be made, and their men to be exercised in armes, both on horsebacke and on foote, so that they might at all times bee ready when any hue and crie should be made, to pursue the Aliens if any came into England. And to this purpose, he ordained Bikenings or Beacons to be set vp, that the same being fiered might be sæne farre off, and thereby the people to be raised. 1326 Castles in England and Wales fortified. Bikenings set vp.

Isabel the Quéene made a marriage betwixt her eldest sonne Edward, and Philip the daughter to William earle of Heynald, and then with her sonne Edward, Edmund of Woodstocke earle of Kent, the kings brother, Roger Mortimer, and many other noble men that fled out of England, and Iohn brother to William Earle of Heynald being captaine, with stipendary knightes, out of Almaine and Heynald, she tooke the seas with all her power, which were to the number of two thousand seuen hundred fiftie and seuen men well armed, and arriued at Urewell, or Orwell hauen besides Harwich in Essex, about Michaelmasse, whither immediately the Earle Marshall, the Earle of Leicester, the Bishops of Lincolne, Hereford, and Diuelin, and Elycame, and being ioined to the Quéene, made a great army: the other Bishops specially of Canterbury, ayded her with money. When she had refreshed her army at Saint Edmundsbury, she went forwards pursuing her enemies, whose goods she applied to her owne vse. *An. reg. 20.* Queene Isabell returned.

The king requested aide of the citizens of London, who made him answere they would with due obedience, honour the king and Quéene, and their sonne, who was lawfull heire to the realme, and that they would shutte their gates against The king requested aide.

gainſt all forraine Traytours of the Realme: but they woulde not goe out of their citie to fight, except they might (according to their Liberties) returne home againe the ſame daie before Sun ſet: which when the king heard, he fortified the Tower of London, and left there his yonger ſonne Iohn of Eltham:

Proclamation by the king.

hee cauſed alſo to bee proclaimed that euerie man ſhould reſiſt them that were arriued, and to inuade them to the vttermoſt of their powers (the Quéene with her ſonne Edward, and the earle of Kent his brother onelie excepted) and whoſoeuer could bring the head of Roger Mortimer, ſhould haue 1000. pound.

The Queenes letters tacked on the croſſe in Cheape.

Proclamation by the queene.

On the other ſide it was proclaimed in the Quéenes behalfe, that all men ſhoulde haue good peace, except the Diſturbers of the Realme, to witte, the Spencers, the Father and the ſonne, Robert Baldocke Biſhop of Norwich, the kings Chancellor, and their fautors: and whoſoeuer did bring to the Quéene the head of Hugh Spencer, ſhould haue 1000. pounds. The citizens of London without reſpect of any, beheaded ſuch as they toke to be the Quéenes enimies, among the which they beheaded one of their own citizens named Iohn Marſhal becauſe he was familiar with Hugh Spencer the yonger.

Citizens of London tooke part with the Queene.

Biſhop of Exceſter beheaded.

They toke alſo maiſter Walter Stapleton Biſhoppe of Exceſter, and on the fiftéenth daie of October beheaded him, and two of his ſeruants, a ſquire and a yeoman named William Atwall, and Iohn of Padington at the Standerde in Cheape, becauſe (as the ſaying was) hee had gathered a great army to withſtand the Quéene: they did alſo wreſt the keies of the Tower of London out of the Conſtables hands, and deliuered all the priſoners.

The Ile of Lunday.

Tho. de la More. Ile of Londay deſcribed. A. Necham.

The king, Hugh Spencer the yonger, and Robert Baldocke, determined to flée into the Ile of Londay, which is in the mouth of the riuer Seuerne, two miles in length euerie waie, abounding with paſture grounds, and oates, very pleaſant, it bringeth forth Conies verie plentifull, it hath Pigeons and other fowles, which Alexander Necham calleth Ganimedes Birdes, hauing greate neſtes. Alſo it miniſtreth to the inhabitantes freſh ſpringing waters flowing out of Fountaines, although it be on euerie ſide enuironed with the ſalt Sea: it hath onelie one entrance into it, in the which two men together can ſcarce goe in a front; on all the other partes, there is an high hanging ouer of a great rocke, which letteth the paſſage to this Iland as we haue ſaide: it aboundeth altogether with victuailes, and is verie full of wines, oile, hony, corne, bragget, ſalt-fiſh, fleſh, and ſea or earth coales.

The king beeing deſirous to ſaile thither, a contrarie winde did altogether withſtand him, whereupon hee ſcarce auoiding the cruell tempeſts of the ſeas, arriued at Glamorgan, and went to the Abbey of Neth, where, truſting too much to the promiſes of the Welſhmen, he did priuilie lurke.

Queene Iſabell came to Oxford

Adam de Orleton preacheth at Oxford.

The Quéene being now of great power vnder her ſonnes banner (perſecuting his father) commanded the hoſte to go forward in purſuing the king, till at length they were come to Oxford; there, before the whole Vniuerſitie, the Quéene, the yong Duke of Aquitaine, Roger Mortimer, and other noblemen and ſouldiours, the chiefe deuiſer of ſo wicked a diſſenſion named Adam de Orleton Biſhop of Hereford, made a publike ſermon touching the Quéenes comming, and cauſe of the army, taking for his Theame, My head grieueth mee,

which

which authoritie be brought to such a question, that a vaine and slouthfull head, ought necessarily to bee taken awaie from the administration of a kingdome, neither ought it to be bound with any hurtfull bands of an hypocrite, &c.

Hugh Spencer submitted himselfe to queene Isabell.

After this the queene with her people came to Glocester, from whence, shee went vnto Bristowe, where Hugh Spencer the elder committed himselfe and all his vnto the mercie of the angrie and outragious woman, who commanded the earle to be bound, and without question or answere to bee drawen and hanged in his armour, taken downe aliue and bowelled, his bowelles burned, then his head smitten off, and his bodie hanged vp againe, and after foure daies to be cut all to peeces and cast to dogges to be eaten, but his head was sent to Winchester. The queene went to Hereford. The K. with Robert Baldock, and Simon de Reding being taken on the sixteenth of Nouember, was committed to the custody of Hen. earle of Lancaster, who brought him to Monmouth, to Ledbery, and so to Kenilworth castle, where he remained the space of one winter, ordered for his diet no otherwise then a king.

Hugh Spencer the elder executed.

King Edward taken.

The queene being at Hereforde, Edmund earle of Arundell, Iohn Daniell, and Thomas Mochelden were beheaded. Afterward Hugh Spencer the sonne Earle of Glocester, was by certaine Welshmen, brought bounde before the queene, and without sentence or iudgement, was drawne, and hanged on a gallowes thirtie foote high, and after beheaded and quartered on the foure and twentieth day of Nouember, whose head was sent to London bridge, his quarters to foure partes of the Realme. Simon Reding was drawne and hanged on the same gallowes, but tenne foote lower: Robert Baldocke, after manie opprobrious words was brought to the Bishop of Herefords prison, where hee liued miserablie vntill the Purification, and then he was remoued to London, and cast into Newgate, where he was so hardly dealt with, that shortly after he died there.

Hugh Spencer the poongers executed.

These thinges being done, the queene with her sonne Edwarde, Roger Mortimer, and other, went to Wallingford Castle, a little before Christmas, and 1327
before the Twelfth day they came to London, where the queene with much ioy & great rewards was receiued: for al the nobility of the realme did assemble there being first summoned to come to the Parliament, to bee holden the morrowe after the saide feast of the Epiphanie, where they all iudged that the olde king was not worthie to beare the crowne, but for diuers causes was to be deposed: And that his eldest son Edward was to be chosen king with one whole consent, which consequentlie was done, and the election openlie in Westminster pronounced.

The Archbyshoppe of Canterburie did consent to the election, as all other the Byshoppes did the like: whereupon the Archbyshoppe ascending into the Pulpit, preached a Sermon, taking for his Theame, *Vox Populi, Vox Dei*, exhorting all the people to praie vnto the king of kinges for the king they had elected. The Sermon being ended, and the people departed, as soone as the queene vnderstode that her sonne was elected king, and her husband deposed, she seemed to be full of sorrow, as it were almost besides her wits; her son also lamented his mothers heauines, and sware, that against his fathers will he would

woulde neuer take the Crowne. Therefore by common decree on the behalfe of the whole Realme it was ordained, that three Bishops, two Earles, Henry of Leicester, and Iohn earle Waren, 2. abbots, Glastenbury and Dor, two barons, Roger Grey, and Hugh Courtney, two Iustices, Sir Geffrey Scroope, and Iohn de Stanthour, two Barons of the Portes, foure Burgesses of London, 4 knights for the communaltie of the land, &c. should be sent to the king being in Kenilworth castle, where they ordained as followeth: Iohn Stratford bishop of Winchester, Adam de Arleton bishop of Hereford, and Henry Bishop of Lincolne were sent.

The bishop of Winchester and the bishop of Lincolne went before the rest, and talked secretly with the king, together with his Keeper the Earle of Leicester, these three craftily compalled him, counselling him to make resignation of the Crowne to his eldest sonne, promising him no lesse honor and renowne after the deposition of his royall dignitie, then his princelie estate was wont to haue of all men before. They added also, what a great reward it woulde bee at the hands of GOD, for the peace and quietnes of his subiects, for him to refuse the gouernement of a temporall kingdome. In the other part they threatned him, that if he would not make resignation, the people withdrawing their homage and obedience, faith and friendship from him, his sonnes also being forsaken, they would crowne another king, none of the royall blood. With these and other promises and threates, the king (not without sobbes and teares) agreed to the aduertisements of the Bishops. Finallie, that mischieuous Embassadour Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford, brought to the castell, wherein the king was shut vp, the kings other enimies, whome he placed orderlie according to their dignities in the kinges chamber, reseruing vnto himselfe the thinges which hee had sought long time before. At length the king comming forth of his secrete Chamber, beeing clothed in a mourning gowne, shewing himselfe to his seruants, knowing the businesse, for which they came, for verie sorrow, beeing as it were, distraught of his wittes, sodainelie swouned, the earle of Leicester, and the Bishop of Winchester did take him vp, being almost dead, and being called to his senses, Adam de Orleton Bysshoppe of Herefordе declaring the cause of the messengers comming, did adde, that the king should make resignation of the Crowne and realme to his eldest sonne, or else, after that himselfe was refused, hee shoulde suffer them to chose to their king another fitter man, whome they thought good for the defence of the kingdome.

King Edward resigned the crowne.

The king hearing this, with much mourning aunswered, that hee was verie sorie, that the Commons had conceiued such wrath and indignation against him, that they disdained to bee gouerned vnder his rule, for the which hee asked them forgiuenesse, and finallie added, that hee would be very glad, if they would receiue his sonne to be their king. This resignation was made on the fiue and twentieth daie of Januarie, in the yeere of Christ, after the accompt of the Historiographers (who beganne their yeere at Christmas) 1327. after the accompt of the Church of Englande 1326. And forthwith in this castle, those messengers did renounce (as touching the realme) all homages and duties due to Edw. of Carnarnan late king of England by the hand of William

Trussell

Truſſell knight, he in preſence of the aforeſaid Lords, had theſe words following. Unto thee, O king, I William Truſſell, in the name of all men of this land of England, and prolocutor of this parliament reſigne to thée Edwarde the homage that was made to thée ſometime, and from this time forth depriue thee of all kinglie power, and I ſhall neuer be attendant vnto thée as king after this time. Then Thomas Blunt knight and Steward of the kings houſhold, by the breaking of the Rod, reſigned his office, and ſhewed that the kings houſholde had frée liberty to depart.

After this the meſſengers returned to the parliament at London, declaring the reſignation that was made, and the kings anſwere more fully then it was made. The Commons of the realme deſpiſing old things, willinglie receiued Edward of Windſore eldeſt ſonne to Edward of Carnaruan. Alſo ſuch a great dowrie was aſſigned to Quéene Iſabell, that ſcarce the thirde part of the reuenues of the crowne were left for her ſon, and his wife quéene Philip. Moreouer, Quéene Iſabell, the biſhop of Hereford, and Roger Mortimer did appoint for expences to Edward of Carnaruan 100. marks the moneth.

This Edward of Carnaruan, now depriued of his royall Crowne and dignity remained with Henry earle of Leiceſter his kinſman, lacking nothing but libertie, where hee beeing ſhut vp, ledde his life, as if hee had béene a Monke. But the fierce and cruell woman being troubled with manie thinges, taking counſell of her wicked Scholemaſter Adam de Orleton Biſchop of Hereforde, ſhe had an anſwere of him, which did not gréeue her a little, that was, that the Earle of Leiceſter did take pittie vpon Edwarde his couſin. Moreouer, there was talke throughout the land, that there were couenantes made amongſt manie, to take king Edwarde by force out of the caſtle of Kenilworth, to the which one friar Preacher, named Thomas Dunhed, and one Clearke were aſſenting, for which cauſe he and other were impriſoned at Yorke. It was therefore decréed by the cruell woman the Quéene, through the ſubtill deuiſe of her ſaid Schoolemaſter, that Thomas of Gorney, and Iohn Maltrauers knightes, hauing receiued him from the kéeping of the earle of Leiceſter, ſhoulde carry Edwarde the olde king about whither they woulde, ſo that none of his well willers ſhould haue accelle vnto him, or vnderſtand where hee made anie long abode.

And to theſe two wicked Traitors, authoritie was giuen by the higheſt ſort, that into whatſoeuer part of the kingdome they bent themſelues, that all gouernours and kéepers of the Caſtles ſhoulde ſuffer them to enioie their offices and Rowmes during their pleaſure, vpon paine of forfeiture of goods, landes, and life, if anie ſhoulde denie them. By meanes of which authoritie Henry earle of Leiceſter, through commandement of king Edwarde the third, deliuered the olde king by Indenture to Sir Thomas Barkeley, and Sir Iohn Maltrauers, and they brought him from Kenilworth, to the Caſtle of Corffe, then to Briſtow, where for a ſeaſon he was kept ſhutte vp in the Caſtell, vntill it was vnderſtode by certaine burgeſſes of the towne, who for his deliuerance conueied themſelues ouer ſea. Wherefore in a darke night, the kéepers of Edward conuey him thence to Barkeley.

Theſe

Wilteries of E. the second.

These tormentors of Edward exercised towards him manie cruelties, vnto whome it was not permitted to ride, vnlesse it were by night, neither to see anie man, or to be seene of anie. When he rode, they forced him to bee bareheaded: when he would sleepe, they would not suffer him, neither when hee was hungry would they giue him such meates as he desired, but such as he loathed: euerie word that he spake, was contrarted by them, who gaue it out most slanderously, that he was madde. And shortly to speake, in all matters they were quite contrary to his will, that either by colde, watching, or vnwholesome meates, for melancholy, by some infirmitie he might languish and die. But this man being by nature strong to suffer paines, and patient through Gods grace to abide all griefes, hee endured all the deuises of his enemies, for as touching poysons, which they gaue him often to drinke, by the benefite of nature he dispatched away.

These Champions bring Edward towardes Barkeley, being guarded with a rabble of hel-hounds, along by the Grange belonging to the Castle of Bristowe, where that wicked man Gorney, making a crowne of hay, put it on his head, and the souldiours that were present, scoffed, and mocked him beyond all measure, saying, Tprut, auaunt sir king, making a kinde of noise with their mouthes, as though they had farted: they feared to be met of anie that should knowe Edward, they bent their iourney therefore towardes the lefte hand, riding along ouer the Parish grounds, lying by the riuer of Seuerne. Moreouer, deuising to disfigure him that hee might not bee knowne, they determine for to shaue as well the haire of his head, as also of his beard: wherefore, as in their iourny they trauailed by a little water which ranne in a ditch, they commanded him to light from his horse to be shauen, to whome, being set on a moale hill, a Barbar came vnto him with a basen of colde water taken out of the ditch, to shaue him withall, saying vnto the king, that that water should serue for that time. To whome Edward answered, that would they, nould they, he would haue warme water for his beard; and, to the end that he might keepe his promise, he began to weepe, and to shed teares plentifully: At length they came to Barkley Castle, where Edward was shut vp close like an anchor. Isabell his wife taking it grieuously that her husbands life (which she deadly hated) was prolonged, made her complaint to her Scholemaister Adam de Orleton, fayning that she had certaine dreames, the interpretation whereof shee misliked, which if they were true, she feared lest, that if her husband be at anie time restored to his olde dignitie, that hee would burne her for a Traytor, or condemne her to perpetuall bondage. In like sort the Bishop being guiltie in his owne conscience stode in like feare. The like feare also strooke the hearts of other for the same offence: wherefore it seemed good to many of great dignitie and blood, as well spirituall as temporall, both men and women, that all such feare should bee taken away, desiring his death: whereupon there were letters colourably written to the keepers of Edward, greatly blaming them, for looking so slenderly to the king, suffering him to haue such libertie, and nourishing him too delicately.

Edward the second crowned with hay.

King Edward shauen with cold water.

Moreouer, there is a priuie motion made vnto them, but yet in such sorte,

as

as it might ſeeme halfe done, that the death of Edward would not bee miſliking vnto them, whether it were naturall or violent. And in this point, the great deceit of Sophiſters ſtode in force, ſet downe by the Byſhop who wrote thus:

Eduardum occidere nolite timere bonum eſt.
Kill Edward doe not feare is a good thing.

Or thus:

To ſeeke to ſhead King Edwards bloud
Refuſe to feare I count it good.

Which ſophiſticall ſaying is to be reſolued into two propoſitions, whereof the firſt conſiſting of three words, to wit, *Eduardum occidere nolite*, doe not kill Edward, and the ſecond of other three, that is, *timere bonum eſt*, feare is a good thing, do ſeeme to perſwade ſubtilly from murthering of the king: but the receiuers of theſe letters, not ignorant of the writing, changed the meaning thereof to this ſenſe, *Eduardum occidere nolite timere*, to kill Edward doe not feare: and afterwards theſe woordes, *bonum eſt*, it is good, ſo that they being guiltie, turned a good ſaying into euill.

The Biſhop being thus determinately purpoſed touching the death of Edward, and warily prouiding for himſelfe, if by any chance he ſhould be accuſed thereof, craftely worketh that the authoritie which he gaue by writing, might ſeeme to be taken expreſſely contrary to his meaning, by reaſon of accenting and pointing of the ſame.

To conclude, the murtherers of Edward hoping to haue founde both Iſabel and the Byſhoppe to be their truſtie friendes, they found them earneſt perſecutours of their enterpriſe, quite denying whatſoeuer they had deuiſed againſt Edward, yea, they were greatly buſied in deuiſing moſt cruell death for them; ſo that the murtherers being quite diſmayed, wiſt not what to doe: but ſhewed the Letters of Iſabell, the Byſhoppe, and other conſpiratours, being confirmed with their owne handes and ſeales, which the Byſhoppe refuſed not, but confeſſed to be his and others, but conſtrued them to an other ſenſe, accuſing them to be falſe interpreters of his Letters, and of his owne authoritie threatned them, vntill hee forced them to runne away. Thus much touching the Letters.

Now when king Edward was brought vnto the Caſtle aforeſaide, hee was courteouſly receiued by Thomas Barkeley then Lorde of the fee, who was allowed 100. ſhillings the day for the time: But after the tormentors had receiued their letters of gouernment ouer the Caſtle, the ſaid Thomas is commanded to vſe no familiaritie with Edward: therefore Thomas Barkeley with heauie chere departeth thence to other his dwelling places: And Edwards perſecution continuing to his death, beganne to take effect. For after this he was ſhut vp in a cloſe chamber, where, with the ſtench of dead carkaſſes, laide in a Cellar vnder him, he was miſerably tormented many daies together, in ſuch ſort, that he was well nigh ſuffocated therewith. And that ỹ paine was almoſt intollerable vnto him, It appeareth by the complaint he made on a certaine

day

day at the chamber windowe, certaine carpenters then working on ye right ſide therof, hearing the ſame. But thoſe tyrants perceiuing that this terrible ſtench was not of a ſufficient force to cauſe the death of this valiant man Edwarde, one night being the 22. of September, they came rushing in vpon him ſodainlie, as he late in his bed, with great and heauie featherbeds, beeing in weight as much as 15. ſtrong men coulde beare, wherewith they oppreſſed and ſtrangled him by ſmothering. Into whome alſo they thruſt a plummers ſoldring yron, being made red hot, vp into his bowelles, through a certaine Inſtrument like to the end of a Trumpet or gliſter pipe, put in at the fundament, burning thereby his inward parts, prouiding thereby leaſt ante wounde being founde in the kings bodie, might cauſe his tormenters to anſweare for committing open treaſon, and therefore ſuffer iuſt puniſhment. In this ſort was this ſtoute knight oppreſſed, crying out with a lowd voice, ſo that many as well within the caſtle, as without heard it, perceiuing it to be ye crie of one that ſuffred violent death, which cauſed manie of Barkley, and alſo of the caſtle (as themſelues affirmed) to take compaſſion thereof, and to praie for the ſoule of him that was then departing the world. And this was the ende of Edward of Carnaruan, being betrayed as is aforeſaid: but to colour the matter that they might ſeeme guiltleſſe in this caſe, Iſabel and the biſhop of Hereford laboured to cleare themſelues by baniſhing and outlawing of Thomas Gorney, and Iohn Maltrauers, laying as it were all the fault vpon them.

King Edward murdered.

This Thomas Gorney flying to Marſils, and there lying hid priuilie the ſpace of three yéers, was at length eſpied and taken, and as he was brought towards England, there to haue receiued iuſt and worthy puniſhment for his deſerts, he was beheaded on the ſea, fearing that if he had béene brought into England, he would haue accuſed diuers other great perſonages. The other, to wit, Ioh. Maltrauers, liuing in great contrition and repentance, ſpent a long time in Dutchland. Thus far out of Thomas de la More, a worſhipfull knight, that then liued and wrote in the French tongue what he ſaw with his eies, or heard crediblie reported, by them that ſaw, and ſome that were actors. All which was (at the ſaid ſir Tho. de la Mores requeſt) tranſlated, and more orderlie penned in the Latine tong, by Walter Baker, alias Swinborne, chanon of Dſney beſides Oxford.

Now to conclude this hiſtory, of the raigne and end of king Edwarde the ſecond, called of Carnaruan, for that he was borne there: he was depoſed on the 25. of Ianuary, in the yére of Chriſt 1326. when he had raigned 19. yéres, ſir moneths and od daies, and was murdered on the 21. of September next following, being the feaſt of S. Mathew the Apoſtle, in the yere of Chriſt 1327. whoſe death was not publiſhed till after the feaſt of all Saints, and he was buried at Gloceſter on the feaſt date of S. Thomas the Apoſtle, or 21. of December. He had iſſue by Iſabell his wife, Edward, which was elected king, and to whome hee reſigned in his life: Iohn of Eltham earle of Cornewall, that died at the towne of S. Iohn in Scotland without iſſue: Ioane of the Towre Quéene of the Scots and Elianor Counteſſe of Gueldar, that died yong.

King

King Edward the third.

EDward the third borne at Windsor, about the age of fourteene yeeres, after the deposing of his Father, began his raigne the 25. day of January, in the yeere of our Lord 1326. after the account of the Church of England. He was crowned at Westminster, on the first day of Februarie, by Walter Reignalds Archbishop of Canterburie. This Prince was endued with passing beauty and fauour, of wit prouident, circumspect, and gentle of nature: of excellent modestie and temperance. He aduanced such persons to dignities, as did most excell other in innocencie of life. In feats of armes he was very expert, as the noble enterprises by him atchieued doe well declare. At the beginning of his raigne, he was chiefly ordered by his mother Isabel, vnto whom was assigned so great a dowrie, that the third part of the kingdome did scantly remaine to her sonne. *Ann. reg.* 1. Tho. de la More. Gual. Baker of Swinbrooke.

The inhabitants of the towne of Burie in Suffolke, assembled themselues in warlike manner on S. Lukes day last before passed, in the twentieth yeere of Edward the second, and besieged the abbey of Burie, brent the gates, beat and wounded the Monks, bare out of the abby all the gold, siluer, ornaments, bookes, Charters, and other writings, with the assay of their coine, stampes, and all other things pertaining to their Mint: and all other goods, as Brasse, Pewter, Iron, Lead, &c. They also brent many houses about the abbey, and in the towne, pertaining to the Abbot, with his manors in Berton, Packenham, Rugham, Oldhaw, Hernigesbury, Newtō, Whipsted, Westle, Riseby, Ingham, Ferneham, Redwell, Haberdon, and others, with all the corne in the same manors, & droue away the horses, oxen, kine, swine, sheepe, &c. They drew the Monks out of their Abbey and put them in prisons, & after brought them againe to their Chapter house, where they forced them to search Charters at their pleasure, &c. For the which facts, the malefactors were this yeere by vertue of the kings commission directed to Thomas Earle of Norffolke, Marshall of England, Thomas Bardolfe, and others, apprehended and conuicted: nineteene of them were hanged, and one pressed to death. After this, the whole inhabitants of the Towne, for that they had not stayed the malefactors of their enterprise in the beginning (as they might haue done) were amerced to pay the Abbot toward his dammages 140000. pound. Neuertheless, the Abbot and Couent at the Kings request (who was there present with his Nobilitie) forgaue and remitted to them 122333. pound sixe shillings eight pence of the summe: and for the rest vsed such fauour, that if they truely payd 2000. markes in twentie yeeres following, and obserued their couenants for good order and quietnesse, they forgaue them all the rest. Regist. of Burie. Ioh. Prigton. The Abbey of Burg spoiled. 1327. Commons of Burg executed. Burg amerced.

About this time, the like stirre was made against the Monkes of Canterburie: whereof I find recorded as followeth. Record. Eccles. Christi Cantua.

King Edward preparing an army into Scotland, commanded the Bailifes and Citizens of Canterburie, to furnish him twelue horsemen, and send them

to Newcastle, toward which charge, the citizens required aid of the Monks: who answered them, that without the assent of the king and their archbishop, they would not agree therunto, for so much as the kings of England had founded their Church in free and perpetuall almes. Whereupon, William Chilham Bayliffe, and many Commons of the citie, assembled themselues in the Preaching Friers Churchyard, conspired and sware against the Monkes, as followeth.

1 That they would ouerthrow the pentises, windowes, and milne, belonging to the Monkes.

2 That no Citizen should dwell in any house belonging to the Monkes.

3 That all rents belonging to the Monkes of Canterburie should be gathered to the vse of the Commons.

4 That no man should send or sell to the Monkes any victuals.

5 That they should sell all the horses and beasts that came into the citie with carriage to the Monkes.

6 That all such Monkes as came forth of their house should be spoiled of their garments.

7 That a trench should be cast, to stoppe all men from going in or comming out.

8 That euery Pilgrime should at his entring, sweare that he should make no offering.

9 Also, that euery of those commons aforesaid should weare on their finger a ring of gold of those that belonged to Thomas Becket.

Cro. per. Colege. Sir Iohn the Earles brother of Henault, came to helpe Edward the third against the Scots, with fiue hundred men of armes: which Henawders and the Englishmen fell out by chaunce on Trinitie Sunday at Yorke, where eightie of the Lincolnshire men were slaine, and much of the citie of Yorke was burned: and the Englishmen slaine were buried vnder a stone in Saint Clements Churchyard in Foregate.

Journey toward Scotland. The king went against the Scots that were entred England, as farre as Stanhope Parke in Wardale, where they were besieged three dayes, but they escaped. Iames Douglas one night secretly entring the English campe, came neere to the Kings Tent to haue taken or slaine him, but his Chaplein being a bold man and well armed, with some other being slaine, he with much adoe got backe vnhurt.

This yeere also King Edward the second was murdered on the 22. of September, as is before declared.

K. Edwards title to France. Anno reg. 2. This yeere died Charles King of Fraunce the third brother, which was brother to the Ladie Isabel Queene of England, mother to king Edward the third: by whose death the succession of the kingdome of Fraunce came to the said Edward, but it was vsurped and possessed by Philip de Valoys vncle to the said Charles, who did intrude himselfe by force.

Edward the third maried. King Edward married Philip daughter to William Earle of Holland and Henault, at Yorke the fiue and twentieth of February: shee was sisters daughter to Philip de Valoys aforesaid.

A War-

A Parliament was holden at Northhampton, in which a shamefull peace was made betwixt the Englishmen and Scots, so that Dauid the sonne of Robert Bruse, scarse seuen yeres old, maried Ioane of the Tower king Edwards sister, at Berwike the twelfth of July. Also the king made the Scots charters, the tenour whereof was vnknowne to the Englishmen: but all was done as it pleased the old Quéene, Roger Mortimer, and Iames Dowglas. The Scots made many taunting rimes against the Englishmen, for the fond disguised apparell by them at that time vsed: amongst the which this was fastened vpon the Church doores of Saint Peter toward Stangate:

Parliament at Northhampton.

Peace with the Scots.

Long beards heartlesse,
Painted hoods witlesse,
Gay coates graceles,
Makes England thriftlesse.

Scottish taunts.

Walter Reignolds Archbishoppe of Canterburie, deceased after he had sit Archbishop 13. yeres, 9. moneths, and 20. dayes, and was buried at Canterburie, to whome succéeded Simon Mapham Doct. of Diuinitie. Thomas de Cobham Bishop of Worcester also deceased, to whome succéeded Adam de Orleton in that Bishoprike.

In a Parliament at Salisburie, the king made three Earles, Iohn of Eltham his brother Earle of Cornewall, Roger Mortimer Earle of the March, and Iames Butler of Ireland Earle of Ormond. From this Parliament the Earle of Lancaster, the Lord Wake, Henrie Beamond, Earle Marshall, and other noble men did absent themselues, not being far off from thence in armor, for the which the king was highly displeased: notwithstanding in Sommer following, they submitted themselues vnto the kings mercy, séeking his fauor.

Parliament at Salisburie.

Certaine men of this land, to the intent to trie what friends they had in England, craftily deuised that Edward the second king of England was aliue in the Castle of Corffe, but not to be séene in the day time, and therefore they vsed many nights to make fiers, & masking with dancing vpon the towres and walles of the Castle, which being perceiued by people of the countrey, it was thought there had béen some great king vnto whome they did these great solemnities: this rumor was spred ouer all England, to wit, that the old king was aliue: whence it came to passe, that the Earle of Kent sent thither a fryer preacher, to try the truth of the matter, who (as it was thought) hauing corrupted the porter of the castle with rewards, is let in, where he lay all the day in the porters lodge very close: and when night was come, he was willed to put on the habit of a Lay man, and then was brought into the hall, where he saw (as he thought) Edward the father of the king sitting royally at supper, with great maiestie. This Fryer being thus perswaded, returned againe to the Earle of Kent, and reported as he thought, what he saw: whereupon the Earle said and affirmed with an oath, that he would endeauour by all the meanes he could to deliuer his brother from prison.

K. Edward the second brusted to be aliue.

1328.

The same yere at the earnest request of some, the king held a Parliament at Winchester, where, by procurement of the old quéen, and Roger Mortimer,

Parliament at Winchester.

the said Earle of Kent, and many other noblemen and religious persons, to wit, the prouincials of the white Carmelite Fryers, and of the blacke preaching Friers, and Frier Richard Wilton were accused of conspiracie, touching (as it was said) the deliuerie of the kings father: which matter although it were but deuised fantasie and a mere lye, yet the said Earle for certaine confessions which he made, and for certaine letters which were found about him, was there beheaded. The other, to wit, the prouincials of the Predicants and Carmelites, were banished: but the bishop of London was set at libertie. Robert de Taunton priest, and some certaine Carmelite Friers and Predicants, were condemned to perpetuall prison. The death of the said Earle was the lesse lamented, because his family and seruants had aboue measure afflicted the Commons, in taking vp things (as they trauailed) at the kings price, paying nothing or very little for it.

Earle of Kent the kings vncle beheaded at Winchester.

An. reg. 3.

There was a Parliament holden at Nottingham, where Roger Mortimer was in such glory and honour, that it was without all comparison. No man durst name him any other than Earle of March: a greater route of men waited at his heeles, than on the Kings person: he would suffer the king to rise to him, and would walke with the king equally, step by step, and cheeke by cheeke, neuer preferring the king, but would go formost himselfe with his officers: he greatly rebuked the Earle of Lancaster, cousin to the king, for that without his consent he appointed certain lodgings for noble mẽ in the town, demanding who made him so bold to take vp lodgings so nigh vnto the quẽn: with which words the Constable being greatly feared, appointed lodging for the Earle of Lancaster one myle out of the towne: and like wise were lodged the Earle of Hereford, Iohn de Bohune of Essex, high Constable of England, and others. By which meanes, a contention rose among the Noblemen, and great murmuring among the common people, who said, that Roger Mortimer the Quẽnes Paragon, and the Kings Master, sought all the meanes he could to destroy the Kings blood, and to vsurpe the Regall Maiestie: which report troubled much the kings friends, to wit, William Mountacute, and other, who for the safegard of the King, sware themselues to be true to his person, and drew vnto them Robert de Holland, who had of long time bẽn chiefe kẽper of the castle, vnto whome all secret corners of the same were knowne. Then vpon a certaine night, the King lying without the castle, both he & his friends were brought by torch-light through a secret way vnder ground, beginning far off from the said castle, till they came euen to the Quẽns chamber, which they by chaunce found open: they therfore being armed with naked swords in their hands, went forwards, leauing the king also armed without the doore of the Chamber, least ẏ his mother should espie him: they which entred in, slew Hugh Turpinton knight, who resisted them, Master Iohn Neuell of Horneby giuing him his deadly wound. From thence, they went toward the Quẽne mother, whome they found with the Earle of March readie to haue gone to bedde: and hauing taken the said Earle, they ledde him out into the hall, after whome the Quẽne followed, crying, *Bel filz, bel filz, ayes pitie de gentil Mortimer*, Good sonne, good sonne, take pitie vpon gentle Mortimer: for she suspected

1329. Parliament at Nottingham.

Roger Mortimer apprehended.

that

that her sonne was there, though she saw him not. Then are the keyes of the Castle sent for, and euery place with all the furniture is yéelded vp into the kings hands, but in such secret wise, that none without the castle, except the kings friends, vnderstood thereof. The next day in the morning very early, they bring Roger Mortimer, & other his friends taken with him, with an horrible shout & crying (the earle of Lancaster then blind, being one of them that made the shout for ioy) towards London, where he was committed to the Tower, and afterward condemned at Westminster, in presence of the whole Parliament on S. Andrewes éeuen next following, and then drawne to the Elmes, and there hanged on the common gallowes, whereon he hung two dayes and two nights by the Kings commaundement, and then was buried in the Gray Friers Church. He was condemned by his Péeres, and yet neuer was brought to answer before them, for it was not then the custome, after the death of the Earles of Lancaster, Winchester, Glocester, and Kent: wherefore this Earle had that law himselfe, which he appointed for other.

The causes of his death laid against him, were these:

First, that he was consenting to the murdering of the Kings father.

Secondly, for that he had receiued a great summe of money, whereby the Kings honour was greatly abated at Stanhope Parke, where he gaue a signe vnto the Scots that they should flie.

Thirdly, for that he caused certaine auncient déeds and Charters to be brent, wherein the king of Scots stood bound vnto the king of England: and especially for that he had caused a contract to be made betwixt the Kings sister, and Dauid the sonne of Robert le Bruse.

Fourthly, that hée had vnprofitably consumed a great deale of treasure which he found in the kings treasurie, and in the treasurie of the Earles of Winchester and Glocester.

Fiftly, for appropriating vnto himselfe the wardes and marriages of all England.

Sixtly, for being an euill Counsellor to the king, and to the Quéene mother, and for being ouermuch familiar with her. There dyed with him his friends Simon de Burford Knight, brother to sir William Burford that was Iustice, and Iohn Deuerell Esquier, who was desirous to haue made open confession of the kings fathers cruell death, but he could not be suffered so to doe. Iohn Mautreuers was attaint for the death of Edmond Earle of Kent. Thomas Gurney, William Ogle, for murthering king Edward the second. Mautreuers restored the 25. of Edward the third, and the heires of Mortimer in the 28. of the same king.

King Edward, the bishop of Winchester, William Mountacute, and verie few others passed ouer Sea, like as they had bén Merchants, hauing with him scarse fiftéene horsemen. He left Iohn of Eltham his brother, Protector of the Realme. He returned againe about the beginning of Aprill, & then held a great Turniament at Dertford in Kent. The fiftéenth of June was borne vnto K. Edward his first sonne at Woodstocke, who was after named Edward the blacke Prince. The king toke into his hands all the lands assigned to his mother,

An. reg. 4. 1330.

Turniament at Dertford.

Edward the blacke Prince borne.

mother, and onely left her a thousand pound the yéere. About the feast of S. Mathy, there was very solemne Justing of all the stoute Earles, Barons, and Nobles at London in Cheape, betwixt the great Crosse, and the great Conduite nigh Soper Lane, which lasted thée dayes, where the Quéene Philippe, with many Ladies fell from a Stage, notwithstanding they were not hurt at all: wherefore the Quéene toke great care to saue the Carpenters from punishment, and through her prayer (which she made on her knées) she pacified the King and Councell, whereby she purchased great loue of the people.

Turniament in Cheap at London. Adam Meri. Rob. Auesberie.

Late Haruest. W. Shep.

Such a wet Sommer, with exceeding raine was this yéere, that the corne in the fielde could not ripe, so that in many places they began not Haruest till Michaelmas. The house of Crorton got not in their wheate till Hallontide, and their Pease not before S. Andrewes tide. The Monkes on Allhallown day, and Martlemas day, were serued with Pease grene in the cods, in stead of Peares and Apples.

Ann. reg. 5. 1331. King Edward held a solemne Christmas at Wels in Somersetshire, which he continued till the feast of the Epiphanie, where were many strange and sumptuous shewes made, to pleasure the King and his guests.

In the beginning of August, Edward Bailiol, sonne and heire to Iohn King of Scots, came into England, which Edward had bén before that time banished out of Scotland. At his comming, he declared what right he had in the kingdome. Henry Beamount Earle of Bohune, Gilbert Vmfreuill Earle of Angus, Dauid Earle of Athels, Richard Talbot, Ralph Baron of Staffordе, Fulx Fitz Williams, with many other noble men, affirming they had right of inheritance in Scotland, desired licence and ayde of the King of England, to recouer the said kingdome and lands due to them, but the King hauing regard of the peace lately made, and also for his sisters sake Quéene of Scots, would not suffer them to leade an armie through his land, wherefore the said Lords getting a Fléet of ships, entred the sea, and sayling toward Scotland, landed at Kinkhorne, where the Earle of Fife, and Robert Bruse, bastard son to Robert Bruse, with ten M. Scots resisted them néere vnto Dunfermeling: but the Englishmen put them to flight, and slew many. Afterward, to wit, on S. Laurence day, they had a sore conflict at Gledesmore, where two thousand Englishmen ouercame fourtie thousand Scots. By reason of the great throng of the multitude amongst themselues, fiue Earles, & many other were thronged to death. On the morow, the Englishmen toke the Towne of S. Iohns, well furnished with victuals.

Edw. Bailiol resigned the Crowne of Scotland to King Edward of England.

The seuen and twentieth of September, Edward Bailiol was crowned King of Scots, but afterward he resigned it to King Edward of England, and remayned vnder his protection many yéeres after.

Hospitall at Leicester.

Henry Earle of Lancaster and Leicester, high Steward of England, founded the new Hospitall by the castle of Leicester, wherein were one hundred poore impotent people prouided for with all things necessary.

Iohn Mandeuill.

Edward Bailiol, and the foresaid Lords and Nobles continued the warres in Scotland, vnto whome came many other Noble men of the Realme

of

of England voluntarily, seruing of their owne charges, and besieged Berwike.

The King of England gathered a great power, and besieged Berwike, which at length was yelded for want of victualles. During this siege, the Scots sought many wayes to remoue the same, leuying a great armie ouer al Scotland; but comming to the siege, they could not bring their purpose to effect, yet still prouoking the Kings armie to battell: whereupon at length the two armies appoynted to fight, and setting out vpon Halidowne hill, there commeth forth of the Scots campe a certaine stoute Champion of great stature, who for a fact by him done, was called Turnebull: he standing in the midst betwixt the two armies challenged al the Englishmen, any one of them to fight with him a Combat: at length, one Robert Veale Knight, a Norfolke man, requesting licence of the King, being armed, with his sword drawne, marcheth toward the Champiõ, mẽting by ẏ way a certaine blacke mastiffe Dogge, which waited on the Champion, whom with his sword he sodainly strake, and cut him off at his loynes, at the sight whereof the master of the Dogge slaine, was much abashed, and in his battell more warie and fearefull: whose left hand and head also afterward, this worthy Knight cut off. After this Combate both the armies met, but they fighting scarce half an houre, certaine of the Scots being slaine, they closed their armie (which was in three) all into one battell, but at length flying, the King followed them, taking and chasing them into lakes and pittes, for the space of fiue miles. There were slaine of them eight Earles, 1300. Horsemen, and of common souldiers 35000. at a place by Berwike, called Bothull, nere vnto Halidon.

Ann. reg. 6. 1332.

Challenge of combate by Turnbull.

Turnbull a chalenger ouercome in combate.

Battell at Halidown hill.

In the meane season the Scots had besieged the castle of Bamburgh, in which at that time the Quene was: but when they heard of the victorie aforesaid, they left the siege and fled. The townesmen of Berwike yelded to the King of England both the castle and the Towne, who placing garrisons there, he sent Edward Baliol, and other Nobles to kepe the Realme of Scotland. Earle Patricius, in the next Parliament holden at Yorke made fealtie, and did homage vnto the King by oath, who receiued of the King for yelding vp of Berwike vnto him, many honors and preferments: notwithstanding this Earle returned againe to rebellion, who holding Dunbar against the King, was besieged by William Mountacute Earle of Salisburie.

K. Edward wan Barwike.

This yere, William Elsing Mercer of London (obteining the Kings licence) made a new Hospitall of an old house of Nunnes by Creplegate within the wall of London, and placing Chanons Regular there, he became their first Prior, endowing the same with Lands for the relefe of the poore and impotent.

Elsing Spittle. Iohn Leylands Lib. Trinit.

Lewes de Beamount Bishop of Durham deceased on the 28. of September, and was buried at Durham, he builded a wall of stone about the citie of Durham, and a hall with a Chappel at Middleham, vnto him succeeded Richard de Bury by the Kings appointment.

Also Simon Mepham Archbishop of Canterbury deceased about the fourteenth of October, after he had sate fiue yeres, foure months, & was buried at

Canterburie. Unto whome succéeded at the kings request Iohn Stratford Doctor of Lawe Ciuill, Bishop of Winchester. And on the first of December, Adam de Orleton, first Bishop of Hereford, then of Worcester, was translated to Winchester.

Edward Baylioll King of Scots, held a Parliament at Galloway, to the which came the noblemen of England, and made claime for their lands and possessions which they had in Scotland, and so returned peaceably into their Countrey.

Ann. reg. 7. King Edward kept his Christmas at Wallingford, and immediatly after,
1333. the Quéene was deliuered of a daughter named Isabel at Woodstocke.

Parliament at Yorke. The King summoned a Parliament to be holden at Yorke, the same to begin on Monday the second weéke of Lent: to the which Parliament, the king of Scots (called Conquerour) although he were warned to be there, yet hée came not, but sent messengers to excuse him, to wit, Henry de Bellemount and William Mountacute Earles, and certaine other Barons and Knights, who signified, that the King of Scots Conquerour could not be there without great daunger, for that certaine Scottes lay in the Ilands readie to doe him domage.

King of Scots did homage. At the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, the said king of Scots Conqueror did his homage to king Edward of England at Newcastle vpon Tine, and not long after that king Edward toke homage of the Duke of Brytaine, for the Earledome of Richmont.

Parliament at London. In a Parliament at London it was told the king, that the Scots had taken Richard Talbot, and fiue other knights, and had slaine many footmen: wherefore the King toke a fiftéenth of the Laitie, and a tenth of the Cleargie, to the intent the malice of the Scots might be brideled.

Vniuersitie at Stamford forbidden. This yéere in the moneth of Nouember diuers masters and schollers of Orford withdrew themselues to Stamford, minding there to haue begunne an Vniuersitie, without licence of the King obtained in that behalfe: whereat the King being offended, did by proclamation vtterly forbid it, & suppressed it.

King Edward entred Scotland. King Edward went toward the Marches of Scotland, and wintered in those coasts, but vnderstanding that the Earle Dassels was traiterously turned to the Scots, and Henry Bellemount besieged by the Scottes, hée entred Scotland, and raised the siege, and then kept his Christmas at Rorborow, which castle he repaired. Presently after the feast of the Epiphanie, the Frech
Ann. reg. 8. King sent messengers to K. Edward, to wit, the Bishop of Aurenges, and
1334. certaine Lords, to treat a peace for the Scots, who waited for an answere in England till mid-lent, and then at Nottingham a truce was graunted vnto them till the feast of S. Iohn next comming, that in the meane time a Parliament might be holden of matters concerning peace, and the state of both the
Parliament at Yorke kingdomes: in which Parliament holden at Yorke, it was decréed that the K. should passe with his armie through Scotland, beyond the Scottish seas, the which thing was quickely perform'd & done: but the Scots desirous to fight a field, they feigned that they would haue peace, to obtaine the which, many came about the feast of S. Michael, and chiefly the Earle of Dassels:

where-

whereupon it came to passe, that afterward the Earle of Mozefe being taken prisoner at Edenbozough, was sent to be kept prisoner in England, and Richard Talbot was ransomed foz two thousand fiue hundzed markes, but the Earle of Dassels willing to shewe that he was truly reuolted to the king of England, rode against the Scottes at a siege of a certaine castle, and falling into the hands of his enemies, because hée would not yéld, he was slaine with thirténe of his men.

After the feast of Saint Michael, the king continuing still in the marches of Scotland, was daily entreated by messengers from the French king, concerning some peace to be made.

About the feast of S. Martine, Edward Bohune a noble man, was dzowned in the Marches of Scotland: foz as hée was dziuing a bottle of Cattell ouer a riuer, he felt himselfe in daunger, causing his guide to ride before him through the water, where through the smoothnesse of the stone whereon the water ran, his guide not being able to take sure footing fell downe, with his master being armed, and before any helpe could come, they were dzowned in the bottome of the channell. Edw. Bohune drowned.

Iohn Archbishop of Canterburie went ouer the Sea to Philip de Valoys King of Fraunce, requesting of him the continuance of peace and amitie betwixt the two kingdomes to be maintained. Secondly, that all townes and castles taken before time by his father, should be restozed to the King of England. Thirdly, that the said French King should sweare, neuer to giue aid to the Scottes against the King of England: vnder which conditions, the two Kings of both Realmes should prepare to trauaile towards the Holy Land, and to fight against the enemies of Christ. But the French King accounted the King of England not worthie of his friendship, so long as he continued warres against the Scots his friends, whome he said were iust men. Unto the second petition he would not otherwise consent thereunto, than if all charges were repaid againe which his father Charles de Valoys laid out in the warres of Gascoigne. Thirdly, he said, that he was a friend and louer of iustice and equitie, which he would neuer swarue from, neither for friendship, nor affinitie, but he would by all meanes he could, molest and vexe all breakers of the peace of the kingdome of Scotland: foz (saith he) there shall neuer be perfect peace and quietnesse among Christians, before the King of Fraunce sit in place of iudgement foz the right of the Kingdomes of France, England, and Scotland.

Upon Saint Clements night, through abundance of waters, but specially in the Thamis, all the cattell and beasts nére thereunto were dzowned, and the land made vnfruitfull by salt waters. High waters.

King Edward had a tenth of the Cleargie, and also of the Burgesses, and a fiftéenth of the Commons. *Ann. reg. 9.* 1335.

About the feast of Pentecost, he held a Parliament at North-hampton, where leauing the Prelates, States, and commons debating about matters, himselfe secretly rode to Berwike, and there taking with him a few men of armes, he went to Saint Iohns Towne, which he strengthened with trench Parliament at North-hampton. Tho. de la More.

and

Ro. de Auesbury. and rampire, and sent his Earles, with the king Conquerour, to make an inrode vpon the Countrey, and to see what Scots they could finde would resist them: but none durst abide their comming, but hid themselues in hilles, Woods, and Marishes, and in the meane time many Earles and Barons came, and submitted themselues to King Edward vpon conditions as followeth.

These be the poynts agréed betwixt the Councell of the Kings of England and Scotland on the one party, and Alexander Mowbrey, Geffrey Mowbrey, Godfrey de Roos, William Bullocke, and Eustace de Loreyne, hauing full power from Dauid Stravulgi, Earle of Dassels, and Robert Steward of Scotland, to treate, accord, and affirme all poynts enterparled and to be enterparled betwixt the said kings, and the Earle, and Steward, as appeareth by their letters patents of either partie.

First it is accorded that the said Earle Dassels, the great men, and all other of the communaltie of Scotland, which shall come in the same conditions, shall haue life and member, lands and tenements, fées and offices within Scotland, which they ought to haue by inheritance or right, those except, which shall be surprised by common assent.

Item, that they shall be pardoned of imprisonment, and of all manner trespasses by them done in the Realms of England and Scotland from the beginning of the world, vnto the date of these presents.

Item, the Earle Dassels, and Alexander Mowbrey, shall haue lands, tenements, possessions, and fées in England, which they had at their departure, after the homage done at Newcastle vpon Tine.

Item, that the franchises of the Church in Scotland shall be maintayned, after the auncient vsage of Scotland.

Item, that the lawes of Scotland in Borough Townes, & Shriuewikes, within the lands of the king of Scotland, be vsed after the auncient vsages and custome of Scotland, as they were vsed in the dayes of king Alexander.

Item, that the offices of Scotland be ministred by people of the same Nation, yet notwithstanding, that alwaies the king of Scotland may put such officers in as shall please him, of what nation soeuer they be.

Item, that all those that within the conditions of the Earle Dassels haue lands within the lands of the king of England in Scotland, shall haue againe the same lands, tenements, possessions, offices and fées, as they had them at their departure, after their homage done at Newcastle vpon Tine, except those that shall be excepted by common assent.

Item, that if they be empleded for their landes and tenements aforesaid, that they haue their defences and recoueries in Court where they ought to haue.

Item, as touching the demaund which the Earle Dassels claimeth, that the king of England ought to acquite his lands in England which he hath in gage for eight hundred markes, the king neither ought, nor will do it, but as touching the Manor of Byphingdone, which the said Earle laide to pledge for two hundred and fiftie pounds, it is accorded that if the said Earle do come within

one

one yeare, after the date of these presents, and will acquite the Manor, the king shall cause that he haue the same Manour.

Item, as touching the Castle and Landes of Chillam, it is accorded that the said Earle be in the same poynt that he was before at his departure, and haue his recouerie by lawe, and the king promiseth in good faith that he will cause that he may haue the land, without delaying either partie. And touching the lands which the sayd Earle claymeth to haue in Norfolke, of the which he hath charters, it is accorded that his charters being sæn of the kings Counsell, he will doe reason.

Item, that in case any man surmise treason vpon the saide Earle, he may defend himselfe by his bodie, according to the lawes and vsages of Scotland, and on the marches, and that all those that be within these conditions, haue the like graunt.

Item, as to the pardon which William Ramsey knight demaundeth for the trespasse by him done to William Lord Mountague, to wéete, for beating down his castle of Haghtordone, the same William shall be ready to doe according to that that shall be aduised by the kings of England and Scotland.

Item, that the said Stacie de Loraine haue his lands and tenements which he ought to haue within the Realme of Scotland, and if any man haue trespassed towards him, he shall haue his recouery by law. Written at Saint Iohns Towne in Scotland the 18. of August, *Anno* 1335.

Philip Quéene of England did beare her second sonne named William, at Hatfield, who shortly after died.

About the feast of the Epiphanie, the king and the Archbishop returned out of Scotland, to the buriall of Iohn of Eltham, Earle of Cornewall, brother vnto the King, who deceased at Berwike in the moneth of October, and was buried at Westminster. At which time, the king kept a Parliament at London, which began on the Munday after Saint Matthies day: and on the first Sunday in Lent, he made his eldest sonne Edward Earle of Chester, and Duke of Cornewall. He made also fiue other Earles, Henrie of Lancaster (sonne to Henrie Earle of Lancaster) Earle of Derbie, Hugh Audley Earle of Glocester, William Bohune Earle of North-hampton, William Mountacute Earle of Salisburie, William Clinton Earle of Huntingdon, Robert Vffurd Earle of Suffolke, to the which Robert he at that time gaue the Manor of Base-court, in the Parish of Saint Giles without Crèplegate of London, commonly called to this day the Barbicane, because in olde time the same had bin a Burgebening, or watch-tower for the citie.

An. reg. 10.

Parliament at London.

Dukes and Earles created.

W. Shepeshed.

Tho. de la More.

1336.

Barbican at London.

The same day, the king made twentie Knights, to wit, Sir Edward Mountacute, Sir Thomas Somerton, Sir Isle, Sir Darcy Richard, Sir Damnory, Sir Iohn Poultney, Sir de Mere, Roger Banant, Roger Hilary, Sir Bolingbroke, Sir Butterel, Sir Simon Swanland, William Scot, William Basset, Robert Sodington, William Zouches, Sir Cogshall, Roger Sangrauile, Thomas de la More mine Author, and Iohn Strache.

Wil. Shepshed.

K. Edward made knights.

Tho. de la More.

In the same Parliament it was enacted, that no woll growing within the Realme of England, should be transposed out of the same, but that it should

be

Wooll forbidden to bee conueyed ouer the Seas.

be made into cloth in England, and that all Fullers, Weauers, and Cloathworkers of euery degrée, being sufficiently instructed, and cunning in their Art, from what countrey soeuer they came into England, should receiue and enioy certaine priuiledges, yea and moreouer should liue at the Kings charges out of the Exchequer, vntill they had prouided commodiously to liue by their Art. Although this Statute séemed at the beginning to be nothing profitable, yet in short time the Art of cloathing encreased so much thereby, that it was twentie times more vsed than before.

Priuiledges giuen to Clothworkers.

Also it was enacted, that no man should after that time buy any cloth that was made beyond the sea, and that none should weare any Furres, but such as might dispend one hundred pound by yéere.

The 20. of March, the K. graunted by his Letters patents power to the Chauncellor of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, to receiue in his name yéerely the oathes of the Maior, Bayliffes, Aldermen, and Burgesses of the townes: which euer since hath so continued.

Tho. de la More.

After the feast of Saint Michael, a Parliament was holden at London, and a Conuocation was assembled by the Archbishop, wherein the Clergie granted a tenth for three yéeres, and the Commons a fiftéenth, in consideration of the Kings warres which was bot in Scotland, and also to resist the French King, who made great bragges, and shewed great crueltie, for he outlawed, slew, and imprisoned all Englishmen, and confiscated the goods and cattels of all that were found in his kingdome of Fraunce, threatning that he would be reuenged for his friends the Scots.

Ann. reg. 11.

Moreouer, he let not so much as one towne or castle in the Countries of Aquitaine, or of Poyters, that was not seized into his hands: whereupon king Edward sent into Brabant, to take vp all the woolles which Merchants had brought thither, and made sale thereof for ready mony. He also wrote letters to the French king, exhorting him, that he would continue his old amitie. Sir Walter Many being the Ambassador for the king of England, and desirous to reuenge the blood of two Englishmen that were slaine comming a land for fresh water, in a certaine Iland, called the Isle of Agnes, nigh vnto Flaunders, he caused all that he found in the said Iland to be put to the sword, and tooke prisoner the Earle of Flanders brother, who was captaine of the Isle.

1337.

Tho. Walsing. Men to the number of 3000. burnt in a Church.

Certaine of the Iland men being fled into a Church, were burnt to the number of three thousand, with the Church and all, by the Welshmen.

The warres being thus as aforesaid begun betwixt the two kingdomes, the rumour thereof came vnto the court of Rome, whereupon the Pope sent two Cardinals for the reformation and ordering of the peace betwixt the two kingdomes: who comming to Westminster, declared before the king the cause of their comming: whereunto the K. answered, that although without all reason they did séeme to restraine him of right and equitie, for that hée ought to succeed into the kingdome of his forefathers, the which his aduersarie Philip de Valoys did deny him, expelling, murthering, and imprisoning his people, and taking away the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and Earledome of Poyters without cause, maintaining the Scots and other rebels against him,

yet

yet these iniuries notwithstanding, he was contented if they could take order for the quiet enioying of Aquitaine, and other fees belonging vnto him, which his predecessors did enioy.

Moreouer, for the dismissing of all aid that the French king should giue vnto the Scots at any time of rebellion, for the which he offered his money, and also the marriage of his eldest sonne, and also to resigne all such rites and interest that he had to the kingdome of Fraunce.

The Cardinals being greatly comforted with this answere, departed, hoping that all warres were now ended. They tooke with them Iohn the Archbishop of Canterburie, Richard Bishop of Durham, & Geffrey Lord Scrope, who all together went on message with the Kings answere to the French king, hauing full authoritie to treat and conclude a peace.

These being so reasonable offers, could not pacifie the furious mind of the French King, who reposed great trust in the Scots, hoping by them, and through their meanes, quite to dispossesse, and to disinherite the king of England of all the title he had.

This yere on the 7. of October, King Edward began the foundation of his Colledge in Cambridge, that since was called the Kings hall, but now with Michael house, and Physicke hostell, all made into one by King Henry the 8. is called Trinitie Colledge. Kings hall in Cambridge.

Also this yere because of the warres with Fraunce, king Edward caused to be confiscated all the goods of the Priories aliens in England, that is to say, such Priories as were selles to any monasteries in Fraunce. He let out the Priories to farme, with all their lands and tenements, and rented them at his pleasure for the space of three and twentie yeres: in the which time diuers of those Priories were purchased of the king, made free, and againe (as it were) new founded by Englishmen, as Titburie in the Castle, and other: the residue not changed, were in the fiue and thirtieth yere of King Edwards raigne againe restored to their lands: as shall be shewed when I come to it. Priors aliens in England their goods confiscate. *An. reg.* 12.

The King tooke Woll, to a certaine number of sackes, at a low price in euery countrey: the number that was set vpon Staffordshire was fiue hundred sacks, price nine markes the sacke of good woll: but nothing was paid. First, the Woll was vniuersally taken. Secondly, for the halfe, in whose hands soeuer it were found, as well Merchants as other. And the third time the King tooke a fiftenth of the comminaltie, to be paid in woll, price of euery stone (containing fourtene pound) two shillings. 1338.

The King appointed also all the Corne and glebe lands to serue for his warres.

About S. Margarets day, king Edward, with Quene Philip his wife, and a great armie passed the Seas with a Nauie of fiue hundred saile of ships into Flaunders, and so to Cullen. Rob. Auesbury.

The fourth of October, fiftie Gallies well manned and furnished, came to South-hampton about nine of the clocke, and sacked the towne, the townsmen running away for feare: by the breake of the next day they which fled, by helpe of the countrey thereabout, came against the Pyrats, and fought with them: South-hampton sacked and brent by the French Pyrates.

them, in the which skirmish were slaine to the number of three hundred Pyrates, together with their Captaine a young Souldiour the King of Sicils sonne. To this young man, the French king had giuen whatsoeuer he got in the kingdome of England: but he being beaten downe by a certaine man of the countrey, cryed Rancon, notwithstanding the husband-man layd him on with his clubbe, till he had slaine him, speaking these words: yea (quoth he) I know well enough thou art a Francon, and therefore shalt thou dye, for he vnderstood not his speech, neither had he any skill to take Gentlemen prisoners, and to keepe them for their raunsome: wherefore the residue of those Genno wayes, after they had set the Towne a fire and burnt it vp quite, fledde to their Galleyes, and in their flying, certaine of them were drowned. And after this, the inhabitants of the town compassed it about with a strong and great wall.

The king still maintaining his warres in Fraunce, on the euen of the Annunciation of our Lady, eleuen gallies approching to the towne of Harwich, they cast fire therein: the force wherof, by a contrary wind was staied, so that no great harme was done thereby. Furthermore, in the same yere about the feast of Pentecost, certaine Pyrats of Normandie and Genoa (shipped in Gallyes and Pinnaces) made a shew on the Sea about South-hampton, as they would haue come aland, and threatned sore to spoile the towne againe, but perceiuing the townsmen ready to resist them, they returned to the Ile of Wight, but entred not, being put backe by the inhabitants: whereupon they sailed about the sea coasts, seeking to land in places lesse defended, and after came to Hastings, where they brent Fishers cottages, with their boats, and slew many men. Also they made great shewes many times against the Ile of Thanet, Douer, and Fulkestone, but in those places they did little harme, except to poore Fishermen: thence they sailed about to the hauens of Cornwall and Deuonshire, doing in all places much harme to the Fishermen, and such ships as they found vnmanned, they fiered. At length they entred Plimmouth hauen, where they brent certaine great ships, and a great part of the Towne: these were met by Hugh Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, a knight of fourescore yeres old, being accompanied with many souldiours of his countrey, who hauing lost at the first front a fewe of his men which were slaine by the quarels of the French, ioyned to fight with them hand to hand, and slaying many of the pyrates vpon drie land, chased the residue which fledde to take their gallyes, and being not able to come nigh them by wading, they were drowned in the sea to the number of fiue hundred. Newes being brought to the King lying in Brabant, that diuers Portes of England were spoyled with the Pirates, he declared to his friendes, to wit, the Marques of Iuliacense, and a certaine Cardinall, what great causes he had to reuenge himselfe vpon them, and in the end, was answered by the Cardinall as followeth.

The Frenchmen spoyle the towne of Plimouth.

The kingdome of Fraunce (saide he) is compassed about with a threede of silke, which cannot bee broken, by all the strength of the kingdome of England, wherefore my Lord king, you must stay for the comming of the Dutch-

men,

men, and other your friends and confederates, the greater part whereof you now lacke. The King taking great disdaine hereat, staying nothing at all, said, that he would ride into the land of Fraunce with banner displayed, and that there he would looke for that mightie power of the French men, and that he would either win the same against any man that should withstand him, or else honestly die in the field.

King Edward wintered at Antwerpe, where Quéene Philip was deliuered of her third sonne Lionel after Earle of Ulster. The king toke vpon him to be Lieutenant of the Empire from the Duke of Bauare, who helde himselfe as Emperour. K. Edward made Vicegerent of the Empire.

The first day of the assumption of our Lady, a suddaine inundation of water at Newcastle vpon Tine, surmounted the wall, and bare downe a péece of the Towne wall, a fire pearches in length néere to a place called Walknew, where 160. men, and seuen Chapleins and women were drowned. Li. f. Mari. ebo. Rich. South. Newcastle drowned.

In the Vigil of S. Matthy king Edward began to ride with banner displayed, and twelue thousand men of armes, against the French king, burning townes and castles whersoeuer he came. In the first night being very darke, Geffrey Lord Scrope one of the kings Justices, led one of the Cardinals, to wit, Bertrand de Mount Fauentine, of the title of our Lady, vp into an high Tower, shewing him the whole land about toward Fraunce, for the compasse of fiftéene leagues, to be in euery place on fire, (saying these words,) Sir, doth not this silken thréed wherewith Fraunce is compassed, séeme to you to be broken? the Cardinal answering nothing, fell down as dead for sorow and feare. *An. reg.* 13. King Edward inuadeth Fraunce. 1339.

In this sort king Edward made iourneyes into Fraunce daily, continuing the space of fiue wéekes, and caused his armie to trauell in such sort, that they destroyed the whole Countrey of Cambray, Tourney, Uermoden, and Landenew, excepting those Cities which were sworne to him, with Churches and Castles. The inhabitants of the Countrey fled, neither was there any man that durst resist his enterprises, although the French King had gathered great armies within the walled Cities, himselfe lying in the strong Towne of Saint Quintines, what time the Brabanders had determined to returne home againe, and were entred into their iourney, being forced thereunto, partly by want of victuals, and partly by the coldenesse of Winter which grew on fast.

The French King vnderstanding thereof, began to moue himselfe with his army toward the campe of the King of England, who gladly looking for his comming, called backe againe the Brabanders, and hauing receiued Letters from the French king, that he would ioyne battell against him, he sent him word backe againe, that he would stay for him thrée dayes, wherefore on the fourth day the king looking for the French kings comming, which would come no néerer them then two miles off, breaking bridges, and felling of trées, that the King of England might not follow him, hée fled to Paris, whereupon King Edward returned by Hanonia into Brabant, where he continued almost the whole winter.

This thirteenth yéere on the seuenth of September King Edward, at Marteine

William de la Poole made knight banneret for his good ſeruice to the king. Record.

teine in Fraunce, gaue vnto William de la Poole for the ſuccour of money frankely by him lent, and freely brought vnto him in the coaſts of Brabant, ſo as thereby his honour was preſerued, which otherwiſe was in daunger greatly to haue been embaſed, to be honoured with the Militarie girdle, appointing him to keepe, and continue the ſtate and honour of a Baneret: and he gaue him the manors of Burſtwike, and Skyp, with the appurtenances of two hundred and fortie markes, in part of fiue hundred marks land yerely, more conueniently to maintaine the ſame eſtate. And 200. markes, yerly to be receiued of the cuſtomes in the port of the towne of Kingſtone, vntill he were prouided of two hundred and threeſcore markes land of yerely reuenue. Finally, becauſe William had deliuered him, laying his owne goods and lands in gage, for recouering the kings right in Fraunce, the king graunted, that if he recouered the rights of inheritance in Fraunce, he would further within the realme of Fraunce (in ſome competent place) giue to him and to his heires, a thouſand markes ſterling by yere.

This W. was father to Michaell Lord Wingfild earle of Suffolk and knight of the Garter, who had iſſue Michael Earle of Suffolke, who died at Harflew 1415. left iſſue two ſons, Michaell earle of Suffolk that died at Agincourt the 3 of H. 5. without iſſue, and Will. Lord Marques and afterward duke of Suff. beheaded the 26. of H. the 6.

In this winter time, King Edward grewe into great friendſhip with the Flemings, who prepared at all times to ſhewe their ſelues as good ſubiects vnto him, ſwearing to doe homage and fealtie, vpon condition that he would call himſelfe king of Fraunce: and in token thereof, would from thenceforth giue armes with Floure deluces, for otherwiſe they durſt not obey him, for Deceit of the Flemings. feare of the Popes curſe, which was to be laid vpon them, if at any time they rebelled againſt the King of Fraunce. Wherefore by the counſell of the Flemings, and conſent of his noblemen, he agreed thereunto, and toke vpon him both the name and armes of the king of Fraunce. He alſo toke Flaunders vnder his gouernment, the people whereof long after in all matters were to him obedient, as vnto the king of Fraunce Conquerour. Touching the title and armes aforeſaid, the French King ſaid to certaine Engliſhmen ſent vnto him: Our couſin (quoth he) doth wrongfully beare quartered armes of England and Fraunce, which matter notwithſtanding doth not much diſpleaſe vs, for that he is deſcended from the weaker ſide of our kinne, and therfore as being a bachelor, we would be content to graunt him licence to beare part of our armes of Fraunce: but whereas in his ſeales and letters patents he nameth himſelfe as well king of England as of Fraunce, and doth ſet the firſt quarter of his armes with leopards, before the quarter of Lilies, it doth greeue vs very much, making apparant to the beholders, that the little Iland of England, is to be preferred before the great kingdome of Fraunce. To whom ſir Iohn of Shordich knight, made anſwere, That it was the cuſtome of men in thoſe dayes, to ſet the title and armes of their progenitors, before the armes and title of the right deſcending of their mother: and thus of dutie and reaſon (ſaid he) doth my Lord the king of England preferre his armes.

Sir Iohn of Shordich his anſwer to the French king.

King Edward being thus buſied, he kept his Chriſtmaſſe at Gaunt: the Mariners of the Cinque Portes, embarked themſelues in pinaces and ſmall boats well appointed, who after the feaſt of S. Hillarie arriued at Bononie vpon the Sea coaſt, the weather being ſo cloudie and darke, that they could ſcarſely be perceiued to be in the hauen: they went in the lower towne nine-

An. reg. 14.

teene

tæne galleys and foure great ſhippes, and twentie ſmall boates with all their tackling, and all ſuch houſes as were ſituate nigh to the ſea coaſt, amongſt which was one great houſe full of oares, ſayles, weapons, and other neceſſaries, ſufficient to furniſh ninetæne galleyes, and men for them: at the length in a ſkirmiſh betwixt the townesmen and the Engliſhmen, many of the land men were ſlaine.

About the beginning of Februarie King Edward returned into England, came vnto Gaunt, where the Quæne lay in childebed of her fourth ſonne named Iohn, he held a Parliament at Weſtminſter, wherein the Temporaltie graunted him euery ninth fleece of Woll, euery ninth Lambe, and euery ninth ſheafe of all ſortes of corne, and the Cleargie gaue him a new tenth. John of Gaunt. Parliament at Weſtminſter. 1340.

Immediatly after Eaſter, the Earles of Saliſburie and Suffolke, being accompanied but with a fewe men, gaue an aſſault vnto the Towne of Lile in Flaunders, which Towne was confederate with the French king, but they chaſing the Frenchmen too farre within the gates, the Percolices being let fall, they were beſet with a multitude of men of armes, and being taken, they were conueyed into France, fettered and ſhackeled with yron, although they had ſworne to be true priſoners: they were drawne in a cart through the middeſt of euery citie, towne, village and hamlet, with great houtes and cries, rayling on them: and at length being brought to the preſence of the French king, he would haue moſt ſhamefully ſlaine them, had he not been otherwiſe perſwaded by the counſell of the king of Boemia.

The ſeuenth day of May the king gaue to William Marqueſſe Juliers, and to the heires of his bodie, the Earledome of Cambridge, with the towne and caſtle, and twentie poundes by yeare in fee, and created him at Weſtminſter by the girding of a ſworde, whereof he alſo made him his charter with the gift of one thouſand pounds of yearely rent. Record.

King Edward kept his Whitſontide at Ipſwich, for that he intended from thence to take his paſſage into Flaunders, but being certified that the French king had ſent a great nauie of Spaniſh ſhippes, and alſo the whole fleete of France, to ſtoppe his paſſage, he cauſed his ſhippes of the Cinque Ports and other to be aſſembled, ſo that he had in his fleete great and ſmall two hundred and threeſcore ſhips.

Wherefore on the Thurſday before the natiuitie of Saint Iohn Baptiſt, hauing a proſperous wind, he began to ſayle, and the next day in the euen of the ſayd feaſt, they eſcried the French fleete lying in Swine hauen. Wherefore the king cauſed all his fleete to come to anker.

The next day being the feaſt of Saint Iohn Baptiſt, earely in the morning, the French fleete diuided themſelues into three parts, and remoued themſelues as it were a mile, approching towards the kings fleete. Great fight on the ſea, againſt the French.

Which when the king perceiued, about nine of the clocke, hauing the wind and ſunne on his backe, ſet forward and met his enemies as he would haue wiſhed, wherewithall the whole fleete gaue a terrible ſhoute, and a ſhowre of arrowes out of long wooden bowes ſo powred downe on the French men,

that thousands were slaine in that meeting, at length they closed and came to hand blowes, with pikes, pol-axes, and swordes, and some threw stones from the toppes of shippes wherewith many were brained.

The greatnesse and height of the Spanish shippes caused many Englishmen to strike many a stroke in vaine. But to be shorte, the French shippes being ouercome, and all the men spent of the first part, the Englishmen entred and toke them.

The French shippes were chayned together in such sort, that they could not be separated one from another, so that a fewe Englishmen kept that part of the fleete: wherefore they set vpon the second warde, and with great difficultie gaue the charge, which being done, was soner ouercome then the first, for that the French men leauing their shippes, many of them leapt ouer boorde.

The Englishmen hauing thus ouercome the first and second part of the fleete, and nowe hauing night drawing on, partly for want of light, and partly for that they were wearie, they determined to take some rest till the nexte morning, wherefore that night thirtie shippes of the third crewe fledde away, and a great shippe called the James of Diepe, thinking to haue carried away a certaine ship of Sandwich belonging to the Prior of Canturbury was stayed: for the Sailers so stoutly defended themselues by the helpe of the Earle of Huntingdon that they saued themselues, and their ship from the Frenchmen. The fight continued all the night, and in the morning the Normans being ouercome and taken, there were found in the ship aboue foure hundreth men slaine. Moreouer, the King vnderstanding that thirtie ships were fled, he sent fourtie ships well appointed to followe them, ouer the which he made Iohn Crabbe gouernor: but what good spede he had is not knowen.

In the first company of shippes that were taken they found these conquered shippes, the Denis, the George, the Christopher, and the blacke Cocke, all which shippes were taken by Frenchmen at Sluce, and carried into Normandie.

The number of ships of warre that were taken, was about two hundred and thirtie barges: the number of enemies that were slaine and drowned were aboue fiue and twentie thousand, and of Englishmen about foure thousand, among whom were foure Knights, Sir Thomas Mortimer the Kings cousin, Sir Thomas Latimer his sonne, Sir William Butler of Sextkorne, and Sir Thomas Poynings.

About the same time the Scots came with a great power into England, burning and spoyling all the Marches by fire and sword, and when they were returning with a great bootie of cattell, the common people set vpon them, toke their bootie, slewe many of them, and toke more then fourescore Scots of good reputation, whom they kept for ransome, for the which fact the Noble men of the Marches were highly displeased.

The French assault the Ile of Wight.

About Lammas certaine French pirats gaue an assault to the Ile of Wight and sodainely entred it, but Sir Peter Russell Knight, meeting them with the people of that Ile, put them backe againe, and made them to flee,

slaying

slaying many of them, in the which skirmish the said Knight was wounded whereof he died. These pirats sayled thence toward the coast of Deuonshire, and comming to Teignmouth, they set fire on the towne and brent it: from thence they sailed towards Plimouth, which towne was so defended, that they could not hurt it, but brent the farmes and faire places nigh adioyning, and toke a Knight prisoner, whom they carried with them.

The same yeere King Edward besieged Tourney, but vpon intreatie made by the French, a truce was taken from Michaelmas till Midsummer, wherefore the King comming to Gaunt in Flaunders, stayed there, looking for money out of England, which came not. King Edward besieged Tourney.

King Edward with eight of his men, saying that he would ride abroade for his pleasure, secretly came into Zeland, where taking shippe, after he had sayled three dayes and three nights, on S. Andrewes day at night about the Cocke crowing, he entred the Tower of London by water, being waited on by the Earle of Northampton, Nicholas Cantilopo, Reignalde Cobham, Giles de Bello Campo, Iohn de Bello Campo Knights, William Killesby, and Phillip Weston priests: earely in the morning he sent for his Chancellour, Treasurour, and Iustices then being at London, and the Bishop of Chichester being his Chancellour, and the Bishop of Couentry his treasurour, he put out of office, minding also to haue sent them into Flaunders, to haue bene pledges for money he owed there: but the Bishop of Chichester declared vnto him what danger might insue to him, by the Canons of the Church: whereupon the King dismissed them out of the Tower: but as concerning the high Iustices, to wit, Iohn Lord Stoner, Robert Lord Willowby, William Lord Scharshell, and especially Nicholas de la Bech, who before that time was Lieutenant of the Tower of London, and Sir Iohn Molens Knight, with certaine marchant men, as Iohn Poulteney, William Poole, and Richard his brother, and the Chancellours chiefe Clearkes, to wit, Maister Iohn de Saint Paul, Michell Wathe, Henry Stafford, and certaine of the Exchequer, as Maister Iohn Thorpe, with many other moe, the King commaunded to be imprisoned, some in one place, some in an other, neither would he suffer them to be discharged thence, till he were throughly pacified of his anger conceiued for not sending the mony which should haue serued at the siege of Tourney. King Edward returned secretly into England, and entred the Tower by night. Will. Poole and Richard his brother.

This yeere about Christmas, Henry Bishop of Lincolne, and Geffrey Lord Scrope, chiefe Iusticiar to the King and his chiefe Counseller died at Gaunt.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Gildford, and after that a great Iusting at Reding. *An. reg. 15.*

Also at Candlemas he kept a great iusting at Langley, for the honour of the Noblemen of Vasconia, which he trained vp there in feates of warre. He made Robert de Bourser Knight Lord Chancellour of England, and Robert Parnike Knight treasurer, the one to succeede the other. Also he sent out Iusticiars that should sit in euery shire, to enquire concerning the collectours of the tenths and fiftéenths, and of wooles, and to ouersée all officers. And because the Citie of London would not suffer that any such officers should sit as Iustices within their Citie as inquisitours of such matters contrary to their Iusting at Reding and at Langley. Iustice of Trailbaston, forbidden to sit in London.

liberties, the King prouided that those Iustices should hold their Sessions in the Tower of London, to make inquisition of the domages of the Londoners: but because the Londoners would not answere there, vntill their liberties
1341. were fully confirmed, neither any such confirmation could be had either of the King, or his Chauncellour touching Writtes and Charters in the Tower, there rose thereof such a great tumult, that the Iustices appointed there to sit, fained that they would holde no Session, till after Easter. Whereupon the King being highly offended for the said tumult, and desirous to knowe the names of them that had raysed it, could not vnderstand but that they were certaine meane persons, who claimed their liberties: whereupon the King being pacified of his troubled minde, forgaue all the offences committed by the Londoners, the Iustices breaking vp all their sitting touching the said place.

Parliament at London. This yeare within the quindene of Easter a parliament was holden at London, wherein the Earles and Nobles of the realme, with the commons requested, that the Charter called *Magna Carta*, and *Carta Foresta*, with all other liberties belonging to the Church and kingdome should be obserued, and that the officers and chiefe rulers of the Kings house should be chosen by the peeres of the realme, in the parliament: but these petitions the King would not confirme, nor could abide to heare talked of.

About the beginning of the moneth of July, King Edward receiued letters from Lodowike Duke of Bauary, vsurper of the Romane Empire, in the which pretending friendship betwixt him and Philip the French King, he signified that those warres which the King of England had begun in France, did greatly mislike him, and therefore desired that there should be concord and amitie betwixt the Kings of both realmes, the which to be performed, he offered to bestow some labour, requesting King Edwards letters of authority therof to treate and to conclude a truce for one yeare or twaine, toward the end of which letter he addeth these words: The deputation and lieutenant ship which we gaue vnto you, we doe for diuerse and sundry causes reuoke againe. Dated at Frankeford the fouretéenth of June in the seuen and twentieth of our raigne, and of our Empire the fouretéenth. To the which letters, King Edward wrote an inscription, in forte as followeth.

To the renoumed Prince Lodowike, by the grace of God Romane Emperour, alwayes Augustus, Edward by the same grace King of France and England, Lord of Ireland &c.

Ann. reg. 16. King Edward kept his Christmasse at Kenington beside Lambeth.

1342. This yeare Iohn Maluerne, Fellow of Oriall Colledge in Oxford, made and finished his booke entituled, The Visions of Pierce Plowman.

Tho. de la More. King Edward gaue the Earledom of Cambridge to Iohn Lord Henault, vncle to Quéene Phillip, and after kept his feast of S. Katherine at Newcastell, and his Christmasse also. Vntill this time Dauid King of Scots threatned to

K. Edward entred Scotland. leuie an armie, and to enter the land, whereupon King Edward entred Scotland, and followed after Dauid, who fled before him beyond the Scottish sea, wasting and spoyling all as he went, except Castles and Parishes, in the which the Scottes together with Dauid their King hidde themselues. And

William

William Mountacute Earle of Salisburie, hauing gotten a great fléete, entred an Iland belonging to Scotland, where most victoriously he conquered it, and the same Ile being called the Ile of Man, the King gaue it to the conquerour frankely and freely to be possessed, and caused him to be called and crowned king of that Ile. Then king Edward returning towards the south parts, kept solemne turneaments at Dunstable, being accompanied with two hundred and thirtie knights.

Will. Mountacute Earle of Salisburie, conquered, and was crowned King of Man.

The same yeare was a Parliament at Westminster, wherein the Archbishop of Canterbury, was reconciled to the king, before whom the Archbishop sware that although the king by his counsell and consent had done homage to the French king for the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and the Earledome of Poyton, yet he neuer consented thereto as to be any hurt or prejudice to the king, or that by his counsell he might incurre fauour, or séeke to please the French King, but for that present time he thought it best to be done, both for the obtaining of peace, and also for the profite of the king and realme.

Parliament at Westminster.

After this Parliament the king commanded florences of golde to be made at the Tower of London, that is to say, the penny of the value of fiue shillings eight pence, the halfe penny of the value of three shillings foure pence, a farthing worth twenty pence.

Florences of golde.

In a Parliament at Westminster, in the moneth of May, the religious men that were possessours of lands, granted to the king, towards the maintenance of his warre, all their iewels and plate, aswell siluer as golde, horses, carts and wagons, whereupon the kings treasure was notably enriched. *Ann. reg.* 17. 1343.

The same yeare authoritie was giuen to the kings escheters, to enquire and certifie the Counsell of all such persons, which helde of the king any lands *in capite*, or by any other fée, to the value of one hundred shillings, and that the names of all such should be enrolled and giuen vp for record. Also certaine other were put in authoritie to signifie how many sufficient and able bowemen were in euery shire: also what other sufficient men were able to beare armour for the defence of their Countrey, and to sée them practised with such kind of weapon wherein they had best skill: and being thus assembled in all parts of the realme, specially such as were of lawfull age, commaundement was giuen out, that they should be ready at the kings commaundement to fight against their enemies.

A generall suruey of the whole realme of England.

King Edward and his nobles perceiuing the derogation that was done to the Realme by such reseruations, prouisions and collations of benefices, as the Pope practised here in England, wrote to him, requiring, that sith the Churches of England had béen founded and endowed by noble and worthie men, to the ende the people might be instructed by men of their owne language, and that hée being so farre off, could not vnderstand the defaultes, yet his predecessours, and he more then had béen vsed, by diuers reseruations, prouisions, and collations made to diuers persons, some strangers, yea, and some enemies to the Realme, whereby the money and profites were carried forth, their cures not prouided for, according to the founders minds, they therefore vpon due considerations signified to him, that they

Ro. de Auesbury Gual. Hemingford.

could not suffer such enormities any longer, and besought him to revoke such reservations, provisions and collations wholy, to avoyde such slanders, mischiefes and harmes as might ensue, and that the cures might be committed to persons méete for the exercises of the same, beséeching him further without delay to signifie his intention, sith they meant to bestowe their diligence to remedie the matter, and sée that redresse might bée had. Giuen in full Parliament at Westminster, the eightéenth of May, in the yeare of our Lord 1343.

Many being called to ayde the King against the Scottes, but not being ready, they contributed their money, wherewith the King might hire souldiours in place of them that remayned at home. This yeare saith one written booke in French, K. Edward held a great feast at Windsor of 300. knights, and as many Ladies, with great outrage of expences and costs.

Ann. reg. 18. 1344. Tho. Walsing. Round table at Windsore.

King Edward caused to be called together a great many of Artificers, to the Castell of Windsor, and began to build an house which was called the round Table, the flooze whereof, from the Center or midde poynt into the compasse, was an hundred foote, and the whole Diameter two hundred foote, and the circumference thereof is fiue hundred foote and three quarters.

Round table in Fraunce. Sca. cro.

The same time Philip de Valoys King of Fraunce, builded a round Table in his Countrey, to the end that he might allure the men of Warre of Germanie and Italie, and so to keepe them from the King of Englands round Table.

Tho. de la More.

King Edward in succour of Iohn Mountfort Duke of Brytaine, and of his wife and children, who then remained in the kings custody, sent the Earles of Northampton, and of Orford, Hugh Spencer, and Richard Talbot knights, and Master William Killesby Clearke, euery one of them hauing vnder them many men of armes and archers, into Brytaine, who entred thereinto, in despight of all their enemies which resisted them, making many conflicts. They tooke as well walled townes as other, with diuers fortresses and castles, both by assault and surrender, by which meanes they had the whole countrey vnder their subiection, conquering till they came to the towne of Nozleis, where

Battaile at Nozleis.

Charles de Bloys met them with a great army. Therefore in the champaine ground nigh vnto Nozleys, the two armies made great and most stoute battell, wherein the worthinesse of both sorts did full well appeare: for they fought so stoutly, that in the first conflict it chaunced as the like had not béen séne: for the chiefe Captaines, Charles de Bloys, to whome the French King had giuen the Dukedome of that countrey, and William de Bohune Earle of Northampton, who for the defence of the right of Iohn de Mountfort, naturall heire and Duke of that land, the King of England had made a Generall ouer the armie of the Englishmen, fought so long with hand strokes in the fielde that day, that no man but a liar could giue more praise to the one then to the other. Three times that day they being wearied on both sides, withdrew themselues to take breath, and then fell to it againe with speare and shield, and sword and target: but in the end the right worthie and stout Charles de Bloys, his men fléeing away, was also forced to flée himselfe, whereupon

whereupon after many slaine on both sides, the victory fel to the Englishmen.

King Edward sent ouer Henry Earle of Derby, sonne to the Earle of Lancaster his cousin, with more then fiue hundred men of armes, amongst whom was the Earle of Penbroke, and Walter de Many, with many Archers into Gascoigne, with Ralph Baron of Stafford Seneschall of Gascoigne, who being come thither, the said Earle made fifty knights of his army, and after wan many walled townes and castles, making many worthy skirmishes, and at length wonne the Towne of Daguilowne by assault, to the keeping whereof they appointed Ralph Stafford, after ward they appointed three iourneyes toward other Townes, as especially to Bigerecke (so called for the strength thereof, and also called the chamber of France) and also to the towne of Saint Iohn de Laruell, and to many other great and strong Townes well fortified, which with great toiles and diuers dangerous assaults they wan: where the Earle of Derby and his souldiours vndermining the towers and walles of the said towne, were very sore assaulted by them which defended it. *An. reg. 19.* Ro. Auesbury. 1345.

Thus he conquered cities, townes, castles and fortresses, to the number of one hundred and fiftie, bringing a great part of Gascoigne vnder subiection, euen to Tolouse, vnto the which citie he did no domage, neither to the inhabitants thereof, but that he made them wonderfully afraide: as certaine of them tolde me (saith my author) their feare was such, that the religious people were constrained to beare armour, and the Prior of the Carmelite Friers of our Lady of Tolouse, hauing a banner of our Lady in golde set in a fielde of siluer, displayed the same, prouoking thereby many to take armour. Tho. de la More.

About the second sunday in Lent, the earles being fully fraught with booty, prisoners, gold and siluer, they returned towards Burdeaux, where Iohn de Valoys, eldest sonne to the French king, being accompanied with a great number of hyred Dutch souldiours, besieged the towne of Aguilowne, and the captaines thereof the Earle of Stafford and other, so entrenched the same Towne, that without great daunger the Englishmen could haue no accesse vnto them, but the Earle of Derby beate away them that besieged the Citie, and eftsones new victualled the same, notwithstanding they were not able to raise the siege, because they had so intrenched themselues without the towne, who refusing to fight in the field, would answere, that they came not to pitch a fielde, but to besiege a Towne, wherefore they continued the same siege vntill the decollation of Saint Iohn, but vnderstanding then that the King of England chased his father Philip very sore to Cressie, and fearing that he should come very late to the ayde of his father, he gaue vp the siege, setting all his tents on fire, and fled in the darke, but the Earle of Stafford with his power pursued them, cut off their taile, toke a great many of their horses, and returned.

After this certaine bow-men are mustered in England, appointed to be sent ouer sea, who comming ouer, are layde in garrison for defence of the countrey. Also twentie thousand sackes of woll are graunted to the King. Moreouer, Geffrey de Harecourt a Norman, came to the King requiring ayde against the French King, who wrongfullie with-helde his landes from him: 20000. Sacks of woll granted to the king.

him: at his firſt comming he did fealtie, and ſware homage to King Edward, but afterward he revolted.

Richard de Burie, Biſhop of Durham deceaſed. Thomas of Hatfield ſucceeded.

Richard de Bury deceaſed at Aukland, when hee had ſate Biſhoppe of Durham eleuen yéeres, two moneths, and odde dayes, and was buried at Durham, vnto whome ſucceéded Thomas of Hatfield the Kings ſecretary, by meanes of the Kings letters to the Pope: And when certaine of the Cardinalles ſaide, that the ſaide Thomas was a light perſon, and a lay man: the Pope aunſwered, truely, if the King of England at this time had made his requeſt for an aſſe, hee ſhould haue obtained it. But Richard Bury is ſomewhat to bee remembred for example to other, hee was borne néere Saint Edmundsbury, by his father Sir Richard Angarvill Knight, and his vncle Sir Iohn Willowby his gouernour he was firſt ſet to Grammar ſchoole, and after ſent to Oxford, from whence hee was called to teach Edward of Windleſore then Prince: afterward this Richard was made principall receiuer to Edward the ſecond in Gaſcoigne, at ſuch time as yong Edward with his mother fledde to Paris, whoſe expenſes beginning to faile, the ſaid Richard came to them priuily with a great ſumme of money, for ỹ which cauſe he was purſued to Paris where he lay hid in a ſteéple by the ſpace of ſeuen dayes. After this he was made Cofferer to Edward the third, then treaſurer of the Wardrobe, then clearke of the priuie ſeale by the ſpace of fiue yéeres, in the which time, twiſe he went to Pope Iohn. In the fiue and fortieth yéere of his age he was conſecrated Biſhop of Durham, then was he made Treaſurer of England, and after Chancellour, ſince the which time he was ſent thrife to the French King to claime the kingdome of France, and after that, to Antwerpe and other places in Brabant in embaſſage by the ſpace of nine yéeres, he was greatly delighted in the company of Clearkes, and had alwayes many of them in his family, among whom were Thomas Bradwardine, afterward Archbiſhop of Canterbury, Richard ſitz Ralph Archbiſhop of Armacham, Walter Burley, Iohn Mandit, Robert Holcot, Richard Kilwington, all of them doctors of diuinitie, Richard Wentworth or Benworth Biſhop of London, and Walter Segraue Biſhop of Chicheſter euery day at his table, he was accuſtomed to haue ſome reading: and after dinner daily he would haue diſputation with his priuate clearkes, and other of his houſe, except ſome vrgent cauſe had let him. At other times he was occupied, either in ſeruice of God, or at his bookes, weékely he beſtowed for the releſe of the poore eight quarters of wheate made into bread, beſides the ordinary fragments of his houſe. Moreouer, in comming or going from Newcaſtell to Durham, he beſtowed ſometimes twelue markes in almes, from Durham to Stockton eight markes, from Durham to Aukland fiue markes, from Durham to Middleham an hundred ſhillings, &c. He was ſo delighted in Bookes, that he had more (as was thought) then all the Biſhops of England beſides, he beſtowed many rich ornaments on the Church of Durham, he builded an hall or houſe in Oxford, indowing it with reuenues needefull for his ſcholliers. And alſo prouided in a library great ſtore of Bookes, for the vſe of the whole Vniuerſitie, as the ſaid Biſhop writeth himſelfe in his booke entituled, Philobiblos,

Chapleins to the Biſhop of Durham, and their exercíſe.

Charitie of Richard de Bury.

and

and appoynted the maisters of the Hall to assigne fiue scholers for keeping of the common library, &c. Common library in Oxford.

The same yeere died Adam Tarleton Bishop of Winchester that had been long time blinde, after whom succeeded William Edendon treasurer of England.

This Edendon founded the monestery of Edendon, the religious brethren whereof were called Bonhomes. Lib. Edendon.

The same yeere died Henry Earle of Lancaster, father to Henry Earle of Darby, and was buried at Leicester, in the monastery of chanons, the King and both the olde and yong Quenes being present, with Archbishops, Bishops, Earles and Barons, in manner of all the land, whose sonne was then in Gascoine doing chiualrious acts. Henry Earle of Lancaster deceased.

This yere the Scots, to the number of thirtie thousand, William Dowglas being their leader, entred into Westmerland, and brent Carleile, Penreth, with many other townes, wherefore the Bishop of Carleile, with Thomas Lucy, Robert Ogle, and a great number, compassed them in the night season, and with lights and noise so disquieted them, that they neuer durst goe out for victualles, nor giue their bodies to slepe, but at the last Alexander Stragan stoutely prepared to goe out for victualles, whom the Bishop and Robert Ogle mette, and with a speare thrust him through the body, so that the Scots were sone after ouercome and slaine. Scots entred England. Scots ouercome.

The Earle of Northampton, and the other Lords in Britaine committed certaine castels wonne by them in Britaine, to the safekeeping of the faithfull captaines and souldiours, and then returned into England. *An. reg.* 20.

King Edward prepared to make a voyage into Normandy, his nauy being ready to transport him from Portesmouth and Porchester, with the Earles of Northampton, Arundell, Warwike, Harecourt, Huntingdon, Drenford, and Suffolke, the Bishop of Durham, and Maister William Killesby clearke, euery one of these leading a great army of souldiours well appointed, were embarqued, and waited for the winde, from the first of June, to the fift of July, and then hauing a good winde, they beganne to make saile with the number of one thousand shippes of burthen and pinases, and on the thirteenth day of July, they landed at Hogges in Normandy, where on the shoare of the Sea, King Edward made his eldest sonne Knight, and also Prince of Wales, and immediately the Prince made Knights, Mortimere, Montacute, Rose, and other. 1346. King Edward lapted into Normandy. Tho. de la More. Tho. Walsing. Ro. de Auesbery. The Kings sonne made Prince of Wales.

That night the King lodged in the towne of Hogges, and the next day the towne was brent by the army. Hogges in Normandy

The night following King Edward lodged in Percels, where he stayed fiue dayes, during which time, all the Countrey, with the Towne of Barbefleete, was by his men consumed with fire. From thence they departed to Meloigus, which they set on fire: then they went to Senet combe Mount, which is nigh the sea, and to Garantam, thence to Serius, and to Saint Lewes, passing along vnto the towne of Tourney, wasting all with fire, and that night the King lodged at Carmalin, then to Grin, being a religious house belonging

belonging vnto Cane, leauing nothing behind them vnspoyled.

Cane in Normandy besieged by Edward the third.

After ward they made an assault, and entred the City of Cane, making their entrance by a bridge which was strongly defended.

There was slaine an hundreth three and fourtie knights, among the which was taken the Earles of Ewe, and Camberlin de Tankeruill, with diuers other captaines, and of them of the Citie, were slaine aboue one thousand three hundred.

At this Citie the armie remained fiue dayes, and the spoile thereof they sold to those mariners which followed the coast as the king went. Then they went to the monasterie in the Towne of Toward, a verie strong thing, and well defended. After ward, they came vnto Argons by night, burning still as they went, till they came to the Citie of Licens, where they found the Cardinalles of Clarimount, and of Naples, and one archbishop, who offered the king a treatie of peace, and there the king continued three dayes, refusing to treate of peace. Then they went to Lassentnoland, and to the Towne of Byne, and lodged at New Burge, and after at Seleleke vpon Sayne, and there the Welchmen swamme through the water of Segan, and being resisted by the inhabitants, they slewe many of them. Then they passed nigh to the towne and Castell of Pount Darch, being strong places, and not assaultable. This night he lodged at Lury vpon Segan, nigh vnto the good Towne of Louars, which they did burne. After, they passed by the towne and castell of Gallon, which they toke, and brent, and lodged at Lingeule, which is nigh the good towne and Castle of Aernon, which they touched not, and there they first entred into Fraunce, and the same night they brent the Castell of Roche Blanch, which standeth on the other side of Segan, and lodged at Fremble vpon Segan. After that they passed by the Towne of Paunt, lodging that night at Dpozne. On the nert day they passed to Frigmas, and the nert day to the good towne of Poecie, where being a bridge to passe ouer the riuer of Segan, the French had spoyled it, but the king caused it to be redified: and the nerte day they came to Amias, where were three Armies appointed to kepe the king from passing that way: but he slew three hundred of them at the first charge, put the residue to flight, and spoyled their tentes, burning three hundreth and two cartes and wagons laden with crossebowes, quarrels, armour and victualles: the king staying there two dayes, they went to Gresile nigh vnto Pountoys, then to Antell: the nert day they passed by the Citie of Wenneys, which they touched not, and so by Trosolours at the water of Some, where they lodged.

The nert day they wanne the towne of Poys, and brent the castell. From thence they went to Aregnus, then to Achen, where they lodged. The nerte day they came to Noell vpon the sea side, the French men of Dabuile and the countrey came to the fordes side to hinder their passage, with whom the king had a sore conflict, but the enemies were put to the worse, and more then two thousand slaine, and the Towne of Croytoy taken and brent, and aboue three hundred Germaines slaine.

The nerte day they followed the king on the riuer of Some, and on the banks

banks side (where the King with his hoste were lodged) came traueling Philip de Valoys the French King, with the Kings of Boheme and Palegre, leading an armie of men innumerable, diuided into eight great battelles. King Edward sent to the French King, offering him free passage ouer the fourde, if he would come and chose a place apt to fight a field in, but this Phillip went to another place of passage. Th. de la More.

On the morrow King Edward remoued to Cressield, where the armie of the French King met him. The King therefore set his sonne the Prince of Wales to gouerne the vaward. The middle warde the earle of Northampton. The third he toke to guide himselfe. Battell of Cressy.

The armie of the Frenchmen were deuided into nine troupes. The vaward was committed to the King of Boheme. The French King commaunded his banner called Oriflame to be set vp, after which time it was not lawfull vnder paine of death to take any man to saue his life. The French banner of oriflame signified no mercy more the fire in oile.

This banner, that it might differ from his standert, had in it lillies of gold very broad.

On the other side, King Edward cammanded his banner to be erected of the dragon, which signified fiercenesse and cruelty to be turned against the lillies.

These armies being thus appointed, stode in the fielde from one of the clocke vntill the euening. About the Sunne setting, after the armies had iusted, they beganne by the sound of Trumpets to giue signe of battaile, but they themselues felt the force of the English Archers, and as for their quarrels, they fell short a great way. Moreouer, their fotemen being placed among their owne horsemen, were by them (when they were gauled with the English shotte of arrowes) ouerrunne and troden vpon, that a great outcry was made as it were to the starres, and the whole forme of the array was broken, and they fighting with the English armed men, are beaten downe with polaxes.

In this so terrible a bickering, the Prince of Wales being then but fiftéenth yéares old, shewed his wonderfull towardnesse, laying on very hotely with speare and shielde. This battell dured thrée partes of the night, in the which time the Frenchmen gaue fiue great assaults against our men, but at the length they being conquered, ran away.

On the morrow, there came foure armies of fresh souldiours to the French side, and making semblance as though their part had suffered no harme, they came against the Englishmen, and gaue them a fresh battell. On the other side, the Englishmen withstood them very stoutely, and after a sharpe conflict they forced their foes to flie, and in chasing of them together with them that were slaine in the conflict, they slewe thrée thousand men in the said two dayes. There were slaine in the battaile of Cressie, the Kings of Boheme and of Maiorica, the Archbishop of Zanctinus, the Bishop of Noyone, the Dukes of Lozaine & Burbon, the Earles of Alanson, Harecourt, Aumarle, Sauoy, Nois, Mountbilliard, Stuars, and of Flanders, with the grand Prior of the hospitall of Fraunce, and 4000. men of armes, beside common souldiors without number.

The

The third day after, king Edward passed by the Abbey of Pountney, and the next day they came to the town of Pountney, & from thence to the Nunrie of Saint Ioice, and after they passed ouer a fourde, and came to Newcastle, where they stayed two dayes, and from thence they came to Calets, which presently they entrenched to besiege, being the fourth day of September.

King Edward besieged Calets.

The French king in this meane time sent a number of Genowayes, and other hired souldiours, vnto Dauid king of Scots, earnestly requesting him that he would inuade England with all his force: wherefore about the 7. of October, he with a mighty power entred England, passing along by Berwike, which was strongly defended by the Englishmen, and so ranging ouer the forrest of Alnewike, they wonne a certaine mannour place called Luden, belonging to the Lord Walter Wake, who yelded himselfe on condition to be ransomed, where (Selby a knight being desirous by law of armes to saue his life) he was taken, which when it was known to Dauid, he commanded him to be slaine: but Selby intreated for him, that he might be brought aliue to the presence of Dauid, who hauing obtained his request, he falleth downe before Dauid, requesting his life for ransome, but he was againe adiudged to die. The malice of the tyrant was such, that he commanded two of the children of the poore knight to be strangled in sight of their father, and afterwards himselfe being almost madde for sorrow, was beheaded.

Sir Walter Wake and his sonnes cruelly slaine by the Scottes.

From thence the Scots passed forward, walking aloug the Countrey, wherein were many farmes belonging to the monasterie of Durham, & comming within two miles of Durham, they toke certaine of the Monks, which they kept prisoners, for their ransome, making couenant with the residue for a certaine summe of money and corne to redeeme their mannours from spoyling. The Englishmen of the marches fleeing before the face of the enemie, William de la Zouch, Archbishop of Yorke, vicegerent to the king in the marches, calling together the bishop of Carleile, the Earle of Anguise, the Lord Mowbray, the Lord Henry Percy, the Lord Ralph Neuel, Ralph Hastings, with all their ayde, together with the archers of Lancashire, went towards the armie of the Scots, and on the euen of Saint Luke, met them at a place called Bewre Parke, neere Neuils Crosse. The Scottish nation not accustomed to flee, withstode them stoutely, and hauing head-peeces on their heads, and targets on their armes, preasing fore vpon the Englishmen, they abode the brunt of the archers: but the men of armes which were in the forefronts, gaue their enemies many deadly wounds. The Marshall of the Scottes, Earle Patrike, who had the charge of the rereward, when he perceiued his men to be beaten downe, he fled away with other that were priuie to his cowardlines: he being fled, the residue of the Scottes continuing faithfully with their king, stode about him like a round Tower, keeping him in the middle, who so continued till there was scarce fortie of them left aliue, of the which not one of them could escape away.

Battell of Durham.

At length Dauid their king valiantly fighting and sore hurt, an Esquire of Northumberland, named Iohn Copland toke him, who with eight of his seruants rode straite out of the field with the king, and so rode fifténe leagues

from

from that place, to a castle called Dgalus, the residue about him being taken or slaine, the Englishmen pursued the chase after them which were fled, slaying and taking them as farre as Pruddhow and Corbridge. In this great battell were taken Dauid de Bruse king of Scottes, the Earle of Mentise, the Earle of Fise, the Lord Maleolin Flemming, the Earle Mirton, William Dowglas, William de Lemingstone, Walter de Halliburton, Iohn Dowglas, Dauid de Anade, Iohn de Saint Clere, William Mowbray, Dauid fitz Robert, William de Ramsey, Adam Moygne, Iohn Steward, Roger de Kirkpatrike, Iohn Hume, and William Morrey Knights, Iames Sudelsloure, Iames Loren, Henry Delker Baronets. There were slaine in this battell the Earle of Mozise, the Earle of Straterne, also Alexander Stragy, Iohn de Halliburton, Henry de Ramly, Naso de Ramsy, Adam Nilkenson, Thomas Boid, Iohn Stiward, Allan Stiward, Dauid de la Hay, Edward Keth, Iohn Crawford, Iohn de Kindesey, Philip de Maldren, Henry Ramsey, Alexander Morey, Humfrey de Bois, Gilbert Inchmarten, Robert Maltallent, and his brother Humfrey Kirkepatrike, Iohn Strange, and Patrike Hearing Knights. There were many slaine in the chase, but there were no more coate armours found in the maine battell then we haue reckened.

King of Scots taken by Iohn Copland Esquire.

This battell was fought on the seuententh of October. The prisoners were conueyed to London about Christmasse, Dauid le Bruse except, which might not trauell by reason of two deadly wounds in his head with arrowes, but the second of Januarie he was brought vp, and conueyed from Westminster to the Tower of London, in sight of all the people, and there lodged in the blacke nooke of the said Tower, nere to the Constables guard, there to be kept. About the feast of S. Mathie the Apostle, the Earle of Fise was at Lond drawn, headed and quartered, his head set on London Bridge, his quarters set vp in foure parts of the Realme.

Iohn Copland, that tooke Dauid de Bruse king of Scottes at the battell of Durham (for so is it called in the Record) for his seruice, king Edward made him a banneret, and gaue him for his maintenance in that state fiue hundred pounds by yeare, after this manner, to wit, foure hundred poundes out of the custome of the Citie of London, and one hundred pounds out of his custome of the Towne of Barwike vpon Twide, vntill such time as fiue hundred pound lands by yeare were giuen to him and his heires for euer. And more for his good seruice with one hundred men of armes, one hundred pound the yere, out of the custome of the kings port of Newcastle vpon Tine, till the said Iohn had prouided for him and his heires one hundred pound land by yere.

Iohn Copland rewarded. Record.

While these things were done in England, the King was busied at the siege of Caleis, which Towne is situated in the marches of Artoys, being closed about with a double wall, and a double ditch, hard on the shore of the English sea, right ouer against the castle of Douer. And there is belonging to the same towne an hauen, wherein ships may lie very safe without danger. This towne was sometime with the castle thereof very strongly built by the force and valiantnes of the Romans, for after that Iulius Cæsar had brought all Fraunce vnder his subiection, he built Caleis in Artoys, and the castle of Chepstow

An. reg. 21. 1347. Tho. de la More. Caleis described.

Caleis builded by the Romans.

Caſtles of Chepſtow in Wales, & Douer in Kent, built by the Romans.

Chepſtow in Venedocia, or South wales, and the Caſtle of Douer in Kent, what time he had conquered Britaine (as ſaith mine author.) King Edward caſt a ditch about his campe, and laide his naule of ſhips againſt Caleis hauen, to the intent that the Frenchmen ſhould make no inuaſions vpon his ſouldiours, neither they within receiue any victuals by water. The Norman pirats at ſundry times toke 15. of his ſhips, whereof ſome of them they carried away for their owne occupying, the other they brent, and ſir Thomas Haclut, with ſir William Borton Knights, as they were ſailing into England, were taken priſoners on the ſea. King Edward hauing fortified the ſiege, lay without giuing any aſſault, knowing that it was not poſſible to fight with his enemies without great loſſe of men, conſidering the depth of the ditches, and height of the walles: neither would he erect any engines againſt the towne, for there wanted firme ground whereupon to place them. Beſides that, if he ſhould beate downe the walles, yet were the ditches ſo deepe, and full of ſalte water let in on euery ſide, that they were able to withſtand all the world, with little ſtrength and defence. On that ſide of the Towne on which the Bolloners were wont to victuall Caleis, that is along on the Sea ſide, and eſpecially when the ſhippes could not be ſuffered to paſſe by Sea, but alongſt the ſhoare with ſmall boates, the Earle of Northampton made a rampire, wherewith he kept away, & beat backe ſuch boates, & afterward when the Admirall of France had purpoſed to come with his ſhips of war to fight againſt our Engliſh ſhips that lay at the ſiege, thinking, ỹ in the meane time, whileſt they were in fighting, the ſmall boates ſhould paſſe to Caleis with victuals, the ſaid Earle of Northampton méeting with him valiantly, put him to flight.

A rampire builded at Caleis.

This ſiege during in ſuch ſort, from the feaſt of the Natiuitie of our Lady, all the whole winter, with a great part of the ſummer, and ſtill waxing ſtronger and ſtronger. On mondap next before the feaſt of Saint Iames, the French King came to the caſtle of Guyſnes, with his eldeſt ſonne Iohn, and the Kings ſonne of Boheme: and a great power, to haue remoued the ſiege from Caleis. Alſo the Emperour (promiſing by othe, that he would remoue the ſiege either by warre or peace, or at the leaſt, he would victuall them that were beſieged) came with his army towards the Engliſh campe, and lodged ſcarce a mile from thence, requeſting by meſſengers a treatie of peace. He ſent the Duke of Detenes, and the Earles of Bulone and Darminake, who parleing with the Duke of Lancaſter, the Earles of Northampton and Huntington, touching a truce, could not obtaine their conſent, whereupon after they had exerciſed a little warlike luſting, they returned to their Tents. The ſecond day following, the French king offered the king of England a day of battell, which the king on certaine conditions accepted very gladly. In the meane ſeaſon, they which were beſieged, made known their ſtate to ỹ French king by ſignes and tokens, for at his firſt comming, they within the Towne ſet vp his ancient on the chiefeſt tower of the caſtle, and alſo they ſet out banners of the Dukes and Earles of France, and a little after the ſhutting in of the euening, they made a great light on the top of one of the higheſt towers, which was towards the army of the Frenchmen, & therewithal they made a great

The French king came to raiſe the ſiege of Caleis.

The French king profered battell.

great shoute and noyse with trumpets and drummes. The second night they made the like, but somewhat lesse. The third night a very small fire, giuing forth therewith a sorrowfull voyce, signifying thereby that their strength touching the keeping of the Towne, was quite spent and done. And the same night they toke in all their flags and ancients, except their standart. At the last, the day of battell drew on, against which time, there came out of England and Dutchland, toward the helpe of King Edward 17000. fighting men, whereupon the French King betimes in the morning of the second daye of August, making fire in his tents, fledde, whose taile the Duke of Lancaster and Earle of Northampton cutting off, they slewe and toke many of them. The French King fleeth. W. Norwell.

When they of Calais perceiued this, they toke their standart downe, and with great sorrow cast it from the Tower, downe into the ditch, and on the Saterday following, Iohn de Vienna their Captaine, a man very skilfull in warlike affayres, opening the gates of the Towne, came out to the King of England, sitting on a little nagge, for that hee being lame on his féete could not well goe, with an halter about his necke, with the other burgesses and souldiours following on foote, bare headed, and bare foted, hauing halters about their neckes. Calais yeelded. The order how Calais was yeelded.

The Captaine comming thus before the King, offered him a warlike sworde, as vnto the chiefest Prince of armes amongst all Christian Kings, and as one that had taken that Towne from the mightiest Christian King by noble chiualry. Then he deliuered to him the keyes of the towne. Thirdly, he requesting of him pitie, asked pardon, and deliuered him the sworde of peace, wherewith he should giue right iudgement, spare and forbeare the humble and lowly, and chasten the proude hearted.

The King receiuing that which was offered him, sent the Captaine with fiftéene Knights, and as many Burgesses into England, enriching them with large gifts. The common sort of people, and such as he found in the Towne, being somewhat refreshed with the Kings almes, he commaunded to be safe conducted to the castle of Guisnes. Guisnes.

After the taking of the towne of Calais, the souldiers at the kings commandement toke the Manor of Marks and of Hop, and with great difficulty: they built in them Forts, setting in order where walles wanted, hoggesheds filled with stones against the enemies, whilest the walles were a building within. Immediatly after the taking of Calais, there began in those parts a generall pestilence of the flixe, comming from the east parts, into many other parts of the world, whereupon it came to passe, that a great multitude of people dyed. This pestilence gaue occasion that certaine Cardinals were sent on the behalfe of the French King, to craue a truce from that time, vnto the feast of Saint Barnabe next following, which was agréed vpon on the eight and twenty of September. Markes. Hop. Bloody flixe.

The truce being taken as afore is saide, King Edward built a Castle at Risbanke, betwixt the towne of Calais, and the hauens mouth, to the intent to kéep off al the enemies force of ships from the said town: & he made Captaine Castle at Risbanke builded.

of

K. Edward returned from Calais into England, not without great danger of drowing.

of the towne Sr Iohn Mongomery, and thence conueying the Queene and his eldest sonne, with a great company of noble men, he toke his iourney towardes England by water, and being on the Sea, he was beaten with such a Tempest, that he lost many of his ships, and hardly escaped himselfe, notwithstanding he came on land the fourteenth of October, and so to London.

An. reg. 22.

This peace being made, it seemed through England as a new sommer had followed, because of the plentie of all things, for there was no woman of any

Commodities of peace.

name, but she had some of the prises of Cane and Calais, or of other cities beyond the Seas, whereof the matrones being proud, did bragge in French matrones apparell.

1348.

At the feast of Easter, Iames Dowglas, who was taken at Durham in the warres, and brought to London with the king of Scottes, was licenced to depart home againe, swearing to the king peace and fealtie, who afterwarde liuing peaceably in the Marches, and being requested by William Dowglas to ride a hunting with him, was by him comming behind his backe most trayterously slaine.

After Easter, the King held a councell, wherein it was decreed that none of his seruants should take vp any victuals of any man against his will, nor but that he payd for it readie money, vpon paine to bee punished and banished the court, Richard Talbot high Steward of the Kings house being appointed to see execution of that proclamation.

The Earle of Flents was racked, arreigned, and conuicted, for that contrarie to his faith and homage sworne to the King of England, he did againe beare armes against him, and for that fact he was drawne, hanged, and quartered. To this councell came two Earles, and two clearkes sent from the Princes electors, signifying that their election was made to the King, for the

K. Edward elected King of Almaine.

dignitie of the kingdome of Almaine. These messengers the King receiued with due honor, but answered them, that he would not take so greate honour vpon his shoulders, vntill he had the crowne of France, due vnto him, in peaceable possession.

Iusting at Lincolne.

A little after Easter, there were great Iustings holden at Lincolne by the Duke of Lancaster, where were present many Ladies, with the Countesse, and also certaine messengers sent from the King of Spaine, for the lady Iane daughter to the King, that should be maried to their master the Kings sonne, whome her husband meeting, she died of the great pestilence, so that he followed her to the graue.

The same yeere, K. Edward with his eldest sonne the Earle of Warwike, and the bishop of Winchest. went to Calais, from whence the King sent the Duke of Lancaster to Denemere, to receiue in his behalfe fealtie and homage of the earle of Flanders, which thing was by the said earle performed. Iohn Stratford Archbishop of Canterburie deceased, vnto whom succeeded Iohn Vffard Doctor of Law.

Tho. de la More. Great Pestilence. Tho. Walsing.

There began amongst the East Indians and Tartarians a certaine pestilence, which at length waxed so general, infecting the middle regiõ of the ayre so greatly, that it destroyed the Saracens, Turks, Syrians, Palestinians, &

the

the Grecians, with a wonderfull, or rather incredible death, in so much that those peoples being exceedingly dismaid with the terrour therof, consulted a mongst themselues, & thought it good to receiue the Christian faith & Sacraments, for they had intelligence that the Christians which dwelt on this side the Grecish sea, were not so greatly (more then common custome was) troubled with sickneſſe and mortalitie. At length this terrible slaughter passed ouer into those Countries which are on this side the Alpes, and from thence to the partes of Fraunce, which are called Hesperia, and so by order along into Germany and Dutchland. And the seuenth yeere after it began, it came into England, and first began in the townes and ports ioyning on the Sea coasts, in Dorsetshire, where, euen as in other Countries, it made the Country quite void of inhabitants, so that there were almost none left aliue.

From thence it passed into Deuonshire, and Somersetshire, euen vnto Bristow, and raged in such sort, that the Glocestershire-men would not suffer the Bristow-men to haue any acceſſe vnto them, or into their Countrey by any meanes: but at length it came to Glocester, yea and to Oxford, and London, and finally it spred ouer all England, and so wasted & spoyled the people, that scarce the tenth person of all sorts was left aliue: when Church-yards were not sufficient and large ynough to bury their dead in, they chose certaine fields appointed for that purpose.

Gualter Mayny, Lord of Mayny, borne in Cambray, who serued in compa- Records of the Garter.
nie of Henry Duke of Lancaſter in his great acts of Gascoine and Guien, after this time made knight of the Garter in England, hauing a respect to the danger that might fall in time of this Pestilence then begunne in England, if the Churches & Church-yards in London might not suffice to burie the multitude, he purchased a peece of ground called Spittle Croft (for that it belonged to the Maſter and brethren of S. Bartholomews Spittle) conteining 13. acres and a rodde, without the barres of West Smithfield, & caused the same Regiſter of the Charter house Ex Carta.
to be enclosed, and dedicated by Ralph Bishop of London, in the which place in the yeere following, was buried more then fiftie thousand persons, as is af- Charter-house Churchyard by London.
firmed by the kings Charters which I haue seene, and also by an inscription fixed on a stone crosse in the same place. And in memorie therof, the same Gualter Mayny caused vpon the same ground a Chappell to be builded, & after founded the same to be an house of Charter-house Monkes, in the yeare. 1371. *An. reg.* 23.

Also about the same time, one Iohn Cory procured of Nicholas, Prior of the 1349.
Church of the Holy Trinitie neere vnto Aldgate, one toft of ground neere Ro. de Auesbury
vnto East Smithfield, for the buriall of them that died, that it might be called Charter-house at London founded.
the Church-yard of the holy Trinitie: which ground he caused to be enclosed, New abbey by the tower of London founded.
and dedicated by Ralph Stratford Bishop of London, in the which place King Edward the third, by consent of the said Prior and Couent, founded the abbey Lib. trinit Lond. Lib. Eastminſt.
of S. Mary of Grace in the yeere 1359. placing therin an Abbot and Monke of the order of Cisteaux, which were white monks, and named the place Eastminster.

All sutes and pleading in the Kings Bench, and other places for a season ceased.

Verie few noble men died, among whom departed Iohn Mongomery, and his Ladie: the Lord Cliſteles Captaine of Caleis died at Caleis, and was buried in the white Friers at London. Of the common people, together with Religious and Clerkes, there died an innumerable ſort, for no man but God onely knew how many. There died from the firſt of Januarie, to the firſt of July, in the Citie of Norwich 57104 perſons, beſides Eccleſiaſticall Mendicants and Dominikes. There was buried in the Church and Church-yard of Yarmouth, in one yeere 7052. men and women, before which time the perſonage there was worth 700. markes by yéere, and afterwardes was ſcarſe worth fortie pound the yéere. This note was certified to King Heny the ſeuenth in the 22. of his raigne, & the ſame is written on the gates of the Church of Yarmouth. This great peſtilence began at London about the feaſt of All Saints, in the yéere 1348. What time this peſtilence had waſted all England, the Scots greatly reioycing, mocked and ſware oft times by the vile death of the Engliſhmen: but the ſword of Gods wrath, flue and conſumed the Scots in no leſſe numbers, then it did the other. It alſo waſted the Welſh men, and within a while paſſed ouer into Ireland, where it deſtroyed a great number of Engliſh people that dwelt there, but ſuch as were right Iriſhmen borne, that dwelt in the hilly countries, it ſcarcely touched, ſo that few of them died therof. This plague continued ſometime in one place, ſometime in another, vntill the yéere of our Lord 1357. the ſame yéere for a truce or finall peace to be concluded, the Biſhop of Norwich, the Earle of North-hampton, the Earle of Stafford, Richard Talbot, Walter Mayny knights, ſailed ouer the Sea into Fraunce, whom the Frenchmen met peaceably, but they would not agrée to a final peace, vnleſſe that Caleis were reſtored to them againe, which would not be graunted: and the truce which was taken for a yéere was ſo continued. But the Earle of Flaunders, who would not in any caſe receiue conditions of peace, vnleſſe the French king were quite forſaken, notwithſtanding his ſolemne oath, not long after entred into Flaunders with a great power of Frenchmen, burning & killing where euer he came: but the people of the countrey with a few Engliſhmen withſtood him ſtoutly, and gaue him a ſore ſkirmiſh, in the which, beſide that many Frenchmen were ſlain, the earle himſelfe was forced to flie, for the which worthy acte, many knightes were made, among ſt the which was Iohn de Filebert, an Engliſh man.

Norwich. Reg. of Norwich Ant. eccle. Pri. Yarmouth.

In the feaſt of the Natiuitie of S. Iohn, the Quéene was purified at Windſore, where were ſolemne Iuſts, and running at the Tilt, at the which, Dauid king of Scots was preſent, and the Earle of Ewe, the Lord Tankeruill, Lord Charles de Valoys, and many other ſtrangers captiues, who by the kings licence were permitted to runne alſo at the Tilte, at the which paſtime the prize of the field was adiudged to the Earle of Ewe. After in Sommer ſeaſon, theſe ſtrangers paſſed their time in hunting, in the companie of the King, and other nobles of the Realme, at Claringdon in Wiltſhire nigh Saliſburie, and in diuers other forreſts.

Iuſtes at Windſore.

Whiles the king was thus occupied, the Frenchmen notwithſtanding the truce, entred the marches of Britaine, but the ſonnes of Sabatier, with a few o-

ther,

ther, who went out a forraging, toke Thomas Dagworth Knight, a man of great experience, who but with a few men, to wet fiftéen armed men, entred the wood against these robbers, & inuaded them, slaying to the number of three hundred, but at the length being stricken fiue times in ỳ face with quarels, al his men being first slain, he himself was thrust through ỳ body with a sword. Sir Thomas Dagworth slaine.

About the feast of Saint Michael, more then 120. persons of Sealand, and Holland, comming through Flaunders vnto London, somtime in the Church of Saint Paul, somtime in other places of the citie, twise in the day, in the sight of all people, from the loynes, vnto the hæles, couered in linnen cloth, all the rest of their bodies being bare, hauing on their heads hats with red crosses before and behind, euery one in their right hands a whip with three cords, ech cord hauing a knot in the middest, beate themselues on their bare bloudie bodies going in procession, foure of them singing in their owne language, all the other answering them. Ro. de Auesbury Adam Meri. A bloody procession of publicanes.

The same yéere the Earle of Lancaster, the Barons of Stafford & Greystocke, also the heires of the Lords Percy and Neuell, and the Lord Furniuall with Bartholmew Burwash, and diuers other, about the feast of all Saintes, passed ouer sea into Gascoigne, to delay the furious vprore that Iohn de Valois sonne to the French king had made in that Dukedome, greatly spoyling and wasting the same. Also the kings Counsel ordained, that none of the kings iustices during the time of their offices, should receiue any fée, gift, or reward of any man, except it were of the king himselfe.

Also this yéere in the Countie of Oxford, nigh vnto a Towne called Chippingnorton, there was found a serpent hauing two heads, and faces like women, one being shaped after the new tyre of that time: another after the manner of the old attire, and it had great wings, after the manner of a Flindermouse or Bat. Thomas Bradwarden Archbishoppe of Canterburie deceased, Simon Islip succéeded. A serpent with two heads in Oxfordshire.

About the feast of All Saints, king Edward being accompanied with the Earles of Lancaster, and Suffolke, and diuers others, passed ouer the seas into Flaunders, and thence leading his armie towards Fraunce, the Frenchmen made meanes vnto him to renewe their truce: and now the Earle of Flaunders submitted himself the third time vnto the kings mercie & dominion. Then the king returning toward England, to solemnizate the translation of Saint Thomas the Confessour and Bishop of Hereford, did with his presence and Nobilitie honor the same, to the great expences of Nicholas Cantulupus Baron, and cousin to the said Saint Thomas: during which feast and solemnitie, it was signified to the king by the Secretaries of Emericus of Padua, who was a feed man to the king of England, that on the fourtenth day of Januarie next comming, Geffrey Charney knight, and many other French men should be receiued into Calcis, vnto whom the said towne was solde by the said Emericus: but the Towne being presently rescued by king Edwarde, the said Emericus of Padua with other Genoways continued in Calcis, being maintained there at the costs of the French king against the king of England, when he besieged it, who also after the yeelding of it to the king of England, K. Edward sailed towards Flaunders. Calcis like to haue been betraped.

being pardoned both of life and limme, from thenceforth continued and dwelt as a seed man of the kings in the said Towne for the defence thereof. At that time the said Geffrey was Lord of Matas, a man more skilful in warfare then any French man in Fraunce. Wherfore he was greatly esteemed, euen to the time of his death. This craftie deuiser indeuoured by his letters, wherein hee made promise of large giftes of gold, and other sophisticall perswasions, quite to subuert the faith and loyaltie of the said Emericus.

Finally, this craftie deuiser agreed with this false man, that for twentie thousand French crownes he should let in the French men to the Town, and as much as lay in him, deliuer vp to the French men both the Towne and Castle. This bargaine being most traiterously made, by oath and breaking of the Sacrament betwixt them, yet al this notwithstanding, he wrote letters vnto the king touching the state of the whole matter, but very priuily, how that he was readie to shew friendship to the French men, yet meaning to make frustrate their purpose, whereby they should be conuicted of breaking the truce, and also many of them should bee taken to bee raunsomed, wherefore King Edward spéedily passed ouer, being accompanied with his eldest sonne, the Earle of March, and a few other, comming before the time appointed for the yeelding of the Towne, certaine daies. Therefore being come to Calais, hee laid certaine men of armes within the Maultes which were betwixt the outter gate and the inner parte of the Castle, building a thinne and slender Wall before them newly set vp, not made of plaister, but of counterfaite matter, which ioyned to the other Wall, craftily deuised and made like the olde woorke, so that no man would iudge that any were enclosed therein.

Also hée caused the mainepostes of the drawe bridge to bee sawed almost in sunder, yet in such sorte, that armed Horse-men might ride ouer it: and for the purpose he had a great stone, which was laid vp in a hole made in form of an arch, being in the forepart of the Tower hanging ouer the Bridge, in which he appointed a faithfull Souldier should bee in due time to throwe downe the said stone vpon the Bridge, that with the fall thereof, the Bridge being halfe cut in two, should bee broken in sunder, and so that hole where the stone was laid, should bée wrought in such sort, that hee within should perceiue through the hole how many did enter in: fewe were made priuie to this practise, neither did many know of the kings presence or of the Prince of Wales, who when they had wrought this feate, secretly conueied themselues into the Towne.

The day before the time of deliuerie of this Towne, Geffrey Cherney sent fifteene of his faithfullest men with the greater parte of the golde which was to bee paide, who should also trie the faith of Emericus, and the order of the Castle, who searching euerie where, in euerie Tower and corner which they could finde open, could perceiue nothing contrarie to their liking, whereupon on the next day in the morning, they set vp the French Kings standerde in the highest Tower of the Castle, and the ancients also of Geffrey, and of other Lords vpon other Towers and places. Then the peo-

ple

ple of the Towne who kept common watch and ward, not knowing of this secrete deuise, were greatly terrified therewith, in so much that they taking weapon in hand, began to giue a charge against the Castell: by and by the French men who had entred the day before, take Thomas Kingstone, then flée-ing away, quite ignorant of that which was deuised, and forceably they set him in the stockes. Then certaine of them being sent out to the French men their companions and maisters, who lay without in ambushes shewed them the ancients and standard set vp, and all to be well, euen as they would haue it, hastening them forward to come to the defence of the Castle, against the townes men: wherefore they rising from their lurking places, aduanced themselues in pride and bragging, and came by heapes in at the gates of the Castle. The townes men perceiuing this, had much adoe to forbeare their hands from them, had not their chiefe leaders withdrawen them from it, least some danger should haue happened to them that lay hid: by and by those that lay hid closed vnder the arches of the walles, prepared themselues to breake out vpon their enemies. In like sort also he that with the great stone was shut vp in ỹ hole, after that he saw so many entred in, estéeming that his fellowes were sufficient to ouerthrow them, with that great stone put to his custodie he brake the draw bridge, by the which the enemies had entred in, but being once in could not goe that way out againe: when the stone was thus downe, and had discharged the thing for the which it was laid vp, and the French men deceiued by that pollicie, they were enclosed safe ynough. At the noyse of this stone and the bridge that brake, these armed men of whom before I spake, breaking downe their counterfaite wall, behinde the which all the deceite was hid, they presently set themselues in order to inuade the French men, bitten to a bitter breakfast. The conflict was sharpe for a good season, but at the length the enemies being ouercom, yeelded themselues to the pleasure of the Conquerours. They which were without and had not entred, as soone as they perceiued their companions to be deceiued, fled, after whom the King with scarce fiue tẽne men of armes and as many archers followed apace, the runnawayes not knowing what companie would follow them: many in this chase were wearied, and many mo slaine, and in a small time the King ouercame daungerous and great labours: but at length, when it was vnderstood by them that fled, how few there were that chased them, foure score armed men turned them against the King. I dare not ascribe this boldnesse of the King in chasing of his enemies, to his wisdome, but onely to the stoutnesse of this minde, the which is well knowen through Gods grace to be brought to good effect by his meanes, though the daunger were neuer so great: for when he perceiued that the French men had turned themselues to withstand him, he cast away the scabard of his sword, and comforting his men about him, setting them in good order, exhorted them to play the men lustily. The Archers being placed in the Marish against the sides of the enemies stood on drie hilles, which were compassed about with quagge-myres and foggie places, that neither Horsemen nor foote-men might approch them, but they should rather be drowned in mudde then come neere to hurt them: these also did the King comfort, saying Tho. de la More.

saying to them (doe well you Archers) play the men lustily, and knowe that I am Edward of Windsore. Then the presence of the King, and necessitie of the matter, stirred vp their hearts to doe well: the Archers vncouering their heads, stripping vp their sleeues, bent themselues to bestow their arrowes in such sorte that they might not be lost: and as the French-men drew towards them, they saluted them after with their arrowes. The armed men of both parts stood in order to fight vpon a long and narrowe causeway, the breadth whereof was not able to receiue scarce twentie men of armes in a front, hauing on both sides thereof the Marish, in the which the Archers were placed, who galled and wounded their enemies on the sides, sleeing as thicke as haile. The King and his men before with the Archers on the side, slewe and tooke a great many: and many of them stood stoutly to it, till at the length by the comming of the Prince of Wales, the French were put to flight: after a long chase in pursuing the enemies, they returning backe againe to Calais, numbred those which were fled, as well as those which were taken, and they found, that for the taking of the Castle (as the prisoners reported) there came a thousand men of armes, and fiue hundred armed men, but they which serued, were aboue three thousand: among them which were taken, was Geffery Charney and his sonne, Edward de Renty, Robert Danquile, Otto de Gulo, the Baron of Partingham, Baldyna Saylly, Henry de Prees, Garinus Baylose, Peter
An.reg.24. Renel, Peter Dargemole, Eustace de Riplemount and many other, Lords, Knights, and Baronets, who were chased and ranne away with their antients, as the Lord de Mountmarice, also Laundas, who married the Lady Saint Paul Countesse of Pembroke in England, also the Lord Fenas, the Lord Planckes and another Eustace de Replemount. There were slaine in the
1350. skirmish the Lord Henry de Boys, the Lord Archibalde, and many others, whose names the Conquerours were not able to certifie. Thus by pollicie and deuised treason the authours thereof came to death and destruction: neither Eustachius himselfe escaped scotfree from the snares, for he within a while after being taken by the Frenchmen, was burned alive with a hot yron, and degraded from the order of Knighthood by the cutting off of his heeles, & depriuing of his tongue by abscision: afterward, he was hanged vp, and last of all beheaded and quartered, receiuing iust punishment for his treason and false forswearing.

This yeere the Lord Furnidall giuing a rashe enterprise vpon his enemies, was taken prisoner in Gascoigne. Not long after King Edward prepared to make a voyage into France, but the Earle of Lancaster, returning out of Gascoigne, signified that there was a truce taken by him, by reason whereof of the passage prepared by the King was laid aside.

Tho. de la More. Great feast at Windsor of S. George. Tho. Walsing. Ex charta regia.

This yeere on Saint Georges day, the King held a great and solemne feast at his Castle of Windsor, where he had augmented ỹ Chappel which Henry ỹ first and other his progenitors Kings of England had before erected of eight Chanons, he added to those eight Chanons, a Deane, and fifténe Chanons more, and 24. poore and impotent Knights, with other ministers and seruants as appeareth in his Charter, Dated the two and twentieth of his raigne.

Besides

Besides the King, there were other also that were Contributors to the foundation of this College, as followeth. First founders of the noble order of the Garter.

Records of the Garter.

1 The Soueraigne King Edward the third.
2 Edward his eldest sonne Prince of Wales.
3 Henry Duke of Lancaster.
4 The Earle of Warwike.
5 Captaine de Bouch.
6 Ralph Earle of Stafford.
7 William Montacute Earle of Salisburie.
8 Roger Lorde Mortimer Earle of March.
9 Sir Iohn de Lisle.
10 Sir Bartholomew Burwash.
11 Sir Iohn Beauchampe.
12 Sir Iohn de Mahune.
13 Sir Hugh Courtney.
14 Sir Thomas Holland.
15 Sir Iohn Grey.
16 Sir Richard Fitz Simon.
17 Sir Miles Stapleton.
18 Sir Thomas Walle.
19 Sir Hugh Wrothesley.
20 Sir Nele Loring.
21 Sir Iohn Chandos.
22 Sir Iames de Audley.
23 Sir Othes Holland.
24 Sir Henry Eme.
25 Sir Sechet Dabridgecourt.
26 Sir William Panell.

All these together with the King were clothed in gownes of Russet, powdered with garters blew, wearing the like garters also on their right legges, and mantels of blew, with scutcheons of S. George. In this sort of apparell they being bare-headed, heard Masse, which was celebrated by Simon Islip Archbishop of Canterbury, & the Bishops of Winchester and Exceter, and afterwards they went to the feast, setting themselues orderly at the table, for the honor of the feast, which they named to be of S. George the martyr, and the chosing of the Knights of the Garter. Th. de la More. First feast of S. George.

In the Sommer following, variance rising betwéne the flets of England and Spaine, the Spaniards beset the Brytaine Sea, with 44. great ships of warre, with the which they sunk ten English ships comming from Gascoigne towards England, after they had taken and spoyled them, and thus their former iniuries being reuenged, they entred into Sluce in Flanders.

King Edward vnderstanding hereof, furnished his naue of fiftie shippes and Pinaces, forecasting to méete with the Spaniards in their return, hauing in his company the Prince of Wales, the Earles of Lancaster, Northhampton, Warwicke, Salisburie, Arundale, Huntington, Glocester, and other Barons and Knights with their seruants and archers, and vpō the feast of the decollation of S. Iohn, about Euensong time, the Nauies mette at Winchelsea, where the great Spanish vessels surmounting our ships and foystes, like as castles to cotages, sharpely assailed our men, ỳ stones and quarels flying from the tops, sore and cruelly wounded our men, who no lesse busie to fight aloft with launce and sword, and with the foreward manfully defend themselues, at length our Archers pearced their Arbalisters with a further reach then they could strike againe, and thereby compelled them to forsake their place, and caused other fighting from the hatches to shade themselues with tables of the Ro. de Auesbury. Battaile on the Sea.

ships, and compelled them that threw stones from the toppes, so to hide them, that they durst not shew their heads, but tumble downe: then our men entring the Spanish vessels with swords and halberds, kill those they mete, within a while make voyde the vessels, and furnish them with English men, vntill they being beset with darknesse of the night, could not discerne the 27. yet remayning vntaken: our men cast anker, studying of the hoped battell, supposing nothing finished, whilest any thing remained vndone, dressing the wounded, throwing the miserable Spaniards into the Sea, refreshing themselues with victuals and sleepe, yet committing the vigilant watch to the armed band. The night ouerpassed, the English men prepared (but in vaine) to a new battell, but when the sunne began to appeare, they viewing the seas, could perceiue no signe of resistance, for 27. ships flying away by night, left 17. spoiled in the euening, to the Kings pleasure, but against their will.

The King returned into England with victorie and triumph, the King preferred there 80. Noble ympes to the order of knighthood, greatly bewayling the losse of one, to wit, Syr Richard Goldesborough Knight.

Philip the French king died.

This yeare Philip de Valoys French King, deceased, and his eldest sonne Iohn was crowned.

Combat before king Edward.

Two hyred souldiers of the King of Armenia, came into England, into the presence of the King, where they shewed the letters of the aforesaid King of Armenia, wherein it was signified that the one of them, to wit, Iohn de Viscount, a man borne in Cipres, had slanderously charged the other, that is Thomas de la March, a French man borne, and bastard sonne to Philip late King of France, saying that the said Thomas should haue receiued of the Turkes a certaine summe of gold, for the betraying the armie of the Christians vnto the Emperour of the Turkes: and for the proofe of this slander, this Iohn challenged a combate with the said Thomas, to be tried by the iudgement of Edward King of England, and that by him (as by a most worthie Prince,) all strife should be ended. For this therefore were these two worthie souldiers appointed to fight, which they performed within the lists of the Kings palace at Westminster, on Munday next following after the feast of Saint Michael, where Thomas, in declaration of his innocencie, in that he was accused of, ouercame his enemie, but yet killed him not, for he could not, because he was not able to wounde him being so armed, with any kinde of piercing weapon, except it were in his face, which was bare. For after that they had runne at the Tilte, and fought on foote, as they were striuing together on the ground, with certaine prickes both short and sharpe, then called Gadlings, being closed in the ioyntes of his right gauntlet, the said Thomas stroke the said Iohn in the face, and sore wounded him: but on the other side Iohn had no such short kinde of weapon, wherewith he might hurt Thomas face, and therefore cryed out aloude most horribly, whereupon by the Kings commaundement the Combate was ended, and the victorie adiudged to Thomas, who gaue the said Iohn, being thus ouercome, to the Prince of Wales for a Captiue, and offered vppe his owne armour to Saint George, in Saint Pauls Church at London, with great deuotion. These matters being thus

finished,

finished, the Cipres man is manumitted and set at libertie as a free man againe. And Thomas thinking boldely to goe into the presence of his brother the French King, toke his iourney thither, and at his comming, found the said King and the Nobilitie of Fraunce, greatly offended, and in indignation against him, for that he agréed that the combate should be tried before the King of England. Wherefore Thomas thinking secretly with himselfe how to winne the false friendship of his brother, being desirous to shew that therein he had done well, among all other things he greatly praised the nobilitie of Edward and his worthie fame spread ouer al the world, and also the iustice which he vsed in iudging, not accepting the person of the man of Cipres, (yea though hee loued the king himselfe very well) neither suffered him to be preferred before me, which am a Frenchman, and brother, and friend to thée my Lord King of Fraunce, iudge ouer the sayd King Edward my aduersarie. Also the Earle of Ewe highly praised the King of England, for that he had receiued great comfort and commoditie at his hands during the time of his Captiuitie in England, shewing also how farre that good King had banished enuie and hatred from his heart, who at a time of iusting, being in the field at that exercise, and the King also, was commaunded by the King himselfe to beare away the price and pricke from them all. These commendations did the French King enuie at, and for indignation, hee most wickedly commaunded the setters forth of those prayses to bee beheaded. And for to colour the matter the better, hée fayned that the Earle vsed too much familiaritie with the Quéene his wife, and that his brother was guiltie of treason against the king of Fraunce, because he committed his cause and the combat to be thus tryed by the iudgement of the King of England. After hee had thus murdered his brother, hee tormented his wife to death by famine, who was daughter of the noble king of Boheme, lately slaine in battaile by Geffrey.

William Edington Bishop of Winchester, and treasurer of England, a wiseman: but louing the Kings commoditie, more then the wealth of the realme and common people, caused a new coyne called a Groate, and halfe Groat to be coyned, but these were of lesse waight then the pence, called Esterlings, by reason whereof victuals and merchandise became the dearer thorow the whole realme. Groates and halfe groates. Tho. Walsing. Historia Aurea.

After the Octaues of the Purification of our Lady, in a Parliament holden at Westminster, Henry Earle of Lancaster was created Earle of Lincolne, Leicester, Derby, Grosmount and Ferrers, and Duke of Lancaster, vnto whom also was giuen great priuiledges, such as neuer any Earle had before his time. Also Lionel of Antwerpe the kings sonne is made Earle of Ulster in Ireland, Iohn of Gaunt his brother is made Earle of Richmond, and Ralph Baron of Stafford, is made Earle of Stafford. Iohn Mautrauars, one of the murtherers of Edward the second, was this yeare restored to his lands. Parliament at Westminster. 1351.

In the Lent following Walter de Maine, and Robert Herle Captaine of Calets, rode into France, making great praies and doing great domage, brought away great store of beasts, shéepe, and swine, so that at Calets a fat Cowe was scarcely A fat Cowe sixteene pences.

scarcely sold for sixténe pence sterling. About Easter the Duke of Lancaster departing from Calais marched alongst the Sea coasts of Artoys, and Picardie, brent the suburbes of Bulloigne, but assaulting the Towne he preuailed not, for that onely the ladders were too short. Therefore he wasted the Cities of Tirwin, and the hauen, also the townes of Fauconbridge and Staples, and in the same hauens he brent about 120. ships of diuers moulds. After this burning the champion countrey, he rode vnto Saint Omers, and winning by force many fortresses, with a great pray and many prisoners he returned to Calais. About the feast of Saint George things prospered well in Gascoine, for the Marshall of France, with a great number of armed men spoyled the countrey about Saint Dangel, where Edmond Rose a Norffolke man was Captaine, who with the garrison, valiantly encountred the enemies, slew many of them, and tooke the said Marshall and many other Nobles of France, chasing aboue 400. Knights.

The same yéere the Spanish ships by a treatie of peace came into England, where the last yéere they were restrained, but now a truce was taken for twentie yéeres, betwixt England and Spaine, and a truce betwixt England and Fraunce for one yéere, which the Frenchmen brake, by reason of taking the Castle of Guisnes, as in the next yéere shall be shewed.

About this season the olde coine of gold was changed into a new, the olde Noble was worth much aboue the tared rate of the new, and therefore the Marchants bought the olde and conueyed them out of the Realme, to the great losse of the king and kingdome, to the which there was a remedie prouided, by changing of the stampe.

An. reg. 26. 1352.

About the beginning of Januarie, the Frenchmen being occupied about the repayring of the walles of Guisnes towne, being afore that time destroyed by the Englishmen, some men of armes of Calais vnderstanding their doings, deuised how they might ouerthrow the worke, in this sort. There was an Archer named Iohn Dancaster, in prison in the castle of Guisnes, before that time taken, who not hauing wherwith to pay his ransome, was let loose, with condition that he should worke there among the Frenchmen. This fellow chanced to lye with a laundres, a strumpet, and learned of her where beyond the principall ditch, from the bottome of the ditch, there was a wall made of two foote broade, stretching from the ramplers, to the brimme of the ditch within forth, so that being couered with water it could not be séen, but not so drowned, but that a man going aloft thereon, should not be wet past the knées, it being made for the vse of Fishers: and therefore in the middest it was discontinued for the space of two foote: and so the Archer (his Harlot shewing it to him) measured the height of the Wall with a threéde. These things thus knowne, one day slipping downe from the Wall, he passed the ditch by that hidden Wall, and lying hidde in the Marish till Euening, came in the night néere vnto Calais, where tarying for the cleare day, he then went into the Towne (for else he might not:) here he instructed them that were gréedie of pray and to scale the castle, how they might enter the same: they caused ladders to be made to the length by the Archer appoynted. Thirtie men conspiring together,

The getting of Guisnes by the English.

together, clothing themselues in black armour without any brightnesse, went to the Castle by the guiding of the said Iohn de Dancaster, and climming the wall with their ladders, they slew the watchmen, and threw them down headlong beside the Wall: after this, in the Hall they slew many whom they found vnarmed, playing at the Chesse and Hazard. Then they brake into the Chambers and Turrets vpon the Ladies and Knights that lay there asleepe, and so were made masters of all that was within: and shutting all their prisoners into a strong chamber, being bereft of all their armour, they tooke out the English men that had been taken the yeere before and there kept in prison, and after they had relieued them well with meate and drinke, they made them guardeins ouer them that had them in custodie: & so they wan all the Fortresses of the Castle, vnknown to them that were in the Towne, (appointed to ouersee the repayring of the broken walles) what had happened to them within the Castle. In the morning they commanded the workemen in the towne to cease from their workes, who thereupon perceiuing that the Castle was wonne, straight waies fled, and the new Castilians, suffered the Ladies to depart on horsebacke, with their apparell, writings, and Muniments, where they ought to hold their fées: and the same day there came from Calais to their ayde such persons as they sent for, by whose ayde they kept the Castle: and about three of the clocke there came two Knights, sent from the Earle of Guisnes, who demanding a truce, willed to know of them that were thus entred the Castle, who they were, to whom they belonged, and by whose authoritie they kept the Castle so taken in the time of truce, whereunto they answered; that being intruded, they would not declare to any man their purpose, till they had tryed a longer possession: and therefore on S. Mawrice day, the Abbot (the King being busie in Parliament,) to the Frenchmen being sent from the sayd Earle of Guisnes, declared, how in prejudice of the truce, the sayd Castle was taken, and therefore by right of mutuall faith it ought to bee restored vnto them. The king answered, that without his knowledge that enterprise was made, and therefore he gaue commandement to his subiects, that none of them should deteine the castle of Guisnes, but deliuer it vnto the lawfull Lords thereof. The messengers being returned home, and reporting what they had done, the Earle of Guisnes commeth to the Castle, demaunding of them within, as at other times, in whose name they kept it. Who constantly affirming that they kept it in the name of Iohn Dancaster, hee required to know if the same Iohn were the King of Englands liegeman, or would obey him: who answering that hee knew not what messengers had been in England: the Earle offered for the Castle, besides all the treasure found in it, many thousands of Crownes, or possessions for exchange, and a perpetuall peace with the King of Fraunce. To this they answered, that before the taking of that Castle they were Englishmen by nation, but by their demerites banished for the peace of the King of England, wherefore the place which they thus held, they would willingly sell or exchange, but to none sooner then to their naturall King of England, to whom they sayd, they would sell their Castle, to obtaine their peace; but if hee would not buy it, then they would

sell

sell it to the King of France, or to whom soeuer would giue most for it.

The Earle being thus shifted off from them, the king of England bought it in deede, and so had that place which he greatly desired. The Fortresse was wont to stop vp the passage into the higher Countrey, giuing to some great suerty from the Forragers, that were to issue forth of Caleis. The Counsell of Fraunce therefore wishing to haue that Castle againe, or to builde another of like vtilitie, for the defence of the Countrey thereabouts, they sent for Geffrey Charney lately redeemed out of English Captiuitie, with authoritie to build and fortifie as followeth.

Lalbastie fortified.

To them that trauaile from Guisnes to Caleis there was a place on the left hand strong, but decayed, hauing a Church, in which certaine Nuns were resident, and it was called Lalbastie: this place was so nere to Guisnes, that the Englishmen standing without the gate of their Fortresse might shote to it. This Monasterie of Nunnes might easily be made defensible, for it had high Walles like a Castle, and a high Towre, and very large for a steeple, and being situate in a marish ground, it might with small labour be compassed with a ditch. This place the Englishmen had spared for deuotion sake, vntill that the foresaid Geffrey, in breach of truce, with a mightie powre besieged Guisnes, and remoued the Nunnes from the Church, making a Castle of the Church, and fensing the Walles with rampire and ditch: and this was about Pentecost, in which season the Waters not impeaching him, his people might worke in the Marish. They within the Castle therefore being besieged, were vneth able to come abroade with their boates by the ditches that were full of water, and by the Marish vnpassable and also full of water, neither they of Caleis could victuall them by any manner of meane, by reason of the siege, and warding that was kept at Lalbastie. They that were thus besieged, oft times sallied out and fought with them of Lalbastie, but fue very few, sometime with arrowes, and sometime with other weapons: at length, vpon a day appointed, the Calisians, with them of Dye and Markes on the one part, and they within Guisnes on the other, met, set on their enemies, slew many, chased many, and finally burnt vp Lalbastie, and dismanteling the walles, made all plaine with the ground.

Lalbastie brent and raced.

This yeare, the Duke of Lancaster going into Spruce, by the aduice and ordinance of the king, his daughter was espoused in England to William Duke of Zeland, eldest sonne to Lewis Duke of Bauire, that intruded vpon the Romane Empire.

Walter Bentley, and Robert Knolles make a voyage into France.

About the fiftenth of August, Walter Bentley Captaine, Robert Knolles, and other, in the Marches of Brytaine, valiantly encountred their enemies, where in a fight doubtfull for a good while, were slaine the principall Marshall of France, also the Lords of Quintin, of Curtinoke, of Richmont, of Mount Albon, of Legeuel, of Launey, of Montbech, of Vile Chastel de la March, & other knights, in number 140. and Bachelers, to the number of 500. whose coatearmors were brought away: the number of commons were not counted. There were taken the Lord of Brusebeke, sonne of the Marshall Bertram, also Tristram de Maleis, the Lord of Maletret, the Vicount of Comaine,

maine, Geffrey de Graues, William de la Vall, Charles Darchefill, Iohn de Bruſe, and other Knights, with Bachelers, aboue 130. This armie of the French men, vnder the conduct of the ſaid Marſhall, of purpoſe deuiſed by him, was ſo beſet on the backe halfe, with the ſteepeneſſe of a Mountaine, that flie they could not, to the end that hope of flight being taken frō them their courage to fight might the more encreaſe. There were many of thoſe Knights ſurnamed of the ſtarre, who in their profeſſion had conſpired neuer to turne their fearefull backes vpon their enemies, of which number of Knights, there were among them ſlaine and taken, numbred 45. From that dangerous encounter few eſcaped vnhurt, and among other, the foreſaid Walter Bentley Captaine was ſore wounded, who commanded thirtie archers to be condemned, for that in the greateſt heate of the fight they fled.

Knights of the Starre.

The Earle of Stafford alſo entred into Gaſcoigne, where encountring with a great armie of the French men that were iſſued forth of the fortreſſe of Gagent, he diſcomfited, tooke, and chaſed them: there was taken that valiant Knight Bruſe Gaude, and ſeuen Knights of the Starre. Shortly after, died Iohn Dediaſeles, and Thomas Wale, Knights of great valour.

The ſame yéere, it being heard that Pirats troubled the Seas, there were ſeuen ſhips of warre ordeyned, certaine Pinaces attending vpon them: ouer the which were admirals, Thomas Cooke, and Richard Tottleſham Knights, who ſcoured the ſeas about the coaſt of Picardy and Normandy, but before the feaſt of S. George, they returned as they wiſhed.

Whileſt theſe things were a doing by Sea and Land, Otto ſonne to the Duke of Brunſwike, the French Kings ſéed man, ſent letters to the Duke of Lancaſter, being returned out of Spruce, by ỹ tenour wherof he accuſed him, affirming that as he returned out of Spruce by Colein, he malicioufly informed the Coloners, that the ſaid Otto went about by ſtealth to haue taken him priſoner, and to haue preſented him to the French king, adding hereunto, that becauſe he neuer ment any ſuch taking of him, he was ready in declaration of his good name, by a ſingular combat onely in the French Kings Court, to proue the Duke of Lancaſter a lyer touching the ſaid article. The letters were not ſealed, and therefore, leaſt it might haue bēn thought folly to haue giuen credite to the letter, deliuered by a ſeruant, the Duke ſent vnto Otto two Knights to learne the cauſe of the chalenge, and to demand thereof his letters patents, ſealed with his ſeale of armes, which Knights accompliſhing the effect of their iourney, and returning with ſpéede, the Duke ſent to the French King for a ſafe conduct for himſelfe and his men, and with much adoe obteining it, he went to Paris, where in the liſts, in preſence of the French King, the King of Nauarre, and the Duke of Burgoigne, and many Péeres, and other of the Realme of Fraunce, he mounted on his ſtéed in ſéemely wiſe, ready in all ſignes, without default, to trie the combate, and ſo ſtaid till his aduerſary was ready, and the voyce of the Herault and Cantor to be had by their common oath, for the aſſurance of his word, and to obey the Law. On the contrary part, the ſaid Otto ſcarcely was ſet on his Horſe, and was not able decently to ſet on his helmet, nor to weelde his Speare (or elſe he fayned)

Otto of Brunſwike chalengeth to combat with the Duke of Lancaſter before the French King at Paris.

whoſe

whose vnableneſſe being perceiued by the French king, the king of Nauarre, and other, the king toke the quarrell into his hands, whereupon Otto was commaunded firſt to depart the liſts, and ſo went his way, but the Duke abode
An. reg. 27. 1353. ſtill within them. After this, by commaundement of the French king, Otto ſware that he ſhould neuer after that day appeach the Duke of Lancaſter of that article: and ſo from thence the Duke returned home by Zeland.

Parliament at Weſtminſter. Apparrell appointed to Harlots.

After the Epiphanie, a Parliament was holden at Weſtminſter, wherein an ordinance was made at the inſtance of the Londiners, that no knowne whore ſhould weare from thenceforth any hode, except reyed or ſtriped of diuers colours, nor Furre, but garments reuerſed or turned the wrong ſide outward, vpon paine to forfeit the ſame.

Come brought out of Ireland into England.

This yeere, the dearth of Corne by them of Ireland, and the Iriſh men that brought in corne to ſell vnto diuers Hauens of the Realme, was allwaged, to the great reliefe of the people.

S. Stephens Chappell at Weſtminſter. Ex Carta.

King Edward altered the Chappell, which his progenitors before had founded of Saint Stephen at Weſtminſter, into a colledge of twelue ſecular Chanons, twelue Vicars, and other miniſters accordingly, and endued it with reuenues, to the ſumme of fiue hundred pound by yeere.

Staples of wool to be kept in England.

The morrow after Saint Mathies day began a Parliament, wherin it was ordeined that the ſtaple of woll before kept in Flaunders at Bridges, ſhould from thenceforth be holden in diuers parts of England, Wales and Ireland, as at Newcaſtle, Yorke, Lincolne, Canterburie, Norwich, Weſtminſter, Chicheſter, Wincheſter, Exceſter, Briſtow, and Carmarden.

The Earle of Northhampton went into Scotland with a great companie of armed men, and archers, where he rode through the marches, and enforced the caſtle of Loghmaban, and other fortreſſes to yeld, and took the Scots that were laid in ambuſhes. He alſo held a treatie of peace with the Scots, who gladly would haue redéemed their king, and made a perpetuall peace with the Engliſhmen, but yet ſo as the king of Scots ſhould not hold his land of the king of England.

Treatiſe of peace.

Innocent the firſt, for the deſire of peace, ſent the Cardinall of Bononie to Caleis, to heare the treatie of the finall peace betwixt the kingdomes of England and Fraunce, to whom repaired the Counſellers of both Realmes, with full authoritie to treat and conſtitute the conditions of the ſame peace, and at length they agréed vpon this point, that the king of England ſhould reſigne all his right that he had to the Realme of Fraunce, and remit it to the French king, and ſhould haue therfore the Dutchie of Aquitaine, and the Counties of Artoys and of Guiſnes, for him and his ſucceſſors king of England, without that he ſhould hold the ſame of the French kings in any manner of wiſe.

Ann. reg. 28 To theſe conditions the king of England gaue his conſent, and for the aſſurance of the couenants, Embaſſadours are ſent to the Sea of Rome from eyther Realme. On the king of Englands behalfe went the Biſhoppe of
1354. Norwich, the Duke of Lancaſter, the Earle of Arundell, and other Knights, who going to Auinion, there came to them the Archbiſhoppe of Rohan, the Duke of Burgoine, Geffrey Charney, and other of the French kings

Counſell:

Counsell: all these were receiued in great honour: many Cardinals and Bishops met the duke of Lancaster, who brought him for the space of two miles vnto Auinion, and to the Popes pallace: at length in the Consistorie of the Pope, he with the Cardinalles and Embassadours being present, the causes of their message was declared, and the Embassadours of England requested to haue the couenants confirmed, which had been concluded at Calais: to whom the Frenchmen answered, that gladly they would haue peace, but touching Aquitain, and the foresaid Counties, as they said, the French King could not, nor they might giue their assents that the same should be alienated from the entire body of the kingdome, the which, as well the King as they had taken an oth to maintaine, but yet they could be contented that the profitable dominion of the said Dutchy and Counties should be deliuered, and come to the King of England, as his Auncestors had Aquitaine, but so yet as the regalitie of the Crowne of France should euer be reserued. The Englishmen requested that these said dominions should be absolutely, and without any condition restored to the King: answere also was made to the reason of the Frenchmen, touching the oth of their King and themselues, whereby they were bound to conserue the integritie of the honour of their kingdome, to wit, that the Pope for the benefite of peace might assoile them from the said oth, and this as to certaine articles premitted, it should be very well done: but yet nothing was done that might be of force to the furthering of the peace. And so the Embassadours without effect returned home, the Bishop of Norwich excepted, that deceased, and was buried there, to whom succeeded Thomas Percy.

The King of Nauarre through a brawle raised, slewe Charles de Spaine, Marshall of France, whereupon to auoide the displeasure and punishment of the French King, he fled into his owne Countrey, sending his vncle vnto the Duke of Lancaster with letters humbly beseeching him that he would come into Normandie to his aide and defence, and to receiue an oth of fidelitie and amitie of him against al men. The Duke therefore getting licence of the King, assembled together a great nauie at Southampton, where when the Duke was ready to haue made saile, Knights that he had sent into Normandy, came backe to shew the truth of this busines, by whom it was notified to the Duke, that the said King of Nauarre his cousin was reconciled to the King, and so the Dukes voyage was staied.

The friers Augustines Church in London was rædified by Humfrey Bohune Earle of Hereford and Essex, whose body was buried in the quire of the same Church. *Frier Augustines church in London. Ro. de Auesbury*

A great dissention fell in Oxford, betweene a Scholler and a Vintner, for a quarte of wine, so that the Scholler powred the wine on the Vintners head, and brake his head with the pot, by reason whereof, a great conflict was made betwixt the Schollers of the Vniuersitie, and the lay men of the town, in the which, many lay men were wounded, and about twenty slaine. These troubles continued the space of two dayes, and then the religious men of the town labouring to make peace, the lay men pursued a Scholler, & wounded him to death, yet that day the tumult was appeased, but on the morrow, the people *Dissention at Oxford. Historia Aurea.*

of

of the villages about Oxford, being confederate with the lay men of the town came with great force, and erected a blacke banner, whereupon the Scholers fledde to their Colledges, but the Lay men breaking vp the doores, slewe many of them, and threwe them into their priuies: they cut and rent their bookes, and bare away what they liked. By this meanes the vniuersitie was dissolued, the Scholers (sauing of Merton Colledge) went vnto their friends, and so continued more then a yere. Many, both Scholers and Lay men were indited by the kings Iustices, amongst the which, foure Burgesses that had been Maiors of Oxford, were sent vnto the Tower of London.

Citizens of Oxford endited

Rosde Auesbury

About the twentieth of November, King Edward held a Parliament at Westminster, in the which was granted towards the recouerie of his title in France, fiftie shillings of euery sacke of Woll to be transported ouer the seas for the space of fiue yeres then next following, by meanes whereof, the King might daily dispend during the said fiue yeres, more then one thousand marks sterling, for by the common opinion, there were more then an hundred thousand sackes of Woll yerely into forraine lands transported, so that during those fiue yeres, the said grant extended to 150000. pounds sterling.

An. reg. 29. 1355.

Iusting at Woodstocke.

King Edward held a great Iusting at Woodstocke, for honour of the Quéene, who was then purified of her sonne Thomas.

Parliament at Westminster.

Rosde Auesbury

After Easter, in a Parliament at Westminster, the king toke the quarrell of Oxford into his hands, and sauing euery mans right, he forgaue the scholers all the whole trespasse, so that in the summer following, the Vniuersitie began againe to flourish, and the king gaue to the Chancellour of Oxford the onely view of the assise of bread, ale, and wine, and al other victuals, excluding the Maior vtterly from that office. The communaltie of the Towne gaue to the Vniuersitie two hundred and fiftie pounds for amends, sauing vnto them neuertheleſſe the actions which they had vnto euery singuler person of the Towne.

Vniuersitie of Oxford restored.

Ex Record.

In this Parliament, the proceſſe of the iudgement made against Roger Mortimer Earle of March, was reuoked, déemed erronious & false, so that the young Roger Mortimer, sonne to Edmond Mortimer, sonne and heire to Roger Mortimer, was restored to the title and possessions of the Earledome of March, as cousin and heire to his grandfather.

King Edward sayled into Fraunce.

King Edward being about Sandwich, on his iourney towards Fraunce, and the Prince of Wales at Sutton in Deuonshire, on his voyage towards Aquitaine, loking for a prosperous wind, by the space of fortie dayes or more, all things else being readie, the French King had his armies diuided in sundrie places about in the hauens of Normandie, and other parts, to impeach the landing of the King and Prince, and so long they lay there, that the Frenchmen with their hired souldiours did sowly waste their owne Countrey, and consumed so many thousands of Crownes out of the French Kings coffers vainely, that in the ende he being néedie, payde not his people, and so hée was forsaken of them, that when King Edward wasted Fraunce, the French King had not men to encounter him, but fledde before him, as hée followed, burning his owne Townes, and destroying victuals,

walles, that the king should find neither harborough nor meate.

After the moneth of August, the king of England, and the Duke of Lancaster, with seuen thousand armed men, and their retinue, entred Fraunce, and by the space of nine daies iourney, as they went, wasting all by fire that came in their way, and returning to Calais, the king heard that the Scots entred by stealth, and had taken the Towne of Barwike, the Baron of Graystocke being in the army with the king, to whom the charg of that Towne had been committed, whereupon the king hasted vnto Barwike, and within fiftéene daies recouered the Towne againe, being deliuered vnto him, life and liberty to depart being giuen vnto them that were found therin. Berwike taken by the Scots. Berwike taken by the Englishmen.

After this he passed through Scotland vnto the Scottish sea, but because victuals fayled for his army, the king giuing them licence, they all returned towards England. There followed on the taile of the army, by the space of twelue miles, Robert Herle, Almerike de Saint Edmond, Robert de Hildesley, and other, whom the Scots in the night season found asléepe and at rest, doubting nothing of any misaduenture, wherfore they gaue a cruell assault vpon them, with an hideous noyse and crie, where, after long resistaunce, Robert de Hildesley, and Iohn Brancester Knightes were taken prisoners, Robert Herle and Almericke hauing much adoe to escape, for the said knights perceiuing the Scots to be too strong for them, thought with themselues, that their Lords being Barons, of whom they held in fée, would redéeme them, and so wyly withdrawing, deliuered them from the Scots captiuitie.

Henry Duke of Lancaster being appointed chiefe Admirall of the English Saule, landed at Hogges about the feast of Saint Bartholomew, and from thence rode towards Normandie, being accompanied with Philip, brother to the king of Nauarre, who desired aide of the said Duke, and requested him to come to helpe him. At this season, the French king hauing the king of Nauarre, Geffrey Harecourt, and diuers other Noble men in great suspition, touching the Realme and Kingdome, bidde them all to a feast, where he toke the said king of Nauarre, and cast him in prison, and murthered the rest of the Noble men, sauing, Geffrey Harecourt, whom he caused to be beheaded with an axe.

The king of Nauarre being thus imprisoned, his brother Philip seased many Castels and holds into his hands which were in Normandy and there about, strongly fortifying them with men and victuals, through the help of the Duke of Lancaster, being manned as well with Englishmen, as with the men of the same Countrey, to withstand the Frenchmen.

The same time when the king passed ouer to Calais and France, his eldest sonne Prince of Wales, hauing with him the Earles of Warwick, Suffolk, Salisburie, and Oxford, toke shipping in the beginning of October at Sutton Hauen in Deuonshire, and luckely sayled, and landed at Burdeaux, where he was honourably receiued by the Bishop and Clergy being accompanied with all the common people in the first Sonday of that moneth: The Monday following, the Prince going out, lodged two miles from Burdeaux, in the Castell of Arnoun. On the next day, he passed through a streight wood,

and so through the middle of the towne of Lougan, sometimes walled, but now defaced: and so passing on a long iourney, he lost many horses, and came at length to the strong Castell of Dandret. On Thursday he came to the Citie of Belas, hauing in it a Cathedrall Church, and a couent of friers minors. On friday proclamation was made in the army, that euery man should beare the armes of Saint George, and it was said that his enemies bare the same also. On Saterday he passed to the Castell of Mau, where stand three castles of three Lords, whereof one sheweth a farre off.

On Friday the twelfth of that moneth, his army passed the lands of Wordiur, which are belonging to the Earle of Flur, this daies iourney being long and tedious, hee lost many of his horses in the waste ground called the Launds. Two miles from the towne of Aurule, hee displayed his banners, and diuided his armies into diuers troupes. In the vaward, wherein was three thousand men of armes, were the earle of warwike high Constable, Reignold Cobham, Lord Marshall, Lord Beauchampe, a Somersetshire man, the Lord Clifford, and the Lord Thomas of Hampton, belonging to the Ancients, and with them seuen Barons of Gascoigne. In the middleward, wherein were seuen thousand men of armes, besides Clerkes and Pages, there was the Prince himselfe with a double Antient, the Earle of Oxford, the Lord Bartholomew Burwash, the Lord Iohn de Lile, the Lord Willowby, the Lord le Ware, the Lord Maurice Barkley, sonne to Thomas Lord Barkley then liuing, very olde, the Lord Iohn Bourchers, Lord Iohn Rose the elder of Burdeaux, Captaine de la Busch, the Lord Camount, the Lord Mountferrant, with their antients. In the rereward was foure thousand men of armes, committed to the charge of the Earle of Suffolke, the Earle of Salisburie, and the Lord Memers, who led the Bernences: In the whole army was of men of armes, Clerks, Pages, Archers, Brigants, and other, aboue 60000. men, and this day was lenken Barefort, and diuers other made knights, and the village of Aurule, with three other villages (whereof William Lord Raymond was Captaine) were deliuered vp vnto the Prince, wherein he lodged his army, and resting there two daies, as many as would were suffered to go out, and take victuals, and brent their enemies countrey. On Tuesday, they lodged in the towne of Mount Clere, where the Castell belonging thereunto was giuen vp to the Prince, and after he left it againe to the Frenchmen, by reason of fire which brake vp in the town, whereupon the Prince went out into the field, and lodged in his tentes, euer after refusing to lie in any towne. This day hauing taken three townes, and burning them, hee made knights Gilotus de Straton, and diuers other. Also Iohn de Lile stricken with a quarrell at Auffage, died. On Wednesday and Thursday he lay still, and on Friday he came before the strong towne of Loegeron, where he lodged in his tents. On Saterday he came before Placence, a very faire town, & strong, the inhabitants whereof fled away into the Castell, where the Earle of Poleint, and many knights were taken by Captaine de la Bouch, and the Lord Mountferrant, & de Lonchis, who was that day made knight. On Sonday S. Lukes day, they staid at Ewant, and taking the fort of Galian, by force, they set it on fire, and burnt it. On Sun-

day

day casting fire in the towne of Placence, they passed along, leauing the towne of Beal Marchi on the right hand, and lodged before the towne of the Archbishop of Anfer, called Le Base. On this day Richard Stafford brother vnto the Earle of Stafford, led his men with his Antient towards the towne: and on the next day being Tuesday, the towne was yelded vnto him, and because it belonged to the Church, the Prince would not suffer any man to enter into it, excepting certaine persons appointed of purpose, for the deliuering of victualles. On Wednesday they leauing the faire towne of Escamount, on the left hand, they came before the noble towne of Merand, belonging to the Earle of Comenge, which was full of armed souldiours, and the Prince lodged in the great monasterie of Bartons, in the which Abbey, there was not so much as one liuing creature found. On Thursday they lay still, doing no harme to the said Abbey. On Friday they went out of the faire and rich countrey of Arminake, and entred the countrey of Austerike, through the which, the passage was very hard and hilly, and lodged at Saraunt a towne, they set it on fire, contrary to the commaundement of the prince.

All that day, and three daies following, they passed alongst by the high hils of Aragon. On Saterday, they came to the towne of Saint Moze, where the rereward of the army lodged in a great monasterie of blacke monkes, which were all fled away: the middle ward at Milfrankes, and the vaward at Tremaine: these villages being very rich, and full of victualles, had no man in them, for all the inhabitants were fled.

Sunday the foure and twentieth of October, they passed a certaine ford, and entred into the lands of the Earle of Comenge, which reached vnto Tolouse, but these countries were wasted with fire and sword, and leauing on the left hand the towne called Sannetere in Austrike, they passed by the strong Citie of Wimbers, where Pope Iohn the two and twentieth remouing the blacke monkes, erected a Bishops sea, and they were lodged in a great & rich towne called Sotanco, belonging to the Earledome of Comenge, where was a couent of friers minors: and burning this towne on Monday they passed through a goodly wide countrey, very plaine, and so came to the towns of Saint Foy, and Saint Litz. On Tuesday they rested: and on Wednesday being the feast of Simon and Iude, the army passed through the riuer of Geronne, being a water very fierce, stony and terrible: and againe the same day, through the riuer of Arage, much more dangerous, and came vnto Tolouse: before that time, neuer durst any horseman passe ouer these waters, wherefore the people of this countrey being wonderfully made afraid, could not tell what to doe, for being sodainly taken, they could not flee: that night, the prince lodged at Falgard, a little towne, one mile from Tolouse. On Tuesday they came vnto the faire and great town called Mount Giskard, being part of the inheritance of the Lord Almerike de la Fossad, the which town the French king had taken from him, because he was the king of Englandes feodman. Fast by the said towne were twelue Windmilles, the which they set on fire all at once. There were taken two espies, they certified the Prince that the Earle of Armeniake was at Tolouse, and the Connestable of

Fraunce at Mount Maban, foure leagues from Tolouse. On Friday, they passed on towards Auinion, by the good towne of Balige, and the Towne called Franke, and the whole armie lodged at the great Towne called Auionet, and the middle ward and rereward lay in one side of the Suburbes, and the vaward lay on the other side of the Towne, which the townesmen perceiuing, fled euerie one.

There were about this town twentie Windmils, which they set on fire. On Satterday the last of October, they lodged in the great Towne called Clastalnanner, where a Church of the Chanons, a couent of Friers Minors, and another of Carmelites, with an Hospitall, and a village called Les mauns de Pucels, with a couent of Friers Augustines, were all consumed with fire. On Sunday, the feast of Allsaints, the armye rested, out of the which armie, certaine going to take booties, they toke a little Towne, the inhabitants wherof to be spared from spoyling, gaue them ten thousand florens of gold. On Monday they marched along by ẏ townes of S. Mathele Port, and the great Town called Milkapinch, and from thence, they entred the Countrey of Carkason, & the Prince lodged at a little village called Aise. On Tuesday they came to Carkason, a faire Towne, rich & well built, bigger then London. Within the wals, betwixt the towne of Sanburge, and the City being double walled, there ran a goodly water, which passed vnder a faire stone bridge, at the foote wherof, were foure couents of religious, of the which, the Friers ran not away, but the other fled into the Citie. The whole armie was lodged in the Towne, which abounded with Muskadel, and all other delicate victualles. This day, the sonnes of the Lord Libret, and Master Basset, with Rowland Daues, and many other, were made knights.

Carcason in Fraunce brent.

On Wednesday and Thursday, the armie lying still in the Towne, and hauing made a truce, they parled with them of the Citie concerning a peace, the Citizens offering for sauing the Towne from burning two hundred and fiftie thousand of golden Soules: the Prince answered, he came not for gold, but to take Cities and Townes, together with their inhabitants, and the next day commaunded the Towne to be brent.

On Friday, the Towne being brent, the armie departed, leauing on the left hand the Castell of Botenake vntouched, passing through the champaine Countrey, burning Townes called la Ruttican, and all the countrey thereabout.

On Satterday they trauelled through a great wind and duft, leauing on the left hand a great poole of fresh water, being in compasse about rrr. leagues, and is called Castbon. They came to a Towne called Silony, which was yelded to the Prince, and therefore neuer touched: and the Prince was lodged that night at a good towne called Canet. On Sonday the eight day of Nouember, they passed the water of Sandey, partly at the ford called Chastell de Terre, and partly ouer a bridge, and so trauelled betwixt high hilles, vnto the great Citie of Narbon, whereof that Countrey taking his name is called Gallia Narbonensis. The Citie was verie strong, and well walled, hauing in it a great Cathedrall Church; also a notable Castle, belonging to the

Bishop

Bishop, a verie strong Tower for the Earle of the same Towne. It had also a Suburbe called a Borough, much bigger, and better built, then the Borough of Carkason.

In the Borough were foure Couents of religious persons. Betwixt the Borough and the Citie, there runneth a water called Ande, comming from Carcason, and runneth into the Grekish sea. Betwixt the Citie and the Borough are two bridges of stone, and the third of timber, built with storehouses for diuers Merchandises. The prince was lodged in the house of Carmelite friars. On Tuesday the Borough being set on fire, the armie passing to the waters side, went ouer it in diuers places. From thence, they went and lodged at the Towne and Castell of Ambion. On Wednesday they trauelled an euill iourney, and hurtfull to the horse for lacke of water. On Thursday Theodorike Dale, Porter of the Princes chamber, was made Knight: thence the armie passed by a good Town called Ulmes: the middleward passed vnto the good Towne of the Earle of Lile, called Arnile, where they lodged that night. The Prince lay at the Friers Minors, where was great abundance of Victuall, being prouided for the Countesse of the Ile, which was all spoyled. This day also, the good Towne of Pipions was destroyed, with the Castle therof called Redote. On Friday, the army passing by a long stonie way, lodged at Lamian. On Saterday, returning backe toward Gascoigne, they left on their right hand the great pole of Esbone, and Carkason, and all the iourney that they went before, and the rereward lodged at a good Towne called Abier, and the middleward at Puchsiancies, where a Castle being defended, withstood them a season, but at the length was woon, and the Prince lay beyond the Bridge, by a fayre running water, on both sides wherof, the Countrey was spoyled with fire, together with the good Towne of Pesaunce where the vaward was lodged that night. On Sunday they trauelled a long iourney, because the Prince should be lodged in the great Abbey of our Lady de Prolion, where in seuerall Cloysters did liue 100. Predicants, whervnto, the Prince was deuoutly receiued. In the day, the armie set on fire the Towne of Lemins, where there was farre greater Couents of Religions, then at Carcason. Also, they burnt the faire Towne called Falanges, vnto which Towne belonged one and twentie Windmilles. They burnt also the Townes of Vnlard, and Serre, with all the whole Countrey lying thereabouts. On Munday the middleward lodged at the good Towne called Dealpuhbon, which long time was defended, but at length gotten by force, the Castell wherof yelded, vnto the which Towne and Castell, the Prince commaunded, that no harme should be done by fire. On Tuesday earely passing ouer the riuer of Besile, they entred into a countrey which was broad. About one a clocke, they came before a great Abbey called Bourghbon, where the Earle of Flurens with great ioy receiued the Prince, he being newly escaped out of prison from Paris, where he had laine by the space of two yeers: and the said earle remained from that time faithfull to the Prince. This day they rode in the Lordships and seigniories of the same Earle, by the towns of Basel and Colmon, and on the

right hand they passed by the great towne of Saint Canole, and the high Castell called Hautripe: but on this day they brent nothing for reuerence of the foresaid Earle & his vineyards, but passed againe ouer the water of Arage, leauing also Tolouse as they did at the first, but then one mile on the left hand, and now foure leagues on the right, and the middle ward was lodged in the great towne of Vermount, which together with the Castell was brent. On Wednesday, they passed by the Castell of the Earle of Flure called Mountthane, at the foote whereof, all the horsemen passed ouer the great water Geround, & there toke the towne and castell of North, then leauing the riuer of Geronde on the left hand, and so passed vnto the towne of Marconaw, which they toke: then they returned ouer the riuer againe, & toke the strong town of Carbone. On Thursday the army rested. On Friday word was brought to the Prince that the French were vp, and had gathered a great force, which they had deuided into fiue great battels, being in the field not farre from them, whereupon our men set themselues in battel aray, about one mile from the place where they lodged, and being now ready to fight, some one of the souldiers by chance start a Hare, whereupon a great shout was made, which the enemies hearing, they sent out fourty light horsemen, to see what was the cause thereof, who drawing nigh to the English army, and perceiuing them to be set in battell aray, returned backe againe, and declared what they had seene: whereupon presently the whole army of Frenchmen fled with great feare. The same day Bartholomew Burwash, Iohn Chandos, and Iames de Audley, with 24. light horsemen, were appointed scoutes, and comming to the taile of the Frenchmen, they toke prisoners 32. Knights and Gentlemen, amongst whom they toke the Earle of Romeme, also they slue many Carters, and Wagoners. The Prince lodged in the town of Muwose. On Saterday they marched to the Castle of Dradzy, in which Castle the Prince lodged, and in the morning they burnt it. On Sonday the two and twentieth of November, about euening, they perceiued that their enemies were on the other side of the great Hill hard by the great town of Gemount, so that the Englishmen being benighted, sent out 12. light horsemen, and certaine bowmen vnto the right hand of the towne called Auremount, where finding 400. men of armes of the Constable of Fraunce, they chased them out of the town, and slew and toke many: the middle Ward lodged at Auremount, and the Vaward at Colimont. Early in the morning the Wagoners being commanded to remaine in the towne of Auremount, all the residue being deuided into troupes, went into the field, wayting for the comming of their enemies, all in vaine: for the prince taking the towne of Gamount, was told that his enemies fled away at midnight. On Tuesday the army lodged in the field, and for lacke of water, their horse were faine to drinke wine, wherupon it came to passe, that the next day their horses were so drunke they could not go right forth, and many of them died. On Saint Katherines day, with much adoe they came to water, and leauing the towne of Florence on their right hand, they passed to the great towne called Sillard, and the middle ward was lodged at a towne called Realmount, which they toke by maine force, & therefore brent it. On

Thursday

Thursday they rested. On Friday they trauailed a long iourney, by walled townes and strong castles, the middle ward lodged at Serde. On Satterday they passed ouer a certaine Water with great difficultie, and through woods, till they came to a good towne called Pesin. On Sunday the prince rested, and toke homage and oathes of the townesmen. On Munday S. Andrewes day trauelling along iourney, they came to the town of Tolouse, where were three Castles. On Tuesday the prince trauelled to the castle of Pelan, where he lodged. On Wednesday the prince came to Regla, where his horses and Wagons passed through the riuer of Geronde. In this towne of Regla, the prince appointed diuers Barons and such like to winter in diuers places of the Marches, to the intent they should keepe the inland parts of Gascoigne against the Frenchmen. *An. reg. 30.*

The prince of Wales touching these matters aforesaid, and for other considerations also, caused a new coyne of gold to be made in Gascoigne, being busied himselfe about the repairing of such things as were decaied & throwen downe. And in this season, there sprang vp a foolish fantasie in the Frenchmens heads, that the K. of England was come into Normandy, the cause of which rumour rose vp, for that the Duke of Lancaster, after that he had fortified the strong places belonging to the K. of Nauarre, which were in the Ile of Constance & other places, did direct his iourney towards Britaine, whereof he was newly made chiefe captaine. Another cause was this, Philip brother to the king of Nauarre, came into England, and earnestly craued aid of the king against the French king, who kept his brother in prison, that hee might by force of armes recouer all such lands vnto him as were wrongfully withholden from him, whereupon hee offering to do homage and fealtie, had (of the kings appointment) Miles Stapleton a man of great integritie, and in martiall affaires verie skilfull, him (I say) the king appointed to bee his faithfull fellow. These men with two thousand men wel appointed trauelling through Normandy, toke townes & fortresses, burning diuers of them, passing along till they came to a castle nine leagues distant from the Citie of Paris: neither did they aslake their trauell, vntill they had forced their enemies to enter into a perely truce. By this meanes a great report and no lesse feare filled the hearts of the Frenchmen, which reporte at length came to the eares of the Prince lying at Regla, wherefore he gathering all the power hee had with him in his Dukedome, to the intent to meete his Father, which hee must doe by trauelling through Fraunce, hee came at length to Burgetat, where hee was certified that the Earle of Armenia, would after his departure haue spoyled the Countrey, and for that intent had prouided a great band of men: wherefore hee sent backe to the Gouernour of Gascoigne vnto Barnard de Libret, and other. From thence the prince went into France through the coastes of Barny and Limon, still encouraging his men against their enemies, sending before him Iohn Chandos, Iames Dawdeley, and other complices, to trie out the state of their enemies Countrey, least perhaps some crafty ambushmēt might sodainly assault our men, afore they were aware. He himselfe remouing his campe euery day, and now being entred into Pictauia, 1356.

his espies brought word that the French king had gathered a great armie, being now in Aurelian, who also knew of the princes comming, for he sent out espies to discouer our armie, amongst whom Grissin Mucco of Chambly, petie captaine of two hundred men, meeting with other espies, came to his coast: for our espies toke thirty of them, and slue the residue, so that there was not one of them left to carry word what was become of their fellowes. Our espies proceeded towards Romerentine, where meeting with the Lord Crone, and Lord Beisgand, they set vpon them and slue them, their chiefe Captains being forced to flee to a Castle, and hauing taken their lodging in a Towne, the prince commaunded that on the morning a great assault should be giuen to them of the Castle.

The day following our men being all armed, passed through the ditches, and came vnto the wals of the Castle, some applied to scale the wal with ladders, some burne the gates, and entring, slue a great many of the chiefe men, but the Lords before named fled vnto the principall tower of the castle: but the prince determined not to depart, till they that were besieged, were either taken or yelded: at length the Castle bridg vndermined, the men besieged, with all humility yelded vp the Castle. After this the spies declared that the French king was come down to Turon, to prouide armies to go against the Prince, of the which tidings the Prince being glad, he pight his tentes against the French king, but could not passe the riuer of Leger, by reason of great flouds, and the French king had broken all the Bridges, to the intent there should be no passage betwixt the Prince & the Duke of Lancaster, whose armies might wel euery night perceiue each others fires in the Campes: but the Prince following alongst the riuer of Legers Eastward, he pight his tents nere vnto Turon, where loking for the French king foure daies, hoping to fight with him, for that he was distant but one league off, he vnderstood that the French king was retyred backe to Blamia, ten leagues off: passing ouer by a Bridge the Riuer of Legers at a place vsed betwixt two strong Townes, and so toward Poyters. This retiring of the French king certified, the prince returned backe, intending to haue met him in the way, which he could not doe: yet crossing ouer all, as he imagined the nerer way, he set vpon the taile of his enemies, and cut from them the Earles of Inyni and Winters, and also the marshal of Burgony, these being taken, died, as was thought, through the great toyle they had taken: night drawing on, our men gaue themselues to rest in a wood, intending the next day to take their iourney toward Poyters, and by the way they were certified that the French king, with great prouision prepared himselfe to battell, and drew nigh to our tents: the prince therfore committed the vaward of the armie to the Earles of Warwicke and Orford, the middle ward was guided by the Prince, and the rereward was led by the Earles of Salisburie and Suffolke. In all the whole armie of the Prince there was not aboue foure thousand men of armes, one thousand armed souldiours, and two thousand Archers. The pompous nobility of the Frenchmen drew nigh, greatly disdaining the small company of the English men, for they had in number eight thousand fighting souldiours, they had also

Battaile of Poyters.

seuen

seuen Antients. At this matter a great many of our men murmured, because of late a great part of our army was sent to defend Gascoigne. There was among the Frenchmen a certaine Scot called William Douglas, a man of great force and practise in the warres: this man did the French King make Knight, and because he knew he would be a deadly enemie to the Englishmen, he gladly hearkned to his aduices. This William was captaine ouer two hundred Scots: these men vnderstood well that it was the custome of the English men in these dayes to fight on foote, in which point they followed the Scots, and the Scot also prouoked the French King and other French men to fight in like manner. The French King obeying his foolish counsell, gladly agreed vnto his sayings, whereupon he sent light horsemen into the Citie, that they should suffer no man to make any chase, but onely 500. horsemen wel appointed to come out against the archers, in the beginning of the conflict, and to run them ouer and to tread them vnder their horse feete: but these performed not that which was commaunded them, as it appeared by the sequele thereof. The armies being set in a readinesse on both sides for to fight earely on Sonday in the morning which was notable fayre, behold there came the Cardinall of Petragorien, and charged the Prince, in the name of God who was crucified, that it might please him to deferre the warre for a time, both for ecclesiasticall peace, and also for the sparing of Christian blood, and to the end there might be a treatie had of peace, the which he promised should be performed with great honour on both sides. The Prince neither feared nor refused peace but modestly agreed to the request of this Father. All this day now being appointed for the obtaining of peace, the armie of the Frenchmen encreased by the number of a thousand men of armes, and also of other. On the morrowe after, the Cardinall came againe from the French King, in his behalfe to request a truce, which should endure for one whole yeere, the which the Prince denyed, yet at the importunate sute of that Cardinall, he graunted a truce to continue till Christmas next comming. Therefore the Cardinall returning to the French King, requested him of pledges for the truce, but the Marshall Dawdenam, Geffrey de Charney and Douglas the Scot, perswaded him that by common reason it could not come to passe that the Englishmen should at that time preuaile, and especially, because they were but fewe, and in a strange countrey, and wearied out miserably with their toyle in trauell, and therefore not able to indure so great a nũber of the Frenchmen of France, who stood in defence of their owne land. The Prince of Wales being certified, that the captaines of the French, would haue no kind of peace, but such as they could get by force of armes, and calling his men together, he made to them an Oration first in general, and then to his Archers as followeth: your manhood (saith he) hath bin alwaies known to me, in great dangers, which sheweth that you are not degenerate from true sonnes of English men, but to be descended from the blood of them which heretofore were vnder my fathers Dukedome, and his predecessors Kings of England, vnto whõ no labor was painefull, no place inuincible, no ground vnpassable, no hill (were it neuer so high) inaccessible, no tower vnscaleable, no army impenetrable, no armed souldiour, or whole hoste

Prince of Wales his Oration.

of

of men was formidable. Their liuely couragiousnesse tamed the Frenchmen, the Cipzians, the Syracusians, the Calabzians, & the Palestines, and brought vnder the stiffe necked Scots, & vnruly Irishmen, yea, and the Welchmen also, which could well endure all labor. Occasion, time, and dangers, maketh of fearefull, very strong an stoute, & doth many times of dull witted men make wittie: honour also, and loue of the Countrey, and the desire of the rich spoyle of the Frenchmen, doth stirre you vp to follow your fathers steps. Wherefore followe your Antientes, and wholy be intentiue to followe the commandement of your Captaines as well in minde as in body, that if victozie come with life, we may still continue in firme frendship together, hauing alwayes one will, and one minde: but if enuious Fortune (which God forbid) should let vs at this present, to runne the race of all flesh, and that we ende both life and labour together, be you sure that your names shall not want eternall fame and heauenly ioy, and we also with these gentlemen our companions, will drinke of the same cuppe that you shall doe, vnto whom it shall be an eternall glozy and name, to haue wonne the nobilitie of France: but to be ouercome (as God forbid) is not to be ascribed vnto the danger of time, but to the courage of the men. Hauing spoken these wozds, he perceiued that there was a hill hard by which was planted on the top with hedges and ditches, the inside whereof was very plaine, and a pasture fielde on the one side thereof, with many rough bushes, and on the other side it was all planted with vines, and the residue was plaine, in the top whereof he did imagine the armie of the French to lye betwixt our men and the Hill. There were great and lowe valleys, and a piece of Marish ground. One company of the Prince finding out a narrowe passage, entred the valley and toke the hill, where among the bushes they hid themselues, taking the aduantage of the place. The fielde wherein our men lay, to witte, the vawarde and middlewarde, was deuided from the plaine where the French armie lay, with a long hedge and ditch, the one end whereof did reach down to the Marish afozesaid: that of the Hill nert the Marish, the Earle of Warwicke kept, Captaine of the vawarde. In the vpper part of the hedge, toward the hanging of the hill, there was a great gap, from the which a stones cast stode our rereward, ouer the which the Earle of Salisbury was Captaine. Our enemies perceyuing our Princes Antient to be displayed, and ofttimes to be remoued from place to place, and by reason of the Hill to be sometime quite out of sight, they iudged that the Prince fled; yet Douglas the Scot and Marshall de Clarimount, said that it was not so, but Marshall Dawdenam being deceiued in his owne opinion, thought otherwise, crying out still to followe & chase the Prince now fleeing, and with him also Douglas, to the intent to gette preferment and a worthie name of his new warfare: But Clarimount to wash away the euill opinion which was conceiued of him touching his fidelitie, was the more vehement to perswade them forward, for vnto them the charge of the vaward was deputed: before these went out, the fashion was, certaine to chase and to iuste, against whom certaine that were vnder the Hill of our vaward came to meete Marshall Dawdenam, who staying to see the ende of the iusting, kept himselfe from

encountring.

encountring. In the meane time Clarimount thinking to come out by the gap in the hedge, and so to come at the backe of our bawarde, and to compasse them in, met with the Earle of Salisburie, who perceiuing his comming and purpose, suspected his whole intent, and so they which gouerned our rereward, making hast to take the gap, and keepe the enemie from passing that way sustained the first charge of the battell. Then began a terrible meeting betwixt the armed men, who laid on load with swordes and speares, neither did the Archers slacke their dutie, but lying in safe trenches, start vp aboue the ditche and shot ouer the hedge, preuailing more with their arrowes then they did that fought in armes: thus our rereward slaying the enemies, who came straggling to the gap, and the bawarde which lay on the hanging of the hill toward the Marish being gouerned by the Earle of Warwike, were alwayes readie and met with the Frenchmen, beating them downe. The Archers of the bawarde were placed in the Marish, out of daunger from the Horsemen, yet for all that they did preuaile there somewhat, for the Horsemen were appointed to no other purpose, but to ouerrunne the Archers. The Earle of Oxford considering the discommoditie that might ensue thereof, departed from the Princes warde, and leading with him the Archers, set them on the one side of the Frenchmen, commaunding them to shoote at the hinder parts of the Horses, by meanes whereof the horses being gauld and wounded, fell to tumbling with them that sate on their backes, or els turned backe & ran vpon them that followed after, making great slaughter vpon their owne masters. The horsemen being thus beaten backe, the Archers retired towards the place from whence they came, shooting & gawling the sides of the Frenchmen which fought right ouer against them: by this time the force and heate of the battell began to be in prime, when as the Earles of Warwike & Salisbury, like fierce Lions, endeuoured of purpose which of them should dung the land of Poyters most with Frenchmens blood. Neither was the wise Counseller Thomas Dassord of Suffolke idle at that season, who right worthily in all his acts behaued himselfe, being expert and skilfull in actiuitie. For he continually running from warde to warde, and into all troupes and companies, comforted and stirred them vp with good words to doe well, hauing a great regard that the youthfull sort of lustie souldiers being too bolde vpon their good hearts and courage, should not without regard goe out too farre, and placed the Archers at sundry times to great aduantages, and oftentimes as leysure would suffer him, he would encourage vp the minds of the souldiers. Clarimount was slaine, William Douglas also being wounded fled, hauing with him a fewe Scottes of his bande, with Archebald Douglas his brother: our men retyring, put themselues in good aray, and our bawarde and middle warde ioyned themselues together, by and by there marcheth forth a newe armie of the Frenchmen, the which the eldest sonne of the French King Dolphin of Vienna, brought forth. The order and aray of this armie was more terrible & fierce then the shew of that which was last oppressed, yet for al that could it not make our men afraid, who were sharpe set, and very desirous of honour, and also of reuenge, both for themselues, and their fellowes, which a

little

little before were slaine and wounded. And therefore boldely they goe to it on both sides, making shoutes and noyses, crying out, Saint George to borow, or Saint Denis be for vs. Within a while they were come to fight man to man, and euery man ready to die fight now to saue their liues, neither doth the Lion make the wolfe more afraid, or ỹ Tiger is more terrible to the simple beast, then our lusty gentlemen were to their enemies, who chased them, and slue them like as the wolues chase and kill sheepe. And though that this battel withstood our men more then the first, yet, after they had lost a great many of their men, they had such a deuise, that they saued many, & yet, not by running away, but by a faire retreate, which the Frenchmen are accustomed to vse. But our men considering, that the victorie of the fielde was doubtfull, as long as the French King might be in presence with his armie, who lay there halfe hid in a Valley, they would not afterward, when they had chased any that fled, goe out of the fielde, but the worthie man Maurice Barkeley, sonne of Thomas Barkley, had no regard thereunto, who for the space of two houres together with his men, neuer spared, but would be still in the forefront of the battell, inuading his enemies with the first. This Maurice being in the middest of the Dolphins gard sowed blowes among them, first with a speare, then with a sword, and at length being all alone compassed with the multitude, and sorely wounded, he was taken prisoner. In the meane time our men caried those which were wounded of their campe, and laid them vnder bushes and hedges out of the way, other hauing spent their weapons toke the speares & swordes from them whom they had ouercome: and the archers lacking arrowes, made hast to drawe them from poore wretches that were but halfe dead: there was not one of them al, but either he was wounded or quite wearied with great labour, except 400. mẽ who kéeping the chiefe standert, were appointed to méete the French K. The Dophin being thus put to flight, one came to the French K. and said, my Lord K. the field is fallen to the Englishmen, and your eldest son hath withdrawn himselfe: vnto whom the French K. answered with an oth, that he would not that day forsake ỹ field vnlesse he were taken or slaine, and so by that meanes caried away by force: wherefore the antient-bearers are commanded to march forwards, after whom followed two great companies of armed men into a wide field, shewing themselues to our men, & stroke a great feare into their heartes, in so much that they were out of hope to conquer any more. The which thing a man of great wisdom standing by ỹ Prince signified with a howling voice, (saying alas we poore wretches are ouercome,) but the prince hauing a great trust & faith in Christ, checked him saying, thou liest thou dastardly fellow, for thou canst not say that we can be ouercome as long as I liue. Captaine de la Buche, a noble man in all affaires as sone as he perceiued the armies of the French King, marching forth of their tentes, asking licence of the prince departed away with lx. souldiors, & a hundred Archers, whom many of our men thought to haue fled away, therefore our souldiors (excepting the chiefe Captaines) being quite out of hope of victory, committed themselues wholy to the mercy of God. Then the Prince commanded his Antient bearer Sir Walter Woodland, to march forward toward his enemies,

mies, and with a fewe fresh men he ioyned battell with the great armie of the French King: by and by they sounde their trumpets, one giuing answere to another, they made such a noyse, that the walles of Poyters sounded with the Eccho thereof like a wood, in such sort that a man would haue thought that the hils had bellowed out to the valleis, and that the cloudes had giuen forth a most terrible thunder, to the which there wanted no cruel lightnings, whilest the aire shone on the bright armour & speares dashing against shining harneis. Then came on the cruell company of crosbowmen making a darknes in the skies with the multitud of quarrels which they shot, against whom came a worthy company of English bowmen: out flies also darts of Ash which met with the enemie a far off: but the French army being ful of diuers troupes and many armed men defending their brests with their shields, proceéd forward against their enemies: wherefore our Archers hauing emptied their quiuers in vaine, being armed onely with swordes and targets, are faine to encounter with them that were laden with armour. Then bestirreth himself the worthy Prince of Wales, cutting and hewing the Frenchmen with a sharpe sword. In the meane time Captaine de la Buche marcheth a compasse about, vnder the hanging of the hill, which he with the Prince a little before forsoke, and priuily compassing about the fielde, at the length commeth close vnder the place where the French Campe lay, from thence he ascended to the toppe of the Hill that way, which the Frenchmen had beaten with their trauaile, and so sodainly breaking forth vnlooked for, and shewing by the ensigne of Saint George that he was our friend, the Prince with great courage giueth a fresh charge on the French armie, being desirous to breake their rankes, before the Captaine aforesayde, should set on the side of the battayle. The Prince lustily encountring with his enemies goeth into the middle of the throng, and where hee séeth most company, there hee layeth about him on euery side.

In the meane time on euery side, his friendes which serued with Captaine de la Buche, were at the backes of the enemies, beating downe and killing without pitie, and the Archers also placed for the purpose shot so thicke, wounding the backes and sides of the Frenchmen, in such sort, that the fourme of the battaile was quite spoyled, neither could they put themselues in order or array any more. This was the courage of the Prince who at the length thrusteth thorow the throngs of them that guarded the French King, then should you sée an Antient beginne to nod and stumble, the bearers of them to fall downe, the blood of slaues and Princes ran mingled together into the waters which were nigh. In like sorte the Boye of Cornewall rageth, who séeketh to haue none other way to the French Kings standard, then by blood onely: but when they came there, they met with a company of stoute men to withstand them, the Englishmen fight, the Frenchmen also lay on, but at length Fortune making haste to turne her whéele, the Prince preaseth forward on his enemies, and like a fierce Lion beating downe the proud, he came to the yélding vp of the French King. The Frenchmen being scattered abroad in the fieldes of Poyters perceiuing that the standard with the

flowredeluce was beaten downe, fled with all spéede towards the Towne, which was not farre off: the English men perceyuing them to be fléeing, though themselues were either sore wounded or wearied, followed them in chase euen to the gates of Poyters, where in a great skirmish and very daungerous, they slew a great number of Frenchmen. At the last our men being called backe by retreate with the sound of trumpet, and assembling together, there were diuerse paulions and tents set vp in the fields, and the whole company being throughly comforted with this victorie, gaue their whole endeuour to prouide for them that were wounded, for the quiet rest of them that were wearied, for safe kéeping of them that were taken prisoners, and for the refreshing of thē that were almost famished, vntil they had ful vnderstanding who and how many were wanting: Among them which were found halfe dead, was found the Lord Iames Dawdley, by reason of his broad buckler, and being caried in the armes of his souldiors, was brought to the Princes lodging, and the Prince himselfe rose from his supper, and came to him, and caused him to be stripped and laid in a soft bed, and being some what better com to his remembraunce, the Prince comforted him, swearing to him that he had the French King yélded vnto him, which newes when the languishing Noble man heard, he straight wayes reuiued. The Prince returning to the French King, willed him not to denie that to bea worthie déede of his that rose from his supper to comfort him that was almost dead, who spared not his owne blod to purchase victorie. After that they hauing had some talke concerning the warres which Iames Dawdeley made, the French King said that amongst all other stoute Champions which valiantly that day behaued themselues, he did greatly wonder at the noble déedes of that Knight, and he spake not much more in all his supper, but what he spake to the Prince, who comforted his noble pray. Such like words, it is said that the French King spake: Although it be our chance to fall into an euerlasting sorow, yet for all that we thought it good to refraine from the same by a kind of measure, for though we be vnder subiection by law and right of warre vnder our noble cousin, yet are we not as rascals, or faint hearted runne awayes, or taken lying hid close in a corner, but after the manner of the fielde by the ende and successe of warre, where we were as ready to dye as liue for iustice sake. And in the same field were many rich men taken, whose liues were reserued for ransome, the faint-hearted and lewd chased away, but the worthiest and stoutest were spoyled of their liues. This battell of Poytiers was fought on the nineténth day of September.

The next day after the battell, all the prisoners were numbred, to wit, the French King, also Phillip his sonne, the Archbishop of Senon, the Earle of Pontue, the Earle of Longuile, the Earle of Ewe, the Earle of Tankeruile, the Earle Daynter, the Earle of Vendadour, the Earle of Slauncer, the earle of Vademount, the Earle of Vandome, the Earle of Iuyny, the Earle Don Martin, the Earle of Selabruse, the Earle of Salso, Vicount Nerbon, the Lord Daubeny, Marshall Dawdenam, the Lord Guinchard de Angle, Seneschal de Seintong, the Lord Nozes Pawntmet, the Lord Leonard de Guil-

hop,

hoy, the Seneschal of Poyters, the Lord great Master, the chiefe Master of the hospitall of Spaigne, the Lord of S. Tigre, the Lord Damboyd Seneschall of Annar, the Lord Tower, the Lord Dars, the Lord Duruall, the Lord of the towne of Ernel, the Lord Maugeler, the Lord Planke, the Vicount de Belimount, and the Lord of Sulyr there were also the bodies founde of many that were slaine, as the Duke of Burbon, the Duke Dasines, the Constable of France, Marshall de Garimount, the Lord Geffrey de Charney, the Lord Pounce, the Bishop of Chaloner, the Lord of Laundas, the Lord Ripemount, the Lord Chaneny, the Lord Ioele, the Lord Pele, the Lord Aunger, the Lord de Mount John, the Lord Dargenton, the Lord Ewse, the Lord Kuas, the Lord Rochechichelward, the Lord de Vilem. The Prince bought all the prisoners and captiues of them that kept them, and carried them with him to Burdeaux, there to remaine in safe custodie, during his abode there. *An. reg. 31.* 1357.

Edward Prince of Wales returning into England with Iohn the French King, Philip his sonne, and many other prisoners, arriued at Plimouth on the fift of May, and the foure and twentieth of May entred London with them, where he was receiued with great honour of the Citizens, and so conueyed to the Kings pallace at Westminster, where the King sitting in his estate in Westminster hall, receiued them, and after conueyed the French King to a lodging, where he lay a season: and after the said French King was lodged in the Sauoy, (which then was a pleasant place belonging to the Duke of Lancaster.) In the winter following were great and royall Iusts holden in Smithfield at London, where many knightly fights of armes were don, to the great honour of the King and Realme, at the which were present, the Kings of England, France, and Scotland, with many noble estates of all those kingdomes, whereof the more part of the strangers were prisoners.

Edward the blacke prince returned with his prisoners into England.

Iusts in Smithfield.

After this taking of King Iohn of France, Englishmen (which before were bearded and the haire of their heads short rounded) then vsed long haire on their heads, and their beards to be shauen.

Beards of Englishmen shauen.

Henry Picard Vintner, Maior of London, in one day did sumptuously feast Edward King of England, Iohn King of France, the King of Cipres (then arriued in England) Dauid King of Scots, Edward Prince of Wales, with many noble men and other, and after the said Henry Picard kept his hal against all commers whosoeuer, that were willing to play at dice and hazard. In like manner the Lady Margaret his wife did also kéepe her Chamber, to the same intent. The King of Cipres playing with Henry Picard in his hall, did winne of him fifty marks, but Henry being very skilful in that arte, altering his hand did after win of the same King, the same fiftie markes, and fiftie markes more, which whē the same king began to take in ill part, although he dissembled the same, Henry said vnto him, My Lord & King be not agréeued, I couet not your gold but your play, for I haue not bid you hither that I might gréeue you, but that amongst other things I might trie your play; and gaue him his money againe, plentifully bestowing of his own amongst the retinue: besides, he gaue many rich gifts to the King and other nobles and Knights, which dined with him, to the great glorie of the Citizens of London in those dayes.

The maior of London feasted foure Kings.

About

About Hallowntide, Dauid le Bruse King of Scottes was deliuered from the long imprisonment of xi. yéres, in the castle of Dolham, his ransome being set 100000. markes to be payde the next tenne yéres following.

*An.reg.*32. 1358. Tho. Walsing. Robert Knolles.

Normandy and Brytaine were sore spoyled and wasted by Philip the King of Nauers brother, Iacob de la Pipe, and Robert Knowles, with many other Englishmen which were captaines of that company, who raged in warlike sort in these Countries, the space of three yéres and more, contrary to the King of Englands pleasure. This Robert Knowles being a meane man of birth became Captaine of many souldiours, and did many maruellous acts.

Registrum fratrum minorum.

Isabel daughter to Philip the Faire, King of Fraunce, and wife to King Edward the second, deceased, *apud Risinges iuxta London* the xxii. of August, and was buryed in the middest of the grey Friers quire at London, in a tombe of Alabaster.

Castle at Windsore enlarged.

This yére King Edward began the new building in the castle of Windsore, where he was borne, for which cause he procured to adorne that place with larger and more beautifull buildings: he appointed surueiour of this worke William Wicham a prouident and discréete man. But the Kéepe then called the round Table was begunne (as afore is shewed) in the 18. yére of his reigne. The same yére died the noble and famous personages, to wit, Sir Roger Mortimer Earle Marshal of the Kings hoste, and one of his especiallest priuie Counsellours in Burgundy, in the towne of Moneray, he was buried at Wigmore, Thomas Earle of Orford, Iohn de Grey Steward of England, Geffrey de Say, and many other. And in the Kings armie that was beyond the sea there died aboue a thousand men of account. Also Geffrey de Northbrigges Bishop of Chichester deceased, and Robert de Straton succéeded.

*Ann.reg.*33 1359. John Beauchamp, buried in Paules.

Iohn of Gaunt the Kings sonne (by dispensation) take to wife Blaunch, daughter of Henry Duke of Lancaster his kinswoman. Iohn Beauchampe constable of Douer, warden of the portes, Knight of the Garter (sonne to Edward de Beauchampe, Earle of Warwike, and brother to Thomas also Earle of Warwike) deceased, and was buried on the south side of the midle Ile in the body of Saint Pauls Church in London; a faire Monument of him remaineth there, by many ignorant people, misnamed, to be of Humfrey Duke of Glocester, who lyeth honorably intombed at Saint Albons.

The French King vnder colour of peace, offered to King Edward Flaunders, Picardy, Aquitaine, and other lands, which the Englishmen had ranged through and spoyled, for the performance whereof, messengers were sent into France, but the Frenchmen would not performe the offer, wherefore King Edward being angry with a nauie of ships passed the sea to Calets, where diuiding his army into three parts he committed one company to Henry Duke of Lancaster, another to Prince Edward, and the third he reserued to himselfe, and so passed into Burgundy.

King Edward inuaded Burgundie.

Frenchmen arriued at Winchelsey.

In the Lent season, the Normans with a small nauy arriued at Winchelsey, and partly brent the towne, and slew such as did withstand them: wherefore the Prelates of England assembled from all parts in armour to withstand

ſtand them, but when they had prepared themſelues to battell, the French were gone, leauing behind them two of their ſhips, which ſtucke faſt in the land, and 200. of their men.

King Edward with his power rode through France, by Picardy, Artois, Roan, Champaine, & ſo to Britaine, deſtroying the countrey before him. And here is to be noted, that the 14. day of April, and the morrow after Eaſter day, king Edward with his hoſt lay before the Citie of Paris, which day was full darke of miſt and haile, and ſo bitter cold, that many men died on their horſe backes with the cold, wherefore vnto this day it hath bene called the Blacke Monday. The king of Nauarre vered ſore the marches of Normandy. Thus was the realme of France miſerably beſet on all ſides. At the laſt, a final peace was concluded on this condition, that king Edward ſhould haue to his poſſeſſion, the countries of Gaſcoigne, Guyen, Poytiers, Limoſin, Baleuile, Crantes, Calais, Guiſnes, and diuers other Lordſhips, Caſtles, Townes, and all the landes to them belonging, without knowledge of any ſoueraigntie or ſubiection for the ſame. This peace being confirmed by writing and by oath, king Edward came into England, and ſo ſtraight to the tower to ſee the French king, where he appointed his ranſome to be three millions of Florences, and ſo deliuered him of all impriſonment, and brought him with great honour to the Sea, who then ſailed ouer into France.

Ann reg. 34. 1360.

Peace with France.

Tho. Walſing.

French king releaſed.

K. Edward the 24 of Januarie began a Parliament at Weſtminſter, where the forme of the agrement was read, and allowed of all eſtates, where the king on the laſt of Januarie called his nobles to ſweare to hold and kepe the ſaid agrement, eſpecially [illegible] as well Prelates as other that were not at Calais, where he ſware, and other that were there with him.

Ann. reg. 35. 1361.

And on the firſt of Februarie following, the king reſtored to the Priors aliens their houſes, lands, tenements, &c. as by his patents may appeare in effect as followeth. Edward by the grace of God king of Englang, Lord of Ireland, and of Aquitaine, to all by theſe preſents, &c. Although the Priorie of mountacute, in the county of Somerſet (by reaſon of the warres betweene vs and Fraunce) with all the landes, tenements, fees, aduowſons, together with the goods and cattels belonging to the ſame, hath been of late taken into our hands, and by vs farmed & rented forth, as appeareth by diuers patents. Now therfore, ſince peace is betwixt vs and the Noble Prince, our moſt deare brother, the king of France, we for the honour of God, and holy Church, reſtore to the ſaid Prior, the Priorie, with all the lands, tenementes, fees, aduowſons: and whatſoeuer elſe belonging to the ſame, to hold the ſame, in as free manner as they held it before. And withall, forgiue and releaſe all arrerages of rents which might be due vnto vs, by reaſon of any former grants. In witneſſe, &c. the 6. of Februarie the 35. yere of our raigne.

Reſtitution of the Priors aliens. Record.

The like letters of reſtitution had the houſes (in the patent) vndernamed, to wit, Northampton, Arundel, Cameringham, Otriton, Pritewel, &c. to the number of one hundred and tenne in England, beſides them in Ireland, Normandie, and the parts of France. All which houſes were cleane ſuppreſſed and diſſolued, with many more by king Henry the fift.

The second mortalitie.

A great dearth and pestilence happened in England, which was called the second pestilence, in which died Henry Duke of Lancaster in March at London, and was buried at Leicester, in the Collegiate Church which he had founded, with a Deane, twelue Chanons, Prebendaries, as many Vicars, and other ministers accordingly, and one hundred weake and sicke persons, fiftie men, and fiftie women, and tenne other women to tend vpon them that were sicke and weake, so that the same colledge and hospitall, at the suppression by king Henry the eight was valued by the yere in lands fiue hundred ninety and fiue pounds, seuen shillings, and fiue pence.

Lib. Lichfield.

There died also Reiginald Lord Cobham, & Walter fitz Warren, valiant and famous knights, and fiue Bishops, to wit, Reiginald of Worcester, Michaell of London, Thomas of Ely, John of Lincolne, and Robert of Cicester. To Worcester was preferred Iohn of Barnet: to London, Simon Sudburie: to Ely, Simon Langham: to Lincolne, Iohn Bokingham: to Cicester, William Linlinere.

Leonell Earle of Ulster by his wife, and sonne to king Edward, went into Ireland to encounter the Irishmen that vexed the English.

Edward Prince of Wales toke to wife by dispensation the Countesse of Kent, daughter vnto Edmond Earle of Kent, brother to K. Edward the second: she had béene before wife vnto Thomas Holland, and before that, she was wife to the Earle of Salisburie, and diuorced from him.

A rout of the great company of the Englishmen were commaunded to depart out of France, and they discomfited in Auuerne the Frenchmen, and toke diuers prisoners of the nobles of France that had bèn afore taken of the Englishmen, and there was slaine Iaques de Burbon, and the Countie of Salbrig. Also a rout of Britaines, part of the great company aforesaid, were discomfited in Limosin alias Garret, by Wil. Felton knight of England, and at that time Steward of the Countrey for king Edward.

Sore tempest of wind.

Ann. reg. 32. 1369.

The king held his Christmas at Windsore, & the xv. day following, a sore and vehement South west winde brake forth, so hideous, that it ouerthrew high houses, towers, steeples, and trées, and so bowed them, that the residue which fell not, but remained standing, were the weaker.

Justing in Smithfield.

The first fiue daies of May, at London in Smithfield, were Iustes holden, the king and Quéene being present, and the most part of the Chiualrie of England and Fraunce, and of other Nations, to the which came Spaniards, Cipriets, and Armenians knightly requesting the king of Englands aide against the Pagans that had inuaded their confines. The staple of wooles, notwithstanding the oath receiued of the kind of England, and other great men of the land, is sent to Calais.

First staple of wool at Calais

In the feast of the Apostles Peter and Paule, king Edward at Westminster by his Charter, gaue to the Abbot of Westminster, and couent, two stags of his venison, yerely to be taken in the forrest of Windsore.

Edward Prince of Wales, about the feast of Saint Margaret, at Westminster, in presence of the great men of the Realme, receiued of his father the Principality of Aquitaine, fealtie and homage first made to him, but yet he

Edward the kings eldest sonne Prince of Aquitaine.

left

left not the Principalitie of Wales, the Dutchie of Cornewall, the counties of Chester and Kent.

Simon Islip Archbishop of Canterbury did ordaine, that more should not be giuen to priests for their yearly stipend, then three pounds, fiue shillings, and eight pence, which caused many of them to steale. Priests became theeues for lacke of liuing.

The fiftéenth day of October, began a Parliament at London, which continued till the feast of Saint Brice, the thirtéenth of November, on which day the king was borne, hauing now accomplished the fiftieth yéere of his age, whereupon, he pardoned such as were guiltie of treason to his person, released prisoners, reuoked outlawes, and at the petition of the commons, he commaunded pleas to be ded in English, and not in French, as they had continued since the Conquest. He made Leonell his sonne Earle of Vulster, then being in Ireland, Duke of Clarence, and his sonne Iohn Earle of Richmond, he made Duke of Lancaster: and Edmond of Langley his sonne, he made Earle of Cambridge, the Marquesse Iuliers before recyted, being dead without issue of his bodie. Parliament at London. T. Walsingham. The lawes to be pleaded in the English tongue. Record.

In the said Parliament was granted to the king for three yéeres following, fiue and twentie shillings, and eight pence, of euery sacke of woll to be transported beyond the seas. Subsidie of woolles.

Ioane Quéene of Scots, and wife to Dauid Bruse, and sister to king Edward the third, died in the castell of Hartford, and was buried in the grey Friers Church at London by her mother. Sca. cro.

Sir Iohn Cobham knight, founded the College of Cobham in Kent, valued at the suppressing at eight and twentie pounds the yéere. Cobham college.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsore. *Ann. reg.* 37.

The French king, the king of Cipрus, and the king of Scots, came all into England to speake with king Edward, who receiued them with great honor, and gaue them great giftes: the kings of Cipрus and of Scotland returned home shortly, but the French king fell sicke at London, whereof hee shortly after died. Three kings came into England. The French king sicke. 1363.

A frost in England lasted frō the midst of September, to the moneth of Aprill. Great frost. Adam Merim. Cro. col. reg. oxo.

This yéere, the Castell of Quinborough was builded by king Edward.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsore. *Ann. reg.* 38.

The ninth day of Aprill died Iohn king of France, at ỹ Sauoy besides Westminster, through griefe of mind, that the Duke of Anglow one of his pledges had deceiued him, and came not into England, according as he had promised and sworne: His corps was honourably conueyed to Douer, and so to Saint Denis in Fraunce, where he was buried. 1364. The French king died at London.

Charles de Blois with 3600. men of warre fell sodainly vpon Iohn de Mountfort, and William Latimer, whilest they lay in siege before the Towne and Castell of Dauarie, and had scarcely with him 1600. of Englishmen, Brytaines and other Nations, and giuing battell one to another, without deliberation, there were slaine, on the Dukes side onely seuen men, and of Charles part were slaine, Charles himself, the Lord Rochford, and William Vango, and Knightes and Esquires almost a thousand, there were taken two Earles,

and 27. lords, and of Scottes valiant men of armes 1500.

Prince Edward had a sonne borne at Angolesme called after his fathers name, Edward, but he liued not long, for he died about the age of seuen yéeres, and yet not too soone, as it was said.

An.reg.39. 1365.

Justices punished.

The same yéere king Edward arrested his Justices Sir Henry Greene, Sir William Skipwith, and many other, for their enormious vniust dealings, and tooke of them great sines for their redemption.

Peter-pence forbidden.

The K. commanded that Peter-pence should no more be gathered nor paid to Rome. S. Peters pence is the kings almes, and all that had 30. peny worth of goods, of one maner cattel in their house of their own proper, should giue ẏ peny at Lammas: it amounted in all through England to 300. marks of siluer.

Simon Islip archb. of Canterbury deceased, and was buried at Canterbury: this Simon Islip founded a Colledge in Oxford, and called it Canterbury Colledge, Simon Langham B. of Ely was translated to Canterbury. In the first yéere of whose translation Pope Vrban the first made a decrée against the heaping together of many benefices, or spiritual promotions by one man, for the execution wherof, he sent commandement to the archb. of Canterbury, and by him to all his suffragans, to certify in writing the names, number, & qualities of euery Clerke, benefices or liuings within their seueral diocese. And it was found, that at that time the clergie of England excéeded all other Nations in bearing of offices about the king and common weale, in place of Justice and other, as appeareth by one certificate, which the B. of London then made, of many beneficed men at that time abiding within his diocesse, some of them had xx. benefices with cure, and some more, and some of them had xx. prebends besides other great dignities. As Wil. Wicham, who that yéere at the death of Wil. Edington B. of Winchester was made a generall administrator of spirituall and temporall things pertaining to that Bishopricke, and the next yéere was made Bishop of Winchester, this Wicham, besides the archdeaconry of Lincolne, and prouostship of Welles, and the parsonage of Manihant in Deoushire had twelue prebends.

Priests officers to the king.

Simon Langham Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancellor of England.

Iohn Barnet Bishop of Bathe and treasurer of England.

William VVicham Archdeacon of Lincolne kéeper of the priuie seale.

Dauid Wellar parson of Somersham, master of the Rolles, seruing king Edward in the Chancery fortie yéeres and more.

Tenne beneficed priestes Ciuilians, and masters of the Chancery.

William Mulse Deane of Saint Martins le Grand chiefe Chamberlaine of the Exchequer, receiuer, and kéeper of the kings treasure and Iewels.

William Askeby Archdeacon of Northampton, chancellor of the Exchequer.

William Dighton prebendary of S. Martins, Clearke of the priuie seale.

Richard Chesterfield prebend of S. Steuens, treasurer of the kings house.

Henry Snatch parson of Auon or Dundall, master of the kings wardrobe.

Iohn Newenham parson of Fenistanton, one of the Chamberlaines of the Exchequer, and kéeper of the kings treasury and Iewels.

Iohn Ronceby parson of Hardwike surueior & controller of the kings works.

Thomas

Thomas Britingham parson of Albey, treſurer to the king for the parts of Guiſnes and the marches of Caleis.

Iohn Troys treaſurer of Ireland, diuers waies beneficed in Ireland. All theſe were certified in the dioceſſe of London at that time. *An. reg.* 40.

Iohn Barns tranſlated from Bathe to Ely, and Iohn Harwell made biſhop of Bathe. 1366.

The third of Aprill was borne at Burdeaux, Richard ſonne to Edward the blacke Prince, which Richard was after king of England by the name of Richard the ſecond.

There was then a prieſt in England, called William Wicham, who was ſo great with the king that all things were done by him, & without him nothing was done. And ſo when the Biſhoprick of Wincheſter was void, the king of England at the deſire of the ſaid prieſt, wrote to the Duke of Burbon, that he would for his ſake, make ſuch ſute to Pope Vrban, that his chaplein might haue the biſhoprick of Wincheſt. promiſing the Duke in his doings, to intreat him right courteouſly for his impriſonment & hoſtage. When the duke of Burbon ſaw the K. of Englands meſſengers & his letter, he was therof right ioyous: and ſhewed all the manner to the French king, who counſelled him to go to the Pope for the ſame, & ſo he did, for he went to Auignon to the Pope, who was not as thē gone to Rome, & ſo the duke made his requeſt to the Pope, and he granted him, & gaue him the Biſhoprick of Wincheſter at his pleaſure, ſo that the king of England would be fauourable to him in the compoſition for his deliuerance, that the foreſaid William Wicham ſhould haue the ſaid Biſhoprick. Then the duke of Burbon returned into France, & ſo into England, and there treated with the king & his counſel for his deliuerāce, or he would ſhew his buls from the Pope. The king of England loued ſo well this prieſt, that the Duke of Burbon was deliuered quite, and paid 20000. Frankes. And ſo ſir William Wicham was B. of Wincheſter, and Chancellor of England. William Wicham biſhop of Wincheſter. Iohn Froſart.

The 4 of May the king made a compoſition in his Parliament betwéne the two Vniuerſities of the one part, and the 4 orders of friers mendicants abiding within the ſame Vniuerſities on the other part, which before had continued many yéeres in ſtrife, to the great decay of learning, and much other hurt to both parties.

Edward Prince of Wales, taking compaſſion vpon Peter king of Spayne, who was driuen out of his kingdome by Henry his baſtard brother, entred Spayne with a great puiſſance, and in a battell at Nazers, the 3. of April, put to flight the foreſaid Baſtard, ouercame his power, and ſlew 6000. of his men, where there were taken 60. perſons of name, and 2000. of the common ſouldiours, which done, he reſtored the ſaid Peter to his former dignitie, and returned home with great triumph & victory, but not long after, Henry the baſtard, whiles K. Peter ſate at a table, ſodainly thruſt him thorow with a ſpeare, and inuaded the land by treaſon, which by open warre he could not do. *An. reg.* 41. 1367. Tho Wal. The Baſtard brother diſherited the lawfull. The Baſtard brother murdereth the lawfull.

The Frenchmen tooke diuers townes & caſtles, in Poytow, that belonged to the king of England, and to the end they might the more effectually deceiue the king of England, the French king ſent him word, that hée was readie to *An. reg.* 42. 1368.

pay the reſidue of his fathers ranſome, & to perfoꝛme the conditions of peace; alſo, hée ſent him Wines out of Boheme, and other preſents, in token of loue: but it foꝛtuned whiles the embaſſadoꝛs were in the kings preſence, the lamentable newes were bꝛought of the foꝛcible inuaſion of the Frenchmen in Poytow, which when the king heard, he commanded the embaſſadoꝛs to get them home with their deceitfull preſents, to their deceitfull Lord, whoſe mockes he would not long leaue vnreuenged. The Embaſſadoꝛs returning home, were met by the men of Caleis, who toke their wines, and other goods from them.

Subtleties of Frenchmen.

Paulus Iouius. Leonell Duke of Clarence marrieth and dieth.

In the moneth of Aprill, Leonell Duke of Clarence, with a choſen companie of the Engliſh nobilitie went towards Millane, there to marry with Violentis the daughter of Galeaſius the ſecond of that name, Duke of Millaine, of which marriage Paulus Iouius wꝛiteth thus, vpon the life of the ſaid Galeaſius: By the meanes of peace being obtained, and Barnabe with no leſſe earneſt endeuour ſéeking by foꝛce and armes to recouer the Pꝛincedome of Bononie, as taken from him by fraud, and detained by iniury, Galeaſius deſiꝛed to foꝛtifie himſelfe with foꝛrain affinitie, glorious in déed, in pꝛincely pompe, but in euent to him and his vnfoꝛtunate, matching his ſonne Iohn Galeaſius with Iſabell daughter to Charles the French king, and his daughter with Leonel Duke of Clarence, ſonne of the king of England, to whom hauing receiued 200000. Flozences of gold foꝛ a dowꝛy by the marriage of Violentis, the Cities of Mons regalis, and Alba Pompeis ſubmitted themſelues. And Iſabell which came to Millain was ſo troubleſome to her father in law, that ſhe coſt him 200000. Flozences, although the yéelding of the Towne of Petutes; and the title of that moſt honourable name had béen giuen to her new huſband in part of her dowꝛie. Moꝛeouer, at the comming of Leonell, ſuch abundance of treaſure was in moſt bounteous manner ſpent, in making moſt ſumptuous feaſts, ſetting foꝛth ſtately ſightes, and honouring with rare gifts aboue two hundꝛed Engliſhmen, which accompanied his ſonne in law, as it ſéemed to ſurpaſſe the greatneſſe of moſt wealthy Pꝛinces: foꝛ in the banquet whereat Francis Petrarch was pꝛeſent, amongſt the chiefeſt gueſtes, there were aboue thirtie courſes of ſeruice at the table, and betwixt euery courſe, as many pꝛeſents of wonderous pꝛice intermixed, all which Iohn Galeaſius, chiefe of the choiſe youth, bꝛinging to the table, did offer to Leonell.

A moſt ſumptuous feaſt.

Coſtly giftes giuen.

There were in one onely courſe ſeuenty goodly hoꝛſes, adoꝛned with ſilke and ſiluer furniture: and in the other ſiluer veſſels, falcons, hounds, armour foꝛ hoꝛſes, coſtly coates of maple, bꝛeaſtplates glittering of maſſie ſtéele, helmets, and coꝛſelets decked with coſtly creſtes, apparell diſtinct with coſtly Iewels, ſouldioꝛs girdles, and laſtly certaine gemmes, by curious art ſet in gold, and of purple, and cloth of gold foꝛ mens apparell in great abundance. And ſuch was the ſumptuouſneſſe of that banquet, that the meats which were bꝛought from the table, would ſufficiently haue ſerued 10000. men: but not long after, Leonell liuing with his new wife, whileſt after the manner of his owne countrey, as foꝛgetting oꝛ not regarding his change of ayꝛe, hée addicted himſelfe ouermuch to vntimely banquettings, ſpent and conſumed with a lingering ſickneſſe, died at Alba. Afterward Violantis was married to

Fragments of a feaſt ſufficient to ſerue ten thouſand men.

Otho

Otho Marques of Mountferat in Italy, who had no better succesſe then the o-ther, being in the hils of Pauie, ſtabbed through of a baſe horſeképer, where he likewiſe died obſcurely.

The third mortality or peſtilence was this yére, whereof died Blanch Du-cheſſe of Lancaſter, and was buried in Pauls Church at London. *An. reg.* 43.

This yére was a great dearth of Corne, ſo that a buſhel of wheat at Lon-don was ſold for two ſhillings fiue pence, of Barley twentie pence, of Dates twelue pence. 1369. The third peſtilence. Dearth of corn

The 15. of Auguſt died Quéene Philip, wife to Edward the third at Wind-ſore, and was buried at Weſtminſter.

Quéneſborough, Kingſton vpon Hull, and S. Botulphs, *aliàs* Boſton, were made Staples by Parliament. Staples of Wool.

The kings ſonne Iohn Duke of Lancaſter, and Humfrey Bohan Earle of Hereford, with a great armie went into Fraunce, where they little preuai-led, becauſe an huge Army of Frenchmen had pitched their Tents vpon the toppe of Chalke hill, néere vnto Caleis, ſo ſtrongly, that they could not be ſet on without great loſſe and damage: but ſhortly after, Thomas Beauchampe Earle of Warwicke, arriued at Caleis with a number of choſen ſouldiers, at whoſe comming, the French men leauing their tents and victuals, fled a-way, neuertheleſſe, hée paſſed forth, ſpoyling and waſting the Iſle of Caws with fire and ſword, but as he returned toward Caleis, he fell ſicke, whereof he died, and the other captaines returned without honour.

King Edward borowed of the Prelates and other, many great ſummes of money, ſaying, he would beſtow the ſame in defence of the Church & realme, but about Midſomer he ſent a great army into France, whereof Sir Robert Knowles was generall, a man, who before time had fortunately handled the beyond ſea wars, ſo long as they were ruled by his counſel: but toward Win-ter, the yong Lords ſaid they ought not to be ſubiect to him who was not ſo noble of birth, as they, and ſo deuiding themſelues into diuers companies, Sir Robert Knowles departed into Britaine to his owne caſtles which he had con-quered: The Lords being ſo deuided, the Frenchmen ſet vpon them, toke pri-ſoners whom they liſted, and ſlue the reſidue. *An. reg.* 44. 1370. The K. bor-rowed great ſummes.

A great part of Gaſcoigne fell from the prince, becauſe of the ſtrange exac-tions he laid vpon them: alſo ſickneſſe encreaſing vpon him, he returned into England with his wife and his ſonne Richard, and reſigned into his fathers hands the gouernement of Gaſcoigne.

The monaſterie of Abingdon, fiue miles from Oxford, was ſpoyled by them of Oxford, togither with the artificers of Abingdon.

In a Parliament at Weſtminſter in the firſt weéke of Lent, it was ordai-ned that the great Charter & Charter of the foreſt, ſhould be kept in all points. Alſo in the ſame Parliament, the Clergy of the realme granted to the king an aide for the warres in France, of fiftie thouſand pound to be paid in the ſame yére, vnto the leuying of which ſumme, Chauntrie prieſtes were tax-ed, according to the ſumme that they receiued by the yére, alſo ſmal benefices which were neuer taxed, &c. And the Laye of the Lords and Commons alſo *An. reg.* 45. 1371. Matthew Parker. Statute parli. Parliament at Weſtminſter.

The common opinion reproued, concerning the number of parish Churches in England.

granted to the king the like summe of fifty thousand pound, in aid of the same warres, to be leuied of all the parishes of England, that is to wit, that euery parish should pay 23. shillings 4. pence, the great parishes helping the lesse: supposing (according to the common opinion) that there had been so many parishes in England, that would haue sufficed in such manner to the said summe. By which meanes writs were directed to all the shires of England, to certifie vnto the king of all the Churches in euery shire, which also made the number of Churches to be examined. And it was found that the said summe of fiftie thousand pound, might not be leuied in manner as was thought. Whereupon the king summoned a great councell at Winchester, against the fifth weeke of Easter next following, and there was ordained that euery parish should pay fiue pound 16. shillings, the greater helpe the lesser. And then also was set downe the names of shires, with the number of Churches in euerie shire, and the summe that euery shire should pay as followeth.

	Shires.	Parishes.	What euery shire did pay.
1	Kent.	393	2279. pound 8. shillings.
2	Surrey.	118	684. pound, 8. shillings.
3	Sussex.	284	1647. pound, 4. shillings.
4	South-hampton.	230	1334. pound.
5	Wiltshire.	239	1386. pound, 4. shillings.
6	Somersetshire.	391	2267. pound, 16. shillings.
7	Dorsetshire.	237	1374. pound, 12. shillings.
8	Deuonshire.	381	2149. pound, 16. shillings.
9	Cornwall.	194	1125. pound, 4. shillings.
10	Glocester.	254	1473. pound, 4. shillings.
11	Herefordshire.	144	834. pound, 4. shillings.
12	Shropshire.	114	661. pound, 4. shillings.
13	Staffordshire.	100	580. pound.
14	Oxfordshire.	200	1160. pound.
15	Barkshire.	156	904. pound, 16. shillings.
16	Bedfordshire.	121	701. pound, 16. shillings.
17	Buckingham.	200	1160. pound.
18	North-hampton.	303	1757. pound, 8. shillings.
19	Rutlandshire.	44	255. pound, 4. shillings.
20	Warwicke.	183	1061. pound, 8. shillings.
21	Leicestershire.	209	1212. pound, 4. shillings.
22	Nottingham.	164	951. pound, 4. shillings.
23	Darbishire.	96	556. pound, 16. shillings.
24	Lincolneshire.	627	3636. pound, 26. shillings.
25	Northumberland.	60	348. pound.
26	Westmerland.	32	185. pound, 12. shillings.
27	Cumberland.	96	556. pound, 16. shillings.
28	Lancashire.	58	336. pound, 8. shillings.
29	Norffolke.	806	3674. pound. 16. shillings.

30 Suffolke

30	Suffolke.	515	2926.pound.
31	Cambridgshire.	172	997.pound,12.shillings.
32	Huntington.	62	535.pound,12.shillings.
33	London.	110	637.pound.
34	Middlesex.	63	365.pound,8.shillings.
35	Essex.	400	2259.pound,18.shillings.
36	Hertfordshire.	136	730.pound,16.shillings.
37	Yorkeshire.	540	311.pound,12.shillings.
38	Worcester.	139	806.pound,4.shillings.
39	Durham.	61	553.pound,16.shillings.

Summe of all the shires in England, without the City of London, and the Bishoppricke of Durham be 37. and of Parish Churches, 8600. and all the mony amounted vnto 50181.li.8.s.&c. Of the which was withdrawen 181. li.8.s. by the reason that Parishes in the Countie of Southfolke payde but 112.shillings,7.d.ob. And the Parishes in the Countie of Deuonshire, payd but 112.shillings,10.d.farthing, for their great pouerty, and so was the King answered 50000.pound. W.Smith.

Cheshire a Countie Palantine, came not to this Parliament.

In the Citie of Chester are 10. parish Churches, and in the shire without the Citie, are. 87. parish Churches, besides chappels.

The Bishops were remoued from the Offices of Chauncellor, Treasurer, and priuie seale, and lay men put in their stead.

This yeere deceased the gentle Knight Syr Walter de Maine in the Citie of London, wherof all the Barons of England were right sory, for the truth and good counsaile that they had alwayes séene and heard in him: he was buried with great solemnity in the Monastery of Charterhouse Monkes, which he had founded besides London, and at the day of his Obsequie, there was present the King and al his children, with the Prelates, Barons and Knights of England. His lands both in England and beyond the sea fell to the Earle of Penbroke, who had to wife the Lady Anne, his daughter and heire. Also the valiant Knight Sir William Molineux, who had long serued in Fraunce, and was made Knight Banneret by the blacke Prince, at the battell of Nasars, now returning out of France died at Canterbury, about the feast of S. Iohn Baptist. Also Sir Iohn Mandeuile Knight, a man worth the memory, borne in S. Albons, deceased, this man from his tender yéeres so addicted himselfe to study, that therein he accounted a great part of his ioy and felicitie to consist, for he reckoned that his worshipfull parentage little auailed, vnlesse he enabled the same by learned skil, and literature, hauing therefore wel furnished his minde with knowledge in the Scripture, he erected his studie to Phisicke, being an Art very séemely and worthie a gentlemanlike nature, but among all other things, his desire was very great to sée Asia, and Aphrica, being two mighty portions or parts of the world, furnishing himselfe therefore, he like an other Vlisses, being knowen of verie fewe of his olde acquaintance set forward. Sir Walter Maine deceased. Sir William Molenar deceased. Sir Iohn Mandeuill deceased.

In

I. Bale. In this his voyage he painefully visited the Countries of Scythia the greater & the lesser, Armenia, Aegypt, both the Countries of Libya, Arabia, Syria, Media, Mesopotamia, Persia, Grecia, Illyricum, Tartaria, and other kingdomes: finally having attayned the knowledge of diuers tongues, left the varietie, and wonders of so many and so great things as he had seene with his eyes, and borne away by memorie, should be vtterly drowned in oblivion, he wrote exactly in the Latine, French, and English tongues, these workes following, viz. his Itinerarie of three and thirtie yeeres, of the maruayles of the world, and the description of Countries: being returned into England, and noting the euill abuses of that his age and time, the godly gentleman would say, (in these our times now it may be trulier said then euer afore) that vertue is laid aside, the Church is troden downe, the Cleargie erreth, the deuill raigneth, simony beareth sway, &c.

At length he died at Leiden, the 17. of November, 1371. and was buried in the Abbey of the Williammites, thus farre Bale. To the confirmation whereof Abraham Ortelius in his *Itinerarium*, professing to haue seene the monument of the said Sir Iohn Mandeuill in the citie of Leiden, setteth downe the inscription thus.

Epitaph of sir Iohn Mandeuill. Here lieth the Noble man Sir Iohn de Mandeuille, otherwise surnamed Knight at the beard, Lord de Campdi, borne in England, a professor of Phisick, a very deuout man in prayer, and a most bountifull bestower of his goods on the poore, who after he had trauayled almost ouer the whole world, ended his life at Leiden, the yeere of our Lord 1371. the seuenteenth of Nouember.

This is the inscription in the stone, sayeth Ortelius, in which there is grauen, the Image of an armed man, with a lion at his feete, with a two forked beard, at his head a hand blessing, with these words in French, You that passe by, for charitie say prayers for me.

The shield of his armes was voyde, they said there was within it a plate, and his armes ingrauen therein, to wit, a Lion Argent, with a red cressent at his breast in a blewe field, with a border indented Or: there was shewed his knives, his furniture for horse, and his spurres, which he vsed in his trauailes through the world.

Ann. reg. 46 1372. Iohn Duke of Lancaster, and Edmond Earle of Cambridge, returning out of Gascoigne, brought with them two daughters of Peter late king of Spaine, whom afterwards they tooke to be their wiues: the Duke married the elder, named Constance, and from that time wrote himselfe King of Castile.

Battell on the Sea. The Englishmen fought a battel on the Sea with the Flemings, and tooke fiue and twentie ships laden with salt.

The Frenchmen besieged Rochell, to the remouing whereof was sente the Earle of Penbroke, with a number of men of armes, vpon whom fell the Spanish Naule in the Hauen of Rochel, who slewe and tooke the Englishmen, and burnt their Naule. The Earle and many noble men were caried into Spaine, together with the Kings money. King Edward with a great naule entred the seas towards Rochel, to haue rescued the same, but the winde being contrarie, with heauie cheere he returned againe, hauing spent

Earle of Penbroke taken prisoner.

in

in this preparation (as it was said) nine hundred thousand pound.

Ann.reg.47. 1373. Tho. Walsing.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster entred Fraunce with a strong power, and passed through the Realme without battell, but in the desertes and mountaines of Aluerne, for lacke of victualles, many of his armie died: from thence, he went to Burdeaux, and brought scantly forty horses backe with him: it was commonly talked that he lost thirtie thousand horses in that vnluckie voyage. It was a great miserie to see the poore state of the men of warre, such as were Knights of great wealth in their Countrey, hauing lost men and horses, were glad to beg from doore to doore, and found no relefe, for the Countrey was destroyed, and not manured, by reason whereof, such dearth was in that Countrey, that victuals could scant be gotten for any mony: the Duke yet wintered there. The tenth of Aprill following, a day of battell was appoynted betwixt him and the Duke of Anjow at Tholouse. In the meane time, truce was taken til the twentieth of May next following, but the King of England knew nothing of it: When the day came, a great power of armed men for the French appeared, the which the Duke of Anjow had assembled, but yet that day passed without battell, to the great shame and reproch of the English, for the Frenchmen said, they were ready in fielde the day appointed to looke for their comming, that came not at all, wherefore they spake many reprochfull words against the Englishmen, calling them false cowards, and heartlesse. And such was the end of that iourney.

Parliament

In a Parliament it was graunted that the cathedral Churches should enioy their elections, & that from thence forth the King should not write against the elected, but should by his letters helpe towards their confirmation, but this statute tooke small effect: but the Cleargy graunting a tenth, and the laitie a fifteen, it was paid. Iohn Thursby Archbishop of Yorke deceased, he began the new quire of the Cathedral Church of Yorke, vnto the which in the laying of the first stone, he gaue 500. markes, and euery yeare after whilest he liued 200. pound to ỹ same worke. He also adorned the Lady chappell there with a marueilous workemanship: he sate one and twentie yeares, he died at Thorpe and was buried at Yorke, vnto whom succeeded Alexander Neuell Canon of Yorke. Also Iohn Barnet Bishop of Elye deceased at Bishops Hatfield, and was buried at Elye, vnto whom succeeded Thomas Arundell, sonne to Robert Earle of Arundell. Also William Lyne Bishop of Winchester deceased, vnto whom succeeded Henry Wakefield.

Cathedrall church of Yorke, repayred or new builded.

Ann.reg.48. 1374.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster with all his traine of Earles, Barons, Knights, &c. returned out of Gascoigne into England in the moneth of July, after whose departure almost all Gascoigne fell from their alleageance, which they had couenanted of with the King of England, sauing Burdeaux and Bayon.

This yeare died William Wittelsey Archbishop of Canterbury, at Lambith, and was buried at Canterbury: the Monkes of Canterbury, (by the Kings licence) made their election, but chosing the Cardinall of England, the King was so offended that he meant to outlawe them, and they were forced to purchase his fauour with a great price. Then Simon Tibalde, *alias* Sudburie, (Sonne to Nigellus Tibalde Gentleman of Sudburie in Suffolke)

Doctour

Doctour of both Lawes, Bishop of London, was from thence translated to Canterburie, and William Courtney Bishop of Hereford, was translated to London, and the Bishop of Bangor, to Hereford.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster, William Earle of Salisbury, Reignold Lord Cobham, with Simon Sudbury and other, assembled at Bridges to treate a peace betweene the realmes of England and France, where met with them the Duke of Aniow, and many other nobles of France. This treaty continued almost two yeeres, and ended without conclusion of peace, but on a truce, which scantly continued one yeere.

Ann.reg.49 1375. The same time Robert Wasield Bishop of Salisburie died, after whom succeeded Ralph Arguy. Edward le Spencer deceassed in the Castle of Cardiffe, and was buried at Thocksburie. Also Iohn Hastings Erle of Penbroke, who was taken of the Spaniards, foure yeeres since was deliuered by Henry the bastard King of Spaine vnto Bertram Cleyken constable of France, for a certaine summe of money, which the said Henry did owe to the said Bertram, who when he was brought to Paris, and the summe of his ransome was limited to be 6000. Franks, the Lombards in Bridges became sureties therefore, and promised paiment thereof, but he began to be sicke, so that the Frenchmen fearing least he should die in their hands, or euer they should get his ransome, made haste to bring him to Caleis, notwithstanding he died before he came there, and the Frenchmen were deceiued of their purpose.

The Ile of Constantine was deliuered to the French King, to the great detriment of England, for which cause afterward Sir Iohn Ansley appeached Thomas Catrington of treason. A great heate was in England, so that many both men and women died thereof.

A hot summer.

Good Parliament. A Parliament commonly called the good Parliament, was holden at Westminster, in the which, when a subsidie was demanded, answere was made by Peter de la More, Prolocutor of the Parliament, that the King needed not the substance of his poore Subiectes, if he were well and faithfully gouerned, which he offered to proue effectually, and promised that if it were found that the King had neede, his subiects should be readie most gladly to helpe him according to their power.

1376. The Knights required to haue the Lord Latimer with other, remoued from about the King, whom they said did giue him euill counsell, which being done, certaine Prelates, Earles, and other, were ordained to gouerne the King, who then was an olde man, but this endured not long. The commons also requested to haue remoued out of the Kings house, a certaine proud woman called Alice Pierce, who by ouermuch familiaritie that she had with the King, was cause of much mischiefe in the realme, she exceeding the manner of women, sate by the Kings Iustices, and sometimes by the Doctors in the Consistories, perswading and dissuading in defence of matters, and requesting things contrary to lawe and honestie, to the great dishonour of the King.

Alice Pierce.

Adam Bury late Maior Richard Lions late Sherife, a Goldsmith. Also Richard Lions and Adam of Burie, Citizens of London, were accused by the commons, of diuers fraudes and deceiptes, which they had done to the King: Richard Lions for money did wisely compound and escaped,

the

the other conueyed himselfe into Flaunders.

The eight day of June, Prince Edward departed out of this life in the Archbishops Pallace in Canterburie, who was in his time the flower of Chiualrie: he was in the feast of S. Michael the Archangell, with great solemnitie buried at Canterburie in Christs Church, and then King Edward created Richard sonne of Prince Edward, Earle of Chester, Duke of Cornewall, and Prince of Wales. Blacke prince deceased. Adam Merim.

This yeere in the moneth of June, the seruants and tenants of the Earle of Warwike maliciously rose against the Abbey and Couent of Euesham, and their tenants, doing their worst to destroy the same for euer, beating their seruants, & killing some of them, & comming to the mannors of the Monkes, they brake down the pales of their parks & burnt them, slew their deere, they brake the hedges of the pondes & fish poles, let out the water, toke the fish, and did many other domages, minding to haue destroyed the house, and ouerthrowen the wals if the King had not sent commandement to ỳ Earle to restraine these malefactors, and troublers of the peace, thus for feare of the King, and mediation of frends, a peace was made, but no sufficient recompence, for the domage was much more then ỳ parties were able to make amends for: because of this presumption of the Earle, the King put him out of his counsel, & would not be gouerned by ỳ other Lords that were appointed therunto by parliament, but he sent for the Duke of Lancaster againe to gouerne the realme, by which occasion all they that before were banished the Court, came againe, as the Lord Latimere, Alice Pierce, and other, whose counsell he followed euen to the end of his life. The foresaid Alice is made so familiar with the king, as also her companions, that is to say, the Lord Latimere, and Sir Richard Stirie, that at their becke, the King promised all matters of the Realme to be disposed, whereupon they being desirous to be reuenged vpon their accusers, ceased not vntil by the kings and Dukes authoritie they had gotten Sir Peter de la More, to the kings court, whom without any answere, against all iustice, they sent to the Castle of Newarke, there to be imprisoned. Peter de la More imprisoned.

The Duke now laboured against William Wicham Bishop of Winchester, taking occasion by al wayes & meanes he possibly could to indomage him, at the last amongst other things that he obiected against him, he charged him to haue bẽ false vnto the King, at what time he was Lord chancellor, & although the bishop in declaring of his innocencie was ready to bring forth for himselfe both sufficient reasons and witnesses, yet notwithstanding he caused him to be condemned without making answere, William Skipwith being Iustice, and by the Kings authoritie toke from him all the temporall goods of his Bishoprieke, and that he might get the peoples fauour, he moued the King to giue the said goods to the Prince called Richard of Burdeaux, and so he vsed the yong Princes name for his owne helpe. Furthermore, in the Kings name, he forbad the Bishop to presume to come within xx. miles of the Kings presence. The Duke indomageth the Bishop of Winchester. W. Wicham Bishop of Winchester deprined of his temporall goods.

In the meane time the Kings sickneſſe increased, and Phisitions began to dispayre of his recouery, although the forenamed Alice together with Isabell her daughter did lie by him euery night. The Duke now who determined all matters How the earle of March auoided the deceite of the Duke of Lancaster.

matters of the Realme, commanded Mortimer Earle of Marche to go to Caleis, where hauing set al things in order, he should diligently view al the other Castles neere there about, but the Earle as he was a man of a good wit, considered that it was a dangerous time, and that the Duke had an olde hatred against him; more he called to remembrance, how the Duke had vniustly imprisoned Sir Peter de la More, his steward, and had oppressed the Bishop of Winchester whom he had exempted from priuiledge of the kings pardon, and desired to doe the like to him, if he could, he chose therefore rather to lose the rod, then his life, wherefore he restored the rod of his Marshalship vnto the Duke, saying he would not for a small commoditie wrappe himselfe into so great daunger.

Henry Percy made Marshal of England

The Duke reioycing that he might with some honour reward Sir Henry Percie, presently gaue vnto him the rod, and made him Marshall of England, and by this meanes Sir Henry Percie was ioyned to the Duke, but incurred as much hatred of the whole communaltie, as he had gotten fauour and loue of the Duke.

An. reg. 51. The King kept his Christmasse at Hauering Aboure, where then for the great infirmitie of his body in his veines he lay sicke.

Parliament at London.

The Duke vsing the kings authority, directed warrants to al the Lords, & Barons of the Realme, that after Christmas on Monday, 15. dayes after S. Hillary, they should come to the Parliament at London, wherein the matters of the Realme were to be talked of. To this Parliament came Richard of Burdeaux the Prince, with a great number of Noble men, and Knights, whom the Londoners at his comming presented with diuers honourable giftes, and the Duke of Lancaster also, seemed to honor him aboue the rest, placing him in the Kings seate, & taught him to demaund, that they would giue the King two tenths in one yeere, or els of al the marchandise sold in the realme of England for one yeere xii. d. of euery pound, of euery firehouse one peny, and of euery knights fee, one pound of siluer, & presently the Duke prosecuted the demand, saying that of necessity one of those poynts ought to be granted, for that the enemies had now proclaimed warre, & would inuade the realme. The knights of the Parliament, whom the Duke had made at his pleasure, desired respite ꝑ they might deliberately answere him, for all the other knights that in the last Parliament had stoutely stand with the communalty, he had caused to be remoued, except twelue whom hee could not remoue, a day was appointed them. Of the greater part, master Hungerford was elected to deliuer their answere, who was a knight very familiar with the duke, and was his Steward. Those few whom we haue said to haue remained, endeuoured that Sir Peter de la More might deliuer their answere, and also to answere all obiections that should be laid against him in presence of the Lords. And further, if he should be found faultie, to submit himselfe to the iudgement of the noble men present, but the knights preuailed nothing in their sute. For when one of the knights urged the matter more then other, he was willed to holde his peace, otherwise it might cost him his life. Whilest these things were in handling, a subsidie was demaunded for the king of the whole Cleargie. They therefore treating

ting of this matter, first made a common complaint before the Archbishop of Canterbury, of the iniury offered vnto their brother William Wicham Bishop of Winchester, which was also iniury vnto them al, and to the whole libertie of the Church, wherfore they affirmed they would not treat of other matters, vntill all the number of the Cleargie were together, for they pitying his fall, were moued against the Archbishop, thinking him a great hired man for the Duke, and notwithstanding the Archbishop affirmed, the forsaid Bishop to be prohibited by the King, not to come nere vnto his presence, yet least he should be compelled, he sent a commaundement for him, that he should come vp to the Conuocation of the Cleargie at London, who making no delay, came with a small number of seruants, that before time was thought to excell all other in multitude attending vpon him, he was ioyfully receiued of his fellow Bishops.

The Cleargie requireth the reuocation of the Bishop of Winchester.

In the meane time the Duke ceased not with his fellowes to imagine how he might bring that to passe, which he had long conceiued in his minde: for he saw that it would be hard for him to obtaine his purpose, the Church standing in his full state, and verie daungerous to attempt publikely to doe those things, the lawes and customes of London being in force, wherefore he laboured first to ouerthrow, as well the liberties of the Church, as of the Citie: for the which cause, he called vnto him a certaine diuine, who many yéres before in all his acts in the schooles, had inueyed against the Church, for that he had bén depriued by the Archbishop of Canterbury from a certaine benefice that he vniustly (as was said) was incumbent vpō within the Citie of Oxford, his name was Iohn Wiclife, who with his disciples, were of the common people called Lollards, they went bare-foted, and basely clothed, to wit, in course russet garments down to the hæles, they preached, especially against Monks, and other religious men that had possessions, &c. Amongst other things, he denyed the bishop to haue authoritie to excommunicate any person, and that any Priest might absolue such a one as well as the Pope:

The duke sent for Iohn Wiclife.

T. Walsingham.

That neither the King, nor other secular Lord could giue any things perpetually to any person of the Church:

That (as he affirmed) in the time of William Rufus it was practised in England, for whom, as for other Kings of the Realme (notwithstanding he toke away the Church goods (the Church of England prayeth, which if she do lawfully, then she doth well: and to say she doth it vnlawfully, were absurd.

That the temporall Lords (if they had nēde) might lawefully take the goods of such religious persons, to releeue their necessities, &c. When he had taught these and many other, not onely in the Schooles at Oxford, but also had preached them publikely in London, that he might thereby get the fauour of the Duke and others, whom he had found prone to heare his opinion, not onely Lords, but also certaine Citizens of London, (for he was not onely eloquent, but also seemed to contemne temporall goods, for the loue of eternall riches, and therefore his conuersation was with those religious that had no possessions, and adopned himselfe vnto the begging Friars, approuing their pouertie, and extolling their perfection) The Duke I say, and Sir Henry

Percy

Percy, commended highly his opinions, and endeuoured to extoll his learning and honestie of life aboue all other. Who therefore being thus set forth with their fauour, feared not to spread his doctrine, much more then before, going from Church to Church, and preaching his opinions. Whereupon at length, the Bishops wakened their Archbishop, who sent for this Iohn to come and answere to those things that were spoken of him. And the Duke hearing thereof, sent for foure Doctours of Diuinitie, one of euery order of the begging Friars, aduertising them, that with a naturall and olde hate, he pursued the religious persons that had possessions, neither was it difficulte to compell the willing Friars to ayde him in this point.

Discord in Pauls church at London.

Iohn Wiclife was to appeare before the Bishops on Thursday the nineteenth day of February there to be conuicted, for words that he had spoken, who, after the ninth houre, the Duke, and Sir Henry Percy, and diuers other assisters going before him, was brought forth, not only ỹ common sergeants, but also Sir Henry Percy himselfe, who was chiefe Marshal of England being by the way animated by his fauourers, not to feare the Bishops, neither the concourse of the people, seeing that he was walled in with so many Knightes and other: he was brought into Saint Pauls Church, where such a multitude of people was gathered together to heare him, that it was hard for the noblemen to passe through ỹ that he might escape death intended him by many Bishops. And first a dissension being raised betwene the noblemen ỹ Bishops, it was thought his answere should haue been deferred. But when the people being gathered round together, stayed to giue place vnto the noblemen, Sir Henry Percy abusing his authority, pricked forwards the people, which the Bishop of London seeing, prohibited, him to exercise such authoritie in the Church, saying, that if he had knowen he would haue vsed himselfe so there, he should not haue come into the Church, if he could haue letted him. Which the Duke hearing, and being offended, protested, that he would exercise such authoritie whether he would or not. When they were come into our Ladies Chappell, the Duke and Barons, with the Archbishop and Bishops sitting downe, the foresaid Iohn was also sent in by Sir Henry Percy, and by him willed to sit downe, for because (said he) he hath much to answere, he hath nede of a better seate. On the other side, the Bishop of London affirmed it to be against reason, and also contrary vnto Lawe, that he should sit, who there was cited to answere before his ordinary: hereupon very contumelious words did arise betwene Sir Henry Percy, and the Bishop, so that the whole multitude began to be troubled, and then the Duke began to reprehend the Bishop with slowte words, and the Bishop to turne the like to the Duke againe: whereupon the Duke being angry that he could not in this strife preuaile, sware that he would pull downe both the pride of him, and of all the Bishops in England, and added, thou trustest (said he) in thy parents, who can profite thee nothing. The Bishop answered, I trust not in my parents, nor in the life of any man, but in God, in whom I ought to trust: then the Duke whispering in his eare, said, he had rather draw him forth of the Church by the haire of the head, then to suffer such things at his hand.

The

The Londoners hearing these words, with a loude voyce cryed out swearing they would not suffer their Bishop to be thus iniuried, and that they would rather lose their liues then their Bishop should be dishonestly vsed in his Church, or pulled out as was threatned. Their furie was the more increased against the Duke, for that the day before in the Parliament at Westminster, the Duke being president: It was requested in the kings name that from that day forward there should be no more Maior of London, according to the auncient custome, but a Captaine should be appointed, and that the Marshall of England, as well in the citie as in other places, might arrest such as offended, with many other things, which were manifestly against the liberties of the Citie: which being once heard Iohn Philpot a worthy Citizen arose, and answered, &c.

Councell at London against the Duke.

The morrow after, the Londoners assembling themselues together, tooke counsell vpō such demaunds, as the day before the Lords T. of Woodstocke, and Sir H. Percy had had concerning the creation of a Captaine in the Citie, and of the vse of the Marshals office, &c. Besides of the iniurie that was offered to their Bishop, and other matters: and whilest there was great adoe and long talke about these things, there entred into the Citie the Lord Fitzwalter, and Guido Brian, whether to know their minds, or for otherwise vncertaine, but the commons scarcely held their hands from beating them that came vncalled for, til at the length they had sworne their comming was not for any hurt vnto them or the city. The Lord Fitzwalter hauing gotten fauor at ẏ citizens hands, began his Oration, the effect whereof was, that he being by ancient inheritance standard bearer to the city, was to take iniuries offered vnto tham, as vnto himselfe, & therefore willing them to loke to their defence, they presently toke armor, and ranne with great rage to the Marshals Inne, they brake vp the gates, and doores, brought out a prisoner gyues & al, wherein his feete were fastned, intending to burne them in the midst of the city, Sir Henry Percy is sought for, the armed men ran vp and downe, but all in vaine, for that day he and the Duke were to dine with one Iohn of Ipre, but the Londoners knew it not: For they thought that he and the Duke had bēn at the Sauoy, and therefore with all haste posted thither, but one of the Dukes knights seing these things, in great haste came to the place where the Duke was, and after hē had knocked and could not get in, hē saide to Hauerland the Porter, if thou loue my Lord and thy life, open the gate, with which words, he got entry, and with great feare hē telles the Duke, that without the gate were infinite numbers of armed men, and vnlesse he toke great hēde, that day should bē his last. With which words, when the Duke heard them, he leapt so hastily from his oysters, that he hurt both his legges against the fourme: wine was offered to his oysters, but hee would not drinke for haste, he fledde with his fellowe Syr Henry Percy, no man following them, and entring the Thamis neuer stinted rowing vntill they came to a house nēre the Manor of Kenington (besides Lambeth) where at that time the Princesse was, with the yong Prince, before whom hee made his complaint. The Princesse hauing heard their talke, comforted them, promi-

ſing that ſhe would make a final ende of all thoſe matters.

The common people of the Citie not knowing that the Duke was fled, in great fury haſted to the Sauoy, and a prieſt chaunced to meete them, aſked of ſome what that buſines meant. Wherunto he was anſwered, that they went to take the Duke and the Lord Percy, that they might be compelled to deliuer to them, Sir Peter de la More, whom they vniuſtly kept in priſon: the Prieſt ſaid that Peter de la More was a traytour to the King, and was worthy to be hanged. With which words they all cried, this is Percy, this is the traytour of England, his ſpeech bewrayeth him, though he be diſguiſed in apparel: then ran they all vpon him, ſtriuing who ſhould giue him his deaths wound, after they had wounded him, they caried him to priſon, where he died. The Biſhop of London, William Courtney, hearing that the Citizens hafted to the Sauoy, left his dinner and met with them, admoniſhing thē to be mindfull of the holy time, (for it was Lent) and for the loue of Chriſt to leaue off frō ſuch ſeditious doings, affirming that he would bring all things that were done againſt them to good ende. And doubtleſſe had not the Biſhop aſſwaged their mad mōdes, the Duke and the Lord Percy had that day loſt their liues, but by the Biſhops meanes the matter was pacified for the time, and euery man got him to his owne houſe. Then were the Dukes armes hanged vp reuerſed in ſigne of treaſon, in the moſt principall ſtrēetes of ỹ citie, vncertaine by whom: all that ware the Dukes ſigne or colours, were faine to hide them, conueying them from their necks, into their boſome. The Princeſſe (wife to Edward late deceaſſed) deſirous to make peace, ſent vnto London theſe Knights, Albert de Vere, Simon Burley, and Lewes Clifford, to perſwade them, to make peace with the Duke, vnto whom the Citizens made anſwere, that they would doe for her honor, whatſoeuer ſhe had commanded, but yet they enioyned ỹ knights, to will the Duke, that he ſhould ſuffer the Biſhop of Wincheſter to come to his anſwere, and to be tried by his Peeres, and alſo to permit Peter de la More to anſwere for himſelfe, after the cuſtome of the lawe; and as for the third, they ſaid they would account a traytor whereſoeuer he ſhould be found. The ſaid Knights no otherwiſe then they had heard of the Citizens, reported vnto the Duke with ful mouth, whereby they made the Duke very wofull, for whereas they had ſpoken of a traitor, this (ſaid he) they ſpeake of me, though it be not true.

A prieſt being taken to be ſir H. Percy was ſlaine.

The Londoners goe to the King about their liberties.

The Londoners hauing held a counſel about this matter, ſent of their chief Citizens, either to iuſtifie, or to excuſe that which had hapned, who tuing long to come to the kings preſence, being kept backe by the duke, at ỹ length the duke tolde them that the King was very euill at eaſe, and that his ſickneſs might be increaſed, if that he were moued to anger, by their ſpeech. But the citizens, whoſe chiefeſt man and ſpeaker was Iohn Philpot anſwered the Duke, that they were not come, by any meane to augment the kings ſickeneſſe, but rather to mitigate his greefe, that he might be ſtrong to defend them. Moreouer, they ſaid they were charged not to communicate thoſe matters which they had in commiſſion from the citie vnto any other then vnto their liege Lord the King. At length hauing gotten acceſſe, they ſhewed vnto the King,

John Philpot.

howe

how it had bẽn published in the Parliament, that it was his will, that contrary to their liberties, the Maior should be deposed, and a Captaine created, and other matters in the Parliament, which sounded against their liberties. Also they excused themselues of diuers things which had bẽn done, during the time of the commotion of the communaltie of the citie, saying they were not priuie to any such doing, but ỹ amongst so great a multitude, some lewd people had done such things, neither so great a multitude could be mooued by the exhortation of the Maior, when they were once vp together. The King being a little chẽred vp with their comming, answered, that he would not the diminishing of their liberties, no, he was rather ready, if nede were, to augment them, neither did any such resolutions euer come out of his mouth, and therefore, he willed them not to feare, but to returne and appease the Citizens, and to kẽpe them in peace.

Diffamers of the Duke excommunicated.

In the meane space some men ceased not to make rymes in reproch of the Duke, and to fasten them in diuers places of the Citie, whereby the greater fury of the people might be kindled, the Dukes fame blotted, and his name had in detestation. Which thing when the Duke heard, he requested the Bishops to pronounce sentence of excommunication vpon all those that by such rymes maliciously did hurt his fame. The Bishop of Bangor therefore (the Aldermen of the Citie assisting him) publikely excommunicated all those that diffamed the Duke, &c.

A great subsidie graunted.

A few dayes after the Duke went vnto the Parliament, that for the causes expressed had bẽn pretermitted: the Duke and noble men being set, they demaunded an answer of the knights of the shires, of these things which had bin demaunded of them: who answered, that they would to helpe their soueraigne Lord the king graunt, not of euery house one penny, but of euery person, man or woman aboue the age of fourtẽne yẽres one groat throughout England, so that the mony should be gathered into the hands of certaine Earles and Barons vntill they saw how such a summe should be spent. The cleargie also graunted the like subsidy, for helpe of the King, of euery head, as well religious men as women, as secular priests one groate, if they were not promoted, but of euery religious person promoted twelue pence.

Robert Aston speaketh for the Duke.

The duke hauing obtained as he desired, the taxe of al the heads of the whole realme, was not yet quiet, for the iniury done against him by the Londoners: wherefore he caused the king to send for the Maior, Aldermen and Shiriffes of London, who being brought into the kings chamber of presence, (being then at his manour of Shine) they found the king placed in a chaire, not able well to speake, for the griefe of his sickues, & the Archbishop, with other Bishops, the Duke and the Kings sonnes with many Lords & men of honour sitting about him. Where after due reuerence made, and silence commaunded, Sir Robert Aston began an oration, perswading the Citizens to confesse their great and hainous offences against the king, and Duke, & to submit themselues to their mercy. Whereunto the Londoners answered, that they had not conspired against the Duke, neither had there bẽn any shamefull thing spoken or done against him that they did knowe of, or consent vnto, which thing they were

ready to proue before their soueraigne Lord the King, and the Duke himself: Yet notwithstanding they affirmed, that they could not stay the folly of the common people, by whom that which had chanced was committed: wherefore the said Citizens requested the King that he would not punish those that were innocent and ignorant of the fact; but they for reuerence of the King, promised the Duke, that they would indeuour themselues to bring in the common people, and to compell them by lawe to make due satisfaction; and more (said they) we are not able to doe for the Duke, that may be to his honor. And at this word, with the Kings will, they were dismissed, full merry when they saluted the Court with their backes.

A procession of the Citizens of London.

After this the King sent vnto them, secretly commaunding them to call all the Citizens together, and to make one ware Candle or Taper with the armes of the Duke his sonne, in the same Taper, and carry the same in a solemne procession to Saint Pauls Church, there continually to burne before the Image of our Lady, continued at the charges of the citie. The ware Taper therfore being made, the Citizens by voyce of the crier, are generally called together, at which call, they come to heare the cause of their calling, but the communaltie and those of the power sorte contemned to be present at such a procession, and therefore with indignation euery one departed home to his house, only the worshipful and best sorte of the Citizens make the procession, placing the Taper of ware where they were commaunded. But the Duke not contented with this satisfaction, he threatned the Citizens, and said, that that which they had done was nothing gratefull vnto him, nay said he, it rather redoundeth to my great shame, chiefely, for that while he was aliue and well in health, they had in such sorte offered his armes wrought in a ware Taper.

1377. On the other side, the Citizens affirmed that they had expressely done that which his father had commanded them, and would haue done any thing that might haue pleased him. To whome the Duke answered, that they knewe his minde, and were not ignorant howe to make satisfaction: with which wordes the Citizens were much troubled, for (quoth they) amongest themselues, he would haue vs to proclaime him King: but this shall neuer be done, and so they departed, worse friends the they were before. And the Duke ceased not till he had put downe Adam Staple Maior, in whose place Nicholas Brembar was elected, and on the nine and twentith of March toke his oth at the Tower of London. Also the Aldermen were deposed and other set in their places.

Maior and Aldermen of London deposed.

John Minstarworth.

Sir Iohn Minstarworth Knight who had trayterously forsaken the English armie, at that time when Sir Robert Knowles was sent to inuade Fraunce, was drawne, hanged and quartered on the 12. of Aprill, his head was set on London bridge, and his foure quarters were sent to foure principall cities of England.

W. Wicham B. of Winchester recouereth his temporal-

In the meane time William Wicham Bishop of Winchester, seeing the lawes of the land to be handled, not according to iustice, but as it pleased certaine persons, and being destitute of all mens helpe, he turned himselfe to womankind,

mankind, prouiding not onely for himselfe, but also for the oppression and losses of his Church. Therfore, knowing that Alice Piers could do al things that she would, and there was not any man ỳ would in any thing resist her will, he requested her helpe, he offered her money, he promised her great friendship, if she could helpe his Bishoprick forth of such troubles: she promised easily to dispatch his cause, and not refusing that which was offered, went to trie if any sparke of loue yet remained in the King. He therefore that long had bẽn taken with her loue, entised with her speech, supposed nothing to be denied her now that she asked: against the Dukes will, he commanded his temporalities to be giuen vnto him againe, and so the Bishop by right and wrong, recouered that which was lost. ties by meanes of Alice Piers.

The seuententh of Aprill died the Lady Mary of Saint Paul, Countesse of Penbroke, a woman of singuler example, for liuing to the honor of God, and glory of her house, in relieuing poore mens necessities, she spent her goods, that to the Dukes and Princes she shewed examples of good workes: and dying, she gaue all her substance, either to her seruants, or to diuers Churches, but especially to poore people: she founded Penbroke Hall in Cambridge, and named it *Aula Mariæ de Valence in Anno.* 1343. Countesse of Penbrooke dieth.

About the same time the Earle of Salisbury, and Sir Richard Anglisison a Poyton, the Bishop of Saint Dauids, the Bishop of Hereford, Geffrey Chaucer, (the famous Poet of England,) and other, were sent into Fraunce to treate a peace, or at the least a truce for two yeere or more, but they could not obtaine any longer truce, then for one moneth, which they vtterly refused. Whereupon they stayed in Fraunce about these things, and some thinking they might safely haue passed betwixt Caleis and Douer, about fiftie taking Ship, were forthwith intercepted by the Galleyes, and were all slaine, two men and two women onely excepted, euen in the very sight of the Townesmen of Caleys, they being not able to giue them any ayde: Sir Hugh Calueley being at that present time Captaine of Caleys, toke this so great an iniurie in very euill part, especially for that it was done, whilest they were yet treating of peace, but he could not helpe it, wherefore forthwith he toke with him a number of the best and chosen out men, and purposing to requite this iniurie, made a roade into France, killing a great number of men, and brought backe with him a great bootie of artillery and cattell, the messengers returned into England, and brought nothing backe with them, but rumor and warre. Chaucer and other sent into France. Hugh Calueley Captaine of Caleis.

King Edward sodden (as it were) with the disease of the Annuli (which time was giuen him of God to the vse of penitence) had almost sodainely died, neglecting the benefite of time that God had giuen him, like as he should neuer haue died: trusting the fond fables of the ofte named Alice, when she affirmed, he should recouer his health, so that at that time he talked rather of hawking and hunting, then of any thing that pertained to the sauing of his soule, onely he granted pardon of death for offences, throughout his kingdome to the inhabitants. Being now sodainely taken with the day of his death, he began to haue manifest signes thereof: what Alice Pierce they did, any man may iudge, Alice Pierce leaueth King Edward.

although we set them not downe in writing, for assone as she saw the King had set sote within deaths dore, she bethought her of slight, yet before she went, that all men might perceiue that she loued not the King for himselfe, but for that which was his, she toke the ringes from his fingers, which for the royaltie of his Maiestie he was wont to weare. Thus yeelding him such thankes for his benefites, she bade him adiew, and so withdrew her selfe from him.

Death of king Edward the third.

The King being thus at the point of death, was left not onely of her the said Alice Piers, but of other the Knights and Esquires, who had serued him, allured more with his gifts then his loue. Amongst a thousand there was only present at that time a certaine Priest, (other of his folkes applying the spoile of what they could lay hands on) who lamenting the Kings misery, and inwardly touched with griefe of heart, for that amongst so many Counsellers which he had, there was none that would minister to him the word of life, came boldely vnto him, and admonished him to lift vp the eyes, as well of his body as of his heart vnto God, and with sighes to aske mercy of him, whose maiestie he well knew he had grieuously offended, whereupon the King listening to the words of the priest, although he had a little before wanted the vse of his tongue, yet then taking strength to him, seemed to speake what was in his mind, and then what for weakneſſe of his body, contrition of his heart, and sobbing for his sins, his voyce and speech sayled him, and scarce halfe pronouncing this word Iesu, he with this last word made an ende of his speech, and yelded vp the Ghost at his Manor of Shine, (now Richmount) on the 21. day of June, in the yere of our Lord 1377. and the 65. yere of his age, when he had raigned 50. yeres, 4. moneths and odde dayes, whose body was afterwards solemnely buried at Westminster.

This King surpassed al his predecessours, through vertue graunted to him from aboue, in a certaine excellency of magnanimity of heart, for he neuer feared any thing, or changed countenance for any misfortunate chances when they happened, a noble warrier, and fortunate, for as well by land as by sea, in warlike conflicts he obtained the victorie, gentle, familiar, & curteous as well toward strangers, as his owne countrey men and subiects, deuoute in Gods seruice, for he had the Church and ministers thereof in great reuerence. In worldly cares tractable, prouident in counsel, and discreet, in swéetneſſe of language affable and méeke, in gesture and manners wel ordered and ripe, hauing compassiō of the afflicted: in bestowing of benefites very liberal, in abundance of wealth modest enough, in erecting of buildings marueilous curious, bearing losses patiently, giuē much to hawking & hunting, to the which, whilest he had time, as the season of the yere gaue, he applied himselfe greatly, he was liberall in gifts, and prodigall in expences, proper of person, in stature neither such as excelled the meane bignes of men, nor yet of the lowest sort, hauing a countenance more reuerent, then was commonly in men, but rather like an Angel, in which did shine such a marueilous grace, that such as dreamed of him, hoped the day following for good lucke, he gouerned his kingdome euen til his old yeres valiantly, wisely, and royally. But yet he did not refraine riotous

lust,

luſt, carnall concupiſcence, nor motions, of the fleſh, euen in his extreame age, and ſo (as was thought) for his intemperancie ended his life the ſoner.

Iſſue of King Edward the third.

He had iſſue by the Lady Philip his wife, ſeuen ſonnes, Edward the blacke Prince, William of Hatfield that died yong, Leonel Duke of Clarence, Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaſter, Edmond of Langley Earle of Cambridge, and Duke of Yorke, William of Windſor ỹ died without iſſue, Thomas of Woodſtocke Earle of Buckingham, and Duke of Glocester: and fiue daughters, Iſabel married to the Lord Coucy, Earle of Bedford, Ioane Quéne of Spaine, Blanch that died yong, Mary maried to Iohn Mountfort Duke of Brytaine, and Margaret Counteſſe of Penbroke. He founded Eaſtminſter, commonly called new abbey néere vnto the tower of London, wherein he placed white monks of the order Ciſteaux, to the honour of God, and our Lady of grace, according to a vow by him made, being on the ſeas in great perill, by meanes of a tempeſt: he founded an abbey for Nunnes at Dertford in Kent, he founded the kings hall in Cambridge for poore ſchollers, (which hall with others was ſuppreſſed by K. Henry the 8. for the foundation of Trinitie Colledge there) he alſo founded an Hoſpitall for the poore, and named it Maiſon de Dieu, or Gods houſe, in the town of Caleis, he reedified or newly builded S. Steuens Chappel at Weſtminſter, altering the ſame into a colledge of a Deane, 12. ſecular Chanons, 12. Vicars, and other miniſters & ſeruants, and indued it with reuenues to the value of 500. pounde by yéere. He alſo réedified or almoſt newly builded the Caſtle of Windleſor. He alſo augmenting the Chappell there, which his progenitors kings of Engländ, had before erected of 8. Chanons, he added to them a Deane and 15. Chanons, 24. poore & impotent knights and other miniſters. Quéne Mary was the firſt that brought water to that caſtle by Conduite, which before was watered by welles. It remaineth of record which I haue ſéene, that tithe hath béen paied at Windſor for wine preſſed out of grapes, that were wonted to grow in the little parke there.

Eaſtminſter founded by King Edward the third.

Richard of Burdeaux.

Ann. reg. 1.

Richard the 2. borne at Burdeaux, the ſonne of Prince Edward, being but eleuen yéeres old, began his reigne the 21. day of June, in the yéere of our Lord God 1377. In beauty, bounty, and liberality, he far paſſed all his progenitors, but was ouermuch giuen to reſt and quietnes, louing litle déeds of armes, and for that he was yong, was moſt ruled by yong counſell, and regarded nothing the counſels of the ſage and wiſe men of the Realme, which thing turned this land to great trouble, and himſelfe to extreme miſerie, as is by theſe verſes declared.

Vox clamantis. Ioh Gower.

When this King firſt began to raigne, the Lawes neglected were,
Wherefore good fortune him forſooke, and th'earth did quake for feare,
The people alſo whom he pollde, againſt him did rebell.
The time doth yet bewaile the woes, that Chronicles doe tell.

The fooliſh counſell of the lewde, and yong he did receiue,
And graue aduice of aged heads, he did reiect and leaue.
And then for greedy thirſt of Coyne, ſome ſubiects she accuſed,
To gaine their goods into his hands, thus he the realme abuſed.

On the foreſaid 21. of June, before the old King was departed, the Londoners hauing certaine knowledge, ỹ he could not liue any ſeaſon, ſent the chiefeſt and moſt worthy citizens of their citie, vnto Kennington, where the prince and his mother remained, to declare vnto the ſaid prince their ready minds, & good will to accept him for their true and lawfull King and Gouernour, Iohn Philpot being eſpecially appointed to do the meſſage, began his Oration thus.

John Philpot his Oration to the Prince.

We bring newes, moſt excellent Prince (which without great ſorrow we cannot rehearſe) of the vndoubted death of our moſt inuincible King Edward your Grandfather, who hath kept and gouerned vs, and this kingdome (as I may ſay) a longtime in quiet peace; and now by the manifeſt tokens of death in him, he hath ceaſſed to be our Gouernour: wherefore we beſeech you, on the behalfe of the Citizens, and City of London, that you will haue recommended to your good grace, the City your chamber, whom we knowledge ſhortly to be our King, to whoſe rule we onely ſubmit our ſelues, and bow to your will and pleaſure vnder your dominion to ſerue in word and deede. And that we execute further our meſſage, your reuerence knoweth, your City to be vnſpeakably troubled, for that you haue withdrawne your preſence from it, which is knowen to be ſo much at your deuotion, that the Citizens are not onely ready to ſpend their goods for your ſake, but alſo to ieopard their liues. Therefore we come to your preſence, to beſeech you that it may pleaſe you to remaine there, both to the comfort of vs your citizens, and alſo to the ſurety and ſolace of your ſelfe. We further beſeech you moſt noble Prince, that you would vouchſafe to make ſome good and profitable end of the diſcord, which lately hath riſen through the malice of ſome, and not to the commodity of any, but to the hinderance and diſcommodity of many, betwixt our Citizens, and the Duke of Lancaſter. To theſe and other like words vttered by the ſaid Iohn Philpot, it was anſwered by the Prince, and his counſell, that he would doe his endeuour to ſatiſfie their deſire in all things, and ſo being ſent away, they returned bringing glad tidings to their fellow Citizens.

The next morrow there was ſent to London, on the Kings behalfe, the Lord Latimer, Sir Nicholas Bond, Sir Simon Burley, & Sir Richard Adderbery, which in name of the new K. ſaluted the citizens with their meſſage of the new K. towardnes, who promiſed to loue them and their city, & to come to them as they had requeſted: they alſo told ỹ citizens, how the K. had ſpoken to the duke for them, and how the Duke in all things had ſubmitted himſelfe to the kings will, that they alſo ſhould ſubmit themſelues in the ſame maner; and then the King would endeuour himſelfe that peace ſhould concluded, to the honor and commoditie of the citizens: but the citizens fearing ſuch forme of peace as might happen, anſwered, that they would not in any wiſe ſo doe, eſpecially becauſe they knew the King to be but young, and weake to helpe them in ſuch a troubleſome buſineſſe, & that their cauſe ſhould not be diſcuſſed by him, but

by

by their deadly enemies, & ſo they ſhould be puniſhed at their pleaſure, if they conſented to the kings requeſt in that article. At length after talke had vpon this buſineſſe, fiue houres together or more, they light vpon this point, that if the ſaid knights would be bound to the citizens, that their ſubmiſſion ſhould not redound to the temporall loſſe, or bodily harme of any Citizen, or preiudice of their Citie, they would gladly obey the kings commaundement. The knights deſirous to ſatiſfie the kings deſire, and to prouide for the quietnes of the Citizens, vndertoke by othe of fidelitie, and their knighthood, that it ſhould not be to their preiudice, but to their commodity, if they would ſubmit themſelues. This ſurety receiued, the Citizens toke their iourney towards Shine, where they found the new king with his mother, the Duke and the Dukes brethren; there were alſo many Biſhops gathered about the dead bodie of the late king: The comming of the Citizens being knowen to the king, hée ſtraight commaunded them to be called before him, the which Citizens as before beſought him to reforme the peace betwixt the Duke and them, affirming that they were readie in all things to ſubmit themſelues vnto his will and pleaſure, not as though they confeſſed they had made any fault againſt the Duke, but as men that came at this time for the benefit of peace, and honour, aſwel to the king, as the duke, to pacifie the hearts, and mitigate the diſpleaſure of both.

The Duke of Lancaſter and the Citizens of London made friends.

The Duke ſéeing them in this manner to haue ſubmitted themſelues to the king, though (as it was ſaid) he had other matters in his head, yet fearing that hée ſhould not afterward come to ſo honorable conditions, if he refuſed this forme of peace, fell down at the kings fét, and beſéeched him to take the cauſe in hand vnder the forme that the Londoners had expreſſed, deſiring therewith that they which had béen impriſoned for any diſhonour offered him, might be with the kings fauour releaſed and ſet at libertie: And ſo he did forgiue the Citizens whatſoeuer they had committed againſt him, and receiued them into his ful fauour, in the preſence of the king, affirming with an oth that he would bée their friend, and as carefull for their commodities as for his owne, and in token of an vnfained peace, he kiſſed euery one of them before the king, and ſo with quietnes, the Citizens returned home praiſing God, that had brought the Duke to ſuch humilitie, who a little before had demaunded in great pride, of the Citizens for his fauour, one hundred hogſheads of wine, & an infinite number of precious ſtones. The Friday next following the Duke and Citizens came to Weſtminſter, where was proclaimed the vnion and agréement betwéene them.

The king accordeth the Duke and the Biſhop of Winchéſter.

The yong king deſirous at his entring to the kingdome to haue an vnitie amongſt his ſubiects in euery place, brought the Duke and the Biſhoppe of Wincheuer to be at one, and whereſoeuer in his Realme he knew any diſcord and variance to be riſen, he toke the quarels into his hands, promiſing to make a good and fruitfull end for both parties. He alſo deliuered Peter de la More, (a knight of Herefordſhire) out of the Caſtell of Nottingham, where he had béene long impriſoned, and by his letters patents releaſed him of all things whatſoeuer, in the name of the king might be laid vnto him.

Peter de la More ſet at libertie.

Vpon

The Frenchmen take the towne of Rye and burne it.

Upon the feast day of Saint Peter and Paule the Apostles in the morning, the Frenchmen with fiue vessels, great and small, inuaded the towne of Rye, and with small labour toke the towne, albeit the towne dwellers vpon confidence of strength, had taken order that none should remoue their goods from the towne, that at the least wise, for loue of their goods, they might with more courage abide the conflictes: yet notwithstanding they turne their backs in the time of battell, whereupon it came to passe, that by their want of heart and courage, the towne was taken with all their goods.

The Abbot of Battayle hearing of so lamentable a report, put his men in armor to defend the villages nigh adioyning, & one of the enemies going forth for forage, being taken by one of the Abbots men, declared that the French men purposed to kéepe the said towne for ten daies, whereupon the Abbot remoued with his power to the towne of Winchelsey, which towne (as the prisoner reported) the French purposed to assault, but when they saw the Abbot and his men armed in that towne, dispayring of further entrance into that Countrey, they begin to set fire on the towne of Rye, and within fiue houres brought it wholy vnto ashes, with the Church that then was there of a wonderfull beautie, conueying away foure of the richest of that towne prisoners, and slaying 66. left not aboue eight in the towne: 42. hogsheads of wine they caried from thence to their Ships, with the rest of their bootie, and left the towne desolate.

The towne of Rye consumed with fire.

King Richard was crowned with great solemnity at Westminster by the hands of Simon Sudbury Archbishop of Canterbury, on the 16. day of July. At this coronation K. Richard created foure new Earles, Thomas of Woodstocke, K. Edwards yongest sonne Earle of Buckingham and Northampton, to whom he gaue 1000. markes yerly out of his treasury, till he had prouided him land to that value. Thomas Mowbrey of Apthelme, earle of Nottingham, Guischard or Gifford Angolisme knight of Gascoigne, and maister to the king, Earle of Huntington, to whom he likewise gaue 1000. markes yerely out of his treasury, till he had prouided him lands to that value: And Henry Percy, Earle of Northumberland. He also made nine knights, to wit, Edward sonne to Edmond Earle of Kent, Iohn sonne to Thomas Roos of Hamelake, Robert de Gray of Rotherfield, Richard sonne to Gilbert Talbot, Gerard sonne to Warine de Lisle, Michaell sonne to Michaell de la Pole, Richard de Poynings, Robert de Harrington, and Thomas de la More.

King Richard crowned.
Earles created
Knights made
Michael sonne to Michael.

Sir Iohn Burleigh knight, the kings Chamberlaine, Custos of Nottingham castle, was also for terme of life by patent, made képer of the forrest of Sherwood. And Simon Burleigh knight his brother, was made Constable of Windlesore castle, Wigmore, Guilford, and the Manor of Kenington, and also maister of the kings Falcons at his Mues, neere Charing-crosse by Westminster, this sir Simon Burleigh had his house in London in Thames stréte betwixt Baynards castle & Pauls wharfe, which house somtime belonged to the abbey of Fiscamp, & by reason of the wars in France came to the kings hands.

Mues for the kings falcons.

About the same time, Henry Percy marshall of England, and Earle of Northumberland, resigned the rodde of his office, and went home to his countrey,

in

in whose place Iohn of Arundale, brother to the Earle of Arundale was sent, who valiantly resisted the Frenchmen, when they assailed the towne of South-hampton, and manfully kept them off from entring the towne, being chased to the sea.

About the same time, of a small cause discord rose in the fayre of Rockesborough, betwixt the Englishmen and Scots, and certaine on both sides being slaine, the Scots were put to the worse. Whereupon being turned into a fury, shortly returning to the town with the Earle of Dunbarre, they entred in the night, slue the townsmen, spoiled their goods, & committed the town to the fire: which thing being known, the new Earle of Northumberland sorowing inwardly euen at the heart for the death of the slaine townsmen, determined to reuenge their death vpon the enemies, & entring into Scotland with 10000 men, he toke praies in the land of the Earle of Dunbarre, for the space of three daies together, burning vp al that came in his way, & returned with his people. The towne of Rokesborow burned by the Scots.

The one and twentieth of August, the French men toke the vnwinnable (that I may so call it) Ile of Wight, more by craft, then by force, which Ile had not been taken by any men, if the same had been wel kept with diligent watch, but the euer assured security of the Iland men, brought on them their destruction, and to the French vnhoped for victory. In deed the Frenchmen being driuen on the shore by tempest, attempted to enter the Ile, supposing the Iland men had not been aware of their comming: but the purpose of the French was not knowen to the watchmen, and therefore they suffered them to enter on the land, to the ende, that after so many were come on land, as they supposed they might deale with, the residue should be kept off, but it chanced otherwise then they thought, for as we said, some being entred, when the Wightmen would haue stopped the other, the Frenchmen pressed forward with such force, that they repulsed the Iland men from their ground, so that they were driuen to seeke refuge by hiding themselues. French men tooke the Ile of Wight.

The French therefore hauing thus gotten the Iland, did much hurt in slaying the inhabitants, burning certaine townes, and taking the substance from the people: at length comming to the castle, and thinking to haue wonne it with final adoe, they finde there a pricke of incredible sharpnes, for Sir Hugh Tirell keeper of the said castle, boldly comming to incounter them, made great slaughter among them, by reason whereof they left from assayling that castle, and from thenceforth thinking it not good to dwel so neere a Serpent, they gathered together what spoyle they might of the Ile, and constrained the Ilanders to get of their friends without the Ile, a thousand marks of siluer for the saning of their houses from burning, and for the residue of their goods. Moreouer, taking of them an oath of fidelitie, not to resist thē for the space of one yeere, whensoeuer it should please thē to land there, they departed thence to their galleies, and againe coasted the shore about till they came to the town of Winchelsea, where vnderstanding the abbot of Battal was come to defend it, they sent him word to redeeme the town, vnto whom the abbot answered, he needed not to redeem the thing that was not lost, but willed thē to desist frō molesting the towne vpon paine of that which might follow. The French exasperated The French besiege Winchelsea. The Abbot of Battal defended it.

asperated with this answere, requested him that if he would not haue peace, he would send forth to fight man to man, or more in number if he would to try the matter in view of armes: but neither would the Abbot admit the one request or the other, saying, he was a religous man, and therfore not to admit such petitions, and that he came not thither to fight, but to defend & preserue the peace of the countrey. These things being heard, the Frenchmen supposing that the Abbot and his people wanted courage, they assaulted the towne with such instruments of warre, as cast forth stones farre off, not ceasing from none til euening, but by the laudable prowes of the Abbot, and such as were with him, the French preuailed nothing, but left it as they founde it.

Vse of Guns.

The towne of Hastings burnt.

In the meane time whilest they were busie thus at Winchelsey, they sent part of their company vnto Hastings, where finding the towne almost emptie, they burnt it.

Prior of Lewes taken by French.

The same yere the Frenchmen comming vp at Ratingdon in Sussex, nere to the towne of Lewes, the Prior of Lewes with a small company met them, and was taken by the Frenchmen, that came vpon him, and caried to their ships, with two knights, to wit, Sir Iohn Fallesbey, and Sir Thomas Cheyne, and an Esquier called Iohn Brokas, amongst other a certaine Esquier that had ben long in seruice with the Prior of Lewes, a Frenchman by nation, fought so manfully against the Frenchmen, that his bowels falling from him to his fete, he yet pursued them. There was slaine in this battel about one hundred of the Englishmen, and the Frenchmen returned home with all their Naule, which was 37. Galleies, and 8. Caruels of Spaine, and certaine Barkes: straightwaies therefore as they came to land, some of them went vnto the siege, that was about Arde, & by treason which alwaies is familiar to them, the keper of that castle being an Almaine, to wit, the Lord of Gunney deliuered to them the towne, they straight got the castell also, for the which the same keper being taken by sir Hugh Calueley keper of Caleis, was sent into England, and committed to prison.

Parliament at London.

The same time a Parliament was assembled at London, which continued from Michaelmas til S. Andrewes tide. In the which Parliament were almost all those knights, with the said Peter de la More, which so nobly had stood forth in the Parliament, which rightly was called the good Parliament, for the increase of their Countrey, and profit of their kingdome. Thus therefore taking in hand againe the petitions in the same place, as they left them, they earnestly stood in the matter, to haue Alice Pierce banished, who contemning the statute of Parliament, and the oth which she had taken, durst take on her to enter the kings court to compell him, and to haue of him what pleased her, who although she had corrupted many of the Lords, and all the lawes with money, the which not onely secretly but openly pleaded for her; yet by the diligence and wisedome of the said knights, she being conuict by her owne mouth, was banished, and her moueable goods confiscate to the kings vse: but in the yere next following, to wit, the second yere of king Richard, the said Alice Pierce then wife to William Windsore knight, was pardoned, and in the seuenth

Alice Pierce banished.

uently yeare of the same king, her goods before confiscate by Parliament, were againe restored and recompenced.

There was granted to the king of the Cleargie two tenths to be paid that yeare, with condition, that from henceforth the king should not extort from his Subiects by such petitions or demaunds but liue of his owne, and continue his warre, for as it was answered there, his owne goods pertaining to the crowne, sufficed both to the finding of his house, and maintaining of his warres, if the same were bestowed by fit ministers, and for the keping of the money, two Citizens of London were appointed, William Walworth, and Iohn Philpot. The Englishmen hearing of a number of Spanish shippes to remaine at sluce for want of winde, assembling a great companie of armed men, and a great fleete, meant to take the seas: their chiefe Captaines were Thomas of Woodstocke Earle of Buckingham, the Duke of Britayne, the Lord Latimer, the Lord Robert Fiz Walter, sir Robert Knowles, and many other valiant personages, who being entred the Sea, tasted Fortune disfauourable, for by a tempestuous wind that rose, their ships were scattered in sunder, their maskes were broken downe, their sailes rent, and many of the small vessels that were victuallers were drowned; at length the ships got together againe, and arriued in England, and being nowe rigged are eftsones fraught with men, and to they sea they goe. About the same time, sir Hugh Calueley making a iourney towards Bulloigne, found a barge in the hauen of the towne, that bare the name of the towne, and another that was the French kings, xxvi. other vessels more and lesse, all the which with a great part of the suburbes of Bulloigne, he caused to be dispoyled, taking with him whatsoeuer was there to be desired, with certaine prisoners: hee droue afore him a great bootie of sheepe and beasts, which he found pasturing neere the towne, which might well serue to victuall Calais for a great time: he recouered the same day the Castell of Marke, which through negligence before had been lost. King Richard kept his Christmas at Windlesore.

Two tenths granted by the Cleargie.

Hugh Calueley his iourney toward Bulloigne.

1378.

The English fleete whereof we spake, returned without any great good successe, they tooke an eight Spanish ships in the British coasts neere to Brest, and more had taken if their businesse had been so well done, as was pretended: and therefore the fleete returned home, so tossed with stormes and contrarie weather, and after with intestine discord, that it seemed there wanted among them Gods fauour. The Lord Percy (this fleete remaining for the mending of his ships, whilest the other were abroad) went now to the sea, with a great ship and some smaller vessels, and meeting with fiftie ships laden with French wares and merchandize, of which some were of Flaunders, some of Spayne, he set on them all, who beholding his bold enterprise, and thinking that he had some aide at hand gaue ouer to make resistance, and so xxviii. escaping by flight, xxii. yelded themselues to the said Thomas Lord Percy. Sir Hugh Calueley with a power secretly armed, went to the towne of Staple, where the fayre was then, to the which were come many Merchantmen from Bulloigne, Mutterell, Amiens, and Paris, where he falling on them that were vnarmed, slew many, tooke many to be put to their ransomes, sacked all the goods, and

Sir Hugh Calueley spoyled the towne of Staple.

set

set fire in the towne, so that it was wholy consumed, fewe places excepted. This done, he returned to Calais with his men in safety, bringing from that Fayre wares which returned to the great profite of the Calisians many yeres after.

The men of Winchelsey & of Rye sayle into Normandy, and spoyle the towne of Peters Hauen

The men of Winchelsey & Rye, gathered a great number of people together, and imbarked themselues towards Normandy, desirous to requite the losses which before they had receiued, and so in the night arriuing in a towne called Peters Hauen, entred the same, slaying so many as they met, and those whom they thinke able to pay ransome, they carry to their ships: they spoyled the houses with the Churches, where they found many rich spoiles which sometime had bẽn by the Frenchmen set from Rye, and especially the belles and such like, which they shipped, set the rest on fire, & then they land at Wilet, not farre from thence, where they practised the like cheuance, and so with their rich spoyle returned home.

The men of Rye fetch their belles out of Normandy.

About the same time Iohn duke of Lancaster requested that the mony granted to the king by the clergy and laity, might be committed to his custody, affirming that he would kẽpe the enemies off from the coastes of England, by the space of one yere with that mony, and moreouer bring to passe some further great commodity, to whose importunate petition the Lords although against their willes agreed. They appoint therfore the first day of March to mẽt in counsell, in which euery of those should goe forth on this iourney: and least the sea should in the meane time want those that should kẽpe it, there were nine ships hired of them of Bayon, to defend the sea and land from incursions of the French and others. These ships being furnished with sufficient numbers of armed men, within a short time coasting the seas, met the Nauy and merchandise of the Spanyards, and entring battell with them, in short time toke fourtẽn of their ships laden with wines and other merchandise, and returned into England ioyfully: vnto sir Robert Knowles Captaine of Brest, they gaue the first fruits of their pray, 100. tunne of their best wines as they passed by him homewards.

Ro. Knowles.

In the meane time Henry the bastard, calling himselfe king of Spaine, hearing that they of Bayon had done such harme vnto his people, and that the D. of Lancaster had prepared a great number to enter the sea, he was sore afraid, thinking that hee minded not onely to defend the Sea, but rather to seeke his kingdome, which by right of his wife the lawful inheritor of Spaine, he meant to challenge: wherefore the said Henry commaunded a Nauy to be prepared of all his land that he might stay the said Duke from entering his countrey, and if he might, to take him prisoner, which happily they had done, if the king of Portugale with almost an innumerable number had not entred the kingdome of Spaine, the selfe same time that the bastard Henry prepared himselfe against the Duke, deferring his iourney from day to day: they that were appointed Captaines ouer the Nauie with certaine men of warre, got them to the sea, there to stay for the Dukes comming, estéming it more glorious to liue on the sea by prayes, taking from the enemies, then to liue by spoyle of their owne countrimen at home.

When

When they had certaine dales wafted vp and down the seas, the Spanyards met them with an armed company, so that eyther part in hope of pray ioyned together in fight, but our men hauing the wind and weather contrary to them, lost the victory to their enemies, some escaping by flight, & some being taken, amongst the which sir Hugh Courtney a noble knight was one.

About the same time Iohn Mercer a Scot, gathering together no smal number of Frenchmen, Scots and Spanyards, set vpon certaine ships of Scarborow, tooke them and led them into Scotland, this he did in reuenge of his fathers iniury, who was before taken by the Englishmen, and kept prisoner in the castle of Scarborow. Mercer a Scot tooke ships of Scarborow.

Iohn Philpot a Citizen of London, a man of holly wit, and very rich in substance, considering the want of the Duke of Lancaster & other Lordes that ought to haue defended the realme, & lamenting the oppressions of the inhabitants, hired with his own money, to the number of a thousand souldiers, the which might take from the said Iohn Mercer both his ships and goods, which he had by rouing taken, and defend the realme of England from such incursions: and it came to passe within a small time, that his hired men tooke the said Iohn Mercer with all his ships, which he had violently taken from Scarborow and fiftéene Spanish ships that were laden with much riches, and were with him in ayde at that present. There was great ioy made among the people, all men praising that worthy mans bountifulnes & loue towards the king. The Earles & Barons séeing so laudable an act, atchieued by Iohn Philpot, tooke it grieuously, although they knew themselues guilty: first they secretly lie in wait, to do him some displeasure, and after they spake against him openly, saying, it was not lawfull for him to do such things without the counsell of the king and realme; certaine of the Lords, but the chiefe being Hugh Earle of Stafford, that rehearsed these things thus against him, were answered by the same Iohn Philpot: Sir, know (saith hée) that I neither sent my money nor men to the danger of the seas, that I should take from you, or your fellowes, the good renoume of Chiualry, and winne it to me, but being sorrowfull to sée the peoples misery, in my countrey, which now through your slouthfulnesse, of the most noble Lady of Nations, is brought to lie open to the spoyling of euery vilest Nation, when there is not one of you that doth put his hand to the defence therof. I haue therfore set forth my selfe and mine, for the sauing of my Nation and Countrey: the Earle had not to answere. Iohn Philpot of London. *Ann. reg. 2.*

The eleuenth day of August, certaine wicked persons of the kings house being armed, at high Masse time entred the Church of Westminster Abbey, and there set vpon two valiant Esquiers, Iohn Schakell and Robert Hawley, which had escaped out of the Tower of London, to the said Abbey, for refuge of Sanctuarie: they slew the said Robert Hawley in the quire before the Priors stall, and slew a Monke which intreated them to spare the saide Robert in that place. Sir Ralph Ferreis, and sir Alan Buxale, Captaine of the Tower (some say the Lord Latimer) were the Captaines of this mischiefe. Murder in the Church of Westminster. T. Walsingham.

The foresaid two Esquires, Robert Hawley, and Iohn Schakell, in the battell

battell of Nazers in Spaine toke the Earle of Dene prisoner, who deliuered vnto them his sonne for a pledge: and because they would not present the said Earles sonne to the king, who would giue them little or nothing for him, the foresaid Alan Buxule, with other were sent to do this mischiefe, who slew the one, and cast the other in prison.

1379. Tho. Walsing. Berwicke castell taken by the Scots.

The Scots began to rebell, and a squire of theirs, called Alexander Ramsey, with fortie persons, in a night toke the Castell of Berwicke, but the ninth day following, the Earle of Northumberland recouered it, & slew the Scots that were therein.

The Merchants of London wickedly slew a rich merchant of Genoa, for that he would carry to a better market ỹ spices that he had promised to bring into this Countrey, the doers whereof were after apprehended, and some for that fact executed, as after shall appeare.

Pestilence in the North. Tho. Walsing.

So great a mortalitie of men happened in the North parts of England, as neuer had béene séene before, which the Scots séeing, raunged through and slew with the sword them that were sicke of the plague, and so pursued them that had not the plague, that they droue out of the Countrey, almost all the able men.

Taxe.

In a Parliament at London, it was decréed, that euery Duke should pay tenne markes to the king, the Archbishops the like, Earles, Bishops, and mitered Abbots should giue fiue markes, and euery Monke fortie pence, no religious person, man or woman, Parson, Vicar, or Chapleine escaped this taxe. Iohn Mountfort Duke of Britanie, returned to his countrey, where hée was receiued with great honour.

An. reg. 3. Wheat and wine cheape. Tho. Walsing.

A bushell of wheat was sold for fiue pence: a gallon of white wine fiue pence, and a gallon of red wine for foure pence.

Sir Iohn Arundale drowned.

Iohn of Arundale brother to the Earle of Arundale, was sent to helpe the Duke of Britaine, with many other noble Knightes and Esquires, who beginning their voyage from Plimmouth with spoyling their own Countrey, rauishing wiues, widowes, and virgins, and robbing of Churches, were by tempest driuen on the rockes of a certaine Iland in Ireland, where they were all most miserably drowned, with their treasure and prouisions which was of inestimable value. Sir Thomas Banister, sir Roger Trumpington, sir Nicholas Kiriell, sir Thomas Dale, sir Iohn Sentcle and fiue other knights and many other perished there, besides threescore women, whom they had throwne into the Sea to lighten their shippe, and this was done on the vi. of December.

Cro. maioris Lon.

1380. Parliament at London.

In a Parliament at London was granted to the king a tenth of the Ecclesiastical persons, and a fiftenth of the secular, vpon condition that no other Parliament should be holden from the Calends of March till Michaelmasse.

A combat at Westminster.

A combat was fought at Westminster in the kings presence, betwéen Iohn Ansley knight, & Thomas Catrington Esquier, whom the foresaid knight had appealed of treason, for selling the castle of Saint Sauiours, which the Lord Chandos had builded in the Ile of Constantine in Fraunce, and the knight ouercame the Esquier.

Thomas

Thomas of Woodstocke Earle of Buckingham, Thomas Percy, Hugh Calureley, Robert Knowles, Lord Basset, Sir Iohn Harleston, William of Windsore, approued and tried knightes, were sent with a great power to ayde the Duke of Britaine, who were conueyed to Calais, and from thence rode about through Fraunce, spoyling the countrey, and slaying the people to the borders of Britaine, and entred the same without losse, eyther of man or beast.

In this iourney Sir Iohn Philpot, Citizen of London deserued great commendations, who hyred ships for them of his owne charges, & with his owne money released the armour which the souldiours had gaged for their victuals, more then a thousand in number. John Philpot his good seruice.

The Scots entred Cumberland, Westmerland, and the Forrest of Engelwood, slewe the inhabitantes, droue away the Cattell, and robbed the Market and Towne of Pereth, and whiles the Earle of Northumberland prepared to haue béene reuenged, the king sent letters to the contrarie. Iohn Vian knight with the French kings Gallies toke the Towne of Winchelsea, put the Abbot of Battaile to flight, and toke one of his Monkes that came thither armed. *An. reg. 4.* Frenchmen tooke Winchelsea.

Hée also burnt the Townes of Apledor and Rye, Hastings and Portelmouth, about the feast of Saint Laurence.

The eight of September foure Gallies of Fraunce came to Grauesende, and burnt a great part of the Towne, returned with great spoyles, not receiuing any hurt. The towne of Grauesend burnt by the French.

About this time saith Polidor, the making of Gunnes was found, by a certaine Almaine, who hauing the powder of Brimstone in a Morter which he had beaten for a medicine, and couered with a stone, as hée stroke fire, a sparke chanced to fall into the powder, whereby a flame out of the morter raised the stone a great height, which after he had perceiued, he made a pipe of yron, and tempered the powder with other, and so finished that deadly engine, as reporteth Blondus and R. Volateranus. The first that vsed shot, to their behalfe and profit, were the Venetians against the inhabitantes of Genoa: but sure it was long before this time, as shall be shewed in my larger Chronicle. Gunnes inuented. Polidor. Sebastiã Munst. Blondus. R. Volateranus.

During the Parliament at Northampton, beginning the first of Nouember, was hanged Iohn Kirby, that slew the merchant of Genoa, whom wée spake of before. Parliament at Northampton.

In this Parliament an exceeding great Tare was demaunded, which afterwardes was cause of great disturbance: of all religious persons men and women fiue shillings eight pence, secular Priestes as much, and euery person, man or women foure pence to the King, which was paide. It was also ordained, that euery couple wedded should pay two shillings for euery forte of beast, and also homegilde, but this was neuer asked. Great Tare.

After the feast of Christmas a Councell was holden at London, in the which Sir Thomas Brantingham Bishoppe of Exceter was discharged of the Office of Lord Treasurer, and Sir Robert Hales Prior of Saint 1381. Tho. Walsing.

Iohns Hospital of Ierusalem in England was placed in his roome, a noble and valiant knight & a hardy person, but such an one as pleased not the commons.

Tarickes raught with wine came to Southhampton.

About the same time came vessells called Tarickes to South-hampton, fraught with all kinds of Spices, Wines, and other Marchandizes, which greatly enriched the inhabitants of the whole realme, but especially of them that inhabited thereabout.

John Wicliffe.

The same time Iohn Wickliffe parson of Lutterworth in Leicester-shire, laboured in his preaching to proue that after the consecration in the masse made by the Priest, very bread and wine were there present as before, Christ being there assistant, as in euery place, but more specially, & the same bread not to be more worth then other bread, except onely for the blessing of the Priest, and therefore he affirmed that Christians were deceiued in honouring of the said bread, which was a thing without life, for any thing that had life, was better then that which lacked life.

An army sent to aid the king of Portugall.

A great army was assembled and sent to the aid of the Duke of Lancaster, against the king of Spayne, for the said Duke affirmed, that it was expedient for this realme, that an host of men, with abundance of money should be sent to the king of Portugale, that he might thereby be bound to aide the king of England, and stop the passage of the straites of Gibraltare, or of Morocc, from the Galleies, that must of necessitie passe by the same straites, to come to infest the British, or English Ocean, for so should England bee safe, and Fraunce should be deceiued: Captaines appointed to this army, were Edmond of Langley, Earle of Cambridge, William Lord Beauchampe, the Lord Boterax, sir Matthew Gourney, and many other knights, the which passed the seas, and prosperously came to Lysbone, and were thankfully receiued of the king, but these were not able to assaile the king of Spayne, yet greatly profiting Portugale, they defended the confines, and stayed the Spaniardes that they could not enter the countrey as enemies: our men oft times inuaded the Spaniards, and boldely abode in that land vntill a greater number of warriers might be sent vnto them out of England.

A great rebellion in England, and the causes thereof.

In this meane time, the realme of England, appointed to bee punished for her sinnes, was sodainly plagued in such sort, that if God had not somer supprelled the same, both the gouernment had beene vtterly destroyed, and the whole realme made a laughing stocke and scorne to all nations.

In the last yeere (as is aforesaid) was granted to the king a grieuous tare or tallage of his subiects, both spirituall and temporall, through the which was raised in England, a shipwracke of great troubles: for diuers Courtiers desirous to enrich themselues with other mens goods, informed the king & his court, that the tallage was not gathered vp faithfully to the kings vse by the Collectors: whereupon they offered to the king, that they would pay a great summe of money for the farme of that which they would gather ouer and besides that which had beene paid, if they might be by the king thereunto authorised. And some of them getting the kings letters and authority, sate in diuers places of Kent and Essex, and handled the people very sore and vncourteously almost not to be spoken, for the leuying of the said summe of money, which,

some

some of the people taking in euill part, they secretly toke counsell together, gathered assistants, and resisted the exactors, rising against them, of whom some they slew, some they wounded, and the rest fled.

The king therefore ordained certaine Commissioners to enquire, howe they were leuied, amongst the which, one was sent into Essex to Thomas de Bampton, who sitting one day before Whitsontide, at Brentwood, enquiring how the Collectors had leuied the subsidy before said, all the people of Fobbing answered, they would not pay one peny more then they had done, whereof they had his acquittance, whereupon the said T. did grieuously threaten them, hauing with him two Sergeants at Armes of the kings, whereupon they of Fobbing, of Curringham, and of Stanford, assembled to the number of more then one hundred, went to T. Bampton and gaue him flat answere that they would neither treat with him, or pay any such money as was demaunded: wherefore the said Bampton commaunded the Sergeants to arrest and put them in prison, but the townsmen made them all to fly towards London to the kings counsell. Whereupon sir Robert Belknape chiefe Iustice of the common Pleas was sent downe with commission of Traylibaston, and before him sundry inditements of those men; who comming before him called him traitor to the king, and realme, and furthermore compelled him to sweare vpon a booke, that he should no more sit in any such Sessions, and to declare to thē the names of the Iurers, whose heads they chopped off as they found them, and destroyed their houses, which made sir Robert Belknape in haste to fly his house. This done the Commons assembled before Whitsontide to a great number: those toke all the Clearkes of the said T. Bampton and chopped off their heads, which they caried before them on poles. At the same time the great Prior of Saint Iohn of Ierusalem by London, hauing a goodly and delectable Manor in Essex, wherein was ordained victuals and other necessaries, for the vse of a Chapiter Generall, and great abundance of fayre stuffe, of Wines, Arras cloathes, and other prouision for the knightes brethren: The Commons entred this Manor, eate vp the victuals and prouision of Wine, three tunne, and spoyled the Manor and the ground with great dammage: then they sent diuers letters into Kent, Suffolk, and Northfolke to rise with them, and departing themselues into diuers companies, committed many outrages: shortly after, to wit, on Monday after Whitsunday, a knight of the kings house, named sir Simon Burley, hauing in his companie two Serieants at Armes of the kings, came to Grauesend, where he challenged one to be his bondman, for whom, men of the towne did gently intreat him to shew fauour, but sir Simon would not take lesse then 300. pound of siluer for his manumission, & therefore arrested him, and sent him to Rochester Castell, whereupon the Commons of Kent began to rise, for the which the king sent a Iustice of Traylbaston, with Iohn Legge a Serieaunt of Armes, there to sit, hauing with them many inditements, but as they would haue sate at Canterbury vpon their commissiō, they were resisted by the commons, who daily grew to a great multitude, & being without a captain, came to Dartford, where they toke counsaile, and appointed that none which

Commissions sent into Essex to Thomas Bampton.

Fobbing Curringham and Stanford in Essex.

Sir Robert Belknape Iustice.

Iurers heads chopped of.

Lord Prior of Saint Johns his Manor in Essex spoyled.

Sir Simon Burley by a commission in Kent arrested one of Grauesend, sent him to Rochester Castell.

Commons of Kent began to rise.

were dwelling within twelue miles of the sea, should goe with them, but keepe the coast of the sea from enemies, saying there were moze kinges then one, which they would not suffer, noz haue any other but king Richard. On the Friday after, they came to Rochester, and there ioyned with the Essex rebels, who together strongly besieged the Castle, and deliuered the man of Gravesend with other: then they made Wat Tighler of Maidstone their Captaine, who with his company on Monday after Trinity Sunday, came to Canterbury, where they commaunded the Monkes to chuse them an Archbishop, for he that now is, (quoth they) is a traitor, & shal be beheaded. Then they swore the Maior, Baliffes, and Commons of the Towne to be true to king Richard and the lawfull Commons of England. They beheaded three men of that towne, and then taking with them 500. men of that towne toward London, left the rest to keepe the said towne. This tumult thus begun in Kent, by meane of sir Simon Burley, was also increased by diuers other actions in other places, amongst the which, as I finde noted in a Chronicle sometimes belonging to the Monastery of Saint Albons one of the collectors of the grotes, or polle money, comming to the house of one Iohn Tylar, in the towne of Dartford in Kent, demaunded of the Tylars wife, for her husband, her selfe, her seruants, and for their daughter (a young mayden) euery one of them a grote; which the Tylars wife denied not to pay, saying for her daughter, whom she said was but a child, not to be counted a woman: quoth the collector, that will I soone wit, and taking the mayden, and turned her vp to search whether she were vnder growne with haire or not, (for in many places they made the like triall) whereupon her mother cried out, neighbours came running in: and her husband being at worke in the same towne, tyling of an house, when he heard therof, caught his lathing staffe in his hand, and ranne reaking home, where reasoning with the Collector, who made him so bold, the Collector answered with stout wordes, and strake at the Tylar, whereupon the Tylar auoiding the blow, smote the Collector with his lathing staffe, that the braines flew out of his head, wherethrough great noyse arose in the streetes, and the poore people being glad, euery one prepared to support the said Iohn Tylar. Thus the Commons being drawne together, went to Maidstone, and from thence backe againe to Blacke heath, and so in short time they stirred all the Countrey, in a manner to the like commotion, and forthwith besetting the waies that lead to Canterbury, arrest all passengers, compelling them to sweare: first, that they should keepe their allegiance vnto king Richard, and to the Commons, and that they should accept no king that was named Iohn, for enuy they bare vnto Iohn Duke of Lancaster, who named himselfe king of Castile, and that they should be ready whensoeuer they were called, and that they should agree to no Tare to be leuied from thencefoorth in the kingdome, nor consent to any except it were a fifténe.

Rochester Castell besieged, prisoner set out.

The Commons went to Canterbury, and sware the Maior to the king & them.

Lib. S. Albones.

Iohn Tylar of Dartford slew one of the Collectors of money.

The fame of these doings spread into Sussex, Hertforde, Essex, and Cambridgshires, Norfolke, Suffolke, &c. and when such assembling of the common people daily toke increase, and that their number was nowe made

made almost infinite, so that they feared no man to resist them, they beganne to shewe some such Actes as they had considered in their mindes, and tooke in hande to behead all men of Lawe, as well Apprentises, as Vtter-barristers and old Justices, with all the Iurers of the countrey, whom they might get into their hands, they spared none whom they thought to be learned, especially if they found any to haue pen and inke, they pulled off his hoode, and all with one voice of crying, Hale him out, and cut off his head.

Justices, Lawyers and Iurers beheaded.

They also determined to burne all Court rolles and olde monuments that the memory of antiquities being taken away, their Lordes should not be able to chalenge any right on them, from that time forth. These Commons had to their Chapleine or Preacher a wicked Priest, called Sir Iohn Ball, who counsailed them to destroy all the Nobility, and Cleargy, so that there should bee no Bishop in England, but one Archbishoppe, which should be himselfe, and that there should not bee aboue two religious persons in one house, and their possessions should bee deuided among the laye men, for the which doctrine they held him as a prophet. They going towardes London met diuers Lawyers, and twelue Knights of that countrey, whom they forced to sweare to maintaine them, or else to be beheaded: this beeing knowne to the King, on Wednesday following hee sent messengers to demaund the cause of their rising. Who answered, that they were gathered together for his safety, to destroy those that were traitors to him and his kingdome: the king by messengers replied, that they should cease their assemblies vntill hee mought speake with them, and all matters should be amended. Whereupon the Commons requested the King to come and see them on the Blacke heath, and the King the third time sent word that hee would willingly come to them the next day. At what time the King beeing at Windsore remoued in all haste to London, whom the Maior met, and safely brought to the Tower, whither the Archbishoppe of Canterburie Chancellor, the Bishoppe of London, the Prior of Saint Iohn Treasurer, the Earles of Buckingham, Kent, Arundale, Marwicke, Suffolke, Orford, and Salisbury, and other of the Nobility, and Gentlemen to the number of fiue hundred did come, and on Corpus Christi eeue the Commons of Kent came to blacke heath, three miles from London, to meete with the King, hauing displayed before them two Banners of Saint George, and threescore Penons. The Commons of Esser came on the other parte of the riuer Thames, to haue also aunswere from the king, at what time the king beeing in the Tower, commaunded barges to bee made ready, and taking with him his Counsell, and foure barges for his retinue, was rowed to Greenewich, where the Chancellor and Treasurer perswaded the King that it were great follie to goe to a number of men without reason, and thereupon hee staide. The Commons therefore sent to him, requiring to haue the heades of Iohn Duke of Lancaster, and fiftéene other Lordes, whereof fourtéene were present with him in the Tower, to wit, Simon Sudburie Chancellor, Sir Robert Hales Treasurer,

Lib. Eborum.

Sir Iohn Bal a wicked priest, Chaplein to the rebels.

The king sent messengers to the rebels, to demaũd of them the cause of their rising.

King Richard came to the Tower of London.

The Commõs of Kent came to the blacke heath.

The commons of Esser came also on the other side the Thames.

surer, the Bishoppe of London, Iohn Fordham Clearke of the priuie Seale, Robert Belknape chiefe Iustice, sir Ralph Ferers, sir Robert Plessington chiefe Baron of the Exchequer, Iohn Legge Sergeant at armes, Thomas Bampton and others, whereunto the king would not assent, but willed them to come to him to Windsor, on Monday next, where they should haue sufficient answere to all their demaunds. The Commons had a watch-word, which was this: With whom holde you: and the answere was, with king Richard, and the true Commons, and who could not that watch-word, off went his head. The king beeing warned that if he came to the Commons, hee should be caried about by them, & forced to grant them their requests whatsoeuer, hee returned toward London and entred the Tower, about three of the clock: The Commons being certified that the king was gone, they on the same day toward euening came to Southwarke, where they brake downe the houses of the Marshalsey, and loosed the prisoners, amongst other they brake downe the house of Iohn Inworth then Marshal of the Marshalsey, the kings Bench, & all the houses of ỳ Iurers, & Quest-mongers, continuing that outrage all the night: At what time the Commons of Essex went to Lambeth a Manor of the Archbishop of Canterbury, entred the house, spoyled and brent all the goods with the bookes, registers, and remembrances of the Chancery. The next day beeing Thursday, and the feast of Corpus Christi, or the 13. of June; the Commons of Essex in the morning went to the Manor of Highbery two miles from London north, this Manor belonging to the Prior of Saint Iohn of Ierusalem, they wholy consumed with fire. On which day also in the morning the Commons of Kent brake downe the stew-houses nere Londō bridge, at that time in the hands of the frowes of Flaunders, who had farmed them of the Maior of London. After which they went to London bridge, in hope to haue entred the Citie: but the Maior comming thither before, fortified the place, caused the bridge to be drawn vp, and fastened a great chaine of yron a crosse, to restraine their entrie. Then the Commons of Surrey, who were risen with the other, cried to the wardens of the bridge to let it downe, whereby they mought passe, or else they would destroy them all, wherby they were constrained for feare to let it down, & giue them entry, at which time the religious persons were earnest in procession, and prayer for peace: the Commons passed through the Citie, and did no hurt, they take nothing from any man, but bought all things at a iust price: and if they found any man with theft, they beheaded him. Now talking with the simple Commons, of procuring them liberty, and apprehending traitors (as they termed them) especially the Duke of Lancaster, they shortly got all the poore Citizens to conspire with them: and the same day, after the sunne was got on some height that it wared warme, and that they had tasted at their pleasures of diuers Wines, whereby they were become as madde, as drunken (for the rich Citizens had set open their sellers to enter at their pleasure) they began to talke of many things, amongst the which they exhorted each other, that going to the Sauoy, the Duke of Lancasters house, to the which there was none in the

Watchword of the Commons.

The Commons of Kent came into Southwarke, brake vp the prisons.

The Commons of Essex spoyled the Archbishops house at Lambeth.

The Commons of Essex brent the Manor of Highbury.

The Commons of Kent brake downe the Stewes.

The Commons entred the Citie of London.

The religious were in prayer and procession.

The Commons passed through the Citie and did no harme.

If they tooke any with theft they beheaded him, but being drunken they brent the Sauoy, but reserued nothing to themselues.

Realme to be compared in beauty and ſtatelineſſe, they mought ſet fire on it, and burne it; this talke pleaſing the Commons of the Citie, they ſtraight ranne thither, and ſetting fire on it round about applied their trauaile, to deſtroy that place: and that it mought appeare to the communalty of the realme, that they did not any thing for couetiſe, they cauſed Proclamation to be made, that none on paine to loſe his head, ſhould preſume to conuert to his owne vſe any thing that there was, or mought bee found, but that they ſhould breake ſuch plate and veſſell of gold and ſiluer, as were in that houſe in great plenty, into ſmall peeces, and throw the ſame into the Thames, or into ſome priuies; clothes of gold, ſiluer, ſilke, & veluet, they ſhould teare; rings, and Iewels ſet with precious ſtones, they ſhoulde bruſe in mortars, that the ſame mought be to no vſe, &c. And ſo was it done. Henry Knighton writeth, that when the rebelles brent the Sauoy, one of them (contrary to the Proclamation) toke a goodly ſiluer peece and hid it in his boſome, but an other that eſpied him, tolde his fellowes, who forthwith hurled him and the peece of plate into the fire, ſaying, we be zealous of truth and iuſtice, and not theeues, or robbers. After this they getting a rich garment of the Dukes (commonly called a Jacke, or Jackquit) ſetting it on a ſpeares point, for a marke, they ſhot at it with their bowes and arrowes, but when they coulde that way doe it little hurte, they toke it downe, and laying it on the ground, with their ſwordes and axes they all to broke it. To the number of two and thirtie of thoſe rebels entred a ſeller of the Sauoy, where they dranke ſo much of ſweet Wines, that they were not able to come out in time, but were ſhut in with wood and ſtones that mured vp the doore, where they were heard crying and calling ſeuen daies after, but none came to helpe them out till they were dead.

H. Knighton.

The Commons burnt one of their fellowes.

H. Knighton. More then xxx. rebels mured vp in a ſeller.

In this meane time the Commons of Kent brake vp the Fléet, and let the priſoners goe where they would: they deſtroyed and brent many houſes, and defaced the beauty of Fléteſtréete: from thence they went to the Temple to deſtroy it, and plucked downe the houſes, tooke off the tyles of the other buildinges left, went to the Church, toke out all the bookes, and remembraunces that were in hutches of the prentiſes of the Lawe, caried them into the high ſtréete, and there brent them; this houſe they ſpoyled for wrath they bare to the Pryor of Saint Iohns, vnto whom it belonged: after a number of them had ſacked this Temple, what with labour, and what with Wine, béing ouercome, they lay downe vnder the walles, and houſing, and were ſlayne like ſwine, one of them killing an other for olde grudge and hatred, and others alſo made quicke diſpatch of them. A number of them that burnt the Temple, went from thence towarde the Sauoy, deſtroying all the houſes that belonged to the Hoſpitall of Saint Iohn: and after they went to the place of the Biſhop of Cheſter, by the Strand, where Iohn Fordham remained elect of Durham, they entred his ſeller, rouling out the tunnes of Wine, drinking exceſſiuely, not dooing any more harme. Then they went

Tho. Walſing. Priſon of the Fleete broken vp, many houſes in Fleet-ſtreet burnt, they ſpoyled the Temple, and burned the records or remembrances of the Law.

The rebels murder one another.

The rebels dranke vp the wine at Cheſters Inne by the Strand, and burnt the

houses of questmongers, made spoyle of what their fellowes had left in the Sauoy.

towards the Sauoy, burning many houses of questmongers. At the last they came to the Sauoy, brake the gates, entered the house, came to the warrope, toke out all the torches they could finde, which they set a fire, and with them brent all the feather beddes, couerlets (where of one with armes was estemed worth 1000. markes) and all other goods that they might finde, with the houses, and buildings belonging thereunto, which were left by the Commons of the Citie of London. And (as it was saide) they found three barrels of gunne powder, which they thought had bene golde, or siluer, those they cast into the fire, which more sodainly then they thought, blew vp the Hall, destroyed the houses and almost themselues: from thence they went to Westminster, burned diuers houses, and amongst other the house of Iohn Buterwike vnder-Shriue of Midlesex, they brake the prison at Westminster, and returned to London by Holborne, and before the Church of Saint Sepulchre, burnt the house of Simon the Hostiler and others, they brake the prison of Newgate, let forth the prisoners, &c.

The Rebels went to Westminster and burned many houses.

Prison of Newgate broken vp. Roger Legat beheaded in Cheape, and xviii. more in other places.

The same Thursday, the said Commons went to Saint Martins le Grand in London, and toke from the high Altar in that Church one Roger Legat chiefe sisar (or questmonger) led him into Cheape, and cut off his head: at that time also they beheaded xviii. in diuers places of the Citie. During which time diuers of the Commons went vnto the Tower, there to haue spoken with the king, but could not be heard, wherefore they besieged the Tower on that side towardes Saint Katherines. The other Commons that were in the Citie went to the Hospitall of Saint Iohn, and by the way burnt the house of Roger Legat lately beheaded, they burnt all the howses belonging to Saint Iohns, and then brent the fayre Priory of the Hospitall of Saint Iohn, causing the same to burne by the space of seuen daies after. At what time the King being in a Turret of the Tower, and seeing the mannours of Sauoy, the Priory of Saint Iohns Hospitall, and other houses on fire, he demaunded of his counsell what was best to doe in that extremitie, but none of them could counsaile in that case. The King there in a Tower towards Saint Katherines made Proclamation that all people should depart to their homes peaceably, and he would pardon them all their trespasses: but they with one voice cried, they would not goe before they had the traitors within the Tower, and charters to free them from all seruice, and of other matters which they would demaund: this the King granted, and caused a Clearke to write in their presence as followeth.

Tower of London besieged.

All the howses of common iurers burnt. Hospitall of Saint Iohn by Smithfield burnt.

The kings proclamation.

The kings. Charter to the Commons.

Richard King of England and of Fraunce, doth greatly thanke his good Commons, because they so greatly desire to see and hold him for their king, and doth pardon to them all manner of trespasses, misprisons, and felonies done before this time, and willeth and commaundeth from hence forth, that euery one hasten to his owne dwelling, and set downe all his grieuances in writing, and send it vnto him, and he will by aduise of his lawfull Lordes, and good counsell prouide such remedy as shall be profitable to him, to them, and to the whole Realme. Whereunto he set his signet in their presence, and

sent

sent it vnto them by two knights, one of them standing vp in a chaire aboue the rest, that euery one might heare. During which time the king remained in the Tower, to his great griefe, for when the Commons heard the writing, they said it was but a mockery, and therefore returned to London, proclaymming through the Citie, that all the men of Lawe, all they of the Chancery, and of the Exchequer, and all that could make any writ, or letter, should be beheaded whereseuer they might be found. The whole number of the common people, were at that time deuided into three parts, of the which one part was attending to destroy the manno^r of Highbery, and other places belonging to the Prior of Saint Iohn: Another company lay at the Miles ende East of the Citie: The third kept at the Tower hill, there to spoyle the king of such victuals as were brought towards him. The company assembled on the Miles end, sent to commaund the king, that he should come to them without delay, vnarmed, or without any force, which if he refused to doe, they would surely pull downe the Tower, neither should hee escape aliue; who taking counsell of a few, by seuen of the Clocke the king rode to the Miles-end, with his mother in a whirlicote or chariot as we now terme it, & the Earles of Buckingham, Kent, Warwicke, and Orford, Sir Thomas Percie, Sir Robert Knowles, and the Maior of London, with diuers other knights, and Esquires, Sir Aubery de Vere bare the kings sword. Thus with a few vnarmed, the king went towards the rebels in great feare: and so the gates of the Tower being set open, a great multitude of them entred the same. There was the same time in the Tower 600. warlike men furnished with armour and weapon, expert men in armes, and 600. archers, all which did quaile in stomacke. For the baset of the ruffickes, not many together, but euery one by himselfe, durst presume to enter the kings chamber, or his mothers, with their weapons, to put in feare each of the men of warre, knights or other: many of them came into the kings priuy chamber, and plaid the wantons, in sitting, lying and sporting them on the kings bed: and that more is, inuited the kings mother to kisse with them, yet durst none of those men of warre (strange to be said) once withstand them: they came in and out like maskers, that in times past were slaues of most vile conditiō. Whilest therfore these ruffickes sought the Archbishop with terrible noyse and fury running vp and downe, at length finding one of his seruants, they charge him to bring them where his master was, whom they named traitor, which seruant daring do none other, brought them to the Chappell; where, after Masse had beene said, and hauing receiued the communion, the Archbishop was busie in his praiers, for not vnknowing of their comming and purpose, hee had passed the last night in confessing of his sinnes, and in deuout praiers. When therfore he heard they were come, with great constancie he said to his men, Let vs now goe, surely it is best to die, when it is no pleasure to liue, and with that the tormentors entring, cried, Where is the traitor? The Archbishop answered, behold, I am the Archbishop whom you seeke, not a traitor. They therfore laid handes on him, and drew him out of the Chappell, they drew him out of the Tower gates, to the Tower hill, where being compassed about with many thousands, and seeing swords

Proclamation by the Commons in London.

The rebels commaund the king, and he going to them on the Miles end.

Whirlicote.

The rebels enter the Tower

Archbishop fetcht out of the Tower.

swords about his head drawne in excessiue number, threatning to him death, he said vnto them thus: what is it deare brethren you purpose to doe, what is mine offence committed against you, for which ye will kill me, you were best to take heede, that if I be killed, who am your pastor, there come not on you, the indignation of the iust reuenger, or at the least, for such a fact all England be put vnder interdiction: he could vnneath pronounce these words, before they cryed out with an horrible noyse, that they neither feared the interdiction, nor the Pope to be aboue them. The Archbishop seeing death at hand, with comfortable words, as he was an eloquent man, and wise, beyond all wise men of the realme; lastly, after forgiuenes graunted to the executioner that should behead him, he kneeling downe offered his necke to him that should strike it off, being striken in the necke, but not deadly, he putting his hand to his necke, said thus, a ha, it is the hand of God, he had not remoued his hand from the place, where the payne was, but that being sodainly striken, his fingers ends being cut off, and part of the arteries, he fell downe, but yet he died not, till being mangled with 8. strokes in the necke, and in the head, he fulfilled most worthy martyrdome. There lay his body vnburied all that Friday, and the morrow till afternoone, none daring to deliuer his body to the sepulture, his head these wicked tooke, and nayling thereon his hoode, they fixe it on a pole, and set it on London Bridge, in place where before stood the head of Sir Iohn Minstarworth. This Archbishop Simon Tibald alias Sudbury, sonne to Nicholas Tibald gentleman, borne in the towne of Sudbury in Suffolke, Doctour of both lawes, was 18. yeares Bishop of London, in the which time he builded a goodly Colledge, in place where his fathers house stoode, and indued it with great possessions, and furnished the same with secular Clerkes and other ministers, valued at the suppression 122. pound. 18. shillings in lands by yeare. He builded the vpper end of S. Gregories Church at Sudbury. After being translated to the Archbishoprick of Canterbury, in *An.* 1375. he reedified the walles of that Citie, from the West gate (which he builded) to the North gate, which had been destroyed by the Danes before the conquest of William the bastard. He was slaine as ye haue heard, and afterwards buried in the Cathedral Church of Canterbury. There died with him Sir Robert Hales a most valiant knight, Lord of S. Iohns and treasurer of England, and Iohn Legge one of the Kings seriants at armes, and a Franciscan Frier, named William Apledore the Kings Confessour. Richard Lions also a famous lapidary or goldsmith, late one of the Sherifs of London, was drawne out of his house and beheaded in Cheape. There were that day beheaded manie as well Flemings as Englishmen for no cause, but to fulfill the cruelties of the rude Commons: for it was a solemne pastime to them, if they could take any that was not sworne to them, to take from such a one his hoode with their accustomed clamour, and forth with to behead him: neither did they shew any reuerence vnto sacred places, for in the very Churches did they kill whom they had in hatred, they fetcht 13. Flemings out of the Augustine Friers church in London, and 17. out of another church, and 32. in the Mintre, and so forth in other places of the Citie, & in Southwarke, al which they beheaded, except they

Archbishop of Canterburie cruelly beheaded.

Colledge at Sudburie founded.

Prior of Saint Johns beheaded.

Iefferey Thaucer in the tale of the Nunnes Priest.

Flemings beheaded.

they could plainly pronounce bread and chéese, for if their speech sounded any thing on brot, or cawse, off went their heads, as a sure marke they were Flemings.

The King comming to the Miles-end, the place before recited, was sore afraide, beholding the wood commons, who with froward countenance required many things which they before had put in writtings to be confirmed by the Kings letters patents.

The 1. that all men should be frée from seruitude and bondage, so as from thencefoorth there should be no bondmen.

The 2. that he should pardon all men of what estate soeuer, all maner actions and insurrections committed, and all maner treasons, felonies, transgressions and extortions, by any of them done, and to graunt them peace.

The 3. that al men from thencefoorth might be infranchised to buy and sell in euery Countie, Citie, borough-town, faire, market, and other place within the Realme of England.

The 4. that no acre of land holden in bondage or seruice, should be holden, but for 4. pence, and if it had béen holden for lesse afore time, it should not hereafter be inhaunsed.

These and many other things they required: moreouer they tolde him, he had béen euilly gouerned til that day, but from that time he must be gouerned otherwise.

The King perceiuing he could not escape except he graunted to their request, yeelded to the same. And because the Chancelor was beheaded, the King made the Earle of Arundale for the time Chancelor, and képer of the great seale, and also made diuers Clarkes to write Charters, patents, and protections graunted to the Commons, for the foresaid matters, without taking fine, for the seale, or writing thereof; and so toward euen, the King craning licence departed from them. The next day being Saterday and the 15. of June, a great number of the Commons came to the abbey of Westminster, and there found Iohn Inworth Marshall of the Marshalsey, and maister of the prisoners there, imbracing a marble pillar of Saint Edwards shrine for his defence, against his enemies, they plucked his armes from the piller, and led him into cheape, where they cut off his head. In which time they toke out of Bredstréete one Iohn Greenfild, led him into cheape, & cut off his head, notwithstanding that the King had at this time made proclamation through the Citie, that euery one should peaceably goe into his countrey, without doing further euill, whereunto they would not assent. The same day after dinner, about two of the clocke, the King went from the Wardrobe, called the Royall in London toward Westminster, attended on by the number of 200. persons, to visit Saint Edwards shrine, and to see if the Commons had done any mischiefe there: The Abbot and conent of that abbey, with the Chanons and vicars of Saint Stephens Chappell, met him in rich Copes, with procession, and led him by the charnell house into the abbey, then to the Church, and so to the high altar, where hee deuoutely prayed, and offered. After which he spake with the Anchore, to whom hee confessed him selfe, then hee went

Eſſex men returned homeward.

Iohn Inworth Marshall of the Marshalsey beheaded.

Iohn Greenfild beheaded.

King Richard went to Westminster, and was there receiued with Procession.

to

Our Lady in the pewe. The King and the commons was in Smithfield.

to the Chapell called our Lady in the pewe, where he made his prayers: Which being done, the King made proclamation, that all the commons of the countrey, that were in London should méete him in Smithfield, which was done accordingly, and when the King was come with his people, he stode towards the East, nére to Saint Bartilmewes priory, and the commons towards the West in forme of battayle. The King therefore sent to them, to shew them that their fellowes the Essex men were gone from thencefoorth to liue in peace, and that he would graunt to them the like forme of peace, if it would please them to accept thereof. Their chiefe Captaine named Wat Tyler of Maidstone, he I say being a crafty fellow, of an excellent wit, but lacking grace, answered, that peace he desired, but with conditions to his liking, minding to fede the King with faire words, till the next day, that he might in ỹ night haue compassed his peruerse purpose, for they thought ẽ same night to haue spoyled the citie, the King first being slaine, and the great Lords that cleaued to him, and to haue burnt the Citie, by setting fire in foure parts thereof, but God that resisteth the proude, did sodainely disappoint him. For where the forme of peace was in thrée seuerall Charters written, and thrice sent to him, none of them could please him: wherefore at length the King sent to him one of his Knights called Sir Iohn Newton, not so much to command as to intreate him (for his pride was well ynough knowen) to come and talke with him about his owne demands, to haue them put in his charter, of the which demands, I will put one in this Chronicle, that it may the more plainely appeare, the other to be contrary to reason. First, he would haue a commission for him and his, to behead all Lawyers, escheters, and other whatsoeuer, that were learned in the law, & communicated with the law, by reason of their office, for he had conceiued in his mind that this being brought to passe, all things afterward should be ordered according to the fancy of the common people: and indéede it was said, that with great pride, he had but the day before said, putting his hand to his lips, that before 4. dayes came to end, all the lawes of England should procéede from his mouth. When Sir Iohn Newton was in hand with him for dispatch, he answered with indignation, if thou art so hasty, thou maiest get thée backe againe to thy master, I will come when it pleaseth me: notwithstanding he followed on horsebacke a slow pace, and by the way there came to him a dublet maker of London, named Iohn Ticle, who had brought to the commons 60. dublets which they bought and ware, for the which dublets he demaunded 30. markes, but could haue no paiment, Wat Tiler answered him, friend appease thy selfe, thou shalt be well paid or this day be ended, kéepe thée nére me, I wil be thy creditor: And therewith he spurred his horse, departed from his company, and came so nére the King, that his horse head touched the crope of the Kings horse, and the first word he said was this, Sir King, séest thou all ponder people? yea truely quoth the King, wherefore saist thou so? because said he, they be all at my commaundement, and haue sworne to me faith and troth, to doe all that I will haue them. In good time said the King, I will well it be so. Then said Wat Tyler, beléeuest thou King, that these people, and as many moe as be in London at my commaundement,

Sir Iohn Newton sent to Wat Tiler.

Pride of Wat Tiler.

Wat Tiler his answere to the dublet-maker.

Wat Tiler his words to the King.

maundement, will depart from thée thus, without hauing thy letters? no said the King, ye shall haue them, they be ordeyned for you, and shall be deliuered to euery each of them, with which words, Wat Tylar séeing the Knight Sir Iohn Newton nére to him on horsebacke, bearing the Kings sworde, was offended and said, it had become him better to be on foote in his presence. The Knight (not hauing forgot his old accustomed manhood) answered, that it was no harme, séeing himselfe was also on horsebacke: which words so offended Wat, that he drew his dagger, and offered to strike at the Knight, calling him traytor: the Knight answered, that he lyed, and drew his dagger likewise. Wat Tylar not suffering such a contumely done to him before his rusticks, made as if he would haue runne on the Knight. The King therefore séeing the Knight in danger, to asswage the rigor of Wat, for the time, commaunded the Knight to light on foote, and to deliuer his dagger vnto the said Walter, and when his proud minde could not so be pacified, but he would also haue his sword, the Knight answered, it was the Kings sword, and quoth he, thou art not worthy to haue it, nor thou durst aske it of me, if here were no more but thou and I. By my faith said Wat Tiler, I shall neuer eate till I haue thy head, and would haue run on the Knight: and with that came to the King, William Walworth, Maior of London, and many Knights and Esquires on the Kings side, affirming that it were great shame, such as had not béen heard of, if in their presence, they should permit a noble Knight so shamefully to be murdered before his face, wherefore he ought to be rescued spéedily, and Tiler to be arrested. Which thing being heard, the King, although he were but tender of yéeres, taking boldnesse vnto him, commaunded the Maior of London to set hand on him. The Maior being of an incomparable boldnesse and manhode, without any doubting, straight arrested him on ỹ head, Wat Tighler furiously strake the Maior with his dagger, but hurte him not by meane he was armed, then the Maior drew his baselard, and grieuously wounded Wat in the necke, and gaue him a great blow on the head, in which conflicte, an esquire of the Kings house, called Iohn Cauendish, drew his sworde and wounded him twise or thrise, euen vnto death, and Wat spurring his horse, cried to the commons to reuenge him, his horse bare him about foure score foote from thence where he fell downe halfe dead, and by and by they which attended on the King, inuironed him all about, whereby he was not séene of his company, and other thrust him in with their weapons in diuers places of his body, and then they drewe him from amongst the peoples féete into the hospitall of Saint Bartilmewe: which when the commons perceiued, they cryed out that their Captaine was trapterously slaine, and hartening one another to reuenge his death, bending their bowes, the King, shewing both wisedome and courage, pricking his horse with the spurs, rode to them, and said: What a worke is this my men, what meane you to do, will you shoote at your King? be not quarelous, nor sory for the death of a traytor and ribald: I will be your King, I am your Captaine and leader, follow me into the field, there to haue whatsoeuer you will require.

Wat Tilar to Sir Iohn Newton who did beare the Kings sword.

William Walworth Maior of London arested Wat Tylar and wounded him.

Li S. Mary Eborum.

Iohn Cauendish slew Wat Tylar.

Henry Knitton.

This the King did, least the commons being set in a bitternesse of minde should

should set fire on the houses in Smithfield, where their Captaine was slaine. They therefore followed him into the open fielde, and the souldiers that were with him, as yet not knowing whether they would kill the King, or be in rest and depart home with the Kings Charter.

The Maior of London rayseth a power, and rescued the King.

In the meane time the Maior of London onely with one seruant, riding spedily into the Citie, began to cry, ye good Citizens helpe your King, that is to be murdered, and succour me your Maior that am in the like daunger, or if you will not succour me, yet leaue not your King destitute, when the Citizens had heard this, in those hearts the loue of the King was ingrafted, sodainely, seemely arayed, to the number of a thousand men tarried in the streetes for some one of the Knights to lead them to the King, and by fortune Sir Robert Knowles came in that instant, whom they all requested to be their leader, least comming out of order, and not in good aray they mought easely be broken: who gladly brought part of them, Sir Parducase Dalbart, and other Knights brought the rest to the Kings presence. When the Maior came to Smithfield and did not finde Wat Tyghlar, (as hee left him wounded) hee greatly maruayled, demaunding where the traytor was, and it was tolde him that he was carried into the Hospitall of Saint Bartilmewe, and laid in the Maisters Chamber, the Maior went straight thither and made him to bee carried into Smithfield, and there caused him to bee beheaded, his head to bee set on a pole, and borne before him to the King then remayning in the field, and the King caused it to be borne nere vnto him, therewith to abash the Commons, greatly thanking the Maior for that acte.

Record. R. 2.

Wat Tilar beheaded by commaundement of the Maior.

The King, and those that were with him, Knights and Esquiers, reioycing of the vnhoped for comming of the Maior, and those armed men, sodainly compassed all the multitude of the Commons.

There might a man haue seene a wonderfull change of Gods right hand, how the Commons did nowe throw downe their weapons, and fall to the ground, beseeching pardon, which lately before did glory that they had the Kings life in their power, now they hide themselues in caues, ditches, cornefieldes, &c. The Knights therefore coueting to be reuenged, besought the King to permit them to take off the heads of an hundred or two of them, but the King not condescending to their request, commaunded the charter which they had demaunded, written and sealed, to be deliuered vnto them for the time, to auoyde more mischiefe, knowing that Essex was not as yet pacified, nor Kent clayde, the commons and ruffickes of which Countreyes were readie to rise agayne, if he satisfied not their pleasure the sooner. The tenour of which Charter, in my larger Chronicle is set downe. The Commons hauing got this Charter departed home, but ceased not from their former euill doings.

William Walworth Maior of London knighted, the other how.

The rude people being thus dispersed and gone, the King commaunded William Walworth to put a basenet on his head, for feare of that which might follow, and the Maior requested to know for what cause he should so doe, sith all was quieted, the King answered, that he was much bound to him, and

therefore

therefore, he should be made Knight, the Maior againe answered, that he was not worthy, neither able to take such estate vpon him, for he was but a Merchant, and to liue by his merchandise, notwithstanding at the last, the King made him put on his basenet, and then toke a sword with both his hands, and strongly with a good will strake him on the necke, and the same day he made three other Citizens Knights for his sake in the same place, which were Iohn Philpot, Nicholas Brembar, and Robert Laund Aldermen, and Sir Iohn Candish in Smithfield was Knighted. The King gaue to Sir William Walworth 100. pound land, and to the other 40. pound land, to them and their heires for euer: vpon the sand-hill towards Islesdoune were created the Earls Marshall, and Pembroke, and shortly after Nickolas Twisford, and Adam Francis Aldermen, were also made Knights. Sir Robert Knowles, for his good seruice in the Citie, was by the Kings commaundement made a free man of the Citie.

Aldermen of London knighted.

Earles created.

Aldermen Knighted.

The King with his Lords and all his company, orderly entred into the Citie of London with great ioy. The King went to the Lady Princesse his mother, who was then lodged in the Towre royall called the Quenes Wardrobe, and there she had remayned two dayes and two nights right sore abashed, but when she saw the King her sonne, she was greatly reioyced, and said. Ah fayre sonne, what great sorrow haue I suffred for you this day? The king answered, and said, certainely Madame, I know it well, but nowe reioyce and thanke God, for I haue this day recouered mine heritage, and the Realme of England, which I had nere hand lost.

The Towre royall in London.

The Archbishops head was taken downe off the Bridge, and Wat Tilers head was set in that place.

Ouerlong it were in this booke to set downe the troubles at Saint Albons, by the bond men there against the Abbot, and other, for liberties which they claymed, as the like did in other places, committing many abominable acts, but somewhat to speake of them within the parts of Suffolke and Norfolke.

The Saterday wherof we haue before spoken, that the tempest might seeme to be generall, God sent his wrath into the partes of Suffolke and Northfolke, by sending Euer men to moue the people that liued in quietnesse, to raise like commotions, and to turne the hearts of the bondemen or seruants against their Lords. The which making to their Captaine a most vngratious priest named Iohn Wraw, who had been at London the day before, and was instructed by Wat Tiler, easily assembled a multitude of those common people. These according to the manner of them at London, ouerthrew houses and manors of great men and of Lawyers, slew the Students of the Lawe, and catching Sir Iohn Cauendish a Iustice of the Realme, some say Lord chief iustice, beheaded him, and set his head on the pillory in the towne of Bury, Sir Iohn of Cambridge, Prior of Bury, they caught and strooke off his head, his body was left naked in the field the space of fiue dayes, none presuming to burie it, for feare of the Rustickes, his head was set on the pillory by the head of Sir Iohn Cauendish. Then entred they the Cloyster of the monasterie toke Sir Iohn Lakingnith keeper of the Baronie, hailed him out with great

Iohn Wraw Captaine in Suffolke and Norfolke.

Sir Iohn Cauendish Lord chiefe Iustice, the Prior of Bury and other beheaded by the rebels.

noyse,

noyse, in the Market place they stroke off his head with eight strokes, and set it on the Pillory, they compelled the Monkes that remained, (for their Abbot Edmond Bromfield was in prison at Nottingham) to graunt them Charters, &c.

John Litistar of Norwich.

No small multitude of Commons being gotte together vnder the leading of a certaine Dyer of Norwich, called Iohn Litistar, beganne to worke such mastrie as in other places had bẽn put in practise, putting their hands vnto robbery, so that no place might be frée from them: they thought to haue got to them William de Vffard Earle of Suffolke, that they might doe their businesse vnder colour of his authoritie, but the Earle being warned of their comming, sodainely rose from Supper, and taking his iourney through Woodes and desarts came to Saint Albons, and from thence to the King, fayning himselfe to bee the Lackey of Sir Roger de Boys, and bearing a Wallet behinde him. The Commons thus deceiued, forthwith seased vpon the houses of other Knights, and finding them, compelled them to be sworne to ride through the Countrey with them, which if they had denied they had died for it.

Will. Vffird Earl: of Suffolke, lackey to Sir Roger de Boys.

The Knights that were thus compelled, were the Lord Schales, Sir William Morley, Sir Iohn de Brues, Sir Steuen de Hales, Sir Robert de Sale, which Sir Robert blaming their doings, was smitten into the brayne by one of his bondemen. The other perceiuing that they must dissemble, or dye a shamefull death, determined to say all things was well. Whereupon being brought in fauour with Litistar, (who named himselfe King of the Commons) chose Syr Steuen Hales (because hee was a comely Knight) to carue before him, and to take the assay of his meates, and to the other he appoynted other offices.

Sir Robert Sale, slaine by the bondmen.

John Litistar King of the commons, and serued by Knights.

Now the Commons sent two Knights, Sir William de Morley, and Sir Iohn Brewes with three of the Commons in whom they especially trusted, vnto the King at London, or els where, for to purchase of him a Charter of manumission and pardon, the which that it might be more speciall then other, they deliuered vnto the said messengers a great summe of money, which they had receiued of the Citizens of Norwich vnder pretext to saue their citie from burning and murder. The Knights with their companions, when they came to a Towne named Ignigham, not farre distant from Newmarket, they met with the Bishop of Norwich Sir Henry Spencer well armed, for as he was at his manor of Burley, nére to Oeham Castle, not farre from Stamford, he heard of the Norfolke men, and determined to goe against them, he had not at that time past an 8. speares, and a small number of archers, yet beholding the Knights, and some of the Commons, he commaunded them vpon their allegeaunce to tel him, if there were any of the Kings traytors. The Knights for feare of the Commons, dissembled to answere, the Bishop willed them boldely to goe to, and if there were any of the Kings traytors, to deliuer them to him: the Knights taking courage, answered that two of the chiefest stirrers among the whole company were present, and that the third was gone forth to prouide their dinner, herewith they shewed the cause of their iourney.

Boldnes of the B. of Norwich.

Burley belonging to the Bishop of Norwich.

iourney. The Bishop straightwayes commanded these two to lose their heads, and the third he himselfe went to seeke, whose head also he caused to be cut off, & their heads were set vp at Newmarket. Then the Bishop with the Knights hasted towards Norfolke, meaning to come to a place called Northwalsham, where the Commons were determined to stay for the Kings answere.

In passing the countrey the Bishops number increased, for diuers Knights and many gentlemen of the countrey that lay hid for feare of the Commons, seeing the Bishop in armour, they ranne forth and ioyned with him. The Bishop therefore when he came to the said place, hauing about him a seemely company, he found that the Commons had entrenched themselues after the manner of warre, and had set vpon the rampier of their trench, windowes, doores, tables, bordes, with pales for their defence: behind them, they had placed their carts, as if they meant not to flee, and forthwith the Martiall Bishop commanded his trumpets to sound and taking a speare in his hand, set spurs to his horse, and is caried forth vpon them with such a courage, that with swift race he gate the trench of them, and as he had bin a foming bore rode amongst his enemies where they were thickest, striking this man through, and felling that man downe, and ceassed not till the company following hauing got the trench were ready to fight, those of the Bishops retinue therefore fought very sharpely, and so likewise did the Commons, till at length the Commons flee, but the Bishop stopped them, knocking them downe, till the chiefe stirrers of the tumult being taken with their King Iohn Litistar, (so many as pleased him being saued aliue) he got the full victorie. The Bishop brought the said Iohn Litistar vnto drawing, hanging, and heading: and so the country was in peace. The end of Iohn Litistar.

Thus hauing shewed a few things which were done in Norfolke, I passe ouer to write of the rest done in that and other countries, but what they ment against the King, the confession of Iacke Straw declareth, who was chiefe amongst them, next to Wat Tiler. This man being taken, when at London he should by iudgement giuen by the Maior, lose his head; the Maior spake openly to him thus. Iohn (quoth he) behold thy death is at hand without all doubt, and there is no way through which thou mayest hope to escape, wherefore for thy soules health, without making any lye, tell vs what you purposed amongst you to haue done, to what ende did you assemble the Commons? And when he had staide a while as doubtfull, what to say, deferring his answere, the Maior added, Thou knowest surely, O Iohn, that the thing which I demaunde of thee, if thou doe it, the same shall redounde to thy soules health, &c. He therefore animated with fayre promises, beganne as followeth. Iacke Straw his confession at the gallowes to the Maior and others.

Now saith he, it boteth not to lye, neither is it lawful to vtter any vntruth, especially vnderstanding that my soule is to suffer more strayter tormentes if I should so doe, and because I hope for two commodities by speaking the truth, first that these things that I shall speake may profite the common wealth: and secondly, after my death, I trust by your suffrages to be succored, Purpose of the Rebels.

according to your promises (which is to pray for me) I will speake faithfully without deceipt.

Conspiracy of the rebels.

The same time (sayeth he) that we came to Blacke Heath, when we sent for the King, we purposed to haue murdered al the knights, Esquires and gentlemen that should haue come with him, and to haue ledde the King royally vsed, vp and downe, that with the sight of him, all men especially the common people might haue come vnto vs the more boldely, and when we had got together an innumerable multitude, we would haue sodainely put to death in euery Countrey, the Lords and maisters of the common people, in whom might appeare to be either counsell or resistance against vs: and specially we would haue destroyed the Knights of Saint Iohns, lastly we would haue killed the King himselfe, and all men that had bẽn of any possession, Bishops, Monkes, Chanons, Parsons, to be briefe, we would haue dispatched: onely begging Friers should haue liued, that might haue suffred for ministring the Sacraments in the whole Realme, for we should haue made Kings, Wat Tyler in Kent, and in euery other shire one. But because this our purpose was hindered by the Archbishop, we studied how to bring him shortly to his ende.

Against the same day that Wat Tiler was killed, we purposed that euening (because that the poore people of London seemed to fauour vs) to set fire in foure corners of the Citie, and so to haue burnt it, and to haue deuided the riches at our pleasures amongst vs. He added that these things they purposed to haue done, as God should helpe him at the end of his life.

Iacke Straw beheaded.

After this confession made, he was beheaded, and his head set on London Bridge by Wat Tilers and many other.

Principall Captaines.

The principall leaders of the Commons were Wat Tiler, the second Iohn Strawe, the third Iohn Kirkby, the fourth Alen Threder, the fift Thomas Scotte, the sixth Ralph Rugge: these and many others were leaders of the Kentish and Essex men. At Mildenhall and Bury in Suffolke, was Robert Westbrom, that made himselfe King, and was most famous after Iohn Wraw, who being a priest would not set crowne vpon crowne, but left the name of King and crowne to the said Robert. At Norwhich Iohn Litistar a dier, exercised the name and power of a King, till he was taken and hanged for his paynes.

Wat Tiler being killed, Iacke Straw and other their principall Captaines hanged or headed, the hope and confidence of the Commons decayed, but because the mindes of the King and nobles was yet wauering, seeing the people ready to mischiefe, they graunted to them Charters of manumission and suffered them to depart, the which being done, the King caused an army to be assembled from London, and sent into all Countries that those who were his friends should make haste to come to him to London, furnished with horse and armour, and it came to passe that within three daies he had a xl. thousand horsmen about him in seemely sort armed, he mustred them on Blacke Heath, himselfe ryding on a great courser, with his standard borne before him: when therefore so mighty an army was assembled, the King was aduertised that the Kentish men had eftsones conspired, whereupon he forthwith set forward,

The King raised a great power, and rode into Kent.

but

but by the mediation of the Nobles and great men of Kent that vndertoke for them, he was stayde and pacified with them, and then first Iustices were sent to seeke and inquire of malefactours, and that Countrey became quiet at the sight of them. Then the Maior of London sitting in iudgement, caused the malefactors to be tried, as well of the Citie as also of Kent, Essex, Southsex, Norffolke, and Suffolke and other Countries, that might be taken within the liberties of the Citie, and all those whom he found guiltie of the foresaid treason, he caused to hoppe headlesse, among the which were Iacke Strawe, Iohn Kirkeby, Alen Threder, &c. also Iohn Starling of Essex, that gloried to haue beheaded the Archbishop, was beheaded himselfe.

Maior of London caused malefactors of the Citie, of Kent, Essex, Sussex, Norffolke, & Suffolke that might be taken, to hoppe headles.

The king remained now at London, now at Waltham, with a great army of armed men, considering what was to be done for the commoditie of the Realme. At length the Counsell thought good to send the kings commission into euery Shire, for the resisting of the disquieters of the peace of the Kingdome. These commissions did much comfort the faithfull subiects, and troubled the false, for they were now compelled to seeke corners, that before tooke vpon them to doe all things abroade, Lawyers now durst come forth of their dennes, and those which before fled from the tyrannie of the time, looked for those that now feared iudgement and iustice to be done on them. *An. reg. 5.*

The commons being thus feared, but not in all places alike, they of Essex gathering a new multitude together at Byllerica, a village neere to Hatfield Peuerell, decreed either to inioy liberty gotten by force, or to dye in fighting for the same, they sent to the King then being at Waltham messengers to knowe if hee thought good to permit them to enioy their permitted libertie, like to their Lords, and that they should not be compelled to come to courts, but only to great Leets twise in the yeare, vnto the which the king answered thus. Oh miserable and hatefull both to land and sea, not worthie to liue: doe ye require to be equall to your Lords? Ye were worthie to be put to most shamefull death: but sith ye are come as messengers, ye shall not die now, to the end ye may declare our answeres to your fellowes: declare to them therefore on the Kings behalfe, that as they were husbandmen and bondmen, so shall they remaine in bondage, not as before, but more vile, without comparison farre, vnto this. Whilest we liue, and by Gods sufferance shall gouerne the kingdome, with witte, strength and goods, we will endeuour our selues to keepe you vnder, so that the duety of your seruice, may be an example for posteritie, and that your matches both present, and that shall succeede, may euer haue before their eyes, as it were in a glasse, your miserie, and to you matter to curse, and feare to commit the like. When the messengers were gone, there was sent straight waies into Essex, Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham, and sir Thomas Percy brother to the earle of Northumberland, to represse the boldnesse of the said commons.

Commons of Essex gathered together at Billerica, sent messengers to the King.

Answere of the King to the Commons of Essex.

These commons had fortified themselues with ditches and carriages: nevertheless, although there was a great number of them, with small businesse they were scattered into the woods, where the Lords inclosed them, least any of them might escape: and it came to passe, that fiue hundred of the were slaine,

and eight hundred of their horses taken, the other that escaped this slaughter being gotten together, hasted to Colchester, and began to stir the townesmen to a new tumult, and when they profited not there, they went to Sudbury; but the Lord Fitz Walter and sir Iohn Harlestone followed them, and slew as many of them as they list, and shut vp the rest in prisons. The King came to his mãnor of Havering at Boure, and after to Chelmsford, where he appointed Sir Rob. Trisilian his Iustice to sit and enquire of the malefactours, wherfore the men seeing the coils that hung ouer their heads, there came aboue fiue hundred humbly to the King barefooted and bareheaded, beseeching him of pardon and mercie. To whom pardon was graunted, with condition, to deliuer the stirrers of the said trouble. It came therefore to passe, that many were committed to warde, vpon whom, the Iustice charged foure and twentie men of their conscience to say the truth, and many being condemned, were put to execution, by drawing and hanging, nine or tenne being hanged on one beame. The Iustices that before had sit in Essex, Kent, London, and other places, for all the multitude that were to be executed, vsed to head the Commons, till nowe it seemed not a kinde of death answerable to so many & manifest crimes. These things were done in Essex, the King being present: the like by his Iustices was done in other countries.

Robert Trisilian Iustice, sat at Chelmsford.

The tenth of Iuly Iohn Ball priest being taken at Couentry, and brought to Saint Albons, was there before the King condemned, and had iudgement giuen him by Sir Robert Trisilian knight a most skilful Iustice, as a traitour to be drawne, hanged, headed and bowelled, whose death was respited vntill the Monday at the intercession of William Bishop of London, who being carefull for his soules health, obtained that space for his repentance. This man a twentie yeares together and more, preached in diuers places those things which he knew to be liking to the common people, slaundering aswell ecclesiasticall persons, as secular Lords, seeking thereby, rather the beneuolence of the common people, then merite towards God: he taught that tithes were not to be giuen to the church men, except the partie that should giue the same were richer then the Vicar or parson that should receiue it. Also that tithes and oblations were to be withdrawen from Curates: if the parishioners or parishioner were of better life then the Curate. Also that no man was meete for the kingdome of God, that was not borne in matrimony, he taught many other things too long to rehearse, for the which he was prohibited of the Bishops in whose dioceses he had attempted these things, that he should not preach from thencefoorth in any Church: he went forth therefore into the stretes and wayes, and into fields to preach, & there wanted not of the commons that came to heare him, whom he euer sought to allure to his sermons, by detracting of the prelates. At the length being excommunicated, and yet not desisting, hee was committed to prison by Simon the Archbishop of Canterbury, and William Bishop of London, where he prophecied that he should be deliuered by twentie thousand of his friends, which came so to passe in the foresaid time of troubles, when all prisons were broken vp, and the prisoners driuen forth, and when hee was so deliuered, hee followed them, inflig-

Sir Iohn Ball taken and brought to Saint Albons.

Doctrine of Iohn Ball by him taught.

ting

ting them to committe much euill, and preaching that so it ought to be done. And that his doctrine might infect the more number of people, at Blacke heath, where there were many thousands of the Commons assembled, he began his Sermon in this manner:

When Adam dolue and Eue span, who was then a gentleman?

John Ball his Sermon.

And continuing his begunne Sermon, he sought by the worde of that prouerbe which he toke for his theame, to introduce, and prowe, that from the beginning, all were made a like by nature, and that bondage or seruitude was brought in by iniust oppression of naughty men, against the will of God: for if it had pleased God to haue made bondmen, he would haue appointed them from the beginning of the world, who should haue bēn slaue, and who Lord. They ought to consider therefore, that now there was a time giuen them by God, in the which, laying aside the yoke of continuall bondage, they might, if they would, enioy their long wished for libertie. Wherefore he admonished them, that they should be wise, and after the manner of a good husband that tilled his ground, and did cutte away all noysome weedes that were accustomed to growe and oppresse the fruite, they should make haste to doe now at this present the like. First, the Archbishop and great men of the kingdome were to be slaine: after, Lawyers, Iusticiars, and Questmongers: lastly, whomsoeuer they knewe to be like hereafter hurtefull to the Commons, they should dispatch out of the land, for so might they purchase safety to themselues hereafter, if the great men being once taken away, there were among them equall libertie, all one nobilitie and like dignitie, and semblable authority or power. These, and many such mad deuises he preached, which made the common people to esteeme of him in such manner, as they cryed out, he should be Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancellor of the Realme, for he onely deserued the honour. Moreouer, he had sent to the borders of the Commons in Eller a Letter full of riddles or darke sentences, exhorting them to procēde in their begun enterprises, which Letter was after found in the bouget of one that should be hanged, the tenour whereof was thus:

Libell of John Ball.

Iohn Shepe, sometime Saint-Mary Priest of Yorke, and now of Colchester, greeteth well Iohn nameless, and Iohn Milner, and Iohn Carter, and biddeth them that they beware of Gillinbrough, and standeth together in Gods name, and biddeth Pierce Plowman goe to his worke, and chastice well Hob the robber, and take with him Iohn Trueman, and all his fellowes, and no moe, Iohn the Miller hath yground small small, the Kings sonne of heauen shall pay for all, beware or ye be woe, know your friend from your foe, haueth ynough, and saith hoe, and doe well and better, and seeth sinne, and seeketh peace, and holde therein, and so biddeth Iohn Trueman and all his fellowes.

This letter Iohn Ball confessed himselfe, that he had written and sent to the Commons: more, he confessed to William then Bishop of London, to Walter Lee Knight, and Iohn Perfoot Notarie, that a certain company of his sect, were confederate to go rounde about all England, and to preach these points which he had taught, naming I. W. N. A. L. B. masters of Artes. Whereupon he added, that except remedy were had, they within two yeres space would destroy the

whole Realme, and this confeſſion, vnder a certaine forme was brought into a publike inſtrument. This Sir Iohn Ball was hanged and headed at Saint Albons, on the 15. of July, the King being preſent, and his body being quartred, was ſent to foure Cities of the Realme: ſome other Epiſtles of the ſaid Ball haue I ſeene, which alſo I thinke good (as afore) here to inſert.

Sir Iohn Ball hanged.

Epiſtle of Iohn Ball.

Iohn Ball Saint-Mary prieſt, greeteth well all manner of men, and biddeth them in name of the Trinitie, Father Sonne, and holy Ghoſt, ſtand manlike together in truth, and helpe truth, and truth ſhall helpe you: now reigneth pride in price, couetiſe is holden wiſe, lechery without ſhame, gluttonie without blame, enuie raigneth with reaſon, and ſloth is taken in great ſeaſon, God do bote for now is time, Amen.

Iacke Miller.

Iacke Miller, aſketh helpe to turne his Mill aright, he hath ground ſmall, ſmall, the kings ſon of heauen ſhall pay for all: loke thy Mill goe right with foure ſailes, and the poſt ſtand in ſtedfaſtnes with right and might, with ſkill and will, let might helpe right, and ſkill before will, and right before might, then goeth our Mill aright: and if might goe before right, and will before ſkill, then is our Mil miſdight.

Iacke Trewman.

Iacke Trewman doeth you to vnderſtond,
that falſeneſſe and guile hath raigned too long:
and truth hath been ſet vnder a locke,
and falſeneſſe raigneth in euery flocke:
No man may come truth to, but he ſing, *ſi dedero:*
Speake, ſpend and ſpæd, quoth Iohn of Bathon, and therefore,
Sinne fareth as wilde flood, true loue is away that is ſo good,
And clarkes for wealth wircheth them wo, God doe boote, for now is time.
I leaue out Iohn Carters Epiſtle, a libell, ſo named, &c.

A great number of the commons being indited, and hauing iudgement, at Saint Albons fiftéene of them were hanged, and foureſcore impriſoned, and afterward by pardon releaſed, and on the twentieth day of July the King remoued to Berkhamſtede.

Truce with the Scots.

Iohn Duke of Lancaſter that a little before theſe troubles began, was gone Northward to be at the day of truce or march, as ỹ manner was euerie yéere, when he heard of the hurling of the commons, in the time that they had the vpper hand ouer their Lords, he was marueilouſly amazed, and forecaſting what might follow, thought it beſt, with ſpéde to make peace with the Scots, which was done before thoſe tumults came to the eares of the Scots, and by them confirmed by oth for two yéeres truce, that they would faithfully kéepe the ſame.

Will. Courtney Archbiſhop of Canterbury.

William Courtney ſonne to Hugh Courtney, Earle of Deuonſhire, Doctour of Lawe, firſt Biſhoppe of Hereforde, ſince Biſhoppe of London, was nowe tranſlated to the Archbiſhoprick of Canterburie on the ninth of September. And Robert Braybrooke ſucceéded in the Biſhoprick of London.

Durham Colledge founded.

Thomas Hatfield Biſhop of Durham deceaſed, he founded Durham Colledge in Oxford, he alſo builded Durham place, betwixt London and Weſtminſter.

minster. Iohn Fordham Bishop of Elye was translated to the Bishoppricke of Durham.

About the feast of All Saints, a Parliament was begun, which endured long, to small purpose, by reason of contention among the Lords, especially the Duke of Lancaster, and the Earle of Northumberland, whose quarrel in the end was taken vp by the King, and then the Lords proceeded to treate of the Kings businesse and the Realmes, but they lingered so long in vaine, that when some effect was thought should haue succeeded, newes came of the comming to Caleys of the new Quéene. The King had made his choice before to haue this woman, and had bought her with a great price and much labor, for he gaue to the Emperour, x. thousand pound, beside other great expenses, to make this mariage. Although the daughter of Barnabe Duke of Millan was offred vnto him with an inestimable some of golde. This Quénes comming therefore being vnderstood, the Parliament was prorogued, to begin againe after Christmas. There were diuers of the Nobles sent to méete the Bride, and she was conueyed with all the glory of the world vnto Douer, many both of her Countrey, and also of England, attending on her. Parliament at London.

After the feast of the Epiphany, also the Nobilitie of the Realme assembled at London, to be present at the Kings mariage, and to do their seruice according to the custome of euery one in ancient time vsed. This Virgin named Anne, the daughter of Veselaus King of Boheme, is at Westminster consecrated the Kings wife, & by the Archbishop of Canterbury is crowned Quéene. There were iustes kept for the honour of such a solemnization, certaine dayes together, in which, both the Englishmen shewed their force, and the Quénes countrymen their prowesse. 1382. The King married.

In this Quénes dayes, began the detestable vse of piked shoes, tyed to their knées with chaines of siluer and gilt. Also noble women vsed high attire on their heads, piked like hornes, with long trained gownes, and rode on side saddles, after the example of the Quéene who first brought that fashion into this land, for before, women were vsed to ride astride like men. The solemnity of the mariage being ended, the parliament is now begun againe, in which, many articles are proposed and decréed, to wit, of admitting strangers to sell personally their wares, without impeachment of the merchants of England: of the abrogating of furres, and siluer garnishing of girdles &c. of the price of wines, that is, that the tunne should not exceede fiue markes, &c. Piked shoes, high heads, and long tailed gownes, with women riding aside first vsed in England.

William Vford Earle of Suffolke, in this Parliament, being elected by the knights of the shires, to pronounce on their behalfes ỳ businesse of the realme, the very day and houre in which he should haue executed the businesse he had taken in hand, as he was going vp the staires that ledde into the chamber where all the nobilitie of the realme sate, he sodainly fell downe, and among his mens hands that were about to holde him, he yélded vp the Ghost, although being very merry, and féeling no euill, a little before, as euen at that instant he had entred Westminster hall, of whose sodaine death, not only all the nobles of the realme were greatly amazed, but all the meaner sort, for in all his life time he had shewed himselfe amiable to all men. William Vfford Earle of Suffolke dyed suddainely.

Custome of woolles.

After his death the parliament was ended, after the marchants of England had granted to the king a subsidie, and the customes of woll for foure yeres next ensuing, which the Commons called le Maltot.

In this Parliament, the Lords and Commons requesting it, Sir Richard Scrope knight was ordeyned Chauncelor as the man which in excellent knowledge & inflexible iustice, had not his like for his calling in this Realme. Sir Hugh Segraue knight was made Lord Treasorer.

Ann. reg. 6. Mortimer earle of March deceased.

Edward Mortimer Earle of March departed this life in Ireland, after he had brought that land all in manner vnto peace and quietnesse, hauing gouerned it most nobly and wisely.

About the feast of Saint Iohn ante portlatine, all the nobles of the Realme were called to London, and other that of custome were wont to be called, although the Lent before there had been an other parliament, as before we haue shewed, in which, by the petition of the knights of the shires, Iohn Wrawe Priest, that was leader of them that did rise at Wildenhale and Bury, was adiudged to hanging and drawing, though many beléued that he would haue bèn redéemed with money.

John Wraw hanged.

Earthquake.

The one and twentieth day of May was a great earthquake in England at nine of the clocke, fearing the hearts of many, but in Kent it was most behement, where it ouncke some Churches, and threwe them downe to the earth.

Hist. Aurea.

There followed also another Earthquake the xviii. of May in the morning before the sunne rising, but not so terrible as the first. Sir Richard Scrope is depriued of the chancellorship, which he had gouerned laudably, and Robert Braybroke Bishop of London, is made Chancellor.

There arriued in a great tempest, a ship called a Caricke, at Sandwich, an huge vessell, and so fraught with riches, that she might haue furnished the want of all the land, if the enuie of the inhabitantes would haue permitted, but the marchants of London hauing much old wares, as fruits, spices, oiles, and such like, they compounded with the Genowayes to forsake that hauen, and to passe ouer into Flanders, and so for the couetousnes of a few, the whole Realme susteined great hinderance.

Sir John Burghley, sir Simo Burghley sir Richard Burghley knights.

King Richard gaue to Sir Simon Burghley his chamberlaine the kéeping of his Forrest of Wolmore in Southamptonshire, for tearme of his life: he also gaue to Iohn Burghley, Simon Burghley, Richard Burghley, knights, and Bawdwine de Radington Esquire, all the mannour of Parroke nigh to Graues-end.

Great floode.

About the Feast of Saint Thomas the Apostle, great raynes and inundations of waters chaunced, so that the water rose foure times more in height then before, drowning vp villages and Cattaile, destroying Bridges and Milles.

1383.

Bishop of Norwich sayled into Flanders with a great

About the moneth of May, the Bishop of Norwich sayled ouer the seas into Flanders with a great power, where he wanne the Townes of Graueling, Bruge, Dunkerke, Newport.

Whilest these things are thus doing in Flaunders, the king of England

and

and his Quéene, with their Bohemians, visited the Abbeyes of this realme, to the which, their comming was very chargeable, for they came with an excessiue number, all which came to take, but not to giue.

power, wan Graueling, Bough, Dunkerke, Newport.

The Scots taking occasion of the time, for that a great number were gone ouer with the Bishop of Norwich, entred into Northumberland, & did much hurt to the inhabitants, taking praies in euery place, and leading away the people prisoners, and carrying them into Scotland: they toke the Castell of Warke vpon the riuer of Twede, and brent it.

An. reg. 7. The Scots entred Northumberland.

About the feast of All-Saintes, a Parliament was holden at London, in which, the halfe of a fifteene was granted vnto the king by the Laytie, and shortly after the halfe of a tenth by the Cleargy, a portion of which money, the Lords of the North demaunded, because in this Parliament they were appointed to defend those parts against the irruptions of Scots, to whom answere was made by sir William Wikeham Bishop of Winchester, that they were made for that cause, of power men, rich men and Lordes, that they might the more frankely keepe the Scots, and that the King and Lords of the south parts should be the lesse troubled. And because the Scots came not to this Parliament, according to couenant, and beside that did displeasures vnto the inhabitants of the North parts, it was decreed by this Parliament, that vnto faith-breakers, faith shoulde be broken againe, and that a chosen power should bee sent thither, forth of England, vnder the leading of Thomas of Woodstocke, to wit, a thousand lances, and two thousand archers, to restraine their attempts.

Parliament at London.

Thomas of Woodstocke sent against the Scots.

These things being knowne, the Scots being afraid of themselues, in the ende of the Parliament came, and were desirous to intreat of peace or truce, but the Englishmen hauing tryed their falshod so oftentimes, would neither treat, nor compound with them, but commaunded them to returne home, and warned them to saue their heads as well as they might, and to defend their rights. The Scots being returned, the Lords of the North toke vpon them to defend the Countrey, till Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham were readie to come with a greater power.

In this Parliament the king toke the temporalties of the Bishop of Norwich into his hands, because he was disobedient to his commaundement when he sent to haue stayed him from his iourney into Flaunders, and the knights that went ouer with him were put in prison, till they were redéemed with gold.

Temporalties of the Bishop of Norwich seised.

King Richard held his Christmas at his Manor of Eltham, and with him his Quéene Anne. 1384.

After Christmas, Iohn Duke of Lancaster, which before Christmas went ouer into Fraunce to treate of peace betwixt the Realmes, returned into England, bringing with him an abstinence of warre till the feast of S. Iohn Baptist, at what time he was to returne to treat againe, and to confirme the peace if it might be agréed vpon betwixt the kings.

Truce with the French.

The night of the Purification of our Lady, great lightnings and thunder happened, that put men in great feare: and shortly after Iohn Northampton,

Lightning and thunder.

Iohn Northampton alias Combertowne.

other wise

other wise called Combartowne, that had bẽn the yẽre before Maior of London, that with his seditions had filled the Citie ful of comber, attempted new troubles, for in contempt of the Maior that was elected for that yẽre, sir Nicholas Brembar, knight, he went vp and downe with a multitude of seditious people to guard him, not once, but oftentimes, to the terrour of many. And when the said Brembar Maior would haue withstanded his attempts, the fauourers of the said Iohn Combertowne were turned into such a fury, that a cobler sewer or shoomaker, toke vpon him as it were to be Maior, and required the voyces of the communalty: for which cause, by the counsaile of sir Robert Knowles knight, he was drawne out of his house, and committed to prison as a stirrer of insurrection, which act for that time stayde the commotion of the Commons, that were said to haue conspired to haue murthered the elect Maior, and many other worthy men.

John Duke of Lancaster went toward Scotland.

When Lent approached, Iohn Duke of Lancaster, with his brother Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham, and an innumerable number of knights, Esquires, and Archers, went toward Scotland, but staid in the North vntill all the victualles in the Countrey were consumed: he did more hurt to the inhabitants, then the Scots had done before. At length, about the feast of Easter, he entred Scotland, but did little good.

John Wicliffe died.

This yẽre maister Iohn Wicliffe, sometime student in Canterbury College in the Vniuersitie of Oxford, parson of Lutterworth in Leicestershire, hauing bẽne vexed with a palsey by the space of two yẽres, died, on the last of December, and was buried at Lutterworth. This man whiles he liued, as also long after his death, was greatly fauoured by the students of that Vniuersity, as may appeare by letters testimonial, made more then twenty yẽres after his decease, as followeth.

Letters testimoniall of the Vniuersitie of Oxford of the life of Iohn Wicliffe.

To all children of our holy mother the Church, vnto whom these presents shall come, the Chancellor and company of maisters of the Vniuersity of Oxford, sendeth greeting in our Lord euerlasting. For as much as it is not decent to ouerpasse with continuall silence, the acts of the valiant, nor the laudes and merits of the good, but that the same should be manifested to the world by true fame for a witnesse of it selfe, and example of others, for that also the prouident discretion of humane nature, weying mans cruelty, hath ordained this manner of remembrance, and this buckler of defence, against the blasphemous insulting of others, that when a testimony by word cannot alwaies be ready, a penne to write may supply: thereon it commeth to passe, that we hauing conceiued a speciall good minde, and tender care ouer the childe sometime of our Vniuersitie, Iohn Wicliffe professour of holy theologie, according to the deserts of his manners, do testifie with heart, word, and writting, that his conditions, while he liued, were commendable, whose honestie of manners, profunditie of iudgement, and pleasantnes of flourishing fame, we couet so much the more to bring to the knowledge of faithfull people, as the perfection of his conuersation, and his diligence of his writings might be the more euidently knowen to tend to Gods glory, the weale of his neighbour, and profit of the Church, wherfore we publish vnto you by these presents, that his conuersa-

tion

tion from his tender yéeres continued, til the time of his deceaſe, hath bin héere right good and honeſt, ſo as there was neuer any motion or note of ſiniſter ſuſpition or infamie caſt abroad of him, but in anſwering, reading, preaching, and ſoluting, hath behaued himſelfe praiſe worthily, like a ſtout Champion of the faith, vanquiſhed by ſentences of Scripture, like a Catholike man all thoſe blaſphemers of Chriſts religion by their wilful beggery. And therfore was not the foreſaid Doctor condemned of hereticall prauitie, or yet by our Prelates to be burnt after his burial. God defend therefore that our Prelates ſhould haue condemned ſo good a man for an heretike, which in Logike, Philoſophy, in Theologie, in Moralities, and Speculatiues among all that hath written, (as we thinke) in our Uniuerſitie, without péere. All which things we deſire to bring to the knowledge of all and ſingular perſons vnto whoſe hands theſe preſents may come, to the intent that the ſaid Doctors fame may the oftner be had in remembrance. In witneſſe whereof, we haue cauſed theſe our letters teſtimoniall to be ſealed with our common ſeale.

Giuen at Oxford in our congregation houſe the fifth day of the moneth of October. Anno. 1406.

All this notwithſtanding afterward (being excommunicated by Thomas Arundale Archbiſhop of Canterbury) his bones, by a Doctor of Diuinitie of Oxford, named Richard Fleming Biſhoppe of Lincolne, were taken vp and burnt, and the aſhes throwen into the next water néere vnto Lutterworth 41. yéeres after his deceaſe in Anno 1425. by commaundement of Pope Martine the fifth. Thus much for Wicliffe.

The cuſtody of the caſtle of Douer being void by the death of Robert Aſhton was then appointed to Simon Burley, who was made Conſtable there.

Simon Burley Conſtable of Douer.

After the quindene of Eaſter the nobles came together to a Parliament at Salisbury, whither a certain Iriſh Frier of the order of Carmelites, a batcheler of Diuinity named Iohn Latimer, haſted in an euill houre, for he had written a certain ſcedul in the which was conteined many horrible practiſes deuiſed (as he ſaid) by the duke of Lancaſter, for it was in that ſcedul expreſſed, that the ſaid duke had determined ſodainly to oppreſſe the K. and to take vpon him the kingdom, there was aſſigned the time, place, & other circumſtances ý might make euident proofe of the thing. The Frier obtaining acceſſe vnto the K. preſence, toke ý ſcedule to his own hands, ſwearing by the ſacrament of the body and blood of Chriſt, which that day he had receiued, that al written in that ſcedule was true. The duke therfore being called to the K. and hauing the ſcedul deliuered into his hands, deſired the K. that the Frier might be put in ſafe kéeping, til the day ý he ſhould ſhew the cauſe of thoſe things which he had proponed againſt him, & beſought the K. that ſir Io. Holland might haue ſpecial charge of him. This Io. Holland, was the K. brother by his mother, the ſonne of the L. Tho. Holland, who gladly for the loue of his brother the duke did willingly accept the frier into his cuſtody. The night before the day giuen to the frier to make his anſwere, Ioh. Holland & another knight, called ſir Henry Greene taking the Frier, put a cord about his necke, (ſome ſay about his armes) & with the ſame cord tying his cods, hanged him vp from the ground, laying a ſtone or

Parliament at Salisbury.

Iohn Duke of Lancaſter accuſed.

A Frier tormented to death.

weight

weight of lead vpon his belly of such weight, that it might both torment him by streining him, as also stopt his breath, and brake his back bone, also a great fire was made vnder the soles of his fæt, that might end his life, not with one kind, but with diuers kinds of torments, with violence wherof, the frier being ouercome, died, but would neuer reuoke what he had said. The morow after, they caused the friers body to be drawne through the towne as a traitor, that they might put away all suspition, that he were put to death wrongfully: but it is to be wondred at, that neither Esquier, Yeoman, nor Grome, or any other of mean estate, would harme the Frier, but the knights did it themselues, they were Iudges, Officers, and executioners, and this was the fruite of this Parliament, except that the king asked and had of the Laitie halfe a fiftenth, and of the Cleargie halfe a tenth.

Irruptions of the Scots. *An. reg.* 8. About this time, because the Scots ceased not to do diuers domages to the Northumbers, the Earle of Northumberland Henry Percy, prepareth to inuade Scotland, and to requite domage for domage, which enterprise accomplished, the Earle was no sooner returned, and sent home his army, but that the Scottes came againe, and heaped vp domage vpon domage in the countrey.

This Sommer, sir Iohn Philpot a most faithfull knight, and noble Citizen of London, that had a long time trauelled for the commodity of the Realme more then all other, and both with expences laid forth, & good affection borne, (for he had oftentimes relieued the king) departed this life, leauing none behind him: his like in good affections.

Sir Iohn Philpot deceased.

About the beginning of August, the Duke of Lancaster went into France to treat with the Frenchmen of peace, or els of truce to be had: the Duke with his company of noble men remaining long there, when it was thought that hee should haue brought glad and ioyfull newes to his Country, hee returned with knowledge of warres, to follow the beginning of the next Sommer, the truce to endure but till the first of May, and so he returned, after he had spent 500000. Marks of siluer.

John Duke of Lancaster goeth into Fráce.

Many of the Nobles assembled at Reading, to represse the seditious stirres of Iohn Northampton, late Maior of London, that attempted great and heinous enterprises, of the which he was conuict, his own chaplein vttering many things that he went about and had deuised, as well to the hinderance and harme of the king, as of the Citie of London, and when sentence should haue bene pronounced against him, the king being present, the wicked man made exclamation, and maintained that such iudgement ought not to passe in absence of his Lord the Duke of Lancaster, but yet the iustice vsed such words, Iohn (saith he) the naughty deeds that are obiected against thee, thou oughtest to refell by battell, or else by the lawes of the land to be drawne, hanged, and quartered. And when he stood mute, nor would vtter one word, it was decreed that he should be committed to perpetuall prison, and his goods to bee confiscate to the kings vse, and that he should not come within one hundred miles of London during his life, he was sent therefore to the Castle of Tintagell in the confines of Cornwal, and in the meane space the kings seruants

John Northampton conuict, and committed to perpetuall prison.

spoyled

spoyled his goods. Iohn More, Richard Northbery, & other, were likewise there conuict, and condemned to perpetuall prison, and their goods confiscate to the king, for certaine congregations by them made against the Fish-mongers in the Citie of London.

About the feast of S. Martine, a Parliament was holden at London in the which nothing was done worth ỹ memory, but that which stil was in hand, and exacting of money of the Cleargy and common people, to maintaine the men of warre. And besides this, about the feast of Saint Andrew there was a combate fought in lists at Westminster, betwixt an Esquier of England named Iohn VVelch of Grimesby, & one of Nauarre, called Mortleto de Vilenos, that had accused the English Esquier, of treason to the King and Realme, but the effect was, that when hée was Captaine of Cherbrugh, hée forced the wife of this Nauaroys, as the said Nauaroys being afterward ouercome, and being redy to suffer death, did openly confesse, for the which cause, by the kings iudgement, he was drawen & hanged, although the Quéne and many other did make earnest intercession to haue his life saued. Parliament at London. Combate fought.

The Parliament was not yet ended, when newes came out of the North of the taking of Berwicke Castell by the Scots, the custodie whereof, the Earle of Northumberland, sir Henry Percy did possesse, by right of his predecessors. The Scots by mediation of money, got entrance into that castell, by one that was put in trust with keeping of it. The Duke of Lancaster that loued not the Earle, was glad of this happe, when he knew it. It came to passe therfore by the Dukes procurement, that the Earle was condemned by iudgement of the Lords there present, the which execution was within a short while after released. The Earle of Northumberland, through the kings fauour restored to his life and possessions, without any long delaies, prepareth al furniture of warre to besiege and win the said Castell of them that were within it, and after he had gathered a mighty army, he sodainly besieged it, and after he had layne about it a certaine time, it was compounded betwixt them without, and them within, that they within should forsake the Castell, and haue their liues and moueable goods, and for surrendring the Castell, they should haue of the Earle two thousand markes of English money, and by this meanes did the Earle recouer the Castell forth of the Scottishmens hands. Berwike lost and wonne againe.

King Richard kept a solemn feast of Christmas at Eltham with Quéne Anne his wife, whom hée seldome suffred to go from his side, there were at that feast the Bohemians, the Quénes countrymen, that hauing once tasted the sweetnesse of this land, forgetting their owne countrey like vnshamefast guests, would not go home againe. 1385.

Through certaine young men brought vp with the king, there arose great dissention betwixt him and the Duke of Lancaster, who departed from the Court, and went to his Castell of Pomfret, which he had fortified, but by meanes of the kings mother, this discord was appeased for a time. Tho. Walsing.

The same time the coniunction of two of the greatest planets chaunced, to wit, of Iupiter and Saturne, in the moneth of May, after the which a great mutation of kingdomes followed.

The

The third of May was an earthquake.

The king entred Scotland.

King Richard with a great armie entred Scotland, but the enemies would not shew themselues, wherefore hee burnt the Countrey and returned. The eightenth of July there was an Earthquake. Sir Iohn de Vienne that serued the French King was sent into Scotland with a great multitude of ships and men of warre, that ioyning with the Scots, they might infest all England, and that whilest they might draw the power of this Realme that way forth, the French king, with his Nauy and armie, might the more at liberty enter other parts of the Realme, few or none being left at home to prohibite them their entrie. The arriuall of the said Iohn being knowne in England, the king with all the Nobilitie prepared themselues to make a iourney thither: there came flocking vnto the king such a number of Knights, Esquiers, and Archers, as the like had not beene heard of in those daies, in so much, as the number of horses amounted to three hundred thousand, as they were iudged, Wherie large the king reioyced hereat, as well hee might, but the reioycing was shortly darkened at Yorke, by fiercenesse of Sir Iohn Holland, the kings brother, that slewe the Lord Ralph Stafford, sonne to the Earle of Stafford, in the way as he went to the Quéene, whose seruant of household he was, and greatly in fauour with her, and he was no lesse beloued of the king, as he that had béene brought vp with him, and béene his playfellow from his tender age, where the king taking great indignation, determined to pursue the said Sir Iohn Holland: hee caused therefore his goods to be confiscate. But Sir Iohn Holland fled to Beuerley, to enioy the libertie of the Church. The Lady Iane the kings mother, sent to intreate him for her other sonne, and his brother, but when the messengers were returned to Wallingford, and that the mother could perceiue no hope of grace to begotten in that behalfe of the king, she toke it heauily, and fell sicke, and within foure or fiue daies departed this life, her bodie being seared and closed in Lead, was kept at Wallingford, till the kings returne forth of Scotland, then to be buried at Stanford, in the Church of the Friers Minors.

The king maketh a iourney into Scotland

Ralph Stafford slaine.

An. reg. 9.

Lady Iane the kings mother died, buried at Stanford.

In the moneth of August, the King of England with a mightie power entred Scotland, with whose force the Scots and Frenchmen perceiuing themselues not able to match, they séeke to get them into the woods and places where they might be out of the way. The English armie, then the which there hath not beene seene a fairer, stronger, or greater, rideth through the Countrey, that was destitute of inhabitants, void of Cattell, and wanting victuals, for the land was left desolate (as our men confessed) that they sawe not so much as a bird, Owles onely excepted. They found green corne on the ground, very faire and plentifull, which they either eate vp with their horses, or tread downe with their feete, but the enemies fleeing battell, our men did nothing to be accounted of, but burnt the Abbey of Melroys, and the towne of Edenborough, with such houses as they found by the way. When our armie was come to Edenborough, and that victuals failed them, many of them began to ware sicke, & some to die for hunger: wherupon the king returned

Melroys and Edenborough burnt.

ned with his armie into England. While king Richard was in Scotland, the Scots and Frenchmen entred into England, burning Townes, taking spoyles, and leading away many prisoners, returned home into their Countrey. The Scots spoyle in England.

The souldiers of Calais went secretly forth into Fraunce, and got a bootie of foure thousand shéepe, and three hundred head of great beasts, which they drew to their holdes.

About the feast of Saint Martine, there was a Parliament at London, in which, the Laytie granted to the king a fiftéenth and a halfe, with a condition, that the Cleargie should giue a tenth and a halfe. William Courtney, Archbishop of Canterbury standing there-against, said, the Church ought to be frée, and in no wise to be tared by the laytie, yea, hee would rather put his head in daunger for this cause, then to suffer the English Church to be brought into such seruitude: which answeare so much moued the Knights and Commons of the shires, with some of the Nobles of the Realme, that they in great rage, made request, that the temporalities might be taken from the Cleargie, and Church-men, saying, that the Church-men were growne to such pride, that it was a déede of charitie, and almes by taking away their temporalities, to compell them to be more méeke and humble: this they cried out for, this they presented in writing to the King, and such was their labour in this point, that they were in hope to bring it to passe. Here mought you haue séene the Knights pleasaunt and merry, talking of these things, euen as the temporalities of the Church had béene assigned to their abusing, this man promising himselfe thus much of that Monasterie, that man of an other, I heard my selfe (saith Thomas Walsingham) one of the Knightes déepely sweare, that of the Abbey of Saint Albones, hée would haue a thousand markes by yéere of the temporalities: But to such a mad wish the King consented not, for hearing the inordinate crying out of the one side, and the iust aunsweares on the other, hée commaunded that bill to bée cancelled, and such inordinate petitions to cease, saying that hée would preserue the Church during his time, in as good state as hée found it, or better: with the which aunsweare, hée so liked the Church-men, that hée was thought worthie of great recompence, and of good Laye men also this aunsweare was much commended. The Archbishoppe therefore, hauing made the Cleargie priuie, went to the King, and declared that hée and his Cleargie of their whole consentes and frée willes had prouided for his vse a Tenth, which graunt the King so gladly heard, and thankefully receiued, that hee openly affirmed, hée had rather haue this free graunt, then any other foure times double the valewe, that was to bee constrayned; and so for that time the insatiable couetousnesse of the enemies, to catch other mens goodes, was made frustrate. Will put against the Cleargy for their temporalities.

The eleuenth of Nouember, Robert Vere, Earle of Oxford, was made Marquesse of Diuelin in Ireland, and the king gaue him lands to the value of a thousand markes by yéere, that belonged the Lord Audley; he also made him Marques of Diuelin in Ireland.

Lord

Lord Iustice of Chester, he gaue to him the Castell of Flint in Wales, and also he gaue to him I. of Britons sonne and heire to Charles de Bloys a prisoner, for whom he had 20000. pounds. Th. of Woodstocke was made D. of Glocester, and his brother Edmond Earle of Cambridge, Duke of Yorke. Michael de la Poole Chancellor of England, was made Earle of Suffolke, and had giuen him by the king a thousand markes by the yéere. In the Parliament the Earle of March Mortimer, was proclaimed heire apparant to the Crowne, which Earle was shortly after slain in Ireland by the wilde Irish. Also, king Richard at the earnest request of the Bishops, restored to the Bishop of Norwich his temporalties which he had holden from him many yéres. K. Richard with Quéene Anne his wife, kept their Christmas at Eltham, whither came to him Lion king of Ermony, vnder pretence to reforme peace betwirt the kings of England and of Fraunce, but what his comming profited, hée onely vnderstood, for beside innumerable giftes that hée receiued of the king & of the nobles, the king lying in the Royal at the Quéenes wardrop in London, granted to him a Charter of a thousand pounds by yére during his life. Hée was (as hée affirmed) chased out of his Realme by the Tartarians, and for that cause he got great giftes of the Christian Princes. About the feast of Easter, Iohn Duke of Lancaster, with the Ladie Constance his wife and a great company of Knights, Esquiers, and Archers came to take their leaue of the King and Quéene, at whose departing the King gaue to the Duke a crowne of gold, and the Quéene gaue another like crowne of golde to the Dutches, moreouer the King commaunded his people to call them King and Quéene of Spayne, and giue them kingly honour. And shortly after the Duke prepareth to go into Spayne, which was due to him by the inheritable right of his wife the Ladie Constance, daughter sometime to Peter King of Castile and Lion, so that now he meant to chalenge it eyther with consent of the inhabitantes, or by law of Armes. Hée with a great power toke the seas at Plimmouth, and landed in Spayne, at the Hauen of Groyne, on the éeuen of S. Laurence, with all his Nauie in safety.

Michael de la Poole Chancellor, made Earle of Suffolke.

Lib. Pet. col.

1386.

The king of Ermony came into England.

John Duke of Lancaster king of Spain

Hée had with him twentie thousand chosen people, of whom was 2000. armed men, and 8000. Archers. Hée appointed for Admirall of his whole fléete, Th. Percy, sir Iohn Holland brother to King Richard by the mothers side after created Earle of Huntington, and had married one of the Dukes daughters, was ordained Constable of the hoste, sir Richard Burghley marshall, and after him sir Thomas Moleneaux was marshall, sir Iohn Marmion Chamberlaine, &c.

Henry Percy went to Calais.

This yére rumours were raised of the French kings purpose to besiege Calais, many valiant men therefore were sent out of England to resist his force, among whom was sir Henry Percy, a young Gentleman, in whom the prowse of all prowesse and chiualry did shine, which after hée had stayed about Calais idely taking indignation, declared that hée hated such idlenesse, and before this, whilest he was Captaine of Berwicke, hée compelled the vnquiet Scots to be quiet, for which cause they called him Henry Hotespurre: this Henry assembling his companions, maketh inuasion vpon them about

Turwine,

Tarwine, and else-where in Picardie, taketh prayes, exercising laudable facts, and when he vnderstood that the French king meant not to besiege Caleis, but rather to inuade England, he returnes home, that he might heere incounter him.

The Londoners vnderstanding that the French king had got together a great Nauie, assembled an armie, and set his purpose firmely to come into England, they trembling like Leuerets, feareful as Mise, seeke starting holes to hide themselues in, euen as if the Citie were now to be taken, and they that in times past bragged they would blow all the Frenchmen out of England, hearing now a vaine rumour of the enemies comming, they runne to the walles, breake downe the houses adioyning, destroy and lay them flat, and do all things in great feare, not one Frenchman yet hauing set foote on shipbord, what would they haue done, if the battell had beene at hand, and the weapons ouer their heads? *An. reg. 10.* The Londoners in great feare without a cause.

About the feast of S. Michaell the nobles came to the Parliament at London with great numbers of armed men, to the end they might be ready to withstand the Frenchmen, who were supposed to be comming. Michael de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, and Chancellor of England, caused to be called almost forth of euery part of the Realme men of armes and archers vnto the marches about London, that being ready they might beate backe the Frenchmen with their king, if they had come. Rochester bridge was beaten downe by the Londoners, to be the more surer. But being wearied with long watting they were at the length sent home againe, with great misery for want of money to buy them victuals. Rochester bridge beaten downe.

In this Parliament Iohn Fordham Bishop of Durham was discharged of the Treasurership, and in his place was set Iohn Gilbert a Frier preacher, Bishop of Hereford. Also Michaell de la Pole was put from his Chancellorship, and in his place was set Thomas Arundale Bishop of Ely, by consent of the whole Parliament. This being done, Michaell de la Pole was charged with many crimes, & committed to prison in Windsore Castell, from whence hee was soone deliuered by the king: all the possessions of de la Pole purchased whilest he was Chancellor to the yearly value of 1000. pounds, were for euer by iudgement of the parliament, confiscate to the kings coffers, & further to restore to the king to the value of 12000. pounds which he had gained by lingering his affairs, as they said. They chose also 13. Lords which should haue the ouersight vnder the K. of the whole realm. Of which three were the new officers, to wit, the B. of Ely Chancellor, the Bishop of Hereford Treasurer, and sir Iohn Waltham keeper of the priuy seale, and 10. other which were, VVilliam Archbishop of Canterbury, Alexander Archbishop of Yorke, Edm. Langley D. of Yorke, Thomas of Woodstocke, Duke of Glocester, VVilliam VVikham, Bishop of Winchester, Thomas Bishop of Ereeter, Nicholas Abbot of Waltham, Richard Earle of Arundell, Iohn Lord Cobham, sir Richard Scrope, and sir Io. Curose knights, to these they gaue full power to determine causes, from the time of king Edward the third, vntill that present, as well within the Realme, as without, &c. They granted to the king a tenth of the Cleargy, 13. gouernors of the Realme.

and a fiftéenth of the Laytie: they granted him 2.s. of euery Tunne of Wine comming into the Realme, and of euery pound of merchandiſe going out or comming in 12.d. Woll, leather, and fell, excepted.

The French kings comming into England hindered.

The French king in the meane time, ſtaid in Flanders, readie to ſpoyle the Realme of England, if God had not ſtopped his purpoſe; from the firſt of Auguſt, till the Euen of All-Saints, there neuer blew winde for his paſſage, but onely for a fewe houres of that verie Euen, the wind riſing, they loſed anchors, hoyſed vp ſailes, and ſet forth of the hauen, but when all the ſhips were on the ſea 20. miles from the hauen, the winde came contrary, droue them backe, that diuers of their veſſels entring the hauen of Sluce were broken, by which occaſion England was deliuered out of daunger, and the French king returned home. The number of his ſhips in that Nauy were reckoned 1200. Froiſart ſaith, the ſhips were 1287. he had there with him of Dukes, 16. of Earles, 26. of Knights, 3600. and of fighting men, 100000. K. Richard with his wife Quéene Anne and the Bohemians as he had béene accuſtomed, kept his Chriſtmas very ſolemnly at Weſtminſter.

1387. After Chriſtmas, William Beauchampe tooke 14. ſhips of the French king, going toward Sluce, whereof one was laden for the moſt part with horſes, and an other with torches of ware, and ſuch other neceſſaries, which the French king had prepared for his entrance into England.

Barley ſolde for xii.d. the quarter.

In the beginning of this yéere, at Leiceſter an hundred quarters of Barley, were ſold for an hundred ſhillings.

About the beginning of March, according to the decrée of the late Parliament, Richard Earle of Arundell, Admirall of the fléete adioyning vnto him, the E. of Deuonſhire, & Thomas Mowbrey E. of Nottingham, went to the ſea in a happy houre, for within a ſmall time they met with their enemies on the Vigill of our Lady the Annunciation; a great Nauy of Flanders, France, and Spayne, fraught with men of warre, and diuers engins, was diſcouered; with whom the Earles encountred, & tooke of them 100. ſhips and more, the which contained xix. M. tuns of wine, which they brought to diuers parts of England, whereby wine was then ſold for thirteen ſhillings foure pence the tunne.

Rochell wine taken.

Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland forſooke his wife, a young Lady noble and faire, borne of the Lady Iſabell, daughter to the noble K. Edward, & maried an other that came with Quéene Anne forth of Boheme: ſhe was called in the vulgar tongue of her countrey Lancecrona. The Lordes tooke indignation herewith, eſpecially the Duke of Gloceſter, vncle to the yong Lady that was forſaken. The Duke of Ireland ſtudied how to take the Duke of Gloceſter out of the way. Eaſter was now paſt, the time in which the Duke of Irelād ſhould haue tranſported into Ireland, but leaſt there ſhould be too much ſtur in the Realme among the Lords, the king as it were to bring him to the water ſide, goeth with him into Wales, as not to leaue him, but there to kéepe him, that they might deuiſe how to take away the D. of Gloceſter, the Earles of Arundell, Warwike, Darby, and Nottingham, with other. There were with them the Earle of Suffolk, Michael at Pole, Robert Triſilian Juſtice, and many other, which no more ſpitefully then the D. of Ireland, conſpired the death

of

of the saide noble men. After a great time was passed, the king, as if the Duke of Irelands iourney had beene forgotten, returned with him and the other forth of Wales, to the Castell of Nottingham, there to treat of the death of the saide noble men: there therfore he sent for diuers from London, whom he knew would be ready to which way soeuer they should be moued: he called thither also al ỹ Sherifs & Iustices of the realme, & there interdicted the Lords of many crimes which the king had imagined against them. In the mean time the rumour of this doing came to the Lords eares, whereupon first of all the kings vncle, the Duke of Glocester, that he might mitigate the kings displeasure, before the Bishop of London, and many other nobles, swearing vpon the Euangelists, toke it vpon his oath, that he neuer had imagined any thing to the kings hinderance, or done any thing to his displeasure, except that he had not giuen good countenance to the Duke of Ireland, nor would hereafter giue him any, who had dishonested his kinswoman, the which he firmely had determined to reuenge. *Anno reg. 11.*

The Duke of Glocester calling together secretly the Earles of Arundell, Warwike, and Darby, that were in like danger of condemnation, if they prouided not the more spedily, he discouered to them the matter: they therefore gathered their armies together, determine to talke with the king vpon the premises. Contrarily the king for his party did deliberate how he might take each of them by themselues out of the way, and first he sent to the Castell of Rigate, where the Earle of Arundell lay, the Earle of Northumberland with many other to arrest him, who perceiuing a great number of men of warre about him, fearing to doe that he was commaunded, departed without doing his errand for which he came. After whom, there were sent many that by night should haue taken him, or haue slaine him, but a messenger sent from the Duke of Glocester, preuented their comming, that caused him to ride all night, so that in the morning he was come to Haringey, hauing passed with his army thirtie miles, not without great trauaile, where he found assembled the Duke of Glocester & the Earle of Warwike, with a great power of men. The king being enformed of this assembly in Harnesey woode, as is said, demaunded of his familiars what was to be done in this case, but in the ende, by the mediation of them that came betwirt them, the matter was brought to this issue, that the Lords should come to Westminster to receiue answere before the king of those things, the bishop of Ely, with many other men of worthy credite, taking an oth for the kings part, that no fraud, deceit, or perill, should be prepared. When the Lords had prepared themselues according to the couenant, the foresaid mediators for peace sent them word, that treason was deuised by an ambush laid for them, in a place called the Mewes, neere to Charing Crosse, and therfore willed them not to come, but with sure hand, whereupon they stayed there: and the king demaunding why the Lords kept not couenant, the Bishop of Ely answered, because (saith he) there is an ambush laid of a thousand armed men or more, in such a place, contrary to the couenant, and therefore they neither come, nor repute you to be faithfull: the king moued forthwith, sware he knew of no such thing, and therefore commaunded

maunded the ſheriffes of London, that going to the Iewes, they ſhould kill, if they found any aſſembled there for that cauſe; but Thomas Triuet, and Nicholas Brembar knights, had ſecretly ſent away the armed men to London: the king therfore ſent again to the Lords, who ſtraightwaies came to Weſtminſter with a ſtrong power, againſt whoſe comming, the king adorning him ſelfe with kingly robes, with crowne and ſcepter, entreth Weſtminſter hall, where the Biſhop of Ely Lord Chancellor, ſpeaking for the king, demanded the cauſe of their aſſembling of ſuch a power, whereunto the Lords anſwered, that it was done for the kings profit, and the realmes, to plucke from him the traitors which he kept about him, whom they named to be Robert de Vere D. of Ireland, Alexander Neuell Archbiſhop of Yorke, Michaell at Pole Earle of Suffolke, Robert Triſilian a falſe Iuſtice, Nicholas Brembar a falſe knight of London, and thereupon they threw downe their gloues, ſwearing that they would proſecute it by battell: nay, ſaith the king, it ſhall not be ſo, but in the next parliament which was appointed to be holden the morrow after the purification of our Ladie, all this was pacified for that time.

Strange likeneſſe of fire.

Henry of Leiceſter.

A manner of exhalation in likeneſſe of fire, appeared in the night in many places of England, which went with men as they went, and ſtaied as they did, ſometime like a wheele, ſometime like a barrell, ſometime like a timberlogge, but when many went together, it appeared to be farre off.

The Lords departing from the king notwithſtanding kept together, which ſéemed great wiſedome in them, for the Duke of Ireland in the parts of Cheſter & Wales, had aſſembled a great number, whoſe Captaine was the Conſtable of Cheſter, Thomas Moleneux, a man of great wealth, and hardy. The Duke of Ireland with ſuch a multitude haſted towards London, that ioining with the Londoners, he might make them both as it were an inuincible army. But the Duke of Ireland riding forth in ſtately and glorious array with the army of 5000. men, thinking none durſt haue encountred him: Neuertheleſſe in the vigill of S. Thomas the Apoſtle, when he came to Radcote bridge in Oxfordſhire nére vnto Farendon vpon Thamis, not paſt foure miles from Cheping Norton, which bridge, if he could haue paſſed, he had béene out of danger, ſodainly, as he looked on the one ſide, he beheld where the hoſt of the Lords was ready not farre from them tarrying his comming, in the midſt of the valley, with which ſight his heart ſtraight waies failed: and he ſaid, friends I muſt flie, for a greater puiſſance ſéemeth to be yonder, againſt you they haue no quarrell, ſo that I being ſhifted away, ye ſhal eſcape wel ynough, and forth with ſetting ſpurres to his horſe, he fléeth away. There was then the foreſaid Thomas Moleneux that prepared himſelfe to the battell, for the Lordes were not yet all come to that place, who when he had fought a while, being wearied, entred the riuer which was there by. Among other, ſir Thomas Mortimer knight exhorted him to come vp, or elſe he would ſhote him through in the riuer: if I doe come vp ſaith Thomas Moleneux, wilt thou ſaue my life? I doe make no ſuch promiſe (ſaith hée) but eyther come vp, or thou ſhalt ſtraight die for it. To whom he anſwered, ſuffer me to come vp and let mée fight eyther with thée or ſome other, and die like a man. As hée came vp, the knight

Battell at Radcot bridge

Thomas Moleneux ſlaine.

caught

caught him by the helmet, and plucked it off his head, and straight waies with his dagger stroke him into the braines.

The Duke of Ireland fleeing, came to the riuer of Thamis, and forced his horse to enter, in the which being made of an horseman a swimmer, he got to the other side: his horse, helmet, gantlets and breast-plate came to the share of the Lords, so that he was thought long after to be drowned, but he got ouer into Flaunders.

The Archbishop of Yorke fled, and Robert Trisilian, and Michael de la Poole got him to Calcis. The Lords being returned from the battell, which had bene nere to Burford, fast by Bablack, made great ioy for the ouerthrow of their enemies, but much lamented the escape of the Duke of Ireland. Archbishop of Yorke fled the Realme.

A head of earth was made at Oxford by Art of Necromancie, that at a time appointed spake these words, *Caput decidetur*, The head shall be cut off: *Caput eleuabitur*, The head shall be lift vp: *Pedes eleuabuntur supra caput*, The feete shall be lift aboue the head.

Dissension fell at Oxford betweene the Southerne and Welchmen on the one part, and Northerne Schollers on the other, where-through many were slaine, and the more part went to their countries, wherefore the Chancellor was depriued, and Doctor Nicholas Brightwell Deane of Newarke in Leicester was made Chancellor. Dissention at Oxford betweene the Southerne & Northren Schollers.

The Lords hasted to London, where the king kept his Christmasse in the Tower of London, they hauing assembled an armie of nere hand fortie thousand the morrow after Christmasse day came to London, and mustred in the fields, where they might be seene of them in the Tower: the Londoners were then in great feare, weying diuers perilles as the kings displeasure, if they opened their gates to the Lords, and if they shut them forth, the indignation of the vndiscrete multitude. 1388. The Lords came to London.

The Duke of Gloucester with other entred the Tower, and hauing a little talke with the king, they recited the conspiracie, whereby they had bene indited, and they shewed forth also the letters, which he had sent vnto the Duke of Ireland, that he should assemble an armie to their destruction, &c. in the end the king promised on the next morow to come to Westminster, and there to intreat at large for reformation of all matters. The Lords come to the K. being then in the Tower of London. The K. commeth to Westminster.

In the morning the king came to Westminster, where, after a little talke, the nobles said that for his honour and commoditie of his kingdome it was behouefull, that the traitors, whisperers, flatterers, and vnprofitable people were remoued out of place, and that others might bee placed in their roomes.

The king, although sore against his mind, when he saw how ỹ Lords were bent, and that hee wanted power to withstand them, condescended to do what they would haue him, & to conclude, the king at the request of the Lords commaunded the suspected persons of his court, & family to be awarded to prison, to answere at the next Parliament, which persons were sir Simon Burghley, sir VVilliam Elmham, sir Nicholas Dagworth, sir Iohn Golefare, which was not yet returned out of Fraunce, all these being knights, Richard Clifford, and a Sir Simon Burghley and many other committed to prison.

Preest called Nicholas Slake Deane of the kings Chappell were appointed to Nottingham Castel. To the Castell of Douer were appointed sir Iohn Beauchampe of Holt Steward of the kings house, sir Thomas Triuet, sir Iohn Salisburie, and Iohn Loncolne. To the Castell of Bristow Iames Berners, and Richard Medford Clearke. To the Castell of Rochester was appointed Alexander Neuell Archbishop of Yorke, but he was escaped as ye haue heard, and Michaell de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, which was fled. To the Castell of Gloucester were deputed Robert Trisilian chiefe Iustice of England, which was not yet found, and Nicholas Brembar, who found sureties to stand to the lawes of the Realme.

Many persons remoued out of the kings Court.

These were remoued also from the Court, but not sent to prison, Iohn Fordham Bishop of Durham, the Lord Beamont, Lord William de la Soutch of Harnewoorth, the Lord Burnell, sir Iohn Louell, the Lord Thomas Camoys, Thomas the sonne of the Lord Clifford, with Baldwin Burforde, Thomas Russhoke a Frier, Bishoppe of Chichester the Kings Confessour, Aubery de Vere, Richard Aberbery, Iohn VVorth, the Ladie Maine, the Ladie Poines, and the Ladie Molineaux, all which were to answeare at the nert Parliament.

Parliament that wrought wonders.

The third day of Februarie, the Parliament began at Westminster, which Parliament continued till the 13. of June nert following, except from the Vigill of Palme sonday vntill the Octaues of Easter, this Parliament was named the Parliament that wrought wonders. The Lords came to this Parliament with a sufficient army for their owne sureties. The first day of this Parliament were arrested as they sate in their places, all the Iustices, except sir VVilliam Skipwith, and sir Roger Fulthorpe, sir Robert Belknape, sir Iohn Carey, sir Iohn Holte, sir VVilliam Borow, and Iohn Alecton the Kinges Serieant at Lawe, all these were sent to the Tower, and there kept in seuerall places.

The Iustices arrested as they sate in Parliament.

The cause was, for that where in the last Parliament diuers Lords were made gouernours of the Realme, both by assent of the Parliament, and also by the aduice and counsel of all the Iustices, and yet notwithstanding, the said Iustices in a counsel holden at Nottingham, did the contrary, whereupon it was now determined that they should make answere to their doings. Moreouer, in the beginning of this Parliament were openly called, Robert Vere Duke of Ireland, Alexander Neuel Archbishop of Yorke, Michael de la Pole Earle of Suffolk, sir Robert Trisilian Lord chiefe Iustice of England, & Nicholas Brembar, whom the king had oft times made Maior of London against the minde of the Citizens, to answere before Thomas of Woodstocke Duke of Gloucester, Richard Earle of Arundell, Thomas Beauchampe Earle of Warwicke, Henry Earle of Darby, & Thomas Earle of Nottingham, vpon certain articles of high treason, which these Lords did charge them with: and forasmuch as none of thē appeared, it was ordained by the whole assent of the Parliament, that they should be banished for euer, and their lands and goods to be forfeited and seized into the kings hands, their landes entailed excepted, which should descend to their heires. The processe against those fiue Lords

Rob. de Vere Duke of Ireland the Archbishop of Yorke and other banished.

comprised

compriſed in eight and thirtie articles, I ouerpaſſe in this place, and haue ſet them downe in my larger Chronicle.

The foreſaid Lords being fled as is aforeſaid, Robert Triſilian a Cornifh-man, Lord chiefe Iuſtice to the King, had hid himſelfe in an Apothecaries houſe in the Sanctuary neere to the gate of Weſtminſter, where he might ſée the Lords going to the Parliament, and comming forth thereby to learne what was done, for all his life time he did all things cloſely, but now his craft being eſpied was turned to great folly. For on Wedneſday the ſeuenteenth of Februarie he was betraied of his owne ſeruant, & about eleuen of the clocke before noone, being taken by the Duke of Glocester, and in the Parliament preſented, ſo that the ſame day in the after noone hée was drawen to Tyborne from the Tower of London through the Citie, and there had his throat cut, and his bodie was buried in the gray Friers Church at London. This man had diſfigured himſelfe, as if he had béene a poore weake man, in a frize coat, all old and torne, and had artificially made himſelfe a long beard, ſuch as they called a Paris beard, and had defiled his face, to the end he might not be knowen but by his ſpeach. On the morrow, was executed ſir Nicholas Brembar, who had done many oppreſſions, and cauſed ſeditions in the Citie, of whom it was ſaid, that whileſt he was in full authoritie of Maioralitie, he cauſed a common payre of Stocks in euery ward, and a common Are to be made to behead all ſuch as ſhould be againſt him, and it was further ſaid, that hée had indited 8000. and more of the beſt and greateſt of the Citie, but it was ſaid that the ſaid Nicholas was beheaded with the ſame Are he had prepared for other: this man if hée had liued, had béene created Duke of Troy, or of London by the name of Troy.

R Triſilian chiefe Iuſtice taken and executed at Tyborne.

Sir Nicholas Brembar executed.

On the fourth of March Thomas Vske, Vnderſhrine of London, and Iohn Blake Eſquire, one of the kings houſehold, were drawne from the Tower to Tyborne and there hanged and beheaded, the head of Thomas Vske was ſet vp ouer Newgate, to the oprobry of his parents, which inhabited thereby. The goods of the Biſhop of Chicheſter were confiſcate, and on the eleuenth of March the Parliament was prorogued vnto the quinden of Paſch.

The fift day of May ſir Simon Burghley Conſtable of Douer, and Chamberlaine to the King, an intollerable proud man and a great oppreſſor of the poore, &c. was condemned of treaſon, but the King diſpenſed for his drawing and hanging, ſo that he was with his hands bound behinde him led through the Citie of London, and had his head ſtricken off vpon the Tower hill on the fiftéenth day of May, his heires were by Henry the fourth reſtored in blood and inheritance, except the landes giuen to the new Abbey on the Tower hill, to S. Stephens at Weſtminſter, and to the Friers at Langley. This man might by inheritance diſpend twentie markes by yéere, but in few yéeres he ſo grew in ſeruice of the king, that he attained to the value of 3000. markes of yéerely reuenues, of whom it was ſaid that he gaue at Chriſtmaſſe for liueries of Knights and Eſquires, yeomen and others as well of the kings court as of his owne family, ſometime fortie clothes, ſometime 160. clothes, and ſometime 220. of great price, as of Scarlet, &c.

Simon Burghley beheaded.

Also on the twelfth of May Iohn Beauchampe of Holt Lord steward of the kings house, whom the king had thought to haue made Baron of Bridgenorth, was condemned to be drawne, and hanged, but by the kings fauour, he lost his head on the Tower hill.

Sir Iohn Bernes knight of the kings Court, a luskie young man, was in the same place beheaded. Sir Iohn Salisburie knight was drawne from the Tower to Tiborne, and there hanged.

There were condemned also in the same Parliament these Iustices, sir Ro. Belknape, sir Iohn Carre, sir Iohn Holte, sir Roger Fulthorpe, and sir VVilliam Brough, Iohn Locton Serieant at the Lawe, Richard Gray Iustices, with the Lords before fled, were all banished.

Subsidy of wool.

There was granted to the king, of the Cleargie halfe a tenth, and of the Laity halfe a fiftéenth, and of the merchants twelue pence of the pound, three shillings of the tunne, three and fifty shillings foure pence of the sacke of wool. The Duke of Glocester, and sir Iohn Cobham, asked pardon of the Abbot of Westminster for violence done in the sanctuarie of Westminster, in the taking of the Iustice Trisilian. The last saue one of May there were deliuered out of the Tower VV. Elmham, T. Triuet, and Nicholas Dagworth knightes. Also the first of June, Iohn Holland the kings brother was created Earle of Huntington.

King Richard renewed the oth which he had taken at his coronation.

The third day of June, the king in the Church of Westminster renued the oath, which he toke when he was crowned, and all the Lords sware homage and fealtie to him, and all the Bishops did excommunicate all those that would goe about to hinder the Statutes of this last Parliament, or the great Charter.

After Whitsontide Richard Earle of Arundale, with a company of valiant men went to the sea, and fought with certaine ships of his enemies, taking, drowning, or burning foure score ships, he entred into the Ile of Beas, which he spoyled and brent. *An. reg.* 12.

The Scots inuade the North parts of England.

The same yéere the Scots prepared themselues that as soone as the truce was expired they might be readie to inuade the North parts, and with a great army entred England, committing great slaughters of people and toke booties in euery place, and led away many prisoners, and burned Townes, and approched to Newcastell vpon Tine, and pight their tentes not farre from thence. There was then in the same towne sir Henry Percy the younger, and sir Ralph his brother, both desirous of warlike renowme, and sore enemies vnto the Scots. This sir Henry came vpon thē on the sodain, & assailed them in the campe, making great slaughter of them. VVilliam or Iames Dowglas, after Froisart, also chiefe Captaine of the Scottes, beholding the thing that a thousand times he had wished, that is, sir Henry Percy within his campe, rideth against him, but was slaine by the saide Henry; then commeth the Earle of Dunbarre with an excessiue number of Scottes, & and toke the saide Henry with his brother Ralph, slaying many Englishmen to the number of 1100. in that place, at the which time there were in number 30000. put to flight, and toke the water at Otterborne: but yet the Scottes lost

Battell at Otterborne.

many

many of their best men. This battell was at Otterborne, the sorest fought that euer was betweene Englishmen and Scots, saith Froisart. John Belandine. Iohn Maior. Iohn Froisart. Tho. Rudborne.

Thomas Arundell Bishop of Ely, brother to Iohn and Richard Earles of Arundell and sonne to Richard Arundell was translated to the Archbishoprick of Yorke. This Thomas Arundell, late Bishop of Ely foure téene yéeres, fiue months, and 18. dayes. He beautifully builded anew the palace at Ely: he likewise builded his manors in diuers places, especially in Holborne by London, he did not onely repaire, but rather new builded his manor place there; and also augmented it with a very large port, gate-house, or forefront toward the stréete or high way: he gaue to the Church of Ely, a Table guilt, set with precious stones to the value of 200. markes. Iohn Fordham was translated from Durham to Ely, and Walter Skirlaw Bishop of Bathe was translated to Durham, Richard Scrope was made Bishop of Chester, Ralph Erkam translated from Salisbury to Bathe: and Iohn Waltham Clearke of the priuie seale was made Bishop of Salisbury. Bishops translated.

The ninth day of September a Parliament began at Cambridge, in the which were diuers Statutes ordeined, especially one for labourers. Parliament at Cambridge.

In the time of this Parliament, to wit, on the first day of October, as Sir Thomas Triuet going with the King to his lodging at Barnewell beside Cambridge, forced his horse too much with the spurre, his horse falleth and breaketh in a manner all the inner parts of his rider, who yet liued vntill the next morrowe, which time was giuen him of God to repentance, if he would accept it, for he was a man of an hauty stomacke, and not beloued of the common people. Thomas Triuet slaine by a fall off his horse.

Alexander Neuell, after his banishment, was by Pope Vrban translated to the sea of S. Andrew in Scotland, but serued in Louaine in place of a parish priest, by the space of three yéeres before his death, where in the fift yéere of his exile he died, and was buried in the Carmelite Friars there. Archbishop of Yorke, translated to Saint Andrewes in Scotland.

King Richard kept his Christmasse in solemne maner at Woodstocke with his Quéene Anne. 1389.

About the beginning of Lent, the Scots entring the west parts of England destroying men, women and children, sucking babes, and such as lay in childe-bed, in the countie of Gildesland in the dominion of the Lord Dacres, and shutting vp of doores of houses full of people, they burnt them vp without mercie to the number of two hundred in some one house. Against these was sent Thomas Mowbray Earle of Nottingham with fiue hundred speares to reuenge their attempts, but for that his power was so small in comparison of theirs, he preuailed little against them. Crueltie of the Scottes.

On the Thursday before Easter, the Lord Beamount captaine of Carlile entred Scotland by 40. miles, and spoyled the market of Fowike, praying and spoyling at his pleasure, and led many prisoners into England.

King Richard discharged the old officers of his Court, and also his Counsellers, appointing other at his pleasure: he tooke the seale from Thomas Arundale Archbishop of Yorke, and deliuered it to William Wickam Bishop of Winchester, and made him Chancellour: the Bishop of Exceter his Treasurer, Wickam Chancellour of England.

surer, hauing taken that office from the Bishop of Hereford, and Edmond Stafford keeper of the priuie seale, and made many new officers, putting downe the olde, he remoued from off the Counsell, the Duke of Gloucester, the Earle of Warwike and other worthy men, and put in their places such as pleased him.

A truce was graunted for three yeres betwixt England and France, Iohn Clanbow Knight, and Richard Rowthal clerke taking oth before the French king.

A fight of Gnats at Shine.

A fighting among Gnats at the Kings mannour of Shine, where they were so thicke gathered, that the aire was darkened with them: they fought and made a great battell. Two parts of them being slaine, fell downe to the ground, the third part hauing got the victory flew away, no man knewe whither. The number of the dead was such that they might be swept vp with besomes and bushels filled with them.

Michael de la Poole deceased. *An. reg.* 13.

Michael at Poole somtime Earle of Suffolke, and Chancellour of England deceased at Paris in France, whose riches that he had there, came to the hands of his companion Robert de Vere that fled thither with him.

John Duke of Lancaster returned into England.

In the moneth of Nouember, Iohn Duke of Lancaster came from the partes beyond the Seas into England, after he had bidden in Spaine and Gascoigne, three yeres space, who in Spaine first tasted great misfortunes, yet in the ende brought his matters to very good case, not with the force of men, but by the fauour of God: for when he came first to the parts of Spaine with an army sufficient ynough, through want of victuals, they first died through hunger, and after through flure, so that 1000. famous knights of his Army dyed miserably, the residue leauing the Duke, fled to the French Armie.

1390. King Richard with his Quéene Anne held their Christmasse at Woodstocke, and the Duke of Lancaster in the Castell of Hertford. The same time Iohn Hastings Earle of Penbroke, as he was desirous to Iust, he was stroken about the priuie parts by the Knight that ranne against him, called Sir Iohn Saint Iohn, where he died. King Richard caused the Castle of Canterbury to be repayred, Record Towre.

Parliament at London.

In a parliament at London it was ordained that none should purchase prouisions at the Popes hands: there was graunted to the King xl. shillings of euery sacke of woll, and of the pound fiue pence.

John Duke of Lancaster made Duke of Aquitaine.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster was made Duke of Aquitaine by the rode and bonet, which the King gaue him, and Edward the Duke of Yorkes sonne was made Earle of Rutland, to whom the King gaue the Castle of Okam. The Earle of Huntington was made the Kings Chamberlaine, &c.

Ann. reg. 14 A great pestilence in the North.

A great pestilence was in the North parts of England, so that in a little space eleuen hundred were buried in the Citie of Yorke.

A merchant of Dertmouth waged the naule of shippes of the portes of his owne charges, and toke foure and thirtie shippes laden with wine, to the summe of fiftéene hundred tunne.

A variance at Oxford, be-

A wofull variaunce rose in Oxford, for the Welch and Southerne Scholers

lers assaulted the Northerne, whereby many murders were done on each side, and a field was appointed, but by the helpe of the Duke of Gloucester it was appeased, and the Welchmen banished. tweene the Southerne and Northerne Schollers.

The tenth, eleuenth and twelfth of October the King held a great court at London in the Bishops palace and a great iusting in Smithfield, to the which Court came many strangers forth of France, Almain, Zealand, and many other parts, bringing with them horses and armour, in which passtimes there was giuen first the Badge of the white Hart with golden chaines and crownes. And vpon S. Edwards day the King held his feast in his Regalibus, sitting crowned at masse with his Scepter, &c. and likewise the Quéene, and they sate likewise at the table at Kenington crowned, at which solemnitie were present the Earle of S. Paul, and his wife, Mawde Courtney sister to the King of England, and the Earle of Ostrenaunt who was made Knight of the Garter. Iusting in Smithfield.

The Duke of Gloucester toke his iourney toward Spaine, but being tossed with infortunate stormes, driuen now hither, now thither, was so farre distant of hope, that he dispaired of life, and at length after he had passed the Barbarous coasts af Denmarke, Norway and Scotland, he arriued in Northumberland, and came to the castle of Tinmouth where hauing refreshed himselfe certaine dayes he toke his iourney towards his manner of Plecy, bringing great ioy to all the kingdome. 1391.

This yéere on the 9. of July, the Sunne appeared redde through certaine thicke and filthie cloudes, giuing as it were no light from noone til the Sunne setting, & afterwards in maner for the space of 6. wéekes, cloudes did abound, about noone dayes, sometime continuing both day and night, not banishing at all. And the same time such a mortalitie increased in Norffolk, and in many other Countries, that it was not vnlike the great pestilence, for that I may keepe silence of other Cities and townes, within short time in the Citie of Norke, there were 11000. corpses buried. *Ann. reg.* 15. The Sunne appeareth red like blood. A great pestilence.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland was called home from Caleis, and was made Warden of the Marches of Scotland, and Robert Mowbrey was made Lieutenant of Caleis.

On the Friday next after the feast of all Saints, a Parliament began at London, in the which halfe a tenth, and halfe a fiftenth was graunted to the King, which money he should haue for the treatie to be had for peace with the Frenchmen, which treatie the Duke of Lancaster should procure. Also conditionally was graunted to the King, a full tenth, and a whole fiftenth, if that yéere he made any iourney against the Scots, and this was the fruite of this Parliament. A Parliament at London.

This yéere passed to poore and meane people very hard and sore for dearth of corne, now almost continued for two yéeres, whereby it came to passe, that when the time of fruits, as nuts, apples, &c. came, many people through ouer feeding thereof, caught the Flixe, and died of the same, and the death had been farre greater through famine, if the commendable diligence of Adam Baume then Maior of London had not relieued the Commons, who with Dearth of Corne, and prouision made by the Maior of London, for remedie therof.

continuall care prouided, that from the parts of beyond the Seas, corne was brought to London to ỹ reliefe of the whole realme, whereas otherwise without doubt, neither had the Countrey sufficed the Citie, nor the Citie haue holpen the countrey. To the furtherance of this good worke in relieuing the poore, the Maior and Citizens of London toke out of their Orphanes cheſt in their Guilde hall two thousand markes to buye Corne and other Victuals, from beyond the Seas, and the Aldermen ech of them laid out twentie pounds to the like purpose of buying of Corne, which was bestowed in diuers places, where the poore might buy it at an appoynted price, and such as lacked money to pay downe, to put in surety to pay in the yeare following: in the which yeare when Haruest came, the fieldes yelded plentifull increase, and so the price of Corne began to decrease.

Sir Hugh Calueley was made Warden of the Iles of Iernsey, Gernsey, Serke, Aurney, &c.

A Iew Baptized at London.

This yeare a certaine Iewe at London became a Christian, and was baptized by the name of William Piers, and had two pence the day for tearme of his life giuen him by the King, as appeareth of record in the Towre.

1392.

King Richard with Quéene Anne his wife, foure Bishops, as many Earles, the Duke of Yorke, many Lords, and fiftéene Ladies, held a royall Christmasse at Langley néere to S. Albons. The same Christmas day a Dolphin came forth of the Sea and played himselfe in the Thamis at London, to the Bridge, foreshewing happily the tempests that were to follow within a wéeke after, the which Dolphin being séene of the Citizens, and followed, was with much difficulty intercepted, & brought againe to London, shewing a spectacle to many, of the height of his body, for he was tenne foote in length. These Dolphins are fishes of the sea, that follow the voices of men, and reioyce in playing of instruments, & are wont to gather themselues at musicke. These when they play in riuers, with hasty springings or leapings doe signifie Tempest to follow. The seas containe nothing more swift nor nimble, for oftentimes with their skips, they mount ouer the sailes of ships.

A Dolphin of the Sea, came vp to London Bridge.

T. Walsingham.

The King sent to the Londoners requesting to borrow of them one thousand pound, which they stoutly denied, and also euill entreated, beate and néerhand slew a certaine Lumbard that would haue lent the King the said summe, which when the King heard, he was maruellously angried, and calling together almost all the Nobles of the land to Stamford on the fiue and twentieth day of May, he opened to them the malitiousnesse of the Londoners, and complayned of their presumption, the which noble men gaue counsell, that their insolencie should with spéede be represſed, and their pride abated. By the Kings iudgement therefore was the Maior of London and the Sheriffs, with other the best Citizens arrested to appeare at Nottingham, where on the eleuenth of June, Iohn Hinde Maior was deposed, and sent to Windsor Castle, the Sheriffes were also deposed, and sent the one to the Castle of Wallingford, the other to the Castle of Odiham, and the other Citizens to other prisons til the King with his Councell had determined what should be done with them. And there it was determined, that from thencefoorth the Londoners

The Maior of London and Sheriffes deposed and committed.

should

should not chose nor haue any Maior, but that the king should appoint one of his knights to be ruler of the Citie: their priuiledges were reuoked, their liberties disanulled, and their lawes abrogated.

The king then on the one and twentieth of June first appointed to be Warden of the Citie a certaine knight called Sir Edward de Dalingrige, but he was quickely deposed by the king, because men said he fauoured the Londoners, and Baldwin Radinton was constituted in his place. *An. reg. 16.*

In the meane time, through suite of certaine knights, but specially of the Duke of Glocester, the king is somewhat pacified, and by little and little abateth the rigour of his purpose, calling to minde the diuers honours, and the great giftes he had receiued of the Londoners, whereupon he determineth to deale more mildely with them, and to call them to some hope of grace and pardon, he sendeth commandement to them to come to Windsor, there to shewe their priuiledges, liberties and lawes, which being there shewed some of them were ratified and some condemned, but they could not obtaine the kings full fauour, till they had satisfied the king for the iniuries which was said they had done. The king at this assembly at Windsore, had got together almost all the Lords, and so great an armie, that the Londoners had cause to be afraid thereof, about the which preparation he was at great charges, for the which it was sure that the Londoners must pay. They therefore not ignoraunt that the end of these things was a money matter, submitted themselues to the kings pleasure, offering tenne thousand pound. They were yet dismissed home to returne againe, vncertaine what satisfaction and summe they should pay. *The Londoners called before the king at Windsor.*

When the Citizens were returned, and that the Nobles and other were gone home: the king hearing that the Londoners were in heauines, and dismated, he said to his men, I will goe (saith he) to London, and comfort the Citizens, and will not that they any longer despaire of my fauour, which sentence was no sooner knowen in the Citie but all men were filled with incredible ioy, so that euery of them generally determined to méete him, and to be as liberall in gifts, as they were at his coronation. The king therefore as he came from Shine in Surrey to London, with Quéene Anne his wife, on the 29. of August, the principall Citizens all in one liuery to the number of 400. horsemen rode to méete them at Wandsworth, where in most lowly wise, they submitted themselues vnto his grace, beséeching him of his speciall pardon, in all such things, as they before had offended him, and the Recorder of the Citie, in the name of the whole Citizens, instantly required him, that he would of his great bounty take such paine vpon him as to ride through his Chamber of London, to the which request he graciously consented, so he held on his iourney til he came to S. Georges Church in Southwarke, where they were receiued with procession of Robert Braybroke Bishop of London, and all the Clergie of the Citie, who conueyed them through London, the Citizens of London, men, women and children in order méeting the king at London Bridge, where he was by them presented with two faire white stéedes, trapped in cloth of golde, parted of red and white, hanged full of siluer belles, the *The king riding towards London, receiued by the Citizens.*

which

which present he thankfully receiued, and after he held on his way through the Citie toward Westminster.

And as they passed the Citie the stretes were hanged with cloth of golde, siluer and silke. The Conduite in Cheape ran with red and white Wine, and by a childe Angel-like he was presented with a very costly crowne of golde, and the Quéene with another. A table of the Trinitie in golde was giuen to the king, valued worth eight hundred pound, and another to the Quéene of S. Anne, because her name was Anne, with diuers other gifts, as horses, trappers, plate of gold and siluer, clothes of gold, silke, veluets, Basons & Ewers of golde, also golde in coyne, precious stones, and iewels, so rich, excellent, and beautifull, that the value and price might not wel be estéemed, and so the Citizens recouered their ancient customes and liberties, & then the Kings Bench from Yorke, and the Chancery from Nottingham, was returned to London. And it was graunted to them that they might chose them a Maior as before time they had done. The Londoners beléeued that by these gifts they had escaped all daunger, and that from thencefoorth they should be quiet, but they were deceiued, for they were compelled to giue the king after this 10000. pound, collected of the commons in great bitternesse of minde; for the which summe, the King became benenolent to the Citizens, and forgaue them all trespasses, by his patents dated at Westminster the 28. of Februarie, and so the troubles of the Citizens came to quietnesse; which trouble the Dolphin in Thamis at Christmasse last past did happily signifie a farre off. A fabulous booke compiled by a nameles author, but printed by William Caxton (and therefore called Caxtons Chronicle) reporteth these troubles to happen through a fray in Fléetestréete, about an horse loafe which was taken out of a Bakers basket, by a Yeoman of the Bishop of Salisburies, and that the same troubles were pacified, and their liberties were againe restored by meanes of Richard Grauesend Bishop of London, in reward whereof the Citizens repaire to the place of burial in the middle Isle of S. Pauls church, &c. But al ý is vntrue, for at this time Robert Braybroke was Bishop of London, and Richard Grauesend had bén Bishop, and deceased in the time of Edward the first, in *Anno* 1303. almost 90. yéeres before this time. After whom succéeded in the Bishoprick Ralph Baldoke, Gilbert Segraue, Richard Newport, Steuen Grauesend, Richard Wentworth, Ralph Stratford, Michael Norbroke, Simon Sudbury, William Courtney, and Robert Braybrooke that sate Bishop of London from 1381. vntill the yéere 1403.

A great fable reproued.

Moreouer the place of buriall in S. Pauls, whereunto the Maior and Citizens of London haue repayred, is of William, who was Bishop of London in the time of William Conquerour, who purchased the first Charter of the said King William, for the same Citie, as I haue before declared.

Robert de Vere Earle of Oxford died in great miserie beyond sea.

Robert de Vere, sometime Earle of Oxford, that by many degrées had mounted to the name of Duke of Ireland, died at Louaine in great anguish of mind, and miserable penury, which yong gentleman was apt to al offices of worthinesse, if in his childhoode he had not wanted discipline.

1392. After the feast of Christmasse, a Parliament was holden at Winchester, in the

the which was graunted to the King by the Cleargie halfe a tenth, and by the commons halfe a fifteene, for the expences of the Duke of Lancaſter and Gloceſter, that were to goe into Fraunce to treate a peace betweene the kingdomes. Parliament at Winchester.

At the which time the French king, whileſt that he was daunſing in the hal with 4. Knights of his houſhold, being diſguiſed like a wilde man, hauing a ſhort garment about him dreſſed with pitch and roſen, that the flare which was faſtened to his ſtrait coate might the better abide, and ſhewit ſelfe more plaine, he had beene ſodainly burned to death (if good helpe had not chaunced) through the falſhode of the Duke his brother that did aſpire the kingdome, for as the King led the daunce, one that was hired thereto, bowing downe his torch, ſet fire on the towe, which being kindled burnt the ſtrait garment, where finding matter meete to feede on, to wit pitch and roſen, burnt ſo ſpitefully, but a Lady ſeeing ſuch daunger towards the kings perſon, ranne to him, and pulled him from the daunce, by which meanes the King was ſaued, but the foure Knights could not by any meanes be holpen till their ſkinnes and fleſh were ſcolpered, and they yeelded vp the Ghoſt. The French King in danger to be burnt by meanes of his traiterous brother.

This yeere the Kings Bench and Chaunceríe were remoued from London to Yorke, for the Archbiſhop of Yorke being Lord Chancellour did with the commoditie of his Citie, but the noueltie laſted not long, for with the ſame facilitie that they were remoued to Yorke, they were brought backe againe to London. Kings bench and Chancery remoued from London to Yorke.

The ſame yeere Aubery de Vere vncle and heire to Robert the late Duke of Ireland was reſtored in blood, and created Earle of Oxford. Iohn Deuerois, Knight Conſtable of Douer, and the Kings ſteward, died ſodainly, in whoſe roume, Thomas Percy, that before was vice-chamberlaine, was made Lord Steward, and Thomas Beamound was made conſtable of Douer, and William Scrope was made vice Chamberlaine, who about ỹ ſame time bought of William Montacute Earle of Saliſbury the Ile of Man, with the regality thereof, for the Lord of this Iland is called King, to whom it was lawfull to weare a crowne of gold, Thomas Percy the yonger was made warden of Burdeaux. *An. reg.* 17. Will. Scrope purchaſed the Ile of Man.

The Dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter paſſed ouer into France, to make ſomewhat of the truce, or to conclude a finall peace betwixt the kingdomes: but it was not ſo brought to paſſe, as it was wiſhed, by reaſon of the French Kings ſickneſſe.

In September, lightnings and thunders, in many places of England did much hurt, but eſpecially in Cambridge-ſhire, the ſame brent houſes and corne neere to Tollewoorke, and in the towne it brent terribly. Great thundering and lightning.

Such aboundance of water fell in October, that at Bury in Suffolke, the Church was full of water, & at Newmarket it bare downe walles of houſes, ſo that men and women hardly eſcaped drowning. The ſame yeere Lord Tho. de Ros, as he returned forth of the Holy land, in ỹ city of Paphos in the Ile of Cyprus, through intemperancy of the aire departed this life there. In the Octaues of S. Hilary, a Parliament was holden at London, in which a Subſidie was demaunded for the King that was minded to go into Ireland, wherefore Great water floods. 1393. Parliament at London.

the

the Clergie graunted to him a full tenth if he would passe thither, and if he went not, they graunted him but halfe a tenth. Certaine Lords of Scotland came into England to get worship by force of armes. The Earle of Marre challenged the Earle of Nottingham, to iust with him, and so they rode together certaine courses, but not the full chalenge, for the Earle of Marre was cast both horse and man, and two of his ribbes broken with the fall, so that he was borne out of Smithfield, and conueyed toward Scotland, but died by the way at Yorke. Sir William Darrel Knight, the Kings banner-bearer of Scotland, chalenged Sir Pierce Courtney Knight the kings banner-bearer of England, and when they had run certaine courses, they gaue ouer without conclusion of victorie. Then Cockborne Esquire of Scotland challenged Sir Nicholas Hawberke Knight, and rode fiue courses, but Cockborne was borne ouer horse and man. The seuenth of June Quéne Anne died at Shine in Southery, and was buried at Westminster. The king toke her death so heauily, that besides cursing the place where she died, he did also for anger throwe downe the buildings vnto the which the former Kings being wearied of the Citie, were wont for pleasure to resort.

Iusting in Smithfield.

Queene Anne deceased.

An. reg. 18.

Thus the king, the Duke of Lancaster, and his sonne the Earle of Darbie, were widowers all at one time: for the Lady Constance Dutchesse of Lancaster, daughter to Peter King of Spaine, was but lately deceased, whilest the Duke her husband was in France. And the same time also deceased the Countesse of Darby, wife to Henry Earle of Darby. Moreouer, this yéere deceased Isabel Dutches of Yorke, that was halfe sister to the Dutches of Lancaster, being borne of one mother, and she was buried at Langley in the Frier Church there by the Kings commandement.

Constance Dutchesse of Lancastar deceased.

Also this yéere deceased that famous Knight, knowen to the world, Sir Iohn Hawkwood, whose déedes (saith Thomas Walsingham) require a speciall treatise. I finde by good record, that this Iohn Hawkwood was borne in Esser in the parish of Hingham Sibel, the sonne of Gilbert de Hawkwood Tanner, in his youth he was bound as an apprentice with a Taylor in the citie of London, and from thence was prest in the musters for seruice of King Edward the third in the warres of France, wherein he serued first as a common souldier in the rome of an Archer. Afterward he was made a captaine and had some charge committed vnto him, which he so well performed, as he was aduanced to the order of knighthood, and stood in good possibilitie to haue growne to great preferment by those warres if they had indured: for when the peace was concluded at Bretaine, beside Chartiers in the yéere of Christ 1360. he was then a poore knight, and had reaped small commoditie of those warres. Wherfore he ioyned himselfe with the companies, called the late commers, who assembled in great numbers, a fiue or sixe thousand English horsemen, and séeking after better gaine, made great spoyle of all the East parts of the kingdome of France, passing through Champaine, Burgondy, and Damphin, euen to the very gates of Auignon in Prouence, where Clement the seuenth, Bishop of Rome, then held his residence and court of Cardinalles: from whence hee departed into Lombardy, hauing the leading of that part of the companies

Sir Iohn Hawkwood his acts, life and death.

companies, which was called the white bande, with whom he serued valiantly in the warres of Iohn Marques of Mountferrato. But when Leonel Duke of Clarence sonne to Edward the 3. King of England came into Italy, to marry the Lady Violent, daughter of Galeasius, Viscount Lord of Millaine, he forsoke that seruice and attended the Duke to that marriage.

At which time Barnabe the brother of Galeasius had great warres with the territorie of the state of Mantua, and obtayned of the Duke of Clarence, that Sir Iohn Hawkwood being a Captaine, and principall man of his retinue might come to ayde him in his warres, for Barnabe being himselfe a warlike Prince, had a great desire to make some triall of the discipline and prowesse of the Englishmen. Sir Iohn Hawkwood therefore hauing in sundrie skirmishes with great courage, and consideration happily taken aduantageable occasions of victorie, and the Englishmen demeaning themselues worthily with their bowes and arrowes, did drawe Barnabe into that admiration of them, that he commended the discipline of this nation, and greatly regarded the prowes and discretion of Sir Iohn Hawkwood. And in short time after, to wit, the first yeere of King Richard, good liking increasing betweene them by entercourse of fauours and courtesies, he desired to haue him his sonne in lawe, and gaue him in marriage the Ladie Domnia his daughter, whom he had begotten of a noble woman, named Porra, with the value of tenne thousand Florenes of yerely reuenew, and after that time he maried not any other.

This alliance being made in respect of his valour in warre, was the occasion of the increase both of his pay, and of the renowne of the Englishmen throughout all Italie: That a most puissant Prince in warre, had not without sufficient cause to induce him, conceyued so good opinion of the valour of a man that was a stranger, and for this cause his seruice was required by the Princes and free Cities of Italy. For at that time all martiall affaires amongst the Italians were mannaged by forraine forces and Captaines.

It fortuned that vpon some displeasure conceiued the Englishmen that were left at Alba where the Duke of Clarence dyed, for the alliance past, made a sodaine reuolt from the friendshippe of Galeasius, and Barnabe, and ioyned themselues with their enemies, by which change of affections many of the Townes of Lombardy came to be wasted, by the outragious spoyles of the Englishmen, amongst other they toke the Towne of Faera, and Banacanallo, whereof he solde one to the Marques of Sast for twentie thousand Crownes, and the other he kept, and after that Sir Iohn Hawkwood, hauing both his forces and pay increased, determined to seeke newe hopes, and newe aduentures. He went first to the ayde of Pope Gregorie the twelft, and hauing with great commendation recouered the Cities of Pronence that had reuolted from him, for his seruice therein was worthily rewarded with the dominion of fiue Townes. From him, he went to the Florentines, who profered great pay, and from them, not long after to the Pisanes, and then againe to the Florentines, vnder whome he serued with such a num-

ber of our nation both horse men and fote men that all Italie feared him, with that successe and increase of his commendation, and glorious renoume, that hée was easily reputed to bée the best Souldiour of that age, for hée had learned by his long experience in the warres, hauing an excéding ripe and quicke conceipt, to force occasions, to frame his resolutions, and to make spédie execution, being also as occasion required, both hot in his fight, and notable for his delayes, in so much as sundry great Captaines, who were afterward highly renowned, proceeded out of his Schole, as from an exact Master of Martiall affaires. The exploytes that he had atchieued, with good successe, were accompted for sure groundes and principles of Discipline, as well amongst his very enemies, as also amongst his owne followers.

After infinite victories obtained, and an incomparable renowme amongst all men for the same, he deceased at Florence being then an olde man, and was most honourably buried in the great Church of the same Citie, where after his death, the Senate in rewarde of his good deseruing, bestowed vpon him the honour of a Tombe, with the Image of a man on horsebacke, as great as a mightie Pillar, for a Monument and testimonie of his great prowesse in warre, and excéding fidelitie to their state. Notwithstanding his executours, or otherwise his friendes here in England, to wit, Robert Rokeden senior, Robert Rokeden iunior, and Iohn Coe, rayled a Monument, or Tombe arched ouer, and ingrauen to the likenesse of Haukes flying in a wode, in the Parish Church of Hyngham-fible where he was borne, and founded there for him a Chantry, and another in the Priory of Hyngham Castle, to remember Iohn Haukewood Knight, Iohn Oliuer, and Thomas Newenton Esquires.

Irish people to auoid England.

About the moneth of August Proclamation was made that all Irish people should auoyde the Realme, and get them home before the feast of the natiuitie of our Lady, vpon paine of life.

King Richard went into Ireland.

King Richard went ouer into Ireland, and the Duke of Glocester with him, and the Earles of March, Salisburie, Arundell, Nottingham and Rutland. The Irishmen being afraid of such preparation as was made, durst not shew themselues openly, but with secret assaultings they often troubled the Kings army, yet when the Englishmen preuailed, many of the Lords of the land submitted themselues to the king, of which some the king held with him, least they should attempt some new stirre.

1395. The King held his Christmasse at Dublin in Ireland, and after that feast held a Parliament there: also the same time the Duke of Yorke, the Lord Warden of England called a Parliament at London, to the which came (being sent forth of Ireland) the Duke of Glocester, the which before all the states shewed the Kings nede, who had now spent his treasure amongst the Irishmen, so that a tenth was granted by the Clergie, and a fiftenth by the Layty.

Parliament at London.

The same time the fauourers of Wikcliffes opinions, set vp on the gates of S. Pauls Church in London, and on the gates of Saint Peters Church at Westminster,

Weſtminſter, vehement accuſations of the Cleargie, and concluſions ſuch as had not been heard of, among the which were theſe verſes following.

Libels againſt the Cleargie.

Plangunt Anglorum gentes crimen Sodomorum,
Paulus fert, horum ſunt Idola cauſa malorum.
Surgunt ingrati, corrupto ſemine nati,
Mentum prælati, hoc defenſare parati,
Qui Reges eſtis, populis quicunque præeſtis,
Qualiter his geſtis gladijs prohibere poteſtis.

They were mainteyned in this their doing, by ſome noble men & knights of this land, among which as chiefe were Sir Richard Stury, Sir Lewes de Clifford, Sir Thomas Latimer, ſir Iohn Mountague, which did inſtigate them to confound if they might, the religious men: whereupon the Archbiſhop of Yorke, the Biſhop of London and other, as meſſengers from the whole ſtate of the cleargie paſſed ouer into Ireland, where to the King they made a grieuous complaint, beſeeching him that he would returne with ſpeede, to helpe the faith and Church that was now incredibly afflicted by lollardes, (as they termed them) how they might take away all the poſſeſſions of the Church, and that worſe was, how they might take and deſtroy all Canonicall ſanctions. King Richard hearing theſe things, determined to returne home the ſooner. And when he was returned, he called before him, and rebuked certaine of the Nobles bitterly, threatning them, if they from thenceforth fauoured theſe Lollards, or in any wiſe did comfort them he would extreamely puniſh them, he toke an othe of Sir Richard Stury, that from thence forth, he ſhould not hold ſuch opinions, which thing being done, the king ſaid, and I ſweare to thee that if thou euer violate thine othe, thou ſhalt die a ſhamefull death, other hearing ſuch roaring of the Lion, plucked in their heads and lay cloſe.

Sir Iohn Froiſart of S. Patricks Purgatorie.

About this time Sir Iohn Froiſart Chanon of Chimay in the Earledome of Heynault, as himſelfe reporteth, came into England, he demaunded of Sir William Lille (who had been with the King in Ireland) the manner of the hole that in Ireland is called Saint Patrikes Purgatory, if it were true that was ſaid of it, or not: who anſwered, that ſuch a hole there was, and that himſelfe and another Knight had been there while the King lay at Dublin, & ſaid they entred into the hole, and were cloſed in at the ſunne ſet, and abode there all the night, and the nert morning iſſued out againe at the ſunne riſing: he ſaid, that when he & his fellow were entred and paſt the gate that was called the Purgatory of Saint Patrike, and that they were deſcended and gone downe three or foure paſes, as into a cellar, a certaine hote vapour roſe againſt them, and ſtrake ſo into their heads, that they were faine to ſit downe on ỹ ſtaires which were of ſtone: and after they had ſate there a ſeaſon, they had great deſire to ſleepe, and ſo fell into a ſlumber, and ſlept there all night. In the which ſleepe they had marueilous dreames, other wiſe then they were wont to haue in their chambers: but in the morning after they had iſſued out, thy had cleane forgotten their dreames and viſions.

King Richard ſent meſſengers the Earle of Rutland, the Earle Marſhall, the Archbiſhop of Dublin, the Biſhop of Ely, Lewes Clifford, Henry Beau-

King Richard sent messengers to treate a mariage with the French Kings daughter.

mont, Hugh Spencer, and many other to Charles the French King, to treate with him for a marriage to be had betweene the King of England, and the French Kings eldest daughter named Isabell of eight yeeres old, who was already promised to the Duke of Britons sonne, by a treaty that was made at Toures in Thouraine. This was hard to be broken, for the French King and his uncles had sealed with the Duke of Britaine.

The conquest of Ireland by K. Richard.

Now somewhat of the former voiage of King Richard into Ireland, as the same was reported to Sir Iohn Froisart, by an Esquire of England, named Henry Christall. Sir Iohn (quoth he) it is not in memorie, that euer any King of England made such prouision for any iourney into Ireland, nor such a nũber of men of armes, nor archers. The King was a nine monethes in the marches of Ireland to his great cost, and charge to the realme, for they bare all his expenses: and the merchant-cities, and good townes of the Realme thought it well bestowed, when they sawe the King returne home againe with honour. The number that he had thither, were foure thousand men of armes, and thirtie thousand archers, well payed weekely. But to shew the truth, Ireland is one of the euil Countries of the world to make warre vpon, or to bring vnder subiection, for it is closed strongly and wildely with high forrests, & great waters and marishes. It is hard to enter to doe them of the Countrey any domage: nor ye shall finde no Towne, nor person to speake withall. For the men drawe to the woodes, and dwell in Caues or small Cottages, vnder trées and among bushes, like wilde and sauage beasts: and when they knowe that any man maketh warre against them, being entred into their Countries, then they drawe together to the straites and passages to defend them, so that no man can enter into them. And when they see their time, they will some take their aduantage on their enemies, for they knowe the countrey, and are light people. For a man of armes, being neuer so well horsed, and runne he neuer so fast, the Irishmen will runne on foote as fast as he, and ouertake him, yea, and leape vp vpon his horse behinde him, and throwe him from his horse; for they are strong men in their armes, and haue sharpe weapons with large blades, two edged, wherewith they will slay their enemie, whom they neuer repute to be dead till they haue cut his throte, and opened his belly, and taken out his heart, which they carry away with them, some say they eate it, and haue great delight therein, they take no man to ransome. And when they see that they be ouermatched, then they will depart and hide themselues in bushes, woods, and caues, so that no man shall finde them: Sir William Windsore, who had most vsed the warres in those parts of any other Englishman, could neuer learne the manner of the Countrey. They be hard people, and of rude witte: and they set nothing by follitie, nor fresh apparell, nor by nobleneese, for though their Countrey be soueraignely gouerned by Kings, whereof they haue many, yet will they abide and continue in their rudeneese.

Ireland somewhat described.

Truth it is, that foure of the principall Kings, and most puissant after the manner of the country, are come to the obeysaunce of the King of England, by loue and faire meanes, and not by battell, or constraint. The Earle of Ormond,

mond, who mareheth vpon them, hath taken great paine, and hath ſo intreated them, that they came to Dubline to the King, and ſubmitted them to him, to be vnder the obeyſance of the Crowne of England, wherefore the King and all the Realme reputeth this for a great and honourable acte. For King Edward did neuer ſo much vpon them, as King Richard did in his voyage. The honour is great, but the profit is but ſmall, &c. The names of the foure Kings were theſe, firſt, the great Oneale King of Meth, the ſecond Brine of Thomond king of Thomond, the third Arthure of Mackquemur king of Leinſter, the fourth Conkne king of Cheueno and Dzape, they were made knights by King Richard in the Cathedrall Church of Dubline: theſe foure Kings watched all the night before in the Church, and the next day at high Maſſe time, were made Knights, and with them Sir Thomas Orphew, Sir Iames Pado, and Sir Iohn Pado his coſin.

Theſe Kings ſate that day at the Table with King Richard, they were regarded of many people, becauſe their behauiour was ſtraunge to the manner of England.

When Sir Iohn Froiſart deſired to knowe howe it came to paſſe, that foure Kings of Ireland were ſo ſone brought to the obeyſance of King Richard, when King Edward the Kings grandfather, who was ſo valiant a Prince could neuer ſubdue them: Sir Henry Criſtal anſwered, he could not tell, but as men ſaid, the great puiſſance that the King had ouer with him, and remaining there nine moneths, abaſhed the Iriſhmen. Alſo the Sea was cloſed from them on all parts, whereby their merchandiſes might not enter into their Countries, though they that dwell farre within the Realme cared little for it, yet ſuch as liue on the marches of England and by the Sea coaſt, vſe feate of marchandiſe.

King Edward in his time, had to anſwere ſo many warres in France, Brytaine, Gaſcoigne, and Scotland, that his people were diuided in diuers places, wherefore, he could not ſend any great number into Ireland. But when the Iriſhmen ſawe the great number of men of warre that King Richard had in this laſt iourney, they abuiſed themſelues, and came to obeyſance.

Edward the Confeſſor his armes foure Martelets.

Moreouer there was of olde time in England a King named Edward, who is canonized as a Saint: This King in his time ſubdued the Danes, and diſcomfited them by battell on the ſea three times: This Edward the Iriſhmen loued, and dread him much more then any King of England that had been before. And therefore King Richard this yeere paſt, when he was in Ireland, in all his armories and deuiſes, he left the bearing of the armes of England, as the Leopardes and floure deluces, and bare the armes of Saint Edward, that is, a croſſe patent golde and gules, with foure white Martelets in the field, whereof it was ſaid, the Iriſhmen were well pleaſed, and the ſoner inclined to him, and haue done to him faith and homage in like manner as their Predeceſſours ſometime did to King Edward. Thus haue I ſhewed the manner howe King Richard had this yeere accompliſhed his voyage in Ireland.

In this meane ſpace the Engliſh Lords rid from Caleis to Amiens, and to

Claremount in Beaulkyn, and so to Paris, where they were lodged about the Crosse of Tyzeuer, they were fiue hundzed hozses. The French King was lodged at the Castle of Lowze, and the Quéene with her childzen at the house of S. Paul vpon the riuer Saine. The Duke of Berrey at the house of Nesle, the Duke of Burgoine at the house of Arthois, and the Duke of Burbon in his owne house, the Duke of Orleans, the Earle of S. Paul, and the Lozd Cowsey at their owne houses.

The King had assembled there all his Councell, to the intent to make the better answer to the Embassadours of England. He commanded euery day to be deliuered to these Embassadozs 200. Crownes, foz their smal expences, and foz their hozses. And the chiefe, as the Earle Marshall, and the Earle of Rutland, were oftentimes with the king and dined with him. These Lozds desired euer to haue answere, and hauing béen at Paris. xx. dayes and their charges payd by the French King, a reasonable answere was giuen them, so that they were put in great hope to bzing about that they came foz, howbeit the French men said it could not be done shozthy, because the Lady was so yong, and also that she was affianced to the Duke of Britaines eldest sonne, wherefoze they must treate to breake that pzomise, oz they could pzocéede any further, & thereupon the French King should send into England the nert Lent, to shew how the matter went. With which answere the Englishmen were contented, they toke their leaue & departed from Paris to Caleis, and so to England, the King was ioyous of their comming, and well contented with their answere.

An. reg. 19.

About Michaelmas the Duke of Lancaster returned out of Gascoine into England, foz that he had not béen receiued in Gascoigne, as he thought he should haue béen, foz the people there did vtterly reiect him, from bearing gouernement ouer them. The King made him good chéere, and all the Winter folowing oft times sent to the French King, concerning the marriage, and was well inclined to haue peace, these pursutes and treaties toke such effect, that their matter dzewe néere to a point, so that such Embassadours as were first sent out of England into France, and were againe lodged in Paris, were in number fiue hundzed, and soiourned in Paris mozc then thzée wéekes.

The Duke of Lancaster returned out of Gascoigne.

T. Walsingham. Pirats of Denmarke rob the English.

This yéere England suffered great losse by pirats, that belonged vnto the Quéene of Denmarke, who spoiled mariners and merchants, especially the men of Nozffolke that assembled a multitude together, and toke vpon them to fight with them, but the enemies pzeuailing, many of them were slaine, and very many taken pzisoners, were reserued foz ransome with the losse of twenty thousand pounds, which they had abozde with them to make their marchandise.

Bishop of Salisburie and other deceased.

This yéere deceassed Iohn of Waltham Bishop of Salisbury, Treasurer of England, who had pleased the King so greatly, that (though many murmured at it) he commanded him to be buried at Westminster among the Kings. After him Roger Walden the Kings secretary and treasurer of Caleis, was made Treasurer. Iohn de Metford Bishop of Chichester was translated to Salisbury, and the Archbishop of Diuelin to Chichester. Also Thomas Brantingham Bishop of Excester deceassed, after whom succéeded Edmond

mond Stafford bearer of the priuie Seale. Henry Wakefield Biſhop of Worceſter deceaſed, vnto whom ſucceeded at the Kings requeſt a monke of Cheſter, called Tideman a Phiſition.

In the moneth of November King Richard cauſed the body of his deere frende Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland, to be brought from Louane, and after to be buried in the priory of Colne in Eſſex, with ſolemne funerals, which he honoured with his preſence, and cauſed the Coffin of Cipres, wherein his body being embalmed lay, to be opened, that he might behold his face, & touch him with his fingers openly ſhewing his loue to the dead carkaſſe, which he bare him when he was aliue, there were at the ſame funeralles with the king, the Counteſſe of Oxford, mother of the deceaſed Duke, the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, many other Biſhops, Abbots, Priors, and other religious men, but yet there were few of the Nobles, for they had not digeſted the hatred they had conceiued againſt him. Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland.

The Embaſſadours of England being at Paris with the French King, their matters toke ſuch effect, that it was fully agreed that the King of England ſhould haue in marriage Iſabell the eldeſt daughter of King Charles, and by vertue of procuration the Earle Marſhall affianced and eſpouſed her in the name of the King of England, & ſo from thenceforth ſhe was called Queene of England. The Engliſhmen toke their leaue and departed to Caleis and ſo into England. The King was glad of their returne, and ſo were other, but whoſoeuer was glad of this marriage, the Duke of Gloceſter vncle vnto the King made no ioy thereof, for he ſaw well, that by reaſon of that marriage and alliance, peace ſhould be betweene the kings, and their realmes, which grieued him, & of this matter he would oftentimes ſpeake with his brother the Duke of Yorke, and droue him as much as he could to his opinions, for he was but a ſoft Prince. But to the Duke of Lancaſter his eldeſt brother, he durſt not ſpeake ouer largely, for he ſaw well that he was of the Kings opinion, and was well pleaſed with the Kings marriage. Froiſart.

This yeere the King held his feaſt of Chriſtmaſſe at Langley, whither came to him the Duke of Lancaſter, and he receiued the Duke with honour, but not with loue, as was thought, he therefore taking leaue of the King, departed from the court toward Lincolne, where Katharine Swinford then lay, whom after the feaſt of the Epiphanie, (al men wondering at the ſtrangeneſſe of the deede) he toke to wife. This woman was borne in Henault, daughter to Sir Paine Ruit, a Knight of that Countrey, ſhe was in her youth brought vp in the Duke of Lancaſters houſe, and attended on his firſt wife Blanch the Dutcheſſe of Lancaſter: and in the dayes of his ſecond wife the Dutcheſſe Conſtance of Spaine, he kept the ſaid Katharine to be his concubine, who after was married to a Knight of England named Swinford, that was now deceaſed. Before ſhe was married, the Duke had by her foure children, three ſons, & a daughter, one of the ſons hight Iohn Bewford, the ſecond Thomas de Bewford, and the other Henry, who was brought vp at Aton in Almaine, proued a good Lawyer, and was after Biſhop of Wincheſter, and Ioan a daughter for the loue the Duke had to thoſe his children, he married their mother, the 1399. John Duke of Lancaſter, married Katherine Swinford.

said Katharine Swinford, being now a widow, as before is said. The great Ladies of England, as the dutchesse of Glocester, the countesse of Darby, the countesse of Arundell, and others descended of the bloud royall, greatly disdayned that shee should bee matched with the Duke of Lancaster, and by that meanes accounted second person in the Realme, and be preferred in roume afore them; and therefore they said they would not come where shee should be present, for it should bee a shame to them, that a woman of so base birth, that had been concubine to the Duke should goe and haue place before them.

Hector Boetius. This yeere during the peace, many Noble men of England frequented Scotland, and many Scottes frequented England, through the which, oftimes, many honourable tornements were done betwixt Englishmen and Scottes, in defence of their honours and glorie in armes: Among whom was not a little praised, the honourable victory gotten by Dauid Crauford on the Bridge at London against the Lord Welles in this manner: The Lord Welles was sent Embassadour into Scotland, concerning certaine high matters betwixt the two Kings of England and Scotland, and when he was at a solemne banquet, where Scottish men and Englishmen were communing of deedes of armes, the Lord Welles said, Let words haue no place, if ye know not the chiualry and valiant deedes of Englishmen, appoint me a day and place when ye list, and ye shall haue experience. Then said Dauid Earle of Crauford, I assent, and incontinently, by consent of either party, a day and place was assigned. The Lord Welles chose the bridge of London for the place, and Earle Dauid chose S. Georges day for the time. Thus departed the Lord Welles toward London. Afore the day Earle Dauid came with thirtie persons well appointed to London: As sone as the day of battell was come, both the parties were conueyed to the bridge, and sone after by sound of trumpet, the two parties ran hastely together, on their barbed horses, with square grounden speares to the death. Earle Dauid notwithstanding the valiant dint of speares broken on his helmet, and visage, sate so strongly, that the people moued with vaine suspition, cryed, Earle Dauid contrary to the law of armes, is bound to the saddle: Earle Dauid hearing this murmure, dismounted off his horse, and without any support or helpe ascended againe into the saddle. Incontinent they rushed together with the newe speares, the second time with burning ire to conquer honour: but in the third course the Lord Welles was sent out of his saddle, with such a violence, that he fell to the ground: Earle Dauid seeing his fall, dismounted hastely from his horse, and tenderly embraced him, that the people might vnderstand, he fought with no hatred, but onely for the glory of victory: and in the signe of more humanitie, he visited him euery day, while he recouered his health, and then returned into Scotland.

Justing on London bridge.

Froisart. The same season was sent into England from the French King, Valerian Earle of S. Paul with certaine articles concerning the treaty of the peace. The King receiued him ioyously, and heard well his message, and said vnto him aparte, Faire brother, as to the treatie of peace betweene mee and my

my father of Frances, I am right well inclined thereunto, my brethren, and two vncles of Lancaster and Yorke incline right well thereunto: but mine vncle the Duke of Gloucester, who is a right perillous man, letteth it as much as he can. Sir, quoth the Earle of Saint Paule, it behoueth you to winne him with faire words, and giue him great gifts. In the name of God (said the king) ye say well, and thus shall I doe. The Earle of Saint Paule said, the French king with his vncles should come to Saint Omers, and bring with him his daughter, so that the king of England would come to Calais, and so betweene Saint Omers and Calais the two kings should méete and speake together, whereby should increase loue and amity: And if they could not conclude on some peace, yet at the least the truce might be prolonged to endure for thirtie or fortie yéeres, betweene the two realmes, and their allies: this deuise séemed good.

And so when euery thing was readie, the king and the Earle of Saint Paul passed ouer. And the king of England with his vncles came to Calais with many Lords and Ladies: and the Duke of Burgoyne one of the French kings vncles came to Saint Omers, and from thence to Calais, to the king of England, and there consulted together on certaine articles of the peace, whereunto the K. of England lightly inclined. The Duke of Burgoyne and Earle of Saint Paule returned to Saint Omers, &c. And the king of England with his vncles into Englãd, leauing their wiues at Calais, til their returne. King Richard sailed to Calais. *Ann. reg.* 20

William Courtney Archbishop of Canterbury, deceased on the first of August, after he had sate Archbishop of Canterbury fiftéene yéeres & more: this William Courtney vpon the dissolution of the Hospitall, called *Noui operis* at Maidstone, erected there a Colledge secular Priests, the master to be a Prebend, which Colledge at the general suppression was valued in land by yéere at 139. pounds, seuen shillings fiue pence: he builded much at Maidstone: hée gaue by testament 1000. marks towards the amendement of the body of the Church of Christ in Canterbury, where he was buried. Thomas Arundell brother to the Earle of Arundell succéeded him in the Archbishoprike of Canterbury, he had béene first Bishop of Ely, where he had made much faire building in the palace, he gaue to ỹ Church there a table of gold & precious stones valued at 300. marks, he built the great gate-house of his Inne in Holborne of London: he was from thence translated to Yorke, where besides his great building, & rich ornaments giuen, he gaue to that Church, of plate two great basons of siluer and gilt, two great censars, two other basons of siluer, and two cruses, he gaue to the vse of the Vicars a siluer cup of great weight, and a bolle of siluer of an higher price, for the vse of the Chapter, &c. and was now translated to the sea of Canterbury, he forthwith renounced his office of chancellor, whereunto was admitted Edmond Stafford Bishop of Exceter. Courtney Archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

Ye haue heard how the king of England was returned from Calais into England, & there remained till Michaelmasse, that the Parliament at Westminster should beginne. In the meane season great prouision was made at Calais, and at Guisnes for the king & his Lords sent from the ports of England on that coast, also great prouision was had of Flaunders, al which came Parliament at Westminster.

by

by ſea to Caleis. And likewiſe for the French king and his brother the Duke of Orleans, and his vncles and other Prelates and Lords of Fraunce, great prouiſion was made at Saint Omers, at Ayre, at Tyrwin, at Arde, Mountoire, and at all other houſes and Abbeyes thereabout, there was nothing ſpared on eyther part, eſpecially the Abbey of Saint Bertine was well repleniſhed of all things to receiue the kings.

The Parliament beganne at Weſtminſter, at Michaelmaſſe, and it was ordained to endure eight and fortie daies, but it was abridged; for the king would not tarry there more then fiue daies, wherein he declared the things pertayning to the Realme, eſpecially ſuch matter as touched himſelfe, and the cauſe why he came from Caleis. Which things beeing diſpatched, the king returned againe to Caleis with his Vncles of Lancaſter and Gloceſter, and other Prelates and Lords of England. The Duke of Yorke tarried ſtill in England with the Earle of Darby to gouerne the Realme in the kings abſence. Aſſone as the French king knew that the king of England was returned to Caleis, hee ſent to him the Earle of Saint Paule to ſhew him what order was taken in Fraunce concerning his marriage, which the king liked well.

Then the Duke of Lancaſter and his ſonne, the Duke of Gloceſter and his ſonne, the Earle of Rutland, the Earle marſhall, Earle of Huntington, the kings Chamberlaine and many other Lords and knights, Eſquires and Ladies, rode with the Earle of S. Paule, to S. Omers, where they were well receiued of the Duke of Burgoyne, and of the Dutcheſſe, the Duke of Britaine and other. All the cheere that could be deuiſed was made to the Engliſh Lords and Ladies: there was the Dutcheſſe of Lancaſter, her ſon, and two daughters, there was great gifts giuen of plate, of golde and ſiluer, nothing was ſpared, inſomuch that the Engliſhmen had marualle, eſpecially the Duke of Gloceſter, who ſaide to his counſell, I ſee well there is great riches in the Realme of France, there was much giuen to him: he toke euer all their gifts, but alwaies the rancor abode in his heart: which the Duke of Burgoine wel perceiued. When the Lords and Ladies of England had been royally feaſted, then was communication had how the two kings ſhould mete and ſpeake together, and how the Ladie ſhould be deliuered, wherupon appointment was made, and leaue taken on all parts. The Engliſh part returned to Caleis to the king, and ſhewed what cheere they had, and what preſents had been giuen them, which newes pleaſed well the king.

Anon after the French king came to Saint Omers, hauing the Duke of Britaine in his company, where it was ordained that the Dukes of Berry, Burgoyne and Burbon, ſhould go to Caleis to ſpeake with the king of England, where they were ioyouſly receiued, and had as good cheere as could be deuiſed. The three Dukes had ſecret communication with the king & his counſell, from whence they returned to Saint Omers to the French king, and ſhewed how they had ſped. Then the French king went to the Baſted of Ard, the Duke of Burgoyne to Mountoire, the Duke of Britaine to the towne of Eſquie, and the Duke of Berry to Balingham. In euery parte about, there were

were pitcht vp tents and pauilions, and all the countrey full of people, what of Fraunce and of England. The king of England came to Guiſnes with the Duke of Lancaſter, and the Duke of Glocester to Hames.

Thus on the Eeue of Simon and Iude, about ten of the clocke in the forenoon, the kings departed out of the tents the which were pight not farre aſunder, and came a foote the one to the other, and met at a certaine place appointed, on the one ſide there was aranged 400. knights of Fraunce, armed with their ſwords drawen: And on the other part, 400. knights of England in like manner, ſo the two kings paſſed thorow them.

The Dukes of Lancaſter and of Glocester ledde the French king, and the Duke of Berrey, and of Burgoine led the king of England, thus came forth the 800. knights, all which knights, when the two kings came iuſt together, knéeled downe, the two kings met together bare headed, and a little inclined, and toke each other by the hands, then the French king led the king of England into his tent, which was noble and rich, and the foure Dukes toke each other by the hands, and followed the two kings, and other knights after, the Frenchmen on the one ſide, and the Engliſhmen on the other ſide: and ſo they ſtod regarding each other till all was done. So the two kings hand in hand entred the French kings tent. Then the foure Dukes knéeled downe before the kings, and they raiſed them vp and ſo talked together: then the two kings went a little apart, & talked a certaine ſpace. In the meane time wine and ſpices were brought, the Duke of Berrey ſerued the French king of ſpice, & the Duke of Burgoyne of wine: And the Dukes of Lancaſter & Glocester ſerued the king of England, & other knights & Eſquires ſerued the other Prelates and Lords. This buſines done, the two kings toke leaue each of other, & ſo returned to their tents, & toke their horſes and rode, the king of England to Guiſnes, the Dukes of Lancaſter, & Glocester, to Hames, & the other to Caleis: the French K. rode to Cordre, & the Duke of Orleans with him, the Duke of Berrey to Dornam, & the Duke of Burgoyne to Mountoire. Meeting of the king of England and of France.

On Simon & Iudes day, about 11. a clocke, the king of England & his Uncles and other Lords came to the French king into his tent, where they were receiued right honourably. Then tables were ſet vp, and the two kings ſate at one table alone, the French king on the right hand, the Dukes of Berrey, Burgoyne & of Burbon ſerued the two kings. This dinner was taken in the French kings tent, & after wine & ſpices taken, the yong Quéne was brought forth accompanied with a great number of Ladies & damoſels, & there ſhe was deliuered to the king of England, & euery man toke their leaue to depart. The yong Quéne was ſet in a rich litter, and there went no more French Ladies with her but the Lady of Coucy, there ware Ladies of England, the Dutcheſſe of Lancaſter, Yorke, Glocester, the Lady Namure, the Lady Poynings, & many other, who receiued the Quéne with great ioy. Thus the king of England and his young Quéne, with their company rode to Caleis the ſame night. And the French king and his company to Saint Omers.

After the kings returne to Caleis, ere Alhallowne day in ſolemne wiſe, hée married the Lady Iſabel in the Church of S. Nicholas at Caleis, the Archbiſhop of King Richard married Iſabell th French K. daughter.

of Canterbury doing the office, at the which time there was a great feast, and great larges.

On the next morow the Dukes of Orleance and Burbon came to Calais, to see the King & the Quæne, and on the next morow they toke their leaue, and departed to S. Omers to the French king, and the same day the King and the Quéene tok their ship, and had faire passage: for within three houres they arriued at Douer, notwithstanding by tempest they lost their tents and houshold stuffe, from Douer they rode to Rochester, to Dertford, to Eltham, and so to London, whereof the Citizens béeing warned, made out certaine horsemen well appointed, all in one liuery of colour, with deuises imbrodered on their sléeues, that euery company might be knowen from other, the which with the Maior and his brethren, clothed in Scarlet, mette the King and Quéene on the blacke Heath, and there doing their duties, and attended vpon them till they came to Newinton, where the king commaunded the Maior with his company to returne, for that he was appointed to lodge that night at Kenington.

Queene Isabell crowned.

The 13. of Nouembr. the young Quéene was conueyed from Kenington, through Southwark, with great pomp vnto the Tower of London, at which time there went such a multitude of people to sée her, that vpon London bridge nine persons were crowded to death, of whom the Prior of Tiptor in Esser was one, and a worshipful matrone that dwelt in Cornhil was another. The morow after she was conueyed to Westminster, and there crowned with all the honour that might be deuised.

Parliament at London. 1397.

The 22. of Ianuary a Parliament began at London, in the which the Duke of Lancaster caused to be made legitimate, the issue which he had begotten of Katherine Swinford, before she was his wife. And the same time Iohn sonne to the said Duke of Lancaster and the said Katherine, was created Earle of Somerset, and the Duke gaue him to surname sir Bello Forto or Bowfort. It was ordained in this Parliament, that Iustices should not haue to sit with them any as assistant: there was a tenth granted by the Cleargy to the king. At this time king Richard contrary to his oath, reuoked Robert Beiknape, Iohn Holte, William Brugh knights of the Bath, and Iustices, forth of Ireland.

This yéere when the realme of England séemed to enioy the chiefest peace that might be, by reason of the kings marriage, and the great riches that were heaped vp together by the same, and by the reason of the truce of 30. yéers established, and the presence of so many noblemen as the like no forraine realme was able to shew, sodainly al things were troubled & brought into a turmoile whiles the king at Plashy in Esser, vpon a sodaine toke his vncle the Duke of Gloucester by force of armes, he suspecting no such thing, & caused him to be conueied to Calais, there to be kept in prison, & caused the Earle of Warwick to be arrested and imprisoned, the same day that he had bidden him to dinner, notwithstanding that he shewed him very good countenance, & had promised him great friendship: beside that he deceiued the Earle of Arundel with fayre words, (who was well able to haue defended himselfe, & to haue deliuered his friends, the Duke of Gloucester & the Earle of Warwicke,) and notwithstanding

Ann. reg. 21.

ding hée yéelded himſelfe quietly, he ſent him to the Ile of Wight, there to be impriſoned vntill the Parliament. And to the end there ſhould be no commotion among the commons for the impriſoning of the Nobles, he cauſed to be proclaimed that the apprehenſiõ of them, was not for any old diſpleaſure, but for new tranſgreſſions committed againſt the king, ſhortly after he cauſed the ſaid Nobles to be indited at Nottingham, and ſuborned ſuch as ſhould appeach them in the next Parliament, to wit, Edw. Earle of Rutland, Thomas Mowbrey Earle marſhall, Thomas Holland Earle of Kent, Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington, Iohn Bewford Earle of Somerſet, Iohn Mountacute Earle of Saliſbury, & Tho. Spencer, Wil. Scrope the K. Chamberlaine. And in the meane ſeaſon the king aſſembled together to guarde his perſon, many malefactors of the Countie of Cheſter which kept watch and ward both day and night about him. Then the king cauſed a great and generall Parliament to be ſummoned at Weſtminſter, where he cauſed a great Hall to be builded in the midſt of the pallace betwixt the clocke tower, and the doore of the greate Hall: This Parliament beganne about the fiftéenth of September, at the beginning whereof Edward Stafford Biſhop of Exceſter Lord Chancellor, made a propoſition or ſermon, in the which he affirmed that the power of the king was alone and perfect of it ſelfe, and thoſe that impeached it were worthy to ſuffer paine of the law: to this Parliament all the Nobles came with their retinue in armes, for feare of the king: the prolocutors were knights, in whom no godneſſe at all could be found, but a naturall couetouſneſſe, vnſatiable ambition, intollerable pride, and hatred of the truth, their names were Iohn Buſhy, William Bagot, and Thomas Greene. Theſe required chiefly to haue the Charters of pardons reuoked and diſanulled: and Buſhy ſaid to the king, becauſe we are charged to ſay what they be that haue committed any offence againſt your maieſty, and regal authority, we ſay that Thomas Duke of Gloceſter and Richard Earle of Arundel, in the 18. yéere of your raigne, haue traiterouſly compelled you, by meane of the new Archbiſhop of Canterbury then Chancellor, to grant to them a commiſſion to gouerne your Realme, and to diſpoſe of the ſtate thereof, to the preiudice of your maieſtie and royaltie. The ſame day was that commiſſion diſanulled with all Articles depending thereupon. Alſo the generall pardon granted after the great Parliament by them procured, and one ſpeciall pardon for the Earle of Arundell were reuoked.

Parliament at Weſtminſter.

Tho. Walſing. Buſhe, Bagot, and Greene.

Alſo there was a petition made by the commons, Iohn Buſhy ſpeaking for them, that the generall pardon procured and got forth, the Archbiſhoppe of Canterbury then Chancellor procuring it, ſhould be diſanulled; and hée to be iudged a traytor for granting to it: whereupon the Archbiſhop roſe and would haue anſwered, but the king ſaid, to morrow, to morrow; but hée came not into the Parliament houſe againe: the king ſaid, that he would deliberate of the commons petition.

Alſo it was eſtabliſhed, that any traitor conuicted to ſtand againſt the kings regality, ſhould be adiudged worthy to ſuffer puniſhment to be appointed for ſuch offence.

And

Foure thousand Archers compassed the Parliament house, readie to shoote.

And it was enacted, that criminall causes from thencefoorth should be determined in euery Parliament, and then licence being had to depart, a great sturre was made as is vsed, whereupon the kings Archers, in number foure thousand, compassed the Parliament house, thinking there had beene in the house some broyle or fighting, with their bowes bent, their arrowes nocked, and drawing, ready to shoote, to the terror of all that were there, but the king herewith comming, pacified them. On the next day, the Prelates were inioyned, vpon paine of losing their temporalities, that they should the same day agree vpon some procurator, to consent in their names to al things in that parliament, to be dispatched, & the king had these words: Sir Iohn Bushy, because many desire that I would explaine the fiftie persons exempted in the generall pardon, I will briefly: that what man soeuer desireth this, is worthy of death: first, because he fleeth: secondly, because I haue excepted those that are to be impeached in this Parliament: thirdly, because other of their associates bearing them oppressed, would be afraid where no feare is. On the next day, the Archbishop of Canterbury commeth to the pallace to appeare in the Parliament, but the king commaunded him by the Bishoppe of Carlile that hee should returne to his house, and from thencefoorth he appeared not. The Prelates made Thomas Percy the kings Steward of household, their procuratour, to consent in all things in this Parliament to be done. Also sir Iohn Bushy had these words, our Soueraigne Lord the king, because the second Article in the Parliament is for punishment to be appointed for such as violate the Kings royall authoritie, I beseech your grace that you will authorize mee by way of appealing, of accusing, or impeaching, with licence to make declaration from one to the rest so often and when to me and my fellowes it may seeme expedient, and it was granted: then Bushy had these words, I accuse Thomas of Arundell, Archbishop of Canterbury, of threefold treason.

First, of the commission in granting the regiment or gouernement of the Realme to Thomas Duke of Gloucester, and to Richard Earle of Arundell at his instance, who rather because hee was your Chancellor, should haue refused it.

Secondly, for that vnder pretence of that commission, they traiterously vsurping the iurisdiction of your royall authority, held a solemne Parliament traiterously in prejudice of your regaltie.

Thirdly, because that by the said vsurping, Sir Simon de Burley, and Sir Iames Barnes Knightes, and faithfull Lieges to you, were traiterously murthered, and put to death, of which things, wee your Commons demaund iudgement, worthy of so high treason, to be terribly pronounced by you, and because the Archbishoppe is a man of great consanguinitie, affinitie, power, and most politike wit, and cruell nature, for the preseruation of your estate, and the whole kingdomes, by the petition of this present Parliament, I require that he may be put into safe custody, vntill the finall execution of his iudgement.

The king hereunto answered, that for the excellence of his dignity he would take deliberation till the next morrow, and all other that were put into the

ſame commiſſion, hée pronounced them to be his faithfull liege people, and voide from that treaſon, and eſpecially Alexander Neuell, late Archbiſhoppe of Yorke, and then ſir Edmond of Langley, Duke of Yorke, Uncle to the king, and ſir William Wikeham Biſhoppe of Winchester, that were put into the ſame Commiſſion, with teares fell downe on the ground before the king, and gaue him humble thankes for that grace and benefite beſtowed on them.

Alſo on S. Matthewes day, Edward Earle of Rutland, the Earles of Kent, Huntington, Nottingham, Somerſet, and Saliſbury, with the Lords Spencer and Scrope, in a ſute of red gownes of ſilke garded, and bordered with white ſilke, and embrodered with Letters of Golde, proponed the appeale by them to the king at Nottingham, before ſet forth: in the which, they accuſed Thomas Duke of Gloceſter, Richard Earle of Arundell, Thomas Earle of Warwike, and Thomas de Mortimere Knight, of the premiſed treaſons, and of an armed inſurrection of Haringey Parke, traiterouſly attempted againſt the king, and putting in ſureties for the proſecuting of their appeale. Richard Earle of Arundel was arraigned in a red Gown, and a Scarlet hood, and forthwith the Duke of Lancaſter ſaid to the Lord Neuell, take from him his girdle and hoode, and ſo it was done, and herewith the Articles of appeale being to the ſaid Earle declared, with a valiant and a bolde minde, he denied that hée was a traytour, and required the benefite of the pardon, protesting that he would not go from the fauour of the king and his grace. The Duke of Lancaſter ſaid to him, thou traytour, that pardon is reuoked. The Earle anſwered, truly thou lyeſt, I was neuer traitour. Alſo, the Duke of Lancaſter ſaid, why diddeſt thou purchaſe thy pardon? the Earle anſwered, to eſcape the tongues of mine enemies, of whom thou art one, and verely, as farre forth as toucheth treaſon, thou haſt more néede of pardon then I. The king ſaid, make anſwere vnto thine appeale. The Earle anſwered, I ſée well that theſe perſons haue accuſed me of treaſon, ſhewing the appealements, but truly they all lye, I was neuer traytour, but I aſke alwaies the benefite of my pardon, the which your grace granted to mée within theſe fiue yéeres now laſt paſt, being of full age, and of your francke good will and proper motion. Then ſaid the king, I did ſo grant it that it ſhould not bée againſt mée: then ſaide the Duke of Lancaſter, then the graunt auayleth not. The Earle anſwered, truly of that pardon I knowe leſſe then thy ſelfe, that was then on the further ſide the Seas. Then ſaid Sir Iohn Buſhy, that pardon is reuoked by the King, the Lords, and vs his faithfull people: the Earle anſwered, where be thoſe faithfull people? I know thée well and thy company, how yée are gathered together, not to deale faithfully, for the faithfull people of the Realme are not héere, and therefore the people doe lament for mée, and well I know that thou haſt béene euer falſe. And then Buſhy and his fellowes cryed out. Behold ſoueraigne Lord and King, howe this traytour goeth about to raiſe ſedition betwixt vs, and thoſe people that are at home. The Earle anſwered, yée lye, I am no traytour. Then roſe the Earle of Darby and ſaid, diddeſt thou not ſay thus to mée at Huntington,

Richard Earle of Arundell arraigned.

where

where wée were first assembled together to rise, that it was the best afore all things to take the king. The Earle said to the Earle of Darby, thou lyest on thy head, I neuer thought of my Soueraigne Lord the King, but that that was good, and for his honour. Then said the king, diddest not thou say to mée in time of thy Parliament, in the Bathe behind the White Hall, that Sir Simon de Burley was worthie of death for many causes? and I answered, that I knew no cause of death in him, and yet thou and thy fellowes diddest traiterously put him to death, and then the Duke of Lancaster pronounced iudgement against him in this manner: Richard, I Iohn, Steward of England, iudge thée to bée a Traytour, and I condemne thée to bée drawen and hanged, to bée beheaded and quartered, and thy landes, tayled and not tayled, from thée and from thine heires of thy body descending, to be confiscate: then the king for reuerence of his blood, commaunded him onely to be beheaded, and then was hée ledde to the Tower hill, and there beheaded: the Augustine Friers in London toke vp his body and buried it in their Church, on the North side of their Quire, and after on his graue a sumptuous Tombe was set of marble stone. Also the same day, the king appointed the Lord Cobham (accused by the cõmons) to be arraigned. Also vpon the Saterday, sir Thomas de Mortimer was summoned, vpon paine to be banished as a Traytor, within fiue moneths to come to be tryed in iudgement: and then said the king, peraduenture the Earle of March cannot take him, and therefore I will so long stay for his certificate out of Ireland.

Earle of Arundel beheaded.

Also, a declaration was made, that all benefices or gifts, granted or alienated by those that were already condemned, or after were to be condemned in this Parliamẽt, and other whatsoeuer, granted sithence the tenth yéere of this kings raigne, should be reuoked. Also, on Monday following, the certificate giuen in of the Earle of Nottingham, then captaine of Caleis, in whose custody the Duke of Gloucester was, that the same Duke might not be brought to be tried in iudgement, because he was dead in his custody at Caleis, at the petition yet of the said appellants, the same sentence was pronounced against him which had béene pronounced earst against the Earle of Arundell.

Duke of Gloucester condemned to die after he was dead.

Also the Archbish of Canterbury, first his temporalties being confiscated was banished the realme. On the Tuesday, Rikell one of the kings Iustices, borne in Ireland, read certaine confessions drawen in writing vpon the said treasons, affirming that the same were the confessions of the said Duke, by him put forth or discouered, and written with his owne hand.

Archbishop of Canterbury his goods confiscate.

Also, the Earledome of Chester was aduanced to the honour of a principality, by annexing thereto the lands of the said Earle of Arundell confiscate.

Also, the same day, Iohn Earle of Salisbury made request to haue a *Scire facias* granted to him against the Earle of March, for the Lordship of Denbigh in Wales, and the king answered thereupon that he would take deliberation. Also on the Wednesday, it was ordained, that the lands of the said Earle of Arundell, annexed to the Duchie of Chester, should enioy the liberties of the same Duchie, excepted that to the Welchmen of those parts, their old lawes and customes should still remains and be continued.

The

The Caſtell of Lyons, with the ſeignioꝛy of Bꝛomfeld, & Yale, to the ſaid Caſtell belonging. The Caſtell of Chirke with the ſeignioꝛy of Chirkland to the ſaid Caſtell belonging. The Caſtell of Oſwaldes ſtreet, with the towne well walled with ſtone, with the hundꝛed, and the eleuen townes to the ſaid Caſtell belonging. The Caſtell of Iſabell, with the ſeignoꝛy to the ſame belonging to the Caſtel of Dallilay, with the appurtenance in the Countie of Shꝛopſhire, and the reuerſion of the ſeignoꝛy of Cloue with their appurtenances, which Edward Earle of Rutland then held foꝛ terme of his life. All which Townes, Caſtels, and Seignoꝛies afoꝛeſaid were belonging to Richard late Earle of Arundell, and which by foꝛce of the iudgement giuen againſt the ſaid Earle in the ſaid Parliament, foꝛfeit to our Soueraigne Loꝛd the King, and ſhal be from hencefoꝛth annexed to the pꝛincipality, oꝛ Dukedome of Cheſter. Alſo it was oꝛdained that ſuch as gaue eyther counſell, ayde, oꝛ fauour to the childꝛen of them that were condemned, oꝛ that ſhould be condemned in this Parliament, ſhould be puniſhed as tꝛaytoꝛs. 1397. Ireland.

On Friday, the king appointed a pꝛefixed day to the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, to wit, the third of the firſt weeke, to depart the Realme. Archbiſhop of Canterbury baniſhed the Realme.

Alſo it was oꝛdayned, that all the Loꝛds ſpirituall and tempoꝛall, ſhould ſweare inuiolably to obſerue whatſoeuer in this Parliament were enacted, and that the cenſures of the Church ſhould be pꝛonounced by the Pꝛelates againſt all thoſe that ſhould go againſt the ſame.

Alſo, the Earle of Warwike was arraigned, & his hood being taken off, and the appeale read, as he had béen ſome miſerable old woman, cõfeſſed all things conteyned in the appeale, weeping, wailing, and howling, to be done traytoꝛouſly by him, and ſubmitting himſelfe to the kings grace in all things, ſoꝛrowing that euer he had béene aſſociate vnto the appellants. Then the king demaunded of him by whom he was allured to ioyne with them, & he anſwered, by Thomas Duke of Gloceſter, and the Abbot of S. Albons, and a Monke recluſe in Weſtminſter, and beſought the king of grace & mercy, and the king granted him life to be led in perpetuall pꝛiſon out of the Realme, his goods moueable & vnmoueable to be confiſcate, as the Earle of Arundels had béene, and the king commaunded that he ſhould be had to the Tower of London, and after, to be cõueyed ouer to the caſtel within the Iſle of man, vnder the wardſhip of William Scroope then Loꝛd of the ſaid Iſle, to remaine there in perpetuall pꝛiſon, and on the moꝛrow, the king granted to him and his wife fiue C. markes yeerely during their liues. Alſo, the writ of *Scire facias* was granted to the Earle of Saliſbury, againſt the Earle of March, foꝛ the ſaid Loꝛdſhip of Denbigh, fifteene daies reſpite being giuen to put in an anſwere. Item, it was oꝛdained, that thoſe which ought money to Rocheſter bꝛidge, ſhould be put in execution foꝛ the payment, to the vſe of the ſame bꝛidge. Earle of Warwike arraigned.

Alſo, Henry Bolenbroke Earle of Darby, ſonne and heire to Iohn of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaſter, was created duke of Herefoꝛd; Edward Earle of Rutland Conſtable of England, was created Duke of Aumarle; Thomas Holland Earle of Kent, Duke of Surreyꝛ the Earle of Nottingham, Duke of Noꝛfolke. Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington, Duke of Exceſter. Iohn Earle Dukes created.

Record Tower. of Somerset, Constable of Douer Castell and the 5. ports, Marques of Dorset: Thomas Lord Spencer, Earle of Glocester: The Lord of Westmerland named Dan Raby Neuell Earle of Westmerland: Thomas Percy Earle
Record Tower. of Worcester, Wil. Scroope: Lord Treasurer, Earle of Wiltshire: Sir Iohn Mountacute, Earle of Salisbury. The king added the armes of king Edward the Confessor to his, & bare them together part purpale, and the Parliament was prorogued till the octaues of S. Hillary, then to be holden at Shrewsbury.

Westminster hall repayred. King Richard caused the great Hall at Westminster to be repaired, both the walles, windowes, and roffe, with a marueilous worke, and great costs, which he leuied of strangers banished out of their countryes, who obtayned licence to remayne in this countrey, by the kings Charter which they had purchased with great summes of money.

1398. King Richard kept his Christmas at Lichfield, and then toke his iourney
Parliament at Shrewsbury. towards Shrewsbury, where the Parliament lately prorogued, began againe, in the which it was ordayned, that all Statutes ordayned at Westminster in the xi. yeere of the kings raigne, should be reuoked and disanulled, and all the articles of the same, and the heires of them that were adiudged in the saide Parliament, should be reconciled, and restored to all their lands, inheritances, and possessions: excepted, that they should haue no clayme against the withholders of the profits, and reuenues of those lands in the meane time. On the morrow it was ordayned that the heires of them which were iudged and conuicted in the foure Articles of high treason, should not enioy the landes, nor any possessions of their progenitors, but should be excluded from all and euerie action and clayme for euer.

The first Article of high treason was this, if any man, of what condition soeuer he were, did imagine the kings death.

The second Article was, if any man should haue an imagination to depose the king.

The third, if any man did ride armed within the Realme of England in manner of warre against the king.

The fourth was, if any man disclaymed the kings homage.

Also the same day, the Lord Cobham was arraigned, to make answere vnto the two Articles of high treason.

The first was, that the said Lord Cobham was in counsell to make one commission against the state of the king; and likewise, that he vsed the same commission in doing iudgement against the kings will, and to the preiudice of him.

The second, that he sate in iudgement to iudge sir Simon de Burley, and Iames Barnes Knights of the Kings; in his absence, and against his will: and vpon this, hee was conuict and iudged to perpetuall prison within the Isle of Ierley.

Henry Duke of Hereford accuseth Thomas Duke of Norffolke. On the morrow, Henry Duke of Hereforde accused Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norffolke, of certaine words by him spoken, as they rode betweene London and Braynesord, tending to the dishonour of the kings person, which the Duke of Norffolke vtterly denied to haue spoken; whereupon a combate

was

was granted them by the king to be fought at Couentry, vpon the seuentéenth of September. A combate is granted at Couentrie.

A fiftéenth and a halfe was granted, and the customes of Woles, fiftie shillings of euery Sacke of euery Englishman borne, and thrée pound of euery stranger.

This Parliament ended, the king visited many places in the West part of England, as Worcester, Hereford, Bristow, Glastenbury and Bath.

After this also, the king caused a Theatre to be made at Bristow, for a combate to be fought betwéene two Scots, to wit, the one being an Esquire appellant, & the other a knight defendant, and the appellant was ouercome and hanged: but after this time, he made a great & marueilous strong Theatre at Couentrie for the combate betwixt the Duke of Hereford, and the Duke of Norffolke, and gaue them day for the fight, the 16. of September, to wit, the feast day of S. Edith, at which day and place, a great concourse and assembly of people was there gathered out of all parts of England. When the saide Champions appeared in the Lists, ready to fight, the king commanded them to be quiet and not to fight, & then the K. sitting in his royall apparrel within his tent girt with his sword, he commanded his decrée to be proclaimed, & this was the kings decrée, that Henry Duke of Hereford, for his disobedience towards the king should be banished for tenne yéeres, and likewise the Duke of Norffolke to be banished for euer out of England, taking of his reuenues a thousand markes by yéere, till the towne of Caleis were repaired. *Ann. reg. 22* Dukes banished.

At the feast of S. Michael, the king caused seuentéene Counties in East England to bée indited, and laid to their charges, that they had béene against him, with the Duke of Glocester, the Earles of Arundell & Warwike, wherfore he sent honourable men to induce the Lords both spiritual and temporal, to make a submission by writing, sealed with their owne hands, acknowledging themselues to be traytors to the king, though they neuer offended him in word or déed. Moreouer, he compelled all the religious gentlemen and commons, to set their seales to blankes, to the end hée might as it pleased him oppresse them seuerally, or all at once: some of the commons paid 1000. markes, some 1000. pounds, &c. Blanke Charters.

Also, he ordained through euery prouince in England, that all gentlemen, and men of substance, should be sworne firmely to maintaine according vnto their possible power, all the statutes, Articles and constitutions ordained in the last Parliament. Vnaccustomed othes.

This yéere the king kept a most royal Christmas, with euery day iustings and running at the tilt, whereunto resorted such a number of people, that there was euery day spent xxviii. or xxvi. oxen, & thrée hundred shéep, besides fowle without number. Also the king caused a garment for himselfe to be made of gold, siluer, and precious stones, to the value of 3000. markes. 1399. Great Iustings and feastings.

On Newyéeres day, nére vnto Bedford, a very déepe water which ranne betwixt the townes of Swelstone and Harlewood, stode sodainely still and diuided it selfe, so that by the space of thrée miles, the bottom remayned drie, which wonder, many a one thought, did signifie the diuision of the

people, and falling away from the king, which happened ſhortly after.

Earle of March ſlaine in Ireland. Cr. Pet. colledge Wil. Wilum.

Roger Mortimer Earle of March, and of Vlſter in Ireland, lying there in a Caſtell of his, there came on him a great multitude of wild Iriſhmen to aſſaile him, and he iſſuing out, fought manfully, til he was by them hewen to peeces, whoſe death the king determined to reuenge.

Duke of Lancaſter deceaſed.

The third of February died Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaſter, at the Biſhop of Elies Inne, in Holborne by London, and was honourably buried in Saint Paules Church at London, by Blanch his firſt wife, his ſonne Henry Duke of Hereford being then beyond the ſeas.

King Richard ſayled into Ireland.

About Whitſontide, king Richard with a Nauie of 200. ſhips, ſailed from Milford hauen, towards Ireland, and arriued at Waterford on the laſt day of may, from whence, he marched with an army of 30000. to Kilkenny, foure ſcore miles within the countrey, and there remained 14. daies, tarrying for Edward Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle, that kept not the right courſe.

Ann. reg. 23. On Midſommer eeuen he went from thence towards the countrey of Mackmur, who remayned amongſt the woods with 3000. men, right hardy, and ſuch as ſeemed but little to feare the Engliſhmen. At the entring of the woods, the king commaunded fires to be vſed, ſo that many a houſe, and many a village was brent, & there the king made Henry the Duke of Herefords ſonne knight, who was afterward king Henry the fifth, with tenne other. 2500. pioners were appointed to fell the woods, and make waies for the Engliſhmen. The Iriſhmen feared greatly the ſhot of the Engliſhmen, but yet with their darts they aſſailed, and ſlew diuers as they caught them at aduantage. The vncle of Mackmur came in and yelded himſelfe to the king, with a wythe about his necke, and many other naked and bare-legged, did the like, all which, the king pardoned. After this, the king ſent to Mackmur, promiſing him, that if he would come in as his vncle had done, with the wythe about his necke, he ſhould be pardoned: but he vtterly refuſing, ſaid, he would fight to death in defending his right, for he knew the Engliſhmen wanted victuals, and more then they had brought with them could not be bought for ſiluer or gold. There was already ſuch ſcarcity, that there were ſome foure, ſome fiue, that had but a ſmall loafe of bread to liue by the day, and ſome that eate not a graine in fiue daies together. In this eſtate they remayned eleuen daies, many of their horſes were loſt for lacke of meate. In the meane ſeaſon yet came three ſhippes from Dublin fraught with victuals, for the which was great ſtrife and preaſe eſpecially for the wine of Oſſey and Spayne. The morow after the K. departed from thence, keeping the hye way toward Dublin, maugre all the noiſe of the enemies: at what time Mackmur ſent a meſſenger with notice to the king that he would be his friend, & aſke him mercy, or els, if it pleaſed him to treat of peace, to ſend ſome noble men to him: whereupon the Earle of Glocester was ſent, who led with him the rereward whereof he was Captaine, being two hundred launces, and a thouſand archers, betwixt two woods farre from the ſea in the declining of an hil they met with the Iriſh. Mackmur himſelf rode on a white horſe without ſaddle or other furniture, that coſt him (as was ſaid) foure hundred kine, which horſe he ran down the hil, that ỹ beholders reported

The vncle of Mackmur ſubmitted to Richard.

they

they neuer had ſéene hare nor déere to haue runne ſo ſwiftly. In his right hand he bare a Dart great and long, which he threw exceéding well. He was a mightie ſtrong man of perſonage. There the Earle and hée talked a good while, about the murthering of the Earle of March, and after of other things, but agreé they could not, and ſo departed. Mackmur a good horſman.

The Earle aduertiſed the king what he had found, which was nothing, but that the enemy would cry mercy, ſo as he might be ſure to haue peace without other griefe, otherwiſe, he would (ſo long as he liued) defend himſelfe: wherefore, the king (in his wrath) not knowing what let might happen, ſware, that he would neuer depart Ireland, till he had him either aliue or dead. The hoſte diſlodged for lacke of victuals, they were a thirtie thouſand at their comming ouer, that lay then at Dubline fiftéene daies, the king forthwith diuiding his army into threé parts, ſent them out to ſéeke Mackmur, promiſing an hundreth markes to him that could bring him in, which offer was well harkened vnto, for it ſounded well, but he could not be caught: and the ſame day Edward Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle Conſtable of England, arriued with an hundred ſaile, of whoſe comming, the king was very glad, though hée indéed had tarried long, and might haue come much ſooner.

They remayned fiue wéekes at Dubline, and heard no newes out of England, the paſſage was ſo daungerous, the wind being contrary, and tempeſts ſo great, at the length came a ſhip with heauie newes, how the Duke of Hereford, and now by the deceaſe of his father Duke of Lancaſter, was arriued in England at Rauenſpore fait by Birdlington beſides Wadlington in Yorke ſhire, and had beheaded William Scroope Earle of Wiltſhire, Treaſurer of England, Iohn Buſhy, Henry Greene, and other, and had cauſed Thomas Arundell Archbiſhop of Canterbury to preach againſt king Richard, who alſo ſhewed a Bull procured from Rome, promiſing remiſſion of ſinnes to all thoſe which ſhould aide the ſaid Henry, in conquering of his enemies, and after their death to be placed in paradiſe, which preaching moued many to cleaue to the Duke. The Duke of Hereford returned into England.

Vpon this newes the king being perſwaded to make haſte ouer, the Duke of Aumarle ſaid, it was better to ſtay till his ſhips might be brought together, for there were but an hundreth ready to make ſayle, whereupon Iohn Mountacute Earle of Saliſbury was ſent with a power, whileſt the king going to Waterford might gather his fléete, who promiſed within fiue daies to haue followed him. The Earle of Saliſbury landed at Conwey, where he was ſone aduertiſed, how the Duke had taken the more part of England, and that all the Lords were got to him, with more then threéſcore thouſand men. The Earle of Saliſbury cauſed to ſummon the Welchmen and them of Cheſhire, to come to him, ſo that (wéening the king had béen arriued at Conwey) within foure daies there were come together fortie thouſand men, readie to go againſt the Duke of Hereford, where they ſtayed fourtéen daies but when they ſaw the king came not, they ſtealed away, & left the Earle of Saliſbury in maner alone, ſo that vnneath he had an hundred men with him. The Duke of Hereford aduanced towards the Earle of Saliſbury, who withdrew him into

King Richard returned out of Ireland, and landed at Wilford haven.

into Conwey. The king through euill counſell ſtaide after the Earles departure 18. daies, and then arriued at Wilford hauen, with the Dukes of Aumarle, Exceſter, and Surrey, and diuers other of the Nobility, with the Biſhops of London, Lincolne, and Carliſle, & many other, that he might with an army mæte the Duke before he had gotten his aſſiſters together, but after his comming into England, and vnderſtanding the Dukes preparation, he let fal his courage to giue battell, knowing for certain that the people aſſembled againſt him, would rather die then giue place, as well for the hatred as feare, which they had conceiued of him: wherfore leauing his army with the Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle, Conſtable and chiefe gouernour of his army at Wilford, went from thence priuily about midnight following, diſguiſed like a Prieſt, for feare to be knowen, with 14. perſons only, who went to Conwey, thinking the Earle of Saliſbury had there held the field. There were with him the Dukes of Exceſter and Surrey, and the Earle of Gloceſter, that continued faithfull vnto the laſt houre.

There were three Biſhops alſo, of which, two did not like good men, the Biſhop of Lincolne, and Saint Dauids, but the third continued faithfull, that was the Biſhop of Carliſle.

He had alſo two knights, Stephen Scroope, and William Fireby, and Ianico a Gaſcoigne. The king rode ſo warily by nights, that he came to Conwey at the breake of a day. Great ſorrow and lamentation was made by the king and the Earle at their mæting, for that the Earles hoſte was diſperſed and gone, ſome to the Duke, and ſome other waies.

The Duke of Aumarle, Conſtable and chiefe gouernour of the kings army at Wilford, immediately when the kings departure was knowne, ſaid vnto the ſouldiers, let vs ſhift for our ſelues maſters, for the king is fledde, whereupon euery man truſſed and away. Sir Thomas Percy ſteward of the houſhold, talking with the Conſtable alſo departed, and toke their way through Wales.

The Welchmen ſæing ſuch diſorder, aſſembled them together, and ſpoyled the Engliſhmen of all their goods, & ſent them packing in their dublets, with white ſtaues in their hands, for there rode, here tenne, here twenty, here fifty, here an hundred, and ſo the Welchmen comming down the Mountaines, the Engliſh loſt that they had. The king had many horſes of the beyond Sea breede, and great riches in apparell and iewels, which was in the kæping of ſir Thomas Percy, who with the Conſtable came to Duke Henry of Hereford, and more then fiue hundred of their company, all naked, whom the Welchmen had diſpoyled, and beaten well.

The king being at Conwey in great diſcomfort, ſent the Dukes of Exceſter and Surrey, to Henry Duke of Hereforde and Lancaſter, to knowe what his meaning was, himſelfe remayning ſtill at Conwey in great perplexity, and with him the Earle of Saliſbury, the Biſhoppe of Carleile, ſir William Ferebe knight, ſir Stephen Scroope mine author, and another Frenchman, in all but fiftæne perſons, then was newes brought to the king how his Conſtable had demeaned him, and likewiſe his Steward, that had cauſed

ſed his riches to be brought a land, and going through Wales with it, the Welchmen had taken it.

The king then by the aduiſe of the Earle of Saliſbury departed from Conwey vnto Beawmareis, a ten miles off, and from thence, he went to Carnaruan. Beawmareis was a ſtrong Fortreſſe if it had bẽ manned & victualled. Carnaruan is a fayre towne, and a ſtrong Caſtel, but theſe were vnprouided of al things, ſo that for fiue or ſixe nights he lay very hard and baſe, and for victuals there was none; wherefore he returned againe to Conwey, where hée ſore lamented his eſtate. The Dukes of Erceſter & Surrey entring the City of Cheſter, which Duke Henry had taken, were brought ſtraight to the Caſtel to the Duke, who was glad to ſée them, as he profeſſed, & forth with aſked the Duke of Erceſter what newes, who told him from point to point, what ſhame and diſhonor it would be to him, if he dealt ſo vniuſtly toward his Prince, and that through him he were depoſed: he therfore demanded anſwere with ſpéd: but the Duke of Lancaſter was as ſlowe to diſpatch him, and told him hée ſhould not go for one wéeke from him, and that the king was not wel aduiſed to ſend him and his fellow, being men of ſuch calling, ſith he had other inough of meaner eſtate to do the meſſage: ſo they remayned to their great diſcomfort. The Duke of Erceſter, Duke Henry ſtill kept in his company; but the Duke of Surrey was committed to ſafe kéeping within the Caſtell of Cheſter.

There is a Caſtel ſixe miles from Cheſter, called Beſton Caſtell, builded on a rocke, very ſtrong by ſituation, therein were an hundred men of armes choſen and able men, but not valiant, or faithfull to king Richard, for they deliuered it to the Duke, where they might well inough haue kept it, the aſcending is ſo ſteépe: it was victualled for ſixe yéeres. There was found within it coyne better worth then an hundred thouſand markes, beſide other iewels, which king Richard cauſed to be kept, to the value of two hundred thouſand markes, all which Duke Henry toke with him, and returned to Cheſter, and there taking counſell of his friends what was beſt to be done, the Archbiſhop of Canterbury toke vpon him to ſpeake, and ſaid: that ſith the king was in Wales, which was a countrey ſtrong by reaſon of the Mountaines, ſo that it was impoſſible for an army to paſſe with bagge and baggage, he thought it beſt to ſend vnto king Richard, & to make him beléeue that he ſought nothing but peace and a Parliament to be made, wherein, thoſe that had offended in putting to death his vncle the Duke of Gloceſter, ſhould be puniſhed, and ſo from thenceforth the King and the Duke to be good friends, and that it ſhould be at the kings pleaſure to appoint the day and place for this Parliament; for without this ſhift, it ſhould be impoſſible for the Duke to get him into his hands, for he might depart to ſea whẽ he would, hauing retained at Conwey ſhips for that purpoſe.

All the other Lords aſſenting to this counſel, the Duke appointed the Earle of Northumberland to go to the king with foure hundred launces, and a thouſand archers, which Earle, when he came to Flint caſtel, had it deliuered to his hands: from thence he haſted to Rudland, which was alſo giuen ouer to him: this Rudland is but tenne miles from Conwey, where the king was, greatly

marualling, that hée heard nothing of his brother the Duke of Ercester, being now eight daies since he was sent to the Duke of Herefoꝛd. The Earle of Northumberland laid vnder a rocke, nére to the Castell of Rudland two great ambushments of his people, with commandement to kéepe that passage. Then he went with fiue other in his company and went by the sea coast, till he came before the town of Conwey, and then he sent an Herault to the king foꝛ a safe conduct, to come to his présence, to declare his message from the D. about an agrément, which safe conduct being granted, he passed the water, and entred the Castel of Conwey, where he found the K. and the Earle of Salisbury, he declared to them that peace would be made if he would be a good Iudge & a true, and cause those that should be named, to be tryed by Iustice at a certaine day of Parliament at Westminster, which he and the Duke should hold together, and that the Duke might kéepe his place of high Iudge as his father and other ancestors before him had done, foꝛ the space of one hundred yéeres. Those that he would haue to be tried by the law, were the Duke of Ercester, the Duke of Surrey, the Earle of Salisbury, the bishop of Carleile and Tho. Marke, which fiue, had giuen the K. counsel to put his vncle the Duke of Glocester to death, and then if it should please him to pardon the Duke his wrath, he would be ready to come to him on his knées to aske him mercy, and so they might go to London together, oꝛ the one one way, and the other another. The Earle offered to sweare that all this should be perfoꝛmed, and that the Duke had assured him by oth to stand to it. The King liking well that it should be at his liberty to go, eyther in company with the Duke, oꝛ alone vnto London, purposed to take the offer, and so to prétend some excuse foꝛ his going alone, after hé should méet with the Duke: as lacke of victuals oꝛ such like, and so to take a by-way thoꝛow Wales, and there to raise a power, foꝛ hé promised the Lords neuer to suffer them to come to iudgement, discoursing with them, how hé would auoid all the daunger, and surely hé reuenged vpon his enemies, namely on Duke Henry of Lancaster, who with the rest should die foꝛ it, hé accoꝛded to go to the Duke, and then (Masse béeing celebrated) the Earl of Northumberland sware vpon the hoast, that the Duke should hold all that hé had told the King. The Earle hasted the King foꝛward to hoꝛsebacke, but the King prayed the Earle to go before vnto Rutland, there to prepare dinner. The Earle rode a pace vntill hé came where hé might sée his people vnder the mountaine, whom hé much commended foꝛ obseruing his commaundement.

King Richard betrayd.

The King passing the water rode a foure miles before hé came to the rocke where when he saw the ambushes he was soꝛe abashed, knowing wel hé was betrayed by the Earle, foꝛ he was in such a place as he could not escape. The sea beating on the one side, and the rocke kéeping him in on the other, and if hé should haue fled backe, they would haue caught him, ere hé could haue come to Conwey, foꝛ hé had not past thrée and twenty in all of his company. The King descending the rocke, the Earle came, and knéeling down, excused the matter, saying, he had caused those people to come to guard his person, but the King told him, fewer would haue serued, and that it was contrary to his oth,

foꝛ

for he had promiſed to haue but fiue in his company, and ſaid therefore that he would goe backe to Conwey, but the Earle anſwered, that nowe ſith he had him, he would leade him to the Duke as he had promiſed tenne dayes ſince, and ſo he cauſed bread and wine to be brought and offered the King, who durſt not refuſe it, and after leaping on horſebacke againe they rode to Rutland to dinner, and after to Flint, where they lay that night. Rutland. Flint.

The morrowe being the two and twentieth day of Auguſt, the King got him to the Caſtle walles, where he beheld the Duke with all his hoſte of an hundred thouſand men comming by the ſands: there came before that were departed from the army, the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, Sir Thomas Percy, and the Earle of Rutland from whom the duke had taken the office of Conſtable, more for a colour, then for diſpleaſure, for they bare the Dukes order, and not the hart, which was the Kings, the Archbiſhop entred firſt, and after the other with a great traine, they went vp to the dungeon, and then the King came downe from the walles, vnto whom they did reuerence lowly on their knées, the King tooke them vp, and drew the Archbiſhop apart, and they two talked long together, but the Earle of Rutland kepte him aloofe. They tooke horſſe againe, and rode towards the Duke that nowe was approching nére.

The King went vp againe to the walles, lamenting ſore when he ſaw the Dukes hoſte within two bowe ſhotes of the Caſtle, who compaſſed it round about downe to the ſea. The Earle of Northumberland went forth to the Duke, who after long talke, concluded, that the Duke ſhould not enter the Caſtle before the King had dined, for he was faſting: ſo the Earle returned, and the King was ſet to dinner, with whom ſate his aſſured friends the Earle of Saliſbury, and the Biſhop of Carleile, Sir Stephen Scrope, and Feribe, they ſate long and eate little, for they had no haſte to riſe.

After dinner the Duke entred the Caſtle all armed, his baſenet excepted. King Richard came downe to méete the Duke, who as ſoone as he ſawe the King, fell downe on his knées, and comming nére vnto him, he knéeled the ſecond time with his hat in his hand, and the King then put off his hoode, and ſpake firſt, faire couſin of Lancaſter ye are right welcome. The Duke bowing lowe to the ground anſwered, my Lord, I am come before you ſent for me, the reaſon why I will ſhewe you. The common fame among your people is ſuch, that ye haue for the ſpace of twentie or xvii. yéres, ruled them very rigorouſly, but if it pleaſe our Lord I will helpe you to gouerne better. The King anſwered, faire Couſing of Lancaſter, ſith it pleaſeth you, it pleaſeth me well.

The Duke ſpake as ye haue heard to the King, he ſpake alſo to the Biſhop of Carlile, to Sir Steuen Scrope, and to Feribe, but to the Earle of Saliſbury he ſpake not, whereby the Earle perceiued that the Duke hated him deadly.

The Duke with a high ſharpe voyce, bad bring forth the Kings horſes, and then two little nagges not worth fourtie franks, were brought forth, the king was ſet on the one, and the Earle of Saliſburie on the other: and thus the Duke brought the king from Flint to Cheſter, where he was deliuered to the Cheſter.

Duke

Duke of Glocesters sonne, and to the Earle of Arundels sonne that loued him but a little, for he had put their fathers to death, who ledde him straight to the Castle.

The third day they went from Chester to Nantwich, and the next day to Newcastle, and there the Earle of Warwicks son met them, and so iourneying forth, the nert day they came to Stafford, and after they departed to Lichfield, where the King thought to haue escaped, slipping downe into a Garden out of a Windowe of a great Towre, but he was espyed and thrust into the Tower againe: from Lichfield the Duke went to Couentrie, but before they could come thither, the Welchmen did them much harme and slewe many of them, and the Englishmen, when they by great chaunce could take any of the Welchmen, they tied them to their horse tayles, and drewe them after them, through wayes full of stones, and caused them to dye miserably.

The Duke passed from Couentrie to Deintrie, the next day to Northampton, from thence to Dunstable, and then to Saint Albons, and a fiue or sixe miles before his comming to London, the Maior and the Companies in their liueries, with great noyse of Trumpets met the Duke, doing more reuerence to him then to the King, reioycing that God had sent them such a Prince, that had conquered the Realme within one moneths space.

When the Duke came within two miles of the Citie, the Duke caused the host to stay, and then said to the commons of the Citie: My Masters, beholde here your King, consider what ye will doe with him. They answered, they would he should be led to Westminster, whereupon he was deliuered vnto them, and they led him to Westminster, and from thence by water to the Tower of London.

The Duke entred into London by the chiefe gate, and rode through Cheap to Saint Pauls, where he was after lodged in the Bishops pallace fiue or sixe dayes, and after at Saint Iohns without Smithfield, where he remayned fifténe dayes, from thence he remoued to Hertford, where he abode three weeks, and then came backe to London, to holde the Parliament that began the first Wednesday of October in Westminster hall, which they had hung and trimmed sumptuously, and had caused to be set vp a royall chaire, in purpose to chose a newe King, nere to the which the Prelates were set, and on the other side sate the Lords, and after the commons in order, first sate the Duke of Lancaster, then Edmond of Langley the Duke of Yorke, the Duke of Aumarle, the Duke of Surrey, the Duke of Exceter, and the Marques Dorset, then in order the Earles of Arundale, Norffolke, March, Stafford, Penbroke, Salisburie and Deuonshire, the Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland sate not, but went vp and downe, and oftentimes kneeled as it fell in doing their offices.

Parliament in Westminster hall.

The Archbishop of Canterbury made a Sermon and toke for his Theame, *Habuit Iacob benedictionem à patre suo*, which Sermon being ended in Latin, a Doctour of the Law, stode vp and read an instrument, in the which was contained, that King Richard had by his owne confession disabled himselfe to be worthy to raigne, and that he would resigne the crowne to such a one as was

sufficient

ſufficient to rule. This inſtrument being read, the Archbiſhop perſwaded them to proceede to the election of a new King, and perceiuing they were all contented, for there were not paſt foure perſons that were of King Richards part (and they durſt ſay nothing) he aſked each of them whom they would haue to their King, whether the Duke of Yorke or not? and they anſwered no: he aſked if they would haue his eldeſt ſonne the Duke of Aumarle: and they ſaid no: he aſked if they would haue his yongeſt ſonne, and they ſaid no: and ſo of diuers other: then ſtaying a while, he aſked if they would haue the Duke of Lancaſter, and then they anſwered they would none other. This demaund being made thrice, they drew certaine inſtruments and charters, and read them in preſence of all that were there. Then the Archbiſhops comming to the Duke, fell on their knées declaring to him how he was choſen King, and willed him to take regard if he would conſent thereto. Then the Duke being on his knées roſe and declared that he accepted the realme, ſith it was ordayned by God. Then the Archbiſhop read what the new King was bound vnto, and with certaine ceremonies ſigned him with the croſſe, then he kiſſed the Archbiſhop, and they toke the ring, with which the Kings be wedded to the Realme, and bare it to the Lord Percy, that was Conſtable, who receiuing it, ſhewed it to all the aſſembly, and then put it on the Kings finger, the King then kiſſed the Conſtable, and then the Archbiſhops led him to the ſiege Royall, and the King made his prayers on his knées before it, and after ſpake vnto them all, firſt to the Prelats, and then to the Lords and all other, and ſo ſet him downe in the ſeate: and thus he was inueſted, and King Richard put downe, he ſate a good while and kept ſilence, and ſo did al the reſt; for they were in prayer for his proſperitie in his gouernment, and when they had ended, where the offices were voide, the King created the Lord Percy Conſtable, and toke him the ſtaffe: Then was choſen Ralph Earle of Weſtmerland Marſhall, Iohn Scirle, or Serle Chancellor, Sir Richard Clifford keeper of the priuie Seale, and many other officers were newly confirmed. After this the Archbiſhop ſpake certaine things in latine, praying for the Kings proſperitie, and the Realmes, and after ſpake in Engliſh vppon this following: *Vir dominabitur in populo. reg. 9. &c.* And then exhorting all there preſent to pray the like, euery man ſate downe. Then the King roſe and made his eldeſt ſonne Prince of Wales, then the Lords were ſworne to be true to the Prince as before they had done to his father: his ſecond ſonne was there made Duke of Lancaſter. Thus was king Richard depoſed when he had raigned 22. yeeres, 3. moneths, and odde dayes, in ſuch ſort as ye haue heard, whoſe royaltie had bin ſuch, that whereſoeuer he lay, his perſon was guarded by 200. Cheſhire men, he had about him 13. Biſhops, beſides Barons, Knights, Eſquiers, and other moe then néeded, inſomuch that to the houſehold came euery day to meate 10000. people, as appeared by the meſſes told out of the kitching to 300. ſeruiters, &c. He was murdered on the 14. of February next following, as ſhall be ſhewed in place conuenient, and was buried firſt in the Church of the Friers preachers at Langley beſides Saint Albanes. And after by commaundement of King Henry the fift, remoued to Weſtminſter. Robert Iueleafe.

Henry

Ann.reg. 1.

HEnry Plantagenet borne at Bolingbrook, in Lincolnshire, sonne to Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, was ordeyned King of England, more by force then by lawfull succession or election: he began his raigne the 29. of September, in the yéere of our Lord God 1399. He forthwith made new officers, to wit Thomas his second sonne Steward of England: Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Constable of England: Ralph Neuill Earle of Westmerland, Marshall of England: Sir Iohn Scerle Chancellour of England, Sir Richard Clifford kéeper of his priuie seale: Iohn Norbury Esquire Treasurour, Thomas Chaucer Constable of Wallingford Castle, & other officers, and then was crowned at Westminster ỳ 13. of October, by Thomas Arundale Archbishop of Canterbury: The Dukes of Yorke, Surrey, Aumarle, and the Erle of Glocester bare ỳ Canopie ouer him. Sir Thomas Dimmocke was champion, and rode thrée times about the hall. This was a noble and valiant Prince, and after the ciuill warres were appeased, shewed himselfe louing to his subiects. He made Henry his sonne Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, Earle of Chester, and heire apparant to the crowne of England.

Record Towre.

After the solemnitie of the coronation, the Lords and commons straight proceéded to the Parliament. In which it was inquired out of the death of ỳ duke of Glocester, and howe he had béen murdered at Calais by the Duke of Norfolke, vpon the kings commandement. King Henry created his eldest sonne Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornewall, Earle of Chester, and Duke of Aquitaine. In this Parliament it was ordeined that the statutes made in the Parliament holden in the 21. yéere of king Richard at Westminster, and after proroged vnto Shrewsbury, with all the circumstances to be disanulled, reuoked, made voyde, & vtterly blotted out. Also that the Parliament holden at Westminster, in the 11. yéere of king Richard, be holden firme and stable. Also that the Lords and other persons which were iudged forth in the Parliament holden the 21. yéere of King Richard, and their heires that be dead, should be wholy restored to their possessions without any suing liuerie thereof to be made, excepted that the Lords and other shall haue nothing of the issues receiued in the meane time. The King gaue to the Earle of Northumberland the Ile of Man, to be holdē of the king by seruice, to beare the sword with which he entred into England. And to the Earle of Westmerland he gaue the Countie of Richmond. Also iudgement was giuen against the Appellants of the Duke of Glocester in this manner: the Lords in this present Parliament by the kings assent, iudge that the Dukes, of Aumarle, Surrey, and Excester now present and were appellants, shal lose their names of Dukes and honours from henceforth, together with the dignities, of Dukes, and that the Marques Dorset that is present, lose his name of Marques, and the Earle of Glocester, which

Ile of Man giuen to the Earle of Northumberland.

Dukes lose their names and honors.

is

lose his name for him and his heires, as the aboue named persons doe theirs, and that al the Castles, possessions or manors which they had of them that belonged to those whom they appealed from the day of the arrest of the Duke of Glocester, and the other Lords, or after at any time, simply and without fauour or mercy, they shall lose them: and that all other Castles, possessions, manors, Lordships, dominions and liberties, which they held of the Kings gift, that day or after should rest in the Kings grace from that houre, and that all letters patents and charters, which they or any of them had of the said names, Castles, Dominions, possessions, and liberties should be surrendred vp into the Chancery, there to be cancelled, and that they stand in state which they had in name and possession before the said day of the said arrest.

The King to shew to all men in all Countries about by what right and title he had taken vpon him the crowne and realme, sent Embassadours to Rome, Iohn Treneuant Bishop of Hereford, Iohn Cheyne Knights, & Iohn Cheyne Esquire. Into France he sent Walter Tricklow Bishop of Durham, Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, and William Heron. Into Spaine Iohn Trenor Bishop of S. Dauids, and Sir William Par Knight: Into Almaine the Bishop of Bangor with other. Messengers sent into diuers countries, to declare the cause of deposing of King Richard.

The Scottes in time of the Parliament taking occasion by the absence of the Northren Lords, and because the same time the North parts were sore oppressed by a great Pestilence entred as enemies, and toke the Castle of Warke, and kept the same a certaine time, but at length spoyled and vtterly ruinated it, and many other mischiefes they did in the Countrey. Thomas Moubrey Duke of Norffolke, which was exiled, dyed at Venice, in his returne from Ierusalem. Also the Duches of Glocester dyed, and her sonne and heire Humfrey dyed of the Pestilence when he was sent for forth of Ireland. Castell of Warke taken by the Scots. D. of Norffolke deceased.

The King held his feast of Christmasse in his Castle of Windsor, where Iohn Holland late Duke of Exceter and Earle of Huntington, Thomas Holland late Duke of Surrey & Earle of Kent, Edmond late Duke of Aumarle, and Earle of Rutland, son to the Duke of Yorke, Iohn Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, Thomas Spencer, Sir Ralph Lumly, Sir Thomas Blunt, Sir Benedic Cely Knights, with others that fauoured King Richard conspired against King Henry, and appointed priuily to murder him, vnder the colour of Iusting and other pastimes pretended. And the time approching of their purpose, they sent messengers to London with letters to the Duke of Aumarle, that he should not faile to come at that day appointed with his company, to helpe to doe the feate whereunto he was sworne: but his minde being altered, he bare the letters straight to his Father the Duke of Yorke, who caused a number of his men forthwith to carry his son to the King, where he shewing his letters, the King would not beleeue them: but the same morning came the Maior of London to the Court, and informed him of the matter, whereupon the King made no tarriance, but got him forth toward London, in company of the Maior and other. But before the King could gette London on his backe, his enemies came to Windsore, and there entred the Castle with an armed 1400. Conspiracy against King Henry.

band

band of 400. men on the fourth of January at night, where vnderstanding that the King was escaped their handes, being sore amazed, they withdrewe from Windsore, vnto Sunning, a certayne Mannour neare to Reading, where the Quæne wife to king Richard then lay, where they perswaded her houshoulde, that king Richard was escaped out of Pomfret Castell, and they would go to him: from thence they went to Wallingford, and after to Abingdon, moouing the people to take armes vpon them, and to go mæt their King Richard. After this they came to Faringdon, in the Vale of White Horse in Barkeshire, and the same day to Circester, on the xii. day late in the euening, and there harbored, with a great number of men of armes and many archers: there they bruted that K. Richard was escaped forth of prison, and that he was there with them, & to make their wordes to haue the more credite, they had got a Chaplein of K. Richards called Maudelen, so like to him in all proportion and fauour, that one could vnneth be discerned from the other: many times (saith mine author) I haue sæne him in Ireland ride with the king his Master: so faire a Priest and goodly a person, I had not lightly seene. They put him in armour with a crowne on his Helmet, so as all men might take him for king Richard. On the morrow being Wednesday, the people of that town misliking of their procedinges, fought against them, and at length tooke the chiefest of them, and ledde them to the Abbey there, and put them in a faire chamber, vnder safe custody. And on the Thursday the sayd Lordes, fearing the people, imagined how to escape out of their handes, and caused some of their seruantes to sette fire on certaine houses in the Towne, thinking that thereupon the people would depart from them, and sæke to staunch the fire: but it chaunced contrary, for the people turned into marueylous rage against them, ranne vpon them with great violence, and drewe them into the market place, and there they beheaded Iohn Holland the Duke of Excester, Thomas Holland the Duke of Surrey, and the Earle of Salisburie, the third day after the Epiphanie: their seruants that were with them, were by and by taken and as prisoners bound and brought to Oxford, and on Monday following were beheaded in the Castell there, to the number of fire and twentie persons. Also Sir Thomas Blunt Knight was beheaded with them. The wæke next following, was beheaded Tho Spencer Earle of Glocester at Bristow: not long after was Sir Barnard Brocas beheaded at London, and a Priest named Iohn Maudelen, that was like king Richard, and another Priest called William Feribe. The Bishop of Carlile was impeached and condemned of conspiracie, but was pardoned.

Maudelen a Priest counterfeited King Richard.

Dukes of Surrey and of Excester executed.

Maudelen the Priest and other executed.

Blanke Charters burnt.

The firth day of Februarie King Henry caused the blanke Charters, made to King Richard, to be burnt, at the standart in Cheape of London.

King Richard was imprisoned in Pomfrait Castle, where xv. dayes and nights they vexed him with continuall hunger, thirst and cold, and finally bereft him of his life, with such a kinde of death as neuer before that time was knowen in England (saith Sir Iohn Fortiscute.) He died the xiiii. day of Februarie, whose body was brought to ỹ Towre of London, and so through the City to Pauls Church bare faced, where he stod thre dayes for all beholders

and

and had seruice, where King Henry was present. From thence he was caried to Langley, and there buried in the Church of the Friers Preachers. Upon his death the famous and excellent Poet Iohn Gower, wrote certaine verses, which may be englished thus.

O Mirrour for the world meete,
which shouldst in Golde be sette,
By which all wise men, by foresight,
their prudent wittes may whette,
Lo, God doth hate such rulers, as
here viciously doe liue:
And none ought rule, that by their life,
doe ill example giue.
And this King *Richard* witnesseth well,
his end this plaine doth shewe:
For God allotted him such ende,
and sent him so greate woe,
As such a life deserude: as by
the Chronicles thou mayst knowe.

The king with a great army went into Scotland, spoyled the countrey and returned to Yorke, where two Knights, the one a Frenchman, the other an Italian challenged to fight within lists against Sir Iohn Cornwall, and Iames of Artois, which two strangers were ouercome in battaile, and Sir Iohn Cornwall obtayning the Kings fauour, married the Kings sister, that had bene wife to Sir Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington. K. Henry inuadeth Scotland. 1400. Chalenge of combat at Yorke.

The Welchmen taking occasion by the Kings absence when he was in Scotland, began to rebel, by the setting on of Owen Glendouerdew sonne to Griffith Vicham an Esquire of Wales, and so called Glendour, because his dwelling was in a place called Glendourdwy, for Glyn in Welch is a vale, and Dor is water, because the place was in a dale, at the side of the water or riuer of Dew in ỳ parish of Corwen, in the countie of Merioneth in Northwales. He serued King Richard, at the time of his oppression by Henry Duke of Lancaster at Flint Castle. The Welchmen rebell. Owen Glendouerdew.

The first cause of this stirre was about a piece of land in controuersie betwixt him and the Lord Reignold Gray of Ruthine, for when he saw his cause not fauoured, first he began to spoyle the lands of the said Lord Gray, whereof the King being certified, went with an army into Wales: but the Welchmen fled to the mountaines, the King brent the countrey, slue the people with whom he met, and returned with a great pray of cattell.

The famous Poet Geffrey Chaucer esquire, the first illuminer of our English language, deceased. This was a worshipful Gentleman, and of faire possessions, whose abode was chiefly about Woodstocke, (where he had a faire mānor) and Newelme (in Oxfordshire) which also was his, with diuers other manors: he was oft times imployed by K. Edward ỳ 3. as ambassador into france, and into other forrain lands: he had to wife the daughter of Paine Roete *alias* Guian King at armes, by whō he had issue Tho. Chaucer, who maried Mawd Geffer. Chaucer chiefe Poet of England. Newelme.

daughter

daughter to Sir Bartholomewe Borwash, by who he had issue Alice Chaucer, first maried to Sir Iohn Philips knight, after to the Earle of Salisbury, and thirdly to William Duke of Suffolke, who at his wiues request founded an hospitall called Gods house, by ỹ parish Church of Newelme: which Church he also builded, in this Church lieth buried Tho. Chawcer the last heire male, in an high marble tombe in a faire chappell on the South side of the quire, with this Epitaph, *Hic iacet Tho. Chaucer, armiger, dominus istius ecclesiæ, qui obijt* 18. *die mensis Nouembris, ann. dom.* 1434. *Et Matildis vxor eius, quæ obijt* 28. *die mensis Aprilis ann. dom.* 1436. William Duke of Suffolke was buried at Wingfield a Colledge in Suffolke, Alice survived, and was buried in the parish Church of Newelme on the South side of the high altar in a rich tombe of allabaster, with an image in the habit of a Nonnes crowned lying ouer it with this Epitaph: *Ora pro anima serenissimi principis Aliciæ Suffolciæ, huius ecclesiæ patronæ, & primæ fundatricis huius eleemosynariæ, quæ obijt* 20. *die mensis Maij, ann. dom.* 1475. Of which Dutches loke more in Henry the 6. the 28. of his reigne: but our first named Chaucer the poet, by what occasion I know not, was buried at Westminster, his workes for the most part are extant, first published in print by William Caxton, sometime a mercer of London, the man that first brought the Art of printing into this lande, since more largely collected into one volume by William Boteuil, aliàs Thin, Esquier, chiefe Clearke of the Kitchin, and maister of the household to K. Henry the 8. vnto whom he dedicated the fruite of that his labour *Anno Christi.* 1540. The which volume was since againe, to wit, in *Anno* 1560. by viewe of diuers written copies, corrected by my selfe, the author of this history, who at that time also corrected and added diuers workes of the said maister Geffrey Chaucers neuer before imprinted, and againe in the yeere 1597. further increased with other his workes, as also his life, preferment, issue and death, collected out of records in the towre and else where by my selfe, and giuen to Thomas Spight to be published, and was performed. Besides the history of Oedipus and Iocasta, with the siege of Thebes, translated and made into English verse, by Don Iohn Lidgate, a disciple of the said Chaucers.

John Gowre a famous Poet.

Not long after deceased the like famous Poet Maister Iohn Gower, a man not much vnlike the other in excellency of wit, learning, or possessions, he builded a great part of S. Mary Ouaries Church in Southwarke, then newe reedified. On the North side of the which Church he prepared for his bones a resting place, where somewhat after the olde fashion he lyeth right sumptuously buried in a tombe of stone, with his image also of stone lying ouer him, ỹ haire of his head auburne long to his shoulders, and curling vp, a smal forked beard, and on his head a garland or Chaplet of roses red, foure in number, an habite of purple damasked downe to his feete, a Coller of Esses gold about his necke, vnder his head the likenesse of three bookes, which he compiled: the first, *Speculum meditantis* in French, the second *Vox clamantis* in Latine, the third *Confessio amantis* in English, which last named booke is extant in print, ỹ second I haue faire written, but the first I haue not seene, his tombe arched, was beautified with his armes, and the likenes of Angels with posies in latine. Besides in the

the wall were painted three virgins crowned, one of the which was written Charity, and held this deuise. *En toy qui filz de Dieu le pere sauue soit, qui giſt soubs ceſte pierre.* The second Mercie, with this deuise: *O bon Ieſu fait ta mercie alme dont le corps giſt ioy.* The third Pitie, with this deuise. *Pour ta pite Ieſu regard, Et met ceſt alme in sauue garde.*

All which is now washed out, and the image defaced, by cutting off the nose and striking off his hands, because they were eleuated towards heauen. *Ann. reg. 2.*

The Emperour of Constantinople, came into England, to require ayde against the Turkes, whom the King with sumptuous preparation met at Blackheath, vpon S. Thomas day the Apostle, and brought him to London, and paying for the charges of his lodging, presented him with gifts worthy for one of so high degree. Emperour of Constantinople came into England.

Soone after came newes, that the King of Leto had slaine in battel Bassacke the son of the noble Balthazaradan, and destroyed Ieruſalem, and all the countrey round about. And because he had by Gods grace so ouercome contrary to his opinion, he became christened and 60000. men of his sect. 1401.

The Emperour of Constantinople hearing this, was very glad, and departed out of England, being honoured by the King with precious giftes. A Parliament was holden at London, after the feast of the Epiphanie, in the which Parliament a statute was enacted for Lollards, that whersoeuer they were knowen to preach their false and corrupt doctrine, (so termed at that time) they should be taken, & deliuered to the Bishop of the diocese, before whom, if they would presume stoutly to defend their erronious opinions, they should be disgraded, & committed to the secular iurisdiction to be executed, which law was first put in practise vpon a Priest named Wil. Sawtry, which was burnt in Smithfield, in the presence of many a man. Simon Burley was restored in blood & inheritance, except the lands giuen to the abbey of Grace by the towre of London, to S. Stephans at Westminster, and the Friers at Langley. Parliament at London.

The 8. day of Aprill deceased Thomas Beawchampe Earle of Warwike, and shortly after deceased Iohn Botelsham Bishop of Rochester.

The fiue and twentieth day of July Isabel late wife to King Richard, not yet twelue yeares of age, departed from Douer towards Caleis, and so into France to her father, well and honorably accompanied. Where when she was arriued, Hugueuell that had been sent for her into England, aduertised the commissioners then remayning at Bulloigne. She was conueyed from Caleis by the Englishmen that accompanied her to Lalingham, where the Earle of S. Paul mette her, and the French Ambassadours: she alighted from her horse beneath Lolingham, the French Ladies came to her, and brought her to the Chappell, before the Ambassadours of both Realmes, and there Sir Henry Percy protested, that the King of England his master had sent her to be deliuered to her father cleare of all bonds of mariage, or otherwise, and that he would take it on his soule, that she was sound and intire, euen as she was the same day she was deliuered to King Richard, and if any would say to the contrary, he was ready to proue it against him by Combat, but the Earle of S. Paul, saying he beléeued it to be true, the Lord Percy toke her by the hand Isabel late wife to King Richard returned into France.

and deliuered her vnto the Earle, and the Commissoners of France deliuered certaine letters of acquitall.

Owen Glendouerdew with his Welchmen did much harme to the Englishmen, and returned without receyuing any harme.

K. Henry escapeth great danger.

There was found in the Kings bed clothes, an yron with 3. sharpe pikes, slender and round standing vpright, laid there by some traytor, that when the King should haue laid him downe, he might haue thrust himselfe vpon them.

This time was vsed exceeding pride in garments, gownes with deepe and broade sleeues, commonly called poke sleeues, the seruants ware thē as wel as their masters, which might wel haue bin called receptacles of ẏ deuil, for what they stole, they hid in their sleeues, whereof some hung downe to the feete, and at least to the knees, full of cuts & iagges, whereupon were made these verses.

Tho. Wal. Additions to pol

Ann. reg. 3.

Now hath this land little neede of Broomes,
to sweepe away the filth out of the streete:
Sen side sleeues of pennilesse groomes,
will it vp licke be it drie or weete.
O England stand vpright on thy feete,
so foule a waste in so simple a degree
Banish, or it shall sore repent thee.

Tho. Hocclue.

The Conduit vpon Cornehill in London was made, which before time had been a prison, called the Tunne in Cornehill, whereunto, nightwalkers that were taken in suspition of felloney, or other trespasses, were committed.

From the feast of the Epiphany till the midst of Aprill appeared a blazing Starre, first betwixt the East and the North, and last of all putting fierie beames toward the North, foreshewing peraduenture the effusion of blood, about the parts of Wales and Northumberland.

1402. Owen Glendouerdew with his Welchmen, wasted the lands of the Lord Reignald Gray, tooke him prisoner, and slew many of his people.

Conspiracie against King Henrie.

Certaine men affirmed King Richard to be aliue, and that he should shortly shew himselfe openly, and reward them that were faithfull vnto him. But after a certaine priest was taken at Warwicke, who had written the names of many, which were the authors of these troubles, both the hope and feare of this conspiracie vanished. The Priest was drawen, hanged and quartered. Also Walter Waldocke late Priour of Laude a Priorie in Leicestershire, because he confessed he knew euil against the king and did conceale it, was likewise hanged and headed. Moreouer certaine gray Friers were taken, of the which one Richard Friseby, Doctour of Diuinitie, being asked what he would do if King Richard were present, answered, that he would fight in his quarrell against any man, euen to the death, wherefore he was condemned, drawen, and hanged in his religious habite and weede.

A stoute Frier executed.

The diuell appeared in likenes of a Frier.

At Daneburie in Essex, vpon *Corpus Christi* day, the deuill appeared in likenesse of a gray Frier, who entring the Church, raged insolently, to the great feare of the Parishoners: and the same houre with a tempest of whirlewind and thunder, the top of the Steeple was broken downe, and halfe the Chauncell scattered abroad.

Shortly

Shortly after, Sir Roger Claringdon Knight, a baſtard ſonne of Edward the blacke Prince, and with him a Squire and a Yeoman were beheaded, and eyght gray Friers hanged and beheaded at London, and two at Leiceſter, all which had publiſhed King Richard to be aliue. All Priories allians with their poſſeſſions were reſumed and ſeized into the Kings hands, except ſuch houſes as were conuentuals.

Owen Glendouerdew, with a company of Welchmen inuaded all the Shires that bordered nere vnto him, wherfore Sir Edmond Mortimer with many knights and eſquires went out to encounter with Owen, ſtronger then he was of the Country: but when it came to martiall affayres, their owne Archers turned their hands againſt them whom they ſhould haue defended. There were ſlaine aboue eleuen hundred of our men. Sir Edmond Mortimer was taken, and the Welchwomen, when the battayle was done vſing the dead carcaſſes to ſhamefully to be ſpoken, would not ſuffer them to be buried without great ranſome. This battayle was fought at Pelale in Wales. The King was not haſty to purchaſe the deliuerance of the Earle of March, becauſe his title to the crowne was wel known, but ſuffred him to remaine in priſon.

Owen Glendouer tooke ſir Edmond Mortimer.

The K. went with a great power into Wales to purſue Owen Glendouerdewe, where he profited nothing, but loſt much, for the Welchmen conueyed themſelues into vnknowen places: wherefore the king conſtrained by neceſſitie, returned into England, after he had ſpoyled and brent the country.

King Henry went into Wales to purſue Owen Glendouerdewe.

Edmond of Langley Duke of Yorke deceaſed, and was buryed at Langley, with his brethren, nere vnto his wife daughter to King Peter of Spaine.

The ſame time the Scottes cruelly entred into England, for they ſuppoſed all the Lords beyond Humber to be occupyed in the parties of Wales: but the Earles of Northumberland, Henry Percy, and his ſonne Henry with the earle of Dunbarre, (that a good while agone hauing forſaken the Scottes, had ſworne to be true to the King of England) with a number of armed men and plentie of archers, ſodainely came to reſiſt the Scottes, as they would haue returned home, after they had ſpoyled and brent the Country; but now vpon a ſodaine their way was forelaid, ſo that they muſt nedes abide and take a place to fight vpon: they chooſe therefore a mountaine nere to the Downe of Wollor, called Halydowne hill, in the which they place themſelues with their armed men & archers, which when our men beheld, leauing the way in which they ſtode againſt the Scots, they clime the hill that ſtode oueragainſt the Scots, and without delay of time, our archers placed in the valley, ſet their arrowes againſt the Scots battell, that they might by ſome meanes force them to come downe: on the other ſide, the Scottiſh archers let flie at our men, who yet after they felt the grieuous waight, and as it had been a ſhower or tempeſt of the arrowes, ſhot by the Engliſhmen, they fledde. The Earle Dowglas perceiuing his men ſo to flee, for he was their generall leader, tooke his ſpeare, and manfully with a multitude came downe the hill, truſting doubtleſſe in his armour and armour of his complices that had been three yeres in making, and forced himſelfe to runne vpon the archers, which when the ar-

The Scots entred England.

Battell at Halidowne hill.

chers saw, they stepped backe, and shotte so fiercely, that they pierced the armed mens bodies, stroke through their Helmets, riued their speares, and rent their armour with light adoe. Earle Dowglas himselfe was wounded in fiue places, the residue of the Scottes that were not come beside the hill, turning backe from the arrowes that flew, fledde away, but their flight nothing auayled them whilest the archers followed them, but that they were compelled to yeeld themselues. Earle Dowglas also was taken, and many drowned in the riuer of Twæde, whilest they knew not the fordes, to the number of fiue hundred (as was sayd.) In this battell no Lord, nor knight, no esquire, gaue any stroke to the enemies, but onely God gaue the victorie to the English archers, the Lordes and armed men being onely lookers on.

That day the flowre of the Scottish Chiualry was taken, to wit, the earle Dowglas, Murdake the eldest son of the Duke of Albanie, that was heyre apparant to the Realme of Scotland: the earles of Murrey, Angus, and Orkeney, the Lords of Mountgomerie, Erskyn, & Gram, with many other knights to the number of foure score, besides Esquires and yeomen, whose number was not knowne. There were slaine of barons, the Lord Gordon, the Lord Iohn of Swinton that was false to both the Realmes, &c. This battell was fought on the fourtéenth of September.

Ann. reg. 4. Edmond Mortimer which before was taken by Owen Glendouerdew, now professed to take Owens part against King Henry, and did contract marriage with the daughter of the said Owen.

A Parliament at London. In a Parliament at London, which began the morrow after Michaelmas day, and lasted seuen weekes, there was granted to the king a tenth and a half of the clergie, a tenth of the borough townes, and a fiftéenth of the commons through the Realme.

1403. King Henry married the Lady Ioan de Nauarre. The messengers that had bin sent for Ioan, late wife to Iohn of Mountford Duke of Brytaine returned with her into England, and landed at Falmouth in Cornewall. The King met with her at Winchester the seuenth of February, where they were married in the Church of S. Swithen.

The 26. of February, she was crowned at Westminster.

Monstrous sights at Bedford. In the summer following, by the Townes of Bedford and of Brekelsward, monsters were séene oft-times mornings and euenings to come out of the woodes, vnder diuers colours, in the likenesse and similitude of men of war, which met one with another, and séemed to fight cruell battels, which although they that were a farre off might sée, yet they that were nére hand could not sée nor finde, which thing deceiued many that coueted to approch and come nére.

Henry Percy the yonger, did sodainely shewe himselfe to be the Kings enemie, vnto whom ioyned Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, vncle to the said Henry: and to make their conspiracie excusable, they did write vnto the shires about, that they pretended nothing against the allegiance nor fidelitie which they ought to the king, neither to gather to any other end an armie, but onely for the sauing of their persons, and for the better gouernement of the common wealth, because the payments and taskes granted to the king for the safe custo-

Battell at Shrewsbury.

die

die of the realme, were put to such vses as they ought not to be, and were vnprofitably consumed and wasted.

Moreouer, they complained: that because of the euill slaunders which their enemies had made of them, they durst not personally appeare in the kings presence, vntill the prelates and barons had intreated for them, that they might be permitted to purge themselues before the king, and be lawfully iudged by their peres, so that many that saw these letters, did praise their diligence, and extoll their fidelitie towards the common wealth. But the king being disquieted with these doings, that he might appease the communaltie, he wrote to them, that he marueiled much, that seeing the Earle of Northumberland, and Henry his son had receiued the most part of the payments and summes granted to him by the clergy and communaltie, for the defence of the Marches of Scotland, what occasion they had to make such manifest slaunders &c. But the yong Henry Percy putting his confidence in the aide of Owen Glendouerdew, and Edmond Mortimer Earle of March, with the Welchmen, and men of Chesshire, published that king Richard was aliue, and was with them, whom if any man would see, they should without delay come in armour vnto the Castle of Leicester, which declaration made diuers variable motions in the hearts of many, and caused them to wauer.

King Henry considering all things wisely, gathered together as many as he could, and came sodainly into the partes where the rebles kept their rage, and when Henry saw vpon a sodaine the kings banner, and was euen ready to haue scaled the towne of Shrewsbury, he straightwayes desisted from the assault of the towne, and said to his men, we must now néedes turne our weapons vpon them that come against vs: ye see the kings standert, neither can we, though we would, séeke any startinghole: stand to it manfully therefore, for this day shall either bring vs all to promotion and honor, if we ouercome, or else if we be ouercome, it shall deliuer vs from the kings malice. For it is a more comly thing to die in battell for the common wealth, then after battell to die by the sentence of condemnation by the enemie: and with that, 14000. of the best men that were with Henry, made vowe & promise to stand by him so long as breath would serue, and they toke the field that was commodious for them, and the king and his men lay in the field right against them. The bowmen of Henry Percy began ỹ battel, whose arrowes fell not vpon the ground, but vpon the bodies of the kings souldiers, & the kings archers shot as fiercely against their enemies, so that on both sides many were slaine, and many thousands fled, thinking the king had bẽ slaine: but the Earle of Dunbar withdrew the king from the place that he stode in, which was a good turne for him, for the aforesaid Henry Percy, and Earle Dowglas the Scot (then whom was neuer man more stout) raged so, that the kings standert was ouerthrowen, & those about it slaine, among whom was slaine Edmond Earle of Stafford, sir Walter Blunt ỹ kings standert-bearer, Sir Nicholas Langford, Sir Iohn Cokaine, Sir Iohn Caluerley, Sir Iohn Massy, Baron of Podington, Sir Hugh Mortimer, Sir Iohn Clifton, & the two brethren Nicholas and Robert Genetels, with many other knights and Gentlemen, and of the commons on both

Shrewsburie besieged.

T. Walsingham.

Titus Liuius. sides about flue hundred slaine. Henry the Prince was wounded in the face with an arrowe. In the meane season Henry Percy whilest he went before his men in the battel, pressing vpon his enemies, was sodainly slaine, which being knowne, the kings enemies fled, but the Earle Dowglas was taken, and also Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, with Sir Richard Vernon, and the baron of Kinderton, and many other were taken. This battel was fought on Mary Magdalens éeuē, néere vnto Shrewsbury, in a place called Old field, alias Bull field, not farre from a place called Barwike. On the Monday following, were condemned and beheaded at Shrewesbury the Earle of Worcester, the Baron of Kinderton, and Sir Richard Vernon. The body of Henry Percy was deliuered to the Lord of Furniuale to be buried, but the king caused the same body to be taken vp, and to be reposed betwéene two Milstones in the Towne of Shrewsbury, there to be kept with armed men, and afterward to be beheaded and quartered, commaunding his head and quarters to be carried vnto diuers Cities of the kingdome.

The Earle of Northumberland with a strong power was comming toward his sonne and his brother, (as men thought) or at the least towards the King; but the Earle of Westmerland, and Robert Waterton had gathered a great army, and had entred on their way to méete him sodainely, but he taking none of them both to be his friends, returned vnto the castle of Warkworth.

When all things were set in a stay at Shrewsbury, the King went towards Yorke, where, when he was setled, he sent to the Earle of Northumberland, commaunding him to dismisse his company, and to come to him, and the Earle at the Kings commaundement came to him on the morrowe after Saint Laurence day, but the King receiued him not friendly, but as one that sued for pardon, and pardoning him of his life, committed him to safe custodie.

Plimmouth spoyled by the Britons. *Ann. reg. 5.* The Britons Amorikes, the Lord of Cassels being their leader, inuaded the Towne of Plimmouth, spoyled and brent it, and went their way frée, but immediatly the westerne nauie, vnder the conduct of William Wilford esquire in the coast of Briton, tooke fortie ships laden with yron, oyle, sope and wine of Rochell, to the number of a thousand tunne, and in returning backe againe, he brent fortie ships, and at Penarch the said William arriued with his men, and burned townes and Lordships the space of 6. leagues, and set the towne of S. Matthew on fire, and their Milles about the said towne.

1404. Frenchmen inuade the Ile of Wight. A little before Christmasse, the Frenchmen came into the Ile of Wight, boasting that they would kéepe their Christmasse there, and when a thousand of the Frenchmen were entred into the Iland, and driuing flockes of Cattell toward the Sea, sodainely there came vpon them a companie of the Ilande men, that forced them to leaue their pray behinde them, and to gette them gone (with shame ynough) to their shippes, with no small losse of their men.

A Parliament at London, and a great taske. In a parliament holden at London after the Octaues of the Epiphanie, the Erle of Northumberland was restored to his former estate and dignitie. And in this Parliament was granted vnto the King an vnaccustomed taske, very heauie and painefull for the inhabitants, the manner of which taske the granters

fers thereof would haue to be kept secret for euermore: and vnder that condition only it was granted, that it should not be any example to them that should come after, and that there should remaine no record therof, but the same forthwith to be burnt.

The Frenchmen about that time came before the Ile of Wight with a great Nauy, and sent certaine of their men to demand in the name of king Richard, and of Quéene Isabell, a tribute or subsidie of the inhabitants: who answered, that king Richard was dead, and the Quéene, sometime his wife, was sent home to her parents, without condition of any tribute: but if the Frenchmens minde were to fight, they willed them to come vp, and no man should let them for the space of fiue houres to refresh themselues, but when that time was expired, they should haue battell giuen them, which when the Frenchmen heard, they went away and did nothing. Frenchmen come to the Ile of Wight.

The Lord of Calleis in Britaine, arriued at Blackepoole, two mile out of Dertmouth with a great Nauy, where of the rusticall people, whom he euer despised, he was slaine. There were taken that day three Lords, and twentie knights of name, and the vplandish people presenting their captiues vnto the king, returned with their purses full of golde. Dertmouth inuaded by the French.

In the moneth of Aprill, the clergie graunted vnto the king a tenth.

All the summer following, Owen Glendouerdew and his Welchmen, rob, burne and destroy the countries adioyning vnto them: he tooke many captiues, and slew many Englishmen: he laid flat certaine Castles that he had taken, and some he kept for his owne defence. Owen Glendouerdew.

The Flemmings and Britaines tooke certaine shippes of ours laden with marchandises, and slew or hanged all the Mariners.

The olde Countesse of Orford, mother to Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland (who as we said before died at Louaine) did cause such as were familiar with her, to bruite throughout all the parts of Estsex, that king Richard was aliue, and that he should shortly come and chalenge his olde estate and dignitie. She caused many harts of siluer, and some of golde to be made for badges, such as king Richard was wont to bestowe on his knights, Esquires and friends, that distributing them in the kings name, she might the sooner allure the knights, and other valiant men of the Country, to be at her will and desire. The countesse of Orford reported king Richard to be aliue.

Also, the fame and bruite which daily was blazed abroad by one William Serle, sometimes of king Richards chamber, that the same king Richard was in Scotland, and tarryed with a power of French and Scottishmen, caused many to beléeue that he was aliue. This William Serle had forged a priuie Seale in the said Richards name, and had sent diuers comfortable letters vnto such as were familiar with king Richard, by which meanes, many gaue the greater credit to the Countesse, insomuch, that some religious Abbots of that country did giue credit vnto her tales. who afterward were take at the kings commaundement, and imprisoned, because they did beléeue and giue credit to the Countesse in this behalfe, and the Countesse had all her goods confiscate, and was committed to close prison: and William Serle was drawen from pom- William Serle forging king Richards seale was drawen and executed.

fret, through the chiefeſt Cities of England, and put to death at London.

About the feaſt of S. Iohn Baptiſt, at the Kings commandement, the Earle of Northumberland came to Pomfret, and brought with him his Nephewes and Nephewes ſons, by which doing he mitigated the mindes of many, which thought that he had giuen the yong men counſell to rebell. There came alſo with him William Clifford knight, who brought with him that William Serle King Richards chamberlaine before ſpoken of, whom by a wile he had apprehended, by which doing, the King pardoned him, for that he had kept the caſtle of Barwike againſt the Kings will and pleaſure.

Ann. reg. 6.

The Lay mans Parliament at Couentry.

About the feaſt of Saint Faith, the King called a parliament at Couentry, and ſent proceſſe to the Sheriffes that they ſhould chooſe no knights nor burgeſſes that had any knowledge in the Lawes of the Realme, by reaſon whereof, it was called the Lay mens Parliament. Theſe picked out knights and Burgeſſes, could deuiſe none other way to releeue the Kings lacke of money, but to depriue the Cleargie of their temporall landes and goods, by this occaſion giuen, aroſe great alteration and variance betweene the Cleargie and the laytie. The knights affirming that they had oftentimes going forth with the King againſt rebels and enemies, not onely ſpent largely their goods, with and for the King, but alſo had ſet their bodies in great daunger and ieopardies, where in the meane ſeaſon the Clearkes ſate idle at home, and helped the King neuer a whit. But Thomas Arundell Archbiſhop of Canterbury made anſwere, that the cleargie did alwayes giue the King as much as the lay people did, conſidering that they did oftner giue the King tenths, then the laytie gaue fiftenes. And moreouer, that more of their tenants did ſerue the King in his warres, then of the tenants of the lay fee. And beſides this, they prayed day and night for the proſperitie of the King, and of al them that faithfully ſerued him.

The knights and Burgeſſes, require the temporall goods to be taken from the Cleargie.

Thomas Arundell Archbiſhop of Canterburie his anſwere to the Burgeſſes.

And when the ſpeaker of the parliament named Iohn Cheyney, ſaid with a loude voyce & angry countenance, that he little regarded the prayers of the Church, the Archb. of Canterbury anſwered: Oh (quoth he) now I perceiue plainely to what end the fortune of this realme will come, when the Suffrages of the church are excluded and little ſet by, wherewith the godhead is wont to be appeaſed: ſurely that kingdome neuer continueth firme and ſtable, that is voyde of prayer and deuotion: notwithſtanding, thou which ſetteſt at naught the religion of the Clergie, thinke not without puniſhment to take away the poſſeſſions of the church, for if the Archbiſhop of Canterbury liue, thou ſhalt haue euil taking of any thing that is his. Then the archbiſhop conſidering that the king did winke at theſe things, roſe vp, and kneeled downe before the king, deſiring him to conſider how gratiouſly, & by Gods fauor, he had attained the kingdome, that he would conſider his firſt promiſe, which was, that he would preſerue vnto euery man their right & title ſo far as lay in him. He alſo willed him to remember ỹ oth which he voluntarily made, which was, that he would honor and defend the church, and would cheriſh and maintaine the miniſters thereof: he required him to conſider the danger and diſhonour of breaking an oth, wherefore he deſired him to permit and ſuffer the church to enioy the priuiledges

John Cheyney Speaker of the Parliament, his ſpeech.

Anſwere of the Archbiſhop.

The Archbiſhop to the King.

ufledges and liberties, which in time of his predeceſſors it did enioy, and to feare that king, by whom all kings do raigne. When the Archbiſhop had ſaid theſe and like words, the king commaunded him to go againe to his ſeat, and ſaid, that his intent and purpoſe was to leaue the Church in as good ſtate or better then he found it. And then the Archbiſhop ſpeaking to the knights and burgeſſes, ſaid: You, and ſuch like as you be, haue giuen ſuch counſell vnto our king and to his predeceſſors, to confiſcate the goods & lands of the Celles which the Frenchmen and Normans did poſſeſſe in England, and ſaid, that by them he ſhould heape vp great riches, as indeed they were worth many thouſands of golde. Notwithſtanding, it is moſt true that the king at this day is not the richer thereby of halfe a Marke; for you haue extorted, or at the leaſt begged them out of his hands, and haue appropriated the ſaid goods vnto your ſelues, ſo that it may be coniectured that your requeſt to haue our temporalties, is not for the kings profit, but for your owne couetouſneſſe: for without doubt, if the king (as God forbid he ſhould) fulfill your wicked purpoſe, he ſhould not be one farthing the richer the nert yeere following: and ſurely, I will ſooner let my head be cut off, then that the Church ſhould be deſtitute of the leaſt right that pertaineth to it.

Againe to the knights and burgeſſes.

The knights of the Parliament hearing this ſaying of the Archbiſhop, and ſeeing the conſtancie of their Metropolitane, held their peace, but yet perſiſted in minde to haue their purpoſe: which the Archbiſhop perceiuing (hauing his eye on eche ſide to marke what was done) laboured ſo to diſappoint their doings, that he wanne the fauour of certaine of the temporall Lords to aſſiſt him, who conſtantly auouched by their conſents, that the Church ſhould neuer be ſpoyled of the temporalties. And heere they acquite the Archbiſhoppe and Prelates, one pleaſure for another, which they had done for them before. When the commons in this Parliament required that all ſuch landes and reuenues as ſometime belonged vnto the Crowne, and had beene giuen away, eyther by the king, or by his predeceſſors king Edward or Richard, ſhould againe be reſtored vnto the Crowne. Vnto which requeſt the Archbiſhop and other the Prelates would in no caſe condeſcend: and ſo it came to paſſe, that there was no more mention made after wards of any exactions of the temporalties. But contrariwiſe, the knights of the Parliament, who had ſhewed themſelues ſo importunate in that errour, confeſſed vnto the Archbiſhop their fault and malice, deſiring him to forgiue them.

Moreouer they gaue him thanks, for that through his ſtoute courage the Church at that time recouered ſtrength, reciting the ſaying of the Ethnike, Thou vnder an hard Prince, and an euill time, art bolde to do good. Beſides many things that were granted to the king in this Parliament, the lay people granted him two fifteenes vpon condition, that the Lord Furniuall ſhould receiue all the money, and ſee it to be ſpent in the kings warres.

Two fifteenes granted to the king.

Alſo the Letters patents that were giuen to ſundry perſons, for yeerely reuenewes by king Edward, and king Richard, were called in againe, the knights of the Parliament ſo adiudging it, although it redounded to the kings diſhonour. The Clergy granted the king a tenth and a halfe.

A tenth and a halfe granted to the king.

The

Great water floods.

The same time such aboundance of water brake ouer the bankes in Kent sodainly as was neuer sene the like in these parts, whereby were drowned beasts and cattell without number, neither did England onely bewaile their losses, but also Zealand, Flanders and Holland, sustained the like by the great excesse of waters.

William Wikeham Bishop of Winchester, his Colledge in Oxford.

This yere died William Wikeham bishop of Winchester, by whose charges and trauell, the Cleargie of England was much increased, for he builded a notable Colledge in Oxford, for the increase of learning, where he placed the warden & his company, to the number of lxx. besides children, seruants, & ten priests, to keepe daily seruice, endowing ỹ said company with sufficient lands.

His Colledge at Winchester

He began the foundation of a newe Colledge at Winchester, and in fiue yeres finished the same, where he placed the like number of Scholliers to learne their Grammar, and other principles, to be sent afterward to his other Colledge at Oxford. These two Colledges are called, the Newe Colledges, dedicated to our blessed Lady.

Saint Swithens in Winchester the Church for the most part new builded by Wikeham.

He builded the great body of the Church of Saint Swithens in Winchester, where the sermons are made, and where his body is enterred, a very princely worke: neither did he for all this diminish any thing of his ordinary houshold charges, and fed (as the writing engraued on his Sepulchre sheweth) both rich and poore. He deceased at the age of lxx. yeres. He died rich, for beside that he gaue to his kinsfolke and to the poore, he gaue somewhat to euery Church in his dioces. He gaue many things to the king, and to his owne seruants, and to his Colledges: neither do I doubt but that he that thus liued, is now with God, whom I beseech to raise vp many like Bishops in England.

William Wickham borne at Wikeham, his preferments by Edward the third.

This William Wickham was borne at Wickham in Hampshire, of which place he toke his surname, and was of some called Long, because he was a tall man: one master Wodale of Wickham brought him vp at schole, where he learned his Grammar, & to write faire. After this, the Constable of Winchester Castle, at that time a great ruler in Hampshire, got Perot, *alias* Wickham of Wodal and made him his Cleark. Edward the third comming to Winchester Castle, liked Wickham, and toke him to seruice, and vnderstanding that he had mind to be a priest, made him first Parson of S. Martins in London and then Deane of Saint Martins le Grand, and then Archdeacon of Buckingham. He made him also surueyor of his buildings, as of Windsor, Queinborow in Kent, and other places. After this, he preferred him to be bearer of the priuy Seale, master of the Wards and Forrests, and Treasurer of the kings reuenues in Fraunce, Archdeacon of Lincolne, then Bishop of Winchester, Chancellor and Treasurer of England.

Banishment of Wikeham but a fable.

His goods confiscate, and very soone after restored to him againe.

Of his banishment out of the Realme whereof some haue written, I find no mention thereof in Thomas Walsingham, Henry Knitton and other Authors at that time liuing, nor more of his troubles, but onely that by meanes of Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, his goods were by Edward the third confiscate, and giuen to Richard the sonne of the blacke Prince, in Anno. 1376. and by the meanes of Alice Pierce were againe restored to the said Bishop in the yere next following, to wit, in Anno 1377. as more at large in those yeres

I haue ſet downe: moreouer it is manifeſt, that if he had ſuſtained the loſſe of all his goods, and ſeuen yéares baniſhment (as ſome haue fabuled) it would haue béene hard for him, or rather impoſſible to haue brought ſo many great workes to perfection, as the world can witneſſe to haue béene done at his charges. To him in that Biſhoprick, ſucceéded Henry Bewfort, ſonne to Iohn of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaſter, by his wife Katherin Swinford, he was tranſlated from Lincolne to Wincheſter, and Philip Reppon Abbot of Leiceſter, was at the kings requeſt made Biſhop of Lincolne. Henry Bewfort Biſhop of Wincheſter.

The king kept his Chriſtmas at Eltham in Kent. 1405.

About the feaſt of Saint Valentine, the ſonnes of the Earle of March were taken out of the Caſtell of Windſore, and led away into Wales to Owen Glendouerdew, but ſhortly after were recouered againe. The Smith that made the keyes, by the which they that conueied them, got into them, had firſt his hands, and then his head cut off. Earle of Marches ſonnes.

The Lady Spencer ſiſter to the Duke of Yorke, and widow of Thomas Lord Spencer, before executed at Briſtow, being apprehended and committed to priſon, accuſed her brother the Duke of Yorke to be chiefe Author in ſtealing away of the Earle of Marches ſonnes, wherefore the ſaid Duke was kept by ſir Iohn Pelham in the Caſtell of Pemſey till the next Parliament.

After the feaſt of the Purification of our Lady, the king aſſembled his Barons at London, to treat of the gouernment of the Realme, and to haue ayde of money to be giuen him, but the Nobles would not at that time obey his requeſt. In the Lent following therefore, the king cauſed the Cleargy and the Barons to aſſemble at S. Albones for the matter aforeſaid, but by reaſon the nobles ſtroue againſt him, there was nothing done, and ſo departed on Palme Sunday.

About the xv. of March, in a fight betwixt the Engliſhmen and Welchmen, the ſonne of Owen Glendouerdew was taken, and 1500. with him were taken or ſlaine.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Richard Scroope Archbiſhoppe of Yorke, Thomas Mowbray Earle Marſhall, Thomas Lord Bardolph and other, conſpiring againſt K. Henry, aſſembled together the Citizens of Yorke, and many other, to ſtand with them for the commoditie of the Realme. And to animate the commons to be the readier vnto this buſineſſe, they ſet Articles vpon the dores of the Monaſteries and Churches of the ſame Citie, written in Engliſh againſt the king, becauſe he had put downe King Richard, offering themſelues for thoſe Articles to liue and dye, which cauſed great number of people to reſort to them: but Ralph Neuell Earle of Weſtmerland that was not farre off, together with Iohn Duke of Lancaſter, the kinges ſonne, being enformed of theſe things, gathered an army with ſpéde to goe againſt the Archbiſhoppes company, but all was in vaine, for the Archbiſhoppes power was farre greater than theirs, whereupon the Earle of Weſtmerland ſent meſſengers, to enquire of the Archbiſhoppe the cauſe of ſo great an aſſembly in armour, contrary to the kings peace: whereunto the Archbiſhop anſwered, that he toke nothing in hand againſt the kings peace, and he was in Conſpiracy againſt king Henry by the Archbiſhop of Yorke & other.

armor

armour, and munited with men, onely for feare of the king whom he could not safely come vnto to speake; but his purpose (he said) was good and commodious both for the King and the Realme, if happily they would know it: and then he shewed a Scedule, in which the Articles were contayned, which when the Earle of Westmerland had read, hée with word and countenance praised the Bishops holy and vertuous intent, and promised, that hée and his would prosecute the same with the Archbishop.

The Archbishop being glad of this, beléeued the Earles wordes, and perswaded the Earle Marshall, being vnwilling thereunto, to go with him to a place appointed to talke together, to whom they with like number came, and the writing with the Articles was read ouer: straightway the Earle and they that were with him gaue their assent to these articles: then said the Earle being subtiller than the rest, behold the labour that we haue taken in hand is come to such ende as we would haue it, and the people hath now béene long in armour, let some of your men beare word vnto the people to go their way home, and to lay downe their armour, and euery man to fall to his occupation and accustomed labour: in the meane season, we, in token of concord will drink together, that the people on both sides shall sée it, and without delay, after they had taken each other by the hands, a knight was sent on the Archbishops behalfe, to beare word to the people that it was peace, and to commaund euerie man to lay downe their armour, and to go to their owne home.

The people beholding signes of peace, and the Lords drinking together, being wearied with the vnaccustomed trauell of warre, turned the reines of their bridles homewards, and so it came to passe, that when the people of the Archbishops side went away, the number of the aduersaries increased, as before it was appointed, and the Archbishop did not perceiue that he was betrayed, vntill such time as the Earle arrested him: hé arrested the Marshall also, and many other with him, to all which it was promised that they should haue no harme, but that promise was not kept, for both the Archbishop and the Earle Marshall were brought to Pontfract to the King, who in the meane while was aduanced thither with his power, and from thence he went to Yorke, whither the prisoners were also brought: others say that the king soiourning at Bishops Thorpe, the Archbishop was brought thither, where sir William Fulford knight learned in the lawes, sitting on an high stage in the Hall, gaue iudgement that the Archbishop should be beheaded: he was therefore set on an ill fauoured iade, with his face towarde the horse tayle, and carried with great scorne and shame enough to a fielde there beside, where with fiue strokes his head was smitten off on the morrow after Whitsonday: with him were condemned and executed the Earle Marshall, sir Iohn Lamplough, and sir Robert Plompton. After the king had ransomed and otherwise punished by grieuous fines the Citizens of Yorke, he departed from Yorke with an army of 37000. fighting men furnished with all prouision, marching northward against the Earle of Northumberland. At his comming to Durham the L. Hastings, the L. Falconbridge, sir Iohn Colvile of the Dale, and sir Iohn Griffith, being conuicted of the conspiracie,

Archbishop of Yorke beheaded.

were

were beheaded. The Earle of Northumberland perceiuing the kings intent, got himselfe to Berwike with 300. horse, and from thence into Scotland. The K. being bent against the Earle of Northumberland, went to Berwike, from whence the Earle fled into Scotland, and the Lord Bardolph with him, whom Dauid Lord Fleming the Scot receiued into alliance. The king vnderstanding that the Earle was fled, he commaunded them in the Castell to render it vnto him, which when they refused to do, the king caused a great Gun to be shot, which ouerthrew part of a Tower, whereupon they of the Castel gaue ouer, and submitted themselues to the king, who caused some of them to be beheaded, and the residue to be sent to prisons. After this, the Castell of Alnewike, and the rest of the Earles Castles were with small adoe rendred to his hands: with which successe the king being incouraged, went straight into Wales, where contrariwise nothing prospered with him, wherefore he returned, losing charets, carts, and wagons, to the number of fiftie, with his treasure, so that comming backe to Worcester, he sent for the Archbishop and Bishops, and declared to them his misfortune, desiring them to helpe him: to whom the Archbishop answered, that he would talke with the Cleargie in that matter. In the meane season the Frenchmen came to succor the Welchmen with 140. ships: they landed in Milford hauen, hauing lost almost all their horses for lacke of fresh water. The Lord Barkley and Henry Pay burned fiftéen of those ships in the same Hauen. These Frenchmen besieged the towne of Carmarden, and tooke it, granting to the inhabitants all their moueable goods, and to go whither they would.

Frenchmen relieue the Welchmen.

The same time the foresaid Lord Barkley, Thomas Swinborne, and Henry Pay tooke fourtéene ships of the French, in the which they tooke the Steward of Fraunce and eight Captaines more. *Ann. reg. 7*

The towne of Cruce Rowse or Royston in Hartfordshire was brent.

Royston brent.

This yéere all the weares in Thamis from the Towne of Stanes in the West, vnto the water of Medway in the East, by the Maior and communaltie of London, were destroyed, and the trunkes brent, for the which great plea and discord followed betwéene Thomas Arundell Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and other Lords and Knights of the one party, and the Maior and communalty on the other party, but the Citizens preuailed by vertue of their charter and statutes. Roger Walden Bishop of London deceased.

Weares in the Thamis and Medway destroyed. 1406.

The first of March a Parliament beganne, which lasted nigh one whole yéere, for after the Knights of the Parliament had long delayed to graunt to the king a subsidy, yet in the ende being ouercome, they granted the Tare demaunded. The Priestes and the friers that liued of almes, were forced euery one to pay halfe a Marke. By decrée of this Parliament the Britons that serued the Quéene were expelled the Realme, and two of her daughters were also sent with them.

Nicholas Rubwith. Parliament. A great tax.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, and the Lord Bardolfe, by the counsell of Dauid Fleming fled into Wales, for hée had declared to them, that the Scottes had conspired to deliuer them vnto their owne king, in exchange for other prisoners; and for this doing of Dauid Fleming, the traytertus

terous Scottes slew him, and raised such a ciuill warre amongst themselues, that in the ende they were constrained to request truce for a yere, which when they had obtayned, the Scots sent Iames the sonne of Robert king of Scots, being but nine yeres olde, towards Fraunce, there to be brought vp, and to be instructed in the pleasant eloquence of the French tongue, whom certaine Mariners of Cley in Norfolke toke on the seas, and with him a Bishop, and the Earle of Orkeney, to whom his father had committed him: and they brought him into England, and deliuered him to the king, who forthwith burst out into a laughter, and said, Surely the Scots might haue sent him to me, for I can speake French. The Bishop escaped and fled, but the Earle of Orkeney, and the said Iames the young lad, was sent to the Tower of London, where he remained prisoner till the second yere of Henry the fift, which was aboue eightene yeres.

The king of Scots sonne and heire taken on the sea.

Henry Spencer Bishop of Norwich deceased, to whom succeeded Alexander Pryor of that Church.

The Frenchmen came to helpe Owen Glendouerdew with 38. ships, whereof eight were taken full of armed men, the rest escaped into Wales, but not long after were taken fiftene ships laden with wine and ware.

The Frenchmen came to helpe Owen Glendouerdew.

Whilest the Parliament yet continued, the Duke of Yorke was restored to his old dignitie, whom many men thought to haue bene dead in prison.

Edmond Holland Earle of Kent, married the Ladie Lucie the Duke of Milaine Barnabes daughter in the Priory of S. Mary Ouery in Southwarke, where he the same day receiued 100000. duckats for her dowry.

Ann. reg. 8.

Walter Skirlaw Bishop of Durham, after he had sate 18. yeres in that Bishoprike, deceased: he new builded the bridges of Shinkley, Parrow, and Auckland: he bestowed on the cloyster at Durham 600. pounds, on the Dormitorie 330. markes, and 400. pounds by his testament: he builded the steeple at Holme, borne downe by force of water rising: he repaired the Church and the Hall of the Manor there: he builded a great part of the steeple called the Lanterne of the Monastery at Yorke: he builded a faire Chappell at Swine in Holdernesse, where he was borne, &c. Thomas Langley succeeded him in the Bishoprieke of Durham.

Henry Pay, and other with him of the fiue ports, with fiftene ships, toke an hundred and twenty ships which lay at anchor in the sea of Britaine, laden with yron, salt, oyle, and Rochell wine.

Tho. Walsing.

This summer, through corruption of the ayre, so great a plague was shed vpon mens bodies, as was not seene the like in many yeres in this lande, so that men might say:

The south winds warme did blow, with heat pestiferous,
And pestilence did beare great rule in Cities populous.

Pestilence.

For at London in short while it consumed aboue 30000. men and women, and in the countrey townes great mortalitie fell among the husbandmen, so that great households died cleane vp, and the houses were emptied.

In time of this pestilence the King durst not come nere to the Citie of London, wherefore being at the Castell of Leedes in Kent, he departing from,

thence

thence, toke shipping at Quinborow in the Ile of Sheppey, to saple ouer into Esser, and so to go to Plashey, there to passe the time till the mortality were ceased. But as the king was on the sea, certaine French Pirates which lay lurking at the Thames mouth to watch for some pray, got knowledge of the kings passage, and thereupon as he was in the middest of his course, they entred amongst his fleete and toke foure vessels next to the kings shippe, and in one of the same vessels sir Thomas Rampton, the Kings vicechamberlaine, with all his chamber stuffe and apparrell. They followed the king so nere, that if his ship had not bene swift, he had landed sooner in Fraunce, than in Esser: But such was his good hap that he escaped, and arrived at his appointed port.

King Henry in perill to haue bin taken on the sea by the French.

Henry Bewet Bishop of Bathe, was translated to the Archbishoprick of Yorke, and Robert Halam was made Bishop of Salisbury, Richard Clifforde was translated from Worcester to the Bishoprick of London, and Thomas Powell from Landaffe to the sea of Worcester.

Bishops translated.

About the fifteenth day of August deceased, sir Robert Knowles knight, at his Manour of Sconethorpe in Norfolke, he was brought to London, and there honourably buried by the Lady Constance his wife, in the white Friers Church which he had newly reedified and builded.

Sir Robert Knowles. Iohn Leland.

This sir Robert Knowles had bene a most valiant Captaine in the warres of France, during the raigne of Edward the third, and Richard the second, whose force the Realme of France both felt and feared, so did the Dukedome of Brytaine, and all the people from hence to Spayne. Of him in his life were made verses in Latin, which may be englished thus.

Register of Bermondsey.

O Robert Knowles, most worthy of fame,
By thy prowesse France was made tame:
Thy manhood made the Frenchmen to yeeld,
By dint of sword in towne and field.

Verses.

This sir Robert Knowles founded in the towne of Pontfract a Colledge to the honour of the holy Trinitie, with an Hospitall ioyned thereunto. In the which Colledge was placed a Maister, and fiue or seuen Priestes, and in the Hospitall 13. poore men and women. He was once minded to haue made this Colledge at his manour of Sconethorpe, but at the request of Constance his wife (a woman of meane birth, and sometime of a dissolute life afore her mariage) he turned his purpose, and made it in the very place of Pontfrait, where she was borne, endowing the same with 180. pound land by yeere. He also builded the faire new great bridge at Rochester, ouer the riuer of Medeway, with a Chappell and a Chauntrie at the east ende therof. In the which Chappell was sometime a table hanging, wherein was noted the benefactors to that bridge, as followeth.

Colledge and hospitall at Pontfrait.

Rochester bridge.

Sir Robert Knowles founder of the Trinitie Chappell at Rochester bridge, Constance wife to Knowles.

Sir Iohn Cobham Lord, principall benefactor to the making of Rochester bridge: Margaret wife to Cobham.

Thomas

Thomas Boucher Cardinall.
Iohn Morton Archbishop.
Henry Chicheley Archbishop.
Thomas Langley Bishop of Durham.
Iohn Langedon Bishop of Rochester.
Thomas Arundell Archbishop.
Sir Iohn Cornwall Lord Fanhap.
Richard Whittington Maior of London.
William Cromer.
Geffrey Boleine Maior of London.
Iohn Darby Draper, Alderman of London.
William Midleton Mercer of London.
Iohn Martin Iustice.
Sir William Nottingham chiefe Baron of the Exchequer.
William Wangforde.
Iohn Buckingham Bishop of Lincolne.
Iohn Kempe Bishop of London.
Sir William Richall.
Sir Iohn at Pole.

All these had giuen money or lands towards the building and repayring of the said bridge.

Notwithstanding this table, I finde in record as followeth: The bridge betwixt the Citie of Rochester, and the village of Strode was in the fourth yeere of king Richard the second, sore decayed or broken downe by tempest of weather, and inundation of the riuer of Medway, whereupon William Basing Master of the hospitall at Strode, and Nicholas Hering, were licensed by the king to repaire the same. And in the eleuenth yeere of the same king Richard the second, Iohn Cobham, and Robert Knowles beganne their charge towards the building of the said bridge, and in the eighteene yeere of the same Richard, the said Iohn Cobham founded a Chantry in the Chappel there of three Chapleins, and gaue lands to the bridge in the 22. yeere of Richard the second: and thus much of the record haue I noted.

Ann. reg. 9. I finde further by Iohn Leiland, that one Iohn Warner a Merchant of Rochester made the new coping of Rochester bridge. And William Warham Archbishop of Canterbury made the yron pikes and barres aboue the same coping.

Hospitall at Rome for Englishmen.

This Robert Knowles, was also one of the founders of an hospitall in the Citie of Rome, in manner following: for that there was no Nation of the world, but had some kinde of hospitalitie in Rome, saue onely the people of England, certaine Englishmen being in Rome, procured licence of the Pope to build an hospitall, in place where Thomas Becket Archbishoppe of Canterbury had sometime builded a Chappell of the holy Trinitie. In this hospitall which they builded, was to be releeued, a gentleman three daies, bread, wine, and ware: a commoner eight daies and nightes, meate, drinke, and lodging. And if any woman happen to be nigh her time of deliuerance

Auerance, so that she dare not take her iourney, she to be honestly kept till she be purified: and if she be of power, to take her childe with her: if not, to be kept there vntill it were seuen yéeres old.

The founders of this hospitall were, sir Robert Braybroke Bishop of London, Thomas Brampton Bishoppe of Rochester, sir Iohn Philpot and his wife, sir Robert Knowles, sir Hugh Calueley, sir Iohn Haukewood, sir Iohn Thornam, Knightes, Iohn Twiforde, Iohn Shepard and Alice his wife, Robert Cristall and Agnes his wife, Robert Windleront, Walter Whithers, Robert at Pyne, Adam Staple, Henry Line Draper, and other Citizens of London in the yéere of our Lord 1380. in the Raigne of King Richard the second: which Hospitall was againe newe reedified and made a goodly house in the yéere of our Lord 1449. towardes the charges whereof, was money gathered in euerie Parish in Englande, but that came to small effect, the charges of collecting and conueying was such, that, there came towardes the woorke not past one thousande Duckettes in one whole yéere.

In November a Parliament being called at London, a tare of money was leuied of the whole Realme. Parliament at London.

This yéere was a sore and sharpe winter, and such abundance of snow, which continued December, Januarie, Februarie and March, so that almost all small birds dyed through hunger and cold. Whiles the King held a great Councell at London with the Nobles of the Realme, Henry Earle of Northumberland, and Thomas Lord Bardolfe came againe into England, who after long iourneying, when they came to the Towne of Thirske, they caused to bée proclaymed, that who so would haue libertie, should take vp armour and weapon and follow them, whereupon much people resorted to them: but sir Thomas Rockley Sherife of Yorkeshire, with other Knights of that countrey went against them, and at Bramham Moore néere to Haselwood, fought with them a great battell, and slue the Earle, whose head was straight-waies cut off. The Lord Bardolfe was sore wounded and taken aliue, but died shortly after. This battell was fought on the xviii day of Februarie. The Earles head was put on a stake, and carried openly through the Citie of London, and set on London bridge. The Bishoppe of Bangor was taken with the Lords, but pardoned of his life, because he was not found in armour. The King went to Yorke, and there condemned such as transgressed, confiscated their goods, pacified the countrey, hanged the Abbot of Hayle, who had béene in armour, and returned to the south partes againe. 1408. *Ann. reg.* 10.

Vpon the seuenth of September there were such flouds of rayne, as the olde men of that age had neuer séene before. Edmond Holland Earle of Kent whilest hée besieged the Castell of Briake in Britaine, he was wounded with an arrow of a Crossebow in the head, notwithstanding he toke the Castell and destroyed it to the ground, and not long after his braines rotted, and he died. Edmond Holland Earle of Kent wounded to death.

The Countesse of Kent that was daughter to Barnabe Viscount Lord of

Millan hauing no issue by her husband, was now moued by the king, after her husbands death to marry with his bastard brother, the Earle of Dorset, but she chose for her husband, Henry Mortimer, a goodly young Bachelor, by whom she had issue Anne married to sir Iohn Aubemond.

About the feast of Al-Saints the Cardinals of Burges came into England, being sent from the Colledge of Cardinals, to enforme the King and Cleargie of the vnconstant dealing of Pope Gregory, as also he had informed the French King and his Clergy and Realme, to the ende that those two kings might set to their helping handes, to induce the saide Gregory to obserue the oath he had made, and that by the magnificence of those two kings, concord might be made in the Church, vnto the which businesse the French king had gladly granted, and sent messengers vnto Pope Gregory, who notwithstanding was obstinate.

The King of England when he vnderstoode the Cardinalles message, hée commaunded that courtesie and gentle entertainement should be giuen him, and offered to beare his charges so long as he would abide in England.

1409. The King with his Quéene kept their Christmasse at Eltham in Kent.

After the feast of the Epiphany, the Archbishop of Canterbury caused to assemble at London, all the Clergy of the Realme, to chose personages méete to go to the generall councell holden at Pisa, whereunto were chosen Robert Holam Bishop of Salisbury, Henry Chiseley Bishop of Saint Danids, and Thomas Chillingdon Prior of Christes Church in Canterbury, and the king had sent before Iohn Coluile knight, and master Nicholas Rixton Clarkes, with letters to be giuen to them. And in the letter to the Pope it was written.

King Henry writeth to the Pope.

Most holy Father, our humble recommendations in filiall wise premised. The inscrutable wisedome of the high God doth sometime dissemble in some sort, the sinnes of men, if at length they will yet amend, though not through seruile feare, but by their filiall conscience moouing or pricking them. And how much the longer hée deferreth his yre in this life, so much the more grieuously will hée punish in the life to come, as is to be feared. Wée therefore in our mindes reuoluing the long, and as it were the inueterate Schisme now in the Church of God being very hotte, truely we feare, as by likelyhode is to be feared, that it ought to bée imputed to all Princes of the Christian Religion before God and man, vnto a slouthfull negligence, the cruelty of such an errour, nourished thus long: Therefore specially because the Cleargie of euerie kingdome, eyther feare, or the blindenesse of auarice causing them, doe couer this wicked Schisme vnder the veyle of deuotion, and holinesse, so that those Princes, to whom the materiall swoorde is committed, for the defence and safegarde of the Church, about this foresaid Schisme, to be vtterly extirped, they neyther goe about to shewe any great resistance of courteous perswasion, nor to put in practise the sword for the purpose. Whereupon, hauing heard often-times of many, and vnderstand

now

now a good while agone by letters of the most reuerend in Christ, our fathers the L. Cardinalles of your Colledge, and by the report of the reuerend in Christ, the Lord Cardinall of Burdeaur our friend, worthily beloued on the behalfe of the Colledge, comming to the presence of vs, and of our first begotten sonne the Prince of Wales, and of the prelates and peeres of our Realme, how that not onely hee, but also the Cardinalles of your said Colledge, by occasion of the continuance of this schisme, contrary vnto the vowe and othe made by your holinesse, to renounce the papacie, haue withdrawne from you all their obedience, and doe determine to holde a generall councell in the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady nowe nerte to come at the Citie Pisa, a place indeede fit, as it is said, and honest, and by your holinesse commended for meete and conuenient, as it is affirmed, that this may bee done, especially by force of a certaine obligation for occasion of the schisme to bee extirped by your holinesse, whilest you were yet in minoritie, of your owne accord, and solemnly entred or made in the conclaue with the Cardinalles aforesaid, and after that you were receiued to the papall dignitie, by the subscription of your holy hands, openly renowed and confirmed, as by the viewe of a certaine publike instrument before vs and the states abouesaid exhibited it plainely, as hath to vs appeared, not knowing how the vnion of the Church may be come vnto by any other way more commodiously. Whereupon the sayde Cardinall hath requested vs, vpon consideration of the premisses, and other reasonable causes by him openly expressed, and in the same letters euidently comprehended, which indeede greatly moued both the consciences of vs, and of the said states, that we should take care to imploy our counsell and ayde about the premisses, to the said Colledge, for the respect of the godlie zeale and loue which thereto we beare, together with other catholike Princes, and that wee should send our Ambassadors and prelates of our Realme by themselues, or by procurators to the said councell. We therefore, desirous to shew the zeale and intent which we beare and haue to the same vnion, and noting with more heede the wholesome and holy intention of the same Colledge in the premesses, as other Princes doe note the same, as we here at this present, willing also, so farre as in vs lieth to the honour of God, and that we may auoyde the swoorde edge of his wrath, to doe our partes about the reformation of the same state of the Church, hauing taken with our said sonne, and also with the Prelates and Nobles aforesaid, ripe deliberation, wee beseech with all humilitie, and in the bowelles of Iesus Christ, exhorting, doe require your clemencie, whose state and honour vpon diuers causes as a deuout sonne of the Church, so farre as with God wee might, we haue euer embraced, and doe embrace by the expresse and whole assent of the states aforesaid, that as well for the auoyding of the manifest slaunder of the Church, as of the Apostolike sea, and for the desirefull conseruation of your estate and honour, and also for the desire of the faithfull procurators that will come to the said place and day together, and with all quietnesse, for the respect of him specially that giueth grace to the humble,

that we will vouchſafe to be preſent at the day and place before mentioned, in the ſpirite of humbleneſſe, to fulfill the vowe together, and ſuch manner oth effectually, as we truſt you will. For we hold for certaine, that, as we are informed, the Cardinals of both Colledges haue come together in one and the ſame conſonancie of minde about the premiſſes, and as it were all the Princes Chriſtians ſet forth themſelues with glad mindes in their fauour and ayde, howſoeuer they ſeeke from elſe-where ſtarting holes, the ſame Cardinals by Gods helpe aſſiſting them, ſhall obtaine the effect of ſuch an vnion: neyther doth it ſeeme to vs, or to the inhabitants of our Realme expedient, that we ſhould diſagree from other Catholike princes in ſo holy a purpoſe in any thing, but rather that we ſhould cauſe our Ambaſſadors and Prelates of our Realme by themſelues or their procurators, as we beleeue that other will do the like, that the vniuerſall Church may be nouriſhed with the pleaſant taſte of a wiſhfull vnion. Moreouer, moſt bleſſed father, if the prouidence of the Apoſtolike ſea would vouchſafe to attend and marke, what great harme & danger is ſprung vp throughout the whole world, not onely of bodies, but alſo of ſoules, redeemed by Chriſtes bloud, haue hitherto chanced vnder pretence of the continuation of the ſaid Schiſme, and ſpecially the ſlaughter of Chriſtian people, which aboue the number, as men ſay, of two hundred thouſand are periſhed by the raging of diuers warres that haue riſen in ſundrie partes of the world, and euen now of late, to the number of thirtie thouſand, which (by reaſon of the diſſention had vpon the Biſhoprike of Leige betwixt two which doe ſtriue and contende, the one in the authoritie of the true Pope, and the other by the authoritie of the antipope) were in ſlaughter fielde (a lamentable thing to be ſpoken) ſlayne and deſtroyed. Truely, the Apoſtolike ſea would be in great heauineſſe of heart, and would rather forſake the honour of the Apoſtolicall ſea, than then to ſée from henceforth ſuch wicked ſlaughter to be committed, and would take example of the true mother, who before King Salomon, rather choſe to giue place, than that the childe ſhould be cut in péeces. And albeit by the creation of the nine Cardinals, againſt your oath (that we may vſe other mens words) lately by you made, of the which Act a vehement cauſe of admiration is rayſed, it may in ſome wiſe be preſumed, that as is like to be thought, your intention doth not bende to the ende of extirping the Schiſme, yet God forbid that your holineſſe ſhould circumſpectly be noted of ſuch vnconſtancie of minde by any manner of perſon, whereupon the laſt errour may be accounted worſe than the firſt, not onely to be execrated of euery Chriſtian ſoule, but alſo to be expulſed with all indeuour. Theſe things which we write, of a pure heart and vnfained faith doe procéede: and therefore (benigne father) if it pleaſe you, let theſe things with due conſideration be weyed (moſt bleſſed father) let him incline your heart, and corroborate the ſame in this holy worke, happily to be executed, who for peace ſake, when he was the King of all, endured the forme of a ſeruant. Written vnder our Signet, in our palace at Weſtminſter, the 12. day of Nouember.

Thus haue I ſet downe the Epiſtle which the king ſent to the Pope, that it

may

may appeare vnto all men how modestly he attempted to induce the Pope to performe his vow and oth, to the end the fault should not appeare to be in him, that the vnity of the Church was not reformed.

According to appointment the Cardinals of both Colledges, to wit, of Gregory, and of Bennet met at Pisa, effectually to intreat of the reformation of agreement, where almost all the Prelates of the whole Latin world, met together, and honourable men were elected to helpe the Cardinals in this case, who calling for the grace of the holy spirit, agreed in one, and chose one to be head of the Church, refusing the other two, and called his name Alexander the fift, and reiected both Gregory and Benedict.

This yeare was a great play at the Skinners well, neere vnto Clerkenwell beside London, which lasted eight daies, & was of matter from the creation of the world: there were to see the same, the most part of the nobles and gentles in England: and forthwith after began a royall iusting in Smithfield, betweene the Earle of Somerset and the Seneschall of Henalt, sir Iohn Cornwal, sir Richard of Arundel, and the son of sir Iohn Cheyney against other Frenchmen.

A great play at Skinners wel. Iusting in Smithfield.

Thomas Bewfort knight sonne to Iohn of Gaunt was made Chancellor, and Henry Scroope was made Treasurer. *An. reg. 11.*

Owen Glendouerdew, though he was pardoned by the king at the request of Dauid Holbech Esquire: yet being now driuen to such misery, that in manner despairing of all comfort, he fled into desert places, and solitary caues, where being destitute of all relefe and succour, dreading to shew his face to any creature, and finally, lacking to sustaine nature, for pure hunger miserably pined away and died.

Owen Glendouerdew died miserably.

In a Parliament holden at London, in the Lent season, the knights and burgesses presented to the king a bil in this forme: To the most excellent Lord the king, and all the Nobles in this present Parliament assembled, your faithfull commons humbly do shew, that our Soueraigne Lord the king may haue the temporall possessions and lands, which by the Bishops, Abbots, and Priors are proudly spent and wasted in this Realme, which would suffice to find 150. Earles, 1500. Knights, 6200. Esquires, and 100. hospitals more than now bee, &c. But when they went about to declare out of what places those great summes were to be leuied, wherby the foresaid states should be endowed, they wanted in their account: wherefore the king commaunded them, that from thencefoorth they should not presume to moue any such matter.

A Parliament at London. 1410.

A bill put vp against the Clergy to take from them their temporall possessions. Tho. Walling.

Sir Robert Vmfreuile viceadmirall of England annoyed the countries on the sea coastes of Scotland: for comming into the Frith with tenne ships of warre, and lying there fourteene daies together, landing euery day on the one side of the riuer, or on the other, taking praies spoyles, and prisoners, notwithstanding the Duke of Albany, and the Earle Dowglas were ready there with a great power to resist him: he brent the Galiot of Scotland (being a ship of great account) with many other vessels lying the same time at the Blacknes, ouer against Lithe. At his returne from thence, he brought with him 14. good ships, and many other great prises of clothes, both woollen and linnen,

Sir Robert Umfreuile sent against the Scots.

pitch, tarre, woad, meale, wheat and rie, which being sold abroad, the markets were well holden thereby, and therefore he had giuen him the name of Robin Mend-market: shortly after his returne from the Sea, he made a roade into Scotland by land, hauing with him his nephew, young Gilbert Vmframuile Earle of Angus, being but fourtéene yéeres of age, they burnt at that time Jedworth, and the most part of Tyndale.

Robin Mend-market.

An. reg. 12. Upon the éeuen of Saint Iohn Baptist, Thomas and Iohn, the kings sonnes, being in East-cheap at London, at supper, after midnight, a great debate happened betwéene their men, and men of the court, lasting an houre, till the Maior and Sheriffes with other Citizens ceased the same.

This yéere king Henry founded a Colledge at Battaile field in Shropshire, in the place where he ouercame sir Henry Percy and other, suppressed the second of Edward the first, valued by the yéere fiftie foure pounds, two shillings and two pence,

1411. Iohn Prendergest knight, and William Long, kept the seas from Pirates and Rouers, so that the passage by sea was quiet, but by the ill willers they were accused of theft and robbery themselues, whereupon the knight tooke Sanctuary at Westminster, where he could not haue an house or cottage to hide his head, for that the same was forbidden by the king, so that he was forced to lie in a tent which he set vp in the Church porch, and to haue men to watch him in the night season, for feare of his enemie: but his fellow William remayned on the sea, vntill the Admirall had prepared ships readie, and went in person to fetch him, which he could not do, till he promised him by his fidelitie, that he should haue no harme, which promise notwithstanding, William was imprisoned in the Tower of London.

The Realme of Fraunce being disquieted with the two factions of the Duke of Burgoyne, and the Duke of Orliance, sonne to the Duke of Orliance lately slaine (at Paris) by the procurement of the Duke of Burgondy, the kings of Nauarre, and Aragon, the Dukes of Bituria, and Britaine, the Gascoyners, and Acquitaines, the Earles of Hups and Arminake, and many other ayding ỳ Duke of Orliance therin. The Duke of Burgoyne, whom the French king, and his eldest sonne, called the gouernour of France, fauoured, séeing that the contrary part was very strong, sent ambassadours into England, desiring the kings aide against the Duke of Orliance, and promised many things, amongst the which, he promised his daughter in marriage to the Prince, and a great summe of gold with her. To whom the king answered: We aduertise you not to fight with your enemie in this case, who iustly séemeth to bere you, for the death of his father by you procured: but as much as in you lieth, endeuour your selfe to mitigate the young mans wrath, and promise to make him reasonable satisfaction according to the aduise of your friends. And if then he will not cease from persecuting you, get you into the strongest place of your dominion, and there gather such power as may be able to put off his force. If then after this, he will make warre against you, you shall haue the iustest occasion to fight with him, and in such case, we will shew you such fauour, as ye haue demaunded. Thus there were

sent

sent ouer to his aide Thomas Earle of Arundell, Gilbert Vmframuile Earle of Angus, or Earle of Kyme, sir Robert Vmframuile vncle to the said Gilbert, sir John Oldcastle, Lord of Cobham, sir Iohn Grey, and William Porter with twelue hundred archers, they toke shipping at Douer, and landed at Cluce, from whence they went to Arras, where they found the Duke of Burgoyne, of whom they were ioyfully receiued, and from thence he appointed them to Parowne, where he assembled a power of his owne subiectes, marched toward Arras, and so to Marquion, where he lodges his Flemings. The Duke of Orliance had thirty thousand fighting men, drawing towards him, and laide siege about one part thereof, there were many skirmishes, but finally they within the Towne abandoned it, and the Flemings destroyed it. From thence the Duke went to Peolle, and it was destroied euen as it were in passing by it, from thence they went before Roy in Vermondois, which yelded to them, from thence to Montdidier, &c. The Duke of Burgoyne went to Arras, from thence to Roy, from thence to Bretoue, and after to Beauuais, the Earle of Arundell was with him in his ayde with fiue hundred Englishmen, from thence he went to Poitoise, from thence to Meulent, and so to Paris. The Duke of Orliance was lodged at Saint Dionis, and at Saint Clow, with a great power. About the tenth of Nouember, Iohn Duke of Burgoyne issued out of Paris, and went to Saint Clow, where putting his people in order, the Earle of Arundel and his people made a great assault, so that they within were driuen to yeld to the will of the English men, wherefore they were bountifully rewarded by the Duke of Burgoyne, and then returned into England.

King Henry aydeth the Duke of Burgoyne against the Duke of Orliance.

Hist. Lewis Dorli.

King Henry created his brother Thomas Bewfort, Earle of Dorset, and his sonne Thomas of Lancaster that was steward of England and Earle of Aumarle, he created Duke of Clarence. *Ann. reg. 13.*

A squire of Wales named Rice ap Dee, which had long time rebelled against the King, was brought to London, and there drawen, hanged and quartered.

After the feast of All-saints, a Parliament was begun at London. The king caused a new kind of Nobles to be made, which were of lesse value then the olde by fower pence in the Noble, so that fiftie Nobles should waie a pound Troy weight.

Parliament at London.

New coyne of gold.

Edward Duke of Yorke this yere began the foundation of the Colledge of Fodringhey in Northamptonshire, for a master, twelue priests, eight Clearkes, and thirteene Choristers, Henry the fift gaue landes thereunto, of Priors alians by him suppressed, and mought dispend yerely (as was valued at the suppression) fower hundreth and ninetene poundes, eleuen shillings. 1412.

Colledge at Foderinghey.

Iohn Duke of Burgoyne, hauing now the gouernment, both of the French King and of his Realme, he so persecuted the Duke of Orliance and his complices, that at the last, the saide Duke Charles, was forced to sende into Englande certaine persons, as his procuratours, to offer in his name vnto King Henry, and to his sonnes, certaine conditions, which

were concluded the eight day of May. The said Charles Duke of Orliance beſought the King of England to ſend vnto him 8000. men to aide him againſt the Duke of Burgoyne and his complices, which daily procured the French King to make war vpon them.

King Henry curteouſly entertained the meſſengers, and vpon conſideration had of their offers, which ſeemed to make greatly both for his honour and profite, as Duke of Guyen, he toke vpon him to ſuccour and defend them againſt all men, as their Lord and ſoueraigne, and ſo ſending away the meſſengers, promiſed to ſend them aide very ſhortly.

King Henry minded a voyage into Fráce.

Then ſaid the King to the Archbiſhop of Canterburie, Lord Chancellor, do you not ſée howe the Almightie hath diſpoſed for vs, beholde now the acceptable time, let vs goe into Fraunce, to winne with ſmall adoe, that which is our right? And ſurely it was thought he would haue recouered Fraunce, at that time, if ſtrength of body had béene anſwerable to his minde, but being oppreſſed with great ſickneſs he could not endure, neither to go nor ride, yet hée commaunded all thoſe to come to him that held of him by knights ſeruice, as if he had meant to go ouer the ſea, but the Lords of the Realme perſwaded him to commit that iourney vnto his ſecond ſonne Thomas.

T. Otarborne.

In the meane time Henry the Prince, ſonne to the king, offended with certaine of his fathers family, which were ſaid to ſowe diſcord betwixt the father and the ſonne, he wrote vnto all the parts of the Realme, endeuouring himſelfe to refell all the practiſes and imaginations of ſuch detractors, and ſlaunderous people, and to make the matter more manifeſt to the world, hée came to the king his father about the feaſt of Peter and Paule, with ſuch a number of his friends and welwillers, as a greater had not béene ſéene in thoſe daies. He was ſtraight waies admitted to his fathers preſence, of whom this one thing he beſought him of, that if ſuch as had accuſed him might be convicted of vniuſt accuſation, that they might be puniſhed, not according to their deſerts, but yet after their lies were proued againſt them, they might ſomewhat taſte of that which they had meant, although not to the vttermoſt: to the which requeſt the King ſeemed to graunt, but he tolde him, that he muſt tarry a Parliament, that ſuch might be tried and puniſhed by iudgement of their péeres. Thus farre Thomas Otarborne. To the ſame effect (but in more ample manner) writeth the tranſlator of Titus Liuius (who wrote an hiſtory of Henry the fift, and dedicated it to Henry the firſt,) as hée was informed by the Earle of Ormond, an eye witneſſe of the ſame, as followeth: During the ſickneſs of the King (ſaith hée) ſome euill diſpoſed people laboured to make diſſention betwéene the King, and the prince his ſonne, by reaſon whereof, and by the Actes of youth which he exerciſed more then meanely, and for the great recourſe of people vnto him, of whom his Court was at all times more aboundant than his fathers, the King ſuſpected that he would preſume to vſurpe the Crowne, he being aliue, which ſuſpicious iealouſie was occaſion, that he in part withdrew his affection, and ſingular loue from the Prince: but when the Noble Prince was aduertiſed of his fathers iealouſie, and miſtruſt, by ſome his ſecret friendes of the Kinges

Titus Liuius.

counſaile,

counsaile, he disguised himselfe in a gowne of blue satten, or damaske, wrought full of oplet holes, and at euery oplet the needle wherewith it was made, hanging still by the silke: and about his arme hee ware a dogges collar set full of S.S. of golde, and the tirets of the same also of fine golde. Thus strangely apparelled, with a great company of Lords, and other Noble men of his court, he came to the King his father, who at that time lay at Westminster, where at his comming (by commaundement of him) not one of his company auaunced himselfe further then the fire in the hall, notwithstanding that they were greatly and ofte desired to the contrarie, by the Lords and great estates of the Kings Court: and this they did not onely because the weather was colde, but because the Prince had so commaunded them, to giue the lesse occasion of mistrust to the King his father, but hee himselfe onely accompanied of the Kings household passed forth to the King his father, to whom (after due salutation) he desired to shew the intent of his minde in secret manner. Then the King caused himselfe to be borne in his chaire into his secret chamber (because he was diseased and might not goe) where in the presence of three or foure persons, in whom the King had most confidence, he commaunded the Prince to shewe the effect of his minde: Then the Prince kneeling downe before his father, said to him these words, Most redoubted Lord and father, I am this time come to your presence, as your liegeman, and as your sonne naturall, in all things to obey your grace as my soueraigne Lord and father. And whereas I vnderstand yée haue mée suspect of my behauiour against your grace, and that ye feare I would vsurpe your crowne against the pleasure of your highnesse, of my conuersation your grace knoweth that if ye were in feare of any man, of what estate soeuer he were, my dutie were to the endangering of my life to punish that person, thereby to rase that sore from your heart: and then how much rather ought I to suffer death to bring your grace from the feare that ye haue of me that am your naturall sonne, and your liegeman. And to that intent I haue this day by confession of my sinnes and receiuing the Sacrament, prepared my selfe, and therefore most redoubted Lord and father, I beseech you in the honour of God, for the easing of your heart, heretofore your knees to slea me with this dagger, and at that worde with all reuerence hee deliuered to the King his dagger, saying, my Lord and father, my life is not so desirous to me, that I would liue one day that should bee to your displeasure, nor I couet not so much my life as I doe your pleasure and welfare, and in your thus doing, here in the presence of these Lords, and tofore God at the day of iudgement I clerely forgiue you my death. At these words of the Prince, the King taken with compassion of heart, cast from him the dagger, and imbracing the Prince kissed him, & with effusion of teares said vnto him, My right deere and hartily beloued sonne, it is of truth that I had you partly suspect, and as I now perceiue, vndeserued on your partie: but seeing this your humilitie and faithfulnesse, I shall neither slay you, nor from henceforth haue you any more in mistrust, for no report that shall be made vnto me, and thereof I assure you vpon mine honour. Thus by his great wisedome was the wrongfull imagi-

Henry Prince of Wales strangely disguised visiteth his father being sicke.

nation

nation of his fathers hate vtterly auoyded, and himselfe restored to the Kings former grace and fauour.

T. Ouarborne

Iohn Prendergest with thirtie shippes kéeping the sea, toke wines and other victuales from ỹ French, which though it pleased ỹ Noble men little, yet it did great ease to the common people, who had all such things farre the better cheape. About the 19. of August King Henry by determination of the counsell, sent his second sonne Thomas Duke of Clarence, Edward Duke of Yorke, and Thomas Earle of Dorset, and manie valiant men, with a strong power to helpe the Duke of Orliance, against the Duke of Burgoyne, or euer all the other were returned, which a while agoe went ouer with the Earle of Arundell to ayde the Duke of Burgoyne, so that many men marueiled at the sudden change, that in so small a time the Englishmen did aide the two contrary parts: notwithstanding the Nobles went forward and arriued in Normandie, where when the Duke of Orliance did not méete them at the time appointed, they brent his townes, and spoiled the countrie, taking many holdes: at length, though late, the Dukes of Clarence, and Orliance met and talked together, and the matter was so entreated of betwéene them, that our men should desist from ranging through the countrie, and refraine from robberie, which when our men had graunted, they departed into Acquitaine, to winter there, and the Duke of Orliance went home to his countrie.

Tho. Walsing. King Henry gaue aide to the Duke of Orliance, against the duke of Burgoine.

An. reg. 14. About this time the Lord Helle Marshall of Fraunce with manie other Noble men, and men of armes, to the number of 4000. besieged a certaine holde in Aquitaine, which was in the kéeping of Iohn Blunt Knight, who with 300. that aided him, put to flight the whole armie of the Frenchmen, and toke of them 12. men of name, and other gentlemen to the number of 120. and amongst other the said Monsier de Helle Marshall of Fraunce was one, who was sent ouer into England, and put in the Castle of Wisbich in Cambridge shire, but escaping thence, he got ouer into Fraunce, where he serued the Duke of Orliance, at the battaile of Agencourt, and was there slaine.

1413. King Henry kept his Christmasse at his manor of Eltham, being so sore sicke, that sometime men thought that he had béen dead: notwithstanding it pleased God that he recouered strength a little, and as ioyfully as he could, he celebrated that feast of Christmasse.

A Parliament at London. After Christmasse hee called the Nobles of England to a parliament at London, which began the morrow after Candlemasse day, but he liued not to the ende thereof, for he died shortly after in a chamber belonging to the abbot of Westminster, called Ierusalem, whereby the prophesie was fulfilled, as he said, that he should die there. In the time of whose languishing the King gaue to the Prince his sonne diuers notable doctrines and insignements, that not onely of him, but of euery Prince are to be holden and followed: among the which erudítions one is this: The King lieng greeuously diseased, called before him the Prince his sonne, and said vnto him: My sonne, I feare me sore, after my departure from this life, some discord shall grow

King Henry his counsell to his sonne Henry.

grow and arise betweene thee, and thy brother Thomas Duke of Clarence, whereby the Realme may be brought to destruction and miserie, for I know you both to be of great stomacke and courage. Wherefore I feare, that hee through his high minde will make some enterprise against thee, intending to vsurpe vpon thee, which I know thy stomacke may not abide easily. And for dread hereof as oft as it is in my remembrance, I sore repent mee, that euer I charged my selfe with the crowne of this Realme. To these words of the King, the prince answered thus: Right redoubted lord and father, to the pleasure of God your grace shall long continue with vs, and rule vs both: but if God haue so prouided that euer I shall succeed you in this Realme, I shall honor and loue my brethren aboue all men, as long as they be to me true, faithfull and obedient, as to their soueraigne Lord: but if any of them fortune to conspire or rebell against me, I assure you, I shall assone execute iustice vpon one of them, as I shall vpon the worst and most simplest person within this your Realme.

The King hearing this answere, was therewith marueilously reioyced in his minde, and said: My deere and welbeloued Sonne, with this answere thou hast deliuered mee of a great and ponderous agony: and I beseech thee, and vpon my blessing charge thee, that like as thou hast sayde, so thou minister iustice equally, and in no wise suffer not them that bee oppressed long to call vpon thee for iustice, but redresse oppressions, and indifferently and without delay, for no perswasion of flatterers, or of them that be partiall, or such as to haue their hands replenished with giftes, deferre not iustice till to morrow, if that thou mayest do iustice this day, least (peraduenture) God doe iustice on thee in the meane time, and take from thee thine authoritie: remember that the wealth of thy body, and thy soule, and of thy realme, resteth in the execution of iustice; and do not thy iustice so, that thou be called a Tyrant, but vse thy selfe meanely betwixt iustice and mercy in those thinges that belong to thee: And betweene parties do iustice truely and extreamely, to the consolation of thy poore Subiectes that suffer iniuries, and to the punition of them that be extortioners and doers of oppressions, that other thereby may take example: and in thus doing, thou shalt obtaine the fauour of God, and the loue and feare of thy Subiectes, and therefore also thou shalt haue thy Realme more in tranquillitie and rest, which shall bee occasion of great prosperitie within thy Realme, which English men naturally do desire: for so long as they haue wealth and riches, so long shalt thou haue obeysance: and when they be poore, then they be alwayes ready at euery motion to make insurrections, and it causeth them to rebell against their Soueraigne Lorde: for the nature of them is such, rather to feare losing of their goodes and worldly substaunce, than the ieoparding of their liues. And if thou thus kéepe them in subiection mired with loue and feare, thou shalt haue the most peaceable and fertile Countrey, and the most louing, faithfull, and manly people of the worlde, which shall bee cause of no small feare to thine aduersaries. My sonne, when it shall please God to call mée to the way decréed for euery worldly Creature, to thée (as my sonne and heire)

I must leaue my crowne and my Realme, which I aduise thée not to take vainely, and as a man elate in pride, and reioyced in worldly honour, but thinke that thou art more oppressed with charge, to purueie for euery person within the Realme, than exalted in vaine honour of the world. Thou shalt bee exalted vnto the crowne, for the wealth and conseruation of the Realme, and not for thy singular commoditie and auaile: My sonne, thou shalt bee a minister to thy Realme to keepe it in tranquillitie and defend it. Like as the heart in the middest of the body is principall and chiefe thing in the body, and serueth to couet and desire that thing that is most necessarie to euery of thy members, so (my sonne) thou shalt bee amongst thy people as chiefe and principall of them to minister, imagine and acquire those things that may be most beneficiall for them. And then thy people shall be obedient to thée, to ayde and succour thée, and in all things to accomplish thy commaundements, like as thy members labour, euery one of them in their office, to acquire and get that thing that the heart desireth, and as thy heart is of no force and impotent without the ayde of thy members, so without thy people, thy Raigne is nothing. My sonne, thou shalt feare and dread God aboue all things, and thou shalt loue, honour and worship him with all thy heart, thou shalt attribute and ascribe to him all things wherein thou seest thy selfe to bee well fortunate, be it victorie of thine enemies, loue of thy friends, obedience of thy subiects, strength and actiuenesse of body, honour, riches, or fruitfull generations, or any other thing whatsoeuer it be that chanceth to thy pleasure. Thou shalt not imagine that any such thing should fortune to thée, by thine acte, nor by thy desert, but thou shalt thinke that all commeth onely of the goodnesse of the Lord. Thus thou shalt with all thine heart, prayse, honour, and thanke God for all his benefites that he giueth vnto thée. And in thy selfe eschew all vainegloríe and elation of heart, following the wholesome counsell of the Psalmist, which saieth, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis, sed nomini tuo da gloriam*, which is to say, Not vnto vs Lord, not vnto vs, but to thy holy name be giuen laud and praise. These and many other admonishments and doctrines this victorious King gaue vnto this Noble Prince his Sonne, who with effect followed the same, after the death of his father: whereby hee obtained grace of our Lorde to attaine to great victories and many glorious and incredible conquests, through the helpe and succour of our Lord, whereof he was neuer destitute. The King his father drawing to his ende, after due thankes giuen, and supplications made to God, gaue his benediction to the Prince his sonne, and so yelded to God his spirit, the xx. of March, which was then midlent Sunday. *Anno* 1412. after the account of the Church of England, the yeere of his age 46. whē he had raigned 13. yeres, fiue moneths lacking 10. Dayes. His body was conueyed by water to Feuersham, and frō thence by land to Canterbury, and there buried by the Lady Mary his first wife, in the monastery of Christs Church, vnder a pillar in the North Ile. This King Henry, with Thomas Arundell Archbishop of Canterbury had bēen great benefactors to this Church, in building a good part of the body

thereof

thereof anewe: he had issue by Mary daughter to Humfrey Bohune Earle of Hereford and Northampton, Henry that succéded him, Thomas Duke of Clarence, Iohn duke of Bedford, Humfrey Duke of Glocester, Blanch Dutchesse of Bauere, and Philip Quéene of Denmarke: for by Ioan his second wife he had no issue. Issue of King Henrie.

King Henry the fift.

HEnry the fift borne at Monmouth, began his raigne the xx. day of March in the yére 1412. This Prince exceeded the meane stature of men, he was beautifull of visage, his necke long, body slender and leane, and his bones small: neuertheleſſe he was of marueilous great strength, and passing swift in running, insomuch that he with two other of his Lords, without hounds, bow, or other engine, would take a wilde bucke or Doe in a large parke: he studied at Oxford in the newe colledge, vnder the gouernment of Henry Bewfort his vncle on the fathers side, then Chauncellour of Oxford, after Bishop of Winchester: hee delighted in songs, meters, and musicall instruments, insomuch that in his Chappell amongst other his priuate prayers, he vsed our Lords prayer, certaine psalmes of Dauid, with diuers hymnes and canticles, all which I haue séene translated into heroicall English meter, by Iohn Lydgate Monke of Bury. He liued somewhat insolently, insomuch that whilest his father liued, being accompanied with some of his yong Lords and gentlemen, he would waite in disguised aray for his owne receiuers, and distresse them of their money: and sometimes at such enterprises both he and his company were surely beaten: and when his receiuers made to him their complaints how they were robbed in their comming vnto him, hee would giue them discharge of so much money as they had lost; and besides that, they should not depart from him without great rewards for their trouble and veration, especially they should be rewarded that best had resisted him and his company, and of whom he had receiued the greatest and most strokes, and for example Sir Thomas Eliot writeth thus. The renowned Prince King Henry the fift, during the life of his father, was noted to be fierce, and of wanton courage. It hapned that one of his seruants, whom he fauored, was for felony by him committed, arraigned, at the kings bench, whereof the Prince being aduertised, and incensed by light persons about him, in furious rage came hastily to the bar, where his seruant stood as prisoner, and commaunded him to be vnlaced and set at libertie, whereat all men were abashed, reserued the chiefe Iustice, who humbly exhorted the Prince to be ordered according to the ancient lawes of the Realme, or if he would haue him saued from the rigor of the lawes, that he should obtaine if he might of the King his father, his gracious pardon, whereby no law or iustice should be derogate. *Ann. reg.* 1. Titus Liuius. T. Eliots gouernour.

With

William Gascoigne was chiefe Iustice of the Kings bench, from the fact of Henry the fourth, till the third of Henry the fift.

With the which answere the prince nothing appeased, but rather more inflamed, indeuoured himselfe to take away his seruant. The Iudge, considering the perillous example and inconuenience that might thereby ensue, with a valiant spirit & courage commaunded the prince vpon his allegeance to leaue the prisoner, and to departe his way: With which commaundement, the prince being set all in a furie, all chafed, and in a terrible maner came vp to the place of iudgment, men thinking that he would haue slaine the Iudge, or haue done to him some domage, but the Iudge sitting still, without mouing, declaring the maiestie of the Kings place of iudgment, and with an assured bold countenance, had to the prince these words following: Sir, remember your selfe, I kepe here the place of the king your soueraigne lord and father, to whom you owe double obeisance, wherefore eftsones in his name I charge you desist off your wilfulnes and vnlawfull enterprise, & from henceforth giue good example to those which hereafter shall be your proper subiects: and nowe for your contempt and disobedience, goe you to the prison of the kings bench, whereunto I commit you, and remaine you there prisoner vntill the pleasure of the king your father be further knowne. With which words, being abashed, and also wondering at the marueilous grauitie of that worshipfull Iustice, the prince laying his weapon aparte, doing reuerence, departed and went to the kings bench as he was commaunded. Whereat his seruants disdaining, came & shewed to the king all the whole affaire. Whereat hee a while studying, after, as a man all rauished with gladnes, holding his hands and eies towards heauen, abraid with a lowde voice: O mercifull God! how much am I bounde to thy infinite goodnes, especially for that thou hast giuen me a Iudge, who feareth not to minister iustice, and also a sonne, who can suffer semblably and obey iustice. Nowe (saith Thomas Eliot) here a man may behold three persons worthy memory: first a Iudge, who being a subiect, feared not to execute iustice on the eldest sonne of his soueraigne Lord, and by the order of nature his successour. Also a prince, and sonne and heire of the K. in the middest of his folly, more considered his euill example, and the Iudges conscience in iustice, than his owne estate or wilfull appetite. Thirdly, a noble king and wise father, who contrary to the custome of parents, reioyced to see his sonne, and the heire of his crowne, to be for his disobedience by his subiect corrected: wherefore I conclude, that nothing is more honorable or to be desired in a prince, or noble man, than placability, as contrariwise nothing is so detestable, or to be feared in such a one as wrath and cruel malignitie. Thus much of his youthfulnes: but after the decease of his father (as he that should succeed in the kingdome) he called to him a certaine monke of holy conuersation, to whom he confessed himselfe of all his offentes, trespasses, and insolencies past, and after his counsaile in all things, at that time he reformed his life and manners, so that after his fathers decease was neuer no youth or wildnes that might haue place in him, but all his acts were sodainly changed into grauitie and discretion.

Titus Liuius.

To this noble prince (by assent of the parliament) all the estates of the realme

realme, after three daies, offered to doe fealtie before hee was crowned or had solemnized his oth, well and iustly to gouerne the common weale, which offer, before was neuer found to be made to any prince of England.

The King gaue them al generally thankes, for their good mindes towardes him, and therewith exhorted them to the zeale of the publike prosperitie and honour of the realme. If any man had offended him he pardoned their trespas, and desired hartily of God, that if he should rule and doe all things well to the honour of God and the prosperous commoditie of the Realme, that then God would suffer him to be crowned: but if his fortune should be to do otherwise, that then God should take him to his mercie, and suffer him rather to be buried than to enterprise the charge of the Realme. 1413.

The ninth day of April he was crowned at Westminster, by Thomas Arundel archbishop of Canterburie, after which coronation, he called vnto him all those yong Lords & gentlemen that were the followers of his yong acts, to euery one of whom he gaue rich and bounteous gifts, and then commanded that as many as would change their manners as he intended to do should abide with him in his court, and to all that would perseuer in their former light conuersation, he gaue expresse commaundement vpon paine of their heads, neuer after that day to come in his presence.

Hauing auoyded those yong and suspicious company from his presence, he then attended to ghostly and worldly businesse. And first he commanded to edifie his royal manor that then was called Shéne (and now Richmount) he also founded two monasteries vpon the Thames (not far from the said manor royall) the one of the religion of the Cartusiers, which he named Bethlem: the other of religious men and women, of S. Brigets order, and that he named Sion. In this house there were 60. sisters 13. priests 4. deacons and 8. laie brethrē, those neuer wore linnen but woollen, which two couents had but one church in commō, the nuns had their church aloft in the roofe, and the brethren beneath vpon the ground, ech couent seuerally inclosed, and after their profession, mought neuer come out, except by the Popes special licence: these ought to haue sufficient dowrie to sustaine them without begging, he indowed them with rents and reuenues taken from the priories aliens which hée suppressed. Richmond, Sheene, and Sion built.

He by the best aduisement he could, prouided, and ordeined in euery part of his Realme, Iudges, and other officers, such as he beleeued to be true and iust, and others that were knowne or suspect of couetousnes or partialitie, he clerely auoided from their former offices & romes. He also (as King Henrie his father had done) vsed for custome euerie day, when no state was kept, at after dinner, to haue a cushion layd on the cupbord, and there to leane the space of an houre or more, to receiue bils, and heare complaints of whomsoeuer would come: in those dayes if the King sate in the chamber, the steward of the household sate alway in the hal vnder the cloth of estate, the same being rolled vp aboue his head, and such Knights sitting with him as at that time waited on the King. Tho. Wal. The King heareth all suters.

He also caused the corps of King Richard the second to be taken from the earth

The bodie of Richard the second taken vp, and buried at Westminster.

earth, whom king Henry the fourth had intumulate in the friers Church of Langley, and with due obseruance to be from thence translated to the Abbey of Westminster, where, after solemne exequies for him done, he was buried in Saint Peters Church in the said Abbey, on the south side of Saint Edwards shrine, by Quéene Anne his wife, as he himselfe in his life had desired, and had prepared his monument in the 18. yéere of his raigne. B. and Godfrey of Woodstréete goldsmiths, made the moulds & images of king Richard and Quéene Anne, laid on them, the charges of gilding of them exceeded 400. markes. King Henry founded perpetually one day euery wéeke, a memory to be celebrate for the said K. Richard, and vpon each day fiue shillings eight pence, to be giuen to the poore people, and once euery yéere vpon the day of his anniuerse 20. l. in pence to be dealt to the poore.

T. Clifford.

About this time Thomas Duke of Clarence, the kings brother, came from the coasts of Aquitaine, who (as we said before) was sent to ayde the Duke of Orliance against the Duke of Burgoyne.

Part of Norwich with the Friers there burned.

A great part of the Citie of Norwich was brent sodainly with fire, with all the house of the friers preachers and all to them belonging, and also two friers of that house.

T. Helmham.

Vpon Trinitie sunday, the solemne exequies for king Henry the fourth were celebrated at Canterbury, king Henry his sonne being present at the same.

Tho. Wal.

The same time the fauourers of Wicliffes doctrine, did nayle vp scedules vpon the Church doores of London, which scedules contayned that there was an hundred thousand men ready to rise against al such as could not away with their sect, for indéed (saith Walsingham) they trusted to the force, power, and wit of a certaine knight called Iohn Olde-castell of Cowling in Kent, who for the honour of a marriage, which he had contracted with a kinswoman of a Nobleman, the Lord Cobham, obtayned the name of the said Lordship, or seignorie of Cobham: this Iohn was a strong man, and a méetely good man of war, but he was a most peruerse enemie to ỹ state of the Church at that time. In a synode therefore being holden at London, the said Sir Iohn Old-castell, for diuers points touching the sacrament, before the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Winchester and other, was conuict, and committed to the tower of London, out of the which he brake ouer the wals in the night, and escaped about the feast of Simon and Iude.

1414. Conspiracie against the King.

The King kéeping his Christmasse at his manor of Eltham (seuen miles from London) was warned that certaine had conspired against him, either to haue taken, or sodainly slaine him and his brethren on Twelfth day at night, whereupon the King sent word to the Maior of London, that he should arrest all suspitious persons: the Maior therefore caused euery Alderman in his warde to kéepe great watch, and about tenne of the clocke at night went himselfe with a strong power, to the signe of the Are without Bishops Gate, where they apprehended the man of the house called Iohn Burgate carpenter and seuen other, one of them being an Esquire belonging to Sir Iohn Old-castell, and sent them to Eltham, where they confessed

fessed before the King that they were confederate with Sir Iohn Old-castell, to fight against him and his Lords in Saint Giles field aboue Holborne. On the morrowe after the Twelfth day, the King remoued priuily to Westminster, and because he had heard tell that the rude peoples intent was, if they did preuaile, first to destroy the monasteries of Westminster, Saint Albons, and Saint Pauls, and all the houses of friers in London: he minding to preuent such a mischiefe, contrary to the mindes of all that were about him, went into the fielde when it was little past midnight, with a great armie, for he was warned that Sir Iohn Old-castell, and Sir Roger Acton, would be in the same fielde on the next day following with 25000. people: and the same night were taken more then fourescore men in armor of the same faction, for many that came from far, not knowing the Kings campe to be in the field, were taken by the same and sent to prison, and being demanded whom they sought, made answere the Lord Cobham. The rumour of this, comming to the eares of the captaines that were the Kings enemies, they were wonderfully discouraged, and that the more, because none came to them out of London, from whence they loked for many thousands, whereupon they fled to saue themselues, and the Kings men following them toke some, and slew other, but where their captaine was become would not be knowne, notwithstanding that the King by proclamation promised to whomsoeuer could bring him forth a 1000. markes besides liberties to the Cities and townes that would disclose him, but there was not one found that would detect him, so greatly was he fauoured. Also the King being tolde of an ambushment gathered in Harengay parke, sent thither certaine Lords, who toke many, among whom, was one William Murle, a rich maultman, or bruer of Dunstaple, who had his two horses trapped with golde following him, and a paire of gilt spurs in his bosome, for he thought to haue bēn made Knight on the morrow by the hands of Sir Iohn Old-castell. The xii. of Ianuary, 69. of them were condemned of treason at Westminster, and on the morrow after 37. of them were drawne from the Tower of London to Newgate, and so to Saint Giles, and there in a place called Fickets field, were all hanged, and seauen of them brent gallowes and al. The xiv. of Ianuary, were drawne and hanged Sir Iohn Beuerley Priest, Iohn Burgate carpenter, a tert writer in Saint Iohns stréte, and a glouer on London Bridge, and shortly after, Sir Roger Acton Knight was taken, who on the tenth of Februarie, was drawne, hanged, and buried vnder the Gallowes.

King Henry kept the field by S. Giles without Holborne.

Many men hanged, and some brent in Fickets field.

The twentith of February, deceased Thomas Arundel Archbishop of Canterbury. Henry Chicheley borne at Higham Ferries in Northampton shire succéded, being translated from Saint Dauids in Wales.

The King taking compassion vpon Henry Percie a yong man (who by his grandfather Henry Percie Earle of Northumberland, was caried into Scotland, after the death of his father, who was slaine in the battell of Shrewsburie, when this young man was then but a childe) commaunded them that were of his kindred, and néerest friends, to solicite for his reclaiming home againe out of Scotland, minding not onely to honour him by cal-

ling him home againe, but also to make him Earle of Northumberland.

T. Elmham. King Henrie builded at Kelwoorth.

King Henry kept his Lent in the Castle of Kenelworth, and caused an harber there to be planted in the marish, for his pleasure, amongst the thorns and bushes: where a fore had harbored, which fore he killed, being a thing then thought to prognosticate, that he should expell the craftie deceit of the French King, besides which also he there builded a most pleasant place, and caused it to bee termed Le plesant maries, or the pleasant marsh. King Henry the 8. bestowed great cost in repairing Kenelworth Castle, caused the said banketing house to be taken downe, and part of it to be set vp in the base court at Killingworth. In this Lent season, whilest the King lay at Kenelworth, messengers came to him from the Dolphin of France named Charles, with a present of Paris balles, for him to play withall, but the King wrote to him, that he would shortly send to him London balles, with the which he would breake downe the roofes of houses.

Titus Liuius. Roger Wall. *Anno reg. 2.*

King Henry, after that all dissentions and commotions in England, Ireland, Scotland and Wales were appeased, so that concord and vnitie were made and established in all parts of the Kings dominion, the King deliberated vpon the recouery of the Realme of Fraunce, which by iust title of inheritance was descended vnto him, and at that time was iniuriously withholden from him by the French King. And because he would nothing proceede against the pleasure of God, he first demaunded aduise, and counsell of all the discrete and learned men as well of the spiritualtie in both Vniuersities, as of the temporaltie through all his Realme, if he mought without offence to God lawfully recouer by armes his Realme of Fraunce. Who after long deliberation thereupon among them had, of one assent, made report vnto the King, that in so iust a quarrell he mought lawfully vse armes, if he might by none other wayes attaine his purpose, and right of inheritance: whereupon the King, in all things insuing the aduise of his Counsell, sent Ambassadors into France, there to demaund his right in the Counsell of the French, and if peraduenture they would denie to accomplish his desire, his Ambassadors should giue them knowledge that he would seeke his right by armes. These Ambassadors were honorably receiued in Fraunce, and for answere of their message there denounced, they brought with them nothing to report, except that within short time, the Frenchmen would send their Ambassadors into England, to declare their intent to the King of England vpon his demaund.

Shortly after arriued in England W. Bouratier Archbishop of Bourges, the Earle of Vandosme, Pierce Frennall Bishop of Liceur, the Lords Iuery, and of Braquimount, Walter Cole secretarie to the French King, Ambassadors of Fraunce, these were men of great authority: amongst them the Archbishop was the chiefe, who in like manner were here receiued with great honor. At a time limited, the Archbishop of Bourges proposed their message, and in the ende, offered to the King lands, and a great sum of money with the daughter of the King their master in marriage, so that he would desist from that warre that he then intended to make in France. After which proposition

and

and offer made, the Ambaſſadors dined with the King: and at another day limited, the King of England, by the mouth of the Archbiſhop of Canterbury made to them anſwere, to this effect: The proffers made, he ſaid, were not ſufficiendt recompence for the Kings rightfull inheritance in France, vniuſtly detained from him, wherefore for a finall anſwere, he would demand his right by force of armes in the beſt manner that he could, and that as briefly as to him were poſſible. Then the Archbiſhop of Bourges, after licence obtained, ſaid: O King, with reuerence be it ſpoken, thinkeſt thou vniuſtly to depoſe the moſt Chriſtian King of Fraunce? Thinkeſt thou that he hath offered to thee theſe lands and money, with his owne daughter to be thy wife, for any dread he hath of thée? nay not ſo, but the ſame our Lord, indued with pitie, as the louer of peace, hath made to thée this offer, to the intent, that innocent blod be not ſpilt and deſtroyed: and therefore by the aide of God, he ſhall at all times defend himſelfe, his lands, and ſubiects, from thy vniuſt inuaſions. And as to vs that be his Ambaſſadors, we deſire thée, to make to vs ſafe conduct without domage through thy realme, and alſo that thou write to our ſouereigne Lord, this thine anſwere entirely vnder thy ſeale, and ſigne manuell: which requeſt the King granted vnto them, and they returned into Fraunce. Anſwere of the Biſhop of Bourges.

In the moneth of May a Parliament was begun at Leiceſter, in the beginning whereof, there was a porter of the tower of London, drawen, hanged, and headed, whoſe head was ſent to London, and ſet ouer the tower gate, for conſenting to one that brake out of the tower, named Whitlocke. Parliament at Leiceſter. Porter of the Tower executed.

In this Parliament Iohn the Kings brother was made Duke of Bedford, Humfrey his brother Duke of Glocester, and Richard brother to the Duke of Yorke was made Earle of Cambridge. The priories allians in England were giuen to the King, all their poſſeſſions to remaine to the King and to his heirs for euer, except land graunted to the colledge of Fodringhay, and after all theſe priories were ſuppreſſed to the number of more than one hundred houſes. Gold waights were appoynted. Priories ſuppreſſed to the number of 11●

In this Parliament were deuiſed diuers meanes to gather money of al the commons of England, therewith to ſuſtaine the Kings wars, and to make prouiſion of all things neceſſarie for the ſame, the ſum whereof, leuied and gathered of the ſpiritualtie and temporaltie amounted to the ſum of 300. thouſand markes Engliſh. And heerwith order was taken to gather a great hoſt of men through all the Kings dominions.

On Mary Magdalens day, in London, Iohn Nianſer Eſquire, with nine of his men, ſet vpon and ſlue Iohn Tibbey clarke, Archdeacon of Huntington, and Chancellor to Quéene Ioane, late wife to Henry the fourth, for the which fact, the ſaid Eſquire, and foure of his men fled to S. Annes Church within Aldersgate, where they were mured vp with bord, and watched day and night till the 21. of Auguſt, on the which day, they forſware the land, and paſſed through the citie towards Calice in their ſhirts and breeches, each of them hauing a Croſſe in his hand, and a purſe about his necke, &c. The Queenes Chancellor ſlaine. Men forſware the land.

Our Ambaſſadors, the Biſhops of Durham and Norwich, returning now

the second time out of Fraunce, declared to the King, that the Frenchmen did but vse fraud and deceits, wherefore the King being stirred vp vnto anger, and also knowing well the discord betwixt the great Lords of Fraunce, whereof hath somewhat been said before, determined to abate their scornings, and to teach them to vnderstand their folly, in awaking of a sleeping dog: and forthwith, the King commaunded all the prelates, and Nobles of the Realme, to come to London, there to intreate of waighty affaires concerning the Realme, at the which time, the Archbishop of Canterbury held a great councell, in the which were chosen certaine of the clergie of England, to goe to the generall Councell that should be holden at Constance, a citie of Germany, and so there were sent the Bishops of Salisburie, Bathe, and Hereford, and with them the Abbot of Westminster, and the Prior of Worcester, and many other wise men, in company of the Earle of Warwicke, whose presence did them much honour.

1415. Three schismaticall popes put downe.

In that councel was put downe three schismatical Popes, to wit, Balthasar Cossa late Pope, Iohn the 23. of that name: Peter de Luna, called Clement the 13. and Ægelus Corraris, called Gregory 12. which being done, one Otho Colombe a Noble Roman borne, was elected to the papacie, and was named Martin the fift.

Anno reg. 3. In the meane space, the King like a prudent Prince thought good to take order for the resisting of the Scots, if according to their old maner, they should attempt any thing in his absence, and therefore he appointed the Earle of Westmerland, the Lord Scrope, the baron Greystocke, Sir Robert Vmfreuile, and diuers other valiant captaines to keepe the frontiers and marches of Scotland: which Sir Robert Vmfreuil on the day of Mary Magdalen, fought with the Scots at the towne of Gedering, hauing in his company only 300. archers, and 140. men of armes, where after a long conflict, he slue of his enimies 60. and od, and take 360. prisoners, and put to flight 1000. and mo, whom he followed in chase aboue 12. miles, and so laden with praies and prisoners, returned to the Castle of Rockesborough, whereof he was then captaine. When the king had gathered his naule together, appointed his archers, and men of armes, prepared his engins, and al things necessarie for the wars, he leauing behind him for gouernment of the Realme, the Quéne his mother in law, he commanded all that should goe with him, to be ready against the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, and to méete him at Hampton.

The eightéenth day of June, King Henry with many Lords and others rode from London towards South-hampton, the Maior, Aldermen, and craftes of the Citie accompanying him on his way to the towne of Kingstone vpon Thames: whilest the King late at Southampton, where he abode for his retinue and stuffe longing to the wars, fastings, prayers vnto God, and almes déedes of the King, and other supplications of the clergie and commons had before, he mustered his vniuersall hoste vpon the sea bankes. In the which muster or view, on the last of Julie was discouered a great and perilous conspiracie against him by three Lords, in whom of all the rest, hee put greatest trust and confidence, the chiefest of them was

Titus Liuius.

Conspiracie discouered.

Henry

Henry Scrope, Lord treasurer: the second Richard Earle of Cambridge, brother to Edward Duke of Yorke, and Sir Thomas Grey, a Knight of the North, these had made Edmond Earle of March to sweare vpon a booke, not to disclose their counsell, and then tolde him that they thought to slay the King, and to make the sayde Edmond King, the which if hee refused to take vpon him, they would slay him: whereupon, the Earle prayed them to giue him one houres space to take aduisement what was best to doe, which being graunted, the Earle went secretly and tolde the King thereof, who caused them forthwith to bee apprehended, and brought before him, where they confessed the treason, for the which on the first of August they were arraigned in the Kings presence, and the same day all three beheaded. The Earle was buried heade and all, but the other heads were sent, the one to Yorke, the other to Newcastle vpon Tine, and there set vppe. It is to bee noted, that whatsoeuer hath béene reported of the confession of the Earle of Cambridge, certaine it is that hee was indighted by the name of Richard Earle of Cambridge of Conesburghe in the Countie of Yorke Knight, and with him Thomas Grey of Heton in the Countie of Northumberland Knight, for that they the twentieth day of Julie in the third yéere of King Henry the fift, at Southampton, and diuers other places within the Realme had conspired togither, with a power of men to them associate, without the Kings licence to haue led away the Lord Edmond Earle of March into Wales, and then to haue procured him to take vpon him the gouernment of the Realme, in case that King Richard the second were dead: and herewith had purposed to set forth a proclamation there in Wales, in the name of the saide Earle of March, as heire of the crowne, against King Henry by the name of Henry of Lancaster the vsurper, to the ende that by such meanes they mought drawe the more number of the Kings liege people vnto the sayd Earle. And further to haue conueyed a banner of the armes of England, and a certaine crowne of Spaine set vpon a pallet, and laid in gage to the sayde Earle of Cambridge, by the King togither with the said Earle of March into the parts of Wales aforesaide. And further that the said Earle of Cambridge, and Sir Thomas Gray had appointed certaine of the Kings liege people to repaire into Scotland, and to bring from thence, one Thomas Trumpington, also an other resembling in shape, fauour and countenance King Richard, and Henry Percy together with a great multitude of people to fight with the King, and him to destroy in open fielde: besides this, that they had meant to win certaine Castles in Wales, and to keepe them against the King, and many other treasons they had contriued, as by the inditement was specified, to the ende they mought destroy the King and his brethren, the Dukes of Bedford, and of Gloucester, and other the great Lords and péeres of the Realme. And Henry Scrope of Masham of Flaxflot, in the Countie of Yorke, was likewise indited, as consenting to the premisses, so that it appeareth their purpose was well enough then perceiued, although happely not much bruted abroade, for considerations thought necessarie to haue it kept husht.

Inditement of the Earle of Cambridge.

Roger Wall. Titus Liuius.

King Henry hauing assembled his hoste at Southampton, as is afore said, to the intent to passe the seas, for conueyance of whom and of his victuals and artillery, were prouided and brought thither for his wages out of Holland and Zeland ships, hulkes, and other vessels to such a number, that his whole naule at his departing from the land amounted to fiftéene hundred sailes.

King Henry sailed into Normandie.

On the xiii. of August the King toke shipping, and entred the sea, and on the xiiii. at night arriued at Kedicaur in Normandie, which is betwixte Hareflete and Hunflete, of whose comming, all the Cities, and states of those parts being aduertised, were stricken with great feare. The King, the Dukes of Clarence and of Glocester his brethren, the Duke of Yorke his vncle, the Earles, Barons, Knights, gentlemen, and Souldiers, cast their ankers there, and toke lande without any resistance, and the King forthwith falling to the ground vpon his knées deuoutly prayed to God that to his honor he would giue him iustice of his enemies. He had at his landing in his hoste fiue thousand speares, and xviii. thousand footemen, besides gunners, and other enginers, artificers, and labourers, of whom the king had great abundance.

Titus Liuius

The King gaue to diuers gentlemen the order of knighthood, and assigned the bearing of his standards and banners to such men, as he knew to be of great strength and prowesse. All thing being set in good order and array, the King with all his host ascended to the top of an high hill there nigh, and there he rested the next day.

On the 16. day of August, the Duke of Clarence, leader of the forewarde in good ordinance, entred his iourney toward a towne called Hereflete, distant from Kedecaur scarcely three leagues, where he lodged his host in a field before the towne. The King at his comming, lodged himselfe nigh to the first warde, not farre from the towne in a plaine field. The Earle of Suffolke, Michaell at Poole, chiefetaine of the rereward, lodged on the other side before the Towne. Other Noble men that had the conduct of the two wings, lodged them, one on the right hand, the other on the left hand of the whole hoste.

Proclamation in the Kings host.

Then the King commaunded to be proclaimed through the host, that vpon paine of death, all Churches should be kept inuiolate, vnspoiled and vnharmed, that no man should presume to take any vessell or ornament whatsoeuer from the Church, that they should not hurt any man of the church, whom they found without armour, nor any woman or childe, and then forthwith were sent to the towne, men of armes in great number, to se the situation thereof, who shortly returned with a great pray of cattell, and informed the King of all his demands.

Engerant. Description of Hereflete.

Hereflete is the key of the sea of all Normandie, and is situated vpon the sea side, by the riuer of Séne, betwixt two hils, and through the middle thereof runneth a riuer, which not farre from the same towne entreth into the Seane, and from thence, both those riuers in one descend into the sea, whereas a great and goodly hauen is, belonging to the same towne, which hauen is garnished with the defence of two faire and strong towers: and in

the

the same hauen a right great naule of shippes may ride in safetie: and if the inhabitants of this towne inclose and kéepe within the towne the course of the foresaid riuer by their sluces, as they may right well doe, then the riuer riseth without the towne so high, that it foreclooseth all entries to the wals, so that no man may approach the towne on that part. This towne is also defended with high and thicke wals and towers, and is also enuironed with broad and déepe ditches. To this towne also belongeth onely two gates for entries, the one called Calturances, the other Postrouillier. In this towne, besides the inhabitants thereof, for the defence of the same, were fower hundred men of armes deputed in garrison, amongst whom were these Lords, Lord Discouteuile, chéefe captaine of the towne, Lord Blanuile, Lord Haqueuile, Lord Harmanuile, Lord Eancourt, Lord Gaillard Bos, and diuers other Lords and men expert in warre. These Lords caused their people to breake downe the causeway betwixt Monstreuillers and Hereflete, to impaire and hinder the Englishmens passage. Neuertheless the Englishmen at their comming, by the good conduct of their King, were not so sore oppressed, by breaking of the causeway, but that they came so nigh as to lay their siege before the towne. When the King and all his host was come before the towne, all his tents and pauilions were set vp in the plaine field, wherewith that part of the towne was intirely inclosed: he also caused his great hall to be set vpon an hill, at the backe of his host, to serue as a Church, there to honor and serue God. This done the King commanding the Duke of Clarence to assége the towne, he endeuored to conuey his people ouer the riuer, in the passage whereof, he had a great skirmish with the inhabitants of the towne, but at the last his aduersaries being put to flight, recoyled within the wals. The Duke conueyed ouer the riuer all his ward and companie, and because the riuer diuided the kings camp from the Dukes, they ordained a readie and sure passage ouer the same riuer betwixt both the camps, to the kéeping whereof, certaine Gentlemen were appointed, so that their enemies might not endomage them neither by water nor land.

In this meane time befell a great misaduenture to the Frenchmen that were besieged, for the gun-powder and shot that was sent vnto them by the French King, was incountred vpon the sea by the Englishmen, and taken, to their great displeasure and domage. Enguerant.

The King gaue the charge of the fielde to his brother Humfrey Duke of Gloucester. On the same side the riuer that the King lay, was the Duke of Yorke, high Constable of England lodged with his band. When euery man was placed, the towne was so streightly assége, that all entries and issues of the towne were stopped, so that they of the towne were in dispaire to haue any succour from the Realme of Fraunce. Many engins were raised by the English, which in short time should haue bén the destruction of the wals, if they of the towne had not the sooner stopped the riuer of the same towne within, whereby the water gathered and raised without the towne betwixt the King and the D. of Clarence, to the semblance of a little Titus Liuius

Enguerant. sea, which caused the Englishmen to withdraw their guns, and other engins, whereby at that time the wals were saued. Then the King caused to be made vnder the water three great mines vnto the wals of the towne, which in like manner had bene the cause of their ruine, if the inhabitants had not countermined them, and letted their purpose. The inhabitants of the Titus Liuius. towne perceiuing themselues thus streightly assieged, as well by land as by sea, conueyed all their ships within their hauen, and bounde them together with chaines, and in the two towers that were made for the defence of the hauen, they put certaine garrisons, and armed men, who oftentimes attempted to inuade the Kings nauie, but at all times they were by his ships beaten, and constrained to recule still within their hauen: at the last, the captaines and inhabitants considering that by such skirmishes (as well vpon the land as vpon the sea) they gained nothing, toke this appointment with the King, that if they were not relieued by the Frenchmen within certaine dayes limited, they should then deliuer into his hands the towne, with thirtie persons of the greatest and most noble within the towne, such as the King would desire, to bee ordered at the Kings pleasure; and all the residue, as well men of warre, as the inhabitants of the same towne, without armour, and leauing behinde them their goods, should freely goe where they would, for the suretie of which appointment to be kept, they deliuered vnto the King twelue of their greatest personages for pledges. The captaines and inhabitants of the towne seeing their day of appointment to approch, and themselues vtterly desperate of any succours of their people, ordained to performe their couenant at their day prefixed, which was the xvii. of Kareflete surrendred to King Henry. September, on which day came Sir Lionell Braquemount, gouernour of the towne, vnto the King, and kneeling before him, said: Most victorious Prince, beholde heere the keyes of this towne, which after our promise I yelde vnto you, with the towne, my selfe, and my companie. Then were brought to the King the Lord Coteuile, the Lord Gangcourt, and other, to the number of thirtie, and all the residue, as well souldiers, as inhabitants, were suffered vnarmed to depart. When the gates of the towne were opened, and that the King approched vnto them, in purpose to enter the towne, he descended from his horse without the gate, and from thence, without hosen or shoes in great deuotion, he went immediatly to the Church of Saint Martin, Metropolitane of that towne, and there hee made his prayers, and praised God his creator, for his good fortune: then hee commaunded to bee brought before him, all those Lords and gentlemen that were yelded to him for prisoners, whose names he caused to be put in writing, and vpon their othes to yelde themselues prisoners at Calice vpon Saint Martins day next following, and so they were deliuered out of the towne of Harflew, at the which day according to their appointment, they came to Calice, where they were receiued as prisoners, and after ransomed at great finances. After the deliuery of this towne, the foresaid two towers that defended the hauen, and resisted the Kings power ten dayes space, at the end whereof, because they were in despaire of succour, yelded them to the King, and all the souldiers

and

and inhabitants both of the Towne and Towers were suffered to go freely vnarmed, whither they would. The king constitute Captaine of the Towne sir Thomas Beawford Earle of Dorset his vncle, to whom he also committed two thousand souldiers, chosen men of his host. Then considering that winter drew on, as also the losse of their men, by reason of the flix then raigning amongst them, by which infirmitie died Michaell at Poole, Earle of Suffolke, the Bishop of Norwich, the Lord Beawmont, and others, and of the commons, to the number of two thousand and aboue. King Henry created the sonne of Michaell at Poole, Earle of Suffolke, who lived not long after.

After king Henry had remained at Harefleet 15. dales, after the deliuery of the Towne, and of the Towers, he departed from thence towards Calice, whereof, when his enemies were aduertised, and also by what way he intended to passe, all the people of the countrey, Cities, and Townes were maruellously oppressed with feare, wherefore they hasted them to defensible places, and other that were apt to warre, toke them to their horses, and assembled them together in great number, with no small company of footemen, and in all that they might they oppressed the Englishmen. Titus Liuius

The kings host kept an easie pace, without making any haste, and when they approched the Towne of Ewe, their enemies assailed them in the fields with great force and noise, where on both parties it was foughten sore and vigorously: but the Frenchmen reculed to the Towne, where they were in good surety. From thence the king departed, and came to a passage of the riuer of Some, which the Frenchmen call Blankeheetoke, or Blanchtache. This passage, at the comming vnto it was fired with sharpe stakes by their enemies, so that they coulde not passe there, but were constrayned to goe further, seeking their passage, vntill they came directly to haue the Citie of Amiens and the Castell of Gorby on their left side, where they of the said Citie beganne with them a newe fight: but they were sone forced by the English to returne to their Citie againe. The 19. of October the king passed the riuer of Some, at the passage of Vienna, and Bethew-court, and went then to lodge him at Mouche-legach, from whence, he aduanced him towards the riuer of Miramont. In the meane time, the French King and the Duke of Guyen his sonne, then Dolphin, purposing to resist the Englishmen, came to Roane, from whence, they sent three heraults to the King of England, to giue vnderstanding that hee should not escape without battaile: vnto whom the said King answered, All things be done at the pleasure of God, I will keepe the right way towardes Calcis: if our aduersaries doe attempt to disturbe vs in our iourney, we thinke they shall not doe it without their owne great daunger and perill. From thence, King Henry remoued to a village called Forceuile, aduancing his host towardes the riuer of Miramont, and the next day they passed by the Cheue, and the King lodged that night at Bonyers-leftaillon. The next day the King remoued vnto Bangy. The next day late in the night the King came to a village named Agencourt, Enguerant saith Maisencelles, where they lodged not distant from the French host not aboue two hundred and fiftie paces. Titus Liuius. Enguerant. Titus Liuius. Enguerant. Titus Liuius.

The

Enguerant: The Frenchmen fired their banners and ſtanderts with the banner royall, whereof the Conſtable had the Conduct, in the field by them deuiſed and

The battell of Agincourt. Elmham. choſen, which was in the county of Saint Paule, in the ground of Agencourt, by which the day following, the Engliſhmen ſhould paſſe to goe to Calets.

The xv. of October, after prayers and ſupplications of the king, his prieſts and people done with great deuotion, the king of England in the morning very early ſet forth his hoſt in array: He commaunded that his horſes and other carriages ſhould be left in the village where he had lodged. The order of his field was thus: The middle battell whereof the king was conductor, was ſet in the midſt of the field, directly againſt the middle battell of his aduerſaries. On the right ſide was the firſt battell, and therewith the right wing: and on the left ſide the laſt battell, and the left wing. And theſe battels ioyning nigh together, by the prouidence of God, proued vnto this king a defenſible place for his hoſt, for the village wherein he was lodged before, defended his hoſt from all inuaſions on the backe, and the fielde wherein hee was, was defended on both ſides with two ſmall riuers.

This noble king was armed with ſure and right beautifull armour: on his head a bright helmet, whereupon was ſet a Crowne of golde, repleate with pearle and precious ſtones, marueilous rich: In his ſhield he bare the armes both of England & Fraunce. And thus armed, hee was mounted vpon a goodly great horſe, and after him were ledde certaine noble horſes, with their bridles and trappers of Goldſmithes worke, and vpon them alſo were beaten the armes of England and of Fraunce. Thus this victorious king prepared to battaile, encouraged his people to the field that approched at hande.

The night before this cruell battell, by the aduiſe and counſell (as it is ſaid) of the Duke of Yorke, the king had giuen commaundement through his hoſt, that euery man ſhould puruey him a ſtake ſharpe at both endes, which the Engliſhmen fired in the ground before them in the field, to defend them from the oppreſſion of horſemen. The Frenchmen had ſuch confidence in the great multitude of their people, and in their great horſes, that many of their great Princes and Lords leauing behinde them their ſouldiers, ſtanderts and other enſignes, came towards the Engliſhmen in right great haſte, as if they had beene aſſured of victory.

The king of England forthwith aduaunced his banners and ſtanderts towards the French hoſt, and he in perſon with his battayle in the ſame order wherein he ſtoode, followed, exhorting and encouraging euery man to battell, notwithſtanding he went to inuade his enemies, yet kept his accuſtomed order, that is, that the firſt battell went before, the ſecond battell followed, and the third came immediately after, he commaunded his prieſts to abide in prayers, and diuine ſupplications, and his heraults in their coates of armes to attend to their offices. Then euery man fell proſtrate to the round, and committing themſelues to God, euery of them toke in his mouth a little peece of earth, in remembrance that they were mortall, and made

of

of earth, as also in remembrance of the holy communion. Thus all their carriages and baggages left behinde, onely charged with their harneis, weapons, and stakes, they marched toward their enemies, with great brute and noyse. They sounded their trumpets, and stroke vp their drummes, which greatly incouraged the hearts of euery man. Their enemies seeing them approch, aduanced themselues also, and met them in the fielde, betwixt whom was begunne a marueilous fierce and cruell battell. The battell of the Englishmen was as long as the field wherein they fought, which was greatly to their aduantage, for by that their enemies were letted to come vpon them at the sides and backe of the hoste. The Frenchmen had ordayned their battels with two sharpe fronts, like vnto two hornes, which alwayes backeward was broader and broader: these sharpe battels set vpon the English middleward, intending to haue runne through the whole fielde, but the Frenchmen were slaine and wounded by the English Archers, and by the helpe of the stakes, which the Englishmen had fixed before them in the ground, whereby the horsemen were constrained to returne, or else to runne vpon the stakes, where many of them were ouerthrowne and wounded, and many both horses and men slaine. The battell and fight increased marueilously, by the space of three houres, in all which time no man was taken prisoner, but an innumerable number were slaine, vpon whose dead bodies they that followed were throwne and slaine.

Thus after a long and cruell battell, by the demerits of their great pride, there approched no man of the French to battell, but to death, of whom after that an innumerable company were slaine, and that the victory surely remayned to the Englishmen, they spared to slay, and take prisoners of the French, both Princes and Gentlemen in great number. In this mortall battell, the Noble king of England neuer failed his men, for no danger of death, but fought with his enemies with an ardent heart, as a famished Lion for his pray, receiuing on his helmet and on the residue of his armour, many and great strokes.

In this field, as the puissant Prince Humfrey Duke of Glocester the kings brother, fought with great courage and force, he was sore wounded in the hammes with a sworde, and ouerthrowne, insomuch, as hee lay as halfe dead in the field, his head toward the Englishmen, and his feete towards his enemies: vpon whom the king hauing a brotherly compassion, bestrode him, and with most strong battell and labour, not without his owne great perill, like a brother he defended, and succoured his brother from the enemies, and made the Duke to be borne out of the field amongst his own men.

At the last, the victory obtayned, and the great hoste of the Frenchmen ouercome, slaine, wounded, taken and vanquished, forthwith an other hoste of Frenchmen, no lesse than the first, supposing the Englishmen to be wearied by their long trauell and fight, disposed them to beginne againe the battell anew. When the Englishmen (which had many moe

prisoners

prisoners than they were of themselues in number) saw this newe field assembled to giue them battell againe, fearing in this new field, lest they should fight both against their prisoners, and their other enemies, they put to death many of their said prisoners, both noble & rich men, among whom the Duke of Brabant, who at that field was taken prisoner, was one.

Titus Liuius

The prudent king of England seeing the resemble of his aduersaries sent his heraults vnto them, commaunding them, either forthwith to come to battell, or else immediately to depart the field, and if they delayde to depart, or to come to battell, both those of their conpany alreadie taken prisoners, and also all they that should thereafter be taken, without mercie or redemption should be put to death: which message when the Frenchmen heard, fearing the strength of the Englishmen, and also the death, both of themselues, and also of their friendes before taken prisoners, with great beauinesse, and with shame, they forthwith departed. Then the king of England being assured of the victorie, gaue the greatest laud and praise to God that might be.

Frenchmen slaine.

In this battell were slaine on the French party, the Noble Dukes of Alanson, of Berrey, and Bauere, and the Lord Hely, the Lord Labret chiefe Constable of France, the Archbishop of Saunce, Eight Earles, an hundred and one Barons, fiftéene hundred knights, and aboue tenne thousand of all estates, whereof scarcely fiftéene hundred were souldiers or labourers, the rest were of coate armour (saith Enguerant:) but Thomas Elmham saith, Archbishops, one, Dukes, three, Earles, fiue, Barons, and such like, foure score and twelue, knights, fiftéene hundred, of Esquires and Gentlemen, seuen thousand, whereof hée nameth the Archbishoppe of Saunce, the Dukes of Brabant, Alanson, and of Bauere, the Earles of Niuers, Dampmartin, Marlenses, Grantper, Saunlis, and of Dankemonteuse, the Lord of Bret, Constable of Fraunce.

T. Elmham.

Frenchmen taken prisoners.

In this battell were taken prisoners of the Frenchmen, the Dukes of Orleance, and of Burbon, Arthur brother to the Duke of Britaine, the Earles of Vandosme, of Ewe, and Richmount, and sir Bomcicault Marshall of Fraunce, and many other to the number of 1500. knightes and Esquires: And of the English partie were slayne Edward Duke of Yorke, buried at Fodringhey, Michaell de la Poole Earle of Suffolke, buried at new Elme, and to the number of an hundred persons in the vantgard, and of all estates in the English partie were not found dead aboue fiue hundred in the fielde. When night approached, the king of England returned with his host into the village, wherein they had harboured the night before, where hée found his horses, and other baggages and carriages that he left behinde him there before the field, to be stolen and caried away by the Frenchmen: where amongst many other Jewels of great price, was stolen away a sword of great value, adorned with gold and precious stones, which was after giuen to Philip Earle of Charlois, sonne and heire to Iohn Duke of Britaine.

King Henry hauing gathered his army together, gaue thanks to Almightie

ſe God for his ſo happy a victory, cauſing his Prieſts and Chaplaines to ſing the Pſalme, *In Exitu Iſrael de Ægypto*, and commanding euery man to kneele downe on the ground at this verſe, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis, ſednomini tuo da gloriam*: which being done, he cauſed *Te Deum* with certaine Anthems to be ſong, giuing laud and praiſe to God, not boaſting of his owne force or any humane power. This night when the King ſate at his refection in the foreſaid village, hée was ſerued at his boorde, of thoſe great Lords and Princes that were taken in the field. That night the King appointed good and ſure watches throughout his hoſt, for feare of ſodaine inuaſions, but the Frenchmen were vtterly diuided and gone without making or intending any new buſineſſe, whereby the Engliſhmen were ſuffered in peace to take their reſt.

On the next day the King with his people entred his iourney toward Calice: and as they paſſed through the fields where they had fought the day before, they found all the dead bodies diſpoyled, as well of their harneſſe, as of their array, by the inhabitantes of the countrey, notwithſtanding the bodies that might be knowen for Engliſhmen of any reputation, the king cauſed to be enterred accordíng to their eſtates, and ſo continuing his iourney the King came to the Caſtell of Gwines, and from thence he went to his Towne of Calice, with all his hoſt and his priſoners, where he was receiued of his liege men, with great ioy and due honour. After the kings hoſt was ſomewhat refreſhed with meat, drinke and ſléepe, the king conferred with his wiſe counſellers, if it were good now to returne into Fraunce, and to purſue his enterpriſe begun, or elſe to return with his hoſt into England, there to refreſh his people, among whom it was conſidered that the number of his people was right ſmall, and many of them vered with the flix, many ſore grieued of their wounds which they had receiued at the field. Moreouer, that their long ſtaying at Calais ſhould cauſe ſcarcity of victualles there, whereas otherwiſe in their owne countrey, the people ſhould at more eaſe refreſh themſelues, and alſo be better cured of their wounds: finally, conſidering the time had not bæn hitherto vnfortunate, but that with honour they might returne with great gaine, which they had conquered, they doubted not, but by the ayde of God the King ſhould right well obtaine his deſire in time to come, for which cauſes they all condeſcended vpon their returne into England.

Then with all diligence the Nauy was prepared, and by the kings commaundement, the Lords and great eſtates of the priſoners of France vnto a great number, were brought into that ſhip, wherein the King was determined to paſſe the Sea. At this their paſſage the Sea was marueilouſly boyſterous and rough, inſomuch as two of the Engliſh ſhippes were periſhed in the flouds, by reaſon whereof the French priſoners were ſo incombred and vered, that the day of their paſſage ſæmed to thē no leſſe bitter & terrible, than that day wherein they were taken at Agencourt, nor they could not maruell enough, how the king ſhould haue ſo great ſtrengthes, ſo eaſily to reſiſt and indure the rage and boyſterouſneſſe of the Sea, without accombrance and diſ-

eaſe

ease of his stomacke. When the King had passed the Sea, and was come to
King Henry arriued at Douer. arriue and to take land at Douer, innumerable people of Religion, Priestes, and Noblemen, and of the commons came running to mete the King in euery way: and when he was arriued on the xviii. day of Nouember, he abode at Douer by certaine daies, to refresh and rest his Lords, and his prisoners, after his troublesome passage, and from thence he toke his iourney towards the Citie of London, where the Maior of London, with the Aldermen and craftes to the number of foure hundred riding in red, with hodes red and white, met with the King on the Black heath comming from Eltham, and so brought him through London to Westminster, with all his prisoners of Fraunce.

The gates and stretes of the Citie were garnished and apparelled with precious clothes of Arras, containing the victories, triumphes and princely Actes of the Kings of England his progenitors, which was done to the ende that the King might vnderstand, what remembrance his people would to their posterity of these his great victories and triumphes. The Conduits through the Citie ranne none other but good swete wines, and that abundantly. There were also made in the stretes many Towers and stages, adorned richly, and vpon the height of them sate small children, apparelled in semblance of Angels, with swete tuned voyces singing prayses and laudes vnto God: for the victorious King would not suffer any ditties to be made and song of his victory, for that he would wholy haue the prayse giuen to God: neyther would he suffer to be carried before him, nor shewed vnto the people his helmet, whereupon his Crowne of golde was broke, and deposed in the fieldes by the violence of the enemie, and great strokes that he had receiued, nor his other armour that in that cruell battaile was so sore broken, but as the faithfull constant champion of God, he eschewed all occasions of vaine glory, and refused the vaine praises of the people. On the next morrow, the Maior, Aldermen and 200. of the commoners presented the king with a 1000. l'. in two basons of gold, worth 500. pounde.

The first day of December, by the kings commaundement, a great number of the bishops and Abbots of the realme, were assembled at London, there to celebrate and kepe the exequies for Edward late Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Suffolke, and of other both English and French, which died in partes beyond the sea: vnto these solemnities came from Harflew, he Captaine of the same Towne, the Kings vncle Earle of Dorset, who a little before had made a roade into the borders of the countrey next adioyning, and had put them to flight, and taken prisoners 800.

This yere the King kept his Christmasse at Lambeth.

1416. In the feast of the Purification, seuen dolphins of the sea came vp the riuer of Thamis, and plaid there whiles foure of them were kilde.

Halfepence of Ianua forbidden. In a Parliament begun the 15. of March at Westminster, the halfepence of Ianua (commonly called Galey halfepence) were forbid to be vsed as lawfull payment among the English people.

The

The first of May, Sigismonde the Emperour landed at Douer, and the seuenth of May, the Maior, Aldermen, and craftes of London receiued him at Blacke-heath, and the King with his Lords met him at S. Thomas Waterings, and so brought him through London to Westminster. The Emperor returned out of England the xvi. of August, after he had laboured, but could make no peace betweene England and France. *An. reg. 4.*

Iohn Benet Woolman, who had in London scattered scedules full of sedition, was drawne, hanged, and beheaded on Michaelmas day. The viii. day of October, was a parchment maker of Trillmell streete, drawne, hanged, and headed, for that he had harboured sir Iohn Old-castell. Tho. Walsing. Woolman beheaded.

King Henry of England, immediately after his returne from Caleis, sent his legats to Constance, where was kept ỹ generall councel, as ye haue heard, which with all other legats, the Emperour being there present, laboured for the vnity and peace of their mother the Church, and to reform the schisme that had long continued of the Popes, which councell toke effect in this manner. They first deposed all the Popes, by whom the schisme was continued, & they with the Cardinals elected into the papacy, the Cardinal of Columpne, borne in Rome, and was named Martin the fift, whose armes were a piller of siluer crowned with golde, in a field gules. At this counsell, by the assent of all nations there present, it was authorised, and ordained that England should obtaine the name of a nation, and should be said one of the fiue nations, that owe their deuotion to the Church of Rome, which thing vntill that time, men of other nations, for enuy had delayed and letted. The kingdome of England one of the fiue nations. T. Elmham

In the Parliament at London, Thomas Bewfort Earle of Dorset was made Duke of Exceter, and had 1000. l. the yere giuen him.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Kenelworth, at which time there was treason wrought gainst him, by a certaine Esquire of the complices of sir Iohn Old-castell. 1417.

The morow after Christmas day, certaine seditious persons spread abroad poysoned bils, raysing against all estates of the Church, almost in euery great house, and hospital of the Townes of Saint Albons, Northampton, Reading, &c. but no man would be knowne to be the author of them: also one by his counterfeit name, called frier Tucke, with many other malefactors, committed many robberies in the countries of Surrey, and Sussex, whereupon the king sent out his writs for their apprehension. Record frier Tucke.

On Easter day in the after-noone, at a Sermon in Saint Dunstons in the East of London, a great fray happened in the Church, where-through many people were sore wounded, and one Thomas Petwarden Fishmonger, slayne out of hande, wherefore the Church was suspended, and the beginners of the fray (which was the Lord Strange, and sir Iohn Tussell Knight, through the quarrell of their two wiues) were brought to the Counter in the Poultrie: the Archbishoppe of Canterbury caused them to be excommunicate, as well at Paules Crosse, as in all other parish Churches of the Citie. The xvi. of April, the said Archbishop sate at S. Magnus, to enquire of the authors of that disorder, where he found the fault to be in *An. reg. 5.* A fray in S. Dunstons Church. Records of Cant.

the

The Lord Strange and his wife doe penance.

the Lord Strange and his wife, who vpon the firſt of May following, in Pauls Church before the Archbiſhop, the Maior of London, and other, ſubmitted themſelues to penance, which was inioyned them, that immediatly all their ſeruaunts ſhould in their ſhirts go before the Parſon of Saint Dunſtons, from Paules, to Saint Dunſtons Church, and the Lord bare headed, with his Ladie bare foted, Reignold Kenwood Archdeacon of London following them, and at the hallowing of the Church, the Ladie ſhould fill all the veſſels with water, and alſo offer an ornament of tenne pound, and the Lord Strange ſhould offer a Pire of fiue pound.

Earle Dowglas of Scotland came into England, and promiſed amitie to the king, the which he aſſured by oath and writing ſealed, yet notwithſtanding he after turned to the French, at the battaile of Vernol in Perch fought by the Duke of Bedford as ſhall be ſhewed.

Titus Liuius.

King Henry prepared his Nauie, ordinance, and victuall for his people, and generally all other things behouefull for the warres, he aſſembled through England ſuch men as wel Dukes, Earles, Lords, Knights and Gentlemen, and commons as he knew were good both for warre and peace: which being done, vpon Saint Markes day the Euangeliſt he toke his iourney towardes Hampton, in purpoſe, when the winde and ſea were fauourable, to goe into France: he rode through London, till he came at Paules, where he alighted and made his offering, and in like maner he offred at Saint Georges in Southwarke, and in all his way he gaue the farewell to euery man, praying them all to pray to God for him.

In this meane time the Frenchmen, made couenant with the Citizens of Geane (a Citie in Italy) whereby the Italians were bound, at a certaine price for euery Caricke limited for the French mens money, to prepare and furniſh with armed men, as many of their greateſt Carickes as the French ſhould deſire, and ſo prepared they ſhould ſend them to the ayde of the French men, againſt the Engliſhmen, many of theſe Carickes ſo prepared, were of marueilous greatnes, yea greater then euer were ſéene in thoſe parts before that time, they ſayled into the mouth of the Séene, where they ſtrongly aſſéged Hereflete by water, whereof when the king of England was aduertiſed, he delibered to go vnto them in his owne perſon to remoue them from this ſiege, but from that purpoſe hée was letted, by the aduiſe of his counſaile, wherefore he gaue that iourney to the right puiſſant Iohn, Earle of Huntington, who entred the Nauie, departed from the land, and had ſuch fauourable winde, that in ſhort time he was brought vnto the enemies, who aſſailed eche other by great vigor and ſtrength. Their ſhips were grapled and fought together, the more part of a ſommers day, but at the length the Italians oppreſſed by the ſtrength of the Engliſhmen, were vtterly diſcomfited and ouercome, their greateſt Caricks, and alſo the greater part of their men were taken, the reſidue of the Genowaies ſéing their fellowes ſlaine or taken, were ſtricken with feare, & their chaines or cables broken, or hewed aſunder, they departed their Caricks from the Engliſh ſhips, and eſcaped by helpe of the winde and ſtreame. This victory obtayned, the Noble Earle returned to

Hampton

Hampton, whereof when the king was aduertised, he gaue laud and praising for this victory vnto God: and for the same he inhaunsed the Earle his nephew, with honour, and also with rewardes, he had fought with nine caricks and taken foure of them, with their patrons, and the Admiral of them all, that was called the Bastard of Burbon, with all the treasure that they all should haue béene waged with for a quarter of a yére.

The xvbiii. day of July the puissant king Henry (his Nauie of 1500. ships being prepared) assembled his armie to passe the seas, of his own company and purueiance 16400. armed men, and besides that number came to him to Douer, Lords and Gentlemen with their retinues, and the day and place for the same prefixed: first the Duke of Clarence with 240. speares, and 720. archers in his retinue: and the Duke of Glocester with 100. speares, and 300. archers, and fiue Earles with 470. speares, and 1410. archers, to wit, the Earle of March 100. speares and 300. archers, the Earle of Warwicke 100. speares 300. archers, the Earle of Huntington 40. speares, and 120. archers. the Earle of Suffolke 30. speares, and 90. archers, and the Earle of Salisbury 100. speares, and 300. archers, and after these Earles followed 13. estates of the Realme with 506 speares, and 1590. archers, that is to say, the Lord Burgauenny, the Lord Matrauers the Lord Fitz Hughe, the Lord Clifford, the Lord Grey, the Lord Willoughby, the Lord Talbot, the Lord E. Courtney, the L. Bourcher, the Lord Rosse, the Lord Louel, the L. Ferrers of Chartley, the L. Harrington.

After came 87. knights, and their retinue, 940. speares, and 2852. archers. Of carpenters and other artificers the king had with him in wages to the number of 1000. and so the kings whole hoste besides labourers & artificers, amounted to the number of 25527. fighting men, of whom euery fourth man was a horseman. Those things thus ordered, and the Nauy for their conueyance ready apparelled, the K. entred his shippe, which was royally and sumptuously adorned: the saple thereof was of purple silke, right beautifully embrodered, both with the armes of England & of Fraunce, and this ship they called the kings chamber. He had also another the second a caricke of like apparell, which by the kings commaundement they called the kings hall, and these two he ordered to be the principall of all the Nauy. Before he departed the Realme, he constituted Iohn Duke of Bedford his brother, to be protector of his Realme of England in his absence.

On the first day of August the whole fléete arriued in Normandie, not farre from the Castell of Tonque, where the king dubbed 48. knights, such as were worthie of that order. Now, when all the ships were discharged of their carriages, the king sent them againe into England, except such ships as were deputed for the carriage of guns and other engins and habiliments of warre.

This being done, the king sent men of armes on horsebacke to espie the situation and strength of the Castell of Humflew, and other nigh vnto those parts, which Gentlemen, with many prisoners returned, and great preyes of beastes. Their enemies stricken with feare, euery man conueyed their goods and beasts into the Cities, Townes and Castels, not knowing

which the king would first besiege: they strengthened their Townes and walles with stones, guns and other things necessary for their defence. The king toke his enterprise to assege the Towne of Tonque, whose Castel was marueilously defensible, the assege whereof was giuen to the Duke of Glocester, chiefetaine of the kings auantguard, who constrained the Frenchmen so sore, what with assaults, with guns and other engines, that within short time, to wit, the fourth day of the siege, and the ninth day of August, they promised to yeeld the Castell to the Duke, if the same were not shortly relieued by the French: but when they heard no word of succour, they yeelded the Castell to the king, and he made sir Iohn Kikeley Captaine there.

Castell of Tonque taken by the English.

Also the Earle of Salisbury conductor of the kings second battell whiles the Duke of Glocester assieged the Castell of Tonque, wanne the Castell of Aumbeliers, and put out the Frenchmen thereof, which Castel so taken, with all that belonged thereunto, the king gaue to the same Earle. And thus this Noble Earle was the first that had any land giuen vnto him of the kings liberalitie in this conquest.

Castell of Aumbeliers yeelded to the English.

The Earle Marshall was sent to the Castell of Louers, which inshort time he subdued, and after it was giuen to him by the king.

The eighteenth day of August, the king placed himselfe with his army before the Citie of Cane, on the south side neere vnto the Monastery of Saint Stephen, and the Duke of Clarence the kings brother was sent before with one thousand horsemen to keepe the suburbes of the Towne, that the townsmen should not burne them, the Duke thus lodged on the north side, by the Monastery of Nuns of the holy Trinitie: the Earle Marshall lay on the left hand of the king, and the Lord Maltrauers hard by him, and by him were placed the Lords Talbot and Vmfreuile: and next to them the Lords Neuill and Willoughby. On the right hand of the king lay the Earle of Warwike & the Lord Iohn Grey, and by them the Earles of Huntington & of Salisbury, and the Lord Gren-Cornewall.

King Henry besieged Cane

The kings army thus placed and set in order: the Abbey of Saint Stephen being munited with Frenchmen, when they sawe themselues too weake to resist the kings force, they toke and carried away both victualles and iewelles of the house, and brought them into the Towne next adioyning, and deuised how they mought set the Abbey on fire: but a certaine Monke of the place boldly put himselfe in ieopardy in the dead season of the night, to crepe on handes and feete, till hee came to the Duke of Clarence, whom he found lying in compleate harneste, in a garden vpon the grasse, with his head vpon a stone, whom hee besought to preuent the ruine of his place, which else should be destroyed. For, said hee, it doth specially pertayne to you to preserue our Monastery, which are descended of the king which founded our place, builded it, and indued it with possessions, wherefore take mine aduise and I will bring you into the place, and the Duke following the Monkes counsell, toke scaling ladders, and came to the side of the Abbey, which the Monke knewe was not munited. The Duke hauing by this meanes gotten the place, brought the king into it.

Not

Not farre distant from this place was an other Monastery of women, right strong and defensible, which also that worthy Duke had receiued vnder his tuition.

The fourth day of September, at the breake of the day, the king caused all his trumpets to be sounded, and forthwith the ladders were raysed to the walles of the Towne, they fell to scaling them with great diligence, but many of them were cast backewards into the ditch, and their ladders with them: the French cast great stones vpon the Englishmen, they powred on their heades seething water, molten lead, boiling pitch, and oyle, all which would not make the Englishmen forsake the assault, amongst whom Edmond Springes lately made knight, in his armour went vpon the walles of Cane, and fought very sore, both giuing and receiuing many woundes, and yet at length was ouercome and died. Notwithstanding the kings men ceased not to assault and set vpon the enemies so fiercely, on that one side, that they that were on the other side the Towne to keepe and to defend the same, were forced to leaue their standing, and to come to that side that the king assaulted. And thus when that side of the Towne was voyde of defence, the Duke of Clarence, in the place which was thought most safe, scaled the wals and came vpon the backs of the Frenchmen, which so sodainly astonied them, that they knew not whether it were better to go on forward against the king, or to turne backe to withstand the Duke.

Thus great destruction and slaughter was made of the Frenchmen, for the king meeting them in their foreward, and the Duke of Clarence comming on the rereward, tooke all hope of safegard from them, and thus the king got the Towne, and entred the same by the gates, that the Duke had opened for him. After which entry of the king, he went to with great deuotion the principall Church of the Towne being of Saint Peter, there to giue laudings and praises to the Almighty God, for the obtayning of this so great a victory. All they that intended to prayes were maruellously inriched, for the inhabitants of that Towne were men of great substance: but there was no man so hardy that durst presume to robbe any Church, for feare of the kings iustice, which was extreme in that case, no women in the Towne were rauished by the Englishmen, but shortly after the king commaunded all women and children to be auoyded out of the towne, and so the towne was inhabited of new possessors. The king made sir Gilbert Vmfreuile Earle of Kyme, captain there, and sir Gilbert Talbot, and sir Iohn Popham bayliffes. Neuerthelesse the Castel of Cane was not yet gotten, they held it three weekes after the taking of the towne. After the taking of this town of Cane, the siege yet enduring before the Castel, the puissant Prince the Duke of Glocester, with his battell before Bayeux, they of the Towne and Castell yeelded vnto him.

Cane in Normandy wonne by king Henry.

The xx. day of September the Castell of Cane was deliuered vp to King Henry: and in short time the Englishmen had taken the Citie of Liceux, and the Castel of Mewby: and not long after, all the fortifications, were it town, Castell or Citie within a great circuite about them, were taken and reduced to the kings obeysance.

Tho. Walsing. Whilest these things were in doing in Normandie, the fauourers of sir Iohn Old-castel beganne to raged in England, who with great proffers and promise of money, stirred by the Scots to inuade the Realme in the kings absence, affirming that the same would be easily wonne, and it was said that sir Iohn Old-castell talked with William Dowglas the Scot at Pontfract, promising him a great summe of money, to perswade the people to come with him, and to bring with them, him, who was falsely called king Richard, and to set him out as king. Also indentures, and other writings were found, made betwixt sir Iohn Old-castell & the Duke of Albany, in the which the Scots were inuited to besiege Roxborough and Berwike: whereupon the Duke of Albany besieged Berwike by water and land on ech side: and the Earle Dowglas did also besiege Roxborough, tarrying there xv. daies, vndermining to ouerthrew the walles, but it happed at the same time Thomas Beawford Duke of Exceter, came to Bridlington vpon deuotion to that place, who straightwaies, so soone as he heard tidings thereof, went into those parts, gathering by the way as he went men of armes and archers. On the other side Iohn Duke of Bedford protector of the Realme, and other Nobles, to wit Ralph Earle of Westmerland, and Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, with 60000. warriers, the Archbishop of Yorke Henry Bewet, which for great age might not indure to ride vpon an horse, caused himselfe to be brought to the English hoste in his chaire, there to comfort & incourage the hearts of the people, that they should more ardently defend their countrey, his Cleargy being there with him, & other, remoued those sieges: for the Scots in the night leauing their tents, ladders & other engins, with shame returned into Scotland.

T. Otterborne

The Scots besieg. Berwike and Roxborough.

When these thinges were in good suretie toward the North, the Duke of Exceter with a chosen company of men of warre, toke his ships, and sayled into Normandy, where he landed, & toke his iourney towards Roane to the king, in the which iourney, he wanne the Citie of Ebroicen.

Titus Liuius. King Henry hauing deputed in all his townes and forces, Captaines and gouerners, into whose hands all the Frenchmen that should returne into the kings obeisance, should giue their othes of true allegiance. The first of October he departed from Caen with his people, leauing behinde him a sufficient garrison, and toke his iourney to the Castell of Coursey, which on the third day after was yelded vnto him. The first of October he went to affiege Argentine, which Towne was very defensible and strong, with a Castell of great strength, but the inhabitants of this Towne answered the kings heraults, that if they were not succoured by the Frenchmen by a certaine day limited, they would deliuer both the Towne and Castel vnto the king vnder condition, to depart with their goods: and when the time limited was come, the Towne and Castell were deliuered. After this, daily resorted to the king much people of Normandy, to do fealty vnto him, and to liue vnder his Empyre. The Citie of Sees which was right well peopled, and wherein were two Abbeis maruellous strong and defensible, yelded vnto the king: likewise many other Townes in that prouince yelded them vnto the king, without assault or battell. These things thus done, the king toke his voyage toward

ward Alanson, to receiue into his dominion the Towne of Semile, in which iourney he sent a great part of his host to two strong Abbeis, whereof the one was called Bomolins, and the other Essey, which if they had made resistance, he commaunded to be taken by force, but they submitted themselues to the kings authority. The king came to Alanson on the 15. of October, where he first caused his brother Humfrey Duke of Glocester to pitch his tents before the Castell, and the rest of the Towne himselfe allieged. This Towne and Castell was likewise yelded to the king in manner as the rest. The English men after this toke the Towne of Bolosine, and the Towne and Castell of Freslwey: and shortly to recount, all the countrey by a great circuit, Cities, Townes and Castels were brought vnder the kings subiection. In this time, the Duke of Britaine accompanied with many great estates of his countrey came to king Henry, with whom he accorded a peace from the 17. day of October, vntill the last day of September, in the yere following. The Dolphine of France also desired to treat with the king of England for peace, to whose Embassadors the king appointed the Towne of Tonque, whereunto they might safely resort for the same treaty, but there was no good done.

The king besieged Phalbeys, which the French, to their power resisted right manfully, and made with them many battailes, and skirmishes: but in the ende the inhabitants, seeing the Englishmen more couetous of honour, then weary of paine, they couenanted with the king, that if by the second day of Januarie they were not deliuered from the siege, they should freely deliuer vnto the king their Towne. In this meane time was taken in England sir Iohn Olde-castle, in the territory of the Lord Powesse, not without danger and hurt of some that toke him: neither could he himselfe be taken before he was wounded. At the which time all the estates of the Realme were called to a Parliament at London, therein to prouide the king of a subsidie and aide of money, who toke great paines beyond the seas. These Lords & other when they heard tell that the publike enemy was taken, they agreed all, not to dissolue the Parliament vntill he were examined, and heard to answere in the same: wherefore the Lord of Powes was sent to fetch him vp with power, who brought him to London in a litter, wounded, and also a Clearke with him that was of counsell in all his secrets. Assone as the said sir Iohn Olde-castell was brought into the Parliament before the Duke of Bedford, regent and gouernour of the Realme, and the other estates, his inditement was read before him, of his forcible insurrection against the king in Saint Giles fielde, and other treasons by him committed, the question was asked how he would excuse himselfe, and shew why he should not be deemed to die: but he seeking other talke beganne to preach of the mercies of God, and that all mortal men that would be followers of God, ought to preferre mercy abque iudgement, and that vengeance pertayned onely to the Lord, and ought not to be practised by them that worship God, but to be left to God alone: with many other wordes to detract the time, vntill the chiefe Iustice admonished the Regent not to suffer him to spend the time so vainely, in molesting of the Nobles of the Realme: whereupon the Earle of Bedford re-

T. Walsingh. Sir Iohn Old-castle taken. Parliament at London.

gent commanded him to answere formally vnto the matter laid to his charge. The said sir Iohn being thus vrged, at the last after deliberation taken, he said, it is the least thing that I account of, to be iudged by you, as of mans iudgement: and againe, he began to talke, but nothing to the purpose, vntill the chiefe iustice commanded him againe to answere finally, and to informe them if he could, why he should not suffer death. To the which he stoutly answered, that he had no iudge amongst them, so long as his liege Lord King Richard was aliue, and in the Realme of Scotland, which answere when he had made, because there needed no further witnesse, he was commaunded to be drawne and hanged vpon a gallowes, and to bee burned hanging vpon the same, which iudgement was executed vpon him on the viii. day of December in Saint Giles field, where when many honourable persons were present, the last words that he spake, was to sir Thomas of Erpingham, adiuring him, that if he saw him rise from death to life againe, the third day, he would procure that his sect might be in peace and quiet: he was hanged by the necke in a chaine of iron, and after consumed with fire.

Answere of sir Iohn Oldcastell.

1418. King Henry kept his feast of the Natiuitie of Christ at Balaur in Normandie, where when the day limited was come, they of Phalois, with gates open deliuered the Towne to the king, and shortly after the Castell was yelded to him also.

The Duke of Clarence with his armed power conquered in this time the Townes and Castels of Harecourt, Fagnon, Tiwil, Cambrise, Courton, and diuers other, and also the strong Abbey of Bikilrom, all which places, the mightie Duke, with alleges, assaults, oppressions, and faire promises, especially obserued, in short time he subdued, to the kings Empyre.

An. reg. 6. The Duke of Glocester was sent to the Ile of Constantine, in the first entrie of which iourney, he obtayned the strong Castell of Caudey, from whence he went to the Towne and Castell of Vire, the inhabitants whereof yelded them with all their goods, to liue vnder the kings obedience: the Castell of Torney yelded to the Duke: the Town of Lew, the Castell of Saint Sauiour le Viconnt, Valeiges, Brecksourt, and Who: all these submitted them to the Duke for the king.

King Henry during this time, sent of his owne company the Earle of Huntington to suruey certaine defensible places, which in short time he manfully reduced vnder the kings obeisance. The king sent also the Earle of Warwike with another company of men of warre, to assiege the Castell of Donfront, which Castell vnto him was deliuered on the 22. day of June.

When the Duke of Glocester (after he had beene with the king) had repaised his iourney towards Sharbrough, the Captaine of the same hauing knowledge of his purpose, and other Noble men that were deputed by the Frenchmen, for the defence of that place, assembled out of all partes the strongest men of warre, in marueilous great number, for the resistance of the Englishmen, and for the defence of the Towne: the Duke approched nigh vnto the Towne, whereunto he laid his siege, but not in all places, for the inhabitantes had broken the bridge without the Towne, whereby the

Englishmen

Englishmen were depriued of their passage ouer.

Now to returne to the king, who had perseuered the whole Lent, and also the solemnitie of Easter in prayers, fastings, vigils, almesdéeds, and other workes of mercy, within the Towne of Bataur: from whence after Easter he went to Caen, where he solemnized the feast of Saint George, at the which feast he made 15. knights of the Bathe, fiue of them were, sir Lewes Robsart, sir Roger Saluine, sir Iohn Stewart, sir Iohn Shotebroke, and sir Iohn Mountgomery, whom he sent to besiege diuers places thereabouts. This being done, he delibered to go to Roane, the chiefe and principall Citie of Normandy, notwithstanding that his company was greatly minished by the absence of the Duke of Glocester, that then lay at Sharbrough, as is afore shewed, and of the Earle of Warwicke that then besieged the Castell of Donfront. Neuerthelesse the king departed from Caen the ninth of June, & toke his voyage with all his people towards the Citie of Roane: in which iourney, because it was not farre out of his way, he first laid siege to the Towne of Louars, and compelled them within to yeld to him vpon conditions, on the éuen of Saint Iohn Baptist. King Henry besieged Louars.

Then the king on the 22. of June, remoued his army towardes Pontlarche, where hée laid his siege on the one side of the Towne, by the middle whereof, the riuer of Séene hath his course, but could haue no passage ouer the riuer to lay siege on the other side, for the bridge which was without the Towne was defended with a strong Tower, and a garrison: but king Henry commaunded to make boates of wickers, and those to be closed in beastes skinnes, by which boates, on the fift of July, the Duke of Clarence with his company passed ouer secretly in great number, and then besieged the other side of the Towne: but because the riuer of Séene diuided his host, whereby if eyther part should haue néede of other, they could not come togither for the riuer, the king caused to be made so many small square boates of the wicker aforesaid, that being tyed together, and cast into the riuer, hée made of them a bridge. When the inhabitaunts and garrisons perceiued them thus enuironed in all parts, they agréed with the king, that if within 15. daies they were not delinered from this siege, they should deliuer to the king the Towne and Castell, and when the day was come, they performed promise: and this was the first bridge ouer the riuer of Séene that the king subdued to his power. Titus Liuius. King Henry besieged Pontlarche.

After the king had thus obtayned that bridge ouer the riuer of Séene, and that there was none other riuer or flood might let his iourney, with all the haste he might, hée entred his iourney towards Roane. The Citizens hearing the approch of their enemies, and fearing least they should be lodged in the suburbes, which were much larger than the Citie was within the walles, and was also much replenished with Monasteries, Churches, and Towers, burned the same, and made all éuen with the ground. To this City on the thirtith day of July this victorious king approched, against whom came the Citizens with their garrisons and men of warre, where the more part of all that day they continued in battell, and fought fore on both King Henry besieged Roan

partes, but the Frenchmen were forced to seeke their succour within the walles of the Citie, whom in their recoile the King pursued still before the Citie, where he ordered his siege in this manner. First, the King with a Noble company of young and hardie men lodged himselfe before the gate of Saint Hilarie. The Duke of Clarence with his power was lodged before the gate of Caulx. The Duke of Excester, after he was come to the King, was lodged with his people before the gate of the Castell, called Beauuice. Earle Marshall was lodged before the gate called Marketule. The Earle of Warwicke, after he was come from the Castel of Donfrount, was lodged vpon the hill, where the strong Monastery of Saint Katherin was. The Earles of Salisbury and Huntington, were lodged there vpon the other side of the riuer of Seene: vpon whom their enemies made many assaultes: and because the riuer of Seene diuided the English host in two parts, the King caused to be made a strong bridge of timber ouer the same riuer, that when neede should require, they might haue free passage on foote and horse: and because their enemies should not approch vnto it, with their ships or gallies, the king caused to be made a great chaine to be drawne ouer the riuer, betwixt the Citie and the bridge. At that time the king of Portugale cosin to the king of England, sent a Naule of ships well manned vnto the kings ayde, whom the king commaunded to lie betwixt the Citie and the Sea, to enclose the Citie from all succours by water. The Towne of Caudbecke fearing the danger of the time, couenanted with the king of England, that when the Citie of Roane were taken and deliuered into the kings obaysance, they in like manner would yelde them to him, without any assault, and vnder the same appointment accorded with the king, foure teene other defensible Townes and Castles that were nigh borderers vnto Roane. After many cruell battels and assaults, the Citizens fearing at length to be famished, daily put out of the Citie a great number of poore people and other, but the hunger encreasing, they were forced to eate their horses, dogs, cats, rats, and mise: and when such and other like things were consumed and eaten, then the plague of famine entred the Citie, so that the people for default of reliefe died, that the liuing might scarcely burie the dead, whereby that Noble Citie was brought into so much misery, that it is not lesse marueil than pitiful to heare.

In this meane time during this siege of Roane, the Duke of Excester besieged the Citie of Enerops: also about the twentie of August king Henry had three marueilous victories in Normandy. The first was that 100. Englishmen took three great Lords at a place called Kilbuike, & put to flight 380. persons besides. The second was, 400. of his enemies entred within the suburbes of the Towne of Ebroicens, and 11. Englishmen chased them away and toke foure of them, and slue 12. and toke 40. of their horses. The third was, the enemies would indeed haue taken the Towne which was called Leuers, but the Captaine of the same with an hundred of our men went out against 1000. of them, and ouercame them, and toke 180. Gentlemen of the enemies. About this time also Captaine de la Bouche

toke

toke the towne of Pontoys by Paris.

When the Citizens of Roane, perceiued themselues maruellously afflicted by famine, (as is before shewed) and also to be in dispaire of succor, from the Frenchmen, now after halfe a yéares siege and more, vpon certaine conditions, they deliuered to the King of England their Citie, Castle, tower, abbayes, Churches, houses, citizens, captaines, garrisons, and generallie all things that were within the Citie, whatsoeuer they were. The xix. day of Januarie, there had died within this Citie (as was said) for default of victuals during this siege mo than xxx. thousand people. This noble King the rather to relieue this oppressed Citie, ordained the same to be the chiefe chamber of all Normandie, and ordeined his exchequer, his treasurie, and his coynage to be kept in the same; he also edified a strong tower behinde the Castle. Whilest the King ordered his businesse at Roane, hee sent diuers Lords with strong puissance of people, to receiue the Castles of townes bordering vpon Roane, amongst whom the Duke of Clarence, in short time reduced to the King, the mightie Castle of Galiard, the towne of Vernon, the towne of Maunt, the Castle of Vandmount, and many other strong places and holds. 1419. *Ann. reg. 7.*

The Earle of Salisbury, with the garrison to him assigned toke the towne of Hounslow, the towne of Hounsleur de Villers, the towne of Ewe, the towne of Gurney, the new Castle, & generally all the places in that part.

This yére Quéene Ioane mother to the Duke of Britayne, and the Kings stepmother being defamed of some wicked practise, by witchcraft, or sorcerie, that she had deuised the Kings death, by the counsell of Iohn Randolph Doctor of Diuinitie, of the order of the Friars minors, then of the couen of Shrowsbury, hir confessor, forfaited all hir lands and goods by Parliament, and hauing all her seruants put from hir, was committed to the custodie of Iohn Pellam, and by him sent to the Castle of Leeds in Kent, hee appointed nine seruants to attend hir, and to bring her into the Castle of Pemsey, there to be gouerned vnder his prouidence. Frier Randolph, being apprehended in the Isle of Jersey, was conueyed to Thirbrughe and there imprisoned, and from thence was sent to the towre of London, where at length, to wit, in the yére of Christ 1429. on the fift of June, he was slaine by the parson of Saint Peters Church in the tower, falling out at words with him, and after Quéene Ioane was deliuered of hir imprisonment.

King Henry sent his brother Humfrey Duke of Glocester, accompanied with the Earle Marshall, and a great power of armed men, to lay siege before the towne and Castle of Iuorie, which towne, after many assaults and battels, the Duke toke by force: but the Castle thereof was not yéelded, till the 12. of May. The King also sent the Earle of Huntington with a power from Maunt, to the towne of Pontois, by which, if it were taken, he might haue the more sure and easie passage to Paris. Those which were sent, at the entrie of the night were come nigh vnto Pontois, where, in a wood they left their horses, and that done, in the darknes of the night, they went on foote to the ditches of the towne, which then were drie, where part of them lay on the

banks

bankes of the ditches, with their ladders in their hands ready to scale the wals when time would serue, and the residue bid them in the vines where they might be ready to enter the towne at the opening of the gates. At the breake of the day, they of the towne changed their watch, at the which change, the walles were left without watches for the time. But the Englishmen seeing time to accomplish their intent, raised their ladders, and scaled the wals, and by that meanes, entred the towne: where, some of them forthwith brake the gate, and made entrie for the rest of their company, which, when the garrisons of the towne perceiued, as men amazed, they turned themselues to flight. But not long after, they armed them, and assailed their enemies, but to the Englishmens great auaile, the Earle of Huntington with his company set spurs to their horses, and hasted them to the succour of their first company, whereby the Frenchmen as all discouraged and in despaire to saue the towne, at the sight of these new rescues that came to the Englishmen, leauing behinde them all their riches and substance endeuored themselues to escape by flight, and so the towne of Pointois, auoided of al Frenchmen, was left free to the English. After these enterprises thus atchieued, the king with all his companie came to the towne of Pointois, where he abode a certaine time, from whence he sent the Duke of Clarence with a chosen power of men to Paris, to view the situation and strength thereof, before which Citie, when he had tarried certaine dayes and had seene all that him liked, and that none of the Frenchmen would issue out of the Citie to fight with him, he returned to the king, and ascertained him of all that he had seene.

Bokinuillers yeelded.

On the xviii. of August, king Henry with all his host departed from Pointois. And because the Castle of Bokinuillers had done certaine inhumane cruelties to the kings lands that bordered thereabout, to the intent to represse their malice, the king lodged himselfe not far from thence, and sent certaine to assault the same Castle, where both the inhabitants and garrisons feared so much the king, that as men desperate of all succours, they yelded both Castle and goods. And then all the townes, Castles, and holds within a great circuite, without abiding battaile, yelded them to the king: but that strong and mightie towne of Gysors, whereof the Castle is much more defensible than the towne, would not submit to the king, wherefore on the last day of August the king with all his host toke his iourney thither, and enclosed the towne with his pauilions and tents. Betwixt him and them of the towne, were many sharpe battailes and cruell assaults, but at all times the Englishmen put the Frenchmen to flight, wherefore the inhabitants and garrisons of the towne and Castle deliuered the same to the king in the xviii. day of September.

Enguerant.

In this meane time the Dolphin assembled an host of 20000. men at Monstrea and Faulcuen, in purpose to fight with the Englishmen, and for the same by his letters he sent to Troyes in Champeigne for the Duke of Burgoyne, desiring him to haue his company in his iorney. At whose request the same Duke incontinent vpon sight of his letters, and vpon the suretie of the Dolphins oth, safely to goe and come, came vnto him to the place aforesaid, where notwithstanding his former oath, against both Gods law and mans law,

law, the Dolphin caused him at his comming, abhominably and cruelly to be murdered. After whose death the Dolphins seruants dispoiled him of his array, and cast his naked body into a vile pit. The Duke being thus murdered, Philip his sonne, who had married the Lady Micquiell the Dolphins sister, entred into all his fathers possessions: and shortly after, he ioyned in amitie with the King of England, promising him in marriage his sister in law the Lady Katherine, to be heire to King Charles: King Henry promised to deliuer to him so many of them as were guilty of his fathers murthering, as came into his hands, and the Dolphin should be for euer excluded from all title to the crown of France. The Earle of S. Paul was gouernor of Paris although he were but xiii. yeres of age, he gouerned the Citie wisely, to the Duke of Burgoynes behoofe, who had put him into that charge. The Dolphin would haue excused himselfe of the murder lately committed, but could not, for he was led and gouerned by them that had committed it. Indeede diuers of them had their friendes killed, in the murder of Paris, when the Earle of Erminake and the other prisoners were killed there, and therefore to be reuenged on the Duke they cared not in what danger they put the Realme, nor in what blame the Dolphin came, who notwithstanding he put them from him, and they went out of the Realme, all this would not appease the matter, nor reconcile the Dolphin to the Duke Philip. Titus Liuius

King Henry with his whole armie returned to Paunts, where of his host he made three battails, whereof the one he deliuered to the Duke of Gloucester, whom he sent to subdue the strong towne called Saint Germayns, which after many battails and skirmishes, in short time was yelded to him for the King. The second battail he sent to the Castle of Mount Dye, which in like manner fearing the englishmens puissance, yelded them to the King. And with the third of the said battails the K. in his owne person went to assiege Melwlance, which aboue all other was most strong. The situation of this towne was in a plenteous Ile, betwixt two armes of the sea, no man mought approch nigh to assault it by land, but onely by the bridge: and by water no vessell might come nigh vnto it, for the infinite multitude of piles that were fired and hid in the riuers. This towne was also defended with high and strong walles, within it also there were people in great number, as well of the inhabitants as of garrisons of men of war, that were purposely deputed for the defence thereof. Wherefore the King considering the strength, and defence of this place, assembled diuers ships and other small vessels, wherein by right great labour, hee first auoyded and clensed the riuer of the foresaid piles, which being done, he made all those vessels to be fastned together with chaines, and then he commaunded to be made certaine small Castles and towers of timber, which when they were finished, hee entended by strength of men, in those ships to assault the walles of the towne, but the garrisons and inhabitants being feared at the sight of these towers, before they were all finished, they sent their captaines to the King to treat with him for peace, which was granted them vpon condition, that if they were not aided by the last of Nouember, by the Frenchmen, they should deliuer the towne

to

to the King, and when the day came they according to couenant deliuered the towne to the King, and then the King returned to Maunt, and sent the Duke of Excester to beſiege the Caſtle of Galiard, which to him was yelded the 20. of December.

1420. King Henry ſolemnized the feaſt of the Natiuitie of our Lord in the Citie of Roane: he ſent the Earle of Saliſburie to take the towne of Freſcay, which in ſhort time was deliuered to him. The Earle Marſhall and the Earle of Huntington, were ſent to ſubdue the prouince of Shenon, where the Dolphin had deputed a captaine with a ſtrong power, which captaine met the two Earles and gaue them battaile, but the Engliſhmen remained conquerours, and thus the two Earles ſubdued the prouince of Shenon, without any great reſiſtance.

Whileſt theſe and many other victories were atchieued, the King continuing in the Citie of Roane, lauding God, the Ambaſſadors of Charles King of Fraunce, and of Philip Duke of Burgoigne, came to treate of peace, where of the King they were honorably receiued, and hee ſent backe with them to the French King, and the Duke of Burgoigne, his Ambaſſadors with full authoritie to conclude this long ſought peace, of which Ambaſſadors, the principall was the Earle of Warwicke in companie of certaine Biſhops and other diſcréte men, accompanied with a ſtrong power of armed men. Theſe Ambaſſadors were firſt brought to the Duke of Burgoigne, becauſe hee was nert vnto them, and after they toke their iourney vntill they came to the Citie of Troys, where they found King Charles of *Ann. reg.* 8. Fraunce, with the Quéne his wife, and that beautifull Lady Katherine their daughter. And entering into communication of peace with the Kings Counſell of Fraunce, the way of peace was found betwixt thoſe two Kings by aliance, that is to ſay, by a marriage to be made betwixt the moſt victorious King of England, and the Lady Katherine daughter to the King and Quéne of Fraunce: but becauſe they perceiued that many things might not be done without the preſence of the Kings, as well for the appoſition of their ſeales for the ratifying of the articles of this peace, as for the ſolemnization of the matrimonie, and alſo that King Charles was a man of many yéeres, they condeſcended that the king of England at a certaine day amongſt them limited ſhould come to the foreſaid Citie of Troys, with as great an armed power as he would: at which day appointed, if he failed to be there, all his communication of peace ſhould bee as voide. Theſe things thus concluded and ſet downe in writing, the Earle of Warwicke with his company returned to the King of England, to whom they declared by order what they had done, who was content in all things to performe their appointments, and prepared for his iourney. He called together Knights, men of armes and archers to the number of ſixtéene thouſand, of them the more part were archers: and when the time came that hee would depart towards Troys (as hee was accuſtomed) hee diuided his people in three parts and battels, and two wings, and in that manner the eight day of May, he entered his iourney toward Troys in Campaigne, where hee was mette

by

by the Duke of Burgoigne accompanied with many noble men, two leagues without the towne, whom hee receiued with great honor and due obseruance. Then this most victorious King accompanied both of English and Frenchmen of euery estate and degree, entered the foresaid Citie of Troys, the streetes whereof without any abiding hee passed vntill he came to the Kings Palace, where King Charles and the Quéene his wife abode his comming, of whom he was receiued godly and after a princely manner. When the King of England was thus royally receiued, after the due resolutions on his part made to King Charles and the Quéene, hee departed from them, and by the Duke of Burgoigne and other great estates as well of England as of Fraunce, he was conueyed to his lodges. The Citie was diuided into two parts, whereof the one halfe was assigned to the Frenchmen and Burgonians, and the other halfe to the Englishmen: and because that part assigned to the Englishmen, sufficed not to receiue them all within the walles, but that a great part of them must be lodged in the suburbes, the King of England, because his people on that part should haue free concourse togither, he caused the wall on that part of the Citie where he was lodged, to be cast downe to the ground. King Charles gaue authoritie and power to Isabel his wife and Quéene, to Philip Duke of Burgoigne, and to certaine other of his Counsell plenarily to conclude the peace with King Henry, for him and for his Realme of Fraunce, vnder such conditions as should be decréed, and also to proue, ratifie, and confirme the same, by oth solemnized in the person of King Charles, without fraud, in all things to be obserued vnto the said King Henry, his heires and successors, by the said King Charles his heires and successors, &c. On the 21. of May, in the xl. yéere of the reigne of King Charles, in the Cathedrall Church of Troys, the King of England with the Duke of Clarence his brother, and other Dukes, Earles, Bishops, Barons, Lords of estate, and other prelates of England, and Isabel the Quéene of France, with the Duke of Burgoigne, and other of the Kings Counsell of France, and in that part his especiall commissioners, for and in the name of the King of Fraunce, and also for themselues, and in their proper names, in a great assembly of the three estates of France, vulgarly called their Parliament, concluded a peace betwixt the two Realmes of England and France, and the same ratified and approued with the conditions and articles that in part shall follow, whereupon writings were made, sealed with the broade seale of the said King Charles. Then immediatly Isabel the Quéene and the Duke of Burgoigne, in the name of King Charles, made a solemne oth vpon the holy Euangelists, that the same Charles, his heires and successors should obserue and kéepe, without fraud, the peace made betwixt the two Realmes. And the same oth the Quéene and the Duke of Burgoigne in their owne names and for themselues, their heires and successors, made vnto the King for him, his heires and successors, and after them as many as were there present both of the Kings Counsell, and also of the Parliament, as Bishops, Lords, knights, and commons, made the same oth to the King. And the 23. and 24. day of May the Chancellor of France, and many other Lords, bishops, prelates,

lates, and noble men gaue the like faith and oth to King Henry of England.

Roger Wall.

The third of June, being present the Councell of King Charles, Isabel Quéene of France, the Duke of Burgoigne, and the Parliament of France, and also the Duke of Clarence, with many Bishops, Lords, and Knights of England, with King Henry, the matrimonie was solemnized betwixt the most victorious King Henry of England, and the excellent and glorious Lady Katherine daughter to Charles of Fraunce and Isabel his Quéene. The peace that was confirmed betwixt the said two kings and their Realmes was read as followeth.

King Henry from now-forth during the life of King Charles, shall not name or write himselfe King of Fraunce, nor shall not suffer himselfe of his people so to be named or written. After the death of King Charles, King Henry shall be King of Fraunce peaceably with his heires and successours. And because King Charles by reason of his infirmitie is vnable to gouerne the common weale, King Henry during the life of Charles, shall rule and gouerne the Realme of Fraunce, to the profite and honor of the same King Charles. King Charles in all his writings shall name the same King Henry our sonne and heire of Fraunce, during the life of the said King Charles. King Henry shall be written, Henry King of England, and heire and regent of Fraunce, and in the like manner he shall write himselfe in all things that shall be authorized vnder his owne seale. King Henry shall call King Charles his father, and Quéene Isabel his mother, and shall honor them. For King Henry shall not prohibite, with-hold, nor defend King Charles his father of the crowne of Fraunce, nor the issues or reuenues thereof. And the Quéene his mother at all times during her life, he shall kéepe in due estate as belongeth to hir maiestie. &c. with diuers other articles which for breuitie I set not downe in this place.

After the final end and accomplishing of this marriage, couenants and conditions, ratified in all parts, King Henry accompanied of King Charles and of his counsell, of the two Quéenes, Isabel and Katherine, and of the Duke of Burgoigne, departed from Troys, and toke his iourney to Paris, and from Paris not many dayes after they all went to lay siege to the Citie of Sens, which was to them contrary, but before the whole host were setled in their places, the captaine Citizens and garrisons submitted their bodies and Citie with all that they had to the King. Then they hasted to Montreau, which towne they toke by force.

King Henry besieged Melune. Tho. Walsing.

On the xv. of July they went to the Citie of Melune, and enuironed the same with a strong siege, for there were the Kings of England, of France, and Scotland, the Dukes of Burgoigne, Bauier, Clarence Bedford, and Excester, the Earles of March, Warwicke, Huntington, and Somerset, &c. This siege continued 14. weekes and od dayes, from the feast of Mary Magdalen, to the feast of All Saints, not without in a manner euery day, a conflict and sore skirmish, but at length for want of victuals the besieged, yéelded themselues to the Kings of England and France, from whence the foresaid Kings with a great part of their armie went to Paris.

King

King Henry kept his Christmasse in the Citie of Paris, in the Castle of S. Anthony. And after he had holden a Parliament there he went to Roane, and there with his Normans, and Englishmen held a Parliament. And then when he had established sure guard for his Realme of France, and Dutchie of Normandie, he passed through Picardy to Calets, and so to Douer, where with his Quéene he landed on Candlemasse day. 1421. Titus Liuius.

The fourteenth of Februarie Quéene Katherine was crowned at Westminster, vnto whom the King assigned to hir dowrie 10000. markes: also he consented to the deliuerie of the King of Scots, who had béen long prisoner in England, with condition, that before his departure out of England, he shall take to wife the Duke of Somersets sister, néece to the cardinall of Winchester.

The xvii. of March being Easter éeue, Thomas duke of Clarence, the Kings brother, the Lord Rose Marshall, and his brother Gilbert Vmframuile Earle of Kime, and Iohn Gray made Earle of Tankeruill in Normandy, with many other Lords, were slaine beyond the water of Leire in France, & many Lords were taken prisoners, of the which were the Earle of Huntington and the Earle of Somerset and his brother, the Lord Fits Walter, and other, the bastard of Clarence, with strength, got his fathers body, brought it into England and buryed it at Canterbury, besides K. H. the fourth his father. *Ann. reg. 9.*

In a Parliament at Westminster it was ordeined that no man should proffer gold in paiment, but if it held waight, wherefore were ordained balances and weights. The King suppressed the French houses of religious monks and Friers, and such like in England, because they thought til of the conquest ouer France, their lands were giuen by him and Henry the first, to monasteries and colledges of learned men. Priories alians in England suppressed

In this Parliament was demanded a subsidie. The Bishop of Winchester lent the King 20000. pound to restraine the matter. The King hauing disposed all things in order concerning the Realme of England and the wars in Scotland, leauing in England his Quéene with a great power, to the number (after Enguerant) of 30. thousand, returned into Fraunce, where, after he had visited the King and Quéene of France at Paris, he tooke the Castle of Drewr by assault. And when hee heard, that his enemies prepared themselues to battaile, he approched the flood of Loyre, about which flood it was said his enemies were: but against him came no man. Wherefore the King led his host to lay siege to the Citie of Sens, commonly called the Kings new towne, which towne for lacke of victuals yéelded themselues and the towne to the King. Titus Liuius.

Iohn Lord Mortimer brake forth of the tower of London, and being afterwards taken, he was drawen and hanged: as shall be shewed in the second péere of the raigne of King Henry the first.

In the moneth of October, when King Henry had deliuered the Citie of Paris from all annoiances, hee with his host went to besiege the Citie of Meaux in Brye, to which Citie nigh adioyning, is a place called the Market of Meaux, betwixt which two places floweth the riuer of Marne, Titus Liuius.

which

which also enuironeth both the same places.

This Citie was besieged all the winter, wherein were so many, and so great stormes and flouds of raine, that the Kings host was often annoyed with hunger and colde.

The 6. of December, at foure of the clocke in the afternoone, Lady Katherine Quéene of England, brought forth hir first begotten son in the Castle of Windsore, and his name was giuen him Henry: for there receiued him at the font, Iohn Duke of Bedford his vncle Lord Warden of England, and Henry the Kings vncle Bishop of Winchester, and Iaquelyn Dutches of Holland that remained then in England. Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Canterburie, doing the office of Baptisme.

1422. King Henry held his feast of Christs Natiuitie at the siege before Meaux, for he would not giue ouer his siege.

In the moneth of Februarie the Knights that were in garrison, and the principall of the Citie of Mealx perceiuing that the sommer comming should cause the siege to be more light, and lesse painfull to the Englishmen, and difficill vnto themselues, departed the Citie, and went into that place, that *An. reg.* 10. is called the Market of Mealx, as to the more defensible holde, after whose departing the common people hauing none abilitie to resist the Kings power, yelded themselues and the Citie to the King. After this in the moneth of May, when the King had sore beaten the foresaid Market of Mealx, he constrained the Frenchmen that were besieged, to condescend vnto certaine couenants, and to deliuer the place vnto him: and shortly after were deliuered to the King the towne of Dreux in Valois, the Castle of Pier Pount-meralaw, Offemount and many others. After the rendring of these townes and Castles, the King sent ouer into England prisoners 160. which landed at Hampton on the first of July, from whence they were brought in carts to the tower of London, and the King returned to Paris.

Queene Katherine sailed into France.

In the moneth of Aprill Katherine Quéene of England shipped at Hampton, and sailed ouer into France with a strong power, vnder the conduct of Iohn Duke of Bedford the Kings brother, Humfrey duke of Glocester being appointed Warden of England, in the Duke of Bedfords place: when the comming of Quéene Katherine was knowne to King Henry hir husband, and to Charles King of France, both these Kings, and with them the Quéene of France, accompanied with many great Lords and estates, as well of England as of France, went to méete hir at Boys de Vincenne, where she was ioyfully receiued of them, as if she had béen an Angel sent from God. The xxv. day of May the two Kings of England and France, with their Quéenes departed from Boys de Vincenne, and went to Paris: the King of England and his Quéene were lodged in the Castle of Lowre, and the King of France and his Quéene were lodged in the pallace of S. Paul.

King Henry sicknes to the death.

King Henry hearing that the Dolphin with a great power besieged the towne of Guisney, hee determined to goe himselfe to the raising of the siege, and so came to the towne of Corbeil, and to Senlis, where he waxed so sicke, of an hot burning ague, with a vehement flixe, that hee was constrained

trained to farse and send his brother Iohn Duke of Bedford, Thomas Beawford duke of Exceter, the Earles of Marche, and Warwicke, to rescue them of Cosney: but the Dolphin raised his siege and departed thence. King Henry his disease increasing, made his testament, appointed his treasure and iewels to be sold, his debts to be payed, aswell to the pleasaunce of his souldiers as to other vnto whom he ought good, either in England or in France: he ordayned his brother Iohn Duke of Bedford to be regent and gouernor of Fraunce and and Normandie, and committed the keeping of Henry his sonne to Henry Beawfort Bishop of Winchester, and to Thomas Bewfort, Duke of Exceter, he departed this life in the Castle called Boyes de Viscenne, not farre from Paris, on the last of August, in the yeare 1422. when he had raigned nine yeares fiue moneths and odde dayes. There was present at his death King Charles of Fraunce, and the two Quenes: but before his death this most prudent King disposed the guard of the young Prince his sonne, and the defence of the Realme of England, to his brother Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, but the custodie of the body of this young Prince, the King committed to his vncle the Duke of Exceter, to indoctrine him in all good manners: and the reuenues of the Dutchie of Normandy, he bequeathed to his brother Iohn Duke of Bedford, for the gouernance of the same Dutchie and of the Realme of France: he appointed his debts to bee paid out of his treasurie, and of his iewels. In his life time he redified the castle of Kenelworth, he builded there a most pleasant place, and caused it to be termed le pleasaunt marish, King Henry the eight, caused the said banqueting house to be taken downe, and part of it to be set vp in the base courte at Kenelworth: he redified his royall manour that then was called Sheene, now Richmond: he founded two monasteries vpon the Thamis not farre from Richmond, the one of Carthusians, which he named Bethlem, the other religious men and women of Saint Bridget, and that he named Sion. He founded Gartar, principall King at armes of all Englishmen, and also the brotherhood of S. Giles without Creples gate of London. He gaue 1000. markes to the workes of Westminster Church, more he gaue to the same Church a faire Psalter, with another booke called *Flores historiarum*, both verie faire written, and enlumined, and a royall scepter of gold, for the Quene. The ring that King Richard the second gaue vnto S. Edwards shrine, being taken away, this King Henry restored againe, in the which ring there was a Rubie, estemed worth a thousand markes in value: he gaue to the colledge of Windsore, or chappell of Knights, of Saint George and of the gartar, an Image of massy siluer to the honor of our blessed virgin Mary, the mother of Christ. Executors of his testament were Henry Fitz Hugh, Walter Hungerford, Walter Bewchampe, Lewes Robsart, William Porter, and Robert Babthorpe Knights, and Iohn Woodhouse, and Iohn Lauenthorpe Esquiers: his goods, cattels, iewels, and money came to 40000. markes, as appeareth by the record of Henry the first, the first yeare. Shortly after his departing, his bowels were enterred in the Church of S. More de Folles, and his corps well enbaulmed and seared, was closed in lead: and accompanied with all the Lords, estates, and commons of England

King Henry deceaseth.

Iohn Rouse.

that were there present, with also many Lords and great estates, as well of France, Normandie, Burgondy, and Picardy, was brought with great honor to Paris, and set in the Church of our Lady, where were done for him right solemne exequies, with distribution of money and great almes to the poore. From thence he was brought to Roane, where he abode long. When all things necessarie were prepared for the conueiance of the dead King into England, his body was laid in a chariot, which was drawen by fower great horses: and aboue the dead corpes they laid a figure made of boiled hides or leather, representing his person, as nigh to the semblance of him as could be deuised, painted curiously to the similitude of a liuing creature: vpon whose head was set an Imperiall diademe of golde and precious stones, on his body a purple roabe furred with ermin, and in his right hand he held a scepter royall, and in his left hand a ball of golde, with a crosse fred thereon. And in this manner adorned was this figure laid in a bed in the said chariot, with his visage vncouered toward the heauens: and the couerture of his bed was of red silke beaten with golde: and besides that, when the bodie should passe through any good towne, a canapie of marueilous great value, was borne ouer the chariot, by men of great worship. In this manner accompanied of the King of Scots, and of all Princes, Lords, and Knights of his house, he was brought from Roan to Abeuile, where the corpes was set in the Church of Saint Offrane. From Abuile, he was brought to Pedin, and from thence to Montreuil, so to Bulloigne, and to Calice. In all this iourney were many men about the chariot clothed all in white, which bare in their hands torches burning, after whom followed all the householde seruants in blacke, and after them came the Princes, Lords, and estates of the Kings blod, adorned in vestures of mourning: and after all this, from the said corpes the distance of two English miles followed the Quéene of England right honorably accompanied. In this manner they entred Calice, from whence after a few dayes they departed, and continued their iournies by water and land vntill they came to London, where they arriued about the tenth of Nouember, and so were conueyed by London bridge, through Cheape to the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul: vpon the couering of the formost of the fower horses that conueyed the chariot, were imbrodered the ancient armes of England: vpon the couerture of the second horse were the armes of England and Fraunce, in one shield quarterly: vpon the couerture of the third horse was imbrodered the armes of Fraunce, without any manner of difference: and on the fourth horse were the armes of King Arthur, which was three crownes golde in a field azure. When his exequies were solemnised at Saint Pauls Church in London, he was brought from thence to be enterred in the Abbey of Saint Peter at Westminster amongst his Noble ancestors, at the féete of King Edward the Confessor, a royall image of siluer and gilt was laid vpon his tombe, which Quéene Katherine his wife caused to be made for him, but about the latter end of King Henry the eight, the head of the Kings image being of massy siluer, was broken off, and conueyed cleane away, with the plates of siluer and gilt that couered his body. Thus this most victorious and

renowmed

renowmed King entred the way decréd for euery creature, in the flower and most lustie time of his age, to wit, but fire and thirtie péeres olde, when he had raigned nine péeres, ten moneths, and od dayes. The first of Henry the first, Quéene Katherine had assured for hir toynter, Castles, lands, tenements, named and deliuered vnto the summe of 40000. scuts, euery two scuts worth a noble.

King Henry the sixt.

HEnry the first, borne at Windsore, being an infant of eight monethes old, began his raigne the last of August, in the péere 1422. Continuing the time of his youth, the gouernance of the Realme was committed to Humfrey Duke of Glocester, and the gard of his person to Thomas Duke of Ercester: and to Iohn Duke of Bedford was giuen the regiment of France, who right wisely and nobly ruled the same so long as he liued. This Henry was of nature gentle and méke: he loued better peace than war, quietnes of minde than busines of the world: honestie than profit: rest and ease, than trouble and care: all iniuries that euer happened to him, which were many, he suffered patiently, and reputed them to be worthily sent of God for his offences. *Ann. reg.* 1. Titus Liuius.

The 21. of October, Charles King of France passed out of this world, and was buried at Saint Denis in France, after he had bén crowned King 46. péers. He was greatly beloued of his people all his life time, and therefore was called Le Roy Charle le biew ame: but yet he had a sickenes the more part of his raigne, that being out of his wit, he would strike all that came nére him: it toke him first in the Citie of Mans shortly after he had bén in Flanders to reduce the Flemings to obedience. There was by reason héereof great trouble in France, because those that were nére to him in linage, sought euery one to haue the chiefe gouernment in their hands. When he thus died, the Realme was left in miserable state, for people of euery strange nation were gouernors in the Realme. First, the Englishmen had conquered a great part, and sought to haue the rest: and the Duke of Burgoigne, with many other great Lords alied with him, sought to conquer all, for the young King Henry of England, who claimed then to be King of France, and likewise in all the money that was coined, the armes of both Realmes were quartered. The Crownes that were stamped in the time of Charles, and al other money more, were forbidden to be currant, and called to the mint. King Henry caused a péece to be stamped called a Salus, worth two and twenty shillings, and Blans of eight pence a péece, and so in no place of France where King Henry was obeyed, any other money was receiued, but such as had the armes of France and England stamped on it. Victorie of Lois Duke of Orleance. Charles le biew King of France died. Henry King of England and of Fraunce.

Charles Duke of Touraine the Dolphin, sonne to King Charles le biew ame, claming to be right inheritor to the Realme of France by the ancient Dolphin of Fraunce pro-

claimed King of Fraunce. Two Kings of Fraunce Henry and Charles.

edicts and customs of the said Realme, as was alledged, proclaimed himselfe King after the decease of his father, notwithstanding, by the agreement made at the marriage of his sister to the King of England, it was otherwise concluded (as before is recited:) and so there were two kings in France, Henry and Charles, both which striuing for the crowne, the Realme was in way of perdition.

Parliament at London.

A Parliament at London began the ninth of November, wherein was graunted to the King a subsidie for three yeres, fiue nobles of euery sacke of woll that should passe out of the land.

1423.

King Charles of France began now to aduance himselfe into the Duke of Burgoigne lands, and the Constable of Scotland, accompanied with many Lords, and men of war of King Charles side, laid siege to the towne of Carnens, but the Marshall of Burgoigne assembled men of war to raise the siege, with whom went Thomas Mountacute Earle of Salisburie, a valiant man, and now being come togither, fought with their enemies, wan the field, toke the Constable, whose sonne was slaine in the field. Many of King Charles men were slaine and taken to the number of ten or twelue hundred good men of warre. After which victorie, the Earle of Salisburie laid siege to Montaguillon in Campaigne, and continued there an eight monethes before he could haue it rendred, and then caused the same to be raised and throwne downe. Then the Earle of Salisbury besieged the Castle of Monnes, which at length was yelded to him: this Castle he also raised and beat downe, which was the strongest place in all Champaigne, it was after repaired by King Charles.

The Earle of Salisburie wan diuers holdes in Fraunce, and raised them.

Ann. reg. 2.

Duke of Bedford married the Duke of Burgoynes Daughter. Phil. Comi.

About the same time the Duke of Burgoyne gaue his sister the Lady Anne in marriage to the Duke of Bedford, and so the alliance was made more strong betweene the English and the Burgonians.

Philip de Comines writeth, that Iohn Duke of Bedford, regent in France for the Englishmen, his monthly allowance in that office amounting to 20000. crownes at the least.

Thomas Langley Bishop of Durham was made Chancellor of England.

The Dukes of Burgoyne, Bedford, and Britaine, met in the towne of Amiens, there was also the Earle of Richmont, brother to the Duke of Britaine, and many other great Lords, which Earle of Richmont had married Margaret, the Duke of Britaines eldest sister, sometime wife to the Duke of Guyen, and Dolphin of France. These three Dukes were fiue or sixe dayes together in Amiens, in great friendship and reuerence eche to other, promising perpetuall amitie to continue. After this, the Duke of Britaine returned into his country, the duke of Bedford (regent of France) to Paris, and the duke of Burgoyne to Arras: but within a while after, the Earle of Richmont reuolted to King Charles, vpon some misliking he had conceiued against the Duke of Bedford: King Charles receiued him ioyfully, and made him Constable of France.

About the same time the Duke of Bedford caused Crotoy to be besieged both

both by water and by land, which after foure or fiue moneths siege, was both towne and Castle deliuered to the Duke, where he ordained Ralph Butler to be captaine. At that time the Duke of Bedford was obeyed as regent in all places through Vlmeu, Pontieu, and Picardy, from Paris to Reims, Chalons, and Troyes vp to the water of Loyze.

About the feast of S. Andrew the captaines of King Charles assembled their forces about le Fere, and Nelle, and toke by night the towne of Campeigne, and spoiled the inhabitants of all their goods. Shortly after came the Duke of Bedford to Pondister with twelue hundred fighting men, and requested the Lord of Sanenses to lay siege to Campeigne, and he would finde him men and money to wage them, whereunto he granted, and after fifténe dayes siege had the same deliuered.

In this meane time, to wit, about the xvii. of Nouember, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein the yong King was set in his maiestie among his Lords. And the xxvi. day of Nouember the King with the Quéne remoued from Westminster vnto Waltham holy Crosse, and from thence to Hertford, where he held his Christmasse, and the King of Scots with him: and the foresaid Parliament was adiourned vnto the twentieth day after Christmasse: In the which Parliament, among other actes, was ordained that what prisoner that for grand or petie treason was committed to warde, and after wilfully brake or made an escape from the same, it should be déemed petty treason, and the goods of him so escaping should be forfeited to the Lord of the soile that they were found in. Parliament at Westminster. 1424.

In the moneth of Februarie, Iames Stewart the yong King of Scots, who was taken by the Englishmen in the eight yéere of King Henry the fourth, and had remained in England prisoner till this time, was now according to couenant, deliuered out of Pomfret Castle, vpon pledges, to wit, Dauid eldest sonne to the Earle of Athole, Alexander Earle of Crauford, Alexander Lord of Gourdon, Iohn de Lyndesey, Patricke sonne and heire to Sir Iohn Lyon, Andrew Grey of Soules, Dauid de Ogleby, Sir William de Rothin, Dauid Mogneste, and William Olifant: the same King of Scots was then married in the priory Church of Saint Mary Queries in Southwarke, to the Lady Iane the Dutches daughter of Clarence, by hir first husband Iohn Earle of Somerset, cosen to King Henry, and they kept their marriage feast in the Bishop of Winchesters place, by the said Church of saint Mary Queries, K. of Scots released of imprisonment.

The foureténth day of Februarie, the foresaid Parliament being againe holden at Westminster, for breaking of the foresaid acte of escaping out of prison, Sir Iohn Mortimer was accused, by a yeoman named William King of Wimolton in Kisoale, in Yorkeshire, seruant vnto Sir Robert Scot Knight, lieutenant of the tower of London, of diuers points of treason as followeth: First, that he counselled with the said William King, to the end to breake out of prison, and promised to him for the same ten pound in his purse, an habergeon, and a dublet, the yéerely value of fortie pound land, & in processe an Earledome. Also, that the said Mortimer should say, that he would goe into Wales, vnto the Earle of the Marches, and there he would raise fortie thousand men, Mortimer accused of treason for escape out of the Tower,

and with that power he would enter the land, and strike off the heads of the Lord protector, and of the Bishop of Winchester, to the intent that he might tell or play with some of his money. And furthermore he accused him, that the said Mortimer should say, that the Earle of March was but a daw, saue that he was the greatest, noblest, and worthiest of blod, and should be King by right inheritance, and that he himselfe was next rightfull heire to the said crowne after the said Earle of March, wherefore if the said Earle would not take vpon him the crowne and rule of the land, he said that he else would. And ouer this, the said William alleaged to the said Sir John Mortimer, that he should say, that if he failed of his purpose, and might not ioyne vnto the Earle of Marches, that then he would saile vnto the Dolphin, and aide and take his part, where he wist well he should be accepted, and haue good aide of him to bring about his purpose. All which matter this William would proue vpon the same Mortimer with his body: or as the Lords & commons should award. Which Iohn Mortimer, after the statute aforesaid escaped out of the tower, and was taken againe vpon the towre wharfe sore beaten and wounded, and on the morrow brought to Westminster, & by the authoritie of the said Parliament, he was after drawen to tiburne, hanged, and headed, of whose death (saith Hall) no smal slander arose: his body was buried in ỹ grap friers church.

Richard Wooduill was created Baron Wooduill: Iohn Sturton Knight Baron Sturton for him and his heires: and Thomas Hoo Knight Baron Hoo and of Hastings.

King Henries people besieging the Castle of Dinry in the marches of Normandy, they within compounded to yeld at a day assigned, if the Englishmen were not fought withall before the same day by the Frenchmen: whereupon as well King Charles as the Duke of Bedford made great leuies of men to kéepe the day appointed, and herewith they drew both towardes Yurle. But when King Charles heard how the Duke of Bedford was comming towards him with such a puissance, he was counselled to draw backe, and so he did towards Vernole in Perch, whom the Duke of Bedford followed, so that he found his armie nére to Vernole. And when either armie was in sight of the other, they put themselues in order of battell, and the Englishmen made an hedge of their horse behind their battell, because the French should not strike in among them on the backes: and the Frenchmen ordered themselues in battell arrap, making a great battell of footemen, in the which they put the floure and chiefest men. They appointed their horsemen to set on the Englishmen a trauerse, the battelles on foote came vpon and ioyned, where was a sore fight betwixt them, continuing two houres togither, that no man might iudge which way the victorie would incline: but at length, the men of King Charles began to breake, and then the Englishmen began to thrust in among them, and did so much, that they discomfited their enimies. There were slaine the Earle Dowglas Duke of Turon, Iames Dowglas Earle of Wighton, Iohn Earle of Bougham, with the vicount Nerbon, & many other, to the number of ten thousand (saith Fabian:) foure thousand saith mine Author (a Frenchman) who saith, that the Duke of Bedford bare himselfe most valiantly, fighting

The battell of Vernole in Perch.

Rob. Fabian.

ting with an axe so fiercely, as he had the praise of all other. The Earles of Salisburie and Suffolke gouerned themselues also right valiantly.

The Lord of Torsy and other Lords of Normandy, which before had taken part with the Englishmen, this day turned to the French, hoping that the Englishmen should haue lost the battell. True it is, that the Frenchmen would neuer suffer their king Charles to be present in person at any battell, but when they thought to pitch a field, they sent him into some strong towne. *Ann. reg. 3.* By the losse of this battell fought on the seuentéenth of August before Vernole in Perch, king Charles was put to great hindrance, so that he was not able in puissance to giue the Englishmen any battell, hauing enough to do to defend and kéepe his townes and fortresses against them.

The Duke of Bedford returned into Normandy, where he punished many that fled from him in the day of battell. Then went he to Paris, where he found the Duke of Burgoyne, who receiued him, and the Dutches of Bedford his wife, the said Duke of Burgoynes sister, right ioyfully, and made to them a great feast, at which feast also were the Earles of Salisburie and Suffolke, the olde Quéene of France, mother to king Charles, and many other great estates, of diuers nations, amongst the which; the Dutchesse of Bedford was holden for the most gallantest Lady of all other, and with her, the countesse of Salisburie a very faire Lady. The Duke of Bedford that had neuer iusted before, iusted there.

The Duke of Burgoine enamoured with the Countesse of Salisburie, whereof came great displeasure and losse to England, by the breach of amitie betwixt the English and the Burgonians.

The Duke of Burgoine was a very goodly and amiable man of personage, doing excellently wel whatsoeuer he toke in hand, and especially in dauncing and iusting he excéeded all other of his countrey. At this feast, he became desirous of the countesse of Salisbury, and some messages passed betwixt them, which came to the Earle of Salisburies eare, whereof he was nothing contented with the Duke, and therefore sought to doe him displeasure afterward.

This feast being ended, the Duke of Burgoyne went into his countrie of Burgoyne, and there toke to wife the Dutchesse of Neuers which had béen wife to his vncle the Duke of Neuers, and had by her two children. She was halfe sister to the duke of Burbon, but she liued not long with him. The duke of Burgoyne also gaue his sister the youngest, named Agnes, in mariage vnto Charles de Burbon Earle of Clermont, for the which, the Duke of Bedford and other Englishmen were wroth, for that he made such aliance with the enemies without their accord.

The second cause of breach of amitie, betwixt England and Burgoine.

This yéere the Frenchmen repaired the Castle of Mouns in Champaigne, which had béen a little before destroyed by the Englishmen, and now it was well stuffed with victuals and men, which began to make sore warre to the country, but shortly after the Earle of Salisbury besieged them, and with him Messire Iohn de Luxenburg, who did so much, that the Castle was yélded to him. The Duke of Bedford with his wife the dutchesse, lay for the most part in Paris leading there a pleasant life with the Lady whom he greatly loued, and was lodged in the house of the Tournelles nére to the Castle S. Anthony, where he made faire buildings, and his men still made sore wars against the French towards the riuer of Loyre, and other places, vpon base Nor-

mandy, and toward the Dutchie of Alanson.

Earle of March sent into Ireland.

This yere in England Edmond Mortimer Earle of March with many other Lords, and a great retinue, were sent into Ireland, where the said Earle of March ended his life without issue, whose inheritance descended to Richard Plantagenet, sonne and heire to Richard Earle of Cambridge beheaded at Southampton, as is afore shewed.

Iaqueline Dutchesse of Henault.

This yere the wars began in Henault, by reason of Iaqueline Dutchesse of Henault, daughter to Duke William of Henault, uncle to Philip Duke of Burgoyne, and also daughter to Duke Iohn of Burgoynes sister, wife to the forenamed William, and so double cosin german to Philip, Duke Philip now liuing. This Iaqueline was married to Iohn Duke of Brabant hir cosin german, and cosin german also to Duke Philip of Burgoyne, and before that, she was married to the Earle of Pontioue, sonne to King Charles le bien aime, eldest brother to King Charles now liuing, but notwithstanding that she was thus married to the Duke of Brabant, yet was she conueyed by Sir Robert Knight, and brought into England to the Duke of Glocester, and there married to the said Duke of Glocester: and so she had two husbands aliue at once, Brabant and Glocester, a thing thought vnreasonable, both against God, the world, and the Church, for she had been foure or fiue yeres in company with the Duke of Brabant, but there had fallen some variance betwixt them, and so she was come from him into Henault.

Iaqueline married to the Duke of Glocester.

Rob Fabian.

About the last of Aprill began a Parliament at Westminster, wherein was granted a subsidie of twelue pence in the pound of all manner marchandise comming in, or passing out of this Realme, three shillings of a tunne of wine for the terme of three yeres to be holden. And furthermore it was enacted, that all merchant strangers should be set to an English host, within fifteene dayes of their comming to their port sale, and to make no sale of any merchandise ere they were so lodged: and then within 40. dayes following to make sale of all they brought, and if any remained vnsold at the said fortie dayes end, that then all such merchandise vnsold to be forfeited. Also that all strangers that carried any woolles out of this land, should pay three and forty shillings foure pence for a sacke custome, where the English merchants and denisons payed but fiue nobles, &c.

Parliament at London.

Subsidie paied.

All strangers to be lodged within English hostes.

The Duke of Glocester goeth into Holland.

After the marriage had been solemnised betweene the Duke of Glocester, and Iaqueline Dutchesse of Holland, as is aforesaid, within a moneth after the Duke of Glocester assembled an army of twelue hundred fighting men at the least, all Englishmen, and taking the Dutchesse with him in company, passed ouer to Calice, and straight from thence to Lens in Artois, and so into Henault, making no outrage as he passed through Duke Philips countries. At their comming into Henault, many townes obeyed them, and other refused so to doe: likewise were the Nobles diuided.

A third cause of the amitie to be broken betwixt England and Bur-

The Duke of Burgoyne hearing of this, was sore offended for the iniurie done to his cosin of Brabant, the dishonor of his cosin the Dutchesse Iaqueline, and the euill dealing of the Duke of Glocester, and therefore, to aide the Duke of Brabant he appointed many of his captaines with twelue hundred

dred fighting men Picards, to go against the Duke of Gloucester. The Duke of Brabant was a man but of weake complexion, and therfore by the counsell of Brabant it was ordayned, that his younger brother Philip Earle of Saint Pol, should be chiefe Captaine of the warre against the Duke of Gloucester. He had a great army, as the more part of the Nobles of Brabant, of Henault, and of Burgoyne, in all fiftie thousand. Piere de Luxenburg, Earle of Conuarson, his nere kinsman, had the leading of the army, for himselfe was but young. The Duke of Gloucester had put off his men in garrison within the towne of Brayne, in the county of Henault, who made sore warre to the countrey about, but the Earle of S. Pol, and Conuarson did come and besiege Brayne, continuing afore it 12. daies before they within yelded, compounding to depart with bodies and goods saued. These hauing won Braine, destroyed it vterly, and that done, toke the field with all puissance, which was great: and the Duke of Gloucester likewise came into the field, so that they approched nere together, and the vantcurrers skirmished, but the battel ioyned not. The Duke of Gloucester had sent his herault, and written to the Duke of Burgoyne, calling him traytor, and disloyall to the king of England and Fraunce, for that he had sent men in ayde against him in ayde of the Duke of Brabant, and therefore offered him the combate: whereunto the Duke of Burgoyne answered, that he would accept the combat willingly, denying that euer he had fayled of his promise: but contrariwise, that the Duke of Gloucester had done great wrong to the Duke of Brabant, to haue bereft him of his wife, contrary to the ordinance of God, and of holy Church, and for other words which the Duke had vttered against the Duke of Burgoynes honour, he gaue him the lie, and so farre the matter went in words betwixt them, that the day was appointed for the combate, and the Duke of Burgoyne chose for Iudge of the combate, the Emperor of Almaine, and the Duke of Burgoyne sent the Duke of Gloucester a safe conduct, to depart safely into England, to prepare himself of things necessary for the cõbat, whereupon both the campes brake vp: the Duke of Gloucester went to Mons in Henault, to the Dutches his wife (so termed) and gaue her to vnderstand that he was desirous to trie the combate with the Duke of Burgoyne, and many other things he tolde her, which he performed not; for within foure daies after, he toke all his power with him, and returned into England, doing no hurt by the way to the Duke of Burgoynes countries, and left the Dutchesse in Mons, smally accompanyed with the people of that countrey. Shortly after his departure, the Duke of Burgoyne sent the Lord Lilladam to the towne of Mens to receiue Iaqueline the Dutchesse, who being deliuered vnto him, he conueyed her to Gant, where the Duke and she made great semblance of ioy together, she promising to be gouerned alwaies by his aduise, but to go to her olde husband the Duke of Brabant she would not: but what semblance soeuer she made, she had an other thought in her head, as it appeared afterward, for when she espied her time, she stale away into her countrey of Holland, where she was well receiued of many Lords, and began forthwith to maintaine warre against Duke Philip of Burgoyne, and sent to

goyne, and the losse of many townes in France.

Vmfrey duke of Gloucester chalengeth the combate with Philip Duke of Burgoyne.

the

the Duke of Glocester for ayde, who sent to her a thousand fighting men, vnder the conduct of the Lord Fitzwaters, who landed them in a place called Brewers hauen. During these troubles in Henault, diuers Lords of the countrey, held with the Duke of Glocester, and therefore had their lands fore wasted. Also Messire Englebert Denguien held on the party of Philip Duke of Burgondy: and hee, when he toke any of the Englishmen, would cause one of their thombs to be cut off, and so sent into England.

The Duke of Burgoyne fearing least Iaqueline would deliuer the countrey of Holland into the possession of the Duke of Glocester, he assembled his power, & went into Holland, to put the countrey into obeisance. At his comming thither, Iaqueline accompanied with many Nobles of the countrey, and the Lord Fitzwaters, would haue defended his landing, but notwithstanding all the defence they could make, he entred vpon them, and there neere to the Towne of Brusselles, they ioyned in battell, the Duke of Burgoyne and his people against the Englishmen and Hollanders, taking the Dutchesse Iaquelines part: there was a fierce battell on all sides, but in the ende, the Hollanders and Englishmen were all discomfited, and there died in that place aboue seuen or eight hundred, besides those that were taken prisoners: the Lord Fitzwaters hardly escaped.

1425. After this battell got by the Duke of Burgoyne, diuers townes of the countrey reuolted to him against Iaqueline the Dutchesse, as Dordrecht Heriziee, and many other. Shortly after, the Duke of Burgoyne leauing garrisons in those Townes that obeyed him, to make resistance against the Dutchesse that lay in the Towne of Gant, he returned into his countrey of Flanders and Artois, there to prepare such abilliments as were necessary for him to vse at the combate appointed betwixt him and the Duke of Glocester. The Duke of Glocester likewise in England made his prouision of his abilliments and furniture, but the Duke of Bedford brother to the Duke of Glocester, toke great paines to make them friends: and also the counsell of the young king of England, were nothing content with this variance, doubting least it might be occasion that the Duke of Burgoyne might withdraw himselfe from their amitie, whereby their busines in France should be hindered. The Duke of Bedford therfore toke his iourney from Paris to Calice, and so into England, to the end to agree the said Dukes: he toke with him the Dutches his wife, and not past a foure or fiue hundred men.

An. reg. 4. About Michaelmas Peter Duke of Quimbre, Prince of Portugall came into England, and was honourably receiued and feasted by the kings vncles, and was also elected into the order of the garter.

Humfrey duke of Glocester married Elianor Cobham.

When Humfrey Duke of Glocester vnderstood that Pope Martine the fift had giuen sentence, that the first marriage with the Duke of Brabant and Iaqueline was good and effectuall, and the second espousalles celebrated with the Duke of Glocester and the said Iaqueline to be vnlawfull, he beganne to ware weary of her, by whom he neuer had profit, but losse, and toke to his wife by a second marriage Elianor Cobham, daughter to Reignold Cobham Lord of Sterborow, which Elianor before was his wanton paramour,

paramour, to his great reproch, as was then noted.

The morrow after Simon and Iudes day, when the Maior of London had beene at Westminster to take his charge, as the custome is, at such time as he was holding his great dinner, he was by the Duke of Glocester Lord Protector sent for in speedy manner, & when he came to his presence, he gaue to him commaundement, to see the Citie were surely watched in the night following and so it was done. Rob. Fabian. Debate betweene the Duke of Glocester and the Bishop of Winchester.

On the nert morrow about nine of the clocke, certaine seruants of the Bishop of Winchester, vncle to the said Protector, would haue entred the City by the bridge, but the warders or kepers thereof, kept them out by force, as before they were commaunded, wherewith they being grieuously discontented, gathered to them a greater number of archers, and men of armes, and assaulted the gate with shot and other meanes of warre, insomuch, that the commons of the Citie shut in their shops, and sped them thither in great number, so that great bloudshed would haue followed, had not the wisedome of the Maior and Aldermen staped the matter in time,

The Archbishoppe of Canterbury with the Duke of Quimbre called the Prince of Portugall and other, toke great labour vpon them to pacifie this variance betwirt the vncle and the nephew, the Protector and the Bishop, insomuch, that they rode betwéen them eight times, ere they might bring them to any reasonable conformitie, and lastly they agreed to stand to the rule of the Duke of Bedford, Regent of France, or of such as he would assigne, whereupon the Citie was set in more quiet, and the Bishop of Winchester wrote a letter to the Duke of Bedford, Lord Regent as followeth.

Right high and mightie Prince, and right Noble, and after one lenest earthly Lord, I recommend me vnto your grace with all my heart: and as ye desire the welfare of the King our soueraigne Lord, and of his realmes of England and of France, and your owne weale, with all yours, haste you hither, for by my troth, and ye tarry long, we shall put this land in ieopardie with a field, such a brother ye haue here, God make him a good man. For your wisedome knoweth well, that the profit of France standeth in the welfare of England. Written at London, the last of October. Bishoppe of Winchesters letter to the Duke of Bedford.

On the tenth day of January nert ensuing, the said Duke of Bedforde with his wife, came vnto London, and with them also came the said Bishop of Winchester, and the Maior and Citizens receiued him at Perton, and conueied him through the Citie vnto Westminster, where he was lodged in the Kings pallace, and the Bishoppe of Winchester was lodged within the Abbots lodging. On the morrow following, the Maior presented the Regent with a paire of basins of siluer, and ouer-gilt, and in them a 1000. markes of gold. The 21. of February, began a great councell at S. Albons, which was afterward reiorned to Northampton, but for that no due conclusion might be made, on the 15. of March was called a Parliament at Leicester, the which endured till the 25. day of June. This was called the Parliament of Battes, because men being forbidden to bring swords or other weapons, brought great battes and staues on their neckes, and when those 1426. Parliament at Leicester.

weapons

The Earle of Cambridge was made Duke of Yorke, and the Earle Marshall, Duke of Norfolke.

weapons were inhibited them, they toke stones and plomets of lead. During this parliament, the variance betwixt the two Lords was debated, insomuch, that the Duke of Glocester put a bill of complaint against the Bishop, contayning fiue articles, all which articles were by the Bishop sufficiently answered, and finally, by the counsel of the Lord Regent, all the matters of variance betweene the said two Lords, were put to the examination and iudgement, with the assistance of the Lordes of the Parliament, Henry Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Duke of Exceter, Iohn Duke of Norfolke, Thomas Bishop of Durham, Philip Bishop of Worcester, Iohn Bishop of Bathe, Humfrey Earle of Stafford, Raulph Lord Cromewell, and maister William Alnewike, then keper of the priuie seale, which Lords made a decree and awarde, so that eyther party toke other by the hand with friendly and louing words, none hauing amends of other. Upon Whitsonday following, was a solemne feast holden at Leicester aforesaid, where the Regent dubbed king Henry knight, & then forthwith the king dubbed Richard Duke of Yorke, that after was father to king Edward the fourth, and other to the number of fortie.

After the Parliament, the king went to Killingworth Castell.

An. reg. 5. Iohn Audley

An earthquake during two houres.

On Saturday the euen of Saint Michael the Archangell, in the morning before day, betwixt the houres of one and two of the clocke began a terrible earthquake, with lightning and thunder, which continued the space of two houres, and was vniuersall through the world, so that men had thought the world as then should haue ended, and the generall doome to haue followed. The vnreasonable beasts rored and drew to the townes, with hideous noise. Also the fowles of the ayre likewise cried out: such was the worke of God at that time to call his people to repentance.

1427. On Newyeres day Thomas Beawford the Duke of Exceter deceased at Greenewich, and was buried at Saint Edmondsbury in Suffolke. Thomas Beawchampe Earle of Warwike was made maister and gouernour vnto the king during his nonage.

About the purification of our Lady, the duke of Bedford Regent of France, with his wife and family passed the seas vnto Caleis, and so through Picardy into France: but ere he departed from Caleis, to wit, vpon the feast day of the Annunciation of our Lady, the Bishop of Winchester, within the Church of our Lady of Caleis, was created Cardinall, and after the solemnity done, the Regent toke him on his right hand, and so conueyed him vnto his lodging.

Ro. Gagwine

This yere was vnseasonable weathering, for it rained most part continually from Easter to Michaelmas.

This yere the Duke of Alanson, that before was taken prisoner at the battell of Vernole in Perch, was deliuered for a ransome of 200000. scuts of gold, which was 50000. markes sterling.

Ro Fabian.

This yere also, the Earle of Salisbury accompanied with the Earle of Suffolke, the Lord Talbot, and other, laid a strong siege vnto the city of Orleance, and held the Citizens very streight, and maugre the Duke of Orleance, and the Marshall of France, the Englishmen wan from them diuers strong holds

adioyning

adioyning to the Citie, and forced them to burne a great part of their suburbs: but one day as the said Earle of Salisbury, Thomas Mountagew, rested him at a bay window, a gunne was leuelled out of the Citie, the shot whereof shiuered so the bars of the yron grate, that one of the same bars stroke the Earle on the head, bearing away one of his eyes, and the one side of his cheeke. Sir Thomas Gargraue was likewise stricken, and died within two daies. The Earle was conueyed to Meun on Loyre, where, after eight daies he likewise departed the world, whose body was conueyed into England with all funerall pompe, and buried at Bisham in Barkshire by his progenitors, leauing behinde him one onely daughter named Alice, married to Richard Neuil sonne to Ralph Earle of Westmerland. The damage that the Realme of England receiued by the death of this notable man manifestly appeared, in that immediately after his death the prosperous good successe which the Englishmen had had, began to decline. In his place was appointed the Earle of Suffolke to be Lieutenant and Captaine of the siege, ioyning with him the Lord Scales, the Lord Talbot, sir Ion Fastolfe, and diuers other valiant Captaines. *Ann. reg. 6.* Earle of Salisbury slaine. 1428.

In a Parliament at Westminster was granted to the king a subsidie of euerie tunne of wine three shillings, and of other merchandise, except woll, fell, and cloth, twelue pence of the pound. Also, of euerie parish through the Realme (excepted Cities & Boroughs) the benefice being in value ten marks, ten of that parish should pay fiue shillings and eight pence, euery man eight pence: and of euery benefice that were ten pound, ten parishioners to pay 13. shillings and foure pence, and so rate and rate-like of euery benefice from the lowest to the highest. And for the inhabitants of Cities and Boroughs euery man being in value 20. shillings aboue his houshold stuffe, and the apparrell of him & his wife, should pay foure pence, & so after that rate vnto the richest. Parliament. Subsidie. *Ann. reg. 7.*

On the first of September the Cardinall of Winchester being returned from beyond the seas, was met by the Maior and his brethren, and certaine Citizens of London on horsebacke without the Citie, and so brought to his pallace in Southwarke. Cardinall of Winchester.

The eight of November the Duke of Norffolke was like to haue bene drowned, passing from Saint Mary Ouery stayres through London bridge, betwixt foure and fiue of the clocke at night, his barge being set vpon the piles ouerwhelmed, so that to the number of thirtie persons were drowned, and the Duke with two or three other that escaped were drawne vp with ropes. Duke of Norffolke escaped drowning. 1429.

King Heny kept his feast of Christs Natiuitie at Eltham.

The 21. of Februarie Richard Neuill was made Earle of Salisbury.

King Henry kept his Easter at Hartford.

So it fell out, that in the Lent season, victuall and artillery about Orleance began to ware scant in the English campe, wherefore the Earle of Suffolk appointed sir Iohn Fastolph, sir Thomas Rampstone, & sir Philip Helle, with their retinues, to ride to Paris to the Lord Regent, to informe him of that lacke, who incontinent prouided victuall, artillery and munitions necessarie, and loaded therewith many chariots and carts: and for the sure conueyance

ance of the same, he appointed sir Simon Morbrier prouost of Paris, with the guard of the Citie & other, to accompany sir Iohn Fastolph to the army lying at the siege of Orleance: they were in all to the number of 1500. men: these with great difficulty came to the English camp before Orleance, where they were ioyfully receiued, & commended for their valiant withstanding of enemies by the way, as they marched. The Earle of Suffolke being thus victualled, continued the siege, & euery day almost skirmished with the French men, who at length offered to treat to saue themselues and their City from captiuitie, they submit the City, themselues and all theirs vnder the obeisance of the Duke of Burgoin, because he was extract out of the bloude royall of Fraunce. The Duke with thankes certified them againe, that he would gladly receiue them, if the Duke of Bedford Lord Regent would therewith be contented. Whereupon messengers were dispatched to the Regent, who thought it neither conuenient nor honourable, that a Citie so long besieged by the king of Englands power, should be deliuered to any other forren Prince. Whereupon the Regent answered the Burgonian ambassadors, that sith the King of England had bene at all the charges about the siege and winning of the City, it was not consonant to reason, that the Duke should enioy the fruites of another mans charge: hereof followed a double mischiefe to the English proceedings in the Realme of Fraunce, for both the Burgoigne conceiued an inward grudge against the Englishmen, for that he suspected them to enuie his glory: and againe, the Englishmen left the siege of Orleance, which by this treaty they might haue recouered out of their enemies hands, and put their friends in possession of it.

While this treaty was in hand, Charles of Fraunce studied daily howe to prouide a remedie by the deliuery of his in Orleance out of present daunger. And euen at the same time, a monstrous woman, named Ioan la pucell de dieu, was presented vnto him at Chinon, where as then he soiourned, of which woman, her birth, qualities, and estate, the French Histories make mention at large, but to be short, so much credit was giuen to her, that she was honoured as a Saint, and so she handled the matter, that she was thought to be sent from God to the ayde of the French King Charles, the seuenth of that name. This woman being armed at all pointes like a valiant Captaine, rode from Poictiers to Bloys, and there found men of warre, victuall and munitions ready to be conueyed to Orleance. Here was it knowne that the Englishmen kept not so diligent watch as they had bene accustomed to do, and therefore this Maid with their French Captaines, comming forward in the dead time of the night, and in a great rayne and thunder, they entred into the Citie with all their victuall, artillerie, and other necessaries. The next day the Englishmen boldly assaulted the towne, but the Frenchmen defended the walles so, as no great feate chaunced that day betweene them. The Bastard of Orleance gaue knowledge to the Duke of Alanson in what daunger the towne stode without his present helpe, who comming within two leagues of the City, gaue knowledge to them within, that they should be readie the next day to receiue him, which accordingly was accomplished: for

The Maiden of God so called by the French.

for the Englishmen suffered him and his armie to enter. On the next day in the morning, the Frenchmen all together issued out of the towne, and wanne the bastell of Saint Low by assault, and set it on fire. And after they likewise assaulted the Tower at the bridge foote, and toke it ere the Lord Talbot could come to the succours, in the which William Gladesdale also Captaine was slayne, with the Lord Molins and the Lord Poynings also. Lord Molins slaine.

The Frenchmen with this good lucke, fetched a compasse about toward the bastell, which was in the keping of the Lord Talbot, the which like a good Captaine, without all feare issued forth against them, and gaue them a sharpe encounter, that they fledde againe into the Citie with great losse of men and small artillery: of Englishmen were lost in the two bastels to the number of fiue hundred men, or there about. The Earle of Suffolke, the Lord Talbot, the Lord Scales, and other Captaines assembled together in counsell, where it was amongst them determined to leaue their fortresses and bastels, and to assemble in the plaine field, there to abide all the day to see if the Frenchmen would issue forth to fight with them. But when the Frenchmen durst not come forth, the Englishmen set fire on their lodgings, and departed in good order of battell from Orleance. And the next day which was the eight of May, the Earle of Suffolke rode to Jergeaur with 400. men, and the Lord Tablot with another company turned to Yewn: and after he had fortified that Towne, he went to the Towne of Lauale, and wanne it together with the Castell. The siege of Orleance broken vp.

Thus when the Englishmen seuered themselues into garrisons, the Duke of Alanson, the Bastard of Orleance, Ioan le pucell, the Lord Gaucourt, and diuers other Captaines of the Frenchmen came on the 12. of June before the Towne of Jergeaur: where the Earle of Suffolke and his two brethren sojourned, and gaue to the Towne so fierce an assault on three parts, that Poiton de Sentrailes perceiuing another part voide of defence, scaled the walles on that side, and without difficulty, tooke the Towne, and slue sir Alexander Poole, brother to the Earle, and many other to the number of 200. but the French lost 300. good men. Of the Englishmen were taken 40. with the Earle of Suffolke and his brother Iohn. The Frenchmen as they went to Orleance, slew their prisoners all sauing the Earle and his brother. Shortly after the same French army came to Mahun, where they toke the Tower at the bridge foote, and put therein a garrison: from thence they remoued to Bangeney, and constrayned them in the Towne to yeld. At this place there came to the Duke of Alanson, the new Constable Arthur of Britaine, and the Lord Dalbert with other, also the Earle of Vandosme came to them, so that they were now ioyned to the number of 23000. men, the which shortly after fought with the Lord Talbot, neere to a village in Beause, called Patay, at which battell, the L. Talbot was sore wounded at the backe, and taken, & the rest put to flight: in which fight were slaine aboue 1200. and 40. taken, of whom the L. Talbot, the L. Scales, the L. Hungerford, and sir Thomas Rapston were chiefe. This ouerthrow did so much abash the Englishmen, that Alexander Poole slaine. Earle of Suffolke taken by the French.

immediately

immediately thereupon the townes of Januile, Mahun, Fork, and diuers o-ther returned from the English part, and became French. Charles the French king perceiuing fortune to smile vpon him, determined to conquer the City of Reimes that he might be there crowned, in his iourney thitherward he besieged the City of Aurerre, and had it. From thence he went before Troies which was deliuered to him, and then Chalons, &c. In semblable déde they of Reimes yéld themselues: in the which towne the said Charles (in the pre-sence of the Dukes of Lorain, and Barre, and of all the noble men of his fa-ction) was sacred king of France, by the name of Charles the seuenth.

The Duke of Bedford aduertised of all these doings, assembled his power a-bout him, and hauing together 10000. men, besides Normans, departed out of Paris in warlike fashion, and passing through Bry to Monstrean Fault Yone, sent by his herault Bedford, letters to the French king, signifying to him, that where he had contrarie to his finall conclusion, accorded betwéne his brother king Henry the fift, and king Charles the first, by allurement of a diuellish witch, taken vpon him the name, title, and dignitie of the king of France, and further, had by murther, stealth, craft, and deceitfull meanes vio-lently gotten, and wrongfully kept diuers Cities and Townes belonging to the king of England his Nephew: for prose whereof he was come downe from Paris with his army, into the countrey of Brie, by dint of sworde to proue his writing and cause true, willing his enemies to chose the place, and in the same he would giue him battel. The new French king being come from Reimes to Dampmartine, studying how he might compasse them in Paris, was halfe abashed at this message, but yet to set a good countenance on the matter, he aunswered the Herault, that he would soner séeke his maister, than his maister should néede to pursue him. The Duke of Bed-ford hearing this answere, marched toward the king, and pitched his field in a strong place. The French king though at the first he meant to haue abidden battell, yet when he vnderstood that the Duke was equall to him in number of people, he chaunged his purpose, and turned with his armie a little out of the way. The Duke of Bedforde perceiuing his faint cou-rage, followed him by hilles and dales, till hée came to a Towne not farre from Senlis, where he found the French king and his armie lodged: wherefore he ordered his battels, setting the Archers before, and himselfe with the Noble men in the maine battell, and put the Normans on both sides for winges. The French king also ordered his battels to the most aduantage. Thus these two armies lay two daies and two nights, eyther in sight of other without any great doing, except a few skirmishes. At length in the dead of the night, as priuily as might be, the French king brake vp his campe, and fled to Bray. The Duke of Bedford had much adoe to stay his people in the morning from pursuit of the French kings armie: but for that he mistrusted the Parisians, he would not depart farre from that Citie: and so returned thither againe.

Ann. reg. 8.

In this season Pope Martine the fift, meaning to subdue the Bohemians that dissented from the Church of Rome in matters of faith, and religion, appointed

appointed Henry Beawford Bishop of Winchester, Cardinall of S. Eusiby, to be his legate in an army to inuade the kingdome of Boheme, and to bring a power of men with him out of England, and because the warre touched religion, he licensed the Cardinall to take a tenth of the spiritualitie, the Bishop gathered the money, and assembled 4000. men and more. As this Bishop was come to Douer, ready to haue passed the seas into Flanders, the Duke of Glocester (hauing receiued letters from the Duke of Bedford, containing an earnest request to releeue him with men of war) writ to the Bishop of Winchester, willing him to passe with all his army toward the Duke of Bedford. The Cardinall least he should runne into the note of infamy, if he refused to ayde the Regent of France, passed ouer with his power, & brought the same vnto his cosen to the Citie of Paris, where he remained not long, but passed on his iourney towards Boheme, from whence in short time he returned into England.

The first of November, king Henry being about the age of nine yéeres was solemnly crowned in Saint Peters Church of Westminster, at whose coronation were made 36. knights of the Bath, & after solemnization in the Church finished, an honourable feast in the great hall of Westminster was kept, whereof ye may read a large discourse in Robert Fabian. After which feast great preparations was made for the kings iourney into France. King Henry crowned.

Richard Duke of Yorke was constituted Constable of England in absence of Iohn Duke of Bedford Regent of France, he was made Constable, for, and because of a battel to be fought betweene Iohn Vpton, and Iohn Downe he was confirmed Constable of England for terme of life, so that he did no waies derogate Iohn Duke of Bedford, that was beyond the sea, dated the xx. of January. 1430. Combat fought in Smithfield.

The xviii. of January a battell was done in Smithfield within the lists before the king, betweene two men of Feuersham in Kent, Iohn Vpton notarie appellant, and Iohn Downe gentleman defendant, Iohn Vpton put vpon Iohn Downe, that he and his compiers should imagine the kinges death, the day of his coronation: when they had long fought, the king toke vp the matter and forgaue both parties.

The xxvii. day of Aprill the king toke shipping at Douer, & landed the same day at Caleis, hauing in his company the Dukes of Yorke and Norffolke, the Bishops of Bath, Ely, and Rochester, the Earles of Huntington, Stafford, Warwicke, Orford, Deuonshire, Portaine of Ewe, and of Drmond, and Barons, the Lord Boucher, Beaumond, Typtoft, Fitz water, Roos, Arundale, Audley, Fauconbridge, Gray Cordner, Scroope, and Wels.

Whilest the king remained at Caleis many skirmishes were fought betweene the Englishmen and the French in diuers parts of France, and the Frenchmen preuailed greatly by helpe of a woman which they named The mayden of God. So that lastly she with her company came to the towne of Champaigne, to the ende to remoue the siege laid thereunto by the Duke of Burgoigne and other of the English Captaines, and the 23. of May she gaue battell to the Englishmen, and fought with them a long time, but in Le pucel de dieu

the end by the manhod of a Burgonian knight named sir Iohn Luxemborough, she was taken aliue, and her company distressed, she was conueyed to the Citte of Roane, and there kept a season, where she fained her selfe to be with child, but when the contrary was knowne, she was condemned and brent.

After this, king Henry by small iournepes into Fraunce, came to Paris, where he was honourably receiued of the Citizens and taken for their soue-
Robert Gagwine raign Lord and King, whiles he there remained, (saith Gagwine) the Frenchmen wanne many holdes of the Englishmen, and the Burgonians in the countrie of Bry.

The third of August died Ioan countesse of Urmonde, and was buried at Saint Thomas of Acres in London.

Ann.reg.9. Iohn Duke of Norffolke toke againe the townes of Dampmartine, and the Chace Mongay with diuers other townes. The Earle of Stafford toke the town of Bryn, Countie Robert, and from thence forraged all the countrey to Sens, and after toke Quesney in Bry, Grand Pups, and Rampilon.

Some after Easter the Lord Protector was warned of an assembly of cer-
1431. taine lewde persons, vnder pretence of religiously minded men, to be assem-
Conspiracy at Abington. bled at Abington, wherefore he sent thither certaine persons, and also rode thither himselfe, and there arrested the baily of the towne named William Mandeuill a weauer, the which was appointed for a Captaine, who had named himselfe Iacke Sharpe of Wigmers land in Wales, who being examined, confessed that he meant to haue done many mischiefes, especially against Priestes, so that he would haue made their heads as cheape as sheepes heads (that is to say) three or a penie, for as some write, ten for a peny: many of his complices were taken and sent to diuers prisons. Their Captaine was drawne, hanged, and headed at Abington, and his head was sent to London, and set on the bridge: his other fautors were executed in diuers places and countries to the terror of other. Also the 12. of July Richard Russell woolman, was drawne, hanged, and quartered, for that he would haue made Dukes and Earles at his pleasure.

An.reg.10. Richard Robsart Lord Bourcher deceased, and was buried at Westminster.

King Henry remaining still in France, the Earle of Arundale accompanied with 2000. Englishmen, sent a certaine of his company vnto a towne, called Beaumount, to prouoke the Frenchmen to issue out of the towne, which small company when Boysicant and Sentrales then Captaines beholde, they with their souldiers sped them forth to take the said Englishmen, the which by little and little gaue backe, till they had tolled the Frenchmen a good space from the towne, and then set vpon them with a stout courage, and helde them on hande till the Earle with his companie rescued them: then betwixt them was a cruell fight, but in the ende the Frenchmen were chased, and the said Sentrayle with many footemen of the said towne were slaine.

In the moneth of November king Henry by small iourneyes into France,

remoued

remoued from Roan to Pontoyse, and so to Saint Dioneſſe, & then to Paris, where he was receiued with great honour by the Citizens, and taken for their ſoueraigne Lord and King. There were in his company of his owne nation, his vncle the Cardinall of Winchester, Iohn Kempe Cardinall and Archbiſhop of Yorke, the Dukes of Bedford, of Yorke, and Norffolke, the Earles of Warwicke, Salisbury, Orford, Huntingdon, Dymond, Mortaine, and Suffolke. Of Gaſcoine there were the Earles of Longuile, and March, beſides many Noble men of England, Gwine, and Normandie: and the chiefe of the French nation, were the Dukes of Burgoigne, and Lewes of Luxemburg Cardinall and Chancellor of France for king Henry: the Biſhoppes of Beauoys and Noyne both peeres of France, beſides the Biſhop of Paris, and diuers other Biſhops, the Earle of Vantemount and other noble men. And he had a guard of 3000. archers, ſome on horſebacke, ſome on foote. To ſpeake of the honour, where with he was receiued into the Citie of Paris, what pageants were prepared, and how richly, the gates, ſtreets, and bridges on euerie ſide were hanged with coſtly clothes of arras and tapeſtrie, it would be too long a proceſſe.

On the ſeuenth day of December king Henry was crowned in Paris, by the Cardinall of Winchester, at the which coronation was preſent, the Duke of Burgoigne, the Duke of Bedford Regent, and diuers other Nobles of France. After the ſolemnitie of this feaſt was ended, the king departed from Paris, and ſo came to Roane, where he held his Chriſtmaſſe, and that done, hee returned to Caleis, where when he had ſoiourned a ſeaſon, hee toke shipping and returned into England, and landed at Douer the eleuenth of February, and then riding toward London, hee was met on Barham Downe, betwixt Douer and Canterbury, by a great companie of Gentles and commons of Kent, all clad in a liuerie with red hoodes, the which accompanied him till he came to Blackheath, which was on the one and twentith day of February, where hee was met by the Maior of London, who rode in a gowne of crimſon Veluet, his Aldermen in ſcarlet, and the Citizens all in white gownes and red hoods, with diuerſe workes or cogniſances broderred vpon their ſleeues after the faculties of their miſteries or craftes: and after due obeyſance and ſaluting of the King, they rode on before him towardes the Citie. And when the King was come to the bridge, there was deuiſed a mightie Giant, ſtanding with a ſword drawne in his hand, hauing written certaine ſpeeches in meeter of great reioycing and wel-comming of the King to the Citie, on the middeſt of the bridge, and in diuers other places of the Citie, were diuers faire and ſumptuous pageants repleniſhed with goodly and beautifull perſonages, the order and ſpeeches whereof, are ſet downe by Robert Fabian in his chronicle. Thus being conueyed to his pallace at Weſtminſter, the Maior with the Citizens returned to London, and on the 24. day of Februarie the Maior and Aldermen rode to the King, and preſented him with a hampire of golde, and therein a thouſand pound of nobles.

King Henry crowned at Paris. 1432.

This yeere by reaſon of the ſouldiers of Caleis, a reſtraint was made

there of the Wolles, for they were not content of their wages; wherefore the Duke of Bedford Regent of France, came down thither in Easter week, at which time many souldiers were arrested: and rode againe to Mirwine. And hauing not long since buried the Lady Anne his late wife, sister to ỹ duke of Burgoigne, he married there the Lady Iaquet the daughter to Peter Earle of Saint Paule, and shortly after returned to Caleis, where he caused foure of those souldiers to be beheaded, on the xi. of June, and 110. souldiers to bee banished the towne, besides 120. that were banished before that time. And vpon Midsummer euen the Lord Regent with his new wedded spouse came to London, and remained there till the latter end of August, and then returned againe to Paris.

The Duke of Burgoine was nothing pleased with this new alliance contracted by the Duke of Bedforde, with the house of Lutzenbourgh, but the marriage was consummate ere he could finde any meane to preuent it.

The Frenchmen raised a crew, and sodainly tooke the towne of Saint Valarie in Normandy, nere to the riuer of Some, and an other army vnder the leading of sir Ambrose de Lore, wasted all the countrey about Cane. The Duke of Bedford not minding to be idle, sent the Earle of Arundell, Henry the Earle of Warwicks sonne, the Lord Lisle Adam Marshall of France for king Henry, and 1200. men of warre, with ordinance and munitions to besiege the towne of Laigny vpon the riuer of Marne, the Earle with shot of a Canon brake the arch of the bridge, and got from the Frenchmen their bulwarke, and set it on fire, diuers assaults were made, but the towne was well defended, by 800. men of armes, besides other souldiers. The Duke of Bedford hereof aduertised, gathered an army of 6000. men wherof were Captains Robert Lord Willoughby, sir Andrew Ogard, Chamberlaine to the Duke, sir John Saluaine, baillife of Roane, sir John Mountgomery, baillife of Caux, sir Philip Hal baillife of Vernale, sir Richard Ratcliffe deputy of Caleis, sir Ralph Neuill, sir Ralph Standish, sir John Handford, sir Richard Enthin, sir Richard Haringdon, baillife of Eureux, sir William Fulthorpe, sir Thomas Griffith of Ireland, Dauid Hall, Thomas Strangwish, Leonard Ormstone, Esquires, and Thomas Gerard. The Duke of Bedford with this army came to the siege before Laigny, where he made a bridge of boates, and brought his ordinance so nere the town, that to al people it seemed not long able to resist: but the bastard of Orliance Earle of Dunoys, with other hardy Captaines valiantly defended it. At the length the French king perceiuing this towne to be the key betweene the territories of Burgoigne, English and French, & that the losse thereof should turne him to irrecouerable domage, sent the Lord of Rieux, Poyton, the Hire, the Lord Gawcourt and 6000. men, with plenty of victuals, to the intent, eyther to raise the siege, or at the least victual the towne. The Frenchmen framed themselues in order of battell, as though they would doe much, but did nothing in effect: but that whilest part of them maintained a skirmish, an other sort conueyed into the towne thirtie oxen, and other victuall. In that skirmish were slaine diuers valiant Frenchmen, and the rest considering how the Englishmen were planted, being now the beginning of

August

August, they remoued and went vnto Fort vnder Perre, where by a bridge made of empty pipes, they passed into the yle of France. The Duke of Bedford not minding to lose the more for the lesse, raised his siege, and returned to Paris, nothing more minding then to trie his quarrell by dint of sworde against his enemies, if they would thereto agree. And thereupon he sent Bedford his herault to the Lord Gaucourt & other Captains of the French armie, offering them battaile within a conuenient time, and where they would appoint. To the which officer at armes the Captaines answered, that battaile they feared not, nor the English force they much regarded, but they saide there was time to gaine, and time to lose, of the which they doubted not, to espie the one or the other, to their gaine or losse. *Ann.reg.* 11.

The 25. of November the Lord Fitzwalter was drowned on the sea, and many other harmes were done by tempest.

The Regent, sent Peter of Luxemborough Earle of Saint Paule, and Robert Lord Willoughby, with a competent number of men to besiege the towne of Saint Valarie, which the Frenchmen a little before had taken, these valiant Captaines enuironed the towne with a strong siege. Within the towne, were sir Lewes de Vicount, sir Philip de la Towre, and sir Reignold de Verseiles Captaines with 200. good fighting men, which by the space of three weekes, manfully defended the same. But then perceiuing the fierceneesse of the Englishmen, and the weakeneesse of themselues, and hauing no hope of reliefe, rendered the towne, their horse and harneis onely saued. 1433.

After this towne was thus gotten, the Earle of Saint Paule, and the Lord Willoughby returned to the Regent, where they were well welcommed, and after the said Earle departed from Paris, to lay siege to the Castell of Monches, but being encamped neere to the towne of Blangy, he by a sodaine maladie finished his daies and departed this life, leauing his seignories to Lewes his sonne and heire.

On the eight day of July, king Henry beganne his Parliament at Westminster, continued it till Lammasse, and then adiourned it vntill Saint Edwards tide. Parliament.

This yeere in the southwest appeared a blasing starre.

During the raigne of this king Henry the first were Lieutenants ouer the Realme of Ireland, Edmond Earle of March, and Iames Earle of Ormond his deputie: Iohn Sutton knight Lord of Dudley, and sir Thomas Strange his deputie: sir Thomas Stanley, and sir Christopher Planket his deputie: Lyon Lord Welles, and the Earle of Ormonde his deputie: Iames Earle of Ormonde the kings Lieutenant by himselfe: Iohn Earle of Shrewsbury, and the Archbishop of Dinelin Lord Iustice in his absence: Richard Plantagenet Duke of Yorke, father to Edward the fourth and Earle of Ulster, had the office of Lieutenant by Letters Patents, during the space of tenne yeeres, who deputed vnder him at seuerall times, the Baron of Dinelin, Richard Fitz Eustace knight, Iames Earle of Ormonde, and Thomas Fitz Moris, Earle *Ann.reg.* 12.

of Kildare: to this Richard then resident in Diuelin, was borne within the Castell there, the second sonne George Duke of Clarence, afterward drowned in a butte of malmesey.

1434. John Lord Talbot.

John Lord Talbot gathered a crew of chosen men of warre in England, to the number of 800. and about the beginning of the moneth of March, sayled into Normandy, and passed by Roan towards Paris, and in his way he toke the strong Castell of Jeing betweene Beauuois and Gisors, and caused all the Frenchmen within to be hanged on the walles, and after raised the Castell, and came to the Regent Duke of Bedford at Paris. The presence of which renowmed Captaine, so incouraged the hearts of the English nation, that they thought nothing able to resist their puissance, and so discouraged the hearts of the Frenchmen, that they were in doubt whether it were better to fight or to flie, for he was a chosen Captaine, and in martiall feates fully instructed. When this hardy Baron had communed with the Regent, he departed from Paris with his army, and besieged the Castell of Beaumount vpon Oise, whereof was Captaine sir Amadour de Viguolles, brother to the Hire: which Castell was sone rendred vpon condition. After that he recouered without long siege, the townes of Creile, the bridge of Saint Warens, the new towne of Emoy, Crispy in Valoys, and Cleramount in Beauuois: and so with great riches and rich prisoners, he returned againe to Paris.

The towne of Saint Denis, which is within two English miles of Paris, was gotten by the practise of one Iohn Notice a Knight of Orleance, from Mathew Gougly, and Thomas Kiriell Captaines, they slew there many Englishmen, and toke many prisoners, but sone after the saide Captaines with strength taken from Paris, laid such strong a siege about Saint Denis, that finally they agreed to deliuer the towne to the Englishmen.

In the very same season the Earle of Arundell toke the Castell of Bomeline, and rased it to the ground, and after toke the Castell of Dozle, and from thence came to saint Selerine, where the Lord Ambrose de Lore was Captaine, which issued out and fought with the Englishmen so eagerly at the first, that he droue them backe an arrow shot: but the Earle so incouraged his men, that they toke new courages to them, and set so fiercely on the Frenchmen, that they slue a great number, and droue the remnant into the towne. After this victory, he besieged Louiers, whereof was Captaine the Hire, and his brother, which rendred the towne without stroke. Then the Earle enuironed the towne of Saint Selerine with a strong siege, when he had lien there almost three moneths, euery day attempting somewhat, for the performance of his enterprise: in conclusion at the three monethes ende, he gaue so fierce assault, that by force he entred the towne, and slue Iohn Almaine, and Guillam Saint Aubine, the chiefe Captaines, and 800. of their men of warre, and the children of Loire were taken prisoners: he repleuished the towne, and made Captaine sir Iohn Cornewall. Then he besieged the strong towne of Silly, and the inhabitants deliuered pledges vpon condition, that if the towne were not rescued within thirtie daies, they should ren-

der

der the towne into his possession: which offer was taken, and when the time was expired, the towne was deliuered, where leauing a garrison, the Earle departed to Mans, & in the meane way toke the Castels of Melley and Saint Laurence.

The Lord Willoughby, and sir Thomas Kiriell returning with great victories out of the parties of Burgoigne, toke in their way the towne of Louiers, and furnished it both with men and munitions.

The Earle of Arundell minding to haue besieged the towne of Rey, was there slaine with Ralph Standish, the Earle of Arundell was buried at Beauuois, in the gray friers there. The Earle of Arundell wounded to death.

Through a great frost, that lasted from the 25. of November, vnto the tenth of February, the Thamis was so frozen, that the merchandise which came to the Thamis mouth, was there landed, and carried through Kent to London. Great frost.

When the Pope Eugenius the fourth, and his Cardinals after long labour could make no peace betwixt king Henry of England and France, and Charles also named king of France, they at length made a peace betwixt the said Charles and Philip Duke of Burgoigne, wher by the said Duke of Burgoigne became vtter enemie to the king of England, and some after the said Duke began his order of the Lilly, and the Golden fleece, and ordained certaine knights of that order, and made thereunto many statutes, whereof some of them were like vnto the statutes of the Garter. 1435.

This yeare on the 14. of September died Iohn Duke of Bedford Regent of France, a man as politike in peace, as hardie in warre, and yet no more hardy than mercifull when he had the victory, whose bodie was with all funerall pompe, and solemne exequies buried in the Cathedrall Church of our Ladie in Roan, on the north side of the high altar, vnder a sumptuous and costly monument: which tombe when king Lewes the 11. by certaine vndiscrete persons was counselled to deface, affirming that it was a great dishonour, both to the king, and to the realme, to see the enemy of his father, and theirs to haue so solemne and rich memorial: he answered saying. What honour shall it be to vs, or to you to breake this monument, and to pull out of the ground the dead bones of him, whom in his life time, neither my father, nor your progenitors, with all their puissance, were once able to make flie one foote backward: but by his strength, wit, and policie kept them all out of the principall dominions of the realme of France, and out of this Noble Dutchie of Normandy: wherefore I say, first, God saue his soule, and let his bodie now lie in rest, which when he was aliue, would haue disquieted the proudest of vs all: and for the tombe, I assure you is not so decent, nor conuenient as his honour and actes deserued. The Duke of Bedford died. E. Hall. *Ann. reg.* 14. A worthy saying of a king against defacers of monuments.

After the death of the Noble Prince the Duke of Bedford, the Frenchmen began not onely to withdrawe their obedience, which they had by oth promised to the King of England, but also toke sword in hand, and openly defied the Englishmen: but the Englishmen appointed for regent in Fraunce Richard Duke of Yorke, sonne to Richard Earle of Cambridge (beheaded at Richard Duke of Yorke, made Regent of France.

Hampton.) This Richard now Regent was so disdained of Edmond Duke of Somerset, being cosen to the King, that by all meanes possible he sought his hinderance, by reason whereof, ere the Duke of Yorke could get his dispatch, he was constrained to linger till the Citie of Paris, and diuers other the chiefest townes in France were gotten by the French king.

1436. The Duke of Yorke perceiuing his euill will, openly dissembled that which he inwardly minded, and thus either of them wrought things to the others displeasure, till at length, by mortall warre they were both consumed, with almost all their whole lines and offsprings.

The Normans of the countrey of Caux, being hartened by the death of the Duke of Bedford, beganne a new rebellion, slue diuers Englishmen, robbed many townes that were vnder the English obeisance, and toke the towne of Harflew by assault, and diuers other townes. But the new Lord Regent being aduertised, sent forth the Lord Scales, sir Thomas Kiriell, and the Lord Hoo, which so afflicted these rebels of Caux, that they slue aboue fiue thousand persons, and brent all the Townes and Villages in the countrey, not being walled, so that in that part was neither habitation, nor tillage, for all the people fled into Britaine, and all the beasts of the countrey were brought to Candebecke, where a good sheepe was sold for an English penie, and a cow for twelue pence. Daily was skirmishing in euery part, in so much, that the Lord Scales discomfited at the Rye beside Roan, the Hire and 1500. valiant Frenchmen, of the which, aboue three hundred were taken prisoners, beside seuen goodly fayre conflicts. Amongst other of the prisoners, were sir Richard Reiginald de Fountaines, sir Alaine Gerond, Alaine de Monsey, and Geffrey Gram Captaine of the Scots. But yet this victory and others the like, staied not the Frenchmen from working treason daily, in so much, that diuers townes turned to the part of king Charles, and some were taken by practise, as Drappe, Boys de Vincent and other.

A cow for xii. pence, and a sheepe for a penie.

Here is one chiefe point to be noted, that eyther the disdaine among the chiefe peeres of the Realme of England (as ye haue heard) or the negligence of the kings Counsell, was the losse of the whole dominion of France, betweene the riuers of Seine and Marne, and in especiall of the Noble Citie of Paris: for here before were sent ouer thousands for defence of the holdes and fortresses, now were sent hundreds, yea and scores, some rascals, and some not able to draw a bowe, or beare a bill: for the Lord Willoughby, and the Bishop of Terrouanne, which had the Gouernment of the Citie of Paris, had in their company not past 2000. Englishmen. Which weaknesse king Charles wel perceiuing, he appointed the Constable Arthure of Britaine, the Earle of Dunoys, the Lords De la Roch, and Lisle Adam, with other valiant Captaines, and men of warre, as well Burgonians as French, to go before Paris, trusting by fauour of certain Citizens, with whom he had intelligence, shortly to be Lord of the Citie, without great losse or battell: so these Captaines came before the Citie of Paris, but perceiuing that all things succeeded not according to their expectation, they returned to Mount Martyr, and the next day set on the towne of Saint Diones, where they slue two

hundred

hundred Englishmen, and vpon composition permitted the other to depart to Paris.

Thomas Lord Beaumount taken prisoner.

Thomas Lord Beaumount, which of late was come to Paris with 800. men, issued forth of the Citie with 600. souldiers, intending to viewe the doings and number of the French armie, but being espied, hee was sodainly compassed about, so that he was discomfited and taken, and with him 80. prisoners, besides 200. which were slaine in the field, and the remnant chased to the gates of the Citie. The Parisians, especially the maister of the hals, and some of the Vniuersitie, and Michaell Lellier, and many other Burgesses of the Citie, perceiuing the weakenesse of the Englishmen, and the force of the Frenchmen, signified to the French Captaines their mindes, willing them with all diligence to come, that they mought receiue so rich a prap to them to be deliuered. The Constable delaying no time, came with his power, and lodged by the Charterhouse, and the Lord Lisle Adam approching to the walles, shewed to the Citizens a charter, sealed with the great seale of King Charles, by the which he had pardoned them their offences, and granted them their olde liberties, so that they would be to him true and obedient: which being to them declared, they ranne about the towne, crying Saint Denis, liue king Charles. The Englishmen perceiuing this, determined to kéepe the gate of Saint Diones, but the chaines were drawne, and women and children cast downe stones and scalding water on their heades, and the Citizens slue them, the Bishop of Tirwine, the Lord Willoughby, and sir Simon Morniher, withdrew to the bastle Saint Anthonie, whilest this rumour was in the towne, the Earle of Dunois, and other scaled the wals, and some passed the riuer by boates, and opened the gate of Saint Iames, by the which the Constable with his banner displaied entered. The Bishoppe and the Lord Willoughby defended their fortresse terme daies, and yelded. Thus was the Citie of Paris brought into the possession of Charles the French king, &c. now when Paris, Saint Denis, Saint Germaine and diuers other townes in Fraunce were taken for lacke of succour, the Duke of Yorke Regent of France, came ouer into Normandy with 8000. men, and in his company the Earles of Salisbury and Suffolke, the Lord Falconbridge and other, but this Regent neuer did good in Fraunce, as appeareth by the histories.

Paris yeelded to the French.

Calcis besieged by the Duke of Burgoigne.

The 19. day of July, the Duke of Burgoigne, with a great multitude of Burgonians and Flemmings appeared before Calcis, and there pight his Paullions and Tents, at which season was Lieutenaunt of Calcis sir Iohn Ratcliffe Knight, and of the Castell was Lieutenaunt the Baron of Dudley: this siege endured about three weekes, in which season many knightly actes were done and exercised on both parts.

Ro Fabian.

On the second day of August the Duke of Gloucester, protectour of England, with 500. sailes, (as some write,) landed at Calcis, and entended vpon the third day following to haue issued out of the towne, and to haue giuen battaile to the Flemmings, (but as our English writers testifie,) so soone as the Duke of Burgoigne was ware of the great power of the Lord

Protector,

protector, he toke with him of his ordinance that he might lightly carrie, and the other that were cumbersome he left behind. When the duke with his host was thus fled, the Lord protector which his people followed him into the countrey by the space of eleuen dayes, in which season he brent ỹ two townes of Popering and Bell, and returned to Calais, and so into England.

An. reg. 15. This yere was the Castle or towne of Rokesborough in Scotland besieged by the King of Scots, but when he heard that Sir Ralph Gray knight was comming thither with a competent number to remoue the siege, anon he departed, leauing some part of his ordinance behind him, to his great shame and dishonour.

1437. Queene Katherine deceased. The 3. of January Quéene Katherine late wife to Henry the fift, and mother to king Henry the first, departed out of this transitory life at Bermondsey, and on the eight of February hir body was brought to S. Katherins by the tower, from thence to S. Pauls, and so was buryed at Westminster in our Ladyes chappell, and hir corpes being taken vp againe in the raigne of king Henry the 7. when he laid the foundation of his new chappell there, she was neuer since buried, but remaineth still aboue ground in a coffin of boords, behind the east end of the quire. This Quéene Katherine (saith Hall) after the death of K. Henry the fift hir husband, being yong and lusty, following more hir own appetite, than friendly counsell, & regarding more hir priuate affection, than her owne honour, toke to husband (saith he) a goodly gentleman, named Owen Tewther, by whom she conceiued and brought forth three sonnes, Edmond, Iaspar, and another which was a monke of Westminster, and a Daughter which liued not long. After whose death, king Henry because they were his brethren, of one wombe descended, created Edmond Earle of Richmond, and Iaspar Earle of Penbroke: which Edmond had by Margaret Daughter and sole heire to Iohn Duke of Somerset, Henry, which after was king of this Realme, called king Henry the seuenth.

The Dutches of Bedford, sister to Lewes Earle of S. Paul, without counsell of her friends, maried a lusty knight, called Sir Richard Wooduile, to the great displeasure of hir vncle the Bishop of Turwine, and the Earle hir brother. This Sir Richard was made baron of Riuers, and after Earle, and had by his Lady many noble sonnes, and faire daughters, whereof one was Lady Elizabeth, after Quéene of England, maried to king Edward the fourth.

This yére the 14. of January at none, the great stone gate at London bridge with the tower vpon it next to Southwarke fell downe in the Thamis and two of the farthest arches of the same bridge, and yet no man perished in body, which was a great worke of God,

Colledge of Tatshall founded. Ralph Lord Cromwell, and Matild his wife erected the colledge of the Trinitie at Tatshall in Linconshire, which Colledge at the suppression in the 38. of Henry the eight was valued to dispend yerely 348. pounds, fiue shillings.

Also this yére on the ninth of July, Iane late Quéene of England, and before Dutches of Brytaine, daughter to the king of Nauarre, and wife to king Henry the fourth, died in the manner of Payering a Bowze in Eſſex,

from

from whence she was remoued to Bermondsey, and from thence conueyed to Canterbury, where she was solemnly enterred by King Henry the fourth her husband.

This yeare the King gaue licence to Humfrey Duke of Glocester, and Elianor his wife, to build and embattell his manor house at Greenewich, to inclose two hundred acres of ground pasture, wood, and heath, and to imbattell his tower in the same parke, &c. Record. Tower of Greenwich.

In the meane time, Iohn Duke of Somerset accompanied with the Lords of Fauconbridge, Talbot, Sir Francis Surien Arraganois, Mathew Gough, Thomas Pawlet, Thomas Harington, Walter Lymbroke, Iohn Geding, William Watton Esquires, and Thomas Hilton batlife of Roane, with a puissance of the English party, besieged the towne of Harflew both by water and by land. The captaine within the towne was called Sir Iohn de Stuteuile, and Sir Robert his brother, with other, to the number of 600. fighting men. The assailants made trenches, both to assault the town, and to let the French from succours, that they should neither approch nor aide the townes men besieged: diuers assaultes were giuen, and great ordinance was laid before the gate of the towne, which ouerthrew buildings: the siege endured long, to the great discomfiture of them within, whereof they aduertised the King, who sent thither the Earle of Owe, the Earle of Dunops, the bastard of Burbon, the Lord Gainecourt and other, with 4000. men, these passed the riuer of Some betweene Amias and Corby, came before the towne, and daily skirmished with the Englishmen, but nothing preuailed, and therefore returned. The captaines of the towne rendred the towne to Iohn Duke of Somerset, who made captaines there Thomas Pawlet, William Lymbrike, Christopher Barker, and George S. George, which many yeares manfully defended the towne and hauen, but afterward when the said Duke was regent, he not onely lost the towne, but also the Citie of Roane, with many other Cities.

This yeare was a parliament holden at Westminster in which were diuers notable conclusions ordained, aswell for the preseruation of peace at home, as for the maintenance of war in outward regions: and an act was made for buieng and selling by strangers, very profitable to the publike weal if it were obserued. Parliament at Westminster. *An. reg.* 16.

On the 6. of November the Earle of Warwike as regent of France, passed the sea, after he had been seuen times shipped and vnshipped, and landed at Harflew with 1000. fresh souldiers, and came to Roan, and then the Duke of Yorke returned into England.

The Earle of Warwicke hearing that the Duke of Burgoyne besieged the Castle of Croytie, sent the Lord Talbot, the Lord Fauconbridge, Sir Thomas Kiriel, Sir Iohn Montgomerie, Thomas Lymbroke, Thomas Chandos, Dauy Hall, and other Knights and Esquires, and in all 5000. men. When the Duke of Burgoyne was informed of the approch of the Lord Talbot, and other, hee with all his power sauing 400. left in a bastle by him there newly builded, fledde to Abbeuile, which bastle was soone gained, and the men either slaine or taken. After this the Lord Talbot 1438.

sent

sent to the Duke of Burgoin, signifying to him, that except he would come forth, and giue him battell, he would vtterly waste his countrey of Picardy, and according to his promise he brent townes, spoyled, and slew many people in Picardy, but for all this doings, the Duke of Burgoyne appeared not, but got him from Abbeuile to Ambois, so that the Lord Talbot abode 20. daies in Picardy and Artois, destroying all afore him, and returned without impeachment.

Owen Tewther foulyhurting his keeper, brake out of Newgate, but was taken afterward by the Lord Beaumond, and brought again to Newgate, and againe escaped. This Owen was thus imprisoned by the Duke of Glocester, for that he had foure children by Quéene Katherine, late wife to Henry the fift, as is afore shewed. This Owen was many yeares afterward taken at a skirmish about Wigmore, and brought by sir Richard Vehan grandfather to great Vehan the sergeant at armes, to Hereford, and there beheaded, and buried: but afterward Iaspar sonne to Owen sodainly toke sir Richar Vehan in his house, or, as some say, at Chepstow Castle, and caused his head to be smitten off. In the moneth of June the Earle of Huntington (as steward of Gwine) with 2000. archers, and 400. spears was sent into Gascoigne, as a supply to the contry and commons of the same. Also sir Richard Wooduile, sir William Chamberlaine, sir William Peits, and sir William Story with 1000. men were sent to stuffe the townes in Normandy, which at that time had thereof great néede, for the English Captaines had small confidence in the Normans, and not too much in some of their owne nation, for briberie, with couetousnes ranne fast abroad with French crowns, that vneth any creature could hold their hands close, or purses shut.

John Leiland. Owen Tewther prisoner in Newgate, and after beheaded

An. reg. 17. This yeare the towne of Wico Malbanke, or Nantwich in the countie of Chester was pitifully consumed with fire.

The towne of Nantwich brent.

This yeare, by reason of great tempests, vnmeasurable windes and raines there rose such a scarsitie, that wheate was sold in some places for two shillings fiue pence the bushell, wine for twelue pence the gallon, bay salt for fourteene pence the bushell, &c

In this moneth followed such a frost, and after that so deepe a snow, that al the ground was couered therewith, and all the ditches frozen, which weather put the Englishmen in hope to recouer againe the towne of Pontoise, by the French king gotten before, by corrupting with money diuers burgesses of the towne, wherefore the Englishmen being clothed all in white, with Iohn Lord Clifford their captaine, came in the night to the ditches, and passed them without danger, by reason of the frost, scaled the walles, slew the watch, and toke the towne with many profitable prisoners.

1439. Rich. Beauchamp Earle of Warwike deceased.

After the regaining of the towne of Pontoise Richard Beauchamp Earle of Warwike lieutenant generall of France, and of the dutchy of Normandy, died in the Castle of Roan in Normandy on the last of Aprill, the yeare of his age 58. And on the fourth of October next following his corpes being honorably conueied, aswell by water as by land, from Roan in Normandy, to Warwike in England, and was laid with full solemnities in a faire chest made of

stone

stone in the westdoze of the colledge of our Ladies Church, by his noble ancestoꝛs, till a chappell by him deuised in his life were made, which chappell founded on the rocke, and all the membeꝛs thereof, his executoꝛs did fully make and apparell, by the authoꝛitie of his said last will and testament: And there after by the said authoꝛity they did translate the said body into the vault aboue said, where he is intombed right princely and poꝛtured with an image armed of copper and gilt, hoped ouer with staues of copper and gilt, like a chariot.

About the beginning of Lent, Iohn Duke of Somerset, and the Loꝛd Talbot, with other captaines and men of war, to the number of 2000. marching towards Picardy, passed ouer the riuer of Some, and through the towne of Monterueil, came before the foꝛtresse of Fulleuill, which the Duke besieged, Whilest the Loꝛd Talbot entred further into the country. After that the Duke had mounted his great artillery, and began to batter the hold, the captaine within being slaine with a shot thereof, and the batterie being still continued, the place was yelded, in the which the Duke left a competent garrison of souldiours, which after ward soꝛe indomaged the country.

This done, the Duke followed the Loꝛd Talbot, who was already entred a good way within the country of Sauthois, and now ioyning their powers togither, they came to a foꝛtresse called Lyhons in Sauthois, which was also rendꝛed vnto them, after they had bꝛent the Church which the countrie people kept against them, and would not yeld it, till they were fired out, and bꝛent, and slaine, to the number of 300. The foꝛtresse being by composition deliuered into their hands, the duke with his power lay there about ten dayes, sending diuers troupes of his men abꝛoad into the country, which spoiled the same, toke the foꝛtresse of Parbonners, and the Loꝛd thereof within it, who foꝛ his ransome, and to haue his subiects and house saued from spoile and fier, compounded with his takers foꝛ 1000. saluz of gold, which he paied to them: finally, after the Duke of Somerset, and the Loꝛd Talbot, with their power had laine in Lyhons about ten dayes, they returned into Noꝛmandy without any impeachment,

This yeare wheat was sold at London foꝛ three shillings the bushell, malt foꝛ thirteene shillings the quarter, otes foꝛ eight pence the bushell, which foꝛced men to eate beanes, peaſe, and barley, moꝛe then in an hundꝛed yeares before: wheꝛefoꝛe Stephen Browne maioꝛ of London sent into Pꝛuse, and caused to be bꝛought to London many ships laden with rie, which did much good to the people, foꝛ bꝛead coꝛne was so scarse in England that poꝛe people made them bread of ferne roots. *An. reg. 18.* Great dearth of coꝛne in England. 1440.

In a Parliament at Reding it was oꝛdained, that all merchant strangers should goe to host with Englishmen, and to make sale of their merchandises, and buy againe what they would within the space of fiue monethes, giuing their host foꝛ euery twenty shillings woꝛth two pence, except the Esterlings, And that euery householder that was alien, should pay to the King 13. pence the yeare, and euery seruant alien fiue pence. Parliament at Reding. Oꝛder foꝛ strangers.

King Henry created Edmond Hamden Earle of Richmond, and Iaspar de Hatfield

Hatfield Earle of Penbroke, these were the Kings brethren by the mothers side, Iohn Sutton Knight was created Baron of Dudley, the last day of the Parliament at Reding. Sir Richard Wich vicar of Hermetsworth in Esser, or middlesex, sometime vicar of Dertford in Kent, who had before abiured, was brent on the tower hill the 17. of June. After whose death was great murmur among the people, for some said he was a good man and an holy, and put to death by malice: and some said the contrary, so that many men and women went by night to the place where he was brent, and offered their money, images of wax, and other things, making their prayers, kneeling, and kissing the ground, bare away with them the ashes of his body for holy reliques, &c. This endured eight dayes, til the maior and aldermen ordained men of armes, to restraine the people, who apprehended many, and sent them to prison, among whom was taken the vicar of Berking Church beside the tower, in whose parish all this was done, who had received the offering of the simple people. And to excite them to offer the more feruently to the fulfilling of his false couetousnes, he had medled ashes with the powder of spices, and strewed them in the place where the priest was brent, and so the simple people were deceiued, weening the sweete sauour had come of the ashes of the dead priest: all which the said vicar of Berking church confessed in prison. This haue I noted the more at large, because some haue writtē the vicar of Berking to be brent, which is false, for he was not brent, though he better deserued thā the other.

Richard Wich brent on the Tower hill.

After the death of the Earle of Warwike, the Duke of Yorke was againe made regent of France, which being accompanied with the Earle of Orford, the Lord Bourcher called Earle of Ewe, Sir Iames of Ormond, the Lord Clinton, Sir Richard Wooduile, and diuers other noble men on the fiftenth of May shipped at Portsmouth, and sailed thence into Normandy, before whose arriuall, the French King sore greeued with the towne of Pontholse, assembled a great army, and besieged the said towne himselfe in person, enuironing it with bastiles, trenches, and ditches, beating the walles and bulwarks with the shot of great ordinance, giuing thereunto diuers great assaults, but Iohn Lord Clifford like a valiant captaine defended the towne so manfully, that the Frenchmen rather lost than won.

The Duke of Yorke regent of France.

The Duke of Yorke at his landing, sent for the Lord Talbot, and a great number of souldiours, and so came nere to the towne of Pontholse, and there incamped himselfe, and sent word to the French King, that thither he was come to giue him battell, if he would come out of his strength and bastles, but the French King determined not to venture his person with men of so base estate, but meant to kepe his ground, bidding the Lord regent to enter at his perill: and in the meane season did what he could to stop the passage of the riuer Dise, so that no victuall should be brought to the English army by that way.

The Duke of Yorke perceiuing that the French King minded not to fight, purposed to passe ouer the riuer of Dise, and so to fight with him. Whereupon he remoued his campe, and appointed the Lord Talbot and other to make countenaunce, as they would passe the riuer by force at the port of Beaumont,

amount, and appointed another company in boates of timber and lether, and bridges made of cords and ropes to passe ouer beneath the abbey. Whilest the Lord Talbot made a crie as though he would assault the gate, certaine Englishmen passed the water in boates, and drew a bridge of cords ouer, so that a great number of them were got to the other side, ere the Frenchmen were aduised what had hapned. When they saw the chance, they ran like mad men to haue stopped the passage, but it was too late, for the most part of the Englishmen were got ouer, insomuch, that they chased their enimies backe, and slue Sir Guilliam de Chastell, and diuers other. The Frenchmen seeing their euill hap, returned to their King, and tolde him what had happened, whereupon he doubting to be assailed to his disaduantage, thought not good longer to tarry, but with all speede, remouing his ordinance into the bastle of Saint Martin, which he had newly made, dislodged in the night from Panbuysson, and went to Poysie, leauing the Lord de Cotigni Admirall of France with 3000. men, to keepe the bastle. The Englishmen the next day came before the towne of Ponthois, thinking there to haue found the French King, but he was gone, and in his lodging they found great riches, and much stuffe, which he could not carrie away for feare of the sodaine inuasion. The Duke with his power entred the towne, repaired the wals, and diuers times assaulted the bastle of the Frenchmen. After this the Duke intending once againe to offer the French King battell, left behinde him at Ponthois, Sir Geruais Clifton, Sir Nicholas Burdet, Henry Chandos, and a thousand soldiers, and therewith remouing with his whole army came before Poysie, where he set himselfe and his men in order of battell ready to fight. There issued out some Frenchmen, but to their losse: for diuers of them were slaine, and fower valiant horsemen taken. The Duke perceiuing the Frenchmen durst not encounter in field with the English power, dislodged from Poysie, & came to Paunt, and from thence to Roan.

When the Regent and the Lord Talbot were returned againe into Normandy, the French King considering how much it should redound to his dishonour to let rest the towne of Ponthois, in his enimies hands, he eftsones returning sodainly againe vnto Ponthois, he first by assault gat the Church, and after the whole towne, take the captaine and diuers other Englishmen, and slue to the number of three hundred, amongst the which Sir Nicholas Burdet chiefe butler of Normandy was one. *An. reg. 19.* *Sir Nicholas Burdet slaine.*

After this King Henry, and King Charles, agreed to send Ambassadors to commune of peace: King Henry sent Henry Beaufort Cardinall of Winchester, with diuers other noble men to Calais, with whom was also sent Charles Duke of Orliance yet prisoner in England, to the end he might be both author of the peace, and procurer of his owne deliuerance. The French King sent the Archbishop of Reimes, and the Earle of Dunois, and the Duke of Burgoigne sent the Lord de Creue-Cure, and diuers other: all these met at Calais, where the Duke of Orliance curteously receiued the Earle of Dunoys (his bastard brother) thanking him greatly for his paines taking in gouerning his lands and countrie. During the time of his captiuitie and

absence,

absence, diuers communications were had, as well for the deliuerance of the Duke, as for a finall peace, but nothing was concluded, sauing that another meeting was appointed. The Duke of Orliance was set at libertie, paying for his ransome 300000. crownes.

The 26. of nouember was a challenge in armes done before king Henry within lists, in Smithfield, betweene Sir Richard Woodule, a knight of England, and a knight of Spaine, but the king toke vp the matter into his hands, after the third stroke.

The Kings Colledge in Cambridge.

This yeere king Henry being of himselfe alwayes naturally inclined to doe good, and fearing least he might seeme vnthankfull to Almightie God for his great benefits bestowed vpon him, since the time hee first toke vpon him the regiment of his Realme, determined for his primar notable worke, to erect and found two famous Colleges in the honour and worship of his holy name, and for the increase of vertue, the dilation of cunning, and establishment of Christian faith, whereof the one in Cambridge, to be called his College Royall of our Lady, and Saint Nicholas: and the other at Eaton, beside Windsore, to be called his Colledge of our Blessed Ladie. And for the performance of this his deuout purpose, he enfeoffed certaine Bishops with other noble and worshipfull personages, by his letters pattents, with lands and possessions, parcell of his inheritance of the Dutchie of Lancaster, to the cleere value of well neere fower and thirtie hundred pound by yeere, which letters patents he after confirmed by his acte of Parliament, declaring also by his will vnto his said Feoffes, his intent and meaning, how the same should be imployed vpon the edifications of his said two Colledges, whereof in my iudgement the deuice is so excellent, and the buildings so princely and apt for that purpose, as I cannot omit to set forth vnto you the very plat of the whole Colledge in Cambridge, euen as I finde mentioned, almost Verbatim, in his said will, supposing, that if the rest of the house had proceeded according to the Chappell already finished (as his full intent and meaning was) the like Colledge could scant haue been found againe in any Christian land. This Colledge was begun in his time, and finished so farre, that in *Anno* 1443, (which was the 23. of his raigne) the cemitery or Church yarde, the altar, &c. (as the manner was) were consecrated by the Bishops of Salisbury and Lincolne. The words of the Will are thus: As touching the dimensions of the Church of my said Colledge, of our Ladie and Saint Nicholas of Cambridge, I haue deuised and appointed, that the same Church shall containe in length 288. foote of assise, without any Iles, and all of the wideneſſe of fortie foote. And the length of the same Church from the West ende vnto the altars at the Quire dore, shall containe 120. foote. And from the Provosts stall, vnto the greece called Gradus Chori, 90. foote, for 36. stals on either side of the same Quire, answering to xxx. fellowes, and ten priests conduits, which must be de prima forma. And from the said stals vnto the East ende of the said Church, 62 foote of assise. Also a Rerodosse bearing the rodloft, departing the Quire, and the body of the Church, containing in length fortie foote, and in breadth fourteene foote. The wals of the same

The Chappel.

The body of the Church.

The Quire.

The Roodloft.

The light of the Chappell.

Church

Church to be in height ninety foote imbatteled, vauted and Chareroofed, sufficiently butteraced, and euery butterace fined with finials. And in the east end of the same Church shall be a window of nine dayes, and betwixt euery butterace a window of fiue dayes. And betwixt euery of the same butteraces in the body of the Church, on both sides of the same Church a closet with an Altar therein, contayning in length twentie foote, and in bredth ten foote, vawted and finished vnder the soile of the Ile windowes. And the pauement of the Church to be enhanced foure foote aboue the ground without. And the height of the pauement of the Quire one foote and a halfe aboue the pauement of the Church. And the pauement of the Aultar thrée foote aboue that. And on the North side of the Quire a Vestrie contayning in length fiftie foote, and in breadth, twentie two foote, departed into two houses beneath, and two houses aboue, which shall containe in height twentie two foote in all, with an entrie from the Quire vauted. And at the West ende of the Church a Cloyster square, the East pane contayning in length, 175. foote and the West pane as much. The North pane two hundreth foote, and the South pane as much, of the which the Deambulatorie thirtéene foote wide, and in height twentie foote, to the Corbill table, with cleare stories and Butteraces with finiales, vauted and embattelled. And the ground thereof, foure foote lower than the Church ground. And in the middle of the West pane of the Cloyster a strong Tower square, contayning foure and twentie foote within the walles. And in height one hundred and twentie foote to the Corbill table. And foure small Turrets ouer that fined with Pynacles. And a dore into the sayde Cloyster inward, but outward none. And as touching the dimensions of the housing of the sayde Colledge, I haue deuised and appoynted in the South side of the said Church a Quadraunt, closing to both ends of the same Church, the East pane whereof shall containe two hundred and thirtie foote in length, and in breadth within the Wals two and twentie foote. In the same panes middle a tower for a Gatehouse, contayning in length thirtie foote, and in breadth two and twentie, and in height fortie foote, with thrée Chambers ouer the Gate, euery one ouer the other. And on either side of the same Gate foure Chambers, euery one contayning in length fiue and twentie foote, and in breadth two and twentie foote. And ouer euery of these Chambers, two Chambers aboue of the same measure or more, with two Towers outward, and two Towers inward.

The East window.

The side Chappell.

The Vestry.

The Cloyster.

The Steeple.

The base conrt.

The East pane.

The great gate.

The South pane shall containe in length 238. foote, and in breadth two and twentie foote within, in which shall bee seuen Chambers, euery one contayning in length nine and twentie foote, and in breadth two and twentie foote with a Chamber parcell of the Prouostes lodging, contayning in length fiue and thirtie foote, and with a Chamber in the East corner of the same pane, contayning in length fiue and twentie foote, and in breadth two and thirtie foote. And ouer euery of all these Chambers two Chambers, and with fiue towers outward, and thrée towers inward. The West pane shall containe in length 230. foote, and in breadth within 24. foote, in which at the ende toward the Church shall be a Library, contayning in length 110. foote, and in

The South pane.

The West pane.

The Library

The Librarie. The disputation house. breadth foure and twenty foote. And vnder it a large house for reading and disputations, containing in length fourtie foote: And two chambers vnder the same library, each containing nine and twentie foote in length, and in breadth foure and twentie foote. And ouer the said library a house of the same largenes, for diners stuffe of the said Colledge. In the other end of the same pane a hall, containing in length 100. foote, vpon a vault of twelue foote high, ordained for the cellar and buttrie: and the breadth of the hall fiue and thirtie foote, on euery side thereof a bay window. And in the neather end of the same hall toward the middle of the same pane a pantrie and butterie, euery of them in length twentie foote, and in breadth seuenténe foote, and ouer that two chambers for officers. And at the neather end of the hall toward the West, a goodly kitchin. And the same pane shall haue inward two towers, ordained for the wayes into the hall and librarie. And in euery corner of the said quadrant shall be two corner towers, one inward, and one outward more then the towers aboue rehearsed. And at the vpper end of the hall the prouosts lodging, that is to wit, more than the chambers for him aboue specified, a parlour on the ground, containing foure and thirtie foote in length, and two and twentie foote in breadth, and two chambers aboue of the same quantitie. And westward closing thereto a kitchin for him, a larder house, stables and other necessary housings and grounds. And westward beyond these houses, and the said kitchin ordained for the hall, a bakehouse, a brewhouse, and other houses of office, betwéne which there is left a ground square of foure score foote in euery pane, for woode and such stuffe. And in the middle of the said large quadrant shall be a conduit, goodly deuised for ease of the same colledge. And I will, that the edification proceede in large forme of my said colledge cleane and substantiall, setting apart superfluitie of too great curious workes, of entaile and busie moulding. And I haue deuised and appointed that the precinct of my said colledge, as well on both sides of the garden from the colledge to the water, as in all other places of the same precinct, be inclosed with a substantiall wall, of the height of fourténe foote, with a large tower at the principall entrie against the middle of the east pane out of the high streete. And in the same tower a large gate, and another tower in the middle of the West end at the new bridge. And the same wall to be crefted, embattelled, and fortified with towers, as many as shall be thought conuenient thereunto. And I will, that my said colledge be edified of the most substantiall and best abiding stuffe, of stone, lead, glasse, and yron, that may best be had and prouided thereto.

The prouosts lodging. The bakehouse, and brewhouse. The woodyard. The water conduit. The precinct of the colledge. The water gate.

Thus much I haue inlarged by occasion of reading this good Kings will: the cunning deuise whereof I leaue to the considerate iudgement of such as be expert in architecture, heartily desiring almighty God to put into the heart of some noble Prince of his land, one day to make perfect this royall worke so charitably begun.

1441. A combat was fought at Totehill betwéne two théeues, the appealer and defendant, the appealer had the field of the defendant within three strokes.

Roger

Roger Bolinbrooke a great astronomer, with Thomas Southwell a chanon of S. Stephens chappell at Westminster, were taken as conspiratours of the Kings death, for it was said, that the same Roger should labour to consume the Kings person by waie of Negromancie, and the said Thomas should say Masses in the lodge of Harnesey Parke beside London, upon certaine instruments, with the which the said Roger should vse his crafte of Negromancie, against the faith, and was assenting to the said Roger, in all his workes. And the fiue and twentith day of Julie being Sondaie, Roger Bolingbroke, with all his instruments of Negromancie, that is to say, a chayre painted wherein he was wont to sit, vpon the foure corners of which chayre stode foure swordes, and vpon euery sworde an image of copper hanging, with many other instrumentes: he stode on a high scaffolde in Paules Churchyarde, before the crosse, holding a sworde in his right hand, and a scepter in his left, arrayed in a marueilous attire, and after the sermon was ended by maister Low Bishop of Rochester, he abiured all articles longing to the crafte of Negromancie or misbowning to the Faith, in presence of the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Cardinall of Winchester, the Bishop of London, Salisbury and many other. Roger Bolinbrooke.

On the Tuesday next following, dame Elianor Cobham, daughter to Reginald Cobham Lord of Stirbrough: Dutchesse of Gloucester fled by night into the Sanctuary at Westminster, which caused hir to be suspected of treason. Elianor Cobham apprehended.

In the meane time Roger Bolingbroke, was examined before the Kings Counsaile, where he confessed that he wrought the said Negromancie at the stirring and procurement of the said Dame Elianor, to knowe what should befall of hir, and to what estate she should come, whereupon she was cited to appeare before Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Canterburie, Henry Beauforte Bishop of Winchester Cardinall, Iohn Kempe Archbishop of Yorke Cardinall: William Ascothe Bishop of Salisburie, and other in Saint Stephens chappell at Westminster, there to answere to certaine articles in number 28. of Negromancie, witchcraft, sorcerie heresie, and treason, where when she appeared, the foresaid Roger was brought forth to witnes against hir, and said, that she was cause and first stirred him to labor in the said arte. Then on the eleuenth of August, she was committed to the warde of Sir Iohn Steward, Sir William Wolfe Knights, Iohn Stanley Esquire, and other, to be conueyed to the Castle of Leedes, there to remaine til three weekes after Michaelmasse.

Shortly after a commission was directed to the Earles of Huntington, Staffordе, Suffolke, and Northumberland, the treasurer Sir Ralph Cromwell, Iohn Cornwall, Lord Fanhope, Sir Walter Hungerforde, and to certaine Iudges of both Benches, to enquire of all manner of treasons, sorceries and other things that might be hurtfull to the Kings person, before whom the said Roger, and Thomas Southwell, as principals, and dame Elianor as accessarie, were indicted of treason in the Guilde Hall of London.

There was taken also Margerie Gurdemaine a witch of Eye besides

An. reg. 20. Westminster, whose sorcerie and witchcrafte the said Elianor had long time
The witch of Eye brent. vsed, and by hir medicines and drinkes enforced the Duke of Glocester to
loue hir, and after to wed hir, wherefore, and for cause of relapse, the same
witch was brent in Smithfield, on the 27. of October.

The one and twentith of October, in the chappell beforesaid, before the Bishops, of London Robart Gilbart, of Lincolne William Alnewike, of Norwich Thomas Brouns, the sayde Elianor appéred, and Adam Molins clarke of the Kings counsell read certaine articles obiected against hir of Sorcerie and Negromancie, whereof some shee denied, and some shee granted.

The three and twentith of October dame Elianor appéred againe, and witnesses were brought forth and examined: and she was conuict of the said articles: then was it asked if she would say any thing against the witnesses, whereunto she answered nay, but submitted hir selfe. The 27. day of October she abiured the articles, and was adiorned to appére againe the ninth of November. In the meane time to with on the 26. of October Thomas Southwell died in the Tower of London, as himselfe had prophesied that he should neuer die by Iustice of the Lawe.

Elianor Cobham did penance. The 9. of Nouember dame Elianor appéred before the Archbishop and other, in the sayde Chappell, and receiued hir penance, which she perfourmed.

On Monday the 13. of Nouember, she came from Westminster, by water, and landed at the Temple bridge, from whence with a taper of ware of two pound in hir hande, she went through Fléetestréte, hoodlesse (saue a kerchefe) to Pauls, where she offered hir taper at the high altar. On the Wednesday next shee landed at the swan in Thamis strete, and then went through Bridgestréte, Grace church strete, straight to Leaden Hall, and so to Christ Church by Aldegate. On Fryday she landed at Quéene Hithe, and so went through Cheape to S. Michaels in Cornehill, in forme aforesaid: at all which times the Maior, sheriffes, and crafts of London, receiued hir and accompanied hir. This being done she was committed to the ward of Sir Thomas Stanley, wherein she remained during hir life in the Castle of Chester, hauing yerely 100. markes assigned for hir finding, in the 22. of Henry the sixt she was remoued to Kenilworth, there to be safely kept, whose pride, falsenesse, couetise, and lecherie, were cause of hir confusion.

The 18. of Nouember Roger Bolingbroke, with Sir Iohn Hum preest, and William Woodham Esquier, was arraigned in the Guild Hall of London, where the said Iohn and William had their charters, but Roger Bolingbrooke was condemned, and had iudgement of Sir Iohn Hody, chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, and the same day he was drawn from the tower to Tiborne and there hanged and quartered: and when the said Roger should suffer, he said that he was neuer guiltie of any treason against the Kings person, but he had presumed too far in his cunning, whereof he cried God mercy: and the Iustice that gaue on him iudgement liued not long after.

Henry Beauchampe succeeded in his fathers inheritance, who being kept

kept two yéeres in the kings hands, was restored to al his liuings with great glory, for he was crowned King of Wight, by the Kings owne hands, and nominated chiefe Earle of England. Henry Beauchamp Earle of Warwicke.

The Duke of Orliance being deliuered (as is afore shewed) and speaking now better English than French, after his arriual in France, repaired to the Duke of Burgoyne, and according to his promise, married the Lady Mary Cleue in the towne of Saint Omers, on whom he begat a sonne, which after was French King by the name of Lewes the twelfth.

Richard duke of Yorke regent of France and gouernor of Normandy, sent the Lord Willoughby with a great number of souldiers, to destroy the county of Amiens, and Iohn Lord Talbot was appointed to besiege the towne of Diepē: and the regent himselfe, accompanied with Edmond Duke of Somerset, set forward into the dutchie of Aniow. The Lord Willoughby entred the country of his enemies vpon such a sodaine, that a great number of people were taken ere they could withdraw into any place of safegard. The Frenchmen in the garrisons adioyning, astonied with the clamor and crie of the people, issued out, and manfully fought with the Englishmen, but in the end the Frenchmen slaine in the forefront, they turned their backes and fled, the Englishmen followed and slew many, and such as escaped the sword were robbed by the earle of Saint Pole, which was comming to aide the Englishmen: in this conflict were slaine aboue 600. men of armes, and a great number taken.

The Dukes of Yorke and Somerset entred into Aniow and Maine, and 1442.
there destroyed townes, and spoiled the people, and with great praies and prisoners repaired againe into Normandy, whither also the Lord Willoughby withdrew after his enterprise atchieued. The Duke of Somerset entred into the marches of Brytaine, and toke by assault a towne named la Gerch, appertayning to the Duke of Alanson, spoyling and burning the same, from thence he went to Ponray, where he soiorned two moneths, sending forth daily his men of war, to destroy the countries of Aniow, Traonnois, and Chatragonnois. The French King sent the Marshall Loyach with foure thousand men to resist the inuasions of the Duke of Somerset, but the Duke discomfited him, slew 100. of his men, and toke 62. prisoners of the best of them. The Duke after this incounter toke the towne of Beaumont le Vicount, and manned all the fortresses on the frontiers of his enemies, and with rich booties and prisoners returned to the Duke of Yorke.

In the meane time the Lord Talbot besieged the towne of Diepe, enuironing it with déepe trenches and rampiers, building also vpon the mount Powlet a strong bastle, but at length perceiuing the towne to be strongly defended, he deliuered the custodie of the bastle to his bastard sonne a valiant yong man and departed to Roan for aide, money, and munition.

The French King sent his sonne the Dolphin of Vienne, with the Earle of Dunois and 15000. men to raise the siege from Diepe: three dayes they assailed the bastile, in the which 600. Englishmen were inclosed: at length the Frenchmen won it, and toke the bastard Talbot prisoner, with Sir William

liam Poitow, and Sir Iohn Repley, which shortly after were redéemed. The other Englishmen, séeing the battle won by the Frenchmen, stood all a day in order of battaile, and in the night following returned to Roan.

Whilest these things were in doing, Philip Duke of Burgoigne made sharpe war against the Earle of S. Pole, in taking from him his townes and Castles, so that he was constrained to renounce his allegiance, promised and sworne to the King of England, and returned to the French parte.

A combat in Smithfield.

The 30. of January a challenge was done in Smithfield within lists, before the King, the one, Sir Philip le Beawfe of Aragon a Knight, and the other an Esquire of the Kings house called Iohn Anlley or Astley, these comming to the field toke their tents, and then was the Knights sonne made Knight by the King, and so brought againe to his fathers tent. Then the Heraults of armes called them by name to doe their battaile, and so they came both all armed with their weapons: The Knight came with his sword drawne, and the Esquire with his speare, which speare the Esquire cast against the Knight, but the Knight auoyded it with his sword, and cast it to the ground, then the Esquire toke his axe, and went against the Knight sodainly, on whom he stroke many strokes hard and sore vpon his basenet and on his hand, and made him lose and let fall his axe to the ground, and brast vp his vmbar three times, and caught his dagger and would haue smitten him in the face, for to haue slaine him in the field: and then the King cried ho, and so they were departed, and went to their tents, and the King dubbed Iohn Astley Knight for his valiant torney, and the Knight of Aragon offered his harnes at Windsore.

An. reg. 21. Duke and Earle created.

Iohn Beauford Earle of Somerset, was made Duke of Somerset: and Lord Iohn Talbot for his approued prowes shewed in France, was created Earle of Shrowesbury, & his sonne Lord Talbot, and then with a company of 3000. men sent againe into Normandy, for defence of that Countrie the 25. of May.

1443. Commotion at Norwich.

The Citizens of Norwich, rose against the Prior of Christs Church, within the same Citie, and would haue fiered the priory, they kept the towne by strength against the Duke of Norffolke, and all his power, wherefore the King sent thether the chiefe Iudge Iohn Fortescue, with the Earles of Stafford and of Huntington, who indicted many Citizens, and the Prior also. The Liberties of the Citie were seysed into the Kings hand, and Sir Iohn Clifton made captaine there, and many of the Citizens fled ouer the seas and into vnknowne places.

Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington, at Windsore was created Duke of Exceter. Iohn Beawford Duke of Somerset deceased, and was buried at Wimborne.

Colledge and Hospitall at Higham Ferres.

Also this yéere deceased Henry Chicheley, when he had sate 29. yéeres Archbishop of Canterburie. This Archbishop in his life time, to wit in *Anno* 1425. began the foundation of a goodly Colledge, and hospitall at Higham Ferres in Northamptonshire, of 8. secular priestes fellowes, foure clarkes, and 6. Choristes: And an almes house, or hospitall for poore people, and obtained many goodly benefites and preferments which he gaue to the said towne, which house for the poore by him founded, his brethren Robert Chicheley, and

William

William Chicheley Aldermen of London, augmented with goodly legacies, for the sustentation of the poore, which Colledge at the suppression was valued by the yeere in lands 156. pound 2. shillings, &c.

This archbishop also founded two Colledges in Oxford, the one All soules Colledge (vnto the which King Henry the first gaue lands lately belonging to the priors alians, to wit, 4. priories, Alberbery in Salop, Runney in Kent, Languenith in Southwales, & Wodon Pinkney in Northamptonshire, and therefore the said K. in the Charter is called founder:) The other Barnard Colledge since suppressed by King Henry the 8. now by Sir Thomas White againe reædified, and named S. Iohns Colledge. He also reædified the new Library at Canterbury, and furnished the same with bookes, builded a great part of their steeple, repaired their church, and gaue to the couent and Church many ornaments, and rich iewels, he caused his owne tombe in the same Church to be builded during his life, he was the new builder, or especiall repayrer of the faire large parish Church of Crodowne, as appeareth by his armes grauen on the wals, steeple, and porch of the same Church.

Iohn Stafford borne at Yoke in the parish of Abbotesbery in Dorcetshire, doctor of lawes, deane of Saint Martins le Grand in London, after Bishop of Bath and Wels, about the 12. of Henry the 6. made Chancellor of England, was by Eugenius the fourth, made Archbishop of Canterburie.

Also Lewes Lushebrughe Bishop of Elie deceased at his maner of Hatfield and was buried at Elie. To whom Thomas Bourchar succæded, being translated from Wircester. Anno 5 Elij.

Whilest England was disquieted, and France by spoile defaced, all Christendome lamented the continuall destruction of so noble a Realme, and the effusion of so much Christian blod: wherfore to agræe the two puissant kings, all the Princes of Christendome trauailed so effectually by the Orators and Ambassadors, that a diet was appointed to be kept at the Citie of Towrs in Towraine, where, for the K. of England appeared William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, doctor Adam Molins Bishop of Chichester, kæper of the kings priuy seale, Sir Robert Ros, and other: and for the French king were appointed Charles Duke of Orliance, Lewes de Borbon Earle of Vandosme, great master of the French kings houshold, Pierce de Bresse steward of Poyctowe, and Bartram Beannan Lord of Precigni. *Ann reg.* 22. All Christian Princes labour to appease the troubles in Fraunce.

There were also sent Ambassadors from the Empire, from Spaine, from Denmarke, and from Hungarie, to be mediators betwixt the two Princes, many mætings were about this businesse, but no finall concord could be agræed vpon, more then a certaine truce for eighteene moneths, which after was prolonged to the yeere 1449. but in the meane time broken, as ye shall heare afterward.

In this treatie William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, imagining with himselfe, that the next way to come to a perfect peace, was to moue some marriage, betwæne the French kings kinswoman, the Lady Margaret Daughter to Reyner Duke of Anjow, and King Henry of England: this Duke Reyner named himselfe King of Cicill, Naples, and Jerusalem, 1444.

hauing onely the title of those Realmes, without any profit. This marriage was at the first made strange to the Earle, and one thing seemed to be agreat let to it, to wit, because the King of England possessed a great part of the Dutchie of Anlow, and the whole countrie of Maine, which pertained (as they said) to Duke Reyner. The Earle of Suffolke condescended, that the Dutchie of Anlow, and the county of Maine should be deliuered to the Duke, demanding with his daughter for hir mariage nothing. And to the intent that of this truce might insue a finall concord, a day of enterview was appointed betweene the King and the Duke, in a place conuenient, betweene Chartres and Roan.

Dukes, Marquesses and Earles created.

When these things were concluded, the Earle of Suffolke with his company returned into England where he declared what an honorable truce he had taken, through ỹ which there was great hope of a finall peace, by meanes of the honorable mariage which he had concluded. But though this mariage pleased well the King, and diuers of his councell, yet other some were against it. For the performance of the conclusions, the French King sent the Earle of Vandosme great master of his house, and the Archbishop of Reimes first pere of France, and diuers other into England, where they were honorably entertained, and after that the instruments were sealed, and deliuered on both parts, the said Ambassadors returned with great rewards.

When these things were done, the King created Humfrey Earle of Stafford Duke of Buckingham: and Henry Beauchamp Earle of Warwicke, King Henry hartily tendering him for his parents sake, bestowed vpon him the Dukedome of Warwike: vnto whom also the King gaue the Castle of Bristow, with all the appurtenances, which King Iohn had kept in his hands and his successors after him: he gaue vnto him also the Iles of Gernsey and Iarnsey, Serke, Erme, and Aurney with all the priories aliens in the same. The Earle of Dorset was created and made Marquesse of Dorset, and William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke was created Marquesse of Suffolke: also Iohn Talbot Knight, the son of Iohn Earle of Shrewsbury, was created Baron Lisle for him and his heires males on the 26. of July.

In the moneth of November William de la Pole marques of Suffolke with his wife and many honorable persons both men and women richly apparelled, sailed into France, for the conueiance of the Lady Margaret, nominated Q. into the Realme of England. This noble company came to the Citie of Towers in Touraine, where they were honorably receiued & entertained, both of the French K. and of the Duke Reiner, where the marques of Suffolke as procurator to King Henry, espoused the said Lady in the Church of S. Martin. At which mariage were present the father & mother of the bride, the French King which was vncle to the Duke Reiner, and the French Quéene aunt to the Dutches his wife: there were also the Dukes of Orleance, of Calabre, of Alanson, and of Brytaine, 7. Earles, 12. Barons, 20. bishops, besides knights and gentlemen. When the feast, triumphs, bankets, and iusts were ended, the Lady was deliuered to the marques of Suffolke, which in great estate cõueied her through Normandy vnto Diepe, where a while they remained.

1445.

On

On Candlemas éuen in diuers places of England, was great weathering of wind, hayle, snow, rayne, thunders with lightning, whereby the Church of Baldocke in Hertfordshire, the Church of Walden in Essex, and diuers other were sore shaken. And the steeple of Saint Paules in London, about two of the clocke in the afternoone, was set on fire in the middest of the shaft, first on the west side, and then on the south, and the people espying the fire, came to quench it in the steeple, which they did with vinegar, so farre as they could finde, so that when the Maior, with much people came to Paules, to haue holpen if need had béene, they returned againe euery man to his home, trusting to God all had béene well, but anone after, betwéene eight and nine of the clocke, the fire brast againe out of the steeple, more feruent then before, and did much harme to the lead and timber thereof: but the Maior and much people came thither, and with vinegar quenched the fire that was feruent, so that no man was perished. The steeple of Waltham in Essex, and of Kingstone in Surrey, was also fired by the same lightnings. The fire at Paules being quenched, standart of tré being set vp at Leaden-Hall in Cornehil of London, made fast in the midst of the pauement, and decked with Holme and Iuie, for disport of Christmas to the people of the Citie, it was borne and cast downe with such violence that the stones of the pauement, were cast about in the stréete, and into diuers mens houses, to the great terrour of the people, that neuer had séene so strange a tempest.

The Lady Margaret being transported from Dépe, landed at Portchester, from whence she was conueyed by water to Hampton, and rested there in a place called Gods house, from thence she went to Southwike, and was married to the King in the Abbey of Tichfield on the 22. of Aprill, and from thence she was honorably conueyed by the Lords & estates of this land, which met with her in sundry places with great retinues of men, in diuers liueries with their sléeues brodered, and some beaten with Goldsmiths worke in most costly manner, and specially of the Duke of Gloucester, who met her with 500. men in a liuerie, and so was conueyed to the Blacke Heath, where she was met by the Maior, Aldermen & Sheriffes of the Citie in scarlet, and the crafts of the same, all riding on horsback, in blew gownes with brodered sléeues, and red hoods, on the 28. of May, who conueied her with her train through Southwarke, and so through the Citie of London, then beautified with pageants of diuers histories, and other shews of welcome, maruellous costly and sumptuous, which I ouerpasse, saue onely to name a few. At the bridge foote toward Southwark, a pageant of peace and plenty, *Ingredimini, & replete terram*, and certaine verses in English. Noes ship vpon the bridge, *Iam non vltra iraſcar ſuper terram*, verses in English. At Leaden hall, madam Grace Chancelor de Dieu, verses in English. At the tunne in Cornehill, of Saint Margaret verses in English. At the great conduit in Cheape of the fiue wise and fiue foolish virgins, verses in English. At the crosse in Cheap, of the heauenly Ierusalem, verses. At Paules gate, of the generall resurrection and iudgement, with verses accordingly, all made by Iohn Lydgate.

On the 30. of May she was solemnly crowned at Westminster. This

Queene Margaret crowned

woman excelled all other, as well in beauty and fauour, as in wit and pollicie, and was of stomacke and courage not inferiour to any: her badge was the daisie flower. This marriage seemed to many both vnfortunate, and vnprofitable to the Realme of England, and that for diuers causes: first the king had with her no dowry, and for the fetching of her, and other charges about her, the Marques of Suffolke demaunded a whole fifteenth in open Parliament: and also there was deliuered for her the Dutchie of Anion, the Citie of Mans, and the county of Maine. Furthermore, the Earle of Arminake tooke such displeasure with the king of England for the marriage, that he became vtter enemy to the Realme of England, and was the chiefe cause that the Englishmen were expulsed out of the Dutchie of Aquitaine.

Ann. reg. 24. Parliament. 1446.

A Parliament was summoned, in the which it was concluded, that by good foresight Normandy might be so furnished for defence before the ende of the truce, that the French king should take no aduantage through want of timely prouision: hereupon money was granted, and an army leuied, the Duke of Somerset appointed to be Regent of Normandy, and the Duke of Yorke discharged of that office.

The Marquesse of Suffolke the second of June, in the first session of this Parliament, before the Lords spirituall and temporall in the high house assembled, eloquently declared his paine and diligence sustained in his legacy, as well for the concluding an abstinence of warre, as in making of the marriage, opening also to them, that the said truce expired the first of Aprill next comming, except a final peace, or a further truce were cõcluded in the mean season: and therefore he aduised them to foresee and prouide things necessary for the warres, least happily the French perceiuing them vnpurueyed, would take the aduantage, and agree neither to peace nor amitie. Likewise on the next morrow, he descended into the common house, accompanied with certaine Lords, and there declared the same matter to the Knights, and bourgesses, praying the commons for his discharge, that as well all his doings and procedings in the kings affaires, beyond the sea, as also his aduertisements and counsaile opened to the Lordes and commons now together assembled, might be by the king and them enacted, and enrolled in the records of the Parliament. Whereupon on the next morrow William Burley then speaker, and then company of the lower house, repayred to the kings presence then sitting amongst the Lords, and there humbly required that the request of the Marquesse mought be granted, and so likewise the Lordes made the like petition, kneeling on their knees, and the king condescended to their desires, and so the whole matter was enacted and recorded for his acquitall.

Lib. Theoxbury Duke of Warwike deceased.

Henry Beauchampe Duke of Warwike, chiefe Earle of England, Lord Spencer and Burgauenie, king of the yle of Wight, and Gernsey and Iarnsey, and Lord of the Castell of Bristow, married Cicely daughter to Richard Neuill Earle of Salisbury, and had issue a daughter named Anne, who died at the age of fiue yeeres, he at the age of 22. yeeres died in the Castell of Hanley, and was buried at Theoxbury.

Iohn

A combate in Smithfield.

A falſe accuſer of his maſter, was hanged.

Iohn Dauid appeached his maſter William Catur, an armorer dwelling in S. Dunſtons pariſh in Fleetſtreet, of treaſon, and a day being aſſigned them to fight in Smithfield, the maſter being welbeloued, was ſo cheriſhed by his friends, and plied ſo with wine, that being therewith ouercome, was alſo vnluckely ſlaine by his ſeruant: but that falſe ſeruant (for he falſely accuſed his maſter) liued not long vnpuniſhed, for he was after hanged at Tyborne for felony: let ſuch falſe accuſers note this example, and looke for no better ende, without ſpedie repentance: my ſelfe haue had the like ſeruant, that likewiſe accuſed me of many articles, he liueth yet, but hath hardly eſcaped hanging ſince, God make him penitent.

Thomas fitz Thomas Prior of Kilmaine appeached ſir Iames Butler Earle of Ormond of treaſons, which had a day aſſigned to fight in Smithfield, the liſts were made, and the field prepared, but when it came to the point, the king commaunded they ſhould not fight, and tooke the quarrell into his hands, which was done at the inſtance of certaine preachers and doctors of London, as maſter Gilbert Worthington, parſon of S. Andrewes in Holborne and other. *Anno reg. 25.*

Record. Eccleſi. Cantu.

Pope Eugenius ſent a golden Roſe to the king of England, expreſſing the property and application of the ſame, with the ceremony that is yerely vſed on Palme Sunday, touching the ſame Roſe, exhorting the king againſt the Turkes. Which Roſe Lodouicus Cordona doctor of diuinitie did preſent to the king in S. Stephens chappell at Weſtminſter vpon Saint Andrewes day, in preſence of the Dukes of Yorke and Exceſter, Cardinal Kempe Archbiſhop of Yorke, & Iohn Stafford Archbiſhop of Canterbury Chancellor of England.

Parliament at Burie.

1447.

King Henry kept his Chriſtmaſſe at Saint Edmondſburie, and remayned there till Eaſter. In which meane ſpace, to wit on the 10. of February began a Parliament at S. Edmondſbury in Suffolke, at which time for feare of the Duke of Gloceſter, all the waies about the ſame town were kept with armed men both day and night, ſo that many died with colde and waking. Humfrey Duke of Gloceſter being at the Caſtell of the Vies in Wiltſhire, came from thence to the Parliament, and was lodged in the hoſpitall, where ſhortly after he was arreſted by Iohn Lord Beaumount high Conſtable, the Duke of Buckingham, the Duke of Somerſet & other, who appointed certaine of the kings houſehold to wait vpon him: but on the 24. day he died for ſorrow, as ſome ſaid, that he might not come to his anſwer: his body was ſhewed to the lords & commons, and ſeemed to die of a palſey, or of an impoſtume: he was honorably buried at S. Albons: 32. of his principall ſeruants were arreſted & ſent to diuers priſons, & fiue of them were arraigned at London, and condemned, whoſe names were ſir Roger Chamberlain knight, Richard Middleton, Thomas Herbert, Arthur Turſey Eſquires, & Richard Nedam gentleman, which were all fiue drawn from the Tower of London to Tyborne, & there hanged, letten down quicke, ſtript naked, marked with a knife for to be quartered, and then a charter ſhewed for their liues by the Duke of Suffolke: but the yeoman of the crowne had their liuelode, & the hangman had their cloths, or wearing apparell. The Pardon for liues was obtained through the earneſt ſute & labour of maſter Gilbert Worthington, then parſon of S. Andrewes

The Duke of Gloceſter arreſted and ſoone after died.

Fiue men hanged, and after pardoned.

Record. 26. of H. 8.

in

in Holborn, a doctor of Diuinity, a famous man, and a great preacher in those dates. Thomas Wild of Grēnwich Esquire seruing the said Duke, being amongst other pardoned, the course of his pardon in the patent runneth to this effect, for being amongst many other traitors against the king with Humfrey Duke of Glocester, they went about and practised to deliuer Elianor, late wife to the Duke from out of prison, and gathered a great power, and number of men, to come to the Parliament at Bury, and there to haue practised the destruction of the king, &c. Iames Fines knight was created Baron of Say and Sele, Iohn Beauchampe Baron of Powike, and Richard Wooduile Baron, and Lord Riuers at Bury. Henry Beauford Bishop of Winchester, Cardinall of the title of S. Eusebij, after he had sate Bishop 43. yéres, deceased on the 11. of Aprill, he founded an house of almes (adioyning to the hospitall of S. Crosse by Winchester) with a master, 2. chapleins, 35. poore men, and 3. women, & gaue lands thereto, at that time valued 158. pound, 13. shillings, 4. pence, as appéreth by the patten, more he gaue thē, the hospital of S. Iohn de Fordingebridge: William Wamflet prouost of Eaton, succéeded in that Bishoprieke.

Thomas Wild his pardon.

Record 16. of H. 6.

Barons created.

Record. Patin.

The 5. of August deceased Iohn Holland Duke of Exceter, and was buried in the hospitall of Saint Katherine nigh to the Tower of London. About the same time deceased the forenamed Doctor Gilbert Worthington, parson of Saint Andrewes in Holborne, a most famous preacher, and greatly noted for his good life. Also about the same time, to wit the 24. of October deceased William Lichfield doctor of Diuinity, Parson of Alhallowes the More in Thamis street, the which was counted a good and holy man, he made in his dates 3083 sermons, as appeared and was found in his bookes of his owne hand writing, besides many bookes that he compiled of Diuinitie yet extant, especially one in a fine verse intituled, The complaint of God to man, and Answere of the penitent to God, &c.

Holland Duke of Exceter, deceased.

Parson of S. Andrewes in Holborne.

Ann. reg. 26.

Parson of Alhallowes in Thamis street.

1448. In this 26. yére of the raigne of this king, I finde no great matter worth the recitall, but that the Marquesse of Suffolke, by great fauour of the king and Quéene, was created Duke of Suffolke, which dignitie he long enioyed not: for Richard Duke of Yorke being greatly alied by his wife, to the chiefest péeres and potentates of the Realme, ouer and besides his owne progenie, perceiuing the king to be a ruler, and not to rule, but the whole burthen of the Realme to rest in the ordinance of the Quéene, & the Duke of Suffolk, began secretly to allure his friends of the Nobilitie, and priuily declared vnto them his title to the Crowne, and likewise did he to certaine gouernours of Cities and Townes, which priuely attempt was so politikely handled and secretly kept, that his prouision was ready before his purpose was opened.

Iohn de la Pole marques of Suffolke made Duke of Suffolke.

Iohn Sturton was made Baron of Sturton.

After the death of Henry Beauford Bishop of Winchester, the affaires in Fraunce, were neither wel loked to, nor the gouernours of the countrey wel aduised, for an English Captaine, called sir Frances, surnamed de Aragonoys, tooke a towne named Fogars, vpon the borders of Normandie belonging to the Duke of Brytaine. For the which he complained him to the

French

French King, and hée at the said Dukes request sent vnto the King of England, to atke restitution of the harme. The which messengers were aunswered of the Kings Counsell, that the déede was right displeasant vnto the King, and that sir Frances Aragon had enterprised the frate of his owne presumption. Whereupon it followed shortly after, that the French by like policie toke the Towne and Castell of Pountallarche, and after that many other, so that the taking of the foresaid Towne of Fogiars by the Englishmen, was the occasion by the which the French after gat all Normandie. *An.reg.* 27.

This yéere the Frenchmen got many Townes in Normandie out of the possession of the Englishmen. Also the Citie of Roane was yéelded to the French, with condition that the Captaines and garrisons might depart with armour and goods, and not long after was rendered (with the like condition as of Roane) the townes of Harflewe, and Hounflewe. A Knight of Fraunce called sir Lewes de Breyll, chalenged an Esquire of England named Ralph Chalons of certaine feats of warres, the which to prowe, a day to them was giuen to méete at a Towne in Fraunce named Mauuce, where the French Knight at that day was present: but Chalons ranne the French Knight through the bodie with his speare, whereof the said Lewes died. 1449. Roan yeelded to the French. *Ann.reg.* 28.

About the same time also, began a new rebellion in Ireland, but Richard Duke of Yorke being sent thither to appease the same, so asswaged the furie of the wilde and sauage people there, that he wan such fauour amongst them, as could neuer be separated from him and his linage. Richard Duke of Yorke wan fauor of the Irish.

Iohn Viscount Beamount, was made Chamberlaine of England, Henry de Bromefield Lord Vescy, William Bourcher Knight, Lord Bunuile, William Beauchampe Lord S. Amonde, Thomas Percy Lord Egremonde, these were created the 6. of Nouember. Barons created.

The French king assembled an army royall, and comming before Cane, besieged it on all sides, and assaulted the walles, but the Duke of Somerset, and the other Captaines within the towne, manfully withstood their enemies, beating backe the assailants. The French king with his great ordinance shot daily at the wals, and did some hurt, but to the Castell which stode on a rock, and in it a dungeon, vnable to be beaten down, he did no harm at all. Though the Duke of Somerset were the kings lieutenant, yet sir Davy Hall, as Captane of this towne for his maister the Duke of Yorke, owner therof, toke vpon him the chiefe charge, sir Robert Vere was Captaine of the Castell, and sir Henry Radford, Captaine of the dungeon: daily the shot was great, but more terrible then hurtfull, sauing that one day, a stone shot into the towne, fell betwéen the Dutches of Somerset and her children, which being amased with this chance, besought her husband knéeling on her knées, to haue mercy and compassion of his small infants, that they might be deliuered out of the town in safetie. The Duke moued with the sorrow of his wife, and loue of his children, rendered the towne, with condition to depart with all their goods. Sir Davy Hall, with diuers other departed to Cherbrough, and from thence Cane deliuered to the French.

thence sailed into Ireland, to the Duke of Yorke, making relation to him of all these doings, which thing kindled so great a rancor in the Dukes heart, that he neuer left persecuting the Duke of Somerset, till he had brought him to his fatall confusion. After the obtayning of this strong towne of Caen, the Earle of Cleremont, besieged, the Citie of Silleur, whereof was Captaine Mathew Gowgh, with 300. Englishmen, who in the ende deliuered the towne vpon condition to depart. Then was Falaise besieged, whereof were Captaines, for the Earle of Shrewsbury that was owner, Andrew Trolope, and Thomas Cotton Esquires, which agreed to deliuer it on conditions. The towne of Donfront was likewise rendered, so that there rested now, onely English, the towne of Chirburgh, whereof was Captaine one Thomas Gonuile, which as long as victuals serued, defended the towne right manfully, but in the ende, vpon composition yelded the towne, & went to Caleis, where the Duke of Somerset, and many other Englishmen then soiourned. Thus was Normandy lost clerely out of the Englishmens hands, after it had continued in their possession the space of 30. yeres, by the conquest of Henry the fift. In which Dutchie were an 100. strong townes and fortresses, to be kept, and holden, besides them that were destroyed by the warres, and in the same is one Archbishoprick, and fiue Bishoprickes. Whilest the French made these conquestes in the Dutchy of Normandy the common people make exclamations against the Duke of Suffolke, affirming him to bee the onely cause of the deliuery of Aniow, and Mayne, the chiefe procurer of the Duke of Glocesters death, the losse of Normandy, &c. Whereupon the Quéene doubting not onely the Dukes destruction, but also her own confusion, caused the Parliament begunne at Westminster, after Christmas adiourned to the blacke Friers in London, then to be adiourned to Leicester, thinking there to haue suppressed the malice conceiued against the Duke and her, at which place fewe of the Nobilitie would appeare. Where it was againe adiourned to Westminster, where was a full appearance. In the which session the commons of the neather-house put vp to the King and the Lords many articles of treason, misprision, and euill demeanour against the Duke of Suffolke, as ye may read in Hall. The Quéene therefore, doubting some commotion to arise, caused the said Duke to be committed to the Tower, where he remained not past a moneth, but was restored to the kings fauour. This doing so much displeased the people, that in sundrie places of the Realme, they assembled together in great companies, and chose to them a Captain, but were ouercome as shall bee shewed.

Normandy lost from the English.

Parliament adiorned.

The ninth of Ianuary, Adam Molins Bishop of Chichester, keeper of the kings priuie seale, through the procurement of Richard Duke of Yorke, was by shipmen slaine at Portesmouth.

1450. Bishop of Chichester murdered.

The ninth of Februarye Thomas Thany, otherwise called Blew beard a fuller, was taken besides Canterbury, for raysing of a rebellion, who was hanged and quartered.

Blewbeard hanged.

After this little rage asswaged, about the Octaues of Easter, the Parliament was adiorned to Leicester, whither came the King & Quéene in great estate,

estate, and with them the Duke of Suffolke, as chiefe counseller, where the commons of the lower house besought the King, that such persons as assented to the release of Anjow, and deliuerance of Mayne, might be duely punished. And to be priuie to that fact they accused as principall, the Duke of Suffolke, with Iohn Bishop of Salisbury, sir Iames Fines Lord Say, Daniel Triuilian, and other whom they indited of treason, and many other matters touching the king and his commons, as it appeareth by the verdict of three inquestes, to the number of a thirtie persons, whereupon the king to appease the commons, first sequestred the Lord Say, being Treasurer of England, and other from their offices, and roomes, and after banished William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke, for fiue yeres, who taking ship, at Ipswich in Suffolke, on the third day of May, sailed towards France, but was encountered with a ship of warre, appertayning to the Duke of Excester, Constable of the Tower of London, called the Nicholas of the Tower. The Captaine of which barke, with small fight entered into the Dukes ship, and perceiuing his person present, brought him to Doner Roade, and there on the side of a cocke boate, caused his head to be stricken off, and left his bodie with the head lying there on the sandes, which corpes being there found, by a chaplaine of his, was conueyed to Wingfield colledge in Suffolke, and there buried saith Hall: but I otherwise finde him to be buried in the Charterhouse of Kingstone vpon Hul.

Wil. de la Pole Duke of Suffolke banished and murdered.

This William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke, and Alice his wife, daughter to Thomas Chawcer, sonne to Geffrey Chawcer the famous Poet, translated and increased the Manor place of Ewelme in Oxfordshire: they builded a new the parish Church of Ewelme, a comely peece of worke standing on an hill: and also hard adioyning to the west ende of Ewelme parish Church, they founded a prettie hospitall or almes house for two priests chaste of bodie and deuout in soule, and thirteene poore men to dwell and be sustayned in for euer, one of the priests to be master of the almes house and almes people, them to instruct as well by his sonnd doctrine, as good life, the other priest a scholemaster, freely to teach the children of the tenantes of the said Lordshippe of Ewelme and other Lordships pertaining to the said almes house their Grammer, and either of these two priests to haue tenne pound the peere. One of the thirteene poore men to be called minister, to present the faultes of the other to the master, and to ring their common bel to seruice, and to haue sixteen pence the weeke, the other twelue poore men to haue euery of them fourteene pence the weeke. This house hath to name Gods house, or the house of almes, vnto the which he gaue three Manors, Ramruge in Hampshire, Conoche in Wiltshire, and Pershe in Buckinghamshire, with their appurtenances, all which at the suppression was valued but 20. pound the peere, such large penisworth was then made by such as ment to purchase: they also founded the hospitall of Donnington.

Gods house at new Ewelme in Oxfordshire

Liber fundationis.

Hospital at Donnington castle.

The death of the Duke of Suffolke brought not the Realme in quiet, for these that fauoured the Duke of Yorke, and wished the crown vpon his head procured a commotion in Kent in this manner.

In

Iacke Cade Captain of the rebels in Kent.

In the moneth of May, the commons of Kent in great numbers assembled, hauing to their Captaine Iacke Cade, who named himselfe Mortimer, cosen to the Duke of Yorke, or as hee was named of some Iohn amend all: this Captaine brought a great number of people to the Blacke heath, and there kept the field more then a moneth, pilling the countrey about, to whom the Citie of London at that time was full fauourable. And the said Captain (as I find recorded) sent for such Citizens of London as it pleased him to commaund to repayre vnto him, vnder letters of safe conduct, as followeth.

The safegard and signe manuell of the Captaine of Kent, sent to Thomas Cocke *draper of London, by the Captaine of the great assemble in Kent.*

BY this our writing enseled, we grant and will permit truly, that Thomas Cocke of London draper, shall come in good suretie and in safegard to our presence, without any hurt of his person, and so auoid from vs againe at his pleasure, with all other persons assigned at his denomination with him comming in like wise.

The commaundement by the Captaine of Kent, sent vnto Thomas Cocke *aboue said.*

FOr your instruction, first yee shall charge all Lumbards and strangers, being merchants, Ienewes, Venetians, Florentines, and other, this day to draw them togither, and to ordaine for vs the Captaine 12. harnises, complete of the best fashion, 24. brigandines, 12. battaile axes, 12. glaues, six horses with saddle and bridle completely harnessed, and 1000. markes of readie money: and if this our demaund be not obserued and done, we shall haue the heads of as many as we can get of them.

What answere to this demand was returned I finde not, but like it is the same was granted and performed, for I finde not the said Captaine and Gentlymen, at their being in the Citie, to haue hurt any stranger.

In the meane time the king sent notable men to the said Captaine and his fellowship, to know their purpose and the cause of their insurrection: vnto whom the Captain answered, that he and his company were assembled there to redresse and reforme the wrongs that were done in the Realme, and to withstand the malice of them that were destroyers of the common-weale, and to amend the defaultes of them that were chiefe counsellers to the king, and shewed vnto them the Articles of complaints touching the misgouernment of the Realme, wherein was nothing contayned but seemed reasonable, whereof a copie was sent to the Parliament holden that time at Westminster, with also one other bill of requestes by them made, of things to be reformed, and to haue answere thereof againe, but he had none. The bill of Articles they intituled

The

The complaint of the commons of Kent, and cauſes of the aſſembly on the Blackeheath.

1 Inprimis, it is openly noyſed that Kent ſhould be deſtroyed with a royall power, and made a wilde forreſt, for the death of the Duke of Suffolke, of which the commons of Kent thereof were neuer guiltie.

2 Item, the king is ſtirred to liue onely on his commons, and other men to haue the reuenues of the crowne, the which hath cauſed pouerty in his excellencie, and great payments of the people, now late to the king granted in his Parliament.

3 Item, that the Lords of his royall bloud bëne put from his daily preſence, and other meane perſons of lower nature exalted and made chiefe of his priuy counſell, the which ſtoppeth matters of wrongs done in the realme from his excellent audience, and may not be redreſſed as law will, but if bribes and gifts be meſſengers to the hands of the ſaid counſell.

4 Item, the people of his Realme be not paid of debts owing for ſtuffe and purueiance taken to the vſe of the kings houſehold, in vndoing of the ſaid people, and the poore commons of this Realme.

5 Item, the kings menſall ſeruants of houſehold, and other perſons, aſked daily goods and landes, of empeached or indited of treaſon, the which the king graunteth anon, ere they ſo endaungered be conuict. The which cauſeth the receiuers thereof to enforge labours and meanes applied to the death of ſuch people, ſo appeached or indited, by ſubtle meanes, for couetiſe of the ſaid grants: and the people ſo impeached or indited, though it be vntrue, may not be committed to the lawe for their deliueraunce, but helde ſtill in priſon, to their vttermoſt vndoing and deſtruction, for couetiſe of goods.

6 Item, though diuers of the poore people and commons of the Realme, haue neuer ſo great right, truth and perfite title to their land, yet by vntrue claime of enfeffement made vnto diuers ſtates, gentles, and the kings menſall ſeruants in maintenances againſt the right, the true owners dare not hold claime, nor purſue their right.

7 Item, it is noyſed by common voices, that the kings landes in France bëne aliened and put away from the crowne, and his Lords and people there deſtroyed with vntrue meanes of treaſon, of which it is deſired, enquiries through all the Realme to be made how and by whom, and if ſuch traytors may be found guiltie, them to haue execution of law, without any pardon, in example of other.

8 Item, collectors of the 15. peny in Kent be greatly hered and hurt in paying great ſummes of money, in the Exchequer to ſue out a writ called Quorum nomina for allowance of the Barons of the ports, which now is deſired, that hereafter in the lieu of the collectors, the Barons aforeſaid may ſue it out for their eaſe at their owne coſtes.

9 Item, the ſheriffes, and vnderſheriffes, let to ferme their offices and

bayliwikes, taking great suretie therefore, the which causeth extortions done by them and by their bailifes to the people.

10 Item, simple and poore people that vse not hunting, be greatly oppressed by inditements fained and done by the said sherifes, undersherifes, bayliffes, and other of their assent, to cause their increase for paying of their said ferme.

11 Item, they returne in names of Enquestes in writing into diuers Courtes of the Kings not summoned nor warned, wherethrough the people daily lese great summes of money, well nie to the vttermost of their vndoing: and make leuie of amercements called the Greene ware, more in summes of money than can be found due of record in the Kinges bookes.

12 Item, the ministers of the court of Douer in Kent vexe and arrest diuers people throughall the shire out of Tastell ward passing their bands and liberty vsed of olde time, by diuers subtle and vntrue meanes and actions falsely fained, taking great fee at their list in great hurt of the people on all the shire of Kent.

13 Item, the people of the said shire of Kent, may not haue their free election in the chosing knights of the shire, but letters been sent from diuers estates to the great rulers of all the countrie, the which imbraceth their tenants and other people by force to chose other persons than the common will is.

14 Item, whereas knights of the shire should chose the kings collectors indifferently without any bribe taking, they haue sent now late to diuers persons, notifying them to be collectors, whereupon giftes and bribes be taken, and so the collectors office is bought and solde extortionously at the knights list.

15 Item, the people be sore vexed in costes and labour, called to the Sessions of peace in the said shire, appearing from the farthest and vttermost parts of the West vnto the East, the which causeth to some men fiue dates iourney, whereupon they desire the said appearance to be diuided into two parts, the which one part to appeare in one place, another part in another place, in releeuing of the grieuance and intollerable labours and vexations of the said people.

The requests by the Captaine of the great assembly in Kent.

INprimis, desireth the Captaine of the commons, the welfare of our soueraigne Lord the King, and all his true Lords spirituall and temporall, desiring of our said soueraigne Lord, and of all the true Lords of his counsell, he to take in all his demaines, that he may raigne like a King royall, according as he is borne our true Christian king annointed, and who so will say the contrary, we all will liue and die in the quarrell as his true liege men.

2 Item, desireth the said Captaine, that he will auoid all the false progeny

and

and affinitie of the Duke of Suffolke, the which béene openly knowne, and they to be punished after the custome and lawe of this land, and to take about his noble person the true Lords of his royall blood of this his Realme, that is to say, the high and mightie Prince the Duke of Yorke, late exiled from our said soueraigne Lords presence (by the motion and stirring of the traiterous and false disposed the Duke of Suffolke and his affinitie) and the mightie Princes and Dukes of Exceter, Buckinghaam, and Norffolke, and all the Earles and Barons of this land: and then shall he be the richest king Christen.

3 Item, desireth the said Captaine and commons punishment vpon the false traitors, the which contriued and imagined the death of the high and mightful excellent Prince the Duke of Glocester, the which is too much to rehearse, the which duke was proclaimed as traitor. Upon the which quarrel, we purpose all to liue and die vpon that it is false.

4 Item, the Duke of Exceter, our holy father the Cardinal, the Noble Prince Duke of Warwike, and also the Realme of France, the Dutchy of Normandy, Gascoine, and Guien, Anioy and Maine, were deliuered and lost, by the meanes of the said traitors, and our true Lords, Knights, and Esquires, and many a good yeoman lost and solde ere they went, the which is great pitie to heare, of the great and grieuous losse to our soueraigne Lord and his Realme.

5 Item, desireth the said Captaine and commons, that all the extortions vsed daily among the common people, might be laid downe, that is to say, the grene Ware the which is falsely vsed, to the perpetuall destruction of the kings true commons of Kent. Also the kings Bench, the which is too grefe-full to the shire of Kent without prouision of our soueraign Lord and his true Counsell. And also in taking of wheat and other graines, beefe, mutton, and all other victuall, the which is importable to the said commons, without the brefe prouision of our said soueraigne Lord, and his true Counsell, they may no longer beare it. And also vnto the statute of labourers, and the great extortioners, the which is to say, the false traitors, Sleg, Crowmer, Isle, and Robert Est.

These Bils when the Counsell had well perused, they did not onely disallow and condemne them and the authors, as proud and presumptuous, but also perswaded the King rather to suppresse those rebels by force, than by faire promises. Whereupon the king remoued from Westminster vnto Grenewich, from whence he would haue sent certaine Lords with a power to haue distressed the Kentishmen, but the men said to their Lords they would not fight against them that labour to amende the Common weale: whereupon the Lords were driued to leaue their purpose. And because the Kentishmen cried out against the Lord Say the Kings Chamberlaine, hee was by the King committed to the Tower of London. Then went the King againe to London, and within two daies after went against the Kentishmen with fiftéene thousand men well prepared for the warre, but the saide Kentishmen fledde the night before his comming into the wood countrie

King Henry went against the Kentishmen with a great power.

nere vnto Senocke, whereupon the king returned againe to London, and sent sir Humfrey Stafford knight, with William Stafford esquire his kinsman saith Pigot, and other Gentlemen, to follow the Kentishmen, who finding them at Senocke, set vpon the rebels, and fought with them a long time, but in the end both the Staffords were slaine, with many other of their people.

King Henries power ouercome.

When Iacke Cade had thus ouercome the Staffords, he forthwith apparelled himselfe with the knights apparell, and after he had refreshed his people, he returned to the Blacke heath, and there pight againe his field, and lay there from the 29. of June, till the first day of July, in which season came vnto him the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Duke of Buckingham, with whom they had a long communication, and found him right discreet in his answeres. Howbeit they could not cause him to submit himselfe and lay downe his people.

King Henry went to Killingworth.

In the meane while, the king and Quéene hearing of the increasing of his rebels, and also the Lords fearing their owne seruants, least they would take the Captaines part, remoued from London to Killingworth, leauing the Citie without ayde, except onely the Lord Scales, which was left to kéepe the Tower, and with him a manly and warly man named Matthew Gough. Then the Captaine of Kent thus heuering at Blacke heath, to bring himselfe the more in fame, that he kept good iustice, beheaded there a petie Captaine of his named Paris, forsomuch as he had offended against such ordinances as he had established in his host: and hearing that the king and his Lords were thus departed, drew him nére vnto the Citie, so that vpon the first of July, hé entred the Borough of Southwarke, then being Wensday, and lodged him there at the Hart, for he might not be suffered to enter the Citie.

Captaine of Kent and his Kentishmen entred the Citty of London.

Rob. Fabian.

And vpon the same day, the commons of Essex in great number pight them a field vpon the plaine of Miles end.

Rebels of Essex pight their field on the Mile end.

And vpon the second day of the said moneth, the Maior called a common counsell at the Guildhall, to puruey for the withstanding of these rebelles, in which assembly were diuers men of sundry opinions, so that some thought good that the said rebelles should be received into the Citie, and some otherwise. Among the which Robert Horne Stockfishmonger then being an Alderman, spake sore against them that would haue them enter. For the which, the commons were so moued against him, that they ceased not till they had him committed to warde. And the same afternone about fiue of the clocke, the Captaine with his people entred by the bridge, and cut the ropes of the drawe bridge asunder with his swoorde. When he was passed into the Citie, he made in sundry places thereof Proclamations in the Kings name, that no man in paine of death should robbe or take any thing without paying therefore. By reason whereof, he wanne the hearts of the commons, but all was done to beguile him. After as he came by London stone, he strake it with his swoorde, and saide: Now is Mortimer Lord of this Citie, and then shewing his minde to the Maior for the ordering of his people, hé returned into Southwarke, and there abode

as

as he before had done, his people comming and going at lawful howres when they would.

On the morrow the third of July, the ſaid Captaine againe entred the Citie, & cauſed the Lord Say to be fet from the Tower to the Guildhall, where he was arraigned before the Maior and other the Kings Iuſtices, and Robert Horne Alderman before named ſhould haue béne likewiſe arraigned, but that his wife and other friends for fiue hundred markes gat him reſtored to his liberty. The Lord Say deſiring he might be tried by his péeres, was by the rebels forceably taken from the officers, and brought to the ſtandard in Cheape, where they ſtrake off his head, pight it on a pole, and bare it before them, and his body they cauſed to be drawne naked at a horſe taile vpon the pauement from Cheape into Southwarke to the ſaide Captaines inne.

Alſo a ſquire called Crowmer that was then Sheriffe of Kent, that had wedded the ſaid Lord Saies daughter, by commaundement of the Captaine was brought out of the Fléte, that was committed thither for certaine extortions that he had done in his office, and led to Mile end without London, and there without any iudgement his head was ſmit off, and the Lord Saies head and his were born vpon two long poles vnto London bridge, and there ſet vp, and the Lord Saies body was quartered.

The ſame day the Captaine went vnto the houſe of Philip Malpas draper, and Alderman, and robbed and ſpoyled his houſe, taking from thence great ſubſtance, and returned into Southwarke. On the next morrow he againe entred the Citie, and dined that day in the parith of Saint Margaret Patins at one Gherſtis houſe, and when he had dined, like an vncourteous gueſt he robbed him, as the day before he had Malpas. For which two robberies, although the poore people drew to him and were partners in the ſpoyle, yet the honeſt and wealthy commoners caſt in their mindes the ſequele of this matter, and feared leaſt they ſhould be dealt with in like maner. Then the Maior and Aldermen with aſſiſtance of the worſhipfull commoners in ſafegard of themſelues and of the citie, toke their counſel how they might driue the Captaine and his adherents from the city, for the performance whereof, the Maior ſent vnto the Lord Scales, and Mathew Gough, then hauing the Tower in their gouernment, requiring their ayde and aſſiſtance, which they promiſed.

On the firſt of July, the Captaine being in Southwarke, cauſed a man to be beheaded there, and that day entred not the Citie. When night was come, the Maior and the Citizens, with Mathew Gough kept the paſſage of the bridge, and defended the Kentiſhmen which made great force to reenter the Citie. Then the Captaine ſéeing this bickering, went to harneis, & aſſembled his people, and ſet ſo fiercely vpon the Citizens, he draue them backe from the ſtoupes in Southwarke, or bridge foote, vnto the drawbridge, in defending whereof, many a man was drowned and ſlaine. Among the which was Iohn Sutton Alderman, Mathew Gough a Squire of Wales, and Roger Hoſand Citizen. This ſkirmiſh continued all night till nine of the clocke

on the morrow, so that sometime the Citizens had the better, and sometimes the other, but euer they kept them vpon the bridge, so that the Citizens neuer passed much the bulwarke at the bridge foote, nor the Kentishmen no farther than the draw bridge. Thus continuing the cruell fight to the destruction of much people on both sides, lastly, after the Kentishmen were put to the worst, a truce was agreed for certaine houres, during which truce, the Archbishop of Canterbury, then Chancellor of England, sent a generall pardon to the Captaine for himselfe, & an other for his people, by reason whereof, he and his company withdrew them by little and little, and their Captaine put all his pillage and goods that he had robbed, into a barge, and sent it to Rochester by water, and himselfe went by land, and would haue entred into the Castell of Quinborow with a fewe men that were left about him: but he was there let of his purpose: wherefore he fled into the wood country beside Lewes in Sussex. The Captaine and his people being thus departed, not long after proclamations were made in diuers places of Kent, Sussex, and Southery, that who might take the forsaid Captaine alue or dead, should haue a thousand markes for his trauell.

Captaine and rebels pardoned.

The Copy of the Writ and Proclamation by the King, for the taking of the said Cade *and his fellowship.*

HEnricus Dei gratia Rex Angliæ & Franciæ, & Dominus Hiberniæ, vniuersis & singulis custodibus, &c.

For as much as one Iohn Cade borne in Ireland, which calleth himselfe Iohn Mortimer, and in some writing calleth himselfe Captaine of Kent, the which Iohn Cade the last yere tofore his dwelling in Sussex with a Knight, called Sr Thomas Dagre, slue there a woman with child, and for that cause toke the greath of the Church, and after for that cause forsware the Kings land: the which Iohn Cade also after this, was sworne to the French part, and dwelled with them, which hath now of late time, (to the intent to enrich himselfe by robbing and dispoyling of the kings liege men, as it is nowe openly knowne, to bring himselfe to great and high estate) falsely and vntruly deceiued many of the kings people, and vnder colour of holy and good intents, made them to assemble with him against the kings regality and his lawes, and nought setting by the kings Grace and pardons granted, not onely to him, but all the kings subiects, the which by his deceit haue assembled with him, the which he with great reuerence receiued on Sunday last passed, and so did all that were assembled with him: notwithstanding all this, he laboureth now of new to assemble the kings people againe, and to that intent beareth them on hand, that the kings letters of pardon graunted to him and them, be not auailable nor of none effect without authoritie of Parliament: whereas the contrary is true, as it is openly knowne by that, that the king grants from time to time his Charters of pardon to such as him list, of all maner of crimes and offences both generall and speciall.

The king therefore willeth and commaundeth, that none of his subiects

giue

giue faith nor credence to the said false informations of the said false traitor, nor accompany with him in any wise, nor comfort, nor sustaine him nor his with victuall, nor with any other things. But will whosoeuer of the kings subiects may take him, shall take him, and that whosoeuer taketh him, and bringeth him quicke or dead, to the king or his councell, shall haue a thousand markes for his labour truly paid him without faile or delay by the procession of the kings councell. And whosoeuer taketh any of those that from this day forth accompany with him, shall haue fiue marke for his reward, truly to be paid in manner and forme aboue said.

And ouer this, commaunding all Constables, Ministers, and Officers of the said shire, that none of them on paine of death take vpon them to execute any commaundement by word or writing sent or made vnto them by the said Cade, calling himselfe Mortimer and Captaine, be it to reare any people, or to any other intent: but to arest and make to be arested such as take vpon them to bring any such commaundement by writing or by word. *Et hoc nullatenus omittatis, Teste me ipso apud Westminster, x. die Iulij, anno regni.* 28.

After which proclamation thus published, a gentleman of Kent named Alexander Eden awaited so his time, that he toke the said Cade in a garden in Sussex. And there he was slaine at Hothfield, and brought to London in a cart, and there quartered, his head set on London bridge, and his quarters sent to diuers places in Kent. Captaine of Kent taken and beheaded.

This yeere the commons also in diuers parts of England, as in Sussex, Wiltshire, and other places, did much harme to many persons, among the which, on the 29. of June, William Ascoth Bishop of Salisbury (after he had said masse at Edington) was by his owne tenants drawne from the altar, in his Albe with his Stole about his necke, to the top of an hill, and there by them shamefully murthered: for they cleaued his head as he kneeled on his knees in his prayers, and after spoiled to the naked skin, and then they renting his bloody shirt, toke euery man a peece, and made boast of their wickednesse: and the day before his chariot was robbed of his treasury to the value of ten thousand markes. Bishop of Salisbury murthered. *Ann. reg.* 29.

Alexander Eden Esquire, sherife of Kent, for his good seruice against the late rebels, is made Custos or keeper of the castle at Rochester. Alexander Eden.

In the moneth of September, Tresham that was speaker in the last Parliament, was beheaded in Northamptonshire.

After Michaelmas, Richard Duke of Yorke comming out of Ireland, toke John Sutton Baron of Dudley, and Reginald Abbot of Saint Peters at Glocester, and shortly after he toke Iohn Gargraue keeper of the Kings Bench at London, and sent them to the castle of Ludlow.

The first of November began a Parliament at Westminster, and the first of December the Duke of Somerset which was newly come out of Normandy, was put vnder arest, and his goods by the commons was sowly despoiled and borne away from the Blackfriers. After which riot, on the next morow, proclamation was made through the citie by the Duke of Yorke, Parliament at Westminster.

and the Duke of Norffolke, that no man should spoyle or rob, vpon paine of death: and the same day at the Standard in Cheape was a man beheaded for doing contrary to the proclamation.

King Henry rode into Kent with an army.

The fourth of December, the King and his Lords rode through the Citie of London, with a great armie of men well appointed, and deuided into three battels. Also the Citizens armed stood in the stretes of the Citie, where through the king passed, which altogither made the greatest shew of armed men that had béene séene in London within the memory of any man then liuing.

1451. Rebels in Kent and Sussex executed.

The 18. of January, the King with certaine Lords, and his Iustices rode towards Kent, and there indighted and arraigned many, whereof to the number of 26. were put to death, eight at Canterbury, and the residue in other townes of Kent and Sussex. And the King returning out of Kent on the 23. of February, the men of that countrey, naked saue their shirts, in great numbers, met him on the Blackheath, and there on their knées asked mercy, and had their pardon. Then the King rode royally through the Citie of London, and was of the Citizens ioyfully receiued, and the same day against the Kings comming to the Citie, nine heads of the Kentishmen that had béene put to death, were set on London bridge, and the Captaines head that stode there before, was set in the middest of them.

The malice begunne, increased betwéene the Lords of the land, and especially against the Duke of Somerset, and other of the Quénes Counsell, for the léesing of Normandy, whereof the chiefe Citie of Roan was lost or giuen vp by appointment, the yéere preceding (as witnesseth Gagwine vpon condition that the Duke of Somerset with his wife and English souldiers, should with such goods as they might carry, depart frée ly from the Citie: For which frée passage he should pay vnto the French king 56. thousand Scutes, which amount to fourtéene thousand markes sterling. And also he was bound to deliuer into the French kings possession, all Townes and Castels that at that day were in the possession of Englishmen, within the Dutchie of Normandy: for the performance of which couenants, the Lord Talbot was sent for one of the pledges, and so by one Floquet all the Towns and Castels were to the French kings vse receiued, Harflete onely excepted, whereof the Captaine named Curson, with the assistance of sir Thomas Auringham, in despite of all the French kings power laid both by sea and land, held the same a full moneth or more, and then for lacke of rescue, gaue it vp by appointment.

Robert Gagwine

Richard Duke of Yorke pretended title to the Crowne.

Richard Duke of Yorke, pretending a title to the Crowne, and heire to Lionell Duke of Clarence, came this yéere out of Ireland vnto London, in the Parliament time, there to consult with his especiall friendes, Iohn Duke of Norffolk, Richard Earle of Salisbury, and Richard his sonne, which after was Earle of Warwicke, Thomas Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, and Edmond Brooke Lord Cobham, &c. After long deliberation and aduise taken, it was concluded, to kéepe their chiefe purpose secret, and that the Duke should raise an army of men, vnder a pretext to remoue diuers counsellers about

the

the King, and to reuenge the manifest iniuries done to the commonwealth by the same rulers, of the which as principall, the Duke of Somerset was namely accused, both for that he was greatly hated of the commons for the losse of Normandy, and for that it was well knowne, that he would be altogither against the Duke of Yorke, in his challenge to be made to the crowne, when time should serue: Therefore when the Duke of Yorke had thus framed his foundation of his long intended enterprise, he assembled a great host, *An. reg. 30.* to the number of 10000. in the marches of Wales, publishing openly that the cause of this his gathering of people, was for the publike wealth of the Realme, for affirming the same to be true, he wrote his letters in forme as followeth:

Richard Duke of Yorke his declaration of truth as he said

Forasmuch as I Richard Duke of Yorke am informed, that the King my soueraigne Lord, is my heauy Lord, greatly displeased with me, and hath me in mistrust by sinister information of mine enemies, aduersaries, and euill willers, where God knoweth, from whom nothing is hid, I am, haue been, and euer will be his true liege man, and so haue I said before this diuers times, as well by mouth as by writing, notified and declared to my said soueraigne Lord. And for that this notice so comen vnto me of the displeasure of my said soueraigne Lord is to me so grieuous, I haue prayed the reuerend father in God the Bishop of Hereford, and my cosen the Earle of Shrewsbury to come hither, and heare my declaration in this matter. Wherein I haue said to them, that I am true liege man to the King my soueraigne Lord, euer haue been, and shall be to my dying day. And to the very proofe that it is so, I offer my selfe to sweare that, on the blessed Sacrament, and receiue it, the which I hope shall be my saluation, at the day of doome: And so for my speciall comfort and consolation, I haue prayed the said Lords to report and declare vnto the Kings highnes my said offer. And to the ende and intent, that I will be ready to doe the same oth in presence of two or three Lords, such as shall please the Kings highnes to send hither to accept it. In witnes whereof I haue signed this scedule with my signe manuall, and set thereunto my signet of armes. Written in my Castle of Ludlow, the 9. of January, the 30. yere of the raigne of my soueraigne Lord King Henry the sixt. *1452.*

The 16. of February, King Henry accompanied with the Duke of Somerset, and many other Lords, tooke towards the marches of Wales, for as much as he was credibly informed, that the Duke of Yorke, assisted with diuers other Lords and men of name, had in those parts gathered a strong power of people, and with them was entring the land, and so held on his iourney towards him: but when the Duke had witting of the Kings great power, he returned from the way which was taken by the Kings host, and hasted towards London. And when he had receiued knowledge from the Citie, that he might not there be receiued, he went ouer Kingston bridge, and so into Kent, and there vpon Brent heath nere vnto Dertford, he pight his field, whereof the King hauing knowledge, sped him after, and lastly came vnto Blacke heath, and there pight his field. When both the hosts were thus imbattelled,

embattelled, mediatian of peace was made betweene them, for furtherance whereof, to the Duke were sent the Bishops of Winchester and of Ely, with the Earles of Salisbury and Warwicke. To whom it was answered by the Duke, that he nor none of his company intended any hurt to the Kings person, nor to any of his Counsell, being louers of the commonwealth, and of him and his land: but his intent and purpose was to remoue from the King a few euill disposed persons, by whose meanes the common people was grieuously oppressed, and the comminaltie greatly impouerished, of whom he named the Duke of Somerset to be the principall, &c. And further to vnderstand of the Dukes meaning by this his forcible entring of the Realme, (as himselfe pretended) may appeare by certaine letters by him written to the King, and also the Kings answers to the same, both which I thinke good here to set downe as I finde them recorded.

Richard duke of Yorke his letter to king Henry.

Please it your highnesse to conceiue that sith my departing out of this your Realme, by your commaundement, and being in your seruice in your land of Ireland, I haue béene informed that diuers language hath bén said of me to your most excellent estate, which should sound to my dishonour and reproch, and charge of my person: howbeit that, I aye haue béene, and euer will be, your true liege man and seruant: and if there be any man that will or dare say the contrary, or charge me otherwise, I beséech your rightwisenes to call him before your high presence, and I will declare me for my discharge as a true knight ought to do, and if I do not, as I doubt not but I shall, I beséech you to punish me as the poorest man of your land: and if hée be found vntrue in his suggestion and information, I beséech you of your highnes that he be punished after his desert, in example of all other. Please it your excellence to know, that as well before my departing out of this your Realme, for to go into your land of Ireland, in your full noble seruice, as sith, certaine persons haue lien in awaite for to hearken vpon me, as sir Iohn Talbot knight at the Castell of Holt: sir Thomas Stanley knight in Cheshire: Pulford at Chester: Elton at Worcester: Brooke at Glocester: and Richard groome of your Chamber at Beaumarres: which had in charge (as I am informed) for to take me and put me into your Castell of Conway, and to strike off the head of sir William Oldehall knight, and to haue put in prison sir William Deuereux knight, and sir Edmond Malso knight, without enlarging, vntill the time that your highnes had appointed their deliuerance.

Item, at such time as I was purposed for to haue arriued at your hauen of Beaumarres, for to haue come to your noble presence to declare me your true man and subiect, as my dutie is, my landing was stopped and forbarred by Henry Norres, Thomas Norres, William Bulkley, William Gruft, and Bartholomew Bould, your officers in Northwales, that I should not land there, nor haue victuall nor refreshing for me and my fellowship, as I haue written to your excellence here before, so farre forth that Henry Norres deputie to the Chamberlaine of Northwales said vnto me, that he had in commaundement that I should in no wise haue landing, refreshing, nor lodging,

ging, for men nor for horse, nor other thing that might turne to my worship or ease, putting the blame vpon William Say Vsher of your chamber, saying and affirming that I am against your intent, and as a Traitor, as I am informed: and moreouer, certaine letters were made and deliuered vnto Chester, Shrewsbury, and to other places for to let mine entrie into the same.

Item, aboue all wrongs and iniuries aboue said done vnto me of malice, without any cause, I being in your land of Ireland, in your honourable seruice, certain commissions were made and directed vnto diuers persons, which for the execution of the same, sate in certaine places, and the Iuries impanelled and charged, to the which iuries, certaine persons laboured instantly to haue me indited of treason, to the intent for to haue vndone me and mine issue and corrupted my blood, as it is openly published: beseeching your Maiestie royall, of your righteousnes, to examine these matters, and thereupon to doe such iustice in his behalfe as the cause requireth: for mine intent is fully to pursue to your highnes for the conclusion of these matters.

Answere of king Henry to the duke of Yorke.

Cosin, we haue seene the bill that ye take vs late, and also vnderstande the good humble obedience that ye in your selfe shewe vnto vs, as well in word as in deed, wherefore our intent is, the more hastily to ease you of such thinges as were in your said bill. Howbeit that at our more leisure we might aunswere to your said bill, yet we let you to wit, that for the causes aforesaid, we will declare you nowe our intent in these matters: sith it is that a long time among the people hath beene vpon you many straunge language, and in especiall anone after your disordinate and vnlawfull slaying of the Bishoppe of Chester, diuers and many of the vntrue shipmen and other, said in their manner, wordes against our estate, making manace to our owne person by your sayings, that ye should be fetched with many thousandes, and ye should take vpon you that, which ye neyther ought, nor as we doubt not, ye will not attempt, so farre forth that it was said to our person by diuers, and especially we remember of one Wasnes which had like wordes to vs. And also there was diuers of such false people, that went on and had like language in diuers of our Townes of our land, which by our subiectes were taken and duely executed: wherefore we sent to diuers of our courtes and places, to hearken and to take heede if any such manner comming were, and if there had beene, for to resist it: but comming into our land our true subiectes as ye did, our intent was not that ye, nor lesse of estate of our subiectes, nor none of your seruantes should not haue beene letted nor warned, but in goodly wise receiued: Howbeit that peraduenture your suddaine comming, without certaine warning, caused our seruantes to doe as they did, considering the causes aboue said. And as to the enditement that ye spoke of, we thinke verily, and holde for certaine, that there was none such. And if ye may truely proue that any person was thereabouts, the matter shall bee demeaned as the case shall require, so that he shall know it is to our great displeasure. Vpon this for the easing of your heart in all such matters, we declare, repute, and admit you

our

our true and faithfull subiect, and as our welbeloued Cosin.

Richard Duke of Yorke to King Henry againe.

Please it your highnes tenderly to consider, that great murmur and grudging is vniuersally in this your Realme, in that Iustice is not duly ministred to such as trespasse and offend against your lawes, and in especiall of them that be endited of treason, and other being openly noised of the same, whereby great inconueniences haue fallen, and great is like to fall hereafter in your said Realme, which God defende, but if by your highnes prouision conenable bee made for due reformation and punishment in this behalfe. Wherefore I your humble subiect and true liegeman, Richard Duke of Yorke, willing as effectually as I can, and desiring the suretie and prosperitie of your most royall person, and the welfare of this your noble Realme, counsell and aduertise your excellencie for the conuersation of good tranquillitie and peaceable rule among all other subiects, for to ordaine and prouide, that true iustice be had, against all such that so be endited, or openly named, wherein I offer my selfe, and will put my endeuour for to execute your commaundement in the premises, for the punishing of such offenders, and redresse of the sayde misrules, to my might and power. And for the hastie execution hereof, like it your highnes to addresse these letters of priuie seale and writs to your officers and ministers, to doe, take, and arrest all such persons so noysed and endited, of what estate, degree, or condition soeuer they be, and them to commit to the Tower of London, and to other of your prisons, there to abide without baile or mainprise, vntill the time they be vtterly tried, and determined after the course of your lawes.

Answere of King Henry to the Duke of Yorke.

Cosin, as touching your bill last put vp to vs, we vnderstand well that ye of good hart, counsell and aduertise vs to the setting vp of iustice, and to the spedie punishing of some persons endited or noysed, offering your seruice to bee readie at commaundement in the same, sith it is that for many causes moouing vs to haue determined in our soule to stablish a sad, and a substantiall Counsell, giuing them more ample authoritie and power than euer wee did afore this: in the which wee haue appointed you to bee one. But sith it is not accustomed sure, nor expedient, to take a conclusion and conduct by aduise or counsell of one person by himselfe for the conseruation, it is obserued that the greatest and the best, the rich and the poore, in libertie, vertue, and effect of your voyces be equall: we haue therefore determined within our selfe to send for our Chancellor of England, and for other Lords of our Councell, yea and all other, together within short time ripely to commune these and other our great matters, in the which communication, such conclusion by the grace of God shall be taken, as shall sound to his pleasure, the weale of vs and our land, as well in these matters as in any other.

At length it was agréed by the King, that the Duke of Somerset should be committed to warde there to abide and answere such articles as the Duke of Yorke would lay against him, vpon which promises so made by the King to the Duke, who sawe that the people of Kent, and of other places came

came not to him as they had promised, and that they were not strong ynough, for the Kings part was much more than his, he brake vp his field on the first of March, and yelded himselfe to the King at Dertford, where contrary to promise before made, he found the Duke of Somerset chefe about the King. Then was the Duke of Yorke sent before to London, and holden partly as prisoner, and straighter should have been kept, but it was noised that Sir Edward Earle of March, sonne to the said Duke of Yorke was comming toward London with a strong power of Welshmen, which feared so the Quéene and Counsell, that the Duke was set at full libertie. And on the tenth of March, the said Richard Duke of Yorke made his submission, and toke his oth to be true, faithfull, and obedient subiect to King Henry the first, King of England, in S. Pauls Church at London, there being present the King and most of his Nobilitie, that is to say, the Dukes of Buckingham, Northampton, and Somerset: the Earles of Warwike, Arundel, Salisbury, Shropshire, Deuonshire, Wiltshire, Northumberland, Stafford and Dorset: vicounts of Beaumont and Wels: barons Fitz Warren, Sainmond, Cobham, Douglas, and others: Bishops, the Cardinall, Archbishop of Yorke, and Caunterbury, Winchester, Ely, and London, in these words following.

Richard duke of Yorke his submission and oth to Henry the first.

I Richard Duke of Yorke, confesse and beknow that I am and ought to be humble subiect and liegeman to you my soueraigne Lord King Henry the first, and owe therefore to beare you faith and truth, as to my soueraigne liege Lord, and shall bee all dayes vnto my liues ende, and shall not at any time will or assent that any thing be attempted or done against your most Noble person, but whereseuer I shall haue knowledge of any such thing imagined or purposed, I shall with all spéede and diligence possible to mee, make that your highnes shall haue knowledge thereof, and ouer that doe all that shall bee possible to mee, to the withstanding and let thereof, to the vttermost of my life: I shall not any thing take vpon mee against your royall estate or obeysance that is due thereto, nor suffer any other man to doe, as farre forth as it shall bee in my power to let it: And also shall come at your commaundement whensoeuer I shall bee called by the same, in humble and obeisant wise, but if I bee letted by any sickness or impotence of my person, or by such other cause as shall bee thought by you my soueraigne Lord reasonable. I shall neuer héereafter take vpon mee to gather any rowt, or to make any assembly of your people, without your commaundement or licence, or in my lawfull defence, in interpretation or declaration of the which my lawfull defence, I shall report mee at all times to your highnes, and if the case require, to my péeres, nor any thing attempt against any of your subiects, of what estate, degrée, or condition that they bee. But whensoeuer I finde my selfe wronged and agréeued, I shall sue humbly for remedie to your highnes, and procéede after the course of your lawes, and in none otherwise, sauing in mine owne lawfull defence in manner aboue sayde, and otherwise haue to your highnes as an humble and true subiect ought to haue him to his soueraigne Lorde. All these things aboue said I promise you truely to obserue and kéepe, by the holy Euangelists

uangelists contained in the booke that I lay my hand heere vpon, and by the holy Crosse I heere touch, and by the blessed sacrament of our Lordes body, that I shall now with his mercie receiue. And ouer I agree mée and will, that if I any time hereafter, as by the grace of our Lord God I neuer shall, any thing attempt by way of feate or otherwise against your royall Maiestie and obeisance that I owe thereto, or any thing take vppon mée otherwise than is aboue expressed, I from that time forth be vnabled, held and taken, as an vntrue and openly forsworne man, and vnable to all maner of worship, estate, and degrée, be it such as I now occupie, or any other that might in any wise growe vnto me hereafter. And this I haue heere promised and sworne, procéedeth of mine owne desire and frée volunte, and by no constraining or coaction. In witnes of all the which thinges aboue written, I Richard duke of Yorke aboue writ subscribe, with mine owne hand and seale.

This oth he also toke at Westminster, and at Couentrie, at sundrie times, *An. reg. 31.* although he little estéemed thereof, as by the sequele may appéere.

This yéere deceased Iohn Stafford Archbishop of Canterburie, late Lord Chancelor of England, and was buried at Canterburie. After him succéeded in the archbishoprick Iohn Kemp, borne at Wie in Kent, doctor of lawes, first bishop of Rochester, then of Chichester, then of London, then Archbishop of Yorke, Chancelor of England, and Cardinall of S. Albin: and now Archbishop of Canterburie, and Cardinall of S. Rufine, & was inthronized at Canterburie on the 11. of December.

1453. On the twelfe day after Christmas, the king holding his Christmas at Westminster with great solemnitie, made his two brethren by the mothers side Knights.

The Earle of Kendall, and the Lord Lespare came Ambassadours from the chéefes Magistrates of the citie of Burdeaux, which signified to the counsell, that if they woulde send an armie into Gascoigne, the people of the countrie woulde reuolt from the French part, and againe become English. This newes sore troubled the heades of the Counsell, which caused them, least inwarde sedition might hinder outward victorie, to set the duke of Yorke at libertie, and permitted him to goe to the castell of Wigmore in the marches of Wales, by whose absence the duke of Somerset rose in such high fauour, both with the king and the Quéene, that his word was onely heard and regarded. The Counsell hoping now to haue the citie of Burdeaux, with the country round about, appointed Iohn Lord Talbot Earle of Shrewsbury, to go thither with an armie, who arriuing in the Isle of Blaye, passed forth with his power, being scant three thousand men, and toke the stronge towne of Fronsake, and diuers other townes and fortresses.

Burdeaux yeilded to the English. The inhabitants of Burdeaux hearing of the Earles arriuall, sent to him messengers in the darke night, requiring him with all spéede, to come and receiue the citie. The Earle hastened forth, and came before that cittie, ere the Frenchmen within vnderstood any thing of the citizens purpose. But when they heard that there was a gate set open for the Englishmen

to

to enter, they thought to haue escaped secretly by a posterne, but they were pursued, slaine, and taken by the Lord de Lespare, and other of the English armie.

After the regaining of Burdeaur, there arriued at Blay, the bastard of Somerset, sir Iohn Talbot Lord Lisle by his wife, sonne to the said Earle of Shrewsburie, the lord Molins, the lord Harington, the lord Cames, sir Iohn Howard, sir Iohn Mountgomerie, sir Iohn Vernon with 2200. men, victuals and munitions.

In the moneth of March, was the towne of Harflew won by the French men, and shortly the citie of Bayons was giuen vp by appointment, that the soldiers should leaue their armour behind them.

When the Earle of Shrewsburie was furnished as is aforesaide, first hee fortified Burdeaur with Englishmen, and store of victuals, and artillerie, then he rode into the country abroad, where he obtained cities and townes, without stroke, amongst other townes, the towne and castle of Chastillon in Perigort was to him deliuered, the which he fortified.

In the meane time the French King being aduertised of these thinges, raised an armie to resist the inuasion made by the Earle, and first he appointed his captaines to besiege the towne of Chastillon, to the rescue whereof the Earle hasted forward, hauing in his companie eight hundred horsemen, vnder the leading of his sonne the lord Lisle, the lord Molins, the lord Cameis, sir Edward Hull, sir Iohn Howard, and sir Iohn Vernon: hee appointed also fiue thousand footemen, vnder the conduct of the Earle of Kendall, and the lord de Lespare to follow him with spéede. In his way hée toke a tower, which the Frenchmen had before taken, and slue all that hee found therein, and after by the way hee met fiue hundred Frenchmen a forraging, of whom he slue the more part, and chased the other to the campe.

The Frenchmen that lay at the siege, perceiuing by these runners away that the Earle approched, left the siege, and retired in good order into the place which they had trenched and fortified. The Earle aduertised how the siege was remoued, hasted forward toward his enemies, doubting least they would haue bén fled, and gone before his comming: but they abode the earles comming, and so receiued him, that though by manly courage hee first wan the entrie at their campe, yet at length, they compassed him about, and shooting him through the thigh with a hand gun, slue his horse, and finally killed him, lying on the grounde. There died also the lord Lisle his sonne, & his bastard sonne Henrie Talbot, and sir Edward Hull, and thirtie other men of name, the lord Moleins was taken prisoner with threescore others. The residue of the English people fled to Burdeaur and other places, of whom in the fight were slaine aboue a thousand persons.

John Earle of Shrewsburie slaine.

L. Moleins taken.

Thus at this battell of Chastillon fought the twentie of Julie, ended his life Iohn lord Talbot, & of his progenie the first Earle of Shrewsburie, after that he had valiantly made war in seruice of his prince 24. yéeres, he was buried at Whitchurch in Shropshire.

After

An. reg. 32. After this, the towne of S. Millan, Liborne, and all other townes which the Earle of Shrewsbury had conquered, rendered themselues to the French men, Burdeaux onely excepted. The which Citie being the last refuge of the English people, the French king in person besieged with all his puissance, and in conclusion constrained both the garrison and inhabitants to yéelde, so that the Englishmen and Gascoignes might safely depart with all their substance,

Thus was the Dutchie of Aquitaine, which had continued in the possession of ỹ English, from the yére of our Lord. 1155. vnto this yere 1453. which is nére hand three hundred yéeres, by the mariage of Alienor, daughter and heire to William Duke of Aquitaine, wife to king Henry the second, finally reduced and brought againe to the French obedience and seruitude. Within that onely dutchie be foure Archbishops, foure and twentie Bishops, fiftéene earledomes, two hundred and two barones, and aboue a thousand captainships, and bailifwikes, whereby ye may perceiue what a losse this was to the Realme of England.

Description of Aquitaine.

The 13. day of October, the Quéene at Westminster was deliuered of hir first sonne, who was named Edward.

1454. When the wars were ended in forraine parts, ciuill dissention began againe to renew within the Realme, being diuided into two seuerall factions: for king Henry descended of the house of Lancaster, claming the crowne from his grandfather king Henry the fourth: and Richard Duke of Yorke, as heire to Lionell Duke of Clarence, third sonne to king Edward the third, wrestled for the game, by reason whereof, the nobles, as well as the common people, were into many parts diuided, to the vtter destruction of many a man, to the great ruine and decay of this Realme. For while the one partie studied to destroy the other, all care of the common wealth was set aside, iustice and equitie clérely exiled.

Practise of the Duke of Yorke.

The Duke of Yorke aboue all things, first sought meanes howe to prouoke the malice of the people against the Duke of Somerset, imagining that hee being made away, his purpose should shortly come to conclusion.

He also practised to bring the king into the hatred of the people, for that he was not a man of stomacke sufficient to supply the rome which he held. Many of the high estates not liking the world, and disallowing the acts and doings both of the king and his counsell, determined to practise how things might come to some alteration: which when the Duke vnderstood, he cheerfully intertained and wan the fauour of the two Neuils, both named Richards, the one Earle of Salisbury, the other Earle of Warwike, the first being the father, and the second the sonne. This Earle of Salisbury, was second sonne to Ralph Neuill Earle of Westmerland, whose daughter the Duke of Yorke had maried, and the said Richard was espoused to lady Alice the only child, and sole heire of Thomas Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, slaine at the siege of Orleance, of which woman he begat Richard, Iohn and George, Richard the eldest sonne espoused Anne, the sister and heire of the entire blood to Henry

Beawchampe

Beawchampe Earle, and after Duke of Warwicke, in whose right and title he was created Earle of Warwicke.

The Duke of Yorke with his friends wrought so effectually, and handled his busines so politikely, that the Duke of Somerset was arrested in the Quenes great chamber, and sent to the Tower of London, where he kept his Christmas without great solemnity, against whom in open Parliament, were laid diuers articles, beginning thus: These articles and points following, giue and minister I Richard Duke of Yorke, your liege man, and seruant vnto your highnes, summarily proposing and declaring them, against Edmond Duke of Somerset, for the great welfare, and the common auaile and increase of your maiestie royall, and of this your noble Realme, as well to bring to knowledge and vnderstanding the meanes and causes of the great mischiefes and inconueniences, which late befell vnto this your noble Realme, as in losse of your liuelode beyond the sea, and otherwise in punishment of deseruiters, and excuse of innocency, and also in putting aside, and eschuing of the great and importable hurt and preiudice which béen like, withouten that purueyance be had of remedie, to succéd in short time. To the which articles of euery of them, I the said Duke of Yorke desire of your equall and indifferent right wisenes, that the said Edmonde answere by his faith, & truth the sacrament of his oth thereupon made duely and truely as law and conscience requireth, &c. as I haue at large set downe in my larger Chronicle. *An. reg. 33.* Edmond duke of Somerset sent to the towr, and articles put against him by the duke of Yorke.

The king at that time hauing laine long sicke at Clarendon, was conueyed to London, by reason whereof, no finall determination proceéded in this waightie cause, but all was put in suspence, till the next assemble of the high court of Parliament.

This yéere wheat, and other graines were in such plenty, that a quarter of wheat was commonly solde for twelue pence, and fourtéene pence: a quarter of malt for sixtéene pence, and seuentéene pence at the most, and not aboue. A certaine farmer dwelling in the towne of Cruse Rolle, or Rolle towne in Hartford shire, wanting money, sold twenty quarters of wheat the best, for twenty shillings. Wheat sold for xii. pence the quarter.

Iohn Kempe Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and was buried at Canterbury. This Kempe was borne at Wie in Kent, whereupon, when he was Archbishop of Yorke, he made the parish Church of Wie, a Colledge, whereof the gouernour was a prebend, and the other were ministers for diuine seruice, and to instruct youth in grammer and learning, according to his foundation. Which Colledge, at the suppression the 36. of Henry the eight was valued 93. pound, two shillings by yéere. The father of this Archbishoppe Kempe lieth buried in the said Church of Wie, with this Epitaph following, Archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

Hic ſiſtunt oſſa Thomæ Kempe marmore foſſa,
Cuius opus pronum ſe probat eſſe bonum:
Dum vixit latus fuit & bonitate repletus,
Munificus viguit, pauperibus tribuit;
Iungitur huic ſatrix virtutum ſponſa Beatrix.

Quæ partitur opes sponte inuans inopes;
Ex hys processit, vt ramus ab arbore crescit,
Cleri præsidium, dux sapiens omnium;
Christo lectoris mens cunctis supplicet horis
Vt patris dietas luminet has animas.

Idem Thomas obijt Anno Domini 1428. 30. die Mensis Maij.

Unto this Iohn Kempe succeded in the archbishoppricke of Canterburie, Thomas Bourcher brother to Henrie earle of Eſſex, deane of Saint Martins, first bishop of Winchester, then of Ely, and then archbishop of Canterbury, and cardinall of Saint Ciriac, and William Grey was made bishop of Ely: and Richard Neuill earle of Salisburie, was made lord chancelor of England.

Whilest king Henry lay sicke, Richard duke of Yorke bare all the rule and gouerned as regent, and did now discouer the sparks of his hatred, hid vnder dissimulation, against the Duke of Somerset: but when the king had recouered his strength againe, and resumed to him his princelie gouernement, he caused the Duke of Somerset to be set at libertie, and preferred him to be Captaine of Caleis, wherewith not onely the Commons, but many of the nobilitie (fauorers of Richard duke of Yorke) were greatly grieued and offended, saying that he had lost Normandie, and would lose Caleis.

Edmond duke of Somerset Captaine of Caleis.

1455. The Duke of Yorke raised a power, and marched toward London.

The duke of Yorke and his adherents, perceiuing that their accusing of the duke of Somerset preuailed not, determined to reuenge their quarrel, and obtaine their purpose by open warre: and so he being in Wales accompained with his especiall freinds, the earles of Salisburie, and Warwick, the lord Cobham, and others, assembled a power of warlike persons, and marched towards London.

The king being informed thereof, assembled likewise an host, and meaning to meete with the duke, rather in the north parts then about London, where it was thought he had too many freends, with great speede, being accompanied with Humfrey duke of Buckingham, and Humfrey his eldest sonne earle of Stafford, Edmond duke of Somerset, Henry Percie earle of Northumberland, Iames Butler earle of Wiltshire, and of Ormond, Iohn Bewford earle of Dorset, Iasper Tewder earle of Penbroke, brother to the king, Thomas Courtney earle of Deuonshire, Iohn lord Clifford, the lords Sudley, Barnes, Rose and others, being in all aboue 2000. men of warre, departed from Westminster the 21. day of May, toward Saint Albons, to meete with the duke of Yorke, the earles of Warwicke and Salisburie: the king lodged that night at Wadesord, or Watford one this side Saint Albons, and on the morow in the morning early he came to Saint Albons. And about the same time, were there assembled Richard D. of Yorke, Iohn D. of Norfolk, Richard earle of Warwick, Richard earle of Salisburie, William L. Fauconbridge, Edward L. Cobham, and many other knights and esquiers, the kings enemies, in a place called Keyfielde, beside Saint Albons.

The

the King hearing of the Dukes comming with the Lords afore said, pight his banner in a place called Gosselowe, which place was sometimes called Sandforth in Saint Peters Créte, and commaunded in strong manner to kéepe the wards and barriers of the same Towne. The Duke of Yorke knowing the strength made against him abiding in the fielde aforesaide, from seuen of the clocke in the morning, vntill it was almost ten of the clocke without any stroke smitten on either part, by the aduise of his counsell sent vnto the King vnder these words following.

Words in writing by ỳ duke of Yorke vnto the King.

Please it vnto your excellent Grace, Richard Duke of Yorke, to take him as your true liegeman and humble subiect, and to consider and tender at the reuerence of God, and in the way of charitie, the true intent of my comming, and to bée good and gracious Soueraigne vnto mée, and all other your true liege men, which, that with all their power and might will bée readie to liue and die with you in your right, and to do all things as shall like your Maiestie royall to commaund vs, if it bée to the worship of the Crowne of England, and the welfare of this your noble realme. Moreouer, gracious Lorde, please it vnto your Maiestie Royall, of your great goodnesse and rightwisenesse, to encline your will to heare and séele the rightwise part of vs your true subiects and liege men. First, praying and beséeching to our Soueraigne Christ Iesus, of his high and mightie power, to giue the vertue of prudence, and that through the prayer of the glorious Martyr Saint Albon giue you very knowledge of our trothes, and to know the intent of our assembling at this time: For God that is in heauen knoweth, our intent is rightfull and true. And therefore wée pray vnto that mightie Lord in these words: *Domine sis clypeus defensionis nostræ:* wherefore gracious Lorde, please it your Maiestie Royall to deliuer such as wée will accuse, and they to haue like as they haue deserued. And this done, you to bé honourably worshipped as most rightfull King and our true gouernour. And if wée should now at this time bé promised, as afore this time is not vnknowne haue béen promises broken which haue béen full faithfully promised, and thereupon great othes sworne, we will not now cease for no such promises, nor oth, till we haue them which haue deserued death, or else we to die therefore.

The answere by the King to the Duke of Yorke.

I King Henry charge and commaunde, that no manner person of what degrée, estate, or condition soeuer hée bée, abide not, but that they auoide the fielde, and not be so hardie to make resistance against me in my own Realme. For I shall knowe what traytor dare bée so bolde to arise any people in mine owne land, where through I am in great disease and beauinesse: by that Faith I owe vnto Saint Edward, and vnto the Crowne of England, I shall destroy them euery mother sonne, and eke they to be hanged, drawne, and quartered, that may bée taken afterward of them, in example to make all such Traytours to beware, for to make any rising of people within

mine owne land, and so trayterously to abide their King and gouernour. And for a conclusion, rather then they shall haue any Lord that here is with mée, at this time, I shall this day for their sake in this quarrell my selfe liue and die.

The words of the Duke of Yorke to all gentlemen and other assembled with him.

SIrs, the King our Soueraigne Lord will not bée reformed at our beséeching ne prayer, nor will not in no wise vnderstand the intent wherefore wée bée here assembled and gathered at this time, but onely is in full purpose to destroy vs all, and thereupon a great oth hath made, that there is none other way, but that hée with all his power will pursue vs, and if wée bée taken, to giue vs a shamefull death, léesing our liuelode and goods, and also our heires shamed for euer. Therefore sirs, now sith it will none otherwise bée, but that wée shall vtterly dye, better it is to vs to dye in the fielde, than cowardlie to bée put to an vtter rebuke and shamefull death, for the right of England standeth in vs. Considering also in what perill it standeth at this time, and for to redresse the mischiefe thereof, let euery man helpe to his power this daye, and in that quarrell to quite vs like men, to the Crowne of England, praying and beséeching vnto that Lorde the which is eternall, that raigneth in the glorious kingdome celestiall, to kéepe and saue vs this daye in our right, and thorough the giftes of his holy grace wée may bée made strong to withstand the great abhominable and horrible malice of them, that purpose to destroye vs and the Realme of England, and put vs to a shamefull death: praye wée therefore vnto that Lorde to bée our comfort and our defendor, saying these wordes, *Domine sis clipeus defensionis nostri.* And when these wordes were saide, the Duke of Yorke, and the Earles of Warwike and Salisburie, with their host, betwéene eleuen and twelue at none breake in, in three seuerall places of the saide stréete. The King then being in the place of Edmond Westby, Hunderder of the sayde Towne of Saint Albons, hearing of the sayde Dukes comming, commaunded his host to slay all manner Lords, Knights, Squiers, Gentlemen and yeomen, that might bée taken on the partie of the foresaide Duke of Yorke. This done, the Lorde Clifforde kept so strongly the barriours of the same Towne, that the foresaide Duke of Yorke might in no wise with all the power that hée had enter, nor breake into the sayde Towne. The Earle of Warwicke knowing thereof, tooke and gathered his men together with him, and brake in by the Garden side into the sayde Towne, betwéene the signe of the Keye, and the Exchequer in Holywell stréete: and anon as they were within the sayde Towne, they blewe vppe the Trumpet and cried with an high voyce, a Warwicke, a Warwicke, that maruayle it was to heare. And till that time the Duke of Yorke might neuer haue entrie into the Towne, and then with strong hand they brake vppe the Barriers, and fought a fierce

First battell at S. Albons.

and

and cruell Battaile, in the which were slaine on the Kinges partie Lordes of name, Edmonde Duke of Somerset, Henry Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Stafford, the olde Lorde Clifforde, Sir Robert Vere, Bartin Entewsell, William Chamberlaine, Richard Forteſcue, and Ralph Ferrers knightes, Oliuer Maleuory, Oliuer Alterton, Gilbert Scaresbrooke, Iohn Garthe, Thomas Packington, Roger Morecroft, William Tarwin, Iohn Benſtede, Iohn Alforde, Reginalde Griffith, Humfrey Acworth, Henrie Hawlin the Quenes meſſenger, Richarde Chanſelar porter to the King, Alexander Breakeſpeare, Gilbert Hilding, porter to the King, William Souche, Iohn Boteraux, Ralph Babthorpe ſewer to the king, and Ralph his ſonne, the Kings Attorney, William Coruin, William Cotton of Conington in Huntingdon-ſhire, receiuer of the dutchie of Lancaſter, Gilbert Faldingar, Iohn Daues, Ellis Wood, Robert Woodwarde, and Ralph Willoughby Eſquires, Hawling the Kings porter, and William Butler yeoman, Iohn Apſinken, Iohn Dauie, Iohn at Hethe, Hughe North, William Porter, Iohn Page, Thomas Barker, Iohn Taylor of Henley, Robert Purton, and Henry Himingley yeoman of the crowne, Nicholas of the pantrie, Iohn Cockes, William Fiſhmonger to the duke of Buckingham, Allen Sutton clarke chaplein, and many other ſlaine, to the number of 5000. and on the other part was ſlaine about 600. perſons, of them that were ſlaine, béen buried at Saint Albons eight and fortie perſons. And at that battell were wounded Lordes of name, the King ſhot into the necke with an arrowe; Humfrey duke of Buckingham, and the Lord Sudley, in the viſages with arrowes, Humfrey Earle of Stafford in the right hand with an arrow, the Earle of Dorſet was ſo ſore hurt that he might not goe, but was faine to be caried home in a cart, and ſir Iohn Wenloke knight in likewiſe hurt and caried from thence in a chaire, and diuers other knights and Eſquires ſore hurt, and the ſubſtance of the kings hoſte deſpoiled of their harneis, at their owne requeſt, made deliuery to the dukes hoſte for ſaluation of their liues and fled. The earle of Wiltſhire, and Thomas Thorpe, Lord cheefe baron of the Exchequer, with many other fled, and caſt away their harneis in ditches and woods. This done, the duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwick and Saliſburie, came vnto the King where hee was, and beſought him on their knées, of grace and forgiueneſſe of that they had done in his preſence, and beſought him of his highnes to take them to grace, and as his true liege men. The King deſired them to ceaſe their people, that there ſhould bee no more hurt done, and to obey his commaundement, did cauſe to bee proclaimed in the Kings name, that all manner of people ſhould ceaſe off their malice, and not to ſmite one ſtroke more, and ſo ceaſed the battaile. And vpon the day next after, the King and the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwicke and Saliſburie, came to London, and were lodged in the biſhops pallace of London, where they kept their Whitſontide with great ioye and ſolemnitie, concluding there to hold a Parliament, the ſame to begin on the ninth of July next following.

This yeere in the moneth of June appéered a comet or ſtarre, called *Stella*

Cometa, betwixt the north and the east, extending his beames towardes the south.

The parliament began at Westminster on the ninth day of July as was appointed, in the which session, the Duke Humfrey of Glocester, late deceased at Bery in Suffolke, was openly declared to haue béene a true subiect to the King and Realme: besides this it was inacted, that no person should iudge or repute any point of vntruth of the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Salisburie, and Warwike, or of any Knight, Esquire, archer, or other comming in warlike aray against the King at Saint Albones, considering their enterprise was only to sée the Kings person in safegarde. And all the blame was put vpon the Duke of Somerset, Thomas Thorpe baron of the Exchequer, and William Ioseph Esquier the Kings colaterall companion, because they vpon malicious purpose kept a certaine letter from the Kinges knowledge, and would in no wise suffer it to bé deliuered vnto him, notwithstanding the same made to the aduancement of some good assured peace, if it had béene throughly and aduisedly read, waied and considered: in which letter they declared that as humble and faythfull subiects, they onely required that it would please the King, whose honor, health, suretie, and preseruation they chiefely wished, not to giue credite to their aduersaries malicious suggestions, till their comming to his presence, vnto the which they humblie besought him that they mought be admitted, as his faithfull liege people, to shewe the intent and purpose of their comming, which was to none other end, then to enlarge their fidelitie, and allegiaunce towardes his most dread person, intending to put themselues with as much diligence, industrie, and trauaile, in all things that might prefer and aduance his honor, suretie, and safegard, as any subiect he had liuing. The kéeping backe of this letter did minister matter sufficient to the parliament, to colour, and iustifie for well done all transgressions, committed in the late battaile at Saint Albons.

In this Parliament was the Duke of Yorke made Protector of the realme: the Earle of Salisburie was made Lord Chancelor, and had the great seale to him deliuered: And the Earle of Warwike was made Captaine of Calets, and the territories of the same. And thus the rule of the Realme rested in the Duke and Chauncelor, and all the warlike affaires remained principallie in the Earle of Warwike. And so amongst them it was agréed, that King Henrie should still raigne in name and dignitie, but neither indéed nor in authoritie, not minding to destroy him, least they mought sodaynely prouoke the furie of the common people against them, because that of the common people hée was for his holynes of life, and aboundaunt Clemencie, much fauoured and highlie estéemed.

Now that the Duke of Yorke, and his adherentes had wrested the whole rule and gouernment into their hands: all such persons, as either loued or the Quéene fauoured, were put beside the priuie counsell, and such put in their places as were knowne to fauour the house of Yorke.

Also

Also all officers were chaunged throughout the Realme at the will of the Protectour, Chancelor, and Captaine of Calcis, so that they constituted and ruled all things at their owne wils: but they were noted with an erecrable offence, of diuers spirituall persons, and namely of the Abbot of Westminster, and his Monkes, for that they toke out of the sanctuarie at Westminster Iohn Holland Duke of Exceter, being repugnant to the order taken in the last parliament, and conueyed him to the Castle of Pontfracte. Duke of Exceter fet out of Sanctuarie, and sent to Pontfract Castle.

But Henry Bewford newely inuested Duke of Somerset, and Humfrey Duke of Buckingham, who had lost his sonne in the same battaile, and other Lordes and men of authoritie fauouring the partie of kinge Henry, and bewayled the vnsure estate of the same king, because they perceiued whereunto the cloked curtesie, and dissembled manner of the Duke of Yorke did drawe, thought it necessarie to puruey for a remedie ere the mischefe happened: hereupon they consulted with the Quéne, and by her aduise was a great councell called at Grénewich, where the Duke of Yorke was discharged of his Protectorship, and the Earle of Salisburye depriued of his office of Chauncelorship, which change amongst the nobilitie, caused sodain alterations, and seditious attempts to spring in the communaltie, especiallie in the Citie of London. *Ann. reg. 34.*

In the Moneth of May an Italians seruant walking through Cheape of London, with a dagger hanging at his girdle, a Merchants seruant that before time had béene in Italie, and there blamed for wearing of the like weapon, chalenged the stranger, howe he durst bé so bolde to beare weapon, considering hé was out of his native countrey, knowing that in his countrey no stranger was suffered to weare the like: To the which question such answere was made by the stranger, that the Mercer toke from him his dagger and brake it vpon his heade, whereupon the stranger complained to the Maior, who on the morrowe sent for the yong man to the Guild-hall: wherefore after his aunswere made vnto the complaint, by agrément of a full Court of Aldermen, hé was sent to warde: and after the Court was finished, the Mayor and sheriues walking homewarde through Cheape, were there met by such a number of mercers seruantes and other, that they might not passe, for ought that they could speake or doe, till they had deliuered the yong man that before was by them sent to prison. 1456. Rob. Fabian.

And the same daie in the afternoone sodainely was assembled a multitude of lewde and poore people of the Citie, which without heade or guide ranne vnto certaine Italians houses, and especially to the Florentines, Lukesses and Venetians, and there toke and spoyled what they found, and did great hurt in sundrie places, but most in fower houses standing in Broadstréete warde, whereof three stode in Sainte Bartholmewes Parish the little, and one in the Parish of Sainte Benets Finke.

The Mayor, Aldermen and worshipfull commoners of the Citie, with

all their diligence resisted them what they coulde, and sent diuers of them to Newgate: and finally, not without shedding of bloud, and mayming of diuers Citizens, the rumour was appeased. The yong man beginner of all this businesse, toke Sanctuarie at Westminster, and not long after the Duke of Buckingham with other noble men were sent from the King into the Citie, who there charged the Maior by vertue of a commission, that inquirie shoulde bee made of this ryot, and so called an oyer determiner at the Guild-Hall, where sate for Iudges the Maior, as the Kinges lieuetenant, the Duke of Buckingham on his right hand, the chiefe Iustice on the lefte hande, and many other men of name, where while they were empanelling their inquestes, the other commons of the Citie, many of them secretly put them in armour, and ment to haue rong the common bell, so to haue raised the whole force of the Citie, and so to haue deliuered such persons as before for the robberie were committed to warde.

But this matter was discréetely handled by the counsell and labour of some discréete commoners, which appeased their neighbours in such wise, that all this furie was quenched: but when word was brought to the Duke of Buckingham, that the communaltie were in harnesse, bee with the other Lords toke leaue of the Maior and departed, and so ceased the inquirie for that day.

Upon the morrowe the Maior commaunded the common councell with the Wardens of fellowshippes to appéere at the Guild-Hall, where by the Recorder in the Kinges name and the Maiors, was commaunded euerie Warden, that in the afternoone eyther of them should assemble his whole fellowship at their common Halles, and there to giue streight commaundement, that euerie man sée the kings peace kept within the Citie. After which time the Citizens were brought to such quietnesse, that after that day, the enquirie was duelie perused, and three persons for the sayd riot put in execution and hanged at Tyborne, whereof two were Sanctuarie men of S. Martins le Graund, the other a shipman, for robbing of Anthony Mowricine and other Lumbardes. *Ann. reg. 35.*

1457. The French nation hearing of the ciuill dissention within the Realme of England, thought to worke some domage to the English people, in reuenge of olde iniuries, whereupon were two Nauies appointed to inuade the townes standing vppon the riuage of the sea. The Captaine of the one fléete, was William Lord Pomyars, and of the other sir Pierce Bressy Captaine of Dépe. These two Captaines taking their course out of the mouth of Seyne, seuered themselues, the one Westwarde, and the other Eastwarde, which was sir Peter Bressy, this lustie Captaine sayling almost all the coastes of Sussex, and Kent, durst not once take lande till he arriued in the Downes, and there hauing perfect notice that a little before the chéefe Rulers of the Towne, were departed from thence to auoyde the plague which then there raigned, entered the Hauen with fiftéene thousand men, and their shippes all landing at Sandwich, whereof 7000. entered

Sandwich spoyled by the French.

entred the land, the space of three mile, and there kept and defended the town, vntill their other company might come to them, at what time they killed the Maior, the baylifes and the other officers of Sandwich, with diuers other Gentlemen of the countrey, and spoyled and robbed the Towne, leading and carying away carts of furniture and other riches to their ships, and moreouer robbed and spoyled two great galleies or ships laden with marchandise comming to London.

The Lord Pomyars likewise toke his course westward, and by night brent Fowey and other certaine townes in Deuonshire, in the moneth of August, and with his pillage returned into Britaine. The towne of Fowey brent.

The Scottes also entred Northumberland, and burned certaine cottages and houses, but hearing that the Duke of Yorke was marching thitherwarde with a great Armie, they with all haste returned into Scotlande.

In this yere was a great fraie in the North countrey betweene the Lord Egremonde, and the Earle of Salisburies sonnes, whereby many were maimed and slaine, but in the ende the Lord Egremonde was taken, who was by the kings counsell found in great default, and therefore condemned in great summes of money, to be paid to the Earle of Salisbury, and in the meane time committed to Newgate. Rob. Fabian.

Not long after this sir Thomas Percie Lord Egremount, and sir Richard Percie his brother being prisoners in Newgate, condemned in a great summe to the Earle of Salisburie as is aforesaid, brake out of prison by night, and went to the king, the other prisoners toke the leades of the gate and defended it a long whyle against the shyrifes and all their officers, insomuch that they were forced to call more ayde of the Citizens, whereby they lastly subdued them. Register of Maior.

The Quéene secretely thirsting the ouerthrowe of Richard Duke of Yorke, and his faction, perceiuing that she could attempt nothing against him nére to the Citie of London, because the Duke was had more in estimation among the Citizens, then eyther the King or Quéene, and therefore she caused the King to make a progresse into Warwickshire, for his health and recreation, and so with hauking and hunting came to the Citie of Couentrie, where diuers waies were studied to compasse the Quéenes desire: for the accomplishing whereof, the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Salisbury, and Warwicke, were sent for to Couentrie by the kings letters, vnder his priuie seale, to which place the saide Lords resorted: but being admonished by secret friendes, what was intended against them, they auoyded that daunger, and so not saying farewell, they departed from the Court, the Duke vnto Wigmore in the marches of Wales, the Earle of Salisburie to his Castle of Middleham in the North countrey, and the Earle of Warwicke sayled to the Towne of Calais, thus were they separated in bodies, but in mindes and heartes knit togither in one, hauing alwaies messengers with letters walking betwixt them, to communicate their deuises. *An. reg. 36.*

In

Robert Ponings sometime sworde bearer and caruer to Jacke Cade proclaimed a traitor.

In this meane time many were apprehended for raising of seditious stirs: among other one Robert Ponings late of Southwarke, in the countie of Surrey Esquire, which was sometime a companion and adherent, to the most horrible wicked and heynous traytor and tyrant Iohn Cade in time of his insurrection, being then his caruer, and sworde bearer, what time he did his robberie and tyrannie in the citie of London, and in many other places, the which Robert stirred the greatest part of such as were adherents, &c. For all which doings being pardoned, he hath still persevered in his wickednes, and of late, to wit in the 31. the 32. &c. of our raigne hath assembled numbers of men at North Cray, and Framningham in Kent, &c. Wherefore we proclaime him to be a traytor, and to be apprehended, &c.

Reginald Pecock Bishop of Chichester.

Maister Reginald Pecocke Bishop of Chichester, a secular Doctour of Divinitie, that had laboured many yeres to translate the holy Scripture into English, was accused to haue pulled the bondes of Divinitie and of Christian beleefe in certaine Articles, of the which hee was convict before the Archbishoppe of Canterburie, and other Bishops and Clerkes, and after vtterly abiured, revoked, and renounced those Articles openly at Paules Crosse in his Mother tong, on the fourth day of December, as followeth, In the name of the Trinitie, Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost, I Reynold Pecocke Bishop of Chichester vnworthy, of my owne power and will without any manner coertion or dread, confesse and knowledge that I here before this time presuming of mine naturall witte, and preferring my iudgment and naturall reason before the new and the olde Testament, and the authoritie and determination of our mother holy Church, haue held, written and taught otherwise than the holy Romane and Universall Church teacheth, preacheth, or obserueth. And one is against the true Catholicke and Apostles faith, I haue written, taught and published many and diuers perilous doctrines, bookes, workes and writings, conteining Heresies and errors, contrary to the faith Catholicke, and determination of holy Church: and especially these Heresies and errors following, that is to say:

In primis *quod non est de necessitate fidei credere quòd dominus noster Iesus Christus post mortem descendit ad inferos.*

Item, *quòd non est de necessitate salutis credere sanctorum communionem.*

Item, *quòd Ecclesia vniuersalis potest errare in hijs quæ sunt fidei.*

Item, *quòd non est de necessitate salutis credere & tenere illud quod concilium generale & vniuersalis Ecclesia statuit, approbat, seu determinat, in fauorem fidei, & ad salutem animarum, est ab vniuersis Christi fidelibus approbandum & tenendum.*

Wherefore I miserable sinner which here before long time haue walked in darknes, and now by the mercie and infinite goodnes of God reduced into the right way, and light of truth, and considering my selfe grieuously haue sinned and wickedly haue informed and infected the people of God, returne and come againe to the vnitie of our Mother holy Church, and all heresies and errors written and contained in my sayde bookes, workes and writinges, here solemnly and openly revoke and renounce, which heresies and errors,

and

and all other ſpices of hereſies I haue before this time before the moſt Reuerend father in God, and my good Lord of Canterbury in diuers and lawfull forme iudicially abiured, ſubmitting my ſelfe, being then and alſo now at this time a very contrite and penitẽt ſinner, to the correction of the Church and of my ſaid Lord of Canterbury.

And ouer this, exhorting and requiring in the name and vertue of almightie God, in the ſaluation of your ſoules and mind, that no man hereafter giue faith and credence to my ſaid pernitious doctrines, hereſies and errors, neyther my ſaid Bookes keepe, hold, or read in any wiſe, but that they all ſuch Bookes, workes, and writings ſuſpect of hereſies, deliuer in all goodly haſte vnto my ſaid Lord of Canterbury, or to his Commiſſioners and Deputies, in eſchewing of many inconueniences and great perils of ſoules, the which elſe might be cauſe of the contrary. And ouer this declaration of my conuerſation and repentance, I here openly aſſent, that my ſaid Bookes, workes, and writings, for declaration and cauſe aboue rehearſed, bee deputed vnto the fire, and openly brent in enſample and terror of all other, &c. After this, he was depriued of his Biſhoprick, hauing a certaine pencion aſſigned vnto him for to liue on in an Abbey, and ſone after he died. His Bookes were intituled:

1 Of Chriſtian Religion, and a Booke pertayning thereunto.
2 Of Matrimonie.
3 Iuſt apriſing of holy Scripture, deuided into three parts.
4 The Donet of Chriſtian Religion.
5 The follower of the Donet.
6 The Booke of Faith.
7 The Booke filling the foure Tables.
8 The Booke of Worſhipping.
9 The Prouoker of Chriſtian men.
10 The Booke of Councell.

In the moneth of Januury died the Earle of Deuonſhire, in the Abbey of Abingdon, poyſoned (as men ſaid) being there at that time with Quéene Margaret. King Henry and his adherents perceiuing that the Duke of Yorke lay ſtill and ſtirred not, returned to London, and there called a great councel, openly declaring that the French and Scots, emboldened by the ciuill diſcord within the Realme, would attempt to annoy the ſame, as of late they ſhewed apparant tokens of their malicious meaning, and would not ceaſe vpon occaſions to doe further diſpleaſures, till they perceiued a perfect concord, and vnfained amity to be concluded betweene him and his friends, and thoſe of the contrary part and confederacie. And to the intent, he would be the author of peace, he promiſed ſo to entertaine the Duke of Yorke, and his fautors, that all old grudges being not onely inwardly forgotten but outwardly forgiuen, ſhould be the cauſe of perpetuall loue and aſſured amitie. This deuiſe was of all men preſent well taken, and adiudged for the beſt. Whereupon diuers graue perſons were ſent to the Duke of Yorke, and all other the great eſtates of the Realme, which ſince the battell of S. Albons neuer met

King Henry a louer and ſeeker of peace at the hands of his rebels.

or communed togither, commaunding them for great causes to resort to the kings pallace without delay. At whose commaundement came to London, the Earle of Salisbury on the 15. of January with 500. men, and was lodged in his owne house called the Herber: and on the 26. day came Richard Duke of Yorke with 400. men, and was lodged at Bainards Castell being his owne house. Then came the Dukes of Exceter and Somerset with 800. men, and were lodged without Temple barre, and the Earle of Northumberland, the Lord Egremond, and the Lord Clifford came with 1500. men, and lodged without the Citie. And on the 14. of February came the Earle of Warwicke from Calais with 600. men, all in red iackets, embrodered with ragged staues before and behinde, and was lodged at the grey friers. And on the 17. of March, the King and Quéen with a great retinue came to London, and were lodged in the Bishops pallace. And because no notorious attempt or bickering should be begunne betwéene any of the parties, or their retinues, the Maior of London, Godfrey Boloigne, and Aldermen of the City kept great watch, as well by day as by night, riding about the Citie, by Holborne and Fléetstréet with 2000. men well armed, to sée good order & peace to be kept. The Lords which lay within the Citie held a daily councell at the blacke Friers. The other part sojourning without the walles, assembled likewise in the chapiter house at Westminster.

At the length by the diligent trauaile, good exhortation, and prudent aduice of the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and other learned and vertuous Prelates, both partes were perswaded to come to a communication, where after long debating of their grieuances, they were accorded, promising to forget all olde rancours, and to be friendes each to other, and obedient to the king, whereof writings were made and sealed. The principall points whereof, the king being reputed as whole arbitrator consisted herein.

First, that at the costes and expences of the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwicke and Salisbury fiue and fortie pounds of péerly rent should be giuen vnto the Monastery of Saint Albons, to be imployed for Edmond late Duke of Somerset, Henry late Earle of Northumberland, and Thomas Clifford, which being slaine in the late battell of Saint Albons, were buried in the Abbey Church. The same Duke of Somerset, Earle of Northumberland and Lord Clifford, were declared for true liege men to the king at the day of their deaths, as wel as the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwicke and of Salisbury. More, the Duke of Yorke should giue to Elianor Dutchesse of Somerset, and to Henry Duke of Somerset her sonne, the summe of fiue thousand markes, &c. The Earle of Warwicke should giue vnto the Lord Clifford the summe of one thousand markes: diuers other awardes betwixt parties were there made, which I am forced to ouerpasse for breuities sake.

For the outward publishing of this ioyfull agrément, there was vpon our Lady day in Lent, or fiue and twentieth day of March, a solemne procession celebrated within the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paule in the

Citie

Citie of London: at the which the king was present in his habite royall, with the Crowne on his head, before him went hand in hand, the Duke of Somerset, the Earle of Salisbury, the Duke of Exceter, and the Earle of Warwicke, and so one of the one faction, and another of the other. And behinde the king, the Duke of Yorke, and the Quéene with great familiarity to all mens sights, whatsoeuer was meant to the contrary, which appeared afterward.

The thirtéenth day of Aprill there was a great fray in Flétestréete, betwéene men of court and the inhabitants of the same stréete, in which fray the Quénes Atturney was slaine. For this facte, the king committed the principall gouernours of Furniuals, Cliffords, and Barnardes Inne to prison in the Castell of Hertford, and William Tailor Alderman of that warde, with many other, were sent to Windsore Castell the seuenth of May. The Quenes Atturney slain.

On Thursday in Whitson wéeke, the Duke of Somerset with Anthonie Riuers and other foure, kept iustes before the Quéene in the Tower of London, against three Esquiers of the Quénes: an in like manner at Grénwich the Sunday following. Justing in the tower of London.

On the Trinitie Sunday or Monday following, certaine shippes appertayning to the Earle of Warwicke, met with a fléete of Spaniards, and after long and cruell fight tooke fire of their ships laden with yron & other merchandise, drowned, and chased to the number of 26. not without shedding of blood on both parts, for of the Englishmen were slaine 100. and many more wounded and sore hurt. The Earle of Warwicke tooke Spanish ships.

The king and Quén being at Westminster, the ninth day of November fell a great debate, betwéene Richard Earle of Warwicke, and them of the kings house, insomuch, that they would haue slaine the Earle: and vnneth he escaped to his barge, and went after to Calets, for he was not long before made Captaine thereof by authority of the Parliament. Soone after, the young Duke of Somerset by stirring of them that hated the Earle of Warwicke, was made Captaine of Calets, and a priuy seale directed to the Earle for to discharge him of the Captainechip: but the Earle, forasmuch as he was made by Parliament, he would not obey the priuie seale, but continued forth in the said office. *An. reg.* 37.

Iames Earle of Wiltshire was made treasurer of England after Walter Hungerford knight.

The noble Science of Printing was about this time found in Germany at Magunce by one Io. Cuthembergus a knight: one Conradus an Almain brought it into Rome: William Caxton of London Mercer brought it into England about the yéere 1471. and first practised the same in the Abbey of S. Peter at Westminster: after which time, it was likewise practised in the Abbeies of S. Augustt. at Canterbury, S. Albons, and other Monasteries of England. 1459. Printing first inuented.

The Earle of Warwicke Admirall, Captaine of Calets with a fourtéene well appointed ships, sailed abroad to scower the seas, and by chance met with fiue great ships, whereof three were Carickes of Gene, and the other two were of Spaine, bigger in height and length, than the Carikes. The

Earle

Earle though he were vnneth able to deale against them, yet he valiantly encountering them, there was a sore battaple fought betwixt them, for it lasted almost the space of two daies, yet in the ende the English had the victorie: so that two of those shippes being forced to saue themselues by flight, the other three were taken, which the Earle brought to Calois, with all the marchandise abourd in the same, the value whereof in wine, oyle, ware, yron, cloth of golde, and other riches was estéemed to the value of tennethousand pound and better, by reason whereof, those wares were solde wonderfull cheape: there were taken a greate number of prisoners, beside a thousand persons slaine in the fight, and of the Earles part about the number of fiftie.

Now in this meane time, after that the Earle of Warwicke was departed the Realme and gone ouer to Calois, the Duke of Yorke, and the Earle of Salisbury falling to consultation, it was agréed betwixt them, that the said Earle of Salisbury with a warlike company should march toward the King, and signifie to him by way of complaint, both the manifest iniurie done to his sonne, and also the vncourteous breach of the sworne amitie and late agréement, in which suite if he preuailed, he should not then let passe the occasion giuen for reuenge of displeasures to him done, both by the Quéene, and her counsell. The Earle of Salisbury therefore remoued from Middleham Castle, with foure or fiue thousand men, taking his way through Lancashire towards London.

In the meane season the Quéene afflicted by the Dukes of Somerset and Buckingham, hauing a diligent eie to al her businesse, imagined that the Earle of Warwicke had kindeled this fire, to the intent, to set the Crowne on the Duke of Yorkes head: wherefore she appointed Iames Twichet Lord Audley (because his power lay in those parts) to raise an host of men, and to giue battaile to the same Earle, if he saw cause, & place inconuenient: she allied vnto her all the Knights and Esquiers of Chestershire for to haue their fauour: she held open household among them, and made her sonne the Prince, to giue a liuerie of Swans to all the gentlemen of that countrey, and to many other through the land, trusting through their strength to make her sonne King, making priuie meanes to some of the Lords to moue the King to resigne the Crowne to her sonne, but she could not bring it to passe.

Owen Tewdar. King Henry gaue to Owen Tewdar 100. l. the yéere out of his Manor of Folkestone, Walton, Banestede with the appurtenances in the shire of Kent, &c.

An. reg. 38. The 21. day of September Richard Earle of Salisbury hauing gathered a well appointed army, toke his way toward Ludlow, where at that time the Duke of Yorke lay, to the intent that they both together would haue ridden to the King to Colshull in Staffordshire, to haue excused them of certaine articles laide against them by malice of their enemies, as they saide. Whereupon those that were about the King, and also the Quéene, who lay at Eglishall, moued him to assemble a great power, whereof Iames Twichet Lord Audley was made chiefe, and had the leading of them into the fielde called

called Blozeheath nére vnto Muckleſtone, by the which the ſaid Duke and the Earle muſt néeds paſſe, and there both hoſtes met and fought a mortall battell, wherin the Lord Audley was ſlaine with Hugh Venables of Kinderton, Thomas Dutton of Dutton, Richard Molineux of Sefton, William Trowtbecke, Iohn Legh del Bothes, Iohn Donne of Wilkington, and Iohn Egerton of Egerton Knights, Richard Donne of Croton, Iohn Duttes Eſquires, and many other, in all to the number of 2400. perſons, but the greateſt loſſe fell to thē of Cheſterſhire, that had receiued the Princes liuery of Swans: but there were taken priſoners the Earle of Saliſburies two ſonnes Thomas and Iohn, and ſir Thomas Harington, which were ſent to Cheſter, but ſone after deliuered. After this diſcomfiture at Blozeheath, the Duke of Yozke perceiuing his deſtruction to be intended, and his priuie intents throughly diſcloſed to the King and Quéene, he thought good no longer to linger his buſines, but with all diligence to diſplay and auance his banner, and therefore ſending for the Earle of Saliſbury, after long communication, they determined to raiſe an armie, and by fine force eyther to die, or to winne their purpoſe. Hereupon were men forthwith aſſembled, both out of the North, & of the Welch, which all came to the Marches of Wales, determining there to abide their enemies, or to méet them as occaſion ſerued. There came to him from Calais the Earle of Warwicke, bringing with him a great number of expert men in martiall feates, whereof two were Captaines of great experience, the one called Andrew Trolope, the other Iohn Blunt.

Blozeheath field.

Richard Molineux.

The King hauing aduertiſement of the Dukes doing, ſent forth Commiſſioners to leuie a power in all parts of the Realme, where he thought to haue any faithfull fauourers, by reaſon whereof a great number of men were aſſembled, then the king accompanied with the Dukes of Somerſet and Exceſter, and other that fauoured the houſe of Lancaſter, marching forward came vnto Worceſter, where he ſtayed for a time, and ſent to his aduerſaries a meſſenger, to wit, the Biſhoppe of Saliſbury Richard Beauchampe, to offer vnto them a frée generall pardon for all treſpaſſes whatſoeuer, if they would giue ouer their enterpriſe and become true and obedient ſubiectes. To whom they anſwered by the mouth of the Earle of Warwike, in three pointes: Firſt, that as concerning the pardon, they durſt not truſt vnto it. Secondly, that notwithſtanding ſuch pardons, thoſe that were about the King were vnruly, and cared not to breake the Kings commaundement. Thirdly, although euerie Lord, béeing called to the Parliament, ought frélie to come, and ſafely to depart, yet the ſaid Earle of Warwicke, at a certaine counſell holden at Weſtminſter, was in danger of death, if the Lord aboue had not the better prouided for his eſcape, for the which cauſe he ſith the kings pardon may be likened to a buckler of glaſſe, or a ſtaffe of frēde, of the which there is no truſt: we dare not commit our ſelues vnto the defence of any ſuch pardons.

The King receiuing ſuch an aunſwere was nothing contented therewith, and therefore commaunded his ſtandartes to be aduanced: but before he came nére to the place where the ſaid Lords were incamped, they wrote a letter

letter to the King, whereof the tenour was thus.

Most Christian King, right high and mightie Prince, and our most dread soueraigne Lord, after as humble recommendations to your high excellency as will suffice. Our true intent to the prosperitie and augmentation of your high estate, and to the Commonweale of this Realme, hath bene shewed vnto your highnes in such writing as we make thereof. And ouer that an Indenture signed by our hands in the Church Cathedrall of Worcester, comprehending the proofe of the trueth and dutie that (God knoweth) wee beare to your said estate, and to the preheminence and prerogatiue thereof, wee sent vnto your good grace by the Prior of the said Church, and diuers other Doctors, and among other, by Maister William Linwoode Doctor of diuinitie, which ministred vnto vs seuerally the blessed sacrament of the bodie of Iesus, whereupon we and euery of vs deposed for our said trueth and duety, according to the tenour of the said Indenture. And sith that time wee haue certified at large in writing and by mouth, by Gartar king of armes, not onely to your said highnesse, but also to the good and worthie Lordes being about your most noble presence, the largenesse of our saide trueth and duety, and our intent and disposition, to search all the motions that might serue conueniently to the affirmation thereof, and to our perfect sureties from such inconuenient and vnreuerent ieopardies as we haue bene put in diuers times here before. Whereof we haue cause to make, and ought to make such exclamation and complaint, not without reason, as is not vnknowne to the said worthie Lordes, and to all this land, and will offer vs to your high presence, to the same intent, if we might so doe without said surety, which onely causeth vs to kéepe such fellowship as we doe in our lée-full manner. And hereto wee haue forborne and auoided all thinges that might serue to the effusion of Christian blood, of the dread that wee haue of God, and of your royall Maiestie: and haue also eschewed to approach your said most noble presence, for the humble obeisance and reuerence wherein we haue, and during our life will haue the same. And yet neuertheless we heare, that wee be proclaimed and diffamed in our name vnrightfully, vnlawfullie, and sauing your high reuerence, vntruely, and otherwise (as God knoweth) than we haue giuen cause, knowing certainely that the blessed and noble intent of your said good grace, and the righteousnesse thereof is, to take, repute and accept your true and lawfull subiectes, and that it accordeth neither with your saide intent, nor with your will or pleasure, that wee should be otherwise taken or reputed. And ouer that, our Lordships and tenaunts bene of high violence robbed and spoyled, against your peace and lawes, and all righteousnesse. We therefore, as we suffice, beseech your said good grace to take, repute, and receiue thereunto our said trueth and intent, which to God is knowen, as we shew it by the said tenour of the same Indenture, and not apply your said blessednes ne the great righteousnes and equitie wherewith God hath euer indued your high nobilitie, to the importune impatience and violence of such persons as intend of extréme malice to procéede vnder the shadow of your high

Doctor Linwood wrote the glose vpon the constitutions of the Church of England.

might

might and presence, to our destruction, for such inordinate couetise (whereof God is not pleased) as they haue to our lands, offices, and goods, not letting or sparing therefore, to put such things in all lamentable and sorrowfull ieopardy, as might in all wise take effect, by the mystery of Gods wil & power, nor not hauing regard to the effusion of Christian blod, ne any tendernes to the Noble blod of this land, such as serue to the tuition and defence thereof, ne not waighing the losse of your true liege men of your said Realme, that God defend, which knoweth our intent, and that wee haue auoyded there-from, as farre as we may with our sureties, not of any dread that we haue of the said persons, but onely of the dread of God and of your said highnes, and wil not vse our said defence vntil the time that we be prouoked of necessity, whereof wee call Heauen and Earth vnto witnesse and record, and therein beseech God to be our Iudge, and to deliuer vs according to our said intent, and our said trueth and duety to your saide highnesse, and to the said Commonweale. Most Christian King, right high and mighty Prince, and most dread soueraigne Lord, wee beseech our blessed Lord to preserue your honour and estate in ioy and felicity. Written at Ludlow the tenth day of October: R. Yorke, R. Warwicke, R. Salisburie.

After their excusation contained in this letter sent to the King, they withdrew them, and went into diuers parts beyond the seas, for the more surety of their persons. The Duke of Yorke went into Ireland, where he was honourably receiued: the Earle of March, Salisbury, and Warwicke, not without great ieopardy and perill, as well on the land as on the sea, went to Calais, and abode there.

Then was a Parliament holden at Couentry, wherein were attaint of treason, Richard Duke of Yorke, Edward Earle of March his son and heire, Richard Earle of Warwicke, Edmond Earle of Rutland, Richard Earle of Salisbury, Iohn Lord Clifford, Lord Clinton, sir Thomas Harington, sir Iohn Wenlocke, Thomas Neuill, Iohn Neuill sonnes of the Earle of Salisbury, Iames Pickering, Iohn Conyers, Thomas Par, William Oldhall, and Henry Ratford, Knights, Iohn Bowser, Thomas Cooke, Iohn Clay, Richard Gyton, Robert Browne, Edward Bowser, Thomas Vaughan, Iohn Roger, Richard Grey, Walter Deuereux, Walter Hopton, Roger Kynderton, William Bowes, Foulke Stafford, the Lord Powis, and Alice Countesse of Salisbury, their goods and possessions escheted, and their heires disherited vnto the ninth degree, their tenants spoiled of their goods, bemained and slaine, the towne of Ludlow longing to the Duke of Yorke, was robbed to the bare walles, and the Dutches of Yorke spoiled of her goods. Parliament at Couentry. D. of Yorke and other attaint. Ludlow spoiled.

In this moneth of October, Henry the young Duke of Somerset, Henry Lord Roos, and Lord Audley, with men of armes sailed towards Calais, to the intent the Duke should haue bene Captaine there: but when he came to land, they of Calais would haue taken him, so that he hardly escaped to the Castell of Gwines: his souldiers were stripped out of their harnesse, and let go. The Lord Audley was taken into Calais, and the Lord Roos Duke of Somerset fled to Gwines. The Lord Audley taken into Calais.

fled into Flaunders, and after returned into England.

The L. Roos fled into Flanders.

Not long after, Richard Lord Riuers was sent to Sandwich, to kéepe the
The L. Riuers and the Lord Wooduile by force caried from Sandwich.
towne and certain great ships which lay there at anker: but when the Earle of Warwike saw time conuenient, he sent some of his men to Sandwich by night, the which toke the Lord Riuers and Anthonie Wooduile his sonne in their beds, and led them ouer to Calais, with all the great ships saue one called Grace de Dieu, the which might not be had away because she was broke in the bottome. Sir Baudwine Fulford vndertoke on paine of losing his head, that he would destroy the Earle of Warwicke, but when he had spent the King a thousand markes in money, he returned again. Then was the Duke of Excester Admirall sent to the sea with a great nauy for to distresse the Earle of Warwicke and his nauy, he sailing from Sandwich to Dertmouth, for lacke of victuals and money his souldiers forsoke him there. And betwixt Sandwich and Dertmouth he met the Earle of Warwicke
1460.
Sir Baudwin Fulford his enterprise.
The Duke of Excester sent to the seas.
comming out of Ireland that had béene there for to speake with the Duke of Yorke, and brought with him his mother that was fled thither for dread, and led her to Calais: but the Duke of Excester durst not set vpon the earle of Warwicke, nor the Earle would not distresse him, because he was admirall, and of the kings blood, but let him passe by.

In the moneth of June 500. men were sent to conduct the Duke of Somerset from Gwines into England, but abiding the wind in the Port of Sandwich, the Earle of Warwikes men spoyled them of their harnes, killed their Captaine Mountfort and many other. The Earles at Calais sent to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and at large to the commons of England certain articles in writing, beginning thus: Worshipful sirs, we, the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of March, Warwik, and Salisbury, sewed, and offred to haue come vnto the King our soueraigne Lords most noble presence, to haue declared there afore him for our duety to God and to his highnes, and to the prosperity and welfare of his noble estate, and to the commonweale of all his land as true liege men, the matters following, that is to say.

Captaine Mountfort slaine.

Articles sent from the Duke of Yorke, & the Earles, to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and to the commons.

Inprimis, the great oppression, extortion, robbery, murther, and other violences done to Gods Church and to his ministers thereof, against Gods and mans law.

2 Item, the pouerty and misery that to our great heauinesse our soueraigne Lord standeth in, not hauing any liuelode of the crown of England, whereof he may kéepe his honourable household, which causeth the spoiling of his said liege men by the takers of his said household, which liuelode is in their hands that haue béene destroyers of his said estate, and of the said common weale.

3 Item, how his lawes be partially and vnrightfully guided, and that by them that should most loue and tender his said lawes, the said oppression and extortion is most fauoured and supported, and generally, that all righteousnes and Iustice is exiled out of the said land, and that no man dreadeth to offend against the said lawes.

4 Item, that it will please his said good grace to liue vpon his owne liuelode,

liuelode, whereupon his noble progenitors haue in dales heretofore liued as honorably and as worthily as any Christian Princes, and not to suffer the destroiers of the said land, and of his true subiects, to liue thereupon, and therefore to lacke the sustenances that should be belonging to his said estate, and finde his household vpon his poore commons, without payment, which neither accordeth with Gods nor mans law.

5 Item, how oft the said commons haue bene greatly and marueilously charged with tares and tallages, to their great empouerishing, wherof little good hath eyther growen to the King or to the said land, and of the most substance thereof the king hath left to his part not halfe so much: and other Lords and persons, enemies to the said commonweale, haue to their owne vse, suffering all the olde possessions that the King had in France and Normandy, Anjow and Maine, Gascoign & Guien, won and gotten by his father of most noble memory, and other his noble progenitors, to be shamefully lost or sold.

6 Item, how they cannot cease therewith, but now begin a new charge of imposition and tallages vpon the said people, which neuer afore was seen, that is to say, euery township to find men for the Kings guard, taking ensample therof, of our enemies and aduersaries of France, which imposition and tallage, if it be continued to heire, heires, and successors, wil be the heauiest charge & worst ensample that euer grew in England, and the foresaid subiects, and the said heirs and successors, in such bondage as their ancestors were neuer charged with.

7 Item, where the king hath now no more liuelode out of his Realme of England, but only the land of Ireland, and the towne of Caleis, and that no King Christened hath such a land and a towne without his Realme, diuers Lords haue caused his highnes to write letters vnder his priuy seale, vnto his Irish enemies, which neuer king of England did heretofore, wherby they may haue comfort to enter into the conquest of the said land, which letters the same Irish enemies sent vnto me the said Duke of Yorke, and marueled greatly that any such letters should be to them sent, speaking therin great shame and villany of the said Realme.

8 Item, in like wise the King by excitation and labour of the same Lords, wrote other letters to his enemies and aduersaries in other lands, that in no wise they should shew any fauour or good will to the towne of Caleis, whereby they had comfort enough to proceed to the winning thereof. Considered also that it is ordained by the labour of the said lords, that no where victuall nor other thing of refreshing or defence should come out of England, to the succour or relefe of the said town, to the intent that they would haue it lost, as it may openly appeare.

9 Item, it is deemed and ought greatly to be deemed, that after that the same Lords would put the same rule of England, if they might haue their purpose and intent, into the handes and gouernaunce of the saide enemies.

10 Item, how continually sith the piteous, shamefull, & sorrowful mur-

ther to all England, of that noble, worthy, and Christian Prince Humfrey Duke of Glocester the kings true uncle, at Bury, it hath bin laboured, studied, and conspired, to haue destroied and murthered the said Duke of Yorke and the issue that it pleased God to send me of the royall blood, and also of vs the said Earles of Warwick and Salisbury, for none other cause but for the true heart that God knoweth we euer haue borne, and beare to the profit of the Kings estate, to the commonweale of the same Realme, and defence thereof.

11 Item, how the Earles of Shrewsbury and Wilshire, and the Lord Beaumount, our mortal and extreme enemies, now, and of long time past, hauing the guiding about the most noble person of our said soueraign Lord, whose highnes they haue restrained and kept from the liberty and freedome that belongeth to his said estate, and the supporters and fauourers of all the premises, would not suffer the kings said good grace to receiue and accept vs, as he would haue done, if he might haue had his owne wil, into his said presence, dreading the charge that would haue bene laid vpon them, of the misery, destruction, and wretchednesse of the said Realme, wherof they be causes, and not the King, which is himselfe as noble, as vertuous, as righteous and blessed of disposition, as any Prince earthly.

12 Item, the Earles of Wilshire and Shrewsbury, and the Lord Beaumont, not satisfied nor content with the kings possessions and his goods, stirred and excited his said highnes to hold his Parliament at Couentry, where an act is made by their procuration and labour, against vs the said Duke of Yorke, my sonnes March and Rutland, and the Earles of Warwicke and Salisbury, and the sonnes of the said Earle of Salisbury, and many other Knights and Esquires, of diuers matters falsely and vntruly imagined, as they will answere afore Almighty God in the day of dome, the which the said Earles of Shrewsbury and Wiltshire, and the Lord Beaumont procured to be made, to the intent of our destruction and of our issue, and that they might haue our liuelode and goods, as they haue openly robbed and dispoyled all our places and our tenements, and many other true men, and now proceed to hanging and drawing of men by tyranny, and will therein shew the largenes of their violence and malice as vengeably as they can, if no remedy be prouided at the kings highnesse, whose blessednes is neither assenting nor knowing thereof.

We therefore seeing all the said mischiefes, hearing also that the French king maketh in his land great assembly of his people, which is greatly to be dread for many causes, purpose yet againe with Gods grace to offer vs to come again to the said presence of our said soueraigne Lord, to open and declare there vnto him the mischiefes aboue declared, and in the name of the land to sue, in as reuerent and lowly wise as we can, to his said good grace, to haue pitie and compassion vpon his said true subiectes, and not to suffer the same mischiefes to raigne vpon them. Requiring you in Gods behalfe, and praying you in your owne, therein to assist vs, doing alway the duety of liege men in our persons to our said soueraigne Lord, to his estate, preroga-

gatiue,

gatiue, and preheminence, and to the surety of his most noble person, whereunto we haue euer béene, and will be as true as any of his subiectes aliue, whereof we call God, our Lady Saint Mary, and all the Saints in heauen vnto witnes and record.

In the meane time, the Earle of Wiltshire treasurer of England, the Lord Scales, and the Lord Hungerford went to Newbery, which longed to the Duke of Yorke, and there made inquisition of all them that in any wise had fauoured the said Duke, whereof some were found guilty, and were drawen, hanged, and quartered, and all the inhabitants of the towne were spoiled of their goods. From thence the Earle of Wiltshire went to Southhampton, where vnder colour to take the Earle of Warwike, but especially to steale out of the Realme, as appeared afterwards, he armed fiue great carickes of Iene, and stuffed them with souldiers, taking victualles of the kings price without paiment, and put a great part of his treasure into the said carickes, and after sailed about in the sea, and at last stale into Dutchland, sending backe againe his souldiers into England. Then were the kings priuy seales directed to all Bishops, Abbots, Priors and other states spirituall and temporall to lend the king money, therewith to wage souldiers to kéepe the sea coasts: but the commons of Kent dreading the like vengeance to be taken vpon them, as was done vpon them of Newbery, sent priuily messengers to Calets to the foresaid Earles, beséeching them in all haste possible to come to their succour, whereupon the said Earles sent ouer into Kent the Lord Fauconbridge, to know if their déeds would accord with their words, and anon the people of Kent and other shires adioyning resorted to the said Lord Fauconbridge in great number, and made long proclamations, containing diuers articles and causes of their assembly, all which here I ouerpasse. When the Earles knew the willing hearts of those people, they prepared to come into this land, against whose comming, a long ballet was fired vpon the gates of Canterbury, made in fauor of the Duke of Yorke and the said Earles, beginning thus: In the day of fast and spirituall affliction, The celestiall influence of bodies transitorie, &c. The Earles of March, Warwicke, and Salisbury, arriued at Sandwich, where met with them Thomas Bourcher Archbishop of Canterbury, who with his crosse borne before him, & a great number of other people, accompanied them to London, into the which City they entred on the second day of July: with them came the Popes legate, to treat of a peace, if néed were.

The Earle of Wiltshire and other spoiled Newbery.

The Earle of Wiltshire stale ouer the seas priuie seales for money.

The men of Kent sent to Calets for the Earles.

The Earles entred into London.

Then was a conuocation of the Cleargy holden in Saint Pauls Church, where the said Earles being present, the Earle of Warwicke recyted the cause of their comming into the land, with the misgouernments thereof, and then made open oth vpon the crosse of Canterbury, that they had euer borne true faith and allegeance to King Henry. Then the Earles of March and Warwike, with the Lords Fauconbridge, Clinton, Bourchier called Earle of Ewe, the Prior of Saint Iohns, Audley, Burgauenny, Say, and Scrope, the Archbishop, the Popes legate, the Bishops of Ercester, Ely, Salisbury, and Rochester, addressed them forth to the king at Yy 3 Southampton,

thampton, leauing the Earle of Salisbury to be gouernour of the Citie in their absence. The Lord Scales and Hungerford, that before the comming of the Earles were in the Citie of London, and would haue had the gouernance thereof, went to the Tower of London, and with them the Lords Vessy, Louell, Delaware, Kendale a Gascoigne: Knights, sir Edmond Hampden, Thomas Brune sherife of Kent, Iohn Bruin of Kent, Geruais Clifton treasurer of the Kings house, Thomas Tyrell, the Dutches of Excester and many other. Then was the Tower of London besieged both by water and land, that no victuals might come to them. And they that were within the Tower cast wild fire into the City, and shot many smal guns, wherby they brent and slew men, women, and children in the streets: also they of the Citie laid great guns on the further side of the Thames against the Tower, and brake the walles in diuers places.

Tower of London besieged.

The King lying in the Friers at Northampton ordained a strong and mighty field in the medows beside the Nunry, hauing the riuer at his back. The Earles with their power comming to Northampton, sent certaine Bishops to the King, beseeching him to admit the Earle of Warwicke to come to his presence, to declare their innocency: which request being denied by the Duke of Buckingham, the Earles sent an herault of armes, desiring to haue hostages for his safe comming & going, but he might not be heard. The third time the Earle of Warwicke sent word to the King, that at two houres after noone he would speake with him, or die in the field. The Bishop of Hereford a white frier, the Kings confessor, incouraged the Kings part to fight, wherefore after the battell he was committed to the Castel of Warwicke, where he was long prisoner.

The tenth day of July at two of the clocke afternoone, the Earles of March and Warwicke let crie through the field, that no man should lay hand vpon the King, ne on the common people, but on the Lords, Knights and Esquires: then both hosts incountred and fought halfe an houre, the Lord Edmond Grey of Ruthen that was the kings vaward brake the field and came to the Earles party, and was a great helpe to them in obtaining the victory: many on the Kings side were slaine, and many that fled were drowned in the riuer, the Duke of Buckingham, the Earle of Shrewsbury the Lord Beaumont, and the Lord Egremont were slaine by the kings tent, with many knights and esquires: the kings ordinance of guns might not be shot, there was so great raine that day.

Battell at Northampton.

When the field was done, and the Earls had the victory, they came to the King, he being in his tent, and said in this wise: Most noble prince, displease you not though it haue pleased God of his grace to grant vs the victory of our mortall enemies, the which by their venemous malice haue vntruly stirred & moued your highnesse to exile vs out of your land, and would haue vs put to finall shame and confusion: we come not to the intent for to vnquiet ne grieue your said highnesse, but for to please your noble person, desiring tenderly the high welfare & prosperity thereof, and of al your realme, and to be your true liege men while our liues shall endure.

The

The king with these words was greatly recomforted, and anon was led to Northampton with procession, where he rested three daies, and came to London the fiftéenth day of July, and was lodged in the Bishops pallace.

The nineténth day of July, they that were in the Tower of London, for lacke of victuals yéelded and came forth, of the which afterward some were drawne and headed.

The Lord Scales late in an euening entred a wherry with three persons, and rowing toward Westminster, there to haue taken sanctuary, was descried by a woman, and anon the wherry men fell on him, killed him, and cast him aland beside Saint Mary Overies. Lord Scales murdered by whirry men on the Thames.

When Quéene Margaret heard that the king was taken, she with her sonne and eight persons fled to the Castell of Hardlagh in Wales, and was robbed by the way in Lancastershire of al her goods to the value of ten thousand marks: from thence she went into Scotland.

The tenth of August Iames king of Scots besieging the Castell of Roxesborough, was slaine with a gun that brake in his campe.

The 21. of September the Duke of Somerset came from Gwines into England. *An. reg. 39.*

The Eight of October a Parliament was begun at Westminster, vnto the which came Richard Duke of Yorke, that a little before was come out of Ireland, and being lodged in the pallace, the king being there, he brake vp the doores of the kings chamber, so that the king giuing him place, toke an other chamber. Then the said Duke, as right heire by lineal descent from Richard the second, chalenged the Realme, purposing to haue béen crowned on Alhallown day next following, and hereupon sent to the Parliament in writing his said claime, title, and pedigrée. The which claime after diligent deliberation had and approued, by the said Parliament, peace and concord betwéene the king and the Duke on the vigill of Alhallow was established and concluded, as in articles followeth. Parliament. The articles betwixt king Henry and the Duke of Yorke

Blessed be Iesu, in whose hands all bountie resteth, and is the peace and vnitie betwixt Princes and the weale of euery Realme: I know by whose direction agréed it is appointed and accorded as followeth: Betwixt the most high and most mighty Prince king Henry the first, king of England and of France, and Lord of Ireland, on the one party, and the right high and mighty Prince Richard Plantagenet Duke of Yorke, on that other party, vpon certaine matters of variance moued betwixt them, and especially vpon the claime and title vnto the crownes of England and of France, and royal power, estate, and dignity appertayning to the same, & lordship of Ireland opened, shewed, and declared by the said Duke, afore all the Lords spirituall and temporall, being in this present Parliament.

First, where the said Richard Duke of Yorke hath declared and opened, as aboue is said, title and claime in manner as followeth:

That the right noble and worthy Prince Henry king of England the third, had issue and lawfully got Edward his first begotten sonne, borne at Westminster the fiftéenth kalends of July, in the yéere of our Lord 1239.

and Edmond his second sonne, which was borne on Saint Marcels day, in the yere of our Lord 1245. the which Edward, after the death of King Henry his father, intituled and called King Edward the first, had issue Edward his first begotten sonne, called after the decease of his father, King Edward the second, the which had issue, Edward the third: which Edward the third had issue, Edward Prince of Wales, William of Hatfield his second sonne, Lionell the third, Duke of Clarence, Iohn of Gaunt the fourth, Duke of Lancaster, Edmond of Langley the fift, Duke of Yorke, Thomas of Woodstocke the first, Duke of Glocester, and William of Windsore the seuenth. The said Edward Prince of Wales, which died in the life time of his father, had issue Richard, which succeeded Edward the third his grandfire: Richard died without issue: William of Hatfield the second sonne of Edward the third, died without issue: Lionell the third sonne of Edward the third, Duke of Clarence, had issue Phillip his daughter and heire, which was coupled in matrimony vnto Edmond Mortimer Earle of March, and had issue Roger Mortimer Earle of March her sonne and heire, which Roger had issue Edmond Earle of March, Roger Mortimer, Anne and Elianor: which Edmond, Roger, and Elianor died without issue: And the said Anne coupled in matrimony to Richard Earle of Cambridge, the sonne of Edmond of Langley, the fift sonne of Henry the third, and had issue Richard Plantagenet, commonly called Duke of Yorke. Iohn of Gaunt the fourth sonne of Edward, and the yonger brother of the said Lionell, had issue Henry Earle of Darby, which incontinent after that King Richard resigned the Crownes of the Realmes and Lordshippe of Ireland, vnrighteously entred vpon the same, then being aliue Edmond Mortimer Earle of March sonne to Roger Mortimer Earle of March, sonne and heire of the said Philip, daughter and heire of the said Lionell, the third sonne of the said King Edward the third, to the which Edmond the right and title of the said Crowns and Lordship by law and custome belonged. To the which Richard Duke of Yorke, as sonne to Anne daughter to Roger Mortimer Earle of March, son and heire of the said Philip daughter and heire of the said Lionell, the third sonne of King Edward the third the right, title, dignity royall, and estate of the Crownes of the Realmes of England and France, and the Lordship of Ireland, pertayneth and belongeth afore any issue of the said Iohn of Gaunt, the fourth sonne of the said King Edward. The saide title notwithstanding, and without preiudice of the said Richard Duke of Yorke, tenderly desiring the wealth, rest, and prosperity of this land, and to set apart all that might be trouble to the same, and considering the possession of the said K. Henry the first, and that he hath for his time bene named, taken, and reputed for King of England and of France, and Lord of Ireland, is contented, agreed, and consenteth, that he be had, reputed, and taken for King of England and France, with the royal estate, dignity and preheminence belonging thereunto, and Lord of Ireland during his naturall life. And for that time, the said Duke without hurt or preiudice of his said right and title shal take, worship and honour him for his soueraigne Lord.

Item

Item, the said Richard Duke of Yorke, shall promit and bind him by his solemne othe, in maner and forme as followeth:

The othe of Richard duke of Yorke.

In the name of God Amen: I Richard Duke of Yorke, promise and sweare by the faith and truth that I owe to almightie God, that I shall neuer consent, procure, or stir, directly or indirectly, in priuie or apert, neither, (as much as in me is) shall suffer to be done, consented, procured, or stirred, any thing that may sound to the abridgement of the naturall life of King Henry the first, or to the hurt or diminishing of his raigne or dignitie roiall, by violence or any otherwise, against his fredome or libertie: but if anie person or persons would do or presume any thing to the contrary, I shall with all my might and power withstand it, and make it to be withstoode, as far as my power will stretch thercunto, so help me God and his holie euangelists.

Item, Edward Earle of March, and Edmund Earle of Rutland, sonnes of the said Duke of Yorke shall make like othe.

Item, it is accorded, appointed, and agréed, that the said Richard Duke of Yorke, shall be called and reputed from hencefoorth very and rightfull heire to the Crownes, royall estate, dignitie and Lordship aboue saide, and after the decease of the said King Henry, or when he will lay from him the saide crownes, estate, dignitie, and lordship, the said Duke and his heires shall immediately succéde to the saide Crownes, royall estate, dignitie and Lordship.

Item, the saide Richard Duke of Yorke shall haue by authoritie of this present Parliament, castles, mannors, lands and tenements, with the wards, marriages, reliefes, seruices, fines, amercements, offices, auowsions, fées, and other appurtenances to them belonging, whatsoeuer they be, to the yéerely value of ten thousand markes ouer all charges and reprises, whereof fiue thousand markes shall be to his owne state, three thousand fiue hundred markes to Edward his first begotten sonne Earle of March, for his estate, and one thousand pound to Edmond Earle of Rutland his second sonne, for his yéerely sustentation, in such considerations and such intent as shall be declared by the Lords of the Kings counsell.

Item, if any person or persons imagine or compasse the death of the said Duke, and thereof probably be attaint, of open déde done by folkes of other condition, that it be déemed and adiudged high treason.

Item, for the more establishing of the said accord, it is appointed and consented, that the Lordes spirituall and temporall, being in this present Parliament, shall make othes to accept, take, worship, and repute the said Richard Duke of Yorke, and his heires, as aboue is rehearsed, and kéepe and obserue, and strength in as much as appertaineth vnto them, all the things aboue said, and resist to their power, all them that would presume the contrarie, according to their estates and degrées.

Item, the said Richard Duke of Yorke, Earles of March and Rutland, shall permit and make other to helpe, ayde, and defend the saide Lords, and euery of them, against all those that will quarrell, or any thing attempt

against

against the sayde lordes or any of them, by occasion of agrément or consenting to the sayde accord, or assistance giuing to the Duke and Earles, or any of them.

Item, it is agréed and appointed, that this accord, and euery article therof, bée opened and notified by the Kings letters patents, or otherwise, at such times and places, and in manner as it shall be thought expedient to the sayde Richard Duke of Yorke, with the aduise of the Lordes of the Kinges Councell. The king vnderstandeth certainely, the sayd title of the sayde Richard duke of Yorke, iust, lawfull, and sufficient, by the aduise and assent of the Lordes spirituall and temporall, and the commons in this Parliament assembled, and by authoritie of the same Parliament declareth, approueth, ratifieth, confirmeth and accepteth the saide title iust, good, lawfull, and true, and thereunto giueth his assent and agrément of his frée will and libertie. And ouer that, by the sayd aduice and authoritie declareth, entitleth, calleth, establisheth, affirmeth, and reputeth the said Richard Duke of Yorke, very true and rightfull heire to the Crownes, roiall estate, and dignity of the realmes of England and of France, and of the Lordship of Ireland aforesayde, and that according to the worship and reuerence that thereto belongeth, he be taken, accepted, and reputed in worship and reuerence, by all the states of the said realme of England, and of all his subiects thereof, sauing and ordaining by the same authority, the king to haue the sayd Crownes, realme, royall estate, dignitie, and preheminence of the same, and the said Lordship of Ireland during his life naturall. And furthermore by the same aduice and authoritie will, consenteth and agréeth, that after his decease, or when it shall please his highnes to laye from him the sayd Crownes, estate, dignitie, and lordship, the sayd Richard duke of Yorke, and his heires, shall immediatly succéede him in the said Crownes, roiall estate, dignitie, and worship, and them then haue and enioy, any act of Parliament, statute or ordinance, or other thing to the contrary made, or interruption, or discontinuance of possession notwithstanding. And moreouer, by the sayd aduice & authoritie establisheth, granteth, confirmeth, approueth, ratifieth, and accepteth the sayd accord, and all thinges therein contained, and thereunto frely and absolutely assenteth, agréeth, and by the same aduice and authority ordaineth and establisheth, that if any person or persons imagine or compasse the death of the said Duke, and probably be attaint of open déede done by folkes of that conditions, that it bée déemed and adiudged high treason. And furthermore ordaineth and establisheth by the sayd aduice and authoritie, that all statutes, ordinances and acts of parliament, made in the time of the sayd king Henry the fourth, by the which he and the heires of his body cóming of Henry late king of England the fift, the sonne and heire of the sayd king Henry the fourth, and the heires of King Henry the fift, were or bee inheritable to the sayd Crownes and realmes, or to the heritage of the same, bée adnulled, repelled, damned, cancelled, void, and of none effect.

And ouer this, the King by the sayd aduice, assent and authority, ordaineth

neth and establisheth, that all other acts and statutes made afore this time by act of parliament, not repelled or annulled by like authoritie, or otherwise void, be in such force, effect, and vertue, as they were afore the making of these ordinances, and that no letters patents royal of record, nor acts iudiciall, made or done afore this time not repelled, reversed, ne otherwise void by law, be preiudiced or hurt by this present act. Also it was ordained by the same parliament, that the said Richard Duke of Yorke, should be called prince of Wales Duke of Cornwall, and Earle of Chester, and protector of England.

The English chronicle printed by William Caxton, and therefore called Caxtons chronicle, declareth how that in the parliament, while the commons of the realme were assembled in the common house, communing and treating vpon the title of the said Duke of Yorke, suddenly fell downe the crowne which hong then in the midst of the said house, which was the fratry of the abbey of Westminster, which was taken for a prodigy or token that the raigne of king Henry was ended: and also the crowne which stood on the highest tower of the castell of Douer, fell downe the same yere.

The agréement aforesaid being put in articles was engrosed, sealed, and sworne by the two parties, and also enacted in the high court of parliament: for top whereof, the king hauing in his company the Duke of Yorke, rode to the cathedral church of Saint Paule within the citie of London, and there on the day of All Saints, with the crowne on his head, went solemnly in procession, and was lodged a good space after in the bishops palace nére to the said church. And on the saturday next ensuing, Richard Duke of Yorke was by sound of Trumpet, solemnly proclaimed heire apparant to the crowne of England, and protector of the realme.

After this, the parliament kept at Couentrie the last yére, was declared to be a diuelish councell, and only celebrated for the destruction of the nobilitie, and no lawfull Parliament, because they which were returned, were neuer elected according to the due order of the law, but secretly named by them, which desired rather the destruction than the aduancement of the cõmonwelth. When these agréements were done & enacted, the king dissolued his parilament, which was the last parliament that euer he ended. The D. of Yorke wel knowing that the Quéene would spurne against the conclusions agréed in this parliament, caused both hir and hir sonne to be sent for by the king: but she being a stout woman, by the counsell of the dukes of Exceter and Somerset, not only denied to come, but also assembled a great army, intending to take the king by force out of the Lords hands.

The 21. of November, such abundance of waters ouerflowed in the countries of Huntington, Suffolke, Cambridge, and the yle of Ely, as the like had not bẽn séene before: for it ouerthrew the bridge, with a great part of the hospitall and fratry at Thetford in Norffolke, and the bridges in Cambridge, running ouer the wheéles of the water mils there, destroying many houses, and comming in at the windowes of the rest. Great water floods.

The duke of Yorke protector being at London, assigned the duke of Norfolke,

D. of Yorke went nor-ward.

folke, and the earle of Warwicke his truftie friends, to be about the king, and he with the earles of Salisburie and Rutland, and a conuenient number of men, departed out of London the second of December, and sent to the earle of March his eldest sonne to follow him with all his power. The duke came to the castell of Sandall beside Wakefield on Christmas euen, and there began to assemble his tenants and friends. There came to him vnder a colour of friendship, the lord Neuill, brother to the earle of Westmerland, and required of him a commission for him to raise the people for to chastise his rebels, as he said: but when he had raised to the number of 8000 men, he brought them to the lords of the countrie, that is to say, the earle of Northumberland and the rest.

Battell at Wakefield.

1461. The Quéene ascertained héereof, determined to méete with him before his power were come together, and so, hauing in hir company the prince hir sonne, the Dukes of Exceter and Somerset, the Earle of Deuonshire, the lord Clifford, the lord Rose, and in effect all the Lords of the north parts, with an 18000. men, marched from Yorke to Wakefield, where they placed themselues euen before the castell gates: the duke hauing with him not fully 5000. men (as was sayd) contrary to the minde of his faithful friends, would néedes issue forth to fight with his enemies. The duke of Somerset, and other of the Quéenes part, deuised how to take them, and so appointed the Lord Clifford to lye in one stale, and the Earle of Wiltshire in another, and the Duke with other kept the maine battell. The duke of Yorke with his people descended downe the hill in good order of aray, and was suffered to passe on toward the maine battell: but when he was in the plaine fielde betweene his castell and the towne of Wakefild, hée was enuironed on euery side, so that hée manfully fighting was within halfe an houer slaine, and his whole armie discomfited: and with him died of his truftie friendes, his two bastard vncles, sir Iohn, and sir Hugh Mortimers, sir Dauy Hall, sir Hugh Hastings, sir Thomas Neuill sonne to the Earle of Salisbury, William and Thomas a Parre, brethren, Lorde Harington, Thomas Harington knight, sir Henry Ratford knight, and other, to the number of 2200. whereof many were young gentlemen, and heires of great parentage in the south parts. In this conflict was wounded and taken prisoner Richard Earle of Salisbury and was led by the Duke of Somerset to the castell of Pontfract, and had grant of life for a great ransome, but the common people of the country, who loued him not, toke him out of the castell by violence, and smote off his head. There was also taken sir Richard Limbroke, Ralph Stanley, Iohn Harow, captaine Hanson, and diuers other. The lord Clifford perceiuing where the earle of Rutland was conueied out of the field, by one of his fathers chaplaines, and schoolmaster to the same Earle, followed and ouertoke him, and stabbed him to the hart with a dagger as hée knéeled before him. The same Lord Clifford not satisfied herewith, came to the place where the dead corps of the Duke of Yorke lay, and caused his head to bée striken off, and set on it a crowne of paper, and fixed it on a pole, and presented it to the Quéene, not lieng farre from

Richard Duke of Yorke slaine

the

the field. The Dukes head with the Earle of Salisburies head were set vp ouer a gate of Yorke. This battell was fought in the south fielde of Wakefilde, by the faire stone bridge of nine arches, on the last of December. More of Wakefielde shall be shewed in my larger volume that is to come, God willing.

The Earle of March so commonly called, but now after the death of his father, duke of Yorke, lieng at Glocester, was wonderfully amazed when the sorrowful newes of these mishaps came to his vnderstanding: but being comforted by his friends, he remoued to Shrewsbury, & raised therabout a puissant army to the number of 23000. ready to go against the Quéne, & his fathers enimies. But when he was setting forward, newes was brought him, that Iaspar Earle of Penbroke, and Iames Butler Earle of Ormond & Wiltshire, had assembled a great number of Welchmen and Irishmen, suddenly to take and surprise him: he being therewith quickened, retired backe, and met with his enimies in a faire plaine néere to Mortimers Crosse, beside Ludlow, not far from Hereford east, on Candelmas day in the morning, at which time the sunne (as some write) appéered to the Earle of March like thrée sunnes, and suddenly ioined togither in one: vpon which sight hée toke such courage, that hée fiercely setting on his enemies, put them to flight: and for this cause men imagined hée gaue the sunne in his full brightnesse for his badge or cognizance. Of his enemies were slaine to the number of 3800. The Earles of Penbroke and Wiltshire fled, but Owen Teuther (whome Leiland saith should bée called Meredicke) father to the sayd Earle of Penbroke, which Owen Teuther had married (as was said) Katherine mother to king Henry the first, was there taken and beheaded, and afterward buried in a chappell of the gray Friers church in Hereford. There were also taken and beheaded, Dauid Floid, Morgan ap Reuther, sir Iohn Skidmore, and his two sonnes, Thomas Griffith, Iohn Throkmorton, Thomas fitz Henry, and other. During this season, the Quéne encouraged with this late gained victory at Wakefield, with a great number of people out of the north, marched toward London, intending to recouer the company of the king hir husband, and to vndoe all that had béene done in the last parliament. These northren people, after they were once passed the riuer of Trent, spoiled and wasted the countrie afore them Andrew Trollope grand captaine, and as it were leader of the battell, with a great armie of Scots, Welchmen, and other strangers, beside the northren men, destroied the townes of Grantham, Stanford, Peterborow, Huntington, Rotton, Welleborne, and in maner all the townes by the way vnto Saint Albons, sparing neither Abbeies, Priories, or parish churches, but bare away crosses, chalices, bookes, ornaments, and other things, whatsoeuer was worth the carriage, as though they had béene Saracens, and no Christians. At length they came downe to Dunstaple, and so to S. Albons, and hearing that the dukes of Northfolke and Suffolke, and the earles of Warwicke and Arundel, the lords Bonuile & other whom the Duke of Yorke had left to gouerne the king in his absence, had by the

Battell at Mortimers Crosse.

kings

Second battel at S. Albons.

kings assent assembled a great host, and were incamped with the king nere to the towne. Those northren lords and other that were with the Quéne, made forwarde, and entring into Saint Albons, meant to passe through the towne, and so to cope with their enimies, but finding a sort of archers ranged, nére to the great crosse in the market place to defend their passage, they were receiued with such a storme of arrowes, which came flying about their eares as thicke as haile, that they were quickly repulsed backe, and with losse driuen to retire into the west end of the towne, where by a lane that leadeth northwards vp to S. Peters stréete, they made their entrie, and had there also a sharpe incounter against certaine bands of the Kings people: but yet after great slaughter on both parts, they got through, and vpon the heath, at the north end of the towne, called Barnard heath, toward a little towne called Syndridge, in a place called No mans land, they had a far greater conflict, with fower or fiue thousand of the Kings armie, which gaue the onset so fiercely at the beginning, that the victorie rested doubtfull a certaine time, till at the length through the withdrawing many of the Kentishmen with their Captaine Louelace, that was the vaward, King Henries part lost the field: the lords fled, and the King went to Quéne Margaret that was come with the northren men (as is afore saide) and her sonne Edward. The Earle of Marwicke went toward the Earle of March, that was comming toward London out of Wales. The lord Bonuile would haue withdrawen him, but the King assured him to haue no bodily hurt: neuertheles at the instance of the Quéne, the Duke of Exceter, and the Earle of Deuonshire, he was beheaded at S. Albons, and with him Sir Thomas Kiriell of Kent. This battell was fought on Shrouetuesday, or the 17. of Februarie, in the which battel was slain 1916. persons, of whome no nobleman is remembred, saue sir Iohn Gray, which was the same day made knight in company of other twelue in the towne of Colny. The same day Thomas Thorpe baron of the Exchequer was beheaded at Highgate by the commons of Kent.

Now after the noble men were fled, and other were fled, and the King left in manner alone, without any power of men to garde his person, hée was counselled by a squire called Thomas Hoo, a man well séene in the lawes, to send some conuenient messenger to the northren lords, aduertising them that hée would now gladly come vnto them (whome hée knew to be his friends, and had assembled themselues together for his seruice) to the ende hée might remaine with them, as before hée had vnder the gouernment of the southerne Lordes. According to this aduise, the King appointed the same Esquire to beare the message, who first went and declared the same vnto the Earle of Northumberland, and returning backe to the King, brought certaine Lords with him, who conueyed the King first into the Lord Cliffords tent, that stood nert to the place where the Kings people had incamped. This done, they brought the Quéne and her sonne prince Edward vnto his presence, whome hée ioyfullie receiued, imbracing and kissing them in most louing wise, and yelding

heartie

heartie thankes to almighty God, whome it had pleaſed to ſtrengthen the forces of the Northren men, to reſtore his derely beloued ſonne againe to his poſſeſſion. The Quéene cauſed the King to dubbe her ſonne Prince Edward Knight, with thirty other perſons, which the day before had fought on her partie. Knights dubbed at S. Albons.

This done, they went to the Abbey, whereof the Abbot and the monks they were receiued with hymnes and ſongs, and ſo brought to the high altar, and after to the ſhrine, and ſo to the Chamber, in which the king was wont to lodge. The Abbot made ſute, that order might be taken to reſtrain the northren men from ſpoiling the towne, and proclamation was forthwith made to that effect, but it auailed not, for they maintained that the ſpoyle of all thinges was graunted them by couenant, after they were once paſſed the riuer of Trent: and ſo not regarding any proclamation, they ſpared nothing that they could lay hands on, if the ſame were meet for them to carry away.

The Quéene hauing thus got the victorie, ſent to the Maior of London, commaunding him without delay, to ſend certaine carts laden with Lenten ſtuffe, for the refreſhing of hir armie, which the Maior incontinent granted, cauſed carts to be laden, and would haue ſent them forward, but the commons of the citie would not ſuffer them to paſſe, but ſtaied them at Triple gate: during which controuerſie, diuers of the northren horſemen robbed in the ſuburbs of the citie, and would haue entred at Triple gate, but they were repulſed by the commoners, and three of them ſlaine, whereupon the Maior ſent the Recorder to Barnet to the Kings Councell, there to excuſe the matter: and the Dutches of Bedford, the Lady Scales, with diuers Fathers of the ſpiritualtie went to the Quéene to aſſwage hir diſpleaſure, conceiued againſt the citie. The Quéene therefore at their humble requeſt by aduice of hir Councell, appointed certaine lords and knights, with 400. tall perſons to ride to the citie, and there to view and ſée the demeanor of the people, and diuers Aldermen were appointed to méete them at Barnet, and to conuey them to London, but all theſe deuiſes were ſhortly altered into another forme, becauſe true report came, not onely to the Quéene, but alſo to the citie, that the Earle of March, hauing vanquiſhed the Earles of Penbroke and Wiltſhire, had met with the Earle of Warwike, after the laſt battell at Saint Albons, at Chippingnorton by Cotſwolde, and that they with both their powers were comming towards London. The Quéene therefore, hauing little truſt in Eſſex, and leſſe in them of Kent, but leaſt of all in the Londoners, with hir huſband and ſonne, departed from Saint Albons into the north countrie, where their refuge onely conſiſted.

The Dutches of Yorke, ſéeing hir huſband and ſonne ſlaine, and not knowing what ſhould ſucceéde of hir eldeſt ſonne, ſent hir two yongeſt ſonnes George and Richard, ouer the ſea to the citie of Utrich in Almaine, where they were of Philip duke of Burgoigne well receiued, and ſo remained there till their brother had got the Crowne.

The

The Earles of March and Warwike, hauing knowledge that the king and Quéene were departed from Saint Albons, rode straight to London, entring the Citie with a great number of men of warre, the first weéke of Lent, or 28. of Februarie, where hee was ioyfully receiued, whose comming thither was no sooner knowne, but that the people resorted to him out of Kent, Essex, and other parts in great numbers to sée, aide, and assist this luckie prince in whom the hope of all their ioy consisted.

This prudent prince, minding to take time when time serued, called a great Councell both of the Lords spirituall and temporall, and to them declared the title and right that hee had to the Crowne, rehearsing also the Articles concluded betwixt King Henry and his Father by their writinges signed and sealed, and also confirmed by act of Parliament, &c. Which after the Lords had considered, they determined, that because kinge Henrie was insufficient of himselfe to rule the Realme, hee should bée depriued of all kingly honour and soueraignetie, and incontinently was Edward Earle of March sonne and heire to Richard Duke of Yorke (by the lordes of that Councell assembled) named and elected for King and Gouernour of the Realme. On which day being Sunday, and the second day of March, the people of the Earles part being in their musters in Saint Iohns fielde, and a great number of the substantiall Citizens there assembled to beholde their order, suddenly the lorde Fawconbridge, which toke the musters, wisely declared to the people certaine Articles and points that king Henrie had offended in, and then it was demaunded of them, whether the sayde Henrie were worthy to raigne still: but the people cried, Nay, nay. Then was it asked, if they would haue the Earle of March to be their King, and they sayde, Yea, yea: then certaine Captaines were sent to the Earle of March at Barnards Castell, who told him that the people had chosen him King, whereof he thanked God and them, and by the aduise of the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Excester, and the Earle of Warwike, with other, he toke it vpon him. Many wealthy citizens of London, not altogither liking of this doing, conueied themselues out of the city, amongst the which were Philip Malpas Alderman of London, Thomas Vaughan Esquire, maister William Atclif, with many other, who fearing the Quéenes comming to London, shipped them in a shippe of Antwerp, purposing to haue sayled thither: but by the way they were taken by a French ship named the Colmayne, and at length deliuered for great ransome.

Edward earle of March, elected king in S. Johns fielde in London.

Citizens of London fled.

Edward Earle of March, being elected as is aboue sayd, on the next morrow went in procession at Paules, and offered there, and after *Te Deum* being song, he was with great roialty conueied to Westminster, and there in the Hall set in the kings seate with Saint Edwards sceptre in his hande, and then asked of the people if they would haue him king, and they cried, Yea, yea. Then after certaine homages by him receiued, he was with procession conueied into the Abbey there, and set in the quire as king, while *Te Deum* was singing: that done, he offered at Saint Edwards shrine, and then returned by water vnto Saint Paules, and was there lodged within

Edward earle of March toke on him the kingdome.

the

the Bishops pallace. Thus toke he possession of the Realme, vpon a Tuesday being the fourth of March, and was proclaymed King of England, by the name of Edward the fourth, when King Henry had raigned thirtie eyght yéeres, eyght moneths, and odde daies.

Edward Earle of March.

EDward Earle of March, borne at Roan, sonne and heire to Richard Duke of Yorke, about the age of eightéene yéeres, began his raigne the fourth day of March, by the name of Edward the fourth, in the yéere 1460. after the account of the Church of England: he was a man of noble courage and great wit: but in his time was much trouble and vnquietnes in the realme, as shall be shewed. *Ann. reg.* 1. Iohn Rouse.

The 12. of March, Walter Walker a Grocer that dwelt in Cheape of London, for words spoken touching the title of King Edward when he was proclaymed, was suddenly apprehended, condemned, and beheaded in Smithfield. This Grocer is he, whom master Hall mistaketh to be Burder, of whom ye shall find in the 17. yéere of this Kings raigne. Walter Walker beheaded for a word speaking.

The same 12. day of March in the afternoone, King Edward hauing prepared a great armie, being accompanied with the Duke of Norffolke, the Lord Fauconbridge, the Lord Fitzwalter, sir Iohn Wenlocke, Iohn Stafford, Henry Ratelife of Framlíen, Roger Wolferstone and others, with great triumph rode through the Citie of London to Bishops gate, and so toke his iourney toward the North, where betwéene Shirburne in Elmet, and Todcaster, all the North partie met him, and on Palme Sonday the 29. of March fought a great battell betwéene Towton and Sarton, in which were slaine Henry Percy, Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Shrewsburie, the Earle of Deuonshire, Iohn Lord Clifford, the Lord Bewmound, Iohn lord Neuill, the lord Willoughby, Leo lord Vvels, the lord Roos, the lord Scales, the lord Grey, Reynolph lord Dacres, the lord Fitzhugh, the lord Molineux, lord Henry Beckingham: knights, two bastard sonnes of Henrie Holland Duke of Exceter, Richard Percie, Iohn Heyron, Gerueys Clifton, Edmond Hamys, Thomas Crakenthorpe, Iohn Crakenthorpe, Vvilliam Harill, Iohn Ormonde, Andrewe Trolope, Roger Mollyn, Radulphe Pigote, Henrie Norbohew, Dauid Trolope, Iohn Burton Captaine of Yorke, and many other knights and Esquires, whose names were not then noted. The whole nomber slaine were accounted by some to be 33000. by other some 35091. many of these were first buried in fiue pits, yet appéering halfe a mile off by North Sarton church in the fielde there. Master Bungate caused them to bée brought from thence, and to bee buried in the Churchyard of Sarton: the lord Dacres hath there a meane tombe. Towton village is a mile from Sarton, where a great Chappell was begun by Richarde the third, but not finished, in which Chappell were buried also 1461.

many of the men slaine at palmsonday fielde. This fielde was as much in Sarton Parish as in Towton, yet it bare the name of Towton.

King Henrie fled into Scotland.

The Duke of Exceter, the Duke of Somerset, the Lord Roos, the Lord Hungerford, & many other fled to Yorke to king Henrie, and then they with the King, Quéne, and prince, fled towarde Scotlande to Berwike, and so to Edenborough.

King Edward went to Yorke, where he was with all solemnitie receiued, there he caused the heads of his father and the Earle of Salisburie with other his friends to be taken down, and buried with their bodies. And then caused T. Courtney earle of Deuon. the Earle of Kyme, sir William Hill, to be headed and their heads set vp in place. Iames Butler Earle of Wiltshire was beheaded at Newcastle, &c. and then King Edward went to Durham, and when he had quieted the country, returned southward. The Lord Fitz Walter was drowned at Ferybridge, sir Thomas Fulforde was beheaded at Yerham, &c.

The town of Berwike was deliuered to the Scots by King Henry the first on S. Markes day.

King Edward crowned at Westminster.

The 26. of June the Maior of London with the Aldermen in scarlet, and the commons in grene, brought K. Edward from Lambeth to the Tower of London, where he made 28. knights, and on the morrow he dubbed foure mo, and on the 28 of June he was crowned at Westminster with great solemnitie of bishops and other temporall Lords.

And on the morrow after the king was crowned again in Westminster abbey in the worship of God & S. Peter: and on the nert morrow hee went crowned in Pauls church in London, in the honor of God & S. Paule, and there an Angell came downe and censed him, at which time was so great a multitude of people in Pauls, as euer was séene in any dayes. And sone after his coronation, the King made his brother George Plantagenet, Duke of Clarence, and his other brother Richard Duke of Glocester: Humfrey Stafford Esquire, Lord Stafford of Southwike: sir VVilliam Herbert, L. Herbert, and after Earle of Penbroke: and the said L. Stafford Earle of Deuonshire. After this he made Edmond L. Grey of Ruthen, VVilliam Neuill L. Fauconbridge Earle of Kent: Henry L. Bourcher Earle of Esser: John Stafford, Lord of Buckingham Earle of Wiltshire: sir Thomas Blunt knight, Lord of Mountioy: sir Iohn Howard, L. Howard: VVilliam Hastings, L. Hastings, and after that great Chamberlaine: Richard VVooduile Lord Riuers: Iohn Denham esquire, L. Denham, &c. To Henry Lord Bourcher before spoken of, Richard Duke of Yorke long before this time, had giuen his sister Elizabeth in marriage, of whom he begat 4 sonnes, William, Thomas, Iohn, and Henry, the which VVilliam being a man of great industrie, wit, and prouidence, in graue and weightie matters, maried the ladie Anne VVooduile, descended of high parentage, whose mother Iaquet was daughter to Peter of Luxenbrough, Earle of S. Paule, by the which Anne he had Henry Earle of Esser, one daughter named Cicilie, married to Walter L. Ferrers of Chartley, and an other called Isabell, which died vnmaried. Iohn Markham was made

States created

John Markham chief Iustice.

Lord

Lord chiefe Iustice, and Robert Stillington keeper of the priuie seale.

Iohn Dauy had his hand striken off at the Sandart in Cheape, because he had smit a man before the Kings Iudges at Westminster, wherefore the King commaunded him to haue the law, in example to others. Record. One had his hand striken off, in cheape.

This yere in the harueſt season King Edward rode to Canterbury, and to Sandwich, & so along by the sea coast to Hampton, & from thence into the marches of Wales, and to Bristow, where he was most royally receiued, thus he progressed about the land to vnderstand the state thereof.

The 4. of Nouember began a parliament at Westminster, wherein K. Henry, his Quéene, and his sonne, were disherited of the crowne: Henry duke of Exceter, Henry duke of Somerset, Thomas earle of Deuonshire, &c. to the number of 140. were attainted & disherited. Shortly the earle of Oxforde and Awbrey his son, sir Thomas Tudenham knight, William Tirrell, and Iohn Mongomerie esquires, were defect and at seuerall times beheaded at tower hill, and after that many other. 1462. *Ann. reg. 2.*

The 27. of March K. Edward went Northward so far as Stamforde, where he was enformed that K. Henry had procured the Frenchmen and Scots to enter this land, in resisting whereof K. Edward sent his priuie seale through England, to moue men to giue a certaine sum of money, which they granted liberally. The L. Fauconbridge Earle of Kent, was appoynted to keepe the seas, with the Lord Audeley, L. Clinton, sir Iohn Howard, sir Richard Walgraue, and other, to the number of 10000. which landed in Britaine, and wan the towne of Conquet, with the Isle of Reth, &c.

In Michaelmas termeking Edward sate in the Kings bench three dayes togither in open court, to vnderstand how his lawes were executed. King Edward sat in the Kings bench in open court.

Quéene Margaret wife to Henry the sixt, landed in the North, where hauing but small succour and euill fortune, she was forced to take the sea againe, and by tempest of weather was driuen to Barwike, where she landed, but lost hir ships and goods.

King Edward began his iourney toward Scotland, on the feast day of Saint Andrew the apostle, accompanied of dukes, erles, barons, & knights, as followeth: the dukes of Norfolke, and Suffolke, the earles of Arundell, Shrewsburie, Worcester, Kent, Westmerland, and Essex, the barons L. Grey Ruthen, lord Hastings, lord Grey Codnar, lord Grey Wilton, lord Anthony Scales, lord Latimer, lord Herberd, lord Ferrers of Chartley, lord Stanley, lord VVenloke, lord Grestoke, lord Ogill, lord Lomley, Lord Clinton, lord Southwik lord Barnes, lord Dacre of the South, lord Dacre of the North, lord Say lord Cromwell, lord Cobham, lord Leuerforth, lord Henry Buckingham, lord Mortimer lord Fitz Hugh, lord De la VVare, lord Powes, lord Scrope of Bolton, L. Dudley, lord Sturton, lord Burgaueny, knights, sir Peirce Ale, sir VVilliam Stanley, sir VVilliam Storis, sir Thomas Mongomery, sir I. Canias, sir Ralph Pigot, &c. to the number of 59. knights. Dukes 2. Earles, 7. Barons, 31. Knights, 59.

In the moneth of December King Edward laide siege to the castles of Bambrough, Dunstanbrugh, and Alnewike, in the castle of Bambrough was the Duke of Somerset, the Erle of Penbroke, the Lord Roos, Ralph

Percy, and three hundreth men. At the siege wherof, was the Earle of Worcester, the Earle of Arundale, the lord Ogle, the lord Mountague, & 1000. men. In the castle of Dunstanburough was sir Richard Tunstall, Thomas Findren, doctor Morton and other with 120. men: and at the siege therof, the lord Wenloke, the lord Hastings, and two other lords with 10000. men. The Castle of Alnewike was held by three estates, and 300. men. Against the which was in siege the Earle of Warwick, the earle of Kent, the lord Powes, the baron of Greystoke, the lord Cromwell, & 10000. men. Henry Bewfort Duke of Somerset, sir Ralph Percie, and others yelded Bamburgh on Christmasse euen, and were taken to the Kings fauor. King Edward graunted to the Duke of Somerset a 1000. markes by the yere, wherof he was neuer payde, the Earle of Penbroke, sir Thomas Findern, and others went into Scotland.

1463. King Edward kept his Christmasse at Durham. And on Saint Johns day, Dunstanburgh was yelded to king Edward.

On the twelfe euen Peirce le Brasile the great warrior of Normandie came to help the Quene Margaret with Frenchmen, and 20000. Scots, to remoue K. Edwards men from Alnewike siege, & the residue of other castles there. By whose comming K. Edwards men were afeard of the Scots, as reculing from the siege, & the Scots afeard of Edwards men, least they had reculed to bring them into a trap. And Henries men issuing out, of too much boldnes, gaue Edwards men opportunitie to enter into the castle: on the morow after the twelf day, the Earle of Warwike made 15. Knights: these three castels were committed to the keping of sir Ralph Grey, And after againe king Henry with his quene and their felowship entred them and kept them

Ann. reg. 3.

Parliament at London.

The 29. of Aprill began a parliament at Westminster, in the which was ordained for the terme of three yeres, that there should no wols be conueied out of the land, except those that were beyond the water of Tese to the staple of Calis, and there to be solde, the one halfe for Bolyon, and the other part for Argent content, and all that other remnaunt of wols should remaine within the land to make cloth of, and all clothiers should make a broad cloth no shorter then 24. yards in length, and two full yards in breadth: also that no wine tunner in the citie of London, should sell any Wine Gascoyne, white, claret, or redde, aboue 8. pence the gallon. Item that no man or woman, vnder the estate of a lord or Lords children, weare any cloth of golde, apparell wrought with golde, furs of sables, &c. That no yeoman, or parson vnder that degree, weare in their array for their bodies any bolsters of wol, cotton or other stuffe, or in their dublet anie thing saue lining equall to the outside. That no person weare gowne, iaquet, or cloake, but of such length, as the same man standing vpright, the same should couer his buttocks, nor any taylor to stuffe or bolster any garment, or to make him shorter or otherwise then was limited, &c. Also, that no man weare shoes or bootes hauing pikes passing two inches in length, or shoemaker to make them aboue that syse, &c.

Statute against stuffed or bolstered garments, or short garments.

Shortly

Shortly after Quéene Margaret obtained a great power of Scots and other her friends, and so bringing her husband with her, and leauing her sonne called prince Edward, in the Towne of Barwicke, entred Northumberland, tooke the Castle of Bamborough, and stuffed it with Scottish men, and made thereof Captaine, Sir Ralph Grey, and came forward toward the Bishoprieke of Durham. Whereof when the Duke of Somerset vnderstoode, hée without delaie, reuolted from King Edward, and fled to King Henry, so likewise did Sir Ralph Percie, and many other of the Kings friends, but many followed King Henry in hope to get spoyle, for his armie brent and spoyled townes whersoeuer they came.

About Midsommer the Scots with many French and Englishmen, laid siege to the Castle of Norham, but were forced to leaue it as they found it. The Earle of Warwike wan the towne of Barwike, where he made fiue Bannerets, and 22. Knights, and went into Scotland, where he burnt Lawghmaban, Jedworth, and Galowey, and many other Townes, and returned to Barwike.

This yéere a quarter of wheate was solde for two shillings at London, barley for two and twenty pence, pease for thrée shillings foure pence, and of otes for 14. pence, and in the countrey of Norfolke, a quarter of wheate was sold for 20. pence, mault for 20. pence, barly and otes for 12. pence. Price of graine.

In the month of Aprill, King Edwarde made great preparation against King Henry, and on S. Markes day Ralph Percie L. Hungerford, with a great power purposing to haue distressed sir Iohn Neuill, L. Mountacute, was himselfe slaine with many other. 1464. *Ann. reg. 4.*

The 15. of May King Henries power being at Yerham, the L. Mountacute with a power came thither, & enclosed them round about. There were taken & slaine many lords that were with K. Henry, but he himself was fled foure daies before into Lancashire, where he & other liued in caues ful hardly vnknowne more than a yére. On Trinity sunday K. Edward made the L. Mountacute Earle of Northumberland & warden of the Marches. The Earles of Warwike & Northumberland tooke Bamborough castle, and sir Ralph Grey being taken in Bamborough, for that he had sworne to be true to King Edward, was condemned, and had iudgement giuen vpon him by the Earle of Worcester high Constable of England, as followeth. Battell at Yeram.

Sir Ralph Grey, for thy treason, the King had ordained that thou shouldest haue had thy spurs striken off by the hard héeles, by the hand of the maister cooke, who is here ready to do as was promised thée, at the time that he tooke off thy spurs, and said to thée as is accustomed: That and thou bée not true to the soueraigne Lord, he shall smite off thy spurs with his knife hard by the héeles: and so shewed him the maister cooke ready to doo his office with his apron and his knife. Moreouer sir Ralph Grey, the King had ordeyned, here thou maiest sée, the kings of armes, and heralds, and thine owne proper coate of armes, which they should teare off thy bodie, and so shouldest thou aswell be disgraded of thy worship, nobles, and armes, as of thy order of knighthood. Also here is another coate of thine armes reuersed, the which Iudgement against sir Ralph Grey. The order of disgrading of a Knight.

thou shouldest haue worne on thy body, going to thy death wards, for that belongeth to thee after the law: notwithstanding the disgrading of knighthood, and of thine armes, and nobles, the king pardoneth that, for thy noble grand-father, who suffered trouble, for the kings most noble predecessors. Now sir Ralph Grey this shall be thy penance: Thou shalt go on thy feete vnto the townes end, and there thou shalt be laid downe, and drawen to a scaffold made for thee, and thou shalt haue thy head smitten eff, thy body to be buried in the friers, thy head where the kings pleasure shall bee. This iudgment was pronounced at Doncaster, against the said Ralph Grey, for rebelling, and keeping of the castle of Bambrough against king Edward.

Neuil earle of Northumberland, and Herberd earle of Penbroke.

After this king Edward returned to Yorke, where in despite of the Earle of Northumberland, which then kept himselfe in the Realme of Scotland, he created sir Iohn Neuill, L. Mountacute Earle of Northumberland, and in respect of Iasper earle of Penbroke, hee created William lord Herbert Earle of Penbroke: but after when the Earle of Northumberland was reconciled to his fauor, he restored him to his possessions, name and dignitie, and preferred the lord Mountacute to the title of Marquesse Monntacute, so that in degree he was aboue his brother the Earle of Warwicke, but in power and possessions far vnder him.

The Earle of Warwicke was sent ouer into France, to demaund the ladie Bona, daughter to Lewes Duke of Sauoy, and sister to the lady Carlot then quéene of France, which Bona was then in the French courte. The earle of Warwick comming to the French king, as then being at Towers, was of him honorably receiued, & curteously entertained: his message was so well liked for the aduancement of the lady Bona, that hir sister quéene Carlote obteined both the good will of the king hir husband, and also of hir sister the foresaid ladie, so that the matrimony on that side was clerely assented to, and the Earle of Dampmartine appointed with other to saile into England, for the full finishing of the same: but in the meane while, on the first of May, King Edward toke to wife Elizabeth daughter to Iaquet dutches of Bedford, sister to the Earle of S. Paule, late wife to sir Iohn Grey, slaine at S. Albons fielde on king Henries part, which mariage was kept secret almost halfe a yéere.

K. Edward maried.

King Edward toke the Chauncelorship from the Bishop of Ercester, brother to the Earle of Warwike, and gaue it to the Bishop of Bathe.

In the month of May, the duke of Somerset, the L. Roos, the L. Molyns, Talbois earle of Kyme, sir Philip Wentworth, sir Thomas Finderne, gathered an hoste in the North countrey, & sir Ioh. Neuil earle of Northūberland with 10000. men came vpon them, whom the cōmons forsaking, their captaines were taken & beheaded. K. Edward fearing the L. Mountacute, whō he had of late made earle of Northumberland, he caused the men of the countrey to desire the rightful heire Percie son to Henry that was slain at Yorke field: & so Percie was restored, & Mountacute was made a Marques, and his son duke of Bedford, which should wed the kings eldest daughter, and so by possibility should be king of England, thus was he fed with faire words, but

Duke of Somerset and other beheaded.

Earle of Northumberland made Marques Mountacute

nothing

nothing perfourmed. About Michaelmas the king held a councel at Reading, where the quéene was shewed openly, and receiued as quéene. After this wedding known, the earle of Warwike and K. Edward were neuer friends.

The Minster of Yorke, the steple of Christs church in Norwich, part of the priory of Christs church in London, the steeple of Saint Mary spittle at London with the cloyster, were brent this yeere. Minster of Yorke burned.

This yére the 22. of January, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein it was enacted that no merchandize comming out of Flaunders, or out of any land of the duke of Burgoyne, should be sould within any ground of England. Also king Edward caused a new coyne to be made, whereby he gained much, for he made of an old noble a royall, which he commanded to go for 10. s. neuertheles to the same royall was put 8. d. of alay, & so weied the more by 8. d. being smitten with a new stampe: he likewise made halfe angels of 5. s. and farthings of 2. s. 6. d. angelets of 6. s. 8. d. and half angels, 3. s. 4. d. he made siluer monies of 3. d. a grote, & so of other coines after that rate, to the great harme of the commons. I finde by recorde, that William lord Hastings the kings Chamberlaine, was made master of the Kinges myntes or monies of gold or siluer in the Tower of London, his Realme of England, territory of Ireland, and towne of Caleis, with the Marches of the same: the which lord Hastings vndertoke to make the same monies vnder form following, to wit, of gold, a piece for 8. shillings 4. pence sterlings, which should be called a noble of gold, of the which there should be 50 such péeces in the pound weight of the tower, an other péece of gold 4. shillings 2. pence of sterlings, & to be of them 100. such péeces in the pound: and a thirde péece of golde weying the fourth part of the first, for two shillings one peny starlings, and 200. such péeces in the pound, and euery pound weight of the sayd tower, to be worth 20. pound, 16. shillings 8. pence of sterlings, the which should be 23. Carets, 3. graines and halfe fine, &c. And for siluer, 37. shillings 6. pence of sterlings, the péece of 4. pence to be 112. groates, & 12. pence in the pound weight, &c. thus much out of the recorde. 1465. *Ann. reg. 5.* Coine enhaunsed.

On the Ascension day king Edward made 48. knightes of the Bathe within the tower of London, amongst the which, was of that company sir Thomas Cooke, sir Mathew Philip, and Ralph Iocelin, and sir Henrie Wauar Citizens of London made knights: and vpon the 26. of May, Quéene Elizabeth was crowned at Westminster with a great solemnitie: her father also was created Erle Riuars, and made high Constable of England, his brother lord Anthony was maried to the sole heire of Thomas lord Scales: sir Thomas Grey, son to sir Iohn Grey the Quénes first husband, was created Marques Dorset, and maried to Cicely heire to the lord Bonuile. Knights of the Bathe. Queene Elizabeth crowned.

King Henry was taken in Clitherwode, beside Bungerley Hyppingstons in Lancashire, by Thomas Talbot sonne and heire to sir Edward Talbot of Bashall, and Iohn Talbot his cosin of Celebry, which deceiued him being at his dinner at Wadington Hall, and brought him towardes London, with his legs bounde to the stirrops, where he was met by the earle of Warwike, and arested at Esyldon, and forthwith his gilt spurs were ta- King Henry taken.

ken from his fete, doctor Manning Deane of Winsore, doctor Bedle and yong Ellerton being in his companie, with their fete bounde vnder the horse bellies, were brought through the Citie to the Tower of London, where the king was kept long time.

Long piked shoes forbid. It was proclaimed throughout England, that the beakes or pikes of shoone and bootes should not passe two inches, vpon paine of curling by the clergy, and forfeiting 20. s. to be paid one noble to the king, one other to the Cordwainers of London, and the third to the chamber of London, and for other cities and townes the like order was taken. Before this time and since the yeere of our Lord, 1382. the pikes of shoes and bootes were of such length, that they were faine to be tied vp to their knees with chaines of siluer gilt, or at the least with silke laces.

Sheepe transported ouer sea. King Edward concluded an amitie & league with Henry King of Castile and Iohn King of Aragon, at the concluding whereof, he granted licence for certain Cotswold sheep to be transported into ỹ countrie of Spain, which haue there since mightily increased and multiplied, to the Spanish profit, as it is said: but true it is, that long ere this were sheepe in Spain, as may appeare by a patten of king Henry the second, the 31. of his reigne, graunted to the weauers of London, that if any cloth were found to be made of Spanish wool, mixed with English wool, the maior of London should see it brent.

Besides this, to haue amitie with his ner neighbour the king of Scots, he winked at the losse of Barwike, and was contented to take a truce for fifténe yeeres.

1566 The 11. of Februarie Quéen Elizabeth was deliuered at Westminster of a daughter also named Elizabeth, who was long after married to king Henry the 7. whose Christening was done in the abbey with the most solemnitie that might bee, and the more, because the king was assured by his physitions, that the Quéene was conceiued with a prince, which proued otherwise as yee haue heard.

An. reg. 6. Hungerford and Courteney executed. This yeere was the Lord Hungerford, sir Thomas Hungerford knight, sonne to the Lord Hungerford, and Henry Courteney of right Earle of Deuonshire, beheaded at Salisburie. The Lord Stafford of Southwike procured the said Courtneys death, to be made Earle of Deuonshire, as in deede he was shortly after.

1467. King Edward through the refusall of the French kings sister in law (as yee haue heard) wan him enemies in France, wherefore in other places he procured him friends, but those friends had stand him in small steede, if fortune had not holpe him to another, euen at his elbow. This was Charles *Ann. reg. 7.* Earle of Charoloys, sonne and heire apparant vnto Philip Duke of Burgoyne, which Charles being then a widower, was counsailed to be a suter vnto king Edward to haue in mariage the Ladie Margaret, sister to the same king, a ladie of excellent beautie, and thought not vnworthy to match with the greatest prince of the world.

Anthony the Bastard of Burgoine, called the earle of the Roche, brother to ỹ said earle Charoloys, a man of great wit, courage, & valiancie, was appointed

pointed by his father Duke Philip to go into England in embassage about this sute, who being furnished for his estate, hauing in his company gentlemen and other expert in all feats of chiualry, and martiall prowes, to the number of 400. horses, toke ship, and arriued in England, where he was of the king and nobles honourably receiued. His message being declared, was ioyfully heard of the king, the which by that affinitie saw, how they mought be assured of a buckler against the French: the king therefore granted to the bastards request, and the said bastard openly in the kings great chamber contracted the said Ladie Margaret, for, and in the name of his brother the Earle of Charolops.

Walter Blunt made Baron, and Lord Mountioy.

Barō Mountioy.

The third of June, began a Parliament at Westminster, wherein was resumed to the kings hands, all manner of gifts that had bene giuen from the first day he toke possession of the Realme, to that time, except certaine things then excepted.

Parliament at Westminster.

Also this yere in diuers places of England, many men were arrested, and treason surmised against them, wherethrough many of them were put to death, and the other escaped for great sums of money: amongst the which sir Thomas Cooke, sir Iohn Plumer knights, Humfrey Heyford, and other Aldermen of London were arrested, and charged with treason, wherof they were acquite, but they lost of their goods to the king, to the value of 40000. markes, or more, as some haue written: and for example, the forenamed sir Thomas Cooke late Maior of London, was by one named Hawkins appeached of treason, for the which he was committed to the Tower: his place in London seased by the Lord Riuers, and his Lady and seruants clerely put out thereof. The cause was this: the forenamed Hawkins, came vpon a season vnto the said sir Thomas, requesting to lend him a 1000. markes vpon good surety, whereunto he answered, that he would first know for whom it should be, and for what intent: at length vnderstanding it should be for the vse of Quéene Margaret, he answered, he had no currant wares whereof any shift might be made without too much losse, and therefore required Hawkins to moue him no further: for he intended not to deale withal, yet the said Hawkens required but one hundred pound, at length, and went without it, or the value of one peny, and neuer came againe to moue him, which so rested two or three yeres after, till the said Hawkins was cast in the Tower, and at length brought to the brake, called the Duke of Excesters daughter (because he was the deuiser of that torture) by meanes of which paine, he shewed many things, amongst the which the motion he had made to sir Thomas Cooke was one, by meanes whereof sir Thomas Cooke was troubled as ye haue heard, and one Iury, by meanes of sir Iohn Fogge, indited him of treason: after which, an Oyer determiner was kept in the Guildhall, in which sate with the Maior, the Duke of Clarence, the earle of Warwike, the Lord Riuers, sir Iohn Fogge, with other of the kings counsel, to the which place the said sir Thomas was brought, & there arraigned vpon life and death, where he was acquited of the said inditement, and sent to the

Lib. Erswike.

Sir Thomas Cooke his troubles.

The Brake, or Racke in the Tower called the D. of Excesters daughter.

counter

counter in Bread ſtréet, and from thence to the kings bench: being acquited, his wife got again poſſeſſion of his houſe, the which ſhe found in an euill plight: for the ſeruants of ſir Iohn Fogge and the Lord Riuers had made hauock of what they liſted. Alſo at his place of Giddy hall in Eſſex, another ſort had deſtroyed the déere in his parke, his conies, and fiſh, & ſpared not braſſe, pewter, bedding, and all what they might carry: for the which might neuer one peny be gotten in recompence, nor ſir T. Cooke be deliuered, till he had paid 8000. pound to the king, and 800. pound to the Quéene, and for that ſir Iohn Markham knight, chiefe Iuſtice of the pleas, determined ſomewhat againſt the kings pleaſure (that the offence done by ſir T. Cooke was no treaſon, but miſpriſion, the which was no deſert of death, but to be fined at the kings pleaſure) the Lord Riuers and the Dutches of Bedford his wife procured that he loſt his office afterward in the 12. yéere of Edward the fourth.

Lord chiefe Iuſtice loſt his office for doing iuſtice.

The marriage aforeſaid concluded, the baſtard of Burgoigne chalenged the lord Scales, brother to the Quéene, to fight with him, both on horſe back and on foote: which chalenge the lord Scales gladly accepted, the king cauſing liſts to be prepared in weſt Smithfield of London for theſe champions, the length of 120. Tailers yards, and ten foote: and in breadth 80. yards and ten foote, double barred, fiue foot betwéene the bars, the timber & workmanſhip whereof coſt two hundred markes, beſides faire and coſtly galeries for the ladies and other. At the which martiall enterpriſe, king Edward himſelfe with his nobility was preſent. The firſt day being the Thurſday next after Corpus Chriſti day, they ran together with ſharpe ſpeares, and departed with equal honour. The next day they turneyed on horſe backe, the lord Scales horſe had on his chafron a long ſharpe pike of ſteéle, and as the two champions coaped together, the ſame horſe thruſt his pike into the noſtrels of the baſtards horſe, ſo that for very paine he mounted ſo high, that he fell on the one ſide with his maſter, and the Lord Scales rode about him with his ſword drawne in his hand, till the king commaunded the marſhall to helpe vp the baſtard, who openly ſaid, I cannot holde me by the clouds, for though my horſe faile me, I will not faile my incounter-companion, but the king would not ſuffer them to do any more that day. The next morrow, the two noble men came into the field on foote, with two polaxes, and fought valiantly, but at the laſt the point of the poll-axe of the Lord Scales happened to enter into the ſight of the baſtards helme, and by fine force might haue plucked him on his knées: but the king ſodainely caſt downe his warder, and then the marſhall ſeuered them. The baſtard not content with this chance, required the king of Iuſtice, that he might performe his enterpriſe: the Lord Scales refuſed not: but the king calling to him the conſtable & the marſhall, with the officers at armes, after conſultation had, it was declared for a ſentence definitiue, by the Duke of Clarence then conſtable of England, and the Duke of Norffolke then marſhall, that if he would go forward with his attempted chalenge, hée muſt by the law of armes, be deliuered to his aduerſary, in the ſame ſtate and

Iuſtes in Smithfield.

like

like condition, as he stood when he was taken from him. The bastard hearing this iudgement, doubted the sequele of the matter, and so relinquished his chalenge. Other chalenges were done, and valiantly atchieued by the Englishmen, which I passe ouer. Shortly after came sorowfull tidings to the bastard, that his father Duke Philip was dead, and thereupon taking his leaue of king Edward, and his sister the new Dutches of Burgoigne liberally rewarded, returned to his brother the new Duke. This yere diuers persons being common Iurors, such as at Assises were forsworne for rewards, or fauour of parties, were iudged to ride from Newgate to the pillory in Cornehill with miters of paper on their heads, and then againe to Newgate: and this iudgement was giuen by the Maior of London. 1468. False Iurors set on the pilory.

Charles Duke of Burgoign desirous to see his new wife, wrote to king Edward, requiring him to send his sister ouer vnto him, according to the couenants passed betweene them. *An. reg. 8.*

King Edward on the other side not slacking the matter, first called a Parliament, which began at Westminster on the eight of May, wherein was granted two fiftenes and a disme. Parliament at Westminster.

The 18. of June Margaret sister to king Edward the fourth, beganne her iourney from the Wardrobe in London, toward her mariage with Charles Duke of Burgoigne: first she offered in the Church of Saint Paul, and then rode through the City, the earle of Warwik riding before her, with earles and barons a great number, the Dutches of Norffolke, with other ladies and gentlewomen in great number. And at her entry into Cheap, the Maior of London and his brethren the Aldermen presented her with a paire of rich basons, and in them an hundred pound of gold, and that night she lodged at the Abbey of Stratford, where the king then lay: from thence she toke her iourney to Canterbury. The king riding after to see her shipping, on the first of July she toke the sea at Margate, and there toke leaue of the king her brother, and departed. There returned back again with the king, the Duke of Clarence, the Duke of Glocester, the Earles of Warwicke, Shrewsbury, & Northumberland. And there abode with her in the ship, the Lord Scales, the Lord Dacres her chamberlaine, sir Iohn Wooduile, sir Iohn Howard, and many other famous Knights and Esquires: she was shipped in the new Ellen of London, and in her nauy the Iohn of Newcastle, the Mary of Salisbury, and many other royall ships, and on the morrow landed at Sluce in Flanders, and as soone as her ship and company of ships were entred into the hauen, there receiued her sir Simon de Lelein & the water baily, in diuers boats & barks apparelled ready for her landing. The first estate that receiued her was the Bishop of Utright wel accompanied, & the countesse of Shorne bastard daughter to Duke Philip of Burgoigne, & with her many ladies & gentlewomen, and so proceeding in at the gate of the towne, the same towne was presented to her, she to be soueraigne lady thereof: also they gaue her 12. markes of gold Troy waight, the which was 200. pound of English money, and so she proceeded through the towne to her lodging, euery householder standing in the street with a torch in his hand burning. Lady Margaret the kings sister maried to the Duke of Burgoigne.

On

On the morrow the olde Dutches of Burgoigne came to her, accompanied with many great estates. On the third of July came the Duke of Burgoigne to Sluce with twentie persons secretly, and was there openly affianced to the Lady Margaret, by the bishop of Salisbury and the Lord Scales, in presence of the Lord Dacre, the Dutches of Norffolk, the Lady Scales, and all the Knights, Esquires, and Gentlewomen environing the chamber.

On the eight of July being Saterday, by the Duke of Burgoignes appointment, the Lady Margaret remoued by water to the Dame. And on the Sunday in the morning betwixt fiue and six of the clocke, the marriage was solemnized betwixt them, by the Bishops of Salisbury and of Turney, there being present the old dutches of Burgoigne, the Lord Scales, the Lord Dacre, with the Knights, Esquires, Ladies and Gentlewomen that came out of England: the great triumphs, feastings, shewes of pageants, with other strange deuises and inckings, were such as I haue not read the like, and would be ouer long in this place to set downe.

Harlow Castell woon.

In the ende of August the Castell of Harlow was won by the assault of the Lord Herbert, the which Castell was one of the strongest holdes in Wales.

This yéere many murmurous tales ranne in the City betwéen the Earle of Warwicke and the Quénes blood, the which Earle was euer had in great fauour of the commons of this land, by reason of the excéeding houseEarle of Warwike his housekeeping. Rob. Fabian. hold which he daily kept in all countries where euer he sojourned or lay: and when he came to London, he held such an house, that fiue Oxen were eaten at a breakefast, and euery Tauerne was full of his meat, for who that had any acquaintance in that house, he should haue had as much sodden and rost as he might cary vpon a long dagger.

This Duke of Clarence went to Calets, and there wedded Isabell one of the daughters of the Earle of Warwicke. Sir Iohn Coniers knight, Robert Hilliard, who named himselfe Robin of Ridsdale, and other, gathered an host of 2000. men in the North, against whom king Edward sent W. Herbert late made Earle of Penbroke, with 1800. Welchmen, and Humfrey Stafford of Southwike, late made Earle of Deuon, with 6000. good archers, which two Earles falling out for lodging in the towne of Banbery, Humfrey Stafford departed with his power, whereby G. Herbert and Ric. Herbert his brother were ouercome and taken by them of the north, and 5000. (saith Hall) of the Welchmen slain in a plaine called Danes more nére to the towne of Edgecote, three miles from Banbery, the 26. of July. The men of name slaine of the Welch party, were sir Roger Vaughan knight, Henry ap Morgan, T. ap Richard Vaughan Esquire, W. Herbert of Brecknocke Esquire, Watkin Thomas sonne to Rog. Vaughan, Inan ap Iohn ap Meridick, Dany ap Iankin ap Limorik, Harrisdon ap Pikton, Iohn Done of Kidwelly, Rice ap Morgan ap Vlston, Iankin Perot ap Scotes Burg, Iohn Euerard of Penbroke shire, Iohn Courtor of Hereford. The northren men of name slaine were, sir Henry Latimer sonne and heire to the Lord Latimer, sir Roger Pigot knight, Iames Coniers sonne and heire to sir Iohn Coniers knight,

1469. Robert of Ridsdale. *An. reg. 9.*

Edgecote field, some call it Banbery field.

Oliuer

Oliuer Audley Esquire, Th. Wakes sonne and heire to W. Mallery Esquire: Richard Wooduile Lord Riuers with Iohn his sonne were taken in the forest of Deane, and brought to Northampton, where they with sir W. Herbert and Richard his brother were all foure beheaded by the commaundement of George Duke of Clarence and the Earle of Warwike. T. Herbert was slain at Bristow. T. Stafford was by the commons taken at Bridgewater and beheaded. King Edward was taken at Olnay, a village beside Northampton, by the Archbishop of Yorke, and brought to Warwike Castell, and thence to Yorke, from whence by faire promises he escaped, and came to London. King Edward taken prisoner.

The 29. of September, Humfrey Neuill knight, and Charles his brother were taken by the Earle of Warwike, and beheaded at Yorke, king Edward being present. In the moneth of March, the Lord Willoughby, Rich. Lord Wels, sir Robert his sonne, sir Tho. Delaband, sir Tho. Dimocke the kinges Champion, draue out of Lincolnshire sir Tho. Burgh a knight of the kings house, pulled downe his place, and tooke all his goods and cattell, and with 30000. of the commons, cried king Henry. King Edward gaue Lord Wels his pardon, and sent for him, and hauing him in custody, commaunded him vpon paine of death, to cause the Lincolnshire men to lay downe their host, and so he wrote, but all in vaine: whereupon the Lord Wels his head was cut off. King Edward dispersed the Lincolneshire men with his ordinance, and slue many of them: sir Robert Wels, sir Thomas Delaband, & sir Thomas Dimocke were taken and beheaded beside Stamford the 13. of March: and the 19. day the Lord Willoughby was beheaded at Doncaster. 1470. *An. reg.* 10. King Edward pardoneth, and beheadeth the Lord Wels.

King Edward comming to Hampton, caused Iohn Tiptoft Earle of Worcester (and Constable of England for terme of his life) to sit in iudgement vpon Clapham, and other Gentlemen taken in the ships, at a skirmish of Southampton, where to the number of twenty persons gentlemen and yeomen were drawne, hanged and headed: and after hanged by the legs on a gallowes of a paire of buts length, and then hauing stakes put in their fundaments, their heads were set on those stakes (an horrible spectacle) and so suffered to hang a long time after, to wit, till the 15. of May. The Duke of Clarence, and the Earle of Warwike fled into France, where they made a mariage betwixt Prince Edward sonne to king Henry the first, and one of the Earle of Warwikes daughters. At this mariage was concluded, that king Henry should raigne againe, and Prince Edward after, and for lacke of their heires George Duke of Clarence, and his heires, &c. Tiptoft Earle of Worcester cruell. George Duke of Clarence, & the Earle of Warwike fled into France.

The 13. day of September, George Duke of Clarence, Iasper Earle of Penbroke, Richard Earle of Warwike, the Earle of Orford, with the bastard Fauconbridge, and many other arriued at Plimmouth, and another fort at Dartmouth, of whom the Earle of Penbroke went into Wales, the other toward Excester, proclaiming in the name of King Henry, that all men betwixt the ages of 16. & 60. should be ready to assist the said Lords on the behalfe of King Henry, against King Edward. Also on the sunday next after the feast of Saint Michaell the Archangell Doctor Godard preaching at Paules crosse, declared by the reading of bils and diuers other argumen-

and George Duke of Clarence and other landed at Plimmouth. Doctor Godard preached at Paules crosse against K. Edward.

and prowes, that Henry was true and lawful king of England, and not king Edward. Moreouer, the Marques Mountacute, who had gathered a fire thousand men in king Edwards name, and was come nére vnto the said Edward, he told them how king Edward had serued him: first, making him Earle of Northumberland, and after giuing the same earldome to Thomas Percy, made him marques Mountacute, allowing him a Pies nest to maintaine it withal: wherefore he would leaue to serue him, & take part with the Earle of Warwike his brother. Whereof when king Edward vnderstood, he fled from his host, beside Nottingham, and the third day of October, he with the Lord Riuers, Lord Hastings his chamberlaine, the Lord Say, and other to the number of seuen or eight Earles, toke shipping at Lin, and sailed toward the Duke of Burgoigne his brother in law.

K. Edward fled beyond the seas. Phil. Comineus.

The Quéene tooke sanctuary at Westminster.

The Quéene had before that, to wit, on the first of October stolne secretly in the night out of the Tower of London by water to Westminster, and there taken sanctuary. This time was great watch kept in the City of London: for the Kentishmen had assembled themselues in great companies, and so had come to the outer part of the Citie, as to Ratclif, Saint Katherins, Southwarke, and other the suburbs, and many of them were entred the citie, where they robbed the Flemmings at Blanchapleton, and other places, making them to flie out of the citie with sorrow ynough.

Kentishmen robbed the Flemmings, and chased them out of London.

The tower of London yeelded to the mayor of London.

On Wensday following, the tower of London was yéelded to the Maior and his brethren the Aldermen, who forthwith entred the same, and deliuered king Henrie of his imprisonment, and lodged him in the Kinges lodging. On the Friday following came to London the Archbishop of Yorke, brother to the Earle of Warwike, the lord Prior of Saint Iohns, and other to the number of two thousand men of armes. On the morrow following, came the Duke of Clarence, the Earle of Warwike, the bastarde Fauconbridge, with other to the number of foure thousand men. On the first daye of October the duke of Clarence, the Earle of Warwike, the archbishop of Yorke, the lord of Saint Iohns, with other entred the tower of London, and king Henrie being there prisoner nigh the space of nine yéares, they elected him to be their lawful king, and forthwith rode with him through London to the Bishoppes pallace, where hee rested till the 13. of October, on which day hee went a procession crowned in Paules Church: the Earle of Warwike bare his traine, and the earle of Oxford his sword, &c.

George Duke of Clarence the Earle of warwike & other restored King Henry.

King Edward was proclaimed vsurper of the crowne, and Iohn Tiptoft earle of Worcester beinge found in the top of an high trée in the forrest of Waibridge in the county of Huntingdon, was brought to London at parliament arrested and condemned to death by sir Iohn Vere earle of Oxford, and beheaded at the tower hill, and after buried at the Blackfriers.

1472. Prince Edward borne in the sanctuary.

Quéene Elizabeth wife to Edward the fourth, being in the sanctuarie at Westminster, was deliuered of a prince on the fourth of Nouember, who was after king Edward the fift.

King Edward with the Lord Hastings, the lord Say, nine hundred Englishmen, and three hundred Flemmings, would haue landed in Esser, but there

there the Earle of Oxfords brother put them off, and after hée landed sore weather-beaten at Rauensporne, within Humber on Holdernesse, and there rose on him Holdernesse mē, whose captaine was sir Iohn Westerdale a priest, after cast into the Marshalsea at London. As King Edward passed the country, he shewed the earle of Northumberlands letters and seale, that sent for him, saying, that he came to claime no title of the crowne, but only his dukedome of Yorke, nor would not haue done afore, but at the exciting of the earle of Warwicke, & cried in euery place, king Henry, & prince Edward, wearing an Estrich feather prince Edwards liuery. King Edward came to Nottingham, where sir William Stanley, sir William Norris, and diuers other brought him men, so that hée had then 4000. or more. Then Edward marched toward Leicester, where the earle of Warwick and marques Mountacute had 4000. men, and would haue fought with king Edward, but that hée had receiued letters from the Duke of Clarence, that he should not fight vntill he came. Whereupon hee kéeping Leicester stil, suffered Edward to march toward London. A little out of Warwicke the duke of Clarence with 7000 men méeting with king Edward, agréed to him and brake al the promises made in France. King Edward comming to London, by master Vrswike the Recorders means, and others, entred into the bishop of Londons palace by a posterne, and there tooke king Henry and the archbishop of Yorke, and sent them both to the tower on Maundy thursday.

Edward the fourth landed at Rauensporne.

An. reg. 11.

George of Clarence agreed with his brother Edwarde the fourth.

King Henrie againe sent to the tower.

The Earle of Warwicke, the Duke of Excester, marques Mountacute, and the earle of Oxford, with many knights, came with their host toward Barnet: wherefore king Edward tooke king Henry with him, and preoccupied the towne of Barnet all the night: the Earle of Warwicke and his retinue remained on the plaine without the towne, shooting guns one at the other. And in the morning being Easter day, and the 14. of Aprill, they fought in a thicke mist from fower of the cloke in the morning til ten, and diuers times the earle of Warwickes men supposed that they had got the victory of the field, but it happened that the earle of Oxfords mē had a star with streames both before and behind on their liueries, and King Edwards men had the sun with streames on their liuery: whereupon the Earle of Warwickes men, by reason of the mist not well discerning the badges so like, shot at the Earle of Oxfords men that were on their owne part, and then the earle of Oxford and his men cried treason, and fled with eight hundred men. The marques Mountacute was priuily agréed with K. Edward, and had gotten on his liuery, but one of his brothers the Earle of Warwickes men espying this, fell vpon him and killed him.

Barnet field.

The earle of Warwicke séeing his brother dead, and the Earle of Oxford fled, lept on a horse to fly, and comming to a woode where was no passage, two of king Edwards men came to him, killed him, and spoiled him to the naked skin. Sir William Tyrrell knight was killed on the earle of Warwikes part. The Duke of Excester fought manfully and was dispoyled, wounded, & left for dead from seuen in the morning til fowre of the clocke in the after-noone, and then being brought to a seruants house of his there-

by

by called Ruthland, he had a chirurgion, and after was conueyed into Weſtminſter ſanctuary. Were ſlaine on King Edwards party, Humfrey Boucher Lord Cromwell, Henry Bourcher ſonne and heire to the Lord Barons both buried at Weſtminſter: ſir Iohn Liſle was there ſlaine, alſo Th. a Par & Iohn Milwater Eſquires to R. Duke of Gloceſter were there ſlaine: and on both parts to the number of foure thouſand, which were buried on the ſame plaine halfe a mile from Barnet, where after a chappell was builded in memory of them.

Iohn Raſtall.

The morow after Eaſter day, were the bodies of the Earle of Warwike and the Marques Mountacute laid naked in Pauls Church in London, that al men might ſée them, for the ſpace of three or foure dates, and then buried at Biſſam Priory in Barkſhire; the Lord Barons was reuerently buried in the friers Auguſtines Church at London. King Henry with the Archbiſhop of Yorke, were ſent to the Tower of London.

Battell of Tewkeſbury. Liber Tewx.

Prince Edward ſonne to Henry the firſt, cruelly ſlaine.

At this time Quéene Margaret, and Prince Edward her ſonne had lien on the ſea 17. dates letted with foule weather, and on Eaſter day at éeuen they landed with their French Nauy at Weymouth, and ſo came to Excester, from thence to Tewkeſbury, and pitched their field by Seuerne. Edward the fourth being come from Londō, fought with prince Edward at Tewkſbury on the fourth of May, toke Quéene Margaret priſoner with prince Edward her ſonne, whom cruelly he ſmote on the face with his gantlet, and after his ſeruants ſlue him. Edmond Duke of Somerſet, and ſir Hugh Courtney fled from Prince Edward & loſt him the field. There was ſlaine Courtney Earle of Deuonſhire, Lord Iohn of Somerſet, Lord Wenlocke, ſir Edmond Hamden, ſir William Whittingham, ſir William Vaus, ſir Nicholas Haruie, ſir Iohn Deluis, ſir William Filding, ſir Iohn Leukenor, ſir VV. Lirmonth, ſir Iohn Vrman, ſir T. Seamer, ſir VV. Rowſe, ſir Thomas Henry. King Edward entring a Church in Tewkeſbury with his ſword drawen, a Prieſt brought the ſacrament againſt him, and would not let him enter vntill he had granted his pardon to theſe that follow: Edmond Duke of Somerſet, Iohn Bouge Strother Lord of Saint Iohns, ſir Humfrey Audley, ſir Geruis of Clifton, ſir VVilliam Grimesby, ſir VVilliam Carie, ſir Henry Roſe, ſir Thomas Treſham, ſir VVilliam Newbrough, knights, Henry Treſham, VValter Courtney, Iohn Florie, Lewes Miles, Robert Iackſon, Iames Gower ſword bearer to Prince Edward, Iames Deluis ſonne and heire to ſir Iohn Deluis: all theſe, where they might haue eſcaped, tarried in the Church (truſting in the kings pardon) from ſaturday till munday, when they were taken out and beheaded.

King Edward granted pardon to many and after cut off their heads.

About this time ſir VValter VVroitile, and ſir Geffrey Gates knights, gouernors of Caleis, ſent ſir George Broke knight from Caleis with three hundred ſouldiers, to Thomas the baſtard Fauconbridge, Captaine of the Earle of Warwikes Nauie, willing him to raiſe the countie of Kent, and to go to London, there to take king Henry out of the Tower, and then to go againſt King Edward.

Thomas the baſtard.

The fourteenth day of May, Thomas the baſtard with a riotous compa-

nie

ny of shipmen, and other of Essex and Kent, came to London, where being denied passage through ỹ city, he set vpon Bishops gate, Aldgate, London bridge &c. along the Thamis side, shoting arrowes and guns into the city, fired the suburbs, and brent more than 60. houses, wan the bulwarks at Aldgate, and entred the city, but the porteclose being let down, such as had entred were slaine, and then the citizens pursued the rest so far as Stratford and Blackwall, slaying many, and toke many prisoners. Thomas the bastard went from London westward, as far as Kingstone vpon Thames, to prosecute K. Edward, but the Lord Scales, with Nicholas Faunt Maior of Canterbury, by faire words caused Fauconbridge to returne to Blackeheath in Kent, from whence in the night he stale from the host with 600. horsemen to Rochester, and so to Sandwich, where he abode the kings comming.

The one and twentieth of May king Edward came to London with thirtie thousand men: and the same night king Henry was murdered in the Tower of London: On the morrowe he was brought through Cornehill, from the Tower with a great companie of men bearing weapons as they should haue led him to some place of execution, to S. Paules church in London, in an open coffin bare faced, where he bled: thence he was caried to the Blacke Friers, and there bled: and thence to Chersey Abbey in a bote, where he was then buried, but since by king Richard the third, in the second yeere of his raigne, remoued to Windsor, where hee was buried without the chancell, at the south doore of the quire of Windsor chappell, where he was worshipped by the name of holy king Henrie: whose redde hat of veluet was thought to heale the headach of such as should put it on their heads, there he rested for a time, but nowe his tombe being taken thence, it is not (commonly) knowne what is become of his bodie. King Henry murdered.

Thus ended the king his transitorie life, hauing enioyed as great prosperitie, as fauourable fortune could affoord, and as great troubles on the other side, as shee frowning coulde power out: yet in both states hée was patient, and vertuous, that hee maie bee a patterne of most perfect vertue, as hee was a worthie example of Fortunes inconstancie: he was plaine, vpright, farre from fraude, wholie giuen to prayer, reading of Scriptures, and almesdéedes, of such integritie of life, that the Bishop which had béene his confessor tenne yéeres, auouched that he had not all that time committed anie mortall crime: So continent as suspition of vnchast life neuer touched him: and hauing in Christmasse a shewe of yong women with their bare breastes laide out, presented before him, he immediately departed, with these wordes, fie, fie, for shame, forsooth you bee to blame: before his marriage hee liked not that women shoulde enter into his Court, and for this respect hee committed his two brethren by the mothers side, Iaspar and Edmond, to most honest and vertuous Prelates, to bee brought vp. So farre he was from couetousnesse, that when the executors of his vncle the Bishoppe of Winchester, surnamed the rich Cardinall, would haue giuen to him two thousand pounde, hee plainly refused it, willing them to discharge the will of the departed, and woulde scarcely condescende at length to accept the same summe of money toward Henry the first his exercise. Continency of Henry the first. Henry the first not couetous. Henry Bewford Cardinal gaue 2000. pound toward the Colledges.

toward the endowing of his Colledges in Cambridge and Eaton: he was so religiouslie affected (as the time then was) that on principall Holydaies, hee would weare sacke-cloth next his skinne. Oth he vsed none, but in most earnest matters these woords: Forsooth, and forsooth; he was so pittifull, that when comming from Saint Albons, hee saw the quarter of a traytour against his crowne ouer Cripple gate, he willed it to be taken awaie, with these wordes: I will not haue anie Christian so cruellie handled for my sake; manie greate offences hee willinglie pardoned, and receiuing at a time a greate blowe by a wicked man, which compassed his death, hee onlie saide, forsooth, forsooth, yee dow fowlie to smite a king annointed so. Another also which thrust him in the side with a swoorde, when hee was prisoner in the Tower, was by him pardoned, when hee was restored to his state and kingdome: not long before his death, beeing demaunded why hee had so long holde the Crowne of Englande vniustlie, hee replyed, my Father was King of England, quietlie enioying the Crowne all his Reigne, and his father my Grandsire was also King of Englande; and I, euen a Childe in my Cradle, was proclaymed and Crowned King without anie interruption, and so holde it fortie yeeres well neere, all the States dooing homage vnto mee, as to my Auncestors; wherefore I maie saie with King Dauid: The Lotte is fallen vnto mee in a faire grounde, yea, I haue a goodlie heritage, my helpe is from the Lorde which saueth the vpright in hearte. Hee raigned eyght and thirtie yeeres, fiue monethes and odde dayes. And after his redemption of the crowne fiue monethes; he liued 52. yeeres, hauing by his wife one only son, called Edward Prince of Wales, deceased as ye haue heard; hee was of semly stature, of body slender, his face beautifull, of his owne naturall inclination, he abhorred all the vices as well of the body as of the soule.

Henry the first his othe. Pittifulnes & patience of H. the first.

Saying of H. the first.

And nowe to returne to king Edwarde. At his comming to London, the Maior, Aldermen and other citizens meeting him one mile without the Citie, to witte, betwixt Iseldon, and Sorse ditch, in the high waie hee made knights these Aldermen, Sir Iohn Stokton Maior of London, Sir Ralph Verney, Sir Richard Lee, Sir Iohn Yong, Sir William Taylor, Sir George Ireland, Sir William Stocker, Sir Matthewe Philip, Sir William Hampton, Sir Thomas Stalbrok, Sir Iohn Crosby, Sir Bartlemew Iames, Sir T. or Richard Vrswike, Recorder of London, all these he made knights, in reward of ỹ good seruice the Londoners had don to him. On the 24. day of May king Edward after he had made banarets, Sir Thomas Grey, Sir Richard Hastings, Sir Iohn Courtney, Sir Nicholas Latimer, Sir Ralph Hastings, Sir Roger Tegets, Sir Iohn Stanley, Sir Simon Mountfort, Sir Iohn Heningham, Sir William Stanley, &c. he toke his iourny into Kent, with all his army following the bastard, and other his complices to suppresse them, if they were in anie place assembled to resist him; but after they were once dispersed, they durst not shew themselues again in armor, those onelie excepted that were withdrawne vnto Sandwich with the bastard, which for the more parte were mariners, an 8. or 9. hundred, with these he kept the town, hauing in the hauen 47. ships great and smal vnder his gouernance; but the K. approching, they sent to him for pardon, which the king granted, and being

Edw the 4. entred London.

Aldermen of London made knights.

Banarets made.

being in the citie of Canterburie, he sent vnto Sandwich his brother Richard duke of Gloucester, to receiue them to mercie, together with all the shippes, which they deliuered: whereupon king Edward not onlie pardoned the bastard, but made him knight, and Vice-admirall. The Lord Denham and sir Iohn Fog, with other were left in Kent, to sit in iudgement of the rebels of Kent, Suller, and Eller, whereof were a greate number punished by the Purse, some 200. marks, some 200. l. some more, some lesse. Thus king Edward returned out of Kent with much good, and little loue. Nicholas Faint Maior of Canterbury (that had serued the earle of Warwike, and had of late perswaded the bastard to depart from his olle, and diuers other of his countrymen) were hanged and quartered, and the heads of Spising and Quinten were set vpon Aldegate of London.

On the 4. day of June, George Neuill archbishop of Yorke, and brother to the late earle of Warwik, and the Marques Mountacute, was deliuered out of the Tower of London, and discharged of his imprisonment.

The 1. of July Edward the son of king Edward, was made prince of Wales, duke of Lancaster, and earle of Cornewall.

In the moneth of September Thomas the bastarde Fauconbridge, was taken at Southampton by Richard Duke of Gloucester, hee was conueied to the Castell of Middleham in Yorkeshire, and there beheaded, notwithstanding that hee had the kings pardon, his head was sent to London, and set on London bridge. *The bastard lost his head.*

The earle of Penbroke and of Richmond fled into Britaine.

The 12. of November the lady Anne the kings sister, was diuorced from Henry Holland duke of Exceter, by meanes of her owne sute.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Westminster, where hee with his quéene on the same feast date sate crowned, and likewise on the Twelfte date the king was again crowned, and went on procession crowned, but the quéene was not then crowned, because she was neere her time of deliuerance, but she went on procession with him; the king kept his estate in the White-hall, with his Prelates and noble estates, where also dined the Maior of London, the aldermen, and manie of the wealthy citizens. 1472

This yéere diuers bornes brast out of the earth, signifying great troubles to ensue, as was iudged; amongst the which bornes one was seauen miles, from Saint Albons, at Markate, the water was called Wo Mere, or Wo Water, for that the running thereof was interpreted to signifie wo to come, as dearth, pestilence, or great battaile; this water had runne against euerie battell before fought, but neuer so much as nowe this yeere, for it begannne on the 19. daie of Februarie, and continued running till the 14. of June in the yéere next following. Also diuers other bornes brake out this yéere, as at Leuesham in Kent, and at Canterburie, called Nailborn; at Croydon in Surrey. Also 6. miles besides Dudley castle in a place called Hungeruele, which last when it betokeneth battaile, runneth foule, and troubly water, and when it betokeneth dearth or pestilence it runneth cléere, but that yéere it ran foule. There is also a pit in Langley Parke in Kent, which is alway full of water, be the weather neuer so dry, except against battel, and then it will be dry, and so it was this yeer. *Bornes brast out of the earth.* *An. reg. 12.*

Ambaſſadours ſent into Burgundy.

This yeere were ſent Ambaſſadours from king Edward to the Duke of Burgoigne, who landed at Bridges on the 2. of Aprill, where they were honorably receiued without the towne by the lord Grantehuſe.

The names of the Ambaſſadours were, Sir Iohn Scot knight marſhall of Caleis, maſter William Hatcleſe Secretarie to the king, maſter Iohn Ruſſell Doctor and Archdeacon of Barkſhire, maſter Richard Marten Archdeacon of London, ſir Iohn Yong knight, and merchant of London, and ſir Iohn Crosby merchant of London: on the 4. of Aprill they were conueyed on horſebacke to the Dukes lodging, &c. They paſſed from thence to the Duke of Britaine, to haue gotten there the two earles of Penbroke and of Richmond.

Archbiſhop of Yorke ſpoiled, and ſent to priſon.

George Neuill Archbiſhop of Yorke, being at Windſore with king Edward on hunting, the king promiſed the Archbiſhop to come to the Moore (a place in Hartfordſhire, which the Archbiſhop had purchaſed and builded commodiouſly) there to hunt and make merrie with him, whereupon the Archbiſhop taking his leaue of the king, went home to his manor of the Moore, and there made great proviſion for the king, and ſent for much plate that he had hid, at the time of Barnet and Tewkeſburie fieldes, and beſides this, borrowed much of his frendes, and purueied for the king for two or three daies meate, drinke, and lodging, as royally as hee coulde: but the daie before the king had promiſed to haue come to the Moore, the king ſodainly ſent for the Archbiſhop to come to Windſor, where he was arreſted of Treaſon, that he ſhould helpe the earle of Orforde, and ſo ſent to Caleis, and to Hames, where he continued long after priſoner: all which time the king kept the Archbiſhoprieke in his owne handes. In this meane while Sir William Par knight, and Sir Thomas Vaughan Eſquire, and other were ſent to the Moore to ſeaſe all his goods for the king, which came there to the ſumme of 20000. l. and all other lordſhippes and lands that the ſaid Archbiſhop had within England, and all his ſtuffe and riches.

K. Edward at this time brake the biſhops miter, that had many rich ſtones, and made therof a crowne for himſelfe. Thomas Bylling chiefe Juſtice of the kings bench, and ſo continued till the firſt of Richard the third.

Io. Vere earle of Orford kept S. Michaels mas mount.

Alſo Sir Io. Vere earle of Orford, that had withdrawen himſelfe from Barnet fielde, firſt into Scotland, after into France, then getting much goods on the Sea, landed in the Weſt Countrey, and entred S. Michaels Mount, with 77. men, the laſt of September, whereon he was, by the kings appointment, beſieged by Bodrigan and other, but with ſuch fauor, that the earle reuictualled the Mount. Then was Richard Forteſcue Eſquire for the bodie, and ſheriffe of Cornewall ſent thither to continue the ſiege, and king Edward ſending pardons to the earles men, ſo long practiſed with them, that at the laſt if the Earle had not ſubmitted himſelfe to king Edward, he had beene taken of his owne men, and ſo Forteſcue entring the Mount the 15. of Februarie, found victuall ynough there to haue ſerued them till Midſommer after: Iohn Vere earle of Orforde, the Lorde Beaumond, two brothers of the ſaide Earle, and Thomas Clifford were brought priſoners to the king. The earle of Orforde was ſent priſoner to Gwines, where he remained ſo long as this king raigned. In

all

all which time the Lady his wife might neuer come to him, or had anie thing to liue vpon, but what people of their charities would giue her, or what shee got by her needle.

In the moneth of September Lewes de Bruges Lord Granthuse, came into Englande from Charles Duke of Burgoigne, and on the thirteenth of October was created Earle of Winchester openlie in the Parliament chamber.

The first of October beganne a Parliament at Westminster by authoritie, whereby an aide was graunted to the king, towardes the charge of his warres, which was leuied of mens landes, as well of Lordes as of other. 1473 *An. reg. 13.* Parliament at Westminster.

The Duke of Burgoigne hauing great warres with the French king, sent Embassadours into Englande to require king Edward his brother in lawe to make warre on the French king, vnto the which request king Edward easily granted, because hee wished to be reuenged on the French king, as of his enemie, for aiding the Earle of Warwike, Quéene Margaret and her sonne Prince Edwarde, and their complices: whereupon he promised and also determined in the beginning of the next yéere, to bring a great armie ouer to Caleis, and to inuade the kingdome of France. And forthwith with all diligence prepared all thinges readie for his iourney, making many shiftes for the prouision of money to serue his turne. And because the last yéere great summes of money were granted him by the Parliament, he deuised this shifte, to call afore him a great number of the wealthiest sort of the people of his Realme, and to them declared his néede, and the requisite causes thereof, hee demaunded of euerie of them some portion of money, which they sticked not to giue, and therefore the king willing to shewe that this their liberalitie was verie acceptable to him, hee called this grant of money, a Beneuolence, notwithstanding that many grudged thereat, and called it a Maleuolence: but the king vsed such gentle meanes towardes them for their assistance in his necessitie, that they could not otherwise doe, but frankely yelde and giue him competent sums, wherewith he prepared a great armie. King Ed. prepared for his iourney into France.

This yéere Henry Holland the Duke of Exceter was found dead in the sea betweene Douer and Caleis, but howe he came there the certaintie could not be knowne.

King Edwarde hauing prepared his armie, led the same to Douer, from thence to crosse the seas to Caleis. The force that passed with him at this present was the greatest that euer came into France, most of them being horsemen, all in very good order well armed. All the nobles of the realme were there, a fewe excepted, they were fiftéene hundred men of armes very well mounted, and the most of them barded and richly trapped, after the manner of the French warres, and well accompanied with horsemen of their retinue, they were at the least fiftéene thousand archers on horse backe, and a great number of footemen and others, as well to pitch their tentes, whereof they were well furnished, as also to attend vpon their artillery, and inclose their campe, and 1474

An. reg. 14. in all their army they had not one pledge. Besides this, were 3000. Englishe men appointed to land in Bryttaine.

When king Edwarde came to Douer, the duke of Burgoigne to helpe his passage, sent 500. Boates of Holland, and Zeland, called cuts, which are flatte and lowe, but lite verie commodiously for transporting of horses: but notwithstanding all this helpe they had from the Duke, and all the king of Englande coulde commande himselfe, hee was aboue three weekes in passing betweene Douer and Caleis, one ship of Ewe tooke 2. or 3. of his small passengers. Before king Edward embarqued, he sent from Douer to the king of France one Herault alone called Garter a Norman borne, who brought a letter of defiance from the king of Englande, in verie good language, and so excellentlie well penned, that mine Authour was perswaded it was neuer Englishmans doing. The contentes whereof were, that the king shoulde yelde vnto him the realme of France, being his inheritance, to the end he might restore the clergy and nobility to their ancient liberty, ease them of the great charges they sustained, and deliuer them of the miseries they were in, which if he refused to do, he protested what great mischiefe should ensue thereof, in maner and forme as in such cases is accustomed. The king read the letter softly to himselfe, and afterwarde all alone withdrewe himselfe into a Wardrobe, and commanded the Herault to be brought to his presence, to whome he made this answere.

King Edward three weekes in passing between Douer and Caleis.

First, that he knew well that the king of England had not passed the seas of his owne free motion, but by the perswasion of the duke of Burgundie, and the communaltie of England.

Secondly, that the summer was now almost past, and that the duke of Burgoigne was returned from Nuntz, as a man discomfited and vtterlie vnfurnished of all things.

Thirdlie, as touching the Constable (of France) he knew well (he said) that the intelligence with the king of England, because he had married his Niece: but would deceiue the king his master as he had him, notwithstanding all the great benefites that he had receiued of him, which hee then rehearsed, adding thereunto, that the saide Constable mente to liue in continuall dissimulation, and entertaine euerie man to make his profite of him.

Last of all, he alleaged to the Herault diuers reasons to perswade the king his master to peace, and gaue him with his owne hand 300. crownes, promising him a thousand more if the peace were concluded: further openly he gaue him for a present, a goodly peece of crimson veluet of thirtie els. The Herault answered, that he would trauel the best he could for peace, and thought the king his master would easilie be won thereunto: but he willed the king of France, to send an Herault to the English campe to demand a safe conduct for certain Ambassadours, that hee woulde sende to the king of England, and to directe his letters to the Lord Howard, or to the Lorde Stanley, and to himselfe also to conuete his Herault. At one time in a maner both the king of England landed at Caleis, and the duke of Burgoigne departed from before Nuntz, who in great haste rid straight to Caleis, to the said king with a very smal train, for he had sent his army to spoile the Countrey of Barroys and Lozaine. The king

of

of England departed from Calais in company of the duke, and passed through Bolloigne, & from thence marched to Peronne, where the duke gaue the Englishmen but cold entertainment, for he caused the gates to be streightlie kept, and woulde suffer but fewe to enter, so that the greatest part of them lodged in the fields. After they were come to Peronne ỹ Constable of France sent to the duke of Burgoigne one of his seruants, by whome he excused himselfe for the withholding of S. Quintins, alleaging that if he had restored it hee could haue stood him in no steede in the Realme of France, for he should vtterlie haue lost his credite and intelligence, but nowe seeing the king of England was come ouer in person, he promised to do hereafter all that the duke should command him, whereof the better to assure him, hee sent him a letter of credite to the declaration of the duke. Furthermore he gaue the duke his faith in writing, to serue and succor him, his friends, and confederates, as well the king of England as others, against all men none excepted.

The duke deliuered the King of Englande his letter, and all the matter of credite, adding somewhat thereto of his owne heade: for hee assured the King, that the Constable woulde deliuer into his handes, both Saynt Quintins, and all his other places, which the King easilie beleeued, partlie because hee had married the Constables Niece, and partlie because hee sawe him in so greate feare of the king of Fraunce, that hee thought hee durst not fayle his promise made to the Duke and him: and the Duke beleeued it also. But the Constable ment nothing lesse, for the feare hee was in of the French king was not so great that it could force him thus far, but he vsed still his wonted dissimulation.

The king of Englande reioycing at this Message sente by the Constable, departed from Peronne with the duke of Burgoigne, towarde Saint Quintins, whereunto when hee approched, a greate Bande of English men ranne before, thinking that the Belles shoulde haue beene roong at their comming, and that the Citizens woulde haue receyued them with Crosse and Holie water, but when they drewe nére to the Towne, the Artillerie shot, and the souldiours issued forth to the skirmish, both on Horsebacke and on foote, so that two or three Englishmen were slayne, and some taken: and in this state returned they in greate rage to their campe, murmuring against the Constable.

The nert morning the duke of Burgondy would haue taken his leaue of the king of Englande to depart to his army in Barroys, promising to doe marualles in his fauor.

The French king sent a seruant of the Lorde Halles in the likenesse of an Herault, with a coate made of a Trumpets Banner, to the English campe, where when hee came, hee was brought to a Tente, and after dinner talked with the king: his message was chiefelie grounded vpon the greate desire the king had of long time to bee in peace with the king of Englande, saying further, that since hee was crowned king of Fraunce, hee neuer had attempted anie thing agaynst the king of Englande or his Realme.

Secondlie, he excused himselfe, for receiuing in times past the earle of Warwike into his dominions, saying, that he did it only against the duke of Burgoigne and not him.

Further, he declared that the said duke of Burgoigne had for no other cause called him into Fraunce, but that by the occasion of his comming, he might conclude a better peace for himselfe with the king: and if happilie anie other furthered the matter, it was onelie to amend the broken estate of their owne affaires, and for their owne priuate commoditie: but as touching the king of Englands good successe, they were altogether careles thereof. He put him also in minde of the time of the yéere, alleadging that winter approched, and likewise the great charges he sustained.

Lastlie hee saide, that notwithstanding a great number in Englande desired warre with Fraunce, yet if the king of Englande incline to peace, the king for his parte woulde condescende to such conditions as hee doubted not but hee and his Realme woulde allowe of: Finallie, hee demaunded a safe conduct for certaine Ambassadors, to come well enformed of his maisters pleasure.

The king of Englande and part of his nobles liking these ouertures verie well, graunted to the Heraulte of Fraunce, as large a safe conduct as hee demanded, and gaue him foure Nobles of Golde for a rewarde. He also sent an Englishe Heraulte with him to bring the like safe conduct. And in the nert Morning in a Village nére to Amience, the Commissioners of both Princes mette, beeing these. For the king of Fraunce, the bastarde of Bourbon Admirall of France, the Lord of Saint Pierre, and the Bishop of Eureux, called Heberge: And for the king of Englande, the Lorde Howard, one Chalenger, and Doctor Morton. Manie Articles of peace were treated of, but the last resolutions were these: That the French king shoulde paie to the king of England presentlie before his departure out of France, seuentie two thousande Crownes, that the Dolphine shoulde marrie king Edwardes eldest daughter, and that shée shoulde haue the Duchie of Guien, for her maintenance, or fiue thousand Crownes yéerelie to be paid in the Tower of London, the space of nine yéeres, which terme expired, the Dolphine shoulde peaceablie enioy the reuenues of the whole Duchie of Guien; and then the king of Fraunce to bee cleerelie discharged of all paymentes to the king of England. Further it was decreed, that the two Princes should meet together, and bee sworne to the treatie, which méeting was obserued in a Towne called Picquigny, on the 29. of August.

The king of England vpon receit of his mony, departed toward Caleis in great hast, fearing the duke of Burgoignes malice, and his subiects.

King Edward returning into England, landed at Douer.

At his departure he left for Hostages with the king of Fraunce, till his returne into England, the Lord Howard, and the master of his Horse called Sir John Cheyney. King Edward tooke Shipping at Caleis, and landed at Douer, and was receiued on the Black-heath by the Maior of London and his brethren in scarlet, and 500. commoners, all clad in Murrey, and so conueied to London through the city to Westminster, on the 28 of September.

The

The French king to compasse his purpose for the getting of the Constable into his handes, toke truce with the Duke of Burgoigne for nine yeres, as a contractour in the league, and not as a Prince alie. King Edwarde of Englande aduertised hereof, sent ouer Sir Thomas Mountgomerey to the French king offering to passe the seas again the nert sommer to aid him, and to make warre on the duke of Burgoigne, so that the French king shoulde pate to him 50000. Crownes for the losse which he should sustaine in his custome, by reason that the wooles of Caleis, could haue no vent: and also pate halfe the charges, and halfe the wages of his souldiers and men of war. The French king thanked king Edwarde for his offer: but hee alleaged that the truce was alreadie concluded, so that hee coulde not attempt anie thing against him, without reproch to his honor: so Sir Thomas Mountgomerey was with plate dispatched. There returned with him the Lord Howard, and Sir Iohn Cheyney, which were hostages with the French king, till the English armie were returned into England. 1475

The eightéenth of Aprill, were inhaunsed to the honor of knighthode, after the custome of England, in the time of peace, his eldest sonne Edwarde prince of Wales, Duke of Cornewall, and earle of Chester, his seconde Sonne the Duke of Yorke, and with them the earle of Lincolnes Sonne and heire, the Duke of Suffolke, the Lorde Thomas Grey the quénes Sonne, and Richard his brother: the earle of Shrewsburie: the earle of Wilshire, Maister Edward Wooduile: the Lord Neuill: the Lord Barkleys sonne and heire: the Lord Awdeleys sonne and heire: the Lord Saint Amand: the Lorde Stanleys sonne and heire: the Lord Sturtons sonne and heire: the Lord Hastinges sonne and heire: the Lord Ferrers of Chartleys sonne and heire: Maister Harbert brother to the earle of Penbroke, Maister Vaughan Brian chiefe Iudge: Littleton one of the Iudges of the Common pleas, Maister Bodringham, Maister Brian Stapleton, Kneuit, Pilkinton, Ludlow, Charleton, &c. The same date the king created the lorde Thomas Marques Dorset before dinner, and so in the habit of a Marques aboue the habite of his knighthode, he beganne the table of knightes in Saint Edwardes Chamber. At that time hee ordained that the kinges chamberlaine shoulde go with the ancient and well nurtred knight to aduertise and teach the order of knighthod, to the esquiers being in the baine. The king himselfe came in person and did honor to al the company with his noble counsell. *An. reg. 15.* knights made by the king. Littleton.

King Edwarde hauing established all thinges in good order, both within his Realme and without, was yet troubled in his mind, for that the earle of Richmond, one of the blod of king Henry the first on the mothers side, was aliue, and at libertie in Brytaine: therefore he sent ouer to Francis duke of Brytaine, one Doctor Stillington, and other Ambassadours laden with no small sum of golde. These Ambassadors declaring their message, affirmed that the king their maister, willed to haue the earle of Richmond onlie to ioine with him in alliance by marriage, and so to plucke vp al the remnants of discord, bet wixt him and them of the contrary faction. The duke thought at the first, that king Edward woulde giue to the earle his eldest daughter the ladie Elizabeth in marriage, he therfore consented to deliuer him, and receiued of the English orators a great sum of money: king Edward practiseth against Henrie earle of Richmond.

money: but ere they were embarqued with their pray, the Duke being aduertised, that the Earle of Richmond was not so earnestly sought for, to be coupled in mariage with king Edwards daughter, as to haue his head parted from his bodie with an axe, and therefore caused his treasurer Peter Landoyse to conuey the said earle of Richmond into a sanctuary at S. Malo, where the English Ambassadours then lay, staying for a conuenient winde: who complained that they were euill vsed to be spoyled both of their money and merchandise: yet because the matter was so handled, that it seemed the earle escaped into sanctuarie through their owne negligence, after that they had receiued him, they were answered that the earle should be safely kept, either in sanctuarie, or else as a prisoner in the Dukes house, and thus the king purchased for his money, the keeping of his money for a little time.

The 2. day of November was borne the kings daughter named Anne at Westminster.

1476 King Edward was somewhat displeased with the chance about the Earle of Richmond, but trusting that the D. of Britaine would according to promise keepe him from doing any grieuance to him, put all doubts thereof out of his minde, and began to study how to keepe a liberall Princely house, and thereupon storing his chests with money hee imployed no small portion in good house keeping.

Iohn Duke of Norffolke deceased, on the tuesday after the feast of the Epiphanie, the 15. of E. 4.

An. reg. 16. This yeere K. Edward kept the feast of S. George, and order of the Garter at Windsore in most royall manner, first on the saturday before none, the king being Soueraigne with the knightes of the order, entred the chapiter within the castle, which Chapiter was also continued in the afternoone, in this manner, towards euensong time, being all mounted on horsebacke in their habites of blew, rode to the chapiter, from whence they went to the quire on foote, where they remained while euensong was done, and then rode againe to the Castle (in their habites as afore) where they had their voide of spices, &c.

Order of Saint Georges feast.

On Sunday morning, the Soueraigne with the knights rode to mattens, which being ended, they entred the chapiter, from whence they went to the Deans house to breakfast, and after to the quire againe euery man to his own stall. Then came the Quéene with the Lady Elizabeth her eldest daughter, the Dutchesse of Suffolke the kings sister, the Lady Marchionesse of Montague, the Lady Marchionesse of Dorset, the lady Hastings, &c. all in one liuery of murrey embrodered with garters, except the Marchionesse of Montague, who rode in a gowne of silke, and these Ladies were placed in the rode loft. And in the same order and habite came the Soueraigne, and knights, with the Quéene and her Ladies in the after none to euensong. The king this day dined in his great chamber, on whose right hand sate Richard Bewchamp bishop of Salisburie, Chancellor of the order, and on the left hand the D. of Clarence, and the D. of Suffolke. At a side table sate the Marquesse of Dorset, the Earles of Arundale, Northumberland, and Esser, the L. Maltrauers, the Earle Dowglas,

the

the Lordes Dudley, Ferrers, and Howard, and Sir Iohn Asteley knight all on one side. And at a table on the other side, sate Maister Dudley Deane of Saint Georges chappell, and with him all on one side, the Chanons of the same chappell in their mantles of murrey, and rundlet of S. George.

On the Munday the Soueraigne and knights of the order entred the chapter, where they had a short communication, frō whence they went to the quire, where euery knight stood before his stall whiles the king had offered a rich sute of vestments, and certaine coapes of the same sute, which the deane receiued: that done, the K. went to his stall, and euery knight sate him downe in their owne stals, till the offertory, and then the Marques Dorset and the D. of Suffolke offered the swoorde of Iohn Mowbray late D. of Northfolke deceased, the lords Maltrauers and Howard, his helme: which being done, & obeisance made, euery knight stoode before their stals, while the K. had offered, and then euerie knight offered according to his stall, to wit, the D. of Clarence, the Marques Dorset, the Duke of Yorke, the earle of Arundell, the earle of Essex, and the D. of Suffolke, the Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Dowglas, the L. Maltrauers, and the L. Howard, the L. Dudley, the Lord Ferrers, Sir Iohn Astley. The masse being ended, they went to the chapiter, and thus the feast was ended, from the which were absent of the order out of the Realme, the K. of Cicell, the king of Portingale, the D. of Burgoigne, the D. of Urbin, the Lorde Riuers, the lorde Scrope, the lorde Durasse. Absent within the Realme, the Prince, the D. of Glocester, the Duke of Buckingham, the lord Hastings, and sir William a Par.

This yeere Charles D. of Burgundy was slaine by the Switzers, before the towne of Nancy in Lorraine, after whose death the French K. wan all the townes which the said D. had holden in Picardy and Artois, and because the towne of Bolongne, and county of Bolongnos appertained by right of inheritance vnto the L. Bertram de la Toure Earle of Auuergne, the French king bought of him his right and title in the same, and recompenced him with other lands in the county of Forests, and in other places. And because the forenamed towne and county were holden of the earledome of Artois, he changed the tenor, and auowed to holde the same towne and county of our lady of Bolongne, and thereof did homage in the great church of Bolongne, offering there an heart of gold, weying 2000. crownes, ordaining further, that his heires and successors at their entrie into their estates, by themselues or their deputies, should offer an heart of like waight and valew, as a relefe and homage for the same towne and country. 1477

This yeere T. Burdet an esquire of Arrow in Warwikshire, son to sir Nicholas Burdet (who was great butler of Normandy in Henrie the firts daies) was beheaded (as was said) for a word spoken, in this sort. K. Edw. in his progresse hunted in T. Burdets parke at Arrow, and slew many of his deere, amongst the which one was a white backe, whereof Th. Burdet made great account, & therefore when he vnderstood thereof, he wished the bucks head in his belly that moued the king to kill it. Which tale being told to the king, Burdet was apprehended and accused of treason, for wishing the bucks head horns & all in the kings belly. *An. reg. 17.* Burdet beheaded. Engherant.

Register of the grey Friers.

belly. This was the report, and true it is (though some haue said the contrarie) that there was a parke at Arrow; for king Edward the third, in the seuenth yeere of his raigne, gaue licence to Rob. Burdet to inclose his wood of Arrow into his parke (as appeareth by patten in record:) And the Record also sheweth that the saide Thomas Burdet was accused of poysoning, sorcerie and inchantment, for the which he was attainted, by parliament condemned, drawne from the Tower of London to Tiborne, and there beheaded, and then buried in the Grey Friers church at London. This Thomas Burdet (by licence obtained of Edward the fourth in the twelfth yeere of his raigne) alienated his lands from his eldest sonne, and true heire, to others at his pleasure, whereof he after sore repented him: And being drawen from the Tower toward his ende (as is afore shewed) espying his said eldest sonne in west Cheape, ouer against the hospitall of Thomas Becket, he procured himselfe to be staied, and there asked his sonne forgiuenesse, confessing himselfe grieuously to haue offended God, in wronging him of his inheritance, which he toke to be the cause that God had so sully plagued him, by the Princes pleasure, to come to such an ende.

Record Tower.

1478 King Edward kept his royall feast of Christmas at Westminster.

The 15. of January king Edward the fourth solemnized the matrimoniall feast of his son Richard the Duke of Yorke, and the Lady Anne daughter and sole heire to Iohn Mowbray Duke of Norfolke with great solemnitie. By which marriage, the said Richard was created Duke of Yorke and Norfolke, Earle marshall, Warren and Nottingham.

Parliament at Westminster, with the attaindor of George D. of Clarence.

The 16. day of January began a Parliament at Westminster, wherein George D. of Clarence king Edwards brother, was attainted of treason: In the which attaindor (which I haue read) is declared, that the said George Duke of Clarence, against the king his soueraigne Lord, had caused diuers his seruants to informe the people, that Thomas Burdet his seruant (which was lawfully and truly attainted of treason) was wrongfully put to death. To his seruants of such disposition he gaue large sums of money, venison, &c. therewith to assemble the kings subiectes, to feast them, and then to induce them to beléeue, that the saide Burdet was wrongfully executed. He also by such his seruants, laboured to make the people beléeue that the king wrought by Negromancie, and vsed the craft to poyson his subiects, such as him pleased, to the great disclander of the king, and incouraging his subiects against him. And ouer that, the said D. being in full purpose to exalt himselfe and his heires to the regaltie and crowne of England, and cleerely in opinion to put aside from the same for euer, the king and his heires, vpon one the falsest and most vnnaturall coloured pretence that man might imagine, falsely and vntruely published, that the king was a bastard, and not legitimate to raigne. And to continue this his most malicious and traiterous purpose after this seditious language among the people, he induced diuers of the kings naturall subiects to be sworn vpon the blessed sacrament, to be true to him and his heires, none exception reserued of their allegiance: and after the same oth so made, he shewed to many, that the king had taken his liuelode from him, and his men were disherited,

ted, but he would indeuor to get them their inheritance, as hee woulde do his owne: hee shewed also, that the king intended to consume him, in like sort as a candle consumeth in burning, whereof hee would in briefe quite him. And ouer this, the saide Duke got an exemplication vnder the great seale of Henry the first late king, wherein was contayned, that if the saide Henry and Edward his sonne died without issue male, that the said Duke and his heires should bee kings, &c. Thus much for his attaindor. *An. reg. 18.*

And on the 11. of March, after hee had offered his owne masse penie in the tower of London, hee made his ende in a vessell of Malmesey, and was after buried at Tewkesburie, by his wife sometime daughter to the Earle of Warwike, which being with child died of poison but a little before him. Duke of Clarence put to death.

This George Duke of Clarence left behind him two yong infants begot on his wife, the daughter of Richard earle of Warwike, which children succeeded their ancestors in semblable euill chance: for Edward his heire, whom king Edward had created earle of Warwike, was 24. yeares after in the time of Henry the 7. attainted of treason, and on the tower hill lost his head: And Magaret his sole daughter, married to sir Richard Pole knight, and by Henry the 8. restored to the earledome of Salisburie, was attainted 62. yeares after her father had suffered, and was in the tower beheaded: in whose person died the surname of Plantaginet. This yeare was a great mortality and death of the pestilence, not onlie in London, but in diuers partes of the realme, which began in the latter end of September, in the yeare last before passed, and continued all this yeare til the beginning of Nouember, which was about 14. monethes, in the which space died innumerable of people in the said citie and elsewhere. 1479 Great pestilence.

William Grey bishop of Ely deceased at Downham, and was buried at Ely, betweene two pillars of marble: he gaue much money toward the reparation of the great steeple at Ely, Iohn Morton doctor of the ciuill lawe succeeded him in that Bishoprieke.

This yeare king Edward more then he was accustomed, began to search for the forfeitures of penall lawes and statutes, as well of the chiefe of his nobilitie, as of other gentlemen, being proprietories of great possessions or aboundantlie furnished with goods, likewise of merchants, and other inferior persons: by reason whereof, it was of all men iudged that he would proone hereafter a sore and rigorous prince among his subiects: but this his new inuented practise, and couetous meaning (by reason of forraine affaires, and abridgement of his daies in this transitorie life, which were within two yeares after consumed) take some but no great effect. *An. reg. 19.* Penal lawes & statutes looked to.

This yeare king Edwarde began to keepe his feast of Christes nativitie at Woking, but at fiue daies end removed from thence to Greenewich, where he kept out the other part, with great royaltie. 1480

The 22. of February 5. notable theeues were put to death at London, for robbing of Churches and other places, especially the Colledge of S. Martin le grand in London, for the which three of them were drawne to the tower hill, and there hanged and brent, the other two were pressed to death. Church robbers hanged, burned, and pressed to death.

Ambassadours were sent to and fro betwixt the kinges of Englande and of *An. reg.*

France,

France, and still the French king fed the king of England with faire words, putting him in hope to match his sonne and heire the Dolphin with the Lady Elizabeth daughter to king Edwarde, according to the conclusions of agreement had and made priuily betwixt them, although in very deede hee meant nothing lesse: his embassadours euer made excuses if anie thing were amisse, and he vsed to send change of Embassadours, so that if those which had béene here afore, and were returned, had saide, or promised any thing (though they were authorized so to do) which might turne to their masters hinderance, the other that came after mought excuse themselues by ignorance of that matter, affirming that they wanted commission once to talke or meddle with that matter, or if he perceiued that any thing was like to be concluded contrarie to his minde, for a shift, he would call his Embassadours home in great haste, and after send an other with new instructions, nothing depending on the old. Thus the French king by cloaking his inwarde determinate purpose, with great dissimulation and large promises, kept himselfe in friendship with the king of England, til he had wrought a great part of his wile against the yong Dutches of Burgoigne, which K. Edward would not haue suffered if hee had put any great doubt in the French kings faire promises, considering that the Crowne of France was in this meane time so much increased in dominions, to the great reinforcement of that Realme.

On the 9. of November was borne king Edwards third daughter, named Briget at Eltham, and was christened in the chappell there by the Bishop of Chichester.

1481 Iames king of Scots sent into England Ambassage, for to haue the Ladie Cicely king Edwards second daughter, to be married to his eldest son Iames Prince of Scotland, Duke of Rothesey, and Earle of Carike. King Edward and his Councell, perceiuing that this affinitie should bee both honorable and profitable to the realme, did not onely grant to this his desire, but also before hand disbursed certaine sums of money, to the intent that the mariage should hereafter neither be hindered nor broken, with condition that if the said mariage proceeded not, then the prouost & merchants of the towne of Edenborow, should be bound for repayment of the saide summe againe. But king Iames was a man wedded to his owne will so much, that he could not abide any that would speake contrary to his fancie, by meanes whereof, diuers of the Nobilitie of his Realme were greatly troubled, amongst whome Alexander D. of Albany, brother to king Iames being exiled into France, & passing through England, tarried with king Edward, and vpon occasion moued him to make warre against his brother the saide king Iames, for that he forgetting his othe, promise and affinitie concluded with king Edward, caused his subiects to make roades into the English borders. King Edward set on by the Duke of Albanie determined to inuade Scotland, with an armie: hereupon all the winter season hee mustred his men, rigged his shippes, and left nothing vnprouided for such a iourney, so that in the beginning of the yere, all things for the warre was in a readinesse: towards the charges whereof, king Edward had borrowed many great sums of money, amongst other, the Citizens of London *An. reg. 21.*

don granted him 5000. markes, which was repaid to them againe in the next yéere following.

This yéere king Edward created William Lord Barkeley Vicount Barkeley at Grænewich.

King Edward with his Quéene kept a royall Christmas at Windsore. 1482

King Edward appointed to be his chiefetaine of his host toward Scotland, and lieutenant generall, Richard Duke of Gloucester, and with him were adioyned as associates, Henry Earle of Northumberland, Thomas L. Stanley Lord steward of the kings house, the L. Louel, the L. Graystoke, and diuers other noble men, and worthy knights. These came to Alnewike in Northumberland about the beginning of the moneth of July, where they marshalled their host: The forewarde was led by the Earle of Northumberland, vnder whose standert were the Lorde Scrope of Bolton, sir Iohn Midleton, sir Iohn Dichfield and other, and souldiers to the number of 6700. In the middle ward was the Duke of Gloucester, and with him the D. of Albany, the L. Louel, the L. Graystoke, sir Edward Wooduile, and other to the number of 5800. The L. Neuil was appointed to follow with 3000. The Lorde Stanley led the wing on the right hand of the Dukes battell with 4000. men. The Lord Fitz Hugh, sir William a Par, sir Iames Harington with the number of 2000. guided the lefte wing. And besides these, 1000. to attend the ordinance. This royall armie came sodainly by the water side to the towne of Berwike, & entred the towne: but Earle Bothwell captaine of the Castle, would in no wise deliuer it: wherfore the captaines planted a strong siege round about it. The two dukes and all the other souldiers (except the Lord Stanley, sir Iohn Elrington treasorer of the kings house, sir William a Par and foure thousand men left to kéepe the siege before the castle) departed toward Edenborough, and in marching brent many townes and baslles. King Iames kept himselfe within the Castle of Edenborough. The Duke of Gloucester entred the towne, and at the speciall desire of the Duke of Albany, saued the towne, and the inhabitants from fire, bloud, and spoile, taking onely such presentes as they offered to him and his captaines. The Lords of Scotland lying at Hadington, on the second of August wrote to the Duke of Gloucester, requiring that the marriage betwixt the Prince of Scotland and L. Edwards daughter might be accomplished, according to the couenants: and further, that a peace from thencefoorth might bee concluded betwéene both realmes. The Duke of Gloucester answered, that for the marriage he knew not his brothers pleasure, but hee required restitution of all the money prested out in loane vpon the same marriage: and for peace he would agrée to none, except the Castle of Berwike might be to him deliuered. The Scots excused the matter touching the repaiment of the money, for that the time of the contract of the saide marriage was not yet come: and as touching the Castle of Berwike, they affirmed it to appertaine to the realme of Scotland as of olde inheritance. The same time the Archbishop of S. Andrewes, the bishop of Dunkill, the Earle of Argile, Lord Cambell, and Andrew Lord of Anandall Chancellor of Scotland, wrote to the duke of Albany a solemne instrument signed and sealed with their seales, concerning a generall

An. reg. 22. Richard D. of Gloucester sent with an army into Scotland.

rall pardon to him and his seruants vpon certain conditions to be granted, so reasonable, that the duke of Albany willingly accepted of the same: but before he departed, he promised the duke of Glocester to do and performe all whatsoeuer before he had sworne, and promised to king Edward: and for performance hereof, hée againe toke a corporall othe, and sealed a writting at Leuington the third of August.

After he was restored, the Lords of Scotland proclaimed him lieutenant of Scotland: and not long after the castle of Berwike was deliuered to the Lord Stanley and other, where the duke of Glocester made Sir T. Molineux knight banaret. The duke of Albany also caused the prouost and burgesses of Edenborough to become bound for the repaiment of the mony lent by king Edward. And then the duke of Glocester returned to Sherehutton, &c.

King Edward so greatlie fauored William Hariot Maior of London, that hée toke him with certaine of his brethren the Aldermen, and Commons of the citie of London, into the forrest of Waltham, where was ordained for them a pleasant lodge of grééne boughes, in the which lodge they dined, with greate chéere, and the king would not go to dinner til he saw them serued. After dinner they went a hunting with the king, and slew many déere, aswell red as fallow, whereof the king gaue vnto the Maior and his company good plentie, and sent vnto the Ladie Maioresse and her sisters the Aldermens wiues, two harts, fiue bucks, and a tunne of wine to make them merry with, which was eaten in the Drapers Hall.

K. Edw. banqueted the Maior and Aldermen of London.

1483 King Edward held his feast of the natiuitie of Christ in his manor of Eltham, and kept his estate all the whole feast in his great chamber, and the Quéene in her chamber, where were dailie more then 2000. persons serued.

The same yéere on Candlemas day, he with his Quéene went on procession from S. Stephens chappell into Westminster hall, accompanied with the earle of Anguise, the Lord Grey and sir Iames Liddall Ambassadors from Scotland, and at his procéeding out of his chamber he made sir Richard Wood vnder treasurer of England, and sir William Cateſby, one of the iustices of the Common place, knights.

An. reg. 23. Although king Edwarde reioyced much that his businesse was come to good conclusion with the Scots, yet hee was nowe sore disquieted in his minde towards the French king, whome hee now perceiued to haue dallied with him, as touching the agreement of the marriage to be had betwixt the Dolphine and his daughter Elizabeth: for the Lord Howard being returned out of Fraunce, certified the king of his owne knowledge, that he being present, saw the Lady Margaret of Austrich daughter to the duke Maximilian, sonne to the Emperor Frederike, receiued into France with great pompe and realtie, and at Ambois to the Dolphine contracted and espoused. King Edward highlie displeased with such double dealing of the French king, called his nobles together, and opened vnto them his griefes, who promised him for redresse thereof to be readie with all their powers, to make warres in France at his pleasure and appointment. But whilest he was busie in hande to make his purueiance for warres thus against France, whether it was of melancholie and anger which hee had taken with

with the French kinges doinges, or it were by anie superfluous surfet, to the which he was greatlie giuen, he sodainely fell sicke, and was so grieuouslie taken, that he ended his life, as it were euen sodainelie, at Westminster on the ninth daie of Aprill, the yeare of Christ 1483. at the age of 41. yeares, when hee had raigned 22. yeares, one moneth, and odde daies, and was buried at Windsore, where he had before prouided his resting place: for leauing the old chappel or colledge Church builded by king Henry the first, hee laid a newe foundation from the west end thereof, and builded the beautifull large newe chappell now frequented, almost to the rofe, which the Lord Reginald Bray (with some small helpe of the knights of the order) afterward finished. King Edward the fourth toke from the colledge of Eaton, and the kings colledge in Cambridge, which king Henry the 6. had founded (saieth sir Tho. Smith) almost 1000. pounds by yeare, and gaue to the colledge of Windsor: he with sumptuous buildings repaired the castles of Nottingham and Douer, the Tower of London, the house of Eltham, and builded at Westminster.

King Edward deceased.

T. Smith.

Philip de Comineus writeth of the death of this king in manner following: Philip Comineus. Haue we not seene (saieth he) the late king of England Edward the 4. heire of the house of Yorke, vtterly destroy the house of Lancaster, vnder the which both his father and he had liued many yeares? Further hee said, king Edwarde hauing done homage to king Henry the 6. being of the house of Lancaster, did he not afterward hold him prisoner many yeares in the tower of London, where in the end he was murthered? Haue we not seene also, ỹ earle of Warwike, principall gouernor of all the saide king Edwards offices (after he had put to death all his enimies, especiallie the duke of Somerset) in the end became deadlie enimy to the king his master, gaue his daughter in marriage to the Prince of Wales son to K. Henry, attempted to set vp again the house of Lācaster, passed with the said prince into England, discomfited in the field and slain, both he and his brethren, and kinsmen, and diuers noblemen of England, who in time past had done the like to their enimies? After all this the children of these, when the world turned, reuenged themselues, and caused in like maner the other to die: which plagues we may be assured hapned not, but by the wrath of God. For after king Edward was quiet in his realme, and receiued yeerelie out of France 50000. crownes paid him in the tower of London, and was grown so rich, that richer he could not be, he died sodainelie, as it were of melancholie, because of the French kings marriage with the lady Margaret the D. of Austriches daughter, for so soone as he was aduertised thereof he fell sicke, and began then to perceiue how he had beene abused, touching the marriage of his daughter, whome he caused to be called the Lady Dolphinesse. Then also was the pension which he had receiued out of France taken from him, which he called tribute, although indeede it were neither the one nor the other. Thus much out of Comineus concerning the death of Edward the fourth, who also affirmeth, that within his remembraunce in the Ciuill warres of Englande died aboue 80. persons of the Blood royall. King Edward left issue by Elizabeth his wife, two sons, Edward prince of Wales, and Richard duke of Yorke, and fiue daughters, to wit, Elizabeth that after was Q. married to king Henry the seuenth, Cicelie married to

viscount Wels, Briget a Nun at Dertford, Anne married to Th. Howard after earle of Surrey, and D. of Norfolke, Katherine wedded to William L. Courtney, son to the earle of Deuonshire; he had also one base sonne knowne to the world, by the name of Arthur, that was after viscount Lisle.

King Edward the fift.

Whose Historie was written by sir Thomas Moore, as followeth.

KIng Edward, of that name the fourth, after that he had liued fiftie and three yeres (it should bee fortie and one yeeres) seauen moneths, and fiue daies, and thereof raigned two and twentie yeres, one moneth, and eight daies, died at Westminster the ninth day of Aprill, the yer of our redemption a thousand foure hundred fourescore and three, leauing much faire issue, that is to witte, Edward the Prince, of thirteene yeres of age: Richard D. of Yorke, two yeres yonger: Elizabeth, whose fortune and grace was afterward to be quéene, wife vnto K. Henry the seuenth and mother vnto the eight; Cicely, not so fortunate as faire: Briget, which representing the vertue of her, whose name she bare, professed and obserued a religious life in Dertford, an house of close Nuns: Anne, that was after honourably married vnto Thomas then Lord Heyward, and after earle of Surrey: and Katherine, which long time tossed in either fortune, sometime in wealth, otte in aduersitie, at the last, if this be the last, for then she liued, is by the benignitie of her nephew king Henry the eight, in very prosperous estate, and worthie her birth and vertue. 1483

The loue of the people.

This noble Prince deceased at his palace of Westminster, and with great funerall honour and heauinesse of his people from thence conueyed, was enterred at Windsore. A king of such gouernance and behauiour, in time of peace (for in war ech part must néeds be others enemie) that there was neuer any Prince of this land, attaining the crowne by battell, so heartily beloued with the substance of the people: nor he himselfe so specially in any part of his life, as at the time of his death: Which fauor and affection, yet after his decease by the cruelitie, mischiefe, and trouble of the tempestuous world that followed, highly toward him more increased. At such time as he died, the displeasure of those that bare him grudge, for king Henries sake the first, whome he deposed, was well asswaged, and in effect quenched, in that, that many of them were dead in more than twenty yéres of his raigne, a great part of a long life: and many of them in the meane season growne into his fauour, of which he was neuer strange. He was a goodly personage, princely to behold, of heart courageous, politike in counsell, in aduersitie nothing abashed, in prosperitie rather

Description of Edward the fourth.

ioyfull

toyfull than prowd, in peace iuſt and mercifull, in warre ſharpe and fierce, in the field bold and hardy, and in the leſſe no further than wiſedome would, aduenturous, whoſe wars who ſo well conſider, hee ſhall no leſſe commend his wiſedome where he voyded, than his manhood where he vanquiſhed. He was of viſage louely, of bodie mightie, ſtrong, and cleane made: howbeit in his latter dates with ouer liberall diet, ſomewhat corpulent and bowely, and nathe-leſſe not vncomely: he was of youth greatly giuen to fleſhly wantonneſſe; from which, health of body in great proſperitie and fortune, without a ſpeciall grace hardly refraineth.

This fault not greatly grieued the people: for neither could any one mans pleaſure ſtretch and extend to the diſpleaſure of very many, and was without violence, and ouer that, in his latter dates leſſed and well left. In which time of his latter dates, this realm was in quiet and proſperous eſtate, no feare of outward enemies, no war in hand, nor none toward, but ſuch as no man loked for: the people toward the prince, not in a conſtrained feare, but in a willing and louing obedience: among themſelues, the commons in good peace. The lords whom he knew at variance, himſelfe in his death bed appeaſed: he had left all gathering of money (which is the only thing that withdraweth the harts of Engliſhmen from the Prince) nor any thing intended he to take in hand, by which he ſhould be driuen thereto: for his tribute out of France he had before Tribute. obtained: and the yeere foregoing his death, he had obtained Berwike. And albeit, that all ỹ time of his raigne he was with his people, ſo benigne, ſo courteous, and ſo familiar, that no part of his vertues was more eſteemed: yet the condition, in the end of his dates (in which many princes by a long continued ſouereignte, decline into a prowd port from debonaire behauiour of their beginning) marueilouſly in him grew and increaſed: ſo far forth, that in ſummer the laſt that euer he ſaw, his highneſſe being at Windſore in hunting, ſent for the maior and aldermen of London, to him for none other errand, but to haue them hunt and be merry with him, where he made them not ſo ſtately, but ſo friendly and ſo familiar cheare, and ſent veniſon from thence ſo freely into the city, that no one thing in many dates before, gat him either mo harts or more harty fauor amongſt the common people, which oftentimes more eſteeme and take for greater kindnes, a little courteſie, than a great benefit. So deceaſed (as I haue ſaid) this noble king, in ỹ time, in which his life was moſt deſired: whoſe loue of his people, and their entire affection toward him, had bin to his noble children, (hauing in themſelues alſo as many gifts of nature, as many princely vertues, as much goodly towardnes as their age could receiue) a marueilous fortreſſe and ſure armor, if diuiſion & diſſention of their friends had not vnarmed them, and left them deſtitute, and the execrable deſire of ſouereignty prouoked him to their deſtruction, which if either kind or kindneſſe had holden place, muſt needes haue beene their chiefe defence. For Richard the D. of Gloceſter, by nature their vncle, by office their protector, to their father beholden, to themſelues by othe and allegiance bounden, all bands broken that binden man and man together, without any reſpect of God or the world, vnnaturally conſpired to bereaue them, not only of their dignitie, but alſo their liues.

But forasmuch as this dukes demeanor ministreth in effect all the whole matter whereof this Booke shall entreat, it is therefore conuenient, somewhat to shew you ere we farther go, what maner of man this was, that could find in his heart so much mischiefe to conceiue.

Richarde duke of Yorke.

Richard duke of Yorke, a noble man and a mightie, began not by war, but by law to chalenge the crowne, putting his claime into ỹ parliament, where his cause was either for right or fauor so farre forth aduanced, that king Henry his blood (albeit he had a goodlie prince) vtterlie reiected, the crowne was by authoritie of parliament entailed to the duke of Yorke and his issue male in remainder, immediatlie after the death of king Henry. But the duke not enduring so long to tarrie, but intending vnder pretext of dissention and debate arising in the realme, to preuent his time, and to take vpon him the rule in king Henry his life, was with manie nobles of the realme at Wakefield slaine, leauing 3. sonnes, Edward, George, and Richard. All three as they were great States of birth, so were they great and fatelie of stomacke, greedy and ambitious of authoritie, and impatient of partners: Edward reuenging his fathers death, depriued king Henry, and attained the crowne: George duke of Clarence, was a goodlie noble Prince, and at all points fortunate, if either his owne ambition had not set him against his brother, or the enuie of his enimies his brother against him. For were it by the queene and lords of her blood which highly maligned the kings kinred (as women commonly not of malice, but of nature hate them whome their husbands loue) or were it a proud appetite of the Duke himselfe, intending to be king: at least wise heinous treason was there laide to his charge, and finallie, were he faulty, were he faultles, attainted was he by parliament, and iudged to death, and thereupon hastily drowned in a But of malmsey, whose death K. Edward (albeit he commanded it) when he wist it was done, pitiously bewailed, and sorrowfully repented.

Edward.

George duke of Clarence.

The description of Richarde the third.

Richard the 3. son, of whome we now intreat, was in wit and courage egall with either of them, in body and prowesse far vnder them both, little of stature, ill featured of lims, croke backed, his left shoulder much higher than his right, hard fauoured of visage, and such as is in states called warrely, in othermen otherwise: he was malicious, wrathfull, enuious, and from afore his birth euer froward. It is for trueth reported, that the dutchesse his mother had so much ado in her trauell, that she could not bee deliuered of him vncut, and that hee came into the world with the feete forwarde, as men bee borne outwarde, and (as the fame runneth) also not vntothed, whether men of hatred report aboue the trueth, or else that nature chaunged her course in his beginning, which in the course of his life many thinges vnnaturallie committed. No coill Captaine was he in the war, as to which his disposition was more meetly, than for peace: sundry victories had he, and sometimes ouerthrowes, but neuer in default as for his owne person, either of hardinesse or politike order: free was hee called of dispence, and somewhat aboue his power liberall: with large giftes he gat him vnstedfast friendshippe, for which hee was fayne to pill and spoyle in other places, and gette him stedfaste hatred. He was close and secrete, a deepe dissembler, lowly of countenance, arrogant of heart, outwardly coumpinable

where

where he inwardly hated, not letting to kille whom he thought to kill: dispiteous and cruel, not for euill will alway, but often for ambition, and either for the surety or increase of his estate. Friend and foe was much what indifferent, where his aduantage grew: he spared no mans death, whose life withstode his purpose. He slew with his owne hands king Henry the sixt, being prisoner in the tower, as men constantly said, and that without commandement or knowledge of the K. which would vndoubtedly, if he had intended that thing, haue appointed that butcherly office to some other, than his owne borne brother. The death of king Henry the sixte.

Some wise men also weene, that his drift couertly conueyed, lacked not in helping forth his brother of Clarence to his death: which he resisted openly, howbeit somewhat (as men deemed) more faintly, than he that were heartily minded to his wealth. And they that thus deeme, thinke that hee long time in K. Edwards life, forethought to be king, in case that the king his brother (whose life he loked that euill died should shorten) should happen to decease (as indeed he did) while his children were yong. And they deeme, that for this intent hee was glad of his brothers death the duke of Clarence, whose life must needes haue hindered him so intending, whether the same duke of Clarence had kept him true to his nephew the yong king, or enterprised to be king himselfe. But of all this point, is there no certainty, & who so diuineth vpon coniectures, may as well shote too far as too short. Howbeit this haue I by credible information learned, that the selfe night in which K. Edward died, one Mistlebrooke long ere morning, came in great haste to the house of one Pottier dwelling in red Crosse streete without Cripplegate in London: and when he was with hastie rapping quickly letten in, he shewed vnto Pottier that king Edward was departed. By my truth man, quoth Pottier, then will my master the duke of Gloucester be king. What cause he had so to thinke hard it is to say, whether he being toward him, any thing knew that he had such thing purposed, or otherwise had any inkling thereof: for he was not likely to speake it of nought. Reports vncertaine as spoken of hate, or affection.

But now to returne to the course of this history. Were it that the Duke of Gloucester had of old fore-minded this conclusion, and was now at erst thereunto moued, and put in hope by ỹ occasion of the tender age of the yong princes his nephews (as opportunity and likelihood of speede, putteth a man in courage of that he neuer intended) certaine it is, that he contriued their destruction, with the vsurpation of the regall dignity vpon himselfe. And forasmuch as, he well wist, and holpe to maintaine a long continued grudge & hart-burning betweene the queens kinred, and the kings bloud, either party enuying others authority, he now thought their diuision should be (as it was indeed) a further ly beginning to the pursute of his intent, and a sure ground for the foundation of all his building, if he might first, vnder the pretext of reuenging old displeasure, abuse the anger and ignorance of the one partie, to the destruction of the other, and then winne to his purpose as many as hee could, and those that could not be won, might be lost ere they loked therefore: for of one thing was he certaine, that if his intent were perceiued, he should some haue made peace betweene both the parties with his owne bloud.

King Edwarde in his life, albeit that this dissention betweene his frendes

somewhat irked him: yet in his good health he somewhat the lesse regarded it, because he thought whatsoeuer busines should fall betweene them, himselfe should alway be able to rule both the parties. But in his last sickenes, when he perceiued his natural strength so sore enfeebled, that he despaired al recouery, then he considering the youth of his children, albeit he nothing lesse mistrusted than that that happened; yet wel foreseeing that many harmes might grow by their debate, while the youth of his children should lacke discretion of themselues, and good counsell of their friends, of which either party should counsell for their owne commoditie, and rather by pleasant aduise to win themselues fauour, than by profitable aduertisement to do his children good, he called some of them before him that were at variance, and in especiall the Lord Marques Dorset, the quenes son by her first husband, & William the lord Hastings a noble man then lord Chamberlaine, against whom the quéene specially grudged, for the great fauour the king bare him: and also for that she thought him secretly familiar with the king in wanton company. Her kinred also bare him sore, as well for that the king had made him captaine of Caleis, which office the Lord Riuers brother to the quéene claimed of the kings former promise, as for diuers other great gifts which he receiued, that they loked for. When these lords with diuers of both the parties were come in presence, the K. sitting vp himselfe and vnderset with pillowes, as it is reported, on this wise saide vnto them:

The oration of the king in his death bed.

My lords, my déere kinsmen and allies, in what plight I lie, you see, and I féele. By which, the lesse while I loke to liue with you, the more déepely am I moued to care in what case I leaue you, for such as I leaue you, such bee my children like to find you. Which if they should (that God forbid) find you at variance, might hap to fall themselues at war, ere their discretion would serue to set you at peace; yee see their youth, of which I reckon the onely suretie to rest in your concord: For it sufficeth not, that all you loue them, if each of you hate other. If they were men, your faithfulnes happily would suffice: but childhood must be maintained by mens authority, & slipper youth vnderpropped with elder counsell, which neither they can haue, but ye giue it; nor ye giue it, if ye græe not. For where ech laboreth to breake that the other maketh, & for hatred of ech of others person, impugneth ech others counsell, there must it néedes be long ere any good conclusion go forward. And also while either party laboreth to be chiefe, flatterie shall haue more place than plaine and faithfull aduise, of which must néeds insue the euill bringing vp of the prince, whose mind in tender youth infect, shal readily fal to mischiefe & riot, and draw down with his noble realme to ruine: but if grace turne him to wisedome, which if God send, then they that by euill meanes before pleased him best, shall after fall furthest out of fauor, so that euer at length euill drifts draw to nought, and good plaine waies prosper. Great variance hath there long bin betwéen you, not alway for great causes: sometime a thing right wel intended, our misconstruction turneth vnto worse, or a smal displeasure don vs, either our own affection or euill tongs agriueth. But this wot I well, yée neuer had so great cause of hatred, as yée haue of loue: What we be all men, that we be christian men, this shall I leaue for preachers to tell you (& yet I wot nére whether any preachers wordes ought

more

more to moue you, than his that is by and by going to the place that they all preach of.) But this shal I desire you to remember, that the one part of you is of my bloud, the other of mine alies, & ech of you with other either of kinred or affinity, which spirituall kinred of affinitie, if the sacraments of Christs church beare that weight with vs, that would god they did, should no lesse moue vs to charity, than the respect of fleshly consanguinity. Our Lord forbid, that you loue togither the worse for the selfe cause that you ought to loue the better: and yet that happeth, and no where find we so deadly debate, as among them, which by nature & law most ought to agree togither. Such a pestilent serpent is ambition, and desire of vainglorie and soueraignty, which among states where he once entreth, creepeth forth so far, till with diuision and variance hee turneth all to mischiefe, first longing to be next the best, afterward equall with the best, and at last chiefe and aboue the best. Of which immoderate appetite of worship, and thereby of debate & dissention, what losse, what sorrow, what trouble hath within these few yeres growen in this realme, I pray God as well forget, as we wel remember. Which things if I could as wel haue foreseen, as I haue with my more paine than pleasure proued, by Gods blessed lady (that was euer his othe) I would neuer haue won the courtesie of mens knees, with the losse of so many heads. But sith things passed cannot be gainecalled, much ought we the more beware, by what occasion we haue taken so great hurt afore, that we ensuing fall not in that occasion againe. Now be those griefes passed, and all is (God be thanked) quiet, and likely right well to prosper in wealthfull peace vnder your cousins my children, if God send them life, and you loue. Of which two things, the lesse losse were they, by whom though God did his pleasure, yet should the realme alway finde kings, and peraduenture as good kings: but if you among your selues in a childes raign fall at debate, many a good man shal perish, and happily we too, and ye too, ere this land find peace againe. Wherfore in these last words that euer I loke to speake with you, I exhort you and require you all, for the loue that you haue euer borne to me: for the loue that I haue euer borne vnto you: for the loue that our lord beareth to vs all, from this time forward all griefes forgotten, ech of you loue other. Which I verely trust you will, if ye any thing earthly regard, either God or your king, affinitie or kinred, this realme your owne countrey, or your owne suretie. And therwithall the king no longer induring to sit vp, laid him downe on his right side, his face toward them: and none was there present that could refraine from weeping. But the Lords recomforting him with as good words as they could, and answering for the time as they thought to stand with his pleasure, there in his presence, as by their words appeared, ech forgaue other, and ioyned their hands togither, when (as it after appeared by their deedes) their harts were far asunder. As sone as the king was departed, the noble prince his sonne drew toward London, which at the time of his decease kept his household at Ludlowe in Wales, which countrey being far off from the law and recourse to iustice, was begun to be far out of good will, and waren wilde robbers and reuers, walking at liberty vncorrected.

Ambition.

And for this encheason the prince was in the life of his father sent thither,

to the end that the authoritie of his presence, should refraine euill disposed persons fro the boldnes of their former outrages. To the gouernance and ordering of this yong Prince at his sending thither, was there appointed sir Anthonie Wooduile Lorde Riuers, and brother vnto the Quéene, a right honorable man, as valiant of hand, as politike in counsell. Adioined were there vnto him other of the same partie, and in effect euerie one as he was nérest of kinne vnto the Quéene, so was planted next about the Prince.

Lord Riuers.

That drift by the Quéene not vnwiselie deuised, whereby her blod might of youth be rooted in the princes fauour, the duke of Gloucester turned vnto their destruction, and vpon that grounde set the foundation of all his vnhappie building. For whomesoeuer he perceiued either at variance with them, or bearing himselfe their fauor, he brake vnto thē, some by mouth, some by writing & secret messengers, that it was neither reason, nor in anie wise to bee suffered, that the yong king their maister and kinsman, should be in the hands and custody of his mothers kinred, sequestred in maner from their company and attendāce, of which euerie one ought him as faythfull seruice as they, and manie of them far more honorable part of kin then his mothers side. Whole blod (quoth he) sauing the kings pleasure, was full vnmetely to be matched with his: which now to be as who saie remoued from the king, and the lesse noble to bee left about him, is (quoth he) neither honorable to his maiestie, nor vnto vs, and also to his grace no suretie, to haue the mightiest of his friends from him, and vnto vs no little ieopardie, to suffer our well proued euill willers to growe in ouer great authority with the prince in youth, namely which is light of beléefe & soone perswaded. Yée remember I trow king Edwarde himselfe, albeit hee was a man of age and discretion, yet was he in many things ruled by the lend, more then stood either with his honour, or our profit, or with the commoditie of anie man els, except only the immoderat aduancement of themselues. Which whether they sorer thirsted after their owne weale, or our woe, it were hard I wéene to gesse. And if some folks friendship had not holden better place with the king, then anie respect of kinred, they might peraduenture easilie haue betrapped and brought to confusion some of vs ere this. Why not as easily as they haue done some other alreadie, as nére of his royall blod as wee? But our Lorde hath wrought his will, and thanks be to his grace that perill is past. Howbeit as great is growing, if we suffer this yong king in our enimies hande, which without his witting might abuse the name of his commandement, to anie of our vndoing, which thing God and good prouision forbid.

Of which good prouision none of vs hath anie thing the lesse néede, for the late made attonement, in which the kings pleasure had more place then the parties wils: nor none of vs, I beléeue, is so vnwise ouer soone to trust a new friende made of an old foe, or to thinke ỹ an howerly kindnes, suddenly contract in one howre, continued yet scant a fortnight, should be déper setled in their stomacks, then a long accustomed malice manie yéres rooted. With these woordes and writings and such other, the duke of Gloucester soone set a fire them that were of themselues eath to kindle, and in especiall twaine, Edwarde Duke of Buckingham, and William lord Hastings and chamberlaine, both men of honor and

of

of great power: The tone by long succession from his ancestry; the other by his office, and the kings fauor.

These two not bearing each to other so much loue, as hatred both vnto the Quenes part, in this point accorded together with the duke of Glocester, that they would vtterly amoue from the kings company all his mothers friendes, vnder the name of their enimies.

Upon this concluded, the duke of Glocester vnderstanding that the Lords which at that time were about the king, intended to bring him vp to his coronation, accompanied with such power of their frends, that it should be harde for him to bring his purpose to passe, without the gathering a great assemble of people, and in maner of open war, whereof the end hee will was doubtfull, and in which the king being on their side, his parte should haue the face and name of a rebellion: he secretlie therefore by diuers meanes caused the quene to be perswaded and brought in the minde, that it neither were nede, and also should be ieopardous, the king to come vp strong. For whereas nowe euerie Lord loued other, and none other thing studied vpon, but about the coronation and honor of the King; if the Lords of her kinred should assemble in the kings name much people, they shoulde giue the Lordes atwirt whome and them had bene sometime debate, to feare and suspect, least they should gather this people not for the kings safegarde, whome no man impugned, but for their destruction, hauing more regarde to their old variance, then their new attonement: for which cause they shoulde assemble on the other partie much people againe for their defence, whose power thee will well farre stretched. And thus shoulde all the Realme fall on a rore. And of all the hurt that thereof should ensue, which was likely not to be little, and the most harme there like to fall where the least would, all the world woulde put her and her kinred in the wight, and saye that they had vnwiselie and vntruly also broken the amitie and peace, that the king her husband so prudently made betweene his kin and hirs in his death bed, and which the other party faithfully obserued.

The Quene being in this wise perswaded, such worde sent vnto her sonne, and vnto her brother, being about the king, and ouer that the Duke of Glocester himselfe and other Lords the chefe of his bende, wrote vnto the king so reuerentlie, and to the quenes friends there so louinglie, that they nothing earthlie mistrusting, brought the king vp in a great haste, not in good spede, with a sober companie. Now was the king in his waie to London gone from Northampton, when the dukes of Glocester and Buckingham came thither, where remained behind the Lord Riuers the kings vncle, intending on the morowe to follow the king, and be with him at Stony Stratford, twelue miles thence, early ere he departed. So was there made that night much friendly chere betweene these two dukes and the lord Riuers a greate while: But incontinent after that they were openlie with great curtesie departed and the Lord Riuers lodged, the dukes secretlie with a fewe of their most priuie friendes, sette them downe in Councell, wherein they spent a great part of the night: and at their rising in the dawning of the daie, they sent out priuilie to their seruants in their Innes and Lodginges about, giuing them commaundemente, to make themselues

shortly

shortly readie, for their Lords were to horse backe warde. Upon which messages, manie of their folke were attendant, when manie of the Lorde Riuers seruants were vnreadie. Nowe had these Dukes taken also into their custodie the keies of the Inne, that none should passe forth without their licence: And ouer this, in the high waie toward Stonie Stratford where the king laie, they had bestowed certaine of their folke, that should send backe againe, and compell to returne anie man that were gotten out of Northampton towarde Stonie Stratforde, till they shoulde giue other licence: For as much as the dukes themselues intended for the shew of their diligence, to bee the first that should that day attend vpon the kings highnes out of that Towne: thus bare they folke in hand. But when the Lorde Riuers vnderstood the gates closed, and the waies on euery side beset, neither his seruants nor himselfe suffered to go out, perceiuing well so great a thing without his knowledge not begunne for naught, comparing this maner present, with his last nightes cheere, in so fewe houres so great a change, maruellouslie misliked. Howbeit, sith hee coulde not get awaie, and kepe himselfe close he would not, least hee should seeme to hide himselfe for some secret feare of his owne fault, whereof he sawe no such cause in himselfe: he determined vpon the suretie of his owne conscience, to go boldly to them, and inquire what this matter might meane: whom as soone as they saw, they began to quarrell with him, and say, that he intended to set distance betweene the king & them, and to bring them to confusion, but it shoulde not lie in his power. And when he began (as he was a very wel spoken man) in goodly wise to excuse himselfe, they tarried not the ende of his answeare, but shortlie take him, and put him in ward: and that done, forthwith went to horsebacke, and take the waie to Stonie Stratforde, where they founde the king with his company, ready to leape on horsebacke, and depart forwarde to leaue that lodging for them, because it was too streight for both companies. And as soone as they came in his presence, they alight downe with all their companie about them: To whome the duke of Buckingham said, go afore gentlemen, and yeomen kepe your romes.

The Lord Riuers put in ward.

And thus in goodlie arraie they came to the king, and on their knees in verie humble wise saluted his grace, which receiued them in very iolous and amiable maner, nothing eathly knowing nor mistrusting as yet: But euen by & by in his presence they picked a quarrell to the Lorde Richard Grey, the kings other brother by his mother, saying, that he with the Lord Marques his brother, and the Lord Riuers his vncle had compassed to rule the king and the realme, and to set variance among the states, and to subdue and destroy the noble blood of the realme: Toward the accomplishing whereof, they said that the Lord Marques had entred into the tower of London, and thence taken out the kings treasure, and sent men to the Sea.

The lord Gray.

All which thinges these dukes well wist were done for good purposes and necessarie, by the whole councell at London, sauing that somewhat they must say. Vnto which words the king answered: What my brother Marques hath done I cannot say: but in good faith I dare well aunswere for mine vncle Riuers and my brother heere, that they bee innocent of any such matter. Yea my Liege, quoth

quoth the duke of Buckingham, they haue kept their dealing in these matters farre from the knowledge of your good grace. And forthwith they arrested the Lorde Richarde and Sir Thomas Vaughan knight in the kinges presence, and brought the king and all backe vnto Northampton, where they tooke againe further counsell: And there they sent awaie from the king whome it pleased them, and set new seruants about him, such as liked better them then him: at which dealing he wept, and was nothing content, but it boted not. And at dinner, the duke of Gloucester sent a dish from his owne table to the Lorde Riuers, praying him to be of good chéere, all should be well enough: and he thanked the duke, and praied the messenger to beare it to his nephew the L. Richard, with the same message for his comfort, as one to whom such aduersitie was strange, but himselfe had béene all his daies in vre therewith, and therefore could beare it the better. But for all this comfortable curtesie of the duke of Gloucester, he sent the Lord Riuers and the Lord Richard, with Sir Thomas Vaughan, into the North country, into diuers places to prison, and afterwarde all to Pontfract, where they were in conclusion beheaded. The death of the Lord Riuers and others.

In this wise the duke of Gloucester tooke vpon him selfe the order and gouernance of the yong king, whome with much honor and humble reuerence hee conueied vpward toward the citie. But anone the tidings of this matter came hastily to the Quéene a little before the midnight following, and that in the forest wise, that the king her son was taken, her brother, her sonne, and other friends arrested, and sent no man wist whither, to be don with, God wot what. With which tidings, the Quéene in great fright and heauines bewailing her childes raigne, her friendes mischance, and her owne infortune, damning the time that euer she dissuaded the gathering of power about the king, gate her selfe in all the hast possible with her yonger son and her daughters, out of the palace of Westminster, in which she then lay, into the sanctuarie, lodging her selfe and her company there in the abbots place. The Quéene taketh sanctuarie.

Now came there one likewise not long after midnight from the lord Chamberlaine, vnto the Archbyshop of Yorke then Chancellor of Englande, to his place not far from Westminster: And for that he shewed his seruants that he had tidings of so great importance, that his master gaue him in charge, not to forbeare his rest, they letted not to wake him, nor he to admit this messenger vnto his bed side. Of whome he heard that these dukes were gone backe with the kings grace from Stony Stratford vnto Northampton: Notwithstanding sir (quoth he) my Lord sendeth your Lordship word, that there is no feare, for he assureth you that all shall be well. I assure him, quoth the Archbishop, bee it as well as it will, it will neuer bee so well as we haue séene it: and thereupon by and by after the messenger departed; he caused in all the hast all his seruants to be called vppe, and so with his owne houshold about him, and euerie man weaponed, he tooke the great seale with him, and came yet before daie vnto the Quéene. About whome he found much heauinesse, rumble, haste, and businesse, carriage and conueiance of her stuffe into sanctuarie, chests, coffers, packs, fardels, trussed all on mens backs, no man vnoccupied, some lading, some going, some discharging, some comming for more, some breaking downe the wals to

bring

bring in the next way, and some yet drewe to them to helpe to carry a wrong way.

The Quéene her selfe sate alone alowe on the rushes all desolate and dismaied, whome the archbishop comforted in the best manner he could, shewing her that he trusted the matter was nothing so sore as she toke it for, and that he was put in good hope and out of feare by the message sent him from the lord Chamberlaine: Ah wo worth him (quoth she) for he is one of them that labowreth to destroy me and my blood.

Madam (quoth he) be yée of good chéere, for I assure you, if they crowne any other king than your sonne, whom they now haue with them, we shall on the morrow crowne his brother whom you haue héere with you. And héere is the great seale, which in like wise as that noble prince your husband deliuered it vnto me, so here I deliuer it vnto you, to the vse and behoofe of your sonne, and therewith he betoke her the great seale, and departed home againe, yet in the dawning of the day. By which time, he might in his chamber window sée all the Thamis full of boates of the duke of Glocesters seruants, watching that no man should go to sanctuary, nor none could passe vnsearched: Then was there great commotion and murmur, as well in other places about, as specially in the citie, the people diuerslie diuining vpon this dealing. And some lords, knights, and gentlemen, either for fauor of the Quéene, or for feare of themselues, assembled in sundry companies, and went flockemeale in harnesse: and many also, for that they reckoned this demeanor attempted, not so specially against the other lords, as against the king himselfe in ỹ disturbance of his coronation. But then by and by the lordes assembled together, toward which méeting, the archbishop of Yorke fearing that it would be ascribed (as it was indéede) to his ouermuch lightnes, that he so sodainly had yélded vp the great seale to the Quéene, to whome the custodie thereof nothing pertained, without speciall commandement of the king, secretly sent for the seale againe, and brought it with him after the customable maner. And at this méeting, the Lorde Hastings, whose truth toward the king, no man doubted nor néeded to doubt, perswaded the lords to beléeue, that the duke of Glocester was sure and faithfully faithfull to his prince, and that the lord Riuers and lord Richard, with the other knights, were for matters attempted by them against ỹ dukes of Glocester and Buckingham, put vnder arrest for their surety, not for the kings ieopardy: and that they were also in safeward, ỹ there no longer should remaine than till the matter were, not by the dukes only, but also by all the other lords of the kings councell indifferently examined, and by other discretions ordered, and either iudged or appeased.

But one thing he aduised them beware, that they iudged not the matter too far forth ere they knew the truth, nor turning their priuate grudges into the common hurt, irking & prouoking men vnto anger, and disturbing the kings coronation, toward which the dukes were comming vp, that they might peraduenture bring the matter so far out of ioint, that it should neuer be brought in frame againe. Which strife if it should happen, as it were likely, to come to a fielde, though both parties were in all things equall, yet should the authority

be

be on that side where the king is himselfe. With these perswasions of the lord Hastings, whereof part himselfe beléeued, of part hee wist the contrarie, these commotions were somewhat appeased, but specially by that, that the dukes of Glocester and Buckingham were so néere, and came so shortly on with the king, in none other maner, with none other voice or semblance than to his coronation, causing the same to be blowen about, that these lords and knightes which were taken, had contriued the destruction of the dukes of Glocester and Buckingham, and of other the noble blood of the realme, to the end that themselues would alone demeane and gouerne the king at their pleasure.

And for the colourable proofe thereof, such of the dukes seruants as rode with the carts of their stuffe that were taken (among which stuffe no maruel though some were harnesse, which at the breaking vp of the houshold, must nèds either be brought away, or cast away) they shewed vnto the people all the waies as they went: Lo here bee the barrels of harnesse that these traitors had priuily conueied in their carriage to destroy the noble lords withall.

This deuice, albeit that it made the matter to wise men more vnlikely, well perceiuing that the intenders of such a purpose woulde rather haue had their harnesse on their backs, than to haue bound them vp in barrels: yet much part of the common people were therwith very wel satisfied, and said it were almes to hang them.

When the king approched nére to the city, Edmond Shaa Goldsmith then Maior, with William White and Iohn Matthew Sheriffes, and all the other Aldermen in scarlet, with 500. horse of the citizens in violet, receiued him reuerently at Harnsey, and riding from thence, accompanied him into the citie, which he entred the fourth day of May, the first and last yéere of his raigne. The kings coming to London

The king was lodged in the Bishops palace, where was kept a great councell, and there was sworne to the king, the duke of Glocester, the duke of Buckingham, and all the lords.

But the duke of Glocester bare him in open sight so reuerently to the prince, with all semblance of lowlines, that from the great obloquie in which he was so late before, hee was suddenly fallen in so great trust, that at the councell next assembled, he was made the onely man, chose and thought most méete to be protector of the king and his realme, so that (were it destiny, or were it folly) the lambe was betaken to the woolfe to kéepe. At which councell also, the Archbishop of Yorke Chancellor of England, which had deliuered vp the great seale to the Quéene, was thereof greatly reproued, and the seale taken from him, and deliuered to doctor Russell bishop of Lincolne, a wise man and a good, and of much experience, and one of the best learned men vndoubtedly that England had in his time. Diuers lords and knights were appointed vnto diuers rowmes. The Lorde Chamberlaine and some other kept still their offices that they had before. The protector made. The bishop of Lincolne made lord Chancellor.

Now all were it, so that the protector so forthirled for the finishing of that he had begun, that thought euery day a yeare till it were atchieued, yet durst he no further attempt, as long as he had but halfe his pray in his hand: wel witting, that if he deposed the one brother, all the realme would fall to the other, if he

he either remained in sanctuarie, or should happilie be shortlie conueied to his farther libertie. Wherefore, incontinent at the next meeting of the Lords at the councell, he proposed vnto them, that it was a hainous déed of the Queene, and proceeding of great malice toward the kings Councellers, that she should kéepe in Sanctuarie the kinges brother from him, whose speciall pleasure and comforte were to haue his brother with him. And that by her done to none other intent, but to bring all the Lordes in obloquie, and murmure of the people: as though they were not to be trusted with the kings brother, that by the assent of the nobles of the land, were appointed as the kings nerest friends, to the tuition of his owne roiall person. The prosperity whereof standeth (quoth he) not all in kéeping from enimies, or ill viand, but partlie also in recreation, and moderate pleasure, which he cannot in his tender youth take in the companis of ancient persons, but in the familiar conuersation of those that be neither far vnder, nor far aboue his age, nay the lesse of estate conuenient to accompanie his noble maiestie, wherefore, with whome rather, then with his owne brother? And if ante man thinke this consideration (which I thinke no man thinketh that loueth the king) let him consider, that somtime without small things, greater cannot stand. And verily, it redoundeth greatly to the dishonor both of the kings highnes, and of all vs that béene about his grace, to haue it run in euerie mans mouth, not in this Realme onelie, but also in other lands (as euill words walke far) that the kings brother should be faine to kéepe sanctuary. For euery man will weene, that no man will so do for nought. And such euill opinion once fastened in mens harts, hard it is to wrest out, and many grow to more griefe then any man can here diuine: wherefore me thinketh it were not worst to send vnto the Queene for the redresse of this matter, some honorable trustie man, such as both tendereth the kings weale, and the honor of his councell, and is also in fauour and credence with her. For all which considerations, none séemeth me more mételie, then our reuerende father heere present, my Lorde Cardinall, who may in this matter do most good of ante man, if it please him to take the paine, which I doubt not of his goodnesse hee will not refuse for the kings sake and ours, and wealth of the young duke himselfe, the kings most honorable brother, and after my soueraigne Lorde himselfe, my most déere Nephew, considered that thereby shall be ceased the slanderous rumour and obliquie now going, and the hurts auoided that thereof might ensue, and much rest and quiet growe to all the realme. And if she be percase so obstinate, and so precisely set vpon her owne will, that neither his wise & faithful aduertisement cannot moue her, nor any mans reason content her: then shall we by mine aduise, by the kings authoritie, fetch him out of that prison, and bring him to his noble presence, in whose continuall companie he shall be so well cherished, & so honorably intreated, that all the world shall to our honor and her reproch perceiue, that it was only malice, frowardnes, or folly that caused her to kéepe him there: this is my mind in this matter for this time, except ante of your Lordshippes ante thing perceiue to the contrary, for neuer shall I by GOD'S grace so wed my selfe to mine owne will, but that I shall be ready to chaunge it vpon your better aduises.

The Protectors Oration.

When

When the protector had said, all the Councell affirmed, that the motion was good and reasonable, and to the king and the Duke his brother, honorable, and a thing that should cease great murmure in the Realme, if the mother might be by good meanes induced to deliuer him. Which thing the Archbishoppe of Yorke, whome they all agréed also to bee thereto most conuenient, toke vpon him to moue her, and therein to doo his vttermost deuoire. Howbeit, if shee could be in no wise intreated with her good will to deliuer him, then thought he and such other as were of the spiritualty present, that it were not in any wise to be attempted to take him out against her will. For it woulde bee a thing that should turne to the great grudge of all men, and high displeasure of God, if the priuiledge of that holy place should now be broken, which had so many yeares béene kept, which both kings and popes so good had granted, so manie had confirmed, and which holy ground was more then 500. yéares agoe by S. Peter in his own person in spirit accompanied with great multitude of angels by night so specially hallowed, and dedicate to God (for the proofe whereof, they haue yet in the abbey, Saint Peters Cope to shew) that from that time hitherward, was there neuer so vndenout a king, that durst that sacred place violate, or so holie a bishop, that durst it presume to consecrate. And therefore (quoth the Archbyshop of Yorke) god forbid that any man should for any thing earthly enterprise to breake the immunitie and liberty of the sacred sanctuarie, that hath béene the safegard of so many a good mans life. And I trust (quoth he) with Gods grace, we shall not nede it. But for any maner néd, I would not we should doo it. I trust that she shall be with reason contented, and all thinges in good maner obtained. And if it happē that I bring it not so to passe, yet shall I toward it so far forth do my best, that ye shall all well perceiue, that no lacke of my deuoire, but the mothers dread and womanish feare, shall be the let. Womanish feare, naie womanish frowardnes (quoth the D. of Buckingham) for I dare take it vpon my soule, she well knoweth she nedeth no such thing to feare, either for her son or for hir selfe. For as for hir, here is no man that will bee at war with women. Would God som of the men of hir kin were women too, and then should all be sone in rest. Howbeit there is none of hir kinne the lesse loued, for that they be hir kin, but for their owne euill deseruing. And natheles, if wee loued neither hir nor hir kin, yet were there no cause to thinke that we should hate the Kings noble brother, to whose grace we our selues be of kin: whose honour, if shee as much desired, as our dishonor, & as much regard toke to his wealth, as to her owne will, she would bee as loth to suffer him from the King as ante of vs bee. For if she haue wit (as would God she had as good will as she hath shrewd wit) shee reckoneth herselfe no wiser, then she thinketh some that bee heere, of whose faithfull mind she nothing doubteth, but verily beléeueth and knoweth, that they would be as sory of his harme, as hir selfe, & yet would haue him from her, if she bide there: and we al (I thinke) content, that both be with hir, if she come thence, and bide in such place, where they may with their honor be.

Sanctuary.

Now then, if she refuse in the deliuerance of him, to follow the counsaile of them, whose wisedome shee knoweth, whose truth shee well trusteth: it is eathe to perceiue, that frowardnes letteth her, and not feare. But go to, suppose that she

the feare (as who may let her to feare her owne shadowe) the more shee feareth to deliuer him, the more ought we feare to leaue him in her hands. For if she cast such fond doubts, that she feare his hurt: then will she feare, that he shall be fetcht thence. For she will some thinke, that if men were set (which god forbid) vpon so great a mischiefe, the Sanctuarie would little let them: which good men might (as me thinketh) without sinne, somewhat lesse regard than they doe.

Now then, if she doubt, least he might be fetched from her, is it not likelie ynough that she shall send him some where out of the Realme? Verily, I looke for none other. And I doubt not, but she now as fore mindeth it, as we the let therof. And if she might happen to bring that to passe, (as it were no great maistrie, we letting her alone) all the worlde would say, that we were a wise sort of Counsailours about a king, that let his brother be cast awaie vnder our noses. And therefore, I ensure you faithfully for my mind, I will rather maugre her minde, fetch him awaie, than leaue him there, till her frowardnesse and fonde feare conueie him awaie. And yet will I breake no Sanctuarie therefore. For verely, such the priuiledges of that place and other like haue béene of long continued, I am not he that would be about to breake them. And in good faith, if they were now to begin, I would not be he that should bee about to make them.

Yet will I not saie naie, but that it is a déede of pittie, that such men as the sea, or their euill debtours haue brought in pouertie, should haue some place of libertie, to kéepe their bodies out of the daunger of their cruell creditours.

And also, if the crowne happen (as it hath done) to come in question while either part taketh other as traitors, I will well there be some places of refuge for both.

But as for théeues, of which these places be full, and which neuer fall from the cracke, after they once fall thereto, it is pittie the Sanctuarie should serue them: And much more, manquellers, whome God bad to take from the Altar and kill them, if their murther were wilfull. And where it is otherwise, there néede wee not the Sanctuaries that God appointed in the olde lawe. For if either necessitie, his owne defence, or misfortune draweth him to that déede, a pardon serueth, which either the law granteth of course, or the king of pitie maie.

Then loke me now how few Sanctuarie men there be, whom anie fauourable necessitie compelled to go thither: and then sée on the other side, what a sort there be commonly therein of them, whom wilfull vnthriftinesse hath brought to naught.

Westminster and Saint Martins.

What a rabble of théeues, murtherers, and malicious haynous traitors, and that in two places specially? The tone at the elbow of the citie, the tother in the verie bowels. I dare well auow it, weye the good that they doe, with the hurt that commeth of them, and ye shall finde it much better to lacke both, than haue both. And this I saie, although they were not abused as they now be, and so long haue béene, that I feare me euer they will be, while men be afraid to set

their

their hands to the mendment, as though God and S. Peter were the patrons of vngratious liuing.

Now vnthrifties riot, and run in debt, vpon the boldnes of these places, yea, and rich men run thither with poore mens goods, there they builde, there they spend, and bid their creditours go whistle them. The abuse of Sanctuaries.

Wyues run thither with their husbands plate, and saie, they dare not abide with their husbands for beating.

Theeues bring thither their stollen goods, and there liue thereon.

There deuise they newe robberies, nightly they steale out, they robbe, and reaue, and kill, and come in againe, as though those places gaue them not only a safegard for the harme they haue done, but a licence also to do more. Howbeit, much of this mischiefe, if wise men would set their handes to it, might be amended, with great thanks of God, and no breach of the priuiledge.

The residue, sith so long ago I wot neare what pope, and what prince more piteous than politike, hath granted it, and other men since, of a certaine religious feare, haue not broken it, let vs take a paine therwith, and let it a gods name stande in force, as farre forth as reason will, which is not fully so farre forth, as may serue to let vs of the fetching forth of this noble man, to his honour and wealth, out of that place, in which he neither is, nor can be a Sanctuarie man.

A Sanctuarie serueth alway to defend the body of that man that standeth in danger abroad, not of great hurt onely, but also of lawfull hurt, for against vnlawfull harmes, neuer pope nor king intended to priuiledge any one place, for that priuiledge hath euerie place: knoweth any man, any place wherein it is lawfull one man to do another wrong?

That no man vnlawfully take hurt, that libertie, the king, the law, and verie nature, forbiddeth in euerie place, and maketh to that regarde, for euerie man euerie place a Sanctuarie.

But where a man is by lawfull meanes in perill, there néedeth he the tuition of some speciall priuiledge, which is the onely ground and cause of all Sanctuaries: from which necessitie, this noble Prince is farre, whose loue to his king, nature and kinred prooueth, whose innocencie to all the worlde, his tender youth prooueth, and so Sanctuarie, as for him, neither none he néedeth, nor also none can haue.

Men come not to Sanctuarie, as they come to Baptisme, to require it by their Godfathers, he must aske it himselfe, that must haue it, and reason, sith no man hath cause to haue it, but whose conscience of his owne fault maketh him faine, néede to require it: what will then hath yonder babe? which and if he had discretion to require it, if néede were, I dare say would now be right angrie with them that kéepe him there: and I would thinke without any scruple of conscience, without any breach of priuiledge, to be somewhat more homely with them that be there Sanctuarie men indéede.

For if one go to Sanctuarie with another mans goods, why should not the king leauing his bodie at libertie, satisfie the partie of his goods, euen within the Sanctuary? for neither king nor pope can giue any place such a priuiledge,

that it shall discharge a man of his debts, being able to paie: and with that, diuers of the Clergie that were present, whether they saide it for his pleasure, or as they thought, agreed plainly, that by the law of God and of the Church, the goods of a Sanctuarie man should be deliuered in paiment of his debtes, and stollen goods to the owner, and onely libertie reserued him to get his liuing with the labour of his hands. Verily (quoth the Duke) I thinke you saie verie truth, and what if a mans wife will take Sanctuarie, because shee list to run from her husband? I woulde weene if shee coulde alleadge none other cause, hee maie lawfullie without ante displeasure to Saint Peter, take her out of Saint Peters church by the arme. And if no body may be taken out of Sanctuary, that (saith he) will bide there, then if a childe will take Sanctuarie, because he feareth to go to Schoole, his maister must let him alone. And as simple as that sample is, yet is there lesse reason in our case than in that: for therein, though it bee a childish feare, yet is there, at the least-wise, some feare, and herein is there none at all. And verily, I haue often heard of Sanctuary men, but I neuer heard earst of Sanctuarie children. And therefore, as for the conclusion of my minde, who so may haue deserued to neede it, if they thinke it for their suertie, let them keepe it. But he can be no Sanctuarie man, that neither hath wisedome to desire it, nor malice to deserue it, whose life or libertie, can by no lawfull processe stande in leopardie. And hee that taketh one out of Sanctuarie to doe him good, I saie plainly, that he breaketh no Sanctuarie.

When the Duke had done, the temporall men whole, and a good part of the spirituall also, thinking no hurt eathly ment toward the yong babe, condescended in effect, that if he were not deliuered he should be fetched: Howbeit, they thought it all best, in the auoiding of all maner of rumor, that the L. Cardinall should first assay to get him with her good will. And thereupon, all the councell came vnto the star chamber at Westminster, and the L. cardinall leauing the Protector with the councell in the starre chamber, departed into the Sanctuarie to the Quéene, with diuers other lordes with him, were it for the respect of his honour, or that she should by presence of so manie perceiue that this errand was not one mans minde: or were it, for that the Protector intended not in this matter, to truste anie one man alone, or else, that if she finallie were determined to keepe him, some of that companie, had happely secret instruction incontinent, maugre her minde, to take him, and to leaue her no respite to conuey him, which she was likely to mind after this matter broken to her, if her time would in any wise serue her.

When the quéene, and these lordes were come togither in presence, the lord Cardinall shewed vnto her, that it was thought vnto the Protector, and vnto the whole councell, that her keeping of the kings brother in that place, was the thing, which highly sounded, not onely to the great rumor of the people & their obloquie, but also to the importable griefe and displeasure of the kings royall Maiestie, to whose grace it were as singular comfort to haue his naturall brother in companie, as it was their both dishonor, and all theirs and hers also, to suffer him in Sanctuarie, as though the one brother stood in danger & perill

of

of the other. And he shewed her, that the councell therefore had sent him vnto her, to require her the deliuery of him, that he might be brought vnto the kings presence at his libertie, out of that place, which they reckoned as a prison, and there should he be demeaned, according to his estate, & she in this doing should both do great good to the realm, pleasure to the councell, and profit to her selfe, succour to her friends that were in distresse, and ouer that (which he wist well she specially tendred) not only great comfort and honor to the king, but also to the young duke himselfe, whose both great wealth it were to be together, as wel for many greater causes, as also for their both disport, and recreation: which thing, the Lord estéemed no sleight, though it séeme light, well pondering, that their youth without recreation and play, cannot endure, nor any stranger, for the coniecture of their both ages and estates, so métely in that point for ante of them, as either of them for other. Protector.

My Lord (quoth the quéene) I say not nate, but that it were very conuenient, that this gentleman whom yée require were in company of the king his brother: and in good faith, me thinketh it were as great commoditie to them both, as for yet a while, to bee in the custodie of their mother, the tender age considered of the elder of them both, but specially the yonger, which besides his infancie, that also néedeth good looking to, hath a while béene so sore diseased, vered with sicknes, and is so newly rather a little amended, than well recouered, that I dare put no person earthly in trust with his kéeping, but my selfe onely, considering that there is (as physitions saie) and as we also finde, double the perill in the reciduation, that was in the first sickenes, with which disease, Nature being sore laboured, sore wearied and weakened, wareth the lesse able to beare out and sustaine a new surfeit. And albeit there might bee found other that would happily do their best vnto him, yet is there none that either knoweth better how to order him, than I that so long haue kept him: or is more tenderly like to cherish him, than his owne mother that bare him. No man denieth, good Madam (qd. the cardinall) but that your grace were of all folke most necessary about your children: and so would all the councell not only be content, but glad that yée were, if it might stande with your pleasure, to be in such place as might stand with their honour. But if you do appoint your selfe to tarrie héere, then thinke they it more conuenient that the Duke of Yorke were with the king honourably at his libertie to the comfort of them both, than here as a Sanctuarie man, to their both dishonour and obloquie, sith there is not alwaie so great necessitie to haue the child to be with the mother: but that occasion maie sometime be such, that it should be more expedient to kéepe him elsewhere, which in this will appeareth, that at such time as your déerest sonne then Prince, and nowe King, should for his honour, and good order of the countrey, kéepe houshold in Wales, far out of your companie: your grace was well content therewith your selfe. Not verie well content, quoth the quéene: And yet the case is not like, for the one was then in health, and the other is nowe sick: In which case, I maruell greatly, that my lorde protector is so desirous to haue him in his kéeping, where if the child in his sicknesse miscarrie by nature, yet might hee runne into slaunder and suspition of fraude. The queenes answere.

And where they call it a thing so sore against my childs honour, and theirs also, that hee bydeth in this place: it is all their honours there to suffer him bide, where no man doubteth he shall be best kept, and that is here, while I am here, which as yet intende not to come foorth, & ieoparde my selfe after other of my friends, which would God were rather here in suretie with mee, than I were there in ieopardy with them. Why madam (quoth another lord) know you any thing why they should be in ieopardy? Nay verily sir, quoth she, nor why they should be in prison neither, as they nowe be. But it is I trowe, no great maruell though I feare, lest those that haue not letted to put them in durance, without colour, will let as little to procure their destruction without cause. The cardinall made a countenance to the other lord, that he should harpe no more vpon that string, and then said he to the Quéene, that he nothing doubted, but that those Lords of her honorable kinne, which as yet remained vnder arrest, should vpon the matter examined do well enough: and as towarde her noble person, neither was, neyther coulde hee anie manner ieopardie. Whereby should I trust that (quoth the Quéene) in that I am guiltles? as though they were guiltie, in that I am with their enimies better loued than they? When they hate them for my sake, in that I am so neere of kin to the king? and how far they be off, if that would helpe, as God send grace it hurt not, & therfore as for me, I purpose not as yet, to depart hence. And as for this gentleman my sonne, I mind that hee shall be where I am, till I sée further: for I assure you, for that I see some men so greedie, without anie substantiall cause to haue him: this maketh mee much the more fearder to deliuer him. Truelie madame, quoth he, and the fearder that you be to deliuer him, the fearder bée other men to suffer you to kéepe him, least your causeless feare might cause you farther to conuey him: and many be there that think he can haue no priuiledge in this place, which neither can haue will to aske it, nor malice to deserue it, and therefore, they reckon no priuiledge broken, though they fetch him out, which if ye finally refuse to deliuer him, I verily thinke they will. So much dread hath my Lorde his vncle, for the tender loue hee beareth him, least your grace should hap to send him away.

The Quéene. Sir (quoth the Quéene) hath the protector so tender zeale, that he feareth nothing but least hee should escape him? Thinketh hee that I would sende him hence, which neither is in the plight to send out, and in what place could I reckon him sure, if he be not sure in the Sanctuarie? Whereof was there neuer tyrant yet so diuelish that durst presume to breake. And I trust, G D D is as strong now to withstand his aduersaries, as euer he was. But my son can deserue no Sanctuary, and therefore he cannot haue it. Forsooth he hath found a goodly glose, by which that place that may defend a théefe, maie not saue an innocent. But he is in no ieopardie, nor hath no néed therof: would God he had not. Troth the protector, I pray god he maie proue a protector, troweth he that I perceiue not whereunto his painted processe draweth? it is not honorable that the D. bide here: it were comfortable for them both, that he were with his brother, because the king lacketh a playfellow be ye sure. I prate God sende them both better playfellowes than him, that maketh so high a matter vpon such a

trifling

trifling pretext: as though there could none bee found to plaie with the king, but if his brother that hath no lufte to plaie for ſickneſs, come out of Sanctuarie, out of his ſafegarde to plaie with him. As though Princes as yoong as they bee, coulde not plaie but with their peeres, or children coulde not plaie but with their kinred, with whome for the more part they agree much worſe than with ſtrangers. But the child cannot require the priuiledge: who told him ſo? He ſhall heare him aſke it, and he will. Howbeit this is a gaie matter, ſuppoſe he could not aſke it, ſuppoſe he would not aſke it, ſuppoſe hee would aſke to go out, if I ſaie hee ſhall not: if I aſke the priuiledge but for my ſelfe, I ſaie hee that againſt my will taketh him out, breaketh the Sanctuarie. Serueth this liberte for my perſon onelie, or for my goods to? Yee maie not hence take my Horſe from me, and maie you take my child fro me? He alſo is my ward: for as my learned counſell ſheweth me, ſith hee hath nothing by deſcent holden by knights ſeruice, the law maketh his mother his guardian. Then may no man I ſuppoſe take my warde from mee out of Sanctuarie, without the breach of Sanctuary. And if my priuiledge could not ſerue him, nor he aſke it for himſelf, yet ſith the law committeth to me the cuſtody of him, I may require it for him, except the law giue a child a guardian only for his goods and lands, diſcharging him of the cure and ſafe keeping of his body, for which only both lands and goods ſerue.

¶ And if examples be ſufficient to obtaine priuiledge for my childe, I neede not far to ſeeke. For in this place in whiche now wee be (and which is nowe in queſtion, whether my child maie take benefit of it) mine other ſon (now king) was borne, and kept in his cradle, and preſerued to a more proſperous fortune, which I praie God long to continue. And as all you know, this is not the firſt time that I haue taken Sanctuarie. For when my Lord my husband was baniſhed, and thruſt out of his kingdome, I fled hither, beeing great with childe, and here I bare the prince. And when my Lorde my husbande returned ſafe againe, and had the victorie, then went I hence to welcome him home, and from hence I brought my babe the prince vnto his father, when hee firſt tooke him in his armes. And I praie God that my ſons palace may bee as great ſafegarde vnto him now raigning, as this place was ſometime to the kings enimy. In which place I intend to keepe his brother, ſith, &c. ⋆ Wherefore here intend I to keepe him, ſince mans law ſerueth the guardian to keepe the infant. The law of nature wils the mother keepe the child, Gods law priuiledgeth the Sanctuarie, and the Sanctuarie my ſon, ſith I feare to put him in the protectors hands that hath his brother alreadie, and were (if both failed) inheritor to the crowne. The cauſe of my feare hath no man to doo to examine: And yet feare I no farther than the law feareth, which as learned men tell me, forbiddeth euerie man the cuſtodie of them, by whoſe death hee may inherit leſſe land than a kingdome. I can no more, but whoſoeuer he be that breaketh this holy ſanctuary, I praie God ſhortly ſend him need of ſanctuary, when he may not come to it: For taken out of ſanctuary would I not my mortall enimy were.

This that is heere betweene this marke ¶ & this marke ⋆ was not written by him in English, but is tranſlated out of this hiſtorie which he wrote in Latine.

The Lorde Cardinall perceiuing that the Queene wared euer the longer the further off, and alſo that ſhee beganne to kindle and chafe, and ſpeake more

biting wordes against the protector, and such as he neither beléeued, and was also loath to heare; he said to her for a finall conclusion, that he would no longer dispute the matter, but if she were content to deliuer the duke to him, and to the other Lords present, he durst lay his own body and soule both in pledge, not only for his surety, but also for his estate. And if she would giue them a resolute answere to the contrary, he would forthwith depart therewithall, and shift who so would with this businesse afterwards, for hee neuer intended more to moue her in that matter, in which she thought that he and all other also saue herselfe lacked either wit or trueth: Wit, if they were so dull that they could nothing perceiue what the protector intended; trueth, if they shoulde procure her son to be deliuered into his hands, in whom they should perceiue towarde the child any euill intended.

The Quéene with these wordes stood a good while in a great studie: And forasmuch as hir seemed ỳ cardinall readier to depart then some of the remnant, and the protector himselfe readie at hand, so that she verilie thought she could not kéepe him there, but that he shoulde incontinent bee taken thence; and to conueie him else where, neither hadde shee time to serue her, nor place determined, nor persons appoynted, all thinges vnready, this Message came on her so sodaynelie, nothing lesse looking for, than to haue him fetchte out of Sanctuarie, which shee thoughte to bee nowe besette in such places about, that hee coulde not bee conueyed out vntaken; and partelie (as shee thought) it mighte fortune, her feare to bee false, so well shee wiste it was either needlesse, or booteles: wherefore, if shee shoulde needes goe from him, shee déemed it beste to deliuer him. And ouer that, of the Cardinals fayth shee nothing doubted, nor of some other Lords neither, whome she there sawe. Which as shee feared leaste they might bee deceyued; so was shee well assured they woulde not bee corrupted: then thought shee it shoulde yet make them the more warilie to looke to him, and the more circumspectlie to see to his suretie, if shée with her owne handes betoke him to them of trust. And at the last shée tooke the yoong Duke by the hand, and said vnto the Lordes: My Lordes (quoth shée) and all my Lords, I neither am so vnwise to mistrust your wits, nor so suspitious to mistrusse your trueths: of which thing I purpose to make you such a proofe, as if eyther of both lacked in you, might turne both mee to great sorrow, the realme to much harme, and you to great reproch. For lo, here is (quoth she) this gentleman, whome I doubt not but I could here kéepe safe, if I would, what soeuer ante man sale: & I doubt not also, but there be some abroad so deadlie enimies vnto my blood, that if they wist where any of it lay in their owne bodie, they woulde let it out. Wee haue also experience that the desire of a Kingdome knoweth no kinred: The Brother hath béene the Brothers bane: and may the nephewes bee sure of their vncle? Each of these children is the others defence while they bee asunder, and eache of their liues lieth in the others bodie. Kéepe one safe and both bee sure, and nothing for them both more perrilous, than to bee both in one place. For what wise merchant aduenture th all his goods in one Shippe? All this notwithstanding, heere I deliuer him, and his Brother in him, to keepe, into your handes, of whome

I

I shall aske them both afore God and the worlde. Faythfull yee be, that wot I well, and I knowe well yée bee wise. Power and strength to kéepe him if you liste, neither lacke yée of your selfe, nor can lacke helpe in this case: And if ye cannot els where, then may you leaue him here. But onlie one thing I beséech you, for the trust which his father put in you euer, and for the trust ý I put in you now, that as far as yée thinke that I feare too much, be you well ware that you feare not as farre too little. And therewithall chée said vnto the child, farewell mine owne swéete sonne, God sende you good kéeping: let mee kisse you yet once ere you goe, for God knoweth when wee shall kisse together againe: And therewith chée kissed him, and blessed him, turned her backe and wept, and went her waie, leauing the childe wéeping as fast. When the lord Cardinall and those other Lords with him had receiued this yoong duke, they brought him into the Starre Chamber, where the Protector tooke him in his Armes and kissed him, with these wordes: Welcome my Lorde, euen withall my verie heart: And hee sayde in that of likelyhoode as hee thought. That reupon foorthwith they brought him vnto the King his Brother, into the Bysshoppes Palace at Paules, and from thence through the citty honourablie into the Tower, out of the which after that daie they neuer came abroade. D dissimulation.

¶ When the Protector had both the children in his handes, he opened himselfe more boldly, both to certaine other men, and also chiefelie to the Duke of Buckingham. Although I know that manie thought that this duke was priuie to all the protectors counsell, euen from the beginning, and some of the protectors friends said, that the duke was the first mouer of the protector to this matter, sending a priuy messenger vnto him, straight after K. Edwards death. But other againe which knew better the subtill wit of the protector, denie that hee euer opened his enterprise to the duke, vntill hee had brought to passe the things before rehearsed. But when he had imprisoned the quéenes kinsfolks, and gotten both hir sons into his owne handes, then hee opened the rest of his purpose with lesse feare to them whome he thought méete for the matter, and specially to the duke, who being won to his purpose, hee thought his strength more then halfe increased. The matter was broken vnto the duke by subtil folks, and such as were their crafts masters in ý handling of such wicked deuises: who declared vnto him that the yong K. was offended with him for his kinsfolks sake, & if he were euer able he would reueng them: who would prick him forward therevnto if they escaped (for they would remember their imprisonment) or else if they were put to death, without doubt the yong K. would be carefull for their deaths, whose imprisonment was grieuous vnto him. And that with repenting the D. should nothing auaile, for there was no way left to redéem his offence by benefits, but he should sooner destroy himselfe then saue the king, who with his brother and his kinsfolks he saw in such places imprisoned, as the protector might with a becke destroy them all: and that it were no doubt but hee would do it indéede, if there were anie newe enterprise attempted. And that it was likelie, that as the Protector had prouided priuie garde for himselfe, so had hee spyalles for the Duke, and traynes to catch him, if hee This that is heere betweene this marke ¶ & this marke * was not written by him in English, but is translated out of this Historie which he wrote in Latin.

ſhould be againſt him, and that peraduenture from them, whom he leaſt ſuſpected. For the ſtate of things and the diſpoſitions of men were then ſuch, that a man could not well tell whom he might truſt, or whom he might feare.*

Theſe things and ſuch like, being beaten into the dukes mind, brought him to that point, that where he had repented ẏ way that he had entred, yet would he go forth in the ſame, and ſince he had once begunne, he would ſtoutly goe through. And therfore to this wicked enterpriſe which he beléeued could not be voided, he bent himſelfe, and went through and determined, that ſince the common miſchiefe could not be amended, he would turne it as much as hee might to his owne commoditie.

Then it was agreed, that the Protector ſhould haue the Dukes aide to make him king, and that the Protectors only lawfull ſonne ſhould marrie the dukes daughter, and that the Protector ſhould grant him the quiet poſſeſſion of the Earledome of Hertford, which he claimed as his inheritance, and could neuer obtaine it in king Edwards time: Beſides theſe requeſts of the Duke, the protector of his owne mind promiſed him a great quantitie of the kings treaſure, and of his houſhold ſtuffe. And when they were thus at a point betweene themſelues, they went about to prepare for the coronation of the yong king as they would haue it ſéeme: And that they might turne both the eies and mindes of men from perceiuing of their drifts other where, the Lords being ſent for from all parts of the realme, came thicke to the ſolemnity: But the Protector, and the duke after that, that they had ſent the lord Cardinall, the archbiſhop of Yorke then lord Chancellor, the biſh. of Ely, the L. Stanley, and the L. Haſtings then lord Chamberlaine, with many other noble men *to commune and deuiſe about the coronation in one place, as faſt were they in another place contriuing the contrarie, and to make the protector king. To which Councell, albeit there were adhibited very few, and they were ſecret: yet began there here and there about, ſome maner of muttering among the people, as though all ſhould not long be well, though they neuer wiſt what they feared, nor wherfore, were it that before ſuch great things mens harts of a ſecret inſtinct of nature miſgiue them, as the ſea without wind ſwelleth of himſelfe ſomtime before a tempeſt: or were it that ſome one man happily ſomewhat perceiuing, filled many men with ſuſpition, though hee ſhewed fewe men what he knewe. Howbeit, ſomewhat the dealing it ſelfe made men to muze on the matter, though the councell were cloſe. For by little and little, all folke withdrew from the tower, and drew to Crosbies in Biſhops gate ſtréete, where the protector kept his houſhold. The protector had the reſort, the king in maner deſolate.

Crosby place.

While ſome for their buſineſſe made ſuite to them that had the doing, ſome were by their friends ſecretly warned, that it might happily turne them to no good, to be too much attendant about the king without the protectors appointment, which remoued alſo diuers of the princes olde ſeruants from him, and ſet new about him.

Thus manie thinges comming togither partly by chance, partly of purpoſe, cauſed at length not common people onely, that wound with the winde, but wiſe men alſo, and ſome lords eke to marke the matter, and muze thereon,

ſo

so farre forth, that the Lord Stanley that was after earle of Darby, wisely mistrusted it, and saide vnto the Lorde Hastings, that he much misliked these two seuerall Councels. For while we (quoth he) talke of one matter in ỹ one place, little wot we whereof they talke in the other place. My Lord (quoth the Lorde Hastings) of my life neuer doubt you: for while one man is there, which is neuer thence, neuer can there bee thing once moued, that shoulde sound amisse toward me, but it should be in mine eares ere it were well out of their mouthes.

This meant he by Catesby, which was of his nére secret counsell, and whom he verie familiarly vsed, and in his most weightie matters put no man in so speciall trust, reckoning himselfe to no man so liefe, sith hee well wist there was no man so much to him beholden as was this Catesby, which was a man wel learned in the lawes of this land, and by the speciall fauor of the L. Chamberlaine, in good authoritie, & much rule bare he in all the countie of Leicester, where the lord Chamberlains power chiefly lay. But surely great pittie was it, that he had not had either more truth or lesse wit: for his dissimulation only, kept all that mischiefe vp. In whom if the lord Hastings had not put so speciall trust, the lord Stanley and he had departed with diuers other lordes, and broken all the daunce, for many ill signes that he saw, which he now construes all to the best. So surely thought he, that there could be no harme toward him in that councell intended where Catesby was. Catesby.

And of truth the Protector and the Duke of Buckingham made verie good semblance vnto the Lord Hastings, and kept him much in companie: And vndoubtedly the protector loued him well, and loth was to haue lost him, sauing for feare least his life should haue quailed their purpose. For which cause hee moued Catesby to proue with some wordes cast out a far off, whether he could thinke it possible to win the Lord Hastings vnto their part: But Catesby whether he assaied him, or assaied him not, reported vnto them, that he founde him so fast, and heard him speake so terrible wordes, that he durst no further breake.

And of truth the lord Chamberlaine of very trust shewed vnto Catesby the distrust that other began to haue in the matter: And therefore he fearing least their motion might with the Lord Hastings minish his credence, whereunto onely all the matter leaned, procured the protector hastily to ridde him. And much the rather, for that he trusted by his death to obtaine much of the rule that the lord Hastings bare in his countrey: the onely desire whereof was the allectiue that induced him to be partner and one speciall contriuer of all this horrible treason.

Whereupon some after, that is to wit, on the fridaie the thirtenth daie of June, many lords assembled in the tower, and there sate in councell, deuising the honorable solemnitie of the kings coronation, of which the time appointed then so nére approched, that the pageants and subtilties were in making daie and night at Westminster, and much victuall killed therefore, that afterward was cast away.

These Lordes so sitting together communing of this matter, the Protector came

came in amongst them first about nine of the clocke, saluting them courteously, and excusing himselfe that he had bœne from them so long, saying merilie, that he had bœne a slœper that day.

And after a little talking with them, he said vnto the bishoppe of Ely: My Lord, you haue very good strawberies at your garden in Holborne, I require you let vs haue a messe of them. Gladly my lord (quoth he) would God I had some better thing as ready to your pleasure as that. And therewith in all the haste he sent his seruant for a messe of strawberies.

The Protector set the Lordes fast in communing, and thereupon praying them to spare him for a little while, departed thence: And soone after one houre, betwœne 10. and 11. he returned into the chamber among them all, changed with a wonderfull sower angrie countenance, knitting the browes, frowning and fretting, and gnawing on his lips, and so sate him downe in his place, all the lords much dismaied and sore maruelling of this maner of sudden change, and what thing should him aile. Then, when he had sitten still a while, thus he began: What were they worthie to haue that compasse and imagine the destruction of me, being so nœre of bloud vnto the king, and protector of his roiall person and his realme? At this question, all the lords sate sore astonied, musing much by whom this question should bee meant, of which euery man wist himselfe clœre.

Then the lord Chamberlaine, as he that for the loue betwœne them thought he might be boldest with him, answered and said, that they were worthy to be punished as hainous traitors, whatsoeuer they were: And all the other affirmed the same. That is (quoth he) yonder sorceresse my brothers wife, and other with her, meaning ẏ quœne. At these words many of the other lords were greatly abashed that fauored her. But the L. Hastings was in his mind better content that it was mooued by her, than by any other whom he loued better: albeit his hart somwhat grudged, that he was not afore made of counsell in this matter, as he was of the taking of her kinred, and of their putting to death, which were by his assent before deuised to bee beheaded at Ponfract this selfesame day, in which he was not ware that it was by other deuised, that himself should be beheaded the same day at London. Then said the protector, Ye shall all sée in what wise that sorceresse, and that other witch of her counsell Shores wife with their affinity, haue by their sorcerie and witchcraft wasted my body: And therwith he plucked vp his doublet slœue to his elbow vpon his left arme, where he shewed a werish withered arme, and small, as it was neuer other. And thereupon euery mans minde sore misgaue them, well perceiuing that this matter was but a quarrell: For they well wist, that the Quœne was too wise to go about any such folly: And also if she would, yet would she of all folke least make Shores wife of counsell, whom of all women she most hated, as that concubine whom the king her husband had most loued: And also, no man was there present but well knew ẏ his arme was euer such since his birth. Naythelesse the lord Chamberlaine (which from the death of king Edward kept Shores wife, on whom he somewhat doted in the kings life, sauing (as it is saide) hee that while forbare her of reuerence toward the king, or else of a certaine kind

of

of fidelity to his friend) answered and said: Certainly my lord, if they haue so heinously done, they be worthy heinous punishment.

What (quoth the protector) thou seruest me I weene with ifs and with ands, I tell thee they haue so done, and that I will make good on thy bodie traitor: and therewith as in a great anger, he clapped his fist vppon the bord a great rap. At which token giuen, one cried treason without the chamber: Therewith a doore clapped, and in come there rushing men in harnesse, as many as the chamber might holde. And anone the protector said to the lord Hastings, I arrest thee traitor: What me my lord (quoth he?) yea thee traitor, quoth the Protector. And another let fly at the lord Stanley, which shrunke at the stroke, and fell vnder the table, or else his head had been cleft to the teeth: for as shortly as he shranke, yet came the blood about his eares. Then were they all quickely bestowed in diuers chambers, except the lord Chamberlaine, whom the protector bad spéede and shriue him apace, for by S. Paul (quoth he) I will not to dinner till I see thy head off. The lord Stanley wounded.

It boted him not to aske why, but beastlie take a priest at auenture, and made a short shrift, for a longer would not be suffered, the Protector made so much haste to dinner, which he might not go to, till this were done, for sauing of his oth. So was he brought forth into the greene beside the chappell within the tower, and his head laide downe vpon a long log of timber, and there stricken off, and afterward his body with the head entered at Windsor beside the body of king Edward.

A maruellous case is it to heare either the warnings of that he should haue voided, or the tokens of that he could not voide, for the selfe night next before his death, the L. Stanley sent a trustie secret messenger vnto him at midnight in al the haste, requiring him to rise and ride away with him, for he was disposed vtterly no longer to bide, he had so fearfull a dreame, in which him thought, that a Boare with his tusks so rased them both by the heads, that the blood ran about both their shoulders. And for as much as the protector gaue the Boare for his cognisance, this dreame made so fearfull an impression in his hart, that he was throughly determined no longer to tarrie, but had his horse readie, if the L. Hastings would go with him to ride yet so far the same night, that they should be out of danger ere day. Ha good Lord (quoth the lord Hastings to this messenger) leaneth my lord thy master so much to such trifles, & hath such faith in dreames, which either his owne feare fantasieth, or doe rise in the nightes rest by reason of his daie thoughts? Tell him it is plaine witchcraft to beléeue in such dreames, which if they were tokens of thinges to come, why thinketh he not that we might be as likely to make them true by our going, if we were caught and brought backe (as friends faile flies) for then had the Boare a cause likely to race vs with his tusks, as folke that fledde for some falshood: wherefore either is there no perill, nor none there is in deede; or if any be, it is rather in going than biding. And if we should needes cast fall in peril one way or other, yet had I leifer that men should sée that it were by other mens falsehood, than thinke it were either by our owne fault, or faint heart: And therefore go to thy master man and commend me to him, and pray him to be merry, and The lord Stanleies dreame.

haue

haue no feare: for I ensure him I am as sure of the man that he woteth of, as I am of mine owne hand. God send grace Sir, quoth the messenger, and went his waie.

Certaine it is also, that in riding towards the tower the same morning in which hée was beheaded, his horse twise or thrise stumbled with him, almost to the falling: which thing albeit each man wot well daily happeneth to them to whome no such mischance is toward, yet hath it bene of an olde rite and custome obserued as a token of tentimes notablie foregoing some great misfortune.

Now this that followeth was no warning, but an enuious scorne.

The same morning ere he was vp, came a knight vnto him as it were of curtesie, to accompany him to the councel, but of truth sent by the protector to haste him thitherwards, with whom he was of secret confederacy in that purpose, a meane man at that time, and now of great authoritie.

This knight when it happened the Lord Chamberlaine by the waie to stale his horse, and commune a while with a priest whom he met in the Tower street, brake his tale, and said merrilie to him, What my Lorde, I praie you come on, whereto talke you so long with that priest, you haue no néed of a priest yet: and therewith he laughed vpon him, as though hee woulde say, ye shall haue sone. But so little wist the other what he meant, and so little mistrusted, that he was neuer merrier, nor neuer so full of good hope in his life, which selfe thing is often séene a signe of change. But I shall rather let any thing passe me, than the vaine surety of mans mind so nére his death.

Vpon the very tower wharfe, so nére the place where his head was stroke off soon after, there met he with one Hastings a pursuant of his own name: and of their méeting in that place, he was put in remembrance of another time, in which it had happened them before to méet in like manner togither in the same place. At which other time the Lorde Chamberlaine had bene accused vnto king Edward by the Lorde Riuers the Quénes brother, in such wise as hee was for the while, but it lasted not long, farre fallen into the kings indignation, and stood in great feare of himselfe: And for as much as he nowe met this pursuant in the same place that leopardie so well passed, it gaue him great pleasure to talke with him thereof, with whome hee had before talked thereof in the same place, while hee was therein. And therefore hee saide: Ah Hastinges, art thou remembred when I met thee heere once with an heauie heart? Yea my Lorde quoth he, that remember I well, and thanked be God, they got no good, nor you no harme thereby. Thou wouldest say so, quoth he, if thou knewest as much as I know, which few know else as yet, and mo shall shortly. That meant he by the Lords of the Quénes kinred that were taken before, and should that daie bee beheaded at Pontfract: which he well wist, but nothing ware that the Axe hong ouer his owne head. In faith man, quoth hee, I was neuer so sorie, nor neuer stood in so great dread in my life, as I did when thou and I met here: And lo how the world is turned, now stand mine enimies in the danger, as thou maist hap to heare more hereafter, and I neuer in my life so merrie, nor euer in so great suretie.

O good God, the blindnes of our mortal nature, when he most feared, he was in good suretie: when he reckoned himselfe surest he lost his life, and that within two howers after.

Thus ended this honourable man, a good knight and a gentle, of great authoritie with his prince, of liuing somewhat dissolute, plaine, and open to his enimy, and secret to his friend, easie to beguile, as he that of good hart and courage fore-studied no perils: a louing man, and passing well beloued: very faithfull and trustie enough, trusting too much. Now flew the fame of this Lordes death swiftlie through the citie, and so forth further about like a wind in euery mans eare. The description of the Lord Hastings.

But the protector immediatlie after dinner, intending to set some colour vpon the matter, sent in all haste for manie substantiall men out of the Citie into the tower: And at their comming, himselfe with the duke of Buckingham, stood harnessed in old ill faring Briganders, such as no man should ween that they would vouchsafe to haue put vpon their backs, except that some sudden necessitie had constrained them.

And then the protector shewed them, that the lord chamberlaine and other of his conspiracie had contriued to haue suddenlie destroied him and the Duke, there the same daie in the Councell. And what they intended further was as yet not well knowne. Of which their treason he neuer had knowledge before. of the clocke the same forenoone, which sudden feare droue them to put on for their defence such harnesse as came next to hand. And so had God holpen them, that the mischiefe turned vpon them that would haue done it. And this he required them to report.

Euerie man answered him faire, as though no man mistrusted the matter, which of troth no man beléeued. Yet for the further appeasing of the peoples mind, he sent immediatly after dinner in all haste, an Herault of armes, with a proclamation to bee made through the Citie in the Kings name, containing that the Lord Hastings with diuers other of his traiterous purpose, had before conspired the same daie, to haue slaine the Lorde protector and the duke Buckingham, sitting in the Councell, and after to haue taken vpon them to rule the King and the Realme, at their pleasure, and thereby to pill and spoile whom they list vncontrolled. And much matter there was in that Proclamation, deuised to the slaunder of the Lord Chamberlaine, as that he was an euill Counseller to the kinges father, inticing him to manie thinges highlie redounding to the minishing of his honour, and to the vniuersall hurt of his Realme by his euill companie, sinister procuring, and vngracious ensample, as well in manie other thinges, as in the vicious liuing and inordinate abusion of his bodie, both with manie other, and also especiallie with Shores wife which was one also of his most secrete Counsell of this heinous treason, with whome he late nightlie, and namelie, the night last past next before his death, so that it was the lesse maruell, if vngracious liuing brought him to an vnhappie ending, which he was now put vnto, by the most dreade commaundement of the Kinges highnesse, and of his honourable and faithfull Councell, both for his demerites, being so openly taken in his fallie conceiued treason, & The protectors proclamation.

also least the delaying of his execution might haue encouraged other mischieuous persons partners of his owne conspiracie, to gather and assemble themselues togither, in making some great commotion for his deliuerance: whose hope being now by his well deserued death politikely repressed, all the Realme should by Gods grace rest in good quiet and peace.

Now was this proclamation made within two howers after that hee was beheaded, and it was so curiouslie indited, and so faire written in parchment, in so well a set hand, and therewith of it selfe so long a processe, that euerie childe might well perceiue that it was prepared before. For all the time betweene his death and the proclaiming coulde scant haue sufficed vnto the bare writing alone, all had it beene but in paper, and scribled forth in haste at aduenture. So that vpon the proclaiming thereof, one that was schoolemaster of Paules, of chance standing by, and comparing the shortnes of the time with the length of the matter, said vnto them that stood about him: Heere is a gaie goodlie cast, foule cast awaie for haste: and a marchant answered him, that it was written by prophesie. Now then by and by as it were for anger, not for couetise, the protector sent into the house of Shores wife (for her husband dwelled not with her) and spoiled her of all that euer she had, aboue the value of two or three thousand marke, & sent her bodie to prison: And when he had a while laid vnto her (for the maner sake) that she went about to bewitch him, and that shee was of counsell with the Lord Chamberlaine to destroie him: in conclusion, when that no colour could fasten vpon these matters, then he laid heinously to her charge, that thing that herselfe coulde not denie, that all the worlde wist was true, and that naitheles euerie man laughed at, to heare it then so suddenly, so highly taken, that she was naught of her bodie.

The sherifes of London, William White & John Mathew set Shores wife out of hir house, by commandement of the protector, & led her thoroughout the city of London to the Tower, where she answered certaine points laid to her charge, and from thence she was committed to Ludgate, there to remain prisoner, &c.

And for this cause (as a good continent prince, cleane and faultlesse of himselfe, sent out of heauen into this vicious world for ẏ amendment of mens maners) he caused the Bishop of London to put her to open penance, going before the crosse in procession vpon a sundaie with a taper in her hand: In which shee went in countenance and pace demure so womanlie, and albeit shee were out of all araie saue her kirtle onely, yet went she so faire and louely, namely while the woondering of the people cast a comely rud in her cheekes (of which shee before had most misse) that hir great shame wanne hir much praise, among those that were more amorous of hir body, than curious of hir soule. And many good folke also that hated hir liuing, and glad were to see sin corrected: yet pitied they more hir penance, than reioiced therein, when they considered that the protector procured it more of a corrupt intent, then any vertuous affection.

The description of Shores wife.

This woman was borne in London, worshipfully friended, honestly brought vp, and verie well married, sauing somewhat too soone, her husbande an honest citizen, yoong and godly, and of good substance: But for as much as they were coupled ere she were well ripe, she not very feruently loued, for whom she neuer longed, which was happily the thing that the more easily made hir incline vnto the kings appetite, when he required her. Howbeit the respect of his roialty, the hope of gay apparell, ease, pleasure, and other wanton wealth, was able soone to pierce a soft tender hart.

But

But when the king had abused her, anone hir husband (as he was an honest man, and one that could his good, not presuming to touch a Kings Concubine) left her vp to him altogither.

When the king died the Lord Chamberlaine toke her, which in the kinges daies, albeit he was sore enamoured vpon hir, yet he forbare her, either for reuerence, or for a certaine friendly faithfulnes: proper she was and faire, nothing in her bodie that you would haue changed, but if you would haue wished her somewhat higher. The L. Chamberlaine kept Shores wife after the death of Edward the 4.

Thus saie they that knewe hir in her youth, albeit some that now se hir (for yet she liueth) deme hir neuer to haue bene well visaged, whose iudgement semeth me somewhat like, as though men should gesse the beautie of one long before departed, by her scalpe taken out of the charnell house: for now is shee old, leane, withered, and dried vp, nothing left but riueld skin & hard bone. And yet being euen such: who so well aduise hir visage, might gesse and deuise, which parts how filled would make it a faire face; yet delited not men so much in her beautie as in her pleasant behauior. For a proper wit had she, & could both read well and write, merry in companie, ready and quick of answere, neither mute nor full of babble, sometime taunting without displeasure, and not without disport. Shores wife liued when sir T. More wrote this history in the raigne of K. the 8.

The king would say that he had three Concubines, which in three diuers properties diuerslie excelled. One the merriest, another the wiliest, the third the holiest harlot in his realme, as one whome no man coulde get out of the Church lightly to any place, but it were to his bed. The other two were somwhat greater personages, & natheles of their humilitie content to be nameles, and to forbeare the praise of those properties. But the merriest was this Shores wife, in whome the king therefore toke speciall pleasure. For manie hee had, but her he loued, whose fauor to saie the troth (for sin it were to belie the diuell) she neuer abused to anie mans hurt, but to manie a mans comfort and reliefe, where the king toke displeasure, shee would mittigate and appease his mind: where men were out of fauour, she would bring them in his grace. For manie that had highlie offended shee obtayned pardon: Of great forfeitures shee gat men remission: And finallie, in manie weighty suites she stood many men in great stead, either for none or verie small rewardes, and those rather gaie then rich: either for that she was contente with the deede it selfe well done, or for that shee delited to bee sued vnto, and to shewe what shee was able to doe with the king, or for that wanton Women and wealthie bee not alwayes couetous. K. Edwards 3. Concubines.

I doubt not some shall thinke this woman too sleight a thing to bee written of, and set among the remembraunces of great matters: which they shall specially thinke, that happilie shall esteme hir onelie by that they now se her. But mee seemeth the chaunce so much the more woorthie to bee remembred, in howe much shee is nowe in the more beggerlie condition, vnfriended and worne out of acquayntaunce, after good substaunce, after as greate fauour with the Prince, after as greate suite and seeking to with all those that those daies had businesse to speede, as manie other men were in their times, which be nowa-

nowe famous onely by the infamie of their ill déedes. Her doings were not much lesse, albeit they be much lesse remembred because they were not so euil. For men vse if they haue an euill turne, to write it in marble: and who so doth vs a good turne, we write it in dust, which is not worst proued by her: for at this day she beggeth of many at this day liuing, that at this day had begged if she had not béene.

Shores wife begged of them, that had begged themselues, had she not beene their friend.

Nowe was it so deuised by the Protector and his counsaile, that the selfe daie in which the Lorde Chamberlaine was beheaded in the Tower of London, and about the selfe same houre, was there (not without his assent) beheaded at Pontraite, the foreremembred Lordes and knightes that were taken from the king at Northampton and Stonie Stratforde. Which thing was done in the presence, and by the order of Sir Richard Ratcliffe knight, whose seruice the Protector specially vsed in that counsell, and in the execution of such lawlesse enterprises, as a man that had been long secret with him, hauing experience of the world, and a shrewd wit, short and rude in speech, rough and boysterous of behauiour, bolde in mischiefe, as farre from pitie as from all feare of God.

Sir Richard Ratcliffe.

This knight bringing them out of the prison to the scaffolde, and shewing to the people about that they were traitors, not suffering them to declare and speake their innocencie, least their words might haue inclined men to pitie them, and to hate the Protector and his part: caused them hastily without iudgement, processe, or maner of order, to be beheaded, & without other eathly guilt, but onely that they were good men, too true to the king, and too nigh to the quéene.

The lord Riuers and other beheaded.

Nowe when the lord Chamberlaine and these other lords and knights were thus beheaded and rid out of the way: then thought the Protector, that while men mused what the matter ment, while the lordes of the Realme were about him out of their owne strengthes, while no man wist what to thinke, nor whome to trust, ere euer they should haue space to dispute and digest the matter and make parties, it were best hastily to pursue his purpose, and put himselfe in possession of the crowne, ere men coulde haue time to deuise any way to resist.

But nowe was all the studie by what meane this matter being of it selfe so heynous, might be first broken to the people, in such wise that it might bee well taken.

To this Counsell they toke diuers, such as they thought méetely to be trusted, likely to be induced to that part, and able to stand them in stéede either by power or policie.

Among whome they made of Counsaile Edmond Shaa knight then maior of London, which vpon trust of his owne aduancement, whereof he was of a prowd hart highly desirous, should frame the city to their appetite. Of Spirituall men they toke such as had wit, and were in authoritie among the people for opinion of their learning, and had no scrupulous conscience.

Edmond Shaa maior of London.

Among these had they Iohn Shaa Clearke, brother to the maior, and Frier Pinke, prouincial of the Augustine Friers, both doctors of Diuinitie, both great

Doctor Shaa, Frier Pinke.

great preachers, both of more learning than vertue, of more fame than learning. For they were before greatly esteemed among the people: but after that neuer. Of these two the tone had a sermon in praise of the protector before the coronation, the tother after, both so full of tedious flattery, that no mans eares could abide them.

Pinke in his sermon so lost his voice, that hee was faine to leaue off and come downe in the midst. Doctor Shaa by his sermon lost his honestie, and soone after his life, for verie shame of the worlde, into which he durst neuer after come abroad. But the frier forced for no shame, and so it harmed him the lesse. Howbeit some doubt and many thinke, that Pinke was not of counsaile of the matter before the coronation, but after the common maner, fell to flattery after: namely sith his sermon was not incontinent vpon it, but at Saint Marie Hospitall at the Easter after. But certaine it is, that Doctor Shaa was of counsaile in the beginning, so farre forth, that they determined that he should first breake the matter in a sermon at Paules Crosse, in which hee should by the authoritie of his preaching, incline the people to the Protectors ghostly purpose.

But nowe was all the labour and studie, in the deuise of some conuenient pretext, for which the people should be content to depose the Prince, and accept the protector for king. In which diuers things they deuised. But the chiefe thing and the weight of all that inuention rested in this, that they should alleadge Bastardie, either in king Edward himselfe, or in his children, or both. So that he should seeme disabled to inherite the crowne, by the Duke of Yorke, and the Prince by him.

To lay bastardie in king Edward sounded openly to the rebuke of the Protectors owne mother, which was mother to them both: for in that point coulde be none other colour but to pretend that his own mother was an aduoutresse, which notwithstanding, to further this purpose he letted not: but nathelesse, he would that point should be lesse and more fauourablie handled, not euen fullie plaine and directlie, but that the matter should be touched aslope craftilie, as though men spared in that point to speake all the troth, for feare of his displeasure.

But the other point concerning the bastardy that they deuised to surmise in king Edwards children, that would he should be openly declared, and inforced to the vttermost. The colour and pretext whereof, cannot be well perceiued, but if we first repeate you some things long before done about king Edwards marriage.

After that K. Edward the 4 had deposed K. Henry the first, and was in peaceable possession of the realme, determining himselfe to marry, as it was requisite both for himselfe and for the realme, he sent ouer in ambassade the earle of Warwike, with other noble men in his companie vnto Spaine, to intreate and conclude a marriage betweene king Edward and the kings daughter of Spaine. In which thing the Earle of Warwike found the parties so towarde and willing, that he speedily according to his instructions without anie difficultie, brought the matter to very good conclusion.

Dame Elizabeth.

Nowe happened it, that in the meane season there came to make suite by petition to the king dame Elizabeth Grey, which was after his Quæne, at that time a widow, borne of noble blod, specially by her mother, which was Dutchesse of Bedford ere she married the Lord Wooduile her father. Howbeit this dame Elizabeth her selfe, beeing in seruice with Quæne Margaret wife vnto king Henry the first, was married vnto one Iohn Grey an esquire, whom king Henry made knight, vpon the field that he had on Barnet heath by S. Albons against king Edward. And little while enioied he that knighthod, for he was at the same field slaine.

After which done, and the earle of Warwike being in his ambassade about the afore remembred marriage, this poore Ladie made humble suite vnto the king, that shee might bee restored vnto such small landes as her late husband had giuen her in iointure. Whome when the king behelde, and hearde her speake, as she was both faire and of a goodlie fauor, moderate of stature, well made, and verie wise: he not onelie pitied her, but also waxed enamoured of her: and taking her after secretlie aside, beganne to enter in talking more familiarlie. Whose appetite when shee perceiued, shee vertuouslie denied him. But that did shee so wiselie, and with so good manner, and wordes so well set, that she rather kindled his desire than quenched it.

And finallie, after manie a meeting, much wooing, and many great promises, she well espied the kings affection toward her so greatly increased, that she durst somewhat the more boldlie saie her mind, as to him whose heart she perceiued more feruentlie set, than to fall off for a word.

And in conclusion, shee shewed him playne, that as shee wisse her selfe too simple to bee his wife, so thought shee her selfe too good to bee his Concubine. The king much marueiling at her constancie, as he that had not beene wont elsewhere to bee so stiffelie sayde naie, so much esteemed her continencie, and chastitie, that hee sette her vertue in steade of possession and riches, and thus taking counsayle of his desire, determined in all possible haste to marrie her.

And after hee was thus appointed, and had betweene them twaine ensured her: then asked hee counsaile of his other friendes, and that in such manner, as they might then perceiue, it boted not greatlie to saie naie. Notwithstanding the Dutches of Yorke his mother was so sore moued therewith, that she dissuaded the marriage as much as she possibly might, alleadging that it was his honour, profite, and suretie also, to marrie in a noble progenie out of his Realme, whereupon depended great strength to his Estate, by the affinitie and great possibilitie of encrease of his possession. And that hee coulde not wel otherwise do, standing that ye earle of Warwike had so far moued already, which were not likely to take it wel, if all his voiage were in such wise frustrate and his appointments deluded. And she saide also, that it was not princelie to marrie his owne subiect, no great occasion leading thereunto, no possessions, or other commoditie depending thereupon, but only as it were a rich man that woulde marrie his maide, onlie for a little wanton dotage vpon hir person. In which marriage many mo commend the maidens fortune than the makers wisedome.

The kings mother.

wisedome. And yet there in shee saide there was more honestie than honour in this marriage: for as much as there is betweene no merchaunt and his owne maide so great difference, as betweene the king and this Widowe. In whose person, albeit there was nothing to be misliked, yet was there (shee saide) nothing so excellent but that it mought be found in diuers other that were more méetelie (quoth she) for your estate, and maidens also, whereas the onelie Widowhead of Elizabeth Grey, though she were in all other thinges conuenient for you, should yet suffice, as me seemeth, to refraine you from her marriage, sith it is an vnfitting thing, and a verie blemish and high disparagement to the sacred maiestie of a prince, that ought as nigh to approch priesthood in cleanesse as he doth in dignity, to be defouled with bigamie in his first marriage.

The king when his mother had saide, made her aunswere, part in earnest, part in plaie merrilie, as hee that wisse himselfe out of her rule. And albeit, hee woulde gladlie that shee should take it well, yet was at a point in his owne minde, tooke shee it well or otherwise. Howbeit somewhat to satisfie her, he said, that albeit marriage being a spirituall thing, ought rather to be made for the respect of GOD, where his grace encline th the parties to loue together, as he trusted it was in his, than for the regard of anie temporall aduantage: yet nathelesse, him seemed that this marriage euen worldlie considered, was not vnprofitable. For he reckoned the amitie of no earthlie nation so necessarie for him, as the friendship of his owne, which he thought likelie to beare him so much the more heartie fauour, in that he disdayned not to marrie with one of his owne land. And yet if outwarde aliance were thought so requisite, he woulde finde the meanes to enter thereunto, much better by other of his kin, where all the parties coulde be contented, than to marrie himselfe whome hee shoulde happilie neuer loue, and for the possibilitie of more possessions, leese the fruite and pleasure of this that he had alreadie. For small pleasure taketh a man in all that euer he hath beside, if he be wiued against his appetite. And I doubt not (quoth he) but there be as ye say other, that be in euerie point comparable with hir: and therefore I let not them that like them to wed them: No more is it reason, that it mislike any man, that I marrie where it liketh mee. And I am sure that my Cousin of Warwike neyther loueth mee so little, to grudge at that I loue, nor is so vnreasonable to loke that I should in choise of a wife, rather bee ruled by his eie, than by mine owne: as though I were a ward that were bound to marrie by the appointment of a guardian. I would not be a king with that condition, to forbeare mine owne libertie in choyse of mine owne marriage.

The kings aunswere to his mother.

As for possibilitie of more inheritance by new affinitie in strange lands, is oft the occasion of more trouble than profite: and we haue alreadie title by that meanes, to so much as sufficeth to get and kéepe well in one mans dales. That she is a widow and hath already children, by gods blessed lady I am a batcheler and haue some too, and so each of vs hath a proofe that neither of vs is like to be barrain. And therfore (madam) I pray you be content, I trust in God she shall bring forth a yong prince that shall please you. And as for the Bigamie, let the Bishop hardlie laie it in my waie when I come to take orders: For

I vnderstand it is forbidden a Priest, but I neuer wist it yet, that it was forbidden a Prince.

The dutches with these wordes nothing appeased, and seeing the king so set thereon, that she could not pull him backe, so highly she disdained it, that vnder pretext of her dutie to godward, she deuised to disturb this mariage, and rather to helpe that he should marrie one dame Elizabeth Lucie, whom the king had also not long before gotten with childe. Wherefore the kings mother openlie obiected against his marriage, as it were in discharge of her conscience, that the king was sure to dame Elizabeth Lucie, and her husband before God. By reason of which wordes, such obstacle was made in the matter, that either the bishops durst not, or the king would not proceede to the solemnization of this wedding, till these same were clerely purged, and the troth well and openlie testified. Whereupon dame Elizabeth Lucie was sent for.

Elizabeth Lucie.

And albeit that she was by the kings mother and manie other put in good comfort, to affirme that she was ensured vnto the king: yet when she was solemnly sworne to saie the troth, shee confessed that they were neuer ensured. Howbeit she said his grace spake so louing words vnto her, that she verily hoped he would haue maried her. And that if it had not been for such kind words, she would neuer haue shewed such kindnes to him, to let him so kindly get her with childe.

This examination solemnelie taken, when it was clerely perceiued that there was none impediment: the K. with great feast and honorable solemnity, married dame Elizabeth Grey, and her crowned quéene that was his enemies wife, and manie time had praied full heartily for his losse, in which God loued her better than to grant her her boone.

The kings mariage.

But when the earle of Warwike vnderstood of this marriage, he toke it so highly that his ambassage was deluded, that for verie anger and disdaine, he at his returning assembled a great puissance against the king, and came so fast vpon him or he could be able to resist, that he was faine to void the realme, and flée into Holland for succor, where he remained for the space of two yéers, leauing his new wife in Westminster in Sanctuarie, where she was deliuered of Edward the Prince, of whom we before haue spoken. In which meane time the earle of Warwike toke out of prison, & set vp again K. Henry the first, which was before by K. Edward deposed, and that much what by the power of the earle of Warwike which was a wise man, and a couragious warrior, and of such strength, what for his lands, his alliance, and fauor with all people, that he made kings, and put downe kings almost at his pleasure, and not impossible to haue attained it himselfe, if hee had not reckoned it a greater thing to make a king than to be a king. But nothing lasteth alwaie: for in conclusion K. Edward returned, and with much lesse number than he had at Barnet on the Easterday field, slew the erle of Warwike, with many other great estates of that partie, and so stablie attained the crowne againe, that he peaceably enioyed it vntill his dying daie: and in such plight left it, that it could not be lost, but by the discord of his very friends, or falsehod of his fained friends. I haue rehearsed this businesse about this marriage somewhat the more at length, because

The king fled.

The Prince borne.

K. Henry the first set vp.

Of the earle of Warwike.

The earle of Warwike slaine.

because it might therby the better appeare vpon how slipper a ground the protector builded his color, by which he pretended king Edwards children to be bastards: But that invention simple as it was, it liked them to whom it sufficed to haue somewhat to saie, while they were sure to be compelled to no larger proofe than themselues list to make.

Now then (as I began to shew you) it was by the protector and his counsel concluded, that this Doctor Shaa should in a Sermon at Pauls crosse signifie to the people, that neither king Edwarde himselfe, nor the Duke of Clarence, were lawfullie begotten, nor were not the verie children of the duke of Yorke, but begotten vnlawfullie by other persons, by aduoutrie of the dutchesse their mother. And that also dame Elizabeth Lucy was verilie the wife of king Edward, and so the prince and all his children bastards, that were begotten vpon the Quéene. According to this deuise doctor Shaa the Sondaie after, at Pauls Crosse in a great audience (as alwaie assembled greate number to his preaching) he tooke for his theame *Spuria vitulamina non agent radices altas*. That is to saie: Bastard slips shall neuer take deepe roote. Doctor Shaas sermon on sunday the 19 of June.

Thereupon when he had shewed the great grace that God giueth, and secretlie infundeth in right generation after the lawes of matrimonie, then declared he that commonly those children lacked that grace, and for the punishment of their parentes were for the more part vnhappie which were gotten in base, and speciallie in aduoutrie, of which though some by the ignorance of the world and the truth hid from knowledge inherited for the season other mens lands, yet GOD alwaie so prouideth, that it continueth not in their bloode long, but the trueth comming to light, the rightfull inheritors bee restored and the Bastarde slippe pulled vp ere it can bee rooted deepe. And when he had laide for the proofe and confirmation of this sentence certaine examples taken out of the olde Testament, and other auncient Histories, then beganne he to descende into the praise of the LORD Richarde late Duke of Yorke, calling him Father to the lord protector, and declared the title of his heires vnto the Crowne, to whome it was after the death of king Henry the first entailed by authoritie of Parliament. Then shewed hee that his verie right heire of his bodie lawfullie begotten was onlie the Lord protector: For he declared then, that king Edwarde was neuer lawfullie married vnto the Quéene, but was before God husband vnto dame Elizabeth Lucie, and so his children bastards. And besides that, neither king Edward himselfe, nor the duke of Clarence, among those that were secret in the houshould, were reckoned verie surely for the children of the noble Duke, as those that by their fauors more resembled other knowne men than him. From whose vertuous conditions he laide also that king Edward was far off. But the Lord protector he said, the verie noble prince, the speciall paterne of knightly prowes, as well in al princely behauior as in the lineaments and fauor of his visage, represented the very face of the noble duke his father. This is quoth he, the fathers owne figure, this is his owne countenaunce, the very print of his visage, the very sure vndoubted Image, the plaine expresse likenes of that noble duke.

Now was it before deuised, that in the speaking of these wordes, the Pro-

tector ſhoulde haue come in among the people to the Sermon warde, to the end that thoſe meeting with his preſence, might haue béene taken among the hearers, as though the holie Ghoſt had put them in the preachers mouth, and ſhoulde haue moued the people euen there to crie, king Richard, king Richard, that it might haue béene after ſayde, that hee was ſpecially choſen by God, and in maner by myracle. But this deuiſe quailed, either by the Protectors negligence, or the Preachers ouermuch diligence. For while the Protector founde by the waie tarrying, leaſt hee ſhoulde preuent thoſe wordes, and the Doctor fearing that hee ſhoulde come ere his Sermon coulde come to theſe wordes, haſted his matter thereto, who was come to them, and paſte them, and entred into other matters ere the Protector came. Whome when hee beholde comming, hee ſodaynelie left the matter with which hee was in hande, and without ante deduction thereunto, out of all order, and out of all frame, beganne to repeate thoſe wordes agayne: This is the verie Noble Prince, the ſpeciall paterne of Knighlie prowes, which as well in all Princely behauiour, as in the lineamentes and fauour of his viſage, repreſenteth the verie face of the noble duke of Yorke his father: this is the fathers owne figure, this is his owne countenaunce, the verie printe of his viſage, the ſure vndoubted image, the plaine expreſſe likenes of the noble duke, whoſe remembrance can neuer die while he liueth. While theſe words were in ſpeaking, the Protector accompanied with the duke of Buckingham, went through the people into the place where the doctors commonly ſtand in the vpper ſtory, where hee ſtode to hearken the Sermon. But the people were ſo far from crying king Richarde, that they ſtod as they had béene turned into ſtones, for wonder of this ſhamefull Sermon.

Preacher. After which once ended, the Preacher gat him home, and neuer after durſt looke out for ſhame, but kept him out of ſight like an Owle. And when hee once aſked one that had béene his old friend, what the people talked of him, all were it that his owne conſcience well ſhewed him that they talked no good, yet when the other anſwered him, that there was in euerie mans mouth ſpoken of him much ſhame, it ſo ſtroke him to the hart, that within few daies after he withered and conſumed awaie.

The 21. of June. Then on the Tueſdaie following this ſermon, there came into the Guilde hall in London the duke of Buckingham, accompanied with diuers Lordes and Knightes, more than happilie knew the meſſage that they brought. And there in the Eaſt ende of the hall, where the Maior kéepeth the Huſtings, the maior with all the Aldermen being aſſembled about him, all the commons of the citie gathered before them: after ſilence commaunded vpon great pain in the protectors name, the duke ſtod vp, and (as he was neither vnlearned, and of nature marueilouſly well ſpoken) he ſaid vnto the people with a cleare and a loud voice in this maner of wiſe.

The Duke of Buckinghams Oration. Friends, for the zeale and heartie fauor that we beare you, wee bee come to breake vnto you, of a matter right great and weightie, and no leſſe weightie than pleaſing to God, and profitable to all the Realme: nor to no part of the realme more profitable, than to you the Citizens of this noble Citie. For why, that

that thing that we wot well ye haue long time lacked, and ſore longed for, that ye would haue giuen great good for, that yee would haue gone farre to fetch, that thing we be come hither to bring you without your labour, paine, coſt, aduenture or ieopardie. What thing is that? Certes the ſuretie of your owne bodies, the quiet of your Wiues and your Daughters, the ſafegarde of your goods: of all which thinges in time paſt ye ſtood euer more in doubt. For who was there of you all, that would reckon himſelfe lord of his own goods among ſo many grens and traps as were ſet therfore, among ſo much pilling and polling, among ſo manie tares and tallages, of which there was neuer end, and oftentimes no néed: or if anie were, it rather grew of riot, and vnreaſonable waſt, than anie neceſſarie or honorable charge? So that there was daillie pilled from good men and honeſt great ſubſtance of goods to be laſhed out among vnthrifts, ſo farre forth that fiftéenes ſufficed not, nor anie vſuall manner of knowne Tares: but vnder an eaſie name of benevolence and good will, the Commiſſioners ſo much of euerie man tooke, as no man could with his good will haue giuen: as though that name of benevolence, had ſignified that euery man ſhould pay not what himſelfe of his owne good will liſt to grant, but what the king of his good will liſt to take. Which never aſked little, but euery thing was haunſed aboue the meaſure, amercements turned into fines, fines into ranſoms, ſmall treſpaſſes into miſpriſion, miſpriſion into treaſon. Whereof I think no man loketh that we ſhould remember you of examples by name, as though Burdet were forgotten, that was for a word ſpoken in haſte cruelly beheaded, by the miſconſtruing of the lawes of this realme for the princes pleaſure; with no leſſe honour to Marcam then chiefe Juſtice, that left his office rather than he would aſſent to that iudgement, than to the diſhonеſty of thoſe that either for feare or flatterie gaue that iudgement. What Cooke your own worſhipfull neighbor, alderman and maior of this noble citie, who is of you either ſo negligent that he knoweth not, or ſo forgetfull that he remembreth not, or ſo hard harted that he pitieth not that worſhipful mans loſſe? what ſpeake we of loſſe? his vtter ſpoile and vndeſerued deſtruction, onelie for that it happened thoſe to fauor him whome the prince fauoured not. We néed not I ſuppoſe to rehearſe of theſe anie mo by name, ſith there bee (I doubt not) manie heere preſent, that either in themſelues, or in their nigh friendes haue knowne as well their goods as their perſons, greatlie indangered, either by fained quarrelles, or ſmall matters agréeued with heynous names. And alſo there was no crime ſo greate, of which there coulde lacke a pretext. For ſith the King preuenting the time of his inheritance attayned the Crowne by battell: it ſufficed in a rich man for a pretext of treaſon, to haue bёn of kinred or alliance, nére familiaritie, or longer acquaintance with anie of thoſe that were at anie time the K. enimies, which was at one time & other, more than halfe the realm. Thus were neither your goods in ſurety, & yet they brought your bodies in ieopardy, beſide the common aduenture of open war, which albeit that it is euer the will & occaſion of much miſchiefe, yet it is neuer ſo miſchieuous as where any people fall at diſſance among themſelues, nor in none earthly nation, ſo deadly & ſo peſtilent, as when it happeth among vs: & among vs neuer ſo long

T. Burdet Eſquire of Arrow in Warwikeſhire, looke Anno 1477.

Open warre.

continued dissention, nor so manie battailes in that season, nor so cruell and so deadlie foughten, as was in that kings daies that dead is, God forgiue it his soule. In whose time, and by whose occasion, what about the getting of the garlande, keeping it, leesing, and winning againe, it hath cost more English bloud, than hath twice the winning of France. In which inward warre among our selues, hath beene so great effusion of the ancient noble bloud of this Realme, that scarcely the halfe remaineth, to the great enfeebling of this noble land, beside many a good towne ransacked and spoiled by them that haue beene going to the fielde or comming from thence: And peace long after not much surer then warre. So that no time was there, in which rich men for their money, and great men for their landes, or some other for some feare, or some displeasure were not out of perill. For whome trusted he that mistrusted his owne brother? whome spared he that killed his owne brother? or who coulde perfitly loue him, if his owne brother could not? What manner of folke hee most fauoured we shall for his honor spare to speake of, howbeit, this wot you well all, that whoso was best, bare alwaie least rule, and more sute was in his daies vnto Shores wife, a vile and an abhominable strumpet, than to all the lordes in Englande, except vnto those that made her their Protector: which simple woman was well named and honest, till the king for his wanton lust and sinfull affection bereft her from her husbande, a right honest substantiall yong man among you. And in that point, which in good faith I am sorie to speake of, sauing that it is in vaine to kéepe in counsel that thing that all men know, the kings greedy appetite was insatiable, and euery where ouer all the realme intolerable: for no woman was there any where, yong or olde, rich or poore, whom he set his eie vpon, in whom he any thing liked, either person or fauor, speech, pace, or countenance, but without any feare of God, or respect of his honour, murmure or grudge of the world, he would importunely pursue his appetite, and haue her, to the great destruction of many a good woman, and great dolor to their husbands and their other friends, which being honest people of themselues, so much regard the cleannesse of their house, the chastity of their wiues and their children, that them were leauer to lése all that they haue beside, than to haue such a villany done them. And all were it that with this and other importable dealings, the realme was in euerie part annoied: yet specially ye here the citizens of this noble city, as wel for that amongst you is most plenty of all such thinges as minister matter to such iniuries, as for that you were nerest at hand, sith that nére hereabout was commonly his most abiding. And yet be ye the people whom he had as singular cause well and kindly to intreat, as any part of his realme, not only for that the prince by this noble city, as his especiall chamber, & the speciall well renowmed city of his realm, much honorable fame receiueth among all other nations: but also for that ye, not without your great cost, and sundry perils and ieopardies in all his wars, bare euen your speciall fauor to his part, which your kinde mindes borne vnto the house of Yorke, sith he hath nothing worthily acquited, there is of that house that nowe by Gods grace better shall, which thing to shewe you, is the whole summe and effect of this our present errand. It shall not, I wot well, need that

Ciuill warre.

London the kings especial chamber.

I

I rehearse to you againe that yée haue alreadie heard, of him that can better tel it, & of whom I am sure ye will better beléeue it: and reason is that it so be. I am not so prowd to loke therefore, that yée should reckon my woordes of as great authoritie as the preachers of the word of God, namely, a man so cunning and so wise, that no man better wotteth what he should saie, and therto so good and vertuous, that he would not saie the thing which he wist wer should not saie, in the pulpet, namely, into the which no honest man commeth to lie, which honourable Preacher yée well remember substantiallie declared vnto you at Paules Crosse, on Sundaie last passed, the right and title, that the most excellent Prince Richard Duke of Gloucester, nowe Protector of this realme hath vnto the crowne and kingdome of the same. For as the worshipfull man groundly made open vnto you, the children of king Edward the 4. were neuer lawfully begotten, for as much as the king (leauing his very wife dame Elizabeth Lucie) was neuer lawfully married vnto the Quéene their mother, whose bloud, sauing that he set his voluptuous pleasure before his honor, was full vnmétely be matched with his, and the mingling of whose bloods together, hath béene the effusion of great part of the noble bloud of this realm. Whereby it may well séeme the marriage not well made, of which there is so much mischiefe growne: For lacke of which lawfull accopling, and also of other thinges which the saide worshipfull doctor rather signified than fullie explained, and which thinges shall not be spoken for mee, as the thing wherein euerie man forbeareth to say that he knoweth in auoiding displeasure of my noble Lorde Protector, bearing, as nature requireth, a filiall reuerence to the Dutchesse his mother, for these causes I saie before remembred, that is to wit, for lacke of other issue lawfully comming of the late noble prince Richard Duke of Yorke, to whose roiall bloud the crowne of England and of France, is by the high authoritie of parliament entailed, the right and title of the same, is by the iust course of inheritance according to the common lawes of this lande, deuolute and commen vnto the most excellent Prince the Lord Protector, as to the verie lawfully begotten sonne of the forerembred noble Duke of Yorke. Which thing well considered, and the great knightly prowesse pondered, with manifolde vertues which in his noble person singularly abound, the nobles and commons also of this realme, and specially of the north part, not willing anie bastard bloud to haue the rule of the land, nor the abusions before in the same vsed anie longer to continue, haue condescended and fully determined to make humble petition to the most puissant prince the lord protector, that it may like his grace at our humble request, to take vpō him the guiding and gouernance of this realm, to the wealth and encrease of the same, according to his very right and iust title. Which thing I wote it well, he will be loath to take vpon him, as he whose wisedome well perceiueth the labour and studie both of minde and bodie, that shall come therewith, to whomsoeuer so will occupie the rome, as I dare saie he will, if he take it. Which rome I warne you well is no childes office: And that the great wise man well perceiued when he said: *Væ regno cuius rex puer est:* Woe is that realme that hath a childe to their king. Wherefore so much the more cause haue we to thanke

God,

God, that this noble personage which is so righteously intituled thereunto, is of so sad age, and thereunto so great wisedome ioyned with so great experience, which albeit he will be loath (as I haue said) to take it vpon him, yet shal he to our petition in that behalfe the more gratiously incline, if yee the worshipfull citizens of this the chiefe city of this realme, ioine with vs the nobles in our said request. Which for your owne weale we doubt not but ye will: and naytheleſſe I heartily praie you so to do, wherby you shall do great profit to all this realme beside, in chosing them so good a king, and vnto your selfe speciall commoditie, to whom his Maiestie shall euer after beare so much the more tender fauor, in how much he shall perceiue you the more prone and beneuolently minded toward his election. Wherein deare friends what minde you haue, we require you plainly to shew vs.

When the Duke had said, and loked that the people whom he hoped that the Maior had framed before, should after this proposition made, haue cried King Richard, king Richard, all was husht and mute, and not one word answered thereunto: therwith the duke was maruellously abashed, & taking the maior nearer to him, with other that were about him priuie to that matter, said vnto them softlie, what meaneth this, that this people bee so still? Sir (quoth the Maior) percase they perceiue you not well. That shall we mend (quoth he) if that will helpe.

And by and by somewhat louder he rehearsed them the same matter againe in other order and other words so wel and ornately, and naytheleſſe so euidently and plaine, with voice, gesture, and countenance so comely, and so conuenient, that euerie man much maruelled that heard him, and thought that they neuer had in their liues heard so euill a tale so well tolde.

But were it for wonder or feare, or that each lokt that other should speake first; not one word was there answered of all the people that stode before, but all was as still as the midnight, not so much as rowning amongſt them, by which they might seme to commune what was best to doe. When the Maior saw this, he with other partners of that Councell drewe about the Duke, and said that the people had not beene accustomed there to be spoken vnto, but by the Recorder, which is the mouth of the citie, and happily to him they will answere. With that the Recorder called Fitz William, a sad man and an honeſt, which was so newcome into that office, that he neuer had spoken to the people before, & loath was with that matter to begin; notwithſtanding, therunto commanded by the Maior, made rehearsall to the Commons of that the duke had twice rehearsed to them himselfe. But the Recorder so tempered his tale, that he shewed euerie thing as the Dukes wordes, and no part of his owne. But all this noting, no change made in the people, which alway after one, stood as they had beene men amased. Whereupon the Duke rowned vnto the Maior and said: this is a marueilous obstinate silence, and therewith he turned vnto the people againe with these wordes: Deare friendes, we come to moue you to that thing which peraduenture we not so greatly néeded, but that the Lords of this Realme, and the Commons of other parties might haue sufficed: sauing that we such loue beare you, and so much set by you, that we would not

Fitz William Recorder.

not gladlie doe without you, that thing in which to be partners is your weale and honor, which as it seemeth, either you see not, or wey not. Wherefore we require you giue vs answere one or other whether yee be minded as all the nobles of the realme be, to haue this Noble Prince nowe Protector to be your King or not.

At these wordes the people began to whisper among themselues secretly, that the voice was neither lowde nor distinct, but as it were the sounde of a swarme of Bees, till at the last in the neather ende of the Hall, a bushment of the Dukes seruants and Ashfields, and other longing to the Protector, with some prentises and laddes that thrust into the Hall among the prease, began sodainly at mens backes to crie out as lowde as their throates would giue, King Richard, King Richard, and threw vp their caps in token of ioy. And they that stode before cast backe their heads marueiling thereat, but nothing they saide.

And when the Duke and the Maior saw this manner, they wisely turned it to their purpose, and said it was a goodly crie, and a ioyfull to heare, euery man with one voice, no man saying nay. Wherfore frends (quoth the Duke) since that we perceiue it is all your whole mindes to haue this Noble man for your king, whereof we shall make to his grace so effectuall report, that we doubt not but it shall redound vnto your great weale and commoditie: we require yee that ye to morrow go with vs, and we with you vnto his noble grace, to make our humble request vnto him in manner before remembred. And therewith the Lordes came downe, and the companie dissolued and departed, the more part all sad, some with glad semblance that were not verie merrie, and some of those that came thither with the Duke not able to dissemble their sorrowe, were faine at his backe to turne their face to the wall, while the dolour of their heart burst out of their eies.

The Maior comming to Baynards Castle the 22. of Iune.

Then on the morrow after, the Maior with all the Aldermen and chiefe commoners of the Citie in their best maner apparelled, assembling themselues together, resorted vnto Baynardes Castle, where the Protector laie. To which place repayred also according to their appointment, the Duke of Buckingham, with diuers Noble men with him, beside manie knights and other Gentlemen. And thereupon the Duke sent worde vnto the Lord Protector of the being thereof a great and honorable companie, to moue a great matter vnto his grace.

Whereupon the Protector made difficultie to come out vnto them, but if he first knew some part of their errand, as though he doubted, and partly distrusted the comming of a number vnto him so sodainly, without any warning or knowledge whether they came for good or harme. Then the D. when he had shewed this vnto the Maior and other, that they might thereby see howe little the Protector loked for this matter, they sent vnto him by the messenger such louing message againe, and therewith so humbly besought him to vouchsafe, that they might resort to his presence, to propose their intent, of which they would vnto none other person part disclose, that at the last he came forth of his Chamber, and yet not downe vnto them, but stode aboue in a Gallerie

ouer

ouer them, where they might see him, and speake to him, as though he would not yet come too nere them, till hee wist what they meant. And thereupon the duke of Buckingham first made humble petition vnto him on the behalfe of them all, that his grace would pardon them, and licence them to propose vnto his grace the intente of their comming without his displeasure, without which pardon obtained, they durst not be bold to moue him of that matter. In which, albeit they meante as much honour to his Grace, as wealth to all the realme beside, yet were they not sure how his grace would take it, whom they would in no wise offend. Then the protector (as hee was verie gentle of himselfe, and also longed sore to wit what they meant) gaue him leaue to propose what him liked, verilie trusting for the good mind that hee bare them all, none of them anie thing would intende vnto him warde, wherewith he ought to be grieued.

When the Duke had this leaue and pardon to speake, then wared hee bold to shew him their intent and purpose, with all the causes moouing them thereunto, as ye before haue heard, & finally to beseech his grace, that it would like him of his accustomed goodnes and zeale vnto the realme nowe with his eie of pitie, to behold the long continued distresse and decay of the same, and to set his gratious hands to redresse an amendment thereof, by taking vpon him the crowne and gouernance of this realm, according to his right and title lawfullie descended vnto him, and to the laude of God, profite of the land, and vnto his grace so much the more honor, and lesse pain, in that that neuer prince raigned vpon any people, that were so glad to liue vnder his obeisance, as the people of this realme vnder his.

When the Protector had hearde the proposition, he loked verie strangelie thereat, and answered: That albeit it were that he partlie knewe the thinges by them alledged to bee true, yet such entire loue hee bare vnto king Edwarde and his children, that so much more hee regarded his honor in other realmes about, than the Crowne of anie one, of which hée was neuer desirous, that hee coulde not finde in his heart in this point to encline to their desire. For in all other nations where the truth were not well knowne, it shoulde peraduenture bee thought, that it were his owne ambitious mind and deuise, to depose the Prince, and take himselfe the Crowne, with which infamie hee would not haue his honour stained for anie Crowne, in which he had euer perceiued much more labour and payne than pleasure to him that would so vse it, as he that would not, were not worthie to haue it: Notwithstanding he not onelie pardoned them the motion that they made him, but also thanked them for the loue and heartie fauor they bare him, praying them for his sake to giue and beare the same to the prince, vnder whome hee was, and would bee content to liue, and with his labour and counsell, as farre as shoulde like the king to vse him, he would do his vttermost deuoire to set the Realme in good state, which was alreadie in this little while of his Protectorship (the praise giuen to God) well begun, in that the malice of such as were before occasion of the contrary, and of newe intended to be, were nowe partly by good policy, partly more by gods speciall prouidence, than mans prouision repressed.

Upon

Upon this answere giuen, the duke by the Protectors licence, a little rowned, as well with other noble men about him, as with the Maior and Recorder of London. And after that vpon like pardon desired and obtained, he shewed aloude vnto the protector, that for a finall conclusion, by the realme it was appoynted king Edwards line should not anie longer raigne ouer them, both for that they had so farre gone, that it was now no suretie to retreate, as for that they thought it for the weale vniuersall to take that waie, although they had not yet begun it. Wherefore if it would like his grace to take the crowne vpon him, they would humblie beseech him thereunto. If he would giue them a resolute answeare to the contrarie, which they would be loath to heare, then must they néedes seeke, and should not faile to find some other noble man that would.

These woordes much moued the Protector, which else as euerie man maie wit, would neuer of likelyhood haue enclined thereunto. But when he sawe there was none other waie, but that either he must take it, or else he and his both go from it, he said vnto the lords and commons: Sith we perceiue well that all the realme is so set, whereof we be very sorie that they will not suffer in anie wise king Edwards line to gouerne them, whome no man earthly can gouerne against their wils, and we well also perceiue, that no man is there, to whome the Crowne can by iust title appertaine, as to our selfe, as verie right heire lawfullie begotten of the bodie of our most deare father Richard late D. of Yorke, to which title is now ioined your election, the nobles & commons of this realme, which we of all titles possible take for the most effectuall: We bee content and agrée fauorably to encline to your petition and request, and according to the same, heere we take vpon vs the Royall Estate, preeminence and kingdome of the two noble realmes, England and France, the one from this day forward, by vs and our heires to rule, gouerne, & defend: the other by gods grace, and your good helpe, to get againe and subdue, & establish for euer in due obedience vnto this realme of England, the aduancement whereof we neuer aske of God longer to liue than we intend to procure. The protector taketh vpon him to be king.

With this there was a great shoute, crying, king Richarde, king Richarde. And then the Lordes went vp to the king (for so was hee from that time called) and the people departed, talking diuerslie of the matter, euerie man as his fantasie gaue him. But much they talked and maruelled of the maner of this dealing, that the matter was on both partes made so straunge, as though neyther had euer communed with other thereof before, when that themselues wist there was no man so dull that heard them, but he perceiued well enough, that all the matter was made betwéene them. Howbeit some excused that againe, and saide all must be done in good order: and men must sometime for the manners sake, not be aknowne what they know: for at the consecration of a bishop, euery man wotteth well by the paying for his buls, that he purposeth to be one, and though he pay for nothing else: and yet must he bee twise asked whether he will be bishop or no, and he must twise say nay, and at the thirde time take it, as compelled thereunto by his own will. And in a stage plaie the people know right wel, that he that plaieth the Soldain, is percase a sowter, yet

yet if one ſhould know ſo little good, to ſhew out of ſeaſon what acquaintance he hath with him, and call him by his owne name while he ſtandeth in his maieſtie, one of his tormentors might hap to breake his head, and worthie, for marring of the play: And ſo they ſaid, that theſe matters be kings games, as it were ſtage plaies, and for the more part, plaied vpon ſcaffolds: in which more men be but the lokers on. And they that wiſe be, will meddle no further; for they that ſometime ſtep vp, and play with them, when they can not plaie their partes, they diſorder the play, and do themſelues no good.

King Richard the third, borne at Fodringhay: ſome ſay at Barckhamſtede.

1483
An. reg. 1.
The 25. of June.
This that is heere betweene this marke ¶ & this marke * was not written by Maiſter Moore in this hiſtorie written by him in Engliſh, but is tranſlated out of this hiſtorie which he wrote in Latin.

¶ The next daie, the protector with a great traine, went to Weſtminſter hall, and there when he had placed himſelfe in the court of the kings bench, declared to the audience, that he would take vpon him the crowne in that place there, where the king himſelfe ſitteth and miniſtreth the lawe, becauſe he conſidered, that it was the chiefeſt duty of a king to miniſter the lawes. Then with as pleaſant an oration as he could, he went about to win vnto him, the nobles, the merchants, the artificers, and in concluſion, all kind of men, but eſpecially the lawyers of this realme. And finally, to the intent that no man ſhould hate him for feare, and that his deceitfull clemencie might get him the goodwill of the people, when he had declared the diſcommoditie of diſcord, and the commodities of concord and vnitie, he made an open proclamation, that he did put out of his minde all enmities, and that he there did openly pardon all offences committed againſt him. And to the intent that he might ſhew a proofe thereof, he commanded that one Fogge, whom he had long deadly hated, ſhould be brought then before him, who being brought out of the ſanctuarie (for thither had he fled for feare of him) in the ſight of the people, he toke him by ẏ hand: which thing the common people reioyced at, and praiſed, but wiſe men toke it for a vanitie. In his returne homeward, whomſoeuer he met, he ſaluted: for a mind that knoweth it ſelfe guiltie, is in a maner detected to a ſeruile flatterie.

King Richard, to be ſure of all enemies, had ſent for out of the north fiue thouſand men to bee at his coronation, vnder the leading of Robert of Ridſdale, theſe being but meanely apparrelled, and woorſe harneiſed, muſtered in Finsberie field.

On the fourth of Iuly, hee came to the Tower by water with his wife, and on the fift day he created T. lord *Howard* duke of Norffolke, ſir T. his ſonne earle of Surrey, *William* lord *Barkeley* earle of Nottingham, *Francis* lord *Louel*, vicount *Louel* and the kings chamberlaine: the lord *Stanley* was deliuered out of warde, and made ſteward of the kings houſholde. Alſo the archbiſhop of Yorke was deliuered,

liuered, but *Morton* Bishop of Ely was committed to the Duke of Buchingham to be kept in warde, who sent him to his mannor of Brecknocke in Wales, there to be kept. The same night the king made knights of the Bathe to the number of seuenteene.

On the sixt of Iuly he rode through the Citie of London toward Westminster with great pompe: and on the morrow being the seuenth, he with his wife queene *Anne* were crowned.

When he had begunne his raigne in July, after this mockish election, then was he crowned the first, or rather the seuenth day of the same moneth. And that solemnitie was furnished for the most part, with the selfe same prouision that was appointed for the coronation of his nephew.*

After this were taken for rebels against the king *Robert Ruffe* sergeant of London, *William Daw* pardoner of Hounslow, *Iohn Smith* groome of king *Edwards* stirrop, and *Stephen Ireland* wardrober in the Tower, with many other, that they should haue sent writings into the parts of Britaine to the earles of Richmond and of Penbrooke, and the other lords: and how they were purposed to haue set fire on diuers partes of London, which fire, whilest men had beene stanching, they would haue stolen out of the Tower, the prince *Edward*, and his brother the duke of Yorke, &c. *Robert Ruffe*, *William Daw*, *Iohn Smith*, and *Stephen Ireland*, were at Westminster iudged to death, and from thence drawne to the Tower hill, and there beheaded, and their heads were set on London bridge.

Now fell there mischiefes thicke. And as the thing euill gotten is neuer wel kept, through all the time of his raigne neuer ceased there cruell death and slaughter, till his owne destruction ended it. But as he finished his time with the best death and the most righteous, that is to wit, his owne, so began hee with the most piteous and wicked, I meane the lamentable murther of his innocent nephewes, the yong king and his tender brother, whose death and finall infortune hath naytheles commen so far in question, that some remaine yet in doubt, whether they were in his daies destroyed or no. Not for that onely that Perkin Werbecke by manie folkes malice, and moe folkes folly, so long space abusing the world, was aswell with princes as the power people, reputed and taken for the yonger of these two, but for that also that all things were in late daies so couertly demeaned, one thing pretended, and another meant, that there was nothing so plaine and openly proued, but that yet for the common custome of close and couert dealing, men had it euer inwardly suspect, as manie well counterfeited iewels make the true mistrusted. Howbeit concerning the opinion, with the occasions moouing either partie, we shal haue place more at large to intreat, if we hereafter happen to write the time of the late noble prince of famous memorie K. Henry the 7. or percase that historie of Perkin in any compendious processe by it selfe. But in the meane time for this present matter, I shall rehearse you the dolorous end of those babes, not after euery waie that I haue heard, but by such men, and by such meanes, as me thinketh it were hard but it should be true.

Sir Thomas Moore againe in English.

Perkin Werbecke.

King Richard after his coronation, taking his way to Gloucester to visite in his newe honour, the townes of which he bare the name of his olde, deuised as he

he rode to fulfil the thing which he before had intended. And forasmuch as his minde gaue him, that his nephewes liuing, men woulde not reckon that hee coulde haue right to the Realme, he thought therefore without delaie to ridde them, as though the killing of his kinsmen coulde amend his cause, and make him a kindlie king. Whereupon hee sent one Iohn Greene, whome hee specially trusted, vnto sir Robert Brakenbury Constable of the tower, with a letter and credence also, that the same sir Robert should in any wise put the two children to death. This Iohn Greene did his errand vnto Brakenburie, kneeling before our Ladie in the Tower, who plainelie answered, that hee woulde neuer put them to death to by therefore: with which answere Iohn Greene returning, recounted the same to king Richard at Warwike yet in his waie. Wherewith he tooke such displeasure and thought, that the same night he said vnto a secret page of his: Ah whome shall a man trust? Those that I haue brought vp my selfe, those that I had weened would most surelie serue me, euen those faile me, and at my commandement will do nothing for mée. Sir (quoth his page) there lieth one on your pallet without, that I dare well saie, to do your grace pleasure, the thing were right hard that he would refuse, meaning this by Sir Iames Tirell, which was a man of right goodlie personage, and for natures giftes woorthie to haue serued a much better prince, if hee had well serued GOD, and by grace obtayned as much trueth and good will as hee had strength and wit. The man had an high heart, and sore longed vpwarde, not rising yet so fast as he had hoped, being hindered & kept vnder by the meanes of Sir Richard Ratcliffe, and Sir William Catesby, which longing for no moe partners of the Princes fauor, & namelie not for him, whose pride they wille would beare no péere, kept him by secret driftes out of al secret trust, which thing this page well had marked and knowne: wherefore this occasion offered, of verie speciall friendship he tooke his time to put him forward, and by such wise to do him good, that all the enimies he had, except the diuell, could neuer haue done him so much hurt. For vpon this pages woordes king Richard arose (for this communication had hee sitting at the draught, a conuenient Carpet for such a counsell) and came out into a pallet chamber, on which hee found in bed Sir Iames and Sir Thomas Tirels, of person like, and brethren of blode, but nothing of kinne in conditions. Then saide the king merrilie to them, what sirs, bee yée in bed so sone? And calling vp Sir Iames, brake to him secretlie his mind in this mischieuous matter: in which he found him nothing strange. Wherefore on the morrowe hee sent him to Brakenburie with a letter, by which hee was commanded to deliuer Sir Iames all the keies of the tower for one night, to the end hee might there accomplish the kinges pleasure, in such thinges as he had giuen him commandement. After which letter deliuered, and the keyes receyued, Sir Iames appointed the night next ensuing to destroie them, deuising before and preparing the meanes. The Prince as sone as the protector left the name, and tooke himselfe as king, had it shewed vnto him, that he shoulde not raigne, but his vncle shoulde haue the Crowne. At which woords the prince sore abashed, began to sigh and said: Alas, I would my vncle would let me haue my life yet, though I leese my kingdome. Then he

John Greene. Rob. Brakenbury Constable of the Tower.

Sir Iames Tirell.

Authority loueth no partners.

that

that told him the tale, vsed him with good words, and put him in the best comfort he could. But forthwith was the prince and his brother both shut vp, and all other remoued from them, onlie one called Black Will, or William Slaughter except, set to serue them and see them sure. After which time the prince neuer tied his points, nor aught rought of himselfe, but with that yong babe his Brother, lingred with thought and heauines, till this traiterous death deliuered them of that wretchednes: for sir Iames Tyrell deuised that they should be murthered in their beddes. To the execution whereof, he appointed Miles Forrest, one of the foure that kept them, a fellowe fleshed in murther before time. To him he ioined one Iohn Dighton his owne horse-keeper, a bigge, broad, square, strong knaue.

Then all the other being remooued from them, this Miles Forrest, and Iohn Dighton, about midnight (the sélie children lying in their beds) came into the Chamber, and sodainlie lapped them vp among the clothes, so to bewrapped them and intangled them, keeping down by force the feather bed and pillowes hard vnto their mouths, that within a while, smothered and stifled, their breath failing, they gaue vp to God their innocent soules into the ioies of heauen, leauing to the tormentors their bodies dead in the bed. Which after that the wretches perceiued, first by the strugling with the paines of death, and after long lying still, to be throughlie dead, they laid their bodies naked out vpon the bed, and fetched sir Iames to see them, which vpon the sight of them, caused those murtherers to burie them at the staire foot, meetelie deepe in the grounde, vnder a great heape of stones. The yoong K. & his brother murthered.

Then rode sir Iames in great haste to K. Richard, and shewed him all the maner of the murther, who gaue him great thanks, and (as some say) there made him knight. But hee allowed not as I haue learde, the burying in so vile a corner, saying, that he would haue them buried in a better place, because they were a kings sonnes. Lo the honorable courage of a king. Whereupon they saie, that a priest of S. Robert Brakenbury toke vp the bodies againe, and secretlie enterred them in such place, as by the occasion of his death, which onelie knew it, could neuer since come to light. Verie troth it is, and well known, that at such time as Sir Iames Tyrell was in the Tower for treason committed against the most famous Prince King Henrie the seuenth, both Dighton and hee were examined, and confessed the murther in manner aboue written, but whither the bodies were remooued, they coulde nothing tell. And thus, as I haue learned of them that much knew, and little cause had to lie, were these two noble Princes, these innocent tender children, borne of most roiall blod, brought vp in great wealth, likelie long to liue, raigne, and rule in the realm, by traiterous tyrannie taken, depriued of their estate, shortly shut vp in prison, and priuilie slain and murthered, their bodies cast God wot where, by the cruel ambition of their vnnaturall vncle and his dispiteous tormentors. Which thinges on euerie part well pondered, God neuer gaue this world a more notable example, neyther in what vnsuretie standeth this worldelie weale, or what mischiefe worketh the proude enterprise of an hie heart, or finallie, what wretched ende ensueth such dispiteous crueltie. For first to beginne with the

miniſters, Miles Forreſt at Saint Martins peecemeale rotted awaie: Dighton indeede yet walketh on aliue in good poſſibilitie to be hanged ere he die: but ſir Iames Tyrell died at the Tower hill beheaded for treaſon: King Richard himſelfe, as ye ſhall hereafter heare, ſlaine in the field, hacked and hewed of his enemies handes, carried on horſebacke dead, his haire in deſpight torne and tugged like a Curre Dogge: and the miſchiefe that he toke was within leſſe than three yeares of the miſchiefe that he did, and yet all the meane time ſpent in much paine and trouble outward, much feare, anguiſh, and ſorrow within. For I haue heard by credible report of ſuch as were ſecret with his chamberlaine, that after this abhominable deed done, he neuer had quiet in his mind. He neuer thought himſelfe ſure: where he went abroad, his eien whirled about, his body preſtly fenced, his hand euer vpon his dagger, his countenance & maner like one alwaies readie to ſtrike againe; he toke ill reſt a nights, lay long waking and muſing, ſore wearied with Care & Watch, rather ſlumbred than ſlept, troubled with fearefull dreames, ſodainelie ſometime ſtart vp, leapt out of his bed, and ran about the chamber, ſo was his reſtles heart continually toſſed and tumbled with the tedious impreſſion and ſtormy remembrance of his abhominable deede.

Now had he outward no long time in reſt: for hereupon, ſome after began the conſpiracy, or rather, good confederation betweene the Duke of Buckingham and many other gentlemen againſt him.

The occaſion whereupon the king and the duke fell out, is of diuers folke diuers wiſe pretended.

This Duke (as I haue for certaine beene enformed) as ſoone as the Duke of Gloucеſter, vpon the death of King Edward came to Yorke, and there had ſolemne funerall ſeruice for king Edward, ſent thither in the moſt ſecret wiſe he could, one Perſall his truſtie ſeruant, who came to Iohn Ward, a chamberer of like ſecret truſt with the duke of Gloceſter, deſiring, that in the moſt cloſe and couert maner, he might be admitted to the preſence and ſpeech of his maſter. And the duke of Gloceſter aduertiſed of his deſire, cauſed him in the dead of the night, after all other folks auoided, to be brought vnto him in his ſecret chamber, where Perſall after his maſters recommendation, ſhewed him, that he had ſecretly ſent to ſhew him in his new world, he would take ſuch part as he woulde, and waite vpon him with a thouſand good fellowes, if neede were. The Meſſenger ſent backe with thankes, and ſome ſecrete inſtruction of the protectors mind: yet met him againe with farther from the duke his maſter, within fewe dayes after at Nottingham: whither the Protector from Yorke, with many gentlemen of the north country, to the number of ſix hundred horſes, was come on his way to London ward, and after ſecret meeting and communication had, eftſoone departed. Whereupon at Northampton, the duke met with the Protector himſelfe with 300. horſes, and from thence ſtill continued with him partner of all his deuiſes, till that after his Coronation they departed, as it ſeemed very great friends at Gloceſter: from whence, as ſoone as the duke came home, he ſo lightly turned from him, and ſo highly conſpired againſt him, that a man would maruell whereof the change grew. And ſurely,

the

the occasion of their variaunce is of diuers men diuerslie reported. Some haue said (I heard saie) that the Duke a little before the Coronation, among other things, required of the protector the Duke of Hertfords Lands, to the which he pretended himselfe iust inheritor. And for as much as the title which hee claymed by inheritance, was somewhat enterlaced with the Title to the crowne, by the line of king Henry before deprived, the protector conceiued such indignation, that he reiected the dukes request with many spitefull and minatory words, which so wounded his hart with hatred and mistrust, that he neuer after could endure to loke aright on king Richard, but euer feared his owne life, so far forth, that when the protector rode through London toward his coronation, he fained himselfe sick, because he would not ride with him. And the other taking it in euil part, sent him word to rise, & come ride, or he would make him be carried: whereupon he rode on with euil will, and that notwithstanding on the morrow, rose from the feast, fayning himselfe sick, and king Richard said it was done in hatred and despight of him. And they said, that euer after continuallie each of them liued in such hatred and distrust of other, that the Duke verilie loked to haue bene murthered at Glocester. From which naitheles, he in faire maner departed. But surely some right secret at that day denie this: and manie right wise men thinke it vnlikelie (the deepe dissembling nature of both those men considered, and what neede in that greene world the Protector had of the Duke, and in what perill the duke stood, if he fell once in suspition of the tyrant) that eyther the Protector woulde giue the duke occasion of displeasure or the duke the protector occasion of mistrust. And verily men think that if king Richard had anie such opinion conceiued, hee woulde neuer haue suffered him to escape his hands. Very troth it is, the duke was an high minded man, and euill could beare the Glorie of another, so that I haue hearde of some that saie they sawe it, that the duke at such time as the Crowne was first set vpon the protectors head, his eie could not abide the sight thereof, but wryed his head another waie. But men say, that he was of troth not well at ease, and that both to king Richard well knowen, and not ill taken, nor any demand of the dukes vncourteously reiected, but hee both with great giftes and high behests, in most louing and trustie maner, departed at Glocester. But sone after his comming home to Brecknocke, hauing there in custodie by the commandement of king Richard doctor Morton Bishop of Ely, who (as ye before heard) was taken in the councell at the tower, wared with him familiar: whose wisedome abused his pride to his owne deliuerance and the dukes destruction. The bishop was a man of great naturall wit, verie well learned, and honorable in behauiour, lacking no wise waies to winne fauor. Hee had bene fast vpon the part of K. Henry, while that part was in wealth, and naptheles left it not, nor forsake it in wo, but fled the realm with the quéene and the prince, while king Edward had the king in prison, neuer came home, but to the field: After which losse, and that part vtterly subdued, the other, for his fast faith and wisedome, not onelie was content to receyue him, but also wooed him to come, and had him from thence forth both in secret trust, and verie special fauour, which hee nothing deceyued. For he beeing (as ye haue heard) after

king Edwards death first taken by the tyrant, for his trueth to the king, found the meane to set this Duke in his toppe, ioined gentlemen togither in aide of king Henrie, deuising first the marriage betweene him and king Edwardes daughter, by which his faith, hee declared the good seruice to both his masters at once, with infinit benefite to the Realme, by the Continuation of those two bloods in one, whose seuerall titles had long vnquieted the lande, hee fled the realme, went to Rome, neuer minding more to meddle with the world, til the noble prince king Henry the 7. gat him home againe, made him Archbishop of Canterburie and Chancellor of England, whereunto the Pope ioined the honor of Cardinall. Thus liuing manie daies in as much honour as one man might well with, ended them so godlie, that his death with Gods mercie well changed his life.

This man therefore, as I was about to tell you, by the long and often alternate proofe, as well of prosperitie as aduers fortune, had gotten by great experience the verie mother and mistresse of wisedome, a deepe insight in politike worldlie drifts. Whereby, perceiuing now this duke glad to commune with him, fedde him with faire wordes, and manie pleasant praises. And perceiuing by the processe of their communication, the Dukes pryde, nowe and then balke out a little bread of enuie, toward the glorie of the king, and thereby feeling him easie to fall out if the matter were well handled: hee craftilie sought the waies to pricke him forwarde, taking alwaies the occasion of his comming, and so keeping himselfe so close within his boundes, that hee rather seemed to followe him, than to leade him. For, when the Duke first beganne to praise and boaste the King, and shewe howe much profite the realme shoulde take by his raigne: My Lorde Morton answeared: Surely my Lord, folly it were for me to lie, for if I would sweare the contrarie, your Lordship would not I weene beleeue, but that if the world would haue gone as I woulde haue wished, king Henries son had had the crown, & not king Edward. But after that God had ordered him to lose it, & king Edward to raign, I was neuer so mad that I would with a dead man striue against the quicke. So was I to K. Edward a faithfull chaplaine, and glad would haue bin that his child had succeeded him. Howbeit, if the secret iudgement of God haue otherwise prouided, I purpose not to spurne against a pricke, nor labor to set vp that god pulleth downe. And as for the late Protector and now king. And euen there hee left, saying, that he had alreadie meddled too much with the world, and would from that daie meddle with his booke and his beades, and no further. Then longed the duke sore to heare what he would haue said, because he ended with the King, and there so sodainelie stopped, and exhorted him so familiarlie betweene them twaine, to bee bold to say what soeuer he thought, whereof hee faithfullie promised, there should neuer come hurt, and peraduenture more good than he would weene, and that himselfe intended to vse his faithfull secrete aduise and counsel, which he said was the onelie cause for which he procured of the king to haue him in his custody, where hee might reckon himselfe at home, and else had hee beene put in the hands of them with whome he should not haue founde the like fauour. The Bishop right humblie thanked him, and saide: In good

faith

faith my Lord, I loue not to talke much of Princes, as a thing not all out of perill, though the word be without fault, forasmuch as it shall not be taken as the partie meant it, but as it pleaseth the Prince to construe it. And euer I thinke on Aesopes tale, that when the Lion had proclaymed, that on payne of death, there shoulde none horned beast abide in that wood: one that had in his forehead a bunch of flesh, fled awaie a great pace. The fore that saw him run so fast, asked him whither hee made all that haste? And hee answered, in fayth I neither wot, nor recke, so I were once hence, because of this proclamation made of horned beasts. What fole? quoth the fore, thou mateſt abide well ynough, the Lion meant not by thée, for it is none horne that is in thine heade. No marrie (quoth he) that wot I well enough: but what and he call it an horn, where am I then? The Duke laughed merrilie at the tale, and said, My lord, I warant you, neither the Lion nor the Boare shall pick ante matter at ante thing heere spoken, for it shall neuer come to their eares. In good faith Sir, said the Bishop, if it did, the thing that I was about to saie, taken as well (as afore God I meant) it could deserue but thanks: and yet taken as I wéene it would, might happen to turne me to little good, and you to lesser. Then longed the duke yet much more to wit what it was: whereupon the bishop said, In good faith my L. as for the late protector, sith hee is now king in possession, I purpose not to dispute his title, but for the weale of this realme, whereof his grace hath nowe the gouernance, and whereof I am my selfe one poore member, I was about to wish, that to those good abilities whereof hee hath alreadie right manie, little néeding my prayse, it might yet haue pleased God for the better store, to haue giuen him some of such other excellent vertues mæte for the rule of a realme, as our Lord hath planted in the person of your grace: and there left againe.

The Duke somewhat marueling at his sodaine pauses, said: My Lord, I note your often breathing and sodaine stopping in your communication, so that to my intelligence, your words neither come to anie direct or perfect sentence in conclusion, whereby either I might haue knowledge what your intent is now toward the king, or what affection you beare toward me. For the comparison of good qualities ascribed to vs both, maketh mee not a little to muse, thinking that you haue some other priuy imagination imprinted in your hart which you bee abashed to disclose, and especiallie to mee, which on my honour do assure you to be as secret in this case as the deafe and dumbe person to the singer, or the trée to the hunter. The Bishop beeing somewhat bolder, considering the dukes promise, but most of all animated, because hee knew the duke desirous to be magnified, & also he perceiued the inward hatred which he bare towarde king Richarde, hée opened his stomacke to the bottome, and said: My singular good Lord, sith the time of my captiuitie, which being in your graces custody, I may rather call it a libertie, than a straight imprisonment, in auoiding of idlenes ỹ mother of all vices, in reading bookes & ancient pamphlets I haue found this sentence written, That no man is borne free and at libertie of himselfe onely: for one part of dutie hee oweth to his parents, another part to his friendes and kinsfolkes: but the native countrie, in the which hee first

This that followeth is abridged out of Edward hall.

tasted this pleasant and flattering world, demandeth a debt not to bee forgotten. Which saying causeth me to consider in what case this Realme my native country now standeth, and in what estate and assurance before this time it hath continued: what gouernor we now haue, and what ruler we might haue: for I plainelie perceiue (the realme being in this case) must néedes decate, and bee brought to confusion: but one hope I haue, that is, when I consider your noble personage, your iustice and indifferencie, your feruent zeale and ardent loue toward your naturall country, and in like maner the loue of your countrie toward you, the great learning, pregnant witte, and eloquence, which so much doth abound in your person, I must néedes thinke this realme fortunate which hath such a prince in store, méete and apt to be gouernour. But on the other side, when I call to memorie the good qualities of the late Protector, and now called king, so violated by tyrannie, so altered by vsurped authoritie, so clouded by blind ambition, I must néedes say, that hee is neither méete to bee king of so noble a realme, nor so famous a realme méet to be governed by such a tyrant. Was not his first enterprise to obtaine the crown begun by the murther of diuers noble personages? Did he not secondarily proceede against his owne naturall mother, declaring hir openly to be a woman giuen to carnall affection and dissolute liuing? declaring furthermore his two brethren and two nephewes to be bastards, and to be borne in adulterie? yet not contented, after he had obtained the garland, he caused the two poore innocents his nephewes committed to him, to be shamefullie murthered, the blood of which little babes daylie crie to God from the earth for vengeance: what suretie shall be in this realme to anie person, either for life or goods vnder such a cruell Prince, which regardeth not the destruction of his owne blood, and then the lesse, the losse of other? But now to conclude what I meane toward your noble person, I say and affirme, if you loue G D D, your linage, or your native countrey, you must your selfe take vpon you the Crowne of this realme, both for the maintenance of the honour of the same, as also for the deliuerance of your naturall countreymen from the bondage of such a tyrant. And if your selfe will refuse to take vpon you the crown of this realme, then I adiure you by the faith that you owe to God, to deuise some way how this realm may be brought to some conuenient regiment, vnder some good gouernor. When the bishop had ended his saying, the duke sighed, and spake not of a greate while, so that night they communed no more. The next day the D. sent for the bishop, to whom he saide, My Lord of Ely, I must néedes in hart thinke, and with mouth confesse, that you be a sure friend, a trustie counsellor, and a very louer of your country. And sith at our last communication, you haue disclosed the secretes of your heart, touching the new vsurper of the crowne, and also haue a little touched the aduancement of the two noble families of Yorke and Lancaster, I shal likewise declare vnto you my priuie intentes and secret cogitations: and to beginne, when king Edwarde was deceased, I then beganne to studie, and with deliberation to ponder in what manner this Realme shoulde bee gouerned. I perswaded with my selfe to take parte with the Duke of Gloucester, whome I thought to bee as cleane without dissimulation, as tractable without iniurie,

and

and so by my meanes hee was made Protector both of the king and Realme, which authoritie beeing once getten, hee neuer ceased priuilie to require mee and other Lordes, as well spirituall as temporall, that hee might take vpon him the Crowne, till the Prince came to the age of foure and twentie yeeres, and were able to gouerne the Realme as a sufficient king: which thing, when he sawe me somewhat sticke at, he then brought in Instrumentes, autentike Doctors, proctors & notaries of the law, with depositions of diuers witnesses, testifying K. Edwards Children to bee Bastardes: which depositions then I thought to bee as true, as now I know them to be fained. When the said depositions were before vs read and diligentlie heard, hee stode vp bare headed saying: Well my Lordes, euen as I and you woulde, that my Nephewes shoulde haue no wrong: so I praie you do me nothing but right, for these witnesses and sayinges of famous Doctors be true: for I am onelie the vndubitate heire to Richard Plantagenet duke of Yorke, adiudged to be the very heire to the crown of this realme by authority of parliament. Which thinges so by learned men for verity to vs declared, caused me and other to take him for our lawfull and vndoubted prince and soueraign lord: so againe by my aid he of a protector was made a king: but when he was once crowned king, and in full possession of the realm, he cast away his old conditions. For when I my selfe sued to him for my part of the earle of Herefords lands, which his brother king Edw. wrongfully detained from me, and also required to haue the office of the high Constablership of England, as diuers of my noble ancestors before this time haue had, and in long descent continued: in this my first suit, he did not only first delay me, and afterward deny me, but gaue me such vnkind words, as though I had neuer furthered him, all which I suffered patiently: but when I was informed of the death of the two yong innocents, O Lord my hart inwardlie grudged, in so much that I abhorred the sight of him. I toke my leaue of the court, & returned to Brecknock to you, but in the iourny as I returned I had diuers imaginations how to depriue this vnnaturall vncle. First I fantasied, that if I list to take vpon me the crown, now was the way made plain, and occasion giuen. For I saw he was disdained of the Lordes temporall, and accursed of the Lordes spirituall. After diuers cogitations of this matter, as I rode betweene Worcester & Bridgenorth, I encountred with the ladie Margaret Countesse of Richmond, now wife to the Lord Stanley, which is the very daughter and sole heire to Iohn duke of Somerset my grandfathers elder brother: so that she and her sonne the earle of Richmond, be both betweene me and the gate, to enter into the maiestie roiall, and getting of the crown: and when we had a little communed concerning her son, and were departed, I then began to dispute with my selfe, whether I were best to take vpon me, by the election of the nobilitie & communaltie, or to take it by power. Thus standing in the wauering ambiguitie, I considered first, the office, dutie, and paine of a king, which surelie I thinke that no mortall man can iustly and truly obserue, except he be elected by God as king Dauid was: but further I remembred, that if I once toke on me the gouernance of the realm, the daughters of king Edward and their allies, being both for his sake much beloued, & also for the great iniury

done to them much pitied, would neuer cease to barke at the one side of mee. Semblably my cousen the Earle of Richmond his aydes and kinsfolke, will surely attempt either to bite or pierce me on the other side, so that my life and Rule shoulde euer hang vnquiet in doubt of death or deposition. And if the sayde two Linages of Yorke and Lancaster shoulde ioyne in one against me, then were I surely matched. Wherefore I haue clerely determined vtterly to relinquish all imaginations concerning the obtaining of the crown: for as I told you, the countesse of Richmonde in my returne from the newe named king, meeting me in the high waie, prayed mee first for kinred sake, secondlie for the loue I bare to my grandfather duke Humfrey, which was sworn brother to her father, to moue the king to be good to her son Henry earle of Richmond, and to licence him with his fauour to returne againe into Englande, and if it were his pleasure so to do, she promised that the earle her son should marry one of king Edwardes daughters at the appoyntment of the king, without anie thing demanded for the saide espousalles, but onelie the kings fauor, which request I sone ouerpassed and departed, but after in my lodging I called to memorie more of that matter I am bent, that the earle of Richmond heire of the House of Lancaster, shall take to Wife Ladie Elizabeth eldest Daughter to king Edward, by the which marriage both the houses of Yorke and Lancaster maie be vnite in one: when the duke had said, the Bishop Morton, which fauored euer ỳ house of Lancaster was wonderous ioifull, for all his imagination tended to this effect, and least the Dukes courage shoulde swage, or his mind alter, hee sayde to the Duke: My Lorde of Buckingham, sith by GODS prouision, and your incomparable wisedome, this Noble conjunction is first mooued, it is necessarie to consider what persons we shall first make privy of this politike conclusion. By my troth (quoth the Duke) wee will beginne with my ladie of Richmond the earles mother, which knoweth where he is in Britaine: sith you will beginne that waie (sayde the Byshoppe) I haue an old friende with the Countesse, called Reynolde Bray, for whome I shall send if it bee your pleasure: so the Bishop wrote for him to come to Brekenocke: who straight came backe with the messenger, where the duke and the bishop declared what they had deuised for the preferment of the earle of Richmond son to his Ladie and mistresse: willing her first to compasse howe to obtaine the good will of Queene Elizabeth, and also of her eldest daughter, and after secretlie to sende to hir son in Britaine, to declare what high honor was prepared for him, if he would sweare to marrie the Lady Elizabeth as sone as hee was king of the realme. Reinold Bray with a glad hart returned to the countesse his Lady. When Bray was gone, the Bishop tolde the Duke, that if hee were in his Ile of Ely, he could make many friendes to further their enterprise. The duke knew this to be true, but yet loath to lose the companie of such a counseller, gaue the bishop faire words, saying, he shoulde shortly depart well accompanied for feare of enimies, but the bishop ere the dukes company were assembled, secretlie disguised, in a night departed, and came to Ely, where he found money and friendes, and so sayled into Flaunders, where hee did the Earle of Richmond good seruice. When Reinold Bray had declared his message to the

countesse,

counteſſe, no marueil if ſhe were glad, wherefore ſhe deuiſed a meanes how to breake this matter to Quéene Elizabeth then being in Sanctuary at Weſtminſter, and hauing in her family a certaine Welchman called Lewes learned in phyſicke, now hauing opportunitie to breake her minde vnto him, declared that the time was come that her ſon ſhould be ioined in marriage with lady Elizabeth daughter and heire to K. Edward: and that king Richard ſhould out of all honour and eſtate be dieted: and required him to go to Quéene Elizabeth, not as a meſſenger, but as one that came friendly to viſite her, and as time and place ſhould ſerue, to make her priuie of this deuice. This phyſition with good diligence repaired to the Quéene, and when he ſaw time conuenient, he ſaid vnto her: Madam, although my imagination be very ſimple, yet for the entire affection I beare to you and to your children, I am ſo bolde to vtter vnto you a ſecret conceit that I haue compaſſed in my braine. When I remember the great loſſe that you haue ſuſtained by the death of your louing huſband, and the great ſorrow that you haue ſuffered by the cruell murther of your innocent children, I can no leſſe do than dailie ſtudie how to bring your hart to comfort, and alſo to reuenge the quarrell of you & your children on that cruell tyrant K. Richard. And firſt conſider what battel and what miſchiefe hath riſen by the diſſention betwéene the two houſes of Yorke and Lancaſter, which two families if they maie bee ioyned in one, I doubt not but that your line ſhall be againe reſtored to your great ioy and comfort. You know Madame, that of the houſe of Lancaſter the earle of Richmond is next of blood, and to the houſe of Yorke your daughters nowe are heires: If yee could inuent the meane how to couple your eldeſt daughter with the earle of Richmond in matrimonie, no doubt but the vſurper ſhould be ſhortly depoſed, and your heire againe to her right reſtored. When the Quéene had heard this friendly motion, ſhe inſtantly beſought him that as he had béene the firſt inuenter of ſo good an enterpriſe, that now he would not deſiſt to follow the ſame, requiring him further, that he would reſorte to the counteſſe of Richmond mother to the earle Henry, and to declare to her on the quéenes behalfe, that all the friends of king Edward her huſband ſhould aſſiſt and take part with the earle of Richmond hir ſon, ſo that he would take an oth, that after the kingdome obtained, to eſpouſe the lady Elizabeth her daughter, &c. Maiſter Lewes ſo ſped his buſines, that he made a finall end of this buſines betwéene the two mothers: ſo the lady Margaret counteſſe of Richmond brought to a good hope of the preferment of her ſon, made Reinold Bray chiefe ſolicitor of this conſpiracy, giuing him in charge ſecretly to inueigle ſuch perſons of nobilitie to ioin with her, and take her part, as he knew to be faithfull.

This Reinold Bray within few daies brought to his lure, Sir Giles Daubeney, Sir Iohn Cheinie, Richard Guilford, and Thomas Ram Eſquires, and others. In the meane ſeaſon the counteſſe of Richmond ſent Chriſtopher Vrſwike into Britaine to the earle of Richmond, to declare to him all agréements betwéene her and the Quéene agreed: but ſhe remembring that the Duke of Buckinghã was one of the firſt inuenters of this enterpriſe, ſent Hugh Conway eſquire into Britaine with a great ſum of mony to hir ſon, giuing him in charge

charge to declare to the earle the great loue that the moſt part of the nobilitie of the realme bare toward him, willing him not to neglect ſo good an occaſion offered, but with all ſpeed to ſettle his mind how to returne into England, giuing him counſell to take land in Wales. When the earle had receiued this ioyfull meſſage, he brake to the duke of Britaine al his ſecrets, aduertiſing him that he was entred into a ſure and ſtedfaſt hope to obtain the crowne of England, deſiring him of helpe toward the atchieuing of his enterpriſe, which the duke promiſed, and after performed. Whereupon the earle ſent into England Hugh Conway, and Thomas Ram, to declare his comming ſhortly into England. In the meane ſeaſon the chiefe of the conſpiracy in England began many enterpriſes, which being neuer ſo priuily handled, yet knowledge therof came to king Richard, & becauſe he knew the Duke of Buckingham to be the chiefe head and aide of this commination, he thought it moſt neceſſarie to pluck him from that part, whereupon he addreſſed his louing letters to the Duke, to exhort the Duke to come to the Court: but the Duke required the king to pardon him, excuſing himſelfe that he was not well. King Richard not content with this excuſe, directed to the duke other letters with checking words, commanding him without delay to repaire to his preſence. The Duke made to the meſſenger a determinate anſwere, that he would not come to his mortall enemie: and immediately prepared war againſt him, and by this meanes, Thomas marques Dorſet came out of Sanctuarie, gathered a great band of men in Yorke ſhire, ſir Edward Courtney and Peter his brother biſhop of Exceſter raiſed another army in Deuonſhire and Cornwall. In Kent ſir Richard Guilford and other Gentlemen raiſed a companie.

But king Richard in the meane time had gotten together a great ſtrength, with whome he remoued from London toward Saliſburie, to the intent hee might ſet on the Dukes armie, the king was ſcarce two daies iourney from Saliſburie, when the duke of Buckingham accompanied with a great power of wilde Welchmen, which in the ende forſoke him. The Duke with his power marched through the forreſt of Deane, intending to haue paſſed the riuer of Seuerne at Gloceſter, and there to haue ioyned in armie with the Courteneis, and other Weſtern men, which if he had done, no doubt but king Richard had bene in great ieopardie. But before he could attaine to Seuerne ſide, by force of continuall raine the riuer roſe ſo high, that it ouerflowed all the countrey adioining, which rage of water laſted ten daies: by which inundacie the paſſages were ſo cloſed, that neither the Duke could come ouer Seuerne to his complices, nor they to him: during which time the Welchmen lingering idle and without money or victuall, ſuddenly ſcaled and departed. The Duke thus left almoſt alone, was of neceſſitie compelled to flie, and conueied himſelfe into the houſe of Humfrey Baniſter his ſeruant beſide Shrewſbury, whom he had tenderly brought vp, which when it was known to his adherents, euerie man ſhifted for himſelfe and fled. And ſome of them ſayled into Britaine, among the which were Peter Courtney Biſhop of Exceſter, and ſir Edward Courtney his brother, Thomas marques Dorſet, John lorde Wels, Sir Iohn Bourchier, Sir Edmond Wooduile brother to queene Elizabeth, Sir Robert Willoughby,

A great water.

Sir

Sir Giles Daubney, Sir Thomas Arundell, Sir Iohn Cheinie and his two bre-thren, Sir William Barkeley, Sir William Brandon and Thomas his brother, Sir Richard Edgecombe, and Iohn Halwell, Edward Pownings, &c. Proclamation was made, and a thousand pound promised to who so could bring out the duke of Buckingham, whereupon Humfrey Banister bewraied his ghest and master to Iohn Mitton then sheriffe of Shropshire, which with a strong power apprehended the Duke in a little grone adioining to the manors of Humfrey Banister, and in great haste conueied him to the citie of Salisbury, where king Richard then kept his household. This Banister after he had betraied his master, his sonne and heire waxed mad, and died in a beares skie, his eldest daughter was suddenly stricken with a fowle leperie, his second son marueilously deformed of his limbs and made lame, his yonger son in a small puddle was drowned, and he himselfe being of extreame age arraigned and found guiltie of a murther, and by his cleargie saued. And as for his thousand pound, K. Richard gaue him not one farthing, saying, that he which would be vntrue to so good a master, would be false to all other.

Banister that betraied his master, miserably plagued, let the like traitors to their masters looke for the like, or worse, to them and theirs, without speedie repentance.

The duke after he had confessed all the whole conspiracie vpon the second of November without arraignment or iudgement, was at Salisbury beheaded. At the same time that the duke of Buckingham was vp in the west countrey, there were manie vp in Kent, to wit, Sir George Browne, Sir Iohn Gilford and his sonne, Foge, Scot, and Hants, after Clifforde, Bonting yeoman of the crowne, with manie other, to the number of fiue thousand: these made a fray at Grauesend in the faire, where Bonting slewe master Mowbray, with diuers other, but when they heard that the duke of Buckingham was dead they were faine to flie to saue themselues.

Duke of Buckingham beheaded.

Whilest these things were thus handled in England, Henry Earle of Richmond prepared an army of fiue thousand Britons, and fortie well furnished ships. When all thinges were prepared, and the daie of setting forward was appointed, which was the twelfe of October, the whole armie hoysed vp sailes and toke the sea, but toward night the winde turned, and so huge a tempest arose, that the shippes were dispersed asunder: some driuen into Normandie, some againe into Britain. In the morning after when the tempest was asswaged, the earle approached to the south part of England, at the mouth of the hauen of Pole in Dorset, where he might see all the banks full of men of war, appointed to defend his arriuall, therfore he gaue charge that no man should land, vntill such time as the whole naule were assembled, but after that he perceiued none of his ships to appeare, he hoised vp anchors and away, where he arriued safe in Normandy, and returned by land into Britaine, where he was sone aduertised that the duke of Buckingham had lost his head, and that the marques Dorset, and a great number of noble men in England had a little before inquired for him there.

In the meane season king Richard apprehended in diuers parties of this Realme certaine Gentlemen of the Earle of Richmonds faction, amongst whome Sir George Browne, Sir Roger Clifford, and foure other were put to death at London the third of December. Sir Thomas Sentlegar, which had

married

married the Dutchesse of Excester the kings owne sister, and Tho. Ram, with diuers other were executed at Excester.

Fire at Leaden hall in London.

The 30. of December was a great fire at Leaden hall in London, where through was brent much housing, and all the stocks for guns and other like prouision belonging to the city.

1484

After this king Richard called a Parliament, in the which he attainted the earle of Richmond, and all other persons, which were fled out of the realme for feare, or any other cause as enemies to him, and to their naturall country, and all their lands and goods was confiscate to the kings vse, and yet notwithstanding he laid on the people a great tare.

An. reg. 2.

In this troublesome season, nothing was more maruelled at than that the Lord Stanley had not beene taken, considering the working of the Ladie Margaret his wife mother to the earle of Richmond: but for as much as the enterprise of a woman was of him reputed of no regarde or estimation, and that the Lord Stanley her husband had purged himselfe to bee innocent of all attempts by her committed, it was giuen him in charge to keepe her in some secret place at home, without hauing anie seruant or companie, so that from thencefoorth she should neuer send letter to her son, or to anie of his friends, by the which the king might be molested, which commandement was a while put in execution.

King Henry the first remooued to Windsor.

This yeere king Richard began the high tower at Westminster, which remaineth yet vnfinished. Also he caused the bodie of king Henry the first to be remooued from Chertsey abbey in Surrey, and to be buried at Windsor on the twelfth of August.

Record Tower.

In these daies were chiefe rulers about the king, the Lorde Louel, and two Gentlemen being named sir Richard Ratcliffe, and sir William Catesby, of the which persons was made a seditious rime, & fastned vpon the crosse in cheape, and other places of the Citie, whereof the sentence was as followeth:

The Cat, the Rat, and Louel our dogge:
Rulen all England, vnder an hogge.

Which was to meane these three persons, ruled this land vnder the king, which bare a white Boare for his cognisance. For the deuisers of this rime much search was made and sundry accused to their great charges. But finally two Gentlemen, Turburuile, and Collingborne, were for that and other things laid to their charge, arrested and cast in prison, for whom shortly was holden at the Guildhall an Oyer determiner, where the two Gentlemen were arraigned, and that one of them called William Collingborne Esquire, conuict of that crime and other, for the which he was drawne vnto the Tower hill, and there full cruelly put to death, as first hanged, and straight cut downe and ripped, and his bowels cast into the fire, the which torment was so spedily done, that when the butcher pulled out his heart, he spake and saide Iesus Iesus. This man was greatly moaned of the people, for his goodly personage and fauor of visage, he had beene sometime, to wit the 15. of Edward the fourth, sheriffe of Wiltshire, and in the 17 sheriffe of Somersetshire, and Dorsetshire.

Collingborne executed.

Record.

King Richard considering the amities concluded betweene princes are the cause

cause that their realmes are fortified with a double power, that is to say, with their owne strength, and the aide of their friendes, practised a league with the king of Scots, which not long before had made diuers incursions and roades into the realme of England, and therefore sued to haue a truce or peace concluded. Wherfore commissioners were appointed, which met at Nottingham, and there in the end concluded for three yéeres on certaine articles, 15. in number. This peace thus concluded, king Richard now doubting his owne people, was continually vexed with feare of the returne of the earle of Richmond and his complices: Wherefore, nothing was for his purpose more, than once againe with price and prayer, to attempt the duke of Britaine, in whose territorie the earle then abode, to deliuer him into his hands: wherfore incontinent he sent certaine ambassadors to the Duke of Britaine, which toke vpon them that king Richard should yéerely paie and answere the duke of Britaine of all the reuennes, rents and profits of the lands and possessions, as well belonging to the earle of Richmond, as to any other noble or gentleman which then were in the earles companie, if he after that time would kéepe them in continuall prison and restraine them from liberty. The Orators furnished with these and other instructions arriued in Britaine, but could not speake with the duke, by reason that he being weakned by a long and daillie infirmitie, began to ware idle of his remembrance, for which cause Peter Landoyse his chiefe treasurer, ruled all things at his pleasure, vnto whom the English embassadors moued to him their message, offering to him the same rewardes and landes that they should haue offered the Duke. This Peter faithfully promised to accomplish king Richards request, so that he kept promise with him: but fortune was so fauourable to the publike weale of England, that this deadly compact toke none effect, for Iohn Morton bishop of Ely soiourning then in Flanders, was of all this craftie deuise certified: wherefore he sent Christopher Vrswike, to declare to the Earle of Richmond all the deceit, giuing him charge in all haste possible with his companie to retire out of Britaine into France. When these newes came to the earle, he incontinent sent to Charles the French king, requiring that he and his might safely passe into France, which desire was granted, & the earle with the rest dispatched as priuilie as mought be into France, no man suspecting their departure. After this, the Earle toke his iourney to Charles the French king, to whome after great thanks giuen, he disclosed the occasion of his accesse to his person. After that he required of him helpe and succor, to the intent he might returne to the nobilitie of his realm, of whom he was generally called to take vpon him the crowne: king Charles promised him aide, and bad him bee of good comfort, for he assured him that he would gladly shewe to him his bountifull liberalitie. Whiles the earle of Richmond thus attended on the French Court, Iohn Vere Earle of Oxford so perswaded Iames Blunt Captaine of Hames Castle, and sir Iohn Forteskewe porter of the towne of Caleis, that he himselfe was not onely set at libertie, but they also leauing their fruitfull offices condescended to go with him into France to the Earle of Richmond.

Truce with Scotland for three yeeres.

1485

In the meane season K. Richard was credibly aduertised what promises

and

and othes the Earle and his confederates had made and swoorne, and howe by the Earles meanes, all the Englishmen were passed out of Brytaine into France. Wherefore being in maner desperate, imagining how to infringe the Earles purpose by another meane, so that by the marriage of ladie Elizabeth his niece, he should pretende no claime to the crowne, there came to his minde a thing not only detestable, but much more cruell to be put in execution, for he clérely determined to reconcile to his fauour his brothers wife Quéene Elizabeth, and so by that meanes the Earle of Richmond, of the affinitie of his Niece should be vtterly defrauded, and if no ingenious remedie could be otherwise inuented, if it should happen Quéene Anne his wife to depart out of this world, then he himselfe would rather take to wife his cousin and niece the ladie Elizabeth, than for lacke of that affinitie the whole realme should run to ruine. Wherefore he sent to the Quéene being in Sanctuarie, diuers and often messengers which should excuse him of all things before against her attempted, and after should so largely promise promotions, not onely to her but to her son Thomas Marquesse Dorset, that they should bring her (if it were possible) into some wan hope. The messengers so perswaded the quéene, that she began somewhat to relent, in so much that she faithfully promised to yeld her selfe to the kings will and pleasure. And so she first deliuered vnto king Richards hands her fiue daughters: Afterward she sent letters to the Marquesse her sonne being then at Paris with the Earle of Richmond, willing him in anie wise to repaire into England, where for him were prouided great honors, ascertaining him that all offences on both parties were forgiuen and forgotten: After that king Richard had thus pleased the mutable minde of Quéene Elizabeth, he caused all her daughters to be conueyed into his Palace with solemne receiuing. Now nothing was contrary to his purpose, but that his mansion was not void of a wife: and first he abstained both from the bed and companie of his wife: after he complained to manie of the infortunate barrennesse of his wife. After this, he procured a common rumour to be published among the common people, that the Quéene was dead. When the Q. heard tell that so horrible a rumor of her death was sprong amongst the communaltie, she sore suspected the worlde to be almost at an end with her, and not long after, to witte, the 16. of March, in the lent season, howsoeuer it fortuned, the quæne departed out of this life, and was with due solemnitie buried at Westminster.

The King thus losed out of the bondes of Matrimonie, began to cast a fancie to lady Elizabeth his niece, making much suite to haue her ioined with him in lawfull Matrimonie: but because all men, and the maiden her selfe most of all detested this vnlawfull copulation, he determined to deferre the matter till he were in a more quiet case, for all this season he was oppressed with weightie affaires on euerie side, considering that daily part of the Nobilitie sayled into France, other priuilie fauoured the earle of Richmond, amongst the noble men whom he most suspected, these were the principall, Thomas lord Stanley, sir William Stanley his brother, Gilbert Talbot, and sire hundred other, of whose purpose, though king Richard were ignorant, yet he gaue no credence

dence to anie one of them, and leaſt of all to the Lorde Stanley, becauſe he was ioined in matrimonie with the Ladie Margaret mother to the Earle of Richmond, for when the Lorde Stanley would haue departed into his countrey, the king in no wiſe would ſuffer him to depart, before hee had left as in hoſtage in the courte George Stanley Lorde Strange, his firſt begotten ſonne and heire. *An. reg. 3.*

While king Richard was thus troubled, ſodainly he heard newes that the Caſtle of Hames was deliuered into the handes of the Earle of Richmond, by the meanes of the Earle of Orforde, and that not onely he, but alſo Iames Blunt, captaine of the caſtle, were fled into France to aide the Earle of Richmond.

Henry Earle of Richmond obtaining of king Charles a ſmall crue of men, and borrowing certaine ſums of money of him, and of diuers other his priuate frendes, he departed from the French Court, and came to the Citie of Roane. While he tarried there, making prouiſion at Hareflete, in the mouth of the Riuer of Seyne, for all things neceſſarie for his Nauie, tydings were brought to him, that king Richard being without children, and a widower, intended ſhortlie to marrie with Ladie Elizabeth, his brothers daughter, which newes he toke of no ſmall moment, for this thing onely toke awaie from all his companions their hope to obtaine an happy enterpriſe, by reaſon whereof, he iudged that all his frendes in England would ſhrinke from him, yet notwithſtanding, earle Henrie of Richmond, becauſe he would no longer linger & wearie his friendes, liuing betweene hope and feare, determined in all haſte conuenient to ſet forward, and carried to his ſhippes armour, weapons, victuall, and all other ordinances expedient for warre, which being done, onely accompanied with two thouſand men, and a ſmall number of ſhippes, weyed vp his Anchors, and in the Kalendes of Auguſt, he ſayled from Hareflete with ſo proſperous a winde, that the ſeuenth day after he arriued in Wales in the euening, at a Port called Milford Hauen, and incontinent toke land, and came to a place called Dale, and at the ſunne riſing remoued to Herefordwell, where he was receiued of the people with great ioy. *Henry Earle of Richmond landed at Milforde Hauen.*

From thence, he remoued to Cardigan twentie mile from Herefordwell, whither came to the Earle Richard Griffith with all his men and power. After him the ſame date came Iohn Morgan with his men. When the Earle aduanced forwarde, making no abode in anie place, and ſodainly he was aſcertained that ſir Walter Herbert, and Rice ap Thomas, were in harneſſe before him, readie to encounter with his armie, and to ſtop their paſſage. Wherefore he firſt determined to ſet vpon them, and either to deſtroie or take them into his fauour, and after with all his power to giue battaile to king Richard. But to the intent his friends ſhould knowe with what dexteritie he attempted his enterpriſe forward, he ſent meſſengers with letters and inſtructions to the Lady Margaret his mother, to the Lord Stanley and his brother, to Talbot and to other, declaring to them, that he holpe with the aide of his friends, intended to paſſe ouer the Riuer of Seuerne at Shrewſbery, and ſo to paſſe directly to the Citie of London, requiring them as his ſpeciall truſt was in the hope of their fidelitie,

fidelitie, that they would meete him by the way with all diligent preparation. When these messengers were departed, he marched forward towards Shrewsbury, and in his passage there met and saluted him Rice ap Thomas with a goodly band of Welshmen, which submitted himselfe wholie to his order and commandement. In the meane time the messengers laden with rewardes returned to him the same day that he entred into Shrewsburie, and made relation to him that his friends were readie in all points to do all things for him which they might doe. The earle Henrie continued his iourney and came to a little towne called Newport, and pitched his campe on a little hill adioyning, reposing himselfe there that night. In the euening of the same daie came to him sir Gilbert Talbot, with the whole power of the yong Earle of Shrewsburie, then being in warde, which were accounted two thousand men: and thus his power increasing he arriued at the towne of Stafforde, and there paused. To whom came sir William Stanley, accompanied with a fewe persons: After that the Earle departed from thence to Litchfielde, and lay without the walles in campe all that night. The next morning he entred the towne and was like a Prince receiued. A daie or two before, the Lord Stanley hauing in his band almost fiue thousand men, lodged in the same towne, but hearing that the earle of Richmond was marching thitherward, gaue to him place, dislodging him and his, and repaired to a towne called Adrestone, there abiding the comming of the Earle: and this hee did to auoide all suspition, being afraide least if he should be seene openly to be a fautor or aider to the Earle his sonne in law before the daie of battaile, that king Richard which yet did not vtterly put in him mistrust, would put to some cruell death his sonne and heire apparant, George Lord Strange, whom king Richard had in hostage. King Richard at this season keeping his house in the Castle of Nottingham, was informed that the Earle of Richmond with such banished men as were fled out of England to him, were arriued in Wales, and that all things necessarie to his enterprise were vnpurueyed and verie weake, nothing meete to withstand the power of such as the king had appointed to resist him, yet notwithstanding hee sent to Iohn Duke of Norffolke, Henrie Earle of Northumberland, Thomas Earle of Surrey, and to other of his trustie friendes, willing them to muster and viewe all their seruants and tenants, and to elect the most courragious and actiue persons of the whole number, and with them to repaire to his presence with all speed. Also he wrote to Robert Brakenburie Lieutenant of the Tower, commanding him with his power to come to his army, and to bring with him his fellowes in armes Thomas Bourchier, and sir Walter Hungerford, and diuers other knights and esquires, in whom he had no small suspition. While he was thus ordring his affaires, tidings came that the Earle of Richmond was passed Seuerne, and come to Shrewsbury without ante detriment or encombrance. At which message he was sore moued, and cried out on them that contrarie to their othe had deceiued him. And in all haste sent out to viewe what waie his enemies kept and passed, it was declared to the king, that the Earle was incamped at the Towne of Litchfielde. Whereof, when he had perfect knowledge, he hauing continuall repaire of his subiectes to him, he incontinently

nently made his battailes to set forwarde towarde the waie, where his enemies as was to him reported, intended to passe, and keeping his arraie, hee with great pompe entred the Towne of Leycester after the Sunne set. The earle of Richmond raised his campe from Lichfield to Tamworth, and in the mid-waie passing, there saluted him Syr Walter Hungerforde, & Syr Thomas Bourchier knights, and diuers others, which submitted themselues to his pleasure. Diuers other noble personages likewise resorted to him with al their power. There hapned in this progression to the earle of Richmonde a straunge chance, for he was not a little afraide, because hee could not bee assured of his father in lawe Thomas Lord Stanley, which as yet inclined to neither partie, wherfore the earle, accompanied with twenty light horsemen, lingring in his iourney behinde his hoste, in the meane while the whole armie came before the towne of Tamworth, and when he for darkenesse could not perceiue the steps of them that passed on before, and had wandred hither and thither seeking after his companie, he abode in a little village, about three myles from his army, where he tarried all night. The next morning in the dawning, hee returned, and by good fortune came to his army, excusing himselfe, not to haue gone out of his waie by ignorance, but of purpose: this excuse made, he priuily departed againe to the towne of Aderstone, where the Lord Stanley and Syr William his brother with their bands, were abiding. then the Earle came to his father in law, in a little Close, where he saluted him and sir William his brother, and after consulted how to giue battaile to king Richard, if hee woulde abide, whome they knew not to be farre off with an huge armie. In the euening of the same date, Syr Iohn Sauage, sir Brian Sanford, sir Simon Digby, and many other, leauing king Richard, turned and came to the earle of Richmonde with an elect companie of men. In the meane season, king Richarde marched to a place called Redmore merte for two battels to encounter, by a village called Bosworth, not far from Leycester, and there hee pitched his field, refreshed his armie, and toke his rest. The next daie after, king Richard being furnished with men, and all abilliments of warre, bringing all his men out of their campe into the plaine, ordered his forewarde in a maruellous length, in which he appointed both horsemen and footemen, and in the Forefront he placed the Archers. Battel at Bosworth.

Ouer this battell was captaine Iohn duke of Norffolk, with whom was Th. earle of Surrey his son. After this long vantguard followed K. Richard with a strong company of approued men of war, hauing horsemen for wings on both sides of his battell.

After that the earle of Richmonde was returned from the communication with his friends, he with all diligence pitched his field full by the campe of his enemies, and there hee lodged that night. In the morning betime, hee caused his men to put on their armour, and apparrell themselues to fight, and geue Battaile, and sent to the Lorde Stanley, requiring him with his men to approch neere to his Armie, and to helpe to sette the Souldiors in arraie: hee answered, the Earle shoulde sette his owne men in good order, while hee woulde come to him in time conuenient. The Earle made his Forewarde

somewhat single and slender, according to the small number of his people. In the front he placed the archers, of whome he made Captaine Iohn Earle of Oxford. To the right wing of the battaile he appointed sir Gilbert Talbot to be the leader. To the left wing he assigned sir Io. Sauedge, and hee with the aide of the Lord Stanley, accompanied with the Earle of Penbroke, hauing a good companie of horse-men, and a small number of fote-men, for all his whole number exceeded not fiue thousand men, beside the power of the Stanleyes, whereof three thousande were in the fielde vnder Sir William Stanley: The kings number was double so much, or more. When both these armies were thus ordered, and all men readie to set forward, king Richarde called his chiefetaines togither, perswading them to be valiaunt, &c. But his people were to him vnfaithfull in his end, as he was to his nephewes vntrue and vnnaturall in his beginning. When the Earle of Richmond knew that the king was so nere embattailed, he rode about his armie giuing comfortable words to all men, after the which he made to them a pithie Oration perswading them to haue the victorie, for that they were to fight in a iust quarrell, he had scantly finished his saying, but the one armie espied the other, betweene both armies there was a great marrish which the erle left on his right hand, and so doing he had the Sun at his backe, and in the face of his enemies. When the king saw the earles companie was passed the marrish, hee commanded with all haste to set vpon them, the terrible shotte on both sides passed, the armies ioyned and came to hand strokes, at which incounter the lord Stanley ioyned with the earle.

The earle of Oxford in the meane season fearing least while his companie was fighting, they should bee compassed of the enemies, gaue commandement that no man should goe aboue tenne fote from the Standard, which commandement once knowne, they knitte themselues together and ceased a little from fighting: the enemies sodainly abashed at the matter and mistrusting some fraude, began also to pause. The Earle of Oxford bringing all his band togither on the one part, set on his enemies freshlie: againe the aduersaries perceiuing that, placed their men slender and thinne before, and thicke and broade behinde, beginning againe the battaile. While the two forewardes thus mortallie fought, king Richard was admonished that the Earle of Richmond accompanied with a small number of men of armes was not farre off, and as he approached to him, hee perfectlie knewe his personage, and being inflamed with yre, he put his spurres to his horse and rode out of the side of the range of his battaile, leauing the vauntgards fighting, and with speare in wrest ranne towarde him. The Earle perceiued well the king furiouslie comming toward him, and because the whole hope of his wealth and purpose was to be determined by battaile, he gladly profered to encounter with him bodie to bodie and man to man: King Richard set on so sharpelie at the first brunt that he ouerthrew the earles standard, and slewe sir William Brandon his standardbearer, and matched hand to hand with Sir Iohn Cheiney, a man of great force and strength, which would haue resisted him, and the saide Iohn was by him manfully ouerthrowne, and so he making

open

open passage by dint of sword as he went forwarde, the Earle of Richmond withstood his violence and kept him at the swords point longer then his companions thought, which being almost in despaire of victorie were sodainlie recomforted by sir W. Stanley, which came to succour with 3000. tall men, at which verie instant, king Richards men were driuen backe and slodde, and he himselfe manfully fighting in the middle of his enemies was slaine. In the meane season the Earle of Oxforde, with the aide of the Lorde Stanley after no long fight discomfited the forewarde of king Richarde, whereof a great number were slaine in the chase, but the greatest number that came to the field neuer gaue stroke. In this battaile died on king Richards part, about the number of 4000. men, and on the other side but ten persons, as sir Gilbert Talbot then wrote from the campe, and of the nobilitie were slaine Iohn Duke of Norfolke, Walter Lorde Ferters of Chartley, Sir Richarde Ratcliffe, sir William Conyers, sir Richard Claringdon, and Robert Brakenburie, lieuetenant of the Tower, and not manie Gentlemen moe: Sir William Catesby learned in the lawes of the Realme, and one of the chiefe Counsellours to the late king, with diuers other were two daies after beheaded at Leicester. Amongst them that ranawaie were sir Frauncis Vicount Louel, and Humfrey Stafford with Thomas Stafford his brother, which toke Sanctuarie in S. Johns at Glocester. On the Earle of Richmonds part that was slaine, the principall was sir William Brandon his standardbearer. This battaile was fought at Bosworth in Leicestershire, the 22. of August, in the yeare of our Lorde, 1485. the whole conflict indured little aboue two houres. When the earle had thus obtained the victory, he rendred thankes to God, and after to his souldiers for their fidelity: then the people cried king Henry, king Henry. When the lorde Stanley sawe the good will of the people, he toke the Crowne of king Richard, which was found amongst the spoile in the field, and set it on the earles head, as though he had béene elected king by the voice of the people. king Richards slaine.

King Henry at this time made knights, as followeth: sir Gilbert Talbot, sir Iohn Mortimer, sir Rice ap Thomas, sir Robert Points, sir Humfrey Stanley, sir Iohn Turbaruile, sir W. Willoughby, sir Hugh Pershall, sir R. Hegecombe, sir Iohn Bikenyle, sir de Baron de Carow.

After this, the whole campe remoued to the towne of Leicester, where hee rested two daies. In the meane season, the dead corpes of king Richard was as shamefully carried to the towne of Leicester, as he gorgeously the day before with pompe departed out of the same towne: for his bodie was naked to the skinne, not so much as one clout about him, and was trussed behinde a Pursuant of armes, like a hogge or calfe, the head and armes hanging on the one side of the horse, and the legs on the other side, and all sprinckled with myre and blood, was brought to the Grey Friers Church within the Towne, and there homely buried, when he had raigned two yeares, two moneths and one day.

He founded a colledge at Pidelham beyond Yorke, and another at London beside the Tower, in a chappell called our Ladie of Barking: he also en- I. Rouse.

dowed the Quéenes Colledge at Cambridge with fiue hundred markes of yéerelie rent. He deforested the great field of Wichewoode, betwœne Woodstocke and Bristowe, which king Edward the fourth had incorporated before to the forrest, &c.

Henry Earle of Richmond.

An. reg. 1.

HEnrie the seuenth, borne in Penbrooke Castle, began his raigne the 22. of August, in the yéere of our Lord God, 1485. He was a Prince of maruellous wisedome, policie, iustice, temperance, and grauitie, and notwithstanding manie and great occasions of trouble and warre, he kept his Realme in right good order, for the which he was greatly reuerenced of forraine princes.

Parson of S. Mildreds brent.

On the forenamed 22. of August, was a great fire in Bread-stréete of London, in the which fire, was brent the Parson of Saint Mildreds, and one other man in the Parsonage there.

King Henry, before his departure from Leicester, sent sir Robert Willoughby knight to the Manor of Sherhutton in the countie of Yorke, for Edwarde Plantagenet earle of Warwike, son and heire to George Duke of Clarence, then being of the age of 15. yéeres, and sent him vp to the Tower of London, where he was put vnder sure custodie.

In the meane season the king remoued towards London, and when he had approched the citie, on the 27. of August, the Maior, Magistrates, and companies, all clothed in violet, met him at Shoredich, and with great pompe conueied him through the citie to S. Pauls church, where he offred his thrée standards, one of S. George, the second a red Dragon, the third a dun Cow, after his praiers said and *Te Deum* sung, he departed to the bishops palace where he soiourned a season.

The sweating began the 21. of September, and continued till the ende of October: of the which sicknes a wonderfull number died, and in London besides other, died Thomas Hill maior, in whose place was chosen William Stocker, who likewise deceased about seuen daies after: in which space departed other foure Aldermen, Thomas Ilam, Richard Rawson, Thomas Norland, and Iohn Stocker, and then was chosen maior Iohn Warde, who continued till the feast of Simon and Iude.

On the éeuen of Saint Simon and Iude, king Henry came from Kenington vnto Lambeth, and there dined with Thomas Bourchier Archbishoppe of Canterburie, Cardinall of S. Ciriac in Thermis. And after dinner with a goodly companie of the estates of this realme both spirituall & temporall, from thence wēt by land toward London, his nobles riding after the guise of Frāce vpon small hackneies, two and two vpon a horse, and at London bridge end,

the

the Maior of London with his brethren and the crafts, met and receiued the king, and the king proceeded to Grace-church corner, and so to the Tower. On the morrowe being the feast date of Simon and Iude, king Henrie created Thomas lorde Stanley Earle of Darby, Edward Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, and Iaspar earle of Penbrooke was created Duke of Bedford, all at one time in the tower of London. Banerets made at this creation, Sir Gilbert Talbot, sir Iohn Cheinie, sir William Stonar, sir W. Troutbeke, sir Iohn Mortimer, sir Richard Crosby, sir Iohn Fortescue, sir Edward Bedingfield, sir Thomas Cokesey, sir Iames Baskeruile, sir Humfrey Stanley, sir Richard de la Bere.

On the 30. of October king Henry was crowned at Westminster, by the hands of Thomas Bourchier archbishop of Canterburie, and ordained a number of chosen archers, being strong and hardie persons, to giue dailie attendance on his person, whome he named yeoman of the Garde.

The 7. of November began a parliament at Westminster, for the establishing of all things, in the which he caused to be proclaimed, that all men were pardoned of all offences, and should be restored to their lands and goods, which would submit themselues to his clemencie. After this he began to remember his especiall friendes, of whom some he aduanced to honour and dignitie, and some he enriched with possessions and goods: and to begin, the lorde Chandew of Britaine, he made earle of Bathe: sir Giles Daubeney was made lord Daubeney: sir Robert Willoughby lord Brooke: and Edward Stafford eldest sonne to Henry late duke of Buckingham, he restored to his dignitie & possessions: sir T. Molineux knight, baneret, he made Constable of Beaumarice, where shortly after he ended his life. The parliament being dissolued, the king redeemed the marques Dorset, and sir Iohn Bourchier, whom he had left as pledges at Paris, for money there before borrowed: and sent also into Flanders for Iohn Morton bishop of Ely. Parliament at Westminster

The eightenth day of Ianuary king Henry married the ladie Elizabeth eldest daughter to Edwarde the fourth, by which meanes the two families of Yorke and Lancaster, which had long béene at great diuision, were united and made one. King Henry married the lady Elizabeth.

King Henrie sent the Lorde Treasurer with maister Bray and other, vnto the lord Maior of London, requiring him and the citizens of a prest of 6000. markes, wherefore the Maior with his brethren and commons granted a prest of two thousand pound, which was leuied of the companies, and not of the wardes, which prest was repaied againe in the yéere next following, euerie pennie. 1486 Lone to the king.

Wheate was solde for three shillings the bushell, and bay salt at the like price. *Ann. reg. 2.*

In the moneth of September Quéene Elizabeth was deliuered of her first sonne named Arthur, at Winchester.

This yéere deceased Thomas Bourchier archbishop of Canterbury, and was buried at Canterburie: Iohn Morton Bishop of Ely, a man of excellent wit, learning, and vertue, was translated, and succeeded him in the archbishoprike of Canterbury, and Iohn Alcock succéeded in the bishoprike of Ely.

Sir Richard Simon, a wily priest, came to Geralde earle of Kildare, and deputy of Ireland, and presented to him a lad his scholler named Lambert, whom he fained to be the sonne of George duke of Clarence lately escaped the tower of London. And the childe had learned of the priest such princely behauiour, that he lightly moued the earle, and many nobles of Ireland, tendering the bloud royall of Richard Plantagenet and George his son, as also maligning the aduancement of the house of Lancaster in Henry the seuenth, either to thinke or make the world weene, they thought verily this childe to be Edward earle of Warwike, the duke of Clarence lawfull son. And although K. Henry more than halfe marred their sport, in shewing the right earle thorough all the streetes of London: yet the Lady Margaret dutchesse of Burgoigne sister to Edward the fourth, Iohn de la Pole her nephew, the Lord Louel, sir Thomas Broughton knight, and other captaines of this conspiracie, deuised to abuse the colour of this yong earles name, for preferring their purpose: which, if it came to good, they agreed to depose Lambert, and to erect the verie earle in deede, now prisoner in the tower: for whose quarrell, had they pretended to fight, they deemed it likely, he should haue been made away: wherefore it was blazed in Ireland, that the king, to mocke his subiectes, had schooled a boy to take vpon him the earle of Warwikes name, and had shewed him about in London, to blinde the eies of simple folke, and to defeate the lawfull inheritor of the Duke of Clarence their countriman and protector during his life, to whose image they also deuised a title of the crowne.

1487 In all the haste they assembled at Diuelin, and there in Christs church they crowned this idoll, honoring him with titles imperiall, feasting and triumphing, rearing mightie shoutes and cries, carrying him thence to the kings castle vpon tall mens shoulders, that he might be seene and noted, as he was surely an honourable boy to looke vpon.

E. Hall. In this meane time, the earle of Lincolne, and the lorde Louel, had gotten by the aid of Margaret, about 2000. Almaines, with Martin Swart a German, and in martiall acts verie expert, to be their captaine, and so sailing into Ireland, and at the citie of Diuelin caused yong Lambert to be proclaimed king of England, & so with a great multitude of Irishmen, of whom Thomas Gerardine was captaine, they sayled into England with the new king, and landed at Fowdrey within a little of Lancaster, trusting there to be aided with money by sir Thomas Broughton, one of the chiefest of this conspiracie.

King Henry not sleeping in his matters, when he had gathered his host together, ouer the which the duke of Bedford, and the earle of Oxford were chiefe captaines, he went to Couentrie, where he being certified, that the earle of Lincolne was landed at Lancaster with his new king, he remoued to Nottingham, to whome shortly after came George Talbot earle of Shrewsbury, the lord Strange, sir Iohn Cheney, with many other.

Stoke field. In this space the earle of Lincolne being entered into Yorkeshire, directed his way to Newarke vpon Trent, and at a little village called Stoke, three or foure miles from Newarke, nigh to the king and his armie planted his campe.

The

The next date following, the king diuided his number into three battailes, and after approached nigh the towne of Stoke, where both the armies ioyned and fought egerly on both parts: but at the length the kings forward set vpon the aduersaries with such a violence, that they slew many, and put the rest to flight. For there their chiefe captaines, the earle of Lincolne, and the lorde Louel, sir Thomas Broughton, Martin Swart, and the lord Gerardine, (or after Campion, Morice Fitz Thomas) captaine of the Irishmen, were slaine, and other aboue foure thousand. This battell was fought on the 16. of June. Lambert and the priest were both taken, to the no small griefe of Margaret Dutchesse of Burgoigne.

Lambert, after that he had béene a turne-broch for a space in the kings kitchen, was at length made one of the kings falconers.

Now when the king had got the vpper hande of his enemies (as yée haue heard) he remoued to Lincolne, and there tarried three daies, causing solemne processions to be made, in rendring thankes to God for his fortunate victory. Then caused he execution to be don on such as were taken in the field, either at the battell, or in the chase. And shortly after he went into Yorkshire, and there coasted the countrey, searching out such as had aided his enemies, whome hee punished, some by long imprisonment, some by large fines, and some by death. *An. reg. 3.*

About the midst of August the king came to Newcastle vpon Tine, and from thence sent ambassadors into Scotland, Richard Fox bishop of Winchester, and Richard Edgecomb knight, controller of his house, to conclude some peace, or truce with king Iames of Scotland. The English ambassadors were honorably receiued, and entertained of the king, who gladly would haue concluded a perpetuall peace, but his people would not agrée thereto: but in the end concluded vpon a truce for seuen yéeres. Truce with the Scots.

King Henrie, after the ambassadors were returned out of Scotland, came backe from Newcastle toward Yorke, and so to London: and in the waie being at Leicester, there came to him ambassadors from Charles the French king, which declared both the recouerie of certaine townes out of the hands of Maximilian E. of Romans, which he had wrongfully detained from the crown of France before that time: and also that their maister king Charles had now warres in hand against Francis duke of Britain, because that he succoured and maintained the duke of Orleance and others that were rebels against him. Wherefore his request was that for the olde familiaritie which had béene betweene them, he would now either assist and helpe him, or else stand as neuter betwixt them, neither helping or hurting the one or the other. The king answered the ambassadors, that he would neither spare paine nor cost to set some reasonable stay betwixt them. And as the ambassadors were returned home, the king sent his Chaplaine Christopher Vrswicke ouer into France to king Charles, as well to shew, that he was glad of the victorie which he had against Maximilian, as to declare what a tempestuous storme of euill rebelion himselfe had escaped, and ouercome héere in England. But the chiefe point of Vrswikes errand consisted in this, that he should intimate to the French king,

howe his maister king Henry offered himselfe as a mediator betwixt him and the Duke of Brytaine, to make them friends, and if he perceiued the French king to giue eare thereunto, then he should go into Britain to moue the duke there to bee contented, that some reasonable order might bee taken betwixt them.

Whilest Vrswike was trauelling in this matter, king Henry for the accomplishing of the coronation of his wife Quéene Elizabeth, returned toward London, and on the saturdaie next before the feast of All Saints he began his iournie with the Quéene from Warwike, and in his waie at S. Albons kept the feast of All Saints: and on the next morrow remoued to Barnet, where he rested: on the next morrow as he was comming toward London, in Harnesey parke hee was met by the Maior, Aldermen, Sheriffs, and principal commoners of the citie of London, all on horsebacke, and in one liuerie to attende vpon him, where he dubbed Sir Wil. Horne Maior of London knight. And betwixt Iserdon and London, he dubbed sir Iohn Perciuall alderman knight. Against the kings comming into London, the stréetes were grauelled, and the crafts in their liueries stood on both sides from Bishopsgate vnto Pauls church. The quéene with the kings mother, and manie ladies stood in a house without Bishopsgate néere to the Spittle, and sawe the king with his traine come toward the citie: Who rode through the citie to Pauls church, whereinto he was receiued: *Te Deum* sung for note of his victorie, and then lodged in the Byshops palace. On the morrow he went in procession, and heard a sermon at Pauls crosse. On the next sundaie, the Quéene with her Ladies and other Estates, came from Grénewich to the tower of London, where she was receiued by the king: and on the 25. of November she was crowned at Westminster with great solemnitie. And shortly after king Henry deliuered lord T. marques Dorset out of the tower, receiuing him again to his former fauor bicause his truth had béene throughly tried.

Queene Elizabeth crowned.

1488 Christopher Vrswike hauing passed from the French king to the Duke of Brytaine, and backe againe to the French king, returned into England, and shewed vnto king Henry what he had done betwixt them.

Immediatlie after came the Lord Barnard Deaubeney a Scot borne, which in the French kinges behalfe required king Henry to make some manner of end of those Brytish wars, whatsoeuer it were. King Henry therefore sent ouer into France Iohn Abbot of Abingdon, Sir Richard Edgecombe knight, and the sayde Christopher Vrswike, with commission to driue some agréement betwixt the Frenchmen and the Brytons. These went first to the French king, and after to the Duke of Brytaine, with whome they coulde doe no good, and so signified to the king their maister. Now in the meane time Edward lord Wooduile vncle to the Quéene, sued to king Henry that he might haue a power of men appointed to him, with the which he would steale priuilie ouer without licence or passport, so that euery man should thinke that hee were fledde the realme, without knowledge of the K. & although this request was outwardlie denied, yet the L. Wooduile withdrew himselfe into the Ile of Wight, whereof he was made ruler, he there gathered a crew of tall & hardy personages, to

Lord Wooduile aideth the Duke of Britaine.

the

the number of 400. & arriued in Britain, where he ioined himself with the Britons against the Frenchmen. The French K. aduertised hereof, was not well pleased towards the K. of England, till K. H. by messengers excused himself to be guiltles, & then he was pacified. And so the English ambassadors renewing the league & amity betwixt ỳ two K. for 12. moneths, returned into England.

The king of England forthwith called his high court of Parliament, in the which it was not onely determined, that the duke of Britain shoulde be aided with power of men, but also there were diuers sums of money granted to the furnishing forth of the same. Parliament.

About the 27. day of July the duke of Britaines army gaue battell to the French host nére to a towne called S. Albin, hauing apparelled 1700. of the Britons in coates with redde crosses after the English fashion, although they had but 400. English men with the lord Wooduile. The victory in this battell fell to the French, so that almost all the English men were slaine with the lord Wooduile, besides 6000. Britons. The Duke of Orleance, and the Prince of Orenge were taken prisoners, which were there on the Britons part. The French men lost 1200. men, with their valiant Captaine an Italian, named Iames Galiot. The newes hereof being heard in England, caused king Henry to make haste in sending forth his army, and therefore was the lord Brooke with Sir Iohn Cheinie, Sir Iohn Midleton, Sir Ralfe Hilton, Sir Richarde Corbet, Sir Thomas Leighton, Sir Richard Laton, and Sir Edmond Cornewall, sent ouer into Britaine with all conuenient spéede, hauing with them 8000. men well appointed, and furnished in warlike sort to aide the duke of Brytaine. These arriued in Britaine, and marched forward til they came nér to their enimies, where they pitched their field. But while this war was thus set forward, Francis duke of Britaine departed this life, and then the Rulers of that contry falling at dissention amongst themselues, tended not the defence of their country, so that the Englishmen perceiuing themselues to be danger, and beeing in the middest of Winter, they returned into Englande within fiue monethes after their first setting forth, so that finally the French king gat the vpper hande of the Brytons, and did ioyne that Dutchie to his Realme of France. Lord Wooduile slaine. *An. reg. 4.*

We haue heard howe there was in the last Parliament money granted for the furnishing forth of the armie into Brytaine, to witte, that euerie man shoulde bee tared to paie the tenth penie of all landes and goods: which money the most of them that dwelled in the Bishoprick of Durham, and in the parts of Yorkeshire refused vtterlie to paie, for that they thought themselues ouercharged with the same. Wherefore such as were appoynted collectors, complayned to Henry earle of Northumberland chéefe ruler of the north parts. The earle forthwith signified to the king all that matter, and the king not willing to pardon one peny, commanded the earle to distresse, or other wise to leuy the mony, as he should thinke méetest. The rude people hearing of this answeare from the king, by and by with great violence set vpon the earle, by the exciting of one named Iohn a Chamber, whome the earle with faire wordes sought to appease: but they alleaging all the fault to bee in him, as chiefe Author of that tare, I. Skelton. 1489

Earle of Northumberland slaine.

tare, furiouslie slue him, and certaine of his houshould seruantes in a place called Cock lodge by Thirske, eightéene miles from Yorke, on the 28. of Aprill. Then the northren men got them to armor, assembling together, chose them a captaine called sir Iohn Egremond knight: and passing by the countries, they published that they would bid the king battell, onelie in defence of their liberties. The king sent forth Thomas earle of Surrey, whom not long before he had deliuered out of the Tower, with a crewe of men, to chasten those rebels of the North, who skirmished with a company of them, whome they discomfited, and toke sir I. a Chamber, the first beginner of this rebellion. Then the northren men came to the citie of Yorke, where they remained 3. or 4. daies, vnto the time they heard of the comming of the king, and then they fled out of Yorke, som one waie, som another: but diuers of them were taken and brought to the king, who caused them that were captaines to be hanged and quartered. Iohn a Chamber was hanged at Yorke, vpon a gibbet set vpon a foure square paire of gallowes, and the other his complices were hanged on the gallowes round about him: but sir Iohn Egremond fled into Flanders to Margaret dutches of Burgundy. After this the king returned to London, leauing the earle of Surrey to rule the countrie of the north, and appointed sir Rich. Tunstall to gather the subsidy to him due of the people.

Ann. reg. 5.

Iames the third king of Scots was slain by his rebellious subiects, after they had vanquished him in battell.

About the same time, Adrian an Italian was sent Ambassador from Pope Innocent the eight, into Scotland, there to haue taken vp the variance betwixt the king and his people: But being arriued in England, he was informed that king Iames was slaine, and therefore remained here certaine moneths, and for that he was a man of excellent learning and humanitie, and commended by Iohn Morton Archbyshop of Canterburie, the king made him first Bishop of Hereford, and shortlie after, that being resigned, he was made bishop of Bath and Wels.

1490 This yére came ambassadors from the French king, the Lordes Francis of Lutzenburge, Charles Marignane, and Robert Gagwine, to haue concluded a peace with king Henry, and that the French king might dispose of the yong dutches of Brytaine, as hee should thinke best: but thereto woulde not king Henry consent: notwithstanding at length it was agréede, that a forme of league should be drawn with conditions, whereupon the French ambassadors being dismissed, Th. earle of Dimonde, and Thomas Goldston prior of Christs church in Canterbury were appointed to follow into France for conclusion of ỹ same league, but they returned without agréeing vpon anie league at al.

Ann. reg. 6.

Parliament at London.

King Henry determining no more with peaceable messages, but with open warre to determine all controuersies betwixt him and the French king, called a parliament, and therein declared that he was iustly prouoked to make warre against the French men, and therefore desired them of their benenolence of monie, and men toward the maintenance thereof. Euerie man allowed the cause to be iust, & promised his helping hand. The king commended them for their willing and faithfull hearts. And to the intent hee might spare the poorer

A benenolence to king Henry.

sort,

sort, he thought good first to exact monie of the richest sort, by waie of benevolence, which kind of leuying monie was first practised by king Edward the 4. King H. following his example, published that by their open gifts he woulde measure their benevolent hearts: so that he who gaue most should be iudged to be his most louing friend; and he that gaue little to be esteemed according to his gift. By this meanes king Henry got innumerable great sums of money, with some grudge of the people, for the extremitie shewed by the commissioners in diuers places.

The citizens of London gaue toward this iournie 9682. pound, 17. s. and foure pence. Toward the which sum, manie Aldermen gaue 200. l. the peece, and some of the Commons 100. pounde: the rest was supplied by the poorer sort.

1491 John Twichet Lord Audley Treasurer of Englande deceased on the 26. of September, he left issue Iames Audley married to Margaret, daughter to sir Ric. Darell knight. Which Iames Audley was beheaded on the twentie eight of June, *Anno 1497.*

An. reg. 7. Henry the kings second sonne was borne at Grenwich in Kent on the 22. of June.

1492 Maximilian king of Romans intending to be reuenged on the Frenchmen, for the manie iniuries done to him, because he was not rich enough to maintaine the warre of himselfe, he sent his ambassador Iames Contibald, a man of great wisedome, to require the king of England to take his part against the French king, making diuers great offers on his owne behalfe, if it would please him so to do.

K. Henry no lesse desirous than Maximilian to put the French king to trouble, and chiefly to aid the Britons in the extremitie of their businesse, gladlie consented to Maximilian, and promised to prepare an armie with all spæd, and to passe the seas to inuade the French territories.

The 6. of Aprill the nobles of the realme, Hugh Clopton Maior of London, his brethren the Aldermen, Sheriffes, and Companies of the Citie in their liueries, assembled in the Cathedrall Church of S. Paul, where Doctor Morton Archbyshop of Canterburie, Chancellor of England, made to them an oration, declaring how the king of Spaine had won the greate and rich Citie and countrie of Granado from the Moores: for ioie whereof, *Te Deum* was song with great solemnitie. The citie of Granado woon from the Moores.

In the moneth of Maie following, was holden a great and valiant iusting within the Kinges Manor of Shine, nowe called Richmond, in Southerie, the which endured by the space of a Moneth, sometime within the sayde place, and sometime without, vpon the Greene without the Gate of the said Manor. In the which space, a Combate was holden and done betwixt Syr Iames Parkar knight, and Hugh Vaughan Gentleman Vsher, vpon controuersie for the Armes that Gartar gaue to the sayde Hugh Vaughan: but hee was there allowed by the king to beare them, and Syr Iames Parkar was slayne at the first course. The cause of his death was thought to be long of a false helmet, which by force of the Cronacle fayled, so he was striken into the mouth, that Iustings at Shine. A combat at Shine.

his

his tongue was borne vnto the hinder part of the head, and so he died incontinently.

In this season, Charles the French king receiued the lady Anne of Britain, and with great solemnitie wedded her, hauing with her in dowrie the dutchie of Britaine. Thus was Maximilian in a great chafe toward the French king: Wherefore he sent vnto king Henrie, desiring him with all spéede to passe the seas with his armie, that they might pursue the warre against their aduersaries with fire, sworde, and blood. King Henry hearing this, and hauing no mistrust in the promise of Maximilian, with all spéede leuied an army, and rigged his naule: and when all things were readie, he sent his Almoner Christopher Vrswike, and sir Iohn Riseley knight, vnto Maximilian, to certifie him that the king was in a readinesse, and would arriue at Calais, as sone as he should be aduertised, that Maximilian and his men were readie to ioine with him.

These ambassadors comming into Flanders, perceiued that Maximilian was neither purueied of men, money, armour, or anie other thing necessary for the setting forth of war, saue onely that his will was good, but his power was small.

Ann. reg. 8. King Henrie being aduertised hereof, was sore disquieted in his minde: but taking counsaile, at length hee determined not to staie his pretended iourney, and therefore he so increased his number before he tooke shippe, that hee with his owne power might bee able to match with his aduersaries.

King Henry sayled into France. Then on the 9. of September, king Henry departed from Grēenwich toward the sea-side, and on the first of October tooke shipping at Sandwich, and the same daie landed at Calais with a great armie. The 15. of October he departed toward Bologne, the first night he lay at Sandingfield, the next night at Morgison, where he met with the Earle of Orforde chiefe Captaine of the fore-warde, then come from the beating downe of the Towne of Arde: with the earle of Orford came the earle of Shrewsburie, the earle of Deuonshire, the earle of Suffolke, the earle of Essex, the lord Grey Codner, the L. Strange, the lord Powesse, the lord Hastings, the lord Audley, the lord Latimer, the baron of Dudley, and diuers knights and esquires: these laie that night at Morgison, the next night both the wardes lay at Wimell, and the next night they came before Bologne, and there laie at siege till the eight of Nouember, at the which time the lord Cordos chiefe Captaine vnder the French king, in his maisters name required peace, which king Henry granted vpon conditions. This peace greatly displeased the English men, because they were ready prest to haue set on their enemies, and brought into great hope to haue bene enriched by the spoile to haue fallen to their lots of their enemies goods, besides the glorious fame of renowmed victorie: and namelie for that diuers of the Captaines, to set themselues and their bandes the more gorgeouslie forwarde, had borrowed large summes of money, and for the repayment had morgaged their landes, &c. The king returned to Calais: there were not manie of the English armie lost at this siege of Bologne, and fewe men of name

King Henry besieged Bologne.

more

more then that valiant captaine sir Iohn Sauage knight.

King Henry arriued at Douer on the seuenteenth of December, from thence he rode to Westminster, where he kept his Christmasse with great solemnitie. 1493

Now sprang there vp a newe found son to king Edward the fourth in this maner. The Dutchesse of Burgoigne espying a certaine young man, of visage beautifull, of countenance demure, of wit subtill, called Perken Werbeke, this yong man trauailing manie Countries, could speake English, and diuers other languages: the Dutchesse glad to haue got so meete an instrument for her purpose, as one not vnlike to be taken, and reputed for the Duke of Yorke, sonne to her brother king Edward, which was called Richard, kept him a certaine space with her priuitie, and him with such diligence instructed, both of the secrets, and common affaires of the Realme of England, and of the linage, descent, and order of the house of Yorke, that like a good scholler, he could tell all that was taught him without any staggering or staie in his wordes: and besides that he kept such a Princely countenance, that all men in maner did firmely beleeue, that he was extracted of that noble famile of the Duke of Yorke: when the Dutchesse sawe her time, shee sent this Perken first into Portingale, and so into Ireland, where shortly after his arriuall, he entred so farre in credite with the people, that his wordes were taken to be true. Perken Werbeke.

The French king aduertised hereof, sent into Ireland for Perken, who with all diligence sayled into France, and comming to the kings presence, was of him royally receiued, and had a garde assigned, whereof was gouernor the lord Congreshall, and to him being at Paris, resorted sir George Neuill bastard, sir Iohn Taylor, Rowland Robinson, and a hundreth English men: but after that the peace was confirmed betwixt the two kings of England and of France, the French king dismissed Perken.

And so Perken returned to the ladie Margaret, who assigned him a garde, and called him the white Rose of England, the nobilitie of Flanders did to him all reuerence.

In England the bruite of him sore disquieted the people, insomuch that not onelie of the meaner sorte, but also of the Nobles beleeued all that was of him reported, and manie passed ouer to him: and some of the Noble men conspired togither, purposing to ayde the foresaide Perken. Wherefore they sent messengers to the Ladie Margaret, to knowe when Richard Duke of Yorke might come into England, to the intente they might bee in a readinesse to assist him, at his arriuall. Sir Robert Clifford knight, and William Barley were sent into Flaunders, which discouered to the Dutchesse all the secret intent of the friendes of the newe founde Duke. The Dutchesse gladlie receiued this message, and brought the messenger to the sight of Perken: Who so well counterfeited the gesture, and maner of Richard Duke of Yorke, that Sir Robert Clifforde beleeued that he was the second sonne of king Edwarde, and thereof wrote into England to his complices. *Ann. reg. 9.*

The

1494 The coasts kept against Perken Werbeke.

The King perceiuing that this fable was not vanquished, sent certaine knights with competent bandes of Souldiors to kéepe the sea coasts: he also sent into the Lowe countries certaine persons to learne the trueth of this forged Dukes progenie: where some of them comming to Torney got knowledge that he was borne in that citie of base linage, and named Perken Werbeke. The king being aduertised hereof, sent sir Edward Poinings knight, and sir W. Warham doctor of the lawes vnto Philip archduke of Burgoigne, to signifie to him that the yong man being with the lady Margaret, had falsely vsurped the name of Richard duke of Yorke, long before murthered. The ambassadors hauing done their message, were answered, that to haue the king of Englands loue, the archduke would neither aid or assist Perken, nor his complices, in any cause or quarrell.

After the returne of the ambassadors, the King sent certaine espials into Flanders, which should fain themselues to haue fled to the duke of Yorke, and therby to search out the whole intent of the conspiracie.

Other were sent to intise sir Robert Clifford and William Barley to returne into Englande, promising to them pardon of all their offences, and high rewards, for obeying the kings request. They that were sent did so earnestly aplie their businesse, that they brought to passe all thinges at their owne desires, for they learned who were the chiefe conspiratours, and perswaded Sir Robert Clifforde to giue ouer that enterprise. When the King had knowledge of the chiefe Captaynes of the conspiracie, hee caused them to bee apprehended. The chiefe were, Iohn Ratclife Lorde Fitzwalter, Sir Simon Mountforte, Sir Thomas Twhates knights, William Dawbeney, Robert Ratclife, Thomas Chreſſenor, and Thomas Astewoode: Simon Mountforde, Robert Ratclife, and William Dawbeney were beheaded, the other had their pardons, the Lord Fitzwalter was conueied to Caleis and layde in houlde, and after lost his head.

An. reg. 10. Flemmish merchants with their wares banished this land

King Henry taking displeasure with the king of Romaines, for that he had not kept touch with him against the French king, and partlie displeased with the Flemmings, but spectallie with the Ladie Margaret, for kéeping and setting forward Perken Werbeke, not onlie banished the Flemmings wares and merchandize out of his dominions, but also restrained all English merchants from their repaire and trafike, into any of the lands and territories of the king of Romaines, or of the archduke Philip son to the king of Romaines, causing the Marte to bee kept at Caleis, of all English merchandizes and commodities: wherefore the said king and his son banished out of their lands and sygnories, all English clothes, yearne, tynne, leade, and other commodities of this Realme.

Henry the kings second son was created duke of Yorke, on Alhalowne Euen, at which time were made knights the duke of Yorke, the Lorde Harington, Lord Clifton, Lord Dacre of the South, Lord Waren, Sir Thomas Stanley, Sir I. Arundell, Sir Walter Griffith, Sir Gerueyes Clifton, Sir Robert Harcourte, Syr Edwarde Traforde, Syr Henry Merney, Syr Robert Newbrough, Syr Raulph Ryder, Syr I. Sparke, Syr Humfrey Fulforde, Syr Robert Litton,

Syr

Syr Pierce Edgecombe, Sir Robert Clere, Syr Thomas Farfax, Sir Richarde Knightley, Syr I. Cheke.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, where on the twelfe day hee made Ralph Austry Maior of London, and William Marton late Maior, knights. 1495

The morrowe after the Epiphanie, King Henry went to the Tower of London, and there remained till such time, as Sir Robert Clifford was there presented, which was done for a policie, that if Sir Robert accused anie of the Nobilitie, they mought be called thither, without suspition of anie euill, and there attached, and laid fast: now at the comming of Syr Robert Clifforde to the kinges presence, he besought him of pardon, and obtained it, and therwith opened the manner of the conspiricie, and who were the ayders, fautors, and chiefe beginners of it. Amongst whome he accused sir William Stanley, whome the king had made his chiefe Chamberlaine, and one of his priuie Councell: but nowe the king caused him to bee restrained from his libertie in his owne Chamber, within the Square Tower, and there appoynted him by his priuie Councell to be examined, where he wisely agreed to all thinges layde to his charge, if hee were therein faultie & culpable. The report is, that this was his offence, when communication was had betweene him and the forementioned Syr Robert Clifford, as concerning Perken, Sir William Stanley saide, that if he certainely knewe that the yong man was the vndoubted sonne and heire of king Edward the fourth, hee woulde neuer fight nor beare armour against him, wherefore he was charged that he bare no heartie good will toward king Henry. The king hauing thus an hole in his coat, doubted first what he should do with him, for loath he was to lose the fauor of his brother the earle of Darby: but arraigned he was at Westminster and adiudged to die, according to which sentence, he was brought to the Tower hill on the seuenth date of Februarie, and there beheaded. This Syr William Stanley was the chiefe and principall helper of king Henry to the Crowne at Bosworth Fielde, against king Richarde: Hee was a man of greate power in his Countrey, and also of greate wealth, insomuch, as the common fame ran, there was in his castle of Holte, found in readie coine and plate, to the value of fortie thousand markes or more, and his land and fees extended to three thousand pounds by yeare.

K. H. lodged in the Tower.

Sir W. Stanley beheaded.

The 22. of Februarie were arraigned in Guildhall at London foure persons, to witte, Thomas Bagnall, Iohn Scot, Iohn Hethe, and Iohn Kenington, the which were Sanctuarie men of Saint Martin le grand in London, and lately before taken thence, for forging seditious libels, to the slander of the king, and some of his Councell: for the which three of them were adiudged to die, and the fourth named Bagnall, pleaded to bee restored to sanctuary: by reason whereof he was reprieued to the Tower till the next terme, and on the 26. of Februarie, the other three with a Flemming, and Robert Bikley a yeoman of the Crown, were all fiue executed at Tyborne.

Sanctuary men executed.

Giles Lorde Dawbeney was made the kings chiefe Chamberlaine.

The king sent into Ireland, Syr Henry Deane, late abbot of Lanthonie, whome

whome he made Chancellor of that Ile, and Sir Edward Poinings knight, with an armie of men, whereof when the fauorers of Perken heard, they straight fled to the woods and marishes. Syr Edward Poinings with his whole Armie marched against the wild Irish, because the other being culpable were fled to them for succour: but when hee sawe himselfe and his power, not able to followe his enemies in the woodes, marishes and mountaines, he was constrained to recule backe, sore disquieted against Geralde Earle of Kyldare, seeing then the kinges Deputie, whome hee suspected to bee the cause that hee hadde no succours sent him, and therefore sodaynelie hee caused the Earle to bee apprehended, and as a Prisoner brought him into Englande, which Earle so cleared himselfe of all thinges layde to his charge, that he was dismissed and sent into Ireland agayne, there to bee deputie and Lieutenant as before.

King Henrie beeing nowe in some better suretie of his Estate, tooke his Progresse into Lancashyre about the fiue and twentieth of June, there to bee merrie with his Mother the Countesse of Darbie, which then laie at Latham.

Sir W. Caple put in suit.

Syr William Caple Alderman of London, was called in question, and condemned to the king, in twentie seuen hundreth, and fortie three poundes sterling, for the Breach of certayne Statutes made before times: for the which he made his end with the king for 16. hundreth and 15. pounds, sixe shillings, eight pence, which he paid.

Perken Werbeke arriued in Kent.

Perken Werbeke being in Flanders, and hoping at length to obtayne the Crowne of England, gathered a power of all nations, some banqueroutes, some theeues, and such as desired to liue by rapine, and being thus furnished, he tooke such shippes as his friendes had prouided for him, and then departing from Flaunders, arriued at Deale in Kent, on the third of Julie: he put som of his men to lande, to signifie his arriuall with such a power, that the victory must nedes incline to his part. The Kentishmen vnderstanding that Perken had none with him to account of, but straungers borne, and base people, like faithfull subiectes determined to fall vpon those that were thus nowe come to Lande, and also to trye if they might allure the whole Number out of their Shippes, so to giue them Battaple. But Perken would not sette one foot out of his Shippe, till he sawe all thinges sure: yet he permitted some of his Souldiors to go on lande, which beeing trained forth a prettie waie from their Shippes, and seeing they coulde haue no comfort of the Countrey, they withdrewe againe to their Shippes: at which withdrawing, the Maior of Sandwich, with certaine commons of the Countrey bickered with the residue that were vpon lande, and tooke aliue of them 169. persons, among the which were fiue Captaines, Mountfort, Corbet, White Belt, Quintyn, and Genine. And on the twelfth of Julie Syr Iohn Pechy Sheriffe of Kent, brought vnto London Bridge those 169. persons, where the Sheriffes of London, Nicholas Alwine and Iohn Warner receiued and conueied them, tailed in robes like horses in a cart, vnto the tower of London, and to Newgate, and shortlie after to the number of 150. were hanged about the sea coasts in Kent, Essex,

An. reg. 11.

Sussex,

Suffer, and Norfolke: the residue were executed at Tiborne and at Wapping in the Wose besides London: and Perken fled into Flanders.

In this season deceased Cicilie dutchesse of Yorke, mother to king Edward the fourth, in her castle of Barkhamsted, and was buried at Fodringhay by her husband.

Beacons set vp and watched.

King Henry being in his progresse north, sent sir Richard Guilford to commend the fidelitie and manhod of the Kentishmen, and also to render to them most hartie thankes for the same: he also caused order to be taken for the erecting of bikenings or beacons, and watching of them.

1496

Perken Werbeke went into Ireland.

Perken Werbeke sayled into Ireland, trusting there to augment his number: but perceiuing that the hope of victorie consisted not in naked people without furniture or armor, he toke the sea againe at Corke, and sayled into Scotland, where comming to the presence of king Iames, hee forged such a painted processe, that the king of Scots began to haue Perken in great honor, and caused him to be called Duke of Yorke, and to perswade the world that he was so indeede, he caused the ladie Katherine daughter to Alexander Earle of Huntley, his nigh kinsman to be espoused to him.

Perken spoileth in Northumberland.

And shortly after in companie of this Perken, he entered into Englande with a puissant armie, and caused proclamation to be made to spare all those that would submit themselues vnto Richard Duke of Yorke, and heere-with they began to war in most cruell maner, with slaughter of men, burning of townes, and committing detestable enormities, so that all the Countrey of Northumberland, was by them in maner wasted and destroyed. At length when the souldiers were laden with pray, perceiuing that no succour came out of England vnto the new Duke, they withdrew backe into Scotlande, enriched with prayes and booties.

Ann. reg. 12.

When king Henrie was truelie certified that the Scottish king was returned home, he staide all the preparations made at that time to goe against him: but yet meaning to be reuenged of the wrongs done to him by king Iames and his people, hee first called a Parliament, and in that assemblie declared the cause of the instant warre, and how necessarie it should be for to haue the warre pursued against those enemies that had begunne it: to which motion all the Nobilitie wholie agreed, and a subsidie was granted.

A parlament and a subsidie.

Iaspar Duke of Bedford Uncle to king Henrie the seauenth, deceased on the 18. of December, and was buried in the abbey of Keinsham in Glocestershire.

Iaspar Duke of Bedford deceased.

1497

A commotion by the commons of Cornwall.

King Henry prepared a mightie armie to inuade Scotland, and ordeined for chieftaine, the lord Dawbeney: but as this army was forward towarde Scotlande, the same was staied and called backe againe, by reason of a new commotion begun by the Cornishmen, for the payment of the subsidie granted at the last Parliament. Of these people the heads were called Thomas Flamoke, a Gentleman learned in the lawe, and Michaell Ioseph a blacke smith or horse-farrier of Bodmin, men of stout stomackes. They layde the fault of this eraction vnto Iohn Morton archbishop of Canterburie, and to sir

Reginald Bray, because they were chiefe of the kinges Councell. Flamoke and Ioseph exhorted the common people to put on harneis, and to follow them in the quarrell, promising not to hurt anie creature, but onelie to see them punished that procured such exactions to be laide on the people, without anie reasonable cause: so these captaines assembled a great number of people togither, then praising their hardines, when all thinges were readie for their iourney, set forwarde with their armie, and came to Taunton, where they slewe the pronoste of Parin, which was one of the commissioners of the subsidie, and from thence came to Wels, so intending to go to London, where the king then sojourned. When the king was aduertised of these doings, he was somewhat astonied, he reuoked the lord Daubeney which was going against the Scots, and increased his army. The nobles came to London with as manie men of war as they could put in a readines, to aide the king against his rebelles, if neede should be. In the mean time Iames Twichet L. Audley, being confederat with the rebels of Cornwall, ioined with them, being come to Wels, and toke vpon him, as their chiefe Captaine and leader: from Wels they went to Salisbury, and from thence to Winchester, & so into Kent, where they hoped to haue had great aid, but they were deceiued: for the earle of Kent, George L. Burgeueny, Iohn Brooke, L. Cobham, sir Edward Poinings, sir Ric. Guilford, sir T. Bourchier, Iohn Peche, William Scot, and a great number of people were readie to defend the countrey, which thing marueilouslie dismaied the Cornishmen, so that manie of them fled from their companie. The Captaines brought their people to blacke heath, and there ordered their battels, either ready to fight with the king, if he would assaile them, or else to assault the citie of London. The king sent Iohn Earle of Oxforde, Henry Bourchier earle of Essex, Edmonde de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, Sir Rise ap Thomas, and Sir Humfrey Stanley, Noble warriours, with a great companie of Archers, and horsemen, to inuiron the hill on either side, to the intent that all by-waies being stopped, all hope of flight shoulde bee taken from them: and incontinentlie, hee himselfe beeing furnished with a greate Armie, sette forewarde out of the Citie, encamped himselfe in Saint Georges fielde, where he lodged that night, and on the nexte morning sent the Lord Dawbeney with a great company to set vpon them earlie in the morning, which first gat the bridge of Dartford strand, while the earles set on them on euery side, the lord Daubeney came into the field with his companie, and without long fighting, on the 22. of June, the Cornishmen were ouercome: but first they toke the Lorde Dawbeney prisoner, but let him go at libertie, without hurt or detriment. There were slain of the rebels about three hundred, and taken of them about fiftene hundreth. There was giuen to them that toke them their goods: amongst them the blacke Smith and other their Captaynes were put to death. And when this battaple was ended, the king wanted of all his number but three hundreth men, which were slayne.

Blacke-heath field.

The Lord Audley was drawn from Newgate to the Tower-hill in a coat of his own armes painted vpon paper, reuersed and all to torne, and there was beheaded on the 28. of June. Flamoke and Ioseph the blacke-smith were drawn,

headed,

headed, and quartered at Tyborn, and their heads and quarters set vp at London and other places: knights and banerets made at Black-heath, and at London bridge sot, when the K. returned from Black-heath, as I haue set down in my larger chronicle.

In the moneth of July K. Henry sent an army into Scotland, vnder the guiding of the earle of Surrey, and the lord Neuill, which made sharp war vpon the Scots: but by the labor of Peter Helias sent from the king of Spaine, a truce was concluded betwixt the two kings of England and of Scotland, with condition that Iames King of Scots shoulde conuey Perken Werbeke out of his realme and signiories. *Ann. reg. 13.* The earle of Surrey went into Scotland with a great power.

About the same time king Henry receiued the ambassadors that were sent to him from the French king. Also the Lord of Camphere, and other orators of Philip Archduke of Austrich, and Duke of Burgoigne, came to him for the conclusion of amitie, and to haue the English Merchantes to resort again into their Countrey, which request he granted. And so did the English men resort againe into the Archdukes dominions, and were receiued (saieth Hall) into Andwerpe with Generall procession, so glad was that towne of their returne. Ambassadors for an amitie with the duke of Burgundy.

Perken Werbek being willed by the king of Scots to depart out of the Scottish dominions, sailed with his wife and familie into Ireland, where while hee remained hee had knowledge from the Cornishmen, that they were ready to renew the war againe. Whereupon he hauing with him fowre small ships, and not aboue an hundreth and twentie men, sailed into Cornewall, and there landed at Whitesande Baie on the 7. of September, from whence he went to Bodmyne, where hee gathered to him aboue three thousande persons. Then Perken made proclamations in name of King Richarde the fourth, as son to king Edwarde the fourth. And by the aduise of his three Counsellers, Iohn Heron Mercer, a Banquerout, Richarde Skelton Tayler, and Iohn Askeley Scriuener, determined first of all to assayle the winning of Excester, and so hastning thither, he laid siege to it: The citizens perceiuing themselues to be in danger, let certaine messengers downe by cordes ouer the wall, that mought certifie the king: And herewith caused faggots to be brought and laid to the inward part of their gates, and set them all on fire, to the intent to keepe their enimies from entring in, and their Citizens from flying out, and that they in the meane season might make trenches & rampiers to defend their enimies in stead of gates. Perken set vp Ladders to scale the walles: but the Citizens, with helpe of such as were come forth of the countrey to their aid, so valiantly defended the walles, that they slue aboue 200. of Perkens souldiours at that assaulte. The King hasted forth with his Hoste, and sent the Lorde Dawbeney with certaine bands of Light horsemen to aduertise all men of his comming. Perken Werbeke landed in Cornwall. The city of Excester besieged.

But in the meane season Edward Courtney earle of Deuonshire, and William his sonne, accompanied with sir Edmond Carew, sir T. Trenchard, sir William Courtney, sir Tho. Fulford, sir I. Haliwell, sir I. Crokar, Walter Courtney, Peter Edgecombe, W. Snaure, came into the citie of Excester to helpe the citizens,

so that the earle was hurt in the arme with an arrow, and so were many of his men, but fewe slaine. When Perken sawe he could not winne the citie of Excester, he went from thence to Taunton, and there mustering his men, he perceiued them to be minished, he began to mistrust the remnant: in deede when the people that followed him in hope that no small number of the nobilitie would ioyne with him, saw no such matter come to passe, they stale awaie from him. When the king heard that Perken was gone to Taunton, he followed after him with all speede, and by the way there came to him Edward Duke of Buckingham, and a great companie of noble men. But as soone as Perken was informed that the king was at hand, he with a 60. horsemen fled from Taunton to a sanctuary at Bewdley beside Southampton. King Henry sent the lord Dawbeney with 500. horsemen after Perken to apprehend him, so that many of his captaines were taken. Also diuers horsemen rode to Saint Michaels mount, and there toke the lady Gordon wife to Perken, and brought her to the king. At whose beauty and amiable countenance the king much maruelled, and sent her to London to the Quéene. The common people submitted themselues to the kings mercie.

After this the king rode to Excester, and there executed diuers Cornishmen: he also caused the sanctuary wherein Perken was inclosed, to be inuironed with bands of light horsemen, to watch that Perken shoulde not escape, wherfore Perken vpon promise of pardon committed himselfe to the king, and then the king returned to London.

Perke brought vp to London.

The 28. of Nouember, Perken was conueied on horseback through cheape, and Cornhill vnto the Tower of London, & from thence back againe through Candle wéeke streete to Westminster.

The kings manor of Shine burnt.

The 21. of December at 9. of the clocke at night, sodainly began a great fier within the kings lodging, then being at his manor of Shine, which fier continued till midnight, by violence whereof much and a great part of the old buildings of that place was burnt, with hangings, beds, apparell, plate, and manie iewels.

1498

Perken Werbeke endeuouring to steale secretly out of the land, was taken againe by his kéepers, and by the kings commandement cast into the tower of London, and after he was shewed in Westminster, and Cheape, stocked on scaffolds to the great wonderment of many people: where he read his confession written with his owne hand.

An. reg. 14.

Inclosures about London pulled downe.

This yeere all the gardens which had béene continued time out of minde without Moore gate of London, were destroyed, and of them was made a plaine fielde for archers to shoote in. The English merchants were receiued into Antwerpe with generall procession, after they had béen long absent from thence.

Dirt sommer.

This yeere was a great drought, by reason whereof, a loade of hay which was before time sold at London for fiue shillings, was this yeere solde for ten shillings or twelue shillings more.

Sebastian Gabato his voiage.

This yeere one Sebastian Gabato a Genoas sonne, borne in Bristow, professing himselfe to be expert in knowledge of the circuit of the world and Ilands

of

of the same, as by his Charts & other reasonable demonstrations he shewed, caused the king to man & victual a ship at Bristow to search for an Iland, which he knew to be replenished with rich cõmodities: in the ship diuers merchants of London aduentured smal stocks, and in the companie of this ship, sayled also out of Bristow 3. or 4. small ships fraught with sleight and grosse wares, as course cloth, caps, laces, points, and such other. Sir Humfrey Gilbert knight, in his booke intituled, A discouery for a new passage to Catata, writeth thus: Sebastian Gabato, by his personall experience and trauell, hath set forth and described this passage in his Charts, which are yet to be séene in the Quénes Maiesties priuy gallerie at White hall, who was sent to make this discouerie by K. Henry the 7. and entred the same fret, affirming, that he sailed very far westward, with a quarter of the north, on the north side of *Terra de Labrador*, the 11. of June, vntill he came to the septentrionall latitude of 67½ degrées, and finding the seas still open, said, that he might and would haue gon to Catata, if the enimity of the master and mariners had not béene. Humfr. Gilbert.

The 24. of Februarie, the kings third sonne was christened within the Friers church at Grænwich, by the name of Edward. 1499

A shoomakers son borne in Bishops gate stréete of London, was hanged at Saint Thomas Watrings on Shrouetuesday, for naming himselfe to bee Edward earle of Warwike, son to George duke of Clarence: which Edward earle of Warwike was then (and had béene all the raigne of this king) kept secret prisoner in the tower of London. A shoomakers sonne named to be the earle of Warwike.

The Gascoine wine was sold at London for fortie shillings the tunne, and much left to the shipmen for fraight, the plenty was so great. A quarter of wheate foure shillings, and bay salt foure pence the bushell. *An. reg. 15.* Wine, salt, and wheate cheape.

Perken Werbecke being in hold, by great promises corrupted his kéepers, named Strangwais, Blewet, Astwood, and long Roger, seruants to sir Iohn Digby lieutenant of the tower (as was affirmed) intended to haue slaine their master, and to haue set Perken and the earle of Warwike at large: which earle of Warwike had béene kept in prison within the tower (as yée haue heard) from the first yéere of this king to this 15. yeere, out of all companie of men and sight of beasts, and therefore could not of himselfe séeke his owne destruction, but by the drift of other he was brought to his death, for being made priuie of this enterprise deuised by Perken and his complices, he assented thereunto: but this deuise being reuealed, Perken and Iohn a Waters, sometime maior of Corke in Ireland, were arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and on the 23. of November drawne to Tiborne, where Perken read his former confession, as before he had done in Cheape, taking on his death the same to be true, and so hee and Iohn a Water asked the king forgiuenesse, and tooke their deaths patiently. Perken Werbecke executed.

Also Edward Plantagenet the forenamed earle of Warwike, son to George duke of Clarence, brother to Edward the fourth, being about the age of foure and twentie yeeres, on the one and twentieth of November was arraigned at Westminster, before the earle of Oxford then high Steward of England, of treason, in minding to haue escaped (as they saide) and he was perswaded Earle of Warwike beheaded.

to confesse, which hee did, and submitted himselfe to the kmercie: vpon which confession he had iudgement, and was executed on a scaffold on the tower hil, but buried at Bisham by his ancestors: and shortly after, Walter Blewet and Thomas Astwood were hanged at Tyborne.

1500 Great pestilence.

This yeere was a great plague of pestilence, whereof men died very sore in many places, especiallie in and about London, where died in that whole yeer (as it was thought) about the number of 30000 people.

The king and Queene sailed to Caleis.

King Henry whether it were to auoid the danger of the sicknes then raigning, or to take occasion to commune with the duke of Burgoine, he with Quéene Elizabeth his wife sailed ouer, and landed at Caleis on the 8. of May, with him was the duke of Buckingham, the earles of Surrey and of Esser, the Lorde Dawbeney Lieutenant of the Tower and Marches of Caleis, and others in great number, where they met with the duke of Burgoin, and returned in the moneth of June.

Edward the kings third son died this yéer at Bishops Hatfield in Hertfordshire, and was buried at Westminster.

Two Archbyshops and three bishops deceased.

Also on the morrow after the Ascension day deceased Th. Rotherham Archbishop of Yorke, at his manor of Cawood, at the age of lxxvi. yeeres or more, and was buried in the minster of S. Peter at Yorke in a tombe of marble. This Rotherham, otherwise called Scot, a man of great wisedome was brought vp in Rotherham, afterward a fellow of kings colledge in Cambridge, then Chaplaine to king Edward the 4. and keeper of the priuie seale, first preferred by the king to the sea of Rochester, then translated to Lincoln, where he sate 9. yéers, at length made lord chancellor of England, which office he enioied til the kings death: before the which time he was preferred to the sea of Yorke, he erected a

Colledge at Rotherham founded.

Colledge at Rotherham in Yorkeshire, dedicated to the name of Iesu, for a prouost to be a Preacher in the Dioceese of Yorke, fiue Priestes, fiue Choristes, three schoolemasters, one for song, one for grammar, and one for writing, hee gaue a rich Miter to the church of Yorke (for king Edward the 4. had broken the old) he caused manie great buildings to be made in his mannors, as the great kitchin at White-hall by Westminster. At Southwell, the pantry and Bakehouse, and new chambers adioining to the riuer. At Bishops Thorpe, the pantry, bakehouse, and chambers on the northside toward the woods: he was archbishop 19. yéeres 9. monethes, &c. The bishop of Norwich Tho. Ian. and Iohn Alcocke, bishop of Ely deceased. This Iohn Alcock did conuert the monastery of S. Radigond in Cambridge, then destitute of gouernment, the edifices fallen in ruine, and the nuns departing thence, leaning it desolate, into a colledge of Chaplaines and Scholler *in anno Christi 1446.* reedified all his mannors with new buildings from the foundations, he builded a new hal to his palace at Ely, with other faire buildings there. Also in the moneth of October deceased Iohn Morton Archbishop of Canterburie at his manor of Knole: this Morton born in Berry besides Blenford in the county of Dorset, doctor of lawes, aduocate of the archbishop, parson of S. Dunstons in the east of London, bishop of Ely, who passed by the Ile of Ely into Flanders, where he continued a student, till the fall of Ric. the 3. after which time he was called home to his bishop-

An. reg. 16. John Alcocke bishop of Ely deceased.

Morton archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

ricke,

ricke, and made chancellor of England, and within 3. yeres after archbishop of Canterbury, in the yere 1486. in the moneth of September: this Morton late chancellor and archbishop 13. yeres, and was buried vnder the quier at Canterbury, he repaired and builded a great part of his place at Lambeth, he did the like at Maidston, at Allington parke, at Charing, at Ford, and also at his Palace at Canterburie.

Thomas Langton bishop of Winchester deceased, & was burie at Winchester: he gaue to Penbroke hall in Cambridge, a cup of siluer ouer gilt, which I haue seene, with this inscription: Thomas Langton *Winton. episcopus, aulæ Penbrochiæ olim socius, dedit hanc tassiam coopertam eidem aulæ 1497. qui alienaut anathema sit*, 67. ounces. Richard Fox sometime Bishop of Exceter, after of Durham, was translated to Winchester. Henry Deane sometime Prior of Lanthonie, then Bishop of Salisburie, was now translated to the archbyshoprick of Canterbury. Richard Redman succeeded in the bishoprick of Ely, and Ric. Nien in the bishoprick of Norwich: Th. Sauage first bishop of Rochester then of London, was now translated to the sea of Yorke. Langton bishop of Winchester.

The lord Denham treasurer of England deceased, and on the 30. of Januarie was buried in the Grey-friars church at London, on the south side of the quire. L. Denham deceased.

This yere when the K. had finished much of his new building at his manor of Shine, & again furnished and repaired that before was perished with fier, in the 13. yere of his raigne, forasmuch as in the time of that hideous fire, many notable and rich iewels, and other things of superabundant value, were perished, by the violence thereof, it pleased him to command it should be called his manor of Richmond, and not otherwise. The king also this yer builded a new Bainards castle in London, and repaired his manor of Grenwich. 1501 Richmond and Bainards castle new builded.

In the moneth of May the K. kept a rotall turney and iusts in the tower of London, of his lords, knights, and other. Iusting in the tower of London.

About this time Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke, son to Iohn Duke of Suffolke, and Ladie Elizabeth sister to king Edward the fourth, was indited of murther, for slaying a meane person in his rage and furie (as it was saide) and he was perswaded to confesse, but was pardoned by the king, yet because he was brought to the bar afore the kings bench, and arraigned (which he took as a great blemish to his honor) shortly after he fled into Flanders, vnto the lady Margaret his aunt. Neuertheles (saith Hal) he returned again, and excused himselfe to the king, so that he was thought to be guiltles of any crime. But after this earle, with his brother Richard fled againe into Flanders. Which departure of the Earle sore vexed the king, who doubted of some new trouble to ensue thereof. Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke with his brother Richard fled into Flanders. *An. reg. 17.*

In this meane time the lady Katherin of Spaine was sent by her father K. Ferdinando, with a puissant nauy of ships into England, where she arriued in the hauen of Plimmouth, the 2. of October. Lady Katherin arriued in England.

The 9. of November prince Arthur with a goodlie companie came through Fleetstreet of London to S. Pauls, and so to the wardrobe by the Black friers, and there was lodged. And the same date came the Ladie Katherine Princesse

vnto Lambeth, where she with hir ladies was lodged, in the archbishops Inne of Canterburie: and vpon the Friday next following about two of the clock at afternoone, the said ladie princes accompanied with many lords and ladies, in most sumptuous manner apparrelled, came riding from Lambeth into Southwarke, and so to London bridge, where was ordeined a costlie pageant of S. Katherine and Saint Vrsala, with many virgins: from thence she rode to Grace-streete, where was ordeined a second pageant, from thence to the conduct in Cornhill, where was another pageant. The great conduct in cheape ran with Gascoine wine, and was furnished with musick. Against Soperlane end was the fourth pageant. At the standard in cheape was ordeined the fift pageant. At Pauls gate was the 6. pageant: by the which the princesse rode through Pauls church-yard vnto the bishop of Londons palace, where she and hir people were lodged.

The pale in Paules church.

Now within the church of S. Paul, to wit, from the west gate of it vnto the vppermost greese or step at the going in of the quier, was made a pale of timber and boords to go vpon, from the saide west dore vnto the forenamed greese, of the height of 6. foot from the ground, or more: and foreaneust the place where the commissaries court is kept within the said church, was ordeined a standing like vnto a mountain, with steps on euery side, which was couered ouer with red wussed, and in likewise was all the ralles: against which mountaine vpon the north side, within the foresaide place of the commissaries court was ordeyned a standing for the king, and such other as liked him to haue: & on the south side almost, for against the kings standing was ordeined a scaffold, whereupon stood the Maior and his brethren.

Prince Arthur married.

Then vpon the 14. of November being Sundaie, vpon the aboue named mountaine, was prince Arthur about the age of 15. yeeres, and the lady Katherine about the age of 18. yeeres, both clad in white sattine, married by the Archbishop of Canterbury, assisted by 19. bishops and abbots mitered. And the K. the queene, the kings mother, stood in the place aforenamed, where they heard and beheld the solemnization: which being finished, the said archbishop and Bishops toke their way from the mountaine, vpon the saide pale couered vnder foot with blew rey-cloth vnto the quier, & so to the high altar, whom followed the spouse and spouses, the lady Cicile sister to the queene bearing hir traine, after hir followed 100. ladies & gentlewomen, in right costly apparel, then the Maior in a gowne of crimson veluet, and his brethren in scarlet, with the swords born before the maior, & sate in the quier the masse while, the archbish. of Yorke sate in the deanes place, and offred as chiefe, and after him the D. of Buckingham, &c. Wonderfull it was to behold the riches of apparell worne that date, with the pursant chaines of gold: of which two were specially noted, to wit, sir T. Brandon knight, master of the kings horse, which that day ware a chain valued at 1400. pound: and the other William de Riuers esquire, master of the K. haukes, whose chain was valued at a thousand pound: many mo were of 200. 300. and so forth, these were not noted for the length, but for the greatnesse of the linkes. Also the duke of Buckingham ware a gowne wrought of Needle worke, and set vpon cloth of tissue, furred with sables, the which Gowne was

Massie chaines of gold.

The Duke of Buckingham his gowne.

valued

valued at 1500.l.& sir Nicholas Vause knight, ware a gowne of purple veluet, pight with peeces of gold so thicke and massie, that it was valued in golde, besides the silke and fur, a thousand pounde: which chaines and garments were valued by goldsmithes of best skill, and them that wrought them. The masse being finished, the princesse was led by Henry duke of Yorke, and a Legate of Spain, by the foresaid pace into the palace, going before her men of honor, to the number of 160. with gentlemen and other. There came vnto the Maior sir Richard Crofts steward of the Princes house, which brought him and his brethren the aldermen into the greate hall, and at a table vpon the west side of the hall, caused them to bee set to dinner, where honorablie were they serued with 12. dishes to a messe at the first course, 15. the second course, and 18. dishes the third course. In this hall was a cupbord of fiue stages height, being triangled, the which was set with plate valued 1200.l. the which was neuer mooued at that day: & in the vtter chamber where the princesse dined, was a cupbord of gold plate, garnished with stone and pearle, valued aboue 20000. pound. The tuesday following, the king and queene being all this season at Wainards castle, came vnto Powles, and heard there masse, and then accompanied with manie nobles, went into the palace, and there dined with the princesse. This daie sir Nicholas Vause ware a coller of Esses which weied, as the goldsmithes that made it reported, 800. pounde of nobles: And the same daie at afternoon, the saide princes were conueied with many Lords and Ladies vnto Powles wharffe, where the said estates tooke their barges, and were rowed to Westminster, vpon whome the maior attended, with the Aldermen and fellowships in barges, garnished with banners and other deuises, musick, &c. Thus much for that marriage.

Cupbord of plate.

A massie chaine of gold worn by a knight.

The 25. of January at Pauls crosse was declared the assurance of Iames K. of Scots, and of the lady Margaret eldest daughter to king Henry of England, in reioicing whereof *Te Deum* was sung, and bonefiers made through the city, and at 12. of the bonefiers were set 12. hogsheads of Gascoigne wine, to bee drunke of all men freelie.

1502

James king of Scots assured to lady Margaret daughter to K. Henry the 7.

There was apprehended Wil. lord Courtney son to the earle of Deuonshire, which had maried the lady Katherin daughter to K. Ed. the 4. and William de la Pole brother to the earle of Suffolke, sir Iames Tyrell, sir Iohn Windham, &c. when the earle of Suffolke before fled (as ye haue heard) vnderstood what wait was laid for him in Flanders, he wandred about Germany and Fraunce, to purchase succor, if by any meanes he might, but in the end, hee submitted himselfe vnder the protection of Philip archduke of Austrich, which was to his own destruction, as proued after.

When king Henry had setled things to his contentment and pleasure, there sodainelie happened to him a lamentable chance, for in the beginning of the moneth of Aprill, there died that Noble and vertuous prince Arthur the kings eldest sonne, vnder the age of 16. yeeres, in his castle of Ludlowe, and with greate funerall obsequie was buried in the Cathedrall Church of Worcester.

Prince Arthur deceased.

On the 2. of May were arraigned in Guildhall at London, sir Iames Tyrell knight, lieutenant of Guines castle, sir Iohn Windham knight, Welborne

Sir Iames Tyrel and other arraigned.

seruant

seruant to the said sir Iames, and a ship man, foure persons were indicted of treason for aiding sir Edmond de la Pole Earle of Suffollke, they were condemned to be drawne, hanged and quartered.

On the 6. of Maie, sir Iames Tyrell, and sir Iohn Windham were beheaded on the Tower hill, their bodies and heads were buried in the Augustine friers church of London, and the shipman was hanged at Tiborne.

Rob. Fabian. *Ann. reg. 18.* Men brought out of the new found Ilands.

This yeare were brought vnto the king three men taken in the new found Ilands by Sebastian Gabato, before named, *in anno* 1498. these men were clothed in beasts skins, and eate raw flesh, but spake such a language as no man could vnderstand them, of the which three men, two of them were seene in the kings court at Westminster two yeares after, clothed like English men, and could not be discerned from English men.

1503 King Henry the seuenths chappell at Westminster.

This yeare the chappell of our Ladie, aboue the east end of the high altar of Westminster church, with also a tauern neere adioyning called the white rose, were taken downe: in the which place or plot of ground, on the 24. of Ianuary, the first stone of our Ladie chappell was laid by the hands of Ioh. Islip abbot of the same monasterie, sir Reginald Bray knight of the Garter, Doctor Barons master of the Roles, doctor Wall chaplaine to the king, master Hugh Oldham chaplaine to the countesse of Derby and Richmond the kings mother, sir Ed. Stanhope knight, and diuers other. Vpon the which stone was ingraued the day and yeare, &c. The charges in building this chappell (as I haue beene informed) amounted to the summe of 14000. pounds. The same king Henry made a ship, named the great Harrie, which shippe with the furniture cost him as much.

Queene Elizabeth deceased.

King Henry and Queene Elizabeth lying within the tower of London, the queene was brought a bed of a faire daughter on Candlemas day, which was there christened by the name of Katherine: and on the 11. day of that moneth the said queene deceased, and was buried at Westminster, whose daughter liued not long after.

The 18. of February Henry duke of Yorke the kings only son was created prince of Wales, earle of Chester, and of Flint at Westminster.

The 16. of February Henry Deane archbishop of Canterbury died at Lambeth, when he had sate archbishop nigh two yeares, and was buried in Christs church at Canterburie: Wil. Warham Bishop of London was translated to Canterbury.

On the 25. of June at the bishop of Salisburies place in Fléetstreet, was the noble prince Henry, the 2. son of king Henry the 7. assured in matrimonie to the lady Katherine, late the wife of that excellent prince Arthur.

The 5. of August deceased sir Reginald Bray knight, treasurer of the kings wars, and was buried at Windsor in the new chappell there, whereof he had been a great builder.

Margaret the kings daughter married.

The 8. of August Iames the fourth king of Scots married Margaret, the eldest daughter of king Henry the seuenth at Edenborough.

A drie summer, hauing no notable raine from Whitsontide, to the latter lady day in harueſt.

On

On the 4. of December deceased the lord Strange, eldest son to the earle of Derby at his place in London, beneath Paules chaine, nowe called Gartar place, and was buried within the parish church of S. James at Garlike-hithe. *Ann. reg. 19.*

The 25. of January began a parliament at Westminster, of the which was chosen speaker for the commons master Edmond Dudley. Parliament. 1504

A new coine was by parliament appointed, that is to say, groat and halfe groat, which bare but halfe faces: the same time also was coined a groat, which was in value 12. d. but of those were but few coined. New coine.

This yeare allome, which many yeares before had beene sold for 6. s. an hundred, and lower, arose to 5. nobles an hundred, and after to 4. marks, &c. Allume deere. *Ann. reg. 20.*

About Christmasse, the more part of the prisoners of the Marhalsey in Southwarke brake out, and manie of them being shortly after taken, were put to execution, specially those which had laine for felony or treason: among the which, two of them being sea rouers were hanged on a tree in the Thamis, a little from Wapping in the Wose, and hung there long after. 1505 Prisoners of the Marhalsey brake out.

This yeare on S. Georges euen or 21. of Aprill, king Henry with an honorable compante of knights of the order of the Garter, all in their habits, rode through the city from the Tower of London vnto Paules church, and there heard euensong, his chappell being there, and hauing role of the queere, and after euensong the king and those knights rode vnto Bainards castle, & there lodged that night: and vpon the morrowe in the same habits came againe to the said church of S. Paul, and went on procession, and after the diuine seruice and offering being done, returned. S. Georges day the king rode to Paules.

The 25. of Aprill a coiner for making of false money was drawne from the Tower vnto Tiborne, and there hanged.

About Midsummer Pope Iulius the 2. sent to the K. a cap of maintenance, and a sword, as to a defender of the church, the which cap and sword were receiued with many and great ceremonies, which I ouerpasse. A cap of maintenance. *An. reg. 21.*

The 5. of January in the night, the kings chamber was fired at Richmond, the which might not be quenched, till many curtaines, carpets, rich beds, and much other stuffe was consumed. 1506 Richmond on fire.

Through great tempest of winde being at the south west, which began the 15. of January, & continued till the 26. of the same, Philip king of Castile and his wife were weather driuen, and landed at Falmouth in England, as they were passing on the 16. of Januarie out of Flanders toward Spaine, who were honorably receiued by the earle of Arundel at the kings appointment with 300. horses, all by torch light. This tempest was strange to many men, because the violence thereof had blowne downe the eagle of braſſe from the spire of Paules church in London, and in the falling, the same eagle brake and battered the blacke eagle which hung for a signe in Paules churchyard, that time being but low houses, where now is the schole of Paules. The king of Castile landed in England. Francis Guicciar. Weathercocke of Paules blowne downe.

Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke being sent (according to promise made to king Henry) out of the county of Philip king of Castile, through Flanders was brought to Calets on the 16. of March, and so ouer into England & landed at Doner on the 24. of March, conueied by sir Henry Wyat knight, and sir Earle of Suffolke sent to the Tower.

Iohn Wilshire knight, controller of the towne and marches of Calais, and 60. souldiers of Calais all in harnesse, where he was receiued by sir Thomas Louell and other, and conueied to the Tower of London.

Gallery at Richmond fell. In the beginning of the moneth of July, a gallerie newe builded at Richmonde, wherein the king and the Prince his sonne had walked not one houre before, it fell sodainlie downe about midnight, but no christian man perished thereby.

Ann. reg. 22. The 21. of August the weather-cocke of Paules being of copper, ouer gilt, in weight 40. pounds, in length 4. foote, in breadth 3. foote and a halfe, was set vpon the spire of Paules steeple.

King Henry sickened. This yeere the king began to be diseased of a certaine infirmitie, which thrice euery yeere, but especially in the spring time, sore vexed him.

Also the sweating sickenes, which (as ye haue heard) in the first yeere of this kings raigne first afflicted the people of the realme, now assailed them again, howbeit, by the remedy found at the beginning of it, nothing the like number died thereof, now this second time, as did the first.

1507 This yeere in the Lent season, the king deliuered manie prisoners out of sundry prisons, insomuch, that as many as lay in Ludgate, and both Counters for 40. shillings and vnder, he redéemed and deliuered: and ouer that he redéemed many that lay for ten pound, and other larger sums as was said.

The kings promoters. But true it is, that this yeere or rather somewhat sooner, sprang much sorrow through the land, for by meane of graceleslie persons, which named themselues the kings Promoters, many forgotten statutes, made hundreds of yéeres passed, were nowe quickened, and sharpely called vpon, to the great vnquietnesse of many the kings subiects, aswell the rich as the other that had competent substance. And albeit that other yéeres before passed, since the time of sir William Caples trouble, which was in the 10. yéere of this kings raigne, many times were called to sundry reckonings, and were faine to séeke their endes to their charge: yet now, since Empson and Dudley were set in authoritie, many mo in number were called before them, for many surmised causes, of the which none escaped without paying of fines. And if it were such a matter, as some would abide the triall of the law, then had they false Iurors so fired vnto them, that they were well assured that they would not passe against their wils, for all was done in the kings name, and yet the most profit came to other mens coffers.

False Iurors.

Thomas Sauage archbishop of Yorke deceased at his castle of Cawod, his *Ann. reg. 23.* body was buried at yorke, his hart at Macklesfield in Cheshire where he was borne, in a chappel by him founded, which he minded to haue made a colledge: he was not elected after the ancient custome, but by nomination of the K. and fauor of the Pope Alexander. This Th. was daily employed about temporall matters at the kings pleasure, he vsed hunting, and bestowed much cost in repairing and newe building at his castle of Cawod, and his manor of Scroby, he maintained manie tall yeomen in his house, and was neuer installed, but after a secret maner at Yorke, and by his deputy at Beuerlake, he was the first that brake the custom of solemn feasting at their installing at Yorke,

he

he was 7. yeers archbishop: and to him succeeded Christopher Bambridge doctor of both lawes, born neer to Apleby in Westmerland, first maister of the Roles, then deane of Yorke, and after bishop of Durham.

The 25. of Aprill, a great part of the city of Norwich was brent. And again in the moneth of June on the euen and day of the ascension of our Lorde, another part of the same city of Norwich was fired, and soe perished and neere consumed with fire, that began in a French mans house named Peter Iohnson a chirurgion, in the parish of Saint George. 1508 Norwich defaced by fire.

This yeere amongst manie other was sir W. Caple againe newly troubled, for things don in time of his being maior of London, wherof the report was, for that false money came to his sight, and hee did not due correction vpon the partie that to him was accused to be the coiner of it: but were this the cause or other, truth it is, that in great trouble he was for it, and finally, for he would fall to no agreement, he was by Derby, Simson, and other of their companie, which as then the whole Iurie of them, were faithfull bounde to the girdles of Empson and Dudley, that as they would, the verdit alwaies passed, and so was he by them indicted, and after by Dudley at the kings commandement put in prison, and so continued long time, and at length, forsomuch as he would not agree to pate to the king 2000. l'. was by the forenamed Dudley commanded to the tower, where hee laie till it was neere Whitsontide after, before which time king Henry was deceased, and then was he deliuered free. Also Thomas Knesworth late Maior of London, with both his sherifs, after great veration and imprisonment, being accused that they had misused the charge of their offices, were deliuered for great sums of mony, as it was said, 1400. l'. Christopher Hawis mercer and alderman of London, had bin so long vexed by the said promoters, that it shortned his life by thought taking. Sir Laurence Ailmer late Maior of London, and his two Sheriffes were put to their fine of 1000. pounde to the king: but Sir Laurence after great trouble sustained at the handes of Empson, was committed to prison, and continued prisoner till the saide Empson was himselfe sent to the Tower. This yeere was finished the goodlie Hospitall of the Sauoy neere vnto Charing crosse, which was a notable foundation for the poore, don by king Henry the 7. vnto the which he purchased and gaue Landes for the releeuing of 100. poore people. This house was first named Sauoy place, by Peter earle of Sauoy the first builder thereof, brother to Boniface archb. of Canterbury about the 29. yeere of king Henry the 3. who made the said Peter earle of Richmond. This house belonged since to the Dukes of Lancaster, and at this time being in the kings handes, was conuerted to an hospitall, retaining the first name of Sauoy. K. Henry builded 3. houses of Franciscan friars, which were called Obseruantes, at Richmond, Grenwich, and Newarke, and 3. other of the same family of Franciscan friars, called Couentualles, at Canterburie, Newcastle, and Southampton. *An. reg. 24.* Hospital of the Sauoy, 1509

This noble Prince king Henry, was long sicke ere hee died, in which season he was by well disposed persons, in Sermons and other wayes informed of the exclamations made vpon Promoters, wherefore of his blessed dispositi- Henry the 7. deceased.

ons, he granted to all men generall pardon, certaine excepted, the which pardons were quickly purchased, so that many were had ere he died: he deceased at Richmond on the 22. of Aprill, when he had raigned 23. yéeres, 8. moneths: and on the 9. of Maie he was brought to Paules with many nobles, knights & gentlemen, and 1000. torches, and from thence on the next morrow conueied to Westminster, and there buried in the new chappell, which he had caused to be builded with the charges of 14000. l. on the 11. of Maie: he left issue, Henry prince of Wales, which succéeded in the kingdome, lady Margaret the quéene of Scots, and lady Mary promised to Charles king of Castile.

His issue.

Sepulture of king Henry the seuenth.

The altar and sepulture of the same K. Henry the 7. wherein his bodie now resteth, in his newe chappell at Westminster, was made and finished in the yéere of Christ 1519. by one Peter T. a painter of the citie of Florence, for the which he receiued 1000. pound sterling, for the whole stuffe and workmanship, at the hands of the kings executors, Richard bishop of Winchester, Richard fitz Iames bish. of London, Tho. bishop of Durham, John bishop of Rochester, Thomas D. of Norfolke treasurer of England, Edward Earle of Worcester, the kings chamberlaine, Iohn F. knight chiefe iustice of the kings bench, Robert R. knight chiefe Iustice of the common place, &c.

Executors to H. the seuenth.

King Henry the eight.

Ann. reg. 1.

HEnrie the eight, borne at Grénewich, second sonne to king Henry the seuenth, about the age of eightéene yéeres beganne his raigne by the decease of his father, on the two and twentieth of Aprill: but was proclaimed on the foure and twentieth, *in anno Christi* 1509. and the same daie in the after none hee was conueyed to the Tower of London, where hee lodged for a season. Of personage he was tall and mightie, in wit and memorie excellent, of such maiestie and humanity as was comely in such a prince. By the aduise of his grandmother Margaret countesse of Richmond and Derby, diuers graue personages were elected to bee of his priuie councell, whose names were William Warham Archbishop of Canterburie and Chancelor of England, Richarde Foxe bishop of Winchester, Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey and treasurer of England, George Talbot earle of Shrewsbury & lord steward of the kings houshold, Charles Sommerset Lord Chamberlaine, Sir Thomas Louel, Sir Henry Wyat, Doctor T. Ruthall, sir Edward Poinings. These graue counsellors, fearing least such abundance of riches & wealth as the king was now possessed of, might moue his yong yéeres vnto riotous forgetting of himselfe, gate him to be present with them whē they sate in counsel, to acquaint him with matters pertaining to the politike gouernment of the realme, with the which at the first he could not well endure to be much troubled, being rather inclined

Names of the kings counsellors.

to

to follow such pleasant passimes as his youthfull yeares did more delight in.

On the same 24. day of April, the lord Henry Stafford brother to the Duke of Buckingham, was arrested and committed to the Tower: and doctor Ruthall was nominated bishop of Durham. Henry lord Stafford arrested.

The fiue and twentieth of April was proclaimed the kings consent to the generall pardon granted by his father, and that himselfe was contented to forgiue al such persons as had bin vexed for any cause, so that it touched not felony or treason: and ouer that, in the same proclamation was comprised, that all vagabonds and sturdy beggers should auoid the city of London, and resort vnto such countries as they were borne in, vpon paine appointed. Also proclamation was made, that if any man could proue himselfe to be depriued of his goods wrongfully by the late commissioners of the forfeitures, hee should present his plaint to the king, who was ready to satisfie euery one of all iniuries sustained. After which publication many such as had beene constrained, either by right or wrong to pay any thing for forfeitures of lawes or customes by them transgressed, flocked to the court, and there declared their griefes: the counsell heard euery mans complaint, and such as were found to haue paide any thing without plaine proofe of iust cause, such order was taken that they had their money again: but the complainants came in so thicke, that the commissioners and other that had dealt in the forfeitures perceiuing that it was hard, and almost impossible to satisfie them all, refused to heare any further complaints or suites for restitution, but thought it best to commit those to prison, by whom the complainants pretended themselues to haue been wronged, and thereupon was sir Richard Empson knight, and Edmund Dudley esquire, by a politike meane brought into the tower, where they were accused of treason, and so remained there prisoners, thereby to quiet mens minds, that made such suite to haue their money againe restored. And shortly after were manie of their promoters (for so they termed themselues) called to a reckoning, and cast into sundry prisons, as Page, Michell, Canby, Henry Toft, Smith, and sundrie others, but Baptist Grimald the most cruell wretch of them all, went to Westminster, and there registred himselfe a sanctuary man. Pardon for trespasses proclaimed. Empson and Dudley sent to the Tower. Promoters apprehended.

The third day of June, king Henry in his closet at Greenwich married the lady Katherine his first wife, who had been late the wife of prince Arthur deceased, and was dispensed with by Pope Iuly. King Henry married.

The 6. of June Io. Derby, Io. Smith, I. Simson, ringleaders of false inquests in London, rode about the citie, with their faces to the horse tailes, and papers on their heads, and were set on the pillorie in Cornhill, and after brought againe to Newgate, where they died for very shame. Common quest-mongers for money set on the pillory.

On the 21. of June king Henry came from Greenewich by land, and so rode to the tower of London, with whom came many well apparelled noble men, but especially the duke of Buckingham, who rode in a gowne of Goldsmiths worke, a thing of great riches: the king rested there from thursday till saturday, in which season he made 24. knights of the Bathe. And vpon Saturday the 24. of June, K. Henry with quéene Katherine, and their nobilitie rode from the Tower through the citie in most honourable wise, before whome rode the king Henry crowned.

said

saide knightes of the Bathe, the Duke of Buckingham rode next before the king, except the Maior, and certeine Sergeants and Heraultes: the which D. rode in a long gown wrought of needle worke right costly and rich, and bare a little staff of siluer in his hand, in token that he was high steward of that feast of coronation, and the saide D. had about his neck a broad and flat close chaine of a new deuise, not before vsed, set with pretious rubies, and other stones of great value. On the morrow being sunday, and Midsommer day, the king and quéene were crowned at Westminster in most solemn maner, by the archbishop of Canterbury and other assisting.

Margaret countesse of Derby deceased

The 29. of June, the most vertuous Princesse of her time knowne to the worlde, Margaret Countesse of Richmond and Derby, mother to king Henry the seuenth, died at Westminster, and was there buryed, whose notable acts and charitable deedes all her life time exercised, cannot in a small volume bee expressed.

About the same time deceased Iohn Vere earle of Oxford, and was buried in the priory of Colne in Esser.

Fifty speares appointed to wait on the K.

The king ordained fiftie Gentlemen to be speares, euerie of them to haue an Archer, a Demilance, and a Cisterall, and euerie speare to haue three great Horses to bee attendant on his person, of the which Bande the earle of Esser was Lieutenant, and Sir Iohn Pechie Captaine, which ordinance continued not long, the charges was so great: for there were none of them, but they and their Horses were apparelled and trapped in cloth of golde, siluer, and Goldsmithes worke.

Dudley arraigned and condemned.

The seuententh of July Edmond Dudley was arraigned in the Guildhall of London, where he was condemned, and had iudgement to be drawn, hanged and quartered, and committed to the Tower againe, where hee lay long after, insomuch, that the fame went the Quéene had purchased his pardon, but that was not so, as after shall appeare. And like as in this while to the comfort of the kings subiects many things were ordered, as generall pardons for all fore-done offences, treason, felony, and debt by specialties, and a few other excepted: so in like manner, to the disturbance of all the forenamed Promoters, was manie and diuers meanes sought and found to vexe and trouble them right wisely, that before had vexed manie a true man wrongfully: by meanes whereof, they were dailie taken in diuers counties of England, and brought to the Tower and other prisons, where they remained long. In the which time manie opprobrious rimes in despite of them were made, whereof I haue séene some, especiallie one against Sir Richard Empson, made by Cornish of the kinges chappell, at the request of the earle of Kent, forsomuch, as the saide Empson had deceiued him of a part of his Lande, and in sinister waies had so informed the king of him, that he was long holden vnder, and put to great hinderance. But (saieth mine Authour) what cause soeuer moued the saide Earle and other at that time, let no man thinke, that for anie cause hee hath remembred it, saue onelie, that wise men maie, by the sodaine rising and falling of these men, bee well ware howe they golde them, when they bee put in greate authoritie, and especiallie such as this man was, the which

False accusers and disturbers of good men committed to prison.

Earle of Kent enimy to Empson.

Rob. Fabian.

which sodainely rose from pouertie (as being the sonne of a sleeue-maker, in Leicester) vnto inestimable authoritie and riches. And such other as were of his affinitie, especially Dudley, that at the time of his fall had in possession of lands and fées, with offices, to the yéerely value of 800. pound, and in readie coine 20000. pound, ouer many maner riches, as iewels, plate, and rich stuffe of houshold, the which was shortly gathered, for not thirteene yéeres before hee was by labor of friends brought into the office of vndersherifewike of London, where he continued with fauour of the citizens, by the space of fiue yéeres or more, after which season he sold his office, and drew him to the kings court, where shortly after he grew in such fauour, that he was chosen speaker of the parliament, in the nineténth yéere of king Henry the seuenth, and sone after the kings president, by reason of which office, he had such authoritie, that the chiefe lords of England were glad to be in his fauour, and were faine to sue to him for many vrgent causes, wherupon the lords and all men, as they durst, had him in disdaine, which was his ouerthrow in the end. Thus much for example may suffice.

On the 29. of July was arraigned in the guildhall of London one Smith for a promoter, and with him were inquired of by inquests, H. Tost, Page, Canby, &c. but for that they laide for themselues, they were seruingmen, and did but as they were commãded, they were all reprieued to such prisons as they came from, where they remained long after.

In the moneth of October sir Richard Empson was conueied into Northamptonshire, and there arraigned, and lastly déemed to be drawne, hanged, and quartered, and then was brought againe to the Tower. Empson arraigned.

This yéere K. Henry kept his Christmas at Richmond with great royaltie.

The 21. of January began a parliament, whereof sir Thomas Ingleby was chosen speaker: in the which parliament, Sir Richard Empson, and Edmond Dudley were attainted of high treason. 1510 Parliament. Empson and Dudley attainted.

King Henry kept his Shrouetide at Westminster, with great banquettings, dauncings, and other pastimes.

This yéere came ambassadors not onely from the king of Arragon and Castile, but also from the kings of France, Denmarke, Scotland, and other princes, which were highly welcomed, and royally entertained. And on the 20. of April a peace was proclaimed betwixt England and France, during the liues of king Henry the 8. of England, and Lewis the French king. *An. reg. 2.* Peace proclaimed.

On Midsummer éeue at night, king Henry came priuily into Westcheape of London, being clothed in one of the coates of his guard: and on S. Peters night the king and quéene came royally riding to the signe of the kings head in Cheape, & there beheld the watch of the citie, which watch was set out with diuers goodly shewes, as had béene accustomed. King Henry and Queene Katherine beheld the watch at London.

King Henry riding on his progresse for his disport, there was brought before him and his councell many grieuous bils of complaints against Empson and Dudley, wherefore he sent commandement to the constable of the tower, charging him that they should shortly after be put to execution. Whereupon the sheriffes of London were sent for, and commanded by a speciall writ to sée

the said execution performed and done. And they vpon that went to the tower and receiued them on the 17. of August, and from thence brought them vnto the scaffold on the tower hill, where their heads were stricken off: which being done, the bodie of Empson was buried in the white friers church, and the body of Dudley in the blacke friers church. This Edmond Dudley in the time of his imprisonment in the tower compiled one notable booke, which he intituled, the Tree of common wealth, dedicated vnto King Henry the eight, but neuer came to his hand. A copie thereof faire written (reseruing the originall to my selfe) I gaue vnto the honourable Lord Robert earle of Leicester, about the yeere 1562. At whose request and earnest perswasion I then first collected my summary of the Chronicles of England, and dedicated the same, with the continuation and encrease thereof, from time to time, to my great charges, to his honor, in reward whereof I alwaies receiued his harty thanks, with commendations, and not otherwise, what soeuer hath beene reported by mine aduersary T. S.

Empson and Dudley executed.

Tree of common wealth.

1511 On Newyeeres day at Richmont the Quéene was deliuered of a Prince, to the great reioycing of the whole realme, he was named Henry: but deceased on the 23. of Februarie next following at Richmont, and was buried at Westminster.

In the month of Feb. came ambassadors from the K. of Aragon & Castile, to require an aid of 1500. archers to be sent to the same king, hauing at that time war with the Moores, enemies to the christian faith: the king granted their request, and because the lord Thomas Darcy a knight of the garter made humble suite to the king to be generall of that crue, the king granted his desire: there were appointed to go with him, the lord Anthony Grey, brother to the marques Dorset, Hen. Guilford, Weste, Browne, and William Sidley Esquires of the kings house, sir Rob. Constable, sir Roger Hastings, and sir Ralph Elderton, with diuers other gentlemen to be captaines.

Archers sent against the Moores.

They departed out of Plimmouth hauen with 4. ships royall, and on the first of June arriued at Cales in south Spaine, where they were honourably receiued by a bish. and other of the kings councell: but an abstinence of war being taken, the L. Darcy and the rest were required to returne home againe, money was sent to pay the soldiers their wages, for their conduction againe into England, with diuers gifts giuen to the Lord Darcy and the other gentlemen, and after returned into England. *Ann. reg. 3.*

During the time that the L. Darcy was in Spaine, the lady Margaret dutches of Sauoy, daughter to Maximilian the emperor, and gouernor of Flanders, Brabant, Holland, Zeland, and other the low countries, appertaining to Charles the yong prince of Castile, sent in the end of May to the K. of England, requiring to haue 1500. archers to aide her against the D. of Gelders, which sore troubled the countries afore said: the King granting her request, appointed sir Edw. Poinings knight of the garter, and controller of his house, a valiant captaine, to be lieutenant and leader of the said 1500. archers, which accompanied with his sonne in lawe the Lorde Clinton, sir Mathew Browne, sir Iohn Digby, Iohn Werton, Richard Wetherall, and Shirley Esquires, with other

Archers sent to aide the ladie Margaret dutches of Sauoy.

other gentlemen and yeomen to the foresaide number: they toke their ships beside Sandwich the eightéenth of July, and landed at Arnewo on the nineteenth, from whence they were conduced to Barrow, &c. whither the lady Regent came to welcome them, on the seuen and twentieth of July they departed to Rossyndale, and on the last of July they came to Buldake, and the next daie the whole army of Almaine, Flemings and other appertaining to the said lady, met with our Englishmen without Buldake, where they set forth in order, the lady Regent being there present, which toke her leaue of all the Captaines, and departed to Buldake. The army to the number of 10000. beside the 1500. Englishmen, passed forward, and the 10. of August came before a little Castle, standing on the higher side of the maze, called Bzimnoist, belonging to the bastard of Gelderland.

The same night Thomas Hart, chiefe gouernour of the English ordinance, made his approach, and in the morning made battery, so that the assault thereupon being giuen, the fortresse was won, and the captaine with 80. and odde men were slaine, and xix. taken, of the which xi. were hanged.

Iohn Morton captain of an hundred Englishmen, and one Guyet an esquire of Burgoigne, crying, S. George, were the first that entred, at which assault there was but one English man slaine.

On the 14. of August, the armie ferried ouer the riuer of Maze into Gelderland, the next daie they came to a little Towne called Aylse, the people were fled, but there was a little castle, rased and cast downe: vpon the next daie they burnt the saide Towne of Aylst, and all the countrey about it, and came at the last to a towne called Strannle being verie strong, double diked, and walled, within it were 360. good men of war beside the inhabitants. At the first they shewed good countenance of defence, but when they saw their enemies approach nére vnto them with rampiers and trenches, they yelded by composition, so that the souldiers might depart, but ỹ townesmen rested prisoners, at the will of the Prince of Castile. And so on S. Bartholmews day, the admirall of Flanders, and sir Edward Poynings entred the towne with great triumph.

The 26. of August the army came before Venlow and sent an Herault called Arthoys to summon the towne: but they within would not heare, and yet they shot guns at him. Sir Edward Poynings, at this siege had ordinance pertaining to K. Henry as followeth, Serpentines the xii. signes: Armes of England, the Antelope, the Greyhound, the Dragon, the Griffon, the Snake, the Mermaide, the Vise, the Poze, the Cocatrise, the Slange, the Unicorne, the Panter, the Hart, the Hinde, the Olenaunt, the Faulcon, the Marlion, Of Cortenes, the Portke, the Somerset, the Richmond, the March, the Normandy, the Rose, the Tales, in all 36. pieces. The army remoued vnto the north side of Venlow, and part went ouer the water, & made trenches to the water, and so besieged the towne, but for all they could do without, they within kept one gate open. At length the English captaines perceiuing that they lay there in vaine, considering the strength of the towne, and also how the army was not of number sufficient to inuiron the same on each side, wrote to the king, who

willed them with all spéde to returne, and so they did. Sir Edwarde Poynings went to the Court of Burgoigne, where he was receiued right honourably of the yong Prince of Castile and of his Aunt the ladie Margaret. Iohn Norton, Iohn Fogge, Iohn Scot, and Thomas Lynde were made knightes by the Prince. And the lady Margaret, séeing the souldiers coates to be worne, and foule with lying on the ground, gaue to euerie yeoman a coate of woollen cloth coloured white and gréene, red and yealowe, the white and gréene for the king of Englands liuerie, the redde and yealowe for the Duke of Burgoignes liuerie, and these foure colours were medled togither, this shée did to her great commendation: after that sir Edward Poynings had bin highly feasted, he returned with his crew into England, and had not lost fully one hundred persons.

Andrew Barton a Scottish pyrate, ouercome.

King Henry being at Leicester, heard tydings, that one Andrew Barton a Scottish man, and pyrate of the sea, séeing that the king of Scots had warre with the Portingales, robbed euery nation, and stopped the kings streames that no merchant almost could passe, and when he toke Englishmens goods, he bare them in hand that they were Portingales goods, and thus he robbed at euery hauens mouth. The king displeased herewith, sent sir Edw. Howard lord admirall of England, the lord Thomas Howard son and heire to the earle of Surrey, and Iohn Hopton to the sea, which made ready two ships, and taking sea, by chance of weather were seuered. The lord Howard lying in the Downs, perceiuing wher Andrew was making toward Scotland, and so fast the said lord chased him, that he ouertoke him, so there was a sore battell betwixt them, Andrew euer blew his whistle to incourage his men: but at length the lord Howard and the Englishmen did so valiantly, that by cleane strength they entred the maine decke. The Scots fought sore on the hatches: but in conclusion Andrew was taken, and so sore wounded, that he died there, the remnant of the Scots were taken with their ship called the Lion. All this while was the lorde admirall in chase of the barke of Scotland called Jenny Perwin, which was wont to saile with the Lion in company, and he with other did so much, that he laid them aboord, and though the Scots manfully defended themselues, yet at length the English men entred the barke, slew many, and toke all the residue. Thus were these two ships taken and brought to Blackwall, the second of August. The Scots taken prisoners were sent to London, where they were kept as prisoners, in the Archbishop of Yorkes place, nowe called White hall, and after sent into Scotland.

About this season the French king made sharpe warre against Pope Iuly: wherefore the king of England wrote to the French king, that he should leaue of to vexe the pope in such wise being his friend and confederate: but when the French king séemed little to regard that request, the king sent him worde, to deliuer to him his inheritance, both of the dutchy of Normandie and Guien, and the counties of Anjow & Main, and also of his crowne of France, or else he would come with such a power, that by fine force he would obtaine his purpose: but notwithstanding the French king pursued his wars in Italy: wherupon the king of England ioyned in league with Maximilian the Emperour,

and

and Ferdinando king of Spaine, and with diuers other princes, resolued by the aduice of his counsel, to make war on the French king and his countries, and made preparation both by sea and land, setting forth shippes to the sea for safegard of his merchants.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Grenwich, with great and plentifull cheere. The 4. of Februarie began the parliament at Westminster, vpon the which date, the king and his lordes spirituall and temporall, with manie of the common house being present in the parliament chamber, the archbishop of Canterbury then Chancellor of England, made a famous and clearkly proposition, grounded on this Text, *Iustitia & pax osculatæ sunt*, whereupon hee stood well a large houre and an halfe, declaring howe iustice shoulde bee ministred, and peace should be nourished, and by what meanes iustice was put by, & peace turned into warre. The which hee approued by examples of the olde and newe testament in right sufficient wise, to his great commendation, & singular comfort of the hearers. On the next morrow began the conuocation in Paules church: and on the next date sir Robert Sheffield knight, and somtime recorder of London, was chosen speaker of the parliament, and on the next morrowe being the 8. of Februarie, before the king and lordes hee made his proposition, excusing himselfe, and beseeching the king (as the maner is) to be dismissed of that office, for the which proposition he was well allowed and admitted. On the same day the K. dubbed sir Henry Guilford and sir Charles Brandon knights. In this parliament was granted two fiftænes of the temporalty, and of the clergy two dismies or tenths. During which parliament, a yeoman of the crowne named Newbolt, slue within the palace of Westminster a seruant of Master Willoughby, for the which fact, the king commanded to be set vp a paire of gallowes in the same place where the said seruant lost his life: and vpon the same, the saide Newbolt was hanged, and remained on the gallowes by the space of two daies. 1512 Parliament.

The king of Arragon hauing warre with the French king, wrote to king Henry of England to send ouer an army into Biscay, and so to inuade France on that side, for the recouery first of his dutchy of Guien, and hee woulde ayde them with ordinance, horsemen, beasts and cartages, with other necessaries appertaining to the same. *Ann. reg 4.* K. H. sent an army into Biscay against the French.

The K. of England and his Councell putting their affiance in this promise of king Ferdinando prepared a noble army al of footmen, and small artillery, appointed L. Th. Grey marques Dorset to be chiefe conductor of the same. Moreouer king Henry daily studying to set forward the warre which hee had begun against the French K. caused sir Edmond Howard admirall, with all diligence to make ready diuers goodly ships, as the Soueraigne and others, to the number of 18. besides smaller vessels, and therewith hauing in his company Syr Weston Brown, Griffith Dun, Edward Cobham, T. Windham, T. Lucy, William Perton, Henry Shirborne, Stephen Bull, George Witwage, Iohn Hopton, William Gunstone, Thomas Draper, Edmonde Cooke, Iohn Burdet, and diuers other, he toke the sea, and scouring the same about the midst of May he came before Portsmouth. About the same time the L. marques Dorset, & other noble

men appointed for the iourney to Biſcay, as the Lord Howard ſon and heire to the earle of Surrey, the L. Brook, the L. Willoughby, the L. Ferrers, the L. Iohn, the L. Anthony, the L. Leonard Grey, all theſe brethren to the marques, ſir Griffith ap Rice, ſir Maurice Barkley, ſir W. Sands, the baron of Burforde, ſir Richard Cornwall brother to the ſaid baron, W. Huſſe, Io Molton, W. Kingſtone eſquires, ſir Henry Willoughby, and diuers other, with the number of 10000. ſoldiers, amongſt the which were 500. Almains, all clad in white, vnder the leading of a Fleming named Gwint, came to Southampton, & there muſtered their bands. The 16. of May they were ſhipped in Spaniſh veſſels, and landed in Biſcay, where they were bidden welcome, but had no ſuch aide ſent to them as was promiſed, whereby they loſt the doing of ſome great exploite againſt the French men on the fontiers of Gaſcoigne: after the army had laine 30. daies in the campe, there came from the king of Arragon meſſengers to deſire the marques and his people to take patience for a while, and they ſhould ſée that ſuch preparation ſhould be made for the furniſhing of their enterpriſe. In the meane time the Engliſh men for the moſt part, were victualled with garlike, and dranke hote wines, and eate hote fruits, which procured their blond to boile in their bodies, wherby they fell ſicke, and died more than 800. perſons: in the end many promiſes being made by the king of Spaine, and none performed, the Engliſh men embarked, and landed in England in the moneth of December. The king of Spaine ſéemed to be ſore diſcontented with their departure, affirming that if they had tarried till the next ſpring, he would in their companie haue inuaded France.

The Regent of England, a ſhip, burned.

About the moneth of Auguſt the nauies of England and France méeting at Bretaine bay, fought a cruell battell, in the which the Regent or ſouereigne of England, and a carike of Brell in France, being grappled togither, were burned, and their captains with their men all drowned: the Engliſh captaine was ſir Thomas Kneuet, who had with him ſir Iohn Carew, and 700. men. In the French carike was ſir Pierce Morgan, with nine hundred men, were all brent or drowned.

Great harry a ſhip made.

King Henry hearing of the loſſe of the Regent, cauſed a great ſhip to bee made, ſuch a one, as the like had neuer béene ſéene in England, and named it, Henry grace de Dieu.

Scala temp. Kings palace at Weſtminſter brent.

By fire this yéere a great part of the kings palace of Weſtminſter, and the chappell in the Tower of London, and many other places in England were brent.

Parliament at Weſtminſter.

In the moneth of Nouember the king called his high court of parliament, in the which it was concluded, that the king himſelfe in perſon with an army royall ſhould inuade France, whereupon notice thereof being giuen to ſuch as ſhould attend, they made their puruetance with all diligence that might be. In this parliament was granted to the king two fiftéenes, and foure demies, and had money, of euery duke ten marks, an earle fiue pound, a lorde foure pound, a knight foure marks, and euerie man valued at 800. pound in goods to paie foure marks, and ſo after that rate, till him that was valued at fortie ſhillings paid twelue pence, and euery man that toke forty ſhillings

Great payment to the king.

lings wages twelue pence, and euery man and woman of 15. yéeres or vpward foure pence.

The king kept his Christmas at Grénwich with great solemnity, daunsing, disguisings, and mummeries in most princely maner. 1513

After Candlemas, the king created sir Charles Brandon, Viscount Lisle.

In the moneth of March was the kings Nauie of ships roiall, and other set forth to the number of 42. beside balengers, vnder the conduct of the L. Admirall, accompanied with sir Walter Deuereux, L. Ferrers, sir Wolstan Brown, sir Edw. Ichingham, sir Anthony Poins, sir Iohn Wallope, sir Thomas Windham, sir Steuen Bull, William Fitz Williams, Arthur Plantagenet, William Sidney, esquires, and diuers other valiant captaines. Many sent to the sea.

These made saile into Britaine, and came to Barthram bay, where they lay at anchor for a time, at length minding to enter the hauen of Brest on the 25. of Aprill, the L. admirall with a pke of the enemie, was throwen ouer bord, and so drowned, al the other escaped very hardly away, for if they had tarried the tide had failed them, and then al had bin lost. The L. Ferrers and the other captaines sorrowfull of this chance, returned into England. King Henry being sory for the losse of his admirall, called to him T. Howard eldest brother to the late admirall, and son and heire apparant to the earle of Surrey, whom he made admirall, willing him to reuenge his brothers death. The lorde Howard humbly thanked his grace of the trust that he put in him, and so immediately went to the sea, and scoured the same, that no French man durst shew himselfe on the coast of England. *An. reg. 5.* Edward Howard L admirall drowned.

On May euen Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke was beheaded on the tower hill, his brother Richard de la Pole, called the white Rose, was afterward slaine before the citie of Pauie, *in anno* 1524. Earle of Suffolke de la Pole beheaded.

King Henry hauing all his prouisions ready for the warre, and meaning in person to passe the sea, appointed George Talbot earle of Shrewsburie, high steward of his houshold, to be capteine generall of his forewarde, and in his companie were appointed to go Thom. Stanley earle of Darby, lord Docwray prior of S. Johns, sir Robert Ratclife lord Fitzwater, the lord Hastings, the lorde Cobham, sir Rice ap Thomas, sir Thomas Blunt, sir Richard Sacheuecll, sir Iohn Digby, sir Iohn Askew, sir Lewes Bagot, sir Thomas Cornwall, and many other knights and esquires, and souldiers to the number of 8000. men, these passed the sea, and came to Calcis about the midst of May. Charles Somerset L. Herbert chamberlaine to the king, in the end of that moneth followed with 6000. men, and so forth.

King Henry hauing sent ouer a great and puissant army into France to besiege the citie of Turwine, himselfe accompanied with manie noble men, and fiue hundred archers of his garde, all in white gabberdines, toke his shippe at Douer on the last of June in the morning. When the king was shipped and made saile, all his army followed, to the number of foure hundred shippes, and the winde was so, that they were brought the same night into Calcis hauen. King Henry besiegeth Turwine.

On the next morrow, being the first of July, Thomas L. Howard, admirall

of England, landed at Whitsand bay, and entred, spoiled, and brent the town, and returned to his ships.

The 21. of July, the king passed out of the towne of Calais in goodly array of battell, and toke the field, & notwithstanding that the forward of the kings great army were before Turwine, yet the king of his owne battell made 3. battels: the lord Lisle marshall of the host, was captaine of the forward, and vnder him 3000. men: sir Richard Carew with 300. men, was the right hand wing to the forward, & the lord Darcie with 300. men, wing on the left hand. The scourers and fore-riders of this battell, were the Northumberland men on light geldings. The earle of Esser was lieutenant generall of the speares, and sir Iohn Pechy was vice-gouernor of the horsemen. Before the king went 800. Almaines all in a plumpe: after them came the standard with the red dragon, next the banner of our Ladie, & next of the Trinitie, vnder the which were all the kings houshold. Then went the banner of the armes of England, borne by sir Iohn Gifford, vnder which banner was the king himselfe, with diuers noble men, and other, to the number of three thousand men. The Duke of Buckingham with fiue hundred men, was on the kings left hand. On the right hand was sir Edward Poynings with other fiue hundred men, equall with the Almaines. The lorde of Burgainie with eight hundred men was wing on the right hand: sir William Compton with the retinue of the Bishop of Winchester Fox, and master Thomas Wolsey, afterward cardinall, of eight hundred, was in maner of a rereward: Sir Anthony Oughtred and sir Iohn Neuill with the kings speares that followed, were foure hundred, and so the whole army was eleuen thousand and three hundred men. The master of the ordinance set forth the kings artillerie, as faulcons, slings, bombardes, powder, stones, bowes, arrowes, and such other things necessary for the field, the whole number of the carriages were 13. hundred, the leaders and driuers of the same were nineteene hundred men. The king lay the first night betwixt Calkwell and Freidon: the next night before the Castle of Guisnes at Bocard: the next night he lay beside Arde a good way without the English pale, and when he was a little beyond Dernome, there came a great host of Frenchmen, that purposed to haue set vpon him: but the king with his host kept their ground, and shotte their great ordinance, wherewith the aray of the French men was broken.

The 4. of August, the king in good order of battell came before the citie of Turwine, and planted his siege in warlike wise.

The 11. daie of August, Maximilian the Emperour came to king Henrie, who was receiued with great triumph betweene Aire and the campe. The Emperour and his retinue were in blacke, as mourners for the Empresse lately deceased.

The Emperor and all his seruants were reteined with the king of England in wages by the day, euery person according to his degree, and the Emperor as the kings souldier ware a crosse of S. George with a rose, and so he and all his traine came to the kings campe the 13. of August, and there was receiued with great magnificence.

The

The 23. of August, the towne of Turwine was giuen ouer vnto the king of England, with condition, that all men in the towne might safely passe with horse and harnesse: and so on the 24. of August there came out of the towne 4000. men of war and mo well appointed, whereof 600. were wel horsed, their standards borne before them. Turwine yeelded to king Henry.

The 26. of August, the king remoued to Singate, and there it was agréed, that the walles, gates, bulwarkes, and towers of Turwine should be defaced, razed, and cast downe: of which conclusion, the Emperor sent word to S. Omers and to Aire, which being ioious of that tidings, sent thither pioners, and so they and the English pioners brake downe the walles, gates, and towers, and filled the ditch, and fired the towne, except the cathedrall church and the palace, and all the ordinance was by the king sent to Aire to bee kept to his vse. Turwine raced and brent.

After this it was concluded, that the king in person should laie his siege to the citie of Turney, wherefore he set forward three goodly battels: the first was conducted by the Earle of Shrewsburie: the second battell led the king himselfe, with whom was the Emperor: the rereward was conducted by the lord Harbert, and so the first night they lay in campe beside Aire.

The 14. of September, the king and his army came to Beatwin, and on the morrowe passed forwarde, and came to a strait where was a forde, which with great difficultie they passed: and the next day they passed a bridge called Fount Anandieu, &c.

The one and twentieth day of September the king remoued his campe towarde Turney, and lodged within three miles of the Citie, the which night came to him the Emperour and the Palsgraue: the people about Turney were with their goods fledde to the citie, and yet the citie had no men of warre to defend it, but with multitude of inhabitants the citie was well replenished. K. Henry besieged Turney.

The king came in aray of battell before Turney, planted his ordinance rounde about the citie, diuers trenches were cast, and rampiers made, so that no Citizens coulde issue out, nor no aide come to them. Whereupon at length, to wit, on the nine and twentieth of September the citie was yelded. Turney yeelded to K. Henry.

Then the king appointed the lorde Lisle, the lorde Burgeyny, and the Lorde Willoughby to take possession, which with fiue thousand men entred the Citie, and toke the market place and the wals, and then master Thomas Wolsey the kings almoner called before him all the citizens, and sware them to the king of England: the number of which citizens were fourescore thousand.

On the 2. day of October the king entred the citie of Turney, and there ordained sir Edward Poinings, knight of the order of the Garter, to be his lieutenant, with captaines, horsemen, archers, and artillery conuenient: he made his almoner Thomas Wolsey bishop of Turney, and then returned to Calets, and sailed from thence to Douer on the 24. of October; from whence he rode post to Richmond, where the Quéene lay. Thomas Wolsey bishop of Turney.

In

James king of Scots besieged Norham.

In this meane time, Iames K. of Scots assembled the whole power of Scotland, wherewith he approched to the borders, and comming to Norham castle, laid siege thereunto, and after he had beaten this castle with his ordinance, by the space of fiue daies, the same was deliuered vppe into his handes.

And hee (sayeth Paulus Iouius) made the same to bee layde leuell with the grounde, and from thence marched (wasting with Fire and Sworde) to besiege the strong towne of Berwike.

Now had the earle of Surrey, Lieutenant of the north, in absence of king Henry, giuen order to assemble a power of 26000. men, and comming to Alnwike, tarried there till the whole number of his people were come: amongst other, his son the lord admirall with 5000. souldiers and men of war, which had bin at sea, came to his father, whereof he greatly reioiced. The earle appointed his battels, with wings, and horsemen necessary: first of the forewarde was ordained captain the L. Howard admirall, with the L. Clifford, the L. Coniers, the L. Latimer, the L. Scrope, the lord Ogle, the lord Lumley, sir Nicholas Appleyard, maister of the ordinance, sir Stephen Bull, sir Henry Sherborne, sir William Sidney, sir Edward Echingham, Sir William Bulmere, with the power of the Bishoprieke of Durham, Syr William Gascoigne, sir Christopher Warde, sir Iohn Eueringham, sir Th. Metham, sir Walter Griffith, &c. Of the wing on the right hand of the forewarde was captaine, syr Edmond Howard, knight marshall of the hoste, and with him Brian Tonstall, Ralfe Brearton, Iohn Laurence, Richarde Bold Esquires, Syr Iohn Bothe, Syr Thomas Butler knightes, and other. Of the Wing on the left hande was Captaine, Syr Marmaduke Constable with his sonnes, Syr William Percy, and of Lancashire, a thousande men. Of the Rerewarde was Captaine the Earle of Surrey, the Lord Scrope of Bolton, syr Philippe Tilney, syr George Darcie, syr Thomas Barkeley, syr Iohn Roclife, syr Christopher Pickering, Richarde Tempest, syr Iohn Stanley, &c. Nowe the Earle of Surrey was informed that king Iames laye imbattayled vpon a great Mountaine, called Flodon, a place of such strength, as was vnpossible for the Englishmen to come nere them, he sent Rouge Crosse pursuant to the king of Scots, to shew him, that where he had contrary to his oth and league, inuaded this his brothers realme, and done greate hurt, in casting downe castles, towers, and houses, burning and destroying the same, &c. The said earle would be ready to try the right wisenes of the cause with the king in battel, by friday next comming, if he of his noble courage would giue him tarrying and abode. Rouge Crosse went and did his message to Iames king of Scots, as he was appointed: And hereupon king Iames sent to the earle an herault named Ilay, who deliuered to the earle a letter written by the kings secretarie, as followeth.

Flodon field.

K. Iames letter to the earle of Surrey.

As to the causes alleadged of our comming into England, again our band and promise (as is alleadged) thereto we answere: Our brother was bound as far to vs as we were to him. And when we sware last before his ambassador, in presence of our councel, we expressed specially by oth, that we would keepe to our brother, if our brother kept to vs, and not else: we sweare our brother brake first to vs, & sith his breake, we haue required diuers times him to amend: and lately

lately we warned our brother, as he did not vs or he brake, and this wee take for our quarrel, & with Gods grace shal defend the same, at your assired time, which with Gods grace we shall abide.

Earle of Surreys letter to James king of Scots.

Right high and mightie Prince, so it is that latelie I sent vnto you Rouge-Crosse pursuant at armes, and by him aduertised your grace, that I and other my soueraign lords subiects, were come to represse & resist your inuasions of this the kings my soueraigne Lordes realme, and for that intent I offered to giue you battell, on this haste friday next comming: which my message, your grace take pleasure to heare, as I am informed, and by your herault Ilay, ye made answree, that ye were right ioious of my desire, and would not fayle to accomplish the same, and to abide me there, where yee were at the time of my message, so shewed vnto your grace. And albeit it hath pleased you to chaunge your said promise, and put your selfe into a grounde, more like a Fortresse or campe, than vpon any indifferent ground for battel to be tried, wherefore considering the day appointed is so nigh approching, I desire you of your grace, that for the accomplishment of your honorable promise, you will dispose your selfe for your part, like as I shall do for mine, to be to morrow with your host in your side of the plain of Milfield, in like wise as I shall do for mine, and shal be with the subiects of my soueraigne lord on my side of the plaine of the sayd field, to giue you battell betweene twelue of the clock and 3. in the after noone, vpon sufficient warning by you to be giuen by eight or nine of the clock in the morning by the said pursuant. And like as I and other noble men my companie, binde vs by our writting subscribed with our handes to keepe the same time, to the intent aboue said: It may like your grace, by your honorable Letters subscribed with your hand, to bind your grace for the accomplishment of this our desire, trusting ye will dispatch our said pursuant immediatly: for the long delate of so honorable a iourny, we thinke should sound to your dishonor. Written in the field in Woller Haugh the 7. day of September, at fiue of the clock in the after noon. Subscribed, Thomas Surrey, Thomas Howard, Thomas Dacre, Clifford, Henry Scrope, Ralfe Scrope, Richard Latimer, William Coniers, Iohn Lumley, R. Ogle, W. Percie. E. Stanley, W. Molineux, Marmaduke Constable, William Gascoigne, W. Griffith, George Darcie, W. Bulmer, Thomas Strangwais, &c.

Now the time of battell being come, the earle of Surrey diuided his army into three battailes: vnto the vantguard whereof, the Lord Howard was captaine, his brother sir Edmond Howard was ioined as a wing, the earle himselfe led the middle warde, and the rereward was guided by sir Edward Stanley. The Lord Dacres with a number of horsemen stood apart by himselfe to succour where neede should appeere to be. The Ordinance was placed in the front of these battels, and in places betweene, and in this order they marched forward.

In the meane time Iames king of Scottes beholding the behauiour of the Englishmen from the height of the hill, commanded his standards to be raised and spred, and euerie man to resort to his place, that they might forthwith encounter with their enimies: And without delay K. Iames putting his horse from

from him, all other as well Nobles as meane men did the like, that the danger beeing equall, and all hope of succor taken awaie, they might be the more willing to shewe their manhood: Then was the armie diuided into 5. wards, to the intent that the battell wherein the king himselfe stood with his standard, might bee inclosed, as it were, with two winges: their ordinance was lodged in places most conuenient, though by reason they marched downe the hill, their shot did small damage to the Englishmen comming vpwards. And herewith Syr Edmonde Howard with his wing was got vp on the hill side, with whome the Lord Hume, and the two earles of Lineor and Argill incountred with such violence, that this Battayle of Scottes with Speares on forte beate downe and broke that Wing of Englishmen in such wise, that Sir Edmond Howard was in manner left alone, and felled to the earth: but bastard Heron came to his rescue, or else hee had beene slayne. This Bastarde Heron brought with him a strong troupe of horsemen, which hee beeing of late banished both from England and Scotland, had cunninglie trained vp in robberies. And on the other side, the Lorde Dacres watching to ayde where neede shoulde happen, came in on the sides of the Scots, and gaue a charge on them with his horsemen, whereby Syr Edmond Howard escaped to the Englishe Vauntguard, which was ledde by his brother the Lorde Howard, who beeing nowe also got aloft on the hill, pressed still forward to renewe the battayle and to succour those whome hee sawe put to the worst, whereby they took courage vnto them and layde about. Herewith the Earle of Crawfort, and Mountrose came with their battaile of speares, also on foote, and encountring with the sayde Lorde Howard, after sore fight on both sides, both the sayde Earles were slayne, besides a great number of other, the whole battayle which they ledde, beeing put to flight, and chased out of the field. On the left hande, Syr Edward Stanley, and with him Syr William Molineux, Syr Henry Kighile, and other of Lancashire, Cheshire, hauing begunne to encounter with the Scots on that side, forced them to come downe into a more euen grounde, and brought to that point, with such incessant shot of arrowes, that to auoide that sharpe storme, the Scottes were constrained to breake their arraie, and to fight one separate from another: which thing when Syr Edwarde Stanley perceiued, forthwith bringing about three Bandes which hee had kept in store, he inuaded the open sides of his enimies, by a fresh onsette, and put them in sunder in such disorder, that they were not able ante longer to abide the violence of the Englishmen, so that taking themselues to flight, and running downe the hill, they escaped to the wood: but the Earles of Argile and Lenior were slayne in the same place. In the meane time the King, who a little before had ioyned with the Earle of Surrey, perceyuing that the Winges of his Battayles were distressed, and that his enemies beganne to enclose him on each side, herewith rushing forth vpon his enemies, a newe battayle beganne to rise, for that battayle beeing well armed, passed little for the Arrowes of the Englishmen, insomuch, that pearsing the earles Battayle, they entered well neere so farre within the same, that they were at a poynt to haue ouerthrown his Standardes. The king himselfe on foote, euen in the foremost Ranke, fought

Paulus Iouius.

fought right valiantly, encouraging his people, as well by example as by perswasions to do their best. Neither did the earle of Surrey faile in the dutie of a worthie Generall: but whilest the battell was thus fought ten about the standards, with doubtfull chance of victorie, the Lorde Howarde and sir Edwarde Stanley, having vanquished the enimies in either wing, returned to the middleward, and finding them there thus occupied, they sette on, in two severall parts, with great violence, and at the same time the lorde Dacres came with his horsemen vpon the backs of the Scots, so that they being thus assailed behind and before, and on either side, were constreined to fight in a rounde compasse. King Iames as he beheld sir Adam Forman his standard bearer beaten downe, thought surelie there was no waie for him but death: therefore to deliuer himselfe from the reproch as was like to follow, he rushed forth into the chiefest prese of his enimies, and there fighting in most desperate maner, was beaten downe and slain, and a little beside him, there died with like courage diuers honorable prelates, as the archbishop of S. Andrewes, & two other bishops, besides two abbots, 12. earles, & 17. lords, besides knights and gentlemen: and about 8000. Scots slain, and almost so manie taken, saith Iouius. All their ordinance and stuffe was taken by the English.

James king of Scots slaine at Bramstone field.

Thus on the 9. of September, king Iames the fourth of that name, king of Scots was slaine at Bramstone vpon Piperd hill, and his armie discomfited by the earle of Surrey lieutenant to Henry the 8. king of Englande: There was taken prisoner sir William Scot chancellor to the saide king, and Sir Iohn Forman his serieant porter, with diuers other. Also in maner all the Scottish ensignes were taken, and 22. peeces of greate ordinance, amongst the which were seauen culuerings, verie faire peeces, whome the king for their likenes one vnto another, had named the seauen sisters. There was slaine and taken of our men aboue 1500. men (saith Hall) during the time of the fight, & in the night following, manie Englishmen lost their horses, and such stuffe as they left in their tents, by the robbers of Tindale, & Tiuidale: When the field was done, the earle gaue thanks to God, and made knightes to the number of 35. whose names I ouerpasse in this place. The body of the king of Scots was not found till the next date, and then being found and knowne by the lord Dacres, there appeared in the same diuers deadly wounds, his throat cut halfe asunder, his left hand in two places almost cut off, and manie other woundes, as well with arrowes, as other wise: his body was bowelled, rebowelled, and inclosed in lead, and so kept at Barwike, till the kings pleasure were knowne. After that the earle of Surrey had taken order, and set the north in good quiet, he returned to the quéene, with the dead bodie of the Scottish king, which bodie inclosed in lead (as before is shewed) as I haue béene informed, was conueied to Shine, a monasterie in Surrey, founded by king H. the 5. where it remained for a time, in what order I am not certaine, but since the dissolution of that house, to wit, in the raigne of king Ed. the 6. Henry Grey then duke of Suffolk, there kéeping house, I haue béene shewed the same body (as was affirmed) so lapped in lead, thrown into an old waste rom, amongst old timber, stone, led, and other rubble.

When

The kings letters to sir Wil. Molineux, of Lancashire.

When King Henry was returned into England, from his conquest made in France, of the Cities of Tirwin, and Turney, he forgate not the good seruice of those that hadde beene with the Earle of Surrey, at the Battayle of Bramstone, wherefore hee wrote to them his loving letters, with such thanks and fauourable words, that euerie man thought himselfe well rewarded. The tenure of his letter was this. Trustie and welbeloued we greete you well, and vnderstand aswell by the report of our right trustie cosen and counsailer the Duke of Norfolke, as otherwise, what acceptable seruice you amongst other latelie did vnto vs, by your valiant towardnesse in the assisting of our said cosen against our great enemie, the late king of Scottes: and howe courageouslie you as a verie heartie loving seruaunt, acquited your selfe, for the ouerthrowe of the sayde late King, and distressing of his malice and power to our greate honour, and the aduaunncing of your no little fame and prayse, for which wee haue good cause to fauour and thanke you, and so wee full heartylie doe. And assured maie you bee, that wee shall in such effectuall wise remember your sayde seruice in anie your reasonable pursutes, as you shall haue cause to thinke the same right well employed, to your comfort, and weale hereafter. Giuen vnder our signet, at our Castell of Windsore, the 27. of Nouember. To our trustie and welbeloued, William Molineux knight.

Great pestilence.

This yere was a death of the pestilence in England, especiallie about London, so that in one house, to wit, the Minorites without Ald-gate, there died of nuns professed, to the number of 27. besides other that were Laie people, and seruants in that house.

W. Smith bish. of Lincolne deceased.

About the Feast of the Natiuitie of our Ladie, deceased William Smith bishop of Lincolne, hee founded Brasenose Colledge in Oxford, and before that being bishop of Lichfield, he ordeined an hospitall there, for a master, 2. vsshers, 10. poore men: he set there also a schoolemaster, and an vsher to teach grammar to poore mens children, in a schoole by him erected. K. Henry the 7. gaue vnto it an old hospitall called Donhall in Wirhall, in Chestershire, with the lands, &c. Also at Farnworke where the said Smith and his parents had originall, he bestowed ten pounde the yere for euer, to one that shoulde teach a Grammar Schoole.

1514 States created

On the day of the Purification of our Ladie, in the archbishops palace at Lambeth, the king created the earle of Surrey Duke of Norfolke, with an augmentation of the armes of Scotland, and otherwise rewarded him: hee likewise the same day created sir Charles Brandon Vicount Lisle (son to Syr William Brandon, that bare king Henry the 7 standard at Bosworth field, and was there slaine) duke of Suffolke, and sir Thomas Lord Howard high Admirall, earle of Surrey, syr Charles Somerset, Lorde Harbert his chiefe Chamberlaine, earle of Worcester, and not long after he made syr Edward Stanley lord Mounteagle.

An. reg. 6. In the moneth of March following, T. Wolsey the K. almoner, and bishop of Turney was consecrated bishop of Lincolne.

In the moneth of May, the K. & the D. of Suffolk were challengers at the tilt,

tilt, against all commers, in the which tults were broken 100. and fourteene staues. Great tusting.

The 19. of Maie, was receyued into London a Cap of maintenance, and a Swoorde, sent from Pope Iuly the seconde, with a greate companie of noble men and Gentlemen, which Cappe and Swoorde was presented to the King on the next Sondaie, with a greate solemnitie in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul. Frenchmen landed with their Galleies and foists on the borders of Sussex in the night season, and came to Brighthamsteede and brent it, taking such goods as they there found, but in the morning they were constrained to flie. Cap of maintenance. French brent Brighthamsteed in Sussex.

The lord Admirall sent Syr Iohn Wallope to the sea, with diuers Shippes, which sayling to the coasts of Normandy, landed there, and brent 21. villages and townes, with diuers Ships in the hauen of Trapoyt, Staples, and other places. Sir Iohn Wallope brent Trapoyt.

In the moneth of Maie Syr Thomas Louell tooke the seas, and landed at Caleis with 400. men of warre: also syr Iohn Pechy, the lorde Burgaueny, the lorde Clinton, the lord Cobham, syr Richarde Lewes, syr Iohn Rainsforth, Syr William Scot, Syr Iohn Scot his sonne, Syr Edwarde Gilford, syr Henry Gilforth, syr Iohn Norton, Syr Iohn Fogge, Syr Matthewe Browne, and Syr Iames Dorcie, with diuers Esquiers and Gentlemen, and men of warre, to the number of 5000. The Lorde Burgaueny beeing chiefe leader. These were sent ouer to strengthen the Towne of Caleis, and other Fortresses within the Englishe Pale, for doubt of anie sodayne attempt to bee made by the Frenchmen. Richard Turpin.

The French King perceyuing what losses hee had sustayned by the warres against Englande, and doubting least one euill lucke shoulde still followe another, determined to make suite for peace, and first agreeing with the pope Leo, desired him to bee a meane for the procuring of some agreemente betwixt him and the King of Englande. Whereupon the Popes letters, the French King by an Herault at Armes sent to the king of Englande, requiring of him a safe Conduct for his ambassadors, which should come to intreat for a peace to bee concluded betwixt them and their Realmes. Upon graunt whereof attayned, the French King sent a Comumission with the President of Roane, and others, to entreate of peace. And because they vnderstoode that the martage was broken betweene the prince of Castile and the lady Marie, they desired that the sayde Ladie might bee ioyned in marriage with the French King, offering a greate Dowrie, and suretie for the same, so much was offered, that the King moued by his Counsaile consented vpon condition, that if the French king dyed, then shee shoulde, if it stoode with her pleasure, returne into Englande with her Dowrie and Riches. After that they were accorded vpon the peace, and that the French king shoulde marrie this yoong ladie, &c. And then was the peace proclaymed on the thirteenth of August, &c. Peace with France proclaimed.

In the moneth of September the ladie Marie was conueyed to Douer, by the King her Brother, and the Queene: and on the second daie of October, the was

was shipped, and such as were appointed to giue their attendance on her, as the duke of Norfolke, the Marques Dorset, the bishop of Durham, the earle of Surrey, the Lord de la Ware, the Lord Berners, the Lord Mounteagle, the foure brethren of the saide Marques, Sir Maurice Barkley, Sir Iohn Pechy, syr William Sands, sir Thomas Bullen, sir Iohn Car, and manie other knights, esquires, gentlemen, and Ladies. They set out from Douer with fourteene greate Shippes, and had not sailed past a quarter of their voiage in the sea, but that the winde rose, and seuered the shippes, driuing some of them to Calois, some into Flaunders, and her shippe and three other, with greate difficultie, was brought to Boloigne, not without greate ieopardy at the entring of the Hauen, for the Master ranne the shippe harde on shore, but the Boates were readie, and receiued the Ladie out of the shippe, and syr Christopher Garnish stode in the water, and tooke her in his armes, and so bare her to land, where the Duke of Vandosme, and a Cardinall, with manie other greate Estates, receiued her with greate honour. In this voiage king Henries greate shippe with foure tops, called the Lubeke, was broken and lost, a little from Sangate west toward Calois: there was in her at that time almost fiue hundred men, souldiours and marriners, whereof more than foure hundred were lost, for there escaped not one hundred of that companie. From Boloigne the Ladie Mary was conueied vnto Abuile, and there entered the eight of October, and on the nert morrowe, the marriage was solemnized betwixt the French king and the saide ladie, with all honour and royaltie: When the feast was ended, the English Lordes returned with greate rewardes into Englande: Before whose departure from Abuile, the Dolphine of France, Francis duke of Valois caused solemne Iustes to bee proclaimed, to be kept at Paris, in the moneth of Nouember nert ensuing: the saide Dolphine with his nine aides, to aunsweare all commers, beeing Gentlemen of name and armes. When this proclamation was proclaimed in Englande, the Duke of Suffolke, the marques Dorset, and his foure brethren; the Lorde Clinton, syr Edwarde Neuill, syr William Sidney, syr Giles Caple, Thomas Cheyney and other, got licence of the king to go ouer to this challenge, and thereupon preparing themselues for the purpose, departed towarde Fraunce, the 20. of October they landed at Calois, all in great Coates and Hoodes, because they woulde not be known. The twentie fire of October syr Henry Guilford landed at Calois, with two seriantes at armes, and twentie yeomen of the Crowne and Kinges guard, these went to the citie of Paris, with tenne or twelue goodlie Horses to bee at the Iustes, at the Coronation of the Quéene: they came all to Paris about the latter ende of October. The Dolphine desired the duke of Suffolke, and the Lorde Marques Dorset, to bee two of his immediate aydes, which thereto gladlie assented. On the fift of Nouember beeing sundaie, the Quéene was Crowned with great solemnitie, in the Monasterie of Dionis: and on the nert daie shée was receiued into Paris, with all honour that might bee deuised. On the seauenth of Nouember beganne the Iustes, which continued by the space of three daies, in the which were aunswered three hundred fiue men of armes, and euerie man ranne fiue courses with shape Speares. The Eng-

K. Henries great ship called the Lubeke lost.

Mary sister to K. H. married to the French k.

Iustes to be holden at Paris.

lish

lyke lords and knights did as well as the best, not onlie in the Justs, but also at the Tourney and Barriers, namelie the duke of Suffolke, the Marques Dorset, and his brother the lord Edward Grey: when the great triumph was done, the lords of England toke their leaue, and came into England before Christmasse.

In the mean time, to wit, in the moneth of November, the Q. was deliuered of a prince, which liued not long after.

Richard Hun, a merchant taylor of London, dwelling in the parish of Saint Margaret in Bridgestreet, who (for denying to giue a mortuary, such as was demanded by the parson for his child being buried) had bin put in ỳ Lowlards tower about the end of October last before passed, was now the 5. of Decemb. found hanged with his own girole of silk, in the said tower, and after he was burned in Smithfield.

Richard Hun hanged in Lowlards Tower.

This yere died at Rome the archbishop of Yorke and cardinall, called doctor Banbridge, which was the kinges ambassador there, and was poisoned by an Italian, one of his owne houshold chaplaines, he was there honorablie buried. And king Henry gaue the saide Archbyshopricke to Thomas Wolsey then Byshop of Lincolne, who shortlie after gatte to bee cardinall and Lorde Chancellor.

On Newyéers euen died the French K. Lewes the 12. after he had bin married to the lady Mary of England the terme of 82. dales. The K. of England being thereof aduertised, caused a solemne obsequie to bee kept for him in S. Pauls church of London, with a costly hearse, at the which obsequy manie nobles were present. Then the K. sent a letter to comfort the Quéene his sister, requiring to know her pleasure, whether she would continue still in France, or returne into England. And when hee was aduertised of her minde, which was to returne into England, the Duke of Suffolke, syr Richard Wingfield deputie of Calois, and doctor West, with a goodly band of gentlemen, and yeomen all in blacke, were sent into France, and comming to Paris, were well entertained of Francis the new French K. to whome they declared the effect of their commission, which was to receiue the Q. Dowager, according to the couenants. The councell of France by the kings appointment, assigned forth hir dowrie, and the duke of Suffolke put in officers, and then was the Q. deliuered to the duke, who behaued himselfe so towards her, that he obtained hir good will, to be hir husband. It was thought, that when the K. created him duke of Suffolke, he perceiued his sisters good will toward the said duke, and that hee ment then to haue bestowed hir on him, but that a better offer came in the way, but howsoeuer it was, nowe her wan hir loue, so as by her consent, hee wrote to the K. hir brother, meekelie beséeching him of pardon in his request, which was humbly to desire him of his good will and contentation. The K. after some sute, agréed that the duke should bring hir into England vnmaried, and at his return to marry her in England: but for doubt of change, he maried her secretly at Paris, as was said.

1515 The French king deceased.

The 9. of Aprill a new peace was concluded betwéen the K. of England and Francis the new king of France.

An. reg. 7. Duke of Suffolke marieth the lady Marie the kings sister.

After that the Duke of Suffolke had receiued the French Quéene with hir Dowrie appointed, and all her apparell, iewels, and housholde stuffe deliuered, they tooke leaue of the new French king, and so passing through France, came to Calais on the 25. of Aprill, where they were honorably receiued, from whence on the 2. of Maie, they sailed ouer into England, and the same night landed at Douer. And on the 13. of May, they were solemnelie married at Grænewich.

Castle of Turney builded.

This yéere in the moneth of May, were sent out of England, 1200. masons and carpenters, and 300 labourers to the citie of Tourney, to build a castle there to chastice the citie if it chanced to rebel, and therby to diminish the garison that then late there to the kings great charge.

In the moneth of September K. H. after his returne from progresse in the west, being at his maner of Okeing, T. Wolsey comming thither to him, there was brought to him a letter from Rome to aduertise him, that he was elected cardinall, which he séemed to mislike of, but the K. willed to take it vpon him, and from thenceforth called him my L. cardinall.

T. Wolsey cardinall.

Parliament at Westminster.

In the moneth of November, the king assembled a Parliament at Westminster, especiallie for order in apparell. In the end of which parliament, doctor Warham archbishop of Canterbury, and then L. Chancellor, gaue vp into the kings hands his office of chancellor, and deliuered to him the great seale, which seale incontinentlie the K. deliuered vnto the L. cardinall, and so made him chancellor. And here I thinke good to set downe for example to posteritie, some part of the procéedings of this so oft named Tho. Wolsey archbishop, his ascending vnto honorius estate, and sodaine falling again from the same, as I haue béene informed by persons of good credite. Truth it is, this Cardinall Wolsey was an honest poore mans son of Ipswich, in the countie of Suffolk, and there borne, and being but a child, verie apt to be learned: wherefore by the meanes of his parents, or of his good friends and maisters, hee was conueyed to the Vniuersitie of Oxford, where hee shortlie prospered so in learning, as himselfe reported, as he was made Batcheler of Art, when he passed not 15. yéeres of age, and was called most commonly through the Vniuersity the boy Bacheler. Thus prospering in learning, hee was made fellowe of Maudelin colledge, and afterward appointed to be schoolemaister of Maudelin Schoole, at which time, the L. Marques Dorset had 3. of his sonnes there at Schoole, committing vnto him as well their education, as their instruction. It pleased the said L. Marques against a Christmas season to send as well for the schoolemaister, as for his children home to his house for their recreation, in that pleasant and honorable feast. When being there, the lord their father perceiuing them to be right well employed in learning for their time, hee hauing a benefice in his gift being at that time void, gaue the same to the schoolemaister in reward of his diligence, at his departure after Christmas to the Vniuersity, and hauing the presentation thereof repaired to the Ordinary for his institution or induction, & being furnished of all his ordinarie instruments, made spéed to the benefice to take thereof possession, and being there for that intent, one sir Amias Poulet knight dwelling thereabout, tooke an occasion of displeasure against him, vpon

The ascending of Tho Wolsey. 1516

An. reg. 8. Bacheler of art 15 yeeres olde.

Schoolemaister to the marques Dorsets children.

T. Wolsey gat a benefice.

vpon what ground I know not, but sir by your leaue he was so bold to set the schoolemaster by the feete, during his pleasure, which after was neither forgotten nor forgiuen: for when the schoolemaster mounted the dignity to be chancellor of England, he was not oblitious of his old displeasure cruelly ministred vnto him by M. Poulet: but sent for him, and after many sharp words, enioined him to attend vntill he were dismissed, & not to depart out of London without licence obtained, so that he continued there within the middle temple the space of 5. or 6. yeares, who lay then in the gatehouse nere the streat, which he rectified verie sumptuously, garnishing the same all ouer & out side with the cardinals armes, with his hat, cognisances, and other deuises in so glorious a sort, that he thought thereby to haue appeased his old displeasure. Now may this bee a good example and president, to men in authoritie (which will sometime worke their will without witte) to remember in their authoritie, howe authoritie maie decaie. And whome they doe punish of will, more then of iustice, maie after be aduanced to high honor and dignities in the Common Weales, and they based as lowe: who will then seeke the meanes to bee reuenged of such wrongs, which they suffered before? Who would haue thought then when sir Amias Powlet punished this poore scholer, the schoolmaster that euer he should haue mounted to so high dignitie, as to bee Chancellor of England, considering his baseness in euerie degree? These be wonderfull works of God and fortune. Therefore I would wish all men in authoritie and dignitie to know and feare God in all their triumphes and glorie, considering in all their doings, that authorities be not permanent, but maie slide and vanish, as Princes pleasures alter and chaunge. Then as all liuing things must of verie necessitie paie the due debt of nature, which no earthlie creature cannе resist, it chaunced the sayde Lord Marques to departe out of this present life, after whose death, this Schoolemaster then considering with himselfe, to bee but a simple beneficed man, and to haue left his fellowship in the Colledge (for I vnderstand, if a fellowe of that house be once promoted to a benefice, hee shall by the rules of the same be dismissed of his fellowshippe) and perceiuing himselfe also to be destitute of his singular good Lorde, and also of his fellowship, which was much of his relieфe, thought not long to bee vnprouided of some other helpe, or Mastership to defende him from all such stormes, as hee lightlie was vexed with, and in his trauell thereabout, hee fell in acquayntaunce with one sir Iohn Naphant, a very graue and ancient knight, who had a greate rome in Calais vnder K. Henry the 7. this knight he serued, and behaued himselfe so discretelie, that hee obtayned the especiall fauour of his master, insomuch, that hee committed all the charge of his office vnto his Chaplaine, and as I vnderstand, the office was the Treasurership of Calais, who was in consideration of his greate age discharged of his rome, and returned agayne into Englande, intending to liue more in quyet, and through his instant labor and good fauour, his Chaplaine was promoted to be the kinges chaplaine, and when he had once cast anchor in the port of promotion, how he wrought, I shal somewhat declare. He hauing there a iust occasion to be in the sight of the king daily, by reason he attended and said masse before him in his closet, and that

T. Wolsey set in the stocks by sir Amias Poulet.

T. Wolseys simple comment reuenged.

Gatehouse of the middle Temple newe builded.

Sir Iohn Naphant treasurer of Calais, Tho. Wolsey his chaplaine.

T. Wolsey was chaplaine to H. the 7.

being done, he spent not the date forth in idlenesse, but woulde attende vpon those whom he thought to beare most rule in the counsell, and to be most in fauour with the king, the which at that time was doctor Fox, bishop of Winchester, Secretarie, and lord of the priuie seale: And also sir Tho. Louell knight, a verie sage counsellor, a wittie man, being maister of the Wardes, and constable of the tower: these ancient and graue counsellers in processe of time perceiued this chaplaine to haue a verie fine wit, and thought him a mete person to be preferred to wittie affaires: It chanced at a certaine season that the king had an vrgent occasion to send an ambassador vnto the Emperour Maximilian, who lay at that present in the low countrey of Flaunders, not far from Caleis. The bishop of Winchester and sir Thomas Louell, whome the king most esteemed as chiefe of his Counsell, the king counselling and debating with them vpon this ambassage, saw they had a conuenient occasion to preferre the kings chaplaine, whose wit, eloquence, and learning they highlie commended vnto the king: the king giuing eare vnto them, & being a prince of an excellent iudgement and modestie, commanded them to bring his chaplaine, whome they so much commended, before his presence, with whom he fell in communication of great matters, and perceiuing his wit to be verie fine, thought him sufficient to be put in trust with this ambassage, commanding him thereupon to prepare himselfe to this iourney. And for his depeche to repaire to his grace and his Counsell, of whom he should receiue his commission and instructions, by meanes whereof he had then a due occasion to repaire from time to time into the kings presence, who perceiued him more and more to be a verie wise man, and of a good intendment. And hauing his depeach, toke his leaue of the king at Richmond about none, and so came to London about foure of the clocke, where the barge of Graues-end was ready to launch forth, both with a prosperous tide and winde, without anie abode he entered the barge, and so passed forth with such happie spéede, that he arriued at Graues-ende within little more than three houres, where he tarried no longer than his post horses were prouiding, and then trauelled so spéedily, that he came to Douer the next morning, whereas the passengers were readie vnder saile to Caleis, into the which passenger without tarrying he entered, and sayled forth with them, that long before none he arriued at Caleis, and hauing post horses in a readinesse, departed from thence without tarrying: and he made such hastie spéede, that he was that night with the Emperor. And he hauing vnderstanding of the comming of the K. of Englands ambassador, would in no wise delaie the time, but sent for him incontinent, his affection to king Henry the seuenth was such, that he was glad when hee had anie occasion to shewe him pleasure. The ambassadour disclosed the whole summe of his ambassage vnto the Emperor, of whom he required spéedie erpedition: the which was granted him by the emperor, so that the next day he was clerely dispatched, with all the kings requests fully accomplished and granted. At which time he made no longer delay, but toke post horses that night, and rode toward Caleis, conducted thither with such persons as the emperor had appointed, and at the opening of the gates of Caleis he came thither, where

T. Wolsey ambassador to the emperor.

there the passengers were as readie to returne into England, as they were before at his iourney forward, insomuch, that hee arriued at Douer by ten or eleuen of the clock before noone, and hauing post horses in a readines, came to the court at Richmonde the same night, where hee taking some rest vntill the morning, repaired to the king at his first comming from his bed-chamber to his closet to masse, whome when the king saw, he checked him, for that he was not on his iourney: Sir (quoth he) if it maie please your highnes, I haue alreadie beene with the emperor, and dispatched your affaires, I trust to your graces contentation, & with that presented ỹ king his letters of credence from the emperor. The king beeing in a greate confuse and wonder of his spedie returne and procedinges, dissembled all his wonder and imagination in that matter, and demanded of him, whether hee encountred not his Pursuant the which he sent vnto him, supposing him not to be scantlie out of London, with letters concerning a verie necessarie matter neglected in their consultation, the which the king much desired to haue dispatched amongst the other matters of ambassage: Yes forsoth (quoth the chaplaine) I met with him yesterdaie by the waie, and hauing no vnderstanding by your graces letters of your pleasure, haue notwithstanding béene so bolde vpon mine discretion (perceyuing that matter to bee verie necessarie in that behalfe) to dispatch the same: and forasmuch as I haue exceded your graces commission, I most humbly quire your graces remission ỹ pardon: & king reioicing inwardlie not a little, said: Wee doe not onelie pardon you therof, but also giue you our Princelie thanks, both for the proceding therin, & also for your good and spedy exploit, commanding him for that time to take his rest, and repaire againe after Dinner, for the further relation of his ambassage. The king then went to masse, and after a conuenient time went to dinner. It is not to bee doubted, but that this ambassador hath in all this time bẽn with his great friends the bishop, and sir Tho. Louell, to whom he hath declared the effect of all his spéd, nor yet what ioy they receiued therof.

The ambassador when he saw time, repaired before the king and councell, where he declared the effect of all his affaires so exactlie, with such grauitie and eloquence, that all the councel that heard him, commended him, estéming his expedition to be almost beyond the capacitie of man. The K. gaue him at that time the deanery of Lincoln, which was at that time one of the worthiest promotions that he gaue vnder degrée of a bishoprick: & thus from thence forward he grew more and more into estimation and authority, and after was promoted by the king to be his almoner.

Tho. Wolsey dean of Lincoln

T. Wolsey the kings almoner.

Heere maie all men note the chaunces of fortune that followeth some, whome shée intendeth to promote, and to some her fauour is cleane contrarie, though they trauell neuer so much with all the possible diligence that they cañe deuise or imagine, whereof for my parte, I haue tasted the experience. Nowe yee shall vnderstande that all this tale that I haue declared of the good expedition of the kings ambassador, was reported by his owne mouth after his fall, lying at that time in the great parke of Richmond, vnto George Cauandish his gentleman Vsher, taking then occasion vpon diuers communi-

cations to tell this iourney with all the circumstances, as I haue here before rehearsed.

When death, that fauoureth none estate, had taken king Henry the seuenth out of this present life, who for his wisedome was called the second Salomon, what practises and compasses were then vsed about king Henry the eight: and the great prouision made for the funerals of the one, and the costly deuises of the coronation of the other, I omit. After the finishing of these solemnities and costly triumphs, and that our naturall young and lustie courageous prince king Henry the eight, entering into the flower of lustie youth, and taking vpon him the royall sceptre and imperiall diademe of this realme, which at that time flourished in all abundance and riches, whereof the king was inestimably furnished, called then the golden worlde, such grace raigned then within this realme.

T. Wolsey of the priuy counsell.

Nowe the almoner hauing a head full of subtill wit, perceiuing a plaine path to walke in toward his iourney to promotion, handled himselfe so politikely, that he found the meanes to be made one of the kings counsell, and to grow in fauour and good estimation with the king, to whome the king gaue an house at Bridewell in Fletestréete, sometime sir Richard Empsons, where he kept house for his familie, and so daily attended vpon the king, and in his especiall fauour, who had great suite made vnto him, as counsellors in fauour most commonly haue. His sentences and wittie perswasions in the counsell chamber were alwaies so pithie, that the counsell as occasion moued them, continually assigned him to be the expositor to the king in all their proceedings: in whome the king receiued such a leaning fantasie, and in especiall for that he was most earnest and readiest of all the counsell, to aduance the kings will and pleasure, hauing no respect to the cause: the king therfore perceiuing him to be a méete instrument for the accomplishment of his deuised pleasures, called him more nére vnto him, and estéemed him so highly, that all the other counsellors were put from the great fauour that they before were in: insomuch, that the king committed all his will vnto his disposition, which the almoner perceiuing, take vpon him therefore to discharge the king of the waightie and troublesome businesse, perswading the king, that he shoulde not néede to spare anie time of his pleasure for anie businesse that shoulde happen in the counsell: and wheras the other counsellors would diuers times perswade the king to haue sometime recourse into the counsell chamber, there to heare what was done, the almoner would perswade him to the contrarie, which delighted him much: and thus the almoner ruled all that before had ruled him: such did his policie and wit bring to passe. Who was nowe in high fauour but maister almoner? Who had all the suite but maister almoner? And who ruled all vnder the king, but maister almoner? Thus hee persewered in fauour, vntill at last in came presents, giftes, and rewardes so plentifully, that I dare saie he lacked nothing that might either please his fantasie, or enrich his cofers: fortune smiled so fauourably vpon him, but to what end she brought him, ye shall heare hereafter. Therefore let all men to whome fortune extendeth her grace, not trust to her subtill fauour, and pleasant promises,

mises, vnder colour whereof, shée carrieth venemous gall.

This almoner thus proceeding in fortunes blisfulnes, it chanced the wars betweene the realmes of England and France to be open, in so much, as the king being fully perswaded in his most roiall person, to inuade his forraine enemies with a puissant army, wherfore it was necessarie that this roiall enterprise should be spéedily prouided and furnished in euerie degrée of things apte and conuenient for the same, the expedition whereof, the king thought no mans wit so mete for policie and painfull trauell, as was his almoner, to whome therefore he committed his whole trust therein, and he being nothing scrupulous in anie thing that the king would commaund him to doe, although it séemed to other verie difficill, toke vpon him the whole charge of all the busines, and brought all thinges to good passe in a decent order, as all maner of victuals, prouisions, and other necessaries conuenient for so noble a voiage and armie.

All things being by him perfected, the king aduanced to his roiall enterprise, passed the seas, and marched forward in good order of battell, vntill he came to the strong towne of Turwine, to the which he laid his siege, and assailed it verie strongly continually with such vehement assaults, that within shorte space it was yéelded vnto his maiestie: vnto the which place, the Emperour Maximilian repaired vnto the king with a great army like a mightie prince, taking of the king his graces wages, which is a rare thing, and but seldome séene, an emperor to fight vnder a kings banner.

Thus after the king had obtained this puissant fort, and taken the possession thereof, and set all things there in due order, for the defence and preseruation thereof to his vse, he departed thence, and marched towarde the citie of Turney, and there laide his siege in like maner: to the which he gaue so fierce and sharpe assault, that they were constrained of fine force to render the towne vnto his victorious maiestie: at which time, the king gaue the almoner the bishoprieke of the same sea towards his paines and diligence sustained in that iourney. And when the king had established all things agréable to his will and pleasure, and furnished the same with noble captaines and men of warre for the safegarde of the towne, he returned againe into England, taking with him diuers noble personages of France being prisoners, as the duke of Longuile, and vicount Clarmont, with other, which were taken there in a skirmish. After whose returne, immediatly the sea of Lincolne fell voide by the death of doctor Smith late bishop there: the which benefice his grace gaue to his almoner, late bishop of Turney elect, who was not negligent to take possession thereof, and made all the spéede he could for his consecration: the solemnization whereof ended, he found the meanes that he gate the possession of all his predecessors goods into his hands. It was not long after that doctor Bambridge archbishop of Yorke died at Rome, being there the kings ambassador, vnto the which sea, the king immediately presented his late and new bishop of Lincolne: so that he had three bishoprickes in his hands in one yeare giuen him: then prepared he for his translation from the sea of Lincolne vnto the sea of Yorke: after which solemnization done, he being then an

T. Mouley bishop of Turney.

T. Mouley bishop of Lincolne.

T. Wolsey archbishop of Yorke.

archbishop *Primas Anglie*, thought himselfe sufficient to compare with Canterbury, and thereupon erected his crosse in the court, and euery other place, as well within the precinct and iurisdiction of Canterbury, as in any other place. And for as much as Canterbury claimeth a superioritie ouer Yorke, as ouer all other bishoprickes within England, and for that cause claimeth as a knowledge of an ancient obedience of Yorke, to abate the aduancing of his crosse, in presence of the crosse of Canterbury: notwithstanding, Yorke nothing minding to desist from bearing thereof in maner as I said before, caused his crosse to bee aduanced, as well in the presence of Canterbury as elsewhere: wherefore Canterbury being moued therewith, gaue vnto Yorke a certaine checke for his presumption, by reason wherof, there engendered some grudge betweene Yorke and Canterburie. Yorke intending to prouide some such meanes, that he would be rather superior in dignitie to Canterbury, than to be either obedient or equall to him: wherefore hee obtained to be made priest cardinall, and *Legatus de Latere:* vnto whom the Pope sent a cardinals hatte with certaine buls for his authority in that behalfe: Yet you shall vnderstand, that the Pope sent him this worthy hat of dignitie, as a iewell of his honour and authoritie, the which was conueied in a verlets budget, who seemed to all men to be but a person of small estimation.

T Wolsey cardinall.

Wherefore Yorke being aduertised of the baseneſſe of this messenger, and of the peoples opinion, thought it meete for his honor, that this iewell should not be conueied by so simple a person, and therefore caused him to be stopped by the way immediately after his arriuall in England, where he was newly furnished in all manner of apparell, with all kinde of costly silkes, which seemed decent for such an high ambassador: and that done, he was encountred vpon Black-heath, and there receiued with a great assembly of prelates, and lusty gallant gentlemen, and from thence conducted through London with great triumph. Then was great and speedy preparation made in Westminster Abbey, for the confirmation and acceptance of this high order and dignitie, the which was executed by all the Bishops and Abbots about or nigh London, with their rich miters and copes, and other ornaments, which was done in so solemne a wise, as had not beene seene the like, vnlesse it had beene at the coronation of a mighty prince or king. Obtaining this dignity, he thought himselfe meete to beare authoritie among the temporall power, as among the spirituall iurisdiction: wherefore, remembring as well the taunts sustained of Canterburie, as hauing a respect to the aduancement of worldly honour and promotion, found the meanes with the king, that he was made lord Chancelor of England, and Canterbury which was Chancelor dismissed, who had continued in that roome since long before the decease of Hen. the seuenth. Yorke being in possession of the Chancelorship, and indued with the promotions of the archbishoppe, and cardinall *De Latere*, hauing power to correct Canterburie, and all other bishops & spirituall persons, to assemble his conuocation when he would assigne, he toke vpon him the correction of matters in all their iurisdictions, and visited all the spirituall houses, hauing in euery Diocesse all manner of spirituall ministers, as commissaries, scribes, appa-

T. Wolsey lord Chancelor.

ritors,

ritors, and all other officers to furnish his courtes, and presented by preuention whom he pleased vnto all benefices throughout all this realme. And to the aduaunceing further of his legantine iurisdiction, and honour, he had masters of his faculties, maisters *Ceremoniarum*, and such other to the glorifying of his dignitie.

Then had he his two great crosses of siluer, the one of his Archbishoprike, the other of his legacie, borne before him whither soeuer hee went or rode, by two of the tallest priestes that he could get within the realme. And to increase his gaines, he had also the bishoprickes of Durham, and the Abbey of Saint Albons in Comendam. And after, when doctor Foxe Bishop of Winchester died, he surrendred Durham into the kings handes, and toke to him Winchester. Then had he in his hand (as it were in farme) the bishoprickes of Bathe, Worcester, and Hereford, forasmuch as the incumbents of them were strangers, and made their abode continually beyonde the seas in their owne countries, or else at Rome, from whence they were sent in legation to this realme vnto the king, and for their reward at their departure, King Henry the seuenth gaue those bishoprickes: and they being strangers, thought it more méete for the assurance, to suffer the cardinall to haue their benefices for a conuenient summe of money paide them yearely where they remained, than either to be troubled with the charges of the same, or to be yéerely burdened with the conueiance of their reuenues vnto them: so that all the spirituall promotions and presentations of these bishoprickes were fully in his disposition, to preferre whom he listed. He had also a great number daily attending vpon him, both of noble men and worthy gentlemen, with no small number of the tallest yeomen that he couldo get in all the realme, insomuch, that well was that noble man & gentleman, that could prefer a tall yeoman to his seruice. He shall vnderstand that he had in his hall continually three boords, kept with three seuerall principall officers, that is to saie, a Stewarde which was alwaies a priest, a treasurer a knight, and a controller an esquire: also a coferer being a doctor, three marshals, three yeomen vshers in the hall, besides two groomes, and almoners. Then in the hall kitchen, two clearkes of the kitchen, a clearke controller, a surueior of the dresser, a clearke of the spicerie, the which togither kept also a continuall messe in the hall. Also in his hall kitchen he had of maister cookes two, and of other cookes, labourers, and children of the kitchen, twelue persons: foure yeomen of the scullerie, and foure yeomen of the siluer scullerie: two yeomen of the pastrie, with two other pastelers vnder the yeomen. Then in his priuie kitchen a maister cooke, who went daily in veluet or in sattin, with a chaine of golde, with two other yeomen and a grome: In the scalding house a yeoman and two gromes: In the pantrie two persons: In the butterie two yeomen, two gromes, and two pages: And in the yewrie likewise: In the seller three yeomen and three pages: In his chaunderie two: In the wafarie two: in the wardrobe of beds, the maister of the wardrobe, and tenne other persons: In the launderie a yeoman, a grome, thirtie pages, two yeomen purueiors, and one grome: In the bake-house a yeoman and two gromes: In the wood-yarde a yeoman:

T. Wolley bishop of Winchester.

The order of the cardinals house.

yeoman and a grome: In the barne one: In the Garden a yeoman and two gromes: Porters at the gate, two yeomen and two gromes: A yeoman of his barge, and a maſter of his horſe: A Clearke of the ſtable, a yeoman of the ſame: the ſaddler, the farrier: a yeoman of his chariot: a ſumpter man: a yeoman of his ſtirrop: a muleter: ſirteene gromes of his ſtable, euerie of them kept foure geldings: In the almorie a yeoman and a grome: In his chappell he had a deane, a great diuine, and a man of excellent learning: a ſubdeane, a repeater of the quire: a Goſpeller, a Piſteller, of ſinging Prieſts ten: a maſter of the Children: Seculars of the Chappell, ſinging men twelue: ſinging children ten, with one ſeruaunt to waite vpon the children: in the Reuerſtie a Yeoman and two Gromes, ouer and beſides diuers retainers that came thither at principall feaſts. For the furniture of his chappell, palleth my capacitie to declare, the number of coſtlie ornamentes and rich iewels that were to bee occupied in the ſame continuallie: there hath beene ſeene in procceſſion about the hall, 44. verie rich Coapes of one ſute worne, beſides the rich Croſſes and candleſticks, and other ornaments to the furniture of the ſame. Hee had two croſſe-bearers, and two pillar-bearers in his great chamber: and in his priuie chamber theſe perſons: firſt the chiefe chamberlaine, and vicechamberlaine: of gentlemen vſhers, beſides one in his priuy chamber, he had twelue daily waiters: and of gentlemen waiters in his priuie chamber he had ſix, and of lords nine or x. who had each of them ii. men allowed them to attende vpon them, except the Earle of Darbie, who had allowed fiue men: then had hee of gentlemen, of cupbearers, caruers, and ſewers both of the priuie chamber and of the great chamber, with Gentlemen dailie waiters there, fortie perſons: of yeomen vſhers 6. of gromes in his chamber 8. of yeomen in his chamber fiue and fortie daily: he had alſo almes men, ſometime more in number than other ſometime.

T. Wolſeys Chappell.

There was attending on his bord of doctors and chaplaines, beſides them of his chappell, ſixteene dailie: a clearke of his cloſet: ſecretaries two: and two clearks of his ſignet, and foure counſellers learned in the law. And for aſmuch as it was neceſſarie to haue diuers officers of the chaunceric to attende vpon him, that is to ſaie, the clearke of the crowne, a riding clearke, a clearke of the hamper, and a chafer of the wax: then a clearke of the checke, as well vpon the Chaplaines, as of the yeomen of his chamber: he had alſo foure Footemen, which were garniſhed in rich running coats, when ſoeuer he rode in anie iourney: then had he an herault of armes, and a ſergeant of armes, a Phiſition, an apothecarie, foure minſtrels, a keeper of his tents, an armorer, an inſtructer of his wards, two yeomen of his wardrobe of his robes, and a keeper of his chamber continuallie in the court: he had alſo in his houſe the ſuructor of Pork, and a clearke of the greene cloth. All theſe were daily attending, downe lying, vprising, & at meales: he kept in his great chamber a continuall bord for the Chamberers and Gentlemen officers, hauing with them a meſſe of the yong Lordes, and another of Gentlemen: and beſides all theſe, there was neuer an Officer, Gentleman, or woorthie perſon, but he was allowed in the houſe ſome 3. ſome 2. and all other one at the leaſt, which grew to a great number of

perſons.

persons. Thus far out of the Check rol, besides other officers, seruants, retayners, and suters that most commonly dined in the hall.

After that hee was thus furnished, hee was sent twice in ambassage to the emperor Charles the fift, for diuers vrgent causes touching the kinges Maiestie, it was thought, that to so noble a prince (the cardinall) was most meete to be sent: wherfore, being readie to take vpon him the charge therof, was furnished in all degrees and purposes, most like a great prince: for first he proceeded forth furnished like a cardinall, his gentlemen being very many in number, were clothed in liuery coates of crimsen veluet of the best, with chains of gold about their neckes, and his yeomen and meane officers in coates of fine scarlet, garded with black veluet a hand broad.

T. Wolsey twice ambassador to the emperor Charles.

Thus furnished, he was twice sent into Flanders to the emperor, then lying in Bruges, whome he did most highlie entertain, discharging all his charges and his mens. There was no house within the towne of Bruges, wherin any gentleman of the cardinals were lodged, or had recourse, but the owners were commanded by the emperors officers, that they, vpon pain of their liues should take no monie for any thing that the cardinals seruants did take of any kind of victuall, no although they were disposed to make anie costlie banquets: commanding furthermore their said hosts, to see that they lacked no such thinges as they honestly required for their honestie and pleasure. Also the emperors officers euery night went through the towne from house to house, wheras any English gentlemen did repast or lodged, and serued their liueries for all night, which was done in this maner. First, the officers brought into the house a cast of fine manchet, and of siluer two great pots with white wine, and sugar to the weight of a pound; white lightes and yellow lightes of wax; a boll of siluer with a goblet to drink in, and euery night a staffe torch. This was the order of the liueries euery night; and in the morning when the same officers came to fetch away their stuffe, then would they account with the hosts for the gentlemens costes spent in the day before.

Thus the emperor entertained the cardinall and all his traine for the time of his ambassage there. And that done, he returned into England with great triumph.

Some of his order in going to Westminster Hall dailie in the terme; first ere he came out of his priuy chamber, he heard seruice in his closet, and there saide his seruice with his Chaplaine; then going againe to his priuie Chamber, hee would demande, if his seruauntes were in a readines, and had furnished his Chamber of Presence, and wayting Chamber, beeing thereof then aduertised, came out of his Priuie Chamber about eyght of the clocke, apparelled all in redde, that is to saie, his vpper garment eyther of fyne Scarlet, or else fyne Crymsen Taffita, but most commonlie of fyne Crymsen Satten engrayned, his Pillion of fyne Scarlet, with a necke set in the inner side with blacke Veluet, and a Tippet of Sables about his necke, holding in his hand an Orenge, whereof the substance within was taken out, and filled vppe againe with the parte of a Spoonge, wherein was Vineger and other confections against the Pestilent Ayres, the which hee most commonlie holde

holde to his nose when he came among anie preese, or else that hee was perfe-
red with manie sotors: and before him was borne first the Broade Seale of
England, and his Cardinals Hatte, by a Lorde, or some Gentleman of wor-
ship, right solemnelie: and as sone as he was once entered into his chamber
of Presence, his two great Crosses were there attending to bee borne before
him: then cryed the Gentlemen Ushers, going before him bare headed, and
saide: On before my Lords and masters, on before, make waie for my lords
grace. Thus went he downe through the hall with a Serieant at armes be-
fore him, bearing a greate Mace of siluer, and two gentlemen carrying two
greate pillers of siluer, and when hee came at the Hall doore, there was his
mule, being trapped all in crimsen veluet, with a saddle of the same, and gilt
stirrops.

Then was there attending vpon him, when hee was mounted, his two
Crosse Bearers, and his Piller bearers in like case, vpon great horses, trap-
ped all in fine Scarlet. Then marched hee forwarde with a Traine of noble
men and Gentlemen, having his footemen, foure in number about him, bea-
ring each of them a gilt Polax in their hands: and thus passed hee forth, vntill
he came to Westminster Hall doore, and there lighted, and went vp after this
maner into the Chauncerie, or into the Star Chamber: howbeit, most com-
monlie hee would go into the Chauncerie, and stay a while at a Barre made
for him beneath the Chancerie on the right hand, there commune somtime
with the Judges, and sometime with other persons: and that doone, hee
would repaire into the Chauncerie, and sitting there vntill eleuen of the
clocke, hearing of suites, and determining of other matters, from thence hee
would diuers times go into the Star Chamber as occasion serued. There he
neither spared high ne lowe, but iudged euerie state according to his merits
and desert. Hee vsed also euerie Sundaie to resorte to the Courte, then bee-
ing for the moste parte of all the yeere at Greenewich, with his former tri-
umphes, taking his Barge at his owne Stayres, furnished with yeomen,
standing vpon the Bayles, and his Gentlemen beeing within about him,
and landed againe at the three Cranes in the Vintrie: and from thence hee
rode vpon his Mule, with his Crosse, his Pillars, his Hatte and Broad seale
caryed afore him on Horse-backe through Thamis Streete, vntill he came
to Billingsgate, and there tooke his Barge again, and so was rowed to Green-
wich, where hee was receiued of the lords and chiefe officers of the kings house,
as the Treasurer, Controller, and other, and so conueyed into the kings cham-
ber: then the Court was woonderfullie furnished with Noble men and gen-
tlemen: and after dinner among the Lordes, hauing some consultation with
the King, or with the Councell, hee would depart homewarde with the like
triumph.

Thus in greate honour, triumphe, and glorie, hee raygned a long sea-
son ruling all thinges within the Realme appertayning vnto the King. His
house was alwaies resorted vnto with Noblemen and Gentlemen, feasting and
banqueting Ambassadours diuers times, and all other right noblie: and
when it pleased the king for his recreation, to repaire to the Cardinals house,

as

as he did diuers times in the yeere: there wanted no preparations, or furniture: Banquets were set forth with maskes and mommeries, in so gorgeous a sort, and costly maner, that it was an heauen to beholde. There wanted no Dames or Damosels, meete or apte to daunce with the maskers, or to garnish the place for the time: then was there all kinde of musicke, and harmony, with fine voices both of men and children.

A maske and a banquet.

One time the king came sodainely thither in a maske with a dosen maskers all in garments like Shepeheardes, made of fine cloth of Golde, and Crimosin Satten paned, and Cappes of the same, with Vysars of good visnomie, their haires and beardes, either of fine golde-wire silke, or blacke silke, hauing fiftéene torch-bearers, besides their drums, and other persons with vysars, all clothed in Satten of the same colour: and before his entering into the Hall, he came by water to the water gate, without anie noise, where were laid diuers chambers and guns charged with shot, and at his landing they were shot off, which made such a rumble in the aire, that it was like thunder: It made all the Noblemen, Gentlemen, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, to muse what it should meane, comming so sodainly, they sitting quiet at a solemne banquet, vnder this sort: First yée shall vnderstande, that the Tables were set in the Chamber of Presence iust couered, and the Lorde Cardinall sitting vnder the cloth of Estate, there hauing all his seruice alone: and then was there set a Ladie with a Noble man, or a Gentleman and a Gentlewoman throughout all the Tables in the Chamber on the one side, which were made and ioyned as it were but one Table, all which order and deuice was done by the Lorde Sandes then Lorde Chamberlaine to the king, and by sir Henry Guilford Comptroller of the kings Maiesties house. Then immediatelie after the great Chamberlaine, and the saide Comptroller, sent to loke what it shoulde meane, (as though they knewe nothing of the matter,) they loking out of the windowes into the Thamis, returned againe and shewed him, that it seemed they were Noblemen and straungers, arriued at his bridge, comming as Ambassadors from some forreine Prince: with that quoth the Cardinall, I desire you, because you can speake French, to take the paines to go into the hall, there to receiue them according to their Estates, and to conduct them into this Chamber, where they shall sée vs, and all these Noble Personages, being merrie at our Banquet, desiring them to sit downe with vs, and to take part of our fare. Then went he incontinent downe into the Hall, whereas they receiued them with twentie newe Torches, and conueyed them vppe into the Chamber, with such a noyse of Drummes and Flutes, as seldome had béene heard the like. At their entering into the Chamber two and two together, they went directlie before the Cardinall where he sate, and saluted him reuerentlie, to whome the Lorde Chamberlaine for them saide: Sir, for as much as they be straungers, and can not speake English, they haue desired mee to declare vnto you, that they hauing vnderstanding of this your triumphant Banquet, where was assembled such a number of excellent Dames, they coulde doe no lesse vnder supporte of your Grace, but to repayre hither, to viewe

as well their incomparable beautie, as for to accompanie them at Pummechance, and then to daunce with them: and sir, they require of your Grace licence to accomplish the said cause of their comming. To whom the Cardinal said, he was very well content they should so doe.

Then went the Maskers, and first saluted all the Dames, and returned to the most worthiest, and there opened their great cuppe of golde filled with crownes, and other pieces of golde, to whom they set certaine pieces of gold to caste at.

Thus perusing all the Ladies and gentlewomen, to some they lotte, and of some they won: and perusing after this maner all the ladies, they returned to the Cardinall with great reuerence, powring downe all their golde so left in their cup, which was aboue two hundred crownes: At all (quoth the Cardinall) and so cast the dice and wan them, whereat was made a great noise and toy. Then quoth the lord cardinal to the lord Chamberlaine, I pray you (quoth he) that you would shew them, that me seemeth there should be a Nobleman amongst them, who is more meete to occupie this seate and place then I am, to whome I would most gladly surrender the same according to my dutie, if I knewe him. Then spake the lorde Chamberlaine to them in French, and they rounding him in the eare, the lorde Chamberlaine said to my Lord Cardinall: Sir (quoth hee) they confesse that among them there is such a noble personage, whom if your grace can appoint him out from the rest, he is content to disclose himselfe, and to accept your place: with that the cardinall taking good aduisement among them, at the last quoth he, me seemes the gentleman with the blacke beard should be euen hee: and with that he arose out of his chaire, and offered the same to the gentleman in the blacke beard, with his cap in his hand. The person to whom he offered the chaire was sir Edward Neuill, a comely knight, that much more resembled the kings person in that maske than any other.

The king perceiuing the cardinall so deceiued, could not forbeare laughing, but pulled downe his visar and maister Neuils also, and dashed out such a pleasant countenance and cheere, that all the noble estates there assembled perceiuing the king to be there among them, reioyced verie much. The cardinall eftsones desired his Highnesse to take the place of Estate: to whom the king answered, that he woulde go first and shifte his apparell, and so departed into my lorde Cardinals chamber, and there newe apparelled him: in which time, the dishes of the banquet were cleane taken vppe, and the Tables spread againe with newe cleane perfumed clothes, euerie man and woman sitting still, vntill the king with all his maskers came among them againe all newe apparelled: then the king toke his seate vnder the cloth of Estate, commaunding euerie person to sit still as they did before: In came a newe banquet before the king, and to all the rest throughout all the Tables, wherein were serued two hundred diuers dishes, of costly deuises and subtilties. Thus passed they forth the night with banquetting, dauncing, and other triumphes, to the great comfort of the king, and pleasant regarde of the Nobilitie there assembled. Thus passed this Cardinall his time from daie to

daie,

daie, and yere to yere, in such great wealth, ioie, triumph, and glorie, hauing alwaies on his side the kings especiall fauour, vntill fortune enuied his prosperous estate, as is to the world well knowne, and shall be partly touched hereafter.

Lady Mary the kings daughter borne.

Ladie Marie king Henries daughter was borne at Grene wich on the 11. of Februarie.

The Queene of Scots fled into England.

Margaret Quéene of Scottes, king Henries eldest sister, who had after the death of her first husband (Iames king of Scots slaine at Bramstone) married Archibald Douglas earle of Anguise, fled into England, for feare of the duke of Albany, that had taken her two sons, she lay at Harbottle, where shée was deliuered of a childe called Margaret. But shortlie after Archibalde Douglas her husband went home againe into Scotlande without leaue taking: wherefore the king sent for her to London, where she was royally receiued and lodged at Baynards Castle, and there shée tarried a whole yére ere she returned.

The king for the honor of his sister Margaret quéene of Scots, on the 19. and 20. day of May, prepared and kept solemne Iusts, wherein the king himselfe, the duke of Suffolke, the Earle of Essex, and Nicholas Carew esquire, answered all commers.

Dealers with the kings money called to accompt.

This yére the Cardinall caused all those to be called to accompts, that had dealt with the kings money, and had the occupying thereof in the wars, or otherwise. This audit troubled manie, for some were found in arrerages, and some saued themselues by policie, & surely he so punished periurie with open infamie, causing the offenders to weare papers, and so forth, that in his time it was lesse vsed then in long time before: he punished also lords, knights, and men of all degrées, for riots, for bearing out wrongs, and for maintenance practised in their countries, whereby the poore men liued quietly, and no man durst vse bolstering, for feare of imprisonment. It was a strange matter to sée, a man not trained vp in the lawes, to sit in the seate of iudgment, to pronounce the law, being aided at the first by such as according to the ancient custome did sit as associates with him: but he would not sticke to determine sundrie causes, neither rightly decided, nor iudged by order of law: and again such as were clére cases he would some time prohibite the same to passe, call them into iudgement, frame an order in controuersies, and punish such as came with vntrue surmises, afore the iudges themselues, which had receiued such surmises, and not well considered of the controuersies of the parties: he ordained by the kings commission, diuers vnder courts, to heare complaints by bill of poore men, that they might the soner come by iustice: so that wise men haue reported, neuer to haue séene this realme in better obedience, and quiet, then it was in the time of his authoritie and rule, ne iustice better ministred, with indifferencie.

Periurie and other vices punished.

Courts to heare complaints of the poore erected.

The duke of Norffolke departed home into his Countrie, and also the duke of Suffolke followed shortly, for he hauing spent liberally in his iournies into France, as also in the solemnization of his mariage, and in house kéeping sith he was married, borrowed great summes of money of the king, which he hoped

hoped should haue bene forgiuen him: but the cardinall had called him as all other to account.

K. Henry procureth Martian to warre vpon the French.

In the moneth of October, Matthew bishop of Sion or Sitten, a cardinall of the Swisses, came into England from the emperor Maximilian: At the contemplation of which cardinall, the king lent to the emperor a great summe of money: but the greatest matter that moued the king to be so free to Maximilian, was because the same money should bee imploied on men of warre against the French king, toward whome of late the K. had conceiued a grudge. Herevpon was Richard Pace sent first into Germanie with a great sum of money to wage the Swissers, which vnder the conduct of the emperor Maximilian, inuaded the dutchie of Millaine, but without anie greate gayne returned from thence, leauing Millaine in the Frenchmens hands at that time. And now for a newe reliefe was this Cardinall sent from Millaine, at whose instance mony was assigned to be deliuered, and certaine Genowaies vndertake the exchange, which made not paiment at the day, although they had receiued it of the King.

1517 A greate drouth in winter, and a great frost.

This yere was a great drouth, for there fell no rain to be accounted of, from the beginning of September, till the moneth of May in the next yere, wherethrough in some places, men were faine to driue their Cattell 3. or 4. mile to water.

Also for a time the Thamis was frozen, that men with horse and carts might passe betwixt Westminster and Lambeth.

The number of strangers in London misliked.

About this season, there grew a great hart-burning, and malicious grudge amongst the Englishmen of the city of London against strangers, and namelie the artificers founde themselues sore greeued, for that such numbers of strangers were permitted to resort hither with their Wares, and to exercise handie craftes, to the great hinderance and impouerishing of the kings liege people: and this malice grew to such a point, that one Iohn Lincolne a Broker, busied himselfe so farre in the matter, that about Palme Sundaie or the 1st of Aprill, this eight yere of the kings raigne, he came to one doctor Henrie Standish, with these words: Sir I vnderstande that you shall preach at the Spittle on mundaie in Easter weeke, and so it is, that Englishmen, both merchants and other are vndone, by strangers, who haue more liberty in this land than they, which is against all reason, and also against the common Weale of this Realme: I beseech you therefore to declare this in your Sermon, and in so doing, yee shall deserue greate thankes of my Lorde Maior, and of all his Brethren, and herewith hee offered vnto the sayde Doctor a Bill, conteining the matter more at large: but Doctor Standish (wiselie considering that there might more inconuenience rise thereof, than hee woulde wishe, if hee shoulde deale in such a sorte) both refused the Bill, and told Lincolne plainelie, that he ment not to meddle with anie such matter in his sermon. Whereupon the saide Lincolne went vnto one doctor Bell, a Chanon of the foresaide Spittle, that was appointed likewise to preach vpon Tuesdaie in Easter weeke, at the same Spittle, whom he perswaded to reade his sayde bill in the pulpet, which bill in effect contayned the greefes that manie founde with straungers

for

for taking the liuings awaie from artificers, and the entercourse from merchants, the redresse whereof must come from the commons knit in one: for as the hurt touched all men, so must all set to their helping hands: which letter he read, or the chiefest part thereof, comprehending much seditious matter, and then he began with this sentence, *Cœlum, cœli Domino, terram autem dedit filijs hominum*, and vpon this text he entreated, how this land was giuen to Englishmen, and as birds defend their nestes, so ought Englishmen to cherish and maintaine themselues, & to hurt and grieue aliens for respect of their common-wealth: and vpon this text, *Pugna pro patria*, he brought in how by Gods law it was lawfull to fight for their countrey: and thus he subtilly moued the people to rebell against strangers: by this sermon manie a light person toke courage, and openlie spoke against strangers. And as vnhappe would, there had beene diuers euill parts plaide of late by strangers, in and about the citie of London, which kindeled the peoples rancor the more furiously against them.

The 28. daie of Aprill, diuers yong men of the Citie picked quarrels to certaine strangers, as they passed by the streetes, some they did strike, and buffeted, and some they threwe into the channell: wherefore the Maior sent some of the Englishmen to prison, as Stephen Studley skinner, Stephenson, Bets and other. Then sodainelie rose a secret rumour, and no man coulde tell howe it beganne, that on Maie daie next, the Citie woulde slaie all the aliens, insomuch, that diuers strangers fledde out of the citie. This rumour came to the knowledge of the kings Counsell, whereupon the Lorde Cardinall sent for the Maior and other of the counsell of the Citie, giuing them to vnderstande what he had heards. The Maior, as one ignorant of the matter, tolde the Cardinall that he doubted not but so to gouerne the Citie, as peace should be obserued. The Cardinall willed him so to do, and to take good hæde that if anie riotous attempt were intended, he should with good policie preuent it. The Maior comming from the Cardinals house about foure of the clocke in the afternoone on Maie eue, sent for his brethren to the Guild-hall, yet was it almost seauen of the clocke ere the assemblie was set. Vpon conference had of the matter, some thought it necessarie that a substantiall watch should be set of honest Citizens, which might withstand the euill doers, if they went about anie misrule: other were of contrarie opinion, but rather thought it best, that commaundement shoulde bee giuen to euerie man to shut in his doores, and to kéepe his seruants within. Before eight of the clocke the Recorder was sent to the Cardinall, with these opinions, who hearing the same, allowed the latter. And when the Recorder and Sir Thomas More, late vndersheriffe of London, and nowe of the kings counsell came to the Guild-hall, halfe an houre before nine of the clocke, and there shewed the pleasure of the kings Counsell: whereupon euerie Alderman sent to his warde, that no man should stir after nine of the clocke out of his house, but to kéepe his doores shut, and his seruants within till nine of the clocke in the morning. After this commaundement giuen, in the éuening, as sir John Mundie Alderman came from his warde, and founde two

An. reg. 9. Euill May day.

yong men in cheape playing at the bucklers, and a great many of yong men looking on them (for the commandement was scarce published) he commanded them to leaue off, & for that one of the asked him why, he would haue sent him to the counter: but the prentises resisted the alderman, taking the yong man from him, and cried prentises & clubs, then out at euery doore came clubs and other weapons, so that the alderman was faine to flie. Then more people arose out of euery quarter, and forth came seruingmen, watermen, courtiers and other, so that by 11. of the clocke there were in cheape, 6. or 700. and out of Paules churchyard came about 300. so out of all places they gathered, & brake vp the counter, toke out the prisoners that had been thither committed by the Maior, for hurting of strangers. Also they went to Newgate, and toke out Studley and Petis, committed thither for the like cause: the Maior and Sheriffes were present, and made Proclamation in the kings name, but nothing was obeyed. Herewith being gathered in plumps, they ran through S. Nicholas Shambles, and at Saint Martins gate, there met with them sir Thomas More, and other, desiring them to go to their lodgings: and as they were thus entreating, & had almost perswaded the people to depart, they within S. Martins threw out stones and bats, so that they hurt diuers honest persons, that were with sir Thomas More, perswading the rebellious persons to cease: insomuch as at length, one Nicholas Dennis a Serieant at armes, being there sore hurt, in a furie cried downe with them, and then all the misruled persons ran to the doores and windowes of the houses within Saint Martins, and spoiled all that they found. After that they ranne into Corne-hill, and so forth to an house east from Leaden Hall, called the Greene gate, where dwelt one Mewtas a Pickard or Frenchman, within whose house dwelled diuers Frenchmen, whom they likewise spoyled, and if they had founde Mewtas they would haue stricken off his head: some ran to Blanchapleton, and there brake vp the strangers houses and spoyled them: they continued thus till three of the clocke in the morning, at what time they began to withdraw: but by the way they were taken by the Maior and other, and sent to the Tower, Newgate, and Counters, to the number of 300. The Cardinall was aduertised by S. Tho. Parre, whom in all haste he sent to Richmond to informe the king, who incontinently sent to vnderstand the state of the city, and was truely informed. Sir Richard Cholmeley lieutenant of the tower during the time of this busines, shot off certaine pieces of ordinance against the citie, but did no great hurt. About fiue of the clocke in the morning, the Earles of Shrewsbury, and Surrey, T. Dokwrey L. Prior of S. Johns, George Neuill L. Burgauenny, and other came to London, with such powers as they could make, so did the Innes of Court: but before they came the busines was done as ye haue heard. Then were the prisoners examined, and the sermon of Doctor Bell called to remembrance, and he sent to the Tower! A commission of Oyre and determiner directed to the duke of Norffolke, and other lords, for punishment of this insurrection. The 2. of May the commissioners with the L. Maior, Aldermen, and Iustices went to the Guild-hall, where many of the offenders were indicted, whereupon they were arraigned, and pleaded not guilty, had day giuen till the

Mewtas a French man at the Greene gate by Leaden hall.

fourth

fourth of May: on the which daie the L. Maior, the duke of Norffolke, the earle of Surrey, and other came to sit in the Guild-hall. The Duke of Norffolke entered the Citie with 1300. men: the prisoners were brought through the stretes tied in ropes, some men, some lads, but 13. or 14. yeres olde, to the number of 278. persons: that daie Iohn Lincolne and diuers other were indicted. The next day 13. were adiudged to be hanged, drawne and quartered, for execution whereof, were set vp 10. paire of gallowes in diuers places of the citie, as at Aldgate, Blanchapleton, Grace-stréte, Leaden-hall, before either counters, at Newgate, S. Martins, at Aldersgate, & at Bishops gate, these gallowes were set on wheeles to be remoued from stréte to stréte, and from doore to doore, whereunto the prisoners were brought, and there executed. On the 7. of Maie was Lincolne, Shirwin, and two brethren called Bets, and diuers other adiudged to die. They were on herdels drawne to the standart in Cheape, and first was Lincolne executed, and as the other had the rope about their neckes, there came a commandement from the king to respite the execution, and then were the prisoners sent againe to prison, and the armed men sent out of London. For it is to be noted that three Quénes, to witte, Katherine Quéne of Englande, and by her meanes Marie the French Quéne, and Margaret Quéne of Scottes, the Kings sisters, (then resident in Englande) long time on their knées before the king had begged their pardon, which by perswasion of the Cardinall Wolsey (without whose counsell hee woulde doe nothing) the king graunted vnto them.

Three queenes obtained pardon for the Londoners.

On the thirtenth of Maie, the king came to Westminster hall, and with him the Lorde Cardinall, the Dukes of Norffolke and Suffolke, the earles of Shrewsbury, Essex, Wiltshire, and Surrey, with many lordes, and other of the kings counsell, the Maior of London, Aldermen and other chiefe Citizens, were there in their best liueries by nine of the clocke in the morning: Then came in the prisoners, bound in ropes in a ranke one after another in their shirtes, and euerie one had a halter about his necke, being in number 400. men and 11. women. When they were thus come before the kings presence: the Cardinall laid sore to the Maior and Aldermen their negligence, and to the prisoners he declared how iustly they had deserued death. Then all the prisoners togither cried to the king for mercie, and therewith the Lords besought his grace of pardon, at whose request the king pardoned them all. The generall pardon being pronounced, all the prisoners showted at once, and cast their halters towards the roofe of the hall. The prisoners dismissed, the gallowses were taken downe, and the Citizens toke more hede to their seruants.

The 18. of Maie, Margaret Quéne of Scots departed from London towards Scotland, richly appointed and prepared of all things necessary for her estate through the kings great liberality. She entred into Scotland the 13. of June and was received at Berwike, by Archibald Dowglas earle of Anguise her husband. In the moneth of June there were with the king diuers Ambassadors from forraine partes. In honor of whom, & for their solace, he prepared

Margaret queene of Scotland returned into Scotland.

coſtly iuſts, he himſelfe and 12. other, taking vpon them to iuſt with the duke of Suffolke, and 12. of his partakers: there were broken betweene the parties on both ſides 508. ſpeares.

Sweating ſickneſs. About the feaſt of Lammas began the ſweating ſickneſs, of the which many men died ſodainly in the beginning thereof, and this plague continued till Michaelmas, many died thereof in the court, as the lord Clinton, the lord Grey of Wilton, and many other knights and gentlemen, by reaſon of which contagious ſickneſs, Michaelmas terme was adiourned. After this, to wit, in the

1518 winter was a greate death of peſtilence, almoſt ouer all Englande in euerie

Peſtilence. towne more or leſſe, wherefore the K. kept himſelfe with ſmall companie about him, willing to haue no reſort to the court for feare of infection.

Ann. reg. 10. Trinity terme was begun at Oxford, where it continued but one day, and was againe adiourned to Weſtminſter.

Cardinall Campeius came into England. In the moneth of July Laurence Campeius born in Bolognie la grace, commonly called cardinal Campeius legate de latere, from pope Leo the 10. to require and exhort king H. to make war on the Turke.

Cardinall Wolſey made legate At the requeſt of the K. of England, and alſo of the French K. (which ſought now to be receiued into friendſhip with the K. of England) pope Leo conſtituted cardinal Wolſey his legate in England, ioining him in commiſſion with the foreſaid cardinal Campeius,

There was at the ſame time other legates ſent into other parts of chriſtendome, about the ſame matter, as into France, Spain, and Germany: but cardinal Campeius hearing that their ſuit tooke no place in other parts, left off his ſuite about it, and returned to Rome.

After long ſuit made of the French king and his counſel, it was agréed, that the city of Tourney ſhould be deliuered to the French K. he paying 600000. crownes for the city, to be paid in 12. yeares, & 400000. crowns for the caſtle, the which the K. had builded, (which was not fully performed:) and alſo he ſhould pay 23. thouſand pound Turnois, the which ſometime the citizens of Tourney ought to the king of Englande, for their liberties and franchiſes. More the French king ſhoulde paie to the Cardinall of England 1000. marke of yeerelie penſion, in recompence of his Biſhopricke of Tourney. It was further agreede, that the yoong Dolphine ſonne and heire to the French king, ſhoulde marrie with the Ladie Marie king Henries Daughter of Englande, if they

1519 both ſo liked each other when they came to age. And then Charles Bewforde earle of Worceſter, Lord Chamberlaine of England, with the biſhop of Ely and other, were ſent into France, to make deliuery of the ſaid City of Tourney, which was done on the 10. of Februarie. The captaine ſir Richard Iernigham was diſcharged, and the French men ſuffered to enter, the Engliſhmen returned into England ſore diſpleaſed, for thereby many a tal yeoman lacked liuing, the which woulde not labour after their returne but fell to robbing, and lewd life.

The 8. of March ſolemne iuſtes were holden, the king himſelfe and 8. yoong gentlemen, taking vpon them to anſwere the D. of Suffolk and 8. other commers with him.

This

This yeare K. Henry held his feast of S. George at Windsor, with as great solemnitie as it had beene the feast of a coronation, where were present all the knights of the order then within the realme. *An. reg. 11.*

Shortly after certaine gentlemen of the priuy chamber, which through the kings lenity in bearing with their lewdnes, forgetting themselues, and their duty towards his grace, in being too familiar with him, not hauing due respect to his estate and degree, were remoued, by order taken by the Councell, vnto whome the K. had giuen authoritie to vse their discretions in that behalfe, and then were foure sad and ancient knightes put into the kinges priuy chamber, whose names were, sir Richard Wingfield, sir Richard Ierningham, sir Richarde Weston, and sir Wil. Kingstone, and besides these diuers officers were changed in other places.

The French K. desirous to continue the friendship latelie begunne betwixt him & the K. of England, made meanes to the cardinal, that they might in som conuenient place come to an enterview together, that he might haue farther knowledge of king Henry, and K. Henry likewise of him. The cardinall therefore breaking with the king of this matter, declaring how honorable, necessary, and conuenient it should be for him to gratifie his friend herein. And thus the K. conceiued an earnest desire to see the French K. and thereupon appointed to go ouer to Calais, and so into the Marches of Guisnes, to meete with the French king. Then were sent vnto Guisnes, Syr Nich. Vaux, Sir Edm. Belknape, syr Wil. Sands knights of the gartar, commissioners to ouersee the making of a palace before the castle gate of Guisnes: these landed at Calais on the 16. of March. There were also sent, the kinges master mason, master carpenter, 300. masons, 500. carpenters, 100. ioiners, besides many painters, glasiers, tailors, smithes, and other artificers, both out of England, and prouided in Flanders, in all to the number of more than 2000. 1520

The palace builded before Guisnes castle.

The said palace was begun on the 19. of March, for the which palace the timber was before bought in Holland, and was so long, for the most part, that the same was faine to be bound together and drawne after ships to Calais, for no ship might receiue it. The other timber and borde was conueied out of England. This palace was framed in diuers places, all the roofes whereof was couered within with canuas curiously painted and also the wals from the second plat downward: it was also glased with the best and clearest glasse that could be gotten, from the ouer plat vnto the second plat of the stone worke, and round about were houses of office, as pantry, buttry, sellar, and other. And thus was there builded the goodliest Palace of timber, that euer was wrought in these westerly parts of the world.

Then was prouision made in England and in Flanders for victuall, wine, and all other things necessary for the furniture of feasts and banqueting.

Herewith were letters written to all such lords, ladies, gentlemen and gentlewomen, which should giue their attendance on the K. and Quene, which incontinently put themselues in a readines, after the most sumptuous sort. Also it was appointed that the king of England and the French king, in a campe betweene Arde and Guisnes, with 18. aydes, should in the moneth of Iune

nert ensuing abide all commers, being gentlemen, at the tilt, at the tourney, and at barriers. Then came into England Orliance K. of armis in France, and made proclamation at the court, that the king of England and the French K. in campe betweene Arde and Guisnes with 18. aydes, in June nert insuing, should abide all commers, being gentlemen, at the tilt & tourney, and at barriers. And the like proclamation was made in the court of France, by Clarencius king of armes of England: also in the court of Burgoign, in Almain, and Italy. For the furnishing of those iusts there was deuised a tilt, and all things necessarie for that enterprise, in a goodly plaine betweene Guisnes and Arde. About the which was cast a great dike or trench, and a costly house or gallery for the kings and quenes, lords and ladies for to stand in and beholde the iusts and other things there done.

King Henry being informed, that his realme of Ireland was out of order, discharged the earle of Kildare of his office of deputy, and thereunto was appointed the earle of Surrey Tho. Howard lorde admirall: wherefore the saide earle in the beginning of Aprill, toke leaue of the king, and the duke of Norfolke his father, and passed into Ireland with diuers gentlemen, or such as had bin of the garrison of Tourney, and had with him 100. yeomen of the kings guard, and other to the number of 1000. men, and there bee continued two yeres and more, in which space he had many battels and skirmishes with the wilde Irish.

Appointed for the kinges traine into France.

There were appointed to attend vpon the king ouer sea to Calais, and so to Guisnes, Thomas Wolsey cardinall, 12. chaplaines, 50. gentlemen, 238. seruants, 150. horses: the archbishop of Canterbury: the bishoppe of Durham lord priuy seale: the bishop of Ely: Chester, and Excester: the archbishop of Armacan: the Dukes of Buckingham and of Suffolke: the marques Dorset: the earles of Shrewsbury, Essex, Deuonshire, Westmerland, Staffordc, Kent, Wiltshire, Worcestershire, Northumberland, Oxford and Kildare: besides, lordes, and knights, ladies, and gentlewomen in great number, whose names I haue set downe in my larger Chronicle.

An. reg. 12. Chalengers against all gentlemen on horsebacke and on foote, for all feats of armes for thirtie daies.

The King of England	Sir William Kingstone
The duke of Suffolke	Sir Giles Caple
The lord Marques	Sir Nicholas Carew
Sir Richard Iernigham	Sir Anthony Kneuet.

The French king and seuen gentlemen chalengers of France.

For to furnish the daies of iustes, there were appointed bands, and to euerie band a captaine.

The earle of Deuonshire captaine to these:

The Lord Harberd	Sir Francis Brian
The Lorde Edmond Howard	Sir Henry Norris
	Master Anthony Browne
The Lord Leonard Grey	Master Nicholas Haruy
Sir Edward Neuill	Sir Iohn Audley

Master

Maſter Iohn Parker	Robert Iernyngham
Maſter William Palmer	Sir Iohn Neuill

The ſecond captaine of the bands the lord Montague.

The lord Richard Grey	Sir Geffrey Gate
The lord Iohn Grey	Sir Rowland Voluele
Sir Thomas Cheiney	Maſter Arthur Pole
Sir William a Parre	Francis Poines
Sir William Sidney	Iohn Coffen
Sir Griffith Dune	Maſter Hanſard, with o-
Sir Ralph Eldarcare	ther.

The ſumme of theſe two bands were 128. for the Engliſh ſide. The king gaue to theſe two bands 1000. markes, to wit, 50. marke a piece.

King Henry with his traine remoued on the 21. of May, from his manor of Greenewich towardes the Sea, firſt to Dtefordе, then to Leedes, then to Charing, and ſo on the 25. came to Canterbury intending there to keepe his Whitſontide.

On the next morrow, the emperor Charles the fift returning out of Spaine, arriued with his naule of ſhips at Hythe in Kent, where he was ſaluted by the Vice-admirall of England, ſir W. Fitz William, with fiue of the kings great ſhips, which lay for the ſafegard of paſſengers betwixt Caleis and Douer, toward euening the Emperor entred his boat, and comming toward land was met and receiued of the lord Cardinall. Thus landed Charles the Emperor at Douer, vnder his cloth of eſtate of the blacke Eagle all fret on rich cloth of gold, in whoſe company was the quéene of Aragon, with diuers noble eſtates, and faire ladies of his countrey and bloud, which were receiued at the ſea ſide, by the lord Legate Cardinall and other lords and gentlemen. The Emperor ſo accompanied at ten of the clocke at night by torch light, was brought to the caſtle of Douer, where he reſted, and there ſir Edward Poynings warden of the fiue ports, brought to the Emperor the keies of the Caſtle, who refuſed them, ſaying, he knew well that he was out of all danger, and as ſafe, as if he were at home in his owne realme. The ſame night about two of the clocke after midnight, the king came to Douer by torch light, and as ſone as the emperor heard of his comming, he aroſe, and mette with the king at the ſtaire head, where either embraced other in armes, and there they talked together a long time, and alway the king had the Emperor on his right hand, on the morrow which was Whitſondaie, the King and the Emperor with all the other eſtates rode vnto Canterbury, the ſworde borne by the earle of Darby, ryding betweene them both, by the kings commaundement, and ſo theſe princes rode to Canterbury, and to Chriſts Church, where they were receiued with generall proceſſion, by the Lorde Cardinall and other. The K. and the Emperor went both vnder one canapie vnto Thom. Beckets ſhrine, where they made their prayers and oblations, and then went to the archbiſhoppes palace, where the Quéene of England the emperors Aunt, met him going into the great chamber, of whom he was ioyfully receiued and welcomed. The Emperor and the king toke a little recreation, and then went to high maſſe, where they offered,

T. Wall. Charles the fift Emperor landed at Douer.

first the Emperor, and then the king, and so returned to their trauerses set apart, and after went to dinner, at which seruice the Emperours trumpets sounded and not the kings. On Mondaie at nine of the clocke at night, was begun a banquet, which endured till the next morning at three of the clocke, at the which banquet the Emperor, the king and the Quéene did wash together, the Duke of Buckingham giuing the water, the Duke of Suffolke holding the towell, next them did wash the L. Cardinall, the Quéene of France, and the Quéene of Aragon. At which banquet the Emperor kept the estate, the king sitting on the left hand, next him the French Quéene, and on the other side sate the Quéene, the Cardinall, and the Quéene of Aragon, which banquet was serued by the Emperors owne seruants. On Tuesday these estates departed out of Canterbury: the emperor brought the quéene his Aunt to horsebacke to Douer ward. Then the Emperor and the king kept company together till they came to the Downes, where they parted. The emperor went to Sandwich, and so to his fléete, which were in number great ships with two tops the piece 44.

King Henry tooke shipping toward Calais.

The king went to Douer, where he rested that night: and on the thursdaie toke shipping to Calais, where he landed about 11. of the clocke, where he remained fiue daies, and with him the Quéene and ladies, and many nobles of the realme. The number of persons on the king and quéenes side were 4334. and of horses, 1637. besides the persons on the French Quéenes and duke of Suffolke her husbands, and of the Cardinals.

On the fourth of June, the king with all his nobles, as well the Quéene with her traine of Ladies as other, with the whole number of nobles remoued from Calais to Guisnes, into the most noble and royall lodging before séene, for it was a Palace made quadrant, and euerie quadrant was 328. foote long, which was in compasse 1312. foote about, set on stages with great cunning.

The 7. of June, the kings of England and France met at the campe betwéene Guisnes and Arde, with both their swords drawne and borne before them.

The tenth of June, the king of England dined with the French Quéene in the towne of Arde: and the Fr. king dined the same day with the Quéene of England, in the new Palace made before the Castle of Guisnes, which house was the most sumptuous and costly of riches that hath béene séene.

And after this, these two kings met euery daie after at campe, with diuers lords, and there iusted and turneyed 14. daies: and the two Quéenes met at Guisnes and at Arde diuers times.

The 24. of June these two kings and Quéenes with their retinues, met at campe where the iusts were kept, and there they banqueted and daunced with maskings and disguisings, that the like had not béene lightly séene, almost all the night following, and then toke their leaue and departed: and on the 25. of June, the king of England and the Quéene, and all the court, remoued from Guisnes to the towne of Calais, where they rested.

On the tenth of July, the K. with a goodly companie rode to the towne of Gzauelin

Cxauelin in Flaunders, and there met with Charles the Emperor, and on the nert morrow, the Emperor, and the lady Margaret, the emperors Aunt Dutchesse of Sauoy, with many other great estates, came with the K. of England to the towne of Calets, whereby all the lords and states of England were displaced of their lodgings: and for solace against their comming, was builded a Banqueting house 800. foote compasse, like a Theatre, after a goodly deuise, builded in such maner, as I thinke was neuer séene, with sixteene principals made of great masses, betwixt euery mast foure and twenty foote, and all the out sides closed with bord and canuas, within the which, and round about were raised scaffolds of three stages high, for men and women to stand vpon: and in the midst of the same banqueting house was set vp a great pillar of timber made of 8. great masts, bound together with yron bandes for to holde them together, for it was 134. foote of length, and cost 6. l. 13. s. and 4. d. to set it vpright. The banquetting house was couered ouer with canuas, fastened with ropes & yron as fast as might be deuised. And within the said house was painted the Heauens, with stars, sunne, moone, and cloudes, with diuers other things made aboue ouer mens heads: and there were great Images of wickars couered with canuas painted, representing men of diuers strange nations, and diuers reasons were written by them of the countries that they were likened to be of, and the armes of those countries hanging by them. Also there was made as it were manie ships vnder saile, and windmils on the hils winding: especially there was on the one side set out all the armes of the kings of England, with the kings petigree: and on the other side, the Emperors armes and descent, and about the high pillar of timber in the midst was framed diuers stages, for organs and other instruments of musicke to be placed, with men, and children, as well to play on them, as for to set forth their musicall voices, & to haue made as it were, an heauenly noise. But when the Emperor, the K. of England, & the other states should haue sit downe to their banquet, this house, and all things els in great abundance being prepared for furnishing thereof, it fortuned, that in the morning of the same day, the winde began to rise, and increasing till the euening, it then on a sodaine blew off all the canuas heauen with planets, &c. and blew out more than 1000. torches and other lights of wax prepared to haue giuen light to the banquet. The seates which were with great riches prepared for the emperor and the king were dashed and lost. The same night the K. of England with 15. persons more richly apparelled in a maske, went to the Emperors lodging, and in the chamber of presence danced and reueled, and then he departed.

Banqueting house in the town of Calets, Richard Turpin.

Banqueting house defaced, the canuas heauen blowne downe.

The twelfth of July, the Emperor, and the lady Margaret supped with the king and quéene of England, at the Exchequer, where the same night were 8. companies of maskers, and in euery company were 12. persons, all in gold, siluer and veluet richly apparelled. The emperor & king in this meane time, besides their passimes, caused the charters before time concluded to be read, all the articles of the league tripartite, agréed betwixt the Emperor and the king of England, and the French K. were at full declared, to the which the French king had condescended: and for the more exemplifying of the same, hee sent

monsieur

monſieur de Roch with letters of credence, to ſignify to the emperor, that in the word of a prince he would obſerue and kepe all the ſame articles, for him, his realme, and ſubiects.

The 8. of July the emperor Charles and the ladie Margaret, departed out of Caleis. The king gaue to the Emperor a Baie Courſer, trapped with goldſmithes worke, ſet with ſtones and pearle, in which place the Emperor alighted from his horſe, and mounted vpon the ſaid courſer, wherein he toke great delight, and toke him vp with the ſpurres luſtilie, and ſo departed louinglie from Caleis, and rode to Graueling. The king remayned at Caleis ſome few dayes, and then tooke Shipping with the Quæne and Nobilitie, and had faire winde to Douer, where hee arriued the ſame night with all his companie in ſafetie.

1521 This yere K. H. kept his Chriſtmas at his manor of Grænwich, with great royaltie and open court, & on the 10. of Februarie in his owne perſon iuſted with all commers.

Order taken againſt incloſers About this time the king being moued by ſuch of his counſell as had regard to the commen wealth of this Realme, conſidering howe for the ſpace of fiftie yeres paſt and more, the nobles and gentlemen of England, beeing giuen to graſing of cattell, and kéeping of ſheepe, to the great decaie of huſbandrie and tillage, furniſhing the ground with beaſts, ſheep and deer, ſo incloſing the fields with hedges, pales, and ditches, as might ſtand moſt to their owne priuat commoditie: Wherefore the king cauſing ſuch good ſtatutes as had béene deuiſed and eſtabliſhed for reformation in this behalfe, to be reuiued and called vpon, and alſo directing forth his commiſſion vnto Iuſtices of peace, and other ſuch magiſtrates, that preſentment ſhould be made of all ſuch incloſures, and decay of huſbandrie as had chanced within the ſpace of 50. yeres before that preſent time. The Iuſtices and other magiſtrates, according to their commiſſion executed their authoritie: and ſo commandement was giuen, that the decaied houſes ſhould be built againe, that the huſbandmen ſhould be placed eſtſoones in the ſame, and that incloſed grounds ſhould be laide open, & ſore puniſhment appointed againſt them that diſobeied.

D. of Buckingham accuſed and arreſted. In this meane time Edwarde Duke of Buckingham was accuſed of high treaſon, wherefore the king directed his letters to the ſaid duke, beeing at his manor of Thornebury in Glocetterſhire, that incontinently he ſhoulde come to his preſence, which commandement the duke obeied, and came to London, where he was ſtraight waies arreſted by ſir Henry Marney captain of the gard, and conueied to the tower of London on the 16. of Aprill: before which time ſir Gilbert Parke the dukes Chancellor was taken, which had confeſſed matter of high treaſon concerning the kings perſon. There was alſo attached one Nic. Hopkins a monk of the order of Carthuſians, being of Henton priorie in Sommerſetſhire, & I. de la Court the dukes confeſſor, and other, the ſe were priſoners in the Tower.

Ann. reg. 13. After the apprehenſion of the D. inquiſitions were taken in diuers ſhires of him, ſo that by the knights and gentlemen he was indicted of high treaſon for certaine words ſpoken by the ſaide duke at Blechingly in Surrey, to George

Neuill

Neuill L. Burgauenny, and therewith was the same lord attached for concealement, and so likewise was the L. Montague, and both conueied to the Tower: and sir Edward Neuill brother to the saide L. of Burgauenny was forbidden the kings presence,

Moreouer, in the Guild hall of London, before syr Iohn Bruge knight then Maior of the same Citie, by an inquest, the saide duke was indicted of diuers points of high treason, as by the same inditement (which I haue seen and read) it appeareth, inferring, that the saide duke intending to exalt himselfe, and to vsurpe the Crowne, the royall power, and dignitie of the realme of England, and to depriue the king thereof, that hee the saide duke might take vpon him the same against his allegeance, had the tenth day of March, in the second yeer of the kings raigne, and at diuers times before, and after, imagined and compassed the kings death and destruction at London, and at Thornebury in the countie of Glouceſter: and for the accomplishment of the wicked intent and purpose, the 24. of Aprill, in the 4. yeere of the kings raigne, he sent one of his chaplaines called Iohn de la Court vnto the priory of Henton in Sommersetshire, which was an house of Carthusian monkes, there to vnderstande of one Nich. Hopkins, a monke of the same house (who was vainelie reputed by way of reuelation to haue foreknowledge of things to come) what should happen concerning this matter, which he had imagined: which monke, causing the sayd de la Court first to sweare vnto him, not to disclose his words to any maner of person, but only to the duke his maister, therwith declared that his M. the saide duke should haue all, willing him for the accomplishment of his purpose to seeke to win the fauor of the people. De la Court came back with this answere, and told it to the duke at Thornebury the morrowe after, being 25. of Aprill. And on the 22. of July the same fourth yeere, the duke sent the same de la Court with letters vnto the sayde Monke, to vnderstand of him further of such matters, and the Monke tolde to him againe for answeare, that the duke shulde haue all: and being asked as wel now as before at the first time, how he knew this to be true, he said, by the grace of God, and with this answeare de la Court now also returning declared the same vnto the D on the 24. of July at Thornbury aforesaid. Moreouer, the said duke sent the same de la Court againe vnto the saide monke with his letters the 26. of Aprill, in the 5. yeere of the kinges raigne, when the king was to take his iourney into France, requiring to vnderstand what should become of these warres, and whether the Scottish king should in the kings absence inuade this realme or not. The monke among other things, for answere of these letters, sent the duke word that the king should haue no issue male. Again the said duke the 20. day of Feb. in the 6. yeer of the kings raigne, being at Thornebury, spake these wordes vnto Ralph Earle of Westmerland: Well, there are two dukes created in Englande, but if ought but good come to the king, the duke of Buckingham shoulde be next in blod to succéede to the Crowne. After this the said duke on the 16. daie of Aprill, in the said first yeere of the kings raigne, went in person vnto the Priory of Henton, and there hadde conference with the foresayde Monke Nicholas Hopkins, who told him, that he should be king: whereunto the duke said, that if it chanced,

he

hée would shew himselfe a iust and right wise prince. The monke also tolde the Duke, that he knew this by relation, and willed him in anie wise to procure the loue of the Commons, the better to attayne his purposed intention. The Duke the same time gaue, and promised to giue yéerelie vnto the sayde Priorie fiue pounde, therewith to buy a tunne of wyne: and further promised to giue vnto the saide priorie in readie money twentie pounds, whereof tenne pounds he gaue in hand, towards the conueying of water vnto the house by a conduit. And to the saide monke Nicholas Hopkins, he gaue at that present in rewarde thrée pounde, and at one other time fortie shillinges, and at another time a marke, and at another time six shillings and eight pence. After this, on the twentieth daie of March, in the tenth yeere of the kings raign, he came to the same priory, and eftsones had conference with the said monke, to be more fullie informed by him in the matters aboue specified, at what time the monk also told him, that he should be king, and the Duke in talke tolde the monke, that he had done verie well to binde his chaplaine Iohn de la Court, vnder the seale of confession, to kéepe secret such matters, for if the king should come to the knowledge thereof, it would be his destruction. Likewise, the twentieth daie of October, in the seauenth yeere of the kinges raygne, and at diuers other times, as well before as after, the saide Duke hadde sent his Chancellor Robert Gilbert, chaplaine vnto London, there to buie certayn clothes of gold, siluer, and veluets, euery time so much as amounted to the value of thrée hundred pound, to the intent, that the saide duke might bestow the same, as well vpon knightes, esquires, and gentlemen of the kinges house, and yeomen of his garde, as vpon other the kings subiectes, to win their fauors and friendships to assist him in his euill purpose: which clothes the saide Gilbert did buie, and brought the same to the said duke, who the 20. day of January, in the saide seauenth yéere, and diuers other daies and yéeres before and after, did distribute, and giue the same to certain of the kings subiects, for the purpose before recited. Furthermore, the saide Duke the tenth of Iulie, in the tenth yéere of the kinges raygne, and diuers other daies and times, as well before as after, did constitute more seuerall and particular offices in his castles, honors, lordships and landes than he was accustomed to haue, to the end they might be assistant to him vnder colour of offices, to bring his euill purpose to passe. Moreouer, the same duke sent to the king the tenth daie of May, in the ninth yéere of his raigne, for licence to retaine any of the kinges subiectes, whom it should please him, dwelling within the shires of Hereford, Gloucester, and Somersetshire: and also, that hee might at his pleasure conuey diuers armours, and habilliments for warre into Wales, to the intent to vse the same against the king, for the accomplishment of his naughtie purpose, which was to destroie the king, and to vsurpe the Royall gouernement and power to himselfe: which suite for licence to haue Retayners, and to conuey such armours and habilliments of Warre, the sayde Gilbert the twentieth daie of Maie, in the sayde ninth yeare, and diuers other dayes before and after at London, and East Greenewich did follow, laboring earnestlie, both to the king and councell, for obtaining of the same. And the twentieth day of July, in the said ninth yéere,

the

the saide Duke sent the sayde Gilbert vnto Henton aforesayde, to vnderstand of the aforesayde Monke Nicholas Hopkins what hee hearde of him: and the Monke sent him worde, that before Christmas next there shoulde be a change, and that the Duke shoulde haue the rule and gouernement of all Englande. And moreouer, the twentieth date of Februarie, in the eleuenth yeere of the kinges raygne, at Blechinglie in Surrey, the sayde duke sayd vnto the sayd Robert Gilbert his Chancellor, that hee did expect and tarrie for a time more conuenient to atchieue his purpose, and that it might easilie bee doone, if the nobles of the realme would declare their mindes together: but some of them mistrusted and feared to shewe their mindes together, and that marred all. He said further the same time vnto the saide Robert Gilbert, that what soeuer was doone by the kings father, was doone by wrong: and still the duke murmured against all that the king then presentlie raygning did. And further he sayde, that hee knewe himselfe to bee so wicked a sinner, that hee wanted Gods fauour, and therefore hee knewe, that what soeuer hee tooke in hand against the king, had the woorse successe. And furthermore, the sayde duke (to alienate the kinges subiectes mindes from duetifull obedience, towardes him and his heires, the twentieth date of September, in the first yeere of his raigne) being then at London, reported to Robert Gilbert, that he hadde a certayne writing, sealed with the kings great seale, comprehending a certain act of parliament, in the which it was enacted, that the duke of Somerset, one of the kings progenitors was made legitimate. And further, that the saide duke meant to haue deliuered the same writing vnto king Henry the 7. but (said he) I would not that I had so doone for tenne thousande pounds. And furthermore, the same duke the fourth date of Nouember, in the eleuenth yeere of the kinges raigne, at East Greenewich in the Countie of Kent, sayde vnto one Charles Kneuet esquire, after that the king had remoued the duke for retaining William Bulmer knight into his seruice, that if he had perceiued that he should haue béene committed to the tower, as he doubted he should haue béene, hee would haue so wrought, that the principall doers therein shoulde not haue had cause of great reioycing, for he would haue played the part, which his father intended to haue put in practise against K. Richard the 3. at Salisburie, who made earnest suite to haue come to the presence of the same king Richard, which suite if he might haue obtained, he hauing a knife secretlie about him, would haue thrust it into the body of king Ric. as he had made semblance to kneele downe before him: and in speaking these words, he maliciously laid his hand vpon his dagger, and said, that if hee were so euill vsed, he would do his best to accomplish his pretended purpose, swearing to confirm his word, by the blood of our Lord.

And beside all this the same D. the 10. of May, in the 12. yéer of the K. raign at London, in a place called the Rose, within the parish of S. Laurence Poulney in Candlewikestréet ward, demanded of the said Charles Kneuet esquire what was the talke amongst the Londoners, concerning the kinges iourneie beyond the seas: and the saide Charles tolde him, that many stoode in doubt of the iourney, least the Frenchmen meant some deceit towards the king: whereunto

the

the D. answered, it was to be feared least it would come to passe, according to the words of an holie monke, for there is (saieth hee) a certaine Charterhouse monke, that diuers times hath sent to mee, willing me to sende vnto him my chancellor, and I did send vnto him Iohn de la Court my chaplain, vnto whom he would not declare any thing, till de la Court had sworne vnto him to kéepe all things secret, and to tell to no creature liuing that he should heare of him, except it were to mee, and the said monke tolde to de la Court, that neither the king nor his heires should prosper, and that I should indeuor my selfe to purchase the good wils of the communalty of England, for I (the same duke) and my blood should prosper and haue the rule of the realme of England. Then said Charles Kneuet, the monke may be deceiued through illusion of the deuill, and that it was euill to meddle with such matters. Well said the D. it cannot hurt me, and so the D. séemed to reioice in the monks words. And further, the same time the D. told the said Charles, that if the king had miscaried now in his last sickenes, he would haue chopped off the heads of the cardinall, of sir Tho. Louell knight, and of others: and also said, that he had rather die for it, than to be so vsed as he had béene. Moreouer, the 10. day of September in the saide 11. yéere of this K. raign, at Blechingly in the county of Surrey, walking in the gallery there with George Neuill knight, lord of Burgauenny, the D. murmuring against the kings counsellors, and their gouernment, said vnto the saide George, that if the K. died, he would haue the rule of the realme in spite of whosoeuer said the contrary, & withall said, that if the said L. of Burgauenny would say, that the D. had spoken such words he would fight with him, & lay his sword vpon his pate, and this he bound with many great oths. These were the points and articles comprised in the indictment, and laid to his charge, wherof he was by the inquest found guilty.

D. of Buckingham arraigned.

On the 13. of May, the said D. was brought from the tower by water vnto Westminster hall, before the D. of Norffolke high steward of England, to accomplish the high of appeale of the péere or péers of the realm, and to discern and iudge the cause of the péeres. There were also appointed to sit as péers and iudges vpon the D. of Buckingham, the duke of Suffolke, the marques Dorset, the earles of Worcester, Deuonshire, Essex, Shrewsbury, Kent, Oxford, & Darby, the lords of S. Iohns, de la Ware, Fitz Waren, Willoughby, Brooke, Cobham, Herbert and Morley. There was made within the Hall at Westminster a scaffold for these lords, and a presence for the Iudge, railed, and counterrailed about, and barred with degrées. When the lords had taken their place, the D. was brought to the bar, and vpon his arraignment pleaded not guilty, and put himselfe vpon his péeres. Then was the indictment read, which the D. denied to be true, and (as he was an eloquent man) alledged reasons to falsifie the indictment, verie pithilie. The kings attorney against the dukes reasons, alledged the examinations, confessions, and proofes of witnesses. The duke desired the witnesses might be brought forth: and then came before him Charles Kneuet, sir Gilbert Perk his chancellor, Iohn de la Court his confessor, and Nicholas Hopkins the monke of Henton that had fed his humour with vaine spéeches: diuers presumptions & accusations were laid to him by Charles Kneuet, which

he

he would haue couered. But the depositions being read, and the deponents deliuered prisoners to the officers of the tower, finally, he was found guiltie by his peeres, and hauing iudgment to suffer as in case of treason is vsed, was led again to his barge, and so conueied by water to the Temple staires, where he was set aland, and from thence by land through London to the tower with the axe afore him, sir W. Sands hauing him by the right arme, and sir Nich. Vaux by the left arme. And on the 17. of May, being the friday before Whitsunday, he was deliuered to the shirifs of London, who led him to the scaffold on the tower hill, about 11. of the clocke, and there he was beheaded, in the presence of sir Th. Louel and all the people, his body with the head was borne by the friers Augustines to their church, and there buried in the Chappell Church for the close. D. of Buckingham beheaded.

And now followeth the publication at the disgrading of the said Edw. late D. of Buckingham knight and companion of the most noble order of S. George, named the Gartar, which was read and published by Gartar king at Armes, at the feast of S. George in the quire of Windsore Colledge, standing on the high pase at the dere, all the other officers of armes about him, there being also present the L. marques Dorset knight of the same order, then being the kings deputy for the feast, the earle of Essex, the earle of Wilshire, the earle of Kent, sir Th. Louel, and the L. le Ware, knights of the said order, with other great audience assembled there on the 8. of June, the 13. yere of Henry the 8. the yere of Christ 1521. D. of Buckingham disgraded.

Be it knowne vnto all men, that whereas Edward late Duke of Buckingham knight, and companion of the Noble order of Saint George, named the Gartar, hath latelie done and committed high treason against the King our soueraigne lord, and soueraigne of the said order of the gartar, in compassing and imagining the destruction of the most noble person of our said soueraigne Lorde the King, contrarie to his othe and due allegeance, and for the which high treason the saide Edwarde hath béene indicted, arraigned, conuicted, and attainted, and for the which detestable offence and high treason, the sayde Edward hath deserued to be disgraded of the saide noble order, and expelled out of the said company, and not worthy that his armes, ensignes, and hachmentes should remaine among other the noble ensignes of other noble, vertuous, and approued knights of the said noble order, nor haue the benefits of the said noble order: wherefore our said soueraigne lord the king, soueraigne of the saide Noble order of Saint George named the Gartar, by the aduise of the other knightes of the saide Noble order, for his saide offences, and committing of the saide high treason, willeth and commandeth that the saide Edward duke of Buckingham to bee disgraded of the saide noble order, and his armes, Ensignes, and hachments clerelie expelled, and put from among the armes, ensignes, and hachmentes of the other noble knights of the said order, to the intent, that all other Noble men thereby mate take ensample hereafter, not to commit any such heinous and detestable treason and offences, as God forbid they should: God saue the King. Disgrading of a knight of the Gartar.

It is to bee remembred, that Sommerset Herault was in the rode loft behind the hachments of the saide duke Edward: and then Gartar spake these words,

woords, expelled and put from the armes, then the said Somerset violently cast downe into the quire, his creast, his banner, and sword. And when the publication was all done, the officers of armes, spurned the said hachment with their feete, out of the quire into the body of the church, first the sword, & then the banner, and then was the creast spurned out of the said quire through the Church out at the west doore, and so to the bridge, where it was spurned ouer into the ditch. And thus was the said Edward late duke of Buckingham fully disgraded of the order of Saint George named the Gartar.

The duke of Buckingham had begun a great and sumptuous building of his manor of Thornebirie, but left the same vnfinished. The foundation of a very spacious base court was there begun, and certaine gates and towers in it castle like. It was of a foure or fiue pardes high, and so remained, a token of a noble piece of woorke purposed. He made a faire parke hard by the castle, and tooke much faire ground into it very fruitful of corne, now faire lands for courting. The inhabitants cursed the D. for those lands so inclosed. There was afore D. Edwards time a parke at east Wood, a mile or more off: but D. Edw. at two times enlarged it to the compasse of fiue miles, not without many curses of the poore tenants.

I. Leyland.

War betwixt the Emperour and the French king.

In this meane while were the Emperor and the French king fallen at variance, so that the warre was renued betwixt them. For the pacifying whereof Cardinall Wolsey, with the bishops of Ely and Durham were sent ouer, there went with them the earle of Worcester the lord chamberlaine, the lords S. Iohn, Ferrers and Herbert, the primate of Armacane, sir Th. Bolleign, sir Iohn Pechy, sir Iohn Hussey, sir Richard Wingfield, sir Henry Gildford, and many other knights, esquires, and gentlemen, these arriued at Calais on the second of August.

Cardinal Wolsey rode into Flanders, to the Emperor.

The same day came to Calais ambassadors from the emperor: and on the 4. of August came the chancelor of France, and the county de Pallace with 400. horse, by which meanes there met at Calais the lords of England (before named) of Burgoigne, Spaine, Flanders, and France, with the popes Orator, to make peace betwixt the Emperor and the Fr. king. Cardinall Wolsey would haue furthered a league betwixt the empreor, the K. of England, the K. of France, and the Pope, but the Popes ambassador wanted commission thereto, and therefore were letters sent to Rome, and the French men remained still at Calais till answere came from thence.

The Cardinall Wolsey on the twelft daie of August rode into Flanders, to speake with the Emperour, which as then laie in Bruges: a mile without Bruges the Emperour receiued him, and did to him as much honor as could be deuised: the cheare was great which was made to the English men, and of euerie thing there was such plentie, that there was no want of things necessarie. The Cardinall, after he had soiourned in Burges by the space of 13. daies, and concluded diuers matters with the Emperour, and accomplished his commission, he tooke leaue of the Emperour, and the nine and twentieth day of August returned to Calais, where the ambassadors of France tarried his comming.

The

The firſt of September the Cardinall Chancellor of England, the Chancellor of France, and the Chancellor of Burgoigne rode from Staple inne to our lady church in Calais. The fourth of September the regent of Naples came to Calais, to the great councell there: and the 27. of September the Chancellor of Hungarie came to the ſame councell, but in fine nothing was concluded, but only that the fiſhermen of both princes might freely fiſh in the ſeas without diſturbance, till the ſecond day of February next. Thus, when no concluſion of agréement could be accorded, the cardinall ſent to the Emperor the lorde of S. Iohns, and ſir T. Bolleine knight, to aduertiſe him what was done.

During the continuance of the Cardinall at Calais, all writs and patents were there by him ſealed, and no ſheriffes of ſhire choſen for lacke of his preſence, hauing there with him the great ſeale, and full power in things, as if the king had béene there in perſon. After the returne of the Engliſh ambaſſadors from the Emperor and French king, the cardinall returned into England about the latter end of November, he landed at Calais, and from thence toke his iourney to Blechingley, where the king welcomed him, and gaue him thankes for his great paines.

King Henry wrote a booke againſt Luther in Germany, and therefore the Pope Leo the tenth, named him Defender of the faith. To the which booke Luther anſwered verie ſharpely, nothing ſparing his authoritie or maieſtie. *King Henry writ againſt Luther.*

Pope Leo died this yéere, whereupon doctor Pace Deane of Paules was ſent to Rome to make friends in the behalfe of Cardinall Wolſey, who was brought into a vaine hope, through the kings fauour and furtherance, to be elected Pope: but Adrian the firſt was choſen before doctor Pace could come to Rome, and ſo that ſuite was daſhed. This Pace was a right worthie man, and one that gaue in counſell faithfull aduiſe, learned he was alſo and indued with manie excellent good gifts of nature, courteous, pleaſant, and delighting in muſicke, highlie in the kings fauour, and well heard in matters of weight. *Doctor Pace deane of Paules.*

This yéere was a great death in London and other places of the Realme: manie men of honor and great worſhip died, and amongſt other doctor Fitz Iames biſhop of London, in whoſe place was elected doctor Tunſtal. Alſo a great dearth in London and other places, for wheate was ſolde for twenty ſhillings the quarter. *A great death and dearth in England.*

The earle of Surrey returned out of Ireland, and came to the court on the 25. of Ianuary. Many complaints to the king were made by the marchants of the Frenchmen which ſpoiled them by ſea of their goods, for by reaſon the wars were open betwixt the emperor and the French K. many ſhips of war were abroad on both parts, and now and then the Engliſh men fell into their hands, and were vſed as enemies, namely by the French men, whereof the French ambaſſadors promiſed reſtitution, but little was recouered. In the moneth of Ianuarie therefore, the king commanded all his ſhips to be rigged and made ready, which was done with all diligence. 1522 *Ships rigged to the ſea.*

In this meane time grudges and diſpleaſures ſtill grew and increaſed be-

twéne the king of England and the French king, till at length, the duke of Albany returned into Scotland, contrarie to that which was couenanted by the league. The French king alledged, that he was not priuie to his going thither, and wrote to the king, that the said duke was entred Scotland without his assent. Hereupon the king sent six ships to the sea well appointed, the admirall whereof was Christopher Coo, an expert sea man, his commission was to safegard the merchants, and other the kings subiects that were in danger to be grieuously spoiled and robbed on the sea by the Frenchmen, Scots, and other rouers.

The 8 of Febr. the lord Dacres warden of the marches, fore-against Scotland entred into Scotland, with 500. men, by the kings commandement, and there proclaimed that the Scots should come into the kings peace by the first of March following, or else to stand at their perils: the D. of Albany being then within fiue miles with a mighty power of Scots.

The eleuenth of Februarie, the lorde Burgauenny was brought from the tower to Westminster, and there in the kings bench confessed his indictment of misprision.

The L. Montague was about the same time restored to the kings fauor.

This yéere died the lord Brooke, sir Edward Poynings knight of the garter, sir Iohn Pechy, and sir Edward Belknape, valiant captaines.

A Scottish rouer called Duncan Camell, after long fight was taken on the sea by Iohn Arundell esquire of Cornwall, who presented him to the king, and he committed him to the tower, where he remained a long season.

The 6. of March, the French K. commanded all Englishmens goods being in Burdeaux to be attached, and put vnder arrest, and retained not onely the money due to be paide, for the restitution of Tourney, but also withholde the French Quænes dower. The French ambassador therefore was called afore the councell, and the cardinall laid fore to his charge, that contrary to his promise at all times made on the French kings behalfe, affirming, that he meant nothing but peace and amitie to be obserued in all points with the K. of England, yet now the English merchants had not onely their goods staied at Burdeaux, but also they and their factors were laide in prison in full breach of all peace and amitie afore time concluded. The ambassador as well as he could excused his master, but in the end he was commanded to keepe his house, and the French hostages that were appointed here to remaine for the money to be paid for the deliuery of Turney, were committed to safe keeping: wherewith also all the French men in London were arrested, committed to prison, and put to their fines: but they were after ten daies set at libertie, vpon finding sureties to appeare before the maior, or else afore the councell at a certain day, and to pay the fine vpon them assessed, which fine the king pardoned to diuers of the poorer sort.

A generall proscription of the realme of England.

This yéere betwéene Easter & Michaelmas was made a generall proscription of all the realme of England by taking of musters and otherwise in euerie countrey, as may appeare by the charge sent to a chiefe Constable.

William Fitz Williams knight, Richard Fitz Lewes knight, Robert Norwich

sergeant

sergeant at the law, and Iohn Tirell esquire, commissioners assigned for our soueraigne lorde the king, to the baily and chiefe constable of the halfe hundred of W. greeting, where afore this we the said William, Richard, Robert and I. Tirell, by our late precept to you directed, charged you the high constables of the same hundred, to giue monition and charge to all constables of euery hamlet parish, and village within the said hundred, personally to appeare afore vs the said commissioners on munday next comming, the last day of the moneth of March at Waltham holy crosse, and there to bring with them a certificate in writing of the names of all maner of men aboue the age of 16. yeres, dwelling within euery towne, hamlet and village within the said hundred, and to do further as by the same precept more plainly doth appeare. We now effsones in the behalfe of the king our soueraign lord, will and command you, that you duely execute the said precept: and also that ye giue knowledge, warning, and commandement to all maner of temporall men dwelling, inhabitting, or abiding within any towne, hamlet, parish, or village, within the same halfe hundred, personally to appeare before vs the kings said commissioners at Waltham holie crosse aforesaid, the said munday next comming, furnished and apparelled in their best array for the warre, that is to say, with bowes, arrowes, bils, harnelle, or any other weapons, artillery, or harnelle for the war, which they or any of them haue within the townes and hamlets of the said hundred and euery of them. And that they also the said last day of this present moneth of March do certifie vs in writing at Waltham holy crosse aforesaid, of all their names, and to whom they belong vnto. Also who is lord of euery towne or hamlet within the said hundred, and who be stewards. Item, who be parsons of the same townes, and what the benefices be worth by yere. Also who be owners of euerie parcell of land within any towne, hamlet, parish, or village, within the said hundred, with the yerely value of euerie mans land within the same townes, hamlets, parishes, and villages. And of euery flocke and flockes of cattell, or other things that be occupied vpon any farme within the said townes, hamlets, and parishes, and who be owners of them. Also what aliants or strangers dwell in any towne, hamlet, or parish within the saide hundred, and where they were borne, and vnder whose dominion. Item, what occupation, mysterie, or substance they be of. Item, the value and substance of euery person being of 16. yeres and aboue, dwelling within your saide hundred, hamlets, and parishes, as well spirituall as temporall. Also what pensions goeth out of any lands there to any religious or spirituall men, and that ye fayle not this to doe, as ye tender the kings pleasure, and will auoide the contrarie. At Brentwood, the 27. day of March in the 13. yeere of the raign of king Henry the eight.

There were sent to the sea vnder the conduct of sir William Fitz Williams vicеadmirall 28. great ships well manned and furnished for the wars, and 7. other ships were sent toward Scotland, which entred the Forth, and profered to enter the Scottish ships that lay in the hauens, but the Scots ranne their ships aland, and the English men followed with boates, landed, and set the ships on fire, and at Lythe toke certaine prisoners, which they brought into *An. reg. 14.*

England: and ſtill the kings great nauie kept the narrow ſeas: for then was neither peace betwixt England and France, nor open warre.

The king vnderſtanding that the Emperor would come to Caleis, ſo to paſſe into England, as he went toward Spaine, appointed the lord marques Dorſet to go ouer to Caleis, there to receiue him, and likewiſe the lord cardinall was appointed to receiue him at Douer.

Cardinall Wolſey rode toward Douer to receiue the Emperor.

The 20. day of May, cardinall Wolſey rode through the city of London toward Douer, there to mete & receiue the emperor, being accompanied with two earles, 36. knights, 100. gentlemen, eight biſhops, ten abbots, thirtie chaplaines, all in veluet and ſatten, and ſeuen hundred yeomen.

The Marques Dorſet, with the Biſhop of Cheſter, the lorde de la Ware, and diuers other, at Grauelin receiued the emperor in the name of the king of England on the fiue and twentie daie of Maie, and with all honor brought him to Caleis, where he was receiued with procеſſion, and by the lord Barnes lieutenant of the towne, by the Maior and merchants of the Staple, in the beſt manner that might be deuiſed. On the ſixe and twentieth he toke ſhip at Caleis, and landed at Douer, where the Cardinall with a great number of lordes, knights, and gentlemen of England, was readie to receiue him, and with all the honor that might be, brought him to the caſtle, where he was lodged.

On the 28. of May, the king came to Douer, and there with great ioie the emperor and he met, and ſaluted each other. On the thirtith of May he rode from Douer to Canterburie, and ſo from thence by eaſie iournies they came to Greenwich, where the Quéene receiued her nephew with all the ioie that might be. On the firſt of June, the king and emperor with all their companie marched towards London, where the citie was prepared for their entrie, after the manner as is vſed at a coronation, ſo that nothing was neglected that might ſet forth the honor of the city, whereinto they were receiued by the maior, aldermen, and commons: the croſſe in Cheape was new gilt, and eleuen pageants were deuiſed on ſtages very faire and excellent to behold. The emperor was lodged at the Blacke friers, and all his nobles in the new builded houſe of Bridewell.

The emperor Charles came to London.

On Whitſunday the eight of June the emperor and the king rode to the cathedrall church of S. Paul, and there heard maſſe, which was ſong by the cardinall. The emperor rode to diuers places, being feaſted by the king, at Windſor they tarried a whole weeke, where on *Corpus Chriſti* day the emperor ware his mantle of the garter, and ſate in his ſtall. The ſame day both the princes receiued the ſacrament, and toke their corporall othes to keepe and obſerue the league concluded betwixt them. On the morrowe after they departed from Windſor, and came to Wincheſter on the 22. of June.

The firſt of July, the emperors nauie came before Hampton, containing 180. goodly ſhips. Then the Emperor toke leaue of the king, of whom he had many gifts and ſummes of money by waie of loane, and ſo the firſt of July he toke ſhip, and made ſaile towards Spaine, where he arriued in ſafetie the tenth daie after.

During

During this time, the earle of Surrey lord admirall, brent Morles in Britaine, and then returned: not long after, he passed ouer to Caleis, entred Picardie, and brent diuers townes and castels. He besieged Hesding, but because winter was neer, he raised his siege, and returned. Earle of Surrey brent Morles in Britaine I. Skelton.

The D. of Albany in Scotland began to enter this land with a great army, but hearing that the earle of Shrewsbury was comming he toke a truce for sixe monethes.

In the beginning of this yeere, Sultan Soliman Pac, called the great Turke, which was the 8. of the line of Ottoman the first that took vpon him to be great captaine or ruler, and to whome Sultan Solime his father had left the empires of Constantinople, Trapesond, Alexandry, and Babylon, with manie diuers kingdoms & realmes, which Sultan Soliman ỳ yeer before had gotten ỳ town of Belgrado, being the kete of Hungary, because he saw all the princes in Christendome now at discord, thought it most for his honor and profit to make war on the Ile of the Rhodes, and to take the same: which Ile had bẽ kept by the space of 224. yeeres, by the brethren or knights of the order of S. Iohn of Ierusalem. Diuers thinges moued him to take this enterprise, one was because this Ile stood so, that the religious of the same oftentimes tooke and destroied his Shippes as they came with golde, and other riches from Egypt, Sire, and other east parts to Constantinople, so that by them of that Ile he sustayned more hurt than by all Christendome, because the sayde Ile stode in the very entrie toward Constantinople. Another motion was, because his father when he dyed, charged him to allay to take the Rhodes, for to be reuenged of the shame that they had done to his grandfather Mahomet the greate Turke, which was with dishonour beaten from the siege of the Rhodes. But the greatest occasion of all was the exhortation of a great Counsellor of the Religion called Andrewe Amirall borne in Portingale, which knewe the whole estate, and in what case the Towne stoode in. The cause why this Andrewe Amirall bare malice to his religion was, because after the death of Brother Fabrica de laretto Lorde master of their religion, hee was not elected to that honor, but one Philip de Villiers de Lisle Adame of France was named to bee Lord master, wherefore the sayde Andrew prouoked the Turke to come to the Rhodes. The Rhodes besieged. Why the Turk coueted the Rhodes.

The great Turke seeing so great an occasion offered, and desiring honor, and also knowing the fortresse of the Rhodes to lacke munitions, for the brethren of the order were both of such wealth and pride, and also of such wicked life that they toke no heed of their vow and solemne profession, nor foresaw the thing to come, and so their town vnfurnished was sone surprised. The said Turke prouided for 300. saile, in the which he conueied all his artillery, and other things necessarie. In the which army were 60000. miners and pioners prepared to dig and vndermine, the rest of the army came by land to a place called Fisco, which standeth so directlie against the Rhodes, that a fire maie bee seene from the one side to the other: from the which place the Turke sent letters to the aboue named Philip de Villiers lord master of the religion, signifying to him, that he would haue the saide Ile, for the great dammage that they had done Three score thousand pioners sent to the Rhodes.

to him and his people: and if they would yéld to him the said Ile, he promised on his faith, and by Mahomet his first prophet, they should haue no dammage nor hurt by him, and that they that would depart should go in safetie, and they that would tarry and serue him, should haue good wages: and if they refused this to doe, he sware that he would subuert the wals of their fortresse, and destroy them all, and make them slaues, which letter was dated at Constantinople, the first day of June.

The said lord maister and his companie were greatly abashed of this letter, but yet like hardie gentlemen they intended to defend them, and made all the preparations that they could doe in so short space, and wrote to all Princes Christian of their distresse. But the Turke knowing the great diuision amongst the christian princes, so that they could send no succour to the Rhodes, sent 200000. Turkes, which arriued in the Ile of the Rhodes on Midsommer day, which was the festiual day of the Rhodes in honor of S. Iohn Baptist, which sudden comming sore abashed the Rhodians, being but 600. knights, 5000. other méete to beare armes: yet of noble courage and trusting in God, they determined to defend themselues against the enemies of God. And on the 28 of July the Turke arriued there in his owne person, which much incouraged his people: he bent his ordinance toward the towne, but did no great harme, wherefore he caused all his pioners to cast earth one banke ouer another still till they came within a bow shot of the wals: and although that many of the pioners were slaine with ordinance of the towne, they neuer ceased till they had made a banke of earth higher by ten foote than the wall of the towne, and laid there their ordinance, so that no person durst stir on the wals or bulwarks. Thus with mounts of earth was the town enuironed, and behind the mountaines lay the Basheaux and chiefetaines of the Turke, which were euer readie to take their aduantage, and daily they shot into the towne, and beat downe houses and slew the people in the stréetes, for they vpon the mount might easily sée into the towne: besides this, the Turke caused so many mines to bee made in diuers places, that they within were not able to make countermines for lacke of people, insomuch as women were set a worke, to dig and carry, by reason whereof a great part of the wals were ouerthrowen, and if they within had not made countermines, the towne had béen gotten within a short space. Also the Turke in the moneth of September gaue to the Rhodians 4. great assaults, but the Christians so valiantly defended them, that at euery assault they lost ten thousand Turkes and more.

The Rhodes besieged by two hundred thousand Turkes.

The great Turk séeing the losse of his men at the assaults, sent for Mostaffa Bashaw, and much blamed him, that he had perswaded him that he might haue taken the towne in 12. daies, or in a moneth at the most; wherefore in his furie he would haue put him to death: but in conclusion the Turke determined clérely to raise his siege, and to depart, and so had done, if that same night sir Andrew Amirall, and a Iewe within the Rhodes had not written letters, and shot them out on quarels into the Turkes army: by which letters the Turke knew the necessitie of the towne, and féeblenes of the people, which caused him to change his purpose: but this treason was espied, the traitors taken, and

put

put to terrible execution. The Turke caused so many mines to be made, that both bulwarkes, wals, and towers were ouerthrown. And so on S. Andrewes euen he caused a great assault to be giuen: but yet the Christians so valiantlie defended themselues, that they slew 3000. Turks, and kept them from entering that day: but the citizens of the Rhodes after this assault came to the lord maister, and praied him to haue compassion on them, the lord maister comforted them with faire wordes: but by chance about the same time the great Turke sent a letter into the Rhodes, willing them to deliuer the towne, and they all should haue their liues and goods, and they that would tarry should remaine quiet. This letter being knowne, the people cried out on the lord maister to take the offer, wherefore calling all his counsell, for diuers wants amongst them, they sent to the Turke two of the religion, for the assurance of his promise, who were well entertained, and had writings sealed of all things that they desired. To the which two knightes, Aymech Basshaw sware, that there were slain at that siege 64000. Turks, and 40000. dead of mortalitie & more. And on Christmas day, the great Turke himselfe entered into the Rhodes, and toke possession the roof, and the lord maister & all his religion, the first day of January toke ship, and sailed to Candy, and so to Rome, and there declared his chance and aduenture. Thus was the towne and the Ile of the Rhodes taken by the great Turke, which was a great succour to all Christian men resorting to the east parts of the world, which chance was much lamented (but too late) throughout all Christendome, and much blame put in princes, because they sent no succour to them of the Ile.

Yeelding of the Rhodes to the Turkes.

1523

The 20. of Februarie, the ladie Alice Hungerford a knights wife, for murthering her husband, was led from the tower of London to Holborne, & there put in a cart with one of her seruants, and so caried to Tiborne, and both hanged: she was buried in the Gray Friers church at London.

Register of the Gray Friers. Lady Hungerford hanged.

Thomas Howard earle of Surrey burned 37 villages in London, dispoiled the countrey from the east marches to the west, and ouerthrewe diuers holdes.

Thomas Ruthall Bishop of Durham being deceased, the king gaue that bishoprike vnto cardinall Wolsey, who resigned the bishoprike of Bathe to doctor Iohn Clarke maister of the Rolles. And sir Henry Marney that was vicechamberlaine, was made lord priuy seale, and shortly after he was created baron Marney at Richmond.

Doctor Blyth Bishop of Chester was attached for treason, but he acquit himselfe.

The 15. of Aprill began a parliament at the Blacke friers in London, and that day the king came into the Parliament chamber, and there sate in the seate roiall, and at his fæte on the right side sate the cardinal of Yorke, and the archbishop of Canterbury: and at the raile behind stood doctor Tunstall bishop of London, which made to the whole parliament an eloquent oration, declaring the office of a king. First he must be a man of iudgement, according to the saying of the Prophet Dauid, *Deus iudicium tuum regi da, &c.* Also he must be a man of great learning, according to the saying of the prophet, *Erudimini*

Parliament at the Blacke Friers.

qui iudicatis terram. According to which saying, he said that God had sent vs a prince of great iudgement, of great learning, and great experience, which according to his princely duty forgat not to study to set forwards all thinges, which might be profitable to his people and realme, lest might be laide to his charge the saying of Seneca, *Es rex, & non habes tempus esse rex?* Art thou a king, and hast no time to be a king? Which is as much to say, as Art thou a king, and dost nothing profitable to thy people? Art thou a king, and seest the people haue an insufficient lawe? Art thou a king, and wilt not prouide remedie for the mischiefe of thy people? These things haue indeed caused the kings highnes to call this high court of parliament, both for remedie of mischiefes which be in the common law, as recoueries, forren vouchers, and corrupt trials; and for making and ordering of new statutes, which may be to the high aduancing of the common wealth: wherefore he willeth the commons to repaire to the common house, and there to elect them a speaker, or their common mouth, and to certifie the lord Chancelor of the same, which should thereof make report to the kings most noble grace, which should declare his pleasure when he would haue him presented before his person.

This was the cause of the parliament, he saide, but of these things no one word was spoken in the whole parliament, nor any good act made, except the grant of a great subsidie. The commons chose for their speaker Sir Thomas Moore knight, and presented him the saturday after in the parliament chamber. Where he according to the vsage, disabled himselfe, both in wit, learning, and discretion, to speake before the king, and brought in for his purpose, how one Phormio desired Haniball to come to his reading, which thereto assented, and when Haniball was come, hee began to reade *De re militari*, that is, of chiualrie: when Haniball perceiued him, he called him arrogant fole, because he would presume to teach him, which was maister of chiualrie in the feates of warre: so the speaker saide, If he should speake before the king of learning, and ordering of the common-wealth, and such other like, the king being so well learned, and of such prudence and experience, might say to him as Haniball to Phormio: wherfore he desired his grace that the commons might chose another speaker. The Cardinall answered, that the king knewe his wit, learning, and discretion by long experience in his seruice: wherefore he thought that the commons had chosen him as the most meetest man of all, and so he did admit him. Then sir Thomas Moore gaue to the king his most humble thankes, and desired of him two petitions: the one, if he should bee sent from the commons to the king on message, and mistake their intent, that he might with the kings pleasure resort againe to the commons, for the knowledge of their true meaning. The other was, if in communication and reasoning, ante man in the common house should speake more largely than of dutie they ought to doe, that all such offences should be pardoned, and that to be entred of record: which two petitions were granted, and thus began the parliament. And euen as there was much ado amongst them of the common house, about their agreement to the subsidie then required, so was there as hard hold for a while amongst them of the cleargie in the conuocation house, namely,

Oration of sir Thom. Moore.

namely, Richard Foxe bishop of Winchester, and Iohn Fisher bishop of Rochester held fore against it, but most of all sir Rowland Philips vicar of Crodown, one of the canons of Paules a famous and notable preacher in those dates, spake most against that payment. But the cardinall taking him aside, so perswaded the matter with him, that he came no more into the house, willinglie absenting himselfe, thus he giuing ouer his hold, the other yeelded, and so was granted the halfe of all their reuenues spirituall for one yeare, to be paid in 5. yeares following. Now on the 29. of Aprill, the cardinall accompanied with diuers lords, as well spirituall as temporall, came into the common house, where he eloquently declared to the commons, how Francis the French king the first called the most Christian king, had oftimes broken promise with the king of England, and his nephew Charles the Emperor, that the king of his honor could no longer suffer. For first he declared that the meeting of the said two princes at Gutsnes, the said French king was sworne to keepe all the articles contained in the league, sith the which time he hath made war on the emperors dominions, &c. he also hath withholden his tribute, and other payments which he should pay to the K. of England, for redemption of Tornay and Turwine, &c. Wherefore the king of necessitie was driuen to warre, which in no case could be maintained without great summes of mony, and he thought no lesse than 800000. pound, to be raised of the fift part of euerie mans goods and lands, that is to say, foure shillings of euery pound: for hee said that the yeere following, the king and the emperor should make such war in France as had not beene seene.

An. reg. 18.

Great subsidie granted.

After that he had declared his matter at length, exhorting the commons to aide their prince in time of necessitie, hee departed out of the common house.

The morrow after, sir Thomas Moore declared all the cardinals oration againe to the commons, and enforced his demand, saying, that of dutie men ought not to denie to pay foure shillings of the pound. But for all that it was denied, and proued manifestly, that if the fift part of substance of the realme were but 800000. and if men should pay to the king the fift part of their goods in money or plate, it was proued that there was not so much money out of the kings hands in all the realme, for the fift part of euery mans goods is not in money nor plate: for although fiue men were well monied, fiue thousand were not so, the gentlemen of lands hath not the fift part of the value in coine: the merchant that is rich in silke, woll, tinne, cloth, and such like, hath not the fift part in money, &c. And then consequentlie, if all the money were brought to the kinges handes, then men must barter cloth for victuall, and bread for cheese, and so one thing for an other. Then consider that after this valuation, the king hath had by the waie of loane two shillings of the pound, which is 400000. pound, and nowe to haue foure shillings of the pound, which amounteth in the whole to 12. hundred thousand pound, which first and last is fiue shillings of the pound, which is almost the third part of euery mans goods, which in coine cannot be had within the realme: for the proofe whereof was alledged, that if there were in England but 15000. parishes, and euery parish

shoulde giue 100. marks, that were but fiftéen hundred thousand marks, which is but ten hundred thousand pound: and how many parishes be in Englande one with another, able to spare a hundred marks, out of cities and townes: and where it is written, that in England there be fortie thousand parish Churches. it was proued that there were not 13000. parishes. Then account, the whole summe cannot mount aboue ten hundred thousand pound, and the king demandeth 800000. and he after this valuation hath had 400000. pound, therfore it was thought the sum impossible to bee leuied: and if all the coine were in the kings hand, howe shoulde men liue? Also the king had of the spirituall men the last yeere, foure shillings of the pound, &c. To conclude, after long debating, the Commons granted two shillings of the pound of euerie mans goods and lands that were worth twentie pound, or might dispend 20. pounde by yéere, and so vpward, and from fortie shillinges to twentie pounde, twelue pence of the pound, and vnder forty shillings of euerie head sixteen yeeres and vpward, foure pence to be paide in two yeeres. This Parliament the 21. of May was adiorned to Westminster among the blacke Monks, and ended in the kinges Palace at Westminster the 14. of August, at 9 of the clocke in the night.

There were not 10000 parishes then in Englād as I haue proued.

Viscount Lisle created.

The 27. of Aprill, was sir Arthur Plantagenet, a bastard son to king Edward the 4. at Bridewell created Viscount Lisle, in the right of his wife, which was sometime wife to Edm. Dudley beheaded, sir Mauris Barkley lieutenant of Caleis was made L. Barkley, sir William Sands, L. Sands, and sir Nich. Vaux, Lord Vaux.

The K. and Q. of Denmark arriued in Englād.

Christerne K. of Denmarke and his Quéene, arriuing at the Downes besides Douer the 15. of June, came to London on the 22. of June, and were lodged in the Bishop of Wathes place. The 5. of July, they returned againe to Caleis.

D. of Suffolke entered France with a power.

In this season the king hauing put an army of men in a readines, caused the same to be transported ouer to Caleis, & appointed the duke of Suffolk to haue the leading thereof, and to make a iorney into France. The duke according to his commission came to Caleis on the 24. of August, and there abiding the army, caused all things to be prepared for the same, as victuailes, munition, and such like. There were appointed to attend him in this iourney, the lord Mountacute, and his brother sir Arthur Poole, the lord Sands, the lord Barkley, the lord Powes, and the Baron of Curson, and of knights, sir Richarde Wingfield Chancellor of the dutchie of Lancaster, sir Iohn Vere, sir Edward Neuill, sir William Kingstone, sir Richarde Westone, sir Andrewe Windsor, sir Robert Wingfield, sir Anthony Wingfield, sir Edward Gilforde, syr Edward Greuile, syr Edwarde Chamberlaine, sir Thomas Lucy, sir Edwarde Digby, syr Adrian Fortescue, syr Richarde Cornwall, Sir William Courtney, Sir William Sidney, Sir Henry Owen, and manie other. The whole armie consisted in 600. Demilances, two hundred archers on horseback, 3000. archers on foote, and 5000. Billmen. To these also were adioined 1700. taken out of the garisons of Hames, Guines and Caleis, so that in al they were 10500. well armed and appointed for the warre, besides 2600. labourers and pioners. These set out of Caleis on

the

the 19. of September. The first enterprise that they attempted was the winning of Bell castle, which they beat downe, and sent the Frenchmen prisoners to Calais.

In this season was the duke of Burbon high constable of France, reuolted from the French king to the seruice of the emperor, and the king of England: for after it was knowne that this Duke hadde his minde alienated from the French king, syr Iohn Russell (that was after earle of Bedford) was sent into France vnto the saide Duke, which in disguised apparell ordered himselfe so wisely, that in couert manner hee came to the Duke, and so perswaded him, that hee continued in his former determination, and auoyded the Realme of Fraunce. The Duke of Suffolke remooued to Arde, and so into Picardie. At Corbres a Village betweene Turwing and Saint Omers, there came to him the Lorde of Iselton, and with him of Spaniards, Almaines, Cleueners, and other, 3000. footemen, and 500. horsemen. The Duke being thus furnished with newe aide, marched forwarde, sending out diuers companies of his men to take townes, and fetch bootes. The Frenchmen were so afrayd of the Englishmen, that they fled out of their houses, and left the Townes and Villages voyde. The Duke passed forth till he came to the Towne of Wray, in the which were 1600. men of warre, vnder the gouernaunce of Captayne Adrian.

Charles D. of Burbon reuolted from the French king.

The 20. of October the duke caused his ordinance to be brought afore it, the which is so well applied in making batterie to the walles of the Towne, that the Towne was made assaultable, and then the Englishmen and other made forewarde, got the ditches, and after entered vpon the Walles, and so into the towne, and sodainelie the French men fled, and thus was gotten ỹ Towne of Wraie. The 21. of October, the army with their ordinance passed the River, and came to a Towne called Knap, all the inhabitants were fled, but they had left good plentie of wine behind them. The duke sent to them of Roy, requiring to haue the towne deliuered to him, which they graunted to doe, because they had no garison of souldiers to defend them: thither was sent sir Richarde Cornwall, with 400. men, which receiued the town, and kept it in good quiet, till the duke came thither.

The 25. of October, the duke remoued to a Village called Lyhome, where the souldiers had greate pillage. The next date they went to Daurnker, and the 27. they came before the towne of Montdedier, in the which were 1000. footemen, and 500. horsemen: but after sir William Sceuington had made batterie foure houres, they within yeelded the Towne vnto the Duke. The duke remained in Montdedier till the last of October, and then remooued to Roy, where on Allhalowne date the duke made Knights, the Lorde Herbert, the lord Powes, Oliuer Manners, Arthur Poole, Richard Sands, Robert Iernyngham, Robert Salisbury, Edmond Beningfield, Richard Corber, Thomas Wentworth, William Storton, Walter Mantill, George Warham, Edwarde Seymer. The next morrowe the Armie remooued to a place called Neale. The Souldiers being thus ledde from place to place, beganne to grudge, because of the winter season.

D. of Suffolke maketh knights.

The

The 6. of Nouemb. the whole army came to a village called Ueau, & there rested that night, on the morrow they came to a place called Beuford: at this passage the D made Io Dudley, and Rob. Vreight knights.

The 8. of Nouember the duke remoued to Mount S. Martine, and the army remoued to Permont, and there rested for a time. The Welshmen murmured that they might not return home: but there were to the number of 1000. persons vnder the leading of sir Iohn Wallope, which had little wages or none, and liued as aduenturers, & therefore were so called, and of some called Brokers, these by spoiling of townes, taking of prisoners, and other such practises, daily brought to the campe daily horses, victuals, cloth, and other necessaries, which stood them in great steed.

Aduenturers & brokers.

The 13. of Nouember the duke remoued to a place within 2. miles of Bogham castle, there the Welshmen set out great shouts and cried: home, home, & as fast the brokars cried: hang, hang, whereof great busines was like to haue ensued: the Frenchmen yelded the castle of Bogham, and all the Artillerie, which was 76. peeces great and small. The duke brake vp his army and returned, and left at Valencenus all the great ordinance, and returned into England the 30 day of December.

Conspiracy at Couentry. 1524

In December, at the city of Couentry, Frauncis Philip schoolemaster to the kings Henrmen, Christopher Pickering clearke of the kings larder, and Anthony Manuile gentleman, intended to haue taken the kinges treasure of his subsidie, as the collectors of the same came toward London, therewith to haue raised men, and to haue taken the Castle of Killingworth, and then to haue made battell against the king, for the which they were drawn, hanged, & quartered at Tiborn the 11. of Februarye: the other of their conspiracy were executed at Couentry.

Ann reg. 16. The earle of Surrey brent Jedworth in Scotland, and tok diuers holds. The duke of Albany besieged the castle of Warke, and had in a readines a greate army to inuade England, but when hee hearde the earle of Surrey was comming, he fled into Scotland.

Sir Th. Louell deceased.

The 25. of May, deceased sir Thomas Louell knight of the Gartar, at Endfield, and was buried at Halywell an house of Nuns besides London, vnto the which house he had bẽ a great benefactor, not only in building of a beautifull chappell wherein his bodie was interred, but in many other goodlie buildings, and indowing the same with landes: And the same moneth deceased Thomas Lorde Howarde Duke of Norffolke, and was honourablie buryed at Lambeheth.

The souldiers of Guisnes toke a great botye at a faire in the town of Norguison, and sir Rob. Iernegan with certain dimilances of Calets, toke diuers French prisoners.

A golden rose sent from Rome E. Hall.

The first of September, doctor Thomas Haniball maister of the rols, was receiued into London as ambassador from Clement the 7. Pope, which brought with him a Rose of Golde for a token to the king, which was presented to him at Windsore. This tree was forged of fyne gold, and wrought with Branches, leaues, and flowers, resembling roses, set in a pot of Golde, which potte

had

had three feet of antike fashion, of measure halfe a pint. In the uppermost rose was a faire saphire loupe pearced the bignes of an Acorne. The tree was of height halfe an English yard, and in breadth a foot.

It chanced in the yere passed, as partly hath been touched, a grudge to breake out betweene the French king, and the duke of Burbon, insomuch that the duke for the safegard of his life fled out of the French kinges dominions, whereof the Cardinall Wolsey having intelligence, comprised in his heade, that if the king our soueraigne Lorde coulde obteine him to bee his generall in the warre against the French king, and considering further that the Duke of Burbon was fled vnto the Emperour to inuite him to a like purpose, therefore he hauing this imagination in his head, thought it good to moue the king in the matter, and after the king was once aduertised hereof, and conceiuing the cardinals inuention, at last it came to a consultation among the counsell, so that it was concluded that an Ambassage shoulde be sent to the Emperour about the matter, with whome hee was, that the King and the Emperour shoulde ioine in those Warres against the French King, and that the Duke of Burbon shoulde be our kings Champion and Generall in the Fielde, who had a great number of good Souldiers, ouer and besides the Emperours Armie, which was not small: and that the king shoulde paie vnto the Duke monthlie wages, both for himselfe and his retinue, insomuch, as Sir Iohn Russell late continuallie beyonde the seas in a secrete place, both to receiue monie of the king, and to paie the same monthlie to the duke, so that the duke beganne the warre with the French king in his owne territorie and Dukedome, which the king had confiscked in his owne hands, being not perfectlie knowne vnto the dukes enimies that he had anie aide out of England, and thus he wrought the French king much displeasure, insomuch, as the French king was constreyned to prepare a puissant armie, and in his owne person to resist the Dukes power, and with force the king droue him to take Pauie, a strong Towne in Italie, with his Hoste, for their securitie, whereas the king Encamped him wonderoullie strong, intending to enclose the duke that hee shoulde not issue forth, yet notwithstanding, the duke did many times issue forth and skirmished with the king.

A policy of cardinal Wolsey, that in the ende turned against himselfe.

The duke of Burbon champion for the K. of England against the K. of France.

Sir Iohn Russell.

Nowe let vs returne agayne to the Cardinall Wolsey, who seemed to bee sodaynelie altered, and to bee more French than Emperiall, howsoeuer it came to passe: but the French king lying in his Campe, sent secretelie into Englande a priuie person, a verie wittie man, to treate a peace betwixt the French king, and our king: this person was named Iohn Iokin, who was kept as secretlie as might bee, for hee was no French man borne, but an Italian, a man of no greate estimation in France, and for his subtill witte, elected to entreate of such Ambassage, as the French King had giuen him in commission. This Iokin was secretlie conueyed vnto Richmond, and there remained, vntill the Cardinall resorted thither vnto him, where after Easter terme ended, he kept the feast of Whitsontide verie solemnlie, in which season the Cardinal caused diuers times this Iokin to dine with him. Thus continued this Iokin in Englande long after, vntill at the last, as it shoulde seeme, hee 1525

John Iokin messenger from the French K.

brought

brought to passe the matter that he had in commission. After this, there was sent out immediatlie a restraint to Sir Iohn Russell, into those parts where he made his abiding beyond the seas, that he shoulde reteine that moneths wages still in his handes, vntill the kings pleasure were to him knowne, which should haue beene payde to the duke of Burbon, being then with his retinue encamped within the Towne of Pauy, for want whereof at his daie, the D. and his men were sore dismaid, when they sawe there was not mony brought as it was wont to be: and being in so dangerous a case, and where Victuals began to bee scant and verie deere, they imagined many waies that shoulde bee the lette, some sayde this, and some sayde that, so that they mistrusted nothing lesse, then the verie cause thereof, insomuch as at the last, what for want of victualles, and other necessaries, the Souldiers and Captaynes beganne to grudge and mutter, and at last, for lacke of victuals were like all to perish. The Souldiers beeing in this extremitie, came before their Captayne the Duke of Burbon, and sayde: Syr, wee must bee of verie force and necessitie constrayned to yeelde vs vppe to our enemies, and better it were for vs so to doo, then to sterue lyke dogges. When the Duke sawe their extremity he saide vnto them with weeping eyes: Syrs (quoth hee) yee are both valiaunt men, and of noble heartes, who haue serued mee heere right worthilie, and for your necessitie (whereof I am participant) I doo not a little lament: but I shall desire you, as you are noble in hearte and courage, so to take patience for a day or twayne, and if succour come not then from the King of England, as I doubt nothing that hee will deceyue vs, I will well agree that wee shall all put our selues and our liues vnto the mercie of our Lorde, wherewith they were all agreeable. And tarrying the comming of the K. money, vntill the terme of two dayes were passe: the Duke seeing no remedie, called his noble Captaynes and Souldiers before him, and weeping sayde: Yee noble men and Captaynes, I see no remedie in this necessitie, but eyther wee must yeelde vs vnto our enemies, or else famishe: and to yeelde the Towne and our selues, I know not the mercie of our enemies, as for my part I passe not for their cruelties, for I knowe verie well that I shall suffer death most cruellie if I come into their hands: it is not for my selfe therefore that I doo lament, but it is for your sakes, it is for your liues, and safegarde of your persons, for so that yee might escape the daunger of our enemies hands, I would most gladlie suffer death, therefore good campanions, and most noble Souldiers, I shall require you all to consider the daungerous miserie and calamitie that wee stande in, to sell our liues most deerelie, rather than to bee murthered like beastes: if yee will bee agreeable, wee will take vpon vs this night to giue our enemies an assault, and by that meanes wee maie eyther escape, or else giue them an ouerthrowe, and thus it were better to die in the Field lyke men, than liue prisoners in captiuitie and miserie, to the which they all agreede: then (quoth the Duke) yee perceyue that our enemies Campe is stronge, and that there is noe waie to enter vpon them but one, and that is so planted with Ordinaunce and strength of men, that it is not possible to attayne to our enimies that waies to fight with them in Campe: And also

now

now of late you perceiue they haue hadde but small doubt of vs, insomuch, that they haue kept but verie slender watch, therefore my deuice shall bee thus: There shall issue out of the Towne about the deade of the night from vs a number of you that bee of the moste deliuerest to assaulte their Campe, and they shall giue the assaulte right secretlie, euen directlie against the place of the entrie which is verie stronge and inuincible, your fierce and valiaunte assaulte shall bee to them of the Campe so doubtfull, that they will turne their strength of the entrie that lyeth ouer against your assaulte, to beate you from your purpose; then will I issue out of the Posterne, and come to the place of their strengthe newelie turned, and there or they beaware will I enter, and fight with them in their Campe, and winne their Ordinaunce, which they haue newelie turned, and beate them with their owne peeces, and then mate you come and ioine with me in the Field. This deuice pleased them woonderfull well. Then prepared they all that daie for the purposed deuice, and kept them secrete and close without any noyse, or shotte off Peeces within the Towne, which gaue their Enemies the lesse feare of the assaulte: but at night went to their Tentes, and couched quietlie, nothing mistrusting that after happened vnto them. When the time came that all men were at rest, the assaillauntes issued out of the Towne, and there according to their appointmente, they gaue so cruell and fierce assault, that they in the Campe hadde as much to doe as was possible to resist them: and euen as the Duke declared before to his Souldiers, they within were compelled to turne their shotte that laie at the entrie, against they assayleuntes. With that issued out the Duke, and with him about fifteene or sixteene thousande men, or more, secretelie in the night, his Enemies beeing not privie of his comming vntill hee was entered the Fielde, and at his entrie hee tooke all the Ordinaunce that laie there, and slewe the Gunners, then hee charged the peeces against his Enimies, and slewe them woondersullie, hee cutte downe the Tentes and Paulions, and murthered manie within them, ere they were ware of his comming, suspecting nothing lesse than his entrie, so that hee wanne the Fielde or euer the King coulde arise to the rescue; insomuch, as the King was taken in his lodging by the Vice roy of Naples or euer hee were harnessed, his tentes were robbed and spoyled which were woonderous rich, and in the spoyle and search of the Kinges Coffers, the Duke of Burbon found the league vnder the great Seale of Englande, newlie made betweene the King of Englande, and the French King, which once perceyued by him, beganne to smell the impediment of his monete which shoulde haue come vnto him from the King, hauing vpon due search intelligence that all the matter was deuised by the Cardinall of Englande. The Duke conceyued such an indignation hereupon against the Cardinall, that incontinentlie hee went to Rome, and there intended to sacke the towne, and to haue taken the Pope, where at the first assault of the walles, the Duke was the first man that was slayne: yet notwithstanding, his Captaynes continued their assaulte, and at the last wanne the the town, and the pope fled vnto Castle Saint Angell, where he continued long in calamitie. All this notwithstanding,

French king taken prisoner.

Rome sacked, the people fled, looke more the yeere.

1527

ſtanding, which ye haue heard, when newes was brought into England of the taking of the French king, great triumph was made for ioy thereof on the 9. of March. Another triumph on the 16. of March, for ioy that Rich. de la Pole was ſlain in the battel of Pauy. This battel of Pauy is at large ſet down by Paulus Iouius.

Cardinal Wolſey ſuppreſſeth priories to builde his colledges in Oxford and in Ipſwich.

About ſuch time as Cardinall Wolſey was determined to erect his newe colledges in Oxford and Ipſwich, he obtained licence and authoritie of Pope Clement the 7. to ſuppreſſe about the number of fortie Monaſteries of good fame, and bountifull hoſpitality, wherein the king bearing with al his doings, neither biſhop, nor temporal lord in this realme durſt ſay any word to the contrarie.

In the executing of this buſineſſe, fiue perſons were his chiefe inſtruments, who on a time made a demaund to the Prior and couent of the monaſterie of Daintrie, for occupying of certayne of their groundes, but the Monkes refuſing to ſatiſfie their requeſtes, ſtraightwaie they picked a quarrell againſt the houſe, and gaue information to the Cardinall againſt them, who taking a ſmall occaſion, commanded the houſe to be diſſolued, and to be conuerted to his newe colledge, but of this irreligious robberie done of no conſcience, but to patch vp pride, which priuate Wealth coulde not furniſh, what puniſhment hath ſince enſued at Gods hande (ſaieth mine Author) partlie our ſelues haue ſeene, for of thoſe fiue perſons, two fell at diſcord betweene themſelues, and the one ſlewe the other, for the which, the Surueior was hanged: the thirde drowned himſelfe in a Well: the fourth beeing well knowne, and valued worth two hundreth pounde, became in three yeeres ſo poore, that hee begged till his dying date: and the fift called doctor Allane, beeing chiefe executor of theſe doings, was cruelly maimed in Irelande, euen at ſuch time as hee was a biſhop: the cardinal falling after into the K. greeuous diſpleaſure, was depoſed, and died miſerably: the colledges which he meant to haue made ſo glorious a building, came neuer to good effect: the one at Ipſwich cleane pulled down, and the other in Oxford vnfiniſhed: and pope Clement himſelfe by whoſe authority theſe houſes were thrown down to the ground, was after incloſed in a dangerous ſiege within the caſtle of S. Angel in Rome by the emperials, the city of Rome was pittifully ſacked, and himſelfe narrowly eſcaped with his life, as ſhal be ſhewed in anno 1527.

H. Hall. Ambaſſadors to the emperor Charles.

In the month of March, K. H. ſent Cuthbert Tunſtal biſhop of London, and ſir Ric. Wingfield chancellor of the dutchy, and knight of the gartar, into Spain, to common with the emperor for cauſes, concerning the taking of the French K. and for wars to be made into France on euery ſide.

The king being thus determined to make warres in France, and to paſſe the ſea himſelfe in perſon, his counſell conſidering that aboue al things, great treaſure and plenty of mony muſt needs be prouided, deuiſed ſtrange commiſſions, and ſent commiſſioners in euery ſhire, with priuy inſtructions how they ſhould proceed in the ſittings, & order the people to bring them to their purpoſe, which was, that the firſt part of euery mans ſubſtance, ſhould be paid in money or plate to the king without delaie, for the furniture of his warre: whereof

The firſt part of all mens goods demanded to aide the king in his wars.

followed

followed such cursing, weeping, and exclamation against both king and counsel, that pitie it was to heare. And notwithstanding all that could bee saide by the Commissioners, to perswade the people to this contribution, the same would not bee graunted: but in excuse of their denial, it was alledged that wrong was offered, and the ancient customes and lawes broken, which would not any man to be charged with such paiments, except it were granted by the estates of the realme in parliament.

The like answere was made by them of the spiritualtie, of whome was demanded the fourth part of their goods.

Mounsier de Prate the emperours ambassador, whether offended for admitting of Iokin in the realme, as before yee haue heard, or for some other cause, on the ninth of Aprill departed out of England, not taking leaue of the king, cardinall, or rest of the counsel, and did so much, that he passed through France in Poste, and came to the emperor before the Ambassadors of England came thither, and whether it was by his report, or otherwise, the accustomed favor that the Emperour and his Counsell shewed to the English men begaune to decaie.

The emperors ambassador departeth secretly out of England

In this yeere (saith Hall) K. H. following his hauke, lept ouer a ditch beside Hitchen, with a pole, and the pole brake, so that if one Edm. Mody a footeman, had not lept into the water, and lift vp his head, which was fast in the claie, hee had beene drowned.

K. H. in danger of drowning.

The commissioners in al shires sitting for the leuy of the 6. part of all mens goods, as ye haue heard, the burthen was so grieuous, that it was denied, and the commons in euery place were so moued, that it was like to haue growne to a rebellion: when this mischiefe was shewed to the K. he said, that he neuer knew of that demand, and therfore with great diligence hee sent his letters to the citie of London, and to other places, in the which hee gently wrote, that hee would demand no sum certain, but such as his louing subiects would grant to him of their good wils, toward the maintenance of his warres. Wherfore the cardinall on the 26. of Aprill sent for the maior of London, the aldermen, with most substantiall persons of the common counsell, and when they were come to Westminster, he said: the king our soueraigne lord, most graciously considereth the great loue, zeale, and obedience, which you bare vnto him, and where like louing subiects, without anie grudge, or gaine-saying of your louing minds, you haue granted the first part of all your goods and substance, freely to be paid, according to the first valuation, the which louing grant and good mind, he so kingly accepted, that it was marueile to see: but I my selfe do consider the great losses, and other charges that daille hath and doth to you growe, and that notwithstanding, anie losse or charge that happeneth to you, yet you neuer withstoode nor gainesaide anie of the kinges demaundes or commissions, as it appeereth nowe of late, of which doings I haue highly the king informed, for the which hee gaue you heartie thanks. Then I kneeled downe to his grace, shewing him both your good minds toward him, and also the charges that you continually sustaine, the which at my desire and petition, he was contente to call in, and abrogate the same Commission. And where hee by

An. reg. 17.

The demand of the first part of all mens goods turned to a beneuolence.

reason of your own grants might haue demanded the said summe as a verie debt, yet he is content to release and pardon the same, and will nothing take of you but your beneuolence: wherefore take heere with you the kings letter, and let it be read to the commons, and I doubt not but you will gladly do as louing subiects should do. The 28. of Aprill, in the common councell of the citie was read the kings letter, according to the effect aboue rehearsed. Wherefore the citizens sent 4. aldermen, and 12. commoners to Hampton court, to giue thanks to the L. cardinal, which for business as was said, could not speake with him, wherefore they returned not content. Then euery alderman assembled his warde, in their places accustomed, and gently moued them of a beneuolence to be granted to the king, the which they openlie denied, saying: That they had paid ynough before, with many euill words. The 8. of May the cardinall againe sent for the maior and his brethren, which shewed him what they had done. Then said the cardinall, You haue no such commission to examine any man, I am your commissioner, I will examine you one by one my selfe: and then I shal know the good will that you beare to your prince, for I wil aske a beneuolence of you in his name. Then was it answered to the cardinall by a counsellor of the citie, that by the law there might no such beneuolence be asked, nor men so examined, for it was contrary to the statute made the 1. yeere of K. Richard the third. Also some persons comming before your grace, may for feare grant that, that all daies of their life they shall repent, and some to win your fauor will grant more than they be able to pay of their owne, and so run in other mens debts, so that by dreadfull gladnes, and fearefull boldnes, men shall not be maisters of themselues, but as men dismaied, shal grant that, that their wiues and children shall sore rew. The cardinall heard this saying verie patiently, and answered quietly: Sir, I marueil that you speake of Richard the third, which was an vsurper, and a murtherer of his owne nephews: then of so euill a man, how can the acts be good, make no such allegations, his acts be not honorable: And it please your grace said the counsellor, although he did euill, yet in his time were many good acts made not by him only, but by the consent of the bodie of the whole realme, which is the parliament. Then sir William Baily lord maior kneeled downe, and besought his grace, that sith it was enacted by the common councel of London, that euerie alderman should sit in his owne ward for a beneuolence to be granted, which he perceiued to be against the law, that the same act by the same common councell might be reuoked, and no otherwise. Well said the cardinall, I am content. But nowe will I enter into the kings commission: You maior, & you maister aldermen, what will ye giue? My lorde, saide the maior, I pray you pardon me, for if I should enter into ante grant, it might fortune to cost me my life: your life, said the cardinall, that is a marueilous word, for your good will towarde the king, will the citizens put you in ieoparey of your life, that were strange: for if they would that way, then must the king come with a strong power them to oppresse, wherefore speake no more such words, and with that he studied a little, and said: My lord maior, let you and your citizens, if you be grieued with any thing, in this demand, humbly and after a good fashion come to me, and I shall

Richard the third made good lawes.

shall so intreat you, that you shall be content, and no displeasure arise, and so I pray you shew your neighbors: and so the maior for that daie departed. The maior (saith Hall) did wisely not to assent to grant to any thing, for although he & the aldermen had assented, the common councel would neuer haue assented. So on the next morrow it was declared to the common councel, that their act that was made, that euerie alderman should sit for a beneuolence to bee granted, was against a statute law: whereupon the said act was anulled: and then was it declared, that euerie man should come to the cardinall, & to grant priuilie what he would, with the which saying the citizens were sore grieued: then the maior gently shewed them, how he durst warrant, that they shoulde be intreated gently, and exhorted them to go thither when they were sent for: which saying so offended them, that in their furie they would haue had Richard Gresham and Iohn Hewster mercers, and Richard Gibson sergeant at armes and merchant taller, banished out of the common councell, and so without answere made what they would do, they departed home.

This demand throughout the realme was vtterly denied, so that the commissioners could bring nothing to passe, and yet they assaied both by faire and foule meanes. For in Kent the lord Cobham was commissioner, and handled them roughly, and by reason one Ioh. Skudder answered him clubbishly, he sent him to the tower of London: for which doing the people muttered against the lord Cobham, and said expressely that they would paie no money, and then they began to account the loanes and subsidies granted, so that they reckoned the kings treasure innumerable: for they accounted that the king had taken of this realme twenty fiftéens sith the 14. yéere of his raigne, and in this grudge they euill intreated sir Thomas Boleine at Maidstone.

Thomas Boleine at Maidstone in Kent.

In Eſſex the people would not assemble before the commissioners in no houses, but in open places. And in Huntingdon shire diuers resisted the commissioners, and would not suffer them to sit, which were apprehended and sent to the fléte. The duke of Suffolke sitting in commission about this subsidie or taske in Suffolke, perswaded by curteous meanes the rich clothiers to assent thereto: but when they came home, and went about to discharge and put from them their spinners, carders, fullers, weauers, and other artificers, which they kept in worke afore time, the people began to assemble in companies, whereof when the Duke was aduertised, he commanded the constables that euerie mans harneſſe should bee taken from them: but when that was knowen, the rage of the people increased, railing openlie on the duke, and sir Robert Drurie, and threatned them to death, and the cardinall also: & herewith there assembled together, after the maner of rebels, foure thousand men of Lanam, Sudberie, Hadley, and other townes there about, which put themselues in harneſſe, and rang larams to increase their number. The Duke of Suffolke perceiuing this, began to gather such power as hee could, but that was very slender: yet the bridges being broken, those rebels were letted of comming against the duke.

The duke of Norffolke treasurer of England raised a power in Norffolke, & came to the duke of Suffolk, he first sent to the people, to know their griefe.

They answered, that as they had some matters that grieued them, so had they will to spend their liues in the kings seruice as obedient subiects. Then the duke rode to them, and demanded what was the cause of their disquiet, and who was their captaine? Unto whom one Iohn Greene a man of fiftie yeres olde answered, that pouertie was both cause and captaine. For the rich clothiers spring of Lanam, and other had giuen ouer occupying, whereby they were put from their ordinarie worke, and liuing. The Duke with courteous words willed them to depart home, promising them, that he and the Duke of Suffolke would intreate the king for them, whereupon they became quiet, and returned, and in token of repentance, they came to Saint Edmondsbury in their shirts, and halters about their neckes desiring pardon: the two dukes tooke a few of them to London, which after some imprisonment were pardoned and deliuered.

Great counsell called to Yorke place by Westminster.

Then the king at Yorke place, where the cardinall lay, called a great counsell, in the which he openlie protested, that his minde was neuer to aske any thing of the commons, which might sounde to the breach of his lawes, wherefore he willed to knowe by whose meanes the commissions were so straightly giuen forth, as to demand the first part of euerie mans goods. The cardinall answered and said, that when it was moued in the counsell, how to leuie money to the kings vse, the kings counsell, and namely the Iudges said, that he might lawfully demand any summe by commission, and that by the consent of the whole counsell it was done, and toke God to witnes, that he neuer desired the hinderance of the commons, but like a true counseller deuised how to enrich the king: and the spirituall men saie, that it standeth with Gods lawe, for Ioseph caused the K. of Egypt to take the fift part of euerie mans goods: but because euerie man taketh the burthen from him, I am content to take it on me, and to endure the fame and noise of the people, for my good will toward the king, and comfort of you my lords, and other the kings counsellors, but the eternall God knoweth all. Well said the king, some haue informed me, that my realme was neuer so rich, and that there should neuer trouble haue risen of that demand, and that men would paie at the first request, but now I finde all contrarie: then euerie man held his peace. Then the king said, I will no more of this trouble, let letters be sent to all shires, that this matter maie no more be spoken of. I will pardon all that haue made denial openlie or secretly: then all the lords kneeled downe, and hartilie thanked him. Then letters were sent, in the which were shewed, that the lords and the iudges, and other of the kings counsell, deuised that demand, and that the cardinall followed the minde of the whole councell. And thus was the kings great iourney into France staied for this time.

Creations at Bridewell.

This yere the tower at Grenwich was newlie repaired and builded.

The 18. of June, at Bridewell Henry Fitz Roy, which king Henry the 8. had by Elizabeth daughter to sir Iohn Blunt knight, was created Earle of Nottingham, duke of Richmond and of Somerset, lieutenant generall from Trent northward, warden of the east, middle, and west marches, for aneust Scotland, he was borne in the manor place of Blackamore in Essex, it was

then

then the Priors house of Blackamore. Henry Courtney earle of Deuonshire, cosen german to the king, was created marques of Exceter: Henry Brandon sonne to the duke of Suffolke, was created earle of Lincolne: sir Thomas Manners lord Rosse earle of Rutland, sir Henry Clifford earle of Cumberland, and the lorde Fitz Water, sir Robert Ratcliffe was created Vicount Fitz Water, and sir Thomas Boleine treasurer of the kings houshold, was created vicount Rochford.

In this winter was a great death in the citie of London, so that the terme was adiourned, and the king kept his Christmas at Eltham with a small compante, wherefore it was called the still Christmas. 1526

The cardinall setteth an order in the kings house.

The cardinal about this time comming to the court at Eltham, toke order for altring the state of the kings house, many officers and other seruants were discharged, & put to pensions. In which number were 64. yeomen of the gard, which before hauing 12. d. the day with cheke, were now allowed 6.d. the day, without cheke, and commanded to go home into the countries. He also made new officers in the house of the duke of Richmond, which was then newly begun. Also at that time he ordained a councell, and established another houshold for the lady Mary, then being princesse of the realme, so that all thing that was done, was done by him, for to him was the charge of all things committed.

Hampton court builded by the cardinall, and giuen to the king.

At this time the saide Cardinall gaue to the king the lease of the manor of Hampton court, which he had of the lease of the lord of S. Iohns, and on which he had done great cost in building: In recompence whereof, the king licenced him to lie in his manor of Richmond at his pleasure, and so he lay there at certaine times.

Iusts at Greenwich.

On Shrouetuesday, there was holden solemne iusts at Grænwich, the king and 11. other on the one part: and the marques of Exceter with 11. other on the contrarie part. At these iusts by chance of shiuering of a speare, sir Francis Brian lost one of his eies.

Stilyard merchants did pennance.

The 11. of Februarie, foure merchants of the Stilyard did pennance at Paules crosse, and an Augustine frier called doctor Barnes bare a fagot: there was present the lord cardinall, with 11. bishops, Iohn Fisher bishop of Rochester made the sermon, which was against Martine Luther of Germanie, and his doctrine.

A truce was taken betweene England and France for a certaine space, and ambassadors were sent into Denmarke, for restoring of their king: but the Danes would grant nothing thereunto, they did so deadly hate him for his crueltie.

Ann. reg. 18. Peace with France.

The 28. of Aprill came to the court to Grænewich Mounsier Briond, president of Roane, and Iohn Iokin, which president before the king and his nobles made in the Latin tong a solemne oration, the effect whereof was, how dreadfull the wars had bene betweene the realmes of England and France. He declared further of what power the king of England was, and what conquest he might haue made in France, the French king being prisoner, whereof he humbly thanked him of his pitie and compassion that he had on them in their necessitie, that he would consent to peace: To the which oration, sir Thomas

Moore Chancelor of the dutchie of Lancaster, made answere, saying: that it much reioiced the king, that they first considered, how by his power he might haue oppressed, and how by his pity he had relieued them; wherefore he would hereafter, that for kindnes they should shew him none vnkindnes, but inuiolablie kéepe that league which was concluded.

Proclamation against vnlawfull games.

In the moneth of Maie, was proclamation made against all vnlawfull games, and commissions awarded into euerie shire, for the execution of the same, so that in all places, tables, dice, cardes, and boules were taken vp: but when yong men were restrained of these games and pastimes, some fell to drinking, some to ferretting of other-mens conies, and stealing of Déere in parkes, and other vnthriftinesse.

Gold enhaunsed.

In this season the angell noble was the first part of an ounce Troye, so that fiue angels were full an ounce, which was 40. s. sterling, and the angell was worth two ounces of siluer, so that fiue angels were worth 12. ounces, which was but 40. s. in siluer. By reason of the good weight, and low valuation of the English coine, merchants daily caried ouer great store, because the same was much inhaunsed there: so that to mete with this inconuenience (as it was said) proclamation was made in the moneth of September the first day, throughout England, that the angell should go for 7. shillings 4. pence, the royall for 11. s. and the crowne for 4. s. 4. pence. And on the 5. of Nouember following againe by proclamation, the angell was enhaunsed to 7. s. 6. d. and so euerie ounce of of golde should be 45. s. and an ounce of siluer at 3. s. 9. d. in valew.

1527 King Henry kept his Christmas at Grænwich with reuels, masks, disguisings, and banquets royall.

Great rain and land waters.

In the moneths of Nouember, December, and Januarie fell such raine, that thereof ensued great floods, which destroied corne-fields, pastures, and beasts, then was it drie till the twelfth of Aprill, and from that time it rained euerie daie and night till the third of June, whereby Corne failed sore in the yeare following.

Ambassadors into France.

King Henry sent Thomas Boleine vicount Rochford, & sir Anthony Browne knight, ambassadors into France, which came to Paris to the bish. of Bathe that lay there for the king as legar, and then these three went to the court, and saw the French king take the oth to kéepe the league and amitie, concluded betweene him and the king of England.

Ambassador to the emperor.

Also king Henry sent sir Francis Points knight ambassador to Charles the emperor, and with him Clarentiux king at armes, to demand the one halfe of the treasure and ordinance which was taken at Pauie, forsomuch as the war was made as well at the kings charge as at the Emperors. Also they were commanded to demand one of the French kings sons, which late in hostage with the emperor, that is to wit, the Duke of Orleance to be deliuered to the king of England: and further that he should call backe his army out of Italie, and if so were that he refused these requests, then should they in the kings name denounce open war against him.

In this meane time Rome was taken by the emperials, & the pope brought into

into captiuitie, as ye shall heare: Charles duke of Burbon, and the emperors army, which all the last winter liued in great pouertie, without clothes, victuals, or wages, so that they were in maner desperate, went towarde Parma and Bonony, belonging to the sea of Rome. The pope hearing this, sent messengers to the duke to redéeme his townes, so that they should not be spoyled. The duke asked 350000. duckats, for sauing of the popes lande, and if they might haue so much money, they would depart to Naples: but when they saw they could not haue their demand, they turned toward Florence, whereof hearing the Romans they were glad, for they thought that the Florentines would hold good war with them, and then the Romans would giue the loking on: but the chance turned, as ye shall heare.

E. Hall. The citie of Rome taken and sacked.

The duke of Burbon had thought to haue gone to Florence for this cause: there was a gentleman in Florence, called Peter de Saluiato, which had a brother that serued the Emperor in his warres, which promised to deliuer the citie, for hee determined to cause the commons to rebell in the citie against the heads, and in the meane season the dukes companie should scale the walles: when this Peter knewe that the Emperors army was come to a place called le Chase, within twelue miles of the citie, to bring his purpose to conclusion, he with such as he had trained to him, cried in the city, *Libertate de populo*, that is to say, libertie of the people: with which voice the people stirred, and came to the palace in great number, and there they toke the fiue lords of the councell, which had the rule of the wealth of the citie, & slue one of them. The familie of Medices, which were the popes kindred, were at this time sore afraide. Thus this Peter de Saluiato with the commons, gate that palace, and rang the common bell. In this season was in Florence a captaine of the French kings called Frederico de Bedso, he had with him 300. men, and when he sawe this rebellion, he came to the commons and said: Sirs, if you continue in this case, your faire citie is like to be subuerted, for your enemies bee at hand: which notwithstanding that you beare some fauour to the emperor, as appeareth, yet their néedinesse and pouertie is such, that without mercie they will rob, murther and slaie you, your wiues and children, and set fire on your beautifull city. This Captaine much staied the citizens, notwithstanding that 20. or more persons were slaine in the ruffle: yet they were well auoided, and suddenlie entred into the city the duke of Urbine, which lay but 6. mile from Florence, and 18. mile from the emperors army, whom he had coasted: but he thought no aduantage to meddle. This Duke brought with him 5000. footemen, and 600. horsemen, and when he was entred the citie, a crie was made that all things were pardoned, so that euerie man departed home, and deliuered his weapon, and thus the city was appeased the 28. of Aprill. All this doing within was vnknowen to the emperors army, and so for lacke of knowledge this enterprise was lost: which was happie for the Florentines. Sore displeased were the emperors captains when they knew of this chance, and how the duke of Urbine was entred into the city of Florence. And so shortly they departed, and came to the citie of Seines thirtie mile off, and there they lost their great ordinance, and toke counsell to go to Rome, notwithstanding the truce

concluded betwene the pope, and the vice Roy of Naples and Hugo de Moncada, and so much they trauelled by night & day, that the 6. of May, with banners displaide they came before the Citie of Rome. The Romanes make Bulwarks, rampiers, and other defences, and laide ordinance on the wals, and shot at them fiercelie. The duke of Burbon saying that it were not best to lie still and be slaine, considering that they were all naked people, and without great Ordinance: determined to take the chaunce, and to giue the assaulte, and so manfullie they approched the wals, betweene the Burgo nouo and old Rome, but the Romans valiantlie defended them, with hand guns, pikes, stones, and other weapons, so that the enimies were faine to retire. The Romanes were glad, set many fair banners on their towers and bulwarks, which seeing the duke of Burbon cried to a newe assault: then euerie man with a Ladder mounted, and at the first encounter the Romans again put them a little back: which perceiuing the Duke, he cried, God and the emperor: then euery man set on manfullie, there was a sore fight, manie a man felled, but at the last the emperials gotte the wall: and betweene euerie assault fell a mist, so that they within could not see what part they without would assaile, which was profitable to the emperials. At the third assault were slaine three hundred Swichers of the Popes guarde. In this last assault was the Duke of Burbon stricken in the thigh with a Hand-gunne, of the which he shortlie died, in a chappell of S. Syth, whither his Souldiors hadde brought him. And this chaunce notwithstanding, the army entred into Rome, and toke the popes palace. The same date that these three assaults were made, pope Clement pasted little on the Emperors army, for he had accursed them on the Saturday before, and in his curse he called the Almains Lutherans, and the Spaniards Moreins or Moores. And when he was hearing of masse, so daintie the Almains entered the church, and slue his gard, and diuers other. He seeing that fled by a priuie way to the castle Angel: and al they that followed him that way and could not enter, were slain. The cardinals and other prelates fled to the castle S. Angell ouer the bridge, where manie of the common people were ouerpressed, and drowned as they gaue waie to the cardinals, and other states that passed towarde the castle for succour. The cardinall of Senes, of Sesarine, of Tudertine, of Jacobace, and of the Vale, tarried so long, that they could not gette to the Castell for multitude of people: wherefore they were compelled to take another house, called the Palace of Saint George, where they kept themselues for a while, as secretlie as they might. You must vnderstand, that through the citie of Rome runneth a famous Riuer called Tiber, and on the other side of the riuer standeth the castle of S. Angell, or the Borough of S. Angell: and the other side is called Burgo nouo. This bridge is called the bridge of Sixt, which lieth directlie before the castle. At the end of this Bridge was a woonderous strong Bulwarke, well ordinanced, and well manned. The emperials saw they coulde do nothing to the Pope, nor to the port of the citie but by the bridge, determined to assayle the Bulwarke: and so as men without feare came to the Bridge: and the Romanes so well defended them, that they slue almost foure thousand men. That seeing the Prince of Orenge, and the Marques of Gnasto, with

The citty of Rome sawted and besieged.

D of Burbon slaine.

The pope cursed the emperials.

The pope fled to castle Angel.

all

all ſpéde gaue aſſaulte, and notwithſtanding that the Romanes ſhotte greate Ordinance, Hand-guns, Quarels, and all that might be ſhot, yet the emperials neuer ſhranke, but manly entred the bulwarke, and ſlue, and threw downe out at the loupes al the Romans that they found, and after raced the bulwarke to the ground. The Pope in the caſtle Angell beholde this fight, and with him were three and twentie Cardinals, of which one called the Cardinall Sanctorum quatuor was ſlaine, and with him were a thouſand prelates and prieſtes, fiue hundred gentlemen, fiue hundred ſouldiers: wherefore immediatlie the Captaines determined to laie ſiege to the caſtle S. Angell, leaſt they within might iſſue out and turne them to damage; wherefore ſodainelie a ſiege was planted rounde about the caſtle: In the meane ſeaſon, the Souldiers fell to ſpoyle, neuer was Rome ſo pilled, neither of the Gothes nor Vandals, for the ſouldiers were not content with the ſpoile of the Citizens, but they robbed the Churches, brake vp the houſes of cloſe religious perſons, and ouerthrewe the Cloiſters, they ſpoiled virgins and raviſhed wiues: men were tormented if they had not to giue euery new aſker or demander: ſome were ſtrangled, ſom were tormented by the priuy members, to cauſe them to confeſſe their treaſure. This woonnes continued a great while, and ſome man might thinke, that when they had gotten ſo much, then they woulde ceaſe and bee quiet, but that was not ſo, for they plaied continuallie at dice, ſome 500. ſome 10000. duckats at a caſt: and hee that came to plate laden with plate, went awaie againe almoſt naked, and then fell to rifling againe: Manie of the Citizens which could not patientlie ſuffer that veration, drowned themſelues in Tiber. The ſouldiers that laie at the ſiege daylie made ieſtes of the pope, ſometime they had one riding like the pope, with a whore behind him, ſometime he bleſſed, and ſometime he curſed, and ſometime they woulde with one voyce call him Antichriſt. They went about to vndermine the caſtle, and to haue throwne it downe on his head, but the water that enuironeth the caſtle diſappointed their purpoſe. In this ſeaſon the Duke of Vrbine with fifteene thouſand men came to aide the Pope: but hearing that Rome was taken, he taried 60. mile from Rome til he heard other word. The Marques of Saluce, and Sir Fredericke de Bedſo with 5000. footmen, & 1000. horſemen, were at Vitarbe the 10. of May, where they hearing ỹ the city of Rome was taken, alſo taried: ỹ cardinal of Colume came with an army of Neopolitanes to helpe the emperors men: but when he ſawe the crueltie of the Souldiers, he did little to helpe them, but hated them much. The Biſhoppe of Rome was thus beſieged till the eight of Julie, at which daie hee yelded himſelfe, for neceſſitie and penurie of all thinges in the caſtle. And then he was reſtored to giue graces and grant buls, as he did before: but he taried ſtill in the caſtle Saint Angell, and had a great number of Almaines and Spaniards to keepe him: but the Spaniards bare moſt rule in the caſtle, for no man entred nor came out of the Caſtle, but by them. When the moneth of Julie was come, corne beganne to faile in Rome, and the peſtilence began to ware ſtrong, wherefore the greate armie remoued to a place called Narnya 40. mile from Rome, leauing behinde them ſuch as kept the Pope. When they were departed, the Spaniards neuer were contented, till

Rome ſacked and ſpoyled.

they

they had gotten the Almaines out of the castle of S. Angell, and so they had the whole custodie of the Pope. Thus Rome continued in peace till the moneth of September, that the armie came againe from Naruia: for then the Almains sware, that they would set the Citie and all on fire, except the Pope would paie them their wages. The Pope sent to commune with them, two archbyshops, two bishops, and two gentlemen, these six persons the Almaines tooke as pledges, contrarie to the Popes meaning, and said they would keepe them there, till they were paid, and so put them in a strong Chamber, in the Palace of S. George: and euerie daie almost they would bring them forth openly, and scould with them, and threat to hang them if they were not paide, and so they kept them imprisoned in a Chamber, and watched them daie and night without the Chamber: and yet for all that, they gatte out at a chimney on S. Andrewes euen, and were no more seene of them. The Almaines were so wood with this chaunce, that they came to the Prince of Orenge their generall captaine, and demanded monie of him, in such rigorous maner, that he was fain secretlie to flie to Scnes: and then for him they chose Captaine, the Marques of Gnasto, which gouerned them till Februarie, that hee brought them to Naples.

In the meane space, by meanes of great armies prepared by the kinges of England, of France, and other, for the popes deliuerance, the Emperour sent letters to the pope, and excused himself, that he neither willed nor commanded such mischiefe to be don, and streightly commanded his Captaines to deliuer him. The prince of Orenge and other captaines of the emperour, hearing his commandement, toke agréement with the pope and his cardinals, and so hee and twelue cardinals were bound to performe certain articles to the number of eleuen, and then he was deliuered out of the castle S. Angell, the 10. of December, and was conueied to Crupot, where after he had paid certain monie for the souldiers wages, he was put at full libertie, and the Emperors people departed from him, and from thence he remoued to Ancona: the Emperors Captaines (fearing the French armie prepared) caused all the Souldiers to departe out of Rome in the beginning of Februarie, and so came into the realme of Naples, and fortified certaine townes as they passed, and so came to a Towne called Troy, and there staied. This remouing was to them profitable, for if they had taried at Rome, they had beene set on by the Italians on the one side, and the Frenchmen on the other side, that by euerie mans iudgment they shoulde all haue beene slayne or taken. Thus much for the sacking of Rome.

Pope Clement deliuered.

Also about this time, diuers complaintes beeing made of Geralde Fitz Gerald earle of Kyldare, late deputie of Irelande, that hee wilfullie winked at the Earle of Desmonde, whome he should haue attached by the kings letters, that hee carryed acquayntaunce, and affinitie with mere Irishe Enemies, that he hanged, & hewed rashlie good subiectes, whome he mistrusted to leane to the Butlers friendshippe, wherefore Kyldare was commanded to appeere, which hee did, leauing in his roome Fitz Geralde of Lerlip, whome they shortlie deprsyued, and choose the Baron of Delun, whome Oconner toke prisoner,

Gerald fitz Gerald deputy of Ireland accused.

and

and there the erle of Osory, to shew his hability of seruice brought to Diuelin an armie of Irishmen, hauing Captaines ouer them, Oconner, Omer, and Ocarrall, and at S. Marie abbey was chosen deputie by the kinges counsell. In which office being himselfe (saue onelie in feates of armes) a simple Gentleman, he bare out his honor, and the charge of gouernment verie worthily, thorowe the singular wisedome of his Countesse, a Ladie of such port, that all Estates of the Realme crouched vnto her, so politike that nothing was thought substantiallie debated without her aduise, manlike and tall of stature, verie rich and bountifull, a bitter enimie, the onelie meane at those daies, whereby her husbands countrie was reclaimed from the sluttish and vncleane Irish custome, to Englishe habite, bedding, house-keeping, and ciuilitie: but to these vertues was yoked such a selfe-liking, and Maiestie aboue the tenure of a subiect, that for assurance therof she sticked not to abuse her husbands honor against her brothers follie: notwithstanding I learne not that she practised his vndooing, which insued, and was to her vndoubtedlie great heauines, as vpon whom both the blemish thereof, and the sustenance of that whole family depended after, but that she by indirect means coggeled hir brother out of credite to aduance her husband, the common voice and the thing it selfe speaketh. Al this while abode the earle of Kyldare at the court, and with much adoo found shift to be called before the lords to answere solemnly, they sate vpon him diuersly affected, and in especiall the cardinall L. chancellor, disliked his cause, comforted his accusers, and inforced the articles obiected, and what else soeuer coulde bee gathered thereof in these words.

I wotte well (my Lorde) that I am not the meetest man at this boorde to charge you with these treasons, because it hath pleased some of your pewe fellowes to report that I am a professed enimie to all nobility, and namely to the Geraldines: but seeing euerie cource boie can saie as much when hee is controlled, and seeing these points are so weightie, that they should not be dissembled of vs, & so apparant that they cannot be denied of you, I must haue leaue (notwithstanding your stale slander) to be the mouth of these honorable at this present, & to trump your treasons in your way, howsoeuer you take me. First yee remember how the lewde earle your kinsman, who passeth not whome hee serue, might he change his master, sent his confederates with letters of credence to Frauncis the French K. and hauing but colde comfort there, to Charles the Emperour, profering the helpe of Monstere and Connagh towarde the conquest of Irelande, if eyther of them woulde helpe to winne it from our King: howe manie letters, what Precepts, what messages, what threates haue beene sent you to apprehende him, and yet not doone? Why so? forsooth I coulde not catch him: Naie, naie earle, forsooth, you would not watch him. If he be iustlie suspect, why are ye partiall in so great a charge? if not, why are you fearefull to haue him tried? ye sir it will be sworne and deposed to your face, that for feare of meeting him, you haue winked, wilfully shunned his sight, altered your course, warned his friends, stopped both eares and eies against his detectors, and whensoeuer you took vpon you to hunt him out, then was he sure aforehand to be out of your walk: surely this iugling and false play

Cardinal Wolsey to the earle of Kildare.

Treasons laide to the earle of Kyldare.

little

little became either an honest man called to such honour, or a noble man put in such trust: had you lost but a cow or a carran of your owne, 200. kerneghes would haue come at your whistle to rescue the praie from the farthermost edge of Tilstar; all the Irish in Ireland must haue giuen you the waie: but in pursuing so needfull a matter as this was, mercifull God how nice, howe dangerous, how wayward haue you beene? One while he is from home, another time he keepeth home, sometimes fled, sometimes in the borders, where you dare not venture. I wis my lord, there be shrewd bugs in the borders, for the earle of Kyldare, to feare the earle, nate the king of Kyldare, for when you are disposed you raigne more like then rule in the land: where you are malicious the truest subiects stand for Irish enemies, where you are pleased the Irish enemies stand for dutifull subiects: harts, and hands, liues and lands, are all at your curtesie, who fawneth not thereon, he cannot rest within your smell, and your smell is so ranke, that you tract them at your pleasure: whilest the cardinall was speaking, the earle chafed and changed colour, and sundry profers made to answere euery sentence as it came, at last he brake out, and interrupted him thus.

The earle interrupted the cardinall.

My lord Chancelor, I beseech you pardon me, I am short witted, and you I perceiue intend a long tale; if you procéede in this order, haife my purgation will be lost for lacke of carriage, I haue no Schole trickes, nor Art of memorie, except you heare me while I remember your words, your second processe will hammer out the former.

The lordes associate, who for the most part tenderly loued him, and knew the Cardinals manner of taunts so lothsome, as wherewith they were tried manie yeres ago, humbly besought his grace to charge him direcly with particulars, and to dwell in some one matter, till it were examined thoroughlie: that granted.

Kyldares reply to the cardinall.

It is good reason, quoth the earle, that your grace beare the mouth of this chamber, but my lord those mouths that put this tale into your mouth are verie wide mouths, such as indéed haue gaped long for my wracke, and now at length for want of better stuffe, are faine to fill their mouthes with smoake: what my cosen Desmond hath compassed as I know not, so I beshrew his naked hart, for holding out so long, if he can be taken by my engins that presentlie waite for him, then haue mine aduersaries betraied their malice, and this heape of heinous words shal resemble a man of straw, that séemeth at a blush to carrie some proportion, but when it is felt and poysed, discouereth a vanity, seruing onely to fraie crowes. And I verily trust your honours will sée the proofe, by the thing it selfe, within these foure daies: but go to, suppose he neuer be had, what is Kildare to blame for it more than my good brother of Oserie, who notwithstanding his high promises, hauing also the kings power, is yet content to take egges for his money, and to bring him in at leisure? Can not the earle of Desmonde shift, but I must be of counsell? can not be be hid except I winke? if he be close, am I his mate? if he be friended, am I a traitor? This is a doughtie kinde of accusation, which they vrge against me, wherein they are stabled and nured, at my first denial: you would not sée him, say they:

who

who made them so familiar with mine eie sight? or when was the earle in mine equines, or who stod by when I let him slippe, or where are the tokens of my wilfull hodwinke? D but you sent him word to beware of you: who was the messenger, where are the letters? Conuince my negatiue: se howe losely this idle reason hangeth, Desmond is not taken: well you are in fault, why? because you are: who proues it: no body? what coniectures? so it seemeth: to whom? to your enemies: who told it them? they will sweare it: what other grounds? none: will they sweare it my lords? why, then of like, if they know it, either they haue my hand to shew, or can bring forth the messenger, or were present at a conference, or priuie to Desmonde, or some bodie bewraied it to them, or themselues were my carriers, or viceregerents therein, which of these parts will they chuse, for I know them too well, to reckon my selfe conuict by their bare words, or heedlesse hearsaies, or frantike othes: my letter were soon read, were anie such writing extant, my seruants and friends are readie to be sifted, of my cosen of Desmond they make lie lewdlie, since no man here can well contrarie them: touching my selfe, I neuer noted in them either so much wit, or so fast faith, that I would haue gaged vpon their silence, the life of a good hound, much lesse mine owne selfe. I doubt not, may it like your honors to appose them how they came to knowledge of these matters, which they are so readie to depose, but you shall find their tongs cheined to another mans trencher, and as it were knights of the post suborned to sale, sweare, and stare the vttermost they can, as those that passe not what they sale, nor with what face they say it, so they say no truth: but of another thing it grieueth me, that your good grace, whome I take to be wise and sharpe, and who of your own blessed disposition wisheth me well, should be so farre gone in crediting those corrupt informers, that abuse the ignorance of your state and countrey to my perill: little know you my Lord how necessarie it is, not onely for the gouernor, but also for euerie noble man in Ireland to hamper his vncuill neighbors at discretion, wherein if they waited for processe of law, and had not those liues and lands you speake of within their reach, they might hap to lose their own liues and lands without lawe, you heare of a case, as it were in a dreame, and feele not the smart that vereth vs. In England there is not a meane subiect that dare extend his hand to philip a peere of the realme: In Ireland, except the L. haue cunning to his strength, and strength to saue his own, and sufficient authoritie to rake theeues and varlets when they stur, he shall find them swarme so fast, that it will be too late to call for iustice: if you will haue our seruice take effect, you must not tie vs alwaies to these iudiciall proceedings, wherewith your realme thanked be God, is enured. As touching my kingdome my lord, I would you: I had exchanged kingdoms but for one moneth, I would trust to gather vp more crums in that space, then twice the reuenues of my poore earledome: but you are well and warme, and so hold you, and vpbraide not me with such an odious farme: I sleepe on a cabben, when you lie softe in your bed of downe: I serue vnder the coape of heauen, when you are serued vnder a canopie: I drinke water out of my scull, when ye drinke wine out of golden cuppes: my courser is trained to the field, when your genet is taught

to amble: when you are be-graced and be-lorded, and crowched and knéeled vnto, then find I small grace with our Irish borderers, except I cut them off by the knees.

The cardinall perceiued that Kyldare was no babe, and rose in a fume from the councell table, committed the earle, deferred the matter, till more direct probations came out of Ireland.

After many méetings, and obiections wittilie [illegible]ed, they pressed him sore with a traiterous errand sent by his daughter lady of Clane to al his brethren, to Oneale, Oconner, and their adherents, wherein he exhorted them to warre vpon the earle of Osery then deputy, which they accomplished, making a wicked conspiracie against the English of Irelande, and manie a bloudie skirmish. Of this treason he was found guiltie, and repried in the Tower a long time, the gentleman betooke himselfe to God, and the king, was heartilie loued of the Lieutenant, pittied in all the Court, and standing in so hard a case, altered little of his accustomed hewe, comforted other noble men Prisoners with him, dissembling his owne sorrow. One night when the lieutenant, and he for his disport were playing at shouell groat, sodainelie commeth from the cardinall, a *Mandatum* to execute Kyldare on the morrowe. The earle marking the Lieutenantes deepe sigh in reading the bill, by S. Bride lieutenant quoth he, there is some mad game in that scrole: but fall out how it will, this throw is for a huddle: when the worst was told him, now I pray thée (quoth he) doe no more but learne assuredlie, from the kinges owne mouth, whether his grace be witting thereto or not: sore doubted the Lieutenant, to displease the cardinall, yet of very pure deuotion to his friend, he posteth to the king at midnight, and said his errand, for at all houres of day or night the lieutenant hath accesse to the prince vpon occasions. King Henry controlling the sawcines of the priest (for those were his termes) tooke him his signet in token of countermaund, which when the cardinall had seene, he beganne to breath out vnseasoned words, which the lieutenant was loth to heare, and so hee left him fretting. And within few yéeres after, Sir William Sceuington was sent ouer deputie, who brought with him the earle pardoned and rid from all his troubles. There arose about this time a brute in London, that diuers great clearks had tolde the king that the marriage betwéene him and the Ladie Katherine, sometime wife to his brother prince Arthur, was not lawful: whereupon the king should sue a deuorce, and marrie the dutchesse of Alanson, sister to the French king, the towne of Caleis this Sommer, and thereupon Vicount Rocheforde had brought with him the picture of the same Ladie: but the king being offended with the tales, sent for Syr Thomas Seymere Maior of London secretlie, and charged him to see that the people ceased from such talke. But whatsoeuer the commons talked, true it was, that the king hadde minde to depart from Quéene Katherine his wife, aunt to the Emperour, and daughter to the king of Spaine, for that shée was before espoused to his brother, prince Arthur late deceased, and that the Pope coulde not dispence with one woman to marrie with two brothers: but the king was letted by the Emperour and his Ministers, so that hee coulde not well bring the matter about without assistaunce

E. Hall.

Ann. reg. 19.

A rumor, that K. H. would bee diuorced from Q. katherine, pacified.

of

of the French king. Upon which respect, he granted more than the French K. desired: that is, the 400000. crownes, which was one of the principall sums of the millions, which should be paid presently, he lent the same to the French K. to repay in 5. yéares: and the 600000. crownes forfeit by the emperor, he gaue to the French king: and the Duchie deluce, valued at 50000. crownes he gaue to his god son Henry D. of Orleance. And further with the said Mounsier de Langie, there was sent M. Frauncis Brian then one of the Gentlemen of the Kinges priuie Chamber, as well with the obligations and acquittaunces, as also the said Duchie deluce, to be deliuered by the French K. when time should serue. And for the sayde Mounsire de Langie, was a Gentleman greatlie fauored, as well in the Vniuersities of Italie and Germanie, as in the vniuersities of Fraunce, and Brother to the Cardinall Bellay then Bysshop of Paris, hee was at that time trauelled withall to procure the opinions and iudgementes of the Doctors and chiefe learned men, subscribed with their handes, and confirmed with their Seales of the chiefe vniuersities; as of Paris, Orliance, and other of France, and of Padua, Vienna, and Boloma in Italy, declaring by the same, that the pope could not dispence with the said marriage, as being by gods law prohibited, which afterwarde was procured by the sayde Mounsire de Langy, trauelling in person to euerie the saide vniuersities with the king of Englands commission, who had the French kinges letters of singular commendations to the vttermost aid therein: what soeuer the commons talked, it was concluded by the K. and his counsell, that the cardinall shoulde passe into France as his high ambassador, but for what cause, no person knew but the K. till his return. Gwichardine saieth hee brought with him treasure amounting to 300000. crowns, both to furnish his expences, & to impart with the French K. by way of lone if need were. The cause of this voiage was saith G.C. this, certain great estates, and lords of the counsel bearing litle good will to the cardinal, lying in waite to espy a conuenient time, and occasion to take the cardinal in a brake, thought it now were a necessary time to cause him to take vpon him the kings commission to trauel beyond the sea in this matter, and by his wit to compasse a perfect peace among these great princes and potentates: and incouraging him thereto, alledged that it was more méete for his high wit, discretion, and authoritie, to bring so weightie a matter to passe, then any other within this realm. Their intent was none other, but if they might get him from the king out of the realme, then mought they sufficiently aduenture to depraue him vnto the K. highnes, and so in his absence to bring him in displeasure with the king, or at the least to be of lesse estimation: Well what wil you more? this matter was so handled, ỹ the cardinal was commanded to prepare himselfe to this iourney, which hee toke vpon him, but whether it were with his good will or no, I am not able well to tel you: but that I know he made a short abode after the perfect resolution therof, but caused all thinges to bee prepared onwarde towarde his iourneie: and euerie one of his seruantes were appoynted that shoulde attende vpon him in the same. When all thinges were concluded, and for this noble ambassage prouided and furnished, then was there no more to do, but auance forwards in the name of God.

Gwichardine.

G. Cauen.

Cardinal ambassador into France.

My

My L. had with him such of the lords and bishops, and other worthy persons, as were not of the counsel or conspiracy: to wit, the earle of Darby, the bishop of London L. privy seale: sir Henry Gilford knight of the garter, controller of the kings house, the L. Sands knight of the garter: L. chamberlain of the K. house: doctor Tailor, M. of the rols: sir T. Moore knight, chancelor of the dutchy of Lancaster: the bishop of Diuelin, the L. Mounteagle, the L. Harrenden, sir Ioh. Dudley knight, M. Ratclife, M. Willoughby, M. Parker, M. Sturton: vicounts and barons, sons and heires, sir Fra. Brian, sir Ed. Seimer, sir Rob. Gernigam, Doctor Stephen Gardener secretary, doctor Peter Vannes secretary: of the priuy chamber, master Hennege, master Arundell, master Kneuet, master Alford: Phisitions, doctor Francis, doctor Smith: gentlemen vshers of the priuie chamber, M. Walgraue, M. Elles, sir Tho. Denis high chamberlaine, M. Sentclere Vicechamberlaine: gentlemen vshers, master Wentwoorth, master Hansard, master Pemercy, mast. Constable, M. Warren: of houshold, M. Cade steward, sir William Gascoigne treasurer, M. Goslike controller, master Broughton, master of the horse: doctor Allen, doctor Benet, doctor Duke deane of the Chappell, doctor Capon Almoner, the archdeacon of Canterbury, the archdeacon of Carlele: syr Iohn Sent-Iohn, Syr Richard Sandes knights, &c. in all to the number of 900. horses. Then marched he forward from his own house at Westminster, through London ouer London Bridge, hauing before him of Gentlemen a great number, three in a ranke in veluet coates, and the most of them greate chaines of Golde about their neckes, and all his Yeomen followed him with Noblemens, and Gentlemens seruants, all in Orenge tawney coates, with the Cardinals Hatte, and a T. C. for Thomas Cardinall, embrodered vpon all the coates, as well of his owne seruants, as of all the rest of the gentlemens seruants: and his sumpter mules which were 20. or more, with all his cariage of carts, and other of his traine, were passed before. He rode like a cardinall very sumptuously on his mule, with his spare mule and spare horse trapped in crimosin veluet vpon veluet, and stirrops gilt following him: and before him hee had his two great Troses of siluer, his two great Pillars of siluer, the kings broad seale of England, and his cardinals hat, and a gentleman carrying his valence, otherwise called his cloakebag, which was made of fyne scarlet, altogither embrodred very richly with gold, hauing in it a cloak. Thus passed hee forth through London, and all the waie euerie daie in his iourney hee was thus furnished, hauing his Harbengers in euerie place before, which prepared lodging for his traine.

Ric. Tur.

The pompous riding of the Cardinall.

The first iourney that he made, was 2. miles beyond Dertford in Kent, vnto sir T. Wiltshires house, and the rest of his traine were lodged in Dertforde, and in the country thereabouts. The next daie he marched to Rochester, where he was lodged in the Bishops palace, and the rest of his Traine in the Citie and in Strowde. The third daie he rode to Feuersham, and there was lodged in the Abbey, and his traine in the towne there, and some in the country thereabouts. The fourth daie hee rode to Canterburie, where hee encountred with the worshipfull of the towne and countrie, and lodged in the Priory of Christ Church, and all his Traine in the Citie, where hee continued three dayes,

in

in which season there was a great faire in the town, by reason it was the feast of Thomas of Canterburie. At which date there was a solemne procession, wherein the cardinall then went apparelled in his legantine ornaments, with his hat on his head, who commanded the monks and the quære to sing the Letanie after this sort, *Sancta Maria, ora pro Papa nostro Clemente*, the Cardinall kneeling at a stole before the quære doore all the while the monkes and their quære stood in the body of the church singing the Letany: at which time the cardinall was seene to weepe bitterly, for heauines to see the pope in such calamitie and danger of the Lance-knights.

The 11. of Julis the Cardinall arriued at Caleis, who was receiued with all the officers and counsell of the Towne, the Maior of the Towne, and the Maior of the Staple in procession, and in the Lanterne Gate, he kneeled and made his praiers: that done, they passed on before vntill he came to S. Maries Church, from whence he repayred with a great number of Noblemen and gentlemen, being peeres of the towne, vnto a place called the Checker, where he was lodged, and kept his house as long as he abode in the towne. When all his traine and carriage was landed, and euerie thing prepared for his iourney, he called all his noblemen and gentlemen, being seruants vnto him, into his priuie chamber, where they being all assembled before him he saide: I haue called you hither to the intent to declare vnto you, that I consider the duety you beare me, and the good will that I semblably beare to you, seeing your intendment to further the authoritie that I haue by commission, which your diligent seruice I will remember hereafter, and therefore I meane to declare the same directly to the king. Secondly, to shew you the nature of the French men. And thirdly, to instruct you howe and with what reuerence yee shall vse me for the honor of the kings maiestie, and then to enforme you how yee shall entertaine and accompanie the French men when yee shall meete at any time.

The first point yee shall vnderstand, that the K. maiestie for certaine weightie affaires, of his graces hath for more aduancement of his royall dignitie assigned me to be in this iourney his lieutenant, & what reuerence belongeth to the same I will tell you, for my part I must by vertue of my commission and lieutenantship assume and take vpon me to be esteemed in all honour and degrées of seruice, as to his highnesse presence is meete and due, and that by me nothing to be neglected, that to his royall estate is due and appertinent. And for my part yee shall see me, that I will not omit one iote thereof. Therefore because that yee shall not be ignorant of your duetie in this case, as one of the chiefe causes of this your assembly, willing you as you will haue my fauour, & also charge you in the kings name, that ye do not forget the same in time and place, but that euery one of you doe obserue your duety vnto me accordingly, as ye will at your returne auoid the K. indignation, or obtaine & deserue his highnesse thankes, the which I will set forth, as each of you shall deserue. Now to the second point, the nature of the French men is such, that at the first meeting they will be as familiar with you as they had béene acquainted with you long before, & commune with you in their French tong, as

though ye vnderstood euery woord, therefore vse them in like maner, and be as familiar with them as they be with you. If they speake in their naturall tong, speake you again vnto them in the English tong: For, if you vnderstand not them, no more shall they vnderstand you: and speaking merilie to one of the gentlemen there, being a Welchman, said Rice (quoth he) speake you Welsh to them: I doubt not but that thy speech shall bee more diffuse to him, than his French shall be to thée.

And thus quoth he againe to them all, let all your entertainement and behauior be according to the order of all gentlenes and humilitie, that it may be reported after your departure from thence, that ye be gentlemen of right good behauior, and of much gentlenesse, and that yée are men, who knowe your duties to your Soueraigne Lorde, and to your Master, estéeming much your great reuerence. Thus shall yée not onlie obtaine to your selues great commendation and praise for the same, but also aduance the honor of your prince and Countrie: Nowe go your waies, beeing admonished of all these pointes, and prepare your selues against to morrow, for then we intend (God willing) to set forward. The next morrow, being Mary Magdalens date, all things beeing furnished, the Cardinall aduanced out of Calets, with such a number of blacke veluet coates, as hath béene seldome séene with an ambassador, all the Speres of Calets and Guisnes, with all other Gentlemen besides his train, beeing garnished in blacke Veluet Coates and Chaines of gold. Thus passed hee forwarde with his Traine of Gentlemen before him thrée in a ranke, which by supposall endured thrée quarters of a mile or more in length, having his Crosses and all other his accustomed and glorious furniture carried before him, as I haue before rehearsed, except the Broade Seale, the which hee left in Calets with Doctor Taylour, then master of the Rolles, vntill his returne. Broad seale of England left at Calets.

Passing thus on his way, and being scantlie ridden a mile, it began to raine so vehemently, as lightly had not béene séene the like, which endured vntill they came to Bologne, ere they came to Sandingfield, the cardinall of Lorraine a goodlie yoong gentleman, encountred the cardinall of Englande, and receiued him with great ioie and reuerence, and so passed forth with the Cardinall in communication vntill they came nigh vnto the saide Sandingfield, which was a place of Religion, standing betweene the English, French, and the emperors dominions, beeing a Newter, holding of neither of them. There awaited for him Le Countie Brian Captaine of Pycardie, with a great number of Stradiates or Albenois, standing in arraie in a great péece of grœne oates, all in harnes vpon high horses, passing on with the cardinall in a wing vnto Boloingne, and so after through Picardie: for the Cardinall doubted somewhat the Emperor, that he shoulde laie some ambush to betraie him, for which cause the French king commanded them to attende vpon him for the assurance of his person. Thus rode he vntill he came within one English mile of Boloingne, where encountred him the worshipfull citizens of the Towne of Boloingne, hauing a learned man that made vnto him an oration in Latine, vnto the which the Cardinall semblablie made answeare: And that done, Mounsieur de Bees Captaine of Boloingne with the retinue there

of

of gentlemen, met with him on horsebacke, and then with all this assemblie he rode into the towne lighting at the abbey gate, and from thence conueied with procession into the abbey church there offered, then went hee into the Abbey to his lodging, and all his traine were lodged in the high and base townes. The nert morning after, he rode to *Mutterell Ser Lemere*, where he was in like case encountred with the worshipfull of the towne all in one liuerie, hauing a learned man to make an Oration vnto him in latine, whom he answered also againe in latine. And as hee entred in at the gates, there was a canapie made readie of silke, embrodered with letters, and an hat euen as his men had on their Coates, and when that hee was lighted, his footemen hadde the same as a Fee due to the office. Nowe was there made diuers Pageants for the ioie of his comming, who was called in the French tong there, and in all other places through the realme where hee rode or came, *Le cardinall pacifique*. The nert daie hee tooke his iourneie towardes Abuile, where hee was encountred with diuers gentlemen of the towne and countrie, and so receiued into the towne with pageantes, as hee rode thorowe the towne, hauing a like canopie borne ouer him, but more richer, and so brought to his lodging: in this towne he remained more than eight daies, where resorted to him dailie diuers of the French K. counsell, sitting with him in councell euerie daie, and continuallie feasting him e other. When the time came of his departing out of the town, he rode to the castle beyond the water of Some, called *le Chanel de picqîny*, adioining to the saide water vpon a Rocke, within which there was a Colledge of Priests, the scituation whereof was much like to the castle of Windsore, and there hee was receiued with solemne procession, conueying him first into the Church, and after into the castle to his lodging. At this castle sometime vpon the bridge that goeth ouer this water of Some, K. Edw. the 4. met with the F. king, as yée maie reade in our Chronicles: when my Lorde was setled in his lodging (saith mine author) I heard that the French K. shoulde come that daie into the towne of Amiens, which was not past six English miles from thence. And being desirous to sée his cõming thither, toke with me one or two of my L. gentlemen, and rode incontinentlie thither, aswel to furnish me of a conuenient lodging, as to sée the K. And when we came thither, being but strangers, toke vp our inne at the signe of the angell, directlie against the West doore of the cathedral church *de nostrâ Dame*. After we had dined there, and taried vntill 3. or 4. of the clock, expecting the K. comming, in came madam Regent the K. mother, riding in a very rich chariot, e with her therein was the Q. of Nauarre her daughter, furnished with 100. or more of ladies and gentlewomen following, euerie one riding vpon white palfreis: besides diuers and manie ladies, some in rich horslitters, and some in chariots, who lighted at the nert doore with al this traine of ladies and gentlewomen, besides her gard, which was not smal in number.

Then within 2. houres after the king came in with a great shotte of guns, and diuers pageants made onelie for ioie of his comming, hauing about his person and before him, besides the wonderful number of noblemen and gentlemen, three great guards apparelled diuerslie: the first was of Switzers, and

The French kings guard.

Burgonians with gunnes and pikes: the second was of French men, some with bowes and arrowes, and some with billes: the third guard *pour le corps* was of tall Scottes, which were more comelier persons than all the rest. The French guard and the guard of the Scots had one liuerie, being apparelled with rich coates of white cloth guarded with a rich guarde of siluer bullions of an handefull broad. The king came riding vpon a goodlie gennet, and alighted at the saide great Church, and so conueyed with procession into the Bishops palace, where he was lodged, and also his mother. The next morning I rode againe to Picardie, to attend vpon my Lorde, at which time of my resorte, my Lorde was readie to go to horsebacke toward Amiens, and passing on his waie, he was incountred with diuers noble personages, making vnto him diuers orations in latine, to whom he made answere *extempore*. Then was worde brought him, that the king was comming to encounter him, wherefore he had none other shift, but to light at an old chappell that stood hard by the hie waie, and there he new apparelled himselfe into rich apparell, and so mounted againe vpon a moile verie richlie trapped, with a cote cloth altogither of crimosin veluet vpon veluet, purled with gold, and fringed about with gold fringe verie costly: his stirrops of siluer and gilt, the bosses of the same, and the chekes of his mules bit were all gilt. And by that time that he was mounted againe, after this gorgeous sort, the king was come verie neere, within lesse than a quarter of an English mile, muttering vpon a hill, his guard standing in array vpon the top of the same hill, expecting my lords comming, to whom my Lord made as much haste as he conueniently might, till he came within a paire of buts lengths, and there he staied. The king perceiuing that, hauing two worthy yong gentlemen with him, the one called mounsier Vadamont, and the other mounsier de Guise, both brethren to the Cardinall of Lorraine, and to the D. of Lorraine: also being like apparelled, as the king was in purple veluet, lined with cloth of siluer, their coates cut: The king caused mounsier Vadamont to issue from him, and ride to my lord cardinall to know the cause of his tarrying: and this mounsier being mounted vpon a faire great gennet, toke his race with his horse vntill he came euen to my Lord, and there caused his horse to come aloofe twice or thrice, so nigh my Lordes moile, that he was in doubt of his horse, and with that he alighted, and doing humble reuerence, did his message to my Lorde, and that done he mounted againe, and made his horse to doe the like at his departing, as before he had done, and so repaired againe vnto the king: and his answere ended to the king, the king auanced forwards. That seeing, my Lord did the like: and in the midway they met, embracing each other with amiable countenance and entertainement. Then drewe into the place all noble men and gentlemen on both partes, with wonderfull chere made one to another, as though they had been of old acquaintance. The preasse was such and so thicke, that diuers had their legges hurt with horses. Then the kings officers cried, march, march, deuaunt ale deuaunt. Then the king and the Cardinall on his right hand rode forth towards Amiens, euerie English gentleman accompanied with another of France. The traine of these two princes endured two

long

long English miles, they were nobly receiued into the Towne of Amiens with shot of guns and costlie pageants, till the K. had brought the cardinall to his lodging, and then departed for that night, the king being lodged in the bishops palace. The next day after dinner the cardinall rode to the court to the king, at which time the king kept his bed: yet neuerthelesse, the Cardinall came into his bed chamber, where, on the one side of the bed sate the kings mother, and on the other side the Cardinall of Lorraine, accompanied with diuers other noble men of France, and after a short communication and drinking of a cuppe of wine with the kings mother, he departed to his owne lodging, accompanied with diuers gentlemen and noblemen, where they supped with him. Thus continued the Cardinall and the king in Amiens, the space of a fortnight and more, consulting and feasting eche other diuers times. In Amiens the king and my Lord heard masse, and both of them receiued the sacrament. And vpon our ladie daie the assumption my Lord said masse before the Regent, and the Quéene of Nauarre, and gaue them the sacrament. And there the king dressed a number of sicke folkes. Then the K. and the Cardinal remoued to a city called Champain, which was more then 20. English miles from Amiens, they were both lodged in the great castle of the towne, whereof the Cardinall had the one halfe assigned him for his lodging, and the king the other halfe. And likewise they deuided a long Galerie betweene them, where was made in the midst a strong wall, with a windowe and a doore. The king and the Cardinall would manie times mæte at the same windowe and talke: and diuers times they would goe into the other at the said doore. Then came there to my lorde Cardinall the lord Chancelor of France, with all the kings counsellers, where they toke great paines dailie in consultation, insomuch that the Cardinall of England fell out with the Chancelor of France, laying to his charge, that he went about to hinder the league which before his comming was concluded, insomuch, that Madam Regent her selfe and manie nobles of France, with much labor and trauell could scarcelie bring the cardinal to his former state of cõmunication, he was in such a worth against the Chancelor: by these meanes, he brought other things to passe, that before he coulde not attaine, which was more for feare than for anie affection to the matter, he had the heads of the counsel so vnder his girdle. The next morning after this conflict he rose earlie about foure of the clocke, and sate him downe to write letters, into England vnto the King, commanding one of his chaplaines to prepare him readie to sate masse, insomuch that the chaplaine stoode in his vestures vntill foure of the clocke in the afternoone: all which season the Cardinall neuer rose to eate or drinke, nor to make water, but continuallie wrote letters with his owne hand, hauing all that time his nightcap and his kerchéefe on his head, and about the houre of foure in the afternoone hee made an end, commanding Christopher Gunner the kings seruant, without delaie to ride post into England with those letters, whom he dispatched awaie or euer he dranke, and then went to masse, and said his seruice with his chaplaine, and then went and walked in a garden the space of an houre and more, and said his euensong, and after went both to dinner and supper all at once,

and after supper, making but tarrying, scant an houre, but that he went to bed and toke his rest.

The nert night after the cardinal made a great supper for madam Regent, for the Quene of Nauarre and other great estates of Ladies and Noblewomen, and at the middest of the said banquet, the kings of France and of Nauarre, came sodainelie in vpon them vnlooked for, and toke their place in the lowest part of the banquet. The supper and banquet being finished, the ladies and Gentlemen fell to daunsing, and so passed awaie the most of the night ere they departed. There was not only plenty of fine meats, but also much mirth & solace, aswel in mery communication, as with the noise of my L. minstrels, who plaied there all that night so cunninglie, that the king toke therein great pleasure, insomuch that he desired my lord to lende them vnto him for the nert night, and after supper their banquet finished, the ladies and gentlemen fell to dansing, among whom one madam Fountaine a maide had the price. And thus passed they the most part of the night ere they departed. The nert day the king toke my lordes minstrels, and rode to a noblemans house where was some Image to whom he vowed a pilgrimage, to performe his deuotion. When hee came there which was in the night, he danced, and caused other to do the same, after the sound of my lords minstrels, who plaied there all night, and neuer rested, so that whether it were with extreme labour of blowing, or with poison (as some iudged) because they were commended by the king more than his owne, I cannot tell, but the Player on the Shalme (who was verie excellent in that instrument) died within a daie or two after. Then the king returned into Champaigne, and caused a wild Bore to bee lodged for him in the forrest of Champaigne, and thither the Cardinall rode with him to see him hunt, where the Ladie Regent with a number of Ladies and Damosels were standing in Chariots, looking on the toile on the out side, which was pitched there for that purpose: among whome stood the Cardinall to regarde the hunting in Madame Regentes Chariot, and within the toyle was the king with diuers minion Gentlemen of France, readie furnished to this high and dangerous enterprise of the hunting of the perilous wilde swine, the king beeing in his dublet and hozen all of shepes colour cloth, hauing in his slip a brace of great white Greyhounds, who were armed as the maner there is: and the rest of the kings Gentlemen being appointed to hunt this Boze, were likewise in their dublets and hose, holding each of them in their hands verie sharp boze speares. Then the king commanded the keepers to vncouch the Boze, and that euerie person being within the toile should go to a standing, among whome were diuers gentlemen and yeomen of England, and incontinent the boze issued out of his den, and followed with an hound, came into a plaine, where being scaled a while, and gazing vpon the people, and incontinent pierced by the hound, hee spied a little bush standing behinde a banke, ouer a ditch (vnder the which late two French gentlemen) and thither fled, trusting there to haue defended himself, who thrust his head snucking into the same bush, which caused the two gentlemen to fly from thence, as from the danger of death. Then was the boze by pursuit of hunters and the hound, driuen from thence, who ran straight to one

of

of the Cardinalles footemen, a verie tall yeoman, who hadde in his handes a Jaueline, with the which hee was fayne to defende himselfe from the Boze a great while, the Boze continuallie foyning at him with his Tuskes, so that he was fayne at last to pitch his Jaueline in the grounde betweene him and the Boze: the which the Boze brake with the force of his foyning, and with that the yeoman drewe his swoorde, and stood at defence, and therewith the hunters came to the rescue, and put him once agayne to flight: with that hee fledde to another young Gentleman of Englande, called Walter Henry Ratclife, who was sonne and heire to the Lorde Fitz Walter, since Earle of Sussex, who had borrowed by chaunce of a French Gentleman, a verie fyne and sharpe Boze Speare, wherewith hee thrust the Boze in the mouthe, and so into the throate, whereupon the passime was ended. In the time of the Cardinalles abode in France, manie displeasures were doone against him, for all the payne and trauell he had taken for the qualifying of the French Ransom: and amongst other this was one: there was no place where hee lodged after hee entred the territorie of France, but that hee was robbed in his priuie chamber either little or much, insomuch that at Champaine hee lost his Standish, which was all of Siluer and gilte, and there it was espied, and the partie taken, which was a boie of twelue or fourteene yeeres old, a ruffians page of Paris, which hanted my Lordes lodging without suspition, vntill hee was taken lying vnder my Lordes priuie Staires, vpon which occasion he was apprehended, examined, and confessed all things that hee had stolen, the ruffian his maister had receyued, maintained, and procured him so to doe. The Cardinall reuealed this to the councell, by meanes whereof the ruffian was apprehended, and set on the Pillorie in the midst of the Market place, which was but a small punishment for such an offence. Another displeasure was this: some lewde person hadde ingraued in my Lordes Window vpon the leaning stone there, a cardinalles hat, with a paire of gallowes ouer it, in derision of my Lorde, with diuers other vnkinde dealinges, the which I omit to write, they be so slanderous matters. The Cardinall passing diuers dayes in consultation, and in other matters, expecting the returne of Christopher Gunner, at the last he returned with letters againe, vpon receyt whereof the Cardinall intended to remoue: being then at masse in his Closet, hee consecrated the Chauncellor of Fraunce Cardinall, and put vpon him his habite, his hat and cap of Scarlet, and then toke his iourney, returning againe into England, making such necessary expedition, that hee came to Guisnes, where hee was noblie receiued by the lord Sandes then Captayne there, with all the retinue of the same. And from thence hee rode to Calais, where hee tarried the shipping of his stuffe, horses and traine. And in the meane time, he stablished there a mart for all nations. These things and other, for the Weale of the Towne and garison by him perfect, hee tooke shipping and arriued at Douer the twenty foure of September, from whence hee rode to the Court, the king beeing in his Progresse at Syr Henrie Wyats house in Kent, hee went immediatlie to him, with whome hee had long talke, & continued two or three daies there in the court, and then returned to his house at Westminster, where hee remained vntill Michaelmas Terme, which was

Many despites doone against cardinal Wolsey in France.

in lesse than a fortnight after, and exercised his roome of chancellorship as hee was accustomed.

Scarcitie of bread.

Such scarcitie of bread was in London, & all England, that manie died for default thereof: the king of his goodnes sent to the citie of his owne prouision 600. quarters, or else for one week there had been little bread. The bread carts comming from Stratford towarde London were met at the Mile end by the citizens, so that the maior and Shirifs were forced to goe and rescue the same carts, and to see them brought to the markets appointed. Wheat was then at fiftéen shillings the quarter: but shortlie after the merchants of the Stilyard brought from Danske such store of Wheate and Rye, that the same was better cheape to bee solde in London, than in anie other parte of the Realme besides.

Cardinal Wolsey in the Star chamber declareth what an honorable peace he had concluded.

After the beginning of the terme the cardinall caused to be assembled in the Star chamber, all the noblemen, Iudges, and Iustices of peace that were in Westminster hall at that time present: and there made to them a long oration, declaring the cause of his ambassage into France, and of his procéedinges there; among the which he said he had concluded such an amitie, as neuer was heard in the realme before, aswel betwéen the emperor and vs, as betwéen the K. our soueraigne and the French K. with a perpetuall peace, the which should be confirmed in writing, sealed in fine gold: affirming further, that the K. of England should receiue yerely his tribute by that name out of the dutchie of Normandy, with all the costs which he had sustained in the warres. And also, where there was a restraint made in France of the French Quenes dowrie (whome the duke of Suffolke had married) for diuers yéres during the wars, it was concluded, that she should not only receiue it againe, but also the arrerages that were vnpaid. This peace thus concluded, there should bee such an amitie betwéene the gentlemen of each realme, and entercourse of merchants, that it should seeme to all men both territories to be but one monarch: gentlemen maie trauell from one Countrie to another, for their recreation and pastime: the merchants being in either country arriued, shal be assured to trauel about their affaires in peace and tranquilitie, so that this realme shall flo'ie and prosper for euer, &c.

Ambassadors out of France.

The 20. of October were receiued into London certaine ambassadors out of France, about 80. in number, of the most noble and worthy gentlemen in all France: they were lodged in the bishops palace in Pauls churchyard, to whom diuers noblemen resorted, and gaue them diuers presents, especially the maior of the city of London, as wine, sugar, war, Capons, Wildfoule, beefes, muttons, and other necessarie things in great abundance, for the expenses of their house. Then they resorted vnto the court, being at Grenwich, where they were receiued by the king. They had commission to establish the king in the order of France, for whom they brought, for that intent, a collar of fine golde, with the Michaell hanging thereat, and robes to the same order appertinant, the which was of blew veluet richly embrodered. And the king to gratifie the French K. with the semblable he sent a noble man of the order here in England, with Garter the herault into France, to establish the French king, in the order of the

Garter,

Cartar, with a semblable Collar, with a Cartar and Robes according to the same.

The ambassadors remaining here vntill their returne, all things being concluded concerning the perpetuall peace vpon solemne ceremonies and othes contained in certain instruments touching the same, which was confirmed by receiuing of the Sacrament in Pauls Church of London by the king, and the grand master of France, who represented the king his master, and there the instrument were sealed with gold, and the king put his hand thereunto, and the grand master did the like: betweene whome the cardinall diuided the Sacrament. And that don, they departed, the K. rode with the Cardinall to Westminster, and there dined with al the Frenchmen, passing al the day after with consultation of weighty matters, touching the conclusion of the saide articles of the perpetuall peace.

The king then departed again by water to Grenwich, at whose departing it was concluded by the kings deuise, that all the French men shoulde resort to Richmond, and hunt in euerie one of the parkes there: and from thence to Hampton court, and there to hunt, and the cardinall to make there a Supper or banquet, or both to them. And from thence they should ride to Windsor, and there to hunt: and after to returne to London, and so to Grenewich, and there to banquet with the K. Then was there made great preparation of al things for this great assembly at Hampton court: the cardinal called before him his principal officers, as Steward, treasurer, controller, and clearke of his kitchin, to whom he declared his mind, touching the entertainment of the Frenchmen at Hampton court; his pleasure to them known, they sent outcaters, puruiors, and other, the cokes wrought both night and day in suttleties, the yeomen and gromes of the wardrobes were busied in hanging of the chambers, and furnishing the same with beds of silk and other furniture: there were prouided 280. beds furnished with al maner of furniture to them belonging, too long particularly to be rehearsed. *Cardinal Wolsey banqueteth the French ambassadors at Hampton court*

The daie was come to the French men assigned, and they readie assembled before the howse of their appoyntment, wherefore the Officers caused them to ride to Hamwoorth, a place and a Parke of the kinges within three miles, there to hunt and spende the daie vntill night, at which time they returned againe to Hampton court, and euerie of them conueied to their seuerall chambers, hauing in them great fiers and Wine for their comforte, remayning there vntill the supper was readie. The chambers where they supped and banquetted, were ordered in this sort: first, the great wayting Chamber was hanged with rich Arras, as none were better than other, and furnished with tall yeomen to serue. There were set tables rounde about the Chamber banquetwise couered, a cupboord was there garnished with white siluer plate, hauing also in the same Chamber to giue the more light, foure plates of siluer set with great lights, and a great fire of wood and coles. The next Chamber being the chamber of presence, was hanged with verie rich arras, & a sumptuous cloth of estate furnished with many goodly gentlemen to serue the tables ordered in maner as the other Chamber was, sauing that the high Table was 1528 *Ann. reg. 20.*

remoued

remoued beneath the cloth of estate toward the middest of the chamber couered. Then was there a cupbord, being in length as broad as the chamber, with fiue desks of height, garnished with guilt plate, hauing with lights one paire of candlesticks of siluer and guilt, being curiously wrought, which cost three hundred markes, and standing vpon the same two lights of ware burning as big as torches to set it forth. This cupbord was barred round about, that no man could come nigh it, for there was none of all this plate touched in this banquet, for there was sufficient besides. The plates that hung on the wals to giue light were of siluer and guilt, hauing in them great pearchers of ware burning, a great fire in the chimney, and all other things necessarie for the furniture of so noble a feast. Now was all things in a readinesse. The trumpets were blowen to warne to supper: the officers discretely conducted these noble men from their chambers into the chamber where they should sup, and caused them there to sit downe, and that done, their seruice came vppe in such abundance both costly and full of subtleties, and with such a pleasant noise of instruments of musicke, that the French men (as it seemed) were rapte into a heauenly paradise. The Cardinall was not yet come, but they were merrie and pleasant. Before the second course, the Cardinall came in booted and spurred, all sodainely amongst them, and bade them Proface: at whose comming there was great ioie, with rising euerie man from his place. The cardinall caused them to sit still and keepe their roumes, and being in his apparell as he rode, called for a chaire & sate in the midst of the high table. Anone came vp the second course, with so many dishes, subtleties, and deuises, aboue a hundred in number, which were of so goodly proportion & costly, that I thinke the Frenchmen neuer saw the like, the wonder was no lesse than it was worthie indéede. There were castles with images, in the same Pauls church, for the quantity, aswell counterfeited, as the Painter should haue painted it on a cloth or wall. There were beasts, birds, and personages, most liuely made and counterfeited, some fighting with swords, some with guns, & crosbowes, some vaughting and leaping, some dancing with ladies, some on horses in complete harnesse, iusting with long and sharpe speares, with many moe deuises. Among all other was a chesse-borde made of spiced plate, with men there of the same, and for the good proportion, and because the French men be verie expert in that play, my lord Cardinall gaue the same to a gentleman of France, commanding there should be made a goodly case for the preseruation thereof in all haste, that he might conuey the same into his countrey. Then toke my lord a bole of gold filled with ipocrase, and putting off his cap, said: I drinke to the king my souereigne lord, and next, vnto the king your master, and therewith dranke a good draught: and when he had done, bee desired the grand master to pledge him cup and al, the which was well worth 500. marks, and so caused all the lords to pledge these two royall princes: then went the cups so merrily about, that manie of the French men were faine to be led to their beds.

Then rose vp the Cardinall, and went into his priuie chamber to pull off his bootes, and to shift him, and then went he to supper in his priuie chamber, and

and making a verie short supper, returned into the chamber of presence among the Frenchmen, using them so lovingly and familiarly, that they could not commend him too much: and whilest they were in communication and other pastimes, all their liueries were serued to their chambers, euery chamber had a bason and an ewer of siluer, a great liuerie pot of siluer, and some guilt, yea and some chamber had two liuery pots, with wine and beere: a siluer candlestick, both white and plaine, hauing in it two sizes, and a staffe torch of ware, a fine manchet, and a cheat loafe. Thus was euery chamber furnished throughout all the house: and yet the cupbords in the two banquetting chambers not once touched.

Thus, when it was more than time conuenient, they were conueied to their lodgings, where they rested that night.

In the morning they dined with the Cardinall, and so departed to Windsore. After the returne of the strangers from Windsore, which place, with the order thereof they much commended: The day approched that they were by the king inuited to the court, where first they dined, and after dancing & other pastimes by them done, the time of supper came on. Then was the banquetting chamber in the tilt yard at Greenewich, to the which place these strangers were conducted by the noblest personages in the court, where they did both sup and banquet. But to describe to you the order, the dishes, the subtilties, and strange deuises of the same, I lacke both a head of fine wit, and also cunning in my bowels to declare these wonderfull deuises. But this ye shall vnderstand, although it were marueilous sumptuous at Hampton court, yet that notwithstanding this banquet excelled the same, as far as golde doth exceede siluer in value of weight for weight, and the beholders professed neuer to haue seene the like.

King Henry banqueteth the French ambassadors at Greenewich.

In the middest of this banquet, there was tourneying at the barriers, with lusty gentlemen in complete harneste very gorgeous on foote. Then was there the like on horsebacke. And after all this was the most goodliest disguising or enterlude made in latine, the players being so rich, and of so strange deuises, that it passeth my capacity to expound.

This done, there came such a number of the fairest ladies and gentlewomen that bare any bruite of beauty in all the realme, in most richest apparell that might be deuised, with whom the gentlemen of France danced, vntill a gorgeous maske came in of gentlemen, who danced and masked with these ladies. This done, came in a maske of ladies: these ladies toke each of them one of the Frenchmen to dance and to maske: these women maskers spake good French to the Frenchmen, which delighted them very much to heare these ladies speake to them in their mother tongue.

Thus was this night consumed, from fiue of the clocke vntill three of the clocke after midnight, and then euerie man departed to their lodgings. After all this solemne cheere at a date appointed, they resorted to the court to take their leaue of the king and other noble men: then came they to Westminster vnto the cardinall, of whome they receiued the kings rewards, the which were these: euery man of honour and estimation had plate, some to the

value

value of three or foure hundred pound, and some more, and some lesse, besides other great giftes receiued before of the king, as gownes of veluet with rich furres, great chaines of golde, and goodlie horses, with diuers other giftes, and the least of them had a sum of crownes of gold: the worst page amongst them had twentie crownes for his part: and being thus nobly rewarded, they departed.

A French craer chased to the Tower wharffe of London.

A French craer, of 30. tunne, being manned with eight and thirty French men, and a Flemmish craer of seauen and twentie tun, and foure and twentie Flemmings, meeting at Margate, the one chased the other along the riuer of Thamis to the Tower wharffe of London, where sir Edmond Walsingham lieutenant of the Tower, staied them both, and tooke both their captaines and men.

The 17. day of June, the terme was adiourned to Michaelmas, because of the sweating sicknesse that then raigned in the citie of London, and there was no such watch at Midsummer, as before time had beene accustomed: of this sicknes died manie sodainlie in the kings court, namelie sir William Compton, sir Francis Poynts, [illegible]ther, who died with little warning. The king for a space remoued almost euery daie till he came to Titenhanger, a place of the abbot of Saint Albons, and there he with the queene, and a small company about them, remained till the sicknes was past.

King Henries marriage called in question.

Before the cardinals going into France in the preceding yeere, it was talked among the people, that king Henry (as ye haue heard) was by some perswaded, that his marriage with queene Katherine could not be good nor lawful, wherfore he determined to haue the case examined, cleered and adiudged by learning, law, & sufficient authoritie. The cardinall was by some put in blame for that scruple now cast into the kings conscience, for the hate he bare to the Emperor, and therefore he did not only procure the king of England to ioine in friendship with the French king, but also (as they said) sought a diuorce betwixt the king and the queene. But howsoeuer it came about that the K. was thus troubled in conscience concerning his marriage, it followed, that to haue the doubt cleerly removed, he called together the best learned of the realme, which were of seuerall opinions, wherefore he thought to knowe the truth by indifferent iudges, lest peraduenture the Spaniards and other would say that his owne subiects were not indifferent iudges in this behalfe, and therefore wrote his cause to Rome, as also (as ye haue heard) sent to the Vniuersities of Italie & France for their opinions: and desired the court of Rome to send into the realm a legate which should be indifferent, and of great and profound iudgement to heare the cause debated. At whose request the whole consistorie of the Colledge of Rome, sent thither Laurence Campeius a Priest Cardinall, a man of great wit and experience, which had beene sent hither before in the 10. yeere of this king, as ye haue heard, and with him was ioined in commission the Cardinall of Yorke, and Legate of England. This cardinall Campeius by long iourneies came into England, and much preparation was made to receiue him triumphantlie into London: but he was so sore vexed with the gout, that he refused all such solemnities, and desired that he might without

E. Hall.

Cardinal Campeius came to London.

without pompe be conueied to his lodging for his more quiet and reſt: and ſo on the 9. of October he came from S. Mary Oueries by water to the Biſh. of Bathes place without Temple barre, where hee was viſited of the cardinal of Yorke, & diuers other eſtates and prelats: and after he had reſted him a ſeaſon, he was brought to the K. preſence, then being at Bridewell, by the cardinall of Yorke, and was caried in a chaire betweẽ 4. perſons, for he was not able to ſtand, & the cardinal of Yorke & he ſate both on the right hand of the K. throne, and there one Franciſco ſecretary to cardinal Campeius made an eloquent oration in Latin: in which he rehearſed firſt, with what cruelty the emperors ſoldiors had handled the pope, what tyrannie they had ſhewed to the cardinals and prieſts, what ſacrilege and ſpoile they had committed in S. Peters church, how they had violated virgins, raviſhed mens wiues, and in concluſion, ſpoyled, robbed, and tormented all the Romans and inhabitants in the citie of Rome. And further he ſhewed what friendſhip the colledge of Rome founde at the K. hands, & the French kings in the time of that tribulation, that if they had not ioined together, the city of Rome with all their gouernors had bin brought to vtter ruine: for the which he ſaide, pope Clement and the Colledge of Cardinals, and the Senators of the Citie, with all the Citizens rendred to the king their heartie thanks, and promiſed him their loue and fauor, and amitie perpetuall. Oration

To the which Oration Doctor Foxe Prouoſte of Cambridge, made a diſcreete aunſwere: and as to the firſt point, hee declared that the king much lamented to heare his frendes; yea, or ante other Chriſtian men to bee handled with ſuch tyrannie: and as touching the ſeconde poynt, hee ſayde that the king did but the duetie of a Chriſtian Prince to relieue his friendes beeing in captiuitie, for the which hee would that the whole citie of Rome ſhould giue thanks to God, and not to him. After which anſwere made, the two Legates communed ſecretelie with the king a long ſpace, and after departed to their lodging. Of the comming of this Legate the people, eſpeciallie Women, talked largely, and ſaid, that the king would for his owne pleaſure haue another wife, & had ſent for this Legate to be diuorced from his Quéene, with manie fooliſh wordes, inſomuch, that whoſoeuer ſpake againſt the marriage, was of the common people abhorred and reproued, which common rumour was related to the king. Wherefore he like a prudent prince, willing al men to know his intent and purpoſe, cauſed all his nobilitie, iudges, and counſellors, with diuers other perſons, to come to his place of Bridewel on Sondaie the 8. of Nouember at afternoone, in his great chamber, and there to them ſayde, as neere as I coulde carie awaie (ſaith Hall) in theſe wordes following: Oration anſwered.

Our truſtie and welbeloued ſubiectes, both you of the nobilitie, and you of a meaner ſort, it is not vnknowne to you that we, both by gods prouiſion, and true and lawful inheritance, haue raigned ouer this realme almoſt 20 yeeres: during which time, wee haue ſo ordered vs, thanked bee God, that no outward enemie hath oppreſſed you, nor taken anie thing from vs, nor we haue inuaded no realme but we haue had victorie and honor, ſo that we thinke you nor none of your predeceſſors neuer liued more quietlie, more wealthie, nor The K. oration.

in

in more estimation vnder anie of our noble progenitors. But when we remember our mortalitie, and that we must die, then we thinke that all our doings in our little time are clerely defaced, and worthie of no memorie, if we leaue you in trouble at the time of our death. For if our true heire bee not known at the time of our death, see what trouble shall succeed to you and your children. The experience thereof some of you haue seene, after the death of our noble grandfather Edward the 4. and some haue heard what manslaughter continued in this realme betweene the houses of Yorke and Lancaster, by the which dissension this realme was like to haue beene clerelie destroied. And although it hath pleased God to send vs a faire daughter of a noble woman and me, begotten to our great comfort, yet it hath beene tolde vs by diuers great clarkes, that neither she is our lawfull daughter, nor her mother our lawfull wife, but that we liue together abhominably and detestably in open adultery, insomuch, that when our ambassade was last in France, and motion was made, that the D. of Orliance should marrie our said daughter, one of the chiefe counsellors to the French king saide: It were well done to know whether she be the king of Englands lawfull daughter, or not: for well knowne it is, that he begate her on his brothers wife, which is directly against Gods law, and his precept. Thinke you (my lords) that these words touch not my bodie and soule? thinke you that these doings doe not daily and hourely trouble my conscience and ver my spirits? Yes: we doubt not but if it were your owne cause, euerie man would seeke remedie, when the perill of your soule, and the losse of your inheritance is openly laid to you. For this onely cause I protest before God, and in the word of a prince, I haue asked counsell of the greatest clearkes in christendome, and for this cause I haue sent for this legat, as a man indifferent, only to know the truth, and to settle my conscience, and for none other cause, as God can iudge. And as touching the D. if it be iudged by the law of God, that she is my lawfull wife, there was neuer thing more acceptable to me in my life, both for the discharge of my conscience, & also for the good qualities and conditions which I know to be in her: for I assure you all, that beside her noble parentage of the which she is descended (as all you know) she is a woman of most gentlenes, of most humilitie, and bountifulnes, yea, and of all good qualities appertaining to nobilitie, she is without comparison, as I these 20. yeeres almost haue had the true experiment, so that if I were to marrie againe, if the marriage might be good, I would surely chuse her aboue all other women: but if it be determined by iudgement, that our marriage was against Gods law and clerely void, then I shall not only sorrow the departing from so good a lady and louing companion, but much more lament and bewaile my infortunat chance, that I haue so long liued in adultrie to Gods great displeasure, and haue no true heire of my bodie to inherite this realme. These be the sores that vere my minde, these be the pangs that trouble my conscience, and for these griefes I seeke a remedy: therefore I require of you all as our trust and confidence is in you, to declare to our subiects our intent according to our true meaning, and desire them to praie with vs that the truth may be known, for the discharge of our conscience, & sauing

of

of our soule: and for declaration hereof I haue assembled you together, and now you maie depart.

To sée what countenance was made amongst the hearers of this oration, it was a strange sight, for some sighed & said nothing, other were sory to heare the K. so troubled in his conscience: others fauouring the Q. much sorrowed, that this matter was now opened, and so euery man spake as his hart serued him: thus much Hall. And thus G. C. The cardinall of Yorke saith he, being prouoked to declare his opinion, and wisedome in the aduancement of the kings purpose, who thought it not méete to wade too far alone, or to giue his hastie iudgment in so weighty a matter, desired of the K. licence to alke counsell of men of famous learning, both in the diuine and ciuill lawes. What obtained, by his legantine authoritie, he sent his commission out for all the bishops of the realme that were learned in either of the said lawes, or had in any high estimation for their prudent counsell and iudgement, in princelie affaires of long experience. Then assembled those noble prelates and notable clarks of both vniuersities of Oxford and Cambridge, as also of diuers cathedrall churches of this realme accounted learned, and of witty discretion in determination of doubtfull questions. Then was this matter of the kings case consulted of from day to day, that it was to the learned a goodly hearing: but in fine the ancient fathers of both lawes, departed with one iudgement, contrarie to the principall expectation. Then was it thought expedient, that the K. should send out his commissioners into all the vniuersities of christendom, to bring with them the definition of their opinions in the same vnder the seale of euerie vniuersitie, which they obtained. Hauing now a sure staffe to stand by, these proceedings declared to the cardinall, he sent againe for the bishops, to whom he declared the trauell of these commissioners. And for affirmance thereof, shewed them the instruments of euery vniuersity vnder their seuerall seales. They went once againe to consultation. It was then concluded, that the king should send to the pope, declaring the opinions of these vniuersities, authorised by their common seales: to the which it was thought that the consent of these prelates of this realme should be necessary to be sent thither, altogither comprised in an instrument, sealed with all their seales annexed to the said instrument. Not long after the ambassadors were assigned to trauell in the matter, hauing certaine instructions, among which one was this, that if the Pope would not giue iudgement definitiue in the kings case, to require another commission to be granted vnder lead, to stablish a court to be kept in England, for that purpose directed to the lord cardinall and legat of England, and to the cardinal Campeius, who was then (though he were a stranger) bishop of Bathe (the which the king had giuen him) to determine, and iustly to iudge according to conscience and discretion: To the which, after long suite made, and the good will of the same Cardinall obtained to trauell into England, the pope granted to their suite, and the cardinall arriued in England, as ye before haue heard.

Now after some deliberation and consultation in the ordering and vsing of the kings matters, and his commission, and the articles of his ambassade 1529

séene,

sœne and read, and disgested, it was determined, that the king and Quéene his wife should be lodged at Bridewell. And then in the blacke Friars a certayne place was there appointed most conuenient for the K. and quénes repaire to the Court, there to bee kept for the disputation and determination of the case, whereas these two legates sate as iudges, before whome the king and Q. were ascited and commoned to appéere: which was a strange sight, and the newest deuise that euer was read or heard of before in ante region, story, or chronicle, a king and a Quéene to be constained by processe compellatorie to appéere in ante court as common persons within their owne Realme and dominion, to abide the iudgements and decrées of their owne subiects, being the royall diademe and prerogatiue thereof. Yée shall vnderstande (as I haue sayde before) that there was a court erected in the blacke Friars in London, whereas sate these two cardinals for Iudges in the same, in the moneths of Aprill, Maie, June, and Julie. Nowe will I set you out the manner and order of the same court: first, there was a court platted in Tables and Benches in manner of a Consistorie, one seate raysed higher for the Iudges to sit on than the other were. Then as it were in the middest of the sayde Iudges aloft aboue them 3. degrees high, was a cloth of estate hanged, with a Chaire royall vnder the same, wherein sate the king, and besides him, some distance from him sate the Q. and vnder the iudges fét sate the scribes and other necessary officers for the execution of the processe, and other thinges appertaining to such a court: the chiefe scribe was D. Steuens, after B. of Winchester, and the apparator, who was Caller of the Court, was one Cooke (most commonlie called Cooke of Winchester.) Then before the king and the iudges within the court sate the Archbish. of Canterb. D. Warham, and all the other bishops. Then stood at both endes within, the counsellors learned in the lawes, as well the kinges as the Quenes. The doctors of law for the king, were doctor Simpson that was after bishop of Chichester, and doctor Bell, that was after bishop of Worcester, with diuers other, and prodors in the same law on the same side were, doctor Peter, doctor Tregonel, with others. On the other side for the Q. were doctor Fisher B. of Rochester, doctor Standish, and doctor Ridley, a verie small man of stature, but surelie a great and excellent clearke in diuinitie. Thus was the court furnished. The Iudges commaunded the crier to proclaime silence whilest their commission was reade, both to the court, and to the people assembled. That done, the Scribes comaunded the cryer to call the king by the name of king Henry of Englande, come into the Court, &c. With that the king aunswered and sayde: Here. Then called hee the Queene, by the name of Katherine Queene of Englande, come into the Court, &c. Who made no aunswere, but rose incontinent out of her Chayre, and because shee coulde not come to the king directlie, for the distance seuered betweene them, shee went about by the Court, and came to the king, kneeling downe at his feete in the sight of all the Court and people, to whome shee sayde in effect these wordes, as followeth: Syr (quoth shee) I desire you to doe mee iustice and right, and take some pitie vpon mee, for I am a poore woman, and a straunger, borne out of your dominion, hauing heere no indifferent Counsell, and lesse assurance of friendship:

An. reg. 21. The K. mariage argued in open court at the Blackefriers.

Words of Q. Katherine.

friendship: Alas sir, what haue I offended you, or what occasion of displeasure haue I shewed you, intending thus to put me from you after this sort? I take god to my iudge, I haue bẽ to you a true and an humble wife, euer conformable to your will & pleasure, that neuer contrarted or gainsaid anie thing thereof, and being alwaies contented with all things wherin you had anie delight or dalliance, whether little or much, without grudge or countenance of discontentation or displeasure: I loued for your sake al thẽ whom you loued, whether I had cause or no cause, whether they were my friends or enemies. I haue bẽne your wife these twentie yeres or mo, and you haue had by me diuers children, and when ye had me at the first, I take God to be my iudge, that I was a verie maid, and whether it be true or no, I put it to your conscience. If there be anie such cause that you can alledge against me, either of dishonestie, or matter lawfull to put me from you, I am content to depart to my shame and rebuke: and if there be none, then I praie you to let me haue iustice at your hand. The king your father was in his time of such an excellent wit, that he was accounted among all men for wisedome to be a second Salomon, and the king of Spaine my father Ferdinando was reckoned one of the wisest princes that raigned in Spaine manie yeres before: it is not therefore to be doubted, but that they had gathered as wise counsellers vnto them of euerie realme, as to their wisedomes they thought meete, and as to me seemeth there were in those daies as wise and well learned in both the realmes, as be nowe at this daie, who thought the marriage betweene you and me good and lawfull: therefore it is a wonder to me to heare, what new inuentions are now inuented against me that neuer intended but honestie: and nowe to cause me to stand to the order and iudgement of this court, ye should (as seemeth me) doe me much wrong, for ye maie condemne me for lacke of answere, hauing no counsell but such as ye haue assigned me: ye must consider that they cannot be indifferent on my part when they be your own subiects, and such as ye haue taken and chosen out of your owne councell, whereunto they be priuie, and dare not disclose your will and intent. Therefore I humblie desire you in the way of charitie to spare me, vntill I may know what counsell and aduise my friends in Spaine wil aduertise me to take, and if you will not, then your pleasure be fulfilled: and with that she arose vp, making a low curtesie to the king, and departed from thence, supposing that she would haue resorted againe to her former place. But she toke her way straight out of the court, leaning vpon the arme of one of her seruants, who was her general receiuer, called M. Griffith. The king being aduertised that she was readie to go out of the house, where the court was kept, commanded the crier to call her againe, who called her by these words, Katherine Q. of England, come into the court: with that quoth M. Griffith, Madam, ye be called againe. On, on (quoth she) it maketh no matter, it is no indifferent court for me, therefore I will not tarrie, go on your waies: and thus she departed without any further answere at that time or anie other, and neuer would appeare after in any court. The king perceiuing she was departed thus, and considering her words which she pronounced before him, said to the audience these words in effect: For as much (quoth he)

as the Quéene is gone, I will in her absence declare vnto you all: She hath béen to me as true, as obedient, and as comfortable a wife, as I would with or desire: she hath all the vertuous qualities that ought to be in a woman of her dignity, or in anie other of a baser estate: she is also surely a noble woman borne, her conditions will well declare the same. With that (quoth cardinall Wolsey) Sir, I most humbly require your highnes, to declare before al this audience, whether I haue béene the chiefe and first mouer of this matter vnto your maiestie or no, for I am greatlie suspected herein. My Lord Cardinall (quoth the K.) I can well excuse you in this matter: marie (quoth he) ye haue béene rather against me in the tempting hereof, than a setter forward or mouer of the same: the speciall cause that moued me vnto this matter, was a certaine scrupulositie that pricked my conscience, vpon certain words spoken at a time when it was, by the B. of Bayon the French ambassador, who had béen hither sent vpon the debating of a marriage to be concluded betwéene the princesse our daughter the ladie Mary, and the Duke of Orleance, second son to the K. of France, and vpon the resolution and determination of the same, he desired respite to aduertise the king his maister thereof, whether our daughter Mary should be legitimate, in respect of this my marriage with this woman, being sometime my brothers wife: which words once conceiued within the secret bottome of my conscience, engendred such a scrupulous doubt, that my conscience was incontinently accombred, vered and disquieted, whereby I thought my selfe to be greatly in danger of Gods indignation, which appeared to be (as me séemed) the rather, for that he sent vs no issue male: & all such issues male as my said wife had by me, died incontinent after they came into the world, so that I doubted the great displeasure of God in that behalfe. Thus my conscience being tossed in the waues of a scrupulous conscience, & partly in despaire to haue anie other issue than I had already by this ladie nowe my wife, it behoued me further to consider the state of this realme, and the danger that it stood in for lacke of a prince to succéede me, I thought it good in release of the weightie burden of my weake conscience, & also the quiet estate of this worthie realme, to attempt the lawe therein, whether I maie lawfullie take another wife more lawfully, by whom God maie send me more issue, in case this my first copulation was not good, without any carnal concupiscence, and not for any displeasure or misliking of the quéenes person and age, with whom I would be as well contented to continue, if our marriage may stand with the lawes of God, as with anie woman aliue: in which point consisteth all this doubt that we go about now to trie, by the learning, wisedome, & iudgement of you our prelats and pastors of all this our realme and dominion now here assembled for that purpose, to whose conscience and learning I haue committed the charge and iudgement, according to the which, I will (God willing) be right well content to submit my selfe, and for my part obey the same: wherein, after that I perceiued my conscience so doubtfull, I moued it in confession to you my lord of Lincoln then ghostly father: and for as much as then you your selfe were in some doubt, you moued me to aske the counsel of al you my lords: whereupon I moued you my lord of Canterburie, first to haue your licence,

cence, in as much as you were metropolitane, to put this matter in question, and so I did of all you my lords, to which you granted vnder your seales, and that I haue here to be shewed. That is truth, if it please your grace, quoth the archbishop of Canterburie, I doubt not but my brethren here present will acknowledge the same: No sir not so, vnder your correction, quoth the bishop of Rochester, for you haue not mine: No, ah, quoth the king, looke here, is not this your hand and seale, and shewed him the instrument with seales? No forsooth, quoth the bishop. How saie you to that, quoth the K. to the archbishop of Canterburie? Sir, it is his hand and his seale, said my L. of Canterburie. No my lord (quoth the bishop of Rochester) indeed you were in hand with me to haue both my hand and seale, as other of my lords haue done, but then I said again to you, that I would neuer consent to anie such act, for it was much against my conscience, and therfore my hand and seale should neuer be set to any such instrument, God willing, with much more matter touching the same communication betweene vs. You saie truth, quoth the archbishop of Canterburie, such words you had vnto me, but you were fully resolued at last, that I should subscribe your name, and put to your seale my selfe, and you would allow the same. All which, quoth the bishop of Rochester, vnder your correction my lord, is not true. Well, well (quoth the king) it maketh no great matter, we will not stand with you in argument, you are but one man. And then the king rose vp, and the court was adiorned vntill another date.

The nert court date the cardinals sate againe, at which time the counsell on both sides were there ready to answere: the kings counsel alledged the matrimonie not to be lawfull at the beginning, because of the carnall copulation had betweene prince Arthur and the Queene. This matter being verie vehementlie touched on that side, and to prooue it, they alledged manie reasons and similitudes of truth, and being answered negatiuelie againe on the other side, it seemed that all their former allegations were verie doubtfull to be tried, and that no man knew the truth. Yes (quoth the bishop of Rochester) I know the truth: how know you (quoth my L. cardinall) the truth more than anie other person? Yes forsooth my lord (quoth he) *Quia ego sum professor veritatis*, therefore I know the truth: I know that God is truth it selfe, and he neuer saith but truth, and God said: *Quos Deus coniunxit, homo non separet*. And for as much as this marriage was ioined and made by God to a good intent, I saie that I know the truth, and that man cannot breake vpon anie wilfull occasion that which God hath made and constituted. So much doth all faithfull men (quoth my lord cardinall) know as well as you, yet this reason is not sufficient in this case, for the kings counsell doe alledge diuers presumptions to prooue that it was not lawfull at the beginning. *Ergo* it was not ordained by God, for God doth nothing without a due order, therefore it is not to bee doubted, but if the presumptions be true, which they do alledge to be most true, then the coniunction was, ne could not be of God. Therefore I saie to you my lord of Rochester, ye know not the truth, vnlesse ye can auoid their presumptions by iust reasons. Then quoth doctor Ridley, it is a shame and a great dishonor to this honorable presence, that anie such presumption should be alledged

in this open court, which be too detestable to be rehearsed: what (quoth my lord cardinall) *Domine doctor magis reuerenter?* No, no, my L. (quoth he) there belongeth no reuerence to be giuen to this matter, for an vnreuerent matter would be vnreuerently answered: and there they left, and proceeded forth with other matter.

Thus the court passed from session to session, and daie to daie, that at a certaine daie of their session, the king sent for my L. cardinall to come to him to Bridewell, who to accomplish his commandement went to him, and being there with him in communication in his priuie chamber from 11. vnto 12. of the clocke at none and past, my L. cardinall departed from the K. and toke his barge at the Blacke friers, and went to his house at Westminster. The Bishop of Carlile being in his barge, said vnto him, winding his face, it is a hot daie quoth he: Yea my L. (quoth the cardinall) if ye had been aswell chafed as I haue bin within this bower, ye would saie it were verie hot: and as sone as he came home to his house at Westminster, he went incontinent to his naked bed, where he had not laine full two howers, but that my L. of Wiltshire came to speake with him of a message from the K. My Lord vnderstanding of his comming, commanded he should be brought to his bed side, and he being there, shewed him the K. pleasure was that he should incontinent go with the other cardinall vnto the Q. (who was then in Bridewel in her chamber there) to perswade with her by their wisedomes, and to aduise her to surrender the whole matter into the kings hands, by her owne consent & will, which should be much better to her honour, than to stand to the triall of law, and thereby to be condemned, which should seeme much to her dishonor. To fulfill the kings pleasure, my L. said he was readie, and would prepare him to go thither out of hand, &c. Then my L. arose, and made him readie, taking his barge, and went straight to Bathe place to cardinall Campeius, and so went togither to Bridewell, directly to the quenes lodging, & being in her chamber of presence, they shewed the gentleman vsher that they came to speake with the Q. grace. The gentleman vsher aduertised the quen, that the cardinals were come to speak with her: with that she rose vppe, and with a skeine of white thread about her neck, came into her chamber of presence, where the cardinals were attending, at whose comming, quoth she, Alacke my lords, I am verie sorie to make you attend vpon me, what is your pleasure with me? If it please your grace (quoth cardinall Wolsey) to go into your priuie chamber, we will shew you the cause of our comming: My lord (quoth she) if ye haue anie thing to saie, speake it openly before all these folke: for I feare nothing that yee can say against me, but that I would all the world should heare and see it, and therfore speake your minde openly I praie you. Then began the cardinall to speake to her in Latin: Nay good my L. (quoth she) speake to me in English, for I can (I thanke God) both speake and vnderstand English, although I vnderstand some latin. Forsooth (quoth the Cardinall) good madam, if it please your grace, we come both to know your minde how you are disposed to do in this matter betweene the king and you, and also to declare secretly our opinions and counsell vnto you, which we do only for very zeale and obedience we beare vnto your grace.

My lord (quoth she) I thanke you for your good will: but to make you answere in your request, I cā not so suddenly, for I was set among my maids at worke, thinking full little of any such matter, wherein there néedeth a longer deliberation, and a better head than mine to make answere; for I néed of counsell in this case, which toucheth me so neere, and for any counsell or friendship that I can find in England, they are not for my profit: what thinke you I praie you my lords, will anie English man counsell me, or be friendly to me against the K. pleasure, that be his subiects? nay forsoth; and as for my counsell in whom I will put my trust, they be not heere, they be in Spaine in mine owne countrey: and my lords, I am a poore woman lacking wit to answere to any such noble persons of wisedome as you be in so waighty a matter, therefore I pray you, be good vnto me poore woman, destitute of friends here in a forren region, and your counsell also I will be glad to heare: and therewith she toke the cardinall by the hand, & led him into her priuie chamber with the other cardinall, where they taried a season talking with the quæne: which communication ended, they departed to the king, making to him relation of her talke, and after returned home to supper. Thus this case went forward from court to court, til it came to iudgement, so that euery man expected iudgement would be giuen the next day, at which day the king came thither, and set him down in a chaire within a doore, in the end of the galerie (which opened directly against the iudgment seate) to heare the iudgement giuen, at which time, all their procædings were openly read in Latin. That done, the kings counsell at the barre called for iudgement, with that (quoth Cardinall Campeius) I will not giue iudgement till I haue made relation to the pope of all our procædings, whose counsell and commandement in this case I will obserue, the matter is too high for vs to giue anie hastie iudgement, considering the highnes of the persons, and the doubtfull occasions alledged: and also whose commissioners we be, vnder whose authority we sit, it were therfore reason that we should make our chiefe head a counsell in the same, before we procæd to iudgment definitiue. I come not to please for fauor, mæde, or dread of any person aliue, be he king or otherwise, I haue no such respect to the person, that I will offend my conscience, I will not for the fauor or displeasure of any high estate, do that thing that should be against the will of God, I am an old man both weake and sickly, that looke daily for death, &c. And for as much as I do vnderstand, hauing perceiuerance by the allegations in the matter, the case is very doubtfull, and also the party defendant will make none answere, but doth rather appeale from vs, supposing that we be not indifferent, considering the kings high dignitie and authority within his own realme, which he hath ouer his subiects, and we being his subiects, she thinketh that we cannot do iustice for feare of displeasure. Therfore to auoide all these ambiguities and doubts, I will not wade any further in this matter, vnlesse I haue the full opinion and assent of the pope, and such other of more experience, or as be séene better in such doubtfull lawes, than I am: therfore I will adiourne the court for this time, according to the order of the court of Rome, from whence semblable iurisdiction is deriued: and if we should go further than our commission doth warrant vs, it were great follie

and much to our blames, and maie be accounted breakers of the order of the high court, from which (as I said) our authorities be derived. And with that the court was dissolued, and no more done. Then stept forth the duke of Suffolke from the king, and spake with an hault countenance these words: It was neuer merie in England (quoth he) while we had any cardinals among vs: which wordes were set forth both with countenance and behemencie, that all men maruelled what he intended, to whom no man made answere. Then the Duke spake againe in great despight, to the which our Cardinall (perceiuing his behemencie) soberlie made answere, &c. This matter continued thus a long season, and my Lord Cardinall was in displeasure with the king, for that the matter in his suite toke no better successe to his purpose, notwithstanding my L. excused him by his commission, which gaue him no authoritie to proceed in iudgement without knowledge of the pope, who reserued the same to himselfe. At the last they were aduertised by their post, that the Pope would take deliberation in the matter, vntill his courts were opened, which should not be before Bartholomewtide next. The king considering the time so long ere it should be determined, thought it good to send an ambassador to the pope to perswade with him, to shew such honorable fauor vnto his maiestie, that the matter might sooner be ended than it was like to be, doctor Stephen Gardener secretary was thither sent, and there tarried till the latter end of sommer. The king commanded the quæne to be remoued out of the court, and sent to another place: and his highnes rode in his progresse. And when M. Secretarie was returned from Rome, Cardinall Campeius made suite to be discharged, and was admitted to returne to Rome.

The Duke of Suffolke his speech touching the cardinals.

Stephen Gardener the kings secretary sent ambassador.

Cardinall Campeius toke his iourney towards Rome, with the kings reward, but what it was I am vncertaine: neuertheles after their departure it was reported vnto the king by the counsell, that cardinall Campeius was departed, & caried with him great treasures of my L. cardinals of England, to be conuaied in great sums to Rome, whither they surmised he would secretlie repaire out of the realme: insomuch as they caused a post to ride after the cardinall to search him. And when they ouertoke him at Calais (where he was staid vntill search was made) there was not found so much money as he receiued of the kings reward, and so he was dismissed, and went his waie.

After that Cardinall Campeius was thus departed and gone, Michaelmas terme drew on, against which time my L. cardinall resorted vnto his house at Westminster: and when the terme began, he went vnto the hall in such like sort and gesture, as he was accustomed most commonly to do, and sate in the Chancerie being then Chancelor: after which daie he neuer sate more.

The nert daie he tarried at home expecting the comming of the Dukes of Suffolke & Norffolke, who came not that daie: but the nert day, to wit, the 18. day of October, they came thither vnto him, to whom they declared the kings pleasure, which was that he should surrender and deliuer vp the great seale into their hands, and to depart simplie vnto Asher, which was an house situate nigh vnto Hampton court, belonging to the bishoprick of Winchester. The cardinall demanded of them their commission that gaue them such authoritie:

who

who answered againe, that they were sufficient commissioners, and had authoritie to doe no lesse by the kings mouth: notwithstanding he would in no wise agree in that behalfe, without further knowledge of their authoritie, saying: That the great seale was deliuered him by the kings person, to enioy the ministration thereof, with the rome of the Chancelor, for the terme of his life, wher of for his surety he had the K. letters pattents: which matter was greatly debated betweene him and the dukes, with manie great and heinous words, insomuch that the dukes were faine to depart againe without their purpose, and rode to Windsor to the king, and made report accordingly: but the next day they returned againe, bringing with them the kings letters. Then the cardinal deliuered vnto them the great seale, & was content to depart simply, taking with him nothing but only certaine prouision for his house: and after long talke betweene him and the dukes, they departed with the great seale of England, and brought the same to the king. Then the cardinall called all his officers before him, & toke account of them for all such stuffe whereof they had charge, and in his galerie were set diuers tables, whereupon laie a great number of goodly rich stuffe, as whole pieces of silke of all colours, veluet, satin, damaske, taffata, grograin and other things: also there lay 1000. pieces of fine Holland cloth. There was laid on euery table bookes, reporting the contents of the same, and so was there inuentories of al things in order against the kings comming. He caused to be hanged the wals of the galery on the one side, with cloth of gold, cloth of tissue, cloth of siluer, and rich cloth of bodken of diuers colours: on the other side were hanged the richest sute of copes of his owne prouision made for his colleges of Oxford and Ipswich, that euer was seene in England. Then had he two chambers adioining to the galerie, the one most commonlie called the guilt chamber, and the other the counsell chamber, wherin were set vp two broade and long tables vpon trestles, whereupon was set such a number of plate of all sortes, as was almost incredible. In the guilt chamber were set out vpon the table nothing but guilt plate, and vpon a cupbord and in a window was set no plate but gold, very rich: and in the counsell chamber was all white & parcell guilt plate, and vnder the table in baskets was all old broken siluer plate, and bookes set by them, purporting euery kind of plate, and euery parcell, with the contents of the ounces thereof. Thus was all things prepared, giuing charge of all the said stuffe, with all other remaining in euery office, to be deliuered to the K. to make answere to their charge: for the order was such, that euery officer was charged with the receipt of the stuffe belonging to his office by indenture. Then all things being ordered, as is before rehearsed, my lord prepared him to depart by water, and before his going sir William Gascoine being his treasurer, came vnto him (to whome he gaue among other the charge of the deliuerie of the said goods to be deliuered vnto the king) and said vnto the cardinall then being his lord and master. Sir (quoth he) I am sorie for your grace: for ye shal go straight way to the tower, as I heare say. Is this the good comfort and counsel (quoth my L. cardinal vnto him) that you can giue your master in aduersitie? It hath bin alwaies your naturall inclination to be very light of credit, & much more lighter of reporting

Cardinal discharged of the great seale, and departed from Yorke place simply.

lies. I would you should know sir William, and all those reporters, that it is vntrue, for I neuer deserued to come there, although it hath pleased the king to take my house readie furnished for his pleasure at this time. I would all the world knew that I haue nothing but it is his of right; for by him, and of him I haue receiued all that I haue: therfore it is of conuenience and reason, that I render vnto his maiestie the same againe with all my heart: therefore go your wayes, and attend well to your charge. And therewithall hee made him readie, and then with his traine of gentlemen and yeomen, which was no small number, hee tooke his barge at his priuie staires, and so went by water vnto Putney: at the taking whereof, there was walking vp and down in Thamis as full of boates, filled with people of London, expecting the cardinals departing by water, supposing that he should haue gone to the tower, whereof they ioied verie much. O wauering and newfangled multitude, is it not a woonder to consider the mutabilitie of this vncertaine worlde, the common people desireth alwaies those thinges for the nouelties sake, which after turneth them to small profit or commodity? For if the sequele be wel and directly waied and considered, they had small cause to reioice at his fal. What hath succeeded, wise men do know, and the common sort themselues haue felt: therefore to woonder at it were but a follie, to studie the remedie, it profiteth not: for thus it hath euer beene, and will alwaies be, do what yee will to redresse the same it booteth not. I cannot see, but alwaies men in authoritie bee disdained with the common sort of people, and they most of al that do obserue and minister iustice: for where they please some one that receiueth the benefit of the law at their hands, according to iustice, they in likewise displease the contrary part, supposing to sustain wrong where they haue right. Thus al iustices be in contempt with the people alwaies, for ministration of their duty, yet must some such bee alwaies elected, and deputed so to do, for else if the world should bee without inquisition and order, there should be too much error and abhomination. When he was arriued with all his traine at Putney, being vpon the land, he tooke his mule, and euerie man tooke their horses; and riding not past a paire of buts length, hee espyed a Gentleman come ryding in poste downe the Hill in the Towne of Putney: And demaunding of his Gentlemen about him, what hee was that came ryding downe so fast, forsoth Sir (quoth they) it is master Noris, as it seemeth to vs: and by and by, hee came to my Lorde, saluting him and sayde: Sir, the Kinges maiestie commendeth him vnto you, and commaunded me to shewe you, that you bee as much in his fauor as euer you were, and so shall bee: therefore hee would that you shoulde bee of good cheere, and take no thought, for you shall not lacke. And although hee hath done thus vnkindlie towards you, it is more for the satisfying of some, than of any indignation. And yet you knowe well that hee is able to recompence you againe, and restore you to twise so much: and thus he bad me that I shoulde shewe you, and willed me to bid you to take all this matter in patience: and sir for my part, I trust to see you in better estate then euer ye were. But when he had hearde master Noris report the good and comfortable wordes of the king, hee quicklie lighted from his mule, all alone, as though he had beene the yongest amongst his

Wauering of the newfangled multitude described.

Cardinal Wolsey arriued at Putney, and what followeth there at that tyme.

his men, and incontinent kneeled downe in the dirt vpon both his knees, holding vp his hands for ioy of the kings most comfortable message: maist. Noris lighted also, espying him so sone vpon his knées, and knéeled by him, and toke him in his armes, and asked him how hee did, calling vpon him to credite his message: M. Noris (quoth he) when I consider the ioifull newes that you haue brought me, I could do no lesse than greatly reioce, euery word pierced so my hart, that the sodain ioy surmounted my memory, hauing no regard or respect to the place, but I thought it my duty, that in the same place where I receyued this comfort to laud and praise god vpon my knées, and most humbly to render to my soueraign lord my harty thanks for the same. And as hee was talking thus vpon his knées to M Noris, he would haue pulled off a veluet night cappe which he ware vnder his black hat, and scarlet cap, but he coulde not vndoe the knot vnder his chin: therefore with violence hee rent his laces of his cap, and pulled his said cap from his head, and knéeled bare headed: and this don, he rose vp, and mounted againe vpon his mule, and so rode forth vp the high waie in the Towne, talking with Master Noris. And when hee came vppon Putney heath, where M. Noris should depart from him, master Noris gaue him a ring of golde with a stone, and saide vnto him, that the king sent him the same for a token of his good will, which ring (quoth he) the king saith ye know very wel. It was the priuie token betweene the king and him, when the king would haue anie especiall thing sped at his hands: then said he to master Noris, if I were lord of the realme, the one halfe therof were too small a reward to giue you for your paines and good newes: but good master Noris, consider with mee that I haue nothing left me, but my clothes vpon my backe, therefore I shall desire you to take this small reward at my hand (the which was a litle chaine of gold made like a flagen chaine, with a crosse of gold, wherein was a peece of the holie crosse, which he continuallie ware about his neck next his bodie:) and said further more: master Noris I assure you, when I was in prosperitie, although it seem but smal in value, yet I would not gladly haue departed with ỹ same for a thousande pounde, therefore I shall require you to take it in good worth, & to weare it about your neck continually for my sake, and to remember me to the king, when ye shall see opportunitie, vnto whose highnesse I shall most instantlie require you to haue me most humblie commended, for whose charitable disposition towardes me, I can but praie for the preseruation of his royall estate. I am his obedient subiect, his poore chaplain, and bead man, and so will be during my life, accounting my selfe nothing, nor to haue any thing but onelie of him, and by him, whome I haue truelie and trulie serued to the best of my grosse wit: and with that he toke master Noris by the hand bareheaded, and so departed. And when hee was gone but a small distance, he returned againe, and caused Master Noris to bee called to him: when master Noris was returned, hee sayde vnto him, I am sorie (quoth he) that I haue no token to sende to the king: but if yée will at my request, present the king with this poore foole, I trust he will accept him: for he is for a noblemans pleasure, forsooth worth 1000. pounde: so master Noris toke the foole, with whome my lord was fain to send six of his tallest yeomen to helpe him to conuey the foole

Watch the lorde cardinals foole giuen to the K.

to

to the court, for the poore fole toke on like a tirant rather then he would haue departed from my L. but notwithstanding they conueied him, and so brought him to the court, where the king receiued him verie gladlie.

After departure of Mast. Noris with his token to the king, my Lorde rode straite to Asher, which is an house belonging to the Bishoppricke of Winchester, scituate in the countie of Surreie, not far from Hampton Court, where my L. and his familie continued the space of three or foure weekes, without either beds, sheetes, table clothes, or dishes to eat their meate in, or wherewith to bake ante, howbeit there was good prouision of all kinde of victuall, and of beere, and wine, whereof there was sufficient, and plentie enough: but my L. was compelled of necessitie to borrowe of maister Arundell, and of the bishop of Carleile, plate and dishes, both to drinke in, and eate his meate in. Thus my Lorde with his familie continued in this straunge estate vntill after Hallowntide.

Maister Tho. Cromwel his counsel to the Cardinall.

On Alhalowne date when the cardinall had finished his seruice, hee returned into his chamber, and called for his dinner, who was serued in his priuie chamber, and there dined among diuers his Doctors, among whome maister Thomas Cromwell dined: and sitting at dinner, it came to passe that in communication of his gentlemen and seruaunts true and faithfull seruice, which my Lorde much commended, Maister Cromwell tooke an occasion, to tell my Lorde that hee ought in conscience to consider the trueth, and good seruice that they had doone him in his necessitie, which did not forsake him in weale nor in woe, and saide: Sir, it shall be well doone for your grace to call them before you, both Gentlemen which bee woorthie persons, and also Yeomen, and let them vnderstande, that yee right well consider their paines and trueth, with their faithfull seruice, and to giue them your commendation, with good wordes, the which shall bee to them great courage, to sustaine your miserie with paines and patience, and to spende their life and substance in your seruice. Alas, Thomas (quoth my Lorde) yee knowe I haue nothing to giue them, and wordes without deedes bee not often well taken, for if I hadde but as I late hadde, I woulde departe with them so frankelie, as they shoulde bee well contente: But nothing hath no sauour: and I am both ashamed and also sorie, that I am not able to requite their faithfull seruice. And although I doe reioice, as I maie, to consider the fidelitie that I see in the number of my seruauntes, who will not forsake mee in my miserable estate, but bee as diligent, and as seruiceable about me, as they were in my great triumph and glorie: Yet doe I lament againe as behementlie the want of substaunce to distribute among them. Why Sir, (quoth Maister Cromwell) haue yee not heere a number of Chaplaines, to whome yee haue departed liberallie with Spirituall promotions, insomuch, as some maie dispende by your Graces preferment a thousande pounde by yeere, and some fiue hundred Markes, and some more, and some lesse? You haue not a Chaplain within your house, or belonging vnto you, but he maie spend well at the least, by your procurement and promotion, three hundred Markes yeerelie, who haue had all the profite and gaines at your handes: and your other

seruauntes

seruauntes nothing: and yet haue your seruauntes taken much more paines in one daie, then all your idle Chaplaines haue doone in a yeere. Therefore if they will not freelie and friendelie consider your liberalitie, and depart with you of the same goods gotten in your seruice, nowe in your great indigence and necessitie, it is pittie that they liue, and all the worlde will haue them in indignation and hatred, for their ingratitude to their Master. I thinke no lesse Thomas (quoth my Lorde:) wherefore I praie you cause all my seruants to assemble without in my great Chamber after dinner, and see them stande in order, and I will declare vnto them my mind. After that the bowrds ende was taken vppe, Master Cromwell came to the Gentleman Vsher and saide. Yeardе you not (quoth hee) what my Lorde said? Yes Sir, quoth hee, I did; why then, quoth hee, call all the Gentlemen and yeomen vppe into the great Chamber, and so it was doone: the Gentlemen placed on the right side of the Chamber, and the Yeomen on the otherside, and at the last my Lord came out in his rochet vpon a violet gowne like a bishop, who went straight to the vpper end of the saide chamber, where was the great Windowe, standing there a while, his Chaplaines about him, beholding the goodlie number of his seruants, who coulde not speake vnto them vntill the teares ranne downe his cheekes, which few teares perceiued by his seruantes, caused the fountaines of water to gush out of their faithfull eies in such sort, as it woulde cause a cruell hart to lament. At the last, after he had turned his face to the window, and dried his moisted cheekes, he spake to them in this sort in effect. Most faithful gentlemen, and true harted Yeomen, I do not lament to see you about mee, but I lament in a maner, a certaine ingratitude on my behalfe towardes you all, in whom hath bin a great default that in my prosperitie haue not doon so much for you as I might haue don either in deed or in word, which laie in my power then to do, but then I knew not the iewel and special treasure I had in my house of you my faithfull seruantes; but now experience hath taught me, and with the eies of my discretion I do perceiue the same. There was neuer thing that repented me more that euer I did, then doth the remembrance of my great and most obliuious negligence, & vnkind ingratitued that I haue not promoted, preferred, and aduanced you all, according to your demerits; howbeit, it is not vnknowne vnto you al, that I was not so fullie furnished of temporal promotions in my gift, as I was of spirituall preferments; and if I should haue preferred you to anie of the K. offices, then shoulde I haue run in the indignation of the Kings seruants, who would not much let to report behind my back, that there could no office in the K. gift, escape the cardinal & his seruantes; and thus should I haue run in open slander before all the world. But now it is come to this passe, that it pleased the king to take all that euer I haue, into his hands, so that I haue nothing to giue you: for I haue nothing left mee but my bare clothes vppon my backe, the which are simple in comparison that I had; howbeit, if it might doe you anie good, I woulde not sticke to diuide the same among you; but my good gentlemen and Yeomen, my trustie and faithful seruants, and of whome no prince had the like, I shall require you to take some patience with me a while; for I doubt not, but that the King considering my

The Cardinals words to his gentlemen and yeomen.

suggested

ſuggeſted offence by mine enemies, which is put againſt me to be of ſmall griefe or hurt, for ſo great and ſodaine an ouerthrow will ſhortly reſtore me to my liuing, ſo that I ſhall be more able to deuide my ſubſtance among you, whereof ye ſhall not lacke, for what ſoeuer ſhal chance hereafter to be an ouerplus and ſuperfluitie of my reuenues, at the determination of my yearely account, it ſhal be diſtributed among you: for I will neuer during my life, eſteeme the goods of riches of this world any otherwiſe, then which ſhall be ſufficient to maintaine the ſtate, that God hath, and ſhall call me to. And if the king doe not ſo ſhortly reſtore me, then will I write for you, either to the king, or to any noble man within this realme to reteine your ſeruice: for I doubt not but the king or anie noble man of this realme will credite my letter in your commendation: therefore in the meane time I would aduiſe you to repaire home to your wiues, ſuch as haue wiues, and ſome of you that haue no wiues, to take a time to viſit your parents in the Countrey. There is none of you all, but once in a yeare ye would require licence to ſee and viſite your wife and other your friends: take this time therefore in that reſpect, and in your return I will not refuſe you to beg with you. I conſider that your ſeruice in my houſe hath bin ſuch, that ye be not apt to ſerue any man vnder the degree of a king: therefore I would aduiſe you to ſerue no man but the king, who I am ſure will not refuſe you. Therfore I ſhall deſire you to take your pleaſure for a month, and then ye may come againe: and by that time I truſt the K. will extend his mercy vpon me. Sir (quoth M. Cromwel) there be diuers of theſe your yeomen that would be glad to ſee their friends, but they lacke money: therefore here be diuers of your chaplaines who haue receiued at your hands great benefices, & liuings, let them ſhew themſelues vnto you as they be bound to do: I thinke their honeſty and charity is ſuch, that they will not ſee you lacke, that may do you good or pleaſure. And for my part, although I haue not receiued of your graces gift one peny toward the increaſe of my liuing, yet will I giue you this toward the diſpatch of your ſeruants: and therewith deliuered to my lord 5. l'. in gold: and now let vs ſee what your chaplains will do, I thinke they will depart with you much more liberally than I, who be more able to giue you a pound then I a penie, go to maſters (quoth he) to the chapleins: Inſomuch as they gaue to my L. liberallie, ſome 10. l'. ſome 20. nobles, ſome 5. l'. and ſo ſome more, & ſome leſſe, as their powers would extend at that time: by meanes whereof my lord receiued among them, as much money, as paide the yeomen 10. s. a piece towards their quarters wages, and as much money as would paie euerie of them for a months bord wages: and then they departed downe into the hall, where ſome determined to go to their friends, and ſome would not depart from my lord, vntill they might ſee him in better eſtate. My lord returned in to his chamber lamenting the departure from his ſeruants, making his moane to Maſter Cromwell, who comforted him the beſt he coulde, and deſired my lord to giue him leaue, to go to London, whereas he woulde either make or marre (which was alwaies his common word.) Then after a little communication with my lord in ſecret, he departed, and toke his horſe, and rode to London. At whoſe departing he ſaid to my lords gentlemen, fare-

Maſter Cromwell his comfort and gift to the cardinall.

T. Cromwell went to London to make or to marre.

well,

well, ye shall heare shortlie of me, and if I spéede well, I will not faile to bee here againe within these two daies, and so he rode on his iourneie, Ralph Sadler, since a knight, was then his clearke, and rode with him. After my L. had supped that night, and all men got to bed, beeing Allhalowne daie about midnight, one of the porters wakened the gentleman vsher, & tolde him that there were a great number of horsemen at the gate, that would com in, saieng that it was Sir Iohn Russell: the gentleman vsher bad the porter goe downe, and make a great fire in the lodge to drie them, for it had rained al that night most vehementlie. The saide gentleman vsher rose, cast on his night Gowne, and went to the gates, and asked who was there: with that Master Russell spake, and the gates were opened, Sir Iohn Russell went to the fire to drie him, and saide he came from the king on message to my Lorde, Sir, quoth the gentleman vsher, I trust your newes be good. Yea I promise you on my fidelitie, and so tel him, that I haue brought him such newes wat will please him well. The cardinall was wakened, and told of the iourneie taken by Sir Iohn Russel that troublesome night. I praie God al be for the best quoth my lorde: Yes quoth the gentleman vsher, he told me it was such newes, as ye would greatlie reioice to heare: wel then, quoth he, God be praised, and welcome be his grace, go ye and fetch him to me, and by that time I wil be ready to talke with him.

Sir Ralph Sadler.

Sir Io Russell sent to the cardinall.

When M. Russel was come to my lord he had cast on his night gowne, vnto whom M. Russel made most humble reuerence vpon his knée, whom my Lorde stoped vnto, and toke him vp, and bad him welcome: sir (quoth he) the K. commendeth him vnto you, and deliuered him a great ring of gold, with a turkes for a token, and willed me to bid you be of good cheere, for he loueth you as wel as euer he did, and is sorie for your trouble, whose minde runneth much vpon you: insomuch that before his grace sate downe to supper, he called mee vnto him, and desired me to take the pains secretlie to visit you, and to comfort you the best of my power. And sir I haue had the sorest iourneie for so litle a waie, that euer I had to my remembrance; my lord thanked him for his paines and good newes, and demanded of him if he had supped, and he said nai; wel then quoth my L. cause the cookes to prouide some meat for him, and cause a chamber to be prouided for him, that he maie take his rest a while vpon a bedde; all which commandement was fulfilled, and in the mean time my L. and M. Russel were in secret communication, and in the end M. Russel went to his chamber, and said he would tarie but a while, for he would be at the court, at Grēnwich again before daie, and would not for anie thing that it were known that he had bin with my L. that night. And so being in his chamber, hauing a smal repast, refresh him a while vpon a bedde, while his seruauntes supped, and dressed them. And that doone, incontinent hee rode awaie with spéede againe to the court. After this within a while, my lord was restored to plate, vessel, and household stuffe, of euerie thing necessarie some part, so that hee was better furnished than before.

Now to returne to maister Cromwell, to sée howe hee hath sped since his departure. The case stood so, that the Parliament should begin in *crastino animarum*,

Th. Cromwell.

marum, or there abouts: and hee being within London deuised with himselfe to be one of the Burgesses of the Parliament, and chanced to meete with one Sir Thomas Rush knight, a speciall friende of his, whose sonne was appointed to bee a burgesse, of whome he obtained his roome, and so put his foote into the Parliament House: so that within two or three dayes after his departure from my lord he came againe to Asher, with a pleasant countenance: and saide, that he had once aduentured to put in his foote, where he would be better regarded or euer the Parliament was finished. Then talked hee with my Lord, and after his talke, he rode againe to London, because he would not be absent from the Parliament in the Morning. There was nothing doone against him in the Parliament house, but he sent to my Lorde to knowe what answere hee might make in his behalfe: Insomuch, that there was nothing alledged against my lord, but that he was readie to make answere thereto: Insomuch, that at the length his honest estimation, & earnest behauior in his Masters cause, grew so in euerie mans opinion, how that hee was the most faithfull seruaunt to his Master of all other, wherein hee was greatlie of all men commended. Then was there brought in a Bill of Articles into the parliament house, to haue my Lorde condemned of treasons, against which bill Maister Cromwell inueyed so discretelie with such wittie perswasions, and deepe reasons, that the same coulde take no effect. Then were his enemies constrepned to indight him in a præmunire, all which was to intitle the king to his goods and possessions, the which hee hadde obtained and purchased for the maintenaunce of his Colledges in Oxforde and Ipswich, whereof hee was then in building, in the most sumptuous wise: wherein when my Lorde was demaunded by the Iudges which were sent vnto him to knowe his minde, and to take his aunswere therein, hee aunswered them in this wise: my lordes Iudges (quoth hee) the Kings highnesse knoweth, whether I haue offended his Maiestie or no, in vsing of my prerogatiue legantine, for the which I am indighted. I haue the Kings licence in my Coffers, vnder his hande, and broade Seale, for the exercising and vsing thereof in the most largest wise, the which nowe are in the handes of mine enemies. Therefore because I will not stand in question with the king in his owne cause, I will here presentlie confesse before you the indightment, and put mee wholie to the mercie and grace of the King, trusting that he hath a conscience, and a discretion to consider the trueth, and my humble submission and obedience, wherein I might right well stand to the tryall thereof by Iustice: but thus much you maie saie to his highnes, that I am wholie vnder his obeysance and will, & do submitte my selfe to all things that shall bee his Princelie pleasure, whose will and commandement I neuer disobeyed or repugned, but was alwayes contented, and gladde to please him before God, whome I ought most chiefelie to haue obeyed, the which nowe mee repentes: notwithstanding, I most heartilie require you to haue mee vnto his royall Maiestie commended, for whome I doe and will during my life, praie to God to sende him much prosperous honour and victorie euer his enemies, and therewith they tooke their leaue and departed. Shortlie after the king sent the duke of Norffolke vnto him in message,

Parliament at the Blacke Friers.

The Cardinall indighted in the præmunire.

but

but what it was, was kept secret. My lorde being aduertised that my lorde of Norffolke was comming euen at hand, he caused all his gentlemen to waite vpon him downe through the hall into the base court to receiue the duke at the gates, and commanded all his yeomen to stand in order still in the hall: and he himselfe with his gentlemen went to the gates, where he receiued my lord of Norffolke bare-headed, who embraced each other: and so led him by the arme through his hall into his chamber. And when the duke had passed through vnto the vpper end of the hall, regarding the number of tall Yeomen that stode on each side thereof, he turned againe to the Yeomen and saide: Sirs (quoth he) your diligent and faithfull seruice vnto your Master in this his calamitie, hath purchased you of all men, noble, and ignoble, much honestie, insomuch, that the King commaunded me to saie to you in his name, that for your true and louing seruice that yee haue doone to your Master, his highnesse will see you at all times furnished with seruices according to your demerites: with that my Lord put off his cappe, and saide to my Lord of Norffolke, sir (quoth hee) these men bee all approoued men, wherefore it were pitie they shoulde want anie seruice: and beeing sorie that I am not able to doe for them as my heart wisheth, I will therefore require you my good Lorde, to bee good Lorde vnto them, and extende your charitie amongst them, where or when ye shall see occasion at anie time hereafter, and that yée will prefer their diligence and faithfull seruice vnto the king. Doubt you not my lord (quoth he) but I will do for them the best in my power, & whereas I shall see cause I will be an earnest suiter for them to the king: and some of you I will haue my selfe in seruice for right honest men, and as you haue begun, so continue, vntill ye heare more of the kings pleasure, Gods blessing and mine be with you, and so went vp into the great chamber to dinner, whom my lord cardinall thanked, and said vnto him: yet my Lord of all other noblemen I haue cause to thanke you, for your noble & gentle heart, the which you haue shewed me behinde my backe, as my seruaunt Th. Cromwel hath reported vnto me: but euen as ye be a noble man in deede, so haue you shewed your selfe no lesse to all men in calamitie, and in especiall to me, whome ye haue brought down from my high estate: but now againe beeing in this miserable state, ye haue extended your fauour most honourablie, with great charitie, &c. The dinner ended, the cardinall and duke went into my Lordes priuie Chamber, where they continued in consultation: and being there, it chanced Master Shelley the Iudge to come thither, who was sent from the King, whereof relation was made to my Lorde: which caused the duke and him to breake vp their communication. And as the duke desired to goe to a Chamber, hee mette with Master Shelley, to whom Master Shelly resorted. And after hee had made relation of the cause of his comming hee desired my Lorde of Norffolke to tarrie, and to assist him in doing of his message: whome hee denied, and saide, I haue nothing to do with your message, wherein I will not meddle, and so departed into a Chamber, where hee tooke his rest for an houre or two: and in the meane time my Lord issued out of his priuie chamber, and came to master Shelley to know his message, who after due salutations, did declare vnto him that the K. pleasure was to haue

Duke of Norffolk sent to the cardinall.

Iudge Shelly sent to the Cardinall.

my

my Lordes house, called Yorke place, neere Westminster, belonging to the Bishopricke of Yorke, and to possesse the same, according to the lawe of his realme: his highnes hath sent for all the Iudges, and for all his learned counsell to know their opinions for the assurance thereof, whose opinions be fullie resolued that your Grace must make a recognisance, and before a Iudge to acknowledge and confesse the right thereof to belong to the king and his successors, and so his highnes shall be assured therof: wherefore it hath pleased the king to appoint and send mee hither to take of you the same recognisance, hauing in your grace such affiance, as that ye will not refuse so to do. Therefore I shall desire your grace to know your pleasure therein. M. Shelley (quoth my Lorde) I knowe that the king of his owne nature is of a royall stomacke, not willing more than iustice shall leade him vnto by the lawe: And therefore I counsell you, and all other Iudges and learned men of his councell, to put no more into his head than lawe that maie stande with conscience: for when yee tell him this is the law, it were well done ye should tel him also, that although this be the law, yet this is conscience: for law without conscience is not meet to be giuen to a king by his counsel, to bee ministred by him, ne by anie of his ministers; for euerie counseller to a king ought to haue a respect to conscience before the rigor of the law. For *Laus est facere quod decet, non quod licet*. The king ought for his royall dignitie and prerogatiue to mittigate the rigor of the law, where conscience hath no more force. And therfore in his princely place he hath constitute a chancelor to order for him the same. And heretofore the court of Chancerie, hath bæne commonlie called the court of conscience, because it hath iurisdiction to command the law in euerie case to desist from the execution of the rigor of the same, whereas conscience had most effect. Therfore I saie to you, that in this case, although you and other of your profession perceiue by the orders of the lawe, that the king maie lawfullie do that thing which yee require of me: how say you master Shelley, may I do it with conscience, to giue that awaie which is none of mine from me and my successors? if this bee the lawe and conscience, I praie you shewe me your opinion. Forsooth my Lorde (quoth hee) there is a great conscience: but hauing regarde to the kings high power, and to a better purpose, it maie the better stand with conscience: who is sufficient to recompence the church of Yorke with double the value. That I know wel, but here is no such condition (quoth my L.) but onlie a bare & simple departure with anothers right. For if euerie bish. that maie, should so do, then might euerie prelate giue away the patrimony of their dignities, which should be but smallie to the kings honor. Well I will not stand with you long in this matter. Let me see your commission: to whome master Shelley shewed the same. And that seene, Master Shelley quoth he, yee shall shew the kings highnes that I am his most faithfull subiect, obediencer and bead-man, whose royall commandement and request I will in no wise disobeie, but fulfill his pleasure in all such things wherein yee fathers of the law saie, that I maie lawfullie do, therefore I charge your conscience to discharge me, howbeit shewe his highnes from mee, that I most humblie desire his maiestie to call to his most gratious remembrance, that there is both a heauen and hell. And therewithall

the

the clearke toke and wrote the recognisance, and after some secret talke they departed. Then rose the Duke of Norffolke from his repast, and after some communication with my lorde, he likewise departed. Thus continued my lorde at Asher, who receiued daily messages from the court, some good, and some as euill, but mo euill than good: for his enemies procured his disquietnesse what they could, as some daie they would cause the king to sende for foure or fiue of his gentlemen from him to serue the king, and another daie they would take awaie some of his promotions, or some of their promotions whome he had preferred before. Then would they fetch from him some of his yeomen, insomuch as the king toke fiftéene of them at one time into his guard. This was his life for a long time, so that there was not one daie, but or euer he went to bedde, he had an occasion greatlie to chafe, and frette the heart out of his bodie, but that he was a wise man, and bare all things in patience. At Christmasse he fell verie sore sicke, most likelie to die, whereof the king being aduertised, was verie sorie, and sent Doctor Buts his Physition vnto him, to sée in what estate he was. Doctor Buts came vnto him, finding him lying verie sicke in his bedde: and perceiuing the danger returned to the king, of whome the king demaunded, saying: Haue yée séene ponder man? Yea sir (quoth he.) How do you like him (quoth the king?) Sir (quoth he) if yée will haue him dead, I warrant him, he will be dead within these foure daies, if he receiue no comfort from you shortlie: Marie (quoth the king) God forbid that he should die: I praie you master Buts go againe vnto him, and doe your cure vnto him, for I would not lose him for twentie thousand pound. Then must your grace (quoth master Buts) send him first some comfortable message, as shortlie as yée can: euen so I will (quoth the king) by you, and therefore make spéede to him againe, and yée shall deliuer him this ring from me for a token, in the which ring was ingrauen the kings Image, within a rubie, as like the king as coulde bee deuised. This ring hee knoweth right well, for hee gaue me the same, and tell him that I am not offended with him in my heart any thing at all, and that shall he knowe shortlie: therefore bid him plucke vppe his heart, and bee of good comfort, and I charge you, come not from him vntill yée haue brought him out of daunger of death. And so Doctour Buts departed with spéede to Asher, after whome the king sent Doctor Cromer the Scot, Doctor Clement, and Doctor Wotton, to consult with master Buts for my lordes recouerie.

Cardinal sicke, like to haue died.

After master Buts had bene with my Lorde, and deliuered the kings tokens vnto him, with the most comfortable wordes that he could deuise in the kings behalfe, he reioyced not a little, and aduanced him in his bedde, and receiued the tokens most ioyfullie, thanking master Buts for his paines and good comfort: Master Buts tolde him furthermore that the kings pleasure was that he should ministre vnto him for his health, and to ioyne with him for the better and most assured waies, he hath sent hither doctor Clement, doctor Cromer and doctor Wotton. Therefore my lorde (quoth he) it were well done they were called in to visit you, and to consult with them: to this moti-

on my lorde was contented to heare their iudgements, and it was not long ere they had brought him out of danger, and within foure daies set him on his feete, and got him a stomacke to meate, all which done, they toke their leaue to depart, refusing vtterlie all rewards proffered them, saying the king had giuen them especiall commandement that they should take of him nothing, for at their returne he himselfe would reward them. Thus my Lorde continued at Asher vntill Candlemas, against which feast the king caused to be sent to my lorde three or foure cart lodes of stuffe, as bedding, plate, hangings, kitchen stuffe, &c. Then commanded he master Cromwell to make earnest suite to the king, that he might remoue from thence to some other house: which suite at the kings hands master Cromwell obtained, for the king was contented he should remoue to Richmond, which place my lorde had a little before repaired to his great costes: for the king had made an exchange thereof with him for Hampton court. All this was done without knowledge of the kings counsell: for if they might haue had vnderstanding hereof before, then woulde they haue perswaded the king to the contrarie: but when they knew of the kings grant and licence, although they dissimuled their minde in the kings presence (yet were they afraid of him, least his nigh resort to the king might moue the king at some braide to haue resorted vnto him, and to haue called him home againe, considering the great louing affection that the king dailie shewed vnto him: wherefore they doubted his rising vp againe, if they found not a meane shortly to remoue him further from the king. Insomuch that they thought it conuenient for their purpose to moue the king vpon considerations which they inuented, that it were verie necessarie that my Lorde should go downe into the north vnto his benefice, where he should be a good staie for the countrie, to the which the king condescended. Whereupon my Lord of Norffolke bade master Cromwell to saie to him, that he must go home to his benefice: who at his next repaire to my lord (then lying at Richmond) declared to him how it was determined that he should go home to his benefice. Well then Thomas (quoth my lorde) we will go to Winchester. I will (quoth master Cromwell) shewe my lorde of Norffolke what yee saie: and so he did. What should he do there (quoth the Duke?) naie let him go to his Archbishoprieke of Yorke, where his honor and more charge lieth: and so shew him. The lordes who were not his friends, moued the K. to giue my lorde a pension of 4000. markes out of Winchester, and the rest to distribute among his nobilitie and seruants, and so in likewise to diuide the reuenues of Saint Albons, whereof some had three hundred marks, and some an hundred pounds, and so some more, and some lesse. And all the reuenues of the lands belonging to his Colledges of Oxford and Ipswich, which the king toke into his owne hands: whereof master Cromwell had the receipt and gouernance afore by my lordes assignment. Wherefore it was thought verie necessarie, that hee should so haue still, who executed all things thereof so exactlie and wittily, that he was had in great estimation for his behauiour herein, and also for the true and faithfull demeanor towards his lord and master. Then it came to passe, that those to whome the king had giuen anie annuities or fees for terme of life

Cromwell a suiter to the K. for the cardinal.

The Cardinal first builder of Hamptō court: for the which house, the king gaue him Richmond in exchange.

Cromwell his rising.

by

by pattent, would not be good, but onely during my lordes life, forasmuch as the king had no longer state therein, the which he had by reason of my lordes attaindor, in the præmunire, and to make their estates good and sufficient for the terme of their lines, there was none other shifte, but to obtaine my lords confirmation of their pattents. And this to bee brought about, there was no meane but to sue to master Cromwell to attaine the same at my Lordes handes, who they thought the best instrument for the purpose. Then began euerie man, both noble men and gentlemen, who had anie pattents of the king out of Winchester or Saint Albons, to make suite to master Cromwell, to solicite the cause to my lorde, to get therein his confirmation, and for his paines therein, both worthily rewarded him, and euerie man to shew him such pleasure as should be at all times in their seuerall powers, whereof they assured him: wherein master Cromwell perceiued an occasion giuen him to helpe himselfe, and to bring to passe that hee long sought for, intending to worke in this matter according to their desires, the soner to bring his owne enterprise and purpose to passe. Then at his nert returne to my lord he moued this matter to him, and so perswaded with him, that they both wrought togither to bring master Cromwell in place where hee might doe good to my lorde, and also to himselfe. And nowe hauing the ordering and disposition of the landes of these Colledges, he had great occasions of suites, besides his continuall accesse to the king, by meanes whereof he grewe into the kings fauour, who reputed him to be a verie wise man, and a méete instrument to serue his grace.

Now the lords thought long to haue the cardinall remoued further out of the kings way, wherfore among other of my lords, the duke of Norfolke said to M. Cromwell: Cromwel (quoth he) me thinke the cardinall thy master maketh no haste to go northward, tell him, if he go not away, but shall tarrie, I will teare him with my téeth: therfore I would aduise him to prepare himselfe awaie as shortly as he can, or else he shall be sent forward. These wordes M. Cromwell reported to my lord at his nert repaire to him, who then had an occasion to resort to him for the dispatch of the noble and gentlemens pattents. And héere I will leaue off this matter, and speake of other things that in this meane time happened.

Bitter wordes of the duke of Norfolke against the cardinall.

The lady Margaret dutchesse of Sauoy Aunt to the emperor, & the lady Lewes dutchesse of Angolesme, mother to the French king, met at Cambray in the beginning of the moneth of June last past, to treate of a peace, where were present doctor Tonstall bishop of London, and sir Tho. Moore chancelor of the duchie of Lancaster, commissioners for the K. of England. At length through diligence of the said ladies, a peace was concluded betweene the emperor, the pope, the kings of England, and of France. This peace was called the womans peace, and was proclaimed by heraults, with the sound of trumpets in the citie of London, to the great reioicing of the merchants, who in time of the wars had sustained much hinderance.

Peace betweene the Emperor and the king of England.

The 26. of October at Greenwith, sir Th. Moore late chancelor of the duchie of Lancaster, was made lord chancelor of England, and the nert date led

Sir Thomas Moore Chancelor of England.

into the chancery by the dukes of Norffolk and Suffolk, and there sworne.

States created

The 8. of December was Th. Bolein viscount Rochford created earle of Wilshire: Rob. viscount Fitzwater, earle of Sussex, and George L. Hastings earle of Huntington at Yorke place by Westminster.

1530

The new Testament printed in English.

William Tindall having translated the new Testament into English, and caused the same to be printed beyonde the seas, manie of them were conueied into England, and there made sale of, as good merchandise, for many men desired to haue them, but this translation was forbidden by the K. to bee vsed of his subiects: for his counsell, namely the bishops affirmed that the same was not truely translated, and that therein were prologues and prefaces sounding to heresie, with vncharitable railing against bishops and the clergy. The king therefore commanded the Bishops, that they calling to them the best learned men of the Vniuersities should cause a new translation to be made, that the people without danger might read the same for their better instruction in the lawes of God.

Ann. reg. 22.

Ambassadors to the emperor and pope.

The K. vnderstanding that the Emperor and the Pope were appointed to méete at Bononie or Bologne, where the emperor should bee crowned, sent thither an ambassade from him the earle of Wilshire, Doctor Stokesley elected bishop of London, and his almoner doctor Edward Lee, to declare both vnto the pope and emperor the law of God, the determinations of the vniuersities in the case of his marriage, & to require the pope to do iustice according to truth, and also to shew to the emperor, that the king did moue this matter, only for discharge of his conscience, and not for anie other respect of pleasure or displeasure earthly: these ambassadors comming to Bonony, were honorablie receiued, and first doing their message to the pope, had answere of him, that he would heare the matter disputed when hee came to Rome, and according to right he would do iustice. The emperor answered, that he in no wise would do against the lawes of God, and if the court of Rome would iudge that the matrimonie was not good, hee would bee contented to stand by the dispensation, which he thought to bee of force enough to proone the marriage lawfull. With these answeres the ambassadors departed, and returned homewards, till they came on this side the mountaines, and then receiued letters from the K. which appointed the earle of Wilshire to go ambassador to the French K. which then lay at Burdeaux, making shift for mony for the redeeming of his sonnes. And the bishop of London was appointed to go to Padua, and other Vniuersities in Italy, to know their full resolutions and determinate opinions in the kings case of matrimonie: and the kings almoner was commanded to returne into England.

Afterwards king Henry vpon occasion of delaie made by the Pope in his controuersie of diuorcement, and through displeasure of such reportes as hee heard had bin made of him to the court of Rome, & thirdly picked forward by some counsellers, to follow the example of the Germans, caused proclamation to be made on the 19. of September, forbidding all his subiects to purchase

Suite to Rome forbidden.

anie manner of thing from the court of Rome, containing matter preiudiciall to the high authoritie, iurisdiction, and prerogatiue royall of this Realme.

or

or to the hinderance and impeachment of the kings maiesties noble and vertuous intended purposes.

Cardinall Wolsey hauing licence of the king (as ye haue heard) to repaire vnto Richmond, was there lodged within the lodge of the great parke, which was a verie prettie house, there my lord lay vntill Lent with a prettie number of his seruants, for the rest went to bord wages. You haue heard before what words the Duke of Norffolke had to maister Cromwel, touching my lords going vnto his benefice of Yorke. At such time as maister Cromwell tolde these words to my lord: Marie Thomas (quoth my lord) then is it time to be going, if he take it so, therefore I pray you to go to the king, and saie I would go to my benefice of Yorke but for lacke of money, desiring his grace to helpe me with some: for ye maie say that the last money that I receiued from his grace hath bene to little to paie mine olde debts, and to compell me to the payment thereof hath bene to much extremitie, taking my goods from me, wherein I trust his grace will haue a charitable respect: ye maie also shewe my lorde of Norffolke and other of the councell, that I would depart if I had money. Cromwell went to London, and my lorde remoued out of the lodge into the charterhouse at Richmond, where he lay in a lodging with doctor Coller, made for himselfe, vntill he remoued northward, which was in the Passion weeke: and euerie daie resorted to the charterhouse there, and in the after nones hee would sit in contemplation with one of the most ancient fathers of that house in their cels, who conuerted him, and caused him to despise the vaine glorie of the world, and gaue him shirtes of haire to weare, the which he ware diuers times after. When maister Cromwell came to the court, he shewed my Lorde of Norffolke, that my lord would gladly go northwarde, but for lacke of money, wherein he desired his helpe to the king. Then was the king moued therein as well by maister Cromwel, as by the counsell: which matter the king referred to determine and assigne to the counsell, who were in diuers opinions, so that after long debating it was concluded that he should haue by way of prest a thousand markes of his pension out of Winchester: when this determination was concluded, they declared the same to the king, who straightwaie commanded the same thousande markes to bee deliuered out of hande to maister Cromwell, and so it was. The king commanded maister Cromwell to resort to him againe, when he had receiued the same summe of money: at whose returne to the king, the king said: Shew my lord, although our counsell haue assigned no summe of money for to beare his charges, yet ye shall shewe him in my behalfe, that I haue sent a thousand pound of my beneuolence, and tell him that he shall not lacke, and bid him be of good cheere. Maister Cromwell humbly in my lords behalfe, thanked the king, and therewith departed, and came to Richmond to my lord, to whom he deliuered the money, and whereof it was leuied, that the councell sent him, and of the money which the king sent him, adding thereto the kings comfortable sayings, wherein my lord did not a little reioice. Then my lord prepared all things for his iourney, and sent to London for liuerie clothes for his seruants that should ride with him: so that all things being furnished towards his iourney, in the beginning

Cardinall Wolsey lay at Richmond.

Doctor Collet dean of Paules.

of passion weeke before Easter he set forward, and rode from Richmond to a place of the abbot of Westminster called Hendon: the next date he remoued to a place where ỳ lady Parry lay called the Rie: the next day to Rotton, where he lodged in the prior: the next date to Huntington, and there lodged in the Abbey. And the next date he remoued to Peterborow, and there lodged in the abbey, making there his abode all the next weeke, where he kept his solemne feast of Easter, with all his traine, in number 160. persons, hauing with him twelue cartes to carrie his stuffe of his owne, which he sent for from his College of Oxford, that were there prouided, beside threescore other carts of his dailie carriage of necessaries for his buildings. Upon palme sundaie he went in procession with the monkes. And vpon maundie thursdaie he made his maundie there in our Ladie chappell, hauing 59. poore men, whose feete he washed, and kissed after he had wiped them, he gaue euerie of the said poore men twelue pence in money, three ells of good cannas to make them shirtes, a paire of new shoes, a cast of red herrings and three white herrings, and one of them had two shillings. Upon easter daie he rose to the resurrection, &c. On thursdaie next he remoued to master Fitz Williams knight (sometime a merchant taller of London, and then of the kings councell, who dwelt within three or foure miles of Peterborow) where he was ioyfullie receiued, and had honorable entertainment. On mundaie next he remoued vnto Stamford, and the next date to Grantham, and was lodged in the house of master Hall. The next night he lodged in the Castle of Newarke, where he remained the next date, and from thence rode to Southwell, and there continued the most part of that sommer, not without great resort of the most worshipfull of the countrey. And diuers noble men hauing occasion to repaire into the same countrey there, thought it good to visit my lorde as they trauelled, of whome they were most gladly entertained, and had right good chere: whose noble and gentle behauior caused him to haue much loue in the countrey of all kinde of people: he kept there a noble house, where was both plentie of meate and drinke for all commers, and also much almes giuen at his gate vnto the poore of the towne and country. He vsed much charitie and clemencie among his tenants and other: he made many agreements betweene gentlemen and gentlemen, and betweene some gentlemen and their wiues, and other meane persons, the which had beene long before a sunder and in great trouble, making for euery of them (as occasion serued) great assemblies & feasts, not sparing his purse where he might make amitie. It chanced vpon *Corpus Christi* euen, in the night, when my lord and all his houshold were at rest in their beds, there knocked at the gate two gentlemen, the one named master Brierton one of the gentlemen of the kings priuie chamber, and master Writherley, who were come from the king in post to speake with my lord. These were let in, my lord was raised, and came to them into the dining chamber: they seeing him in his night apparell, did to him due reuerence, whom he tooke by the hands, demanding how the king his soueraigne lorde did. Sir (said they) right well and merry, we must desire to talke with you apart. With a good will (quoth he.) After long talke, they tooke forth of a little maile a little coffer couered

The Cardinals maundie.

Sir W. Fitz Williams alderman of London, and treasurer of the kings house.

with

with greene veluet, and bound with bars of siluer and gilt, with a locke and a gilt key, with the which they opened the cheſt, out of the which they toke an inſtrument or writing containing more than a ſkinne of great parchment, hauing manie ſeales hanging to the ſame, whereunto they put more ware for my lordes ſeale: the which my lorde ſealed, and ſubſcribed his name with his owne hand, and deliuered the ſame againe vnto them, deſiring them to take a bed: for it was ſomewhat paſt midnight. But they ſaide they would ſtraight way ride to the earle of Shrewſburie, to be with him ere he were ſtirring: ſo my lorde cauſed them to eate ſuch colde meate as was readie, and to drinke a bole or two of wine: that done, he gaue each of them foure olde ſouereignes of fine golde, and ſo they departed. In this ſort and manner my lord late at Southwell vntill about the latter end of graſſe time, then he remoued to Newſtike, an abbey, to Rufford and Blith abbey, and ſo to Scroby, where he continued till after Michaelmas, exerciſing many dedes of charity, & commonly euery ſunday he would trauell vnto ſome poore pariſh church, and there would ſay his diuine ſeruice, and cauſe one of his chaplaines to preach vnto the people: that done, he would dine in ſome honeſt houſe of the towne, where ſhould be diſtributed to the poore a great almes in meat and drinke, as of monie. About the feaſt of S. Michael, he remoued to Cawood caſtle within 7. miles of Yorke, where he lay long after with much honor and loue of the countrey, doing dedes of charitie, and held there an honorable houſhold for all commers, and alſo built and repaired the caſtle, hauing artificers and laborers aboue the number of 300. perſons dailie in wages, &c. At length being thereunto perſwaded by the doctors of the church of Yorke, he determined to be ſtalled there at Yorke minſter the next mundaie after Alhallowne day, againſt which time due preparation was made for the ſame, but not in ſo ſumptuous wiſe as were his predeceſſors. My lord ſent his gentleman vſher to Yorke, to foreſee things there that ſhould bee ordered and prouided for the ſolemnitie, which ſhould haue béene as meane as could be. Vpon Alhallowne date one of the head officers of the Church of Yorke, which ſhould haue the moſt doings in all this ſtallation, was with my lorde at dinner at his houſe of Cawood, and ſitting at dinner they fell in communication of this matter, and of the order thereof, ſaying, that my lorde ſhould go on foote from a chappell of Saint Iames, without the gates of the citie vnto the minſter vpon cloth, the which ſhould be diſtributed among the poore after his paſſage. My Lord hearing this, made anſwere in this wiſe: Although our predeceſſors did go vpon cloth, ſo we intend to go on foote from thence without any ſuch glorie, for I take God to witnes, I do not intend to go thither for any triumph or glorie, but only to performe the rules of the church, to the which I am bound. And therefore I deſire you all, and will command other my ſeruants to go as humblie thither without anie ſumptuous or gorgeous apparell, otherwiſe than in decent maner: for I doe purpoſe to come to Yorke vpon Sundaie at night next, and to lodge in the deans houſe, and vpon munday to be ſtalled, and there to make but a dinner for you of the cloſe, and for other worſhipfull gentlemen that ſhall chaunce to come thither to the ſame, and to ſuppe with ſome of the reſidences, and

Cardinal Wolſey at Cawood.

Preparation for inſtalling the cardinall.

the next daie to dine with the Maior, and then to prepare home hither againe. The daie being once knowne vnto all the countrie, which coulde not bee hid, the worshipfull Gentlemen and other, as Abbots and Priors sent in such prouision of victualles, that it is almost incredible, as of fat beasts and muttons, wilde fowle, and venison both red and fallowe, and other daintie things such as would haue plentifully furnished the feast. All which things were vnknown to my lord, for as much as hee beeing preuented and disappointed of his purpose, by reason that he was arrested of high treason, as ye shall heare hereafter, so that most part of this Sommer prouision, was sent vnto Yorke that same daie of his arrest, and the next daie following: for his arrest was kept as close and secret from the countrie, because they doubted the common people, which had him in great estimation and loue, for his great charitie and liberalitie which he vsed daily amongst them. It is appointed by the king & councell, that Sir Walter Walsh knight, one of the kings priuie chamber, shoulde be sent downe with a commission into the North vnto the earle of Northumberland, who was sometime brought vp in house with the cardinall, and they twaine beeing iointlie in commission to arrest the Cardinall of high treason: Master Walsh toke his horse at the court gate about noone vpon Alhalowne daie, toward the earle of Northumberland. And nowe haue I occasion to declare what happened about the same time, which peraduenture signified the troubles following to the cardinall. The cardinal sitting at dinner vpon Alhalown day, hauing at his bords end diuers chaplaines sitting at dinner, ye shal vnderstand that the cardinals great crosse stood in a corner at the tables ende, leaning against the hanging, and when the bordes ende was taken vp, and a conuenient time for the chaplaines to arise, one doctor Augustine a Venetian, & physition to the cardinall, rising from the table with the other, hauing vpon him a great gowne of bolleron veluet, ouerthrew the Crosse, which trailing downe along the tappet, with the point of one of the crosses, brake doctor Boners head, that the blood ranne downe, the companie there standing, greatlie astonied with the chaunce. The Cardinall perceiuing the same, demaunded what the matter meant of their sodayne amaze? and they shewed him of the fall of his Crosse vpon doctor Boners head: and hath it, quoth he, drawne anie blood? Yea forsoth my Lord quoth they: with that he caste his head aside, and saide shaking his heade, *Malum Omen*, and therewith saide Grace, and rose from the Table, and went to his Chamber. Nowe marke the signification how the Cardinall expounded this matter at Pomfret after his fall. First ye shall vnderstande that the Crosse which hee bare as Archbyshoppe of Yorke, signifyed himselfe, and Augustine the Physition who ouerthrewe the Crosse, was onelie hee that accused the Cardinall, whereby his enemies caught an occasion to ouerthrowe him: it fell vpon doctor Boners head, who was Master of the Cardinalles faculties and Spirituall iurisdictions, and was then damnified by the ouerthrowe of the Crosse: yea, and moreouer drawing blode of him, betokened death, which shortlie after did ensue. About which time of this mischaunce, the same verie daie and season Master Walsh tooke his Horse at the Court, as nigh as coulde bee iudged, and so must needes bee taken for a

Doctor Boners head broke.

signe

signe or token of that which followed. Nowe the appointed time drewe neere of his exaltation, and sitting at dinner vpon the Friday next before the Monday, on the which daie hee intended to be exalted at Yorke, the Earle of Northumberland and Walter Walsh, with a great companie of Gentlemen of the earles house, and of the country, whom he had gathered together in the kings name, came into the hall at Cawood, the officers being at dinner, and the cardinall not fullie dined, being then in his fruites. The first thing that the earle did after hee had set order in the hall, hee commanded the porter at the gates to deliuer him the keies thereof, who would in no wise obey his commandement although he were roughly threatened, and straitly commanded in the kinges name to make deliuery of them to one of the earles seruants: sir (quoth hee) seeing that ye do but intend to set one of your seruantes in my place to keepe the gates, I know no seruant that ye haue, but I am as able as he to do it, and keepe the gates to your purpose, whatsoeuer it be; and also the keies were deliuered me by my L. and mast. wherefore I pray you to pardon me, for whatsoeuer ye shall command me to do in the ministration of mine office, I shal do it with good will: with that (quoth the earle) hold him a booke, and commanded him to laie his hand thereon: thou shalt sweare (quoth he) that thou shalt well and truelie keepe the gates to the kings vse, and to do all such thinges as wee shall command, and that ye shall let passe neither in nor out at these gates, but such as ye be commanded by vs, and with this oth, hee receiued the keies at the earles hands. Of all these doings knew the cardinal nothing, for they stopped the staires, so that none went vp to the cardinals chamber, and they that came down, could no more go vp again: at the last one escaped, who shewed the cardinal that the earle was in the hal: whereat the cardinal marueiled, and would not beleeue him, but commanded a gentleman to bring him the truth, who going downe the staires, saw the earle of Northumberlande, and returned, and said it was very he: then (quoth the cardinall) I am sorie that we haue dined, for I feare our officers bee not prouided of anie store of good fish, to make him some honorable cheere, let the table stand (quoth hee) with that hee rose vp, and going downe the staires, hee encountred the Earle comming vp with all his traine, and assone as the Cardinall espied the Earle, he put off his cap, and said, my Lord, ye be most heartilie welcome, and so embraced each other: then the cardinall tooke the earle by the hand, and had him vp into his chamber, whom followed all the number of the Earles seruauntes. From thence, he led him into his bed chamber, and they being there all alone, the Earle saide vnto the cardinal, with a soft voice, laying his hand vpon his arme, my L. I arrest you of high treason: with which wordes the Cardinall beeing marueylouslie astonied, standing both still a good space, at the last, quoth the Cardinall, what authoritie haue you to arrest mee? Forsoth my lord, quoth the earle, I haue a commission so to do: where is your commission, quoth he, that I may see it? Nate Sir that you mate not, saide the earle: well then, quoth the cardinall, I will not obey your arrest. But as they were debating this matter betweene them in the chamber, so busie was M. Walsh in arresting doctor Augustine at the Doore in the Pallace, saying vnto him, go in traitor or I shall make thee.

Cardinal arrested.

Augustine doctor of phisick arrested of treason.

At

At the last master Walsh being entered the cardinalles chamber, beganne to plucke off his hoode, and after kneeled downe to the cardinall, vnto whome the cardinall said, come hither gentleman, and let me speake with you: sir here my L. of Northumberland hath arrested mee, but by whose authoritie hee sheweth not: if ye be ioined with him, I pray you shew me. Indeede my lord, quoth M. Walsh, hee sheweth you the trueth: well then, quoth the cardinall, I pray you let me see it. Sir, I beseech you, quoth master Walsh, hold vs excused: there is annexed to our commission certaine instructions which you maie not see: well quoth the Cardinall, I trowe yee are one of the kinges priuie Chamber, your name is Walsh, I am content to yeeld to you, but not to my lord of Northumberlande without I see his commission: the worst in the kings priuie Chamber is sufficient to arrest the greatest peere of the Realme by the kings commaundement, without anie Commission, therefore put your Commission and authoritie in execution, spare not, I will obeie the kinges will: I take God to iudge, I neuer offended the King in worde nor deed. Then the earle called into the Chamber diuers Gentlemen of his owne seruauntes, and after they had taken the Cardinalles keies from him, they put him in custodie of the earles Gentlemen, and then they went about the house to set all things in an order: then sent they Doctor Augustine awaie to London with as much speede as they couldc, who was bounde vnto the horse like a Traytor, but it was Sundaie towarde night ere the Cardinall was conueied from Cawood, and lodged that night in the Abbey of Pomfret. The next daie hee remooued toward Doncaster, and was there lodged at the Blacke Friers, the next daie he was remoued to Sheffield parke, where the earle of Shrewsbury with his ladie, and a traine of Gentlemen and Gentlewomen receiued him with much honor And the cardinall being thus with the earle of Shrewsbury, continued there 18. daies after, vpon whome the earle appointed diuers gentlemen to attend continuallie, to see that hee shoulde lacke nothing, beeing serued in his owne Chamber, as honourablie as he had beene in his owne house, and once euerie daie the Earle woulde repaire vnto him, and commune with him. After the Cardinall had thus remayned with the Earle of Shrewsburie about a fortnight, it came to pas at a certain time as he sate at his dinner in his own Chamber, hauing at his bordes ende a messe of Gentlemen and chaplaines to keepe him companie, towarde the ende of his dinner, when hee was come to eating his fruites, his colour was perceyued often to chaunge, whereby hee was iudged not to bee in good health: whereupon, one of his Gentlemen sayde: Sir, me seemes you are not well at ease: to whome he answered with a loud voice, forsoth no more I am, for I am, quoth he, taken sodainelie with a thing about my stomack, that lieth there along, as colde as a whetstone, which is no more but wind, I pray you go to the Poticarie, and inquire of him if hee haue anie thing that will breake wind vpward. Then went he to the earle, and shewed him what estate the cardinall was in, and what hee desired: with that the Earle caused the poticarie to be called before him, and demanded of him if he had any thing that would breake wind vpwarde in a mans bodie, and hee answered hee had such geare. Then, quoth the Earle, fetch mee some: then the

Cardinal lodged at Sheffield with the earle of Shrewsbery.

The cardinall sickeneth.

Poticarie

Potecarie fetched a white confection in a faire Paper, and shewed it to the Earle, who commaunded one to giue the assaie thereof before him, and then the same to bee brought to the Cardinall, who receyued it vppe all at once into his mouth: But immediatlie after, surelie hee auoyded much wind vpwarde. Loe, (quoth hee) yee maie see that it was but winde, and nowe I am well eased, I thanke God, and so he rose from the Table, and went to his prayers: And that doone, there came on him such a loosenesse, that it caused him to goe to his Stoole. And not longe after the Earle of Shrewsburie came into the gallerie to him, with whome the Cardinall met, and then sitting downe vpon a Bench, the Earle asked him howe hee did, and hee most lamentablie aunswered him, and thanked him for his gentle entertaynement: Sir, (quoth the Earle) if yee remember, yee haue often wished to come before the King, to make your answere, and I haue written to the King in that behalfe, making him priuie of your lamentation that yee inwardlie haue receiued for his displeasure, who accepteth all your doings therin, as friends bee accustomed to do in such cases: wherefore I would aduise you to plucke vp your heart, and be not agast of your enemies, I doubt not but this your iourney to his highnes shall be much to your aduancement. The king hath sent for you that worshipfull knight Master Kingstone, and with him 24. of your olde seruants, now of the guard, to the intent yee maie safelie come to his maiestie: sir (quoth the Cardinall) I trow master Kingstone is Constable of the tower: yea, what of that, quoth the Earle? I assure you hee is elected by the king for one of your friends: Well, quoth the cardinall, as God will, so be it, I am subiect to fortune, being a true man, readie to accept such chances as shal follow, and there an end. I pray you where is M. Kingstone? quoth the earle, I wil send for him: I praie you so do, quoth the cardinall: at whose message he came, and as soone as the Cardinall espied him, he made haste to encounter him, and at his comming hee kneeled to him, and saluted him in the kings behalfe, whom the Cardinall bare-headed offered to take vp, and said: I praie you stande vp, kneele not to me, I am but a wretch repleate with miserie, not esteeming myselfe but as a vile abiect, vtterlie cast alwaie without desert as God knoweth. Then saide M. Kingstone with humble reuerence, Sir, the king hath him commended vnto you: I thanke his highnes, quoth the cardinall, I trust hee be in health: yea, quoth M. Kingstone, and he commanded me to say to you, that you should assure your selfe that he beareth you as much good will, as euer hee did, and willeth you to be of good cheere, and where report hath beene made, that ye should commit against him certaine heinous crimes, which he thinketh to bee vntrue, yet he can do no lesse than to send for you to your triall, and to take your iorny to him at your own pleasure, cõmanding me to be attendant vpon you. Therefore sir I pray you when it shall be your own pleasure to take your iourney, I shall be ready to giue attendance: Master Kingstone, quoth he, I thanke you for your newes, and sir, if I were as lusty as I haue bẽ of late, I would ryde with you in Poste, but I am diseased with a fire that maketh mee verie weake: but I shall with all speede make me readie to ryde with you to Morrowe. When night came, the Cardinall waxed verie sicke with the Laske,

the

the which caused him continually to go to the stole al that night, insomuch, that he had that night 50. stoles: therefore in consideration of his infirmitie, they caused him to tarrie all that day: and the next daie he toke his iourney with maister Kingstone and them of the guard, till he came to an house of the earle of Shrewsburies, called Hardwike hall, where he lay all night verie euill at ease. The next daie he rode to Nottingham, and there lodged that night more sicke: and the next day he rode to Leicester Abbey, and by the waie waxed so sicke, that he was almost fallen from his mule, so that it was night before he came to the Abbey of Leicester: where at his comming in at the gates, the Abbot with all his couent met him with diuers torches light, whom they honorably receiued and welcommed: to whom the Cardinall said: father abbot, I am come hither to lay my bones among you, riding so still vntill he came to the staires of the chamber, where he alighted from his mule, and maister Kingston led him vp the staires, and as sone as he was in his chamber he went to bed. This was on the saturday at night, and then encreased sicker and sicker, vntill Mondaie, that all men thought he would haue died. So on Tuesdaie S. Andrewes euen, maister Kingston came to him and bad him good morrow, for it was about five of the clocke, and asked him how he did: sir, quoth he, I tarrie but the pleasure of God, to render vp my poore soule into his hands: not so sir, quoth maister Kingston; with the grace of God, ye shall liue and do verie well, if ye will be of good chéere: nay in good soth maister Kingston, my disease is such, that I cannot liue: for I haue had some experience in Physicke. Thus it is, I haue a flure with a continuall feauer, the nature whereof is, that if there be no alteration of the same within eight daies, either must ensue excoriation of the entrailes, or frensie, or else present death, and the best of them is death, and as I suppose this is the eight daie, and if ye sée no alteration in me, there is no remedie, saue, though I maie liue a daie or twaine after, but death must ensue. Sir, quoth maister Kingston, you be in such pensiuenes, doubting that thing, that in good faith ye néede not. Well, well, maister Kingston, quoth the Cardinall, I sée the matter how it is framed: but if I had serued God as diligentlie as I haue done the king, he would not haue giuen me ouer in my gray haires: but this is the iust reward that I must receiue for the diligent paines and studie that I haue had to doe him seruice, not regarding my seruice to God, but only to satisfie his pleasure: I praie you haue me most humblie commended vnto his Royall maiestie, and beséech him in my behalfe to call to his princelie remembrance, all matters proceeding betweene him and me from the beginning of the woorlde, and the progresse of the same, and most especiallie in his weightie matter, and then shall his graces conscience know whether I haue offended him or no, &c. Maister Kingstone farewell: I can no more saie, but I wish all things to haue good successe, my time draweth on fast, and euen with that he began to draw his spéech at length, and his tong to fatle, his eies being set, whose sight fayled him, then did they put him in remembrance of Christ his Passion, and caused the yeomen of the guard to stand by to sée him die, and to witnes of his words at his departure: and incontinently the clocke strake eight, and then he gaue vp the ghost, and departed

Speech of the Cardinall to maister Kingstone.

The Cardinall dieth.

departed this present life, which caused som to cal to remembrance how he said the day before, that at eight of the clock they should lose their maister: One of them looked on the other, supposing that either he knewe or prophesied of his departure.

Here is the end and fall of pride and arregancy of men exalted by fortune to dignities: for I assure you in his time hee was the haughtiest man in all his proceedings alive, having more respect to the honor of his person, than he had to his spirituall profession, wherin should be shewed all meekenes, humility and charity, the discussing whereof any further I leave to diuines. *Example of pride and arrogancie.*

After that he was thus departed maister Kingstone sent a poste to the king, aduertised him of the departure of the cardinall by one of the gard, that sawe and heard him die. And when maist. Kingstone and the abbot had consulted for the order of his buriall, it was thought good that he should be buried the next daie following: for maister Kingston would not tarrie the returne of the poste: and it was thought good, that the Maior of Leicester and his brethren shoulde be sent for, to see him personallie dead, to auoyde false rumors that mought happen. In the meane time the body was taken out of the bedde, who had vpon him next his bodie a shirte of haire, besides his other shirte of holland: now hauing put vpon his deade corpes, all such ornamentes, as hee was professed in, when he was made Bysshoppe and Archbyshoppe, as Miter, Crosse, Ring, and Pall, with all other things due to his order and dignitie: and lying thus all daie in his Coffin open faced, euerie man that would might see him there dead, as the Maior, his brethren, and other did. About foure or fiue of the clocke at night, he was carried downe into the Church, by the Abbot and chanons, and seruice was sung for the funerals. And about foure of the clocke in the morning maister Kingstone and his seruauntes came into the Church, and there tarried the executing of diuers ceremonies, and then was hee buried in the midst of our ladies chappel, and by that time it was fire of the clocke in the morning. Then prepared euery man to horseback being S. Andrewes day the apostle, & so toke their iourney to the court. And thus ended the life of this rich cardinal of England, whose historie, who list to read with a cleare eie, maie behold the mutabilitie of vaine honors, and brittle assurance in aboundance, the vncertaintie of dignities, the flattering of fained friends, and the fickle fauor of worldly princes: wherof this Cardinal had felt and tasted both of the swet & sowre in each degrées, as fleeting from honors, losing of riches, deposed from dignities, forsaken of friends, and the mutabilitie of princes fauor: of all which things hee had in this world, the full felicitie, as long as fortune smiled vpon him, but when she beganne to frowne, how soone was he depriued of all these mundaine ioies, and vaine pleasures, which in twentie yeeres with great trauaile and studie he obtained, was in one yeere and lesse, with great care and sorrowe lost and consumed. O madnesse! O fonde desire! O foolish hope! O greedie desire of vaine honor, dignities, and riches! of what vnconstant hope and trust is it, in the false fained countenance and promise of fortune, wherefore the Prophette sayde full well: *Thesaurisat & ignorat cui congregabit ea.* Who is certayne that hee shall leaue his ryches that hee hath gathered in the

world,

worlde, vnto them whome he hath purposed? The Wiseman saith: That an other whome peraduenture he hated in his life, shall spende it out, and consume it.

The clergy condemned in the premunire.

The Clergie of England, being iudged by the K. learned counsell to bee in the premunire, for maintaining the power legantine of the cardinal, were called by processe into the kings bench to answere, wherfore in their conuocation they concluded a submission, wherin they called the king supreame head of the church of England, according to the law of God, and not otherwise, and were contented to giue the king 100000. pounds, to pardon their offences touching the premunire.

K. H. supreame head of the Church.

When the parliament was begun the 6. of Ianuarie, the pardon of the spirituall persons was signed with the kings hand, and sent to the Lordes, which they consented to, and signed the bill. But when the same came downe to the commons it could not so easilie passe, because diuers froward persons woulde also that the K. should pardon the laity aswell as the spiritualty, saying that all men which had dealt with the Cardinall were in like danger: This their state and bold demand was thought more then reason, for that they would seeme to enuie other mens wealth, and also to restraine the king of his libertie: but at length they seemed to be sorrowfull for that they had dealt so vnadui sedlie, and then the king sent them their Pardon, for the which they humblie thanked him.

1531

Conclusions against the kings mariage.

The 30. daie of March the Lorde Chancelor, and diuers other Lordes, both Spirituall and Temporall, came into the Common house, and there the Lord Chancelor declared what the king had done, touching the doubt of his marriage, to knowe the opinions of learned men of diuers Vniuersities in Christendome, and there were reade the determinations of the same Vniuersities, which they had written and sealed, concluding, that the kings marriage could not be lawfull: there were shewed also diuers bookes diuine, by doctors of forraine nations, which were to the same effect, but were not reade, for that the daie was spent.

A cooke boiled in Smithfield.

The 5. of Aprill one Richard Rose a cooke, was boiled in Smithfield, for poisoning of diuers persons, to the number of 16. or more, at the Bishop of Rochesters place, amongst the which Benet Curwine gentleman was one, and he intended to haue poisoned the bishoppe himselfe, but hee eate no pottage that daie, whereby hee escaped, marie the poore people that eate of them, manie of them died,

An. reg. 23.

King Henry sent vnto the Quene diuers Lords of the Counsell, about the last of Maie, the which Lordes in her Chamber at Greenwich, declared vnto her the determinations of the Vniuersities concerning the martage betwixt them two, and demanded of her, whether shee woulde for the quietnesse of the kings conscience, put the matter to foure prelates, and foure temporall lords of the realme: but she still affirmed her selfe to be his lawfull wife, and therefore woulde abide in that point, till the court of Rome had made a finall ende therein.

Chantery priests of London against their bishop.

The chanterie priests of London being called afore the bishop, who woulde

haue

haue had them contributaries toward the payment of the 100000.l. granted to the K. for his pardon of the præmunire, kept such a stir, in breaking into the Chapiter where the Bishop sate, that the Bishop was faine with faire words to dismisse them for the time: but after vpon complaint made to the Lorde Chancelor, diuers of them, and of their partakers were arrested and committed to prison, to the number of fifteene priestes, and fiue laie men, some to the Tower, and some to the Fleete, and to other prisons, where they lay long after.

This yere king Henry tooke into his hands, the Hospitall of Saint Iames, nere vnto Charing Crosse, and all the medowes to the same belonging, compounding with the Sisters of that house, they to haue pensions during their liues. And then builded in place of the said hospitall, a goodlie mansion, retaining still the name of S. Iames: hee also there inclosed a parke with a wall of bricke, nowe indifferently seruing to the saide mansion, as also to his place of Whitehall at Westminster. The K. house at S. Iames builded.

After Christmas the Parliament beganne againe, in the which the Commons declared themselues to be sore agreeued, with the cruelties of the ordinaries, that called men afore them *ex officio*. At length a booke was drawn of all their griefes, and the same deliuered to the king by the speaker, who humblie besought him in the name of the Commons to take such direction therin, as to his highnes might seeme expedient: whereunto the king answered hee would take aduice, and heare the partie accused speake. In this Parliament was made an act, that bishops should pay no more annuities, or otherwise monie for their buls to the pope, for it was affirmed that there had béene paid for buls, of bishops and other, sith the fourth of Henry the seuenth, 60000. pounde sterling. 1532 Parliament.

The parliament began againe after Easter, there was a motion made to helpe the king with mony towardes his charges about the edifying of pyles and other fortifications, vpon the borders foreaneust Scotland, both for better habitation to bee hadde there, and also for restraint of the Scottes that vsed to make inuasions: there was therefore a fifteene granted, but not inacted at this season, because that sodainly began a pestilence in Westminster: wherefore the parliament was prorogued. *Ann. reg 24.* A fifteene granted to the king.

The 15. of May, sir T. Moore after great suite made by him, was discharged of his chancelorship.

The twentie eyght of Maie, Frier Elstowe standing in the Roode lofte of the Friers Church at Greenwich, contrarying the Preacher doctor Curwine, sayde hee lyed, before the King, and was for the same sent to prison. This Doctor Curwine was sometime Deane of Hereforde, after Archbyshoppe of Deuelin in Irelande, and lastlie Byshoppe of Oxforde in Queene Maries dayes. A stout frier told the Preacher before the K. that he lies.

The 4. of June the king dubbed Tho. Audley knight, made him keeper of the great seale, and not long after lord chancelor. Lorde Audley made L. chancelor.

The 15. of June, 5. men were hanged and quartered at tower hil, for coining and clipping of the coine. Coiners and clippers executed.

In

Christs church suppressed.

In the month of July, the king suppressed the priorie of the holie Trinitie commonly called Christ-church in London, he sent the Chanons of that house to other priories, and gaue their church, plate, and lands, to sir Thomas Audley, late made keeper of the great seale.

The three and twentith of August, William Warham archbishop of Canterburie, deceased after he had sate archbishop eight and twentie yeares and three moneths, he was buried at Canterburie, Thomas Cranmar succeeded in the archbishoprick.

The Tower repaired.

The king repaired the tower of London, namely the White Tower.

Marchioneſſe of Pembrooke.

The first of September the Lady Anne Bolleine was made Marchioneſſe of Pembroke at Windsor, and then was giuen her by the king, one thousand pound by yeare, out of the bishoprick of Durham.

King Henry landed at Caleis.

The eleuenth of October king Henry landed at Caleis, with the Duke of Richmond his bastard sonne, the Duke of Norffolke Lorde Treasurer of England, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marqueſſe of Exceſter, the Earles of Darbie, Arundale, Oxford, Surrey and Rutland, the Vicount Liſle king Edward the fourth his bastard sonne, the Lorde Matrauers, the Lorde Sands Lord Chamberlaine of the kings house, the Lord William Haward, the Lord Bray, the Lorde Montague, the Lorde Cobham, the Lorde Mordant, the Lord Daubney, the Lord Grey, the Lord Clinton, the Lorde Vaux, the Lord Mounteagle, the Lorde Rocheford, with diuers other Lordes: the Bishops of Winchester, London, Lincolne, and Bathe: Sir William Fitz William Treasurer of the kings house, Sir William Pawlet Comptroller, Sir William Kingſtone Captaine of the Guarde, Sir Iohn Page, Sir Iames Boleine, Sir Anthonie Browne, Sir Edward Neuill, Sir Thomas Cheiney, Sir Iohn Ruſſell, Sir Richard Page, Sir Ralph Eldercare, Sir Edward Baynton, Sir Edward Santener, Sir Griffith Deane, Sir Iohn Dudley, Sir Iohn Femer, Sir Henrie Long, Sir Anthony Hungerford, sir Iohn Brudges, Sir Arthur Hopton, sir Anthony Wingfield, Sir William Paſton, Sir Edmond Bedingfield, Sir Thomas Strange, Sir William Hawte, Sir Edward Wotton, Sir William Askewe, Sir Iohn Marleant, Sir William Barington, Sir William Eſſex, Sir Giles Strangweis, sir Edward Chamberlaine, Sir Giles Caple, Sir Iohn Sent-Iohn, sir Walter Hungerford, sir William Gaſcoine, sir Lionel Norris, sir Edward Boloine, sir Thomas Liſle, sir Iohn Aſhton, sir Thomas Palmer, sir William Boloine, sir William Finche, sir William Pellam, sir Thomas Rotherham, sir Iohn Norton, sir Richard Sands, sir Iohn Neuil, and thirtie Eſquires, with many Gentlemen, and all their traines.

Prouiſion in the towne of Caleis.

The towne of Caleis had at this season 24. C. beds, and stabling for two thousand horses, beſides the villages about.

The 21. of October, king Henry rode toward Boloigne, and was by the way at Sandingfield met by the French king, and many nobles of France, who rode all to Boloigne, and were there lodged.

King H. rode to Boloigne.

The twentie fiue of October, whilest the king lay thus in Boloigne, the French king called a chapter of the companions of his order called Saint Michell, of whome the king of England was one, and so he there elected the

Dukes

Dukes of Norffolke and Suffolke, to be companions of the same order, who being brought to the Chapiter had their collars deliuered to them, and were sworne to the statutes of the order. The same daie, they departed out of Bologne toward Caleis: without the towne of Caleis, about the distance of two miles, the Duke of Richmond the kinges base sonne, with a great companie of noble men, which hadde not bene at Bologne, met them, and saluting the French K. embraced him in most honorable and curteous maner. Then they passed forward to Newenhambridge, and so to Caleis, where was such prouision made for the receiuing of them, as well for lodging, plate, and all such other furniture of houshold, as also of all sortes of viandes, wines, and other necessaries, ỳ it seemed woonderful. The French kings train was 1200. horse or more, among the which was the king of Nauarre, the Cardinall of Lorraine, and manie Dukes, Byshoppes, and great Estates of France, Gascoigne, Brytaine, and Normandy: but there was lodging enough in Caleis, not onlie for them, but also for manie other, so that there were aboue 8000. persons lodged within the Towne at that time. Whilest these two kings lay at Caleis, king Henrie made the king of Nauarre knight of the Garter. The next daie, the French king, with the king of Nauarre, and all the great Lordes of France, rode againe to Bologne: and king Henry of Englande rode with them to Sandingfield, where hee made the French king a costlie banquet. At this enterview, there was a communication of a ioint armie to bee made by them both, agaynst the Turke, who hadde at that time a great armie in Hungarie. The two kings should bring into the fielde against him fourescore thousand men, whereof 10000. to bee horsemen with artillerie and furniture, but the enemie of peace (the diuell) stirred all christian princes against the Emperor, for that they feared he sought to be monarch of all Italie. Whereupon king Henry of England sent presentlie to the French king, by the Lord of Pomerie the French ambassador 50000. crownes. The king of England feared ỳ the Emperor, for queene Katherine his Aunts sake (whome the saide king had refused to be his lawfull wife) would ioine with the Pope against him, wherefore hee made great complaynts to the French king against the saide Pope, for the wrong hee did him in the matter of deuorse, and namelie in that hee would constrayne him to goe in proper person to Rome, or else to sende thither a Deputie with sufficient prorie to aunswere the lawe, which the sayde king helde for rigorous: furthermore hee requested the French king that they two might sende Ambassadours togither against the Pope to sommon him to a councell, to see what abuse and great wrongs hee had done against Christian Princes, and their subiects, and exacting of the clergie of England, and that the same, by the saide councell, might bee reformed. To this the French king agreed, and foorthwith willed the king of Englande to make all sure at home, and let him alone to deale abroad, but not to call the Pope to any councell, for that by their two powers, hee was otherwise to be dealt withall. Thus was the king of Englande nowe bent against the Pope, where of late hee hadde giuen monethlie threescore thousande angelles, towardes the pate of an army vnder Mounsier de Foys, for the popes deliuery, when he was holden

The pope to bee sommoned to a Councell.

prisoner in Castle Angell, by the late Duke of Burbons souldiers, and the prince of Orange.

The banquet being ended at Sandingfield, as is aforesaide, the three kings departed like louing brethren in great amitie. Whilest the king of England was in the French kings dominions, he had the vpper hand, and likewise had the French king in the dominions of the king of England. And as the French king paid all the English mens charges at Bologne, so did the king of England pay the French mens charges at Calais.

The fourteenth of Nouember the king returning into England landed at Douer.

1533 King Henry kept his Christmasse at Greenewich, and after Christmasse sir Thomas Audley keper of the great seale, was made Lorde Chancelor of England.

King Henry married the Lady Anne Boleine. King Henry priuily married the Lady Anne Boleine in his closet at Whitehall, on the fiue and twentith day of January being S. Paules day: Mistresse Anne Sauage bore vp Quene Annes traine, and was her selfe shortly after married to the lorde Barkeley, doctor Rowland Lee, that married the king to Quene Anne, was made Bishop of Chester, then Bishop of Couentry and Lichfield, and president of Wales.

Parliament at Westminster. Sute to Rome forbidden. And then began the parliament, in the which was chosen Speaker Humfrey Wingfield Gentleman of Grayes Inne. In this parliament was enacted, that no person should appeale for any cause out of this realme to the court of Rome, but from the Commissary to the Bishop, and from the Bishop to the Archbishop, and from the archbishop to the king, and all causes of the kings to be tried in the vpper house of the Conuocation. It was also enacted the same time, that Quene Katherine should no more be called Quene, but Princesse Dowager, and the widowe of Prince Arthur.

After that the king perceiued his new wife to be with childe, he caused all officers necessary to be appointed to her, and so on Easter eue being the 12. day of Aprill, she went to her closet openly as Quene, and was proclaimed Quene of England: and then the king appointed the day of her coronation to be kept on Whitsonday next following, and writings were sent to all Sheriffes, to certifie the names of men of forty pound lands, to receiue the order of knighthode, or else to make fine for the same. The assessement of which fine was appointed to Thomas Cromwell maister of the kings iewell house, who so vsed the matter, that a great summe of mony was leuied to the kings vse by those fines.

Ann. reg 25.

Men of 40 l. land, knighted, or fined.

T. Cromwell maister of the kings iewell house.

The matter of appeale made by Quene Katherine, whereunto she still sticked, and by no meanes could be remoued from it, was communed of both in the Parliament house, and also in the conuocation, where it was so handled, that manie were of opinion, that not onelie her appeale, but also all other appeales made to Rome, were voide, and of none effect, for that in ancient councelles it had bene determined, that a cause rising in one prouince should not be determined in an other. This matter was opened with all the circumstances to the Ladie Katherine Dowager, the which persisted still in her

former

former opinion, and would by no meanes reuoke her appeale to the court of Rome. Whereupon the Archbishop of Canterbury doctor Thomas Cranmer accompanied with doctor Iohn Stokesley bishoppe of London, Stephen Gardner bishoppe of Winchester, the bishops of Bathe and Lincolne, and diuers other learned men in great number rode to Dunstable, which is fiue miles from Ampthill, where the princesse Dowager late, and there by one doctor Lee she was accited to appeare before the said Archbishop in case of matrimony in the saide towne of Dunstable: but shee made default and appeared not, wherfore she was called peremptorily euery daie 15. daies together, and at the last for lacke of appearance, by the assent of the learned men there present, she was diuorced from the king, and the marriage declared to be voide and of none effect.

Katherine Dowager accited.

Katherine Dowager diuorced.

In the moneth of Maie Pope Clement sent an orator to the king, requiring him to appeare personally at the generall Councell, which was appointed to be kept in the yeare following: but when his commission was shewed, at the earnest request of the king, there was neither place nor time certaine specified for the keeping of that councell, and so with an vncertaine answere to an vncertaine demaunde, he departed, but not vnrewarded. Notwithstanding the king vnderstanding that the Pope, the Emperour, and the French king should méete at Nice in June following, he appointed the duke of Norffolke, the Lorde Rocheford brother to Quéene Anne, Sir William Pawlet controller of the kings house, sir Anthony Browne, and sir Francis Brian knights, to go in ambassage to the French king, and both to accompanie him to Nice, and also to commune with the pope there, concerning his state in the kings diuorce. These made their prouision readie, and so with the number of eight score horses they went to Douer, and passing ouer to Caleis, toke their waie through France, to accomplish their ambassade as they had charge.

king Henry required to appeare in a generall councell.

The kings highnesse addressed his letters to the Maior and communaltie of London, signifying vnto them, that his pleasure was to solemnize the coronation of his most deare and welbeloued wife Quéene Anne at Westminster on Whitsondaie next ensuing, willing them to make preparation, as well to fetch her grace from Grenewich to the Tower by water, as to sée the Citie garnished with pageants in places accustomed, for the honour of her grace, when she should be conueyed from the tower to Westminster. Whereupon a common councell was called, and commandement giuen to the Haberdashers, of which craft the Maior was, that they shoulde prepare a Barge for the Bachelors, with a waster, and a foyste, garnished with banners, like as they vse when the Maior is presented at Westminster, on the morrowe after the feast of Saint Simon and Iude. Also all other Crafftes were commanded to prepare Barges, and to garnish them, not onely with their banners accustomed, but also to decke them with targets by the sides of the Barges, and to set vp all such séemely banners and Bannerets, as they had in their Halles, or could get to furnish their said barges, and euery barge to haue minstrels, according to which commandement great preparation

Preparation for coronation of quéene Anne.

was made for all things necessarie for such a noble triumph.

The nine and twentith date of May being thursdate, the Maior and his brethren all in Scarlet, and such as were knights had collars of Esses, and the residue hauing great chaines, and the Councell of the Citie assembled with them at Saint Mary Hill. And at one of the clocke descended to the new staire to their barge, which was garnished with manie goodly banners and streamers and richly couered, in which barge was Shalmes, Shagbushes, and diuers other Instrumentes of Musicke, which played continuallie.

The comming by water from Greenewich.

After that the Maior and his brethren were in their barge, seeing that the companies to the number of fiftie barges were readie to waite vpon them, they gaue commandement to the companies, that no barge should row nearer to another, than twice the length of the barge, and to see the order kept, there were three wherries prepared, and in euery part one of them two officers to call on them to keepe their order.

After which commandement giuen, they set forth in order, as hereafter is described. First, before the Maiors barge was a foiste, full of ordinance, in which foiste was a great red Dragon continually mouing and casting wilde fire, and round about the saide foiste stood terrible monstrous and wilde men casting fire, and making hideous noise: next after the foiste a good distaunce came the Maiors barge: on whose right hand was the Bachelers barge, in the which were trumpets, and diuers other melodious instruments: the deckes of the saide barge and saile yardes and the top castles were hanged with rich cloth of golde and silke: at the forechip and the sterne were two great banners rich beaten with the armes of the King and the Quéene: and on the top castle also was a long streamer newly beaten with the said armes: the sides of the barge was set full of flags and banners of the deuices of the companies of Haberdashers and merchant Aduenturers, and the lasserers or cordes were hanged with innumerable Pensels, hauing little belles at the endes, which made a goodlie noise, and was a goodly sight, wauering with the winde: on the out side of the barge were three dozen Scutcheons in metall, of the armes of the King and Quéene, which were beaten vpon square Buckeram deuided, so that the right side had the Kings colours, and the left side the Quéenes, which Scutcheons were fastened on the clothes of Golde and siluer, hanging on the deckes: on the left hande of the Maior was an other foiste, in the which was a mount, and on the mount stode a white Faulcon crowned vpon a rote of Golde, enuironed with white roses and red, which was the Quéenes deuice: about which mount sate Virgins singing and playing melodiously: Next after the Maior followed his fellowship the Haberdashers: next after them the Mercers: then the Grocers, and so euerie companie in his order, and last of all the Maiors and Sheriffes officers, euerie companie hauing melodie in their barge by themselues, and goodly garnished with banners, and some couered with silke, and some with arras or such like, which was a goodly sight to behold: and in this order they rowed by Grénwich to the point beyond Grénwich, and there they turned backward

in

in an other order, that is to weete, the Maiors and Sheriffes officers first, and the meanest craft next, and so ascending to the vppermost craft in order, and the Maior last, as they go to Paules at Christmasse, and in that order they rowed downe-ward to Grænwich towne, and there cast anchor, making great melodie. At three of the clocke, the Quæne apparelled in rich cloth of Golde, entred into her barge, accompanied with diuers Ladies and Gentlewomen, and incontinent the Citizens set forward in their order, their minstrels continually playing: and the Bachelers barge going on the Quænes right hande, which she toke great pleasure to beholde. About the Quænes barge were many noble men, as the Duke of Suffolke, the Marquesse Dorcet, the Earle of Wilshire her father, the Earles of Arundale, Darby, Rutland, Worcester, Huntington, Sussex, Oxford, and manie bishops and noble men, euerie one in his barge, which was a goodly sight to behold: she thus being accompanied rowed towards the Tower: and in the meane waie the ships which were commanded to lie on the shoare for letting of the barges, shot diuers peales of guns, and ere she landed, there was a maruellous shot out of the Tower, I neuer heard the like: and at her landing, there met with her the Lord Chamberlaine with the officers of Armes, and brought her to the King, which receiued her with louing countenance at the posterne by the water side, and kissed her, and then she turned backe againe and thanked the Maior and the Citizens with manie goodlie wordes, and so entred into the Tower.

Posterne of the tower by the waters side.

After which entrie the Citizens all this while houered before the Tower, making great melodie, and went not a land, for none were assigned to lande but the Maior, the Recorder, and two Aldermen: but to speake of the people that stood on euerie shoare to behold this sight, he that saw it not will not beleeue it.

On Fridaie at dinner serued the King all such as were appointed by his highnes to be knights of the Bathe, which after dinner were brought to their chambers, and that night were bathed, and shriuen according to the old vsage of England, and the next daie in the morning the king dubbed them according to the ceremonies thereto belonging, whose names hereafter ensue nineteene in number.

Knights of the Bathe.

The marquesse Dorset.
The earle of Darby.
The lord Clifford, sonne and heire to the earle of Cumberland.
The lord Fitz Walter, sonne and heire to the earle of Sussex.
The lord Hastings, sonne and heire to the earle of Huntington.
The lord Mountague,
The lord Vaux.
Sir Henry Parker, sonne and heire to the lord Morley.
Sir William Winsore, sonne and heire to the lord Winsore.
Sir Iohn Mordant, sonne and heire to the lord Mordant.
Sir Francis Weston.
Sir Thomas Arondale.

Sir Iohn Hudleſtone.
Sir Thomas Poynings.
Sir Henry Sauell.
Sir George Fitz William of Lincolneſhire.
Sir Iohn Tindale.
Sir Thomas Ierney.

The conueying of queene Anne thorough the citey to Weſtminſter.

On Saturdaie the one and thirtieth daie of Maie, the Quéene was conueied through London in order as followeth: To the intent that the horſes ſhould not ſlide on the pauement, nor that the people ſhould be hurt by horſes, the high ſtrétes, where-through the Quéene ſhould paſſe, were all grauelled from the Tower vnto Temple barre, and rayled on each ſide, within which rayle ſtode the craftes along in their order from Grace church, where the merchants of the Stilyard ſtode vntill the little conduit in Cheape, where the Aldermen ſtode, and on the other ſide of the ſtrete ſtode the conſtables of the Citie, apparelled in veluet and ſilke with great ſtaues in their hands, to cauſe the people to giue roume, and kéepe good order: and when the ſtrétes were ſomewhat ordered, the Maior in a gowne of crimoſin veluet, and a rich collar of eſſes, with two ſotemen clothed in white and red damaſke, rode to the Tower, to giue his attendance on the Quéene, on whome the Sheriffes with their officers did awaite vntill they came to the Tower hill, where they taking their leaue rode downe the high ſtrétes, commanding the conſtables to ſée roume and good order kept, and ſo went and ſtode by the Aldermen in Cheape, and before the Quéene with her traine ſhould come, Grace-ſtrete and Cornehill were hanged with fine ſcarlet, crimoſin, and other grained clothes, and in ſome places with rich arras, and the moſt part of Cheape was hanged with cloth of tiſſue, golde, veluet, and many rich hangings which did make a goodly ſhewe, and all the windowes were repleniſhed with Ladies and Gentlewomen to behold the Quéene and her traine, as they ſhould paſſe by.

The firſt of the Quéenes companie that ſet forwarde, were 12. French men belonging vnto the French Ambaſſador, clothed in coates of blew veluet, with ſléeues of yellow and blewe veluet, their horſes trapped with cloſe trappers of blew ſarſenet poudred with white Croſſes: after them marched gentlemen, eſquires, knights, two and two: after them the iudges: after them the knights of the Bathe in violet gownes with hoodes purfled with miniuer like doctors: after them abbots: then barons: after them biſhops: the earles and the marqueſſes: then the lord Chancelor of England: after him the archbiſhop of Yorke, and the ambaſſador of Venice: after them the archbiſhop of Canterburie, and the ambaſſador of France: after rode two eſquires of honor with robes of eſtate rolled and worne bauldrike-wiſe about their neckes, with caps of eſtate, repreſenting the Dukes of Normandy and Aquitaine: after them rode the Maior of London with his mace, and Garter in his coate of armes, which bare alſo his mace of Weſtminſter hall: after them rode the lorde William Howard with the marſhals rod deputy to his brother the Duke of Norfolke marſhall of England, which was ambaſſador then in France,

and

and on his right hand rode Charles Duke of Suffolke for that daie high constable of England, bearing the warder of siluer appertaining to the office of constableship, and all the Lordes for the most part were clothed in crimosin veluet, and all the Quénes seruants or officers of armes in scarlet: next before the Quéne rode her Chancelor bare-headed: the sergeants and officers at armes rode on both sides of the lords: then came the Quéne in a white litter of white cloth of golde, not couered or bailled, which was led by two palfreis clad in white damaske downe to the ground, head and all, led by her footmen: shée had on a kirtle of white cloth of tissue, and a mantle of the same furred with ermine, her haire hanging downe: but on her head shée had a coife with a circlet about it ful of rich stones: ouer her was borne a canapie of cloth of gold with foure gilt staues, and foure siluer belles: for bearing of the which canapie were appointed fiftéene knightes, foure to beare it one space on foote, and foure an other space, according to their owne appointment: next after the Quéne rode the Lorde Browgh her chamberlaine: next after him William Coffin master of her horses, leading a spare horse with a side saddle, trapped downe with cloth of tissue: after him rode seuen ladies in crimosin veluet, turned vp with cloth of gold and of tissue, and their horses trapped with golde: after them two chariots couered with red cloth of golde, in the first chariot were two ladies, which were the olde Dutchesse of Norffolke, and the olde marchionesse of Dorset: in the second chariot were foure ladies all in crimosin veluet: after them rode seuen ladies in the same sute, their horses trapped and all: after them came the third chariot all in white, with fiue ladies in crimosin veluet: next to them came the fourth chariot all red, with eight ladies also in crimosin: after whom followed thirtie gentlewomen all in veluet and silke, in the liuerie of their ladies, on whom they gaue their attendance: after them followed the guarde in coates of Goldsmiths worke, in which order they rode forth till they came to Fan-church, where was made a pageant all of children apparelled like merchants, which welcommed her to the Citie, with two proper propositions both in French and in English: and from thence she rode vnto Grace church corner, where was a costlie and maruellous cunning pageant made by the merchants of the Stilyard, therein was the mount Pernassus with the fountaine of Helicon, which was of white marble, and foure streams without pipe did rise an ell high and met together in a little cup aboue the fountaine, which fountaine ranne abundantly with rackt Reynish wine till night, on the mountaine sate Apollo, and at his féete sate Caliope: and on euerie side of the mountaine sate foure muses playing on seuerall sweete instruments, and at their féete Epigrams and poesies were written in golden letters, in the which euerie muse according to her propertie praised the Quéne.

From thence the quéne with her traine passed to Leaden hall, where was a goodly pageant with a tipe and heauenly Rose, and vnder the tippe was a goodly rote of golde, set on a little mountaine enuironed with red Roses and white, out of the tippe came downe a faulcon all white, and set vpon the rote, and incontinent came downe an Angell with great melodie, and set a close

crowne of gold on the faulkens head: and in the same pageant sate S. Anne, with all hir issue beneath her: and vnder Mary Cleophe sate hir foure children, of the which children, one made a goodly Oration to the Quéene of the fruitefulnes of S. Anne, and of her generation, trusting, that like fruit should come of her. Then she passed to the conduit in Cornhil, where were the three Graces set in a throne, afore whome was the Spring of Grace, continuallie running wine: afore the fountaine sate a poet, declaring the property of euery Grace: that doone, euery Lady by hir selfe according to hir property, gaue to the Q. a seuerall gift of Grace.

That doone, shée passed by the great Conduite in Cheape, which was newelie paynted with Armes and deuises, out of the which Conduite, (by a goodlie Fountayne set at the ende,) ranne continuallie wine, both white and Claret all that afternoone: and soe she rode to the Standart, which was richlie paynted with Images of Kinges and Quéenes, and hanged with banners of armes, and in the toppe was marueylous sweete Harmonie, both of songs and Instrumentes.

Crosse in cheap newly gilt.

Then shee went forwarde by the Crosse, which was newelie gilte, till shee came where the Aldermen stoode, and then Maister Baker the Recorder came to her with lowe reuerence, making a proper and briefe proposition, and gaue to her, in the name of the citie, a thousand marks in golde, in a purse of golde, which she thankefully accepted with manie good words, and so rode to the little Conduite, where was a rich pageant full of melodie and songs, in which pageant were Pallas, Iuno, & Venus, and afore them stoode Mercurie, which in the name of ỳ thrée goddesses, gaue vnto her a ball of Gold, diuided in thrée, signifying thrée gifts which these thrée goddesses gaue to hir, that it to say, wisedom, riches, and felicity.

As she entered into Pauls gate, there was a prétie pageant, in which sate thrée Ladies richlie clothed, and in a circle on their heade was written *Regina Anna*, prosper, proceede, and raigne. The lady in the middest had a tablet, in the which was written *Veni amica, coronaberis*, and vnder the tablet sate an angell with a close crowne. And the ladie sitting on the right hand had a tablet of siluer, in which was written, *Domine dirige gressus meos*. And the third lady had a tablet of gold, with letters of azure written, *Confide in Domino*, and vnder their fet was written:

Regina Anna paris regis de sanguine natam,
Et paries populis aurea secla tuis.

And these Ladies cast downe Wafers, on the which the sayde two verses were written.

From thence she passed to the East end of Pauls church against the schole, where stood a scaffolde, and children well apparrelled, which saide to her diuers goodly verses of Poets translated into English, to the honor of the K. and her, which she highly commended. And then she came to Ludgate, which gate was new garnished with gold and bise, & on the leades of S. Martins church stood a goodly

goodly quére of singing men and children, which sang newe Ballets made in praise of her grace.

After that she was past Ludgate, she proceeded toward Flétestréet, where the conduit was newlie painted, and all the armes and angels refreshed, and the shalmes melodiouslie sounding. Upon the conduite was made a Tower with foure turrets, and in euery turret stood one of the cardinall vertues with their tokens and properties, which had seuerall spéeches, promising the Quéen neuer to leaue her, but to be aiding and comforting her: and in the middest of the tower closely was such seuerall solemne instruments, that it séemed to be an heauenly noise, and was much regarded and praised: and besides this, the conduit ran Wine, claret and red all the afternoone, so she with all her company, and the Maior, rode forth to Temple bar, which was newly painted and repaired, where stoode also diuers singing men and children, till shee came to Weminster Hall, which was richlie hanged with cloth of arras, and newelie glased, and in the middest of the hall she was taken out of her litter, and so led vp to the high deske vnder the cloth of estate, on whose left hand was a cupboord of tenstages high, marueylous rich and beautifull to beholde, and within a little season was brought to the Quéene with a solemne seruice in great standing Spice plates, a voyde of Spice, and subtleties, with Ipocrasse, and other Wines, which shee sent downe to her ladies, and when the ladies had dronke, she gaue harty thanks to the lords and ladies, and to the Maior, and other that had giuen their attendance on hir; and so withdrewe hirselfe with a few ladies to the White hall, and so to her chamber, and there shifted hir, and after went in hir barge secretly to the king to his manno[r] of Westminster where she rested that night.

Coronation of Queene Anne.

On Whitsondaie the 1. of June the Maior clad in crimosin veluet, with his coller, and all the Aldermen and Sherifs in scarlet, and the counsel of the city, took their barge at the crane by seuen of the clock, and came to Westminster, where they were welcommed, and brought into the hall by M. Treasurer, and other of the kings house, and so gaue their attendance till the Quéene shoulde come forth: betwéene eight an nine of the clocke shee came into the hall, and stood vnder the cloth of estate, and then came in the kinges Chappell, and the monks of Westminster, all in rich coapes, and many Bishops and abbots, in Coapes and Miters, which went into the middest of the hall, and there stoode a season, then was there a ray cloth spread from the quéenes standing in the hal, through the pallace and sanctuary, which was railed on both sides, to the high altar of Westminster, after that the ray cloth was cast, the officers of armes appointed the order accustomed. First went gentlemen, then Esquires, then knights, then aldermen of London in their cloakes of scarlet, cast ouer their gownes of scarlet.

After them, the Iudges in their mantles of scarlet and coifes: then followed the knights of the Bath, being no lords, euery man hauing a white lace on his left sleeue: then followed barons and vicounts in their parliament robes of scarlet: after them came Earles, Marquesses, and Dukes in their Robes of Estate, of Crimosin veluet, furred with Ermin, poudred according to their degrées.

degrées. After them came the Lord Chancellor in a robe of Scarlet, open before, bordered with lettice. After him came the kings chappell, and the monks solemnelie singing, with procession. Then came abbots and bishops mitered, then Sergeants and officers at armes: Then the Maior of London with his mace, and Gartar in his coate of armes: then the marques Dorset in his robe of estate, which bare the Scepter of gold, and the earle of Arundell, which bare the rod of iuorie with the doue both together: then alone the earle of Oxforde high Chamberlaine of England, which bare the crowne. After him the duke of Suffolke in his robe of estate, for that day being high Stewarde of England, hauing a long white rod in his hand, and the Lord William Howard with the rod of the marshals ship, and euerie knight of the gartar had on his collar of the order. Then proceeded forth the Quéene in a circote and robe of purple veluet, furred with Ermine in her haire, coife, and circlet, as she had the Saturdaie, and ouer her was borne the Canapie, by foure of the Cinque portes, all in Crimosin, with points of blew and redde hanging on their sleeues, and the Byshoppes of London and Winchester bare vp the laps of the Quénes robe, and her traine which was verie long, was borne by the old Dutchesse of Norfolke. After her followed Ladies, being Lordes Wiues, which had circotes of scarlet, with narrow sleeues, the breast all lettice, with barres of pouders according to their degrées, and ouer that, they had mantles of scarlet furred, and euery mantle had lettice about the neck like a neckerchiefe, likewise poudered, so that by the pouderings their degrées might be knowne. Then followed Ladies being Knights wiues, in Gownes of Scarlet, with narrow sleeues without traines, onely edged with lettice, likewise had all the quénes Gentlewomen.

When shée was thus brought to the high place made in the middest of the Church betweene the quoere and the high altar, shée was set in a rich Chaire, and after that shee had rested a while, shée descended downe vnto the high Altar, and there prostrated her selfe while the bishop of Canterburie said certain collects ouer her. Then she rose, and the bishop annointed her on the head and on the breast, and then she was led vp againe to her chaire, where after diuers orisons saide, the archbishop set the crowne of S. Edward on her head, and then deliuered her the Scepter of gold in her right hand, and the rod of Iuorie with the doue in the left hande, and then all the quére sung *Te Deum, &c.* Which done, the bishop toke off the crowne of S. Edwarde being heauie, and set on her heade the Crowne made for her, and so went to masse, and when the offering was begunne, she descended downe and offered being crowned, and so ascended vppe agayne and sate in her Chaire till *Agnus*, and then shee went downe and knéeled before the high altar, where she receyued of the archbishop the holy sacrament, & then went vp to the place agayne. After that Masse was done, she went to S. Edwards shrine, and there offered. After which offering done, shee withdrewe her into a little place made for that purpose on the one side of the quoere. Now in the meane season euery dutchesse put on her bonet a coronell of gold wrought with flowers, and euerie marchioneesse put on a demy coronel of gold, and euery countesse a plain circle of gold without floures,

and

and euery king at armes put on a crowne of copper and gilte, all which were worne till night.

When the Queene had a little reposed her, the companie returned in the same order that they set forth, and the Quéene went crowned, and so did the ladies aforesaid: her right hand was sustained by ỹ earle of Wilshire her father, and her left hand by the L. Talbot, deputy for the earle of Shrewsburie, & Lord Furniuall his father. And when shee was out of the sanctuarie within the pallace, the trumpets played marueylous freshlie, and so shee was brought to Westminster hall, and so to her withdrawing chamber: during which time, the lords, Iudges, maior and aldermen, put off their robes, mantles, and cloakes, and tooke their hoodes from their neckes, and cast them about their shoulders, and the Lordes sate onelie in their circotes, and the Iudges and Aldermen in their gownes, and all the Lords that serued that daie serued in their circotes, and their hoodes about their shoulders. Also dyuers officers of the kings house being no Lords, had circotes and hoodes of Scarlet, edged with minuer, as treasurer, controller, and master of the iewell house, but their Circotes were not gilt.

The sitting at dinner of Queene Anne.

While the Quéene was in her Chamber, euery Lord and other that ought to do seruice at the coronation, did prepare them according to their duetie, as the Duke of Suffolke high steward of Englande, which was richlie apparelled, his doublet and iacket set with orient pearle, his gowne crimosin veluet embrothered, his courser trapped with a close trapper, head & all to the ground of crimosin veluet, set full of letters of gold of Goldsmithes worke, hauing a long white rod in his hand. On his left hand rode the Lord William, deputy for his brother, as earle marshall with the marshals rod, whose gown was crimosin veluet, and his horse trapper purple veluet cutte on white sattin, embrothered with white Lions. The earle of Oxford was high chamberlaine, the earle of Essex caruer, the earle of Sussex sewer, the earle of Arundell chiefe butler, on whom twelue citizens of London did giue their attendance at the cupboord: the earle of Darby cupbearer, the vicount Lisle panter, the L. Burgeyny chiefe larder, the L. Bray almoner for him and his copartners, & the maior of Oxford kept the buttery bar, and Th. Wyat was chosen ewerer for sir Henry Wyat his father.

When all things were readie and ordered, the Quéene vnder her canapie came into the hall and washed, and sate downe in the middest of the table vnder her cloth of estate. On the right side of her chaire stood the countesse of Oxford widow, and on her left hand stood the countesse of Worcester all the dinner season, which dyuers times in the dinner time did holde a fyne cloth before the Quéenes face when she list to spitte, or doe otherwise at her pleasure: and at the Tables ende sate the Archbyshoppe of Canterburie on the right hande of the Queene, and in the middest betweene the Archbyshoppe and the countesse of Oxford stoode the Earle of Oxford with a white staffe all dinner time, and at the Queenes feete vnder the table sate two gentlewomen all dinner time. When all these things were thus ordered, came in the duke of Suffolke, and the Lorde William Howard on horsebacke, and the sergeantes of armes

before

before them, and after them the sewer, and then the knightes of the Bathe, bringing in the first course, which was eight and twenty dishes, besides subtleties, and ships made of ware, marueilous gorgeous to beholde, all which time of seruice the trumpets standing in the windowe at the neather ende of the hall, played.

When she was serued of two dishes, then the Archbishops seruice was set downe, whose sewer came equall with the third dish of the Quænes seruice on his left hand. After that the Quéne and the Archbishoppe were serued, the barons of the Ports began the table on the right hand next the wall, then at the table sate the maisters and clearkes of the Chancerie, and beneath them other Doctors and Gentlemen. The table next the wall on the left hand by the cupborde was begunne by the Maior and Aldermen, the Chamberlaine, and councell of the Citie of London, and beneath them sate substantiall merchants, and so downeward other worshipfull persons. At the table on the right hand in the middest of the hall sate the lorde Chancelor, and other temporall lordes: on the right side of the table in their circotes, and on the left side of the same table sate bishops and abbots in their parliament robes: beneath them, sate the Iudges, Sergeants, and the Kings Counsell: beneath them, the knights of the Bathe. At the table on the left hande in the middle part sate Dutchesses, Marquesses, Countesses, Baronesses in their robes, and other Ladies in circotes, and Gentlewomen in gownes, all which Gentlewomen and Ladies sate on the left side of the table along, and none on the right side, and when all were thus set, they were incontinent serued so quickly, that it was marueilous, for the seruitors gaue so good attendance, that meat, nor drinke, nor anie thing else néeded to be called for, which in so great a multitude was marueil. As touching the fare, there could be deuised no more costlie dishes, nor subtleties. The Maior of London was serued with foure and thirtie dishes at two courses, and so were all his brethren, and such as sate at his table. The Quéne had at her second course foure and twentie dishes, and thirtie at the third course, and betweene the last courses, the kings of armes crowned, and other officers of armes cried larges in three partes of the hall, and after stood in their place, which was in the bekens of the kings bench: and on the right hand out of the cloyster of Saint Stephens Chappell was made a little closet, in which the king with diuers ambassadours stoode to beholde the seruice, the Duke of Suffolke, and the Lorde William rode oftentimes about the hall, cheering the lordes, ladies, and maior, and his brethren.

After they in the hall had dined, they had wafers and ypocrase, and then they washed, and were commanded to rise and stand still in their places before the tables or on the fourmes till the Quéne had washed. When she had taken wafers & ypocrase, the table was taken vp, and the Earle of Rutland brought vp the surnape, and laide it at the bordes end, which immediatly was drawne and cast by maister Reade marshall of the hall, and the Quéne washed, and after the archbishop, and after the surnape was withdrawne: then she rose, and stoode in the middest of the hall place, to whom the earle of Sussex, in a goodly

spice

ſpice plate, brought a boſde of ſpice and confections. After him, the Maior of London brought a ſtanding cup of gold, ſet in a cup of aſſay of gold, and after that he had dronke, he gaue the maior the cup, with the cup of aſſay, becauſe there was no couer, according to the claime of the Citie, thanking him and all his brethren of their paine.

Then the vnder her canapie departed to her chamber, and at the entry of her chamber, he gaue the canapie with bels and all to the baro[illegible] of the ports according to their claime, with great thankes: then the Maior of London bearing his cup in his hand, with his brethren, went through the hall to their barge, and ſo did all other noblemen and gentlemen, for it was fire of the clocke.

On Sundaie were the iuſtes at the tilt before the kings gate, where the Maior and his brethren had a goodly ſtanding, but there were few ſpeares broken, by reaſon the horſes would not cope. Iuſting.

On Wedneſdaie the king ſent for the Maior and his brethren to Weſtminſter, and there he himſelfe gaue vnto them hartie thankes, with manie goodly words.

On Midſummer euen deceaſed Mary the French Quéene, ſiſter to King Henry the eight, and wife to Charles Duke of Suffolke, and ſhe was buried at Saint Edmundſburie. Mary K. Henries ſiſter deceaſed.

The firſt of Julie Quéene Katherine was proclaimed Prince Arthures widowe.

The ſeuenth of Julie two merchants were murthered on the Thamis by one Woolfe and his wife.

It was this yeare enacted, that butchers ſhould ſell their béefe and mutton by weight, béefe for a halfe penny the pound, and mutton for thrée farthings: which being deuiſed for the great commodity of the realme (as it was thought) hath proued farre otherwiſe, for at that time fat oxen were ſold for fiue and twentie ſhillings and eight pence the péece, fat weathers for thrée ſhillings and foure pence the péece, fat calues of the like price, a fat lamb for twelue pence. The butchers of London ſold penny pieces of béefe for the reliefe of the poore, euery piece two pounde and a halfe, ſometime thrée pounde for a penny: and thirtéene, ſometime fourtéene of theſe pieces for twelue pence: mutton eight pence the quarter, and an hundred weight of béefe for foure ſhillings and eight pence: what price it hath growen to ſince it néedeth not to be ſet downe. At this time alſo, and not before, were forraine butchers permitted to ſell their fleſh in Leaden hall market of London. Beefe and mutton ſold by weight.

The 7. of September being ſunday, betweene thrée and foure of the clocke after none, the Quéene was deliuered of a faire Ladie, for whoſe good deliuerance *Te Deum* was ſung incontinently, and great preparation was made for the chriſtning. The Maior, and his brethren, and fortie of the chiefe Citizens were commanded to be at the chriſtning the Wenſdaie following. Vpon which daie the Maior Sir Stephen Peacocke in a gowne of crimoſin veluet, with his collar of eſſes, and all the aldermen in ſcarlet with collars and chaines, and all the councell of the citie with them toke their barge at one of Birth of Ladie Elizabeth, and her chriſtning.

the

the clocke, and the Citizens had another Barge, and so rowed to Grénwich, where were many lords, knights, and gentlemen assembled: all the walles betwéne the kings pallace and the Friers, were hanged with arras, and all the way strewed with gréne Rushes. The Friers Church was also hanged with rich arras: the font was of siluer, and stood in the midst of the church thrée steps high, which was couered with a fyne cloth: and dyuers Gentlemen with Aprons and Towels about their neckes, gaue attendance about it, that no filth shoulde come to the Fonte: Ouer it hung a square Canappe of Crymosin Sattin, fringed with Golde, about it was a rayle, couered with redde Saie, betweene the queere & bodie of the church was a close place with a pan of fire to make the Childe readie in. When all these thinges were ordered, the Childe was brought to the Hall, and then euerie man set forwarde: First the citizens two and two, then gentlemen, Esquires, and Chaplaines, next after them the aldermen, and the Maior alone, and next the kings counsell, then the kings chappell in coapes, then barons, bishops, earles, the earle of Essex bearing the couered basons gilt, after him the Marques of Exceter with a taper of virgin wax, next him the Marques Dorset bearing the salt, behind him the ladie Mary of Norffolke bearing the crisome, which was verie rich of Pearle and stone. The old dutchesse of Norffolke bare the child in a Mantle of Purple veluet, with a long traine furred with Ermine. The Duke of Norffolke with his marshals rodde went on the right hand of the saide dutchesse, and the duke of Suffolke on the left hand, and before them went officers of armes, the countesse of Kent bare the long traine of the childes mantle, and meane betwéne the child and the countesse of Kent went the earle of Wiltshire and the earle of Darby on either side, supporting the said traine in the middest: ouer the child was borne a rich canapie by the Lord Rochford, the lord Hussey, the Lord William Howard, and the Lord Thomas Howard the elder. After the child followed manie ladies and gentlewomen. When the childe was come to the church doore, the Byshoppe of London mette it with diuers Byshoppes and abbots mitered, and beganne the obseruances of the Sacrament. The Godfather was Lorde Thomas Archbyshoppe of Canterburie: the Godmothers were the old dutchesse of Norffolk, and the old marchionesse of Dorset widowes, and the childe was named Elizabeth, and after that all thinges were done at the church doore, the child was brought to the Font and christned: and that done, Gartar chiefe king of armes cried aloud: God of his infinit goodnes send prosperous life and long to the high and mighty princesse of England Elizabeth, and then the trumpets blew, then the child was brought vp to the altar, and the gospell said ouer it. After that immediatly the archbishop of Canterbury confirmed it, the marchionesse of Exceter being Godmother: then the bishoppe of Canterburie gaue vnto the princesse a standing cup of golde, the Dutchesse of Norffolke gaue to her a mouing cup of golde fretted with pearle, the marchionesse of Dorset gaue thrée gilt boles pounsed, with a couer, and the marchionesse of Exceter gaue thrée standing boles grauen, all gilt with a couer. Then was brought in wafers, confects, and ipocrasse, in such plenty, that euery man had as much as he would desire: then they set forwarde, the trumpets afore

going

going in the same order toward the kings pallace as they did when they came thitherward, saving that the giftes that the Godfather and godmothers gaue, were borne before the child by 4. persons, that is to saie, first sir Iohn Dudley bare the gift of the Ladie of Excester, the Lord Thomas Howard the younger bare the gift of the Ladie Dorset, the Lorde Fitz Walter bare the gift of the lady of Norffolke, and the Lorde of Worcester bare the gift of the Archbyshop of Canterbury, and all the one side as they went was full of staffetorches, to the number of fiue hundred, born by the gard and other of the kings seruants: and about the child were many other proper torches born by gentlemen. And in this order they brought the princesse to the quéns chamber doore, and then departed.

The Maior went to the kings chamber, & tarried there a while with his brethren the Aldermen, and at the last, the dukes of Norffolke and Suffolk came out from the king, and reported to the Maior and his brethren, that the king thanked them heartilie, and commaunded them to giue them thankes in his name, and from thence they were had to the seller and dranke, and so went to their barge.

About this time the crafty practises of one Elizabeth Barton, named the holy maide of Kent, came to light, and were discouered, so that shee and her adherents in Nouember following, were brought to the Star chamber, and there before the kings counsell confessed their fained hypocrisie and dissimuled holines, traiterous purposes and intentes. The names of those her adherentes, which were presented with her before the lords in the Starre chamber, were as followeth: Richard Master parson of Aldington in Kent, Edward Bocking doctor of diuinitie a monke of Canterburie, Richard Dering monke also of Canterburie, Edwarde Twaites Gentleman, Thomas Laurence Register to the Archdeacon of Canterburie, Henry Golde parson of Aldermarie in London, Hugh Rich Frier obseruant, Richard Risby, and Thomas Golde gentleman. These were adiudged vpon their confession, to stande at Pauls Crosse in the Sermon time, where they with their owne handes shoulde seuerallie deliuer each of them to the preacher a bill declaring their subtill and superstitious doings, which thing they did the Sunday next following, standing vpon a stage or scaffolde before the Crosse, the bishop of Bangor late abbot of Hide there preaching, shewed their offences, from whence they were committed to the tower of London.

Elizabeth Barton, holy maid of Kent.

In this meane time the Scottes were not quiet, but robbed the kinges subiectes both by sea and lande, whereupon the king caused them to bee requited, not onelie by the Borderers and other to them associate, which entering the marches, burnt manie of their Piles and strong holdes; but also he set forth certaine Shippes, which entered into their streames, and fetched out many of those prises, which they had taken out of their hauens, yet was there no warre proclaimed.

The Scottes mouud was.

At the suite of Ladie Katherine Dowager, a curse was sent from Rome, which accursed both the King and the Realme. This curse was set vp in the towne of Dunkerke in Flaunders (for the bringer thereof durst approch no néerer)

A curse procured from Rome.

nærer) where it was taken downe by one William Lock a Mercer of London: because (as it was said) that the lady Katherin Dowager had procured this curse of the pope, the duke of Suffolke was sent to hir, as then lying at Bugden beside Huntington, where according to that hee had in commandement, he discharged a great sort of her houshold seruants, and yet left a conuenient number to serue hir like a princesse, which were sworn to serue her, not as a quæn, but as princesse Dowager: but such as toke that othe shee vtterly refused, and would none of their seruice, so that she remained with a smal number of seruants about her.

1534 Holy Maide of Kent attainted.

After Christmasse the Parliament beganne, wherein the forenamed Elizabeth Barton, and other her complices were attaynted of treason, for sundrie practises by them put in vre, sounding to the vtter reproch, perill, and destruction of the Kinges person, his honour, fame, and dignitie, for they hadde put into the heades of manie of the kinges subiects, that to the said Elizabeth Barton was giuen knowledge by reuelation from god and his Saints, that if the king proceeded to the diuorce, and married another, he shoulde not bee king of this Realme one moneth after, and in the reputation of God, not one day nor houre.

This Elizabeth first through sickneſſe, being oftentimes brought as it were into a traunce, whereby her visage and countenance became marueilously altered at those times when she was so vexed: at length by the incouraging, procurement and information of the forenamed Richard Master parson of Aldington, she learned to counterfeit such manner of traunces, as in her sickues by force of her disease shæ had beene acquaynted with, so that shee shewed vnto the people dyuers maruels, and sundry alterations of the semblable parts of her bodie, craftilie vttering in her saide fained traunces dyuers counterfeite vertues and holie wordes, tending to the rebuke of sin, and reprouing of such new opinions as then began to be spred. And to bring the people the more in beleefe with hir hypocritical doings, she was counselled to say, that she should neuer be perfectlie whole, till she had visited an image of our Lady at a place called Court at Streete, within the parsh of Aldington aforesaide. Thither was she brought, and by the meanes of the said Richard Master and Edward Bocking there was assembled a two thousand persons at the date appointed of hir thither comming, to see the miracle. At which time she being thither brought afore all that assemble & multitude of people, she falsly fained & shewed in the chappell of our Ladie of Court at Streete manie alterations of her face, and other outwarde sensible partes of her bodie: and in those trances she vttered wonderous wordes, as she was before subtillie induced by the sayde Edward Bocking and Richarde Master. And amongst other things she vttered, that it was the pleasure of God, that the saide Bocking should be her ghostlie father, and that shee shoulde bee a religious woman. And within a while after such fayned traunces, she appeered to the people to bee sodaynelie releeued from hir sickneſſe by the intercession of the image of our Ladie being in the said chappell, by reason of which hypocriticall dissimulation, the sayde Elizabeth was brought into a marueilous fancy, credite, & good opinion of a great multitude

of

of people of this realme, and to increase the same by the counsell of the saide Edward Bocking she became a nunne in the priorie of Saint Sepulchres at Canterburie, to whome the said Edward Bocking had commonly his resort: and by conspiracie betweene her and him, she still continued her dissembled trances, alledging that in the same she had reuelations from almightie God and his Saints: and among other, that which as before we haue mentioned, touching the kings marriage, as ye haue heard. This matter proceeded so farre, that there was a booke written by her complices, namely, by Thomas Laurence Register to the archdeacon of Canterburie, of her fained miracles, reuelations, and hypocriticall holinesse. All things were handeled so craftilie, that not onely the simple people, but also the wise and learned were deceiued by the same: in so much, that William Warham late Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and Iohn Fisher bishop of Rochester, and diuers other being informed thereof, gaue credit thereunto. All which matters and many other had béene traiterously practised amongst the parties many yéeres, chiefly to interrupt the diuorce, and to destroy the king, and depriue him of the crowne and dignitie roiall of the realme, as in the act of their attaindor made more at large doth appeare.

In this Parliament also was made the act of succession, for the establishing of the crowne, to the which euerie man was sworne being of lawfull age.

During this parliament, euery sunday at Paules crosse preached a bishop, declaring the pope not to be supreme head to the Church. Also in other places of this realme great troubles were raised about preaching, namely, at Bristow where M. Latimer preached, and there preached against him one maister Hobberton, and doctor Powell, so that there was great part-takings on both sides: insomuch that diuers priests and other set vp billes against the Maior, and against maister Latimer, but the maior (permitting lay men to preach) caused diuers priests to be apprehended and cast into Newgate with bolts vpon them, and diuers other ran away and lost their liuings, rather than come in the maiors handling.

Bishops preach against the Pope.

Latimer preached at Bristow Chron. Bristow.

The 30. of March the parliament was proroged, and euery lord and knight and burgesse were sworne to the act of succession, and subscribed to a schedule fixed to the statute. And then were commissioners sent into all parts of the realme, to take the like oth of all men and women.

The lordes sworne to the succession.

The 20. of Aprill, Elizabeth Barton a nunne professed, Edward Bocking and Iohn Dering, two monks of Christs church in Canterbury, and Richard Risby and another of his fellowes of the same house, Richard Master parson of Aldington, and Henry Golde priest, were drawen from the tower of London to Tiborne, and there hanged and headed, the nunnes head was set on London bridge, and the other heads on gates of the city: these as ye before haue heard, were attainted by parliament. At which time also were attainted of misprision for the same matter, Iohn Fisher bishop of Rochester, and Iohn Adeson his chaplaine, Thomas Able priest, Thomas Golde gentleman, and Thomas Laurence register to the archdeacon of Canterbury.

Holy maid of Kent her head set on London bridge.

Ann.reg.26. Lord Dacres of the north arraigned & quit.

The ninth of July was the lord Dacres of the north arraigned at Westminster of high treason, where the duke of Norffolke sate as Iudge and high steward of England, where the said lord Dacres being brought to the barre with the axe of the tower before him, after the indightment read, so improued the same, answering euerie part and matter therein contained, and so plainlie confuted sir Ralph Fenwike, and Musgraue his accusers, who had brought in their false Scottes for witnesses, which were there present readie to auouch their false accusations, that to their great shames and his honour, he was found that date by his peeres not giltie, to the great reioycing of the people, who made a great shoute for ioy, when they heard the wordes, Not giltie pronounced.

Frith brent.

The 22. of July Iohn Frith was burned in Smithfield for his opinions concerning the sacrament: at the same time also suffered with him at the same stake one Andrew Hewet a young man, by occupation a Tailor.

Friers houses suppressed.

The 11. of August were all the places of the obseruants friers at Grenewich, Canterburie, Richmond, Newarke, and Newcastle put downe, and Augustine friers set in their places for the time, and the obseruants were put in places of the gray friers.

The Mues by Charing crosse brent.

The 16. of August, was burned the kings stable at Charing crosse, of olde time called the Mewes (for that the kings haukes were there mewed & kept) wherein was burned many great horses, and great store of hay.

T. Cromwell master of the rolles.

The 21. of September, doctor Tailor master of the rolles, was discharged of that office, and Th. Cromwell sworne in his place, the 9. of October.

The popes authoritie abrogated.

The 3. of November, the Parliament began at Westminster, wherein the Pope with all his authoritie was cleane banished this realme, and order taken that he should no more be called Pope, but bishop of Rome, and the K. to be taken and reputed as supreme head of the church of England, hauing full authoritie to reforme all errors, heresies, and abuses of the same. Also the first fruites and tenths of all spirituall dignities and promotions were granted to the king, with a subsidie of the laitie of twelue pence in the pound, with a fifteenth and a tenth.

First fruits and tenths giuen to the king.

1535

The earle of Kildare died prisoner in the tower of London, and his sonne Thomas Fitz Garet rebelled in Ireland, and toke all the kings ordinance, lending to the Emperor, requiring him to take his part. Amongst other he slew doctor Allen bishop of Dinclin, and robbed all such as would not obey him: wherefore the king sent thither sir William Skeuington with a number of souldiers.

An.reg.27. Charter house monks executed.

The 29. of Aprill, Iohn prior of the Charterhouse at London, Augustine Webster, prior of Beuall, Thomas Laurence prior of Eltham, Richard Reginalds doctor, a monke of Sion, and Iohn Haile Vicar of Thistleworth, were all condemned of treason, who were drawen, hanged and quartered at Tiborne the fourth of May, their heads and quarters set on the gates of the citie all saue one quarter, which was set on the Charter-house at London.

Polled heads commanded.

The eight of May, the king commanded all about his court to poll their heads, & to giue them example, he caused his owne head to be polled, and from thence,

thencefoꝛth his beard to be notted and no moꝛe shauen.

The fiue and twentith daie of May, was in S. Paules church at London examined nineteene men and fiue women boꝛne in Holland, whose opinions were: first, that in Chꝛist is not two natures, God and man: secondly, that Chꝛist toke neither flesh noꝛ blood of the virgine Marie: thirdly, that childꝛen boꝛne of infidels shall be saued: fourthly, that baptisme of childꝛen is to none effect: fiftly, that the sacrament of Chꝛists bodie is but bꝛead onely: sixtly, that he who after his baptisme sinneth wittingly, sinneth deadly, and cannot be saued. Foureteene of them were condemned, a man and a woman of them were burned in Smithfield, the other twelue were sent to other townes there to be bꝛent. Hollanders condemned foꝛ heretikes.

The eightéenth of June, thꝛée monkes of the Charter-house at London, named Thomas Exmew, Humfrey Middlemore, and Sebastian Nidigate were dꝛawen to Tibꝛne, and there hanged and quartered foꝛ denying the kings supꝛemacie. Charter-house monks executed.

The two and twentith of June, doctoꝛ Iohn Fisher Bishoppe of Rochester, foꝛ denying the kings supꝛemacie, was beheaded on the tower hill, his head was set on London bꝛidge, and his bodie buried within Barking churchyarde. Bishop of Rochester beheaded.

The sixt of July, sir Thomas Moore was beheaded on the tower hill, foꝛ the like denial of the kings supꝛemacie: and then the bodie of doctoꝛ Fisher bishop of Rochester was taken vp and buried with sir Thomas Moore both in the tower. Sir Th. Moore beheaded.

DoctoꝛFoxe the kings almoner was made bishop of Hereford: and Hugh Latimer bishop of Woꝛcester: Iohn Hilsey called the blacke fꝛier of Bꝛistow, was made Bishop of Rochester.

In August, the loꝛd Thomas Gerard son to the earle of Kildare, was taken in Ireland, and sent to the tower of London.

In October the king sent maister Thomas Cromwell, and doctoꝛ Lee, and other, to visite the abbeies, pꝛioꝛies, and nunneries in England: these were oꝛdained to be the pꝛincipall visiters, who put foꝛth all religious persons that would go, and all that were vnder the age of foure and twentie yéeres: and after closed vp the residue that would remaine, so that they should not come out of their places, and toke oꝛder, that no man should come to the houses of women, noꝛ women to the houses of men, but onely to heare their seruice in the churches: all religious men that departed, the abbot oꝛ pꝛioꝛ to giue them foꝛ their habite a pꝛiests gowne, and foꝛtie shillings of money: the nuns to haue such apparel as secular women weare, and to go where they would. They toke out of monasteries and abbeies, their relickes and chiefest iewels to the kings vse, they said. Abbeies visited

The 11. of November was a great pꝛocession at London of all the religious men, thꝛée bishoppes, and foure abbots mitered, which was foꝛ ioy the French king was recouered of his health. Pꝛocession.

In the moneth of December, the names of all chauntries were taken, and who had the gift of them. Names of Chauntries.

Katherin Dowager deceased.

The eyght of Januarie dyed Ladie Katherine Dowager at Kymbalton, and was buryed at Peterborowe.

1536

The twentie nine of Januarie, Queene Anne was deliuered of a man Childe before her time, which was borne deade.

A parliament. Rob. Greene. Small houses suppressed *Ann. reg. 28.*

In a Parliament begunne in the moneth of Februarie, was granted to the king and his heires all religious houses in the realme of Englande, of the value of two hundred pounde and vnder, with all landes and goods to them belonging: The number of these houses then suppressed, were 376. the value of their landes then 32000. pound, and more by yeere, the moueable goods as they were solde, Robine Hoods pennie woorthes, amounted to more than one hundred thousande poundes, and the religious persons that were in the sayde houses, were cleerelie put out, some went to other greater houses, some went abroade to the worlde. It was (saith mine author) a pitifull thing to heare the lamentation that the people in the Countrete made for them: for there was great hospitalitie kept among them, and as it was thought more then tenne thousand persons, maisters and seruauntes had lost their liuinges by the putting downe of those houses at that time.

Iusts at Greenwich.

On Maie daie was a great Iusting at Greenwich, where were Challengers the Lorde Rochforde and other: and Defenders Henrie Norrice and other. From this Iustes king Henrie sodaynelie departed to Westminster, hauing onelie with him 6. persons: of which sodain departure many men marueyled.

On the next morrowe, George Boleine Lorde Rochforde, Brother to the Queene, and Henrie Norrice, were brought to the Tower of London prisoners. Also the same daie, about fiue of the clocke in the afternoone, Quéene Anne Boleine was brought to the Tower of London by Sir Thomas Audley Lorde Chancellor, the Duke of Norffolke, Thomas Cromwell secretarie, and Sir William Kingstone Constable of the Tower. And when shee came to the Tower Gate entering in, shee fell on her knees before the saide Lordes, beseeching God to helpe her, as shee was not guiltie of that whereof shee was accused, and then desired the sayde Lordes to beseech the kinges grace to bee good vnto her, and so they left her there Prisoner.

On the 15. of Maie Quéene Anne was arraigned in the Tower of London on a scaffold for the purpose made in the kings hall, before the Duke of Norffolke, who sate vnder the cloth of estate as high steward of England, with the Lord Chancellor on his right hand, the Duke of Suffolke on his left hand, with marquesses and lords, &c. and the earle of Surrey sate before the duke of Norffolke his father, as earle marshall of England: The kings commission being read, the Constable of the Tower, and the Lieutenant brought the Quéene to the barre, where was made a Chaire for hir to sit downe in, and there her inditement was read, whereunto she made so wise and discréet answeres, that she seemed fully to cléere hirselfe of al matters laid to hir charge; but being tryed by hir péeres, twenty 6. in number, whereof the duke of Suffolke was chiefe, she was by them found guiltie, and had iudgement pronounced by the Duke of Norffolke, to bee brent on the greene in the Tower, or else to haue hir head

smitten

ſmitten off, as the kings pleaſure ſhould be further knowen, and ſo ſhe was conuaied to warde againe: the lady Kingſton, and the lady Bolein her Ant attending on her. And then immediatly, the lord Rochford the Quéenes brother was likewiſe arraigned and condemned: the Maior of London, his brethren the aldermen, the wardens, and foure perſons mo of euery the twelue principall companies being preſent.

The ſeuentéene daie of May, the lorde Rochford brother to the Quéene, Henrie Norrice, Marke Smeton, William Brierton, and Francis Weſton, all of the kings priuie Chamber, about matters touching the Quéene, were beheaded on the tower hill, the lorde Rochfords bodie with the heade was buried in the chappell of the tower, the other foure in the churchyarde there.

On the nineteénth daie of May about eight of the clocke in the morning, Quéene Anne Bolein was brought to the greene within the tower of London, by the white tower, the lord chancelor, the duke of Richmond, the duke of Suffolke, with the moſt of the kings councell, as earles, lords, and nobles of the realme being preſent, alſo the Maior of London, with his brethren the aldermen, and ſheriffes, and certaine of the principall companies of the citie, &c. All theſe being on a ſcaffold made there for the execution, the ſaid Quéene Anne ſaide as followeth: Maiſters, I héere humbly ſubmit me to the lawe, as the lawe hath iudged me, and as for mine offences, (I héere accuſe no man) God knoweth them, I remit them to God, beſéeching him to haue mercie on my ſoule, and I beſéech Jeſu ſaue my Soueraigne and maiſter the King, the moſt godlieſt, nobleſt, and gentleſt Prince that is, and long to raigne ouer you, which wordes ſhe ſpake with a ſmiling countenance: which done, ſhée knéeled downe on both her knées, and ſaid, To Jeſu Chriſt I commend my ſoule, and with that word ſuddenly the hangman of Caleis ſmote off her head at one ſtroke with a ſword: her body with the head was buried in the quire of the chappell in the tower. Rob. Greene. Queene Anne beheaded.

The twentith of May, the king married ladie Iane daughter to ſir Iohn Seimour knight, which at Whitſontide was openlie ſhewed as Quéene, and on tueſdaie in the Whitſon wéeke, Sir Edward Seimour was created vicount Beauchampe, and Sir Walter Hungerforde made Lorde Hungerforde. King H. married lady Jane.

The 8. of June began a parliament, and the cleargie helde a conuocation in Pauls church, where after much diſputing and debating of matters, they publiſhed a booke of Religion, entituled, Articles deuiſed by the kings highnes. In the which booke is mentioned but thrée ſacraments. Articles of religion deuiſed by the king.

On Saint Peters night, the king and Quéene ſtood at the Mercers hall, and ſaw the watch moſt brauely ſet forth.

The 29. of June, the king held a great iuſting and triumph at Weſtminſter, where were ordained two lighters made like ſhips to fight vpon the water, one of the which braſt in the midſt, whereby one Gates gentleman, a ſeruant of maiſter Kneuets was drowned in his harneſſe. In the other, a gunne braſt her chamber, and maimed two of the mariners. Triumph at Weſtminſter.

After that the earle of Wiltshire and Ormond, called sir Thomas Bolein, had deliuered the kings priuy seale, whereof he was *Custos*, into the kings handes:

E. Cromwell Lord keeper.

Thomas Cromwel secretary to the K. and M. of the rolles, was made L. keeper of the said priuie seale. And Christopher Hales the kings attorney, was made maister of the Rolles, and maister Baker Recorder of London was made the kings attorney.

The 9. of July, the L. Fitzwaren was created earle of Bathe, and the morrow after T. Cromwel was made lord Cromwel.

Th. Cromwell lord priuy seale vicar generall.

The 18. of July lord T. Cromwel was made knight, and high vicar generall ouer all the spiritualty vnder the king, and sate diuers times in the conuocation among the bishops, as head ouer them.

Henry Duke of Richmond.

The 22. of July, Henry duke of Richmond and Somerset, earle of Nottingham, a bastard son of K. Henry, borne at Blakamore in Essex, of the lady Tailebois, that time called Elizabeth Blunt, died at saint Iames, and was buried at Thetford in Norffolke.

Lorde Thomas Howard sent to the Tower.

This moneth of July, lord Thomas Howard, youngest brother to the duke of Norffolke, was sent to the tower of London, for making a priuie contract of matrimonie with the Ladie Margaret Dowglas, daughter to the Queene of Scots by the earle of Angus, and neece to king Henry of England: the saide lord Thomas was at saint by parliament, and also the said lady Margaret Dowglas was after committed to the tower for the same.

In September, Thomas Cromwel lord priuy seale, and vicegerent, sent out vnder the kings spirituall seale, certaine iniunctions to the prelates and clergie of the realme, charging Curates to preach and to teach their parishioners,

Pater noster, creede, and commandements.

the *Pater noster*, *Aue* and *Creede*, the commandements and articles of the fayth in English, with other articles.

Commotion in Lincolneshire.

In the beginning of October, at a sise for the Kinges subsidie kept in Lincolneshire, the people made an insurrection, and gathered nigh twentie thousand persons, who toke certaine lords and gentlemen of the country, causing them to be sworne to them vpon certaine articles which they had deuised, and such as refused to sweare, they kept prisoners, and beheaded a priest, who was the bishop of Lincolnes chancelor: Against those the king did send the Duke of Suffolk, the earle of Shrewsburie, and the Earle of Rutlande with a strong power, whereof when the rebelles hearde, they desired pardon, brake vp their armie, and departed home, but their Captaynes were apprehended and executed.

Commotion appeased.

A priest and a butcher executed.

The ninth of October, a priest and a butcher were hanged at Windsore, by martiall lawe, for wordes spoken in the behalfe of the Lincolneshire men, the butcher wished the good fellowes (as he termed them) in Lincolnshire, to haue the flesh on his stall, rather than to sell it at such price as hee was offered: the priest standing by, likewise wished them to haue it, for he said they had need of it. Also Iames Mallet doctor of law, late chaplaine to M. Katherin, for like words was executed at Chelmesford in Essex.

Commotion in Yorkeshire.

The men of Lincolneshire beeing pacified, within sir dates after began an insurrection in Yorkeshire for the same causes: there people gathered to the number

number of 40000. who toke the archbishop of Yorke, and the L. Darcie, and caused them to be sworne to their partie.

Oth of the rebels in Yorkeshire.

Yee shall not enter into this your pilgrimage of grace for the common wealth onely, but for the loue that you do beare to Gods faith and the church militant, and the maintenance thereof, and the preseruation of the kings person and his issue, and the purifying of nobilitie, and to the intent to expresse all villaines bloud, and euill counsellers against the common wealth, from his Grace, and the priuie counsell of the same. And that yee shall not enter into our said pilgrimage for no particular profit to your selues, nor doe any displeasure to any priuate person, but by the counsell of the common wealth, ne to murder or slay for any enuy, but in your hart to put away all feare fro the common wealth, and to take before you the crosse of Christ, and in your harts his faith, to the restitution of Gods church, and to the suppression of erroneous opinions. God saue the king.

Against those rebelles, the king sent the Duke of Norffolke, the Duke of Suffolke, the Earle of Shrewsburie, and the Marquesse of Exceter, with a great armie, with whome a battaile was appointed to haue béene fought, on the éue of Saint Simon and Iude: but as God woulde, there fell such raine the night before, that the two armies coulde not mete: Whereupon, they desired the Duke of Norffolke to sue vnto the kings maiestie for their pardon, and that they might haue their liberties, &c. which the duke promised, and rode poste to the king then lying at Windsore, to knowe his pleasure, and so appeased them. Sir Robert Aske, that was chiefe of this rebellion, came to London, and was not onely pardoned, but rewarded with great giftes.

Commotion appeased.

Sir Ralph Eure kept Skarborow Castle in the North, being fiue wéekes besieged by the rebels, twentie daies whereof he and all his companie (which were his onely friendes, seruants and tenants, and serued for good will to him) were forced to sustaine themselues with bread and water, and yet kept the same safe to the ende of the said rebellion, and so deliuered it to king Henrie, who sent him sone after to serue in the borders against Scotlande, where in great credite he continued his seruice, kéeping the Scots without doing hurt to England, and with such obedience of them, as within twentie miles of the borders of Scotland fore against him, there was not a Scot but at his commandement, and so continued till he was killed in Anno 1545.

Sir Ralph Euers his good seruice in the north.

The 13. of Nouember, maister Robert Pagington a graue citizen, and a mercer of London, was slaine with a gun, as he was going from his house, by Soper lane end, to morrowe masse in S. Thomas of Akers, nowe called the Mercers chappell in cheape: but the murtherer was neuer openly knowne, till by his owne confession made many yeares after, when he came to the gallowes at Wanberie where he was hanged for felonie.

Robert Pagington murthered.

The 22. of December, the Thamis being frozen, the king and quéene Iane rode through London to Grénwich.

The 3. of Februarie, was Thomas Fitzgarret, sonne and heire to the earle 1537

The earle of Kildare & fiue of his vncles executed.

of Kildare, beheaded, and fiue of his vncles drawn, hanged, and quartered, at Tyborne for treason.

A new commotion in Yorkeshire.

In the same moneth Nich. Musgraue, Tho. Gilby, and other stirred a newe rebellion, and besieged the city of Carlile, from whence they were driuen, and manie of them taken and put to death. Also the same moneth, sir Frauncis Bigot, sir Robert Constable, and other began a conspiracie, and for the same were attainted.

Another conspiracie.

Abbot of Whalley and other hanged.

The 10. of March, Iohn Paslew bacheler of diuinitie then being the 25. abbot of the abbey of Whalley in Lincolnshire, was executed at Lancaster, and the same daie with him was hanged, drawne, and quartered, Iohn Eastegate a monke of the same house, whose quarters were set vp at diuers townes in that shire. And on the 13. of March W. Haydoke a monk of Whalley was hanged at Whalley, in the field called Pedeamgates, and there hanged long time after. Yore about the same time, the abbot of Sawley in Lancashire, with one Astbebe a monke of Geruaur, were executed. Also Robert Hops abbot of Woborne in Bedfordshire, with the prior of the same house, and the parson of Pudington, were executed at Woborne.

Lincolneshire men executed.

The 29. of March were 12. men of Lincolne drawn to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered, 5. were priests, and 7. were lay men, 1. one was an abbot, a suffragan, doctor Mackerel: another was the vicar of Louth in Lincolnshire, and two priests.

Ann. reg. 29.

A commotion in Sommersetshire.

In April, through certaine commissions sent into Sommersetshire to take vp coyne, the people began to make an insurrection, which was by M. Powlet & other alaid, the beginners to the number of 60. were condemned, whereof 14. were hanged and quartered, one of them was a woman.

In June the L. Darcy, the L. Hussey, sir Rob. Constable, sir Thomas Percy, sir Frauncis Bigot, sir Stephen Hamelton, sir Iohn Bulmer and his wife, George Lomley, Nich. Tempest esquire, Robert Aske, W. Thurst abbot of Fountaines, Adam Sodbury abbot of Geruaur, the abbot of Riuers, W. Wold prior of Birlington, were all put to death: sir Robert Constable at Hull, ouer the gate called Beuerley gate: Aske hanged in chaines on a tower at Yorke: Margaret Cheyney, otherwise lady Bulmer, burned in Smithfield: lorde Darcy beheaded at Tower hill: lord Hussey at Lincolne, and the other fiue in number, suffered at Tyborne.

Cromwell knight of the Garter.

The 26. of August, the L. Cromwell L. priuy seale, vice Roy, and vicker generall, was made knight of the gartar.

Prince Edward borne.

The 12. of October, about two of the clocke in the morning, was borne at Hampton court prince Edward, and M. Iane his mother left hir life the 14. of October: the 18. of October, the prince was made Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and earle of Chester.

Edward Seymour L. Beauchamp, the Quenes brother, was made Earle of Hertford, and sir William Fitz Wil. lord admirall, was made Earle of Southampton, and M. William Powlet was made treasurer of the kings house, Sir Iohn Russell comptroller of the kings house, M. Henedge, M. Long, M. Kneuet of the kings priuie chamber, M. Coffin, M. Listar, and M. Seymour the quenes brother,

brother, knights.

On Allhallowne æuen, lorde Thomas Howard brother to the Duke of Norfolke, died prisoner in the tower of London, and was buried at Thetford, and then the Ladie Margaret Dowglas was pardoned, and released out of the Tower. L. Tho Howard deceased.

The 12. of November, the corps of Q. Iane was with great solemnity conueied from Hampton court toward Windsor, and there buried in the middest of the quire.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Grenwich.

The 24 of Februarie being Sonday, the rood of Worley in Kent, called the rood of Grace, made with diuers vices, to moue the eies and lips, was shewed at Pauls Crosse by the preacher, which was the bishop of Rochester, and there it was broken, and plucked in peeces. 1538 Roode of grace shewed at Pauls.

The 25. of Februarie, sir Iohn Allen priest, and also an Irish gentleman of the Garers, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Doctor Ioh. Forest a frier obseruant, was apprehended, for that in secret confession he had declared to manie the kings subiectes, that the king was not supreame head of the Church, whereas before he had bene sworne to the same supremacy, vpon this point hee was examined, and answered that hee tooke his oth with his outwarde man, but his inwarde man neuer consented thereunto: then being further accused of diuers hereticall opinions, hee submitted himselfe to the punishment of the Church, but hauing more libertie than before, to talke with whome hee would, when his abiuration was sent him to read, he vtterlie refused it. Whereupon he was condemned, and afterward on a paire of new gallowes set vp for that purpose in Smithfield, he was hanged by the middle and arme-pits quicke, and vnder the gallowes was made a fier, wherewith hee was brent and consumed, on the 22. daie of Maie: there was a scaffold set vp before the prisoner, whereon was placed sir Richard Gresham Lord Maior of the citie, the dukes of Norffolke and Suffolk, the lord admiral, the lord priuie seale, and diuers other of the counsell, besides a great number of Citizens and other: also a pulpet was there set, in the which master Hugh Latimer Bishoppe of Worcester preached a Sermon, confuting the friers errors, and moouing him to repentance, but all auailed not: so that in the end, when the Bishop asked him what state he would die in, the frier with a loude voice answered and said, that if an angell should come downe from heauen, and teach him any other doctrine then hee had receiued, and believed from his youth, hee would not now believe him, and that if his body should be cut ioint after ioint, or member after member brent, hanged, or what paine soeuer might be doone to his bodie, he would neuer turne from his olde profession: more he saide to the Bishop, that 7. yeres past he durst not to haue made such a sermon for his life. And so hee was hanged and brent, as afore is shewed: and an huge great Image named Daruell Gatherm, hauing beene brought out of Wales to this gallowes in Smithfield, was there brent with the saide frier Forest. In the night next following, the rood at Saint Margarets Patins by the tower street of London, was pulled downe, and broken in peeces, with his Tabernacle. *An. reg. 30.* Frier Forest brent. Fire in Rood lane.

And

And about 3. nights after, to wit, the 27. of May was a great fire in the same S. Margarets parish, not far from the church, the which fire among the Basket-makers there consumed more then a dosen houses, and nine persons men and women brent to death.

Abbeies suppressed.

Battaile abbey in Sussex, Martine abbey in Surrey, Stratforde abbey in Essex, Lewis in Sussex, and other were suppressed to the kings vse.

The images of our ladie of Walsingham and Ipswich were brought vp to London, with all the iewels that hung about them, and diuers other images both in Englande and Wales, whereunto ante common pilgrimage was vsed, for auoiding of Idolatrie, all which were brent at Chelsey by T. Cromwel prime seale.

The ninth of August, Edmond Conesby one of the Grooms of the Kinges Chamber, was executed at Tyborne, for counterfeyting the Kinges Seale manuell.

Hangman hanged.

The 1. of September being Sonday, one Cratwell Hangman of London, and two other, were hanged at the wrestling place by Clerken-well, for robbing a booth in Bartholomew faire.

The 2. of September, Edw. Clifford gentleman was executed at Tiborn, for counterfeiting the kings priuy signet.

The Bible in euery church to be read.

This moneth of September, Thomas Cromwell lord priuy seale, vicegerent to the kings highnes, sent forth iniunctions to all bishops and curates through the realme, charging them to see that in euerie parish church, the Byble of the largest volume, printed in English, were placed, for all men to reade on: and

Register booke in euery church to be kept.

that a booke of register were also prouided and kept in euerie parish Church, wherein shall bee written euerie wedding, christning, and burying within the same parish for euer.

Tho. Beckets shrine.

S. Austines abbey at Canterbury was suppressed, and the shrine and goods taken to the kings treasury, as also the shrine of Thomas Becket in the priorie of Christ church, was likewise taken to the kings vse. This Shrine was builded about a mans height, all of stone, then vpward of timber plain, within the

Tho. Beckets bones brent.

which was a Chest of yron, conteining the bones of Thomas Becket, scull and all, with the wounde of his death, and the pece cut out of his scull layde in the same wound. These bones (by commandement of the lord Cromwel) were then and there brent, the timber worke of this shrine on the outside, was couered with plates of gold, damasked with golde wire, which grounde of gold was againe couered with iewels of gold, as rings, 10. or 12. cramped with gold wyer, into the said grounde of golde, many of those rings hauing stones in them, brooches, images, angelles, precious stones, and great pearles, &c. The spoyle of which shrine, in gold and precious stone, filled two great chestes, such as 6. or 8. strong men coulde doe no more, then conuey one of them at once out of the church. The monks of that church were commanded to change their habites, into the apparell of secular priests.

Friers in London suppressed.

The hospital of S. Thomas of Akers in London, the blacke friers, the white friers, the gray friers, and the charterhouse monks in London, were suppressed, and so all other religious houses immediatly after.

In

In the moneth of November, Iohn Nicholson, otherwise Lambert, a priest, was accused of heresie, for holding opinion against the bodily presence in the sacrament of the aulter: he appealed to the king, who fauorably consented to heare him at a day appointed. Against the which day in the palace at Westminster, within the kings hall, there was set vp a throne or siege royall for the king, with scaffoldes for the lords, and a stage for Nicholson to stand vpon. Diuers articles were ministred to him by Thomas Cranmer archbishoppe of Canterbury, Latimer bishop of Worcester and other, but namely the king pressed him sore, and in the end offered him pardon, if he would renounce his opinion, but he would not, wherefore he was condemned, had iudgement and was brent in Smithfield. Lambert brent.

The 5. of November, Henry Courtney marquesse of Excester, and earle of Deuonshire, and sir Henry Poole knight, Lord Mountacute, and sir Edward Neuill brother to the lord of Burgauenie, were sent to the Tower, being accused by sir Geffrey Poole brother to the lord Mountacute, of high treason, who were indighted, for deuising to maintaine, promote and aduance, one Reginald Poole, late Deane of Excester, enemie to the king, beyonde the sea, and to depriue the king.

The 24. of November, foure anabaptists, three men and one woman, all dutch, bare fagots at Paules crosse. And on the 29. of November, a man and a woman dutch anabaptists, were brent in Smithfield. Anabaptists bare fagots and were brent.

The first date of December sir Thomas Audley, was made baron Audley of Walden.

The marquesse of Excester, earle of Deuonshire, and Henry lord Mountacute, were arraigned on the last of December, at Westminster, before the lord Audley that was lorde Chancelor, and for that present high steward of England, where they were found giltie. The third daie after were arraigned sir Edward Neuill, sir Geffrey Poole, two priests called Crofts and Colens, and one Holland a marriner, all attainted. And the 9 of Ianuary were Henrie marquesse of Excester, Earle of Deuonshire, Henry L. Mountacute, and sir Edward Neuill, beheaded on the tower hill. The two priests, Crofts and Colens, and Holland the marriner, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne, and Geffrey Poole was pardoned. 1539 Marquesse of Excester and other executed.

On Ash-wednesday Iohn Iones, Iohn Potter, and William Manering were hanged in the princes liuerie (because they were the princes seruants) on the south side of Paules church-parde, for killing of Roger Cholmeley esquire in the same place. Execution in Paules churchyarde.

The 3. of March, sir Nicholas Carew of Bedington, in the county of Surrey, knight of the Garter, and maister of the kings horse, was beheaded on the tower hill, for being of counsell with Henry marquesse of Excester, and Henry Poole lord Mountacute. Sir Nicholas Carew beheaded.

The 9. of March, the king created sir William Powlet knight, treasurer of his houshold, lord Saint Iohn, sir Iohn Russell comptroller of his houshold, lord Russell, and sir Iohn Parre lord Parre. States created.

The 28. of Aprill, began a Parliament, in the which Margaret countesse of *Ann. reg. 31.*

of Salisburie, Gertrude wife to the marquesse of Excester, Reginald Poole, sir Adrian Fortescue, and Thomas Dingley knight of Saint Johns, and diuers other were attainted: And all the religious houses in England suppressed and vnsuppressed were granted to the king for euer.

Blocke houses builded.

King Henry being informed that the pope by inſtigation of cardinal Poole, had moued and ſtirred diuers princes and potentates of Chriſtendome to inuade the Realme of England, without delay rode towardes the ſea coaſtes, and ſent diuers nobles to ſurvey all the portes, and places of danger, where any meete and conuenient landing place might be doubted, as well on the borders of England, as alſo of Wales, in which dangerous places he cauſed bulwarkes and forts to be erected: and further he cauſed the lorde Admirall earle of South-hampton, to prepare in a readineſſe his naule of ſhips for defence of the coaſts: beſides this he ſent forth commiſſions to haue generall muſters taken through the Realme, to vnderſtand what able men he might make account of: and further to haue the armour and weapons ſeene and viewed, ſir William Forman knight then Maior of London, was commanded to certifie the names of all the able men within the citie, and liberties thereof, betwixt the ages of 16. and 60. with the number of armors and weapons, whereupon the ſaid Maior and his brethren, each one in his warde, toke the number accordingly, whereof they aduertiſed ſir Thomas Cromwell lord priuie ſeale, who certified the king, and then he commanded a conuenient number of the moſt able to be muſtered.

Great muſter at London.

The 8. of May, the citizens of London muſtered at the Miles ende all in bright harneles, with coates of white ſilke, or cloth, and cheines of golde, in three great battailes, the number was 15000. beſide wifflers, and other awaiters, who in goodly order paſſed through London to Weſtminſter, & ſo through the Sanctuary, and rounde about the parke of S. James, and returned home through Holborne.

No watch at Midſommer.

Doctor Shakſton biſhop of Saliſbury, and doctor Latimer biſhop of Worceſter, reſigned their biſhoprickes into the kings hand the firſt of July.

Vicar of Mandſworth and other executed.

The 8. of July, Griffith Clearke vicar of Mandſworth, with his Chapleine and his ſeruant, and frier Waire, were all foure hanged and quartered at S. Thomas Waterings: whoſe inditement I haue not heard of, and therefore not able to ſet downe the cauſe of their execution.

The 10. of July, ſir Adrian Fortescue, and Thomas Dingley, were beheaded, for matter whereof yée haue heard.

On Eaſter daie there were ſixtie ſaile diſcouered, that laie in the Downs, and for that it was neither knowne, what they were, nor what they intended, all the able men in Kent were raiſed and muſtered in armour the ſame daie.

The 7. of September deceaſed doctor Iohn Stokeſley, Biſhop of London, and was buried in our Ladie chappell of Paules church, on the 14. of September.

The 20. of October, the quire of Paules went to their chapter houſe, with the

the bishop of Chichester being then deane of Pauls, who made to them a collation, and then elected there by the kings commission, doctor Edmond Boner, by these words: We elect Edmond bishop of Hereford now beyond the seas, Bishop of London, and then desired the audience to pray for him, the Bishop beganne, and the quire followed, from the chapter house where the election was made, vp to the quire, &c. Bishop of London elected.

In this meane time, to wit, in the moneth of September came to London, Duke Frederike of Bauier, the Palsgraue of Rhine, the Prealhall of Hans, Frederike Prince elector of Saronie, and the Chancellor of William Duke of Cleue, Gulicke, Gelderland, and Berghen. These were conducted to Windsor, where eyght daies togither they were continuallie feasted, and paslymes shewed them in huntinges and other pleasures, so much as mought bee. The Palsgraue shortlie after departed homewards, and was princelie rewarded: And at that present was the marriage concluded betwixt the king, and the ladie Anne sister to the duke of Cleue, and great preparation was made for the receiuing of her. Duke of Bauier and Palsgraue of Rhine came into England.

In the moneth of Nouember, Hugh Faringdon abbot of Reading, and two priests, named Rug and Onion, were hanged and quartered at Reading. The same date was Richard Whiting Abbot of Glastenburie hanged and quartered on Tore Hill, besides his Monasterie, Iohn Thorne and Roger Iames monkes, the one Treasurer, the other Undertreasurer of Glastenburie Church, were at the same time executed. Also shortlie after Iohn Bech Abbot of Colchester was executed at Colchester, all for denying the kings supreamacie. Abbots executed.

The 5. of December, the abbey of S. Albons was surrendered, by the abbot and monks there, by deliuering the couent seale into the hands of T. Pope, D. Peter, master Cauendish, and other the kings visiters. Abbey of S. Albons surrendered.

In the moneth of December, were appointed to wayte on the kings person 50. Gentlemen, called Pencioners or Speares, like as they were in the first yeere of the king, vnto whome was assigned the summe of fiftie pounds the peece yeerelie, for the mayntenaunce of themselues, and euery man two Horses, or one Horse and a Gelding of seruice. Pencioners appointed.

The third of Januarie, was the Ladie Anne of Cleue receyued at Blackheath, and brought to Greenewich with great triumph: and the first daie of the same moneth shee was marryed to King Henrie. 1540 K. H. married lady Anne of Cleue.

After Christmasse, the Priorie Church of Saint Marie Ouerie in Southwarke, was purchased of the king by the inhabitantes of the Borrowe, doctor Gardener Bishoppe of Winchester putting to his helping hand: they made thereof a parish church, in place of two small parish churches, the one of Mary Magdalene, in the said priory church, the other of S. Margaret on the hill. S. Mary Ouries made a parish Church.

The twelfth of March, Henrie Bowcher Earle of Esser, ryding a young Horse, was cast, and brake his necke, at his mannour in Esser. Hee was the eldest Earle in Englande. Earle of Esser deceased.

The nineteenth of March, Iohn Vere Earle of Oxforde, high Chamberlayne of Englande, deceased at his manour of Hedingham in Essex. Earle of Oxford deceased.

The

Priests at Caleis executed.

The tenth of Aprill, Sir William Peterson Priest, late commissarie of Caleis, and Sir William Richardson Priest of Saint Maries in Caleis, were both there drawne, hanged, and quartered, in the Market place for the supremacie.

Cromwel earle of Essex.

The 18. of Aprill, sir T. Cromwell L. priuie Seale, was created earle of Esser, and high chamberlaine of England, and his sonne Gregory was made lord Cromwell.

Subsidy and foure fifteenes.

In a parliament which beganne the 18. of Aprill, was granted to the king a subsidie of 2. s. the pound lands, and 12. d. goods, and foure fifteens towards the kings great charges in building of blockhouses.

Hospitall of S. John of Jerusalem in England dissolued

Moreouer the corporation of the knights of the Rhodes, or knights of S. Iohn of Jerusalem in England and Ireland, was vtterly dissolued and made void, the king his heires and successors, to haue and enioy all the mansion house, church, and all other edifices, buildings, and gardens to the same belonging, neere to the citie of London, called the house of S. Iohn of Jerusalem in England: and also the hospital, church and house of Kylmain in Ireland, with all castles, honors, mannors, meases, landes, tenementes, rentes, reuersions, seruices, woods, medowes, pastures, parkes, warrens, &c. in England and Ireland, with all the goods, cattailes, &c. Wil. Weston knight prior of the said hospital of S. Iohn of Jerusalem in England, during his life to haue an annuall rent of 1000. pounds, and such reasonable portion of the goods and cattailes of the saide house as the king shall appoint him. Iohn Rauson knight prior of S. Iohn of Jerusalem in Ireland, 500. marks, with a reasonable portion of goods. Clement West 200. l'. T. Pemberton 80. l'. G. Russel 100. l'. G. Ailmar 100. l'. Iohn Sutton 200. l' E. Bellengam 100. l'. E. Browne 50. l'. E. Huse 100. marks, Ambrose Caue 100. marks, William Tirell 30. pound, Iohn Rauson 200. markes, A. Rogars, Oswald Maslingberd, and other 8. each of them, 10. pound yeerelie, with portion of the goods as the king should limite, so that the pensions appointed to the saide knights and brethren amounted to 2870. pound the yeere out of the lands to that hospitall appertaining, &c.

Ann. reg. 32.

The 24. of Aprill, Tho. L. Audley, L. chancellor of England, and sir Anthony Browne M. of the k. horse were made knights of the gartar.

Anabaptists brent.

The 29. of Aprill one named Maundeueld, another named Colens, and one other were examined in S. Margarets church, and were condemned for anabaptists, and were on the 3. of May brent in the high way beyond Southwark towards Newenton.

Justing of challengers.

On Maie daie, was a great tryumph of Justing at Westminster, which Justs had been proclaimed in France, Flanders, Scotland, and Spaine, for al commers that woulde, against the challengers of Englande, which were Sir Iohn Dudley, sir Thomas Seymer, sir Thomas Poininges, sir George Carewe knights: Anthony Kingston, and Richard Cromwel esquires, which said challengers came into the lists that daie richlie apparelled, and their horses trapped all in white veluet, with certaine knights & gentlemen ryding afore them, apparelled all in white Veluet, & white sarsenet, and all their seruants in whyte doublets, and hosen cut after the Burgonian fashion: and there came to iust against

againſt them the ſaid day of defendants, 46. the earle of Surrey being the formoſt, L. Wil. Heiward, L. Clinton, and L. Cromwell ſon and heire to Th. Cromwell earle of Eſſex, and chamberlaine of Englande, with other, which were all richlie apparelled. And that daie ſir Iohn Dudley was ouerthrowen in the field by miſchance of his horſe, by one Maiſter Breme defendant, neuertheleſſe hee brake diuers ſpeares valiantly after that: and after the ſaid iuſts were don, the ſaide challengers rode to Durham place, where they kept open houſhold, and feaſted the king and quéene, with hir ladies, and all the court.

The 2. of May Anthony Kingſtone and Ric. Cromwell were made knightes at the ſaid place.

The 3. of May, the ſaid challengers did Tourney on horſeback with ſwords, againſt them came 29 defendants: ſir Iohn Dudley and the earle of Surrey running firſt, which the firſt courſe loſt both their gauntlets, and that day ſir Ric. Cromwell ouerthrew M. Palmer in the field off his horſe, to the great honor of the challengers. Tourneying.

The firſt of Maie, the ſayde Challengers fought on foote at the Barriers, and againſt them came thirtie Defendantes, which fought valiantlie, but ſir Richarde Cromwell ouerthrewe that daie at the Barriers, Maiſter Culpepper in the Fielde: and the firſt of Maie the ſayde Challengers brake vp their houſhould. Barriers.

In the which time of their houſe-keeping, they had not only feaſted the king, quéene, ladies, and the whole court as is aforeſaid, but alſo on the Tueſdaie in the Rogation weeke, they feaſted al the knights and burgeſſes of the common houſe in the parliament: and on the morrowe after they had the Maior of London, the aldermen, and all their wiues to dinner, and on the Friday they brake vp, as is aforeſaid.

The 7. of May ſir W. Weſton knight, L. priour of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem without Smithfield died, and neuer receiued any part of his penſion, and the king toke all the lands that belonged to that houſe, and to that order, into his hands, to the augmentation of his crowne: and gaue to euery of the challengers aboue written, for a reward of their valiantnes 100. marks, and a houſe to dwel in of yeerely reuenues out of the ſaid lands for euer.

The 26. of May, was ſent to the tower doctor Wilſon, and doctor Sampſon biſhop of Chicheſter, for releeuing certayne priſoners which had denied to ſubſcribe to the kings ſupremacie: for the ſame offence Richard Farmer Grocer of London, a rich and wealthie citizen, was committed to the marſhalſea, and after arraigned and attainted in the premuntre, and loſt all his goods, his wife and children thruſt out of doores. Alſo the keeper of Newgate was ſent to the marſhalſea, for giuing liberty to Doctor Powell and doctor Abell his priſoners to go vnder baile. Richard Farmer in the premuntre.

The 9. of July, T. L. Cromwell earle of Eſſex being in the counſel chamber, was ſodainly apprehended, and committed to the tower of London. The 19. he was attainted by parliament, of hereſie and high treaſon, as appeereth by the ſame attaindor which I haue ſeene and read, but forbeare to ſet downe the ſame being long.

On the 28. of July, the said Thomas Cromwell was brought to the scaffold on the tower hill, where he spake these words (as was then noted) I am come hither to die, and not to purge my selfe, as may happen some thinke I will, for if I should so doe, I were a very wretch and miser. I am by the law condemned to die, and I thanke my Lord God that hath appointed me this death for mine offences: for sithence the time that I came to yeres of discretion, I haue liued a sinner, and offended my Lord God, for the which I aske him hartilie forgiuenes. And it is not vnknowne to many of you, that I haue been a great traueller in the world, and being but of a base degree was called to high estate, and sithen the time I came thereunto, I haue offended my prince, for the which I aske him hartily forgiuenes, and beseech you al to pray to God with me, that he will forgiue me. O father forgiue me, O sonne forgiue me, O holy ghost forgiue me, O three persons in one God forgiue me. And now I pray you that be here to beare me record, I die in the catholike faith, not doubting in any article of my faith, no nor doubting in any sacrament of the church. Many haue slandered me, and reported that I haue béene a bearer of such as haue maintained euill opinions, which is vntrue: but I confesse, that like as God by his holy spirit doth instruct vs in the truth, so the diuell is readie to seduce vs, and I haue béene seduced: but beare me witnes that I die in the catholike faith of the holy church, and I hartily desire you to pray for the kings grace, that hee may long liue with you in health and prosperitie, and after him that his sonne prince Edward that goodly impe may long raigne ouer you. And once againe I desire you to pray for me, that so long as life remaineth in this flesh, I wauer nothing in my faith. And then made he his praier which was long, and after committed his soule to the hands of God, and so laid him downe, and patiently suffered the strokes of the axe, by the hands of him who vnfauoredly performed his office. At the same time also with the said earle was beheaded the lord Hungerforde of Heitesbery, who at the houre of his death séemed so vnquiet, that many iudged him rather frenzie than otherwise: he suffered (as it was said) for buggerie.

Thomas lord Cromwell beheaded.

Thomas Cromwell (as before is shewed) was attainted by parliament, but neuer came to answere. He was borne in Putney a village in Surrey by the Thamis side, about 4. miles west from London, and was son to a black smith (in his latter daies a bruer) after whose decease, his mother was married to a sherman in London. This Thomas notwithstanding the basenesse of his birth, through a singular excellency of wit, ioyned with industrious diligence of mind, grew to such a sufficient ripenes of vnderstanding and skill in ordering of waightie affaires, that he was thought apt and fit to any romth or office wherunto he should be admitted, which being apperceiued of the cardinall Wolsey, he toke him into seruice, & making him his solicitor, imploied him about businesse oftentimes of great importance, wherein hee acquit himselfe with such dexteritie, as answered alwaies the credite to him committed. At the fall of the cardinall he got him to the court, saying he would make or marre, as before ye haue heard: where, being once aduaunced into the kings seruice, he behaued himselfe so aduisedly in matters which he toke in hand, that in short

time

time he rose to the greatest authoritie that might be in this realme, vnder the maiestie of the king, wherein peraduenture forgetting the fall of his late master cardinall Wolsey (a notable spectacle) he fell himselfe, as ye haue heard.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 25. day of June, the K. caused the quéene to remoue to Richmond, perswading it should be more for her health & pleasure, by reason of the cléere and open aire there. But on the 6. of July, certaine lords came downe into the neither house of the parliament, and expressely declared causes, for the which the marriage was not to be taken lawfull: and in conclusion, the matter was by the conuocation cléerely determined, that the king might lawfully marry where he would, and so might she: and thus were they cléerely diuorced. And by the parliament it was enacted, that she should be taken no more for Quéene, but called the lady Anne of Cleue. King Henry diuorced from lady Anne of Cleue.

This yéere the lord Leonard Gray brother to Thomas marques Dorset, being the kings lieutenant in Ireland, was reuoked home, and vpon his comming to London, was sent to the tower. Lord Leonard Gray sent to the tower.

The 30. of July were drawne from the tower of London to west Smithfield Robert Barnes doctor of diuinity, T. Gerard parson of Hunylane, and William Ierom vicar of Stepenheth, bachelors in diuinity: also Edward Powell, Thomas Able, and Richard Fetherstone all thrée doctors. The first thrée were drawen to a stake & there burned. The other thrée were drawn to a gallowes, and there hanged, headed and quartered. The thrée first as appeareth in their attaindors, were executed for diuers heresies. The last thrée for treason, as in their attaindor was mentioned, to wit, for denying the kings supremacie, and affirming his marriage with quéene Katherine to be good: of the which argument doctor Powell wrote a booke which was printed in quarto, and I haue séene it. Sixe Priests, three burnt, and three hanged.

The 4. of August, Thomas Empson sometime a monke of Westminster, which had béene prisoner in Newgate more than thrée yéeres, was brought before the Iustices of goale deliuerie at Newgate, and for that he would not aske the king pardon for denying his supremacie, nor be sworne thereto, his monkes cole was plucked from his backe, and his body reprieued till the king were informed of his obstinacie. The same 4. of August were drawen to Tiborne 6. persons, and one led betwixt twaine, to wit, Laurence Cooke prior of Dancaster, William Horne a lay brother of the Charterhouse of London, Giles Horne gentleman, Clement Phillip gentleman of Calcis, and seruant to the lord Lisle, Edmond Bromholme priest, chaplaine to the said lord Lisley, Darby Gening, Robert Bird, all hanged and quartered, and had béene attainted by parliament, for denfall of the kings supremacie. Seauen persons executed.

The eight of August, Ladie Katherine Howard daughter to Edmond lord Howard, nece to the duke of Norfolke, was shewed openly as Quéene at Hampton court. K. Henry married.

The latter end of this sommer, was vniuersally through this realme great death by a strange kinde of ague and flure, with some pestilence: in which season was such a drought, that wels and small riuers were dried vp, so that much cattell died for lacke of water. Dyle sommer.

The twentie two of December, Ralph Egerton seruant to the lorde Audley lord chancellor, and Thomas Harman seruant to maister Flightwood, were executed: the one for counterfeiting the kings seale in leade, wherewith they had sealed diuers Pattens counterfeited and antidated, making strangers denisons, vnder the names of diuers clearks of the chancery: the other for writing them. One Tuckfield being of their faction, robbed the lorde Audleys chappell, of the chalice, pixe, basons and candlesticks of siluer, and fled, who beeing afterward apprehended at Calais, which towne he would haue betraied, hee slewe himselfe with a dag.

1541

Ann. reg. 33.

A new commotion in Yorkeshire.

In Aprill, certaine persons beganne a new rebellion in Yorkeshire, which were shortly after taken, and put to execution in diuers places: of which, Leigh a gentleman, Tatarsall a clothier, and Thornton a yeoman, were put to death at London: Sir Iohn Neuill knight, a ten persons or mo were put to death at Yorke.

Countesse of Salisbury beheaded.

The 27. of Maie, Margaret countesse of Salisburie, sometime daughter and heire to George Duke of Clarence, wife to sir Richard Poole knight, and mother to cardinal Poole, was beheaded in the tower of London, being neuer arraigned nor tried before, but condemned by act of parliament.

Dampart and Chapman hanged.

The 9. of June, Dampart and Chapman, two of the kings gard, were hanged at Greenwich for robbery.

Sir Edmond Kneuet arraigned for striking in the court.

The tenth of June, Sir Edmond Kneuet knight of Norffolke, was arraigned before the Kings Iustices (sitting in the great Hall at Greenewich) maister Gage comptroller of the kings houshold, maister Suthwell, sir Anthonie Browne, sir Anthony Winkfield, Maister Wrisley, and Edmonde Pecham cofferer of the kings houshold, for striking of one Maister Clere of Norffolk, seruant with the Earle of Surrey, within the kings house in the Tenice Court. There was first chosen to go vpon the said Edmond a quest of gentlemen, and a quest of yeomen, to inquire of the saide stripe, by the which inquests, he was founde guiltie, and had iudgement to lose his right hande: whereupon was called to do the execution, first the sergeant chirurgion, with his instruments appertaining to his office: the sergeant of the Woodyarde with the mallet and a Blocke, whereupon the hande shoulde lie: the maister cooke for the king with the knife: the Sergeant of the larder to set the knife right on the ioint: the Sergeant farrier with his searing yrons to seare the Veines: the Sergeant of the poultrie with a Cocke, which cocke should haue his head smitten off vpon the same blocke, and with the same knife: the yeoman of the chandry with seare clothes: the yeomen of the scullery with a pan of fire to heat the yrons: a chafer of water to cole the ends of the irons: and two fourmes for all officers to set their stuffe on: the sergeant of the seller with wine, ale, and beere: the yeomen of the ewrie in the sergeantes stede who was absent, with bason, ewre, & towelles. Thus euery man in his office ready to do the execution, there was called forth Sir William Pickering knight marshall, to bring in the saide Edmond Kneuet, and when he was brought to the bar, the chiefe iustice declared to him his trespasse, and the said Kneuet confessing himselfe to bee guiltie, humbly submitted him to the kings mercy: for this offence he was not onelie

iudged

iudged to lose his hand, but also his bodie to remaine in prison, and his landes and goods at the kings pleasure. Then the saide Sir Edmond Kneuet desired that the king of his benigne grace, would pardon him of his right hande, and take the left: for (quoth he) if my right hande bee spared, I maie hereafter do such good seruice to his grace, as shall please him to appoint. Of this submission and request, the Iustices forthwith informed the king, who of his goodnes, considering the gentle heart of the said Edmond, and the good report of lordes and ladies, granted him pardon, that he should lose neither hande, lande, nor goods, but should go free at liberty.

The Lorde Leonard Gray beeing indicted of certaine pointes of treason by him committed, as was alledged against him, during the season that hee was the kings Lieutenant in Ireland, to witte, for deliuering his nephew Giralde Fitz Gerarde, Brother to Thomas Fitz Gerarde before executed, and also for that hee caused certaine Irishmen to inuade the landes of the kings friends, whom he fauoured not: The 25. of June he was arraigned at Westminster in the kings Bench, and appointed to bee tried by knightes, because hee was a Lorde by name, and no lord of the parliament, but he discharged the Iurie, and confessed the inditement, whereupon he had iudgement, and on the 28. of June being S. Peters eeuen, he was beheaded at tower hill, where he ended his life very quietly and godly.

The Lorde Leonards Gray beheaded.

This noble man, as he was come of high linage, so was he a right valiant and hardy personage, hauing in his time don his prince and country good seruice, both in Ireland, France, and other places, greatly to his commendation, although now his hap was thus to lose his head.

The same day that he suffered, there were executed at Saint Thomas Waterings three gentlemen, Iohn Mantel, Iohn Frouds, and George Roidon. They died for a murther committed in Suffer (as their inditement imported) in companie of Thomas Fines Lorde Dacres of the South. The trueth whereof was thus. The said lord Dacres through the lewd perswasion of some of them, as hath beene reported, meaning to hunt in the parke of Nicholas Pelham esquire at Laughton in the same Countie of Suffer, beeing accompanied with the saide Mantell, Frouds, and Roidon, Iohn Cheiney, and Thomas Isley gentlemen, and Richard Middleton and Iohn Goldwel yeomen, passed from his house of Hurstmonseux the last of April in the night season, toward the same parke, where they intended so to hunt, and comming into a place called Pikehay in the parish of Hillingley, they founde one Iohn Busbrig, Iames Busbrig, and Richarde Somener, standing there together; and as it fell out through quarrelling, there ensued a fraie betwixt the saide Lorde Dacres and his company on the one part, and the saide Iohn and Iames Busbrig and Richard Somener on the other, insomuch that the said Iohn Busbrig receiued such hurt, that he died thereof the seconde of Maie next ensuing; whereupon as well the saide Lorde Dacres, as those that were there with him, and diuers other likewise that were appointed to go another waie to meete them at the saide parke, were endited of murther, and the seauen and twentieth of June the Lorde Dacres himselfe was arraigned before the lorde Audley of Walden, then lord chancelor, sitting

L. Dacres of the South arraigned.

that daie as high Steward of England, with other peres of the realme about him, who then and there condemned the said L. Dacres to die for that transgression: and afterwards the nine and twentieth of June being Saint Peters daie, at eleuen of the clocke in the forenoone, the Sherifs of London accordinglie as they were appointed, were readie at the tower to haue receiued the saide prisoner, and him to haue led to execution on the Tower hill. But as the prisoner should come forth of the Tower, one Heire a gentleman of the lord chancelors house came, and in the kings name commanded to stay the execution til two of the clock in the afternoone, which caused manie to thinke that the king would haue granted his pardon. But neuerthelesse at three of the clock in the same afternoone hee was brought forth of the Tower, and deliuered to the Sherifs, who led him on foote betwixt them vnto Tyborne, where he died. His bodie was buried in the church of Saint Sepulchers: he was not full foure and twentie yeres of age when he came thus through great mishap to his end: for whom manie sore lamented, and likewise for the other three gentlemen, Mantell, Frouds, and Roidon, but chiefely for the said young lord being a right towardly gentleman.

The 1. of July, a Welchman a minstrel, was hanged and quartered for singing of songs, which were interpreted to be prophesieng against the K. Sir David Genson knight of the Rhodes was drawn through Southwark to S. Thomas of Watrings, and there executed for the supremacy.

Progresse to Yorke.

In the month of August, the K. toke his progresse toward Yorke, and passed through Lincolnshire, where was made vnto him an humble submission, &c. About this time Westminster and Bristow were made bishoprickes.

Westminster and Bristowe made bishoprickes.

On Christmas euen at seuen of the clock at night, began a great fire in the house sometime named Elsing spittle, then the house of Sir Iohn Williams K. of the kings iewels, where manie of those iewels were brent, and more imbezeled, as was thought.

Fire at Elsing spittle.

1542

The Ladie Katherine Howarde, whome the King hadde married, for her vnchaste liuing committed with Thomas Culpepper and Fraunces Derham, was by Parliamente attainted; Culpepper and Derham were put to death at Tyborne the tenth daie of December. Culpepper was headed, his bodie buried at Saint Sepulchers Church by Newgate; Derham was quartered, &c.

K. Henry king of Ireland.

The 23. of January the K. was proclaimed king of Ireland.

Q. Katherine beheaded.

The 12. of Februarie, the lady Howard, otherwise called Q. Katherine, and the ladie Iane Rochford for being of her counsell with Th. Culpepper, were both beheaded within the tower of London.

In the beginning of the moneth of March died Arthur Plantagenet vicount Lisle, Basterde sonne to Edward the fourth, in the Tower of London vnattainted, when he should haue been deliuered and set at libertie (as it was said) the occasion of his trouble in the tower, rose vpon suspition that he should bee priuie to a practice which some of his men (as Philpot and Brindholme executed the last yere) had consented vnto, for the betraying of Calais to the French whilest he was the kings Lieutenant there. But after that by due tryall it

was

was knowne that he was nothing guiltie to the matter, the king appointed sir Thomas Wriothesley his secretarie to go vnto him, and to deliuer vnto him a ring with a rich diamond for a token from him, and to will him to be of good cheere, sith it was manifestlie proued that hee was void of all offence, for hee should find that he would make account of him, as of his most true and faithfull kinsman, and not onelie restore him to his former libertie, but otherwise be readie to pleasure him in what he could. Master Secretarie set foorth this message with such effectuall words, as he was an eloquent man, that Lorde Lisle tooke such an immoderate ioie thereof, that his heart being oppressed therewith, hee died the night following through too much reioicing (as was said.) After whose decease, to wit, the 12. of March, sir Iohn Dudley was at Westminster created Vicount Lisle, by the right of his mother lady Elizabeth sister and heire to sir Iohn Gray Vicount Lisle, who was late wife to Arthur Plantagenet vicount Lisle late deceased, as ye haue heard. Lorde Lisle died in the tower.

The 17. of March, Margaret Dauy a maid, was boiled in Smithfield for poisoning of three houholds that she had dwelled in. A maid boiled in Smithfielde.

The 28. of March, the Parliament sitting, George Feres Burgesse for the town of Plimmouth, was arrested in London vpon a condemnation, whereupon the sergeant at armes of the common house was sent to the counter in Bredstréet to fetch him, but the clearks would not deliuer him, till the sherifs came themselues, who in the end deliuered him: howbeit, this matter was so taken in the common house, that the sherifs, the clearks, and fiue officers, with the party plaintif, were sent to the Tower, and there laie two daies, and were then deliuered by the speaker and common house: the Sherifs were deliuered from all charges, except twenty pound for their fées. The sherifes of London sent to the tower.

Ann, reg. 34.

In May the king tooke a loane of money, of all such as were valued worth fifty pound or vpward in the booke of subsidie.

In the moneth of August, Iames Earle of Desmond in Irelande, came and submitted himselfe to the king, and so returned. The earle of Desmond.

The first of October, the great Oneale of Ireland was created Earle of Tiron, and his base son Mathew Oneale baron of Donganow, for Shane Oneale the only son of his body lawfully begotten was then little estéemed. The great Oneale.

The duke of Norffolk entred Scotland the 21. of October, burning and wasting all the marches, and there taried without any battel proffered by the K. of Scots, vntill the midst of November. Duke of Norfolke entered Scotland.

After the departure of our army from Scotland, the king of Scots made a roade into England, and did much harme, but at the last sir Thomas Wharton and sir William Musgraue with a few of the borderers, met the Scottes, where they being in number 15000. were ouerthrowne: in which conflict was taken the earle of Cassels and Glencarne, the Lord Maxwell admirall of Scotland and Warden of the West marches, the Lord Flemming, the Lord Somerwell, the Lord Oliphant, the Lord Gray, the Lord Oliuar Sinclere, &c. more then two hundred of the better sort, and more then 8. hundred of meaner persons. They tooke also foure and twenty péeces of ordinance, 4. cartes laden with speares, and ten pauilions. The king of Scots tooke such griefe and inwarde thought Scots ouerthrowne.

for this ouerthrow, and also for the murther of an English herault that was slaine at Dunbar by one Lech an English man (the which for the rebellion in Lincolnshire was fled into Scotland) that he fell into a feuer, and died. Of the prisoners before named 21. of them were brought vp to London, and on the 19. of December entred the citie at Bishops gate, and so were conueied to the tower, where they remained the space of two daies, and vpon S. Thomas day the apostle, they were conueied to Westminster, sir Iohn Gage Constable of the tower riding before them, and the lieutenant of the tower riding behinde them, they rode two and two togither, and eight of them being earles and lordes had new gownes of blacke damaske furred with blacke conies, coates of blacke veluet, and doublets of satten, &c. all newe of the kings charge. Comming thus before the kings councell in the starre chamber, the lord chancelor declared to them their vntruth and vnkindnesse, for the which the king had cause of warre against them, as well as for the deniall of their homages, and also for their traiterous inuasions made into his realm without defiance, and also for keeping his subiects prisoners without redemption, contrarie to the lawes of the marches, for the which doings, God as they might well perceiue had scourged them. Howbeit the king more regarding his honor than his princely power, was content to shew them kindnes for vnkindnes, right for wrong. And although he might keepe them in streight prison, yet he was content that they should haue libertie to be with the nobles of the realme in their houses, and so according to their estates they were appointed to dukes, earles, bishops, knights and gentlemen.

The 22. of December came tidings of the king of Scots death. And vpon Saint Iohns daie in Christmas weeke, the foresaid lords of Scotland were brought to the court then at Grenewich, where they had great cheere, and were lodged within the court. And heere it is to be considered, that where the king of Scots had left no issue but only one daughter: the king and his counsell perceiuing a meane now offered, whereby without warre the two realms might be vnited: the Scottish lords hauing first made the motion themselues for a marriage to be had betwixt Prince Edward and their yong Queene, the king required them to helpe to the furtheraunce of that matter, which might be such benefite to themselues and their countrey. This they promised faithfullie to doe, and as well by themselues, as their friendes, to bring the same to effect, so much as the king could require, whereupon the king was not onely contented to release them home, but also highly rewarded them with rich gifts.

Motion of a match betweene prince Edward and the queene of Scots.

1543 The 30. of December, they departed from the court, and the morrow after eight of them dined with sir Iohn Coats then lord maior of London, and the rest with the sheriffes, and had very great cheere. On New-yeres day they departed from London homewards toward Scotland, and by the way dined at Enfield there to beholde the prince, whom they highly commended, for the great liking they had of his person, from thence they kept on their iourney till they came to the north partes, where they found the Duke of Suffolke the kings lieutenant there, and with him they remained till such pledges were come

forth

forth of Scotlande, as it was couenanted they shoulde leaue behinde them. The Duke after he had receiued the hostages, permitted them to depart, and so they returned into Scotland, where they were ioyfully welcomed home, to their friends. With them went the earle of Angus, who had béene banished Scotland, and hauing remained here in England a long time, receiued of the kings fée a thousand markes by yéere: and likewise his brother sir George Dowglas, who had 500. markes by yéere, likewise of the kings gift. They were now both restored home into their countrey, and that was (as was saide) by the last kings will. The said earle of Angus, and diuers of the lords that had bin prisoners here in England, were made of the priuy counsell of the realme, by the earle of Arraine, that was chosen gouernor to the yong quéene, and of the realme, as next heire apparent. Notwithstanding that, the archbishop of S. Andrewes Cardinall, enemy to the K. of England, had a will (forged as some haue said) expressing how the king had made him gouernor, as well of the quéene as realme, whereupon the said earle, according to his right, as he pretended, with the helpe of his friends toke vpon him the authoritie of gouernor, and put the said cardinall in prison, and deliuered sir Robert Bowes, and the other English prisoners, by their bondes, according to the custome of the marches.

The 9. of Februarie, a proclamation was made, whereby the people were licenced to eate white meates in Lent, but streightly forbidden the eating of flesh. Wherupon, shortly after the earle of Surrey with diuers lords, knights, and gentlemen, were imprisoned for eating of flesh in the same Lent, contrary to the said proclamation.

White meate licenced to be eaten in Lent.

The 8. of May one Lech sometime Baylie of Lowth, who had killed Somerset one of our heraults of armes at Dunbar in Scotland, was drawne to Tyborne and there hanged and quartered. And the 12. of June, Edward Lech his brother, and with him a priest for the same fact, were likewise executed at Tyborne.

An. reg. 35. Somerlet an herault killed.

King Henry minding wars with France, made great preparation and prouision aswell of munitions and artillery as also of brasse ordinance, amongst the which, at that time, by one Peter Bawd a French man borne, a gunfounder, or maker of great ordinance, and one other Alien, called Peter van Collen, a gunsmith, both the kings fée'd men, who conferring together, deuised and caused to be made, certaine morter pieces, being at the mouth, from 11. inches vnto 19. inches wide, for the vse whereof, the said Peter, and Peter caused to be made certaine hollow shot of cast yron, to be stuffed with fierworke, or wilde fire, whereof the bigger sort for the same, had screues of yron to receiue a match to carry fire kindled, that the fierworke might be set on fire, for to breake in small pieces the same hollowe shot, whereof the smallest piece hitting any man would kill or spoile him. And after the kings return from Bullen, the said Peter Bawd by himselfe, in the first of Edw. the first, did also make certaine ordinance of cast yron, of diuers sorts, and formes, as Fawconets, Fawkons, Minions, Sakers, and other pieces: vnto this Bawd, John Johnson his couenant seruant, suruiuing his master, did likewise make and cast yron

Morter pieces cast for shooting of wilde fire. R. Crokhay.

First yron pieces cast in the first of Edward the first.

ordinance, cleaner and to better perfection, to the great vse of this land: his sonne Th. Iohnson is yet liuing, a speciall workeman, in the yéere 1595. hee made 42. cast peeces of great ordinance of yron for the earle of Cumberland, Demy Canons weying 6000. or 3. tunne the piece.

The 3. of June, the Obrine a lord in Ireland, and diuers of the wilde Irish, submitted them to king Henry.

In July the said Obrine was created earle of Clawricarde.

K. Henry married lady Katherine Par.

The 12. of July, king Henry married lady Katherine Par, late wife to the L. Latimer and sister to the Marques of Northampton at Hampton court, and then was she proclaimed queene.

Great subsidie.

This yéere in a parliament holden at Westminster a subsidie was granted to the king to be paid in three yéeres, euery Englishman being worth in goods 20. s. and vpward to 5. l. paid 4. d. of euery pound, from 5. l. to 10. l. 8. d. from 10. l. to 20. l. 16. d. from 20. l. and vpward of euery pound 2. s. strangers, as well denisons as other, being inhabitants, doubled this sum: and euery stranger not being an inhabitant that was 16. yéeres of age and vpwards paid 4. d. of euery pole. And for lands, fées, and annuities, euery one borne within the kings dominions paid 8. d. of the l. from 20. s. to 5. l. and from 5. l. to 10. l. 16. d. from 10. l. to 20. l. 2. s. and from 20. l. vpwards 3. s. strangers still doubled the sum. The cleargie granted a subsidie of 6. s. the pound, to be paid of their benefices, and perpetuities in three yéeres, and euery priest hauing but an annual stipend, 6. s. 8. d. &c. as in the statute.

Going to Landarsy.

About the same time the king of England, and the emperor, sent Garter, and Toysonodor kings at armes, to demand the performance of certain articles of the French K. which if he denied, they were commanded then to defie him, but he would not suffer them to come within his lande, and so they returned. Wherefore the K. of Engl. caused the demands to be declared vnto the French ambassador at Westminster. And in the month of July the K. sent ouer 6000. men, vnder the leading of sir Iohn Wallope, accompanied with sir T. Seimer marshall, sir Robert Bowes treasurer, sir Richard Cromwell captaine of the horsemen, and sir George Carew his lieutenant. There were likewise sir T. Palmer, sir Iohn Rainsfoorth, sir Iohn Seint-Iohn, & sir Iohn Gascoigne knights, that were captaines of the footemen: they were appointed to ioine with the emperors power, and so to make war into France: they departed from Calis the 22. of July.

Open warre proclaimed.

The 3. of August open war was proclaimed betwixt the emperor and the K. of England on the one party, and the French king on the other party, as enemy mortall to them both, and to all other christian kings as he that had confedered himselfe with the Turke.

The armie that was sent ouer vnder the leading of Sir Iohn Wallope, passed forth from the marches of Calis, and keeping alongst betwixt the borders of the French and Burgonians pales, and confines, and ioyning with the emperors forces, Spaniards, Wallons, and Dutch, came at length before Landarsey, a towne lately fortified by the French, within the borders of the emperors dominions, to the which they laid strong siege. At length the emperor hauing dispatched his wars against the D. of Cleue, who had submitted himselfe

himselfe vnto him, came now to the siege of Landarcy, with a mighty power of sundry nations, so that the towne was sore constrained, & in danger to haue ben lost, if at that present the French king had not likewise with him an huge armie of French men, Switchars, Lantsquits, Italians, and other, came to the rescue, pitching downe his campe, making countenance as if hee ment presently to haue giuen battaile: and verilie it was thought that two such powers as were there at that time so neere togither should neuer haue departed without battaile. The Emperor thinking surely to fight, raised his siege, and drew his people into the fielde. The Frenchmen thereby espying their aduantage, put as well fresh men as victuals, and all kinde of munition necessarie into the Towne, and in the meane while kept the Emperors men occupied with hotte skyrmishes: but now after the Towne was thus relieued, which thing the French king onely wished to accomplish, the next daie when the emperor was readie with his army inranged in battailes to haue fought with his aduersaries, the French king put his armie also in order, but hauing no minde to come forward, he trifled forth the daie, and in the night following secretly departed with as much haste as possible. When the next morning had discouered the French mens flight, it was no neede to bid diuers troupes of the Emperours armie to hie after them: but some made too much haste, for the French king suspecting what would insue, appointed his eldest sonne Henry the Dolphin, to remaine behinde with the rereward, accompanied with diuers noble captaines, which ordered their people in their retire with such warinesse, that such of the Emperors campe as aduentured ouerrashly, fell within danger of such ambushes as were by the waie laide in places of aduantage: and so diuers were taken, as sir George Carew, sir Thomas Palmer knight, porter of Calais, Edward Bellengham and others. Neuertheless a great number of the French men were snapped by, slaine, and taken in no small numbers by their enemies that followed them. This was after Hallowntide, so that nowe by reason the winter was farre entered, the Emperour brake vp his campe, and licensed the most part of the people to depart home.

In the meane space, to wit on the 28. of July, Anthony Parson, Robert Testwood, and Henry Filmer, were brent at Windsore. And a great death of pestilence was at London, and therefore Michaelmas terme was adiourned to Saint Albons. Terme kept at S. Albons.

About Alhalowntide, a road was made into Scotland, by the garison there, sir Ralph Euars with the men of Tindall and Kidsdale brent in the middle marches of Scotland, Theford with 15. other townes, killed 18. Scots, and toke 300. prisoners, 1500. cattell, and 4000. sheepe: Brian Leychener brent 18. townes, killed 12. Scots, toke 200. prisoners, 600 cattell, 2000. sheepe, and 300. geldings. The west borderers with the helpe of the Scots of Kidsdale, brent 21. townes, killed 8. Scots, toke 160. prisoners. 500. cattaile, 1000. sheepe, and 100. geldings, sum of the townes brent, 55. Scots killed 38. prisoners taken 560. cattaile taken 3500. geldings 800, sheepe 7000. and much houshold stuffe. A road made into Scotland.

The

The 18. of December, the archbishop of Canterburies palace at Canterbury was brent, and therein was brent his brother in law, and other men.

L. Parre made earle of Esser.

The twenty foure of December, William Lord Parre brother to the queen, who had married the daughter and heire of Henry Boucher Earle of Esser, at Hampton court was created earle of Esser, and sir William Parre knight, vnkle to them both, was made Lord Parre of Horton, and Chamberlayne to the Queene. And on Newe-yeres daie Sir Thomas Wriothesley, the Kinges secretarie, was made Lord Wriothesley of Tichfield.

1544

Foure eclipses.

This yeere chanced foure eclipses, one of the Sunne the fourteenth of Januarie, and three of the Moone at sundrie times.

In the beginning of Lent, Lorde Edward Seymer earle of Hertford, was made Lieutenant of the North, and sent thither with an armie.

Germaine Gardiner and other executed.

The seauenth of March, Germaine Gardner, and Larke parson of Chelsea were executed at Tyborne, for denying the Kinges supremacie. with them was executed, for other offences, one Singleton. And shortlie after, Ashbey was likewise executed for the supremacie.

The twelfth of March, Sir Iohn Dudley Lorde Lisle, Lorde Admirall, with a great Naule, departed towarde Scotlande.

House blowne vp with gunpowder.

The fourth of Aprill a Gunpowder house, called the Blacke Swanne in Eall Smithfielde, was blowne vppe, and therein burned fiue men, a boie, and a woman.

Ann. reg. 36.

On Maie eeuen, dyed Lorde Thomas Audley Lorde Chancellour of England. After whome succeeded Lorde Thomas Wriothesley.

An armie sent into Scotland.

The third of May, sir Iohn Dudley Vicount Lisle high Admirall of England, arriued with his fleete of 200. saile in the Frith of Scotlande, where hee landed diuers of his men, and toke there diuers vessels. The 4. of May he landed the residue of his men at Lieth, and from thence marched forward in three great battayles, whereof the sayde Lorde Admirall ledde the Vaward, the Earle of Shrewsburie the Rerewarde, and Edwarde Seymer Earle of Hertforde Lieutenant Generall of the Battayles. Here they founde the Scottes to the number of six thousand horsemen, besides manie footemen ready to stop their passage, who at the first, made as they woulde haue set on the Vaward, but after certaine shotte on both sides, they sodaynelie, leauing their artillery behinde them, fled towarde Edenborough, the formost in fleeing was the car-

Lieth taken and spoiled.

dinall of Saint Andrewes, the Earle of Huntley gouernor, Murrey and Bothwell, and then the Englishmen entered the towne of Lieth, where they found such riches, as they thought hadde not beene in anie Towne of Scotland. The next daie our armie went towardes Edenborough; and when they approched neere, the Prouoste of the Towne with other profered to haue deliuered the same, vpon condition, that the people might departe with Bagge and Baggage, and the Towne to bee safe from fire. Whereunto our Lieutenant answered, that hee was sent thither to take vengeance vpon them for their detestable falsehoode, and that vnlesse they woulde yeelde vppe the towne simplie without condition, and cause man, woman, and child to depart into the fields, submitting them to his pleasure, hee woulde put them to the swoorde, and their

Towne

Towne to the fire. The Prouoſt aunſwered, that it were better for them to ſtand to their defence, and ſo departed, and forthwith the Lord Lieutenant cauſed the Vaward to march towards the towne, which they did ſo couragiouſlie with helpe of the Engliſh gunners, that then kept the Scots from their ordinance, and ſo entred Tanigate, and there ſlew a great number of the Scots, and ſet fire on the Towne, which continued three dayes after burning. Shortlie after came to the Lorde Lieutenant by land, William Lorde Eurie warden of the Eaſt March of England, and gouernor of Barwike, with his ſonne ſir Ralph Eurie, and ioined themſelues with the armie thus lying in Lieth, where after their comming they did ſuch exploites, in riding and waſting the Countrey, that within ſeuen miles eurie waie of Edenborough, they left few places, either pile, village, or houſe vnbrent. And beſides this, they brought great numbers of cattaile daylie into the armie, and not without much good ſkuſſe which the inhabitants of Edenborough had for ſafety of the ſame conueied out of the Towne.

Edenborough brent.

Lord Euare.

The names of knights made at Lieth, by the earle of Hertford generall, on the 11. of May: The lord Clinton, the lord Coniers, ſir William Wroughton, ſir T. Holcroſt, ſir Edward Dorell, ſir Iohn Luterell, ſir I. Ienins, ſir T. Waterton, ſir Charles Howard, ſir George Blunt, ſir Peter Mewtas, ſir Ed. Warner, ſir Ralph Bulmer, ſir Hugh Cholmeley, ſir T. Lee, *alias* doctor Lee, ſir Richard Legh, Sir Peter Legh, ſir Iohn Legh of Both, ſir Laurence Smith, ſir Wil. Vaueſour, ſir Richard Shirborne, ſir Ro. Stapleton, ſir T. Holt, ſir W. Deuenporte, ſir Ralph Leiceſter, ſir Humfrey Bradborne, ſir T. Maliuerie, ſir Frauncis Hothorne, ſir I. Maſly, ſir Leonard Beckwith, ſir T. Cokayn, ſir Peter Freſhwell, ſir Richard Egerton, ſir Anthony Neuill, ſir I. Neuill, ſir W. Radclife, ſir George Bowes, ſir Brian Brereton, ſir William Brereton, ſir Roger Brereton, ſir E. Waren, ſir Bryan Leyton, ſir Robert Worſeley, ſir Thomas Talbot, ſir Hugh Calueley, ſir Thomas Clere, Sir Richard Holland, ſir T. Venobles, ſir Iohn Conſtable, ſir Edmonde Trafford, Sir Iohn Atharton, ſir Richard Cholmeley, ſir Philip Egerton, Sir Hugh Willoughby, Sir Robert Conſtable, ſir W. Woodhouſe, Sir Edmond Sauage, Sir Thomas Gerard.

Earle of Hertford made knights at Lieth.

The 13. of May the Engliſhmen brake down the pire of the hauen at Lieth, and brent euery ſticke of it. This done, and hauing ſhipped their great artillery, and picked forth all ſuch Scottiſh ſhips as were meet to ſerue, they tooke vpon them to returne home by land. Amongſt other ſhips, they toke out of Lieth hauen, there were two of notable fairenes, the one called the Salamaunder, the other the Unicorn; the reſt of the Scottiſh ſhippes being taken awaie together with their owne ſhips, were for the moſt part peſtered with the ſpoile and booties of the ſouldiers and mariners.

The fifteenth of May the armie and fleete departed from Lieth, both in one houre, the towne being ſet on fire, and burned to the ground. The engliſh armie encamped that night at a place called Soton, ſeuen miles from Lieth, where they brent the caſtle, and ſpoiled the grounds about it. The ſame daie was Haddington brent, with an houſe of Nunnes, and an houſe of Friers. The next night they encamped beſide Dunbar, and in the morning brent the Towne,

Lieth burned.

Haddington brent.

Dunbar brent.

Towne, and marched forward, and on the eighteenth date of May they entered into Berwike, so ending their voiage.

About the same time the Earle of Lenox fledde out of Scotlande into the realme of England, where he was right gladlie receiued by king Henry, and shortlie after he obtained in marriage the ladie Mary Dowglas, neece to king Henry, and returned with a competent crewe of English men, but finding no such friendship amongst his countrymen as he looked for, he returned without atchieuing the enterprise which he had taken in hand.

Base money coined.

In this meane space, to wit, on the 16. of May, proclaimation was made for the enhaunsing of gold to 48.s. and siluer to foure shillings the ounce. Also the king caused to bee coined base moneyes in great abundance, which was since that time, to wit, in the fift yeere of king Edward the first, called downe, from twelue pence to nine pence, from nine pence to fiue pence: and in the seconde yeere of Quéene Elizabeth called in to hir maiesties mints, and there refined.

Procession in English.

In the moneth of June, the Letanie or Procession was set foorth in English, with commandement by the king to be generallie vsed in euerie parish Church.

An armie into France.

The king tooke order for the leuying of a mightie Armie to passe ouer into France, according to the appointmente made with his confederate friende the Emperour, against the French king. There were therefore appointed three Battailes: The Vawarde vnder the leading of the Duke of Norffolke: the Battaile vnder the Duke of Suffolke, which also was counted the Kings Battaile, because hee minded to bee present with the same in person, and the Rerewarde was ledde by the Lorde Russell, Lorde Priuie Seale. Those of the Forewarde vnder the Duke of Norffolke, were apparelled in blewe Coates garded with redde, and had cappes and hosen after the same sute, partie blewe, and partie redde. The Battaile vnder the Duke of Suffolke in Coates, Cappes, and hosen in like maner, but the colours blew and yealow. The Duke of Norffolke, and the lord priuy Seale, accompanied with diuers other noble men, as the Earle of Surrey Marshall of the Field, the Earle of Orforde, the Lorde Grey of Wilton Lieutenaunt of Hams, the Lorde Ferrers of Chartley, and Sir Richard Deuereux his sonne and heire, they brought with them a great number of Welshmen, sir Thomas Cheyney Lorde Warden of the Portes, the lord Mountioy, Sir Francis Bryan knight, Sir Thomas Poynings Captaine of Gwisnes, and diuers other, passed ouer to Calais about Whitsontide, and from thence forwarde to France, left Boloigne on their right hande, and keeping forwardes towardes Muterell, ioined with an Armie which the Emperour hadde raised for that purpose, vnder the leading of the Countie of Buren, Admirall of the lowe Countreyes, and so these Armies beeing vnited in one, came before Muterell, and there laide Siege to the Towne, beeing well manned, and furnished with all thinges necessarie for defence, as well in munition as in victuall, the chiefe Captaine of which Towne, was Mounsire de Bitz, one of the Marshalles of France.

The

The Duke of Suffolke with the kings armie passed ouer, accompanied with the Earle of Arundell marshall of the fielde, the Lorde Seint Iohn, and the Byshoppe of Winchester, Sir Iohn Gage, comptroller of the Kinges house, Sir Anthonie Browne, Maister of the kings horse, with diuers other Captaines, the which on the nineteenth of July came before Bologne, and encamped on the east side of the same Towne, aloft vpon the hill, and after remoued into a valley, where after many sharpe skyrmishes, they first entered the base Towne, being left and forsaken by the inhabitants, which hauing set fire on their fishing nets, and other such baggage, vnder couert of the smoake, got them vp into the high Towne, before the English men could espie them. Duke of Suffolke with a power lay before Bologne.

After this the old man, a tower standing without the towne for a direction to them that were to enter the hauen, and now being kept by 16. souldiers, was yelded vp by them.

The Frenchmen within the towne, being dispoyled of these two places, yet spared not to shote off from their wals and bulwarks, doing what they could, and namely from the Castle, and greene bulwarke, they did much hurt to the Englishmen with their shotte.

The 14 of July K. Henry in person, accompanied with diuers noble men, passed the Seas from Douer to Caleis, and on the 26. of July encamped before Bologne on the north-side, within lesse then three quarters of a mile of the Towne, where he remained till the Towne was surrendred into his hands: the Kings liuerie was red garded with pralowe. Besides the trenches which were cast and brought in manner rounde about the Towne, there was a mount raised vpon the east side, and diuers pieces of artillerie planted aloffe the same, the which together with the morter pieces, sore annoyed them within, battered downe the Steeple of our Ladie church. To conclude, the batterie was made in most forceable wise in three seuerall places, and the wals, towers, and castle were vndermined, and the towne within so beaten with shotte out of the campe, and from the mount and trench, by the morter pieces, that there were verie few houses left whole therein. The towne thus standing in great distresse, there were 200. Frenchmen and Italians, which enterprised vnder the conduct of Ioncurtio to enter the Towne in couert of the night, which exploite they so warily atchieued, that by meanes of a priest that could speake the English tong, they passed by the scowrers, and through the watch, so as the most part of them were got ouer the trenches, ere it was knowne what they were: to the number of an hundred and twentie of them got into the towne, but the residue being intercepted, were either taken or slaine. At length when a piece of the castle was blowne vppe, and the breaches made as was thought reasonable, the assault was giuen by the admirall lorde Dudley that was come thither by the sea, which he had scoured, after his returne out of Scotland. This assault was courageously giuen, and also manfully defended, so that when ỹ assailants had perceiued in what estate the breach stood, and what prouision they within had made for defence of their towne, which was great, they were called backe, and retired, but not without King Henry went to Bologne. Bologne assaulted.

losse

losse on both sides, especially of them within: for during the assault, the great artillerie did beate still vpon them that presented themselues at the breaches to repulse the assailants, and so diuers of their valiant captaines and braue souldiers were slaine at this assault: shortly after, the captaines within the towne, doubting to be eftsoones assaulted, and perceiuing themselues in extreme danger to lose the towne by force, if they prouided not the sooner, by rendring it, to saue themselues: they sent forth two of their chiefe captaines, Mounsier Semblemount, and Mounsier de Veruine, gouernor of the towne, his retinue was contented to deliuer the towne to his grace, with condition that they might passe with bag and baggage, which request the king granted, and so the next day the duke of Suffolke rode into Bologne, vnto whom, as vnto the king the keies of the towne were deliuered, and in the afternoone departed all the Frenchmen. The number of all the men of war that were strong, and able to serue were of horse-men 67. of foote-men 1563. of hurt men 87. of women and children 1927. beside a great number of aged and sicke persons, not able to depart with the rest.

Bologne yeelded to K. Henry.

The 25. of September, the king hauing the sword borne before him by the lord Marquesse Dorset, like a conqueror rode into Bologne, and the trumpeters on the wals sounding. In the entring, there met him the duke of Suffolke, and deliuered vnto him the keies of the towne, and so he rode forth to his lodging that was prepared on the south side of the towne, two daies after the king rode about the towne, within the wals, and appointed that our Ladie church of Bologne should be taken downe, and in place there of a mount to bee made, for strengthening of the towne: finally, after that hee had set things in order for the safe keeping of the town, he appointed sir Iohn Dudley, Lord Lisle, high admirall of the seas, to be his deputy of the same towne, and then taking the seas, he returned into England, landing at Douer on the first of October.

K Henry entred Bologne.

The 9. of October in the night, the French men came vnawares vpon the Englishmen in base Bologne, and slewe of them a great number: howbeit, they were shortly after chased from thence, and the base towne holden after in good quiet.

Pyles taken.

This yeere was taken by the kings shippes of the West countrey, and of the English coast the number of 300. French ships and more, so that the Grey Friers Church in London was laide full of wine, the Austen Friers and Blacke Friers, were laid full of hearing, and other fish that was taken going into France.

A benenolence demanded.

The king demanded a benenolence of all his subiects, Spirituall and Temporall, towards his wars in France and Scotland.

1545

And the twelfth of Ianuary the lord Chancelor, the dukes of Suffolke, and other of the kings Councell began to sit at Baynards Castle, where they first called before them the Maior and Aldermen, &c. And because Richard Read Alderman would not agree to pay as they set him, he was commanded vpon a great paine to serue the king in his wars of Scotland, who departed from London the three and twentith of Ianuary, where he was taken prisoner,

ner, &c. Also sir William Roche Alderman, for words of displeasure taken by the kings councell, was by them sent to the Fléete, where he remained till Passion Sunday. Sir William Roche sent to the Fleete.

The fire and twentith of Januarie, there camped on the West side of Bolóigne beyonde the hauen, an army of French to the number of foureteene thousand, where they lay ten daies, and the first of Februarie, were put to flight, by the earle of Hertford, and sir Iohn Dudley lord Admirall then being deputie of Bolóigne.

The 13. of Februarie, a priest was set on the pillorie in Cheape, and burnt in both cheekes with the letters F. and A. and a paper on his head, wherein was written For false accusing, which iudgement was giuen by the Lorde Chancelor in the Star Chamber, a notable example of Iustice: great cause haue I to wish the like Iustice had been ministred vnto him, that after he had defrauded me of my worldly goods, sought to haue depriued me of my life, by likewise accusing me of many articles (seauenscore and odde) suborned witnesses (detected of periury, burnt in the hand for felony, and such like) which all could proue neuer one article against me, before the Archbishop of Canterbury, and other her maiesties high commissioners, (as appeareth in their register) by whom I was answered, there was no remedie against the accuser, by meane of a statute late made, &c. Whereupon the false accuser of his maister and eldest brother, sweareth to some, he neuer did any such acte: to other, that all those articles were true, and also largely (to the like effect) libelleth against me. False accuser set on the pillorie, and marked in the face, as he and other the like haue well deserued.

In the beginning of March, a road was made into Scotland toward Gedworth, by the Englishmen, who at the first got great praise, but they were so greedy, and went so farre, that a great army of Scots beset them with three battels, where the Englishmen for the most part were slaine and taken at Panyer Howghe, among whom sir Ralph Eure lord Eure, and warden of the East Marches was slaine, and R Read Alderman of London, with other taken prisoners by the Scots. T. Wriothesley L. chancelor made knight of the garter. Alderman of London taken prisoner.

Trinitie terme was adiorned because of the wars.

About the 25. of June was a great tempest of winde in Darbishire, where through trees were ouer-turned, and diuers Churches, chappels, and houses, were vncouered. Also in Lancashire, there fell hailestones as big as mens fists, which had diuers prints in them, some like mens faces, some like Gun holes, &c. *An. reg. 37.* Hailestones figured like mens heads.

The ninetéenth of July, the French kings nauie comming out of Newhauen, and Dépe, arriued on the coast of England in Suller, afore bright Hamstead, where they set certaine of their souldiers aland to burne: but the Beacons were fired, and the men came downe so thicke, that the Frenchmen fled and did little hurt. Frenchmen arriued in Sussex.

The 19. of July, by misfortune of shoting a Gun in one of the Hedgehogs a ship, afore Westminster, a firken of gun-poulder fired and slew seuen men, and the eighth leaped into the Thamis, and was drowned. Men burnt in the hedgehog.

The

Mary Rose was drowned.

The 20. of July the king being at Portsmouth, a goodly shippe of England, called the Mary Rose, with sir George Carrow the captaine, and manie other gentlemen were drowned in the midst of the hauen, by great negligence.

Frenchmen landed in the Ile of Wight.

The 21. of July, the French galleies and nauy came afore Portsmouth Hauen, and landed certaine of their army in the Ile of Wight, at Saint Helens Point, and there burned and encamped about 2000. men: but they were soone driuen awaie with losse of their captaine and manie souldiers. Within fewe daies after, the whole fleet remoued from the Wight to a place in Sussex, called Newhauen, foure miles from Lewes, and there landed manie captaines and souldiers, who by the valiantnes of the gentlemen and yeomen of Sussex, were slaine and drowned in the Hauen a great number of them, and the rest hardly recouered their ships and galleies.

Frenchmen landed at Newhauen in Sussex.

In the moneth of August, deceased at Guilford Charles Brandon Duke of Suffolke, and lord great maister of the kings household, who was honorablie buried at Windsor.

Earle of Hertford sent into Scotland.

In August the earle of Hereford was sent into Scotland, with an army of 12000. men, where hee destroied diuers townes, and greatly endomaged the Scots.

Lord Admirall brent Treyport

The 9. of September sir Iohn Dudley, L. Lisle, L. admirall of England, landed with 6000. men at Treyport in Normandy, and there brent the towne and abbey with other houses about it, and 30. ships with a barke that lay in the hauen, with losse of 14. Englishmen, and so returned.

Chantries, colledges, & hospitals, giuen vnto the king.

The 24. of November began a parliament, wherein was granted to the K. a subsidy of 2. s. 8. d. of the pound in goods, & 4. s. of the pound in lands. Also all colledges, chauntries, and hospitals, were committed to the K. order, to alter and transpose, which he promised to do to the glory of god and the common profit of the realme.

The 24. of December the Parliament was proroged, on the which daie the K. comming into the house to giue his royal assent vnto such acts as were passed, the speaker made vnto him an eloquent oration: to the which, although the custome hath alwaies bin that the Lord chancelor should make the answere, it pleased the K. at this present to make the answere himselfe, which hee vttered as here followeth, set downe by Edward Hall.

E. Hall. K. Henry his Oration.

Although my chancelor for the time being, hath before this time vsed verie eloquentlie and substantiallie to make answere to such Orations, as hath bin set forth in this high Court of Parliament, yet is hee not so able to open and set forth my minde and meaning, and the secrets of my heart in so plaine and ample maner, as I my selfe am, and can do: wherefore I taking vpon me to answere your eloquent oration. M. speaker, say that where you in the name of our welbeloued commons, haue both praised and extolled mee, for the notable qualities that you haue conceiued to bee in mee, I most heartily thanke you all, that you haue put me in remembrance of my duetie, which is to indeuor my selfe to obtain and get such excellent qualities and necessary vertues as a prince or gouernor ought to haue, of which gifts I recognise my selfe both barren and bare: but of such small qualities as God hath indued me withall, I render

render to his goodnes my most humble thankes, intending with all my wit & diligence to get and acquire to me such notable vertues and princely qualities as you haue alleadged to be corporated in my person: these thankes for your louing admonition and good counsell first remembred, I eftsoons thanke you again, because that you, considering our great charge, not for our pleasure, but for your defence, not for our gaine, but to our great costs, which wee haue lately sustained, as well in defence of our and your enemies, as for the conquest of that fortresse. which was to this Realme most displeasant, and shall hereafter by Gods Grace bee to our Nation most profitable and pleasante, haue freelie of your owne minds granted to vs a certaine subsidie, here in an act specified, which verily we take in good part, regarding more your kindnes, than the profite thereof, as hee that sets more by your louing heartes, than by your substance. Besides this heartie kindnes, I cannot alittle reioice when I consider the perfit trust and confidence, which you haue put in mee, as men hauing undoubted hope, and unfained beleefe in my good doinges and iust proceedinges for you, without my desire or request haue committed to mine order & disposition, all chantries, colledges, hospitals, & other places specified in a certaine act, firmely trusting that I will order them to the glory of god, and the profit of the common wealth: surely if I contrary to your expectation should suffer the Ministers of the Church to decaie, or learning, which is so great a iewell to be minished, or poore and miserable to bee unrelieued, you might saie, that I, beeing put in so speciall a trust, as I am in this case, were no trustie friend to you, nor charitable to mine owne christen, neither a louer of the publike wealth, nor yet one that feared God, to whom account must be rendred of al our doings. Doubt not I pray you, but your expectation shal be serued more godly and goodly than ye will wish or desire, as hereafter ye shal plainely perceiue. Now sithence I finde such kindnes on your part towards me, I cannot chuse but loue and fauour you, affirming, that no Prince in the world more fauoreth his subiects, than I doe you, nor no subiects or commons more loued and obeied their soueraign Lord than I perceiue you do me, for whose defence my treasure shall not be hidden, nor if necessitie require, my person shall not be unaduentured: yet although I wish you, and you with me to be in this perfit loue and concord, this friendly amitie cannot continue except both you my lords temporal, and my lords spirituall, and you my louing subiects studie and take paine to amend one thing which surely is amisse, and farre out of order, to the which I most heartilie require you, which is. That Charitie and concorde is not among you, but discord and dissention beareth rule in euery place: Saint Paul saieth to the Corinthians the 13. Chapter, Charity is gentle, charitie is not enuious, charity is not proud, and so forth in the same chapter. Behold then what loue and charity is amongst you, when the one calleth an other heretike, and anabaptist, and hee calleth him againe Papist, hypocrite, and Pharisey: bee these tokens of charitie amongst your selues? No, no, I assure you that this lacke of Charitie amongst your selues will bee the hinderaunce and assuaging of the feruent loue betweene vs, as I said before, except this wounde be salued and cleerelie made whole, I must needes iudge the fault and occasion

of this diſcord to be partlie by negligence of you the fathers and preachers of the ſpiritualty: for if I know a man which liueth in adultery, I muſt iudge him lecherous, and a carnall perſon: if I ſée a man boaſt and bragge himſelfe, I can not but déeme him a proud man. I heare daily that you of the cleargie preach one againſt another, teach one contrary to another, enuying one againſt another, without charity or diſcretiõ: ſome be to ſtiffe in their old *Mumſimus*, other be to buſy and curious in their new *Sumpſimus*: thus all men almoſt be in variety and diſcord, and few or none preach truly and ſincerely the word of God, according as they ought to doe. Shall I iudge you charitable perſons doing thus? No, no, I cannot ſo do: alas how can the poore ſoules liue in concord, when you preachers ſow amongſt them in your ſermons debate and diſcord? of you they looke for light, and you bring them into darknes. Amend theſe crimes I exhort you, and ſet forth Gods word, both by true preaching and good example giuing, or els I, whome God hath appointed his vicar and high miniſter here, will ſée theſe diuiſions extinct, and theſe enormities corrected, according to my very duty, or els I am an vnprofitable ſeruant, and vntrue officer. Although I ſaie the ſpirituall men be in ſome fault that charity is not kept amongſt you, yet you of the temporaltie bee not cleere and vnſpotted of malice and enuie, for you raile on biſhops, ſpeake ſlanderouſlie of prieſts, and rebuke and taunt preachers, both contrarie to good order, and chriſtian fraternity: if you knowe ſurelie that a Bi. or preacher, preacheth or teacheth peruers doctrine, come and declare to ſome of our councel or to vs, to whom is committed by god the high authority to reforme and order ſuch cauſes and behauiors, & be not iudges your ſelues of your own fantaſticall opinions and vaine expoſitions, for in ſuch high cauſes you may lightlie erre: and although you be permitted to read holy ſcriptures, and to haue the word of god in your mother tong, you muſt vnderſtand it is licenced you ſo to do, only to informe your conſciences, and to inſtruct your children and familie, and not to diſpute and make Scripture a raiſing and a taunting ſtocke, againſt prieſtes and preachers, as manie light perſons do. I am verie ſorie to knowe and heare howe vnreuentlie that moſt precious iewell the worde of God is diſputed, rimed, ſung, and iangeled in euerie Alehouſe and Tauerne, contrary to the true meaning and doctrine of the ſame: and yet I am euen as much ſorie that the readers of the ſame, followe it in dooing ſo faintlie and coldelie: for of this I am ſure, that charitie was neuer ſo faint amongſt you, and vertuous and godlie liuing was neuer leſſe vſed, nor God himſelfe amongſt chriſtians was neuer leſſe reuerenced, honored, or ſerued: therefore, as I ſaide before, bee in charity one with another, like brother and brother: loue, dread and ſerue god, to the which I as your ſupreme head and ſouereigne Lord exhort and require you: and then I doubt not, but that loue and league, that I ſpake of in the beginning, ſhall neuer bee diſſolued or broke betweene vs. And to the making of lawes which we haue now made and concluded, I exhort you the makers to be as diligent in putting them in execution, as you were in making and furthering of the ſame, or elſe your labor ſhalbe vain, & your common wealth nothing releeued. Now to your petition, concerning our roiall aſſent, to be giuen to ſuch acts as haue paſſed both the houſes,

they

they shall be read openly, that ye may heare them. And so beeing read his grace assented, and so rose and departed.

Many proper feates of armes were exploited and done in this meane while betwixt the English and the French about Bologne.

On the morrowe after the feast of the Epiphanie, there came a conuoie of victuailes towardes the French Fort builded besides Bologne, garded with three or foure thousande Launcequentz, vnder their Coronell, the Reingraue and certaine Frenchmen. The earle of Surrey then lieutenant of Bologne aduertised thereof, made out with such power as hee might conuenientlie spare out of Bologne, and the olde man, to cut off those victuailes: but comming to encounter with the enimies at S. Etiennes he was put to flight, sir Edward Poynings captain of a band called the L. gard of Bologne was slain in that conflict, with fiftéene or sixtéene other Captaines, besides officers and common souldiers. 1546 Englishmen put to flight by the Reingraue.

In the latter end of March, the stewes on the banks side of the Thamis, in Southwark was put downe, by the K. commandement, which was proclaimed by sound of trumpet no more to bee priuileged or vsed as a common bordell, but the inhabitantes of those houses, to kéepe good and honest rule, as in all other places of the realme. The stewes put downe.

The 27. of Aprill, being Tuesday in Easter wéeke, W. Foxley potmaker for the mint in the tower of London, fell asléep, and so continued sléeping and could not be wakened with pricking, cramping, or otherwise burning whatsoeuer, till the first day of the nert terme, which was full 14. daies, and 15. nights, for that Easter terme beginneth not afore 17. daies after Easter. The cause of his thus sléeping could not be knowne, though the same were diligently searched for by the kings phisitions and other learned men, yea the king himselfe examined the said W. Foxley, who was in all points found at his wakening to be as if he had slept but one night, and liued 41. yeere after, to wit, till the yeere of Christ 1587. *Ann. reg. 31.* W. Foxley slept more then 14 daies, and as many nights without waking.

The 18. of May, there were 4. of the K. ships, and 4. pinnaces abroad on the seas afore the hauen of Hamble tew, and there came an 8. of the French galleies to set vpon them, there was great shooting betwéen them, but at the last one of the galleies was taken, in the which were 280. souldiers, and 140. rowers. The rest of their galleies packed away. Moreouer while the campe lay thus at Hamble tew, it chanced ỳ one day a mutenie rose among the Lanſquenetz against their captaine, so that they got themselues into order of battell, seised vpon the great artillery, and shewed countenance, as if they would haue set vpon the residue of the whole campe. Hereupon euery man was commanded to repaire to his ensign, and the Spaniards came and ioined themselues with the Englishmen ready to take such part as they did. At length by the diligence of the captaines, and good countenance of the English soldiers & Spaniards, the tumult was staied, and 6. of the principall beginners therof were hanged. A French galley taken.

The 21. of May, the French army came and encamped beyond Bologne at the church on the hill, & the morrowe after the earle of Hertford marched with his power to a place within 2. miles of them, and certain horsemen & footemen

went forth and skirmished with them, and in the mean time the artillery ceased not to shoot off, as well from the French Campe, as from Boloigne, and the Old-man. This day were slain 14. Frenchmen, and 2. taken prisoners: and 3. of the English part were taken, and so the earle of Hertforde returned to his camp, and left the Lansquents vpon the hill, encamped before the enimies, not 2. miles distant from them, in which place a fort was begun to be raised, which was called the fort of Boloigne beage.

The 23. of May, the soldiers of Boloign and the Lansquents skirmished with the Frenchmen, and slue and took of them about the number of 7. score, of the which there were 40. of them in veluet coats, and some with chains.

In this meane while, by the motion of diuers Princes, a méeting was had of diuers Commissioners appointed to treat of some peace, to bee concluded betwixt the two kings of England and France, herupon there came to Gwisnes for the K. of Englande, the earle of Hertforde, the bishop of Winchester, Sir Iohn Dudley viscount Lisle, baron of Maupas, and high admiral of Englande, Sir William Paget the kings Secretarie, and Doctor Nicholas Wotton Deane of Canterburie: For the French king there came to Arde, Mounsier Claude Danebaulte Admirall of France, the Byshoppe of Eureox, Mounsier Reymond chiefe president of Roane, the Secretarie Boucherell. These mette diuers times betwixt Arde and Gwisnes. After long debating, on the seuenth of Iune a peace was concluded, which peace was with heraultes and sound of trumpets, proclaimed at London on Whitsonday, being the 13. of Iuue, and the same daie was a generall Procession, before the which was borne all the richest Siluer crosses in London, to wit, of euery church one, then procéeded all the parish clearkes, condocts, quiristers, and priestes in London, with the Quire of Pauls, all of them in their richest coapes, singing: Then the companies of the Citie in their best liueries. The Lorde Maior, the Aldermen and Sherifs in scarlet, &c. All these went from Pauls church through Cheape, and Cornhill vp to Leaden hall, and so back again to Pauls. And this was the last shew of the rich crosses and coapes in London: for shortly after they, with other their church plate were called into the kings treasury and wardrobe. And the same daie was the same Peace likewise proclaimed in the Citie of Paris, in Roan, & other places: the first article of which peace was, that the French king paying to the K. of England 800000. crownes, within the terme of 8. yéeres, he should haue Boloign again to him restored, which in the mean time should remain in the hands and possession of the king of England.

Peace proclaimed, and generall procession.

Moreouer for the full establishing of the peace, and for to receiue the French K. oth, the vicount Lisle L. admirall, with the B. of Durham, and diuers other lords and gentlemen to the number of more than 100. al in veluet coates and chaines of gold, with 45. yeomen séemely appointed, went into France from Boloign, the 10. of July, & came to Mellune, a town beyond Paris, where the French K. lay: by whome, and the Dolphin his son, they were roially receiued, feasted & banqueted: and hauing doon that for the which they came, the said lord admirall Dudley the 1. of August tooke his leaue of the French K. who rewarded him with a cupboorde of plate of gold, valued at 1500. pound. The Lords also

also and gentlemen had chaines of gold giuen to them, and yeomen had 1200. crownes bestowed amongst them, and so they returned into England.

The 16. of July were burned in Smithfield for the sacrament Anne Askew *alias* Keime, Io. Lassels, Nicholas Otorden, priest, Io. Adlam tailor, and Doctor Shaxton sometime bishop of Salisburie preached at the same fire, and there recanted, perswading them to do the like, but they would not. Anne Askew & other burnt.

The 21. of August came into England Claude de Honnebald high admiral of France, who brought with him the sacre of Diep, and 12. galleies, hee landed at the tower Wharffe, where he was honorably receiued, and brought to the Bishop of Londons palace, where he lodged two nights, and then rode to Hampton court where the king lay. By the way prince Edward receiued him with a company of 500. coates of veluet, with one sleeue of cloth of golde, and halfe the coat embrothered with gold: there was in all to the number of 800. horses. And so the French admirall came to the court, giuing the prince the vpper hand as they rode; and at the entry gate of the court, the L. chancelor and al the K. counsell receiued him, and brought him to his lodging. Admirall of France came to London.

On Bartholomew day the king admitted him to his presence, welcommed him, and in great triumph went to the chappell, where the K. receiued his oth, to performe the articles of the league. I omit to speake of huntinges and banquettings, which was wonderfull. But on the 27. of August, he being rewarded with a cupbord of plate to the value of 1200. l'. hee returned to London, and so to his galleies, and departed homeward: besides the K. gift, he had giuen to him by the city of London two flagons gilt, and two other parcell gilt, valued at 136. l'. besides wine, wax, &c. D. of Norffolke & earle of Surrey sent to the Tower.

The 12. of December Th. D of Norffolke, and Henry Earle of Surrey his son and heire vpon certain surmises of treason, were committed to the tower of London, the one by water, the other by land, that the one knew not of the others apprehension.

The 3. day of January, the late dissolued church of the grey Friers in London was opened, and masse sung there; and that day preached at Pauls crosse the bishop of Rochester, who declared the kings gift to the city of London, for the releeuing of the poore people, which gift was by Pattent vnder his great seale, S. Bartholomewes Spittle in Smithfield, latelie valued at 305. pounde 6. shillings and 7. pence, and surrendred to the king, the church of the said grey Friers, valued at 32. pounde, 19. s. and seauen pence, and surrendred, and two parish Churches, the one of S. Nicholas in the Shambles, the other Saint Ewine in Newgate Market at Warwike lane end, all to bee made one parish, in the said church of the Grey Friers: and in landes hee gaue for the maintenance of the same church, with diuine seruice, reparation, &c. 500. markes by yeere for euer, and this church to be named Christs church, founded by king Henry the eight. K. H. his gift to the city of London.

The thirteenth daie of Januarie, the king then lying dangerously sick, the Earle of Surrey was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, before the lord Maior, the lord chancelor, and other lords and iudges being there in commission; some thinges hee flatly denied, weakening the credite of his accusers, by 1547 Earle of Surrey arraigned & beheaded.

certaine circumſtances, other hee excuſed with interpretations of his meanings to proue the ſame to be far otherwiſe than was alleadged againſt him: the eſpecialleſt matter, wherewith he was charged, was, for bearing certaine armes that were ſaid belonged to the king and prince: the bearing whereof he iuſtified, that as he tooke it, he might beare them, as belonging to his anceſtors, and withall affirmed that he had the opinion of the heraults therein, and ſo to his indictment he pleaded, not guilty. And for that he was no lord of the parliament, he was enforced to ſtand to the triall of a common inqueſt of his countrey, which found him guiltie, and thereupon he had iudgement of death: and ſhortly after, to wit, on the 19. of January he was beheaded on the tower hill.

Tombe for king Henry the 8. made by cardinall Wolſey.

The king lying dangerouſly ſicke (as yée haue heard) and in great perill of death, made his laſt will and teſtament, dated the thirtith date of December, the 38. yeere of his raigne, &c. Wherein, amongſt other things, he appointed his body to be buried in his colledge, or free chappell at Windſore, in an honourable tombe prepared, and at that time almoſt finiſhed for that purpoſe, which tombe I haue ſeene, with this inſcription caſt in the grates or incloſure thereof (being copper) *Henricus octauus rex Angliæ, Franciæ, dominus Hiberniæ, fidei defenſor:* he appointed the tombes of king Henry the firſt, and of Edward the fourth to be more princely made in the ſame places they then ſtood: one thouſand markes to be giuen in almes to the moſt needy, in as ſhort time as may be after his decreaſe, and to twelue poore knights, to each of them 12. pence the day for euer, and euery yeere to each of them a long gowne of white cloth, with the garter embrodered vpon the breaſt, with a ſhield and croſſe of S. George, and a mantle of red cloth, &c. He appointed his firſt heire to the crowne to be prince Edward: the ſecond, lady Mary daughter to Quéene Katherine: and the third to be the lady Elizabeth, by Quéene Anne Boleine. More, he tooke order, that during the minoritie of his ſonne prince Edward, his executors ſhould be counſellers and aiders to him in all things, as well concerning priuate as publike affaires, they were in number ſixteene, whoſe names inſue as followeth:

Thomas Archbiſhop of Canterbury.

Thomas Wriotheſley lord chancelor.

Sir William Pawlet knight of the order, lord Saint-Iohn, and great maſter of the houſhold.

Sir Iohn Ruſſell knight of the order, lord priuy ſeale.

Sir Edward Seimor knight of the order, earle of Hertford, great chamberlaine.

Sir Iohn Dudley knight of the order, viſcount Liſley, baron of Malpas, high admirall of England.

Cuthbert Tunſtall biſhop of Durham.

Sir Anthony Browne knight of the order, and maſter of the horſe.

Sir William Paget knight of the order.

Sir William Herbert knight.

Sir Edward Mountacute knight, chiefe iuſtice of the common pleas.

Sir

Sir Thomas Bromely knight, one of the iustices of the kings bench.
Sir Anthony Denny knight.
Sir Edward North knight, chancelor of the Augmentations.
Sir Edward Wotton knight, treasurer of Caleis.
Doctor Wotton deane of Canterbury and of Yorke.

And furthermore, for the speciall trust and confidence which the king had in the Earle of Arundell, and the Earle of Essex that then were, Sir Thomas Cheiny knight treasurer of houshold, Sir Iohn Gage knight controller of houshold, Sir Anthony Winkefield knight vicechamberlaine, sir William Peter knight, one of the principall secretaries, Sir Richard Rich knight, sir Iohn Baker knight, sir Ralph Sadler knight, Sir Thomas Seimor knight, sir Richard Southwell knight, and sir Edmond Pecham knight: he appointed that they, and euery of them should be of counsell, for the ayding and assisting of the forenamed counsellors and executors, &c. He deceased at Westminster on the eight and twentith day of January, being friday, in the yere of Christ 1547. beginning the yere at Christmas, but after the account of the church of England, in anno 1546. when he had raigned seuen and thirty yeres, nine moneths, and odde daies, and was buried at Windsore with great solemnitie.

The last of January being munday prince Edward was proclaimed king, by the name of Edward the sixt, and the same date he came from Enuilde to the Tower of London. Blase San.

Edward the sixt.

EDward the sixt borne at Hampton court (by the decease of K. Henry his father) began his raigne the 28. of Ianuary, and was proclaimed K. of England, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, and of the churches of England and also of Ireland the supreme head immediatly in earth vnder God, &c. on the 31. or last day of Ianuary, in the yere of Christ after the Church of England 1546. but after the accompt of them that begin the yere at Christmas 1547. being then of the age of nine yeres. And the same day in the afternoone the saide yong king came to the tower of London from Hertford, and rode into the City at Aldgate, and so along the wall by the crossed Friers to the Tower hill, & entred at the red bulwarke, where he was receiued by sir Iohn Gage constable of the tower, and the lieutenant on horseback. The Earle of Hertford riding before the king, and sir Anthony Browne riding after him: and on the bridge next the warde gate, the archbishop of Canterbury, the lorde Chancelor, with other great lords of the Councell receiued him, and so brought him to his chamber of presence, where they were sworne to his maiestie. *An. reg. 1.* Ro. Greene.

Earle of Hertford made lord protector.

The first of Februarie, the earle of Hertford was nominate, elected and chosen, by al the executors, to be protector and chiefe gouernor of the kings person, vntill he came to his lawfull age of 18. yeares, and so was he proclaimed.

King Edward made knight. Lord Maior of London made knight.

The first daie of Februarie the earle of Hertford lord protector in the tower of London, endued king Edward with the order of knighthod: and then immediatly the king standing vp, vnder the cloth of estate, Henry Hoblethorne lord Maior of London was called, who kneeling downe, the king toke the sword of the lord protector and made him knight, which was the first that euer he made. Then the lords called the iudges and communed with them, and then euery of them came before the king, who put forth his hand, and euery of them kissed it: then maister William Porteman one of the iudges of the kings bench was called forth, whom the king made knight, and then the king mouing his cap departed to his priuie chamber againe.

The 14. of Februarie the corpes of K. Henrie the eight, was with great solemnitie and honor conueied vnto Syon, and the next day to Windsore, and there buried in the colledge.

Duke and lords created.

The 17. of Februarie sir Edward Seimer earle of Hertford, and lord protector was created duke of Somerset: the lord William Parre earle of Esser, was created marquesse of North-hampton: sir Iohn Dudley lord Lisle, lord admirall, was created earle of Warwike and lord Chamberlaine of England: sir Thomas Wriothesley and lord chancelor, was created Earle of South-hampton: sir Thomas Seimer the kings vncle was made lord of Sudley and high admirall: sir Richard Rich was made lord Rich: sir William Willoughby was made lord Willoughby of Parham: sir Edmond Sheffield was made lord Sheffield of Buterwike.

Paules steeple lay at anchor.

The nintenth of Februarie K. Edward rode from the tower of London, accompanied with his nobilitie through the citie of London towards Westminster, and as he passed on the south side of Pauls churchyard, a man of the nation of Arragosa, came from the battlements of the Steeple of Paules church vpon a cable, being made fast to an anchor by the Deanes gate, lying on his breast, aiding himselfe neither with hand nor foote, but spreading them abroade, and after ascended to the midst of the cable, where he tumbled and plaied many pretty toies, whereat the king and the nobles had good pastime.

King Edward crowned.

He was crowned at Westminster on the twentith daie of Februarie. And there was the same day proclaimed a generall pardon of all maner of persons sauing fiue, to wit, the duke of Norffolke, Edward L. Courtney eldest sonne to the Marquesse of Exceter, M. Foskew, M. Throkmorton, Cardinall Poole, and Doctor Pates.

The 6. of March, the great seale of England was taken from sir Thomas Wriothesley, and on the morrow the same was deliuered to the lord Seint Iohn lord great master.

1547 The 11. of Aprill being mundaie in the Easter weeke, the Complin (being a part of the euening praier) was sung in English, in the kings Chappell. Also the same month of Aprill, doctor Glasier preaching at Paules crosse, affirmed there, that the Lent was not ordained of God, to be fasted, neither the

eating

eating of flesh to be forborne, but that the same was a politike ordinance of men, and mought therefore be broken by men, at their pleasures. More on the 15. of May being sunday, Doctor Smith master of Whitington Colledge in London, doctor of diuinitie, and reader of the same in the kings Colledge at Oxford, recanted at Paules crosse, declaring his former bookes, and teachings to be erronious, and heretical. Also on the nineteenth of June, one Peren did recant in the parish church of S. Andrew Undershaft in London, where he had before (to wit on S. Georges day) preached that it was good to worship the pictures of Christ, and of Saints, but now hee saide he had beene deceiued, and was sorie that he had taught such doctrine, &c.

On the same 19. of June was a Dirige sung in euery parish church in London, for the French king late deceased (to wit on the 22. of March last before passed) also the church of S. Paul in London, being hanged with blacke, and a sumptuous herse set vp in the quire, a Dirige was there sung, and on the next morrow, the archbishop of Canterbury, assisted of eight Bishops, all in rich miters and other their pontificals, did sing a masse of Requiem, and the bishop of Rochester preached there a learned Sermon.

The first of July two priests were arraigned, and condemned in the Guildhall, for keeping of certain relikes, amongst the which there was the left arme and shoulder of a Monke of the Charterhouse, on the which arme, was written, it was the arme of such a monke, which suffered martyrdome vnder king Henry the eight.

The 9. of July 15. galleies of France, passed through the narrow seas into Scotland, where they destroied the Castle of S. Andrewes, wherein were certaine Scots, that had in the same Castle murthered the cardinall of S. Andrewes. And on the 8. of August the said galleies returned again into France.

In the month of August, Edward Duke of Somerset lord protector as generall, and Iohn Dudley earle of Warwike lord lieutenant, with a noble army were sent into Scotland, and nere to Edenborough at a place called Muscleborough the Englishmen and Scots met, where betweene them the tenth of September was fought a cruell battell. The victorie thereof fell to the Englishmen, and of the Scots were slaine 14000. and taken prisoners 1500. whereof many were gentlemen, and not aboue 60. Englishmen slaine: more of this ye may reade in master Patten his booke extant entituled, The expedition into Scotland. Muscleborough field. Will. Patten.

The 2. of September the French Galleies, did take a pinnace of the kings, called the Ken, betweene Calais and Douer.

The lord protector, and the rest of the Councell, sent commissioners into al parts of the realme, willing them to take all images out of their churches, for the auoiding of idolatry, with them were sent diuers preachers, to perswade the people from their beades, and such like ceremonies: and at that time the going in procession was forbidden to be vsed: and the Gospell, & Epistle was commanded to be read in English. And the 5. of September the kings commissioners did sit in Paules church there to reforme, such ceremonies and superstitions. And on the 8. of September the Letanie was sung in English in

Paules

Paules Church, betweene the quire and the high altar, the singers kneeling, halfe on the one side and halfe on the other side. And the same day, the Epistle and Gospell was read in English at the high masse in Paules church. And on the 11. of September, Edmond Bonner bishop of London was by the Councell committed prisoner in the Fleete. And on the 25. of September Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester was likewise committed to the Fleete. And Nicholas Ridley was made bishop of Rochester.

The 24. of October, Richard lord Rich, was made lord chancelor.

Parliament at Westminster.

The 4. of November, the parliament begun at Westminster, and that same day masse was sung before the lordes of the parliament in the English tong. Sir Iohn Baker knight, chancelor of the fruites and tenthes was speaker of the common house for the said parliament: In the which was granted to the king, all colledges, chantries, free chappels, hospitals, fraternities, brotherhods, and guildes. And an acte was made for the receiuing of the sacrament, in both kindes of bread and wine; and the statute of the sir articles was repealed.

Colledges, chantries, free chappels, and hospitals giuen to the king.

The 17. of November was begon to be pulled downe the Rode in Paules church with Mary and Iohn, and all other images in that church, and then the like was done in all the Churches in London, and so throughout England, and certes of scriptures were written vpon the wals of those churches against Images, &c. And on the 24. of December the parliament was prorogued.

In the 1. of January doctor Latimer preached at Paules crosse, which was the first sermon by him preached in almost eight yeres before, for at the making of the sire articles, he being bishop of Worcester would not consent vnto them, and therfore was commanded to silence, and gaue vp his bishoprike: he also preached at Pauls crosse on the 8. of January; where he affirmed, that whatsoeuer the cleargie commanded, ought to be obeyed, but he also declared that the cleargie are such as sit in Moyses chaire, and breake not their maisters commission: adding nothing thereto, nor taking any thing there from: and such a cleargy must be obeied of all men, both high and lowe. He also preached at Paules on the 15. and on the 29. of January. And on the 2. of Februarie being the feast of the purification of our Lady, commonly called Candlemasse day, the bearing of candles in the church, was left off throughout the whole Citie of London.

The 12. of Februarie being Shrouesunday, and the munday, and tuesday following, was great iusts, and warlike feates done in the parke at Grene-wich, where was a castle or fort of turues, besieged and assaulted, to shew the king the maner of wars, wherein hee had great pleasure. The wednesdate following commonly called Ashwednesday, the vse of giuing ashes in the church was also left.

The 7. of March, being wednesday was a pulpit set vp in the kings priuie garden at Westminster, and therein doctor Latimer preached before the king, where he mought be heard of more then foure times so manie people as could haue stod in the kings chappel: and this was the first sermon preached there. And this yere the ceremonie of bearing of palmes on palme sunday was left off and not vsed as afore.

About

About the beginning of the month of March, the K. sent his commissioners into euery shire in England to survey all Colledges, free chappels, and chantries with other bonds as faces in the articles of their commission. 1548 Surueiors sent out.

Also in the said moneth of March, the K. sent forth his proclamation, with a booke for the order of receiuing of the holy communion of the body and blood of Christ, under both kinds of bread and wine to bee ministred by the priest to all persons at Easter, and at all times after, when the people required it. Whereupon at Easter following began the communion and confession in English, but no man constrained thereto except he would: but after Easter began the seruice in English in diuers parish churches, and at Whitsontide at Pauls, by the commandement of Doctor W. May Deane of the same Church. Barking chappell nigh the tower of London, and the Colledge Church of S. Martins le Grand nigh the Shambles, were pulled downe. Also the parish churches of S. Nicholas in the Shambles, and Saint Ewines within Newgate, were pulled down, and the parishoners appointed to the late dissolued Grey friers church which is nowe named Christes Church, founded by king Henrie the eight. Also the Parish Church at the Strond without Temple bar was pulled downe, with Strond Inne, and Strondbridge, in place whereof to build the Protectors house. *Ann. reg. 2.*

The watch which had béene accustomed in London at Midsummer of long time laid down, was now againe vsed, both on the éeuen of S. Iohn, and of S. Peter, in as comely order as it had bin accustomed, which watch was greatlie beautified by the number of more than 300. demilances and light horsemen that were prepared by the citizens, to bee sent into Scotlande for the rescue of the towne of Hadington and other, kept by Englishmen in Scotland. Great watch at Midsummer & S. Peters tide.

On S. Peters éeuen, mounsieur Dasley, lieutenant to the French king, and the Reingraue of France, with the number of 10000. French and Almains, besides Scots, besieged the towne of Hadington in Scotland, defended by the Englishmen, vnto whose aide shortly after came from Barwike 1300. horsemen, which were 700. men of armes and demilances, the Captaines whereof were Sir Robert Bowes, and Sir Thomas Palmer, which Horsemen not long after by the Frenchmen were inclosed, and the most part either slaine, or taken with their Captaines before named: neuertheless, our Englishmen defended the Towne, often skirmishing with the French, and putting them to the worse, vntill the twentieth daie of August, and then came an armie out of England of 16000 of the which 4000. were Almaines, the kings lieutenant was the Earle of Shrewsburie, the Generall of the Almaines was captaine Courtpeny. The siege of Hadington.

At the comming of this armie, the Frenchmen and Scots in peaceable manner departed from before Hadington, giuing our captains and soldiers great commendation for their seruice. Francis earle of Shrewsbury after he had séen the towne victualled and stored with fresh souldiers and munitions, departed into England, and our men kept the Towne of Hadington, oftentimes skirmishing with the Frenchmen and Scottes, till the 20. daie of September, and then came the Earle of Rutlande with 3000. Almaines and as manie Hadington raised by Englishmen.

borderers,

borderers, who caused the towne to be raced, and so brought their Ordinance and carriage to Barwike, and returned without battell.

B. of Winchester sent to the tower by the L. protector.

On S. Peters day Stephen Gardner B. of Winchester preached in the palace of Whyte hall at Westminster before the K. for the which sermon he was on the morrow after sent to the tower of London.

A priest of Cornwall executed.

The 7. of July a priest was hanged and quartered in Smithfielde, for that hee and other in Cornewall had slaine M. Body, one of the kings commissioners, the others of his societie were put to death in diuers other partes of the Realme.

Great pestilence in London.

This yeere a great mortality by the pestilence was in London, wherefore commandement was giuen to all curates and other hauing to do therewith, that no corps should be buried before 6. of the clocke in the morning, nor after 6. of the clock at night, and that there should at the burial of euery corpse, bee rung one bell at the least, by the space of 3. quarters of an houre.

Queene Katherine died.

In September died Queene Katherine, late wife to king Henry, and after married to Sir Thomas Seimer lord admirall; she died of childbirth, being deliuered of a daughter.

Ann. reg. 3.

The 16. of Januarie, Sir Tho. Seimer knight of the garter, baron of Sudley, lord admirall, brother to the lord Protector, and vncle vnto king Edward, was arrested, and sent to the tower of London. On the 19. of January Sir William Shepington was also committed to the tower; which Sir William on the 14. of February, was arraigned in the Guilde Hall at London, and condemned of treason, for misusing of the kings mint at Bristow. The lord Th. Seimer vncle to the king was condemned by the Parliament, and neuer came to his answere. This Parliament brake vp on the 14. of March, and on the 20. of March the saide lorde Tho. Seimer was beheaded on the Tower hill, hee tooke it on his death, that hee had neuer committed or meant anie treason against the king nor realme. The 29. of March doctor Latimer preached before the king at Westminster, and there in his Sermon, declaring manie things against the lord Thomas Seimer late beheaded, he affirmed that in time whiles he was prisoner in the Tower, he wrote letters vnto the ladie Mary, and Ladie Elizabeth the kings sisters, that they should make some sturre against the lord protector, and reuenge his death.

1549

The 6. of Aprill, proclamation was made for the Masse to bee put downe throughout the whole realme.

Dance of Pauls pulled downe.

The 10. of Aprill, the cloister of Pauls church in London, called pardon churchyarde, with the dance of death, commonlie called the dance of Pauls about the same cloister coslly and cunningly wrought, and the chappel in the middest of the same churchyard, were all begun to be pulled downe. Also the charnil house of Pauls, with the chappel there (after the tombes and other monuments of the dead were pulled downe, and the dead mens bones buried in the fielde) were conuerted into dwelling houses and shops.

Charnill house of Pauls.

Church of S. Iohn by Smithfield blowne vp.

About the same time the steeple, and most part of the church of S. Iohn of Ierusalem, neere vnto Smithfield, most beautifullie new builded, and late finished, by the Lorde prior named Docary, was vndermined, and ouerthrowne with

with gunpouder, the stone whereof was applied in the building of the L. protectors house at the Strand.

The 27. of Aprill, diuers anabaptists were examined in our lady chappel of S. Pauls church in London, before T. Cranmer archb. of Canterbury, Edmond Thurlby first B. of Westminster, D. Cox, D. Smith, D. Maie Deane of Pauls, and D. Cok deane of the arches, and chancelor to the archb. of Cant. these sate on the altar of our ladie in iudgement of these anabaptistes, and at their next sitting, there sate with them the sherifs of London; and on the next Sundaie being low Sundaie, one of them named Champenes bare a fagot at Paules crosse, Myles Couerdale preached the rehearsall sermon there: on the next Saturday the said commissioners sate there againe, before whome was brought Ioan of Kent, *alias* Ioan Butcher, *alias* Knel, she was condemned: and a tanner of Colchester named Putto recanted, and on the morow bare a fagot at Pauls crosse, and after that at Colchester. Also that date stod at Pauls crosse a botcher an anabap. of Mary Magdal. parish in old Fishstreet, & again ỳ sunday after bicause he made a mock at the first time: & thus much of ỳ anabap. of that time.

In the moneth of May, by meanes of a proclamation for inclosures, the commons of Somersetshire and Lincolnshire made a commotion, and brake vp certain parks of sir W. Herberds, and L. Sturtons, but sir W. Herberd slewe and executed many of those rebels. Commotion in Somersetshire & Lincolnshire.

In July, the commons of Esser & Kent, Suffolk & Norffolk, rose against inclosures, and pulled downe diuers parks and houses.

Also the Commons of Cornewall and Deuonshire rose against the nobles and gentlemen, and required not onely that the inclosures might bee disparked, but also to haue their old religion, and act of sire articles restored: these besieged the citie of Excester, which was valiantlie defended. Against these rebels was sent Iohn L. Russell Lord priuy seale, with a number of souldiers, who entred the city of Excester the 5. of August, where they slew and tok prisoners of the rebels more than 4000. and after hanged diuers of them in the towne and country about. The L. Gray was also sent with a number of strangers Almaine and Germaine horsemen, who in diuers conflicts slewe manie people, and spoiled the country. Commotion in Cornwall and Deuonshire. Rebels subdued.

The last of July, Wil. L. marques of Northampton, entred the city of Norwich, and on the next morning, the rebels also entred the towne, burned parte thereof, put the L. marques to flight, and slew the L. Sheffield. Commotion at Norwich. Lord Sheffield slaine.

In this meane time diuers persons were apprehended as aiders of the foresaid rebels or reporters of their doinges, of the which one was the Bailife of Romford in Esser, hanged within Aldgate, and an other of Kent, at the bridge fot toward Southwark, both on Mary Magdalens day by martiall law. Martiall Law.

The 8. of August the French K. ambassador, did in name of his master the F. king, make defiance vnto the K. of England, and so the wars to begin with all their force, & the same night following, all Frenchmen were taken prisoners, and their goods registred. The French K. galleis inuaded Gernesea and Jersea.

In the beginning of August, the French K. determining to take the Iles of Gernesea and Jersea, did set there sodainelie vpon our shippes with a great number

number of galleis, but they were so manfully encountred by the kings nauy, that with the losse of a thousand men, and great spoile of their galleis, they were forced to retire into France, and desist from their purpose.

The 16. of August, a man was hanged without Bishopsgate of London, and one other without Aldgate, the third at Totenham, the fourth at Waltham, and so forth in diuers other places, all by martiall law.

French men apprehended.

The 8. of August, the French ambassadors gaue a defiance to the lord protector, whereupon all French men with their goods being no denizens were apprehended and committed to prison.

The rebels in Norffolke and Suffolke encamped themselues at mount Surrey, in a wood called S. Nicholas wood, neere vnto Norwich, against whom sir Io. Dudley earle of Warwike went with an army, where both he & a great number of gentlemen meeting with the rebels were in such danger, as they had thought all to haue died in that place, but God that confoundeth the purpose of all rebels, brought it so to passe, that aswel there as in all other places, they were partly by power constrained, partly by promise of their pardon, perswaded to submit themselues to their prince: the earle of Warwike entred the citie of Norwich the 27. of August, when he had slaine aboue 5000. of the rebels, and taken their chiefe captaine Robert Ket of Windham Tanner, which might dispend in lands fifty pound by yeere, and was worth in moueables aboue a thousand markes, when he had put to execution diuers of the rebels in diuers places about Norwich, he returned.

The Earle of Warwike went against the rebels at Norwich.

Newhauen by Boleine woon by the French.

The 28. of August tidings was brought to K. Edward, and the lord protector, that the French men had taken Blacknes, Hamiltew and Newhauen by Boleine, and had slaine all the Englishmen, and taken the kings ordinance and victuals, which was reported to be begun by one Sturton a bastard son of the lorde Sturtons, which had betraied Newhauen, and went himselfe to the French kings seruice: hereupon the captaine of Boleine Barke for feare of the French army conueied all the ordinance, victuals, goods, and men of that fort, to the high towne of Boleine, and after their departing, with gunpowder blew vp the fort.

Commotion in Yorkeshire.

About this time also, a commotion began at Semer in the north-riding of Yorke shire, and continued in the east-riding, and there ended: the principall raysers whereof were William Ombler of east Hesserton yeoman, Thomas Dale parish clearke of Semer, and Steuenson of Semer: being preuented by the lord president from rising at Wintringham, they drew to a place at Semer by the sea coast, and there by night rode to the beacon at Starton, and set it on fire, and so gathered a rude route: then they went to master Whites house, and toke him, and Clopton his wiues brother, Sauage a merchant of Yorke, and Bery seruant to sir Walter Mildmay, which foure they murthered a mile from Semer, and there lefte them naked: their number increased to 3000.

Rebels executed at Yorke.

On the one and twentith day of August, the kings pardon was offred, which Ombler and other refused, who were shortly after taken, and brought to York, where Thomas Dale and other were executed the 21. of September.

The first of September Edmond Boner bishop of London preached a ser-

mon

mon at Paules crosse, for the which he was accused vnto the councel by William Latimer, parson of S. Laurence Pountney, and Iohn Hooper, sometime a white monke, and so conuented before the Archbishop of Canterbury and other commissioners at Lambheath on the thirteenth, the fiftéenth, the eigthteenth, and on the one and twentith day of that same month he was sent to the Marshalsea in his habite of a bishop, but on the first of October he was depriued of his bishoprieke, for disobeying the kings order in religion.

On the first day of October in the morning, the earle of Warwike with other lords of the counsel sent for the lord Maior and the Aldermen of London, to his place in Holborne, where was declared to them by the lorde Chancelor and other of the kings counsell, diuers abuses of the L. protector, concerning the kings person, and his affaires both in England and also in Scotland, and other his peces beyond the seas. And that after none was kept a court of the aldermen in the Guild hall, where was shewed a letter, from the king and the lord protector for to haue one thousand men of the citie, well harnessed with weapons for defence of the kings maiesties person. And another letter also from the lords of the counsell, to haue two thousand men to aide them, for defence of the kings person: and also, that the citie should bee well kept with watches both day and night, &c.

And the same first day, the king being at Hampton court, the lord protector caused proclamations to be made in diuers townes nere to the court, for men to aide the king against the lords, and also sent letters to diuers townes to the same effect: whereupon great assemblies of people were made at Hampton court. And in the night of the same day, he conueyed the king to Windsore, with a great number of horsemen and footmen.

A letter from the lordes at Windsore to the lordes at London.

My lords, we commend vs most hartily vnto you: and whereas the kings maiestie was enformed that you were assembled in such sort as yée doe nowe remaine there, was aduised by vs, and such other of his counsell, as were here about his person, to send master secretary Peter vnto you with such a message as whereby might haue ensued the suretie of his maiesties person, with preseruation of his realme and subiects, and the quiet both of vs, and your selues, as master secretary can well declare vnto you, his maiestie, and we of his councell here, do not a little maruell that you stay still with you the said master secretary: and haue not (as it were) vouchsafed to send an answere to his maiesty, neither by him, nor yet by any other. And for our selfe, we do much more maruell, and are right sory, as we and you haue good cause to be, to sée the manner of your doings, bent with force and violence to bring the kings maiestie and vs to those extremities, which as we doe intend, if you will take none other way but violence, to defend vs, as nature and our allegiance doth binde vs to extremity of death, and put it vnto Gods handes, who giueth victory as pleaseth him. So if our reasonable conditions and offers will take no place, as hitherto none hath beene signified vnto vs from you, nor we doe not vnderstand what yée doe require or séeke, nor what yée do meane, and that yée speake no hurt of the kings maiesties person: as touching all other priuat matters, to auoide the effusion of christian blood, and to preserue the kings

maiesties

maiesties person, his realme, and subiects, ye shall finde vs agréable to anie reasonable conditions that you will require. For we do estéeme the R. wealth and tranquillity of the realme more than all other worldly things, yea more than our owne liues. Thus praying you to sende vs a determinate answere herein by M. secretary Peter (or if yée will not let him go) by this bearer, we beséech God to giue both you and vs grace to determine this matter as may be to Gods honor, the preseruation of the king, & the quiet of vs all, which may be, if the fault be not in you. And so we bid you most hartily farewell. From the kings maiesties castle of Windsor the 7. day of October, 1549.

Your L. louing friends, E. Somerset, &c.

A letter from the duke of Somerset to the earle of Warwike.

My lord, I cannot perswade my selfe that there is any ill conceiued in your heart as of your selfe against me, for that the same séemeth vnpossible, that where there hath bén from your youth and mine so great a friendship and amity betwixt vs, as neuer for my part to no man was greater, now so suddenly there should be hatred, and that without iust cause, what soeuer rumours and brutes, or perswasion of others haue moued you to conceiue, in the sight and iudgment of almighty God, I protest & affirme this vnto you, I neuer meant worse to you than to my selfe, wherefore my lord, for God sake, for friendship, for the loue that euer hath bin betwixt vs, or that hereafter may be, perswade your selfe with truth, and let this time declare to me and the world your iust honor, and perseuerance in friendship, the which God be my witnesse, who séeth all harts, was neuer diminished, nor euer shall be whilest I liue. And because my heart and minde shall be more plaine and open than my writings: this bearer maister Hobie shal declare vnto you the effect thereof at length, to whom I pray you giue credite, &c. the 8. of October, 1549.

A letter from the lords at Windsor to the lords at London.

After our harty commendations vnto your good L. we haue receiued from the same a letter by maister Hunnings, dated at London yesterdaie, whereby you doe vs to vnderstand the causes of your assemble there, and charging the lord protector with the maner of gouernment, require that he withdraw himselfe from the kings maiestie, disperse the force which hee hath leuied, and bee contented to be ordered according to iustice and reason. And so you will gladlie commune with vs, as touching the suretie of the kings maiesties person, and the order of all other things, with such conformitie on that behalfe as appertaineth, and otherwise you must (as you write) make other account of vs, than you trust to haue cause, and burden vs, if things come to extremities. To the first point we verily beléeue, that as brutes, rumors, and reportes, that your lordships intended the destruction of the lorde protector induced his grace to flie to the defence which he hath assembled, excuse your lordships, hearing that his grace intended the like destruction towards you, haue bén moued to doe as you haue done, so as for lacke of vnderstanding one of anothers right meaning, things be growen to such extremities, as if the sauing of the kings maiesties person, and the common weale, take not more place in his grace and your lordships, than priuate respect or affaires, you sée, we doubt not, as we doe, that both our king, our countrie, and also our selues shall as verily as God is God, be vtterly destroied and cast away. Wherefore, might it

if please you, for the tender passion of Jesus Christ, vse your wisedome, and temper your determination in such sort, as no blod bee shed, nor crueltie vsed, neither of his graces part, nor of your lordships; for if it come to ỹ point, both you and we are like to se presently with our eies, that which euery veine of all our hearts will bleed to behold. Wherefore, as true subiectes to the kings Maiestie, as faithfull Counsellors, though vnworthie Counsellors to his Maiestie and his realme, and as lamentable petitioners, we beseech your lordships most humblie, and from the bottome of our hearts, to take pity of the king and the realme, whereof you be principall members, and to set apart *Summum ius*, and to vse at this time *Tum bonum & æquum*; and thinke not that this is written for ante priuate feare or other respect of our selues, but for that vndoubtedlie we heare and know more of this point with your fauors, than you there do know; yea, and howsoeuer it shall please you to account of vs, we are true men to God, to the King, to the realme, and so will we liue and dy whersoeuer we be, and in respect of them thée esteeme little ante other person or thing, no not our owne liues; and hauing cleere consciences, as somewhat soeuer ill maie followe, vpon the vse of extremitie there, that neither now is, nor shall be found fault in vs, and so quieting our selues we rest. Now to that you would haue the lorde protector to do, for his part his grace and wee haue communed herein, & much to our comfortes and yours also, if it shall like you to waie the case, who is contented if you will againe for your parts vse equity, to put that now in execution which many times he hath declared by his wordes, that is to saie, so as the king and the realme maie be otherwise well serued, hee passeth little for the place he now hath. Maty he doth consider, that by the kings maiestie with all your aduices, and the consents of the nobles of the realme he was called to the place (as appeereth in writting vnder his maiesties great Seale and Signe, whereunto your owne handes also and ours, with all others the Lordes of the vpper house in parliament are subscribed): And therfore in violent sort to be thus thrust out against his will, he thinketh it not reasonable: he is here with the kings person, where his place is to be, and we bee heere with him we trust in God for the good seruice of the king, the weale of the realme, and the good acquitting both of his Grace and of your Lordeshippes, which wée most heartilie desire, and se such hope heere thereof, as if you bée not too sore bent vpon the extremities, as is reported, and as equitie canne take no place, my Lordes grace maie liue in quiet, and the kings Maiesties affaires maintained in such order, as by his Maiesties Counsellors shall bée thought conuenient; marie to put himselfe simplie into your handes, hauing heard as both we and he haue, without first knowledge vpon what conditions, it is not reasonable. Life is swæte my Lords, and they saie, you seeke his bloude and his death; which if ye do, and maie haue him otherwise conformable to reason, and by extremitie driue him to seeke extremitie againe; the bloude of him and others that shall die on both sides innocentlie, shall bee by God inst-lie required at your handes. And when peraduenture you would haue him againe vpon occasion of seruice, you shall fetchthink to haue lost him. Wherefore good my Lords, we beseech you againe and againe, if you haue conceiued

any such determination, to put it out of your heads, and incline your harts to kindnesse and humanitie, remembring that he hath neuer bẽn cruell to any of you, and why should you be cruell to him? as we trust you be not, what soeuer hath bẽn said, but will shew your selues as conformable for your parts, as his grace is contented, for the zeale he beareth to the king and the realme, to bee for his part, as this bearer sir Phillip Hobie will declare vnto you, to whom we praie you to giue credite, and to returne him hither againe with answere hereof. And thus beseeching the liuing God to direct your hearts to the making of a quiet end of these terrible tumults, we bid your lordships most hartilie well to fare. From the kings maiesties castle of Windsor the eight of October, 1549.

These letters notwithstanding, the same eight of October, after a common councel in the Guild hal at London, whither all the lords of the counsell came, the lord Chancelor and other declared diuers abuses of the lord protector, desiring the citizens to be ayding and assisting with them, for the preseruing of the kings maiesties person, which they greatly feared, being in his aduersaries hands. The lords dined with maister Yorke one of the shiriffs, and in the afternoone proclamation was made in diuers places of the citie with trumpets, heraults, and kings at armes, wherein was contained diuers articles touching the euill gouernment of the lord protector.

Proclamation against the lord protector.

First they charged him with making inward diuision, whereby the quiet state of the realm left by king Henry the 8. was now disturbed, and thousands of the kings naturall subiects slaine.

Item, the losse of his maiesties peces beyond the sea, which his highnes father (not long before his decease) wan to the honor of himselfe, and commoditie of the realme, not without the auenture of his owne person.

Item, that in all times of the wars in France and Scotland he hath enriched himselfe, and builded sumptuous and faire houses, leauing the kings poore souldiers vnpaid of their wages.

Item, that he hath labored to make himselfe strong in all countries.

That he hath subuerted all lawes, iustice, and good order of the Realme, whereby he hath fearfully shaken the chaire of the kings state.

That he hath little esteemed the graue aduice of the kings good and faithfull counsellors.

That he hath little regarded the order appointed by the late K. Henry the 8. for the gouernment of the king his sonne, his realmes and dominions in his tender age.

That he hath labored to sowe diuision in the realme among the nobles, gentlemen, and commons.

Finally, that it is easie for euery man to see what losse the king and realme haue of late suffered by his wilfull negligence, and lacke of prouision and furniture of the peces beyond the sea. Subscribed,

The lord Rich Chancelor.

Lord Saint-Iohn lord great master.

Lord Marques of North-hampton.

The

The earle of Warwike lord great chamberlaine.
The earle of Arundell lord chamberlaine.
The earle of Shrewsburie.
The earle of Southampton.
Sir Thomas Cheiney treasurer of houshold.
Sir Iohn Gage constable of the tower.
Sir William Peter secretarie.
Sir Edward North knight.
Sir Edward Mountague knight, chiefe Iustice of the common place.
Sir Ralph Sadler knight.
Sir Iohn Baker knight.
Sir Edward Wotton knight.
Doctor Wotton deane of Canterburie.
Sir Richard Southwell knight.

The tenth of October, by a common counsell at the Guild hall, was granted fiue hundred men of the citie, (100. to be horsemen) to bee readie on the next morrow: and this day the lords dined with maister Turke one of the shrifes of London.

The 11. of October, the lords sitting at the L. great maisters, sir Anthony Wingfield captaine of the gard was sent to the king at Windsor, and seuered the L. protector from his person, and caused the garde to watch him till the lords comming. On the morrow, the lord chancelor with the rest of the counsell, rode to Windsor to the king, and that night the lord protector was put in warde into Beauchamps tower in the castle of Windsor.

The 14. of October in the afternoone, the duke of Somerset was brought from Windsor, riding betwixt the earles of Southampton, and of Huntington, through Oldborne in at Newgate, and so to the tower of London, accompanied with diuers lords and gentlemen, with 300. horse: the lord maior, sir Ralph Warren, sir Iohn Gresham, maister Recorder, sir William Lock, and both the shrifs, and other knights sitting on their horses against Soper lane, and all the officers with halbards, and from Holborne bridge to the tower, certaine aldermen or their deputies on horse-backe in euery streete, with a number of houholders standing with bils as he passed. There was with him committed to the tower, sir Michaell Stanhope, sir Thomas Smith, sir Iohn Thin knights, Wolfe of the priuie chamber, and Grey of Reading. Lord protector brought to the tower.

The 17. of October, king Edward came from Hampton court to his place in Southwarke, then called Suffolke place, and there dined, where after dinner he made maister Iohn Yorke one of the shrifes of London knight, and then rode through the citie of London to Westminster. King Edward rode through London.

Now when the duke of Somerset was first apprehended, Steph Gardener B. of Winchester then being prisoner in the tower (as before ye haue heard) was borne in hand, he should be set at libertie, in hope whereof he prepared him new apparell for that purpose, thinking verily to haue come abroade within eight or tenne dates: but when he was forgotten, and nothing said vnto him, by the space of one moneth after, he thought it good to put the lords in remem-

brance by his letters, wherin (after commendations had vnto them) he wrote as followeth: I haue continued here in this miserable prison nowe one yeere, one quarter and one moneth, this same day that I write these my letters, with want of aire to relieue my body, want of bookes to relieue my mind, want of good companie, the onelie solace of this world, and finallie, want of a iust cause why I shoulde haue come hither at all. Woe of this Letter came not to my hands, but that the lords towe it in good part, & laughed verie merrilie thereat, saying, hee had a pleasant heade, for rewarde whereof they gaue him leaue to remaine still in prison fiue or sixe weekes after, without saying or sending any word to him, which when he considered, then hee wrote to them this letter following.

Short letters of Stephen Gardiner bishop of Winchester.

After my due commendations to your good lordships: Howsoeuer the time is stolen from you with the multitude of businesses and varietie of matters, wherewith ye bee trauelled, whereby ye rather want time (as I suppose) than bee glutted with it; yet with mee (beeing alone comfortles in this miserable prison) the time passeth more sensibly, and as the griefe groweth in length, so it bringeth more encombre and trauell with it. And being now the time of parliament, whereof I am a member in my degree, called vnto it by writ, and not cut from it by any fault, but only by power kept here: it is a double calamity to be detained in prison by so intollerable wrong, and excluded from this assemblie so much against right. I haue suffered the like in the late lord protectors time against all reason; which god hath giuen you power now to reforme. And among manie other thinges which in his time were wrythed amisse, no one thing (as I suppose) was of woorse example, ne more preiudiciall to the good order of the high court of Parliament, which is the direction of all mens liues, lands, and goods in this realme, than to allowe for a president, that anie one man being member therof, might without cause be excluded, and so letted to parle there his minde in publike matters, for the wealth of the realme, and such other priuate causes as do occur. If the strength of the parliament be not empaired by wrong in one, because right consisteth not in number, it shall bee at the pleasure of him that ruleth, to do the same in mew, whereby others may take more harme then I, as experience hath shewed in such examples. But I know it becommeth me not to reason the strength of that court, ne the order of it: the lawyers of this realm know that, and to their knowledge I submit my iudgment, and take for good that they allow. But this I dare say, when religion is entreated in a generall councel of Christendom, if the rulers of the councel let any mans repaire thither that hath right to be there, what soeuer is there concluded, is in the lawes of the world abroad taken of no force, by excluding of one member wrongfullie that should furnish the bodie, which I write vnto your lordships, for the good opinion I haue of you, trusting that ye intend not to vphold or followe the late lorde protectors doinges by wrong, but so fashion your proceedings, as they maie agree with iustice at home, and seem agreeable to reason, to others abroade: beeing so assured of mine innocencie, that when your lordships shal heare what can be said against me & mine answer thereunto, there shal appeare cause why I should haue had praise, thanks & commenda-

tions

sions of the late L. protector (if truth, honestie, and due obedience might loke therfore) and no cause of trouble or displeasure at al, so wrongfully haue I bẽ tormented in this prison, so boldly dare I speake to you of my cause, with such an opinion and estimation of your wisedoms which I know, and reuerence, as I ought not, ne would not vainly hope to abuse you with words: but vpon certain confidence of your indifferencies, verily I trust that ye will dẽme & take things in such sort, as being plainly and truly opened, shall appeare vnto you by-matter indeed. In consideration whereof, I renew my suit vnto your lordships, instantly requiring you that I may be heard according to iustice, & that with such speed, as ẏ delay of your audience giue not occasion to such as be ignorant abroad of my matter, to think that your lordships allowed and approued the detaining of me here. Which without hearing my declaration I trust ye will not, but haue such consideration of me, as mine estate in the common wealth, the passing my former life amongst you, and other respects do require, wherein you shall bind me, and do agreeably to your honors and iustice: the free course whereof, you haue honorably taken vpon you, to make open to the realm without respect, which is the onely establishment of al commonwelths, and therefore the zeale of him was allowed that said, *Fiat iustitia, & ruat mundus*: signifying, that by it the world is kept from falling indeede, although it might seeme otherwise in some respect, and some trouble to arise in doing it. And this I write, because in the late L. protectors time there was an insinuation made vnto me, as though I were kept here by policie, which with the violation of iustice toke neuer good effect, as I doubt not of your wisedoms ye can and will consider, and do therefore accordingly: for the effectuall execution whereof I shall not faile to praie almightie God with the preseruation and increase of your honors. From the tower. Thus much concerning these letters haue I thought good to set downe, for that I find not the same otherwise extant in larger discourses of the said B. writings.

Robert Ket and William Ket hanged.

The 29. of Nouember, Robert Ket and William Ket his brother were deliuered out of the tower of London, to sir Edmond Windham knight, and sheriffe of Norffolke to be conueied to Norwich, where Robert Ket was hanged in chaines on the top of Norwich castle, and William Ket likewise hanged on the top of Windham steeple.

Holds lost in Scotland.

In the moneths of Nouember and December, the Scots toke Barricrage in Scotland, and other holds then possessed by Englishmen, where the Scots slue man, woman, and childe, except sir Iohn Lutterell the captaine, whome they toke prisoner.

The lords of the counsell resorted to the tower of London, and there charged the lord protector with sundrie articles, which he confessed, and subscribed vnto them as followeth.

1 First, you did take vpon you the offices of protector and gouernor vpon condition expressedly and specially, that ye would do nothing in the kings affaires publike or priuate, but by the assent of the late kings executors, or the most part of them.

2 Item, you contrarie to the same condition and promise, of your owne

authoritie did stale and let iustice, and subuerted the lawes as well by your letters, as by your commandement.

3 Item, you caused diuers persons rested and imprisoned for treason, murther, manslaughter, and felonie, to be discharged and to go at large, against the lawes and statutes of this realme.

4 Item, you haue made and ordained lieutenants for the kings armies, and other the kings waightie affaires, vnder your owne writings and seales.

5 Item, you haue communed with the ambassadors of other realmes, discussing alone with them the waightie matters and causes of this our realme.

6 Item, you haue sometimes rebuked, checked, and taunted as well priuately as openly, diuers of the kings most honorable counsellors, for shewing and declaring their minds & aduices or opinions against your purpose in the kings waighty affaires, saying sometime to them, that they were not worthy to sit in counsell, and sometimes saying to them, that you need not to open matters to them, and ye will be otherwise aduised, and that ye would if they were not agreeable to your opinions, put them out, and take in other at your pleasure.

7 Item, ye had and held against the lawes, in your own house, a court of requests, and thereby did inforce diuers of the kings subiects to answer for their free holds & goods, and determined the same to the subuersion of the same lawes.

8 Item, you being none officer, without the aduice of the councel, or the more part of them, did dispose the officers for money of the kings gifts, and granted leases and wards of the kings, and gaue presentations of the kings benefices and bishoprickes, hauing none authoritie so to do: and further, ye did meddle with selling of the kings lands.

9 Item, you commanded multiplication and alcumistrie to be practised, thereby to abate the kings coine.

10 Item, you are charged that ye haue diuers & many times both openly and priuatly said & affirmed, that the nobles and gentlemen were the only causes of the dearth of things, wherby the people rose & did reform things themselues.

11 Item, you caused proclamations to bee made concerning inclosures, whereby the common people hath made diuers insurrections, and leuied open war, and destroied and spoyled the kings subiects, which proclamation went forth against the wils of all the counsell.

12 Item, you caused an iniunction with certaine articles thereunto annexed, to be made out concerning inclosures, commons, highwaies, decaying of cottages, and diuers other things, giuing the commissioners authoritie to heare and determine the same causes, to the subuersion of the lawes and statutes of this realme, whereby much sedition, insurrection, and rebellion haue risen and growen among the kings maiesties subiects.

13 Item, you suffered the rebels and traitors to assemble and lie in campe and armor against the kings nobles and gentlemen, without any spedie subduing or appeasing them.

14 Item, you did comfort and encourage diuers of the said rebels, by giuing to them diuers summes of your owne money, and by promising to diuers of them fees, rewards, and seruices.

15 Item,

15 Item, you in fauor of the saide rebels did against the lawes, and caused proclamation to be made, that none of the said rebels or traitors should be sued or vexed by anie maner of person, for anie of their offences in the said rebellion, to the cleere subuersion of the lawes heere.

16 Item, you haue said in the time of rebellion, that you liked well the doings and procedings of the said rebellious and traitors, and said that the couetousnesse of gentlemen gaue occasion to the common people to arise: saying that better it were for the commons to die, than for to perish vtterly for lacke of liuing.

17 Item, you said that the lords of the parliament were loth to incline themselues to reformation of inclosures and other things, therfore the people haue good cause to reforme the things themselues.

18 Item, you after the report and declaration of the defaults and lackes reported to you by them that did survey Boloigne, and the peces, you saide you would neuer amend the faults.

19 Item, you would not suffer the kings peces beyonde the sea called Newhauen and Blacknes, to be furnished with men and victuals, although that ye were aduertised of the defaults therein by the captaines of the said peces, as by others, and was also aduertised by the kings counsell, whereby the French king being the kings enemy was encouraged and comforted to inuade and win the said peces to the kings great losse and dishonor.

20 Item, also you said, ye would not suffer the noble men and gentlemen to subdue and to represse the said rebellious in time conuenient, neither would you giue any authoritie to the said nobles and gentlemen, to the subduing of the said rebels, but wrote your letters to them to speake faire to the rebels, and to handle them gently.

21 Item, you haue caused the first of October last past, at Hampton court for the defence of your owne cause, diuers seditious bils to be written in counterfeited handes, and secretly to be throwen abroad in diuers partes of this realme, thus beguiling the good people, &c. meaning thereby for to stir and raise vp the kings subiects vnto armor and open war.

22 Item, when that the kings maiesties priuie counsellors of their loue and zeale that they did beare vnto the king and the realme, did counsell at London to come to you, to the intent to commune with you charitably, to amend your doings and misgouernance: you hearing of their assembly, did cause to be declared by letters in diuers places, the said lords to be traitors to the K. to the great disturbance of the realme.

23 Item, you declared and published vntruely as well to the kings maiestie and other the yong lordes attendant vpon his maiesties person, and to the kings subiects at diuers and sundrie times and places, that the said lordes at London minded to destroie the king, and you required the king neuer to forget it, but to reuenge it, and likewise required the said yong lords to put the king in remembrance thereof, to the intent to make sedition and discord betweene the kings maiestie and his lords.

24 Item, you said in the month of October last at Hampton court, and the

eight of the same month at Windsor, or at one of the same places these words: The lords of the counsell at London doe intend to kill mee, but if I die, the k. shall die, and if they famish me, they shall famish the king.

25 Item, you caused and procured by your owne letters, the kings people in great number to rise, and assemble in armor after the maner of war, to your aid and defence.

26 Item, the 9. of October last, you did of your own head so dainly remoue the kings maiesties person late in the night from Hampton court to Windsore, without anie prouision there made for his Grace, whereby his highnesse was not onelis in great feare, but tooke also such disease as was to his great perill.

27 Item, you caused your owne seruants and friendes at Hampton court, and at Windsore to be harnessed with the kings armor, the kings graces seruants hauing none armor nor harnesse.

28 Item, you caused at Windsor your own person in the night time to bee garded in harnesse by many persons, leauing the kings maiesties person vngarded, and would not suffer his owne gard or seruants to be nere the kings person, but appointed your seruants and friends to kéepe the gates.

29 Item, you minded for to fly to Jarsey or to Wales, and laide posse horse and a bote and men for the same intent.

Edward D. of Somerset his first submission.

I Edward Duke of Somerset, haue read and considered these saide 29. articles before specified, and doe acknowledge my saide offences, faultes, and crimes, downe and conteined in the same, and most humblie prostrate on my knees, do fullie and wholie submit my selfe to the most abounDant mercy and clemencie of the kings Maiestie, for the moderation of my saide offences, hauing my full trust and confidence, that his Maiestie with the aduise of his highnesse most honourable counsaile, will consider mine offences, faultes, wordes, and procéedings, that if anie of my said offences be by his clemencie, pardoned, remitted, or otherwise discharged, that I maie enioie the benefite thereof, although the same become vnknowne. And farther I do most humblie beséech all my Lordes and other his maiesties most honorable counsayle, not onelis to be meanes to his maiestie, to take awaie and consider mine offences to haue procéeded more of ignorance, negligence, follie, wilfulnes, and for lacke of good consideration, than of anie cankered or malicious hart, euill entent or thought, tending to any treason to his maiestie or realme: but that it may please his maiestie by the charitable aduise of their good lordships to haue pity vpon me, my wife, and children, and to take some merciFull way with me, not according to the extremity of his lawes, but after his great goodnes and clemencie, whereunto whatsoeuer it shall bee, I doe most humbly with all my hart submit my selfe. Written with mine owne hande the 23. day of December, in the 3. yeere of the raigne of our soueraigne L. king Edward the 6.

1550 States created

The 19. of January, Sir Iohn Russell lord priuie seale, was created earle of Bedford: and lord Saint Iohn lord great maister, was created Earle of Wilshire: and sir William Paget comptroller of the kings house, was made Lorde Paget.

The

The same day at night, were murthered by S. Pulchers church against the kings head without Newgate of London, two captaines that had serued the king at Bologne and elsewhere, the one was sir Peter Gambo, the other Filicirga; which murther was committed by Charles Gauaro a Flemming, who came post from Berwike to do that act: on the morrow, he with three of his companie was taken in Smithfield by the lorde Paget, and sent to Newgate, and the foure and twentieth of January, they were all foure, Charles Gauaro, Balthasar Gauaro, Nicholas Disalueron, and Fraucis Deualasco, had in a Cart to Smithfield, & by the way at the place where the murther was done, Charles Gauaro had his right hand stricken off on the cart wheele, and then all hanged in Smithfield.

Peter Gambo & another captain murthered

Gauaro and other hanged.

The 22. of January, Iohn earle of Bedford, William L. Paget, sir Wil. Peter knight, one of the kings Secretaries, and sir Iohn Mason knight, chiefe clearke of the Counsell, were sent into France Ambassadours to the French king.

The 27. of January, Humfrey Arundell esquire, Thomas Holmes, Winslowe and Bery, captaines of the rebels in Deuonshire, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Ann. reg. 4. Rebels executed.

On Candlemas day, William L. Saint-Iohn earle of Wiltshire, L. great master, and president of the Counsell, was made Lord Treasurer: Iohn Dudley earle of Warwike, lord great chamberlaine, was made lorde great master, William Parre Marques of Northampton, was made Lorde great Chamberlaine: Lord Wentworth was made L. chamberlaine of houshold: Sir Anthony Wingfield captaine of the guard, was made comptroller of the kings house: and sir Thomas Darcy knight, was made vicechamberlaine, and captaine of the Guard: and the earle of Arundell late lord Chamberlaine, with the Earle of Southampton, were put off the counsell, and commanded to keepe their houses in London.

New officers.

The submission of the D. of Somerset prisoner in the tower, made the 2. of Februarie.

I am most fearefull and full of heauinesse my derie good Lordes, to vnderstande that my last letters were no better accepted at your lordships handes, to whome I am bounde during my life, for your most gentle and merciful dealing with me, that it pleased your goodnesse to bring my cause to a fine. I trust your Lordshippes neuer thinke that I euer did or would intende to stande against the kings Maiestie and your lordships goodnes, or that I would goe about to iustifie my cause, seeing his maiestie and your Lordships offereth clemencie, mercie and pardon. Although the fine be to me importable, yet I doe commit my selfe wholie to his highnesse, and your Lordships mercies, I pray onelie the moderation of it: And did couet to declare to your goodnesse mine inhabilitie to beare it: And yet referred all to his Maiestie, and your wisedome, goodnesse, and discretion. And I most humblie desire your Lordships not to thinke that I was about to contende with your Lordships, when I did speake of my conscience, I might erre, in that I thought I did for the best, as I doe acknowledge and confesse, that neither I am the wisest man in the

Edward D. of Somerset his second submission.

worlde, nor yet if I were, I shoulde not escape without a most singular grace, but manie times I shoulde offende: But I leaue all that, and most humblie, simplie, wholie, and lowlie, I submit my selfe to the Kings Maiestie, and to your good lordships: appealing from the rigour and extremitie of his Maiesties lawes, to his maiesties great mercie and clemencie, praying your goodnesse to bee meanes to his Maiestie not to bee offended with mee, nor to exclude his maiesties mercie and benignitie from me, for my rudenes and lack of discretion, but to accept my good minde as one that faine woulde doo that were well. And when I cannot, or haue not doone that thing I ought to do, I woulde gladlie amende, and am readie at all times, without condition to doo and suffer willinglie that thing that your honours will appoint mee, accepting what clemencie or mercie soeuer I obtayne to bee of his Maiesties, and your goodnesse: most humblie on my knees praying, his Maiestie and your good Lordeshippes to pardon mine offences, and to order mee for them as to his moste high mercifull clemencie shall appeere conuenient. And finallie flying from extremitie of iustice, desire mercie, as you bee and are called most mercifull counsellours, not imputing my writings, and doings hitherto as of stoutenesse or stubburnnesse, but onelie for lacke of discretion and wisedome. For the which once againe I require pardon, fauor to be shewed. And if it pleased your good lordships to heare me, I trust ye should find me lowly vnto yours honors, and so conformable vnto your lordships orders, that I trust to make amends, and obtaine pardon for my former folly. And thus I most humbly commit your good lordships to almighty God: To whome I shall alwaies pray that ye mate long continue in honor. From the Tower the 2. of Februarie.

D of Somerset deliuered.

The 6 of Februarie the D. of Somerset was deliuered out of the tower, and that night he supped at sir Io. Yorks, one of the shiriffs of London.

The 10 of Februarie one Bel a Suffolke man, was hanged and quartered at Tyborne, for mouing a new rebellion in Suffolk and Essex.

After diuers meetings of our ambassadors with the Lordes of Fraunce, at Bologne, a finall peace was concluded, vpon condition, that the French king paying a certaine summe of monete to the King of Englande, shoulde haue rendered to him the Towne of Bologne, and all the Fortes thereunto belonging, with all such artillerie and munition as was there at the taking thereof by the English: for the performance whereof, hostages were by both parties to be deliuered, so that on the last date of March a generall peace was proclaimed betweene the kings of England and France, the emperor and the Scottes.

Proclamation of peace.

The 8. of Aprill, hostages on either part were deliuered, at a certaine place appointed betweene Arde & Gwisnes, where at the deliuerance of the hostages of our party, was the L. Cobham deputy of Caleis, sir Io. Wallope knight, captaine of the territory and castle of Gwisnes, sir Mawrice Denice knight treasurer of Caleis, and Frauncis Hall comptroller of the same town, with diuers Gentlemen and other. And on the French part, were Mounsier de la Raspot, Mounsier Chastilion, Mounsier de Traye, & other. The hostages for the English

were

were the duke of Suffolke, the earle of Hertford, the L. Matreuers, the L. Talbot, the L. Strange, and the L. Fitzwater. On the French part, duke de Angyne, Marques de Mayne, Mounsier Memorancie constables son of France, Mounsier Viesdame de Charters, la Tremoile, Mounsier Haueden, the admirals sonne of France.

The citizens of London, of diuers misteries, and corporations, hauing certain chantery lands, for priests wages, obits and lights, suppressed into the K. hands by act of parliament, valued by the commissioners to 1000. l. the yeere, purchased the said yerely quitrents of the K. for 20000. l. to be paid within 8. daies after, by the counsailes commandement: which caused the saide corporations to sel much of their best lands, far better cheap than they had bought their quitrents, as after 16. or 14. yeres purchase, &c. The King solde chantry lands.

Also the Lorde Maior of London, and the aldermen purchased all the liberties of Southwarke which was in the kings handes, and cost the Citie about 1000. markes. Liberties of Southwarke purchaled.

The eight of Aprill, the Duke of Somerset came to the court to the kings Maiestie at Greenewich, where hee was honourablie receiued of the King and his Counsayle, and dined with the king, and was sworne of the Priuie Counsaile. D. of Somerset sworne of the counsell.

The 12. of Aprill, doctor Nich. Ridley B. of Rochester, was installed bishop of London in S. Pauls church. Doctor Ridley bishop of London.

The 25. of Aprill, the towne of Bolloigne was yelded to the French king, and all the marches of the same, and all Englishmen clerelie auoided, which was done by composition, for a sum of money to be paid to the K. of England, and pledges for the same deliuered, as is afore touched. Those pledges, to wit, the D. of Suffolk, and other were redeliuered by the parties aforesaide, at the deliuery of the towne. Bolloigne yelded to the French.

The 2. of May, Ioan Knel, *alias* Butcher, or Ioan of Kent, was brent in Smithfield for heresie, that Christ toke no flesh of the virgin Mary. There preached before hir at the stake, to haue conuerted hir from her heresie, D. Story, but shee not regarding his doctrine, said to him he lied like, &c. Ioan Butcher brent.

Ric. Lion, Goddard Gorran, and Ric. Ireland, were executed the 14. of Maie, for attempting a new rebellion in Kent. Rebels of Kent executed.

Trinity terme was adiorned til Michaelmas, for that the gentlemen should kepe the commons from commotion. Term adiorned.

The 3. of June, the L. Lisle son and heire to the earle of Warwike, was maried to the D. of Somersets daughter at Shene, the K. Maiestie being there present. A marriage.

This yeere Saint Barnabies daie was kept Holydaie, and the same daie at night the high Altar in Paules Church was pulled downe, and a Table set where the Altar stoode, with a Mayle drawne beneath the Steppes, and on the Sundaie next a Communion was sung at the same Table, and shortlie after all the Altars in London were taken downe, and Tables placed in their romes. S. Barnaby kept holie. High altar in Pauls pulled downe.

The 30. of Julie, Thomas Lorde Wriothesley Earle of South-hampton, knight

Earle of Southampton deceased.

knight of the garter, and one of the executors to king Henry the 8. deceased at Lincolne place in Oldborne, and was buried in S. Andrewes church there.

In the month of August, a miller, seruant to the miller at Battaile bridge in Southwarke, was set on the pillorie in west Cheape of London, and had both his eares cut off, for seditious wordes by him spoken against the duke of Somerset, as that he had proclaimed himselfe king in the countrey, which was false.

Grig a counterfeit physition, worthily punished.

Also in the month of September, Grig a poulter of Surrey, taken among the people for a prophet, in curing of diuers diseases by words and praiers, and saying he would take no money, &c. was by commandement of the Earle of Warwike, and other of the counsaile, set on a scaffold in the Towne of Croidon in Surrey, with a paper on his breast, wherein was written, his deceitfull and hipocriticall dealings. And after that on the eight of September set on the pillorie in Southwarke, being then our ladie faire there kept, and the Maior of London with his brethren the aldermen riding through the faire, the saide Grig asked them and all the citizens forgiuenesse. Thus much for Grig.

Not so easie to turne a crooked body straight, as to turne a mustard querne nor one leape out of a docket maketh a doctor.

Of the like counterfeite physition haue I noted (in the summarie of my Chronicles Anno 1382.) to be set on horse-backe, his face to the horse-taile, the same taile in his hande as a bridle, a collar of Iordans about his necke, a whetstone on his breast, and so led through the citie of London, with ringing of basons, and banished. Whereunto I had added as followeth. Such deceiuers no doubt are many, who being neuer trained vp in reading, or practise of physicke and Chirurgerie, boast to do great cures, especially vpon women, as to make them straight that before were crooked, corbed, or crumped in any part of their bodies, &c. But the contrary is true, for some haue receiued gold, when they haue better deserued the whetstone. These wordes tending generallie against all such counterfeit phisitions, hath bin so hardly taken to hart, by one priuate person, not of the best, or second sort, (but my common aduersary) that he hath largely libelled against me, to my great slander, but to the ful bewraying of himselfe, as one touched more then other, that being wiser, holde their peace. I forbeare to answere his libelling, as I haue before borne his false accusing, and other greater matters, still referring my cause to the Almightie: who abhorreth lying lips, and maketh the proud to stumble.

Prou. 21. Ierem. 50.

1551 Arden murthered.

On Saint Valentines daie, at Feuersham in Kent, one Arden a gentleman was murthered by procurement of his owne wife, for the which fact, shee was the fourteenth of March burnt at Canterburie: Michaell maister Ardens man was hanged in chaines at Feuersham, and a maiden burnt: Mosbie and his sister were hanged in Smithfield at London: Greene which had fled, came againe certaine yeares after, and was hanged in chaines in the high way against Feuersham, and Blacke Will the ruffian that was hired to doe that act, after his first escape, was apprehended, and burnt on a scaffolde at Flushing in Zeland.

Bishop of Winchester deprined

Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester, hauing ben diuers times conueied from the Tower of London to Lambeth, (to wit, on the 15. and the 18. of December,

December, the 8. the 12. and the 16. of January, the 13. and 14. of Februarie) and at euery the said times, examined by the archbishop of Canterburie, and other the kings high commissioners, he was now on the said 14. of Februarie depriued of his bishoprieke, and committed againe to the towre: Into his place was translated doctor Poynet, late bishop of Rochester: and maister Iohn Scorie was made bishop of Rochester.

The 5. of Aprill, sir Thomas Darcey Vicechamberlaine, and captaine of the garde, was created lord Darcey at Grénewich.

The 24. of Aprill, George of Paris a dutchman was brent in Smithfielde for an Arian. An Arian brent

The 25. of May about none, was an earthquake at Blechingly, Godstone, Titsey, Rigate, Croydon, Benington, Alberie, and diuers other places in Southerey. Earthquake.

In the month of June, the earle of North-hampton, the bishop of Ely and Cher, were sent ambassadors into France, who were there honorably receiued and entertained. And after that came diuers lords of France into England, who were lodged at Suffolke place in Southwarke.

The 9. of July, the base monetes (coyned in the time of King Henry the eight, and king Edward the first) was proclaimed the shilling to go for 9. pence the groate for 3. pence, which toke effect immediatly after the proclamation was made. First fall of the base monetes.

The 15. of Aprill, the infectious sweating sickenesse began at Shrewsbury, which ended not in the North part of England vntill the ende of September. In this space what number died, it cannot be well accompted, but certaine it is that in London in fewe daies 960. gaue vp the ghost: it began in London the 9. of July, and the 12. of July it was most vehement, which was so terrible, that people being in best health, were sodainly taken, and dead in foure and twenty houres, and twelue, or lesse, for lacke of skill in guiding them in their sweat. And it is to be noted, that this mortalitie fell chiefely or rather on men, and those also of the best age, as betweene thirty and fortie yéeres, fewe women, nor children, nor olde men died thereof. Sléeping in the beginning was present death, for if they were suffered to sleepe but halfe a quarter of an houre, they neuer spake after, nor had any knowledge, but when they wakened fell into panges of death. This was a terrible time in London, for many one lost sodainly his friends, by the sweat, and their money by the proclamation. Seauen honest houlholders did sup together, and before eight of the clocke in the next morning, six of them were dead: they that were taken with full stomachs scaped hardly. This sickenesse followed English men as well within the realme, as in strange countries: wherefore this nation was much afeard of it, and for the time began to repent and remember God, but as the disease relented, the deuotion decayed. The first warke died in London 800. persons. Sweating sickenesse. Iohn Caius.

The 17. of August, the shilling which of late was called downe to nine-pence, was called downe to 6. d. the groate to 2. d. the halfe groate to one penny, the penny to an halfe penny. Second fall of base monetes.

The

The last of August, Sir Fraunces Ingelfield, maister Walgraue, and maister Rochester, being the chiefe of the lady Mary the kings sisters house, were committed to the tower of London.

The 10. of October D. Daie bishop of Chichester, and doctor Heathe bishop of Worcester, which had lien long prisoners in the Fleete, were deposed of their Bysshoprickes, by the bishop of London in Paules church, and sent againe to the Fleete.

Dukes & earles created.

The 11. of October, at Hampton court, lord Marquesse Dorset, was created duke of Suffolke: the earle of Warwike was created duke of Northumberland: the earle of Wilshire was created Marques of Winchester: sir Wil. Harbert lord of Cardife, maister of the horse, was made L. of Carmarden, and created erle of Pembroke. The king also made William Cecill his secretary, M. Iohn Cheeke one of his schoolemaisters, M. Henrie Dudley, M. Henry Neuill knights.

D. of Somerset brought to the Tower.

The 16. of October, Edward Seimer Duke of Somerset, the Lorde Gray of Wilton, sir Ralph Vane, sir Thomas Palmer, sir Myles Partridge, sir Michaell Stanhope, sir Thomas Arundell knightes, and diuers other Gentlemen, were brought to the Tower of London. The next morrowe, the Dutchesse of Somerset was also brought to the Tower. The liberties of the Stilyard were seased into the kings hands for diuers causes forfeited, contrarie to the entercourse.

Liberties of the Stilyard seased

New coines of gold and siluer.

The 30. of October, was proclaimed a new coine both of golde and siluer, to wit, a whole soueraign of fine gold of 30. s. Another peece of fine gold called an angell of 10. s. The third peece called an angelet of fine gold of 5. s. Another peece of crowne gold called a soueraign of 20. s. the halfe soueraign of crowne gold of 10. s. the third peece of crowne golde of 5. s. the fourth peece of crowne gold of 2. s. 6. pence.

A peece of siluer of 5. s. sterling, the second peece of 2. s. 6 d. sterling, the third peece a shilling of 12. d. sterling, the 4. peece of 6. d. sterling, of smaller monete a peny of the dubble rose, not sterling but base, an halfepeny of the single rose, the 3. peece a farthing with a port close.

The Queene of Scottes comming to London.

The Quæne of Scots being lately arriued at Portsmouth, comming out of Fraunce, and desiring licence of the king to passe through Englande into Scotland, was honorably receiued, and conueied towards London: on the second day of Nouember, the said Q. came by water from Hampton court, and landed at Pauls wharfe, from whence she rode accompanied with diuers noblemen and ladies of England, beside hir own traine of Scotland, to the bishop of Londons palace, where she receiued (presented by the chamberlain of London, as a gift of the citie) certaine kinds of victuals for hir prouision, as beefes, muttons, veales, swans, and other kind of poultry meates, with breade, fuell, wine, beere, wax, &c. On the 4. of Nouember the said Q. rode to the White hall at Westminster, in hir chariot, accompanied with the lady Margaret Dowglas, the dutches of Richmond, the dutches of Suffolk, the Dutches of Northumberlande, with diuers noble women of Englande, and Ladies of Scotlande, following after her: the Dukes of Suffolke and Northumberland, and the lord

Treasurer

Treasurer receiuing her within the court gate, all the guard standong in eache side: and at her entring into the hall, the king stode in the vpper ende of the hall, the Earle of Warwike holding the swoorde afore the king, shee kneeling downe, the king toke her vp, and kissed her, and by the hande led her vp into her chamber of presence, and so from thence to the quéens chamber of presence, where he kissed all the ladies of Scotland, and so departed for a while. And that date shee dined on the Quénes side with the king, the kings seruice and hers comming both together, the kings on the right hande, the quénes on the left hande, she sitting by the king apart by his cloth of estate: All the great ladies of England, and the ladies of Scotland, dined in the quénes great chamber, all most sumptuously serued. After dinner, the king shewed vnto the Q. his galleries, gardens, &c. and about foure of the clock he brought hir down by the hand into the hall, where he kissed hir, and so she departed to the bishops palace as afore.

The 6. of November the saide Scottish Quéene departed towarde Scotlande, shee rode from Paules through all the high streetes of the Citie, out at Bishops gate, accompanied with diuers Noble men and women, to conueie her through the Citie to Shoreditch Church, the Duke of Northumberlande hauing of Horsemen standing in Cheape-side with Iauelins 100. persons, whereof 40. Gentlemen apparrelled in blacke Ueluet, garded with white, with veluet hats, and white feathers, and chaines of gold about their neckes, next them stode 120. horsemen of the earle of Pembrokes, with blacke Iauelines, hats and feathers, next them stode 100. of the lord treasurers gentlemen and yeomen, with Iauelins, which three rancks of horsemen, compassed from the crosse in Cheap, to Birchen lane ende: and when the said nobles had brought her to Shoreditch church, they toke their leaue and departed; the Sheriffes of London had the conduction of her to Waltham townes ende, where they left her, and harbengers were sent afore into euery shire to the Borders of Scotland, that euery sherif in euerie shire, accompanied with the gentlemen of the country, should receiue hir, & make prouision for lodging and victualing both for hir selfe, family, and horses, till she came to the borders of Scotlande at the charges of the shires.

Q. of Scots returned towarde Scotland.

The earle of Arundell and the L. Paget sent to the tower.

The 30. and last of November, by commandement from the K. counsell, order was taken in London, that euery householder should sée to his familie, and kéepe his house, hauing in a readinesse that date a man in harnesse in euerie house, but not to go abroad till they should be called, if nede were: and further, that on the night following there should bee kept a good and substantiall watch of householders in euery ward, which was so done.

And on the next morrowe being the first of December, the Duke of Somerset was had from the tower of London by water, and shot London bridge at fiue of the clocke in the morning, and so went to Westminster, where was made readie a great Scaffolde in Westminster hall, and there the said Duke appeared before the Lords and péeres of the realme, the Lord William Poulet marques of Winchester and lord high treasurer of England, that day sitting

D. of Somerset arraigned and condemned.

vnder

vnder the cloth of estate as high steward of England, the inditement of the said duke being read, he was immediatly arraigned on the same of felony & treason, and after tried by his péeres the nobles there present, which did acquit him of the treason, but found him guiltie of the felonie: whereupon after their verdit giuen, he had iudgement to be had from thence to the place he came from, and from thence to the place of execution, there to bee hanged till hee were dead: but the people in the hall supposed he had béene clérely quit, when they saw the are of the tower put downe, made such a shrike casting vppe of caps, &c. that their crie was heard to the long Acre beyonde Charing crosse, which made the lords astonied. About fiue of the clocke at night the said duke landed at the Crane in the Vintrie, and so was had through Candlewicke stréete to the tower.

Muster of horsemen before king Edward.

The 7. of December, there was a muster before the king in S. Iames field beyond Charing crosse, the king sitting on horse-backe with his priuie counsell about him. First came the kings pensioners riding all in complete harnesse, foure trumpeters riding before them: then the kings standard, and euery pensioner had two men following after them with their speares: then followed a hundred of the lord treasurers men with a trumpet and a standarde afore them: next a hundred of the Duke of Northumberlands men, with a trumpet and a standard, fortie of them in veluet coats on their harnesse: next the lord priuie seales men, a hundred, with a trumpet and a standard: next the marques of North-hamptons men a hundred with a trumpet and a standard: next the earle of Rutlands men fiftie, with a trumpet and a standard, twenty of them in veluet cassocks on their harnesse: next the earle of Huntington, fiftie with a trumpet, and a standard: next the earle of Pembrokes men, 100. with a trumpet and a standard: next the lord Darcie 50. with a trumpet and a standard: last of all the L. wardens of the Cinque ports 100. with a trumpet and a standard. All these rode twise afore the king fiue in a ranke all in complete harnesse, and well horsed.

The 20. of December, doctor Tunstall bishop of Durham, which had long laine at his house by Colharbard in Thamis stréete, was had from thence to the tower of London.

The 21. of December, the great seale was taken from the lord Rich being then lorde Chancelor of England, by the Duke of Northumberland, and the
1552 earle of Pembroke in the afternoone: and on the next morrowe the keeping thereof was committed to doctor Godrike bishoppe of Ely, one of the kings counsell, he was sworne lord chancelor on the 22. of January in the Chancery, the lord treasurer gaue him his oth.

Duke of Somerset beheaded.

The 22. of January, Edward duke of Somerset was beheaded on the tower hill. The same morning early the constables of euery warde in London (according to a precept directed from the counsell to the Maior) streightly charged euerie housholde of the same citie not to depart any of them out of their houses before ten of the clocke of that day, meaning thereby to restraine the great number of people, that otherwise were like to haue bene at the said execution: notwithstanding by seuen a clock the tower hill was couered with

a great

a great multitude, repairing from all parts of the citie, as well as out of the suburbs, and before 8. of the clocke the duke was brought to the scaffold inclosed with the kings gard, the sherifs officers, the warders of the tower, & other with halbards: the duke being ready to haue bæn executed, suddenly the people were driuen into a great feare, few or none knowing the cause: wherfore I thinke it good to write what I saw concerning that matter. Great feare with final cause

The people of a certaine hamlet, which were warned to be there by 7. of the clocke to giue their attendance on the lieutenant, now came through the posterne, & perceiuing the D. to be alreadie on the scaffold, the foremost began to run, crying to their followes to follow fast after, which suddennes of these men being weaponed with bils and halbards thus running, caused the people which first saw them, to thinke some power had come to haue rescued the duke from execution, and therefore to crie away, away, whereupon the people ran some one way some another, many fell into the tower ditch, and they which tarried thought some pardon had bæn brought, some saide it thundered, some that a great rumbling was in the earth vnder them, some that the ground mooued, but there was no such matter, more than the trampling of their fæte, which made some noise.

The 17. of February, on which day was receiued the bookes of the reliefe of all the wardes of London towards the new hospitals by the kings commissioners. The counsell dined at M. Cowpers the sherife, and after dinner maister Thomas Courteys alderman came thither to speake with the lord chancelor for a matter he had depending afore him in the chancerie, but for his misdemeanor in words and signes to the lord chancelor at that time, the said M. Courteys was committed to ward in the Flæte.

The 26. of February, sir Ralph a Vane and sir Miles Partridge were hanged on the tower hill, sir Michael Stanhope with sir Thomas Arundel were beheaded there: all which foure persons toke on their death that they neuer offended against the kings maiestie, nor against any of his counsell. *Ann. reg. 6.* Sir Ralph a Vane and other executed.

The last of Aprill, through negligence of the gun-powder makers, a certaine house nære to the Tower of London, with three last of powder, was blowen vp and brent, the gun-powder makers being fifteene in number, were all slaine. House blowen vp with gun-powder.

The 16. of May, was a goodly muster of horsemen made before the king in the parke at Grænwich. Muster of horsemen.

Vnder the kings banner, his band of pensioners, in number 150. euerie pensioner two great horses and a geloing, the lord Bray their lieutenant.

The lorde Marques of Winchester high treasurer, vnder his banner the faulcon, one hundred men.

The duke of Northumberland great maister of the kings houshold, vnder the white lyon and the ragged staffe, fiftie.

The duke of Suffolke, vnder the vnicorne in the star, an hundred and ten.

The earle of Bedford lord priuie seale, vnder the goate, an hundred.

The marques of North-hampton high chamberlaine, vnder the maiden head, an hundred.

The earle of Warwike maister of the kings horses, vnder the white lyon, fiftie.

The earle of Huntington vnder his banner, fiftie.

The earle of Rutland vnder the peacocke, fiftie.

The earle of Pembroke vnder the grene dragon, fiftie.

The lord Darcie vnder the maidens bodie, fiftie.

The lord Cobham vnder the Sarizens head, fiftie.

The lord Clinton lord admirall vnder the anchor, fiftie.

The lord Warden of the fiue ports, vnder the rose in the sunne beames, an hundred.

Ro. Greene. Garter and George taken from the lord Paget by the kings appointment.

In the moneth of Aprill before Saint Georges daie, Garter the king of armes was sent by the kings maiestie, to the lorde Paget prisoner in the tower of London, to fet and take from him the saide lord Paget the Garter and George, pertaining to the order of the garter, which garter and George, the said king at armes called Garter toke from the said lord Paget in such order as the same was deliuered to him when he was made knight of the same order. And the said lord Paget was well content (as it seemed) to part therwith, seeing it was the kings pleasure it should be so. The king sent the same garter and George to the Earle of Warwike sonne and heire to the Duke of Northumberland, who was made knight of the said order, in rome and place of the other.

Grey friers in London an hospitall.

The 26. of July, began the preparing of the Grey friers house in London for the poore fatherlesse children: and also in the latter end of the same month, began the repairing of Saint Thomas hospitall in Southwarke, for poore impotent and lame persons.

A monster.

The third of August, at Middleton eleuen miles from Oxford, a woman brought forth a childe, which had two perfect bodies from the nauell vpward, and were so ioined together at the nauell, that when they were laid in length, the one head and body was eastward, and the other west: the legs for both the bodies grew out at the midst where the bodies ioyned, and had but one issue for the excrements of both bodies: they liued eightene daies, and were women children.

Great fishes.

The 8. of August, were taken at Quinborough three great fishes called dolphins: and the weeke following at Blackwall, were fiue more taken, and brought to London, the least of them was more than any horse.

This moneth of August, began the great prouision for the poore in London, towards the which euery man was contributorie, and gaue certaine money in hand, and couenanted to giue a certaine weekely.

Great fishes taken.

The 7. of October, were three great fishes called Whirlepooles taken at Grauesend, which were drawen vp to the kings bridge at Westminster.

A prest by the merchant aduenturers.

In this moneth of October, the king demanded of the merchant aduenturers by way of prest of euery broad cloth then shipped to Bawmes mart, twentie shillings sterling to be paid at Antwerp for certaine debt there, and they to haue the kings band for the repaiment thereof, which did at that time amount to more than 48000. pound.

The

The 17. of October, the Sergeants feast was kept at Graies Inne by Oldborne, master Robert Brooke recorder of London being the principall of the new Sergeants, and fiue more besides him: the lord maior and aldermen being bidden to the saide feast, rode from the lorde maiors house by Fridaie streete through cheape, and out at Newgate all in their scarlet gownes to the said Graies Inne. Sergeants feast.

The first of November, being the feast of all Saintes, the new Seruice booke called Of common praier began in Paules church, and the like through the whole citie, the bishop of London Doctor Ridley executing the seruice in Paules church in the forenoone in his rochet onely, without coape or vestiment preached in the quire: and at afternoone he preached at Paules crosse, the lord maior, aldermen, and crafts in their best liueries being present: which Sermon tending to the setting forth the said late made Booke of Common prayer, continued till almost fiue of the clocke at night, so that the maior, aldermen, and companies entered not into Paules church as had been accustomed, but departed home by torchlight. By this Booke of Common praier all coapes and vestments were forbidden through England, and prebends of Pauls left off their hoods, the bishoppes left their crosses, &c. as by an act of parliament more at large is set out. Booke of common praier.

After the feast of all Saintes, the vpper quire in Saint Paules church in London where the high altar stood, was broken downe, and all the quire thereabout: and the table of the Communion was set in the lower quire where the priests sing.

The 23. of November, the children were taken into the hospitall at the Gray friers called Christs hospitall, to the number of almost foure hundred. And also sicke and poore people into the hospitall of Saint Thomas in Southwarke, in which two places, the children and poore people should haue meate, drinke, lodging, and cloth, of the almes of the citie. First children in Christs hospitall.

The 3. of December, the earle of Arundell was discharged of imprisonment out of the tower of London, and went from thence to his place by ỹ Strand.

On Christmas day in the afternoone, when the lorde maior and aldermen rode to Paules, all the children of Christs hospitall, stood in aray from Saint Laurence lane in Cheape toward Paules, all in one liuery of russet cotton, the men children with red caps, the women children kerchiefs on their heads, all the maisters of the hospitall foremost: next them the Physitions and foure Surgeons, and betweene euery twenty children one woman keeper, which children were in number 340. First shew of the children in Christs hospitall.

The king kept his Christmas with open household at Greenewich, George Ferrers gentleman of Lincolns Inne, being lord of the merrie disportes all the twelue daies, who so pleasantly and wisely behaued himselfe, that the king had great delight in his pastimes. 1553 Lord of merie disports.

On munday the fourth of January, the said lord of merry disportes came by water to London, and landed at the tower wharfe, entered the tower, and then rode through tower streete, where he was receiued by Sergeant Vawce lord of misrule to Iohn Maynard one of the shiefs of London, and so conducted The shiefes lord of misrule.

through the citie with a great company of yong lords and gentlemen to the house of sir George Barne lord maior, where he with the chiefe of his company dined, and after had a great banket, and at his departure, the lord maior gaue him a standing cup with a couer of siluer and gilt, of the value of ten pound for a reward, and also set a hogshead of wine and a barrell of beere at his gate for his traine that followed him, the residue of his gentlemen and seruants dined at other aldermens houses, and with the shrifs, and so departed to the tower wharfe againe, and to the court by water, to the great commendation of the maior and aldermen, and highly accepted of the king and councell.

An. reg. 7. In the month of January, the king fell sicke of a cough at White hall, which grieuously encreased, and at the last, ended in a consumption of the lights.

A parliament. The first of March began a parliament at Westminster, and all the lords spirituall and temporall assembled that daie in the White hall in their robes, where a sermon was preached in the kings chappell by doctor Ridley bishop of London, and his maiestie with diuers lords receiued the communion. Which being done, the king with the lords in order, went into the kings great chamber on the kings side, which that day was prepared for the lordes house: the king sitting vnder his cloth of estate, and all the lords in their degrees, the bishop of Ely doctor Godrike lord Chancelor, made a proposition for the king: which being ended, the lords departed. This was done, because the king was sickely.

The morrow after, the burgesses sate in the common house at Westminster, and chose for their speaker maister Diar, one of the late made sergeants at the law.

The 31. of March being good friday, the parliament brake vp, and was cleerly dissolued at the kings palace of White hall at 7. of the clocke at night.

The 3. of Aprill, being munday after Easter day, the children of Christs hospitall in London came from thence through the citie to the sermon kept at S. Marie spittle, all clothed in plonket coates and red caps, and the maiden children in the same liuery, with kerchiefs on their heads, all which with their matrones and other gouernors were there placed on a scaffold of eight stages, and there sate the same time, which was a goodly shew.

Bridewell giuen to the citie of London. The tenth of Aprill, the lord maior of London was sent for to the court at White hall, and there at that time the kings maiestie gaue to him, to the communaltie and citizens, for to be a worke-house for the poore and idle persons of the Citie of London, his place of Bridewell, and seuen hundred marke land of the Sauoy rents, with all the beds, bedding, and other furniture of the hospitall of the Sauoy, towards the maintenance of the said worke-house of Bridewell. And the hospitall of Saint Thomas in Southworke, king Edward confirmed the said gift, by his charter dated the six and twentith of June next following.

The 11. of Aprill, the lord maior was presented to the king in his palace of White hall at Westminster, and was made knight by his maiestie, and the same day the king remoued in the afternoone to Grenwich.

In this month of Aprill and in May, commissioners were directed through England,

England, for all the church goods remaining in cathedrall and parish churches, that is to say, iewels of golde and siluer, crosses, candlesticks, censers, chalices, and all other such like, with their ready money, to be deliuered to the master of the kings iewels in the tower of London, all coapes and vestments of cloth of gold, cloth of tissue, and siluer, to the master of the kings wardrobe in London, the other coapes, vestments, and ornaments to be sold, and the money to be deliuered to the kings treasurer sir Edmond Peckham knight, reseruing to euery church one chalice or cup, with table clothes for the communion bord at the discretion of the commissioners, which were for London the lorde Maior, the bishop, the lord chiefe Iustice, with other. Iewels and church plate called into the kings hands.

The 20. of May, by the encouragement of one Sebastian Cabot, three great ships wel furnished were set forth for the aduenture of the vnknowen voiage to Moscouia, and other east partes by the north seas, diuers merchants and other being free of that voiage, yelded towards the charges of the same fiue and twenty pounds apéece. Sir George Barnes and sir William Garrard being the principall dwers therein. Voiage to Moscouy.

About the same time two other ships were sent to séeke aduentures southwards.

Whiles king Edward lay dangerously sicke, lord Gilford the duke of Northumberlands fourth son, married lady Iane the duke of Suffolks daughter, whose mother being then aliue, was daughter to Mary king Henries sister, which was first married to the French king, and after to Charles duke of Suffolke. Also the earle of Pembrokes eldest son married lady Katherine, the said dukes second daughter. And Martin Keies gentleman porter, married Mary the third daughter of the duke of Suffolke. And the Earle of Huntingtons son called lord Hastings, married Katherine yongest daughter to the duke of Northumberland. Three notable marriages at Durham place.

King Edward being about the age of 16. yéres ended his life at Grénewich, on the first of July, when he had raigned fiue yéres, fiue moneths, and odde dates, and was buried at Westminster. He was in this his youth a prince of such towardnes in vertue, learning, and all godly gifts, as seldome hath bén séene the like. King Edward deceased.

The 8. of July, the lord maior of London was sent for to the court then at Grénewich, to bring with him fiue aldermen, as many merchants of the staple, and as many merchant aduenturers, vnto whom by the councell was secretly declared the death of king Edward, and also how he had ordained for the succession of the crowne by his letters pattents, to the which they were sworn, and charged to kéepe it secret. King Edwards death opened.

The 10. of July in the afternoone about 3. of the clocke, lady Iane daughter to Francis Dutchesse of Suffolke, (which Lady Iane was married to the lord Gilford Dudley, fourth sonne to the duke of Northumberland) was conueied by water to the tower of London, and there receiued as Quéene. After fiue of the clocke the same afternoone, was proclamation made of the death of king Edward the first, and how he had ordained by his letters pattents, bearing date the 21. of June last past, that the ladie Iane (as is aforesaid) should Lady Iane proclaimed queene.

be heire to the crowne of England, and the heire males of hir body, &c.

Gilbert Pot punished in Cheape.

The 11. of July, Gilbert Pot drawer to Ninion Saunders vintner, dwelling at S. Iohns head within Ludgate, who was accused by the saide Saunders his maister, was set on the Pillory in Cheap with both his eares nailed, and clean cut off for words speaking at the time of the proclaimation of Ladie Iane, at which execution was a Trumpet blowne, and a Herault in his coat of armes read his offence, in presence of William Garrard one of the Sheriffes of London.

Men drowned at London bridge.

About 5. of the clocke the same day in the afternoone, Ninion Saunders maister to the said Gilbert Pot and Iohn Owen a gunmaker, and both gunners of the tower, comming from the tower of London by water in a Whirrie, and shooting London bridge towards the Black friers, were drowned at S. Mary Lock, and the whirry men saued by their Oares.

Lady Mary proclaimed Queene at Norwich.

The 12. of July, the lady Mary sent to Norwich to be proclaimed there, which they refused to do, for that they were not certain of the kings death: but on the nert day after, they did not only proclaime hir, but also sent hir men and munition to aid her.

The same twelfth of July, word was brought to the Councell, being then in the tower with the ladie Iane, that the ladie Mary, eldest daughter to king Henry the eight, was at Keninghall castle in Norffolke, and with her the earle of Bath, Sir Thomas Wharton sonne to the Lorde Wharton, Sir Iohn Mordant sonne to the Lorde Mordant, Sir William Drurie, Sir Iohn Shelton, Sir Henry Bedingfield, Maister Henry Iernigham, Maister Iohn Sulierde, Maister Richard Freston, Maister Sargeant Morgan, S. Clement Higham of Lincolnes Inne, and diuers others, and also that the Earle of Suffer, and Maister Henry Ratcliffe his sonne were comming towardes her: whereupon by speedie counsell it was there concluded, that the Duke of Suffolke with certaine other noblemen, should go towards the ladie Mary, to fetch hir vp to the tower: this was first determined: but by night of the same daie, the said voiage of the Duke of Suffolke was cleane dissolued by the spectall meanes of the lady Iane his daughter, who taking the matter heauilie, with weeping teares made request to the whole councell, that hir father might tarry at home in her company: whereupon the counsell perswaded with the duke of Northumberland, to take that voiage vpon him, saying, that no man was so fit therfore, because that he had atchieued the victory in Norffolk once alreadie, and was therfore so feared, that none durst once lift vp their weapon against him: besides that, he was the best man of war in the realme, as wel for the ordering of his campes and souldiers both in battell and in their tentes, as also by experience, knowledge & wisedome, he could both animate his army with witty perswasions, & also pacify and stay his enimies pride with his stout courage, or else to dissuade them if need were, from their enterprise. Finally said they, this is the short and long, the Queene will in no wise grant, that her father shall take it vpon him: wherefore (quoth they) we think it good, if it may please your grace, it lieth in you to remedy the matter. Well (quoth the duke then) since ye think it good, I and mine will go, not doubting of your fidelity to the queens maiestie

Preparation to go against Lady Mary.

which

which I leaue in your custody: So that night he sent for both lordes, knightes and other that should go with him, and caused all things to bee prepared accordinglie: then went the counsell in to the ladie Iane, and tolde her of their conclusion, who humbly thanked the Duke for reseruing her father at home, and besæched him to vse his diligence, whereto he answered, that he would do what in him laie.

The morrow following, great preparation was made, the D. earely in the morning called for his owne harnesse, and sawe it made readie at Durham place, where he appointed all his retinue to mæte.

The same day carts were laden with munition and artillery, and fielde pæces were set forward.

The same forenoon the duke moued eftsoones the counsell to send their powers after him, as it was before determined, ỹ same to mæt with him at New Market, and they promised they would. He said further to some of them: My lordes, I and these other noble personages, with the whole army that nowe go forth, as well for the behalfe of you and yours, as for the establishing of the D. highnes, shall not onelie aduenture our bodies and liues amongst the bloudie strokes and cruell assaults of our aduersaries in the open fields, but also we do leaue the conseruation of our selues, children, and families at home here with you, as altogither committed to your truth and fidelities, whom, if we thought ye woulde through malice, conspiracy, or dissention leaue vs your friendes in the briers and betraie vs, wee coulde as well sundrie waies forsee and prouide for our owne safegardes, as anie of you, by betraying vs, can doe for yours. But nowe vpon the onelie trust and faithfulnes of your honors, whereof wee thinke our selues most assured, wee do hazarde our liues, which trust and promise if yee shall violate, hoping thereby of life and promotion, yet shall not God coumpt you innocent of our bloods, neither acquite you of the sacred and holie oth of alleageance made frælie by you to this vertuous lady the quænes highnesse, who by your and our enticement, is rather of force placed therein, than by her owne sæking and request. Consider also, that Gods cause, which is the preferment of his worde, and feare of papistes entraunce, hath beene (as yee haue heere before alwaies saide) the originall ground whereupon ye euen at the first motion graunted your good willes and consentes thereunto, as by your handes writting appeareth: and thinke not the contrarie, but if ye meane deceyte, though not foorthwith, yet hereafter God will reuenge the same.

Duke of Northumberland sent against the lady Mary, his words to the Lordes.

I can saie no more, but in this troublesome time wish you to vse constant hearts, abandoning all malice, enuie, and priuate affections: and therewithall the first course for the lords came vp, wherefore the duke shut vp his talke with these wordes; I haue not spoken to you in this sort vpon anie mistrust I haue of your truthes, of which alwaies I haue euer hitherto conceiued a trustie confidence, but I haue put you in remembrance thereof, what chance of variance soeuer might grow amongst you in mine absence, and this I praie you, wish mee not woorse good spæde in this iourney, than yee woulde haue to your selues. My lord, saith one of them, if ye mistrust any of vs in this matter, your

grace is far deceiued, for which of vs can wash his hands cleane thereof? and if we should shrinke from you as from one that were culpable, which of vs can excuse himselfe to be guiltles? therefore herein your doubt is too far cast, I pray god it be (quoth the duke) let vs go to dinner: and so they sate down. After dinner the duke went in to the Q. where his commission was by that time sealed, for his lieutenant shippe of the army, and then toke his leaue of hir, and so did certaine other lords also.

When as the Duke came through the counsell chamber, hee tooke his leaue of the Earle of Arundell, who praied God bee with his grace, saying, he was sorie it was not his chance to go with him, and beare him companie, in whose presence he could find in his heart to spend his bloude, euen at his feete: then the earle of Arundell tooke Thomas Louell the Dukes boie by the hande, and saide, farewell gentle Thomas with all my heart. Then the duke, with the L. Marques of Northampton, the L. Grey, and diuers other, tooke their barge, and went to Durham place, and to White hall, where that night they mustered their men: and the nert daie in the morning, the Duke departed with the number of 600. men, or thereabouts. And as they rode thorough Shordich, saith the duke to the Lorde Grey, the people prelle to see vs, but not one saieth God spede vs.

The saine day sir Iohn Gates and other went out after the duke.

By this time word was brought to the tower, that the Lady Mary was fled to Flamingham castle in Suffolke; where the people of the countrey almost wholy resorted to hir; and that William L. Windsor, sir Edward Hastings, Sir Edmond Pecham with others, were proclaiming Quene Mary in Buckinghamshire, sir Io. Williams in Oxfordshire, &c.

About this time, fiue Ships well manned, that were appointed to lie before Yarmouth, and to haue taken the ladie Mary if she had fled that waie, were by force of weather driuen into the Hauen, where one Maister Iernyngham was raising power on the Ladie Maries behalfe, who hearing thereof, came thither, whereupon the captaines tooke a boate and went to the ships, but the Sailers and Souldiers asked Maister Iernyngham what he would haue, and whether he would haue their Captaines or no? and he said yea: marie said they, ye shall haue them, or we will throwe them into the bottome of the Sea, but the Captaines sayde forthwith, that they woulde serue Quene Marie willingly, and so brought forth their men, and conueied with them their great Ordinance: Of the comming of these Shippes the ladie Marie was woonderfull ioyous, and afterwarde doubted little the Dukes puissance: but when newes thereof was brought to the Tower, each man there beganne to draw backward, and ouer that, word of a greater mischiefe was brought to the Tower, that is to saie, that the Noblemens tenantes refused to serue their lords against quene Marie.

The duke thought long for his succors, and wrote somewhat sharpelie to the counsell at the tower in that behalfe, as well for lacke of men as of munition, but a slender answere had he againe: And from that time forward certaine of the counsell, to wit, the earle of Pembroke, and sir Th. Cheyney lord Warden,

and

and other, sought to get out of the Tower to consult in London, but coulde not yet.

The 16. of July, being Sunday, doctor Ridley Bishop of London, by commandement of the counsel preached at Pauls crosse, where he vehementlie perswaded the people in the title of the ladie Iane, late proclaimed Q. and inueied earnestly against the title of lady Marie, &c.

The same 16. of July, the lorde Treasurer was gone out of the tower to his house in London at night, and forthwith about 7. of the clocke the gates of the tower vpon a sodain were shut vp, and the keies born vp to the lady Iane, which was for feare of some packing in the L. treasurer, but he was fetched again to the tower, about 12. of the clocke in the night.

The 18. day, the D. perceiuing that the succors promised came not to him, and also receiuing from some of the counsel letters of discomfort, hee returned from Bury backe againe to Cambridge.

The 19. of Julie, the Councell, partlie moued with the right of the ladie Maries cause, partlie considering, that the most of the realme was wholy bent on her side, chaunged their mindes, and assembled themselues at Bainardes castle, where they communed with the Earle of Pembrooke: And the earle of Shrewsburie, with Sir Iohn Mason Cleark of the Councell, spake to the lorde Maior secretlie, that he with the Sheriffes and such other of the Aldermen with the Recorder, as he thought best, to méete him and the Councell at Bainardes Castle, within lesse than an houre: which they did, where the councell declared to the lorde Maior and his brethren, that hee and they must ride with them into Cheape to proclaime a newe Quéene, which was the ladie Maries grace, daughter to king Henry the eight; and they riding from thence to Paules Church-yarde, and into Cheape, the people were so assembled, that the Lordes coulde not ride by them to the Crosse, where Maister Gartar king at armes in his rich Coate of armes, with a Trumpet beeing readie, the Trumpet was sounded, and then they proclaimed the ladie Mary, Daughter to king Henry the eight and Queene Katherine, Queene of Englande, Fraunce, and Irelande, defender of the faith, &c. Which Proclaimation ended, the Lorde Maior, and all the Counsell rode to Paules Church, where the Canticle of *Te Deum* was soung. And the same night the Earle of Arundell, and the Lorde Paget, rode in Poste to Queene Mary with thirtie horse with them.

The councell assembled at Bainards castle.

Lady Mary proclaimed Queene.

The 20. of Julie, Iohn Duke of Northumberlande, beeing then in Cambridge, and hauing sure knowledge, that the ladie Mary was by the Nobilitie and others of the Counsell remaining at London proclaimed Queene; about fiue of the clocke the same night, he with such other of the nobilitie as were in his companie, came to the market crosse of the towne, and calling for an Herault, himselfe proclaimed quéene Mary, and among other he threwe vppe his owne cappe, and within an houre after he had letters from the counsell, by the handes of Richard Rose herault: Dated at Westminster the 20. of June in forme following.

Duke of Northumberland proclaimed Q. Mary at Cambridge.

In the name of our Soueraigne Lady Mary the Quéene to bee declared to

the

Counsels letters to the duke of Northumberland.

the duke of Northumberland, and all other of his band of what degrée soeuer they be.

Yée shall command and charge in the Quéenes highnesse name, the saide Duke to disarme himselfe, and to cease all his men of war: and to suffer no part of his army to doe any villanie, or any thing contrary to the peace: and himselfe to forbeare his comming to this citie vntill the Quéenes pleasure be expressedly declared vnto him. And if he will shewe himselfe like a good quiet subiect, we will then continue as wee haue begunne, as humble suters to our soueraigne lady the Quéenes highnesse for him and his, as for our selues. And if he do not, we will not faile to spend our liues in subduing him and his.

Item, yée shall declare the like matter to the Marquesse of Northampton, and all other noble men and gentlemen, and to all men of war being with anie of them.

Item, yée shall in all places where yée come, notifie it, If the Duke of Northumberland do not submit himselfe to the Quéenes highnesse, Quéene Marie, he shall be accepted as a traytour. And all we of the nobilitie that were counsellers to the late king, will to the vttermost portion, persecute him and his to their vtter confusion. Thom. Cant. archbishop, Thomas Elie Chancelor, Will. Winchester Marquesse, I. Bedforde Earle, H. Suffolke duke, F. Shrewsburie Earle, W. Penbrough Earle, Thomas Darcy Lorde Chamberlaine, R. Cotton, W. Peter secretarie, W. Cecill second secretarie, I. C. I. Baker Chancelor of the tenths, I. Mason master of requests, R. Bowes master of the Rols.

Duke of Northumberland arrested.

The rumour of these letters was no soner abroad, but euery man departed. And shortly after, the Duke was arrested in the Kings Colledge by one master Slegge, Sergeant at armes. At the last letters were brought from the counsell at London, that all men should go each his way: Whereupon the Duke said to them that kept him, Yée doe me wrong to withdraw my libertie, sée yée not the Counsels letters without exception, that all men should go whither they would? At which wordes, they that kept him and the other Noble men, set them at libertie, and so continued they for that night, insomuch, that the Earle of Warwike was readie in the morning to haue rode awaie, but then came the Earle of Arundale from the quéene to the Duke into his Chamber, who went out to méete him, and as soone as hee sawe the Earle of Arundale, hee fell on his knées, and desired him to be good to him, for the loue of God, consider (saieth hee) I haue done nothing but by the consents of you and all the whole Counsell: My Lord (quoth the Earle of Arundell) I am sent hither by the Quéenes maiestie, and in her name I doe arrest you: and I obey it my Lord (quoth he) I beséech you my Lorde of Arundell (quoth the Duke) vse mercie towardes mee, knowing the case as it is: my Lorde (quoth the Earle) yée should haue sought for mercie soner, I must doe according to my commandement, and therewith he committed the charge of him, and of other to the guard and gentlemen that stoode by.

The

The 25. of July, the Duke with other were brought vp to the Tower of London, vnder the conduct of Henry Earle of Arundale, with a great number of light horse-men, bowes and speares, they came into London at bishops gate, all the stretes as he passed by standing with men, in harnesse afore euery mans doore, till hee came to the Tower wharfe: the prisoners names that came in at that time, were the Duke of Northumberlande, the Earle of Warwike, the Earle of Huntingdon, the lorde Hastings, lorde Ambrose Dudley, lorde Henrie Dudley, sir Andrewe Dudley, sir Iohn Gates, Henrie Gates, sir Thomas Palmer, doctor Sands, but when they came to the Tower, the Earle of Arundell discharged the lorde Hastings, and had him awaie with him. Duke of Northumberland brought to the Tower.

On the fyre and twentith, the lord Marquesse of Northampton, the bishop of London, the lorde Robert Dudley, and sir Robert Corbet were brought from the Quenes campe into the Tower. And thus was the matter ended without bloudshed, which men feared would haue brought the death of many thousands.

Queene Mary.

MAry, the eldest daughter of King Henrie the eight, began her raigne the first of July, in the yeare 1553. when she dissolued her campe at Framingham, which was to the number of 13000. men, the Earle of Sussex being lieutenant of the armie: victuals were of such plentie, that a barrell of beere was solde for fyre pence with the caske, and foure great loaues of bread for a penny. *An. reg. 1.*

The 27. of July, sir Roger Cholmely lord chiefe Iustice of the kings bench, sir Edmond Mountague lord chiefe iustice of the common place, were sent to the Tower, on the next morrow Henry duke of Suffolke, and sir Iohn Cheeke were had to the Tower.

On the 30. of July, the lady Elizabeth sister to the Quéene, rode from her place at Strand, (where she had lien the night before) through the city of London, out at Aldgate toward the Quéne, accompanied with 1000. horse, of knights, ladies, gentlemen and their seruants.

On the 31. of July, the duke of Suffolke was discharged out of the tower, by the earle of Arundell, and had the quénes pardon.

Quéene Mary came from Wanstead in Essex, to London on the 3. of August, being brought in with her nobles very honorably, and strongly, the number of veluet coats that did ride before her, as well strangers as others were 740. and the number of ladies and gentlewomen that followed, was 180. The earle of Arundale riding next before her, bare a sworde in his hand, and sir Anthony Browne did beare vp her traine. The lady Elizabeth her sister followed

lowed her next, and after her the lord marquesse of Excesters wife. The garde followed the ladies, and after them Northamptonshire and Oxfordshire men, and then Buckinghamshire men, and after them the lords seruants: the whole number of horse-men were esteemed to bee about 1000. The Quéene staied without Aldgate, before the stage, whereon the poore children of the hospitall were placed, and one of them made to her an Oration. Sir George Barnes then lord Maior, with the Aldermen, brought her into the citie, the lord Maior riding next to the earle of Arundale, with a Scepter or mace in his hand. A great peale of ordinance was shotte off at the Tower of London, when the Quéene entered the Citie through Aldgate, vp to Leaden hall, then downe Grace stréte, Fanchurch stréte, Marke lane, Tower stréte, and so into the Tower, where Thomas duke of Norfolke, doctor Gardener late Bishoppe of Winchester, Edward Courtney sonne and heire to Henry marquesse of Excester, the Dutchesse of Somerset, prisoners in the Tower, knéeling on the hill within the same tower, saluted her grace, and she came to them and kissed them, & said, these be my prisoners. On the next morrow, Edward Courtney was made marquesse of Excester, and the other forenamed prisoners pardoned, and discharged in the Quénes chamber.

The 5. of August, Edmond Bonner late Bishop of London, prisoner in the Marshalsea, and Cuthert Tonstall the olde bishop of Durham prisoner in the Kings bench, had their pardons, and were restored to their Seas. Shortlie after all the Bishops which had béene deprined in the time of king Edward the first, were restored to their Bishoprickes, and the other which were placed in king Edwards time, removed: also all beneficed men that were married, or would not forsake their opinion, were put out of their liuings, & other known to be of the contrarie part, were set in the same, especially if any were aliue, that had of late béene put out of the same, as bishop Daie of Chichester, Heath of Worcester, &c.

Bishops restored and other displaced.

Sir Nicholas Hare master of the Rols, was made képer of the great seale, for the space of a fortnight or thereabout.

The 9. of August, in the afternoone, the Quéene helde an Obsequie in the tower for king Edward, the dirge being sung in Latin, and on the morrowe a masse of *Requiem*, whereat the Quéene with her ladies offered. The same daie the corpes of king Edward was buried at Westminster, the lord Treasurer, the Earle of Pembroke, and the Earle of Shrewsburie being chiefe mourners, with diuers other noble men and other. Doctor Daie Bishop of Chichester preached at the said buriall, and all the seruice with a Communion was in English.

Buriall of king Edward.

The 11. of August, certaine gentlemen minding to passe vnder London bridge in a wherrie, were there ouerturned, and 7. of them drowned, one was master T. Bridges sonne.

Men drowned at London bridge.

The 13. of August, master Bourne a Chanon of Paules preaching at Paules crosse, not onely praied for the dead, but also declared, that Doctor Bonner bishop of London (late restored, and there in presence) for a sermon by him made in the same place, vpon the same Gospell, was about foure yéeres

since,

since, vniustlie cast into the vile Prison of the Marshalsea, and there kept during the raigne of king Edward: which saying so offended some of the audience, that they breaking silence, said the bishop had preached abhomination, other some cried (meaning of the preacher) pull him out, pull him out, and some being neere the pulpit, began to clime, wherewith the preacher stepped backe, and one Maister Bradford a Preacher of King Edwards time, stepped into his place, and gentlie perswaded the audience to quietnes and obedience, alleadging S. Paul to the Romains: Let euery soule submit himselfe to the authoritie of the higher powers, &c. Neuertheles maister Bourne standing by Maister Bradford, one threw a dagger at him, which hit a side post of the pulpit, and rebounded back again a great way, whereupon M. Bradford brake off his speech, and forced himselfe with the helpe of Io. Rogers another Preacher, to conuey M. Bourne out of the audience, which with great labor they brought into Pauls Schole.

A dagger throwne at the Preacher.

The 18. of August, Iohn Dudley Duke of Northumberlande, William Parre Marques of Northampton, and Iohn earle of Warwike son and heire to the duke, were arraigned at Westminster hall, before Thomas D. of Norffolke, high steward of England, where the duke of Northumberland with great reuerence towards the iudges, protested his faith and alleageance to the queen, whome he confessed greeuously to haue offended, and said, that he meant not to speake any thing in defence of his fact, but requested to vnderstande the opinion of the court in two points. First, whether a man doing any act by authoritie of the princes councell and by warrant of the great seale of England, and doing nothing without the same, might bee charged with treason for anie thing which he might do by warrant thereof. Secondly, whether any such persons as were equally culpable in that crime, and those, by whose letters and commandements he was directed in all his doings, might be his iudges, or passe vpon his tryall as his Peeres.

Duke of Northumberland and other arraigned.

Whereunto was answered, that as concerning the first, the great Seale (which he laid for his warrant) was not the seale of the lawfull Queene of the realme, nor passed by authoritie, but the seale of an vsurper, and therefore could bee no warrant to him. As to the second, it was alledged, that if any were as deeply to be touched in that case as himselfe, yet so long as no attaindor were of record against them, they were neuertheles persons able in law to passe vpon any triall, and not to be chalenged therefore, but at the princes pleasure. After which answere, the Duke vsed few words, but confessed the inditement, by whose example the other prisoners arraigned with him did the like, and thereupon had iudgement.

And when iudgement was giuen the duke saide, I beseech you my lordes, all to be humble suters to the M. maiestie, and to grant mee foure requestes, which are these. First, that I maie haue that death which noble men haue had in times past, and not the other. Secondlie, that her Maiestie will bee gratious to my children, which maie hereafter do good seruice, considering, that they went by my commandement, who am their father, and not of their owne free willes. Thirdly, that I maie haue appointed to mee some learned man

for

for the instruction and quiet of my conscience. And fourthlie, that shee will send two of the counsell, to commune with mee, to whome I will declare such matters as shall be expedient for her and the common weale: and thus I beseech you all to pray for me.

On the nineteenth of August were arraigned at Westminster, Sir Iohn Gates, Sir Henry Gates, Sir Andrew Dudley, and sir Thomas Palmer, where without anie quest they pleaded guiltie, and submitted themselues to the Queenes mercie, and so hadde iudgement.

The twentieth of August, Doctor Watson, Chaplaine to the Bychoppe of Winchester preached at Paules Crosse, by the Quænes appointment, and for feare of the like tumult, as had beene the Sundaie last past, certain lordes of the Counsell repaired to the Sermon, as the Lorde Treasurer, the Lorde Priuie Seale, the Earle of Bedforde, the Earle of Pembrooke, the Lorde Wentworth, the Lord Rich, and Sir Henrie Gernigam captaine of the gard, with 200. of the guard, which stode about the Preacher with halberts. Also the Maior had warned the companies of the citie to be present in their liueries, which was well accepted of the Quænes counsell, and the Sermon was quietlie ended.

Preacher at Paules Crosse guarded.

The twentie two of August, Sir Iohn Gage Lieuetenant of the Tower, deliuered to the Sheriffes of London, by Indenture these prisoners following: first Sir Iohn Gates was brought foorth, and set at the Garden Gate, then the Duke of Northumberlande, was likewise brought foorth, and Sir Thomas Palmer after him: When the Duke and Sir Iohn Gates mette, Sir Iohn saieth the Duke, God haue mercie vpon vs, for this daie shall ende both our liues, and I praie you forgiue mee whatsoeuer I haue offended, and I forgiue you with all my heart, although you and your counsell was a great occasion hereof: Well my Lorde quoth Sir Iohn Gates, I forgiue you, as I woulde bee forgiuen, and yet you and your authoritie was the originall cause of all togither, but the Lorde pardon you, and I praie you forgiue me. So either making obeisance to other, the Duke proceeded, and when he came vpon the Scaffolde, hee putting off his Gowne of Crane coloured Damaske, leaned vpon the East Raile, and saide to the people: Good people, all you that be heere present to see mee die, though my death bee odious, and horrible to the flesh, yet I praie you iudge the best in Gods workes, for hee doth all for the best. And as for mee, I am a wretched sinner, and haue deserued to die, and most iustlie am condemned to die by lawe. And yet this Acte wherfore I die, was not altogether of mee (as it is thought) but I was procured and induced thereunto by other, I was, I saie induced thereunto by other: Howbeit, God forbidde that I shoulde name anie man vnto you, I will name no man vnto you, and therefore I beseech you looke not for it. I for my part forgiue all men, and praie God also to forgiue them. And if I haue offended any of you heere, I praie you and all the worlde to forgiue mee; and most chiefelie I desire forgiuenesse of the queenes highnesse, whome I haue most greeuouslie offended. And I praie you all to witnesse with mee, that I depart in perfect loue and charitie with all the worlde, and that you will assist me with your praiers

Duke of Northumberland beheaded.

prayers at the houre of death. The reſt of his ſpeech almoſt in euerie point, was the like as hee hadde ſaide in the Chappell of the Tower, in the date before, ſauing, when hee hadde made confeſſion of his beleefe, hee hadde theſe wordes. And heere I doe protеſt vnto you good people, moſte earneſtlie, euen from the bottome of my heart, that this which I haue ſpoken is of my ſelfe, not beeing required nor moued thereunto by any man, nor for any flatterie, or hope of life, and I take witneſſe of my Lorde of Worceſter heere, mine olde friende and Ghoſtlie father, that hee founde mee in this minde and opinion, when hee came to mee; but I haue declared this onelie vpon mine owne minde and affection, and for the zeale and loue that I beare to my naturall Countreie. I coulde good people rehearſe much more euen by experience that I haue of this euill that is happened to this Realme by theſe occaſions, but you knowe I haue an other thing to doe, whereunto I muſt prepare mee, for the time drawеth awaie. And now I beſeech the Queenes highnes to forgiue mee mine offences againſt her Maieſtie, whereof I haue a ſingular hope, for as much, as ſhe hath alreadie extended her goodneſſe and clemencie ſo farre vpon mee, that where as ſhee might forthwith, without iudgement or anie further tryall, haue put mee to moſt vile and cruell death, by hanging, drawing, and quartering, for as much as I was in the field in armes againſt her highneſſe, her Maieſtie neuertheleſſe of her moſt mercifull goodnes ſuffered me to be brought to my iudgement, and to haue my triall by law, where I was moſt iuſtlie and worthilie condemned. And her highneſſe hath now alſo extended her mercie and clemencie vpon mee, for the manner and kinde of my death. And therefore my hope is, that her grace of her goodneſſe will remit all the reſt of her indignation and diſpleaſure towardes mee, which I beſeech you all moſt heartilie to praie for, and that it maie pleaſe God long to preſerue her Maieſtie to raigne ouer you in much honour and felicitie. After hee had thus ſpoken he kneeled downe, ſaying to them that were about him; I beſeech you all to beare me witneſſe that I die in the true Catholike faith, and then ſaide the Pſalmes of *Miſerere* and *De profundis*, his *Pater noſter*, and ſixe of the firſt Verſes of the Pſalme, *In te Domine ſperaui*, ending with this verſe; Into thy handes O Lorde I commend my ſpirite; and when hee had thus finiſhed his prayers, the executioner aſked him forgiuenеſſe, to whome hee ſayde: I forgiue thee with all my heart, and doe thy parte without feare. And bowing towarde the Blocke, hee ſaide, I haue deſerued a thouſande deathes, layde his heade vpon the Blocke and ſo was beheaded. Whoſe bodie with the heade was buried in the Tower, by the bodie of Edwarde late Duke of Somerſet, ſo that there lieth before the high Altar, in S. Peters church two dukes, betweene two queenes, to wit, the duke of Somerſet, and the duke of Northumberland, betweene quéene Anne, and quéene Katherine, all foure beheaded. Burials in the Tower.

At the ſame time and place alſo, was likewiſe beheaded Sir Iohn Gates, and Sir Thomas Palmer, which Sir Iohn Gates in that place vſed theſe or like wordes. My comming hither this date good people is to die, whereof I aſſure you all I am well worthie: for I haue liued as vitiouſlie and wickedlie Sir Io. Gates and Sir Thomas Palmer beheaded.

all

all the daies of my life as any man hath don in the world. I was the greatest reader of scripture that might be of a man of my degree: And a worse follower thereof not liuing: for I did not read to the intent to be edified thereby, nor to seeke the glory of God: but contrariwise, arrogantlie, to bee seditious, and to dispute thereof, and priuatelie to interpret it after my owne braine and affection. Wherefore good people I exhort you all to beware howe, and after what sort you come to read Gods holie word; for it is not a trifle, or playing game to deale with Gods holie mysteries: stand not too much in your own conceits, for like as the bee of one flower doth gather honie, and the spider poison of the same, euen so you, except you humblie submit your selues to God, and charitablie reade the same to the intent to bee edified thereby, it is to you as poison, and worse: and it were better for to let it alone. And then after hee had asked the Queenes highnes forgiuenes, and all the world; he desired the people of their charitie to praie vnto God with him for remission of his sinnes, and then refusing the kerchiefe laide downe his heade, which was stricken off at three blowes. Sir Thomas Palmer, as soone as he came to the scaffold, tooke euery man by the hand, and desired them to pray for him; then putting off his gown, hee leaned vpon the East Rayle, and saide these wordes in effect: My Masters (quoth hee.) God saue you all: it is not vnknowne vnto you wherefore I come hither, which I haue woorthilie well deserued at Gods handes, for I know it to be his diuine ordinance, by this meanes to call mee to his mercie, and to teach mee to know my selfe, what I am, and whereunto we are all subiect: I thanke his mercifull goodnes, for he hath caused me to learne more in one little darke corner in yonder Tower, than euer I learned by any trauell in so many places as I haue bin, for there (I say) I haue seen God, what he is, & how vnsearcheable his wonderous workes are, and how infinit his mercies be; I haue seene there my selfe throughly, and what I am, nothing but a lumpe of sin, earth, dust, and of all vilenes most vilest; I haue seen there and know what the world is, how vaine, deceitfull, transitorie, and short it is, how wicked and loathsome the workes thereof are in the sight of Gods maiestie, how he neither regardeth the manaces of the proud men and mighty ones, neither despiseth the humblenes of the poore and lowly which are in the same world. Finallie, I haue seene there what death is, how neere hanging ouer euery mans head, and yet how vncertaine the time, and how vnknowne to all men, and how little it is to be feared; and should I feare death? or be sad therefore? haue I not seene two die before mine eies? Yea, and within the hearing of mine eares? No, neither the sprinkling of the blood, or the sheading thereof, nor the bloody Axe it selfe shall make me afraid; and now taking my leaue to the same, I pray you all to pray for me: come on good fellow (quoth he) art thou hee that must do the deed? I forgiue thee with all my hart, and then kneeling downe, laying his head on the blocke, said, I will see how neet the blocke is for my necke, I praie thee strike not yet, for I haue a few praiers to saie, and that done, strike on Gods name, good leaue haue thou, his praiers ended, and desiring each man to praie for him, hee laid downe his heade againe, and so the executioner tooke it from him at one stroke.

The

The 23. of August, the Quéene deliuered the great Seale to doctor Gardener bishop of Winchester, and made him lord chancelor. New lorde chancelor.

The 27. of August the seruice began in Latine to be sung in Paules church in London. Latin seruice.

The first of September, the Q. demanded a prest of the city of London of 20000. l. to be repayed againe within foureteene daies after Michaelmas next following, which summe was leuied of the aldermen, and 120. commoners. Prest to the Queene.

The third of September, Edward Courtney was created earle of Deuonshire at Richmond. Earle of Deuonshire created.

The lord Ferrers of Chartley, the lord chiefe iustice, sir Roger Cholmley, the L. Mountague, sir Io. Cheeke, and other, were deliuered out of the tower.

The 4. of September was proclaimed certaine new coines of gold and siluer, a soueraigne of gold of 30. s, the halfe soueraigne 15. s, an angel of 10. s, the halfe angell 5. s: of siluer, the groat, halfe groat, and peny. All base coines to be currant as before. New coines.

Also the same day by proclamation, was pardoned the subsidie of foure s. the pound lands, and two s. eight d. the pound of moueable goods, granted in the last parliament of king Edward the first. Subsidie pardoned.

The 12. of September the Quéene remoued to S. James.

The 14. and 15. of September master Latimer and doctor Cranmer archbishop of Canterbury were sent to the tower of London.

The 27. of September, Q. Mary came to the tower by water, accompanied with the Lady Elizabeth her sister, and other ladies, before whose arriuall was shot a great peale of gunnes.

The last of September, Quéene Mary rode through the Citie of London towards Westminster, sitting in a chariot of cloth of tissue drawen with fiue horses, all trapped with the like cloth of tissue. She sate in a gowne of purple veluet furred with powdered ermine, hauing on her head a caule of cloth of tinsell, beset with pearle and stone, and aboue the same vpon her head, a round circlet of gold beset so richly with pretious stones, that the value thereof was inestimable, the same caule and circlet being so massie and ponderous, that she was faine to beare vp her head with her hand, and the canapy was borne ouer her chariot. Before her rode a number of gentlemen and knights, then iudges, then doctors, then bishops, then lords, then the councell: after whome followed the knights of the Bathe, thirteene in number, in their robes, the bishop of Winchester lord Chancelor, and the marquesse of Winchester lorde high treasurer, next came the duke of Norfolke, and after him the Earle of Oxforde, who bare the sword before her, the maior of London in a gowne of crimosin veluet bare the scepter of gold, &c. after the Quénes chariot, sir Edward Hastings led her horse in his hand: then came an other chariot, hauing a couering all of cloth of siluer all white, and fiue horses trapped with the like, therein sate the lady Elizabeth and the lady Anne of Cleue, then Ladies and Gentlewomen riding on horses trapped with red veluet, and their gownes and kirtles likewise of red veluet: after them followed two other chariots Coronation.

couered with red sattin, and the horses betrapped with the same, and certaine gentlewomen betweene euery of the saide chariots riding in crimosin sattin, their horses betrapped with the same, the number of the gentlewomen so riding were 46. besides them in the chariots. At Fanchurch was a costly pageant made by the Genowayes: at Grace-church corner there was another pageant made by the Easterlings. At the vpper ende of Grace-streete there was an other pageant made by the Florentines verie high, on the top whereof there stoode foure pictures, and in the midst of them and most highest, there stoode an angell all in greene, with a trumpet in his hand, and when the trumpetter who stoode secretly in the pageant did sound his trumpe, the angell did put his trumpe to his mouth, as though it had beene the same that had sounded, to the great marueiling of many ignorant persons: this pageant was made with three thorow fares or gates, &c. The conduit in Cornehil ran wine, and beneath the conduit a pageant made at the charges of the citie, and another at the great conduit in Cheape, and a fountaine by it running wine. The standart in Cheape newe painted, with the waites of the Citie aloft thereof playing. The crosse in Cheape new washed and burnished. One other pageant at the little conduit in Cheape next to Paules made by the Citie, where the aldermen stoode: and when the Quéene came against them, the Recorder made a short proposition to her, and then the chamberlaine presented to her in the name of the maior and the city, a purse of cloth of gold, and 1000. marks of gold in it: then she rode forth, and in Paules churchyard against the schole, one Master Haywod sate in a pageant vnder a vine, and made to her an oration in Latine and English. Then was there one Peter a Dutch man stoode on the weathercocke of Paules steeple, holding a streamer in his hand of fiue yardes long, and wauing thereof, stoode sometime on the one foote, and shooke the other, and then kneeled on his knées, to the great maruell of all people. He had made two scaffoldes vnder him, one aboue the crosse, hauing torches and streamers set on it, and one other ouer the bole of the crosse, likewise set with streamers and torches, which could not burne the winde was so great: the said Peter had sixteene pound thirteene shillings and foure pence giuen him by the citie for his costs and paines, and all his stuffe. Then was there a pageant made against the deane of Paules gate, where the queristers of Pauls plaied on vials, and song. Ludgate was newly repaired, painted, and richlie hanged, with minstrels playing and singing there: then was there an other pageant at the conduct in Fléete streete, and the Temple barre was newly painted and hanged. And thus shee passed to White hall at Westminster, where shee toke her leaue of the lord maior, giuing him great thankes for his paines, and the Citie for their cost. On the morrow, which was the first daie of October: the Quéene went by water to the olde palace, and there remained till about eleuen of the clocke, and then went on foote vpon blew cloth, being railed on either side vnto Saint Peters Church, where shee was solemnelie crowned and annointed by the Bishop of Winchester, which coronation and other ceremonies and solemnities then vsed according to the olde custome, was not fully ended till it was nigh foure of the clocke at night that shee returned

turned from the Church, before whom was then borne three swords sheathed, and one naked. The great service that day done in Westminster hall at dinner by diuers noble men, would aske long time to write. The Lorde maior of London and twelue citizens kept the high cupboord of plate as butlers, and the Quéene gaue to the Maior for his fée a cup of golde with a couer waying seuentéene ounces.

The 5. of October, the parliament began at Westminster, sir Iohn Yorke, and Henry Dudley, were deliuered out of the Tower. Parliament.

The 25. day of October, the Barge of Grauesende, a Catch running vpon her, was ouerturned, and foureténe persons drowned, and sixténe saued by swimming. Grauesend Barge ouerturned.

Cardinall Poole, who had long time béene forth from this realme, and now in great estimation in the court of Rome, was sent for by Quéene Mary to returne into his countrey of England. Cardinall Poole.

The 3 of Nouember, the weathercocke of Paules was set vp, which cocke waied forty pound, his length from the bill to the taile was foure foote, and his breadth ouer the wings three foote and a halfe, the which cocke being of copper, was ouer gilt. Weathercock of Paules.

The thirtéenth of Nouember, Doctor Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, Ladie Iane that was before proclaimed Quéene, and the lorde Guilford her husband, and the Lorde Ambrose Dudley, were arraigned at the Guild hall of London, and condemned of treason: sir Henry Gates was deliuered out of the Tower.

The Parliament was dissolued on the first of December. And on the one and twentith of December, began throughout England the Church seruice to be done in Latin, as was enacted by the last Parliament, and as the same had béen left in the last yéere of K. Henry the eight. The Lady Iane had the liberty of the Tower, to walke in the Quénes Garden and on the hill. The Lorde Ambrose Dudley, and the Lorde Gilford Dudley, had the liberties of the parts where they were lodged: the Marquesse of Northampton had his pardon and was deliuered. Latin seruice in the church.

In the beginning of the month of January, the Emperor sent a noble man called Edmond, and certaine other Ambassadors into England to conclude a marriage betwéene K. Philip his son, and Quéene Mary of England. 1554

The 14. of January, doctor Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester, Lord Chancelor of England, in the chamber of presence at Westminster, made to the Lords, Nobility, and Gentlemen, an Oration very eloquent, wherein he declared that the Quénes Maiestie, partly for amity, and other waighty considerations had, after much suite on the Emperors and Prince of Spaines behalfe made, determined by the consent of the Counsell and Nobilitie, to match her selfe with the saide Prince in most godly and lawfull matrimonie: and declared further, that she should haue for her ioynter 30000. duckets by the yéere, with all the low-countrey of Flanders, and that the issue (if there happened any) betwéene them two lawfully begotten, should be heire as wel to the Kingdome of Spaine, as also to the said low-countrey. Ye said therfore

that they were all bound to thanke God that so noble, worthy, and famous a Prince would vouchsafe so to humble himselfe, as in this marriage to take vpon him rather as a subiect, than otherwise, for the Queene and her councell should rule all things as she did before, and that there should be of the councel no Stranger, neither to haue the custody of any forts, or Castles, &c. nor beare any rule or office in the queenes house, or elsewhere in all England, with diuers other articles there by him rehearsed, wherefore he said the queens pleasure and request was, that like good subiects for her sake, they would most louingly receiue him with reuerence, ioy and honor.

The next day, the Lord maior of London, with his brethren the aldermen, were sent for to the court, and to bring with them fortie of the head commoners of the citie, vnto whom before the councell, the lord chancelor made the like oration, desiring them to behaue themselues like good subiectes with all humblenes and reioycing.

Robert Dudley sonne to the late duke of Northumberland, was arraigned at the Guild hall of London of high treason, he confessed the inditement, and had iudgement giuen by the earle of Suffer, to be drawne, hanged, bowelled and quartered.

Within fiue dales after, there was worde brought to the court, how that sir Peter Carow, sir Gawine Carow, sir Thomas Deny with diuers other, were vp in Deuonshire, in the resisting of the king of Spaines comming hither, and that they had taken the city of Exceter, and castle there into their custody.

About the three and twentith or fiue and twentith day of January, sir Iames a Crofts departed from London toward Wales, as it was thought, to haue raised power there.

Conspiracy. The purpose of the Quenes marriage was so grieuously taken of diuers men, that for this & for religion, they in such sort conspired against the queene, that if the matter had not broken out before the time by them appointed, men thought it would haue brought much trouble and danger.

Commotion in Kent by sir Thom. Wyat. The 25. of Ianuarie, sir Iohn Gage lord Chamberlaine, certified the lorde maior of London, that sir Thomas VVyat with certaine other rebels, were vp in Kent about Maidestone, whereupon great watch was kept, and that night the lord maior rode about to peruse the same, and euery night after two aldermen did the like: in the day time the gates of the Citie were warded by substantiall citizens.

The 26. day of Ianuary was brought into the tower as prisoners, the lord marquesse of Northampton, sir Edward Warner, and other. And the same night there went out certaine of the gard, and other against the Kentish men. And the city of London began to be straightly kept and watched by harnessed men, by the appointment of the lord treasurer, who had the day before sent for the lord maior and aldermen, and giuen them so in charge for safety of the city. And the same day, or rather on the day before, the duke of Norfolke with his power went downe toward Grauesend.

About the which time the lord Burgauenny, by chance, encountred with sir Henry Isle (one of sir Thomas Wyats faction) and fiue 2, or 3. of his men, he flying

ing with the reſt of his company to Wyats campe.

The 27. of January, the Lorde Treaſurer came to the Guilde hall from the councell, to requeſt the citizens to prepare 500. footemen well harneſſed to go againſt Wyat, which was granted and made readie the ſame night, and on the morrow were deliuered to their captaines, and ſent to Grauelend by water.

The 29. of January, the D. of Norffolke lieutenant of the army, and with him the earle of Arundell, M. Henry Iernigham captaine of the guarde, with a great number of the guard, and other ſouldiers, and the captaine and ſouldiers that were ſent from London, minded to aſſault Rocheſter Caſtle, where Wyat and his people late, ſo that vppon Mundale they were ſet in arraie towardes Rocheſter bridge, which was kept by Wyats companie, and furniſhed with 3. or 4. double canons: but before the ſetting forwarde of theſe men, the D. ſent maſter Nory an Herault vnto Rocheſter, with the D. proclaimation of pardon to all ſuch as would deſiſt from their purpoſe, who comming to the bridge, woulde haue gone through into the citie, but they that kept the bridge would not ſuffer him till that the captaine came, who at the laſt graunted the ſame to be read in the citie, but holding a dag againſt him, cried, ſpeake ſoftlie, or els they would ſhot him through, ſo that they would not ſuffer the people to heare the Proclaimation: which beeing ended, each man cried they had don nothing wherefore they ſhould néed any pardon, and in that quarrel which they had taken in hand, they woulde liue and die: neuertheles, at the laſt Sir George Harpar receiued the pardon outwardly, and being receiued vnder the D. of Norffolks protection, came on forward againſt the Kentiſhmen, and euen as the companie were ſet in a readines, and marched forward toward the bridge, Bret beeing captaine of the 500. Londoners, of which, the more parte were in the forewarde turned himſelfe about, and drawing out his ſword, ſaide theſe or like words: Maſters wee go about to fight againſt our native Countrymen of England and our friends, in a quarrel vnrightful, & partly wicked, for they, conſidering the great miſeries which are like to fall vpon vs, if wee ſhall be vnder the rule of the proude Spaniards or ſtrangers, are here aſſembled to make reſiſtance of their comming, for the auoiding of ſo great inconueniences likely to light, not onely vpon themſelues, but on euerie of vs & the whole realme, therefore I thinke no Engliſh hart ought to ſay againſt them, much leſſe by fighting to withſtande them: therefore I and others (meaning ſuch as were in that ranke with him) will ſpend our blod in the quarrel of this worthie captaine M. Wyat, and other gentlemen here aſſembled: which words once pronounced, each man turned their ordinance againſt their followers, and thereupon cried, a Wyat, a Wyat, of which ſodaine noiſe, the Duke, the captaine of the guard and other, beeing abaſhed, fled forthwith: immediatlie came in maſter Wyat and his companie on horſebacke, roſhing in amongſt as well the guard as the Londoners, and ſaid, ſo manie as will come and tary with vs ſhall bee welcome, and ſo manie as will depart, good leaue haue they, and ſo all the Londoners, part of the gard, and more than three parts of the retinue, went to the campe of the Kentiſhmen, where they ſtill remained. At this diſcomfiture, the Duke loſt eight Peeces of Braſſe, with all other munition

The D. of Norffolk ſent againſt Wyat.

Wyat ſtrengthned with the D. ordinance.

and ordinance, and himselfe with fewe other hardly escaped.

The last of January, Wyat and his companie came to Dertford, and the next day they came full and whole to Grēenwith and Depeford, where they remained thursday, friday, and the forenoone of saterday. On the friday, which was Candlemas day, the most part of the houlholders of London, with the maior and aldermen were in harnesse, yea this daie and other daies the iustices, sergeants at the law, and other lawyers in Westminster hall, pleaded in harnesse.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 25. of January, Henry duke of Suffolk, father to the lady Iane, fleeing into Leicestershire and Warwickshire with the lord Iohn Grey, and the lord Leonard Grey and a small company in diuers places as he went made proclamation against the quenes marriage with the prince of Spaine, &c. but the people inclined not to him.

The first day of February, proclamation was made at London, that the duke of Suffolke was discomfited, and fled with his two brethren. And also that sir Peter Carow, with his uncle sir Gawine Carow and Gibbes, were fled into France: and further, that the quene did pardon the whole campe of the Kentishmen, except Wyat, Harpar, Rudstone, and Isely, and that whosoeuer could take sir Thomas Wyat, except the saide foure persons, should haue an hundred pound lands to him and his heires for euer.

Q. Mary came to the Guild hall in London.

The same day in the afternoone being Candlemas ēuen, the commons of the city assembled in their liueries at the Guild hall, whither the quene with her lordes and ladies came riding from Westminster, and there after vehement words against Wyat, declared, that she meant not otherwise to marry than the councell should thinke both honorable and commodious to the realm, and that she could continue vnmarried, as she had done the greatest part of her age, and therefore willed them truly to assist her, in repressing such as contrary to their duties rebelled. When she had done, vnderstanding that many in London did fauour Wyats part, she appointed lord William Howard lieutenant of the citie, and the earle of Pembroke generall of the fielde, which both prepared all things necessary for their purpose.

Lord William Howard lieutenant of the city.

Wyat came into Southwarke

In the meane season, to wit, the third daie of February, about three of the clocke in the afternoone, sir Thomas Wyat and the Kentishmen marched forward from Depeford towards London with fiue ancients, being by estimation about two thousand, which their comming so soone as it was perceiued, there was shot off out of the White towre fiue or eight shot, but missed them, sometime shooting ouer, and sometime short. After knowledge thereof once had in London, forthwith the drawe bridge was cutte downe, and the bridge gates shut. The maior and sherifes harnessed, commanded each man to shut in their shops and windowes, and to be readie harnessed at their doores, what chance soeuer might happen. By this time was Wyat entred into Kent street, and so by Saint Georges Church into Southwarke. Himselfe, and part of his companie came in good array downe Barmondsey streete, and they were suffred peaceably to enter Southwarke without repulse, or ante stroke stricken, either by the inhabitants, or of any other: yet was there many men of

the

the countrey in the Innes, raised and brought thither by the lorde William and other, to haue gone against the said VVyat, but they all ioyned themselues to the Gentilmen, and the inhabitants with their best entertained them. Immediatly vpon the said VVyats comming, he made proclamation, that no souldier should take any thing, but that he should pay for it, and that his comming was to resist the Spanish king. Notwithstanding, forthwith diuers of his companie being Gentlemen (as they saide) went to Winchester place, made hauocke of the Bishops goods, (hee being lorde Chancelor) not onely of his victuals, whereof there was plentie, but what soeuer else, not leauing so much as one locke of a doore, but the same was taken off and carried awaie, nor a booke in his gallerie or librarie vncut, or rent into pieces, so that men mought haue gone vp to the knées in leaues of bookes, cut out and throwne vnder foote.

Bishop of Winchesters library and other his goods spoyled in Southwarke

At the bridge foote he laid two pieces of ordinance, and began a great trench betweene the bridge and him. He laid one other piece of ordinance at Saint Georges, and one going into Barmondsey streete, and an other toward the bishop of Winchesters house.

On Shroue-tuesday the first of Februarie sir Thomas VVyat remoued out of Southwarke, toward Kingston bridge, which was done vpon this occasion. The night before his departing out of Southwarke, by chance as one of the lieutenants men of the Tower named Thomas Menchen rowed with a sculler ouer-against the Bishop of Winchesters place, there was a water man of the Tower staires, desired the said lieutenants man to take him in, who did so, which being espied of VVyats men, seuen of them with harquebusses, called to them to land againe, but they would not, whereupon each man discharged their piece, and killed the said water-man, which forthwith falling downe dead, the sculler with much paine rowed through the bridge to the tower wharfe with the lieutenants man, and the dead man in his boate, which thing was no sooner knowen to the lieutenant, but that euen the same night, and the next morning, he bent seauen great pieces of ordinance culuerings, and demie-cannons full against the foote of the bridge, and against Southwarke, and the two steeples of Saint Olaues, and Saint Mary Ouaries, besides all the pieces on the white Tower, one culuering on Diueling Tower, and three fauconets ouer the water-gate: which so soone as the inhabitants of Southwarke vnderstood, certaine both men & women came to VVyat in most lamentable wise, saying, Sir, we are all like to be vtterly vndone and destroyed for your sake, our houses shall by and by be throwen downe vpon our heads, to the vtter spoile of this borough, with the shot of the Tower, all readie bent and charged towardes vs, for the loue of God therefore take pittie vpon vs: at which wordes, he being partly abashed stayed a while, and then saide: I praie you my friends be content a while, and I will soone ease you of this mischiefe, for God forbid that you, or the least here should bee killed or hurt in my behalfe. And so in most speedie manner he marched awaie. As he marched towardes Kingstone, he met, by chance a merchant named Christopher Dorell, whom he called, saying, Cousin Dorell, I praie you commende

Wyat remooued out of Southwarke.

Wyat marched toward Kingstone.

me vnto your citizens the Londoners, and say vnto them from me, that when liberty & frædom was offered them, they would not receiue it, neither would they admit me to enter within their gates, who for their frædome, and the disburthening of their griefes, and oppression by strangers, would haue frankly spent my bloud in that their cause and quarrell, but now well appeareth their vnthankefulnesse to vs their friends which meaneth them so much good, and therefore they are the lesse to be moned hereafter, when the miserable tyranny of strangers shall oppresse them, and so he went forward.

This day about 4. of the clocke in the afternoone he came to Kingston vpon Thamis, ten miles west from London, where finding the bridge to be broken, as a 30. foote or thereabout to be taken away, sauing the postes that were left standing, & the other side kept by 200. men, he caused two peeces of ordinance to be planted against them, whereupon they durst not abide: then caused he certaine sailers to swim ouer the Thamis, who losed the westerne barges, which there had been tied, and so brought them ouer, by which meanes he passed the water: it was wonder to see what paines he and others toke, whilest the number of souldiers bayted in the towne, he caused the bridge to be repaired with ladders, plankes, and beames, the same being tied together with ropes, so as by ten of the clocke in the night, it was in such plight, as both his ordinance, and companies of men might passe ouer without perill. And so about 11. of the clocke, Wyat with his band, without resistance marched towardes London, meaning to haue bene at the court gate before day of the nert morning. They came almost to Brainford or euer they were descried by ỹ quéns scouts, who there by chance méeting Bret & his company, Bret said to the scout, backe villaine, if thou go further to discouer any thing here, thou shalt die out of hand, so the scout returned in great haste: but as God would haue it, before he came within fiue miles of the citie, staying vpon a piece of his great ordinance, which was dismounted by breach of the wheles, his comming was discouered, & it was 9. of the clocke of the day following, before he came to Hide parke, as ye shall heare anone. Whilest Wyat and his counsell were deuising how to raise his ordinance dismounted, many of his society slipped from him, among the which, M. Harper was one, who went to the court, and opened al the premises aforesaid, to the Q. and counsel, where Wyat was, what had chanced, and what was his intention. The breaking of the said gun was such an hinderance to his enterprise, that all about him were amazed, and at their wits end, because by that means, the hours was broken of appointment, wherefore, Vaughan, Bret, and other approued souldiers and counsellers, such as had wise heads in other affaires, as doctor Poinet and other, did counsell the said Wyat to march forwards and keepe his appointment, and to let the gun lie, which in no wise he could be perswaded to do. Doctor Poinet therfore, considering how many of his confederacie was stolne away from him, he began to perswade with captaine Bret, and other his friends to shift for themselues, as he would do, and at that very place where the gun did breake, he toke his leaue of his secret friends, and said he would pray vnto God for their good successe, and so did depart, and went into Germany, where he died.

The

The same day in the afternoon, were two men hanged on a gibbet in Pauls churchyard by martiall law, the one Iohn Egerley seruant to the duke of Suffolke, and late sheriffe of Leicester, the other a Baker, one of the white coates sent out of the Citie against Wyat: and the same day came tidings, that the duke with his brethren were taken. Execution in Paules churchyard.

The same day towards night, there was laden 10. or 12. carts with ordinance, as bils, pikes, spears, bowes, arrowes, poulder, shot, shouels, mattocks, baskets, and other munitions, 2. culuerings, 1. sacre, 3. faucons, and a fauconet, all which stuffe staied in Paules churchyard.

The same night also about fiue of the clocke, a trumpetter went about, and warned all horsemen and men of armes to be at S. Iames field, and all footemen also to be there by fiue of the clocke in the next morning.

The Quenes scout vpon his returne to the court, declared Wyats being at Brainford, which sodaine newes, made all in the court wonderfully afraide, Drummes went through London at foure of the clocke in the morning, commanding all souldiers to armor, and so to Charing crosse.

Wyat hearing that the Earle of Pembroke was come into the fielde, hee staid at Knights bridge vntill day, where his men being very weary with trauell of that night, and the day before, and also partly feebled and faint, hauing receiued small sustenance since their comming out of Southwarke reskewe: There was no smal ado in London, and likewise the Tower made great preparation of defence. By ten of the clocke the earle of Pembroke had set his troupe of horsemen on the hill in the high way aboue the new bridge, ouer against S. Iames: his footmen were set in two battels, somwhat lower, & nerer Charing crosse, at the lane turning downe by the bricke wall from Islington ward, where he had set also certaine other horsemen, and hee had planted his ordinance vpon the hill side. In the meane season, Wyat and his compante planted his ordinance vpon a hill beyond S. Iames, almost ouer against the parke corner, & himselfe after a few words spoken to his soldiers, came down the old lane on foote, hard by the court gate at S Iames, with foure or fiue ancients, his men marching in good array. Cuthberd Vaughan and a two ancients turned downe toward Westminster. The earle of Pembrokes horsmen honered all this while without mouing, vntill all was passed by sauing the taile, vpon which they did set, and cut off: the other marched forward in array, and neuer staid or returned to the aide of their taile: the great ordinance shot off freshly on both sides: Wyats ordinance ouershot the troupe of horsemen. The Quenes ordinance, one piece strake three of Wyats companie in a ranke vpon the heads, and slaying them, strake through the wall into the parke: more harme was not done by the great shot of neither partie. The Quenes whole battaile of footemen standing still, Wyat passed along by the wall towardes Charing crosse, where the said horsmen that were there, set vpon part of them, but was soone forced backe. Wyat in Saint Iames field.

At Charing crosse there stode sir Iohn Gage lorde chamberlaine with the garde, and a number of other, being almost a thousand, the which vpon Wyats comming, shot at his company, but at the last fled to the court gates, which

certaine

certaine pursued, and forced with shot to shut the Court Gates against them. In this repulse the said lord chamberlain and others were so amazed, that manie cried treason in the court, and had thought that the Earle of Pembroke, who was assaulting the taile of his enemies, hadde gone to Wyat, taking his part against the Quœne: there was running and crying out of Ladies and Gentlewomen, shutting of doores and Windowes, and such a shrikking and noise, as was wonderfull to heare. Wyat with his men marched till forward all along to Temple bar, and so through Fleetstreete till hee came to the Bell Sauage an Inne nigh vnto Ludgate, without resistance, his men going not in anie good order or array. It is saide, that at Strand, certaine of the Lorde treasurers band, to the number of three hundreth men, whereof the lorde Chidioke Powlet his sonne was captaine, met them, and so going on the one side, passed by them on the other side, without anie thing saying to them. Also this is more strange, the said Wyat and his company passed along by a great companie of harnessed men which stood on both sides the streates, without anie withstanding them. And as hee marched forward through Fleetstreete most with their swords drawne, some crying, Quœne Mary hath graunted our request, and giuen vs pardon: other said, the Quœne hath pardoned vs. Thus some of Wyats men, some say it was Wyat himselfe, came euen to Ludgate and knocked, calling to come in, saying there was Wyat, whome the quœne had graunted to haue their requests, but the lord William Howard stode at the gate, and saide, auaunt traitor, thou shalt not come in heere. Wyat a while staied, and rested him vppon a Stall ouer-against the Bell Sauadge gate, and at the last seeing hee could not get into the citie, and beeing deceiued of the aide hee hoped for, returned backe againe in arraie towardes Charing Crosse, and was neuer stopped till hee came at Temple barre, where certaine horsemen which came from the Ffelde, mette them in the face, and then beganne the fight againe, till Clarencius an Herault came and sayde to Maister Wyat: Sir, you were best by my counsell to yeelde, you see this daie is gone against you, and in resisting, you canne get no good, but bee the death of all these your souldiers, to your great perill of soule: perchance you maie finde the Queene mercifull, and the rather, if yee flint so great blondeshead as is like heere to be. VVyat herewith being somewhat astonied (although he saw his men bent to fight) said, Well, if I shall needes yeelde, I will yeelde me to a gentleman, to whome sir Mawrice Barkeley came straight, and bad him leape vp behinde him, and an other take Thomas Cobham and William Kneuet, and so carried them behinde them vpon their horses to the court. then was taking of men on all sides. It is saide, that in this conflict, one pikeman, setting his backe to the wall at Saint Iames, kept seauentéene horsemen off him a great time, and at the last was slaine. The whole number on both sides slaine at this battell passed not fortie persons, as farre as coulde bee learned by them that viewed the fielde, but there were manie sore hurt. The noyse of women and children, when the conflict was at Charing Crosse, was so great, that it was heard to the toppe of the white tower, and also the great shot was well discerned there out of Saint Iames fielde: there stood vpon the leades the Marques of Nouth-

Wyat taken.

hampton,

hampton, Sir Nicholas Poines, Sir Thomas Pope, Maister Iohn Seimer, and other.

About fiue of the clocke, Thomas Wyat, William Kneuet, Thomas Cobham, two brethren named Mantels, and Alexander Bret, were brought by sir Henry Ierningham by water to the tower prisoners, where sir Philip Denny receiued them at the bulwarke, and as Wyat passed by he saide, go traitor, there was neuer such a traitor in England: to whome sir Thomas Wyat turned and said, I am no traitor, I woulde thou shouldest well knowe, thou art more traitor than I, it is not the pointe of an honest man to call mee so, and so went forth; when he came to the tower gate, sir Thomas Bridges lieutenant tooke in through the wicket, first Mantel and said: Ah thou traitor, what hast thou and thy companie wrought? But he holding downe his head saide nothing: then came Thomas Kneuet, whome Maister Chamberlaine gentleman porter of the tower toke in: then came Alexander Bret, whome sir Thomas Pope toke by the bosome, saying: Oh traitor, how couldest thou find in thy heart to worke such a villanie, as to take wages, and being trusted ouer a bande of men, to fall to her enemies, returning against her in battell? Bret answered, yea, I haue offended in that case; then came Thomas Cobham whome Sir Thomas Poines tooke in, and saide, Alas maister Cobham, what winde headed pon to worke such treason? and hee answered, oh Sir, I was seduced. Then came in Sir Thomas Wyat, whome Sir Iohn Bridges tooke by the collar, and said; O thou villaine and vnhappie traitor, howe couldest thou finde in thy heart to worke such detestable treason to the Queenes Maiestie, who gaue thee thy life and liuing once already, although thou diddest before this time beare armes in the fielde against her, and nowe to yelde her battell, to her marueilous trouble and fright? If it were not (saieth he), but tho' the law must passe vpon thee, I woulde sticke thee through with my dagger; to the which Wyat holding his armes vnder his side, and loking greeuously with a grimme loke vpon the lieutenant, said, it is no mockery now, and so passed on. Thomas Wyat had on a shirt of maile, with sleeues very faire, thereon a veluet cassocke, and a pellow lace, with the windlace of his dag hanging thereon, and a paire of bootes and spurs on his legs, and on his head a faire hat of veluet, with broad bone worke lace about it. Wyat sent to the Tower.

VVilliam Kneuet, Thomas Cobham, and Bret were the like apparelled.

On the morrow, and next day following were brought into the tower prisoners, George Cobham, sir VVilliam Cobham, Anthony Kneuet, Hugh Booth, T. Vane, Robert Rudstone, sir George Harpar, Edward VVyat, Edw. Fog, George Moore, and Cutbert Vaughan; which Cutbert being a verie handsome man, Mr. Thomas Bridges at his entrie into the Tower, did wonderfully reproch him, calling him ranke traitor, and said that hanging was too good for him: to whom this Vaughan answered with a stout courage saying, I pray God to sende you charitie, and I would all men knew it; I am as true a man to the queene and common wealth, as any man that I shall leaue behinde mee, and for death, I care not for it.

The tenth of Februarie, the Earle of Huntington, and other Gentlemen,

and

and to the number of 300. horsemen, brought into the Tower as prisoner the D. of Suffolk, and the L. Iohn Grey his brother from Couentry, where the D. had remained three daies after his taking in the house and custody of Christopher Warren alderman there.

The 11. day sir Henry Isley, who had fled, was brought into the tower prisoner in an old freese coat, and old paire of hosen, all his apparell not worth 4. s. The same day came in two of the Culpeppers, one Cromer, and T. Rampton the duke of Suffolks secretary.

The 12. of Februarie being Monday, about tenne of the clocke, there went out of the tower to the scaffold on the tower hill, the L. Guilford Dudley, son to the D. of Northumberland, husbande to the lady Iane Gray, daughter to the D. of Suffolke, who at his going out, toke by the handes sir Anthony Browne, M. Iohn Throckmorton and many other gentlemen, praieng them to pray for him: and without the bulwarke gate M. Thomas Offley one of the sheriffs of London receiued him and brought him to the scaffold, where after a small declaration, he kneeled down and said his praiers, then holding vp his eies and handes to heauen, with teares, at the last he desired the people to pray for him, and after was beheaded: his body beeing laide in a car, and his head in a cloth, was brought into the chappell within the tower, where the lady Iane, whose lodging was in maister Partridges house, did see his deade carcasse taken out of the car, as well as shee did see him before aliue going to his death, a sight to hir worse than death.

By this time was there a scaffold made vpon the greene, ouer-against the white tower, for the ladie Iane to die vpon, who with hir husbande was appointed to haue been put to death on the Friday before, but was staied till then: this lady being nothing at all abashed, neither with feare of her owne death, which then approched, neither with the sight of the dead carcasse of her husband when he was brought into the chappell, came forth, the lieutenant leading her, with countenance nothing abashed, neither her eyes ante thing moistened with teares (although hir gentlewomen Elizabeth Tilney and mistresse Helen wonderfully wept) with a booke in her hand, wherin she praied vntil she came to the said scaffold, whereon when she was mounted, she was beheaded: whose deathes were the more hastened for feare of further troubles and stir for hir title, like as hir father had attempted.

The same day was brought into the tower as prisoner by the lord chamberlaine and 200. of the gard, Edward Courtney earle of Deuonshire, who as hee passed by the lieutenant, being asked the cause of his thither comming, answered he could not accuse himselfe.

The 14. and 15. of Februarie, about the number of 50. of Wyats faction were hanged on 20. paire of gallowes made for that purpose in diuers places about the citie.

The 17. of Februarie was proclaimation made, that all strangers shoulde auoid the realme within foure and twentie daies next ensuing, vpon paine of their goods to be confiscate, all free denizens, merchantes, and ambassadours excepted.

The

The same seuentéenth date of Februarie the Duke of Suffolke was conueied to Westminster by the clearke of checke and the guard, at his going out he went with a cheerefull and a verie stoute countenance, but at his returne verie pensiue and heauie, desiring all men to praie for him, the Lorde Courtney lying in the Bell tower saw both his going out and returning, hee beeing arraigned, and the earle of Arundell sitting vpon him in iudgement, hee saide it was no treason for a péere of the realme, as he was, to raise his power, and to make proclaimation, onely to auoid strangers out of the realme, and thereupon he asked the sergeants at law standing by whether it were or no, but they would say nothing: then was it laid to his charge, hee mette with 200. men in armes, the Quéenes lieutenant the earle of Huntington, which was treason against the Quéene, forsomuch as the lieutenant representeth the prince; to the which he answered, that he knew not the said earle to be such a lieutenant, but quoth he, I met him indéed with 50. men or thereabouts, and would not haue shrunke from him if I had had fewer, by which wordes hee was founde to bee guiltie of treason. Moreouer, he partly accused his brother the Lorde Thomas, who had, as he said, perswaded him rather to fly into his country, than to abide, sith it was to be feared, he should againe be committed to the tower, whereas being in his country amongst his friends and tenants, who durst fetch him? Touching other articles laid to his charge he said he neuer knew of them, sauing that one should say at his table once at supper, that he would vndertake for néed, only with 100. men to set the crowne vpon Courtneys head, and so hee was condemned.

The 18. of Februarie, Alexander Bret one of the Captaines of the Londoners that fled to Wyat, and 22. persons more of the Kentishmen, were deliuered to the sherife of Kent, to be executed in diuers places of Kent, but for the most part, they were all pardoned. This Bret going out of the tower embraced M. Chamberlaine the gentleman porter, & desired him to commende him to sir T. VVyat, then praieng al men to pray for him, he said, I am worthy of no lesse punishment than I nowe go to suffer, for besides my owne offence, I refused life and grace three times offered, but I trust God doeth all for the best, that I might repent, and thereby obtaine grace.

The 20. of Februarie VVilliam Thomas late clearke of the counsel, VVilliam VVinter, and Sir Nicholas Throckmorton were sent to the Tower, and on the next morrow were Sir Iames a Crofts and the Lorde Thomas Grey sent to the Tower.

The 20. of Februarie certaine of VVyats faction, to the number of 400. and more were ledde to Westminster, coupled togither with halters about their necks, and there in the tiltyard, the Q. (who loked forth of hir gallery) pardoned them. Kentishmen pardoned.

The 23. of Februarie Henry Grey duke of Suffolke was beheaded on the tower hill, his wordes on the scaffold were these: Good people, I am come hither to die, being iustly condemned for my disobedience against the Q. highnesse, of whom I do most humbly aske forgiuenes: doctor VVeston answered and saide, my Lord, her grace hath already forgiuen you: then saide the Duke, D. of Suffolke beheaded.

I beſeech you all good people, to let me bee an example to you for obedience to the Q. and the magiſtrates, for the contrary therof hath brought me to this end. I deſire you all to beare me witnes, that I die a true chriſtian man, beleeuing to be ſaued by none other meanes but by almighty God, through the paſſion of his ſon Jeſus Chriſt: and now I praie you to praie with mee: then kneeling downe, & doctor Weſton with him, they ſaid the pſalme of *Miſerere mei Deus*, and *In te Domine ſperaui*, the duke one verſe, and doctor Weſton another, which done, he put off his gowne and dublet, knit the kerchiefe about his eies, held vp his hands, laid his head ouer the block, which head at one ſtroke was taken from him.

The 26. of Februarp William Thomas had almoſt ſlain himſelfe, by thruſting a knife vnder his paps.

The 11. of March, Wil. L. Howard admirall of England, was created baron of Effingham at Weſtminſter.

The 14. of March, the earle of Bedford L. pruy ſeale, chiefe ambaſſador to the prince of Spain, ſet forward on his voiage to fetch him hither.

The 15. of March, ſir T. Wyat was arraigned at Weſtminſter, of whoſe arraignement you maie reade in larger volumes, wherein I haue beſtowed my labors.

The 18. of March being Palmſunday, the lady Elizabeth the Q. ſiſter, was by the L. treaſurer and the earle of Suſſex conueied to the tower of London, from Weſtminſter by water.

The 24. of March, were releaſed out of the tower, the Marques of Northampton, the L. Cobham, ſir Wil. Cobham, John Few Williams, Culpepper, H. Vane, Iohn Harington, Corbet, &c.

Parliament. The 2. of Aprill, the parliament began at Weſtminſter, which was appointed to haue bin kept at Oxford.

Barons created. The 5. of Aprill ſir I. Williams was created baron of Tame at S. Iames.

The 7. of Aprill ſir Edw. North was created baron of Chartlege by writ at S. Iames.

Cat hanged in Cheape. The 8. of Aprill, ſir Iohn a Bridges was created baron Chandois of Sudley at S. Iames. The ſame 8. of Aprill, being then Sunday, a cat with hir head ſhorn, and the likenes of a veſtment caſt ouer hir, with hir fore fæt tied togither, and a round pece of paper like a ſinging cake betwixt them, was hanged on a gallowes in Cheape, nere to the croſſe, in the pariſh of S. Mathew, which cat being taken downe, was caried to the Biſh. of London, and he cauſed the ſame to be ſhewed at Pauls croſſe, by the preacher D. Pendleton. The 10 of Aprill D. Cranmer archb. of Cant. D. Ridley B. of London, and Hugh Latimer once B. of Worceſter, were conueied priſoners from the tower of London to Windſor, and after from thence to Oxford, there to diſpute with the diuines and learned men of the contrary opinion.

Diſputation at Oxford.

Thomas Wyat beheaded. The 11. of Aprill, ſir Th. Wyat was beheaded on the tower hill, and after quartered, his quarters were ſet vp in diuers places, and his head on the gallowes at Hay hill nere Hyde parke, from whence it was ſhortly after ſtolne and conueied awaie. This ſir Tho. Wyat before his comming down out of

the

the tower, was conueied by the L. chamberlaine, and the Lord Shandos to the tower ouer the water gate, where the L. Courtney laie, and there he remained in talk more than halfe an houre, but what was spoken betwixt them I know not. Then was he brought downe, and at the garden pale, the L. chamberlain tooke his leaue of him, and likewise did maister secretary Bourne, to whome sir Thomas Wyat saide, I praie you to pray for me, and be a meane to the quéene for my poore wife and children, and if it might haue pleased her grace to haue granted me my life, I trust to haue done her such good seruice as should haue recompenced mine offence: but since not, I beseech God to haue mercie on me, to the which maister Bourne made answere, and so Wyat came toward the hill betwixt Doctor Weston and the lord Shandos: when he was vpon the scaffold, he desired al men to pray for him and with him, and then said in effect these or the like words: Good people, I come presentlie here to die, being thereto lawfully and worthily condemned, for I haue sore offended against God and the quénes matestie, I trust God hath forgiuen me, and will take mercy vpon me; I beseech the M. matestie also of forgiuenes: She hath forgiuen you quoth Doctor Weston: then, quoth he, let euerie man beware howe hee taketh any thing in hande against the higher powers, vnlesse God be prosperable to his purpose it will neuer take good effect or successe, whereof you may now learn of me, and I pray God I may bee the last example in this place, for that or any other like. And where it is said and noised abroad, that I should accuse the lady Elizabeth and the lord Courtney, it is not so good people: for I assure you, neither they nor any other now yonder in holde was priuie of my rising before I began, as I haue declared no lesse to the M. councell, and that is most true. Then said doctor Weston at those words, marke this my masters, he saith that, that which hee hath shewed to the councell in writing of them is true, and so without anie more talke sir Tho. Wyat turned him, and put off his gowne, vntrussed his points, then taking the earle of Huntington, the L. Hastings, sir T. Stranguish, and many other by the handes, hee plucked off his dublet and wastcoat, and then kneeling downe, laid his head to the block, and raising himselfe againe on his knées after a few wordes spoken, with his eies lifted vp toward heauen, hee knit the kerchefe ouer his eies, and holding vp his handes, sodainelie laide downe his heade, which the executioner tooke from him at one stroke. Row. Lea.

The seuentéenth of Aprill, were led to the Guilde Hall in London to bee arraigned sir Nicholas Throckmorton and sir Iames a Croft, Robert Winter, and Cuthbert Vaughan beeing also had thither to witnes against them, where that day was no more arraigned but sir Nicholas Throckmorton, who tarrying from 7. of the clocke in the morning vntill almost fiue at night was by verdit of the Jurie quit; hee pleaded not guiltie, and that he was consenting to nothing &c. But the Jurie which quit him, was commanded to appeere before the Councell at an houres warning, and the losse of fiue hundred pounde the péece. Sir Nicholas Throckmorton arraigned.

On Saint Marks day or the 25. of Aprill, they were before the councell in the Starred Chamber, and thence about two of the clocke Thomas Wheetstone

Haberdasher

Haberdasher foreman, and Emanuell Lucar merchant tailor were sent to the tower, and the rest to the Fleet prisoners.

Lord Thomas Grey beheaded

The 27. of Aprill, lord T. Grey, brother to the late duke of Suffolke, was beheaded on the tower hill.

The 29. of Aprill, sir Iames a Croft knight was arraigned in the Guilde hall of London, found guiltie of high treason, and had iudgement.

The 9. of May, VVilliam Thomas esquire was arraigned at the same Guild hall, for conspiring the queenes death, was found guilty, and had iudgement of death.

The 14. of May Garrard fitz Garret was created earle of Kildare, and baron of Dpheley, for him and his heires, at S. Iames.

William Thomas executed.

The 18. of May, VVilliam Thomas was drawn from the tower of London to Tiborne, and there hanged, headed, and quartered, who said at his death hee died for his country, &c.

The 19. of May, lady Elizabeth was conueied from the tower of London by water to Richmond, from thence to Windsor, and so by the lorde VVilliams to Ricote in Oxfordshire, and from thence to Woodstocke.

The earle of Deuonshire sent to Fodringay.

The 25. of May, Edw. Courtney earle of Deuonshire was deliuered out of the tower by sir Ralph Chamberlaine of Suffolk, and sir Th. Tresham knights, who conueied him to Fodringay castle in Northampton shire, there to remaine vnder their custody.

A gun shot at the preacher.

The 10. of June, doctor Pendleton preached at Pauls crosse, at whome a gun was shot, the pellet whereof went very neere him, and light on the church wall. But the shooter could not be found.

The 22. of June, was proclaimation made, forbidding the shooting in handguns, and bearing of weapons.

Ann. reg. 2. A spirit in a wall.

The 15. of July, Elizabeth Croft a wench about the age of 18. yeares, stoode vpon a scaffold at Pauls crosse all the sermon time, where she confessed, that she being mooued by diuers lewde persons thereunto, had vpon the 14. of March last before past, counterfeited certain speeches in a wall of an house without Aldersgate of London, through the which the people of the whole Citie were wonderfully molested, for that all men might heare the voice, but not see her person. Some saide it was an angel: a voice from heauen, some the holy ghost, &c. This was called the spirit in the wall: shee had laine whistling in a strange whistle made for that purpose, which was giuen hir by one Drakes, seruant to sir Anthony Neuill: then were there diuers companions, one named Myles, clearke of S. Butolphs without Aldersgate, a plaier, a weauer, Hill clearke of S. Leonardes in Foster lane, and other confederate with hir, which putting themselues among the preasse, took vpon them to interpret what the spirit said, expressing certaine seditious words against the queene, the prince of Spaine, the masse, confession, &c.

The 19. of July the prince of Spaine arriued at Southampton, the 4. daie after he came to Winchester in the euening, and there going to church was honorably receiued of the bishop, and a great number of nobles: the next daie he met with the queene, with whom he had long familiar talke.

On

On S. Iames day, the marriage was solemnized betweene him and queene Mary, at which time the emperours ambassador being present, pronounced, that in consideration of the marriage, the emperour had giuen vnto his sonne the kingdome of Naples. The solemnitie of this marriage being ended, the king of heraults proclaimed their title as followeth: Philip and Mary by the grace of God, King and Queene of England, Fraunce, Naples, Hierusalem, and Ireland, defenders of the faith, princes of Spaine and Sicilie, archdukes of Austrich, dukes of Millaine, Burgundy and Brabant, counties of Aspurge, Flanders and Tyrroll: which being ended, the trumpets blew, the king and queene came forth hand in hand, and two swords borne before them. Shortly after king Philip and queene Mary remooued from Winchester to Basing, from thence to Windsor, where on the 5. of August the king was stalled in the noble order of the garter, where he kept a great feast, and at that time the earle of Sussex was made knight of the garter.

The marriage of king Philip and queene Marie.

The kings style.

The 11. of August, the king and queene remooued to Richmond, from thence by water to Southwarke, accompanied with the noble men and ladies, the king in one barge, the queene in another, & landed at the bishop of Winchesters staires neere to S. Mary Oueries church, and so passed through that place and parke into Suffolke place, where they rested that night. And the next day being the 18. of August, they rode through Southwarke ouer the bridge, and so through London, where they were with great prouision receiued of the citizens, pageants in places accustomed, the crosse in Cheape new gilt, &c. and passing through Paules churchyard, a man came sliding, as it were flying vpon a rope, frō Paules steeple down to the deanes wall.

A mā sliding from Paules steeple.

The second of September, sir Anthony Browne maister of the kings horse, was made vicount Montague for him & his heires males, with the gift of twenty marks the yeare of Surrey, at Hampton court.

In this moneth of September, deceased Thomas Howard duke of Norfolke at Framingham in Norfolke, and was honorably buried amongst his ancestors.

The 2. of October was brought into the tower of London twentie carts laden with 97. chests, each of them a yard and fower inches long, filled with siluer bolion to be coyned, conducted by certaine Spaniards, and English men of the kings gard.

Siluer bolion brought to the tower.

The fire & twentieth of October, a Spaniard was hanged at Charing crosse for killing of an English man in fight there, he was seruant to sir George Gifford, there was offered for his life by other strangers fiue hundred crownes, but all that would not stay iustice.

A Spaniard hanged.

The 4. of November being sonday, three priests that being maried, would not leaue their wiues, and two lay men that had two wiues apeece, were punished alike, for they went on procession about Paules church in white sheetes ouer them, and either of them a taper of ware in the one hand, and a rod in the other, and so they sate before the preacher at Paules crosse during the sermon, and then were displed on the heades with the same rods.

The twelfth of November, the parliament began at Westminster.

Cardinall Poole came into Englād.

The 24. of November, cardinall Poole came out of Brabant into England,

and was received with much honour: he was by parliament restored to his old dignitie that he was put from by king Henry, and shortly after came into the parliament house, where the king, queene, and other states were present. Then he declared the cause of his legacie, first exhorting them to returne to the communion of the church, and restore to the pope his due authoritie. Secondly, he advertised them to giue thankes to God that had sent them so blessed a king and queene. Finally, he signified, for so much as they had with great gentlenesse restored him to his honour and dignitie, that he most earnestly desired to see them restored to the heauenly court, and vnitie of the church.

The next day the whole court of parliament drew out the forme of a supplication, the summe whereof was, that they greatly repented them of that schisme that they had liued in, and therefore desired the king, queene, and cardinall, that by their meanes they might be restored to the bosome of the church, and obedience of the sea of Rome.

The next day the king, queene, and cardinall being present, the lord chancellor declared what the parliament had determined concerning the cardinals request, and offered to the king and queene the supplication before mentioned, which being read, the cardinall in a large oration declared how acceptable repentance was in the sight of God, &c. And immediatly making prayer vnto God by authoritie to him committed, absolued them. When all this was done, they went all vnto the chappell, and there singing *Te Deum* with great solemnitie, declared the ioy that for this reconciliation was pretended.

The 28. of November, the lord maior of London, with the aldermen in scarlet, and the commons in their liueries assembled in Paules church at nine of the clocke in the forenoone, where doctor Chedsey one of the prebends preached in the quire in presence of the bishop of London, and nine other bishops, and read a letter sent from the queenes councell, the tenor whereof was, that the bishop of London should cause *Te Deum* to be sung in all the churches of his diocesse, with continuall prayers for the Queenes maiestie, which was conceiued and quicke with child: the letter being read, he began his sermon with this Antheme: *Ne timeas Maria, inuenisti enim gratiam apud Deum.* His sermon being ended, *Te Deum* was sung, and solemne procession was made of *Saluefesta dies*, all the circuit of the church.

The queene bruted to be with child.

The second of December, cardinall Poole came from Lambeth by water and landed at Paules wharfe, and from thence to Paules church, with a crosse, two pillars, and two pollaxes of siluer borne before him. He was there receiued by the lord chauncellor with procession, where he taried till the king came from Westminster by land at eleuen of the clocke, and then the Lord chancellor entred Pauls crosse and preached a sermon, taking for his theame these words: *Fratres, scientes quia hora est iam nos de somno surgere, &c.* In the which sermon he declared, that the king and queene had restored the Pope to his supremacie, and the three estates assembled in the parliament, representing the whole body of the realme, had submitted themselues to the same. The sermon being ended, the king departed towards Westminster, and with him the lord cardinall, with the crosse onely borne before him.

The king & the cardinall came to Paules and heard the sermon.

The

The 27. of December, Emanuell Philibert prince of Piemont, and duke of Sauoy, with other lords, were receiued at Grauesend by the lord prime scale and other, and so conueyed along the riuer of Thamis vnder London bridge to Westminster. Prince of Piemont.

The ninth of Januarie, the prince of Orange being receiued at Grauesend, was conueyed along the riuer of Thamis, & landed at the duke of Suffolks place. 1555 Prince of Orange.

The 12. of Januarie, the said prince of Orange, with other lords, was conducted by the lord chamberlaine to the tower of London, where was shewed vnto him the ordinance, artillerie, munitions, and armorie, with the mint, &c. and so was brought into the white tower, from whence as he returned through the long gallerie, all the prisoners saluted him, vnto whom the prince said, he was sorie for their captiuitie, and trusted the king and queene would be good vnto them: at his departing from the tower, he gaue the gunners ten peeces of Flemish gold at 5. s. the peece, and the warders other ten peeces as a reward.

The 18. of Januarie, the lord chancelor, the bishop of Ely, the lord treasurer, the earle of Shrewsburie, the controller of the Queenes house, secretarie Bourne, and sir Richard Southwell maister of the ordinance and armorie, came to the tower of London, and there sitting in commission, discharged prisoners as followeth: the late archbishop of Yorke, sir Iohn Rogers, sir Iames Crofts, sir Nicholas Throckmorton, sir Nicholas Arnold, sir Edward Warner, sir George Harper, sir William Sentlow, sir Andrew Dudley, sir Gawin Carrew knights, William Gibs esquire, Cuthbert Vaughan, Harington, Tremaile, and others. Prisoners discharged.

The fourth of Februarie, Iohn Rogers vicar of Saint Sepulchers was brēt in Smithfield. Iohn Rogers brent.

The seuenth of Februarie, the lord Strange being married to the earle of Cumberlands daughter at the court, the same day at night was a goodly pastime of Iuogo de Canne by cressel light. Iuogo de Can.

The 12. of Februarie, 99. hoyles, and two carries laden with treasure of gold and siluer brought out of Spaine, was conueyed through the citie to the tower of London, vnder the conduct of sir Thomas Gresham, the queenes merchant, and other.

The 18. of Februarie, Thomas Thurlebe bishop of Ely, and Anthonie lord Montacute with other, tooke their iourney towards Rome, ambassadors from the king and queene. Ambassadors sent to Rome.

Against Easter, the lord Courtney earle of Deuonshire, came againe to the court, and about ten daies after, the lady Elizabeth came likewise to the queene, both at Hampton court, where the queene had taken her chamber to be deliuered of child, but all proued contrarie: for she neither had child, nor great hope to haue any. Earle of Deuonshire deliuered.

The 14. of March, Iohn Russell earle of Bedford died at his house neare Iuie bridge by the Sauoy, sometimes the bishop of Carlils house, and on the 22. of the same moneth was conueyed to Chenies in Buckingham shire his chiefe house, and there honorably enterred.

On Easter day, a priest sometime a monke of Ely and also of Bicster named William Branch *alias* Flower, with a wood knife wounded another priest as he William Flower brent at Westminster.

was ministring the sacrament to the people in Saint Margarets church at Westminster: for the which fact, the said William Flower the 24. of April had his right hand smitten off, and for opinions in matters of religion was burned in the sanctuarie nigh to Saint Margarets churchyard.

Ambassadors sent ouer to Calais.

In May, cardinall Poole, the lord chancelor, the earle of Arundale, and the lord Paget went ouer sea to Calais, and neere vnto Marke treated with the emperours and French kings commissioners, for a peace to be had betweene the said princes, cardinall Poole being president there, who returned againe into England about the midst of June, without any agreement making.

A counterfeit king Edward whipped.

The tenth of May, William Constable *alias* Fetherstone, a Millers sonne about the age of eighteene yeares, who had published king Edward the first to be aliue, and sometime named himselfe to be king Edward the first, was taken at Eltham in Kent, and conueyed to Hampton court, where being examined by the counsell, he required pardon, and said he will not what he did, but as he was perswaded by many: from thence he was sent to the Marshalsey, & the 22. of May he was caried in a cart through London to Westminster with a paper on his head, wherein was written, that he had named himselfe to be king Edward. After he had bene carried about Westminster hall before the Iudges, he was whipped about the pallace, and through Westminster into Smithfield, and then banished into the North, in which countrie he was borne, and had bene sometime Lackey to sir Peter Mewtas.

Bradford brent.

Ann. reg. 3.

The first of July, Iohn Bradford was burned in Smithfield. This Bradford was a man of very sober and honest life, and therefore the bishops would gladly haue had him recant and abiure his opinions.

The 12. of August, was a terrible fight on the sea betweene the Duchmen & Frenchmen neare to Rumney marsh, whereas eleuen ships were brent & sunke.

In this moneth of August, in Suffolke at a place by the sea side, all of hard stone and pibble, called in those parts a shelfe, lying betweene the townes of Orford and Alborough, where neuer grew grasse, nor any earth was euer seene, there chanced in this barren place, suddenly to spring vp without any tillage or sowing, great abundance of pease, whereof the poore gathered (as men iudged) aboue an hundred quarters, yet remained some ripe, and some blossoming, as many as euer there were before, to the which place rode the bishop of Norwich, and the lord Willoughby, with others in great number, who found nothing but hard rockie stone the space of three yards vnder the roots of those peason, which roots were great and long, and very sweet, &c.

The necessitie of the poore by God relieued.

Disputation at Christs hospitall, as had bene accustomed at S. Bartholomewes in Smithfield.

On Bartholomew euen, after the lord maior and aldermen of London had ridden about Saint Bartholomewes faire, they came to Christs hospitall within Newgate, where they heard a disputation betweene the scholers of Paules schoole, Saint Anthonies schoole, and the scholers of the said hospitall, for whom was prouided three games, which was three pens, the best penne of siluer and gilt, valued at 5. s. woon by a scholer of Saint Anthonies schoole, and the maister of that schoole had 6. s. 8. pence: the second, a pen of siluer parcell gilt, valued at 4. s. woon by a scholer of Paules schoole, and his maister had 5. s. in money: the third a pen of siluer, valued at 3. s. woon by a scholer of the said hospitall, and his maister

ſter had 4. ſhillings, and there were two priests maiſters of Art appointed for iudges, which had each of them a ſiluer rule for their paines, valued at fiue ſhillings eight pence the peece. The diſputation being ended, the maior and aldermen entred the hall where the children of the hoſpitall vſe to dine, and had fruit and wine and ſo departed.

King Philip went ouer ſeas, and landed at Calais on the fourth of September, where he was honorably receiued by the lord deputie, & the maior of the ſtaple of Calais, an alderman of London named ſir Andrew Iudde, who preſented his maieſtie with a purſe and a thouſand marks of gold in it: that night the king was lodged in Staple inne: & on the morrow he departed from Calais toward Bruſſels in Brabant, to viſit the emperor his father: he gaue at his departing among the ſouldiers of the towne of Calais a thouſand crownes of gold, and there accompanied him in his iourney of Engliſh lords, the earle of Arundel lord ſteward of the Queenes houſe, the earle of Pembroke, the earle of Huntington, and others. King Philip went ouer into Flāders.

On Michaelmas euen, the priſoners that lay in the counter in Breadſtreete, were remooued to a new counter made in Woodſtreet of the cities purchaſe and building, the which remouing was confirmed by a common counſell aſſembled at the Guild hall for that purpoſe. New counter in Woodſtreet.

On the laſt of September, by occaſion of great wind and raine that had fallen was ſuch great flouds, that that morning ỹ kings palace at Weſtminſter, & Weſtminſter hal was ouerflowne with water vnto the ſtaire foot going to the Chancerie and Kings bench, ſo that when the lord maior of London ſhould come to preſent the ſheriffes to the barons of the exchequer, all Weſtminſter hall was full of water, and by report there that morning, a whirrie man rowed with his boat ouer Weſtminſter bridge into the pallace court, and ſo through the Staple gate, & all the wooll ſtaple into the kings ſtreete: and all the marſhes on Lambeth ſide were ſo ouerflowne, that the people from Newington church could not paſſe on foote, but were caried by boate from the ſaid church to the pinfold, neare to Saint Georges in Southwarke. Great land waters.

The 16. of October, doctor Ridley & maiſter Latimer were brent at Oxford. Ridley and Latimer brent.

In October and November a parliament was holden, in the which the queen yeelded vp vnto the ſpirituall men, the firſt fruits & tenths of all biſhoprikes, benefices, & eccleſiaſticall liuings. In this parliament was graunted to the king & queen a ſubſidie of the laitie from 5. pound to 10. pound, 8. pence of the pound, frō 10. pound to 20. pound 12. pence of the pound, & from 20. pound vpward 16. d. of the pound, & all ſtrangers double, and the clergie granted 6. s. of the pound. First fruits and tenths reſtored to the clergie. A ſubſidie.

Doctor Storie and other were appointed by the cardinall to viſite euery pariſh church in London and Middleſex, to ſee their roodlofts repaired, and the images of the crucifix, with Mary and Iohn thereon to be fired.

The 12. of November, Stephen Gardener biſhop of Wincheſter chancelor of England deceaſed at Yorke place, or White hall by Weſtminſter, whoſe body was from thence conueyed by water to Wincheſter houſe in Southwarke, where being incloſed in lead, he was laid in a vault of bricke made for that purpoſe, in S. Mary Oueries church, and there reſted for a time, but the pawle of blacke veluet laid ouer his coffine was ſtolen and ſo cleane conueyed away, that the D. Gardener deceaſed.

same was neuer heard of. From thence on the foure and twentith of Februarie next following, he was translated and caried from the said parish church of Saint Mary Duerie, through Southwarke toward Winchester, there to be buried in his cathedrall church as he had appointed by his testament, his corps was set in a chariot couered with blacke, and a picture made like vnto him, lying on his coffin, with a miter on the head, a coape of cloth of gold on the bodie of the picture, gloues on the hands, rings on the fingers, &c. The lord vicount Montacute, the bishop of Ely, and other his executors riding to the burial with aboue two hundred horse of gentlemen and yeomen all in blacke, &c.

1556 On New-yeares day, the Queene gaue the great seale to doctor Nicholas Heath archbishop of Yorke, and made him lord chancelor: she likewise gaue the priuie seale to the lord Paget, and made him lord priuie seale: these were both Lō-doners borne.

In this moneth of Februarie, the lord maior of London and the aldermen entred into Bridewell, and tooke possession thereof, according to the gift of king Edward, now confirmed by Queene Mary.

The millers son faining to be king Edward.

The 26. of Februarie, William Constable *alias* Fetherston was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, who had caused letters to be cast abrode, that king Edward was aliue, and to some he shewed himselfe to be king Edward, so that many persons both men and women were troubled by him, for the which sedition the said William had bene once whipped and deliuered, as is aforesaid: But now he was condemned, and the 13. of March he was drawne, hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Blazing starre. A blasing starre was seene at all times of the night, the 6. 7. 8. 9. and 10. of March.

Doctor Crā-mer brent. The 21. of March, doctor Cranmer archbishop of Canterburie was burned at Oxford: and the same day cardinall Poole sang his first masse at Greenewich in the friers church: on sunday next he was consecrated archbishop of Canterbury.

Cardinall Poole archbishop. The 25. of March, being the feast of the Annunciation of our lady, cardinall Poole receiued the pall with the then vsed ceremonies and solemnities at Bow church in Cheape.

Newgate on fire The 28. of March, at ten of the clocke before noone, a part of Newgate called Mannings hall, was brent to the ground, and no prisoners lost. A conspiracie was made by certaine persons, whose purpose was to haue robbed the M. exche-quer, called the receit of the exchequer, in the which there was of the M. treasure aboue 50000. l. the same time, to the intent they might be able to maintain war against the queene. This matter was vttered by one of the conspiracie named White, whereby Vdall, Throckmorton, Peckham, Iohn Daniel & Stanton were apprehended, and diuerse others fled into Fraunce. Sir Anthonie Kingstone was apprehended, and died by the way comming toward London.

Conspiracy.

Throckmor-ton and o-ther execu-ted. The 28. of Aprill, Iohn Throckmorton and Richard Vdall were drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered.

The 19. of May, William Stanton was likewise executed.

The 8. of June, William Rosley, Iohn Dedike, and Iohn Bedell were executed at Tyborne.

The

The 18. of June, one Sands a younger ſon to the lord Sands, was hanged at S. Thomas of Watering, for a robberie that he and other had committed on Whitſonday laſt, of 4000. l'. Sands hanged for robberie.

The 27. of June, 13. perſons being condemned for opinions concerning the Sacrament, were brent at Stratford the Bow. Thirteene brent at Stratford.

The 8. of July, Henry Peckham ſonne to ſir Edmond Peckham, and Iohn Daniel were hanged and headed on the Tower hill, for being of counſell with the that ſhould haue robbed the queenes treaſure of her exchequer, and their bodies buried in Barking church. *Ann. reg. 4.* Daniel and Peckham.

About this time one Cleber, which ſometime kept a ſchoole at Dys in Norfolke, with three brethren, whoſe names were Lincolne pretended an inſurrection, and would haue gathered the people at a marriage, vnto the which the brethren promiſed either of them to bring an 100. horſe with men: at which time by them appointed, the ſaid Cleber gaue charge to a ſeruant of his, to watch in a lane nigh to the church where they ſhould meete, and aſſoone as he ſaw any horſe-man comming thitherward, to giue him warning with all ſpeed. So it chaunced (by the will of God) that certaine men riding through that lane to ſome other place about their buſineſſe, came about ſuch an houre as Cleber had appointed, vpon ſight of which men, his ſaid ſeruant returned to his maiſter, and told him that his friends were come: & immediatly the ſaid Cleber ſtoode vp in the parith church of Parſle, and read a traiterous proclamation of purpoſe prepared, which being ended, and ſeeing his part was too weake, for that his mates were not come, began to flye: but one maiſter Shireman purſued and tooke him at a towne called Eye in Suffolke, and was kept in priſon vntill the next Seſſions at S. Edmondſburie, and his three mates being brought to him, were there all together drawne, hanged and quartered. Conſpiracie in Norfolke.

In the laſt yeare began the hot burning feuers, wherof died many old perſons, ſo that in London there died 7. aldermen in the ſpace of 10. moneths, whoſe names were, Henry Herdſon, who deceaſed the 22. of December, 1555. ſir Richard Dobs, late maior, ſir William Laxton late maior, ſir Henry Hoblethorne late maior, ſir Iohn Champneis blind, late maior, ſir Iohn Ayleffe late ſherife, & ſir Iohn Greſham late maior, who deceaſed the 23. of October anno 1556. Seuen aldermen deceaſed in Londō

This yeare, on the 19. of September the roſe pence being baſe monies coyned in the raigne of Henry the 8. and Edward the 6. were by proclamation forbidden to be any longer currant in England, but in Ireland to paſſe as before. Abbot of Weſtminſter

The 21. of November, Iohn Fecknam late deane of Paules in London, was made abbot of Weſtminſter, was ſtalled, and tooke poſſeſſion of the ſame: and 14. monkes more receiued the habite with him that day of the order of S. Bennet. False accuſer ſet on the pillorie and brent in both cheekes: would to God all ſuch falſ accuſers were ſo well marked, wherby they mought be knowne for ſuch as they are.

The ſaid 21. of November, a man was brought from Weſtminſter hall riding with his face to the horſe taile, and a paper on his head, to the ſtandard in cheape, & there ſet on the pillorie, and then burned with an hote yron on both his cheekes, with two letters F. and A. for Falſe Accuſing one of the court of the common place in Weſtminſter of treaſon: the like iuſtice I once wiſhed to the like accuſer of his maiſter and eldeſt brother, but it was anſwered, that in ſuch caſe could be no remedie, though the accuſer himſelfe were in the ſame fact found the principall

pall offender: where through it followeth, the accuser neuer shewed signe of shame (the way to Repentance) but terribly curseth, and blasphemously sweareth he neuer committed any such act, though the same be registred before the honorable, the Queenes Maiesties high Commissioners: and what horrible slaunders, by libelling and otherwise with threats of murther he dayly vttereth against me, the knower of all secrets, God I meane, knoweth, vnto whom I refer my cause, being comforted with this sentence of the prophet Dauid: Fret not thy selfe with
Psal. 37. these cursed harmefull men, neither enuie angerly these workers of wickednesse, for like grasse anon shall they be cut downe, and like the greene fresh bent of the flower shall they wither away, &c.

A stranger would haue murthered the keeper of Newgate.

The 16. of December, Gregorie Carpenter, blacke smith, a Frenchman borne, was arraigned for making counterfeite keyes, wherewith to haue opened the lockes of Newgate, to haue slaine the keeper, and let foorth the prisoners, at which time of his arraignement, hauing conueyed a knife into his sleeue, he thrust it into the side of William Whittents his fellow prisoner, who had giuen witnesse against him, so that he was in great perill of death thereby, for the which fact he was immediately taken from the barre into the streete before the Iustice hall, where his hand being first taken off, he was hanged on a gibbet set vp for that purpose: the keeper of Newgate was arraigned and indicted for that the said prisoner had weapon about him, and his hands loose which should haue beene bound.

1557. Gun shot into the Court at Greenewich.

The 4. of Ianuarie, a ship before Greenewich (the Court being there) shot off hir Ordinance, one peece being charged with a bullet of stone, which passed through the wals of the Court, and did no more hurt.

Ambassador from Russia and Muscouia.

In the yeere 1556. an Ambassadour from the high and mightie Euan Vasiliuich Emperour of all Russia, great Duke of Volidemer, Moscouia and Nouogrode, Emperour of Cassan and of Astrachan, &c. sent by the Sea from the port of Saint Nicholas in Russia, his honorable Ambassadour surnamed Osep Napea, to the famous and excellent Princes Philip and Marie, King and Queene of England with certaine letters, together with certaine presents and gifts, as a manifest argument of a mutuall amitie to be made and continued betweene their Maiesties and subiectes, for the commodities of both Realmes, and people: which Ouator was the twentieth of Iulie imbarked in a good English ship named the Edward Bonauenture, belonging to the company of the English Merchaunts, Richard Chancelor being graund Pilote, and Iohn Bucklande Maister of the said ship. In which was laden, ware, oyle, tallow, furres, felts, yarne, &c. to the summe of twentie thousand pound sterling, together with sixteene Russies: Ouer and aboue ten other Russies shipped in an other ship called Bona Speranza, with goods to the value of fiue thousand pound sterling, which ships in their iourney towards the coast of England, were by contrarie winds seuered the one from the other, to wit, the said Bona Speranza with two other English ships, the one named the Philip and Marie, the other the Confidentia, were driuen on the coast of Norway, where the said Confidentia was seene to perish on a rocke, and the Bona Speranza seemed to winter there. The third being the Philip and Marie, arriued in the Thamis

Thamis nigh London ỳ 18. of Aprill, in ỳ yeare 1557. The Edward Bonaucture trauersing the seas foure moneths: finally the tenth of Nouember the said yeare 1557. arriued within the Scottish coastes, where by extreme stormes, the said ship being beaten from her ground, takles, was driuen vpon the rockes on shore, where she brake and split in peeces, in such sort, as the grand pilote, taking the boate, of the said ship, trusting to attaine the shore, and so to saue the bodie of the said ambassadour, and seauen of the companie, the same boate was by darke night ouerwhelmed and drowned, wherein perished, not onely the said graund pilote, with seauen Russies, but also diuerse mariners, the ambassadour with a few others with much difficultie saued. In which shipwracke not onely the said shippe was broken, but also the goods laden in her was by the rude people of the countrie, rifled and carried away. As soone as by letters it was to the company in London knowne of the losse of their pilote, men, goods, and ships: the Merchants obtained the Queenes letters to the Lady Dowager of Scotland, for the gentle entertainment of the said Ambassador with his traine, and restitution of his goods, & also addressed two Gentlemen, maister Lawrence Hussie doctor of the ciuill Law, and George Gilpin with money, and other requisites into Scotland, to comfort him and his there, and also to conduct him into England, so that on the 14. of Februarie, the said Ambassador left Scotland, comming towards England, hauing attending vpon him the said two English Gentlemen and others, came the 18. day of Februarie to Barwike, where he was honorably receiued by the Lord Wharton. Lord Warden of the east Marches: he prosecuting his voyage vntill the 27. of Februarie, approched the citie within 12. miles, where he was receiued with 80. merchants with chains of gold, and goodly apparell, riding, who conducting him to a merchants house fower miles from London, receiued there a quantitie of gold, veluet, & silke, with all furniture thereto requisite: the next day being the last of Februarie, he was by the merchants aduenturers for Russia, to the number of 140. persons, and so many or more seruants in one liuerie, conducted towards the citie of London, where by the way he had not onely the hunting of the fore, &c. but also by the Queenes Maiesties commandement was receiued by the Viscount Montague, he being accompanied with diuers lustie knights, esquiers, gentlemen and yeomen, to the number of 300. horses, led him to the north parts of the Citie of London, where, by 4. merchants richly apparelled, was presented to him a faire richly trapped horse, together with a footecloth of crimosin veluet, enriched with gold laces, whereupon ỳ ambassador mounted, riding towards Smithfield bars, the L. maior accompanied with the aldermen in skarlet did receiue him, and so riding thorough the citie of London, in the middle betweene the lord maior and Viscount Montague, a great number of merchants, and notable personages riding before, was conducted into his lodging in Fanchurch streete. At his first entrance into his chãber, there was presented vnto him on the queenes behalfe, for a gift and present, one rich peece of cloth of tissue, a peece of cloth of gold, another peece of cloth of gold raised with crimosin veluet, a peece of crimosin veluet in graine, a peece of purple veluet, a peece of damaske purpled, a peece of crimosin damaske: which he thankfully accepted. In this his beautifull lodging, he abode expecting the kings

Richard Chancelor drowned.

repaire

repaire out of Flaunders into England: whose highnesse arriuing the 21. of March, the same ambassador the 25. of March (the day twelue month he tooke his leaue from the emperor his maister) was honorably brought to the king and queene at Westminster, where arriuing at the bridge, was there receiued with 6. lords, conducted into a chamber, where by the lords Chancelor, Treasurer, priuy seale, Admirall, bishop of Ely, and other counsellers, he was saluted, and consequently brought vnto the kings and queenes presence, sitting vnder a stately cloth of honor. Where after he had deliuered his letters, made his oration, giuen two timber of sables, and the report of the same made both in English and Spanish, was with much honor, eftsoones remitted by water to his former lodging, to the which within two daies after by assignement of the king and queene, repaired, and conferred with him two graue counsellers, the bishop of Ely, and sir William Peter knight chiefe secretarie, who after diuerse talkes and conferences, finally concluding vpon such treaties and articles of amitie, as the letters of the kings and queens maiesties vnder their great seale of England, to him by the said counsellers deliuered, doth appeare.

A league & articles of amitie confirmed.

The 24. of Aprill, was celebrated the solemnitie of the noble order of the garter at Westminster, the said ambassador was conducted to the court by the lords Talbot & Lumley, to her maiesties presence, where he tooke his leaue with commendations to the emperor, which being done, he was led vnto ỳ chappell, where was prepared for him a stately seate, wherein he accompanied with the duke of Norfolke, the lords aboue mentioned and other, was present at the whole seruice: the diuine seruice being done, he was remitted and reduced to his barge, and so to his lodging. The merchants hauing prepared foure goodly and well trimmed ships, laden with all kinds of merchandizes apt for Russia, the same ambassador haled downe the riuer of Thamis, from London to Ezauesend, where he with his traine and furniture, was imbarked towards his voyage homeward on the 3. of May. It is to be remembred, that during the whole abode of the said ambassador in England, the company of merchants did frankly giue to him and his, all manner of costes and charges in victuals, riding from Scotland to London, during his abode there, and vntill setting of saile aboord a ship.

Gifts sent to the king and queene of England by the emperor of Russia, and spoiled by the Scots after the shipwracke.

First, 6. tymber of sables, rich in colour and haire.

Item, twenty entire sables, exceeding beautifull with teeth, eares & clawes.

Item, 4. liuing sables with chaines and collers.

Item, 30. luzarnes large and beautifull.

Item, 6. large and great skins, very rich and rare, worne onely by the emperor for worthines.

Item, a large and faire ierfawcon for the wild swan, crane, goose, and other great fowles, together with a drum of siluer, the hoopes gilt, vsed for a lure to call the said hauke.

Gifts sent to the Emperor of Russia, by the king and queene of England.

First, two rich peeces of cloth of tissue.

Item, one fine peece of skarlet.

Item,

Item, one fine violet in graine.
Item, one azur cloth.
Item, a notable paire of brigandines, with a murian couered with crimosin veluet, and gilt nailes.
Item, a male and female lions.

Gifts giuen to the ambassador at his departure.

First, a chaine of gold of a 100. pound.
Item, a large bason and ewer of siluer and gilt.
Item, a paire of pottle pots gilt.
Item, a paire of flagons gilt.

Lord Sturts executed.

Charles lord Sturton and his men cruelly murthered maister Argile and his sonne: he caused them to be stricken downe with clubbes, then their throates to be cut, and after to be buried in his owne house 15. foot deepe, for the which he was arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and after conueyed from the tower of London through the citie, and so to Salisburie, and there hanged with foure of his men seruants, the 6. of March.

K. Philip returned into England.

King Philip returned into England, and landed at Douer on the 18. of March, and the 23. of March passed through London with the queene and nobles of the Realme.

T. Stafford tooke Skarborough castle.

Thomas Stafford, and other hauing conspired diuers treasons against the King and Queene, fearing iust punishment for their deserts, fled beyond the Seas, and there remayning attempted diuers times to stirre rebellion within this Realme, by sending Bookes, Billes, and letters, written and printed, farced full of vntruthes, and at length the said Stafforde, and other English rebels, and some straungers, entred this Realme, on the fower and twentieth of Aprill, and tooke by stealth the Castle of Skarborough in the countie of Yorke, and set out a shamefull Proclamation, wherein he trayterously called and affirmed the Queene to be vnrightfull and most vnworthie Queene, and that the King had brought into this Realme the number of twelue thousand Spaniardes, and that into their hands were deliuered twelue the strongest holdes in this Realme. In which Proclamation the said Stafford named himselfe Protector and gouernor of this Realme, but he with the other his complices, by the good diligence of the Earle of Westmerland and other noble men, were apprehended on the last of Aprill.

Percy Earle of Northumberland.

The last of Aprill, Thomas Percy esquire, was made baron Percy at Westminster, and on the next morrowe which was the first of May, he was created Earle of Northumberland, and the Queene gaue him all the lands which had bene his ancestors remaining in hir hands.

Thomas Stafford beheaded.

The eight and twentieth day of May, Thomas Stafford was beheaded on the Tower hill, and on the morrow three of his companie, to wit, Stretchley, Bradford, and Proctor, were drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered.

Warre with France.

The 7. of June, for that the French King had supported the treason of the Duke of Northumberland, and also the trayterous band of Wiat, and not long after when the diuell put in the heads of Dudley, Ashton and others their complices,

complices, to enter into a new conſpiracie, the ſaid kings ambaſſadour was not onely priuie, but receiued them into his houſe, there to aſſemble and contriue their malicious and diuelliſh enterpriſe: & although the ſaid king were aduertiſed thereof by our ambaſſadors, neuertheleſſe, Dudley, Aſhton, and others flying into France, were both receiued of the king, and alſo maintained with annuall penſions by him giuen, contrarie to his promiſe. Alſo he hath receiued ſundrie famous pirats, and notorious enemies, and of late he ſent Stafford with other rebels, whō he had entertained, furniſhed with armour, money, munition and ſhips, to ſuppreſſe the caſtle of Skarborough: proclamation was made to giue warning to our ſubiects to forbeare all traffike with any of that Realme, and to repute the French king and his ſubiects as open enemies, &c.

The laſt of June, the lord Philip Howard, ſonne of Thomas Duke of Norfolke, was borne in London, at the earle of Arundels houſe without Temple bar, which houſe ſometime belonged to the biſhop of Bath, and ſhortly after was chriſtened in the queenes chappell at Weſtminſter in a font of gold, where Philip king of Spaine, and Nicholas Heath archbiſhop of Yorke, then chancelor of England were his godfathers in proper perſon, and the ladie Elizabeth duches of Norfolk his great grandmother, was his godmother. This lord Philip was the onely begotten child of the ſaid Duke, borne of the ladie Marie, daughter and heire of Hēry fitz Allen, the laſt earle of Arundell of that name. To whome the inheritance and dignitie of the ſaid Earle therefore deſcended.

The 6. of July, the king paſſed ouer to Calais, and ſo into Flaunders, where he made great prouiſion for warre againſt the French king. The ſame moneth, the Queene ſent ouer an armie of a thouſand horſemen, foure thouſand footmen, and two thouſand pioners, to ayde king Philip, whereof the earle of Pembroke was Generall. The lord Robert Dudley maiſter of the Ordinance.

English men ſent to Saint Quintins.

Lady Anne of Cleue. *Ann. reg. 5.*

The 15. of July, died the lady Anne of Cleue at Chelſey, and was buried at Weſtminſter on the 3. of Auguſt.

The 10. of Auguſt, were taken of Fraunce the chiefeſt captaines, the Duke of Montmorency Conſtable of Fraunce, and his ſonne Monſieur de Merne, the Duke of Monpencier, the Duke of Longuille, the Marſhall of Saint Andrew, the Reinegraue colonell of the Almaines, Roche du Maine, the count de Rochfoucault, the Vicount of Touraine, the baron of Curton, the prince of Mantua, beſides many gentlemen and captaines.

Noblemen of France taken priſoners.

The eighteene of Auguſt, the towne of Saint Quintines was taken by king Philip, with the helpe of Engliſhmen, at the ſiege whereof the lord Henry Dudley, youngeſt ſonne to Iohn late Duke of Northumberland, was ſlaine with a gunne: which Henry Dudley and ſir Edward Windſore were the firſt that aduanced banner on the wall.

Saint Quintines won.

This yeare before harueſt, wheat was ſold for foure marke the quarter, mault at 44. s. the quarter, beanes and rie at 40. s. the quarter, and peaſe at 46. s. 8. d. But after harueſt, wheat was ſold for 5. s. the quarter, mault at 6. s. 8. d. rie at 3. s. 4. d. ſo that the peny wheat loffe that wayed in London the laſt yeare but 11. ounces Troy, waied now 56. ounces Troy, according to the aſſize ſet down by the

Dearth and plentie.

maior

Maior at that time. In the countrey, wheat was sold for 4. shillings the quarter, mault for foure shillings eight pence, and in some place a bushel of rie for a pound of candles, which was foure pence.

The 7. of September, at 7. of the clocke at night, in a blacke rainy cloude in the west was seene a rainebow, the moone in the east risen one houre before, and faire shining, and at the full the day before. John Caius.

This yeare in Michaelmas terme, men might haue seene in Westminster hall at the kings bench barre, not two men of law before the Justices, there was but one named Fostar, who looked about, and had nothing to do, the Judges looking about them. In the common place, no mo sergeants but one, which was sergeant Bouloise, who looked about him, there was elbow roome enough, which made the lawyers complaine of their iniuries in that terme. A small term at Westminster.

The 30. of November, sir Thomas Tresham knight, receiued the order of the Crosse, and was made lord prior of S. Iohn of Jerusalem in England. Lord prior of S. Johns.

The first of Januarie, the duke of Guise with a great armie of French men, entred a plot of ground, entrenched at Sandgate, and there dividing his power into two parts, sent the one with certaine peeces of ordinance along the downes towards Risebanke: and the other with battering peeces to Newnam bridge, which two forts both at one time they shot at, and soone recouered without resistance, for there was not a man in them, for they priuily fled into the towne of Calcis. The next day therefore the Frenchmen began a battery from the sandhils. next Risebanke, against the wall of Calcis, betwixt the watergate and the prison, and continued the same by the space of two or three daies, vntill they had made a little breach, but not yet sawtable, neither was it meant, but to make the Englishmen to haue the lesse regard to the defence of the castle, where they were assertained to haue an easie entrie: so that while the Englishmen trauelled to defend that breach, the Frenchmen being passed through the ditch full of water, entred the castle, and thought to haue entred the towne that way: but by the prowes of sir Anthonie Agar knight, and marshall of the towne, they were put backe into the castle, but the same sir Anthonie Agar lost his life, and this was on the first of Januarie. The same night William L. Wentworth, deputie or lieutenant of the towne, sent Nicholas Fellowes *alias* Gwins, and Richard Turpin *alias* Hams to the castle to demaund parle, which they graunted, putting forth of the posterne two French gentlemen, and receiued in pledge of them into the castle I. Hiefield, maister of the ordinance, and Edmond Hall a constable of the staple. Hereupon they falling in talke, at length agreed, that the towne with all the artillerie, victuals and munition, should be yeelded to the French, the liues of the inhabitants saued, they vnder safe conduct to passe whither they would, sauing the lord deputie with 50. other, such as the duke of Guise should appoint, to remaine prisoners, & to be put to raunsome. The next morning, the Frenchmen entred the towne and possessed it. And foorthwith, all the men, women and children were commaunded to leaue their houses, and to go into certaine places appointed for them, there to remaine till order were further taken for their sending away. The places appointed for them to remaine in, were chiefly foure, the two churches of our lady, and of Saint Nicholas, the deputies house, and the staple, where they rested part of

1558
Calcis besieged by the French.

The towne of Calcis was deliuered to the French on the 5. of Ianuarie.

The Frenchmen entred the towne of Calcis on the 6 of Ianuarie.

of that day, the night following, and the next day till the afternoone. And whilſt they were thus in theſe foure places, proclamation was made in their hearings; ſtraightly charging them that were inhabitants of the towne of Calais, hauing about them any mony, plate, or iewels to the value of foure pence, to bring the ſame forthwith, and lay it on the high altars of the ſaid churches vpon paine of death, bearing them in hand they ſhould be ſearched. By reaſon of which proclamation there was made a ſorrowfull offering, and while they were at this offering in the churches, the Frenchmen rifled their houſes, where they found ineſtimable riches & treaſure: but eſpecially in that towne, ordinance, armour, & other munitions, as the Frenchmen write, beſides the great riches of gold & ſiluer, coine, iewels, plate, wools, & other merchandize (which was ineſtimable,) there were found 20. peeces of braſſe mounted on wheeles, & as many of yron, with ſuch furniture of powder, pellits, armor, victuals, & other munitions of war ſcarſly credible. On the next day being ỹ 7. of Januarie in the after noon, a great number of ỹ meaneſt ſort were ſuffered to paſſe out of the town in ſafety, being garded through the army with a nũber of ſcottiſh light horſemen, who vſed the Engliſhmen very well & friendly, and after this, euery day for the ſpace of 3. or 4. daies, there were ſent away diuerſe companies, till they were all auoided, thoſe excepted that were reſerued priſoners.

There were in the towne of Calais, 500. Engliſh ſouldiers in ordinarie pay, & of the townſmen about 200. fighting men: & there were in the whole number of men, women & children, as they were accounted going out of the gate, 4200. perſons or thereabout. The lord Wentworth deputie of Calais, ſir Ralph Chamberlaine captaine of the caſtle, Iohn Harleſtone captaine of Riſebanke, Nicholas Alexãder captaine of Newnam bridge, Edward Grimſtone controller, Iohn Rogers ſurueior, with other to the number in al of 50. were ſent priſoners into Frãce. The loſſe of this towne ſeemed ſtrange to many men of great experience, the ſame town being ſo many yeres ſo ſtrongly fortified with all munitions that could be deuiſed, ſhould now in ſo ſhort ſpace be taken of our enemies without fight or ſlaughter of any man, more then ſir Anthonie Agar, as ye haue heard. The counſel of England had with all expedition raiſed a great power, to haue bene ſent for the defence of that town, but it auailed not, for ſuch a tempeſt of wind aroſe, as the like in many yeares had not bene ſeene, whereby no ſhip could brooke the ſea, by meanes whereof our men were forced to remaine at Douer in a readineſſe to haue paſſed the ſeas, till newes was brought the towne was loſt as ye haue heard, and then euery man returned to his home. And ſhortly after, to wit, in the ſame moneth of Januarie ỹ ſtrong forts of Guiſnes and Hames, though moſt valiantly defended by the lord Gray of Wilton and others, Engliſh men, was wonne by the French, & by them poſſeſſed: whereof maiſter George Ferrers hath written at large, for he collected the whole hiſtorie of Q. Mary, as the ſame is ſet downe vnder the name of Richard Grafton.

G. Ferrers in the reigne of queene Mary.

The 18. of Januarie, Edward Haſtings knight of the garter, lord chamberlaine to the Q. was created baron Haſtings of Loughborough at Weſtminſter.

Aparliament. The 20. of Januarie began a parliament at Weſtminſter.

A preſt to the queene. In the moneth of March, a preſt was granted to the queene by the citizens of London, of twentie thouſand pound, which was leuied of the companies, for the

which

which summe to be repaid againe, the Queene bound certaine lands, and also allowed for interest of the money twelue pound of euery hundred for a yere.

The 28. of Aprill, Francis the French kings eldest sonne called the dolphin, was maried vnto Mary Stewart daughter and sole heire of Iames the fift late king of Scotland, in the citie of Paris, with great pompe and triumph. Queene of Scots married into Fraunce.

The losse of Calais being generally grieuous to the whole realm of England, but specially to queene Mary, she ceased not to trauell with king Philip her husband, as with her owne counsell, & lords of the realm which way should be best to reuenge this iniurie, especially now whilest the French king was occupied in wars with king Philip, to endomage some of his countries by way of inuasion, & to surprise some of his townes vpon a sudden. And amongst sundry deuises none was thought so fit to be attempted as an hauen towne in Britaine called Brest, a towne as well for the situation therof conuenient to receiue fresh succors, & victuall out of England by sea, as also for that it was knowne to the queene & her counsell at that present not to be furnished with any garrison of souldiers sufficient to repulse the power of a prince vpon a sudden. Wherfore there was immediatly order giuen to Edward lord Clinton then high admiral of England, with al expedition to prepare himselfe, with all the queenes ships of war furnished with soldiers, munition, & victuall, to ioyne with the admirall of king Philip, who had like order frō ỳ said king to ioyn with ỳ nauy of Englād, for the atchieuing of this enterprise.

In the meane time while K. Philip being absent from the low countries, was occupied with his wars in France, monsier de Thermes captain of Calais, being a man very expert in the wars, taking out of Calais so many of his soldiers as might be spared from thence, adioyned to thē all the forces of the French garisons in Artoys, Bollonois, & Picardy, wherof together with the soldiers of Calais, being to the number of 700 footmen & 300. light horsemen, there were assembled 14. enseignes of the French footmen, 18. Vanlins of Almains, 4. or 500. men at armes of France, beside the light horsemen Scots, amounting in the whole to the number of 9000. footmen, & 1500. horsemen, entred into Flanders with full determination to spoile king Philips countrie along the sea coast, & namely a proper hauen towne called Dunkerk, & with like purpose to haue surprised the town of Grauelling. This captain of pollicie passing by the towne of Grauelling, laid siege to a litle towne not far from thence called Berghes, which he wan with final resistance. And without long staying marched on to Dunkerke, & planting a siege there, battered the same so sharply with the canon, that within lesse then foure daies he wan the town which he (like as the other) put to sack, & after setting the town on fire, he with his French men spread abroad, wasted the most fruitfull quarter of that part of Flanders almost to Newport: the army withdrew, & incamped within halfe a mile of Grauelling. The county Egmont lieutenant generall for king Philip in the low countrie, assembled all the power as well of king Philips garrisons, as also of mē of war in the low country, to the nūber of 14. M. or more footmen, & 2. or 3. M. horsemen, determining so to affront the French, that either they should passe no further into the country, or at the least to impeach thē frō the siege of Grauelling: mōsier de Thermes hearing of this power assembled, made all possible hast toward Grauelling, where he was no sooner arriued, but that he saw his enemies readie Dunkerk in Flaunders brent.

ranged

ranged in the field, by reason whereof his studie was now nothing else but how he might bring home his army in safety to Calcis. The county Egmond espying the Frenchmẽ bent to march away with the spoile of the countrie, cut betweene thẽ and home, placing his battels in such order, that the Frenchmen had no way to passe, but vpon the sands betweene the towne and the sea: whereas by good chance lay a great fleete of Q. Maries ships of warre, within the danger of whole gunshot the Frenchmen had no shift, but to passe as their iourney lay: and so being forced either to famish or to fight at disaduantage. Monsier de Thermes without staying any longer, caused his vauntgard to passe ouer the riuer somewhat neare the towne to auoid the shot of the English ships, and staid vpon the further side for the residue of his battels: there came such thicke haile shot of artillerie out of the towne on the one side, and from the English ships on the other side, that there was a full batterie made vpon the Frenchmen on all sides, which they neuertheless abode without breaking order for the time, when suddenly appeared before them two great troupes of horsemen of 1500. a peece, part Lwart Rutters, and part Burgonians, whereof the one in front, and the other in flanke, gaue strong charges vpon the French vantgard, who being well backed with their other battels, stoutly repulsed those two first troupes. Thus both parties being at a stay, the countie Egmond with 1800. men of armes, and his foote battels following, before the French had well recouered breath, recharged vpon them with all his forces together so terribly, that he shokt all their battell, and the number take thẽ to flight, the victorie was soone had, by reason the Almaines beaten backe with the artillerie, as well of the towne as of the ships, brake their order, and came not to the shocke, whereby the whole charge of the battell rested vpon the Frenchmens heads. This field was foughten the 13. of July, vpon the sea sands neare to Graueling, where besides those that were slaine which were esteemed to the number of fiue thousand, there were taken prisoners the marshall de Thermes captain of Calcis, monsier Senerpont gouernor of Bologne, monsier Villebon gouernor of Picardie, monsier Annabault sonne to the late admirall, monsier de Moruilliers gouernor of Abuile, monsier de Channe gouernor of Corbier, beside a number of gentlemen, captaines and souldiers, but specially the bands of Calcis went to wracke, so as very few returned home. The admirals before named knew nothing of this matter, wherefore, following their prescribed course, and ioyning together at the place appointed, sailed from thence with prosperous wind, and on the nine and twentith of the same moneth, with seuen score ships of warre appeared before the hauen of Conquet in Britaine: at whose arriuall there, they sounded their trumpets, and with a peale of great ordinance, gaue a loude salue to the Britaines: and by eight of the clocke the same morning, the Englishmen manning foorth their ship-boates, recouered landing, and within short time became maisters of the said towne of Conquet, which they sacked and brent with a great abbey, & many piety townes and villages neare thereabouts, where our men found great store of pillage.

Towne of Conquet brent.

This being done, the Englishmen withdrew downe to the sea side, where their ships lay readie to receiue them. But the Flemmings being couetous of the spoile, passing further into the land, before they could recouer their ships againe

wer

were encountred by the power of the countrie, by whom there were slaine of them to the number of foure or fiue hundred. The admirall perceiuing the power of the countrie greatly to increase, thought it not best to attempt any assault against the towne of Brest, or to make longer abode there, but returned home.

In this meane time, while king Philip and the French king with two most puissant armies afronted each other neere vnto the water of Some, either of them being obstinately bent to driue the other out of the field, for which cause they entrenched their camps: diuers conferences were had concerning peace, and at the last concluded vpon all controuersies, except the restitution of Calais, required by the ambassadors of Queene Marie, which the French part would in no wise heare of, by reason of which difficultie, this treatie could take no effect, nor come to good conclusion. King Philip thinking himselfe bound to stand in that case with the Queene his wife, did therefore stay a long time before he concluded peace with the French king.

A treatie of peace about the deliuerie of Calais.

The second of July, the Lord Wentworth and diuerse other that had bene gouernors of Calais, were attainted of treason being then in France.

The 11. of July, within a mile of Nottingham was a marueilous tempest of thunder, which as it came through two townes, beate downe all the houses and churches, the bels were cast to the out side of the Church yards, and some webs of lead foure hundred foote into the field, writhen like a paire of gloues. *Ann. reg. 6.* Tempest at Nottingham

The riuer of Trent running betweene the two townes, the water with the mud in the bottome was carried a quarter of a mile, and cast against the trees, the trees were plucked vp by the rootes, and cast twelue score off. Also, a child was taken fourth of a mans hands two speares length hie, and carried a hundred foote, and then let fall, wherewith his arme was broken, and so died. Fiue or sixe men thereabout were slaine, and neither flesh nor skin perished: there fell some haile-stones that were fifteene inches about, &c.

This yeere in haruest time, the quartaine agues continued in like manner or more vehemently, than they had done the last yeere passed, wherethrough died many olde people, and specially priests, so that a great number of parishes were vnserued, and no curates to be gotten, and much corne was lost in the field for lacke of workemen and labourers. Quartaine agues raigned sore.

In the beginning of this yeere, corne rose to fourteene shillings the quarter, and wood waxed scant in London, and was sold for thirteene and fourteene shillings the thousand of billets, and coles at ten pence the sacke, by reason of the great death and sicknes the last summer for lacke of helpe and cariage. Corne and wood deare.

King Philip being absent out of the realme (as ye haue heard) and Queene Marie being dangerously sicke, ended her life at her manor of Saint Iames by Charing crosse the seuententh of November, in the yeere 1558. when she had raigned fiue yeeres, foure monethes and odde daies. The same day deceased cardinall Poole at Lambeth, and a little before, two of her physitions, besides diuerse bishops and noble men. Queene Marie was buried at Westminster, and cardinall Poole at Canterburie.

Queene Elizabeth.

Ann. reg. 1. ELIZABETH our most gracious and soueraigne Lady, borne at Greenwich, second daughter to king Henry the eight, to the great comfort of England, was with full consent proclaimed Queene of England, Fraunce, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. on the 17. of November, in the yeare of our Lord God 1558. Forthwith the ports and hauens were stopped, and none suffered to passe out of the realme without licence. Proclamation was made, forbidding all men to preach, saue such as should be appointed: also to alter any rites or ceremonies vsed in the church, saue as it was in her Graces chappell.

The Queene commeth from Hatfield.

The 19. of November, Queene Elizabeth came from bishops Hatfield in Hertfordshire, vnto the lord Northes house in the late dissolued Charterhouse of London, the shrifes of London meeting her grace at the farther end of Barnet towne within the shire of Middlesex, and so rode before her, till she came to the Charterhouse gate next Aldersgate, where her grace remained.

The Queene remoueth to the towre.

On monday the eight and twentith of November, about two of the clocke in the after noone, Queene Elizabeth rode from the lord Northes house along by the Barbican in at Creeplegate, then along by the wall to Bishopsgate, which gate was richly hanged, where the waites of the city plaid, and ouer against the kings-head tauerne, a scholler of Paules schoole made a short oration to her maiestie in Latin verses, the company of Mercers standing in their railes next the scholler, & so all the other companies of the city in order from thence to Mart lane end next vnto Barking church in tower streete, the lord maior of London riding with maister Garter king at armes, bearing a scepter before her maiestie, which lord maior met her at the Charterhouse gate next Aldersgate, where maister Recorder saluted her grace in the name of the lord maior and the whole city, and so with lords, knights, and gentlewomen richly apparelled, brought her to the tower of London: but when her grace entred at Mart lane, a peale of guns began to be shot off at the tower, which continued almost halfe an houre.

The fift of December, the Queene remooued by water from the tower to Somerset place neare to the Strand.

Sir Thomas Cheny treasurer of the houshold and lord warden of the cinque ports, diseased the 8. of December.

Sir Nicholas Bacon Attourney of the court of wards, was made lord keeper of the great seale of England the 20. of December.

Queene Mary buried.

The 13. of December, the corps of queene Mary was honorably conueyed from Saint Iames to the abbey of Westminster, and there placed vnder a rich hearse decked with penons, banners, and scutchions of the armes of England and Fraunce, where she remained that night, and on the morrow, after the masse of *Requiem*, and a sermon preached by Doctor White bishop of Winchester was ended, she was buried in the chappell of king Henry the seuenth on the north side.

The foure and twentith of December, was solemne obsequie kept in the abbey

of

of Westminster for Charles the fift late Emperor, which deceased in Spaine in the moneth of September last past: Queene Maries hearse yet standing, altered with the armes of the Emperor, and richly hanged with a rich pall-cloth of gold lying on the hearse, the Emperors ambassador being chiefe mourner, with other peeres and Lords of England assistant with him, &c. Obsequie for Charles the emperor

The first of Januarie, the lord Maior and Aldermen gaue in commandement to euery ward in London, that the parson or curate in euery parish church in London, should reade the Epistle and Gospell of the day in the English toung in the masse time, and the English procession then vsed in the Queenes chappell, according to a proclamation sent from her maiestie and priuie counsell, proclaimed in the Citie of London the 13. of December, which commandement was that day obserued in most parish churches of the citie. 1559. Procession, Epistle, and Gospell in English.

The ninth of Januarie in the morning, the image of Thomas Becket which stoode ouer the doore of the Mercers chappell in London toward the streete, was found broken and cast downe, and a bill set on the church doore deprauing the letters vp thereof. Image of T. Becket throwen downe.

The twelfth of Januarie, the Queenes maiestie remooued from her place of White hall to the Tower by water, the lord maior of London and his brethren the aldermen in their barge, and all the Craftes of the citie in their barges richly decked with targets and banners of euerie mysterie. The batchelors of the maiors companie in their barge, with a foyst, hauing three tops, trimmed and richly decked to waite on them, which shot off guns all the way: all these awaited on her Maiestie, who tooke her barge about two of the clocke in the after noone, the lord maior following after, and euery company in order with great melodie of musicall instruments, till her grace was through London bridge, and landed at her priuie staire of the tower wharfe, and then the maior after leaue taken, and thankes of the queene, returned through the bridge with the flood, and landed at the three cranes wharfe in the vintree.

The 13. of January were created in the tower of London, these noble men following, sir William Parr knight was created marques of Northampton, Edward Seymour was made viscount Beauchamp & earle of Hertford, lord Thomas Howard viscount of Byndon, sir Oliuer Saint Iohn knight, lord Saint Iohn of Bletsall, Sir Henry Carew knight, lord Carew of Hundesdon.

The fourteenth of January, at which time the Londoners had made sumptuous prouision of pageants and otherwise, as hath bene accustomed, the queenes maiestie passed through the city of London to her palace at Westminster: the next day she was crowned by doctor Oglethorpe bishop of Carlile. Coronation.

The fiue and twentith of January, began a parliament at Westminster, before the states whereof, doctor Coxe late come from beyond the seas, and sometime schoolemaister to king Edward the first, made a learned sermon. Parliament.

In this parliament, the first fruites and tenthes were graunted to the crowne, and also the supreame gouernement ouer the state Ecclesiasticall. The first fruits and tenthes graunted to the crowne.

Likewise, the booke of common prayer and administration of the Sacraments in our vulgar toung was restored, to be done as in the time of K. Edward the first.

Moreouer, in the time of this parliament a motion was made by the common

house, that the Queenes maiesty might be sued vnto, to graunt her graces licence to the speaker, knights, citizens and burgesses to haue accesse vnto her graces presence, to declare vnto her matter of great importance, concerning the state of this her graces realme. The which petition being mooued to her grace, she most honourably agreed and consented thereunto, and assigned a day of hearing: when the day came, the speaker and common house resorted vnto her graces pallace at Westminster called the White hall: and in the great galery there, her grace most honorably shewed her selfe ready to heare their motion and petition. And when the speaker had solemnly and eloquently set foorth the message, the speciall matter whereof was, to mooue her grace to mariage, whereby to all our comforts we might enioy the royall issue of her body to raigne ouer vs, &c.

Motiō made to her maiestie for mariage.

The Queenes maiesty after a little pause, made this answer following. As I haue good cause, so do I giue you all my hearty thankes for the good zeale and louing care you seeme to haue, as well towards me, as to the whole estate of your countrey: your petition I perceiue, consisteth of three parts, and mine answer to the same shall depend of two.

Answer of her maiesty.

Alex. Euesham.

And to the first part I may say vnto you, that from my yeares of vnderstanding, sith I first had consideration of my selfe, to be borne a seruitor of almightie God, I happily chose this kind of life, in the which I yet liue, which I assure you for mine owne part hath hitherto best contented my selfe, and I trust hath bene most acceptable vnto God. From the which, if either ambition of high estate offered to me in mariage by the pleasure and appointment of my Prince, whereof I haue some records in this presence (as you our treasurer well know) or if eschewing the danger of mine enemies, or the auoiding of the perill of death whose messenger, or rather a continuall watchman, the princes indignation, was no little time daily before mine eyes, by whose meanes, although I know, or iustly may suspect, yet I will not now vtter, or if the whole cause were in my sister her life, I will not now burthen her therewith, because I will not charge the dead: if any of these, I say, could haue drawne or dissuaded me from this kind of life, I had not now remained in this estate wherein you see me, but so constant haue I alwaies continued in this determination, although my youth and words may seeme to some hardly to agree together: yet is it most true, that at this day I stand free from any other meaning, that either I haue had in times past, or haue at this present, with which trade of life I am so throughly acquainted, that I trust God, who hath hitherto therein preserued and led me by the hand, will not of his goodnesse suffer me to go alone.

For the other part, the manner of your petition I do well like, and take it in good part, because that it is simple, and containeth no limitation of place or person, if it had bene otherwise, I must needes haue misliked it very much, and thought it in you a very great presumption, being vnfitting and altogether vnmeete for you to require them that may cōmand, or those to appoint, whose parts are to desire, or such to bind & limite, whose duties are to obey, or to take vpon you to draw my loue to your likings, or to frame my will to your fantasie: for a guerdon constrained, and gift freely giuen can neuer agree together. Neuertheles, if any of you be in suspect, that when soeuer it may please God to incline my heart to another

another kind of life, you may well assure your selues, my meaning is not to do or determine any thing wherewith the realme may or shall haue iust cause to be discontented. And therefore put that cleane out of your heads, for I assure you, what credit my assurance may haue with you, I cannot tell, but what credit it shall deserue to haue, the sequele shall declare, I will neuer in that matter conclude any thing that shall be preiudiciall to the realme: for the weale, good and safety whereof, I will neuer shun to spend my life. And whom soeuer my chance shall be to light vpon, I trust he shall be such, as shall be as carefull for the realme and you, I will not say as my selfe, because I cannot so certainly determine of any other, but at the leastwise by my good will and desire, he shall be such, as shall be as carefull for the preseruation of the realme, and you as my selfe. And albeit it might please almighty God to continue me still in this mind to liue out of the state of mariage, yet is it not to be feared, but he will so worke in my heart and in your wisdomes, as good prouision by his helpe may be made in conuenient, whereby the realme shall not remaine destitute of an heire, that may be a fit gouernor, and peraduenture more beneficiall to the realme, then such ofspring as may come of me. For though I be neuer so carefull of your well doings, and mind euer so to be, yet may issue grow out of kind, and become perhaps vngracious. And in the end this shall be for me sufficient, that a marble stone shall declare, that a Queene hauing raigned such a time, liued, and died a virgine. And here I end, and take your comming vnto me in good part, and giue vnto you all effoones my harty thankes, more yet for your zeale and good meaning, then for your petition.

The seuenteenth of Februarie, one of the queenes takers of fresh fish, for abusing his authority, was set on the pillory in Cheape, where he stood three market daies, from nine of the clocke till twelue of the clocke, which punishment with more (whereof I write not) was by commandement of the Queene by her owne mouth, as a good example of iustice. Rob. Greene a taker set on the pillorie.

In the Easter holidaies preached at the Spittle, doctor Bill the queenes almoner, doctor Coxe, & maister Horne, the two last came lately from beyond the seas. Preachers at the Spittle, and at Pauls crosse.

On Low Sunday, the 2. of Aprill, maister Sampsone, lately come from beyond the seas, made the rehearsall Sermon at Paules crosse: but when the Lord Maior and aldermen came to their places in Paules Churchyeard, the pulpet doore was locked, and the key could not be heard of: whereupon the lord Maior sent for a smith to open the locke, which was done, and when the preacher should enter the place, it was found very filthy and vncleane: moreouer, the Verger that had the key of the place where the bishops and prelats vse to stand to heare the sermon, could not be found: whereupon certaine gentlemen, with a forme brake open the doore. This disorder chanced by reason that since Christmasse last past, there was not a sermon preached at Paules crosse, for an inhibition had bene sent from the counsell vnto the bishop of London, that he should admit no preacher, because of the controuersie betwixt the bishops, and them of the clergie that were newe returned into the realme from beyond the seas.

The last of March, the parliament yet continuing, a conference was begun at Westminster, concerning articles of religion, betwixt the bishops and other of the Conference appointed betwixt the old bishops and other preachers.

clergy on the one part, and certaine learned preachers, of whom some had bene in dignity in the Church of England, before that time on the other part. The declaration of the proceeding wherein, and the cause of the breaking vp of the same conference by default and contempt of certaine bishops, part of the said conference was published in a treatise printed by Richard Iugge and Iohn Cawood, printers to the Queenes maiestie as followeth.

The Queenes most excellent maiestie, hauing heard of diuersitie of opinions in certaine matters of religion, amongst sundry of her louing subiects, and being very desirous to haue the same reduced to some godly and Christian concord, thought it best by the aduise of the lords and other her priuy counsell, as well for the satisfaction of persons doubtfull, as also for the knowledge of the very truth in certaine matter of difference: to haue a conuenient chosen number of the best learned of either part, to conferre together their opinions and reasons, and thereby to come to some good and charitable agreement. And hereupon by her maiesties commandement, certaine of her priuy counsell declared this purpose to the Archbishop of Yorke (being also one of the same priuy counsell) and required him that he would impart the same to some of the bishops, and to make choyse of eight, nine or ten of them, and that there should be the like number named of the other part: and further also declared to him (as then was supposed) what the matters should be: And as for the time, it was thought meete to be as soone as possible might be agreed vpon. And then after certaine dayes past, it was signified by the sayd archbishop, that there was appointed by such of the bishops to whom he had imparted this matter, eight persons, that is to say, foure bishops, and foure doctors, who were content at the Queenes maiesties commandement to shew their opinions, and as he termed it, render account of their faith in those matters which were mentioned, and that specially in writing, although he sayd they thought the same so determined, as there was no cause to dispute vpon them.

It was hereupon fully resolued by the Queenes maiestie, with the aduise aforesayd, that according to their desire, it should be in writing on both parts, for auoyding of much alteration in words, and that the sayd Bishops should because they were in authority, of degree superiours, first declare their minds and opinions to the matter, with their reasons in writing: and the other number being also eight men of good degree in schooles, and some hauing bene of dignity in the church of England, if they had any thing to say to the contrary, should the same day declare their opinions in like manner. And so each of them should deliuer their writings to the other, to be considered what were to be improoued therein, and the same to declare againe in writing at some other conuenient day, and the like order to be kept in all the rest of the matters: all this was fully agreed vpon with the archbishop of Yorke, and so also signified to both parties. And immediatly hereupon diuerse of the nobility and states of the realme, vnderstanding that such a meeting and conference should be, and that in certaine matters, whereupon the court of Parliament consequently following, some lawes might be grounded: they made earnest meanes to her maiestie, that the parties of this conference, might put and reade their assertions in the English

tongue,

tongue, and that in the presence of them of the nobility, and others of the parliament house, for the better satisfaction and inhabling of their owne iudgements, to treate and conclude of such lawes as mought depend thereupon. This also being thought very reasonable, was signified to both parties, and so fully agreed vpon, and the day appointed for the first meeting to be the friday in the forenoone, being the last of March, at Westminster Church, where both for good order, and for honour of the conference, by the Queenes maiesties commandement, the Lords and others of the priuie counsell were present, and a great part of the Nobilitie also: and notwithstanding the former order appointed and consented vnto by both parties, yet the bishop of Winchester, and his colegues, alleaging they had mistaken that their assertions, and reasons should be written, and so onely recited out of the booke, sayd their booke was not readie then written, but they were ready to argue and dispute, and therefore they would for that time repeate in speech that which they had to say to the first proposition. This variation from the order, and specially from that which themselues had by the sayd archbishop in writing before required, adding thereto the reason of the Apostle, That to contend in words is profitable to nothing but to subuersion of the hearer, seemed to the Queenes maiesties counsell somewhat strange, and yet was it permitted without any great reprehension, because they excused themselues with mistaking the order, and agreed that they should not faile but put it in writing, and according to the former order, deliuer it to the other part, and so the said Bishop of Winchester and his colegues appointed Doctor Cole Deane of Paules to be the vtterer of their minds, who partly by speech onely, and partly by reading of authorities written, and at certaine times being informed of his colegues what to say, made a declaration of their meaning, and their reasons to their first proposition, which being ended, they were asked by the priuie Counsell, if any of them had any more to be said: and they said no. So as then the other part was licensed to shew their mindes, which they did according to the first order, exhibiting all that which they meant to be propounded in a booke written, which after a prayer and inuocation made most humblie to almightie God, for the enduing of them with his holy spirite, and a protestation also to stand to the doctrine of the Catholike Church, builded vpon the Scriptures, and the doctrine of the Prophets and the Apostles, was distinctly read by one Robert Horne Bachelor in Diuinitie, late Deane of Duresme. And the same being ended with some likelihood, as it seemed, that the same was much allowable to the audience, certaine of the Bishops began to say contrarie to their former answere, that they had much more to say to this matter: wherein although they might haue bene well reprehended for such maner of cauillation, yet for auoyding of any mistaking of orders in this colloquie or conference, and for that they should vtter all that which they had to say: it was both ordered and thus openly agreed vpon of both parts in the full audience, that vpon the monday following, the Bishops should bring their minds & reasons in writing to the second assertion, and the last also if they could, and first reade the same, & that done, the other part should bring likewise theirs to the same. And being read, each of them should deliuer to other the same writings.

And in the meane time the bishops should put in writing, not onely all that which Doctor Cole had that day uttered: but all such other matters as they any otherwise could thinke of for the same, and assoone as they might possible, to send the same booke touching that first assertion to the other part, and they should receiue of them that writing which maister Horne had there read that day, and upon monday it should be agreed what day they should exhibite their answeres touching the first proposition. Thus both parts assented thereto, & the assembly quietlie dismissed. And therefore upon monday, the like assemblie began againe, at the place and houre appointed, and there, upon what sinister or disordered meaning is not yet knowne (though in some part it be understanded) the Bishop of Winchester and his collegues, and especially Lincolne, refused to exhibite or reade, according to the former notorious order on friday, that which they had prepared for the second assertion. And thereupon by the Lord keeper of the great seale, they being gently and fauourably required to keepe the order appointed: and that taking no place, being secondly as it behooued, pressed with more earnest request, they neither regarding the authoritie of that place, nor their owne reputation, nor the credite of the cause, vtterly refused that to doo. And finally, being againe particularlie vsed of them apart distinctly by name, required to vnderstand their opinions therein, they all sauing one (which was the Abbot of Westminster, hauing some more consideration of order, and his duetie of obedience than the other) vtterlie and plainelie denied to haue their booke read, some of them as more earnestly than other, some so also, some other more vndiscreetelie, and vnreuerently then others. Whereupon, giuing such example of disorder, stubburnnesse and selfewill, as hath not bene seene and suffered in such an honourable assemblie, being of the two Estates of this Realme, the Nobilitie and the Commons, besides the presence of the Queenes Maiesties most honorable priuie Counsell, the same assemblie was dismissed, and the godly and most Christian purpose of the Queenes Maiestie made frustrate. And afterward for the contempt so notoriouslie made, the Bishops of Winchester and Lincolne, hauing most obstinately both disobeyed common authoritie, and varied manifestly from their owne order, and especially Lincolne, who shewed more folly than the other, were condignly committed to the Tower of London, & the rest (sauing the Abbot of Westminster) stood bound to make dayly and personall appearance before the counsell, & not to depart the citie of London and Westminster, vntill further order were taken with them for their disobedience & contempt.

The three propositions, whereupon conference was determined to haue bene at Westminster.

1 It is against the word of God, and the custome of the ancient Church, to vse a toung vnknowne to the people, in common prayer, and the administration of the Sacraments.

2 Euery Church hath authoritie to appoint, take away and change ceremonies and ecclesiasticall rites, so the same be to edification.

3 It cannot be prooued by the word of God that there is in the Masse offered vp a sacrifice propitiatorie for the quicke and the dead.

The names of such as

The bishop of Winchester. Doctor Harpsfield.

The

The bishop of Lichfield.
The bishop of Chester.
The bishop of Carleil.
The bishop of Lincolne.
Doctor Cole.
Maister Grindall.
Maister Horne.
Doctor Sands.
Doctor Langdal.
Doctor Chadsey.
Doctor Scory B. of Chichester.
Doctor Coxe.
Maister Whithead.
Maister Gest.
Maister Aylmer.
Maister Iuell.

had conference in the propositions aforesaid.

The bishops and doctors sate on the one side of the quier at a table, and the other learned men sate at another table on the other side of the quier. And at the vpper end thereof at another table sate the queenes counsell to haue hard some good conclusion of the said conference, but it came to small effect as ye haue heard.

The 5. of Aprill the bishops of Winchester, doctor White, and of Lincolne, doctor Reason, were committed to the towre of London.

In this meane time a treatie of peace, which had bene in hand the last yeare, betwixt the two kings of Spaine and Fraunce, was now renued againe, and the deputies were appointed to meete at Chasteau Cambresi, a fiue miles distant from Cambray. For the king of Spaine, the Duke of Alua, the prince of Orenge, the bishop of Arras, Rigomes de Silua Earle of Mellito, Monsieur Vigilius Zwichen knight, and president of the priuie counsell in the Low countries, who was letted by sicknesse, and could not come. For the French king there came the cardinall of Lorayne, the Constable, the Marshall of Saint Andrew, the bishop of Orliance, and Claude de Aubespine the said kings secretary. For the Queene of England, the bishop of Elye, the Lord William Howard baron of Effingham, lord Chamberlaine to the said Queene, doctor Nicholas Wotton, deane of Canterburie and Yorke. After this treatie had continued long, and now rested nothing to stay them from concluding a generall peace, but onely the article touching Calais, at length that matter was also accorded by a speciall treatie betwixt the Queenes maiestie of England and the French King. The substance of which article was, that Calais should rest in the French mens hands for the terme of 8. yeeres, and at the end of that terme, to render the same to the Queenes highnes or for default thereof, to forfeite vnto her the sum of 500000. crownes: & for surety hereof, to deliuer fower hostages, such as her Maiestie should thinke sufficient. It was concluded also a firme peace betwixt the Realmes of England & Scotland, such fortresses to be raced as had bene built, and made by the Scots and French in the borders towards England. Sir Iohn Mason knight, secretarie for the French toung, was sent ouer in post with instructions vnto the English commissioners, after whose comming within two or three daies, a generall peace was concluded betwixt all the parties. And so on the 7. of Aprill, the said peace was proclaimed, to wit, betwixt the Queenes maiestie on the one party, and the French king on the other, their Realmes, Dominions & Subiects, and likewise betwixt her Maiestie and the king Dolphin, & Queene of Scots his wife, their Realmes, Dominions and Subiects. This Proclamation was made at London by Garter & Norrey kings at armes accompanied with three other heraults, and fiue trumpeters, the Lord Maior and Aldermen in their skarlet gownes, being present on horsebacke.

Treatie of peace renued.

Commissioners for the prince.

Guicciardin Peace concluded with condition to deliuer Calais to the English.

Peace proclaimed.

The

Lord Wentworth arraigned and quit.

The 22. of Aprill, William lord Wentworth late deputie of Calais, was arraigned at Westminster vpon an inditement of treason found against him, in the late Q. Maries daies, for the losse of Calais, but he was acquit by his peeres, the lord Marquesse of Northampton, sitting that day as chiefe steward of England: so he was deliuered presently vnto his house, without returning to any prison.

The 8. of May, the parliament brake vp, in which parliament, besides other things before recited, a subsidie was graunted to the queene of two shillings eight pence the pound of mooueable goods, and foure shillings of lands to be paid at two seuerall paiments of euery person, spirituall and temporall.

Church seruice in the English tong

The 8. of May being Whitsunday, the seruice in churches began according to the booke of common prayer, set foorth and established by this last parliament, correspondent to that of king Edwards time.

Citizens of London mustered at Greenwich.

The 2. of July, the citizens of London had a muster afore the Queenes maiestie at Greenewich in the parke, of 1400. men, whereof 800. were pikemen, all in fine corselets, 400. harquebuts, in shirts of maile, with mozins and 200. halberters in almain riuets, which were furnished and set foorth by the companies of the citie of London: they had to euery hundred two wiffelers richly apparelled, and twelue wardens of the best companies riding in coates of blacke veluet to conduct them with drums and fifes, and fiue ensignes, all in ierkins of white bridges satten, cut and lined with blacke sarsenet, with caps, hosen, and skarfes according, the captaines Robert Constable and maister Saunders, brought them in battell ray afore the Queene, euen as they should haue fought, which made a goodly shew before her Maiestie, the emperours and French kings ambassadours being present.

Bishops deprined.

In the moneth of July, the old bishops of England then liuing, were called and examined by certaine of the queenes maiesties counsell, where the bishops of Yorke, Ely, and London with other, to the number of thirteene or fourteene, for refusing to take the oth touching the Queenes supremacie and other articles, they were deprined from their bishoprickes. And likewise were diuerse deanes, archdeacons, parsons, and vicars, deprined from their benefices, and some committed to prison in the tower, Fleete, Marshalsea, and kings bench.

Commissioners.

Commissioners were likewise appointed for the establishing of religion through the whole Realme. For London were appointed sir Richard Sackuile knight, Doctor Horne a Deuine, Doctor Huicke a Ciuilian, and maister Salusage, who called before them diuerse persons of euery parish, and sware them to enquire and present vpon certaine iniunctions.

Iniunctions.

Houses suppressed.

Also the houses of Religion erected by queene Mary, as the priorie of S. Iohn of Ierusalem by Smithfield, the nunnes and brethren of Sion and Sheene, the blacke friers in Smithfield, and the friers of Greenewich were all suppressed: the abbot and monkes of Westminster were put out, a deane, prebends, and canons placed there, and so named the colledge of Westminster founded by Q. Elizabeth.

Church images burned.

On the euen of Saint Bartholomew, the day and the morrow after, &c. were burned in Paules church yard, Cheape, and diuerse other places of the citie of London, all the roodes and other images of Churches, in some places the coapes, vestments, altar clothes, bookes, banners, pulchers, and rood lofts were burned.

The

The 5. of September there fell a three houres tempest at London, in ẏ forenoon in the end whereof a great lightning with a terrible clap of thunder, strake the spire (being stone) of the steeple of Alhallowes Church in Bredstreete, about a ten foote beneath the top, out of the which fell a stone that slew a dogge, and ouerthrewe a man playing with the same dogge, and not long after the same spire was taken downe by the Church wardens, to saue the charges of repairing. And at the same instant, by the same tempest, one of the south doores of S. Dionis Church in Fanchurch streete, with the doore of the reuestrie of the same Church, were both stricken through and broken.

Churches in London striken and broken by tempest.

The 8. and 9. of September. a solemne obsequie was kept in Paules Church at London, for Henrie the second of that name King of France, who deceased about the 10. of July last past, of a wound receiued the 29. of June, in running at tilt in solemne Justes holden at Paris, in honor of the mariage celebrated betwixt his sister the lady Margaret of France, and Philibert Duke of Sauoy. He was striken on the viser with a launce, as he ranne against the Counte Mountgomerie: the spilts entring by the sight of his head peece, and piercing through his eie into his head, so perished his braine, that there was no meane to saue his life. The obsequie for him was kept in very solemne wise, with a rich hearse made like an imperiall crowne, susteyned with eight pillars, and couered with blacke veluet, with a valence fringed with gold, and richly hanged with scutchions, penons, and banners of the French Kings armes, without any lights. And on the beere was laid a palle of cloth of gold, with a coate armour of the armes of France, and a crest with an imperiall crowne standing vpon the beere. Docter Parker Archbishop of Canterburie elect, Doctor Barlow bishop of Chichester elect, and Doctor Scory bishop of Hereford elect, executing at the dirige of the euening song in English, they sitting in the Bishops of Londons seate, in the vpper quire in surplices, with doctors hoods about their shoulders. The chiefe mourner, was the Marquesse of Winchester Lord Treasurer, assisted with ten other Lords mourners, with all the heraults in blacke, and their coate armours vppermost.

Obsequie for the French king.

On the morrowe being the 9. of September, a Sermon was preached by Doctor Scorie in place of Doctor Grindall Bishop of London. After the Sermon, sixe of the Lords mourners receiued the Communion with the Bishops, which bishops were in copes on their surplices, onely at the ministration of the said Communion. Which being finished, there was a great dinner kept in the Bishop of Londons palace by Paules, where the mourners apparelled them, and so ended the solemnitie of the said obsequies.

About the last of September, Iohn Duke of Finland, second sonne to Gustabus King of Swethen, was sent by his Father to treat a marriage for his eldest brother Ericus, with the Queenes Maiestie of England, he arriued at Harwich in Essex, and was there honorably receiued and entertayned by the Earle of Oxford: which said Earle, and the Lord Robert Dudley, with a goodly band of gentlemen and yeomen, conueyed him to London, where he was receiued of diuers knights and gentlemen of the Court, on the 5. of October, and was with his traine of about the number of 50. persons well horsed, conueyed to the bishop

Ambassador from Swethen.

of

of Winchesters place in Southwarke, where he was lodged during his abode here, and remooued from thence 2. daies before Easter homeward, and sped on his message, as may appeare by that which followeth taken out of *Iohannes Lewenclaij. comment. de bellis Moscorum.*

Ericus king of Sweden, sonne of Gustabus late king of the said kingdome, hauing committed to prison his brother Iohn Duke of Finland, whom a little before he had employed into England on an ambassage to the Queenes maiestie, whom he sued to for mariage, and had his suite reiected: againe, the second time solicited her maiestie in the same suite, notwithstanding (to his great dishonour, and (as it fell out) his iust disgrace) he attempted the same matter with the youngest daughter of Philip Lantgraue van Hessen, at whose hand (hauing the second time bene reiected of her Maiestie here) the matter being knowne there, he also not only receiued a denial, but the lady was by her father bestowed vpon Adolfe Duke Van-Holst, vnkle of Frederike king of Denmarke, then enemie of the said Ericus.

Ann. reg. 2.

Iohannes Leuenclaij.

The 22. of December, Chamberlen that was captaine of the castle of Caleis, and Hurlestone that was captaine of Risebank were condemned of high treason, because they left their charge, when the French men came thither.

Troubles in Scotland.

In this meane time, through controuersie raised betwixt the Scottish nobilitie, and the queene Dowager of Scotland, which chanced specially about matters of religion, certaine of the lords there minding reformation therein, and the queene resisting them to her power, diuerse companies of souldiers and men of warre, were sent out of Fraunce into Scotland to aide the said queene, where they were placed in diuerse townes and forts, to the displeasure of the more part of the Scottish nobilitie, who were forced to sue vnto the queene of England for aide to expell the French. Their suite was the better liked of, for that it was doubted lest the French men vnder pretence of bringing an armie into Scotland to appease the Scots, might attempt some inuasion here in England, considering that by procurement as was thought of the duke of Guise, vnkle to ỹ queene of France and Scotland, a title should seeme to be pretended by his neece the aforesaid queen, as might be gathered by coniectures. The names of the lords of Scotland that made suite for aide against the French men at this season were these:

Frenchmen sent into Scotland.

Confederate Lords in Scotland.

The duke of Chateau le reault.	The earle of Eglenton.
The earle of Arraine his sonne.	The earle of Bentros.
The lord Iames, prior of Saint Andrew.	The lord Ruthuen.
The earle of Argule.	The lord Boyde.
The earle of Glencarne.	The lord Ogletre.
The earle of Rothouse.	The lord Erskin.
The earle of Southerland.	The lord Droonond.
The earle of Mentithe.	The lord Hume.
The earle of Huntley.	The lord Roose.
The earle of Catnes.	The lord Chreighton.
The earle of Errolle.	The lord Leuingston.
The earle Marshall.	The lord Somerwell.
The earle of Boyton.	The Maister of Lindsey.
The earle of Cassils.	The Maister of Marwell.

The

The Queenes maiestie with aduice of her graces counsell, considering of this waighty businesse, and withall, foreseeing the malicious purpose of her aduersaries, and how the Queene of Scots was in Fraunce maried and gouerned so as she was not able to vse the libertie of her crowne, did thinke it best to preuent such mischiefes as might ensue, if timely remedy were not vsed, to displace such daungerous neighbours the Frenchmen, that began to nestle themselues thus strongly so neare at hand. Hereupon was a power raised and sent foorth, both by sea and land, the duke of Norfolke being appointed Generall, and sent into the North for the direction thereof. And first maister William Winter appointed vice Admirall of the Queenes nauie, Northwards made saile towards Scotland, and waiting along the coast, in the moneth of Januarie, came into the Forth, and so to the rode of Leith, and there cast anchor, as well to impeach ẏ landing of such Frenchmen as might happily be sent foorth of Fraunce against the Scottish lords of the congregation, as also to keepe them that lay in Iniskeith from victuals: moreouer after that the army by land was come together into the North parts & had soiourned a while at Berwicke, and thereabouts, the Lord Grey of Wilton being appointed Generall of the said armie, departed with the same, and marched to Coldingham, where they encamped that night.

Aide giuen to the Scots against the French in Scotland. 1560

The 30. of March, sir Iames Croft, & sir George Howard, departed frō Berwicke to the armie, with all the launces and light horsemen, containing the number of 1250. horses. The number of footmen, more then 6000. The chiefe gouernors of which armie were these: The lord Gray of Wilton lieutenant Generall, sir Iames Croft assistant with him in that charge, the lord Scrope lord Marshall, sir George Howard, generall of the men at armes and demilances, maister Barnaby fitz Patricke his lieutenant, sir Henry Percie generall of the light horsemen: Thomas Hugghens esquire, prouost marshall, Thomas Goner maister of the ordinance, maister William Pelham captaine of the Pioners, Edward Randell esquire sergeant maior, maister Thomas Borrough, maister Cuthert Vaughan, maister Williams, and maister Cornewall corporals, this day at night the armie encamped at Dunglas, and thereabout.

The last of March, the army marching by Dunbar, there issued out of the towne certaine horsemen and footmen, offering to skirmish, towards whom certaine of the English launces and pistolets, with certaine harquebusiers made forwards, but they kept themselues within their strength, two of the enemies horsemen, and one footman were slaine. This done the army marched on to Linton briggs, where the footmen encamped that night. The horsemen lay at Hadington and in diuerse other small townes, sir Iames Crofts lay at Clarkington west of Hadington, at the lord of Cockburnes house. The first of Aprill, the camp remooued to Salt Preston, and there incamped: this euening, sir Iames Croft, with diuerse of the captaines in his company, met with the earle of Arraine, the lord Iames prior of Saint Andrewes, the maister of Marwell, sir William Kirkaudy lord of Grange, and diuerse other of the Scottish nobilitie with three hundred horse in their traine.

After they had saluted each other, they rode together to Salt Preston, where the lord Grey lord lieutenant met them, where they entred into communication, and

and after departed. The 2. of Aprill, the lord Grey, sir Iames Croft, ỹ lord Scrope, sir George Howard, with other captaines rode to Muskelborough church, whither came to them the duke Chateau le Reault, with his sonne the earle of Arrain, the earles of Arguile, Glencarne, Southerland, Mentithe, and Rothus, the lord Iames prior of Saint Andrewes, the lord Ruythuen *alias* Ruen, the lord Ogletree, the lord Boyde, the maister of Maxwell, the L. of Dunclone, the maister of Lindley, the bishop of Galloway, , the abbot of Saint Colmes Inch, the abbot of Culros, the lord of Pettirow, the lord of Cunningham head, ỹ lord of Grange and other, about 200. horse, there they sate in counsell, and departed for that night.

On the 3. of Aprill, the lord Grey, sir Iames Croft, the lord Scrope, sir George Howard, sir Henrie Percy, and diuerse other captaines and gentlemen, rode vnto Pinkey, a house of the abbot of Dunfermes, where the earle of Arraine, and the lord Iames Steward, with diuerse other noble men of Scotland meeting them, did conduct them into the said house, where they had long conference together, and after that they returned with the lord lieutenant vnto Salt Pretton.

The fourth of Aprill, fiue young gentlemen appointed to passe into England for pledges, their names were, lord Claude Hamilton, fourth sonne to the duke Chateau le Reault, Robert Dowglas, Archebald Cambell, lord of Longhennel, George Gream second sonne to the earle of Mentithe, Iames Coningham, sonne to the earle of Glencarne.

The first of Aprill, the campe raised from Salt Pretton and marched forwards, halfe a mile from Lesterike, beneath a Cragge called Arthurs seate, the duke of Chateau le Reault, the earle of Arraine, the earle of Arguile, the lord Iames prior of Saint Andrewes, and the rest of the noble men of Scotland, accompanied with two hundred horsemen, and fiue hundred footmen, staid for the comming of the English armie, whereupon the lord Grey, sir Iames Croft, the lord Scrope, sir George Howard, and sir Henry Percie repaired to them, & had conference there with the duke, and other the Scottish lords that were in his company.

In the meane while the army staid, but yet at length the horsemen, the vantgard and battell, were commaunded to march foorth, who accordingly passed along by the place where the duke and Scottish lords stood, vntill they approched neare to Lestericke: There came Trombull, the Queene Regents trumpet, to the lord lieutenant, and brought with him a safeconduct, giuen vnder the hand and seale, for the safe repaire of sir Iames Croft, sir George Howard, and fiue other to accompany them. Whereupon, they preparing themselues, departed towards Edenborough, where the said Queene as then lay within the castle. There went with them maister Sommerset, maister Pelham, and foure other gentlemen. Whilest they were in conference with the Queene, the Frenchmen to the number of nine hundred or a thousand shot, backed with fiue hundred corslets and pikes, and about fiftie horsemen, were come foorth of Lieth, vnder conduction of maister Doysell, and the countie Martigues coronell of the French footemen. The Lord Grey vnderstanding thereof, came vp to the hill, appointed an officer at armes called Rouge Croste to go vnto them, with commaundement from him, that they should retire their forces foorth of the field into the towne of Lieth: for if it were not for the promise which he had made to the queene Dowager, he would

cause

cause them to depart. The herault doing his message, receiued answere, that they were vpon their maister and mistresse ground, and therefore meant not to remoue from it. Rouge Crosse returning with this answere, was sent againe, to command them eftsoons to go their way backe to Lieth, for if they did not, they should be sent away with a mischiefe. But vnneth had the herault done this second message, when the French men stepping foorth, discharged a whole volie of their shot into the field against the Lord Grey and his companie. Hereupon, the Englishmen and they fell in skirmish, which continued for the space of foure houres and more, so hote and earnestly mainteyned on both parts, that the like had not lightly beene seene long time before: yet at the length the Englishmen droue the French footemen ouer the hill, and wan the Crag from them, and put them from a Chappell, where they had stood a great while, vsing it for a couert from the Englishmens shot. Then the enemies that were in Lieth shot off diuers peeces of their great artillerie out of the Towne against the Englishmen, who on the other part brought foorth two field peeces, and couered them with a troup of horsemen, and hauing planted them to some aduantage, discharged the same among the enemies, who perceiuing that, gaue place, and sodainely the English demilances gaue a charge on them, brake in amongst them, and slue diuerse of them, whereby they were forced to retire backe into Lieth, being followed verie neere to the gates of the Towne. There were slaine in this skirmish of the French about 140. beside them that remained prisoners. Of the Englishmen there were also diuerse slaine, and many hurt. The same day sir Iames Croft and sir George Howard returned from the M. Regent, after they had spent a long time in talke with her.

The seuenth of Aprill, a new trench was cast beside the Crag, and thereon two peeces of ordinance planted. The eight of Aprill, the Frenchmen shot at the English campe very sore out of Saint Nicholas steeple, where were planted two great peeces of ordinance, although they did no great hurt: but the same night the Englishmen cast a trench beyond the Crag, and placed in the same trench certaine small peeces of artillerie, which went off the next day against the enemies, and they likewise shot off against the English. The twelfth of Aprill, a bullet of a great peece of ordinance, being shot out of Lieth, did light in the camp and slue three men: but they were answered againe with our Canons. The fourteenth day of Aprill, being Easter day, the Englishmen shot off their great Ordinance, and the Frenchmen answered them againe all that day. The footemen also skirmished, so that diuerse were hurt on both parties. The same day the pile of Blackenesse was surrendred to maister Winter. The same day, 9. French men apparelled like women came foorth of Lieth, and counterfeiting some light demeanor, trained one of the English scowts within their danger, whom they tooke, and chopped off his head, which they set vpon the toppe of one of their Church steeples. The fiftenth day of Aprill, a fiftie horsemen, and about fiue hundred harquebusiers, who making to the new trenches, were vpon the Englishmen that warded vpon such a sodaine, that they slue and wounded no small number, and possessing the trenches awhile, stopped the touch holes of three peeces of the artillerie, tooke maister Mawrice Barkeley prisoner, and his ensigne:

Pile of Blackenesse surrendred to the Englishe.

Brian

Brian Fitz Williams was sore wounded, &c. The alarme being brought to the campe, sir Iames Croft and other repaired towards the trench with all expedition, and perceiuing the French men to be maisters of one of the trenches, he commanded captaine Vaughan with his band to enter the trench, and to relecue those that were hardly beset of the Frenchmen, which was done with such manhood, that the enemies were expulsed, and fiftéene of them slaine: captaine Sommerset and captaine Reade with their bands followed them, as they retired, and maister Arthur Grey with certaine demilances, and charging them with great courage, drane them into the towne, and made of them great slaughter, but Arthur Grey was shot through the shoulder. The 16. of Aprill, a supply of 2200. footemen came to the campe, ouer whom was captaine sir Andrew Corbet, sir Rowland Stanley, sir Thomas Hesketh, sir Arthur Manwering, sir Laurence Smith, maister Francis Tunstall, maister Edward Littleton, captaine Caruell, Philip Shurley, and Dauid Morris. They were garded with 500. horsemen, sir Ralph Sadler, sir Francis Leake, sir Iohn Foster, and sir Nicholas Strange, hauing charge to see them safely conducted, who after they had brought thē past all danger of enemies, left thē in safety by the way, and were come a day or two before them to the campe.

The 17. of Aprill, Maister Winter caused diuerse of the ship boats, being well manned, to giue a great alarme at the side of the towne towards the water, discharging many bases and harquebuziers of croke into the towne, during which time there was a piteous cry made by the women and children within the towne. The 20. of Aprill, many peeces were shot off out of the trenches into the towne. There issued out at the gates one hundred shot, to hasle such of the Englishmen as came forth to offer skirmish, the pioners both Scots and English were occupied in making of a new trench neare to the towne.

The twentith of April, the Bishop of Valence, accompanied with sir Henry Percie, and three hundred horsemen, came to Lestericke, the Lord Lieutenant, sir Iames Croft, the lord Scrope, and sir Ralfe Sadler, met him at the further end of the ward. After they had receiued him with salutations, he was conducted by Rouge crosse from the campe vnto Edenborough, and so vp to the castle to confer with the Queene Dowager. He was no sooner in the castle, but there issued forth of Leith the number of two hundred Frenchmen, and began a hot skirmish, which continued two houres, at which diuerse were slaine on both parts. The same night, nine peeces of ordinance were planted in the new trench, so that the next day the same peeces were shot off toward the steeple of S. Anthonies Church, whereby the peeces of ordinance that lay in the same steeple, were dismounted by them, and likewise those that lay in the steeple of Saint Nicholas Church, where a Gunner was slaine that stood at one of them, the peece and the gunner tumbling downe both together: a great peece of this church was beaten downe, and the steeple defaced. The Bishop of Valence after he had talked with the Queene, returned to commune with the Lords of the congregation.

The 23. of Aprill, the Pioners Scottish and English, were busied in casting of trenches.

On the 24. of Aprill, there issued out of Leith seauenteene horsemen who offered the skirmish, and vnder the place called little London, 300. or 400. of their shot were

were placed, at length certaine of the Englishe Launces gaue a charge vpon their horsemē, who therewith retiring drew the Englishmē within danger of their shot, but ỹ French were forced to retire, without any great hurt done to ỹ Englishmē.

The 25. of Aprill, the Pioners finished the new fort, named Mount Pelham, to the gard whereof Captaine Vaughan was appointed gouernor with 1200. souldiors. This fort was raised on the south side of the towne, the plot whereof was cast square with foure bulwarkes at euerie corner, and 12. battering peeces planted in places conuenient. This day, there issued out of Lieth on the East side, 70. or 80. horsemen, and 200. harquebussers offering the skirmish, towards whom certaine of the English light horsemen made, and charging them, draue thē backe to their footemen, who with their shot receiued the light horsemen so sharply, that they were forced to retire: in the which retire Iames Hamilton a Scottish man was taken prisoner. This day captaine Perith, and captaine Hayes, hauing charge of a troupe of light horsemen, vnder sir Henry Percy, and the lord of Grange, were taken prisoners before Dunbar, and to the number of 20. or 30. other were likewise taken or slaine. The same night also 2000. footemen with the pioners, were sent to the other side of the towne, beyond the Canon milles, where the pioners cast a trench for the safe lodging of the army, which remooued the next day from Lestericke downe into the valley by the said Canon milles, called the red Braes. As the army was incamping, certaine of the enemies horsemen and footemen skirmished with the English Launces and light horsemen a long time, there were two Frenchmen slaine with their horses also. In time of this skirmish, two Canons were conueyed and planted in the new trench, which discharged diuers shot at the enemies.

The seuen and twentith of Aprill, the great artillerie was planted aloft on the hill aboue the campe, within lesse than a curiors shot of the towne wals, and the pioners were set a worke to cast new trenches, from the place where the same ordinance was lodged vnto Mountpelham, drawing so neere vnto Lieth, as the harquebuse might reach them that watched and warded within the great bulwarke. The French kept the same day a trench which they had made without the towne, continually shooting at the English men in the campe, but the same night the English men won that trench from them, slue diuers of them therein with their scout, which being done, they gaue a great alarme to the towne both by land and water, the ship-boates shooting off against the towne very hotly, and they within the towne likewise at the English men. The same night was the great ordinance planted, and maister Markham hurt. The 28. the said great ordinance went off, and shot continually the more part of the day. The bishop of Ualence departed the same day towards Barwike, and this night sir George Howard, that had bene sent backe to Barwicke, to signifie to the D. of Norfolke the estate of the siege, returned with sir Richard Lee, being conducted with 500. horsemen.

The 30. of Aprill, the great artillerie were shot off very hotly, and the French likewise shot off theirs, and comming forth of the towne, skirmished with the Englishmen: this night the pioners made new trenches towards the South bulwarke. The last of April, a sodaine fire was raised within the towne, which hugely encreased and continued the most part of the night following: at the beginning

when it first appeared, the English ordinance was shot off to the place where the fire was, which shot together with help of the wind that was very great, did marueilously augment the same fire: neuertheleſſe the French at that present time offered a skirmish, & continued the same neare the space of two houres. It was appointed, that certaine bands should make alarme to the towne, in somuch that captaine Vaughan, with diuerse other souldiers of Mountpelham entred the ditch, and approched the wals, but retired without receiuing any great hurt. The first of May, the Frenchmen early in the morning set vp their may-poles in certaine bulwarkes, and 14. enſignes, the which being discouered of them in the campe, they saluted them with a peale of great ordinance, and likewise the French answered them againe, and so continued the most part of that day.

The second of May, the pioners made the trenches for the artillery to be planted in battery. The night following they placed the artillery in the new trench, and the next morning, the same battery went off, and continued all that day. The night ensuing, the pioners made a trench by the Citadell, wherein they might lodge some shot, and captaine Vaughan with diuerse of the bands in Mountpelham, gaue two fierce assaults to the towne, entred the ditches, and viewed the flankers: whereupon the French shot off the same flankers, and manning their wals, shot off two or three volies of their small artillery, slaying and hurting to the number of twenty Englishmen, among other little Norton was one.

The fourth of May, there were three enſignes appointed to gard the new trenches, and towards night the Frenchmen that were in the trench vnder the Citadell, made a sally vpon the Englishmen that garded the sayd trench, but could not preuaile. The same night the Englishmen conueyed two culuerings ouer the water to scoure the mils, and before the breake of the day they had brent one of the same mils. The fift of May, 4. souldiers belonging to our great ordinance set fire & brent the other mill. This day also, as French gentlemen came forth to discouer the English trenches, captaine Reade commanded one of his souldiers to shoote at them, but through mishap his peece burst, and a shiuer thereof brake the arme of the sayd captaine.

The sixt of May, the English ordinance on the further side the water, began to shoote off against the enemies very hotely. This day the earle of Argaile, and diuerse other noble men of Scotland, came to Edenborough with two thousand horsemen and footemen, who shewed themselues in order of a muster on the hill vnderneath the castle, which being perceiued of the French within Lieth, they shot of three great peeces of artillery at them, but hurt them not. The night ensuing, the great ordinance in the English mens trenches and bulwarkes, continued shooting on euery side: and herewith commandement was giuen by the lord lieutenant and the counsell, that the whole army should be ready armed by midnight. In the morning by two of the clocke, diuerse bands passed forth towards the towne, and entring the ditches offered to scale, other captaines with their men approched the bulwarkes, and other were appointed to enter beside the mulles. Beside the English bands, there were a thousand Scots ioyned with them, whereof fiue hundred with captaine Vaughan and other were commanded to attempt the bulwarke next to Mountpelham, and other fiue hundred went with such

such English captaines as were commanded to assault the breach.

Moreouer, as well the lances as light horsmen, were assigned to gard the fields: sir George Howard with the lances keeping betwixt the fort of Mountpelham and the sea westward, and sir Henry Percy with the light horsemen, betwixt the campe and the sea eastward. The rest of the footmen that went not to the assault, were also appointed to gard the trenches and field, in such wise as was thought expedient, and vpon warning giuen by captaine Randall sergeant maior, such as had bin commanded to giue the assault in their seuerall appointed places, prealed with courage, & boldly aduentured to climbe the wals, and enter at the breaches, but yet their attempt wanted the wished successe: for what through the policy of the Frech, in stopping the currãt of the riuer that night, & what by reason of the vnfitnesse of the ladders, being too short, the assailants were repulsed, & were forced to retire with the losse of 7. or 8. score englishmen, or more, which were slaine outright, besides those that were wounded, being at the least two or three hundred.

The 8. of May, sir George Howard and sir Richard Lee departed toward Barwike with certaine companies of horsemen for their safe conduction.

The ninth of May, the Frenchmen wrought within the towne to fortifie and repaire the breaches. The same day also the French had manned to the sea-wards a bote fraught with fifty harquebuslers, meaning to conuey them ouer to Insketh, but the English ships discouering them, prepared certaine botes to encounter thē, whereof they being aware, returned.

The 10. of May, maister Ingleby, captaine Pickman, and captaine Browne came to the campe from Barwike with a supply of foure hundred & fifty souldiers.

The twelfth of May about midnight, the Frenchmen to the number of two hundred sallied forth of the towne, minding to giue a camisado to the Englishmen that kept watch in the trenches at the west side of Mountpelham, but they were descried and repulsed.

The fifteenth of May, sir Francis Leake came to the campe with a supply of fiue hundred men from Barwike.

The one and twentieth of May about seuen of the clocke at night, there issued forth of Lieth six horsemen and a hundred footemen harquebuslers, marching toward Mountpelham to offer skirmish: whereupon captaine Vaughan went forth to them very orderly, and skirmished with them a prety while, in the end the Frenchmen were driuen to retire. The same night maister Francis Sommerset and other captaines were appointed to keepe a fort built aboue the campe, and tooke the name of him being captaine thereof, & was called Sommersets mount. The 22. sir Peter Carew came to the campe, being sent from the court. The 24. of May at night about seuen of the clocke, the French sallied forth to the number of 200. footmen and 20. horsemen, meaning, as it appeared, to haue wonne the trenches from the Englishmen, whereupon a sore skirmish followed, diuers slaine, and many hurt on both parts: yet in the end the French were driuen home by force. The same day the Frenchmen of Dunbarre tooke an English hoy laden with beare, beefe and bacon.

The eight of June sir Iohn Neuill with three hundred men, captaine Bridges, and captaine Drewry, with other three hundred, set from Barwike towards the

Queene Dowager of Scotland deceased.

campe, where they arriued on the 10. of June, on which day the queene Dowager departed this life.

The thirteenth of June, sir William Cicill principall secretary to the queenes maiestie, with sir William Cordall, and doctor Wotton deane of Canterbury and Yorke came to Barwike, appointed commissioners on her said maiesties behalfe to treate of an accord with the countie de Randon, and the bishop of Valence commissioners sent for that purpose from the French king and his wife Mary queene of Scots.

The fourteenth of June a certaine number of Frenchmen came foorth of Lieth to gather cockles on the sands towards Mountpelham, whereof the Englishmen perceiuing, set vpon them, slue 70. and tooke 16. of them prisoners.

The sixteenth of June, the foresaid commissioners came to Edenborough, and as maister Secretary and the other passed the English forts and campe, they were saluted with a gallant peale of harquebusiers.

The seuenteenth of June about eight of the clocke, an abstinence of warre was concluded, warning being giuen by the discharging of two peeces of ordinance out of the castle, and then the Frenchmen shewed themselues vpon their rampiers.

The 22. of June, the abstinence of warre was broken off.

The 4. of July about 3. of the clocke in the afternoone, the French came out of Lieth to gather cockles, whereupon the lord lieutenant being at that present in Mountpelham, sent a drum vnto monsieur Doysell, to signifie vnto him, that his souldiers had gone further without their bounds then they might do by the order taken by the commissioners of both parts: Doysell answered, that they were no souldiers, but poore people which went to gather cockles for their releefe and sustenance. The drum sayd, that if they kept not themselues within their appointed limits, the lord lieutenant meant to send them backe not greatly to their ease: whereunto Doysell replied, that if he so did, he would do the best he could to ayde the: hereupon the English horsemen and footmen of Mountpelham gaue a charge vpon them, and slue of them to the number of 50, and tooke certaine prisoners.

The first of July issued out of Lieth fourteene horsemen, and a hundred footemen, which offered the skirmish, but vpon the shooting of the great artillery from Mountpelham, they retired home againe into the towne. The night following about twelue of the clocke, one Scattargood an English man that was a gunner, and had fained himselfe to flie from the English campe for manslaughter into Lieth, and was receiued of the frenchmen, beleeuing that he had meant no deceipt, came out of the towne, after he had remained there about seuen dayes, in which meane while he had vnderstood fully the state of the towne, and now vpon his returne, made relation thereof as he knew.

The first of July, the lord Grey lord lieutenant, sir William Cicill secretary, and sir Ralph Sadler about three of the clocke in the after noone, gaue order, that there should no peece be shot, nor shew of hostility made vntil seuen of the clocke the same night: and herewith sent Gerueys Clifton vnto all the souldiers that warded in the trenches and bulwarkes on the west side of Lieth, to command them to obserue the like order, and sir Iohn Neuill was sent with like order vnto the souldiers that lay in Somerset mount.

The

¶ The peace now bing concluded, on the seuenth of July, sir Francis Leake, and sir Gerucis Clifton, accompanied with two French gentlemen were sent to the towne of Lieth, to signifie vnto monsieur Doysell, the bishop of Amiens, Labrosse, Martignes, and other the French lords and captaines, that they were come thither by commaundement from the commissioners to cause the peace alreadie concluded, to be proclaimed, which accordingly was done in manner following: Peace concluded in Scotland.

The most mightie princesse, Elizabeth by the grace of God, Queene of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. And the most christian king Francis and Mary, by the same grace of God king & queene of Fraunce and Scotland, haue accorded vpon a reconciliation of a peace and amitie to be inuiolably kept betwixt them, their subiects, kingdomes and countries, and therfore in their names it is straitly commaunded to all manner of persons borne vnder their obeisances, or being in their seruice, to forbeare all hostilitie either by sea or land, and to keepe good peace each with other from this time forwards, as they will answere thereto at their vttermost perils. Immediatly after this proclamation was ended, sir Francis Leake, and sir Gerucis Clifton were brought to monsieur Doysels lodging, where was prepared for them a banquet of thirtie or fortie dishes, & yet not one either of flesh or fish, sauing one of a pouldered horse, as was auouched by one that auouched himselfe to haue tasted thereof. Peace proclaimed in Scotland.

Articles of the peace, thirteene in number, were to this effect.

1 First, the French king and queene do not onely relinquish the stile, title and armes of England and Ireland, but do also bind themselues from henceforth to forbeare any more to vse or beare the same, and shall forbid their subiects the vsing of the same title, in what sort soeuer it be, within any of their countries or dominions, forbidding also as much as in them lyeth, the ioyning or quartering any manner of waies the armes of England with those of Scotland or France. Articles of peace at the siege of Lieth.

2 All such letters patents, or other writings as haue bene heretofore made, wherein the said title is mentioned, or whereunto any stile concerning the said armes is annexed, shall be reformed, and new made, without putting to them the title or armes of England or Ireland, and that all manner of writings or instruments concerning the said title, and being sealed with the said armes, not being renewed or reformed within sixe moneths after the publication of this treatie, shal be void and of none effect.

3 Scotland shall be gouerned by a counsell of twelue of the noblest of that countrey, which nobilitie shall be taken out of foure and twentie, to be first chosen by parliament, by the three estates there, and of those twelue, seuen shall be named by the Scottish queene, and fiue by the lords of the parliament.

4 All things passed there since March 1558. shall be ouerpassed and forgotten, and by parliament the surety of the same shall be confirmed, and euery man restored to his office in that realme.

5 No French man shall haue any office in Scotland.

6 Sixe score French men souldiers only shall remaine in Scotland, viz. three score in Dunbar, & 3. score in Inskith, & those to be monthly mustered, and payed by the counsell of the realme, and to be iustified by the lawes of Scotland.

7 No munition nor victuals shall be brought into Scotland, but from sixe

moneths to fiue moneths, and then onely for those places, and for the said number of fiue score souldiers.

8 No forraine ships or men of warre shall be from henceforth brought into Scotland, but by the consent and will of the Scots.

9 Lieth shall be demolished by the view of the Queenes maiesties commissioners, and in such sort as they shall thinke conuenient.

10 The new buildings of Dunbarre shall also be raced.

11 Matters of religiõ in Scotlãd be ouerpassed in silẽce without any alteratiõ.

12 The league betweene the Queenes maiestie and the nobilitie of Scotland is also passed ouer without any reuocation.

13 Finally, in the treatie betweene her highnesse, and the said French king and queene, the said king and queene, are by the speciall clause bound to her highnesse to performe and keepe the said couenants that touch the Realme and subiects of Scotland.

After that this peace was thus fully established, the French men were embarked at Lieth in English vessels, those onely excepted that were appointed to remaine as pledges with the English men till the ships came backe againe, and a few other that were permitted to passe through England into their countrey.

Houses blowne vp.

The fift of July, through shooting of a gunne which brake in the house of one named Adrian Arten a Dutch man in Crooked lane, and setting fire on a firken of barrell of gun powder, foure houses were blowne vp, and diuerse other sore shattered, nine men and women were slaine, and diuers other sore bruised.

The third fall of the base mony.

On Michaelmas euen before noone, was published by proclamation, that the teston coyned for twelue pence, and in the raigne of king Edward the first called downe to fiue pence, should now forthwith (of the best sort, marked with the portculeis) be taken for foure pence halfepeny, the second, marked with the greyhound for two pence farthing, the third and worst sort, not marked as afore, not to be taken for any value: the groate should be taken for two pence, the two peny peece for a peny, &c. And shortly after, her grace restored to her subiects fine sterling mony, for their corrupt and base coine, calling the same to her maiesties mints, according to the rate before mentioned.

New coine of fine siluer.

The 9. of October the French crowne that went currant for 6. shillings foure pence was proclaimed to be fiue shillings.

Ann. reg. 3.

The queenes maiestie made great preparation of armor, munition, and powder, to be in a readinesse to defend her realme, if need should happen.

1561

The merchant Tailors free-schoole.

The one and twentieth of March, a notable grammer schoole was founded by the maister, wardens, and assistants of the worshipfull companie of the merchant Tailors of London, in the parish of Saint Laurence Pountney in the same city: Richard Hils late maister of that company hauing giuen fiue hundred pound toward the purchase of an house, called the Mannor of the Roose, sometime the duke of Buckinghams, wherein the schoole is kept.

Wil. Geffrey whipped.

The 10. of Aprill was one William Geffrey whipped from the Marshalsea in Southwarke to Bedlem without Bishops gate of London, for that he professed one Iohn Moore to be Christ our Sauiour: on his head was set a paper wherein was writtẽ as followeth: William Geffrey a most blasphemous heretik, denying Christ

Christ our Sauiour in heauen. The sayd Geffrey being stayed at Bedlem gate, Iohn Moore was brought forth, before whom William Geffrey was whipped till he confessed Christ to be in heauen. Then the sayd Iohn Moore being examined, and answering ouerthwartly, was commanded to put of his coate, dublet, and shirt, which he seemed to do very willingly, and after being tied to the cart, was whipped an arrowes shoote from Bedlem, where at the last he also confessed Christ to be in heauen, and himselfe to be a sinfull man: then was Iohn Moore sent againe vnto Bedlem, and William Geffrey to the Marshalsea, where they had laine prisoners nigh a yeare and a halfe, the one for professing himselfe to be Christ, the other a disciple of the same Christ. A false christ whipped.

This yeare was such a scarcity of wheate and other graine, that sir William Chester maior of London, and other the principall magistrates of the city, were forced to make prouision for wheate & rie from beyond the seas, to a great quantity, which was a releefe, not only to the citizens, but also to the countries neare adioyning.

On Wednesday the fourth of June, betweene foure and fiue of the clocke in the afternoone, the steeple of Paules in London, being fired by lightning, brast forth (as it seemed to the beholders) two or three yards beneath the foote of the crosse, and from thence brent downe the sphere to the stone worke and bels, so terribly, that within the space of foure houres, the same steeple, with the rookes of the church so much as was timber, or otherwise combustible, were consumed, which was a lamentable sight, and pitifull remembrance to the beholders thereof. Paules steeple on fire by lightning.

The length of Paules church in London is twelue score Taylors yards, which is seuen hundred and twentie foote: the breadth thereof is one hundred and thirty foote: the height of the steeple was fiue hundred and twentie foote, whereof the stone worke is two hundred and sixtie foote: and the spere which now is burnt, was likewise two hundred and sixtie foote: the height of the body of that church is one hundred and fiftie foote.

After this mischance, the Q. maiestie being much grieued for the losse of so beautifull a monument, directed her highnesse letters to the Maior of London, willing him to assemble the citizens, to take some order for speciall ayde & helpe for the repairing againe of the same and she of her most gracious disposition, to giue a comfort vnto other, for the furtherance thereof, did presently giue and deliuer in gold 1000. marks, & a warant for 1000. load of timber to be taken out of her maiesties woods or elsewhere. And the citizens of London granted one beneuolence, & three fifteenes to be forthwith paid. And the clergie of England vnder the prouince of Canterbury granted to giue the fortieth part of the value of their benefices, being charged with first fruits, & not being charged with first fruits, to pay the thirtieth part. And the clergie of the diocesse of London graunted to giue the thirtieth part of their benefices, being in first fruits and the 20. part being out of first fruits. And immediatly by the commandement of her maiestie, her priuie counsell tooke order, that fiue citizens of London, and two of the clergie of the church of Paules had charge to ouersee, and set forward this worke, who made such expedition, that within one moneth next following the burning thereof, the same was couered with boords and lead, after the manner of a false roofe: and the greatnes of the worke dispatched in so short time could scarcely be credited of any

but such as saw the same. And the cause of this great hast, was for feare of raine which might haue perished the vaults, to the destruction of the whole church: and before the said yeare was fully ended, all the side Iles of the said Church were framed of new and maine timber, and couered with lead, and fully finished. And the same yeere also the great roofe of the west end was framed and made of new and great timber in Yorkeshire, and brought to London by sea, and set vp and couered with lead, and fully finished. And in like manner within the said yeere, the whole roofe and frame of the east end of the said church was made in Yorke shire, and brought by sea to London, and after set vp as the rest of the roofes, but the roofes of the north and south endes of the same church remained couered with boords till 1564. that the bishop (as I am informed) tooke vpon him the charge of repairing them, and for the same laid out 720. pound, and so that worke ceased to proceed any further.

Ann. reg. 4. New coines. The fifteenth of November, the Queenes maiestie published a proclamation for diuers small peeces of siluer money to be current, as the six pence, foure pence, three pence, two pence, and a penny, three halfe pence, and three farthings: & also forbad all forraine coines to be current within the same realme, as well gold as siluer, calling them into her maiesties mints, except two sorts of crownes of gold, the one the French crowne, the other the Flemish crowne: whereupon for the space of halfe a yeere, was weekely brought into the Tower of London 8000. 10000. 12000. 16000. 20000. 22000. pound of siluer plates: & as much or more in pistolets, and other gold of Spanish coines, & one weeke in pistolets and other Spanish gold 26000 pound, all these to be coined with the queenes stamps.

The 26. of December, sir Ambrose Dudley knight, called lord Ambrose Dudley second sonne of Iohn late Duke of Northumberland, was created baron Lisle, and afterward the same day earle of Warwike at Westminster.

1562. Monstrous birthes. This yeare in England were many monstrous births: in March a mare brought forth a foale with one body, and two heads, and as it were a long taile growing out betweene the two heads. Also a sow farrowed a pigge with foure legges like to the armes of a man child, with hands and fingers, &c. In Aprill a sow farrowed a pigge with two bodies, eight feete, and but one head, many calues and lambes were monstrous, some with collers of skin growing about their neckes, like to the double ruffes of shirts and necker-chefes then vsed. The foure and twentieth day of May, a man child was borne at Chichester in Sussex, the head, armes, and legges whereof, were like an Anatomie, the breast and belly monstrous bigge from the nauell, as it were a long string hanging: about the necke a great collar of flesh and skin growing like to the ruffe of a shirt or neckerchefe, comming vp aboue the eares pleyting and folding, &c.

Declaration of her maiestie, causes why to arme her subiects into France. The realme of France being in great trouble about this season, by meanes of ciuill dissension and warres that rose amongst themselues, the queenes maiestie and her honorable priuy counsell being enformed thereof, first published a booke entituled, A declaration of the Queenes Maiesty, containing the causes which haue constrained her to arme certaine of her subiects for defence both of her owne estate, and of the most christian king Charles the ninth her good brother, and his subiects. The booke followeth thus:

Although

Although the miserable and afflicted estate of the realme of France is to be lamented of all christian princes and nations, and requireth some good remedy, not onely for preseruation of the king there, with the queene his mother, and the subiects of that realme from danger and ruine: but also for the stay of the rest of christendome in peace, and to be free from the like ciuill warre, into the which, as it appeareth by these strange dealings in the sayd realme, it is meant the same shall fall: yet there is no prince that hath more iust cause to haue regard hereunto, nor that hath more indifferently and earnestly intended the recouery of quietnesse and accord therein, then the queenes maiesty of this realme of England, both by her owne gracious disposition, and by aduise of her counsell. For as the matter is now plainely discouered to the world, and as her maiesty hath proued the same sufficiently by her owne late experience, she is not onely touched as other princes ought to be, with great compassion and commiseration for the vnnaturall abusing of the French king her good brother, by certaine of his subiects, the danger of his person and his bloud, the lamentable and barbarous destruction, hauocke and spoile of so many christian innocent people beyond all measure: but her maiesty also euidently seeth before her eyes, that if some good remedy be not by Gods goodnesse prouided in season, the very fire that is now kindled and dispersed there, is purposely meant and intended to be conueyed and blowne ouer to inflame this her crowne and her realme. Which great perill, although it be so plainely seene to all wise and prouident men both at home and abroad, that they cannot mislike her care and prouidence to remedy the same in time, yet hath her maiesty thought not vnmeete to notifie some part of her dealings herein, so as it shall well appeare how sincerely her maiesty hath both hitherto proceeded with her neighbours, and how plainely and vpright she is determined to continue.

The queene of England neerest touched with the French troubles.

First, it hath bene well seene to the world how well disposed her maiestie was euen at the beginning of her raigne, to the restitution of peace to christendome, that for loue thereof, was contented to forbeare for certaine yeeres the restitution of a portion of her ancient dominion, when all other parties to the same peace, with whom and by whose alliance her crowne sustained losse, were immediatly restored to the most part of their owne in possession: and yet it cannot be forgotten within how short a space, or rather no space after, and by whom, and vpon how great euident and iust causes (as well by meanes of force and armes first taken, as by other open attempts against her M.) she was constrained to prepare like armes of defence onely, euen for her whole crowne and kingdome, and ioyntly therewith for the safetie of her next neighbors from a plaine tyrannie. And also how sincerely her maiestie proceeded therein: first by sundrie requestes and meanes made, to forbeare their attempts: next, by open declaration of her intent to be onely for defence of her selfe, and by the whole handling of the matter: and lastly, by the euent and issue of the cause, all the world hath clearely vnderstood.

2. Aprill 1559. The peace made at Castean in Cambresy.

The towne of Caleis to be restored to the queene of England.

The proceedings for the quietnesse in Scotland. 20. Aprill 1560.

After which dangerous troubles pacified, the Q. of Scots at her returne to her countrey, feeling the great commoditie hereof following, both to her selfe and her realme, & vnderstanding the sincere dealing of the Q. maiestie in all her former actions, did by diuers meanes giue signification to her maiestie of a great desire to enter with with her into a straighter kind of amitie: whereunto her maiestie being of

1562. An enteruiew accorded by the queene of England, for her & the Queene of Scots.

of her owne nature much inclined, readily accorded. And how far and prosperously they both proceeded therein by many and sundrie mutuall offices of friendship, alwell the good will shewed by her maiestie to the Queene of Scots vncles, the Guises, and to all her friends and ministers passing and repassing through this her realme, as also the accord of the enteruiew intended betwixt them both this last sommer, hath well declared.

1. March 1562. The slaughter at Vassy.

But in the midst of these her M. quiet and peaceable determinations she hath bene to her great griefe vtterly disappointed, and constrained for her owne interest to attend and intermeddle in the pacification of these great troubles in France neere to her realme, the same being stirred vp by such as both were her last manifest great enemies, and haue also (they know how) continued the cause of mistrust till this day, by manifest arguments of iniustice, which her maiestie is content to conceale, for the great affection that she beareth to the Scottish Q. First her maiestie at the beginning, doubting by the increase of these French troubles, that not onely that realme should fall into danger of ruine by diuision, as it now is, but also, that the rest of christendome, and specially her owne realme, both for the neerenesse thereto, and for the respects of them which were the principall authors and parties in these troubles, should be also disturbed and brought to danger: vsed all the meanes that might be by messages, by solicitations, by aduise, yea by a speciall ambassade of a person of good credit, to haue some mediation made betwixt these parties being at controuersie. But such was the policy and violence of the one partie in hastie proceeding euen at the first, as no mediation could be heard of or allowed. And yet could not her M. discontinue her good intent, but seeing the cruelties increase, the bloodshedding and murders continued: yea, which was most perillous, the young king and the Q. his mother being sodainly assailed, and found without force, were directed & drawne altogether by the very authors of the troubles, to suffer their name & authoritie to be abused, euen to the killing of the kings owne vnarmed innocent people, the spoyling of his rich townes, the breaking of his best aduised Edicts, the persecuting of his own blood and his nobilitie, the destroying of his faithfull approoued seruants, with many such other heapes of mischiefs: and all these for no other cause but for the particular appetites of some, and to breake with violence the ordinances of the realme, specially those which were lately deuised by the long and great councell of the realme, both for quietnesse in matters of religion, and for the relefe of the Kings estate diuers waies.

Ordo. of the great parliament at Orleance in Ia. 1560.

The edict of Ian 1562.

The slaughters at Vassey, Paris, Sens, Tholouse, Blois, Tours, Angers, and other places, by credible estimation reported out of France, to the number of 100000. persons betwixt the 1. of March, and the 20. of Aug. last.

Finally, her M. vnderstanding very certainely of an open destruction & subuersion there put already in vre, & likewise intended against all states and persons professing the gospell abroad, her maiestie thought it very needful to thinke of some other meanes of more efficacie, to induce the authors of those troubles, to giue eare to some reasonable motions of accord, & not to aduenture the ruine of a realme for their particular appetites: and therefore determined to send a solemne ambassade of a certaine number of personages of her councell, being of great authoritie, experience, & indifferencie, to repaire into France, to assay how some stay might be reasonably deuised for these extremities, by preseruing of both parts indifferently, to the seruice of the K. their soueraigne, according to their estats of birth and calling.

16. Iuly 1562. An Ambassage intended by the queene of England.

But this maner of proceeding also could no wise be liked nor allowed, neither could

could answer be had hereunto from the good young king, nor the timerous queene his good mother, without the only direction of that part, which both began and continued the troubles from the beginning.

And whilest her Maiesty was thus well occupied, meaning principally the weale and honour of the king her good brother, and secondly, well towards both the parties being at diuision, without the preiudice of either: a plaine contrary course and proceeding was vsed against her Maiesty, by the which was made manifest what was further meant and intended by them that had so oftentimes refused to heare her Maiesty speake for mediation and accord. All her Maiesties subiects and marchants as well of her cities of London and Exceter, as of other port townes in the west parts of the realme, being at that very time in diuers parts of the countrey of Britaine, resorting thither only for trade of marchandises, and ready to returne to their owne ports, were in the same time apprehended, spoiled, miserably imprisoned: yea, such as sought to defend themselues, cruelly killed, their ships taken, their goods and marchandise sealed, and nothing sayd nor deuised to charge them, but onely furiously calling them all Hugonots, a word though very strange and foolish to many of the honest marchants and poore mariners: yet fully sufficient to declare from whence these commandements came, and what their intent is to prosecute, when their time shall serue them: neither were these spoiles small or few, but in value and number great and many: neither done by priuate fury, but by publike officers, who were also maintained by gouernours of the countries: yea none of her maiesties subiects were spared that could be taken, though some escaped with great hazard. Well, hereof complaint was made where it ought to be, but therein hath bene as small regard had, as was before for robbing of her maiesties owne messengers with her letters from her embassador, and yet the fact vnpunished without any satisfaction for the same: wherein her maiesty surely noteth and pitieth the lacke rather of authority, then of good will in the K. or the queene his mother, or the king of Nauarre his lieutenant: but seeth manifestly by this and by all other proceedings, in what hard termes the estate of the young king is set, that can neither be permitted to preserue his owne people and seruants, his owne lawes and ordinances, neither to answer to other princes and people in forme of iustice, that which he ought to do.

30. Iuly. 19. August. 1561. Spoiles of English ships of London, Exceter, and Falmouth & other places committed by the Frech in Britaine. 20. August. 1562. ambassadors men robbed with the queenes letters.

Upon these and other former dangerous enterprises against her maiesty and her crowne, may it well appeare to all persons of indifferent iudgement, how these violent proceedings in Fraunce, conducted at this time by the duke of Guise and his adherents, do touch the queenes maiesty, much nearer for her state and realme then any other prince of Christendome. Wherefore seeing the authority of the king & the queene his mother, with their quiet good counsellors, cannot at this time haue place to direct their affaires neither towards their owne people, nor towards their neighbours, neither can any mediation sought by her maiesty for concord be allowed: but contrariwise, the tender persons of the king and the queene his mother be manifestly abused, and dangerously caried about for the particular pleasures onely of a few persons, and specially those of Guise, to wast the kings countries, to sacke and spoile his rich and great townes, to kill and murder the multitude of his good and true subiects: and seeing also the quarrell

manifestly

The principall quarrell is to subuert religion.

manifestly published and prosecuted both by writing and otherwise by them, is to subuert the whole profession of true religion through Christendome by force, without mercy, and thereby to stir vp a ciuill bloudy lamentable war in all Christendome. Lastly, seeing they which be the authors and maintainers of all these diuisions, are well knowne to the world to be the same, that when time serued them, bent their whole endeuours to offend and diminish the crowne and dignity of this realme of England, and of late time for the exaltation of their particular house, deuised vniustly to assaile the whole crowne of England by sundry waies, though by Gods goodnesse their practises and counsels turned for that time to their owne confusion: As by the same goodnesse they shall at all times hereafter.

Calcis.

1560. French armies sent by way of Scotland and other deuises, to claime the crowne of England, &c.

How may her maiestie, without note of manifest vnkindnesse to her deare young brother and confederate, of vnmercifulnesse to her next neighbours his subiects, of vncarefulnesse to the common quiet of Christendome: and lastly, which is nearest to her selfe, of meere negligence to the surety of her owne estate, her country and people, suffer these few troublesome men first to destroy and shed the bloud of a number of Christian people, whose bloud by nearenesse of place to her maiesties realme may be stopped, or some wayes saued, next to surprise & take such townes and hauens, whereby their former long intended and manifest practises against the crowne of this realme, may be most easily for them, and dangerously for this realme, put in vre and execution? Wherefore for these reasonable, euident, vrgent, and necessarie considerations, and not without the lamentable and continuall request of the French kings subiects her maiesties next neighbours, crying to her maiestie onely for defence of themselues, their ports and townes from tyranny and subuersion, during this their kings minority, or at the least during this his vnhability to pacifie these troubles: Her maiestie hath put certaine numbers of her subiects in order both by sea and land, to saue some part of her good brothers innocent people from this tyranny, slaughter and ruine, and to preserue some speciall townes and ports of importance, for the king her good brother, that they come not into the possession of them: who if they had them, might more easily thereby prosecute their old particular practises against this realme, as in times lately past they did manifestly attempt, whereby of necessitie they must needes endanger the perpetuity of the peace betwixt the French king and her maiestie, and so consequently, though against the meaning of the king, deprive her maiestie of her good right to her towne of Calcis and the members thereof: Whereof it behoueth her maiestie, as things be handled to haue good regard. And in this sort her maiestie doubteth not, but the sincerity of her doings, tending onely to procure Christian quietnesse by sauing of Christian bloud, shall well please almighty God, content the king her good brother, when he shall be in estate and liberty to ponder the same indifferently, and serue also for the iust and naturall defence of her selfe, her peoples and countries: and finally by Gods grace shall establish the continuance of some more assured peace and concord betwixt both their maiesties and countries, so as either of them may quietly enioy and rule their owne. And in the meane time, her maiestie assureth the sayd king, the queene his mother, the king of Nauarre, and all his good counsellours and subiects, that whatsoeuer any

Perill and doubt of the restitution of the towne of Calcis, &c.

malicious

malicious or miscontented person shall sinisterly report of her intent and doings: Her M. meaneth nothing herein, but sincerely, & as ẏ necessitie of the time & cause requireth, without usurping any thing, or doing wrong or violence towards any the French kings subiects, protesting before God and all the world, that her meaning is for a necessarie defence onely of the true and good subiects of the French king, which otherwise apparantly in this troublesome time should be violently killed or destroyed: and so consequently her M. intendeth by all maner of meanes possible, to keepe and continue good peace with the said king and all his countries, and to neglect no reasonable meanes that may procure libertie to himselfe, & quietnesse betwixt his subiects, which then shall succeede when it shall please almighty God to giue to the first and chiefe authors of these troubles, grace to content themselues with their owne estates, and to liue within the compasse of their degrees like quiet subiects and fauourers of the common peace and tranquilitie of Christendome. A matter more necessarie at this time to be sought for, rather by coniunction of Christian princes and states in vnitie of mind and loue of peace and concord, then in this sort by sword and fire, by priuate deuises and secret factions to stir a diuision and ciuill warre in Christendome, vnder the cloke and pretence of religion.

The queens maiesties intent to procure peace, and to obserue it.

They of Guise to liue in their degrees without superioritie ouer the king and the rest of his bloud.

A free generall counsell by the consent of christian princes meeter then ciuill warre, to bring the Church to vnitie.

A band of English soldiers sent to Newhauen.

These causes thus published at the request of the French themselues, namely, monsieur de Vidame then captaine of Newhauen, the bailife of Roane, the treasurer of Diepe and other, profering the foresaid townes whereof they had charge vnto her maiestie (if it would please her to further their proceedings of the Gospell, for that her maiestie was true inheritor not onely to those townes, but to all the whole kingdome of Fraunce, as they themselues confessed. In the moneth of September, her maiestie sent a band of her subiects to the towne of Newhauen in Normandy: who were embarked at Portsmouth, because that hauen is most apt for transportation to that place, vpon whose arriuall the townes-men and inhabitants ioyfully surrendred themselues and their towne into the possession of the Queenes maiestie, which was kept by Englishmen from this moneth of September in *Anno* 1562. vnto the 29. of July then next following in the yeare 1563, as more at large shall be shewed. For the conduction of such forces as were to be sent ouer, her maiestie ordained the lord Ambrose Dudley earle of Warwike to be her principall lieutenant, captaine generall, chiefe leader and gouernour of her said subiects, that should in such wise passe ouer into Normandy. Hereupon the said earle the 17. of October, tooke shipping at Portsmouth in the hauen there, being aboord himselfe in the Queenes ship called the New barke, and setting forward sailed all that afternoone, and the night following directly towards Newhauen: but in the morning when he was within twentie miles of the towne of Newhauen, the wind suddenly changed contrarie to his course, so that being driuen to returne, about the next midnight he arriued in the Downes, and there remained at anchor till the next morning, and then was set on land by boate at Sandon castle beside Deale, and the same day at night came to Douer, and there lay till the 28. of October, and then taking ship againe sailed forth, but finding the wind nothing prosperous to his course, after he had lien all that night and day following, tossing on the seas, he was constrained backe againe to the hauen of Douer, where he

Earle of Warwike landed at Newhauen.

he remained till the 28. of October, and on the 29. he landed at Newhauen, where he was most ioyfully receiued with a great peale of artillerie. The 30. of October, there came to Newhauen from Diepe 50. light horsemen Scots, brought by one of maister Killigrewes seruants. The last of October, the earle of Warwikes commission was proclaimed in Latin, English, and French, by Blew Mantell pursuant at armes, which being ended, his lordship went into the church, & there sir Adrian Poinings knight Marshall, gaue him his oth, and then my lord gaue the said sir Adrian his oth, and after him were sworn Cuthbert Vaughan controller, Iohn Fisher knight porter, William Bromfield maister of the ordinance, William Robinson, Walter Bailiffe, and captaine T. Wood clarke of the counsel. The second of November, the earle of Warwike with the knight marshall and the controller, rode out of Newhauen to Hauteuille, and so towards Mondeuille accompanied with all the horsemen English and Scottish, and a thousand footmen. The Scottish men and Montgomeries band passed fourth and skirmished with them of Mondeuille, and the Scots brought away with them a bootie of 300. sheepe, but in the morning they were returned backe againe by commaundement of the earle of Warwike. Maister Controllers souldiers went as far as Harflew, and there skirmished with them of the garrison, but without any hurt to either part. The 4. of November, a barke of Newhauen belonging to Francis Clarke, brought into the hauen of the same towne 4. Britains laden with Gascoine wine to the quantitie of 200. tuns, which they meant to haue brought to the enemies, but was discharged in Newhauen, and stood the English in good steade. The 6. of November, a great alarme was raised in the towne of Newhauen, for vpon the hils on the north side of the towne, the Reingraue & other shewed themselues with 2000. footmen, & 500. horsemen: and therewith the Reingraue sent a trūpeter to the towne, to aduertise the L. lieutenant, that he was there on the hils, & that if it would please him to promise vpon his honour & by the faith of a gentleman that he might come and go safe, he would be glad to come and see him, and talke with him. Whereupon ỹ lord lieutenant taking with him certaine captains and gentlemen, rode fourth of the towne, and sent before him sir Adrian Poinings the marshall with Stephen Medcalfe her maiesties trumpeter, vnto ỹ Reingraue, who talking with him, returned and met with the lord Lieutenant, who therewith passed forward, and meeting with the Reingraue, they embraced each other, and conferred together: and the Reingraue told the lord lieutenant, that he was come to be his neighbour, with such other merry speech, and after taking leaue each of other, they returned. The countie Montgomerie and monsieur Beauuoys had some talke also with the Reingraue, casting out bitter words in reproofe of the duke of Guise, and other whom they hated. The Reingraue comming backe to his army, forrayed all the countrie, and droue away the more part of all the cattell that they could find, and comming to the church of Hauteuille, where an hundred and fiftie of Montgomeries band lay, they skirmished with them, and in the end Montgomeries souldiers were forced to retire, and abandon the place, & came to Newhauen: but the next morrow they returned, tooke the church, and kept it against the enemies as afore.

Oth of the Lord lieutenant & other

The 11. of November, a proclamation was made in the name of the lord lieutenant,

lieutenant, as well for good orders to be kept by the soldiers against the French inhabitants of the towne, & reforming of certaine greeuances whereof the French had made complaint, as also for their comming to church to heare common praier and preaching at due times, for the auoiding of vnlawfull games, &c. The 12. of Nouember, there went out of Newhauen towards Harflew three bandes of French men, containing about fiue hundred footemen, and suddenly they were beset by the Almaines & French men of the garrison of Harflew, so that the French men of Newhauen were driuen to take the village of Grauile, where they maintained the skirmish for the space of two howers, till the lord lieutenant sent foorth with the controller the number of one thousand footemen, and all the English and Scottish horsemen, and maister Beauuoys with diuerse French horsemen, who comming before Harflew, fell in skirmish with the enimies, to whose succour there issued foorth of Harflew a great number of the Almaines both horsemen and footemen: but the Englishmen behaued themselues so valiantly, that they beate them out of the field into the towne: and the Englishmen returned to Newhauen with honor, hauing not lost past eight of their soldiers, that were slaine, and fiue hurt.

The 13. of Nouember, a pinnesse of the French men that belonged to Newhauen, being gone foorth the night before, brought into the hauen a ship laden with Rochell wine fiue and twentie tuns, that was bound to the enemies. The 14. of Nouember, another ship fraught with twentie tuns of Gascoine wine was brought in as a prise, taken by a barke of Newhauen. The 17. of Nouember, a proclamation was mad concerning orders taken by the lord lieutenant, that no English man nor French man should shoote off any harquebut within the towne, nor that any French man, except monsieur Beauuoys, or monsieur Bricquemaule, or their companies should be out of their lodgings after nine of the clocke at night till the next morning, on paine of death, except in alarmes.

Prises of wine brought into Newhauen.

The 23. of Nouember, the Reingraue was seene on the north hils of the towne with fower score horsemen, whereupon the Scottish horsemen and three bands of footemen issued out, marched vp towards the same hils in hope to meete with the enemies, but they were retired towards Mondeuille, and so nothing was done. The 25. of Nouember, a soldier was hanged in the market place in Newhauen, and therewith proclamation made that none should take any thing forcibly from the French, on paine of death. The same day came into the hauen hoyes and boates laden with wine, cider, perrie, wheate, beefe, bisket, meale, &c. The same day also there landed at Newhauen fiue hundred soldiers vnder the leading of Auerie Darcie, Reignald Higate, and William Twedie. The same day the Queenes ship called the Hare comming from Portsmouth, arriued at Newhauen, and in her came sir Iohn Portinarie, a man of great experience in fortification, they were by the way assailed by a French ship of nintie tuns and better, but they that were aboord the Hare vanquished the enimies, tooke the same ship, and brought her with them, being laden with wines. The same day sir Iohn Moore landed at Newhauen, bringing ouer with him fiue hundred soldiers for a supply of the garrison,

A soldier executed.

Prises brought into Newhauen.

The 8. of December, monsieur de Beauuoys, captaine Francis Somerset, and

captaine

captaine Edward Horsey, with diuers other captaines and gentlemen, rode to the Reingraue, lying at a faire house not far from Mondeuille, where they dined with him, had great cheere, and returned to Newhauen. The Reingraue sent for a present to the earle of Warwike a great horse, very faire, with saddle and bridle, esteemed to be well worth an hundred pound. The same day at night, the double Rose with other boates passed out of the hauen, Edward Dudley and captaine Iohn Warde, being aboord with other to the number of an hundred good soldiers, sailing downe the riuer, landed beside Tankeruille, and lay close all that night in a wood: in the morning monsieur Bimarre ensigne-bearer to the countie Montgomerie, with six or seauen French men vnarmed went to the castle gate, & there fell in talke with monsieur Dimence, that was captaine of that fortresse, hauing about him ten soldiers. While they were thus in talke, the English men and French men comming forth of the wood that was there at hand, reared vp their ladders at the breach, which was made the summer before, and entring by the same, came downe into the base court. Which thing when the French soldiers that kept talke at the castell gate perceiued, the captaine beholding as good as three score armed men within the castell at his backe, he suddenly yeelded himselfe, and in this sort was the castell taken, and the captaine brought prisoner to Newhauen.

A present from the Reingraue to the lord lieutenant.

Castell of Tankeruille taken by the of Newhauen.

The 12. of December, the earle of Warwike, monsieur de Beauuois & monsieur de Bricquemault, with all the horsemen, and 3000. footemen, passed forth of Newhauen vnto Harflew, out of which towne issued 700. Reisters of the retinue of countie Reingraue, & 300. footemen, who fell in skirmish with the French & English very hotly, but the English draue them to the gates of Harflew, & slue them there, and vpon the wals of the towne: yet was there not slaine past seuen of the English part. The 17. of December, the countie Montgomerie and sir Hugh Paulet arriued at Newhauen in one of the Queenes ships called the Ide.

A skirmish before Harflew.

While things passed thus in Normandy, there ended his life at home the honourable baron and famous captaine, William lord Grey of Wilton, knight of the most noble order of the garter, at that present gouernor of Barwike, & warden of the East marches against Scotland, he deceased the 25. of December at Chesshunt in Hertfordshire.

Lord Grey of Wilton deceased.

The 26. of December, the county de Montgomerie tooke shipping at Newhauen rode, accompanied with fower hundred harquebuliers Frenchmen, and sailed to Diepe there to be gouernor of that towne.

County Montgomerie gouernor of Diepe 1563.

The first of January, were apprehended captaine Blondell, captaine Moucombel, monsieur de Mainie, and Vitanua, with others, for some conspiracy or trayterous practise which they went about and had contriued.

The same day captaine Edward Horsey with 200. souldiers, and captaine Francis Blunt with 100. tooke shipping at Newhauen rode, and sailed to Diepe, there to remaine with the county Montgomery.

The ninth of January, a great tempest of wind and thunder happened in the towne of Leicester, which vncouered 411. baies of houses, and ouerthrew many.

The sixteenth of January, the castle of Tankeruille was surrendred to the Reingraue, after he had laine about it eight dayes, with two thousand horsemen and

The castle of Tankeruille surrendred.

and footemen. The 19. of Ianuarie, there landed at Newhauen captaine Tremaine with fiftie horsemen very well appointed to serue there. The 24. of Ianuarie, Francis Clarke Frenchman arriued at Newhauen with two tall ships of his owne, right well appointed for the wars, bringing with him three rich prises.

The first of Februarie, two ships of Britaines laden with Gascoine wine, butter, bacon, salt, and other victuals, were brought into Newhauen by a shalop of Killebeuf, that was reliant with other Frenchmen in Newhauen, and had taken these two vessels as they were going to victuall the enemies. The first of Februarie, three mightie ships of war belonging to Francis Clarke, brought into Newhauen three rich prises laden with sacks, bastards, sugar, orenges, graines, and other marchandises. This Clarke had not bene fourth past fiue weekes at this time, and yet he had got aboue 18. prises well worth the summe of 50000. pounds. The 7. of Februarie, was Hunflew summoned by an herault sent from the French admirall, monsieur de Chatillon, The 8. of that moneth, the said admirall came before Hunflew with 6000. horsemen Reisters, and other of his owne retinues, beside footemen, and 1000. horsemen of the countries thereabout, and about fiue of the clocke at night, there was a great peale of ordinance shot off at Newhauen for a welcome to the said admirall.

Prises brought into Newhauen.

The 12. of Februarie, the French galliasse of Newhauen passing forth and waiting about Hunflew to seeke aduentures in hope of purchase, by reason the lord admirall of France lay thereby at Tonque, roade at an anchor, whilest some that were aboord in her went aland to gaine somewhat of the enemies, but they within Hunflew perceiuing this, made out their great galliasse with 50. mariners and soldiers, who comming vpon the galliasse of Newhauen, put her in great danger of taking, but waying anchor drew toward the shore, tooke in the rest of their companie, and stood at their defence, behauing themselues so well, that continuing in fight aboue a long howre, at length they ouercame their enemies, slew 7. of them, wounded 37. tooke their galliasse, and brought her to Newhauen with thirteene bels, diuers coapes and church ornaments, sheepe, and other spoiles which they had got abroad in the countrie, together with 43. prisoners, and the artillerie of the galliasse. The fourteenth of Februarie, there came from the lord admirall of France lying then at Tonque, monsieur de Rohen and monsieur de Grandemont a knight of the order, monsieur Telegnie the admirals sonne in law, & diuers other French gentlemen to confer with the lord lieutenant, who receiued them right gladly, and made them great cheere: they remained there till the 18. and then departed and went to Caen, whither the said lord admirall was remooued, and had entred the towne, preparing to besiege the castell. The same day monsieur Briquemault and sir Nicholas Throckmorton knight arriued at Newhauen. The admirall Chatillon kept the castell of Caen besieged, within the which was the marques Dalbeuf, there were sent vnto him from Newhauen the fiue and twentith of Februarie, seuen canons, two demy culuerings, and one minion. The fire and twentith sir Nicholas Throckmorton, monsieur Briquemault and monsieur Beauvoys with a thousand souldiers French, and as many English: to wit, captaine Zouch, captaine Twedie, captaine Higate, each of them two hundred, captaine Iohn Warde, captaine Parkenson, captaine Saule, and ma-

Galliasse of Harflew taken by them of Newhauen.

Sir Nicholas Throckmorton.

Aide from Newhauen to the siege of Caen.

ster Wheeler, captaine Fisher lieutenant with his band, each of thē with his hundred, and captaine Pelham with the laborers, were embarked in the roade of Newhauen, and sailed foorth towards Cane to come to the siege, which the Admirall of Fraunce had layd to the castle there. The same day, as county Montgomerie had embarked at the hauen of Diepe in an English vessell, and was cōming towards Newhauen, there came from Fies campe three shalops, by the appointment of the Reingraue, which made towards Montgomerie, whose meaning when he perceiued, he set vpon the strongest of the same shalops, so that there followed a sharpe conflict betwixt them, but in the end the victory fell to Montgomerie, the shalope being taken, the captaine and maister slaine, and three English victualers rescued, which the said shalope had taken. Montgomerie herewith arriuing at Newhauen, and bringing with him his prise was ioyfully receiued, & went abroad againe, and sailed to Cane there to conferre with the admirall. The first of March, they began to batter Cane in such wise, that about foure of the clocke in the after noone they within the towne began to parley, but it tooke none effect. And then went off the artillery againe till night, and in the morning, the battery eftsoones began, and before that two tires of the sayd artillery had gone off, they within offered againe to parley, and finally agreed by composition to yeeld, and so that same day the castle was surrendred vnto the French admirall, and the marques Dalbeufe and other that had kept that place departed.

Montgomery taketh a shalope, he goeth to Cane.

The castle of Cane surrendred to the admirall.

The third of March, the towne of Bayeulx was yeelded to the admirall, and on the morrow following, Faleise, and after Saint Lo, with diuerse other townes and castles yeelded vnto him.

The 10. of March, the great galley and the foystes were sent from Newhauen with a canon, and shot, powder, &c. to Hunflew, where they met with Monsieur de Mouy, that came thither with a faire company of horsemen, and diuerse footemen, French: and of the Englishmen, captaine Tuttie with his two hundred and captaine Fisher with his hundred. The canon was immediatly planted, and shot off a sixe times. Whereupon they within began to parley, and in the end agreed to yeeld vp the castle vnto Monsieur de Mouy with condition: and so left the castle vnto Monsieur de Mouy, whereby his souldiers as well English as others gained greatly by the spoile: whereas Monsieur de Beauuoys had by the admirall Chatillons commandement, charged by proclamation, all strangers, forreiners, and French souldiers to depart the towne of Newhauen by the 23. of March last past: and that all other, hauing their wiues and families, should depart with them, or within foure dayes after, to giue ayde for the keeping of the townes of Hunflew, Cane, Bayeux, Falaize, Saint Lo, and other places, lately brought vnder the obedience and authority of the prince of Condy, vnder paine for making default, to be taken as good prisoners of warre, to those that should apprehend them. Proclamation was also thereupon made in the lord lieutnants name, the 25. of March, that it should be lawfull to the queenes maiesties subiects to apprehend and take as their good and lawfull prisoners, all such as contrarie to the former proclamation should remaine in the towne of Newhauen after fiue of the clocke after noone of the day next following (those persons onely excepted whose names were enrolled, remaining with the lord lieutenants Secretarie.

The French apointed to depart from Newhauen.

The

The 5. of Aprill the Reingraue with 400. horſemen and about 500. footmen, came downe the hill, betwixt Saint Addreſſes and Engleſield, where ſir Hugh Pawlet knight met with him, by appointment of the lord lieutenant, accompanied with 40. horſemen, and 1000. Engliſh footemen, and after they had talked together, ſir Hugh Pawlet returned into Newhauen, and the Reingraue to Mondeuile.

On Eaſter euen, two ſouldiers that ſerued vnder captaine Parkenſon were hanged in Newhauen, for running away to the Reingraue.

The firſt of May, Gartar king at armes, arriued at Newhauen, bringing with him the garter to Ambroſe earle of Warwike the lord lieutenant, choſen on Saint Georges day laſt paſt, to be one of that moſt noble order.

The 17. of May, proclamation was made, that all manner of furniture and apparell, appertaining to ſhips, within the garriſon, hauen, or roade of the towne of Newhauen, ſhould be brought in, or a note to be giuen thereof in writing to the lord lieutenant and counſell there.

The 22. of May, about one of the clocke in the morning, the Reingraue with 500. horſemen, and 22. enſignes of footemen, came downe to a village called Lheure, neare vnto the new fort, which by order of the lord lieutenant was lately before begun to be built. The enemies meaning was, to haue taken the ſame fort by a ſudden aſſault, but the Engliſh ſcoutes gaue intelligence to the lord lieutenant thereof, who incontinently going to the bulwarke Ryall, ſet out by the Poſterne captaine Ward with his 100. ſouldiers, and captaine Parkenſon with his 100. to paſſe to the fort, there to be an ayde and defence to them that lay in the ſame. About three of the clocke in the morning the Reingraue ſuddenly with his bands of horſe and footemen, gaue them in the fort a hot alarme, and immediatly the earle of Warwike gaue in charge to captaines, Read, Appleyard, Tutty, Souch, Antwiſell, Warde, Morton, and Parkenſon, hauing with them 1000. footmen and 200. horſemen, to ſet vpon the enemies in the village of Lheure, neare adioyning vnto the ſaid new fort, where the Engliſh ſouldiers beat backe their enemies, ſlue and tooke of them to the number of an hundred, beſides thirty faire horſes, and an enſigne, and ſet fire on the towne, becauſe the enemies ſhould not come to encampe therein as their purpoſe was.

Alarme giuen to the new fort by Newhauen.

The 26. of May, the Frenchmen in number aboue three thouſand horſemen and footemen, came downe towards the wind-mils, neare to the bulwarke called Saint Addreſſes, againſt whom the Engliſh horſemen and footemen iſſued forth of the towne, giuing them a hot ſkirmiſh, where were ſlaine two hundred of the French, beſides two hundred and aboue that were hurt. Amongſt the Engliſh, captaine Tremayne and about ſome twelue perſons more were ſlaine: but the French were driuen to retire. The firſt of June, at ſeuen of the clocke at night, the Reingraue hauing layd in the village of Lheure an ambuſh of fiue hundred horſemen, and fifteene hundred footemen, there came downe alſo betweene the abbey and the village called Engleſield towards the towne, the number of a thouſand footemen, which began a very hot ſkirmiſh, firſt at the new fort, comming euen hard to the ditches, where the Engliſhmen manfully encountered them. Herewith alſo, the Reingraue

A great skirmiſh.

Another skirmish.

appointed other to come downe and approch the bulwarkes of Saint Andrewe, Saint Frauncis, Michaell and other, round about the towne, so that there were of them the number of fiue thousand, that were employed in this skirmish, which was maintained right fiercely, for the space of two houres, till in the end the enemies were forced to giue place, with the losse of fiue hundred of their men, Almaines, Frenchmen and other. Of English men there were hurt, captaine Ielbert, and captaine Pelham, and about fifteene other hurt and slaine.

The 7. of June, the first canon-shot light within the towne of Newhauen, neare to the bulwarke of Saint Andrewe. The ninth of June, arriued at Newhauen three Captaines with their bands of an hundred the peece, being of the garrison of Barwike. Also the same day landed there Edward Randoll, appointed to be knight Marshall. For you must vnderstand that sir Adrian Poinings being knight Marshall, vpon his returne into England went not backe againe: and then was sir Thomas Finch of Kent appointed to go ouer to supply the roomth of knight Marshall, who making his prouision readie, sent ouer his brother Erasmus Finch to haue charge of his band, and his kinsman Thomas Finch to be prouost marshall, whilest he staying till he had euery thing in a readinesse to passe ouer himselfe, at length embarqued in one of the Queenes shippes, called the Greyhound, hauing there aboorde with him besides three score and fiue of his owne retinue, foure and fortie other Gentlemen, two of them being brethren to the Lord Wentworth, to wit, Iames Wentworth, and Iohn Wentworth with diuerse others, who in the whole (accounting the mariners) amounted to the number of two hundred persons and vpward: and as they were on the further coast towards Newhauen, they were by contrarie wind and foule weather driuen backe againe toward the coast of England, and plying towards Rie, they forced the captaine of the shippe a very good sea-man, named William Maline, and also the maister and mariners, to thrust into the hauen before the tyde, and so they all perished, seuen of the meaner sort onely excepted, whereof three dyed shortly after they came on land. After this mischaunce, Edmond Randoll was appointed knight Marshall.

Captaine Randoll knight marshall.

Sir Thomas Finch.

The 15. of June, the captaines Richard Saunders, and William Saul, with their bands of an hundred souldiers a peece, and captaine Drurie with two hundred arriued at Newhauen, and the morrow after arriued captaine Roberts with an other hundred souldiers. On the seuenteenth day sir Frauncis Knowles, vicechamberlaine to the Queenes maiesties house, landing at Newhauen, sent to view the state of the towne.

The 18. of June, two souldiers were executed for drawing weapon against their captaine.

The 28. of June, the French men came downe to the village of Lheure, and there very neare to the fort, beganne a skirmish with the English men: there were of them tenne ensignes of footemen, and two hundreth horsemen, this skirmish lasted three houres, and yet not past foure persons slaine. The night following, they placed fiue canons betwixt the Towne and the brickehilles, and likewise other peeces of Artillerie at the foresaid Village

of

of Lheure, so that they shot both into the towne and fort. The first of July, about midnight, they issued foorth of their trenches, and skirmished with the English scoutes, drove them vnder the bulwarke of Saint Addresse, and there perceiuing that the Englishmen had prouided to sally out, after a long skirmish they retired. About the third of July, there landed nine hundred souldiers well appointed all in yellow cloakes, and blew. Captaine Sanders was hurt in the legge whereof he dyed. The twelfth of July, about foure of the clocke in the morning, the French laid batterie to the Bulwarke of Saint Addresses, continuing the same all that day. They also dismounted the same day the Ordinance in the steeple of Newhauen, and beat downe the great bell, cleane defacing the steeple: the same euening, was William Robinson esquire, baylife of Newhauen, slaine with a shot, and William Bromfield, maister of the ordinance hurt, whereof he died shortly after.

The 14. of July, sir Hugh Pawlet knight landed at Newhauen, bringing with him eight hundred souldiers. The same day came downe the Frenchmen to the number of 3000. euen hard to the gates of the towne, beating the English men out of their trenches, but in the end they were forced to retire, and not past twentie English men slaine, and about an hundred hurt: but the French losse (as was thought) aboue foure hundred horsemen and footmen. The same day, the little Galiasse called the Fore, went out of Newhauen, fraught with fiftie men, to flanke alongst the shore, and to beate the French men with her shot, but a linestoke fell into a barrell of powder and set it on fire together with the vessell, so that she suddenly sunke, and all that were aboord in her were lost, sauing fifteene that saued themselues by swimming. A Galiasse of Newhauen brent.

The 21. of July, the Constable of Fraunce, and many other lords of Fraunce came to the abbey of Graville, where the marshall Brissac was lodged, who had the generall charge in the army, before the comming of the said Constable. Constable of Frãce came to the siege of Newhauẽ.

The 23. of July, the Constable came to the trench that was cast ouer against the bulwarke of Saint Addresse, alongst by the sea side, and sent his trumpet to sommon the towne. The Lord lieutenant appointed sir Hugh Pawlet to go foorth and make the answere in his name, which was in effect, that the Queens maiestie had appointed him and others to keepe the Towne, and therefore they meant not to deliuer it to any other person, without her Graces commaundement. The English men were no sooner departed, but that the enemies hauing planted eight canons in batterie against the castle and bulwarke of the hauen, caused the same to be shot off, continuing the batterie vntill the eight and twentieth of July.

The 28. of July, the prince of Condy, and the duke of Montpensier, came to the campe and alighted at the Constables lodging, went from thence to the trenches to relieue the marshall Montmorancie, and to supplie his roomth, whilest he might in the meane time goe to suppe with his father, and so to take his rest: Monsieur Destree, and the other that had charge about the planting and ordering of the artillerie, vsed such diligence, and were so earnestly called vpon and encouraged by the prince of Condy, continually remaining in the trenches, that on the 27. in the morning, the artillerie beganne to batter the bulwarke The prince of Condie came to the campe before Newhauen.

of Saint Addreſſe and other places. This was not done without great daunger of the pioners and men of warre that guarded them: for as the French deſperately made theſe approches, they were made by the Engliſh gunners to taſt the bitter fruite therof: but ſuch was the multitude of the French men that were now aſſembled in hope to recouer that towne, (which being poſſeſſed by the Engliſh, cut off all trafique from Roane, Paris and other places) that with their generall ayde, and drawing the water downe to the ſea, the marſhes were made paſſeable and firme ground, which to men of great experience was thought a thing impoſſible. The Caſtle, the wals, and other defences of the Towne, were battered, breaches made, and the trench, which before the comming of the Conſtable, was but brought to the point ouer againſt the bulwarke of Saint Addreſſe, was now within fower daies aduanced neere hand the ſpace of two miles, vpon the cauſey or breach which was all of ſtone, without any earth to couer them, ſo that they were driuen to make the beſt ſhift they could with wool-ſackes, ſand-bags, baſkets, and fagots. Yet all this had neuer come to paſſe, without infinite ſlaughter, and farre more loſſe of French blood, if the great mortalitie of peſtilence (which entred the Towne about the beginning of Sommer) throughe a venimous infection, had not ſo greatly increaſed, that it ſlue dayly great numbers of men, ſo that the ſtreets lay euen full of dead corples, not able to be remooued, by reaſon of the multitude that periſhed. And now the ſhot of the canon, lying within a fire an twentie pales of the Towne, was ſo terrible, as the like had not bene lightly heard of, and ſundrie breaches there were, which were already made, namely, two verie great and eaſie to be entered: All theſe dangers and miſeries notwithſtanding the Earle of Warwike with his Captaines and ſouldiers, in couragious order, ſtoode at thoſe ſeuerall breaches, readie to defend the ſame, if the enimies had preſumed to haue giuen the aſſault, which when the Conſtable perceiued, he cauſed a trumpet to ſound the blaſt of emparley, that talke mought be had for the concluding of a compoſition betwixt both the parties, to auoyd the imminent ſlaughter and effuſion of bloud: which offer ſeeming not vnmeete, both parties concluded that parley ſhould be had. The eight and twentieth of July therefore, the Conſtable came to the end of the trenches next to the towne, where ſir Mawrice Denis, treaſurer of the towne, ſir Hugh Pawlet, captaine Horſey, captaine Pelham, captaine Iohn Shute prouoſt marſhall, and Nicholas Malby Secretarie to the lord Lieutenant, came forth and paſſed ouer the hauen to commune with him, and during the parley betwixt them, a truce was accorded, and aſſented to by both partes. But the Conſtable tooke vpon him to haue onely authoritie to accept or refuſe ſuch conditions as ſhould be offered or agreed vpon by the Engliſh commiſſioners in this treatie: and ſo at length they paſſed certaine articles in forme as followeth. Firſt, that the earle of Warwike ſhould render the Towne of Newhauen into the hands of the Conſtable of France, with all the artillerie and munitions of warre then being in the Towne, belonging to the French king and his ſubiectes. Item, he ſhould leaue the ſhips that were in the Towne at that preſent, belonging to the king or his ſubiects, with all their

Plague of peſtilence in Newhauen.

A truce accorded, and articles agreed vpon, for ſurrender of Newhauen.

their furniture, and generally all such marchandise and other things, being at that present within that Towne, as either belonged to the king or his subiects. Item, the saide Earle should presently deliuer into the hands of the Constable, the great Tower of the said hauen, so that the souldiers thereof enter not into the Towne: and that the said earle should deliuer fower such hostages as the said Constable should name. Item, that the next day by eight of the clocke in the morning, the said earle should withdraw his souldiers from the fort, to deliuer it immediatly into the hands of the said Constable, or his deputies, at the said houre. Item, that all prisoners should be deliuered on either side, without paying any raunsome. Item, that the Constable should for his part suffer the said Earle of Warwike and all those that were in garrison in the said Newhauen to depart, with all things whatsoeuer that belonged to the queene of England or her subiects. Item, that for the departure aswell of the said Earle, as the remouing of his souldiers and other things: the said Constable agreed to giue them fiue dayes, to begin the twentie nine of July, during the which they might frankly take and carie away the said things. Item, the said Constable did likewise permit, that all the ships and English vessels appointed for the portage and conueying away of the said things, should safely and freely passe in, to, and fro the said hauen, without any stay or impeachment, either by the French or other. The fower hostages were appointed to be maister Oliuer Maners, brother to the Earle of Rutland, Captaine Pelham, Captaine Horsey, and Captaine Leighton. In witnesse whereof, the said Lords, the Constable of France, and Earle of Warwike signed these articles, the eight and twentieth of July. The last of Julie, the most part of the Englishmen tooke ship and departed homewardes: for glad was he that could get soonest out of that vnwholsome ayre: manie sicke persons yet were left behinde, impotent, and not able to helpe themselues a shippe boorde, the mistrie whereof Edward Randolph esquier, high marshall of the Towne (who was appointed to tarrie and see the vttermost of the composition accomplished) perceiuing, mooued with naturall pittie of his countreymen relinquished without comfort, caused the said sicke persons to be caried aboord, not sparing his owne shoulders, at that time feeble and full of the plague, himselfe and his men still bearing and helping the poore creatures on ship boord: a rare fact, worthie reward, and no doubt in remembrance with God, the true recorder of mercifull deserts. Edward Randolph his pitifulnesse deseruing commendation.

Beside the meaner sort of those that died at Newhauen of the pestilence, during the siege, I finde noted as chiefe, Cuthbert Vaughan Comptroller of the Towne, Frauncis Somerset cousin to the Earle of Worcester, Auerie Darcie brother to the Lord Darcie, Iohn Zouche, brother to the Lord Zouche, Edward Ormesby, Thomas Drurie *alias* Poignard, Richard Croker, Iohn Cockson, Thomas Kemish, Iohn Prowde, William Saule, Wilfride Antwisell, these of the plague. There were diuerse also that were slaine in the fielde, as both the Tremaynes brethren, Nicholas and Andrew, Captaine Richard Saunders, with maister Robinson and maister Bromfield, also one Leighton a gentleman, and diuers other.

As yee haue heard, the plague of pestilence being in the Towne of Newhauen, through the number of soldiers that returned from thence into England, the infection thereof spread into diuers parts of this realme, but especially the citie of London was so infected, that in the same whole yeere, that is to say, from the first of Januarie, 1562. till the last of December, 1563. there died in the City and liberties thereof containing, 108. parishes of all diseases, 20. M. 3. C. 72. and of the plague, (being part of the number aforesaid) 17. M. 4. C. 4. persons. And in out parishes adioyning to the same citie, being 11. parishes, died of all diseases in the whole yeere, 3. M. 2. C. 88. persons, and of them, of the plague, 2. M. 7. C. 32. persons, so that the whole number of all that died of all diseases, as well within the Citie and liberties, as in the out parishes, was 23. M. 6. C. and 60. and of them, there died of the plague, 20136.

108. Parishes in London besides 11. in the suburbs.

Tempest at London.

The 8. of July, in the morning, hapned a great tempest of lightning & thunder, wherethrough a woman and three kine were slaine in the Couent garden neere to Charing crosse. At the same time in Essex a man was torne to peeces as he was carying hay, his barne was borne downe, and his hay burnt: both stones and trees were rent in many places.

The councell of king Philip at Bruxels commanded proclamation to be made in Antwerp and other places, that no English ship with clothes should come into any places of their low countries: their colour was (as they said) the danger of the plague, which was that time in London, and other places of England: notwithstanding, they would gladly haue gotten our woollen: other causes they alledged, as the raising of impostes as well vpon goods inwards as outwards, as well vpon Englishmen as vpon strangers, &c. Also for that in the first parliament of the Queenes maiestie, by a statute then made, diuers wares and commodities were forbidden to be brought into this Realme out of Flaunders or other places being wrought there, which was done to the end to set our subiects a worke heere, as by the statute doth appeare, for that no man English or stranger might ship out any white clothes vndrest, being of the price aboue fower pound, without licence, &c. but the Queenes maiestie through suite of our marchant aduenturers, caused the wooll fleete to be discharged, and our cloth fleete was sent to Emden in east Friseland about Easter next following, in Ann. 1564.

Threefold plague to the poore Citizens of London.

Forsomuch as the plague of pestilence was so hot in the citie of London, there was no Terme kept at Michaelmasse: to be short, the poore Citizens of London, were this yeere plagued with a three fold plague, pestilence, scarcitie of money and dearth of victuals: the miserie whereof were too long heere to write, no doubt the poore remember it, the rich by flight into the countries made shift for themselues.

Earthquake.

An earthquake was in the month of September in diuers places of this realm, specially in Lincolne and Northamptonshire.

Ann. reg. 6.

Lightning and thunder.

From the first day of December, till the 12. was such continuall lightning and thunder, especially the same 12. day at night, that the like had not bene seene nor heard by any man then liuing.

In the month of December, was driuen on the shore at Grimsbie in Lincolneshire, a monstrous fish, in length 19. yardes, his taile fifteene foote broad,

and

and fiue yards betweene his eies, twelue men stood vpright in his mouth to get the oyle.

For that the plague was not fully ceased in London, Hillarie Terme was kept at Hertford castell beside Ware. 1564.

Terme kept at Hertford.

This yeere an honorable & ioyfull peace was concluded, betwixt the Queenes Maiestie and the French King, their Realmes, Dominions, and Subiects, which peace was proclaimed with sound of trumpet, before her Maiestie, in her Castle of Windlesshore, then being present the French Ambassadours. Also the same peace was proclaimed at London on the 13. day of Aprill. And shortly after the Queenes Maiestie sent the right Honorable sir Henrie Carie lord Hunsdon, accompanied with the lord Strange, beside diuers knights and gentlemen vnto the French king, with the noble order of the Garter, who lying then at Lions, he there presented vnto him the said order, and Garter king at armes inuested him therewith, obseruing the ceremonies in that behalfe due, &c.

Peace with France proclaimed.

The plague (thanks be to God) being cleane ceased in London, both Easter and Midsommer Terme were kept at Westminster.

Through the earnest sute of the Armourers there was on the vigile of S. Peter a watch in the citie of London, which did onely stand in the highest streets, as Cheape, Cornehill, and so foorth to Aldgate, which watch was to the commons of the citie as chargeable, as when in times past it had bene commendable done.

Watch on S. Peters euen.

The 5. of August, the Queenes maiestie in her progresse came to the Vniuersity of Cambridge, and was of all the students (being inuested according to their degrees taken in the Schooles) honourably and ioyfully receiued in the kings Colledge, where she did lye during her continuance in Cambridge. The daies of her abode were passed in scholasticall exercises of Philosophie, Phisicke, and Diuinity: the nights in Comedies and Tragedies set foorth partly by the whole Vniuersity, and partly by the students of the kings Colledge.

Abr Hartwel The queenes progresse thorough Cambridge.

At the breaking vp of the Diuinity act, being on Wednesday the 9. of August (on the which day she rode through the towne, and viewed the Colledges, those goodly and ancient monuments of the kings of England, her noble predecessours) she made within Saint Maries church a notable oration in Latine, in the presence of the whole learned Vniuersity, to the students great comfort. The next day she went forward on her progresse to Finchingbrooke by Huntington.

The twentith day of September, arose great flouds in the riuer of Thamis, wherethrough the marshes neare adioyning were ouerflowed, and many cattle drowned.

Great flouds in the Thamis.

The creation of sir Robert Dudley knight of the garter, & maister of the horse to the queenes maiestie, who was created baron of Denbigh, and after earle of Leicester on Michaelmas day at Saint Iames, with the gift of the manor of Killingworth, and other things there, to him and his heires, to the yearely value of foure and twenty pound and better. First, the sayd lord attended on the Queenes highnesse to the chappell, and from the chappell to seruice, and when he was returned to the chãber of presence, the sayd lord with other departed to the lord Chamberlains chamber, and shifted them, the sayd lord Robert in his surcote with the hood, his mantle borne before him by the lord Hunsdon, and led by the lord Clinton.

Creation of a baron.

Clinton L. Admirall by the right hand, & the lord Strange on the left hand in their parliament robes, Gartar bearing the pattent, and before him the officers of armes, and so proceeded into the chamber of presence, where the queenes highnesse sate vnder the cloth of estate with the noblemen on each side of her, the embassador of Fraunce was also present with another stranger an Italian, and when the sayd lord with the other came in the queenes sight, they made their obeisance three times, the sayd lord kneeled downe, after the which Gartar presented the letters pattents to the lord Chamberlaine, and he presented the same to the queenes highnesse, who gaue it to sir William Cicill secretary, who read the same with a loud voyce, and at the words of *Creauimus*, the lord of Hunsdon presented the mantle to the queenes maiesty, who put on the same, whereby he was created baron of Denbigh for him and his heires, then the patent was read out to the end, after the which he deliuered it to the queene againe, and her highnesse gaue it to the said lord, who gaue her maiesty most humble thankes, and he rose vp and departed to the chamber they came from, the trumpets sounding before him. Then he shifted him of those robes, & put on the robes of estate of an earle, and being led by the earle of Sussex on the right hand, and the earle of Huntington on his left hand, the earle of Warwike bearing his sword the pomell vpward, and the gold about the same, all in their robes of estate, the lord Clinton lord Admirall in his parliament robes bearing his cap with the coronall, Gartar before him bearing his pattent, and the other officers of armes before him, they proceed as afore, into the chamber of presence, where, after they made their obeisance, the sayd earle kneeled downe, and Gartar deliuered his pattent to the lord Chamberlaine, who gaue the same to the Queenes maiesty, and her highnesse gaue the same to sir William Cicill Secretary to reade, who read the same, and at the words *Cincturam gladij*, the earle of Warwike presented the sword to the queenes highnesse, who girt the same about the necke of the new earle, putting the point vnder his left arme, and after her maiesty put on his cap with the coronall, then his pattent was read out to the end, and then the sayd secretary deliuered it againe to the queene, and her highnesse gaue it to the sayd new earle of Leicester, who gaue her humble thankes for the same, and then arose and went into the counsell chamber to dinner, the trumpets sounding before, and at dinner he sate in his kirtle, and there accompanied him the foresayd ambassador of Fraunce, and the sayd Italian, with diuerse other earles and lords: and after the second course, Gartar with the other officers of armes, proclaimed the queenes maiesties stile, and after, the stile of the sayd earle, for the which they had fifteene pound, to wit, for his baron fiue pound, and for his earledome ten pound, and Gartar had his gowne of blacke veluet garded with three gardes of the same, layd on with lace, lined through with blacke taffeta, and garded on the inner side with the same, & on the sleeues 38. paire of aglets of gold.

Creation of an earle.

Du tresnoble & puissant seigneur Robert Conte de Leycestre, Baron de Denbigh, Cheuiler du tresnoble Ordre de la Iarretiere, & grand Esquier de la Royne nostre Souuereigne.

The second of October in the afternoone, and the morrow in the fore noone, a solemne obsequie was holden in Saint Paules church in London, for Ferdinando late emperour departed.

Obsequy for the emperor

The

The 7. of October at eight of the clocke at night, the north parts of the element seemed to be couered with flames of fire, proceeding towards the middle of the firmament, where, after it had staied nigh one houre, it descended west, and all the same night (being the next after the change of the moone) seemed as light as it had bene day. *Ann. reg. 7.*

The 20. of November in the morning, through negligence of a maiden with a candle, the snuffe falling in an hundred pound waight of gun-powder, three houses in Bucklersbury were sore shaken, and the maide died two dayes after.

The one and twentith of December began a frost, which continued so extreamely, that on New-yeares euen people went ouer and along the Thamis on the ice from London-bridge to Westminster, some played at foote-ball as boldly there, as if it had bene on the dry land, diuerse of the court being then at Westminster, shot daily at pickes set vpon the Thamis: and the people both men and women went on the Thamis in greater number then in any streete of the city of London. On the third day of January at night it began to thaw, and on the fift day was no ice to be seene betweene London-bridge and Lambeth, which caused great floods and high waters, that bare downe bridges and houses, and drowned many people in England, especially in Yorkshire, Owes bridge was borne away with other. The Thamis frosen ouer. 1565. Owes bridge borne down.

The third of Februarie, Henry Steward lord Darnley, about the age of nineteene yeares, eldest sonne of Matthew earle of Lennox (who went into Scotland at Whitsontide before) hauing obtained licence of the queenes maiestie, tooke his iourney toward Scotland, accompanied with fiue of his fathers men, where, when he came he was honorably receiued, and lodged in the kings lodgings, and the sommer following, maried Mary queene of Scotland. Henry Stuart maried the queene of Scots.

About this time for the queenes maiestie were chosen and sent commissioners to Bruges, sir Anthony Browne viscount Montacute knight of the honourable order of the garter, doctor Worton one of her maiesties honourable counsell, doctor Haddon one of the maisters of requests to her highnesse, with other: maister doctor Aubrey was for the marchant aduenturers of England. They came to Bruges in Lent, *Anno* 1565. and continued there till Michaelmas following, and then was the diet prolonged till March in 1566. & the cõmissioners returned into Englãd. Commissioners sent to Bridges.

The two and twentith of Aprill, the lady Margaret countesse of Lennox was commanded to keepe her chamber at the White hall, where she remained till the 22. of June, and then conueyed by sir Francis Knolles and the gard to the tower of London by water. Lady Lennox sent to the tower.

On Midsommer day, Odonell Mac Cartie More chiefe captaine of that name in Ireland, was created baron of Valeney, and afterward the same day earle of Clanker at White hall.

On Saints Peters euen at night, was the like standing watch in London as had bene on the same night twelue monethes. Watch at Midsomer.

The 16. of July about nine of the clocke at night began a tempest of lightning and thunder, with showers of haile, which continued till three of the clocke the next morning so terrible, that at Chelmsford in Essex 500. acres of corne were destroyed, the glasse windowes on the east side of the towne, and of the west & south Tempest at Chelmsford.

sides

sides of the church were beaten downe, with also the tiles of their houses, beside diuerse barnes, chimneies, and the battlements of the church which were ouerthrowne. The like harme was done in many other places, as at Leedes, Cranebrooke, Douer, &c.

Margraue & marques of Baden.

Christopher prince and Margraue of Baden, with Cicely his wife sister to the king of Swethland, after a long & dangerous iourney, wherein they had trauelled almost 11. moneths, sailing frō Stokeholme, crossing the seas ouer into Liefland, from whence by land they came about by Poland, Pruse, Pomerland, Meckburge, Frisland, and so to Antwerpe in Brabant, then to Calais, at the last in September landed at Douer, where they were met and receiued by the lord Cobham with a goodly traine of knights and gentlemen. And at Canterbury the lady Cobham with the like traine of ladies and gentlewomen met them, and at Grauesend the lord Hundsdon with the gentlemen pensioners met them, and so on the 11. day of September they came to London, where they were met and receiued by the earle of Sussex, the countesse his wife, and their traine, and so brought to the earle of Bedfords place neare vnto Iuie-bridge, where they were lodged, and within fower dayes after, that is to say, the fifteenth of September the trauelled in child-bed, and was deliuered of a man-child, which child the last of September was christened in the queenes maiesties chappell of White hall at Westminster, the queenes maiesty in her owne person being godmother, the archbishop of Canterburie and the duke of Norfolke godfathers: at the christening the queene gaue the child to name Edwardus Fortunatus, for that God had so graciously assisted his mother in so long and dangerous a iourney, and brought her so safe to land in that place which she most desired, and that in so short time before her deliuerance.

Mariage of the earle of Warwike.

The eleuenth of November, the right honorable Ambrose earle of Warwike maried Anne eldest daughter to the earle of Bedford: for the honour and celebration of which noble mariage, a goodly challenge was made & obserued at Westminster at the tilt, with each one fiue courses: at the turney twelue strokes with the sword, three pushes with the punchion staffe: and twelues blowes with the sword at barriers, or twenty if any were so disposed.

Robert Thomas slaine.

At ten of the clocke the same day, a valiant seruiceable man called Robert Thomas, maister gunner of England, desirous also to honour the feast and mariage day, in consideration the sayd earle of Warwike was generall of the ordinance within her maiesties realmes and dominions, made three traines of great chambers, which terribly yeelded forth the nature of their voyce, to the great astonishment of diuerse, who at the firing of the second, was vnhappily slaine by a peece of one of the chambers, to the great sorrow and lamentation of many.

Ann. reg. 8.

The foure and twentith of December, in the morning there rose a great storme and tempest of wind, by whose rage the Thamis and seas ouerwhelmed many

Paules gate blowne open

persons, and the great gates of the west end of Paules church in London (betweene the which standeth the brasen pillar) were, through the force of the wind then in the westerne part of the world, blowne open.

Order of S. Michaell.

1566. In January, monsieur Rambuley a knight of the order in Fraunce, was sent ouer into England by the French king Charles the ninth of that name, with the order

order, who at Windsore was stalled in the behalfe of the sayd French king, with the knighthood of the most honorable order of the garter: and the foure and twentith of January, in the chappell of her maiesties palace of White hall, the sayd monsieur Rambuley inuested Thomas duke of Norfolke, and Robert earle of Leicester with the sayd order of Saint Michaell.

The marques of Baden, and the lady Cicely his wife, sister to the king of Swethen, who came into this land the moneth of September last past, as before is declared, being then by the queenes especiall appointment at their arriuall honorably receiued by the lord Cobham, an honorable baron of this realme, and the lady his wife one of the Queenes maiesties priuy chamber, now in the moneth of Aprill, *Anno.* 1566. hauing receiued certaine gifts of the Queenes maiestie, amongst the which one was a cup of gold with a couer waying 133. ounces and a halfe, departed the same againe, the marques a few dayes before his wife, being both conducted by a like personage the lord of Aburgaueny to Douer. The marques of Baden returneth.

Certaine houses in Cornehill, being first purchased by the citizens of London at their charges for certaine thousands of pounds, were in the moneth of Febuary cryed by the bel-man, and afterward sold to such persons as should take them downe and carry them from thence, which was so done in the monethes of Aprill and May next following. And then the ground being made plaine at the charges also of the city (hauing cost them one way and other, more then fiue thousand pound) possession thereof was by certaine aldermen in name of the whole citizens, giuen to the right worshipfull sir Thomas Gresham knight, agent to the Queenes highnesse, there to build a place for marchants to assemble in at his owne proper charges, who on the seuenth of June layd the first stone of the foundation (being bricke) and forthwith the workemen followed vpon the same with such diligence, that by the moneth of November in the yeare of our Lord 1567. the same was couered with slate. The Burse in Cornehil.

And on the 22. day of December, in the yeare of our Lord 1568. the marchants of London, left their meetings in Lombard streete, at such times as they had accustomed there to meete, and this day they came into the new Burse, builded by sir Thomas Gresham, as is afore shewed.

The commissioners before named appointed for the matters of Flaunders, keeping their diet at Bruges, agreed to referre the whole matter to the princes on both sides, and if they could not agree, then the marchants to haue forty dayes to repaire home with their marchandise, and in the meane time, all things to stand as they were then. Our commissioners departed from Bruges about the 26. of June.

The 31. of August, the Queenes maiestie in her progresse came from Woodstocke to the Vniuersity of Oxford, and was of all the students, which had looked for her comming thither two yeares, so honorably and ioyfully receiued, as either their loyalnesse towards the Queenes maiestie, or the expectation of their friends did require. Concerning orders in disputation, and other academicall exercises, they agreed much with those, which the Vniuersity of Cambridge had vsed two yeares before. Comedies also and Tragedies were played in Chrits Church, where the Queenes highnesse lodged. Among the which, the Comedy entituled: The queens progresse to Oxford.

Palemon.

Misfortune at Oxford. Palemon and Arcet, made by maister Edwards of the Queenes chappell, had such tragicall successe as was lamentable: for at that time by the fall of a wall and a paire of staires, and great preasse of the multitude, three men were slaine.

The 6. of September, after disputations, the Queene at the humble suite of certaine of her nobilitie, and the king of Spaines Imballadour, made a briefe oration in Latine to the Universitie, but so wise and pithie, as England may reioyce that it hath so learned a prince, and the Universitie may triumph, that they haue so noble a patronesse.

The 8. of September after dinner, her grace comming from Christs Church ouer Carfor, and so to Saint Maries, the scholers standing in order according to their degrees, euen to the east gate, certaine doctors of the Universitie did ride before in their scarlet gownes and hoodes, and maisters of Art in blacke gownes and hoodes. The Maior also named maister Williams with certaine of his brethren, to the number of fourteene or fifteene, did ride before her in scarlet to the ende of Magdalen bridge, where their liberties ended: but the doctors and maisters went forward still to Shot-ouer, a mile and more out of Oxford, because their liberties extended so farre, and there after Orations made, her highnesse with thankes to the whole Universitie, bade them farewell, and rode to Ricote to maister Norrice house an eight miles from Oxford.

Souldiers transported into Ireland. The valiant captaine Edward Randolfe esquire, lieutenant of the ordinance, and colonell of a thousand footemen, in September last past was with his band embarked at Bristow, and within few daies after landed at Knockfergus in the North parts of Ireland, and went thence by water to a place called Derry, by which passeth the riuer of Longfoile: there the said colonell in short space fortified, to the great annoyance of Iohn Oneale, and by great foresight and experience, garded himselfe and his charge, till the said Oneale, (to hinder and disturbe his abode there) the 12. of November arriued with a great army of Kerne Galawglasses and horsemen, with whom the said captaine Randolfe encountred, and him there so discomfited, as after that conflict he durst neuer approch the Queenes power, and to his perpetuall fame the said captaine by reason of his bold and hardie onset that day lost his life.

Yong prince of Scots christened. *Ann. reg. 9.* Charles Iames the first of that name, sonne to Henrie Stewart lord of Darnley, and Marie, king and queene of Scots, was borne in Edenborough castle the nineteenth of June last past: and the eightenth of December, this yeere solemnly christened at Striueling, whose godfathers at the christening were, Charles King of France, and Philbert Duke of Sauoy, and the Queenes maiestie of England was the godmother, who gaue a font of gold curiouslie wrought and enameled, waying 333. ounces, amounting in value to the summe of 1043. l. 19. s.

1567. K. of Scots murdered. The tenth of Februarie in the morning, Henrie Stewart lord of Darnley before named king of Scots, by Scots, in Scotland was shamefully murdered, the reuenge whereof remaineth in the mightie hand of God.

The 22. of Februarie, the lady Margaret Douglas countesse of Lennox, mother to the said king of Scots, was discharged out of the tower of London.

This

This yeare deceassed many aged people, so that in London within the space of ten monethes last past died seuen aldermen of London, the first Edward Banks deceased the ninth of July, *Anno.* 1566. Richard Chamberlaine late sherife, sir Martin Bowes, sir Richard Malorie, sir William Hewet, & sir Thomas White late maiors, then Richard Lambart one of the sherifes for that yeare, the fourth of Aprill, *Anno.* 1567. Seuen aldermen deceased in London.

The 22. of Aprill, by great misfortune of fire in the towne of Offestrie in Wales twelue miles from Shrewsburie, to the number of two hundred houses, that is to say, seuen score within the wals, and three score without in the suburbs, besides cloth, corne, cattle, &c. were consumed, which fire began at two of the clocke in the forenoone, and ended at foure, to the great maruelling of many, that so great a spoile in so short time should happen. Two long streetes with great riches of that towne were brent in *Anno* 1542. And likewise or worse in *Anno* 1544 The towne of Offestry brent thrise in 30. yeares.

The 24. of Aprill, the Sergeants feast was kept at Greies Inne neare vnto Holborne, and there were at that time made seuen new Sergeants of the law. Sergeants feast.

The 27. of May, in the towne of Milnall in Suffolke eight miles from Newmarket, 37. houses, besides barnes, stables, and such like were consumed with fire in the space of two houres. Milnall in Suffolke brent.

Shane Oneale, who had most traiterously rebelled against the queenes maiestie in Ireland, and had done many great outrages in the parts of Vlster, was this yeare with his great losse manfully repelled from the siege of Dundalke by the garrison thereof, and afterward through the great valiancy of sir Henry Sidney knight of the order, and lord deputie of Ireland, he was so discomfited in sundry conflicts, with the losse of 3500. of his men, that now foreseeing his declination to be imminent, he determined to put a collar about his necke, and disguising himselfe, to repaire to the lord deputy, and patiently to require his pardon to haue his life. But Neil Mackeuer his secretary, who had incited him to this rebellion perswaded him first to trie and treate the friendship of certaine wild Scots that then lay incamped in Clan Iboy, vnder the conducting of Alexander Oge and Mee Gilliam Buske, whose father and vncle Shane Oneale had lately killed in an ouerthrow giuen by the Scots: neuertheless, he well liking this perswasion, went to the sayd campe the second of June, where after a dissembled entertainement, and quaffing of wine, Gilliam Buske burning with desire of reuenge of his fathers and vncles death, and ministring quarrelling talke, issued out of the tent, and made a fray vpon Oneales men, & then gathering together his Scots in a throng, suddenly entred the tent againe, who there with their slaughter swords, hewed in peeces Shane Oneale, his secretary, and all his company, except a very few which escaped by flight. Shane Oneale discomfited. *Statuta Regni Hiberniæ.* Edmond. Campion. Shane Oneale slaine.

The 8. of June, sir Thomas Sackuile knight was created baron of Buckhurst at Westminster in the queenes palace.

On Saint Johns euen at night, was the like standing watch in London, as had bene on Saint Peters euen in the yeare before passed. Watch at Midsomer.

The 19. of July, Charles Iames the young prince of Scotland, after a sermon made by Iohn Knokes, was crowned K. of Scots at Sterling church, where were read certaine commissions with the queenes privy seale at them for the establishing of Coronation in Scotland.

of the same. The first for her resignation of the crowne, and gouernement of the young prince her sonne. The second, to authorise the earle of Murrey to be regent during his minority. The third, to giue authority and power to seauen other, ioyning with the sayd earle of Murrey, in case he should refuse to exercise the same alone, that is to say, the duke of Chatileroy, the earles of Leunor, Argile, Athelmorton, Glencarne and Marre: the commissions being ended, the bishop of Ikelly with two superintendents, proceeded to the coronation, the earle Morton and lord Hume tooke oath for the king, that he should rule in the faith, feare, and loue of God, to maintaine the religion then preached in Scotland, and persecute all aduersaries to the same, with many other particular causes: he was then annointed, and had the royall robe put on him, he had the crowne vpon his head, the sword by his side, and the scepter in his hand. At the bringing to him of euery of which were prayers made for euery particular thing in the Scottish tongue, wherein the whole ceremony was made and done.

Maximilian the emperor knight of the garter.

Maximilian Emperour the second of that name, being elected into the most honorable order of the garter, the honourable Thomas earle of Sussex, &c. knight of the same order, was appointed by the Queenes maiestie to go vnto the sayd emperour with the sayd order of the garter, who being honorably accompanied with Roger lord North, sir Thomas Mildmay knight, Henry Cobham esquire, one of the pensioners, and others, departed from London the 25. of June vnto Douer, and there embarked, landed at Calais, and his traine at Dunkerke, and so passed through the Low countries to Antwerpe in Brabant, where he was honourably receiued by the English marchants and others, there he visited Madame de Parma regent of the said countries, then resident within the sayd towne. And from thence he passed vnto Colein, where his lordship & traine tooke the riuer of Reine, passing by the city of Ments vnto Oppenham, and from thence by land through the countrie by the city of Wormes and Spires til he came to Ulmes, standing on the riuer Danow, where he arriued on the 21. of July, and the 23. his lordship rode in post to Aulspurge, nine dutch miles from Ulmes: from thence he departed the 25. of July, & met with his traine at Donewert, being come downe by ỹ said riuer of Danow. Frō thence he kept his iournie by Ingolstate, Reinspurge, by Passaw and other townes, till he came to Linz, where his Lordship staied the first, second and third of August, by reason of high waters, and on the fourth of August passed by Stoanne and Cromz, by the sayd riuer of Danow, and so arriued at the city of Vienna the 6 of August, where he was receiued of the lord Smackoms, hauing twelue horses ready with their footeclothes for his lordship and the best respected of his traine, and so brought to the Emperour, by whom he was right honourably receiued, and afterward conducted to his lodging, where all prouision was made at the Emperours charges: and here his Lordship continued vntill the 14. of January. In the which time of his abode, the Emperour very often had the sayd earle forth with him vnto such pastimes of hunting the hart, boare, and such like, as that countrey yeeldeth. After this, vpon the Queenes maiesties letters brought out of England by maister Henry Brooke *alias* Cobham, one of her maiesties gentlemen pensioners, the sayd earle of Sussex vpon Sonday the fourth of January in the afternoone, presented and deliuered vnto the

An. reg. 10.

Emperours

Emperors maiestie in his chamber of presence, the habiliments and ornaments of the most noble order of the Garter, sir Gilbert Dethike knight, *alias* Garter principall king at armes, & officer for the said order, and William Dethike then Rouge Crosse also officer of armes giuing their attendance in their coates of armes. And the Emperour at his inuesture of the said habiliments, gaue vnto the said Garter his short gowne, and vnder garment, furred throughout with Luzernes, and then proceeded thence into a great chamber, adorned in forme of a chappell, where as all the other ceremonies belonging to the said order were accomplished, and the same night the said Earle supped with the Emperours maiestie, both being in their roabes of the said order. And shortly after his lordship with certaine of his companie taking leaue of the Emperour, departed from Vienna the fourteenth of Januarie vnto Newstat, and so through the countrey of Stire vnto Grantz, the chiefe citie of Carinthie, where he tooke leaue of the archduke Charles, and from thence returning, passed those parts of the Alpes, vnto Saltzburgh, where he met with the other parts of his traine, and so by iourneies came againe into England vnto the Queenes maiestie, about the later end of March. 1568.

After a drie sommer followed a sharpe winter, with such a scarcitie of fodder and haie, that in diuers places the same was sold by weight, as in Yorkeshire, and in the Peake, hay was sold for fiue pence the stone: there followed also a great death of cattell, especially of horse and sheepe. Haie sold by weight.

In the month of Januarie, the Queenes maiestie sent into the narrow seas three of her ships, named the Antelope, the Swallow, and the Aide, and one Barke named the Phenix, the which were manned with fiue hundred men: and her highnesse appointed the charge of those ships and men, to maister William Holstoke esquier, Comptroller of her Highnesse ships, who had commandement to staie the subiects of king Philip and according to his duety & charge, he vsed such diligence, that on the 11. of March next following, he met with eleuen saile of Flemish Hoies, vpon Boloigne, which came from Roane, and in them fower hundred and odde Tuns of Gascoigne and French wines, which they intended to haue conueied into Flaunders, but William Holstoke stayed all the said Hoyes, and sent them to London, where they made their discharge, and the Flemings disappointed. Ships sent to the seas against the subiects of king Philip.

Moreouer, on the 28. of March, the said William Holstoke seruing in the Antelope at that present admirall, in his companie being William Winter the yoonger, (at that time Viceadmirall) seruing in the Aide, and I. Basing Captaine of the Swallow, and Thomas Geuerley Captaine of the Phenix, met in the narrow Seas with fourteene saile of great Hulkes, which were come out of Portingale, and bound to Flaunders, their chiefe lading being Portingale salt, and yet had good store of Spanish Rials of plate, and also great store of spices, the which foureteene Hulkes did maintaine their fight for the space of two houres, and after that they did perceiue they could not preuaile, the said William Holstoke and his companie tooke 8. of the same hulks, whereof 6. were sent into the riuer of Thamis, and the admirall and vizadmirall of the said Hulkes, being two great ships, which W. Holstoke himselfe did take, were conueied to Harwich, and there discharged.

Great winds. The 28. of March, through vehement rage and tempest of windes, many vessels in the Thamis, with two Tiltboates before Grauesende were sunke and drowned.

Queene of Scots arriued in England. In the Moneth of May, the Queene of Scots escaping out of prison through the meanes of George Dowglasse, brother vnto the lord of Lochledon her keeper, leuied a power of 6000. men through the helpe of the earles of Argile, Eglinton, and Rothes, and Glaud de Hamilton, sonne to the Duke of Shastellerault, and other, which was discomfited in battell by the Gouernor the earle of Murrey, and 14. Hamiltons slaine, and 30. men taken prisoners, among whom were the lords Seton & Ros, the Queene escaped & fled into England.

The 16. of May, Marie queene of Scots, after her escape out of Lughleuen, where she had beene imprisoned, arriued at Werkington in England, hauing in her companie to the number of sixteene persons, besides foure watermen, where she was staide, Captaine Read with 50. soldiers were appointed to attend vpon her, and conueied her to Carlile, and from thence to Bolton castle, belonging to the lord Scrope, who with sir Ralph Sadler sent downe for that purpose, had the custodie of her, till she was committed to the earle of Shrewsbury.

Archbishop of Yorke deceased after he had spoyled his palace. The 26. of June, deceased Thomas Yoong archbishop of Yorke, in the manor of Sheffield, belonging to the earle of Shrewsbury, he was honorably buried at Yorke. This Thomas Yoong pulled downe and destroyed the great hall & palace of Yorke in Ann. 1562. which sometimes had beene sumptuously builded by his predecessor Thomas, surnamed the elder, archbishop of Yorke, about Ann. 1090. &c.

Peter Ramus. Cardinall Castilion came into England. This yeere cardinall Edet Castilion, and the bishop Arles flying out of France into England, arriued at the Tower wharfe on the 12. of September, and were there receiued by sir Thomas Gresham, and other, and from thence conueyed to sir Thomas Greshams house in Bishops gate streete, where they were lodged. On the next morrow in the forenoone the said cardinall (in his short cloke, and a rapier by his side) with sir T. Gresham, and other, rode to the French Church, from thence to the Exchange in Cornehill, and then to Saint Paules Church, and so backe againe to dinner. On the twentieth of September the said cardinall rode to the Court, &c. he remained in England till the yeere of our Lord 1570. and then died at Canterburie, and was there buried in Christs Church.

Monstrous fishes. The 11. of October, were taken in Suffolke at Downam bridge neere vnto Ipswich, eighteene monstrous fishes, some of them containing eight and twentie foote in length, the other 24. or 21. foote in length at the least.

New Conduit at Walbroke. At the costes and charges of the citizens of London, a new Conduit was builded at Walbrooke corner, neere to Downegate, which was finished in the moneth of October, the water whereof is conueied out of the Thamis.

An. reg. 11. The 29. of December, the English marchants and their goods in the towne of Antwerpe, were arrested by commandement of the Duke of Alua.

The 4. of Februarie following, the English marchants of the staple, with their goods, in the towne of Bridges, was also arrested. Whereupon on the seauenth of January it was proclaimed at London, that the bodies and goods, of all that were borne vnder the King of Spaines dominions, throughout England should be arrested, which was done, and the Spanish Ambassador was committed

committed to the cuſtodie of maiſter Parry, M. Knuet, and M. Knowles. 1569

The 17. of Januarie, Philip Mettrell a French man, and two Engliſh men, were drawne from Newgate to Tiborne and there hanged, the French man quartered, who had coined gold counterfeit, the Engliſh men, the one had clipped ſiluer, the other caſt Teſtons of tinne. A French man executed.

The 28. of March, the Penſioners well appointed in armour on horſebacke, muſtered before the Queenes maieſtie in Hide parke beſide Weſtminſter. Muſter of Penſioners.

A great Lotterie being holden at London in Paules Churchyard, at the Weſt doore, was begun to be drawne the 11. of Januarie, and continued day and night till the firſt of May, wherein the ſaid drawing was fully ended.

The 17. of May, George lord Dacre of Grayſtoke, ſonne and heire of Thomas lord Dacre, being a child in yeares, and then ward to Lord Thomas Howard duke of Norfolke, was by a great miſchaunce ſlayne at Thetford in the houſe of ſir Richard Fulmerſtone knight, by meane of a vaulting horſe of wood, ſtanding within the ſame houſe, vpon which horſe as he meant to haue vaulted, and the pinnes at the frete being not made ſure, the horſe fell vpon him and bruſed the braines out of his head. George lord Dacres ſlain

The 27. of Auguſt, Andrew Gregoreuich Sauin, ambaſſadour from Muſcouie, landed at the Tower wharke, and was there receiued by the lord Maior of London, the Aldermen and Sherifes in ſcarlet, with the merchants aduenturers in coates of blacke veluet all on horſebacke, who conueied him riding through the citie to the Muſcouie houſe in Seeding lane there to be lodged. Ambaſſador from Muſcouie.

The plague of peſtilence ſomewhat raigning in the citie of London, Michaelmas Terme was firſt adiourned vnto the 3. of November, and after vnto Hilarie terme next following. Terme adiourned.

The 11. of October. Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolke, was brought frō Burnam beſide Windſore by land to Weſtminſter, and from thence conueyed by water to the tower of London priſoner, ſir Henry Neuill being his keeper. Duke of Norfolke ſent to the Tower.

On Monday the fourteenth of November, Thomas Percie Earle of Northumberland being at Topcliffe, receiued the Queenes maieſties letters to repaire to the Court, and the ſame day at night, certaine conſpirators perceiuing the ſaid Earle to be wauering and vnconſtant of promiſe made to them, cauſed a ſeruant of his called Bekewith, (after he was laid in his bed) to buſtle in, and to knocke at his chamber doore, willing him in haſt to ariſe and ſhift for himſelfe, for that his enemies (whom he termed to be ſir Oſwold Vttrop, & maiſter Vaughan) were about the Parke, and had beſet him with numbers of men, whereupon he aroſe, and conueyed himſelfe away to his keepers houſe: in the ſame inſtant, they cauſed the bels of the towne to be rong backward, and ſo raiſed as many as they could to that purpoſe. The Earles of Northumberland and Weſtmerlād rebelled.

The next night, the Earle departed thence to Branſpith, where he met with Charles Neuill Earle of Weſtmerland, and other their confederates, after which time, by ſundrie proclamations, they abuſing the Queenes ſubiects, commanded them in her highneſſe name to repaire to them in warlike manner, for the defence & ſuretie of her Maieſties perſon, ſometimes affirming their doings to be with the aduiſe & conſent of ỹ nobilitie of the realm, who indeed were wholly bent (as ma-

nifestly appeared) to spend their liues in dutifull obedience, against them and all other traitors, sometimes pretending for conscience sake to seeke to reforme religiō, sometimes declaring that they were driuen to take this matter in hand, lest otherwise forraine Princes might take it vpon them, to the great perill of this Realme.

Rebels rent the Bible.

The 16. day, they came to Durham, and foorthwith went to the Minster, where they tare the Bible, Communion bookes, and other such as there were. The same night they went againe to Brancepith, and on the morrow to Darington, where they had holi-water, but no Masse for want of vestments. Frō thence they sent their horsemen to gather together such numbers of men as they could.

*Ann.reg.*12

The 18. the earle of Northumberland went to Richmond, then to Northallerton, after to Borow-bridge, and on Sonday the 20. of November, he with his lady countesse of Northumberland, met againe with the earle of Westmerland at Ripon, and there had Masse, where (to get the more credit among the fauourers of the old Romish religion) they had a Crosse with a banner of the fiue wounds borne before them by Richard Norton, and that night they went to Borow-bridge, and on the monday to Wetherbie, on which day at night some bands of them entred Tadcaster, and tooke a 200 footmen, chasing their captaines which were leading them towards Yorke to the earle of Sussex. On tuesday, they mustred on Clifford moore, nigh vnto Bramham moore, where they were 1600. horsemen, and a foure thousand footmen, which was the greatest number that euer they were. From thence, they intended to haue marched toward Yorke, but their minds being suddenly altered, by report they heard that sir George Bowes had mustred within the Bishopricke, and Richmondshire, and leuied great bands. On the Wednesday they returned againe to Wetherby: on Thursday to Northalerton: on Friday to Richmond: on Saterday Westmerland went to Rabies his owne house: on Sonday at night the Earle of Northumberland came to him there. On Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday, they mustred in all Richmondshire and the Bishopricke, bestowing their footmen in bands vnder captaines leading: and the same day, which was the last of November, they besieged Barnard or Barne castell vpon Tese, builded by Barnard Bayliol, about Anno Domini 1174. which castell was valiently defended by sir George Bowes and Robert Bowes his brother, the space of eleuen daies. In the meane space, the Earle of Westmerland and his ladie went to Durham with seuen or eight hundred horse, where they remained till the thirteenth of December, in which space, to wit, the seuenth day of December, sir Iohn Foster Warden of the middle marches, accompanied with sir Henry Percie, did giue to the said Earle a great skirmish. The first of December, sir George Bowes put foorth of the castell two hundred horsemen, whereof two persons were slaine, and thirtie taken by the Rebels. The tenth of December, sir George Bowes deliuered the said Castell, vnder composition to depart with armour, munition, bagge and baggage, and foorthwith marched with his garrison towardes Yorke. In this meane time, to wit, on the foure and twentith of November, the queenes Maiestie had caused the said Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland to be proclaimed traitors, with all their adherents and fauourers, and foorthwith prepared an armie to be sent out of the South for their suppression. The Lord

The number of the rebels.

Bernards castle besieged.

Skirmish with the rebels.

Bernards castle deliuered to the rebels.

The earles of Northumberland and Westmerland proclaimed traitors.

Scrope

Scrope Warden of the west marches, had called vnto him the Earle of Cumberland, and other Gentlemen of the countrey, and they kept the citie of Carlile. Thomas Earle of Sussex the Queenes maiesties Lieutenant generall in the North, had on the fourteenth of November there published the like Proclamation (in effect) as after was published by her Maiestie against the said Rebels, and also sent out to all such Gentlemen as he knew to be her Maiesties louing subiects vnder his rule, who came vnto him with such number of their friends, as he was able in fiue daies to make about fiue thousand horsemen and footemen, and so being accompanied with Edward Earle of Rutland his lieutenant, the lord Hunsdon Generall of his horsemen, William Lord Eure, who had the leading of the Rereward of the footmen, and sir Ralph Sadler treasurer, who all came to Yorke with their seruants, on Sonday the eleuenth of December, they marched from Yorke towardes Topclife: the twelfth they tarried at Sezay, where sir George Bowes with his power comming from Barnards Castell (as is aforesaid met him, and was made Marshall of the armie: then they went to Northalerton, to Smeeton, to Crofthridge, and so to Aclay, on the which day the Rebels fled from Durham (hauing called their company Christopher Neuill from Hertlepoole, who were fortifying there) to Exham, where they abode three daies.

The earle of Sussex the Queenes lieutenant generall in the North against the rebels.

The Earle of Sussex Lieutenant with his power, went from Aclay to Durham, then to Newcastell, and the twentieth of December to Exham, from whence the Rebels were gone the night before to Nawarth, where counselling with Edward Dacres concerning their owne weaknesse, as also how they were pursued by the Earle of Sussex and his power of seuen thousand, euen almost at their heeles: and moreouer, that the earle of Warwike, the lord Clinton, lord Admirall of England, and Walter lord Ferrers, Viscount Hereford, with a farre greater armie of 12000. out of the South, whereof the said earle of Warwike was Generall, was not farre behind them at Bozow-bridge.

The earle of Warwike sent against the rebels.

The next night, the two Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland, with sundrie of their principall gentlemen, vnknowne to their associates, fled to Herlaw in Scotland: the other Rebels were shortly after taken by the Earle of Sussex and his power, without any resistance.

The Earles of Northūberland and Westmerland fled.

The fourth and fift of Januarie, did suffer at Durham to the number of threescore and fiue Constables and other, amongst whom, an alderman of the towne named Struthar, and a priest called parson Plomtree were the most notable: then sir George Bowes Marshall, finding many to be faultors in the foresaid rebellion, did see them executed in euery market towne and other places, betwixt Newcastle and Wetherby, about 60. miles in length, and 40. miles in breadth, as himselfe reported vnto me.

1570 Rebels executed at Durham.

The one and twentith of Januarie, a prentise was hanged on a gibbet at the North end of Finch lane in London, (to the example of other) for that he the thirteenth of December had stricken his maister with a knife, whereof he died.

The two and twentieth of Februarie, Leonard Dacre of Harsley in the Countie of Yorke Esquire, hauing raised a number of people, the lord Hunsdon & other setting on him with a company of valiant souldiers, slue many of his

Leonard Dacre fled into Scotlād

people, and forced him to flie into Scotland.

Rebels executed at Yorke.

On good Friday, the 27. of March, Simon Digby of Alkewe, Iohn Fulthorpe of Iselbecke in the Countie of Yorke Esquires, Robert Peneman of Stokesley, Thomas Bishop the younger of Poklinton in the same Countie of Yorke Gentlemen, were drawne from the Castell of Yorke to the place of execution, called Knaues-mire, halfe a mile without the Citie of Yorke, & there hanged, headed, and quartered, their foure heads were set on the foure principall gates of the Citie, with foure of their quarters: the other quarters were set in diuerse places of the countrey: Oscolph Glesby was with them drawne to the gallowes, and returned againe to the castell.

Earle of Pembroke deceased.

William Harbart Earle of Pembroke, baron of Cardike, knight of the Garter, one of the priuie counsell, and lord steward of the Queenes maiesties household, deceased at Hampton Court on the sixteenth of March, he gaue great giftes to the Queene, to the Earle of Leicester, to the household, and diuers other, and was buried in Saint Paules Church at London the 18. of Aprill: the blacks giuen at his buriall came to the value of 2000.l. and a sumptuous monument was raised for him on the North side the quire in Paules, at the foote of Iohn of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster.

The Earle of Sussex made a iourney into Scotland.

The 17. of Aprill, the Earle of Sussex Lieutenant generall in the North, with the Lord Hunsdon Lord gouernor of Barwike, and Warden of the east marches, and maister William Drewry high marshall of Barwike, with all the garrison and power of the same, began a iourney into Scotland, & the same night came to Warke, twelue miles from Barwike, and so the next morrow entred into Tiuidale, and marching in warlike order, they brent, ouerthrew, rased and spoyled all the Castles, Townes, and villages of their enimies, till they came to the castell of Wolle, standing in a strong marish belonging to the lord of Bucklugh, which likewise was rased, ouerthrowne and brent, and so marched forward and brent the whole countrey before them, till they came to Craling.

Sir Iohn Foster with a garrison entred Scotland.

The same day, sir Iohn Foster Warden of the middle marches, with the garrison and force of the same, entred likewise into Tiuidale vpon Erpes gate, 16. miles from Warke, where in like order they brent, rased, and spoyled the countrey before them, till they came to a strong castell called Craling, in the possession of the mother of the lord Fernihirst, which likewise they ouerthrew, rased, and brent. There both the armies met, and so marched by the riuer of Tiuite, raising, burning, and spoyling Castles and pyles along the riuer, till they came to Gedwoorth, where they both lodged, and were curteouslie receiued. The next day the lord Chefford Warden of the middle marches of Scotland, came in with all the principall men of his kinred to the lord Lieutenant, and did submit themselues, and were assured, for that they had not receiued the English rebels, ayding or assisting them, neither had made any inuasion into England. The nineteenth, the armie deuided into two parts, the one part whereof passed the riuer of Tiuite, and brent the Castell of Fernihirst, and all other Castles and Townes belonging to the Lord of Fernihirst, Huntill and Bedzell, and so passed to Hunt, where both the armies met againe, and so brent on both sides the riuer, till they came to a great towne called Hawicke, where they intended

to

to haue lodged, but the Scots had vnthatched the houses, and brent the thatch in the streets, and themselues fled with most part of their goods, but by the industrie of the Englishmen, the timber was also burned with the thatch, sauing one little house of stone of Dunlamrikes, wherein my lord lay that night. The 20. day, the armie marched forwards to a house of the lord of Bucklugh, which they ouerthrew with poulder, and then marched Northward to the riuer of Tiuet, where they brent and spoyled such Castles, pyles and townes, as belonged to the lords of Ferniherst and Bucklugh, their kinsmen and adherents, and that night returned to Gedworth. The one and twentith day, part of the armie went to the riuer of Bowbent, vnder the leading of the said marshall, where maister George Heron, keeper of Tindale and Ridsdale, with them of that countrey, met with him, and ioyning together, rode on, burning and spoyling all on both sides of the riuer, and the other part marched to the riuer of Trile, where they wasted and brent all on both sides the riuer, and returned to Killey, where the lord Lieutenant lodged of purpose to besiege Hewme Castell in the night, and the Lord Gouernor with his companie went to Warke, to bring the ordinance from thence in the morning, which was disappointed by the negligence of such as were put in trust for those matters, who suffered the cariage horses to returne to Barwike the day before, which should haue drawne the same, the lacke whereof caused the Lord Lieutenant with the whole armie, to returne to Barwike the two and twentith of Aprill, in which time there was neuer any shew by the Scots made, to resist or defend their countrey.

The lord Scrope entred Scotland.

The lord Scrope Warden of the west marches, entred Scotland the eighteenth of Aprill, brent and spoyled those parts almost to Domfrees, he had diuers conflicts, gaue sundrie ouerthrowes, tooke many prisoners, and returned safely. During all these inuasions, the marches of England in all places were so guarded by the Lord Euers, sir George Bowes, and other of the Bishoprick, as the Scots durst not once offer to enter into England, so that not one house was burned, nor one rowe taken out of England. There were rased, ouerthrowne, and brent in this iourney, aboue fiftie strong Castles and pyles, and aboue three hundred Townes and Villages, so that there be verie few in the countrey, that either haue receiued our English Rebels, or inuaded England, that either haue castell, pile, or house for themselues or their tenants, besides the losse of their goods. The 26. the lord Lieutenant accompanied with the lord gouernor, the marshall and diuers lustie gentlemen, captaines and soldiers, to the number of three thousand, set forward to Warke, and so to Hewme Castell, which Castell they besieged till the same was yeelded, the lord Gouernor, the Marshall, and diuers other, tooke possession for our soueraigne Ladie the Queenes maiestie, and expelled the Scots that were therein, to the number of 168. persons, in their apparell on their backs onely, without armor, weapon, bagge or baggage, among whom there were two Englishmen, one Hiliard the Earle of Northumberlands man, and a vagarant person named William Godswher, which both were carried to Barwike and there executed the 24. of May. The L. Lieutenant placed in the castell Captaine Wood, and Captaine Pikeman, with 200. souldiers, and so returned to Barwike the 29. of Aprill, where he rested

Rebels executed at Barwike.

very euill at eaſe, hauing in the trauell taken ouermuch cold, wherewith he was driuen into an extreame ague.

The fourth of May, he ſent maiſter Drewry Marſhall with the number of two thouſand, to take Fauſt Caſtell, which at the firſt comming was deliuered to the Marſhall, who expelled the Scots in number ten, and placed 14. of our Engliſhmen againſt all Scotland, it is ſo ſtrong a place, and ſo returned to Barwike. The eleuenth of May, the lord Lieutenant made foure knights, viz. Sir William Drewry, ſir Thomas Manners, ſir George Care, ſir Robert Conſtable. And the ſame day, ſir William Drewry being Generall, ſet forward toward Edenborough with diuers footebands with ſhot, armed pikes, and peeces of great ordinance, to ioyne with the earles of Lennox, Morton, Glencarne, and Marre, and other of the kings power of Scotland, in purſuing of the Engliſh rebels, and ſuch of the Scots as ſupported them, as the Duke Hamilton, and other who were in armes at Lithcoe, twelue miles from Edenborough, to defend their cauſe. The foreſaid new knights with their bands came to Edenborough, the thirteenth of May, and there reſted three nights, and departed from thence to Lithcoe, where the Regent was ſlaine. The 17. the footemen marched to Faukirke, fiue miles from Sterling and ſir William Drewry with the horſemen, marched to Starling to ſee the King, whom they found ſo perfect in all things as age and nature could permit. The 18. they departed to the footebands, and ſo together marched to Glaſco, where the lord Hamilton had beſieged a houſe of the kings, but hearing of their comming, he fled with diſhonor, and the loſſe of nine & twentie of his men. The 19. the generall with other horſemen and ſome ſhot, paſſed to Dunbarton, to view the ſtraites of the caſtell there, being kept by the lord Fleming, the biſhop of Saint Andrewes, and other his adherents, to the Queene of Scots vſe. Our generall ſent his trumpetor to require a parley with aſſurance ſafely to returne, whereunto the lord Fleming ſubtilly conſented, and minding ſo to wind him into his danger, conueied certaine ſhot, and armed men into a ſecret place, ſo that our generall comming alone to haue parled, his trumpetor not returned, they ſhot at him, meaning to haue ſlaine him, but he beſtowed his piſtolets as freely at them as they at him, and returned to his company and ſo to Glaſco: from whence ſir George Care, being marueilouſlie offended with the ſubtill dealing of the lord Fleming, wrot a letter of challenge to combate with him body for body, which the lord Fleming by his letter of anſwere refuſed, whereupon ſir George Care wrote a ſharp and pithie reply, &c.

Knights made by the earle of Suſſex.

The one and twentith day, our generall accompanied with the gentlemen and horſemen, went to Dunbritton againe to parley with the lord Fleming, vpon his promiſe that he would meete him three miles from the ſaid caſtell, but the place of parley being viewed, was found to be ſubiect to the ſhot of the caſtell, & therefore our generall required another place, which would not be grãted by the L. Fleming.

The 22. the lord of Lennox, the lord Glencarne, & the Lord Simple, with their friends and tenants, came to our generall, & muſtered before Glaſco, to the number of foure thouſand horſemen and footemen.

Hamilton in Scotland beſieged.

The 23. our generall with the whole army marched toward the caſtell of Hamilton, & there had parley with the captaine, whoſe name was Arthur Hamilton, but

but he would not deliuer the castell, whereupon, our ordinance being placed, was shot very sore, but did no great harme, for that they were field peeces.

The foure and twentith day, our generall gaue commons to the said castell which would not yeeld, whereupon he sent to Starling for bigger ordinance for the batterie, and so went from thence, accompanied with the earles of Leunor and Mortaine, with the horsemen and certaine shot, marched in the countrey to a faire house of the Abbots of Kelwing neere adioyning whose name was Gawyn Hamilton, which house they burned, & vtterly spoyled, with seuenteene houses more of good countenance of that name, whereof one was the lord Lanhappes, which had married with the sister of Iames Hamilton of Bedwilhough, which slue the Regent. There was burned seauen other faire houses thereabouts, not of that name, but of alie: besides those, there were diuers of their kinred & alie, that came in with humble submissiō, & assured themselues, promising their obedience to their king, &c.

The 25. of May in the morning, was found hanging at the bishop of Londons palace gate in Paules church-yard, a Bull, which lately had bin sent from Rome, containing diuerse horrible treasons against the Queenes maiesty, for the which one Iohn Felton was shortly after apprehended, and committed to the Tower of London. A Bull from Rome hanged on the bishop of Londons gate.

The 27. of May, Thomas Norton and Christopher, of Yorkeshire, being both condemned of high treason, for the late rebellion in the North, were drawne from the Tower of London to Tiborne and there hanged, headed and quartered. The Nortons executed.

The 27. of May, the castle of Hamilton was yeelded to sir William Drewry generall of our army, and by him presently spoyled and brent, there was in the house 34. men. Hamilton in Scotland yeelded to the English.

The 28. sir George Care with the horsemen came to Lithco, where the whole army met. This day, a very faire house, with the whole towne of Hamilton was brent. The 29. they brent an house of the dukes called Kentyell, and another at Lithco, the whole towne, and diuerse other faire houses was yeelded to our generall, who returned to Edenborough, and so to Barwike the third day of June.

A conspiracy was made by certaine gentlemen and other in the countrey of Norffolke, whole purpose was on Midsommer day at Harlestone faire, with sound of trumpet and drum, to haue raised a number, and then to proclaime their diuelish purpose, vnder pretence against strangers and other. This matter was vttered by Thomas Kete one of the conspiracy, vnto Iohn Kenfey, who forthwith sent the same Kete with a Constable to the next Iustice, before whom and other Iustices, he opened the whole matter, whereupon maister Drewgh Drewry immediatly apprehended Iohn Throgmorton, and after him, many gentlemen of the city of Norwich, and the county of Norffolke, who were all committed to prison (and at the next Sessions of gaile delinery at the castle of Norwich, the seuenteenth of July, before sir Robert Catlin knight, Lord chiefe Iustice, Gilbert Gerard the queenes Attourney generall, and other Iustices) ten of them were indicted of high treason, and some others of contempt, diuerse of them were condemned, and had iudgement the one and twentith of August, and afterward three of them were hanged, bowelled, and quartered, which were Iohn Throgmorton of Norwich gentleman, who stood mute at his arraignment, but at the gallowes Conspirary in Norffolke.

confes-

confessed himselfe to be the chiefe conspirator, and that none had deserued to die but he, for that he had procured them: with him was executed Thomas Brooke of Ratshie gentleman the thirtith of August, and George Redman of Cringelford gentleman was likewise executed the second of September.

The duke of Norffolke remooued.

The fourth of August, the duke of Norffolke was remooued from the tower of London to the Charter house neare vnto Smithfield.

Felton arraigned.

The same day was arraigned at the Guild hall of London Iohn Felton, for hanging a bull at the gate of the bishop of Londons palace, and also two young men, for coyning and clipping of coine, who all were found guilty of high treason, and had iudgement to be drawne, hanged and quartered.

Felton and others executed.

The 8. of August, Iohn Felton was drawne frō Newgate into Pauls churchyard, and there hanged on a gallowes new set vp that morning before the bishops palace gate, and being cut downe aliue, he was bowelled and quartered. After this, the same morning, the sheriffes returned to Newgate, and so to Tiborne with two young men which were there executed for coyning & clipping as is aforesayd.

A iourney into Scotlād by the earle of Sussex.

The 22. of August, the earle of Sussex lord lieutenant generall for the queenes maiesty in the north, and the lord Scrope warden of the west marches, and diuers other, marched from Carleile with the queenes army and force of the North, as well of horsemen as footemen into Scotland, passing ouer the riuers of Eske, Leuine, and Sarke, which riuer of Sarke parteth England and Scotland, and so to Dornocke wood, belonging to Edward Vrone the lord of Bonshow, and then to Annonna, a strong house of the Lord Harris, which they rased and ouerthrew with other thereabouts: from thence to Hodhim, which they brent and blew vp: from thence to Kennell, a towne belonging to the lord Cowhill, which they brent: from thence to Domfries, which they sacked and spoiled of such paltry as the fugitiues had left, and also rased and ouerthrew a sumptuous house belonging to the queene of Scots, in the keeping of the lord Harris: then passing the riuer of Longher they brent and spoiled Cowhilles and Powtracke, and returned to Domfries, and so to the towne of Bankend, which they brent, with another house pertaining to William Maxwell of the Isles, and so to the castle of Carlauoracke, standing in a marish iust to an arme of the sea, which parteth Annerdall and Gallaway, which castle they blew vp, and returned homeward, transporting their ordinance ouer quick-sands and bogs, where neuer the like was done before, and so came to Dornoke wood.

The queene was informed, he had brent 300. townes and villages, and spoyled 50. stone castles

The 28. of August, they marched towards Carleile, where by the way they brent and ouerthrew two houses, the one being Arthur Greames *alias* Carelile, the other, Rich George, two notable theeues. The same day at night after the lords comming to Carleile, he made knights, sir Edward Hastings, sir Francis Russell, sir Valentine Browne, sir William Hilton, sir Robert Stapleton, sir Henry Curwen, sir Simon Musgraue.

Knights made by the earle of Sussex.

High waters, which drowned many.

The fift of October at night, happened a terrible tempest of wind and raine, both on the sea and land, by meanes whereof many ships and other vessels were drowned, about midnight the waters ouerflowing, drowned many medowes, pastures, townes, villages, cattell, houses and goods, to the vtter vndoing of a great number of subiects of this realme: besides the losse of many men, women, and

children,

children, some drowned in their beds, some in the wayes trauelling, &c.

The 23. of January, the queenes maiesty accompanied with her nobility, came from her house at the Strand called Somnerset place, and entred the city of London by Temple barre, Fleetstreete, Cheape, & so by the north side of the Burse, to sir Thomas Greshams in Bishops gate street, where she dined. After dinner, her grace returning through Cornehill, entred the Burse on the south side, and after her highnesse had viewed euery part thereof aboue ground, especially the Pawne, which was richly furnished with all sorts of the finest wares in the city, she caused the same Burse, by an herault and a trumpet to be proclamed, the Royall Exchange, so to be called from thencefoorth, and not otherwayes. 1571. Royall Exchange.

The seuenteenth day of February, at a place called Kinnaston, neare Marclech hill in the county of Hereford, was seene the ground to open, and certaine rockes with a peece of ground, remooued and went forward the space of foure dayes, making at the first a terrible noyse as it went on the earth: it remooued it selfe betweene fiue of the clocke in the euening and seuen the next morrow, forty spaces, carrying great trees and sheepecotes, some sheepecotes with three score sheep in them, some trees fell into the chinkes other that grew on the same ground, grow now as firmely on a hill, and some that stood east, stand west, and those that stood west, stand east. The depth of the hole where it first brake out, is thirty foot, the breadth of the breach is eight score yeards, and in length aboue twenty score yeards. It ouerthrew Kingstone chappell. Also, two high-wayes be remooued nigh one hundred yeards, with the trees of the hedge-rowes. The ground in all is fiue and twenty acres, and where tillage ground was, there is pasture left in place, and where was pasture, there is tillage ground gone vpon it. The ground as it remooued, drawe the earth before it, and at the lower part ouerwhelmed the ground, so that it is growne to a great hill of twelue fadome high. It remooued from saterday till monday at night following, and so staied. A strange kind of earth mouing.

In the moneth of February, sir Thomas Sackeuile baron of Buckhurst was sent in ambassade from the Queenes maiesty to Charles the ninth French king, as well to congratulate for his mariage with the daughter of the emperor Maximilian, as for other weighty affaires. And as his ambassage was great, so was his charge no lesse in furnishing himselfe and his traine accordingly, being both in nomber and furniture, such in euery point as did appertaine: and his receiuing and entertainement in Fraunce by the king and others, was agreeable thereto, for he was receiued vpon the coast by the gouernours of the fortified townes right honourably, by order from the king. Among other, the Bournoisell was one, who being very well mounted and appointed, left not his lordship before he came to the court, and from thence accompanied him backe vntill his embarkement homewards. In the maine countries, he was accompanied with the gouernours and nobles of the places about: and in the good townes where he passed, he was presented by the chiefe magistrates, though his lordships rewards ouer valued their presents. Sir Thomas Sackuile sent into France.

At his approch neare to Paris, he was encountred on the way by two Marquesses of Trans and Saluces, this being of the house of Sauoy, and the other of the family of Foix. These wanted not such as accompanied them, euen of the best sort,

sort. At the lord ambassadors first audience, which was at the castle of Madrill otherwise called Bologne neare Paris, where the K. the lay, the queenes Almaine coaches very brauely furnished, were sent to Paris for him, in one of the which his lordship with the marquesse of Trance rode toward the court, very narrowly escaping from a shrewd turne, by reason the same coach was ouerthrowne, by the duch wagoners their negligence, who in a brauery galloping the field, made an ouer short turne, wherewith the marques was sore brused. The lord ambassador at his arriuall, was very honorably received, he was banqueted by diuerse, and that very sumptuously, which by him was not vnrequited, but his reward at the kings hand was onely a chaine, waying one thousand French crownes. At this present, the riuer of Sayne, that runneth through the city of Paris, was not passable with bessels, by reason of the great frosts, and thereby not onely all kind of victuals but also hay and wood was hard to come by, and not to be had but at exceeding prises, the countrie thereabouts having bene sore harried and spoiled by the ciuill tumults: by reason whereof, not onely the lord of Buckhurst for the space he remained there, but also sir Henry Norrice, and maister Francis Walsingham her maiesties Ambassadors, liegers successiuely, were driuen to an increase of expences, paying for euery thing they bought an higher price then had bene accustomed. After that my lord Buckhurst had bene feasted and banqueted by the king, and others of the French nobilitie, and had accomplished the points of his ambassage, he tooke leaue of the king, and departed homewards, arriuing here in England a little before Easter.

A parliamẽt. The second of April a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein was granted to the queenes maiestie (toward her great charges, in repressing the late rebellion in the North, and pursuing the sayd rebels and their fautors, which were fled into Scotland (by the clergy, a subsidy of 6. s. in the l. and by the temporalty two fifteenes, with a subsidy of 2. s. 8. d. in the l.

Iustes at Westminster The first, second, and third of May, was holden at Westminster before the Queenes maiestie, a solemne Iust, at the tilt, turney, and barriers. The chalengers were Edward earle of Oxford, Charles Howard, sir Henry Lee, and Christopher Hatton esquier, who all did very valiantly, but the chiefe honour was giuen to the earle of Oxford.

Doctor Story executed The first of June, Iohn Story a doctor of the cannon law, who before had bene condemned of high treason, was drawne from the tower of London to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered, his head set on London bridge, and his quarters on the gates of the city.

A combate appointed at Tuthill. The 18. of June, in Trinity tearme, there was a combate appointed to haue bene fought for a certaine Manour and demaine lands belonging thereunto, in the Ile of Hartie, adioyning to the Ile of Sheppey in Kent, Simon Low and Iohn Kyme were plaintifs, and had brought a writ of right against Thomas Paramore, who offered to defend his right by battell, whereupon the plaintifs aforesayd, accepted to answer his challenge, offering likewise to defend their right to the same Manour and lands, and to proue by battel that Paramore had no right nor no good title to haue the same.

Hereupon the sayd Thomas Paramore brought before the Iudges of the common place at Westminster, one George Thorne, a bigge, broad, strong set fellow.

and

and the plaintifs brought Henry Nailor maister of defence, and seruant to the right honorable the earle of Leicester, a proper slender man, and not so tall as the other: Thorne cast downe a gauntlet, which Nailor tooke vp. Vpon the Sonday before the battell should be tried on the next morow, the matter was stayed, and the parties agreed, that Paramore being in possession should haue the land, and was bound in 500. pound to consider the plaintifs, as vpon hearing the matter the Iudges should award. The Queenes maiesty was the taker vp of the matter, in this wise: It was thought good, that for Paramores assurance, the order should be kept touching the combate, and that the plaintifs Low and Kime should make default of appearance, but that yet such as were sureties of Nailor, their champions appearance, should bring him in, and likewise those that were sureties for Thorne, should bring in the same Thorne in discharge of their band, & that the court should sit in Tuthill fields, where was prepared one plot of ground one and twenty yeards square, double railed for the combate, without the west square, a stage being set vp for the Iudges, representing the court of the common pleas. All the compasse without the lists was set with scaffolds one aboue another, for people to stand and behold. There were behind the square where the Iudges sate, two tents, the one for Nailor, the other for Thorne. Thorne was there in the morning timely. Nailor about 7. of the clocke came through London, apparelled in a dublet and galeygascoigne breeches, all of crimosin satten cut and raced, a hat of blacke veluet with a red feather and band before him drums and fifes playing: the gauntlet that was cast downe by George Thorne, was borne before the sayd Nailor vpon a swords point, and his baston (a staffe of an elle long, made Taper-wise, tipt with horne) with his shield of hard leather, was borne after him, by Askam a yeoman of the Queenes gard: he came into the pallace of Westminster, and staying not long before the hall doze, came backe into the kings streete, and so along through the sanctuary, and Tuthill streete, into the field, where he stayed till past nine of the clocke, and then sir Ieronie Bowes brought him to his tent. Thorne being in the tent with sir Henry Cheiney long before. About ten of the clocke, the court of common pleas remoued, and came to the place prepared: when the Lord chiefe Iustice with two other his associates were set, then Low was called solemnely to come in, or else he to lose his writ of right. Then after a certaine time the sureties of Henry Nailor were called to bring in the sayd Nailor champion for Simon Low, and shortly thereupon sir Ieronie Bowes leading Nailor by the hand, entreth with him the lists, bringing him downe that square by which he entred, being on the left hand of the Iudges, and so about till he came to the next square iust against the Iudges, and there making curtesie, first with one leg, and then with the other, passed forth till he came to the middle of the place, and then made the like obeisance and so passing till they came to the barre, there he made the like curtesie, and his shield was held vp aloft ouer his head: Nailor put off his leather stockes, and so bare foote and bare legged, sauing his silke scauilonions to the ankles and his dublet sleeues tied vp aboue the elbow, and bare headed, came in as is aforesayd. Then were the sureties of George Thorne called to bring in the same Thorne, and immediatly sir Henry Cheyney entring at the vpper end on the right hand of the Iudges, led the like

The quarrell of combate staied.

other

order in comming about by his side, as Nailor had before on that other side, and so comming to the barre with like obeisance, held vp his shield, proclamation was made in forme a followeth: The Iustices command in the Queenes maiesties name, that no person of what estate, degree, or condition that he be, being present, to be so hardy to giue any token or signe, by countenance, speech, or language, either to the prooner or to the defender, whereby the one of them may take aduantage of the other: and no person remoone, but still keepe his place: and that euery person and persons keepe their staues and their weapons to themselues: and suffer neither the sayd prooner nor defender to take any of their weapons or any other thing, that may stand either to the sayd prooner or defender any auaile, vpon paine of forfeiture of lands, tenements, goods, chattels, and imprisonment of their bodies, and making fine and ransome at the Queenes pleasure.

Othe of the prooner.

Then was the prooner to be sworne in forme as followeth: This heare, you Iustices, that I haue this day neither eate, drunke, nor haue vpon me either bone, stone, ne grasse, or any inchantment, sorcerie, or witchcraft, wherethrough the power of the word of God might be inleased or diminished, and the diuels power increased: and that my appeale is true, so helpe me God and his saints, and by this booke.

After all this solemne order was finished, the lord chiefe Iustice rehearsing the maner of bringing the writ of right by Simon Low, of the answere made thereunto by Paramore, of the proceeding therein, and how Paramore had chalenged to defend his right to the land by battell, by his champion George Thorne, and of the accepting the triall that was by Lowe, with his champion Henry Nailor, and then for default in appearance in Lowe, he adiudged the land to Paramore, and dismissed the champions, acquitting the sureties of their bands. He also willed Henry Nailor to render againe to George Thorne his gantlet, whereunto the said Nailor answered, that his lordship might commaund him any thing, but willingly he would not render the said gantlet to Thorne except he could win it: and further, he chalenged the said Thorne to play with him halfe a score blowes, to shew some passime to the lord chiefe iustice and the other there assembled: but Thorne answered, that he came to fight, and would not play. Then the lord chiefe Iustice commending Nailor for his valiant courage, commanded them both quietly to depart the field, &c.

A woman brent at Maidstone.

The sixteenth of July Rebecca Chamber, late wife to Thomas Chamber of Hergettesham, was found culpable of poisoning the said Thomas Chamber her husband, at the assises holden at Maidstone into the countie of Kent: For the which fact (hauing well deserued) she was there brent on the next morrow.

D. of Norfolke sent to the tower, Bishop of Salisbury deceased.

The seuenth of September, the Duke of Norfolke was remooued from the Charterhouse to the tower at London prisoner.

The two and twentieth of September, deceased Iohn Iewell Bishop of Salisbury, in his life a most eloquent and diligent preacher, but a far more painefull and studious writer, as his workes remaining beare witnesse, whereby his fame shall neuer die.

The christians victory

The ninth of November, great reioycing was made at London with banquetting and bonefires, for ioy of the late come newes of a marueilous victorie obtained

obtained by the christian army by sea, against the Turkes, the first of October last past, wherein were taken and sunke of the Turkes gallies and brigantines two hundred and thirty, there were slaine of the Turkes more then 30000. besides a great number of prisoners taken, and about twelue thousand christians that had bene slaues with the Turkes, were set at liberty. The christians lost 7. gallies, and were slaine about fiue or seuen thousand. against the Turkes. *An.reg.* 14.

The thirteenth of December, Reynold Grey was by the queenes maiesty restored earle of Kent. Earle of Kent.

The thirteenth of January, deceased William Peter knight, who for his iudgement and pregnant wit, had bene secretary and of priuy counsell to foure kings and queenes of this realme, and seuen times lord ambassador abroad in forraine lands: he augmented Exeter colledge in Oxford, with lands to the value of an hundred pound by yeare: and also builded ten almes houses in the parish of Ingerstone for twenty poore people, ten within the house, and ten without the house, hauing euery one two pence the day, a winter gowne, and two loade of wood, and among them, feeding for fiue kine winter and sommer, and a chaplaine to say them Seruice daily. 1572. Sir William Peter deceased.

The sixteenth day of January, the Lord Thomas Howard duke of Norffolke was arraigned in Westminster hall, before George lord Talbot earle of Shrewsbury high steward of England for that day, and there by his peeres, to wit, nine earles, one viscount, and sixteene barons, found guilty of high treason, & had iudgement accordingly. Duke of Norffolke arraigned.

The eleuenth day of February Kenelme Barney, and Edmond Mather were drawne from the Tower of London: and Henry Rolfe from the Marshalsea in Southwarke, all three to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered for treason: Barney and Mather for conspiracy against some of her maiesties priuy counsell, and Rolfe for counterfeiting the Queenes maiesties hand. Mather, Barney, & Rolfe executed.

The Queenes maiesty hearing credibly by report, that certaine lewd persons, vnder pretence of executing commissions for inquiries to be made for lands concealed, contrary to her maiesties meaning, chalenging lands, stockes of money, plate, &c. letting not also to make pretence to the bels, lead, and other such things belonging to parish churches or chappels: Her maiesty meaning speedily to withstand such manner of vnlawfull practises, commanded, that all commissions then extant, and not determined, for inquisition of any manner of concealements, should be by *Supersedeas* out of her exchequer reuoked. And also appointed speedy remedy to be had against such extortioners as more at large appeareth by a proclamation, concluding thus: Finally, her maiesty would her Iustices of assise to haue some speciall care, not onely to the premisses, but also to the reforming of certaine couetous and iniurious attempts, of diuerse that of late time by other colour then for her maiesties vse, had taken away the lead of churches and chappels, yea and bels also out of steeples, and other common goods belonging to parishes, an example not to be suffered vnpunished nor vnreformed. And so her maiesty eftsoones chargeth her Iustices of her assise to prouide seuere remedy, both for punishment and reformation thereof. Dated at Westminster the thirteenth of February, the fourteenth yeare of her raigne. Conueyers of bels, lead, and other Church goods are to be punished to the example of their too many followers.

The

Sir William Powlet lord treasurer.

The tenth day of March, deceased sir William Powlet knight, lord Sent-Iohn earle of Wiltshire, marquesse of Winchester, knight of the honourable order of the garter, one of the queenes maiesties priuy counsell, and lord high treasurer of England, at his manor of Basing in Hampshire. This worthy man was borne in the yeare of our Lord 1374. in the fourteenth yeare of king Edward the 4. at Filharton de la Moze in Wiltshire on Whitsonday, and liued about the age of ninety and seauen yeares, in fiue kings and queenes dayes. He serued fiue kings and queenes, Henry the seuenth, Henry the eight, Edward the first, queene Mary, and Q. Elizabeth. All these he serued faithfully, & of them was greatly fauored. This man in his time passed many offices, for in the time of the late K. Henry the 8. he enioyed successiuely the roomes of maister of the wards & liueries, controller, treasurer, lord chamberlaine, and lord steward of the kings household, and lastly, lord treasurer of England in the time of king Edward the first, which he continued a-boue one and twenty yeares: he was aduanced to sundry honours, for by the said king Henry the eight he was created lord Sent-Iohn of Basing, and knight of the garter, and by king Edward the first he was aduanced to be earle of Wiltshire, and marques of Winchester. Himselfe did see the children of his childrens children growne to the number of one hundred and three: a rare blessing giuen by God to men of his calling.

Pikemen & shot trained vp in Londō.

The fiue and twenty and fiue and twenty of March, by the commandement of the queenes maiestie her counsell, the citizens of London assembling at their seuerall hals, the maisters chose out the most likely and actiue persons of euery their companies, to the number of three thousand, whom they appointed to be pikemen and shot, the pikemen were foorthwith armed in faire corslets and other furniture, according thereunto: the gunners had euery of them his caliuer, with the furniture, and murrians on their heads. To these were appointed diuerse valiant captaines, who to traine them vp in warlike feates, mustred them thrise euery weeke, sometimes in the artillery yard, teaching the gunners to handle their peeces, sometimes at the Miles end, and in Saint Georges field, teaching them to skirmish. In the which skirmish on the Miles end the tenth day of Aprill, one of the gunners of the goldsmithes company, was shot in the side with a peece of a scowring sticke left in one of the caliuers, whereof he died, and was buried the twelfth of Aprill in Saint Paules churchyeard, all the gunners marching from the Miles end in battell ray, shot off their caliuers at his graue.

Muster at Greenewich.

On May day they mustred at Greenewich before the queenes maiestie, where they shewed many warlike feates, but were hindred by the weather, which was all day showring, they returned that night to London, and were discharged on the next morrow.

Earles of Essex and Lincolne created.

The fourth of May, Water Deuereux, lord Ferrers of Chartley, and viscount of Hereford, was created earle of Essex: And Edward Fines lord Clinton and Say, high Admirall of England, was created earle of Lincolne, at Greenewich.

Barons made.

The eight of May, the parliament began at Westminster: and that same day in the parliament by the Queenes maiesties writs, sir Henry Compton knight, lord Compton in the Hole, sir Henry Cheyny knight, lord of Tudington, sir William Pawlet knight of Basing, and sir Henry Norrice knight, lord of Ricote,

were

were called barons into the higher house. In this parliament, forsomuch as the whole realme of England was exceedingly pestered with rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggers, by meanes whereof, daily happened diuers horrible murders, thefts, and other great outrages, it was enacted, that all persons aboue the age of foureteene yeeres, being taken begging, vagrant, and wandring misorderly, should be apprehended, whipped, and brent through the grissle of the right eare, with a hot yron of one inch compasse for the first time so taken. Rogues burned through the eare.

The foure and twentith of May, Martin Bullocke was hanged on a gibbet by the well with two buckets in Bishops gate streete of London, for robbing and most shamefully murdering of a merchant named Arthur Hall, in the parsonage of Saint Martine by the said well. This Martin had procured the said Arthur Hall to come to the said parsonage, to buy of him certaine plate: but after the said Arthur had well viewed the same, he said, this is none of your plate, it hath doctor Gardeners marke, and I know it to be his: that is true said Martin Bullocke, but he hath appointed me to sell it, &c. After this talke, whiles the said Arthur was weighing the plate, the same Martin fetcht out of the kitchin a thicke washing beetle, and comming behind him, strake the said Arthur on the head, that he felled him with the first stroke, and then strake him againe, and after tooke the said Arthurs dagger, and sticked him, and with his knife cut his throat, and after would haue trussed him in a Danske chest, but the same was too short: whereupon he tumbled him downe a paire of staires, and after thinking to haue buried him in the cellar, his legges being broken with the first fall, and stiffe, he could not draw him downe the cellar staires being winding, wherefore he cut off his legges with an hatchet, and in the end, trussed him with straw in a dry fat, and saying it was his apparell and bookes, caused the same to be carried to the waters side, and so shipped to Rie. But as God would haue it, there was suspition gathered against the murtherer, whereby he was examined before Alderman Branch one of the shirifes of London, but seemed so innocent and guiltlesse in that case, that one Robert Gee a cloth-worker, being of good credit, undertooke for his foorth-comming: whereuppon Bullocke slipt away, first to Westminster, where taking boat, he was rowed vp the riuer westward till he came to Okingham in the forrest 8. miles beyond the towne of Windsore: from whence (by Gods prouidence) he came backe againe vnto London, where he lodged at the red lion in Holborne. In the meane time Robert Gee, vpon knowledge had that Bullocke was slept aside, was not only had in suspition, but also cõmitted to ward, albeit so, as he had libertie to send abroad such as should make sute after Bullocke, & amongst other, one of his seruants was sent to Rie, after the dry fat, & comming thither, the same drie fat was opened, where the mangled corps of Hall was found, whereby the truth of the matter came to light, & by the will of God, Bullocke was at the very same time discouered at the place in Holborne afore mentioned, & there apprehended, receiued, as ye haue heard, due punishment for his wicked fact. Martin Bullocke hanged.

The 26. of May, the right honorable earle of Lincolne, departed from London toward France ambassador, being accõpanied with the lords Gregory lord Fines lord Dacres, the lord Rob. Rich, the lord Talbot, the lord Sands, and Hen. lord Clinton, sir Arthur Chambernowne, sir Ierom Bowes, and sir Edw. Hastings Earle of Lincolne ambassador into France.

knights, with diuers other gentlemen who taking ship at Douer, cut ouer to Boloigne, where they were very honorably receiued, and from thence conueyed by ioincts to Paris, where they were lodged in a house of the kings named le Chasteau de Loure, being attended on by the kings officers. Fiue daies after, they went to the king at a house called Madrill, where the king with his two brethren, the admirall, and the most part of the nobles of France met them a distance from the place, and brought them into the house, where they dined, and remained till sunday following, from whence the king and his nobles, with the nobles of England came to Paris: the king, his two brethren, & our ambassador riding in one coach together, and the Nobles of England and France being so placed, also in coaches came to the said Castell of Loure, and there dined. After dinner, the king, our Ambassadour, with the Nobilitie of both realmes, went to a Church named Saint Germaine, where the French king, his brethren, and nobilitie heard euensong, the noble men of England withdrawing them into a chappell, till euensong was done, were then fetched thence by the nobles of France, to the king and his brethren that awaited their comming, where was confirmed the league (which had bene concluded at Blois the nineteenth of Aprill) deputies being there for the French party, Francis Memorencie, Reignold Biragne, Sebastian de Lanbespine and Paul de Foix. And for the Queene of England, sir Thomas Smith, and maister Walsingham ambassadors. This being done, they departed without the walles of Paris, to a garden of pleasure, where they supped: after supper the king departed to his place of Madrill, and the nobles of England to the castell of Loure. On monday the admirall feasted the Nobles of England. On tuesday the Duke of Iniow the kings brother: and on wednesday the Duke of Alanson his younger brother, and so passed in banquetting and feasting, with rich gifts on both parts.

League with France confirmed in France.

On friday, the nobles of England tooke leaue of the king: and on sunday came to S. Dennis, and after to Boloigne, where they tooke ship, and returned into England the fourth of July.

The Duke of Northfolke beheaded.

The second of June in the morning, betweene the houres of seuen and eight of the clocke Thomas Howard Duke of Norffolke was beheaded on a scaffold vpon the Tower hill.

French ambassadors.

About the ninth of June, Francis Duke of Memorencie chiefe Marshall of France gouernor and lieutenant of the Ile of France, generall vnto Charles the ninth king of France, and Paule de Foix of the priuie councell to the said king, and Bertrande de Saligners, lord de la Mothefenalon, knights of the order of Saint Michaell, ambassadors for the same king, arriued at Douer.

The 14. day they shot London bridge towards Sommerset house at the Strand, where they were lodged.

League with France confirmed at Westminster.

The 15. day being sunday, the said ambassadors repaired to the White hall, where they were honorably receiued of the Queenes maiestie, with her nobility, and there in her graces chappell, about one of the clocke in the after noone, the articles of treatie, league, or confederacie and sure friendship (concluded at Blois the nineteenth of Aprill, as is aforesheweth) betwixt the Queenes maiestie, and the French king being read, the same was by her maiestie and his ambassadors confirmed, to be obserued and kept, without innouation or violation, &c. The rest

of

of that day with great part of the night following was spent in great triumph, with sumptuous banquets.

The 18. of June, the feast of Saint George was holden at Windsor, where the French ambassadours were royally feasted, and Francis Duke of Memorency was stalled knight of the most honorable order of the garter. S. Georges feast at Windsor.

The 28. day of June, the aforenamed ambassadors departed from London towards Fraunce.

The 14. of June, Thom. L. Wharton deceased in his house of Chanon row at Westminster, ỹ 2. baron of ỹ name, leaving behind him ỹ L. Philip his eldest son.

The 13. of July, the Queenes maiestie at White hall made sir William Cecill lord of Burghley, lord high treasurer of England: lord William Howard baron of Effingham, late lord chamberlaine, lord privie seale: the earle of Sussex lord chamberlayne: sir Thomas Smith principall secretarie: and Christopher Hatton esquire captaine of the guard, &c. Lord treasurer, lord priuy seale, lord chamberlain with other officers.

Thomas Percie earle of Northumberland, late of Topclife, who had bene before attainted by parliament of high treason, as being one of the principall conspirators in the late rebellion, since fled into Scotland, as is aforeshewed, being there taken, was sent to Barwike in the moneth of July, and deliuered to the lord Huntdon then captaine or gouernor of that towne, and was now on the two and twentieth day of August beheaded at Yorke, about two of the clocke in the afternoone, on a new scaffold set vp for that purpose in the market place. Earle of Northumberland beheaded.

In this moneth of August sir Thomas Smith one of the Queenes maiesties priuie councell, carefully tending the reformation of Ireland, sent his sonne Thomas Smith esquire thither, with a colonie of Englishmen, to inhabite the Ardes in Ulster. English men sent to Vlster in Ireland.

About the beginning of the moneth of October, the queenes maiestie sent down to the towne of Portesmouth, the honorable Robert Dudley earle of Leicester, & sir Francis Knowles knight, treasurer of her houshold, to set in hand with fortifications of that towne and countrie neare adioyning, against the inuasion of the French or other, if the same should happen to be attempted by arriuall there. The towne of Portesmouth repaired.

The 18. of November in the morning, was seene a starre northward very bright and cleare in the constellatiõ of Cassiopeia, at the backe of her chaire, which with three chiefe fixed stars of the said constellation, made a Geometricall figure lozenge-wise, of the learned men called Rombus: this star in bignesse at the first appearing seemed bigger then Iupiter, and not much lesse then Venus when she seemeth greatest: also the said starre neuer changing his place, was carried about with the daily motion of heauen, as all fixed starres commonly are, and so continued (by little and little, to the eye appearing lesse) for the space of almost sixteene moneths, at what time it was so small, that rather thought by exercise of oft viewing might imagine the place, than any eye could iudge the presence of the same: and one thing is herein chiefly to be noted, that by the learned skill and consent of the best and most expert Mathematicians, which obserued the state, propertie, and other circumstances belonging to the same starre, it was found to haue bene in place celestiall farre aboue the moone, otherwise then euer any comet hath bene seene, or naturally can appeare. Therfore it is supposed, that *Anno reg.* 15. A strange star appeared.

the signification thereof is directed purposely and specially to some matter not naturall, but celestiall, or rather supercelestiall, so strange, as from the beginning of the world neuer was the like.

Earle of Darby deceased.

The 24. of November, Edward earle of Darby, lord Stanley, and Strange, of Knocking, Lord and gouernor of the ile of Man, knight of the noble order of the garter, and one of the Queenes maiesties priuie counsell, deceased at his house called Latham in Lancashire. His life and death deseruing commendation, & craning memorie to be imitated, was such as followeth: His fidelitie vnto 2. kings and 2. queenes in dangerous times, and great rebellions, in which time, and alwayes (as cause serued) he was lieutenant of Lancashire and Cheshire, & lately offered 10000. men to the queenes maiestie of his own charge for the suppression of the last rebellion. His godly disposition to his tenants, neuer forcing any seruice at their hands, but due payment of their rent: his liberalitie to strangers, and such as shewed themselues gratefull to him: his famous house-keeping, 220. in checkroll neuer discontinuing the space of 42. yeares: his feeding especially of aged persons twice a day 60. and od, besides all commers, thrice a weeke appointed for his dealing dayes, & euery Good-friday these 35. yeares one with another, 2700. with meate, drinke, money, and money worth. There was neuer gentleman or other that waited in his seruice, but had allowance from him to haue as well wages as otherwise for horse and man. His yearely portion for the dispences of his house 4000. pounds: his cunning in setting bones dislocated or broke: his deliuery of his George and seale to the lord Strange, with exhortation that he might keepe it so vnspotted in fidelitie to his prince as he had: and his ioy, that he dyed in the queenes fauour: his ioyfull parting this world, his taking leaue of all his seruants, by shaking of hands, and his remembrance to the last day. He was buried at Ormskirke on the fourth of December, in most honorable maner.

Hall & Wilkinson executed.

The 28. of November, Iohn Hall gentleman, and Oswald Wilkinson late of Yorke, and gailor of Yorke castell (being before arraigned & condemned of treason) were drawen from the tower of London to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered.

Great frost and a sharpe winter.

This yeare a great and sharpe frost almost continually lasted from before the feast of all Saints, till after the feast of Epiphanie of our Lord, with sometimes great and deepe snowes, and sometimes raines, which freezed as fast as the same fell to the ground, wherethrough at Wrotham in Kent, and many other places, the armes and boughs of trees, being ouercharged with ice, brake off, and fell from the stockes of the same trees: also the wind continued north and east, till after the Ascention day, with sharpe frosts and snowes, whereby followed a late spring.

1573.

Lord Priuie seale deceased.

The twelfth of Januarie, William lord Howard baron of Effingham, lord priuie seale, knight of the noble order of the garter, and one of the priuie counsell, deceased at Hampton court.

Erle of Worcester sent into France.

The eighteenth of Januarie, William lord Somerset earle of Worcester, began his iourney towards France to the christening of the kings daughter there, in stead of the Queenes maiestie of England, who sent with him a font of gold for that purpose, weighing 326. ounces. The said earle with many of his company were robbed vpon ỳ sea by pirates of much of their baggage & 3. or 4. of their men slaine.

slaine. In France he and his traine were honorably receiued. At the christening he gaue the child to name Elizabeth, & returned into England the 27. of February.

In the moneth of February, through sundry haynous complaints, brought to the Queenes maiestie and her counsell, of pirates that kept the narrow seas doing many robberies, as also the robbing of the earle of Worcester (as is aforesayd) her highnesse, by the aduise of her honourable counsell, tooke order with the lord admirall of England, that he should send to the seas ships and men to scoure the narrow seas, and to apprehend so many pyrats ships as might be met with: and for the better doing thereof, it pleased her maiestie to send one of her owne ships named the Swallow, to be the admirall, vnder the charge of William Holstocke of London esquire, controller of her highnesse ships, who had with him the Gillian, the barke Garet, and the barke of Yarmouth, and 360. able mariners, gunners and souldiers in the sayd three ships, and one barke which scowred the narrow seas, from the northfore-land as farre westwards as Falmouth in Cornewall, and tooke twenty ships and barkes of sundry nations, viz. English, French, and Flemings (but all pirates) and in fashion of war. He apprehended in those ships and barkes to the number of 900. men of all nations, and sent them to ward, to Sandwich, Douer, Wight, and Portsmouth (whereof three of them that robbed the earle of Worcester, were shortly after executed at Wight:) also the sayd William Holstocke did relcue and take from the abouesayd pirats ships fifteene other marchants ships, laden with marchandise, that were their prizes, being of sundry nations, & set at liberty the sayd fifteene marchants ships & goods, which done, he returned to Portsmouth, and there ended his voyage in March.

Earle of Worcester robbed on the sea.

Pyrats on the West seas.

Pyrats executed.

Peter Ramus in his commentaries of the wars of Fraunce writeth thus. The earle of Worcester passing into Fraunce, certaine Frenchmen and Flemings set vpon him, tooke from him one of his ships, and killed certaine of his men: whereupon the Queene of England taking displeasure, sent the lord Admirall (saith he) wherein he mistooke the matter, for maister William Holstocke was sent (as is aforesayd) who set vpon all the ships Freneh and Flemings, tooke and caried away what so came to hand, so that twenty of Montgomeries ships were lost, who was going to Rochell with the number of fiftie ships well furnished out of England, with money there borrowed (but neuer repayed) thus his nauie being diminished of those twentie ships, when he saw the kings nauy neare to Rochell, he directed his course another way, landed at Bel Isle, and tooke both the Isle and Castle.

Peter Ramus.

The fourth of March, a man was hanged in chaines in Saint Georges field beyond Southwarke of London, for murdering the gaoler of Horsham in the same field.

A man hanged in Saint Georges field.

The 17. of March deceased Reinold Grey of Ruthen, earle of Kent at Hernesey, and was buried at Saint Giles without Creeplegate.

Earle of Kēt deceased.

About the same time died Edmond lord Chandois.

The 25. of March being Wednesday in Easter weeke, and the feast of the Annunciatiō of our Lady, George Browne cruelly murdered two honest men neare vnto shooters hill in Kent, the one of them was a wealthy marchant of London, named George Sanders, the other Iohn Beane of Woolwich: which murder was

George Sanders murdred at shooters hill.

committed in manner as followeth.

On Tuesday in Easter weeke (the foure and twentieth of March) the sayd George Browne receiuing secret intelligẽce by letter frõ mistres Anne Drewry, that maister Sanders should lodge the same night at the house of one maister Barnes in Woolwich, and from thence go on foote to Saint Mary Cray the next morning, lay in waite for him by the way, a little from Shooters hill, and there slue both him and Iohn Beane, seruant to maister Barnes: but Iohn Beane hauing ten or eleuen wounds, and being left for dead, by Gods prouidence reuiued againe and creeping away on all foure, was found by an old man and his maiden, & conueyed to woolwich, where he gaue euident markes of the murtherer.

Immediatly vpon the deed doing, Browne sent mistres Drewry word thereof by Roger Clement (among them called trusty Roger) he himselfe repaired forthwith to the court at Greenewich, and anon after him came thither the report of the murther also. Then departed he thence vnto London, and came to the house of mistres Drewry, where, though he spake not personally with her, after conference had with her seruant trusty Roger, she prouided him twenty pounds that same day, for the which she layd certaine plate of her owne, and of mistresse Sanders to gage. On the next morrow being thursday (hauing intelligence, that Browne was sought for) they sent him fiue pounds more by the same Roger, warning him to shift for himselfe by flight, which thing he forsloweth not to do: neuertheless the lords of the queenes maiesties counsel, caused so speedy and narrow search to be made for him, that vpon the eight and twentieth of the same moneth, he was apprehended in a mans house of his owne name at Rochester, and being brought backe againe to the court, was examined by the counsell, to whom he confessed the deed, as you haue heard, and that he had oftentimes before pretended and sought to do the same, by the instigation of the sayd mistresse Drewry, who had promised to make a mariage betweene him and mistresse Sanders (whom he seemed to loue excessiuely) neuertheleſſe he protested (though vntruly) that mistres Sanders was not priuy nor consenting thereunto. Upon his confession he was arraigned at the the kings bench in Westminster hall the eighteenth of Aprill, where he acknowledged himselfe guilty, and was condemned as principall of the murder, according to which sentence, he had iudgement, and was executed in Smithfield on Monday the 20 of Aprill, at which time also vntruly (as she her selfe confessed afterward) he laboured by all meanes to cleare mistres Sanders of committing euill of her body with him, as also of procuring or consenting to the murther of her husband, and then beginning to sing a Psalme, O Lord turne not away thy face, &c. he flung himselfe beſides the ladder, and so shortned his owne life: he was after hanged vp in chaines neare vnto the place where he had done the fact.

*George Browne hanged in Smithfield.

In the meane time mistresse Drewrie an her man being examined, as well by their owne confessions, as by falling out of the matter (and also by Brownes appeachment thought culpable) were committed to ward. And after mistresse Sanders being deliuered of child, and churched (for at the time of her husbands death she looked presently to lye downe) was vpon mistresse Drewries mans confession, and other great likelihoods, likewise committed to the Tower, and

on

on Wednesday the first of May arraigned with mistresse Drewrie at the Guild hall, the effect of whose inditement was, that they by a letter written had bene procurers of the sayd murther, and knowing the murther done, had by money and otherwise relieued the murderer: whereunto they pleaded not guilty, howbeit, they were both condemned as accessaries to maister Sanders death, and executed in Smithfield the thirteenth of May, being Wednesday in Whitson weeke, at which time they both confessed themselues guiltie of the fact. Truckle Roger mistresse Drewries man was arraigned on Friday the eight of May, and being there condemned as accessary, was executed with his mistresse at the time and place aforesayd. Not long after, Anthony Browne, brother to the foresayd George Browne, was for notable felonies conueyed from Newgate to Yorke, and there hanged.

Anne Sanders, Anne Drewry, and trusty Roger hanged.

Anthony Browne hãged at Yorke

The tenth of Aprill, seuen pirats, which (among other) had bene taken on the north seas, were led from Southwarke to Wapping, and fiue of them were there hanged: the other two had their pardon at the gallowes.

Pirats hanged at Wapping.

The 17. of Aprill, a chandlers wife without Aldersgate of London, who had practised her husbands death by poysoning and other wayes, was set on the pillory in Cheape, with three other women, who had bene of her counsell, two of them were with her there whipped.

Foure women on the pillorie.

This yeare the Queenes maiesty of England, being moued by the Regent of Scotland, in the behalfe of the young king of Scots her cosin, sent a power of 1500. Englishmen to the siege of Edenborough castle, sir William Drewry knight marshall of Barwike, to be generall of her forces there, with captaines as followeth, sir Francis Russell knight, captaine Reade of Barwike, and these following also, captaine Yaxley, captaine Wood, captaine Brickwell, captaine Pikeman, captaine Gamme, captaine Cace, captaine Carew, captaine Errington prouost marshall, captaine Astoll, captaine Sterlee captaine of the pioners, and captaine Barton also of the pioners. Diuerse other gentlemen also went thither to serue of their owne free wils, as sir George Carie knight, sir Henry Lea knight, maister Thomas Ciciil maister Michaell Carie, maister Henrie Carie, maister William Knolles, maister Thomas Sutton, maister Cotton, maister Kelway, maister Diar, maister Tilney, maister William Killigrew, maister William Selby, and other. Sir William Drewry with the captaines, gentlemen, and number of souldiers before mentioned, passed from Barwike to Lieth, from whence on the 25. of Aprill they marched on to Edenborough, entred the towne, and the same day sommoned the castell in forme as followeth:

Aide sent into Scotland against the castle of Edenborough.

Sir William Kirkaudie, sometime of Grange knight, for as much as the Queenes maiesty my soueraigne lady, vpon the earnest request of her deare cosin the king of Scots, your soueraigne lord, made to her highnesse by his regent, nobility, & estates of this realme, after all good meanes vsed to haue reduced you to dutiful obedience of his authority by treaty, which hitherto you haue not duly harkened vnto, to the onely hinderance of the vniuersall peace in this realme, by withholding that his highnesse castle, meaning as it seemeth, to reserue the same for a receptacle of forraine forces, to the manifest daungers both of this realme and of my soueraignesse, and therefore necessarie to remoue so perillous a daunger to

Thomas Churchyard.

both the realmes, for which consideration her maiesty hath sent her aide & succors of men, ordinance and munition, vnder my charge & leading, for the repugnation & recouery of the sayd castle, to the said kings vse and behalfe, and therefore according to her maiesties commandement and commission, this shall be in due maner to warne, require, and common you, that you render & deliuer the sayd castle, with the whole ordinance artillery, munitions, iewels, houshold-stuffe, and such other implements within the same, to me & the vse and behalfe of the king your soueraigne, & his regent in his name, immediatly after this my letter of commons, or knowledge of the same, shall come to you: which if you obey, as of duty you ought, then shall I in her maiesties name interpone my selfe to trauell with the regent, counsell, and nobility here for the safety of your liues, &c. Otherwise if you continue in your former obstinacy, abiding the canon, then no further to looke for grace or fauor, but you and the rest within that castle to be pursued to the vttermost, and holden as enemies to her maiesty, your owne soueraigne and country. Giuen at Edenborough by me sir William Drewry knight, generall of her maiesties forces now in Scotland, this 25. of Aprill, 1573.

The Lord Grange captaine of the castle, notwithstanding this commons, refused vtterly to yeeld the castle, who thereupon receiued such answer from the generall, as stood not to his contentation. Hereupon were the pioners set in hand to cast trenches, and to raise mounts in places conuenient to plant the ordinance vpon. And then began the siege of the castle in fiue places, where were erected fiue mounts. The first was for the regent, called the kings mount. The second for sir William Drewry generall there. The third was gouerned by sir George Carie. The fourth by sir Henry Lea. The fift by maister Thomas Sutton maister of the ordinance in the north part of England. There was at this siege as is reported 1500. Englishmen, and of Scots fiue hundred, or rather 1500. there was also one with another peeces of artillery 30. to wit, 6. canons, nine halfe canons, nine culuerings, fire takers. They within spared not to bestow such as they had, as well at the pioners as souldiers, in so much that diuerse were hurt, and some slaine, before the trenches and mounts might be brought to perfection, but they within escaped not free, especially after that the trenches & mounts were brought in state to defend the assailants, who watching and warding in the trenches, answered them within the castle very roughly. On the 17. of May began the battery of the castle, so that there were thirty canons shot off against the same, and so well bestowed at Dauids tower, that by the ruines thereof then and after, the force of the English canons were easie to be seene. The 18. 19. and 20. of May, the canons and demy canons were not idle, but the one and twenty the whole battery began on each side the castle from the trenches and mounts very hotly, & still they within ceased not to make answer againe with their artillery, killing and hurting diuers both English and Scots, but such was the diligence of the English gunners, that they displaced the ordinance in the castle, and stroke one of their chiefe canons iust in the mouth, whereby the same was broken in peeces. The 26. of May the assault was giuen at seuen of the clocke in the morning to the Spurre, which by the hardy manhood of the assailants was won, and was no sooner entred by the Englishmen, but that the generals ensigne was shewed and spred vpon the front

and

and top thereof, to the great discomfort of them within the castell. In the meane time whilest these were appointed to giue the assault thus to the Spurre, there were certaine English men and Scots commaunded to make a countenance of an assault at the west side of the castell, whereby those that assaulted the Spurre might the more easily obtaine their purpose, but they rashly aduenturing further then they had in commaundement, were beaten backe and repulsed, with 28. or 30. of their company slaine and hurt. The same day toward night, they within the castell by a drumme demaunded parley, which being graunted, with assurance of all hostilitie from that houre vnto the 28. of May, the lord Petterroe was let downe by a rope from the castell, and afterward the lord Grange himselfe captaine of the castell, and Robert Melvin came likewise downe to talke with the Generall, and such other as were appointed to accompanie him: hereupon at length, to wit, the said 28. of May, the castell was surrendred into the hands of sir William Drewrie, and so it rested in his possession for the time, and his ensigne was set vp and spread during the same time in sundrie places of the castell, and afterwards to the great honour of England, by him it was deliuered vnto the vse of the king of Scots, and part of the spoile of the castell was giuen to the soldiers, the canons and artillerie, with certaine other instruments, left to the king. If the English men by force had taken it, it was decreed that they should haue had the whole spoile except the artillerie, & so should haue enioyed it by the space of three daies.

Edeborough castell yeelded to the Englishmen.

Causes of deliuerie of the castell were these:

1 Lacke of water: the well within the castell was stopped and defiled by the ruines of the castell: the other well without the castell could not serue them, for that there was a mount made to hinder them. Another water there was which was vnknowne to them which were without, and was taken from them when the Spur of the castell was taken, out of the which they were woont to haue a pint a day for euery souldier.

2 Diuerse sicke.

3 Diuerse hurt.

4 Not many to maintaine the castell, which had no space to take any rest they were so plied and ouerwearied.

5 Diuerse diuided in opinion.

6 Some were no souldiers.

7 No aide was to be looked for.

The 16. of June, the prisoners were deliuered by the said sir William Drewry in presence of sundry Scots and Englishmen, vnto the regent, and that done, the same day the said sir William Drewrie with his power departed toward Barwike. The names of the prisoners were these, sir William Kerkaudie lord of Grange, and Captaine of the castell of Edenborough, the lord Hume, the lord Ledington Secretarie, the Lord of Petterroe constable of the castle, the countesse of Arguile, the ladie of Ledington, the ladie of Grange, with others: in all to the number of men, one hundred sixtie foure, women thirtie foure, boyes ten.

The seuenth of June, betweene the houres of one and two of the clocke in the afternoone,

Haile in Northamptonshire.

afternoone, a great tempest of haile & raine happened at Towcester in Northamptonshire, wherethrough fiue houses in that towne were borne downe, and fourteene more lore perished with the waters which rose of that tempest, the hailestones were square and fiue inches about: one child was there drowned, and many sheepe and other cattell, which when the water was fallen, many of them were lying on the high hedges, where the waters had left them.

Thomas Woodhouse.

The 16. of June, Thomas Woodhouse a priest of Lincolnshire, who had lien long prisoner in the Fleete, was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, and there condemned of high treason, who had iudgement to be hanged and quartered, and was executed at Tiborne the 19. of June.

Earle of Essex and the lord Rich with other sailed into Ireland.

The 16. of August, Walter earle of Essex, accompanied with Robert lord Rich, and diuers other gentlemen, embarked themselues in seuerall ships at Liuerpoole, and the wind sitting very well, tooke their voyage towards Ireland. The earle after many and great dangers on the sea, at length wan Copemans Ilands, from whence in a pinnesse of captaine Percies he was brought safe to Knockfergus. The lord Rich with the like daungers landed at castell Kilclife, where being met by captaine Malby, maister Smith, and maister Moore Pensioners, was conducted to Inch abbey maister Malbies house, where he had in a readinesse on the morrow morning an hundred and fiftie horsemen for their safegard to Knockfergus, beside fiftie kernes which went a foot through the woods: there was amongst these a thirtie bowes with a bagpipe, the rest had darts. Sir Brian Mac-Phelin had prayed the countrey, and taken away what was to be carried or driuen, but on the first of September he came to Knockfergus to the earle of Essex, and there made his submission: ẏ number of kine were esteemed 30. M. beside sheep & swine.

After him Ferdorough Macgillaflicke the blind Scots son, Roze, Oge, Macwilline did the like, and diuers other sent their messengers to the earle, to signifie that they were at his lordships disposition, as the baron of Dongarrow, Condonel, Odonel, and the captaine of Kilulto. The earle of Essex hauing the countrie of Clanuboy and other.

Earle of Essex captaine Generall of Vlster in Ireland.

The Queenes maiestie of England directed her letters to the lord deputie of Ireland, willing him to make by commission the earle of Essex captaine Generall of the Irish nation in the prouince of Vlster, and to diuide the countrey woon, Clanuboy and elsewhere, &c.

Peter Burchet wounded maister Hawkins.

The 11. of October, Peter Burchet gentleman (of the middle Temple) with his dagger, suddenly assailed, cruelly wounded, and meant to haue murdered a seruiceable gentleman named Iohn Hawkins esquire, as he with sir William Winter and another gentleman rode towards Westminster, in the high streete neare to the Strand beyond the Temple bar of London, for which fact the said Burchet being apprehended and committed to the tower, was after examined concerning the fact, who answered that he tooke the said maister Hawkins for another gentleman, to wit, sir Christopher Hatton: and being further examined, he was found to hold certaine erronious opinions, for the which he was sent to the Lollards tower, from thence being called into the Consistorie of Paules church, before the right reuerend father Edwin bishop of London, and other, and by them examined, he stoode in his opinions, till the sentence of death,

Peter Burchet found to be an heretike.

as

as an heretike was readie to haue bene pronounced against him on the fourth of November: but through the earnest perswasions of diuers learned men, who tooke great paines in that matter, it was said he renounced, forswore, and abiured his opinions for erroneous and damnable, promising neuer to returne to them, and also willingly to do and performe all such penance as the bishop his Ordinarie should inioyne him, but nothing was done, wherefore on the ninth of November by commandement of the Counsell, the said Peter Burchet was remooued from the Lollards tower to the Tower of London, where on the next morrow about noone, whilest one of the twaine that had by appointment kept him companie was gone downe, and locked the doore after him, leauing the other with him, called Hugh Longworth, who stood at a window reading in the Bible, the said Burcher walking vp and downe in the chamber, tooke a billets end out of the fire, and knocked the said Longworth on the head, and left not till he had stricken him starke dead and then drawing him behinde the chamber doore, he awaited the comming vp of the other, likewise to haue dispatched him, but the other opening the doore, and missing his fellow from the window where he left him: taking good regard, espied him lying behinde the doore, which he clapped to, ran downe for more helpe, and returning found his fellow murdered as is afore shewed. For the which fact on the next morrow, he was arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and from thence returned to Somerset house at the Strand, where he remained that night. And the next morrow being the 12. of November, he was brought out to a gibbet, set vp for that purpose, nigh the place where he wounded maister Hawkins, he had no speech, nor shewed signe of repentance, but was by force and strength of men partly drawne, partly borne and thrust vp to the gibbet, where after his right hand being stricken off, and nayled to the gibbet, he was hanged.

Peter Burchet abiured his heresie.

Peter Burchet submitted himselfe to do penance as it was said.

Peter Burchet killeth his keeper.

Peter Burchet hanged.

This yeere about Lammas, wheate was sold at London for three shillings the bushell, but shortly after it was raised to foure shillings, fiue shillings, sixe shillings, and before Christmas to a noble and seuen shillings, which so continued long after: beefe was sold for twenty pence, and two and twentie pence the stone, and all other flesh and white meats at an excessiue price, all kinde of salt fish very deere, as fiue herrings two pence, &c. yet great plentie of fresh-fish, and oft times the same very cheape: bay salt at three shillings the bushell, &c. All this dearth notwithstanding (thanks be giuen to God) there was no want of any thing to him that wanted not money.

An. reg. 16. 1574.

Dearth without scarcitie.

The fourth of Aprill being Palme sunday, there was taken saying of masse in the lord Morleies house within Aldgate of London, one Albon Dolman priest, and the lady Morley with her children and diuers others, were also taken hearing of the said masse. There was also taken the same day and houer for saying masse at the lady Gilfords in Trinitie lane, one Oliuer Heywood priest, and for hearing of the said masse the said lady Gilford, with diuers other gentlewomen. There was also taken at the same instant in the lady Brownes house in Cow lane for saying masse, one Thomas Heywood priest, and one Iohn Cooper priest, with the lady Browne: and diuers other were likewise taken, being hearers of the said masse. All which persons were for the same offences indicted, conuicted, and had

Priests saying masse apprehended.

the

the law according to the ſtatute in that caſe prouided. There was alſo found in their ſeuerall chappels, diuers Latine bookes, beades, images, palmes, chalices, croſſes veſtments, pixes, parcs, and ſuch like.

Peter Ramus

Countie Montgomerie was taken in Normandie in the caſtell of Donfro, on the 27. of May.

A monſtrous fiſh.

The ninth of July, at fiue of the clocke at night, in the iſle of Thanet beſides Ramelgate in the pariſh of Saint Peter vnder the clift, a monſtrous fiſh or whale of the ſea did ſhoot himſelfe on ſhore, where for want of water, beating himſelfe on the ſands, he died about fiue of the clocke in the nert morning, before which time he rored, and was heard more then a mile on the land. The length of this fiſh was two and twentie yards, the neather iaw twelue foote the opening, one of his eyes being taken out of his head, was more then fiue horſes in a cart could draw, a man ſtood vpright in the place from whence the eye was taken, the thickneſſe from the backe whereon he lay, to the top of his belly (which was vpward) was fourteene foote, his taile of the ſame breadth, betweene his eyes twelue foote, three men ſtood vpright in his mouth, ſome of the ribs were fifteene foot long, his toung was fifteene foot long, his liuer two cart loade, into his noſtrils any man might haue crept: the oile being boyled out of the head was parmacetie, the oile of his body was whitiſh, and ſweet of taſt.

Obſequie at Paules for the French king.

The ſeuenth of Auguſt, a ſolemne obſequie was kept in Saint Paules church at London for Charles the ninth king of Fraunce, who being poiſoned, deceaſed on the thirtith of May laſt before paſſed.

Peter Ramus Agnes Bridges and Rachell Pinder at Paules croſſe for counterfetting to be poſſeſſed.

The fifteenth of Auguſt being ſonday, Agnes Bridges a maid about the age of twenty yeares, and Rachel Pinder a wench about the age of 11. or 12. yeares, who both of them had counterfeited to be poſſeſſed by the diuell, (whereby they had not onely marueilouſly deluded many people, both men and women, but alſo diuerſe ſuch perſons as otherwiſe ſeemed to be of good wit and vnderſtanding) ſtood before the preacher at Paules croſſe, where they acknowledged their hypocriticall counterfetting, with penitent behauiours, requiring forgiueneſſe of God and the world, and the people to pray for them. Alſo their ſeuerall examinations and confeſſions were there openly read by the preacher, and afterwards publiſhed in print, for the further poſteritie hereafter to beware of the like deceiuers.

A lad of 18. yeares old drowned in a chanell at London.

The fourth of September in the afternoone, ſuch a ſtorme of raine happened at London, as the like of long time could not be remembred, whereth̄rough the chanels of the citie ſuddenly riſing, ranne with ſuch forcible courſe towards the common ſhores, that a lad of the age of 18. yeares, minding to haue lept ouer the chanell neare vnto Downegate, was borne ouer with the ſtreame, and by the ſame carried from the conduit there towards the Thamis, with ſuch a ſwiftneſſe, that no man with ſtaues or otherwaies could ſtay him, till he came againſt a cart wheele ẏ ſtood in the water gate, afore which time he was drowned & ſtarke dead.

Terme adiourned. Two tides in one houre.

Michaelmas terme, which had bene adiourned by proclamation, began at Weſtminſter on the firſt of November. The ſame firſt day in the morning there happened two great tides at London in the Thamis, the firſt by courſe, the other within one houre after, which ouerflowed the marſhes, with many vaults and ſellers neare adioyning.

The

The fourteenth of November being Sonday, about midnight following, diuerse straunge impressions of fire and smoke were seene in the aire, to proceede foorth of a blacke cloud in the north towards the South, which so continued till the next morning that it was day light. The next night following, the heauens from all parts did seeme to burne maruellous ragingly, and ouer our heads the flames from the horizon round about rising did meete, and there double and roll one in another, as if it had bene in a cleare fornace. Fiery impressions.

The eighteenth day at night, were very stormie and tempestuous winds out of the south (I haue not knowne the like out of that quarter) especially after midnight till the next morning that it was day light. These are to be receiued as tokens of Gods wrath readie bent against the world for sinne now abounding, and also of his great mercie, who doth but onely shew the rod wherewith we daily deserue to be beaten. *An. reg. 17.* Tempest of wind.

This yeare at London after harueſt, the price of wheate began by little and little to fall from seuen shillings to three shillings the bushell, at which price it stayed (little or nothing rising or falling) all the yeare after, but bay salt was raised from three shillings to foure, fiue, and fiue shillings the bushell, the like whereof had neuer beene seene or heard within this realme. Bay salt deare.

1575

The foure and twentith of February, the feast of S. Matthie, on which day the faire was kept at Tewkesburie, a strange thing happened there, for after a flood which was not great, but such as thereby the medowes neare adioyning were couered with water, in the afternoone there came downe the riuer of Auon great numbers of flies and beetles, such as in summer euenings vse to strike men in the face, in great heapes, a foot thicke aboue the water, so that to credible mens iudgement, there were seene within a paire of butlengths of those flies aboue an hundred quarters. The mils thereabouts were dammed vp with them for the space of foure daies after, and then were cleansed by digging them out with shouels: from whence they came is yet vnknowne, but the day was cold and a hard frost. Flies in Februarie, the number strange.

The 26. of February, betweene foure and fiue of the clocke in the afternoone, great earthquakes happened in the cities of Yorke, Worcester, Glocester, Bristow, Hereford, and in the countries about, which caused the people to run out of their houses for feare they should haue fallen on their heads. In Tewkesburie, Bredon, and other places the dishes fell from the cupboords, and the bookes in mens studies from the shelues. In Norton chappell the people being on their knees at Euening prayer, the ground mooued, caused them to runne away in great feare that the dead bodies would haue risen, or the chappell to haue fallen: part of Rithen castell fell downe, with certaine bricke chimnies in gentlemens houses. The bell in the shire hall of Denbigh was caused to toll twise by shaking of the hall, &c. Earthquake.

On Easter day, which was the third of Aprill, about nine of the clocke in the forenoone, was disclosed a congregation of Anabaptists Dutchmen, in a house without the barres of Aldgate at London, whereof seuen and twentie were taken and sent to prison, and foure of them bearing fagots recanted at Paules crosse on the fifteenth day of May, in forme as followeth: Anabaptists bare fagots at Paules crosse.

Whereas I I. T. R. H. being seduced by the diuell the spirit of errour, and by

falſe

falſe teachers his miniſters, haue falne into certaine moſt deteſtable and damnable hereſies, namely:

1 That Chriſt tooke not fleſh of the ſubſtance of the bleſſed virgine Mary.
2 That infants of the faithfull ought not to be baptized.
3 That a chriſtian man may not be a magiſtrate, or beare the ſword or office of authority.
4 That it is not lawfull for a chriſtian to take an oath.

Now by the grace of God, and through conference with good and learned miniſters of Chriſt his Church, I do vnderſtand and acknowledge the ſame to be moſt damnable and deteſtable hereſies, and do aſke God here before his church, mercy for my ſayd former errors, and do forſake them, recant and renounce them, & abiure them from the bottome of my heart, profeſſing that I certainly beleeue,

1 That Chriſt tooke fleſh of the ſubſtance of the bleſſed virgin Mary.
2 That infants of the faithfull ought to be baptized.
3 That a chriſtian man may be a magiſtrate, or beare the ſword and office of authority.
4 That it is lawfull for a chriſtian to take an oath.

And further I confeſſe that the whole doctrine and religion eſtabliſhed & publiſhed in this realme of England, as alſo that which is receiued and preached in the Dutch church here in the city, is found, true, and according to the word of God, whereunto in all things I ſubmit my ſelfe, and will moſt gladly be a member of the ſayd Dutch church, from henceforth vtterly abandoning and forſaking all and euery Anabaptiſticall error.

Archbiſhop of Canterbury deceaſed.

The 17. day of May, about midnight following the right reuerend father in God Matthew Parker, doctor of diuinity, archbiſhop of Canterbury, deceaſed at Lambeth, and was there honorably buried.

This reuerend father examined throughly the Engliſh tranſlation of the holy Bibles, wherein he partly vſed the helpe of his brethren biſhops, and other doctors, and cauſed the ſame to be newly printed in the largeſt volume, for the furniture of many churches then wanting. Alſo making diligent ſearch for the antiquities of the Britons, and Engliſh Saxons, to the end thoſe monuments might be carefully kept, he cauſed them to be well bound and trimly couered, and ſuch whereof he knew very few examples to be extant (among the which was Matthew Paris, Matthew Florilegus, Thomas Walſingham & other, all which he receiued of my hands) he cauſed to be printed. The famous pallace of his ſea at Canterbury, firſt builded by Stephen Langton one of his predeceſſors, & ſince by long continuance decayed, and in Thomas Cranmers time conſumed with fire, he reuiued, builded, and fully reſtored with the charges of more then 1400 l.

He founded a grammer ſchoole in Rachdale in the county of Lancaſter.

To Corpus Chriſti colledge in Cambridge he procured 13. ſcholerſhips, and bare the charges in making and furniſhing two chambers for ſcholers, and the vnward library of the ſame colledge.

Item, he gaue to the outward and inward library of the ſayd colledge, a goodly company of printed bookes, and a great number of written bookes, of great antiquity and much value.

Item,

Item, he procured to the sayd colledge, the patronage of Saint Mary Abchurch in London.

Item, he hath founded two fellowships in the sayd Colledge, and procured one Charter of Mortmaine to the sum of 100.l. by yeare.

Item he hath given to the same Colledge of siluer plate double guilt, 209. ounces, 3. quarters, and surrendred to them a lease with the improuement of 14.l. 8.s. yearely for 17. yeares.

Item, 100.l. to the maintenance of a fire in the hall, from Hallamas to Candlemas, and by his last will and testament, 500.l.

Item, to diuerse schollers chābers within the sayd Colledge, diuerse bedsteeds, with sufficient bedding and bookes to remaine for euer.

Item, he hath founded for euer fiue sermons to be preached in diuerse places of Norffolke euery yeare in rogation weeke, and 40.s. to be deuided at Norwich to the poore and other.

Item, to the city of Norwich one bason and ewer of siluer and double gilt 173. ounces.

Item, to the towne of Watsal in Norffolke for euer an annuity of 50.s. to be deuided to the poore, with a sermon in Rogation weeke.

Item, to Gunnil and Caius Colledge one scholershyp, with a standing cup & a pot of siluer double gilt 55. ounces 3. quarters, and one nest of goblets with a couer siluer and gilt, with a number of good bookes to their library.

Item, to Trinity hall one scholershyp, a standing cup and a pot of siluer & gilt, 53. ounces, a nest of goblets siluer and guilt with a couer, & bookes to their library.

Item, to the Vniuersity library fiftie old auncient written bookes, and 50. printed bookes, &c.

Anabaptists banished.

The 21. of May being Whitson-euen, one man and ten women Anabaptists dutch, were in the consistory of Paules condemned to be brent in Smithfield, but after great paines taken with them, onely one woman was conuerted, the other were banished the land.

Fiue persons of the family of loue stood at Paules crosse.

The 12. of June, stood at Paules Crosse 5. persons Englishmen of the sect termed The family of Loue, who there confessed themselues vtterly to detest as well the author of that sect H. N. as all his damnable errors and heresies.

Anabaptists brent.

The 22. of July, two Dutchmen Anabaptists, were brent in Smithfield, who died in great horror with roaring and crying.

Thunder & haile.

The 30. of July in the afternoone was a great tempest of lightning & thunder, wherethrough both men and beasts in diuers places were striken dead. Also at ỳ time fell great abundance of haile, whereof the stones in many places were found to be 6. or 7. inches about.

The glasse house brent.

The fourth of September, being Sunday about seuen of the clocke in the morning, a certaine glasse-house which sometime had bene the Crossed friers hall, neare to the tower of London, brast out on a terrible fire, whereunto the Lord Maior, Aldermen and Sheriffes with all expedition repaired, and practised there all meanes possible by water-buckets, hookes, and otherwise to haue quenched it, all which notwithstanding, whereas the same house in a small time before, had consumed great quantity of wood by making of fine drinking glasses, now it selfe hauing within it neare fortie thousand billets of wood, was all consumed

to

to the stone wals, which wals greatly defended the fire from spreading farther, and doing any more harme.

Foure children at one burden.

The 26. of September, a Poulters wife in the parish of Christs church within Newgate of London, was deliuered and brought to bed of foure children at one burden, all females, or maiden children, which were christened by the names *Ao. reg.* 18. Elizabeth, Mary, Margaret, and Dorothy, and the same day moneth the mother was buried, but all the foure children liuing and in good liking were borne to church after her.

1576. God punisheth periury.

The 11. of Februarie, Anne Aueries widow, forswearing her selfe for a litle money that she should haue paid for fiue pound of towe, at a shop in Woodstreete of London, fell immediatly downe speechlesse, casting vp at her mouth in great abundance, and with horrible stinke, the same matter which by natures course should haue bene voided downewards, till she died: a terrible example of Gods iust iudgement vpon such as make no conscience of falsly swearing against their brother.

Archbishop elected.

The 15. of Februarie, Edmond Grindale sometime bishop of London, late archbishop of Yorke, was in the Chapter house of S. Paules church at London, elected archbishop of Canterburie.

Tilt-boate drowned.

The 5. of March in the night, through a great flaw of wind then in the north-west, a tiltboate with about the number of 31. persons men and women, comming from Grauelend toward London, were all drowned, one boy excepted.

Greene hanged.

The 30. of May, Thomas Greene goldsmith was drawne from Newgate of London to Tiborne, and there hanged, headed and quartered, for clipping of coine both gold and siluer.

Frobishers first voyage for the discouery of Cataya.

The 15. of June, Martin Frobisher, being furnished of aduenturers, with two small barkes and one pinnesse departed from Blacke wall, vpon his voyage for the discouerie of a passage to Cataya, by the Northwest seas. Vpon the 1. of July he had sight (as he iudged) of Frisland, but durst not approch the same, by reason of the great ice that lay alongst the coast: not far from thence he lost his pinnesse, & one of his barks, who mistrusting the danger of tempests returned home, with report ỹ their Generall Martin Frobisher was cast away, which captaine notwithstanding continued his course Northwest beyond any man ỹ hath heretofore discouered, & the 20. of July had sight of a high land, which he named Q. Elizabeths Foreland: and after that another Foreland with a great passage, deuiding (as it were) the two maine lands asunder, this place he named Frobishers Straites. After he had passed fiftie leagues further, he went on shoare, found the same to be inhabited with sauage people, caught one of them into his Barke, and returned into England in the moneth of August following: one of his company brought from thence a peece of blacke stone, much like to a sea-cole in colour, which being brought to certaine goldfiners in London, to make assay thereof, found it to hold gold, and that very richly for the quantity as they affirmed, but other sayd the contrary, and so it prooued.

A stone sayd to be gold, which was a meere deceipt.

A woman brent at Tunbridge.

The 29. of July, a woman was brent at Tunbridge in Kent, for poysoning of her husband: and two dayes before, a man named Oxley, was hanged at Maidstone for being accessarie to the same fact.

A strang-

A strange peece of worke, and almost incredible, was brought to passe by an Englishman borne within the citie of London, and a clearke of the Chancery named Peter Bales, who by his industry and practise of his pen contriued and writ within the compasse of a peny, in Latine, the Lords prayer, the Creede, the ten Commandements, a prayer to God, a prayer for the queene, his polle, his name, the day of the moneth, the yeare of our Lord, and the raigne of the queene: And at Hampton court he presented the same to the queenes maiestie in the head of a ring of gold, couered with a Christall, and presented therewith an excellent spectacle by him deuised for the easier reading thereof, wherewith her maiestie read all that was written therein, and did weare the same vpon her finger. A strange writing with in the compasse of a peny.

Also about the same time Marke Scaliot blacke-smith borne in London, for triall of workmanship, made one hanging locke of yron, steele, and brasse, a pipe key filed three square, with a pot vpon the shaft, and the bow with two esses, all cleane wrought, which weyed but one graine of gold or wheate corne: he made also a chaine of gold of 43. linkes, to the which chaine the locke and key being fastned and put about a fleas necke she drew the same, all which locke, key, chaine and flea, weyed but one graine and a halfe, as is yet to be seene vpon Corne-hill by Leaden hall, at the sayd Marks house.

The moneth of August, many complaints being brought to the Queenes maiestie and her counsell vpon the Flushingers, for great spoyles and robberies by them daily committed vpon her highnesse subiects, her maiestie gaue order to put foure good ships, and two barkes of her owne to the seas, vnder the charge of maister William Holstocke esquire, comptroller of all her highnesse ships, with 1100. men, victualled for fiue weekes, in which time was by them taken eight Flushingers ships and barkes, prises, and 220. sea rouers in them, who were sent on land to sundry prisons. Pyrats and sea rouers taken, and sent to prison.

Walter Deuereux earle of Esser, and earle marshall of Ireland, knight of the order of the garter, falling sicke of a laske on the 21. of August, was grieuously tormented by the space of 22. dayes, and deceased on the 12. of September at Diuelin in Ireland. Walter Deuereux earle of Essex died

The 10. of Nouember, in the citie of Worcester, a cruell and vnnaturall brother (as another Caine) murdered his owne naturall and louing brother, he first smote out his braines with an axe, then cut his throte, and after buried him vnder the harth of a chimney, thinking thereby (though wrongfully) yet quietly to haue enioyed his brothers goods long before in his possession, but not long after this secret murder comming to light, the murderer was rewarded according to his deserts. A murderer of his brother hanged.

An. reg. 19.

The 17. of March, through a strange tempest which hapned in the North neare to a towne called Richmond, not onely cottages, trees, barnes, and haystackes, but also the most part of a church called Patrike Brunton, was ouerthrowne, with most strange sights in the ayre both terrible and fearefull. 1577. Patricke Brumton ouerturned.

The 26. of March, the new Conduit neare vnto Oldborne, and a standart with one cocke at Oldborne bridge, were begun to be founded by William Lambe, sometime gentleman of the chappell to king Henry the eight, now citizen and clothworker of London, the water whereof is conueyed in pipes of lead Charitable acts of Maister Lambe. Oldborne cõduit built.

from diuerse springs to one head, and from thence to the said conduit and standart more then 2000. yards in length, all which of his owne costs and charges, amounting to the sum of 1500. pounds was fully finished the 24. of August in the same yeare: more of his charitable acts, I haue set downe in my summaries of the Chronicles.

Tower on London bridge taken downe.

This yeare in the moneth of Aprill, the decayed stone house, called the tower vpon London bridge, was begun to be taken downe, and the heads of traitors being remooued thence, were set on the gate at the bridge foot towards Southwarke. And on the 28. of August next following, sir Iohn Langley lord Maior of the citie of London, laid the first stone of a new foundation of a tower in the same place, which tower was most beautifully finished in the moneth of September, in the yeare of Christ 1579.

Second voyage to Cataya.

The 31. of May, Martin Frobisher with one ship and two barkes furnished for that purpose, sailed from Harwich in Essex towards Cataya by the northwest seas, & entred his straits, beyond Queene Elizabeths Foreland about 30. leagues, where he went on shoare, and finding store of gold ore, as it was vntruly said, fraught his ship and barke, caught a man, woman and child of that countrie, and then on the 24. of August returning from thence, arriued at Milford hauen in Wales on the 20. of September next following, but neither the man, woman, nor child liued long in this countrie, nor his ore proued gold but drosse.

Strange sickenesse at Oxford.

The 4. 5. and 6. daies of July, were the assises holden at Oxford, where was arraigned and condemned one Rowland Ienkes for his seditious young, at which time there arose amidst the people such a dampe, that almost all were smothered, very few escaped that were not taken at that instant: the Iurors died presently. Shortly after died sir Robert Bell lord chiefe Baron, sir Robert de Olie, sir William Babington, maister Weneman, maister de Olie high Sherife, M. Dauers, M. Harcurt, M. Kirle, M. Pheteplace, M. Greenwood, M. Foster, M. Nash, Sergeant Baram, maister Stevens, &c. there died in Oxford 300. persons, and sickned there, but died in other places 200. and odde from the 6. of July to the 12 of August, after which day died not one of that sickenesse, for one of them infected not another, nor any one woman or child died thereof.

Tempest in Suffolke.

On Sonday the 4. of August, betweene the houres of 9. and 10. of the clocke in the forenoone, whilest the minister was reading of the second lesson in the parish church of Blaborough a towne in Suffolke, a strange and terrible tempest of lightening and thunder strake through the wall of the same church into the ground almost a yard deepe, draue downe all the people on that side about twenty persons, then renting the wall vp to the Rouestrie, clefe the doze, and returning to the steeple, rent the timber, brake the chimes, and fled toward Bongey fiue miles off. The people that were stricken downe, were found groueling more then halfe an houre after, whereof a man more then fortie yeares, & a boy of fifteene yeares old were found starke dead, the other were scorched. The like flash of lightning and cracks of thunder rent the parish church of Bongey nine miles from Norwich, wroong in sunder the wiers and wheeles of the clocke, slue two men which sate in the belfrey when other were at Procession, and scorched another which hardly escaped.

An. reg. 20. Sergeants feast.

The 19. of November, the new Sergeants at the law, seuen in number, held their

their hall in the Temple at London.

The 30. of November, Cuthbert Mayne was drawne, hanged, and quartered at Lawncestone in Cornewall, for preferring Romane power. Cuthbert Maine executed.

And here I thinke good to set downe a declaration sent by the Queenes maiestie of England vnto the King of Spaine, containing a iustification of her proceedings with the States of the low countries.

The Queenes maiestie being giuen to vnderstand of diuerse most slanderous and false bruits giuen out touching her proceedings and dealings with the states of the Low countries, tending as it were to make her the authour and principall nourisher of the ciuill troubles in the said countries: and doubting that the sowers and spreaders abroad of the said bruits, to seeke by all meanes they may to induce her good brother the king of Spaine to beleeue the said false and malicious surmises to be true, with meaning thereby to breed a breach & interruption of the good amitie betweene them: her Maiestie hauing therefore nothing more in recommendation then her honour, and to be reputed a Prince that desireth to maintaine and continue good amitie with the Princes her neighbours (whatsoeuer hath bene giuen out maliciously to the contrarie) being able to iustifie her whole actions before God and the world, aswell towards him as other Princes her neighbours, hath thought it very expedient for the earnest desire she hath to satisfie the said king, to set downe in writing a declaration (such as she will maintaine to be true in the word of a Prince) of her proceedings with the States, to the end the said King being truly informed therein, such causes and scruples of suspition, as might any way hinder the good amitie betweene them, might be removed, and the same restored to as great perfection and integritie as hath bene heretofore betweene any their progenitors, which said declaration, tending to that good end aboue mentioned, her Maiestie also hath thought meete to accompany aswell with an aduise vnto the said king, what way in her opinion were most fit for him to take for the continuance of the said countries vnder his obedience, and the restoring of the vnto their former quietnesse and repose, as also with her resolution in those causes of the Low countries, in case the said king shall not condescend to take some way of pacification, according to her Maiesties most sincere and friendly aduise. A declaration sent by the Queene to the king of Spaine.

And first touching her proceedings with the States, she doubteth not but that if the king shall resort to his owne knowledge, and call to remembrance how often sithence the first breaking out of the ciuill dissention in those countries, her Maiestie hath mooued him by sundrie ministers, sent as well vnto himselfe as vnto his vnder-gouernours in the said countries, forewarning both him and them of the mischiefes presently then fallen out, and aduised him to take some speedie way for the preuention of the same, he cannot but in honour and conscience confesse, that her Highnesse hath therein discharged the dutie of a faithfull friend, and good allie in that behalfe. Of which aduise if it might please him to haue taken profite, those his countries bring presently in a most perplexed state, had bene stayed from the ruine and destruction they are now apparantly running into, his people and subiects preserued from slaughter and bloudshed, his rich townes continued vnspoyled, and the whole gouernement kept from perill of alienation: and if herein for her

Maieſties iuſtification, neither theſe friendly offices, nor the word and faith of a Prince may ſuffice, yet her owne accounts themſelues may ſerue to iuſtifie her in the eies and light of all the world: That ſhe hath ſought to continue thoſe countryes vnder the Kings obedience, and hath not at any time intended to impatronize her ſelfe of any part of them, a matter which perhaps other Princes hauing like aduantages offered by ſome part of his people, would not haue refuſed, and therefore may thinke her ſelfe euill dealt withall, in caſe ſo rare an example ſhould be ſo hardly or rather vnfriendly interpreted. And as her Maieſtie hath not left any good office vndone towards the King and his miniſters tending to pacification, and the perſwaſions of thoſe countries vnder his obedience: ſo on the other ſide, ſhe hath not omitted by ſundrie meſſengers ſent both to the Prince of Orenge and the States, aſwell to perſwade them to ceaſe their ciuill warres, and to take ſome way of peace and agreement amongſt themſelues, as alſo to continue their auncient obedience vnder the ſaid King their naturall Lord and ſouereigne, being prouoked thereto vppon ſecret, but yet verie true and certaine aduertiſements giuen her of great offers made vnto them by ſome (whom ſhe forbeareth to name for good reſpects) to haue withdrawen them from their obedience. And herein if beſides many perſwaſions vſed by meſſengers ſent of purpoſe to aduiſe them to continue their obedience to the King, her Maieſtie had not furniſhed them in the time of their neceſſitie with a portion of money, aſwell to ſerue them for the ſpeedy execution of the pacification then in Treatie betweene Don Iohn and them, as for the keeping of them from a deſperate putting off themſelues into the hands of other princes, it did manifeſtly appeare that the pacification and accord had not bene ſo ſoone made, and that they for lacke thereof ſhould haue bene driuen for their defence, to haue deliuered ſome part of thoſe countries, to the poſſeſſion of ſuch as would not haue bene remooued without the ſpending of many millions, and the loſſe of many thouſand mens liues. Of the true cauſe of this ſupport, her Maieſtie is the more willing to make mention, for that ſhe is informed, that notwithſtanding her good and ſincere meaning in that behalfe, other wrong and ſiniſter interpretations haue bene made of the ſame, as the like alſo hath bene done of other her proceedings. Amongſt the reſt, her Maieſtie hath thought it expedient to anſwere one calumniation contained in a letter fathered on Don Iohn, and publiſhed in a booke lately ſet out by the States in their Iuſtification, by the which her Maieſtie is charged to haue encouraged the Prince of Orenge not to ſtand to the pacification, and withall did for his better encouragement, offer vnto him any aſſiſtance ſhe could yeeld (a matter moſt ſlanderous and vntrue) for that her Maieſtie being giuen to vnderſtand by the Viſcount of Gaunt, ſent vnto her from Don Iohn, how he found himſelfe greeued with the Prince of Orenge, for that (as he affirmed) the ſaid Prince did not obſerue the ſaid pacification, her Maieſtie did immediatlie diſpatch an expreſſe meſſenger vnto the ſaid Prince, both to charge him with Don Iohns accuſation, as alſo to aduiſe (and that moſt effectuallie) to obſerue duely the ſaid pacification, vſing towards him ſome threats in caſe he ſhould ſeeke to violate the ſame, wherein ſhe could find no

other

other disposition, but that he was most desirous to keepe all the parts of the said pacification, as the onely meane of the ending of the long ciuill warre. The like aduise did she also giue to the States, receiuing no lesse contentment of the pacification, being ratified first by Don Iohn, and then afterwards by the King, then they to whom the benefite thereof did most properlie and peculiarly appertaine. Her Maiesties proceedings and dealings with the Prince and States hauing bene such as hath bene before alleadged and deduced, she doth appeale to the King himselfe, who she thinketh will truely and fully looke into the truth of the matter, and also to all others that shall not be transported with passion, whether the said proceedings are not to be maintained to be both iust and honourable, whatsoeuer hath bene maliciously giuen out to the contrarie. And herein hir Maiestie is perswaded, that hardly any other Prince that hath some waies bene so vnfriendly dealt withall, and found so little account made of her aduises giuen both to the King and to his gouernours of those countries, would haue dealt in such friendly sort as she hath done: notwithstanding the said discouragements, her Maiestie thinketh it honourable for her, and meete for the place she holdeth, being the ancients allie that the Kings progenitors as Dukes of Burgundy haue, to continue still her former course in giuing friendly counsell vnto the King, can not but proceede to the second point aboue mentioned, which is to yeeld her aduise, what way in her opinion, is to be taken for the appeasing of the present troubles, and the continuing of them vnder his obedience.

First, it is apparant that the pacification is broken, and as great hostilitie intended on both sides as may be, whereof she is heartily sorie: the end, if it go on, will be an vtter desolation of the countries, or the losse or alteration of them from the kings obedience, for helpe whereof her maiestie thinketh the best and expedientest remedies to be, that it would please him to receiue his subiects to his grace and fauour, that he would permit them to continue in their auncient liberties & charters, that he would commaund the due and iust execution of the pacification, and that he would appoint such a gouernour of his owne bloud, as might like him and be gratefull to them, whereby they with great contentation might yeeld to him all due obedience, continue in their religion according to his pleasure, and do all things accorded in the pacification: which by reason of the great distrust growne on both sides, betweene Don Iohn and them, can neuer take effect, so long as Don Iohn shall remaine gouernor, for it seemeth they haue put on a determination, that rather then they will endure ỹ hard dealing which they think themselues assured they shall receiue by his gouernment, they will throw themselues into the protection of any other prince. They charge him with the breach of the pacification: he on the other side offereth to stand to his iustification, charging them with the said breach. Her Maiestie hauing heard the allegations of the ministers sent hither, both from Don Iohn, and the States, meaneth not to be a iudge betweene thẽ, hauing rather a greater desire to reconcile thẽ if she could, & to do them both good, thã to discourse the faults & blemishes of either party. To reconcile thẽ she findeth it impossible, and therefore for the stay of the troubles and of these mischiefes that otherwise are like to ensue, the onely way of remedie will be to make

choise of some other tied to him by proximitie of blood to be substituted vnder him in that gouernment, by which temperate course the troubles may well be appeased, the great effusion of blood auoyded, and the countries continued vnder his obedience, which otherwise are like to be alienated from him. If he shall like to follow this aduise, she seeth no disposition in the people to change their king, being dutifully minded towards him, with intention (in this behalfe they may be reckoned) to innouate nothing, but to maintaine, and duly obserue the late pacification made at Gaunt.

And like as for the contentment of the States and the appeasing of the troubles she wisheth Don Iohns reuocation: so considering how euill affected he sheweth himselfe toward her, aswell by letters intercepted, as by secret practises and dealings with the Queene of Scots, a matter very dangerous to the good quiet of her state, as the bearer can more amplie informe him touching diuerse particularities in this behalfe: she can not but in respect of the continuance of the good amitie which she wisheth to be betweene the King and her Maiestie, be the more earnest to presse the King therein, looking for no continuance of good amitie and good neighbourhood, so long as a minister so euill affected towards her shall reside there, and being desirous that such ministers might be imployed on both sides, as would desire rather to increase the amitie than to hinder it.

This her aduise tending to none other end, but to preserue those countries vnder her obedience, and the continuance of good amitie betweene them, she hopeth the King will accept in no lesse friendly part then it is by her sinceritie meant. And in the meane time vntill his minde be knowne in this behalfe, her maiestie fearing the great forces prepared by Don Iohn, with the assistance of the French already marching towards him, will driue her auncient friends the states of the low countries, to the one of these two extremities: either to be ouercome by forraine forces, and so endangered to forraine seruitude: or else constrained for the withstanding thereof to giue themselues ouer to some other prince, both which can not but be perillous to the king presently, dangerous to her Maiestie hereafter, and an vtter destruction to the whole countrey. Her highnes therefore for the benefit of the said King, & the auoyding of her owne perill (vpon promises and assurance giuen by the said states, to yeeld the king his due obedience, & make no further innouation in matters of religion, but to obserue the pacificatiõ of Gaunt) hath promised for the causes & respects aboue mentioned, to yeeld them a support of money and men, onely to stay them from further danger of alienation, or else their ruine.

Which proceedings of hers, if the King shall not be induced to like of, whereby her Maiestie shall discouer that his intention is by force of armes to alter and dissolue the ancient forme of gouernment, and by taking away their ancient lawes and liberties, to make it a land of conquest, and to people it with garrisons of men of warre. And that the end and scope of his intention should tend to that which is discouered by Escouedoes letters, wherein he writeth that the enterprise of England is of more facility then the enterprise of the Iles, whereby her Maiestie shal perceiue the disposition of so ill a neighbour to her and her royall estate, then her Maiesties resolution is to employ all the power she shall be able to make for the defence of her neighbours, and preseruation of her owne estate.

Is

As on the contrary side, if he shall encline to their reasonable demand in giuing them such a gouernor as they can better like of, then of Don Iohn, and they notwithstanding shall go on in disobedience against him, & make other innouations contrary to the promises they haue giuen and professed to her, she will turne her force against them, and in assistance of the king yeeld him the best ayde she can to bring them to reason and conformitie. And in the meane season, vntill she may be throughly enformed hereof, she hath thought good, for auoyding of effusion of christian blood, and for many other good and necessary respects, to deale both with Don Iohn and the States for a surceance of armes. which if he shall refuse to yeeld vnto, and the States shall be willing, because she seeth it manifestly, that it concerneth the Kings honor, and profite of his countrey, she will not cease to go on with like offices towards them, as she hath begun. Thereby onely to defend them from forraine tyrannie, to keepe them in the kings obedience from alienating themselues to any other potentate, and to defend her selfe and her dominions from the perils that thereby she seeth manifestly to ensue. This declaration in Latine was sent to the King of Spaine, by maister Wilkes the 20. of December. Anno 1577.

The seuenteenth day of Ianuarie, Simon Pembrooke dwelling in Southwarke, being a figure flinger, and vehemently suspected to be a coniurer, by commandement of the ordinarie Iudge of those parts, appeared in the parish Church of Saint Sauiour, at a court holden there, which Simon being busied in entertaining a Proctor, and hauing money in his hand, leaned his head vpon a pewe, wherein the proctor stood: which after he had done a certaine space, the proctor began to lift vp his head, to see what he ayled, and found him departing out of life, and straightway the said Simon fell downe ratling a little in the throat, and neuer spake word after: this was done euen as the Iudge came into the church, who said it was the iust iudgement of God towards those that vsed sorcerie, and a great example to admonish other to feare the iustice of God. After his clothes being opened, there were found about him fiue diuelish Bookes of coniuration and most abhominable practises, with a picture of tinne of a man hauing three dice in his hand, with this writing, Chaunce Dice fortunately, and diuerse papers of such like matters, as he had dealt in for men, such as are mentioned in Leuiticus the twentieth Chapter and the first verse: If any soule turne himselfe after such as worke with spirits, and after soothsayers, to go a whooring after them (saith the Lord,) I will put my face against that soule, and will cut him off from among my people. 1578. Example of sorcerers. Leuit. ca. 20.

The third of Februarie, early in the morning Iohn Nelson, for denying the Queenes supremacie, and such other traiterous words against her maiestie, was drawne from Newgate to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered. Nelson executed.

The 7. of Februarie, one named Sherewood was drawne from the Tower of London to Tyborne, & there hanged, bowelled & quartered for the like treason. Sherewood executed.

The ninth of March, seauen Pyrates were hanged at Wapping. Pirates hanged.

The fifteenth of Februarie, Iohn de Loy a Frenchman, and fiue English Gentlemen, were conueyed from the Tower of London toward Norwich, there to be arraigned and executed, for coyning of money counterfeit. Counterfeiters of coine.

The tenth of March deceased the Lady Margaret countesse of Leunor, and was honorably buried at Westminster the third of Aprill. Lady Leunox deceased.

Frobishers third voyage

The 31. of May, Martin Frobisher with 15. saile of good ships, manned, victualled, & other waies well appointed departed from Harwich in Essex, on his 3. voyage towards Cataya. And on the 31. of July, after many attempts, & sundry times being put backe by Ilands of ice in his streights, he recouered his long wished port, & came to anchor in the Ilands, newly by her maiesty named Meta Incognita, where (as in the yeare before) they fraught their ships with the like pretended Gold ore out of the mines, & then on the last of August returning thence, arriued safely in England about the first of October, but their Gold ore after great charges prooued worse then good stone, whereby many men were deceiued, to their vtter vndoings.

An. reg. 21.

Cassimere receiued.

The 22. of January, about 7. of the clocke at night, Iohn Cassimere Count Palatine of Rhene, duke of Bauare, landed at the Tower of London, was there by diuerse noblemen and others honourably receiued, and conueyed by cresset light, and torch light to sir Thomas Greshams house in Bishops gate streete, where he was receiued with sounding of trumpets, drums, fifes and other instruments of musicke, and there both lodged and feasted till Sunday next, that he was by the nobility fetched to the court at Westminster, where he talked with her maiesty, and after lodged in Sommerset house. In the weeke following, he hunted at Hampton court. On Sonday the first of February, he beheld a valiant Iusting and running at the Tilt at Westminster: on the next morrow he saw them fight at barriers with swords on horsebacke. On Tuesday he dined with the Lord Maior of London: On Wednesday with the Dutches of Suffolke, at her house called the Burgokening or Barbicane, by red crosse streete: On Thursday at the Stilyard, &c. On the 8. of February, the queene made him knight of the garter, by deliuering to him the collar, and putting the garter on his leg at White hall: and on the 14. of February, he departed from London homewards, with great rewards giuen by the queenes maiesty, the nobility, men of honor, the maior of London, and the citizens of that city.

Deepe snow.

The 4. of February, and in the night following, fell such abundance of snow, that on the first in the morning, the same was found at London to lye two foote deepe in the Hallowes, and otherwise, being driuen by the wind, very boysterous in the Northeast, on bankes, an ell or yard and halfe deepe, in the which drifts of snow in the countries, many cattell, and some men and women were ouerwhelmed and lost: it snowed till the 8. day, and freezed till the tenth. Then followed a thaw with continuall raine a long time after, which caused such high flouds, that the marshes & low grounds being drowned for the time, the water rose so high in Westminster hall, & after the fall thereof, some fishes were found there to remaine.

Great land water flouds.

Lord keeper deceased.

The 20. of February, deceased sir Nicholas Bacon, lord keeper of the great seale of England, who was honorably buried vnder a sumptuous monument or tombe (by him in his life time erected) in Paules church of London the 9. of March. He also in his life time gaue for 6. schollers, to be found in Benet Colledge at Cambridge, to each of them 3. l. 6. s. and 8. d. the yeare for euer.

The 24. of Aprill, fell such a snow betwixt the houres of foure of the clocke in the morning, and nine of the clocke before noone, that at London some was found to lye almost one foote deepe.

The

The 25. of Aprill, sir Thomas Bromley, knight, was made lord Chancelor of England. Sir Thomas Bromley L. Chancelor.

The 26. of Aprill, William Kympton Alderman of London was by the lord Chancelor sent to the fleete, about a letter late by him received, from the Vicar of Hadley in Middlesex beside Barnet. This letter amongst other matters mentioned of a pale pulled downe at Northall, by the commons there, &c. for concealing of which letter the said Alderman was committed as aforesaid. And on the 15. of May, was in the Starred chamber condemned to pay 500. marks fine, and to remaine prisoner at the pleasure of her maiestie. Alderman Kympton committed to the fleete.

The 4. of May, were arraigned at Barnet in Hartfordshire, certaine men of Northall, Wyms, and the parts neere adioyning, for pulling downe a pale at Northall, late set vp (on the common ground) by the Earle of Warwike, eight of them were condemned, two were brent in the hand, two were hanged betwixt Barnet & Whetstone, the other foure condemned remained prisoners in Hartford Gaole long after, many were bound to appeare at the next sise, & such as could not put in baile for their appearing were committed, &c. Mathew Hamont of Hethersset, by his trade a plowgh wright, three miles from Norwich, was conuented before the bishop of Norwich, for y he denied Christ to be our Sauiour. At the time of his appearance it was obiected, that he had published these heresies following. Men hanged at Barnet for a riot made at Northall. An heretike brent at Norwich.

That the new Testament and Gospell of Christ are but meere foolishnesse, a storie of men, or rather a meere fable.

Item, that man is restored to grace by the meere mercie of God, without the meane of Christs blood, death and passion.

Item, that Christ is not God, nor the Sauiour of the world, but a meere man, a sinfull man, and an abhominable Idoll.

Item, that all they that worship him are abhominable Idolaters: And, that Christ did not rise againe from death to life by the power of his Godhead, neither, that he did ascend into heauen.

Item, that the holy ghost is not God, neither that there is any such holy ghost.

Item, that baptisme is not necessarie in the Church of God, neither the vse of the Sacrament of the body and blood of Christ. For the which heresies, he was condemned in the consistorie, and sentence was read against him by the bishop of Norwich, the 14. of Aprill, and thereupon deliuered to the Sheriffes of Norwich, and because he spake words of blasphemie against the Queenes maiestie, and others of her counsell, he was by the Recorder maister Sergeant Windham, and the Maior sir Robert Wood of Norwich, condemned to lose both his eares, which were cut off the thirteenth of May in the market place of Norwich, where he confirmed his blasphemous speeches against our Sauiour Iesus Christ. for the which on the twentith of May he was brent in the castell ditch of Norwich.

The first of June, deceased Robert Horne Doctor of Diuinitie, Bishop of Winchester at Winchester place in Southwarke, & was buried at Winchester. Bishop of Winchester deceased.

The 17. of July, the Queenes maiestie, being on the riuer of Thamis, betwixt her highnesse Mannour of Greenewich and Detford, in her princie barge, accompanied with the French Ambassador, the earle of Lincolne, & maister Vicechamberlaine, &c. with whom she entred discourse about weightie affaires: it chanced, that Traiterous fact of Thomas Appletree.

one

one Thomas Appletree a young man and ſeruant to maiſter Henry Cary, with two or three children of her Maieſties chappell, and one other being in a boate on the Thamis, rowing vp and downe betwixt the places afore named, the afore-ſayd Thomas Appletree had a caliuer or harquebuze, which he had three or foure times diſcharged with bullet, ſhooting at random very raſhly, who by great miſfortune ſhot one of the watermen, being the ſecond man next vnto the bales of the ſayd barge, laboring with his oare (which ſate within fiue foote of her highneſſe) cleane through both his armes: the blow was ſo great and grieuous, that it mooued him out of his place, and forced him to cry and ſcritch out pitcouſly, ſuppoſing himſelfe to be ſlaine, and ſaying he was ſhot through the body. The man bleeding abundantly, the queenes maieſty ſhewed ſuch noble courage as is moſt wonderfull to be heard and ſpoken of, for beholding him ſo maimed, ſhe neuer bayſhed thereat, but bad him be of good cheere, and ſayd he ſhould want nothing that might be for his eaſe, &c. For the which fact the ſayd Thomas being apprehended, and condemned to death: was on the 21. of July brought to the water ſide, where was a gibbet ſet vp, directly placed betweene Detford and Greenewich, & when the hangman had put the rope about his necke, he was by the queenes moſt gracious pardon deliuered from execution.

Iohn Fox priſoner in Turky.

This yeare Iohn Fox of Woodbridge, William Wickney of Portſmouth, and Robert More of Harwich Engliſhmen, hauing bene priſoners in Turky about the ſpace of thirteene or fourteene yeares with more then two hundred and ſixtie other Chriſtians of diuerſe nations, by killing their keeper, marueilouſly eſcaped, and returned to their natiue countries.

Flouds.

In September and October fell great winds and raging flouds in ſundry places of this realme, wherethrough many men, cattell, and houſes were drowned. In the towne of Newport the cottages were borne downe, the corne loſt, paſture ground ouerwhelmed, and cattell drowned. In the towne of Bedford the water came vp to the market place, where cupbords, cheſts, ſtooles and fourmes ſwam about the houſes, their fewell, corne and hay was wrackt and borne away. Alſo the towne of Saint Edes in Huntingtonſhire was ouerflowne ſuddenly in the night, when all men were at reſt, the waters brake in with ſuch a force, that the towne was almoſt all defaced, the ſwans ſwam downe the market place, and all the towne about, the boats did floate. Gormanchester was ſuddenly ſurpriſed, their houſes flowen full of water when men were at their reſt, their cattell were deſtroyed: about the 14. of October, the ſea did ſwell, the marchãts loſt their goods, many were drowned, which were after found in great numbers.

An. reg. 22. Sir Thomas Greſham deceaſed.

On Saturday the 21. of November, ſir Thomas Greſham knight Agent to the queenes highneſſe (who had in his life time builded the Royall Exchange in London, as is afore ſhewed) deceaſed at his houſe in Biſhops gate ſtreete of London, and was buried in the pariſh church of ſaint Ellen there. By his laſt will and teſtament, dated *An.* 1579. he gaue to 100. poore men, ſo many blacke gownes of 6. s. 8. d. the yard, to 100. poore women the like gownes at the day of his buriall. The Royall Exchange and all the buildings thereto belonging, the one moyty to the maior and communalty of London and their ſucceſſors for 50. yeares, vpon truſt that they do performe, as ſhall be declared, & the other moyty to the mercers for

for 50. yeares in like confidence. The maior and communalty to find 4. to reade lectures, of Diuinity, Astronomy, Musike, and Geometry, within his dwelling house which he gaue for that purpose) in Bishops gate streete, the sum of 50. l. the peece. More 53. l. 6. s. 8. d. vnto 8. almes mens in his 8. almes houses in the parish of S. Peter the poore, to euer each 6. l. 13. s. 4. d. To the prisoners in Newgate, Ludgate, Kings bench, Marshalsea, and the counter in Woodstreet 50. l. to wit, to each 10. l. The Mercers to find 2. men to reade lectures of Law, Phisicke, and Rhetorike, within the same his dwelling house of S. Ellen in Bishops gate street, the sum of 150. l. to wit, to euery reader 50. l. More 100. l. for a dinner 4. times in ỹ yeare, to the whole cõpany in ỹ mercers hall, for euery dinner 25. l. And more, 50. l. to the hospitals of Christ church, S. Bartholomews, S. Thomas, Bedlem, & the Counter in the Poultry, to each yearely 10 l. And in the said 50. yeares to procure licence, which he trusted would not be denied, considering the goodnesse of the suite, and then to haue all the Exchange, Pawne, and house with the appurtenances for euer.

Henry Fits Allen (the last of that name) earle of Arondale, deceased on the 24. of February, and was buried at Arondale on the 22. of March.

On the 28. of March, Francis *alias* Marmaduke Glouer was hanged on a gibbet set vp for that purpose, by the Standard in Cheape, for willingly murdering sergeant Grace, after he was by him arrested. 1580. One hanged in Cheape for murder.

The 6. of Aprill being Wednesday in Easter weeke, about 6. of the clocke toward euening, a sudde earthquake hapning in Londõ, & almost generally throughout England, caused such amazednes of the people as was wõderfull for the time, & caused them to make their earnest praiers vnto almighty God. The great clocke bell in the palace at Westminster, strake of it selfe against the hammer with shaking, as diuers clockes & bels in the city & elsewhere did the like: the gentlemen of the Temple being at supper, ran from the tables, and out of their hall with their knifes in their hands, a peece of the Temple church fell downe, some stones fel frõ Pauls church: And at Christs church in the sermon while a stone fell from the top of the church, which killed out of hand one Thomas Grey an apprentice, & another stone also bruised his fellow seruant named Mabell Euered, so that she liued but 4. dayes after: diuerse other were sore hurt with running out of the church: diuerse chimnies in the city, part of thẽ fell downe, the houses were so shaken. The earthquake continued, in or about London not passing one minute of an houre, & was no more felt: but eastward in Kent and on the sea coast it was felt three times: as at Sandwich at fiue of the clocke, the land not onely quaked, but the sea so foamed, that the ships tottered. At Douer also at the same houre was the like, so that a peece of the cliffe fell into the sea, with also a peece of ỹ castle wall there: a peece of Saltwood castle in Kent fell downe, and in the Church of Hide the bels were heard to sound. A peece of Sutton church in Kent fell downe, the earthquake being there both heard and felt. And in all these places and other in east Kent, the same was felt three times to moone, to wit, at fiue, at nine, and at eleuen of the clocke. Earthquake.

The 19 of Aprill the ferry at Lambeth was drowned with fiue men & foure horses, other two men and fiue horses swam to land, and were saued. Ferry at Lambeth drowned.

The first of May, after 12. of the clocke in the night, was an earthquake felt in diuerse Earthquake in Kent.

diuerſe places of Kent, namely at Aſhford, great Chart, &c. which made the people there to riſe out of their beds, and run to the churches, where they called vpon God, by earneſt prayers to be mercifull vnto them.

This yeare were many monſtrous births, and ſtrange ſights to be ſeene, which I ouerpaſſe in this place, for that I haue partly touched them in my ſummaries.

Francis Drake his voyage roũd about the world.

Alſo this yeare maiſter Francis Drake returned into England, hauing ſailed round about the woꝛld (as is affirmed) thus it was begun: on the 13. of December, in the yeare of Chriſt 1577. he ſet ſaile from Plimoth with a fleete of 5. ſhips, to wit, the Pelicane admirall, the Marigold, the Elizabeth, barke Benedict, and a pinnace) he fell with the cape Canbine on the coaſt of Barbary the 25. of ỹ ſame moneth, and ſo coaſting along, the 27. of December found an Iland called Mogadoꝛ, lying one mile diſtant from the maine: in this Iland the generall erected a pinnace, which he had with three other brought ready framed out of England, which being finiſhed he departed the laſt of December. On the 17. of January he arriued at cape Blank, & left the ſame on ỹ 22. of that moneth, & on the 27. fell with cape de Uerde: on the 30. of January he fell with an Iland called Saint Iago: hauing put off cape de Uerde in the beginning of Febꝛuary, they ſaw no moꝛe land vntill the firſt of Aprill 1578. that they fell with the coaſt of Braſill, in the latitude of 33. degrees beyond the line, and with much ado entred the riuer of Plate: from whence departing he fell with the ſtraite of Magelan the 20. of Auguſt, and paſſed through with three ſhips onely, hauing caſt off the other two as impediments, where, after they had bene toſſed many daies to and fro, in the night the firſt of October the Marigold, wherein maiſter Iohn Thomas was captaine, parted from the generall, and was no moꝛe heard of. And ſhoꝛtly after, the other wherein maiſter Iohn Winter was captaine parted alſo, who hauing loſt his company, came home againe through the ſtraites. The golden Hind (oꝛ Pelicane I thinke) held on her courſe to Chily, Lima, Coquimbo, Arica, Panama, & ſo all along the backe ſide of America to the line-ward, and paſſed the line the firſt day of March, and the fifteenth of March being on land at the Ile of Caones, he paſſed foꝛth noꝛth-ward till he came to the latitude of foꝛty ſeuen, thinking to haue come that way home: but being conſtrained by fogges and cold winds to foꝛſake his purpoſe, came backeward to the line-ward the tenth of June 1579 and ſtayed in the latitude of thirty eight to graue and trim his ſhip, vntill the fiue and twenty of July: and from thence ſetting his courſe ſouthweſt, he fell the third of October with an Ile 8. degrees from the line noꝛthward, and the 4. of November he fell with Ternate one of the Iles of Moluca, where being curteouſly entertained of the king, he tooke in certaine ton of cloues, and came homeward to a little Iland, where he ſtayed to trim his ſhip 26. daies, where he furniſhed himſelfe with wood, and erected a ſmiths foꝛge foꝛ to make ſuch yꝛon woꝛke as was needfull foꝛ the repairing of his ſhip: and from thence the 12. of December he went toward Malaca, but not able to continue his courſe weſtward foꝛ the wind, was conſtrained to recouer the noꝛth of the Iles of Celebes: after this, the ninth of January comming towards Iaua *maior* they ran themſelues vpon ground, and ſtucke faſt twenty houres, not looking but foꝛ death, but eſcaping that danger, they continued their courſe ſtill weſt, & came to Iaua *maior* afoꝛenamed, and there touching they bent their courſe ſouthweſt to ỹ cape of Bona Speranca, the after they kept

their course northwest, and fell with the coast of Guinea, from thence bending their course north northwest, they came to the line, and then shaping their course north and by west, they came to the height of Azores, where finding the wind westerly, they came home into England in the yeare 1580. And in the yeare next following, to wit, 1581. on the fourth of Aprill, her maiestie dining at Depeford in Kent, after dinner entred the ship which captaine Drake had so happily guided round about the world, and being there, a bridge that her maiestie had passed ouer, brake, being vpon the same more then 200. persons, and no man hurt by the fall, and there she did make captaine Drake knight in the same ship, for reward of his seruice his armes were giuen him, the world in a ship, which ship by her maiesties commandement is lodged in a docke at Depeford, for a monument to all posterity of that famous and worthy exploite, whereof a worshipfull gentleman maister William Borough in his preface to a booke entituled, A discourse of the variation of the compasse, or magneticall Needle, hath these words: So now at length (saith he) our countriman sir Francis Drake, for valorous attempt, prudent proceeding, and fortunate performing his voyage about the world, is not onely become equall to any of them that liue, but in fame farre surpassing.

Sir Francis Drake knighted, and his commendation.

On the tenth of October (some say on the seuenth) appeared a blazing star in the south, bushing toward the east, which was nightly seene diminishing of his brightnesse vntill the 21. of the same moneth.

Blazing starre.

The 17. day of October were made eight sergeants at law, to wit, first William Fleetwood Recorder of London, the second, Edward Flowerdew, the third, Thomas Snagge, the fourth, William Periam, the fift, Robert Halton, the sixt, Iohn Clench, the seuenth, Iohn Puckering, the eight, Thomas Walmesley, maister Snagge was sicke, and therefore had a writ directed to two maisters of the chancery to take his oath, and so was sworne in his chamber at Greys Inne, the other seuen were sworne at Westminster, and held their feast in the new Temple at London.

Sergeants feast.

The 9. of October proclamation was published at London, for the apprehension and seuere punishing of all persons suspected to be of the family of loue.

Proclamation against the family of loue.

There arriued vpon the west coast of Ireland, certaine companies of Italians and Spaniards, sent by the Pope to the ayde of the earle of Desmond in his rebellion, which fortified themselues strongly neare Smerwicke, in a fort which they call Castle del oze, there erecting the popes banner against her maiestie, which when the lord Grey of Wilton deputy of Ireland vnderstood, he marched thitherward, & the 6. of November hearing of the arriuall of the Swiftshure, the Tigar, the Aide, the Merlion, and other of the queenes maiesties ships, and also of three barkes fraughted from Limozike and Korke with victuals, on the morrow after marched towards the fort, vnto the which he gaue so hote an assault, that on the ninth of November the same was yeelded. all the Irish men and women hanged, and more then foure hundred Spaniards, Italians, & Biscayes put to the sword, the colonell, captaines, secretary and other (to the number of twenty) saued for ransome. In which fortresse was found good store of money, bisket, bacon, oile, wine, and diuerse other prouisions of victuall, sufficient for their company for halfe a yeare, beside armor, powder, shot, & other furniture for 2000. men and vpwards.

Victory against the Irish and other in Ireland.

The

An. reg. 23. Randal hanged for conjuring.

The 28. of November, were arraigned in the kings bench, William Randall, for coniuring to know where treasure was hid in the earth, and goods feloniously taken were become, Tho. Elkes, Thomas Lupton, Ralfe Spacy, & Christopher Waddington, for being present: Randall, Elkes, Spacie and Waddington were found guiltie, and had iudgement to be hanged, Randall was executed, the other were reprieued.

1581. Proclamation against Iesuites.

About the twelfth of Januarie, proclamation was published at London, for the reuocation of sundry the Queenes maiesties subiectes remaining beyond the seas, vnder colour of study, and yet liuing contrarie to the lawes of God and of the realme. And also against the retaining of Iesuites and massing priests, fowers of sedition, and other treasonable attempts, &c.

Iusting at Westminster

Parliament at Westminster.

The 16. day of Januarie, the lords & barons of this realme began to sit in the parliament house at Westminster: and on the twentieth day of Januarie the Queenes maiestie went from White hall to the parliament house by water. Whereas a great challenge of iustes was signified by way of deuise before her maiestie on Twelfe night last past, to haue bene performed the fifteenth day of Januarie, her maiesties pleasure was, for diuers considerations the same should be deferred vntill the two and twentieth day of the same moneth: on the which day the same was most courageously accomplished in the accustomed place at Westminster, where many staues were broken, but through the great concourse of people thither repairing, many of the beholders, as well men as women, were sore hurt, some maimed, and some killed by falling of the scaffolds ouercharged.

Mice deuour the grasse in Daneley.

About Hallontide last past, in the marishes of Daneley Hundred, in a place called Southminster in the countie of Essex, a strange thing hapned: there sodainlie appeared an infinite multitude of mice, which ouerwhelming the whole earth in the said marishes, did sheare and gnaw the grasse by the roots, spoyling and tainting the same with their venimous teeth, in such sort, that the cattell which grazed thereon were smitten with a murreine, and died thereof, which vermine by policie of man could not be destroyed, till at the last it came to passe that there flocked together all about the same marishes, such a number of owles, as all the shire was not able to yeeld: whereby the marsh-holders were shortly deliuered from the vexation of the said mice.

Banqueting house at Westminster

This yeere (against the comming of certaine ambassadors out of France) by her maiesties appointment, on the fift and twentith day of March in the morning (being Easter day) a banquetting house was begun at Westminster, on the southwest side of her maiesties palace of White hall, made in manner and forme of a long square, 332. in measure about, 30. principals made of great masts, being 40. foote in length a peece, standing vpright, betweene euery one of the masts, ten foote asunder and more, the wals of this house were closed with canuas, and painted all the outsides of the same most artificially, with a worke called rustike much like stone. This house had two hundred, ninetie and two lights of glasse. The sides within the same house was made with x. heights of degrees for people to stand vpon: and the top of this house was wrought most cunningly vpon canuas worke of iuie and holly, with pendants made of wickar roddes, and garnished with

with Bay, Rue, & all maner of strange floures garnished with spangles of gold, as also beautified with hanging toleans made of hollie and iuie, with all maner of strange fruits, as pomegranates, orenges, pompions, cucumbers, grapes, with such like spangled with gold and most richly hanged: betwixt these workes of baies and iuie were great spaces of canuas, which was most cunningly painted, the clouds with starres, the sunne and sun-beames, with diuerse other coats of sundry sorts belonging to the queenes maiestie, most richly garnished with gold. There were of all maner of persons working on this house, to the number of 175. two men had mischances, the one broke his legge and so did the other. This house was made in three weekes and three dayes, and was ended the 18. of Aprill, and cost 1744. l. 19. s. &c.

On the 16. day of Aprill, arriued at Douer these noblemen of Fraunce (commissioners from the French king to her maiestie) Francis Burbon prince Dolphine of Auergne, Arthur Collaie marshall of Fraunce, Lodowic Lutignian lord of Lancoc, Trauergins Caercongin county of Tillir, Bertrand Salingurons lord Mothfenelon, monsieur Manaissour, Barnabie Brissen president of the parliament of Paris, Claude Pinart, monsieur Marchemont, monsieur Veraie, these came from Grauelend by water to London, where they were honourably receiued and entertained, and shortly after being accompanied of the nobility of England, they repaired to the court, and banqueting house prepared for them at Westminster, as is aforesayd, where her maiestie receiued them, and afterward in that place most royally feasted and banqueted them. Also the nobles and gentlemen of the court desirous to shew them all curtesie possible, prepared a triumph in most sumptuous order, vpon Whitson monday and tuesday: the chiefe chalengers of which attempts were, the earle of Arundell, Frederike Lord Windsore, Philip Sidney, Foulke Grinell, and other: the defendants to the number of one and twenty, all which of them ranne fiue courses against the former challengers, who performed their parts valiantly. On the tuesday they went to the tourney, where they did very nobly, and after that to the barriers, whereat they fought courageously, &c. as more at large I haue set downe, in the continuance of Reine Woolfes Chronicle.

Noblemen of France arriued in England.

Iusting, turneying and barriers.

The one and twenty of June in the night, certaine young men, drawing ropes thwart the streete, on both sides the crosse in Cheape, to stop the passage, did then fasten ropes about the lowest Images of the sayd crosse, attempting by force to haue plucked them downe, which when they could not do, they plucked the picture of Christ out of his mothers lap, whereon he sate, and otherwise defaced her, and the other Images by striking off their armes. Whereupon proclamation was made, that who so would bewray the doers should haue forty crownes. But nothing came to light, for euery one of them kept others counsell, till their dying dayes.

Crosse in Cheape defaced.

Thomas Butcher brewer (for that he & others on the 27. of June had congregated themselues in west Smithfield of London, and in other places in maner of rebellion) was on the 30. of June whipped from Newgate to west Smithfield, and was there reuiued, taken from the bedles, and sent away to shift for himselfe:

Men whipped, and set on the pillory.

for

for the which last on the 21. of July, other foure, to wit, three shomakers and a brewer, were whipped from Newgate to the middest of west Smithfield, and there set on the pillorie, whereon they stood from ten till twelue of the clocke.

Bishop of Ely deceased

The thirteenth of July, Richard Coxe Doctor of Diuinitie, sometime schoolemaister to king Edward the first, deane of Westminster, and of Christs colledge in Oxford, and since bishop of Elie, deceased and was buried at Elie.

Two men of strange statures.

This yeare were to be seene in London, two Duchmen of strange statures, the one in height seuen foot and seuen inches, in breadth betwixt the shoulders three quarters of a yard and an inch, the compasse of his breast one yard and halfe, and two inches: and about the wast, one yard, quarter, and one inch, the length of his arme to the hand a full yard: a comely man of person, but lame of his legges (for he had broken them with lifting of a barrell of beere.) The other was in height but three foot, had neuer a good foot, nor any knee at all, and yet could he daunce a galliard, he had no arme, but a stumpe to the elbow or little more on the right side, on the which singing, he would daunce a cup, and after tosse it about three or foure times, and euery time receiue the same on the said stumpe: he would shoote an arrow neare to the marke, flourish with a rapier, throw a bowle, beate with a hammer, hew with an axe, sound a trumpet, and drinke euery day ten quarts of the best beere if he could get it. In my sight on the seuenteenth of July saw the taller man sitting on a bench bareheaded, and the lesser standing on the same bench, and hauing on his head a hat with a feather, was yet the lower. Also the taller man standing on his feete, the lesser (with his hat and feather on his head) went vpright betweene his legs and touched him not.

Euerard Haunce arraigned and executed.

The eighteenth of July, Euerard Haunce a seminarie priest, was in the sessions hall in the old Baily arraigned, where he affirmed that himselfe was subiect to the Pope in ecclesiasticall causes, and that the Pope hath now ỳ same authoritie here in England that he had an hundred yeres past, with other trayterous speeches, for the which he was condemned to be drawne, hanged, bowelled and quartered, and was executed accordingly on the last of July.

Prisoners arraigned for not comming to church.

At the same sessions were brought from the Fleete, the Gate-house at Westminster, Newgate of London, and the Counters, sundrie prisoners indicted for refusing to come to the church, all which being conuicted by their owne confession, had iudgement accordingly to pay twentie pounds for euery moneth of such their wilfull absence from the church.

Iohn Stubs and William Page lost their hands.

The thirtieth of October were arraigned at Westminster hall Iohn Stubbes, Hugh Singleton, and William Page, these were all three condemned to lose their right hands, for writing, printing, and dispersing a libell, which they entituled, the Gaping Gulph, against monsieur Francis Duke of Aniow the French kings brother. And on the third day of November they were all led to Westminster, where Iohn Stubs, and William Page lost their hands by chopping off, but Hugh Singleton had his pardon.

Monsieur D. of Aniow.

The first of November, monsieur Francis Duke of Aniow, the French kings brother, and other nobles of Fraunce (hauing lately arriued in Kent) came to London, and were honorably receiued, and retained at the court with banquetting and diuerse pleasant shewes and pastimes, &c.

An. reg. 24.

On

On the 20. of November, Edmond Campion Iesuit, Ralfe Sherwine, Lucas Kerbie, Edward Rishton, Thomas Cotcham, Henrie Orton, Robert Johnson & James Bosgraue, were brought to the high bar at Westminster, where they were severally, and al together indicted vpon high treason, for that contrary both to loue & duty, they forsooke their native country, to liue beyond the seas vnder the Popes obedience, as at Rome, Rhemes, and diuers other places, where (the Pope hauing with other princes practised the death and deprivation of our most gracious princesse, and vtter subuersion of her state and kingdome, to aduance his most abhominable religion) these men hauing vowed their allegiance to the Pope, to obey him in all causes whatsoeuer, being there, gaue their consent, to aide him in this most traiterous determination. And for this intent & purpose they were sent ouer to seduce the harts of her maiesties louing subiects, and to conspire and practise her graces death, as much as in them lay, against a great day, set and appointed, when the generall hauocke should be made, those onely reserued that ioyned with them. This laid to their charge, they boldly denied, but by a iurie they were approoued guilty, and had iudgement to be hanged, bowelled, and quartered. *Ant. Monday.* Campion and others arraigned.

The first of Desember, Edmond Campion Iesuit, Ralfe Sherwine, and Alexander Brian seminarie priests, were drawne from the Tower of London to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled, & quartered. Looke more in my continuation of Reine Woolfes chronicle. Campion and others executed.

The first of Februarie the Queenes maiestie with her whole court, accompanied the monsieur Francis Duke of Aniow, from Westminster to Canterburie, where, when she had feasted all the French nobilitie, either tooke leaue of other, & her maiestie returned. The 6. of the same month the D. lodged at Sandwich, & on the next morning tooke the sea, being accompanied of the earle of Leicester, the lord Hunsdon, the lord Howard knights of the garter, the lord Willowby, Lord Windsore, L. Sheffield, L. Howard and lord Audley, M. Sidney, sir George Cary, M. Iohn and Robert Carie, all three sonnes of the said Lord of Hunsdon, M. William Howard, brother of the said lord Howard, sir T. Sherley, sir T. Perot, sir Will. Russell, sir Will. Drury and sir George Bowser knights, & a great number of Gentlemen, so as the whole traine that attended on the earle was 100. gentlemen, and moe than 300. seruing men. The lord Hunsdon had of gentlemen and other to the number of 150. and the lord Howard had as many, all which sailed in fifteene ships to Flushing in Zeland, where the prince of Orange, & the States of the low countries receiued the Duke, and our English nobilitie with great ioy, conducting them from thence to Middleborough, & then to Antwerpe, where before the twentith day of the same moneth, the States with great solemnitie created the said Monsieur Duke of Aniow, Duke of Lothar, Brabant, and marquesse of the sacred empire, and prince of the low countries, &c. And our nobilitie returned into England. 1582. Monsieur returneth to the sea. Monsieur created duke of Lothar, Brabant, &c.

Iohn Paine priest, being indicted of high treason for words by him spoken to one Eliot, was arraigned and condemned at Chelmesford on the last of March, and was there executed on the second day of Aprill. Iohn Paine executed at Chelmesford.

The fifteenth of Maie, about ten of the clocke in the night, a blazing star appeared, descending in the northwest, the beard whereof streamed southwest. A blazing starre.

Ant. Monday. Seminaries executed.

On the 28. day of May, Thomas Ford, Iohn Shert, & Robert Iohnson priests, hauing bene before indicted, arraigned, and condemned for high treason intended, as ye haue heard of Campion and other, were drawne from the Tower to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

And on the thirtieth of May, Luke Kirby, William Filby, Thomas Cottam, & Laurence Richardson, were for ẏ like treason in ẏ same place likewise executed.

Philip Price hanged.

The 2. of June, Philip Price was hanged in Fleetstreete of London, for killing a sergeant that had arrested him.

Lord Willoughby ambassador into Denmark.

The fourteenth day of July, Peregrine Bartie lord Willoughby of Erlby appointed Ambassadour to Frederike the king of Denmarke with the garter, embarked at Kingston vpon Hull, and prosperously arriued at Elsmore in Denmark on the twentieth day of the same moneth. On the fourteenth of August the said king receiued the robes of the order, ware the Garter, Collar, and George: and the lord ambassadour returning with his traine, arriued at Brenholme in Norfolke on the twentieth of September. More at large of this and other, I haue set downe in the continuation of maister Reine Woolfes chronicle.

Lecture in Surgerie to be read.

This yeare was first founded a publike lecture in Surgerie to begin to be read in the colledge of Phisitions in Knightriders streete of London, in Anno 1584. on the first of May, and so to be continued twice euery weeke, to wit, wednesday and friday for euer, by the honorable Iohn lord Lomley, and Richard Caldwell doctor of Physicke: the reader whereof to be Richard Forster doctor of Physicke.

Misfortune by gunpowder.

The nineteenth of July, certaine ferkins of gunpowder (to the number of seuen) and as many or more ferkins of Surgeon, laden in a carre vpon Gally key, neare vnto the tower of London, some small portion of the same powder being shed on the ground, the horse in the said carre stroke fire with his foote, and fired all together, wherethrough the Surgeon was blowne out of the carre, some into the Thamis, some elsewhere, one ferkin was driuen through a loamed wall that was boorded ouer, into a house there by. The Crane on the wharfe with the houses neare adioyning were sore broken, many men and horses sore blasted, so that three men and seuen horses died thereof.

Tempest in Norfolke.

The twelfth of August there rose a great tempest of lightning, thunder, whirlwind and raine, with hailestones fashioned like to the rowels of spurres, two or three inches about in the countie of Norfolke, betweene ẏ townes of north Walsham and Worsted (the towne wherein the making of worsted, commonly called Norwich worsted, was first practised and tooke there beginning) which tempest beat the corne flat to the ground, rent vp many great trees, and shiuered them in peeces, or wound them like withs. At Hening, more then a mile from Worsted, the west pore of the church, weighing more then 300. pound waight, was lifted off the hookes, and throwne ouer the font within one yard of the chancell doore, the top of the church was riuen vp, and the lead as it were blowne cleane away, fiue webs of lead were ruffled vp together, like as they had bene clowts of linnen cloth, and blowne into the field without the churchyard. Also at call Ruksen were many barnes blowne downe, and houses vncouered.

An. reg. 25. Terme kept at Hartford.

This yeare Michaelmas terme was reiourned from the Vtas thereof, vntill the fourth returne of the same called Mense Michaelis, & from the said return, vntil the

the returne commonly called Craſtino animarum next enſuing, and then retourned from Weſtminſter to the caſtle of Hartford in Hartfordſhire, there to begin in the ſaid Craſtino animarum, and to be continued till the end of the ſaid terme, which was done accordingly.

This yeare Peter Morris a Dutch man, but a free denilon, hauing made an engine for that purpoſe, conueyed Thamis water in pipes of lead ouer the ſteeple of S. Magnus church, at the north end of London bridge, and ſo into diuers mens houſes in Thamis ſtreete, new Fiſh ſtreete, and Gracſe ſtreete vp vnto the north-weſt corner of Leaden hall (the higheſt ground of the citie of London, where the wall of the firſt maine pipe ran firſt this yeare 1582. on Chriſtmaſſe euen: which maine pipe being ſince at the charges of the citie brought vp into a ſtandard there made for that purpoſe, and diuided into foure ſeuerall ſpoutes, ranne foure waies plentifully ſeruing to the vſe of the inhabitants neare adioyning that will fetch it, and alſo cleanſed the chanels of the ſtreetes north toward Biſhops gate, eaſt towards Aldgate, ſouth towards the bridge, and weſt towards the Stocks market: no doubt a great commoditie to that part of the citie, and would be far greater, if the ſaid water were maintained to run continually, or at the leaſt at euery tide ſome reaſonable quantitie, as at the firſt it did. Thamis water conueyed to the higheſt ground of London.

Now to returne to Monſieur his ſucceſſe after the great dignities, authorities, and titles beſtowed on him, as ye haue partly heard (but is ſet downe at large in a particular treatiſe thereof, which I haue placed in Reine Wooſes chronicle.) Francis of Valois, the kings onely brother, Duke of Lothere, Brabant, Limbourgh, Gelders, Iniow, Alanſon, &c. earle of Flanders, Holland, Zeland, &c. marqueſſe of the ſacred empire, lord of Friſeland, &c. hauing now indifferently well (with his good ſucceſſes had in the victualling and remouing the ſieges of Cambrey and Lochem, and winning the townes of Alaſt and Endonan) gotten the hearts of the people, and by that meanes placed his Frenchmen in Dunkerke, Winerburgh, Dirmide, Dermond, Vilnord, and other places, thought now (vſing young and euill counſell) to make himſelfe a more abſolute Prince, according to the titles giuen him, and not to rule with the aduiſe of the States of the countries. Wherefore hauing come to him out of Fraunce the Marſhall Byron, with great troupes of Swiſſers, and Frenchmen, he now cauſeth them all at one time, to wit, on the ſeuenth of Januarie, to inuade ſo many townes as they could make themſelues maiſters of, which with them tooke effect in the aboue named townes, but at Bruggeſſe they were put out. And at Antwerpe on the ſaid ſeauenth day, vnder the pretence to muſter his army without the towne, vpon the very noone time of the day when the Citizens were at dinner, he cauſeth two gates (as vncertaine by which he would go) to be opened for him, and the chaines ouerthwart the ſtreets to be vnchained, which (for ſome ſuſpion had of the Frenchmen without) were locked: then he iſſued out with all his Court and a great number of gentlemen, very braue, mounted on great horſes aboue 200. many of them being ſecretly armed vnder their garments, and comming to S. Iames gate, at the bridge without met him certaine of his companies of horſemen, and footemen, who ſtaid themſelues on both ſides the way, making as it were a lane for the Duke to paſſe by with a few of his: who being paſt them, made token to Francis de Valois his exploits and ſucceſſe.

The monſieur attempteth againſt the States of Antwerp and was ouerthrowne.

thē with his cap, to inuade ẏ̄ city: whereupō his men killed ẏ̄ watch, with ẏ̄ Colonell Vierendell ẏ̄ stood bare headed, to see their prince passe. Then entred ẏ̄ gate 17. enſignes of footmen, & foure colonels of horſemen, the Swiſſers following, & the duke crying to thē, march, march, *La ville eſt gagnée, mais ne pillons point*, being thus ſtrongly entred they cried, *Ville gagnée, viue la meſſe*, and tooke in on both ſide the Bulwarkes, turned the ordinance towards the city, and came by diuerſe ſtreetes almoſt to the midſt of the city. The citizens at their dinners hearing the alarum, very furiouſly iſſued out, with ſuch weapons as firſt came to their hands, and ſet vpon them, firſt by the by lanes, and other ſome chayned vp the ſtreets, and ſo barred them from going any further. They turne all againſt the ſouldiers that were entred the city with moſt violent ſhot. In the meane ſpace the citizens neare and about the gate with their harquebuſes beſtow their ſmall ſhot as thicke as haile out of windowes vpon the gate, where firſt they killed a horſe, and then diuers men entring, which troubled the other following, ẏ̄ a great number was euen in the very gate killed, & ſo heaped one vpō another that the gate was ſtopped, whereby all that were entred within the city, in leſſe then in one houres ſpace were killed or taken priſoners. Wherein the citizens behaued themſelues ſo valiantly, & ſo manly, that many for lacke of leadē pellets tooke their money out of their purſes, bowed it with their teeth, and put it in ſteed of pellets in their harquebuſes. In this ſkirmiſh of ſo litle ſpace, were ſlaine aboue 1530. Frēch horſmen, and footmen, told at the burying, and more then 2000. priſoners taken, amongſt the which were the earle of Fernaugus, the biſhop of Conſtance, and many other notable perſonages. And amongſt the dead were the earle of S. Agnan, & his ſon, the earle of Chaſteaurouſſe, the ſon of the marſhall of France Biron: monſieur de Saiſonall gouernor of Vilnord, the ſon of the L. Miraubeau, and others. A marueilous act of citizens in their defence without any ſouldiers, againſt old ſouldiers & tried men of armes, and number of ſo great nobility. The prince of Orenge with others had refuſed to go forth, and his danger was not ſmall, with other gentlemen more, and lords of the religion. The prince Dolphin, the earle of Linall and others were with the duke lookers on, and interceſſours for their friends, whom they reckened dead. After that fact, the duke with his campe was forced for lacke of victuals and neceſſaries, to retire him with his army toward Machlin, and from thence with great difficulty, paſſing great waters, with loſſe of many a man, got to Dormond, where he was kept in by the generall Norris, with 23. enſignes Engliſhmen and Scots, ſo that he lacked victuals, and neceſſaries, whereby he was forced, as alſo to haue his priſoners reſtored, to enter into a treaty with the eſtates, to ſurrender all the townes by his men poſſeſſed, and to retire him to Dunkirke: where further with the ſtates, by interceſſion of princes was hoped a reconcilement to be made. But he ſeeing the countrey vnwilling, and finding himſelfe ſicke (though melancholie as was thought) retired from Dunkirke toward Fraunce. And ſo ſoone as he was retired, the Prince of Parma for King Philip, cauſed Dunkirke to be beſieged, few Frenchmen left within it. And as the ſtates generall, and the prince of Orenge would haue ſent thither to reſcue the towne, the marſhall Biron with his Frenchmen and Swiſſers, the Flemings, chiefly they of Gaunt, partly for hatred of the French,

Monſieur ouerthrowne at Antwerp, his Frenchmen ſlaine, and many taken priſoners.

Noblemen of France ſlaine.

Generall Norrice with 23. enſignes.

French, and partly that many now were become Spaniſh, would not ſuffer him to come ouer into Flaunders, whereby Dunkerke was forced to ſurrender: and this loſſe being imputed to the Duke, increaſed his ſickneſſe, ſo that he died at Chaſteau Thierie the 10. of July. Anno 1583. and was royally buried at Paris, and now to our matters at home.

1583
A ſtrange kind of earth mouing in Dorſetſhire.

The thirteenth day of Januarie, in the pariſh of Armitage, in a place called Blackmore in Dorſetſhire, a peece of ground containing three acres, remooued from the place where it was firſt planted, and was carried cleane ouer another cloſe, where Alder and Willow trees grew, the ſpace of foztie goade (euery goad containing 15. foote) and hath ſtopt vp a high way that directed towards the market towne of Cerne, and yet notwithſtanding the hedges wherewith it was incloſed, inuironed it ſtill, and the trees ſtand thereon bolt vpright, ſauing one Oake that is well nigh twenty goads remooued: the place where this ground had his being, is left like vnto a great pit.

Eight perſons killed by the fall of a ſcaffold at the Beare garden.

The ſame 13. day of Januarie being ſonday, about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, the old and vnderpropped ſcaffolds round about the Beare garden, commonly called Paris garden, on the Southſide of the riuer of Thamis ouer againſt the citie of London, ouercharged with people, fell ſuddenly downe, whereby to the number of eight perſons men and women were ſlaine, and many others ſore hurt and bruiſed to the ſhortening of their liues. A friendly warning to ſuch as more delight themſelues in the crueltie of beaſts then in the workes of mercie, the fruits of a true profeſſed faith, which ought to be the ſabboth dates exerciſe.

Wil. Bruiſter and Marie Breame ſmothered to death, though ſome fable to the contrarie.

The third of Februarie being ſonday, William Bruiſter Haberdaſher (a man of more then 60. yeares old) being lodged ouer the ſouthweſt porch of Saint Brides church in Fleetſtreete, with a woman named Mary Breame (whome the ſame Bruiſter had bailed out of Bridewell) were both found ſmouldered to death, in manner as ſhall be ſhewed. On the ſame ſonday in the morning a wedding being celebrated in that church, a ſtrong ſauour was ſmelt, which was thought to be the burning of old ſhoes, or ſuch like in ſome gentlemans chamber neare thereabouts, but in the afternoone before euening prayer, the pariſhioners eſpied a ſmoke to iſſue out of Bruiſters chamber, and thereupon made haſt to his doore, which they found faſt locked on the inſide, and were forced to breake it open, and yet could not enter till they had ripped vp the lead and roofe of the chamber, to let out the ſmouldering ſtench: which being done, they found Bruiſter dead, ſitting on a ſettle by the beds ſide (in his apparell and cloſe truſſed) his right thigh and right arme vp to the elbow burnt with the fire of a ſmall pan of coales that ſtood before him. The woman alſo lay dead ouer the pan, ſo that her armes were burnt, with the neather part of her bodie before to the breaſt, and behind to the ſhoulders, and nothing elſe in the chamber burnt but the bottome of the ſettle whereon Bruiſter ſate. Marie Breame had bene accuſed by her huſband to be a nice woman of her bodie, but her huſband being a bad man, and hauing ſpent faire and large poſſeſſions and all whatſoeuer, hauing but two pence left in his purſe, hung himſelfe on a tree, againſt a ſtone wall at Marten abbey in Surrey about Whitſontide, in Anno 1592.

The 16. of Aprill in the morning, Thomas Worth and Alice Shepheard were

hanged at Shoote lanes end in Fleetſtreete of London, for killing of an apprentiſe in the ſame lane. Alſo the ſame day about eight of the clocke in the morning, a gunpowder houſe in Fetter lane, and diuerſe other houſes neare adioyning were blowne vp, with the ſpoile of 1500. weight of powder, and two men and one woman were ſlaine, and diuerſe other perſons as well men as women and children were ſore hurt, ſome blaſted with the flames, ſome bruiſed with timber that fell vpon them.

Houſes blowne vp with gunpowder.

Albertus Alaſco free baron of Laſco, Vaivoda, or palatine of Siradia in Poland, arriued at Harwich in Eſſex, & on the laſt of Aprill came by water to Winchester houſe in Southwarke, where he remained for ỹ moſt part of his abode here.

Alaſco of Poland.

Elias Thacker was hanged at Saint Edmondſburie in Suffolke on the fourth of June, and Iohn Coping on the firſt of the ſame moneth, for ſpreading certaine bookes, ſeditiouſly penned by one Robert Browne againſt the booke of Common prayer eſtabliſhed by the lawes of this Realme, their bookes ſo many as could be found were burnt before them.

Thacker and Coping hanged at Bery for bookes.

On the 9. of June deceaſed Thomas Ratclife earle of Suſſex, lord Chamberlaine to her maieſtie, and knight of the garter, at Bermondſey beſides London, & was on the 8. of July conueyed through the citie of London toward New hall in Eſſex there to be buried: firſt went before him 45. poore men in blacke gownes, then on horſeback 120. ſeruing men in blacke coates, then 25. in blacke gownes or clokes, beſides the heraults of armes and others, which bare his helme, creſt ſword, coate of armes, and banners of armes, &c. then the deceaſed earle in a chariot couered with blacke veluet, drawne of foure goodly geldings: next after him was led the earles ſteed couered with blacke veluet, then ſir Henry Ratclife the ſucceeding earle chiefe mourner, and 8. other lords all in blacke, then the lord maior and aldermen of London riding in murrey, then ỹ gentlemen of Greis Inne, and laſt of all the worſhipfull merchant Tailers in their liueries, for that the ſaid earle was brother of their companie, as many noble men & famous princes kings of this realme before him had bene, as more at large I haue ſet downe in my ſummarie, the eighteenth yeare of H. 7. the maior and aldermen, the gentlemen of Greis Inne, and the merchant Tailors accompanied the corps to the bars without Aldgate, and returned.

Earle of Suſſex deceaſed

Edmond Grindall biſhop of London, tranſlated to be archbiſhop of Yorke, and then of Canterburie, deceaſed at Croidon in Surrey on the firſt of July, and was there honorably buried vnder a faire monument for him raiſed. This archbiſhop in his life, and by appointment to be finiſhed after his death, founded a grammer ſchoole at Saint Beghes in the countie of Cumberland where he was borne, with a ſchoole houſe for the maiſter and ſcholers to be endued with thirtie pound by yere, the ſchoolemaiſter to haue twenty pound, and a ſcholer to teach as Vſher 5. marks by yeare, the reſt to be beſtowed according to his ſtatutes. To Queenes colledge in Oxford twenty pounds by yeare to maintaine one fellow, and two ſcholers to be taken out of his ſaid ſchoole, and to that colledge he gaue the moſt part of his bookes, he forgaue them fortie pounds, and gaue them in plate 87. ounces and a quarter. To Pembroke hall in Cambridge, he gaue 22. l. by yeare, whereof 40. s. for the maintenance of a Greeke lecture, & the other 20. l. for a fellow, & 2. ſcholers

Archbiſhop of Canterburie deceaſed.

to

to be likewise taken out of his schoole: to this colledge he gaue some bookes, and plate 40. ounces & halfe. To Magdalen colledge in Cambridge, he gaue fiue. l. by yeare for one scholer to be taken out of his said schoole. To Christs colledge in Cambridge plate 45. ounces. To the 8. little poore almes houses in Croidon 50. l. to be bestowed in land for their relefe. To the citie of Canterburie 100. l. to be employed vpon a stocke to set the poore on worke, which stocke (as I am enformed) was neuer put to so good an vse.

Bernard Randolph esquire, senior sergeant to the citie of London, deceased on the 7. of August. This man in his life time deliuered 900. l. of good and lawfull money of England to the company of fishmongers in London, and bequeathed by his testament 1000. pounds more, all to be employed in charitable actions, as I haue set downe in my summarie, and in Reigne Woolfes chronicle.

In the moneth of June, were sent to the seas a ship called the bark Talbot, and a small bark, both manned with 100. men vnder the charge of the worshipful W. Borough esquire, clearke of her maiesties nauie, for apprehending of certaine outragious sea-rouers, who for ỳ they were many in number & wel appointed, so boldly behaued themselues, as ỳ shortly after it was confidently bruted, ỳ they had vanquished in fight the said ship & bark: but within few daies after, beyond all expectation, they were by the said Wil. Borough & his company discomfited & taken to ỳ number of ten saile (whereof three were pises) & some of the chiefe pirats, namely, Thomas Walton, alias Purser, Clinton, Atkinson, Wil. Ellis, Wil. Valentine, alias Bagh, Tho. Beuen, Iohn Pollard, Edm. Copinger, Ro. Woodman, & Iohn Euans, who on ỳ thirtieth day of August were hanged at Wapping in the Wose beside London. Walton as he went toward the gallowes rent his venetian breeches of crimosin taffata, and distributed the same to such his old acquaintance as stood about him, but Atkinson had before giuen his murrey velvet doublet with great gold buttons, & his like coloured velvet venetians laid with great gold lace (apparell too sumptuous for sea rouers which he had worne at the seas, (and wherein he was brought vp prisoner from Cozke castell in the isle of Pozbeck to London) vnto such friends as pleased him.

Sea rouers apprehended and executed.

On the 17. day of Sept. Iohn Lewes, who named himself Abdoit, an obstinate heretike, denying the Godhead of Christ, & holding diuerse other detestable heresies (much like to his predecessor Mathew Hamond) was burned at Norwich.

Iohn Lewes brent at Norwich.

On ỳ 22. of Sep. Albertus de Lasco, palatine of Siradia in Poland, before spoken of, when he had well viewed ỳ order of our English court & nobilitie, with other places of this realme, especially ỳ Vniuer. of Oxford, he returned into Polãd.

Palatine of Siradia in Poland returned.

The 23. of September, Iohn Whitegift doctor of diuinitie, sometime maister of Trinitie colledge in Cambridge, and afterward bishop of Worcester, was at Lambhith translated to the archbishoppricke of Canterburie.

Doctor Whitegift archbishop of Canterburie.

The 10. of October, at Caster in Norfolke, about two miles from Yarmouth, there was a fish by force of ỳ easterly wind driuen on shore, ỳ length whereof was from the necke to the taile 17. yards & a foot, ỳ head was great, for the chap of the iaw was 3. yards & a quarter in length, with teeth of 3. quarters of a yard cõpasse, great eies, & 2. great holes ouer them to spout out water, her taile was 14. foote in breadth, in thicknesse from the backe to the belly she was 4. yards and an halfe.

A monstrous fish taken.

Slade and Bodie executed.

Iohn Slade schoolemaister, and Iohn Bodie maister of art, being both condemned of high treason for maintaining of Romane power, were drawne, hanged, bowelled, and quartered: Slade at Winchester on the 30. of October, and Bodie at Indouer on the 2. of November.

An. reg. 26. Horse stealers hanged ten at once.

One Ditch a notable horse stealer was apprehended, and at the sessions holden at Newgate on the fourth of December 19. times indicted, where he confessed 18. who also betweene the time of his apprehension and the sayd sessions, appeached many for stealing of horses, whereof ten were hanged in Smithfield on the first of December, being horse market there: he also holpe diuerse men to their horses againe, and tooke of euery one of them 10. s. the peece, or more, whereby he made 15. l. toward his charges.

Desmonds head set on London bridge.

Iames earle of Desmond in Ireland, secretly wandering without any succour, being taken in his cabine by one of the Irish, his head was cut off, and sent into England, where the same (as the head of an arch rebel) was set on London bridge on the 13. of December.

The towne of Nantwich brent.

The same 13. of December, through negligence of vndiscreete persons brewing in the towne of Nantwich, the fire being carelesly left, vpon some light matter, & so burst foorth to the rookes of the house, and in short time increased, that from the west end of the towne the flame was dispersed so furiously into the towne, that in short space a great part of the towne was burned downe to the ground, & there was consumed about the number of 200. houses, besides brew houses, barnes, stables, &c. in all about 600. houses.

Someruill, Arden, and other arraigned.

About this time, Iohn Someruill a furious young man of Ellow in Warwikeshire, of late discouered and taken in his way comming with full intent to kill the queenes maiesty (whom God long prosper to raigne ouer vs) confessed the treason, and that he was mooued thereunto in his wicked spirit, by certaine trayterous persons his kinsmen and alies, and also by often reading of certaine seditious bookes lately published, for the which the sayd Someruill, Edward Arden a squire in Parkhall in Warwikeshire, Mary Arden his wife father and mother in law to the sayd Someruill) and Hugh Hall priest, being with other before indicted at Warwicke, were on the 16. of December arraigned in the Guild hall of London, where they were found guilty and condemned of high treason. On the 19. of December, Iohn Someruill, and Edward Arden, being brought from the tower of London to Newgate of the same city, & there shut vp in seuerall places: within two houres after, Someruill was found (desperatly) to haue strangled himselfe. And on the morrow being the 20 of December, Edward Arden was drawne frō Newgate into Smithfield, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered: whose head with Somerulls head was set on London bridge, and his quarters on the gates of the city, but the body of Somerulll was buried in the Moorefields neare vnto the windmils.

Somerulll, strangled in Newgate.

Arden executed.

1584. Carter executed.

On the 10. of Ianuary, at a sessions holden in the Iustice hall in the Old baily of London, for gaole deliuery of Newgate, William Carter of the city of London, was there indicted, arraigned, and condemned of high treason, for printing a seditious and trayterous booke in English, entituled, A treatise of schisme: and was for the same (according to sentence pronounced against him, on the next morrow

drawne

drawne from Newgate to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered. And forthwith against slanderous reports spread abroad in seditious bookes, letters, and libels thereby to inflame our countrey men, and her maiesties subiectes, a booke was published, intituled, A Declaration of the fauorable dealing of her maiesties commissioners, &c. which booke also I haue caused to be set downe in the Continuation of the chronicle, first collected by Reigne Wolfe, and finished by Raphaell Hollenshed.

The 22. of Januarie Iohn Watson bishop of Winchester deceased at Wolsey, and was buried at Winchester on the 12. of Februarie. Bishop of Winchester deceased.

The seuenth of Februarie, were araigned at Westminster Iohn Fen, George Haddock, Iohn Munden, Iohn Nutter, and Thomas Hemerford, all fiue found guiltie of high treason, in being made priests beyond the seas, and by the Popes authoritie, since a statute made in *Anno primo* of her maiesties raigne, and had iudgement to be hanged, bowelled, and quartered: which were all executed at Tiborne on the 12. of Februarie. Seminaries executed.

The 21. of May, Francis Throckmorton esquire was arraigned in the Guild hall of the citie of London, where being found guiltie of high treason, he was condemned, & had iudgement to be drawen, hanged, bowelled, & quartered. The 10. of July next following, the same Francis Throckmorton was conueyed by water from the tower of London to the Blacke friers staires, and from thence by land to the sessions hall in the Old baily without Newgate, where he was deliuered to the sherifes of London, laid on a hurdle, drawne to Tiborne, & there executed according to his iudgement. A discouery of whole treasons, practised & attempted against the Queenes maiestie & the realme, were in the moneth of June published and printed in a booke intituled, A true and perfect Declaration of the treasons practised and attempted by Francis Throckmorton &c. And the same I haue set downe in the continuation of Reigne Wolfes chronicle. Francis Throckmorton arraigned and executed.

The 19. of July, Robert baron of Denbigh, the onely son and heire of Robert earle of Leicester, departed this mortall life, being then of the age of three yeares & somewhat more, at Wansted in Essex, whose funerall was there honorably kept on the first of August, and after his body was conueied to Warwike, and there in the chappell of Richard Beauchampe earle of Warwike, honorably interred on the 20. of October. The 12. of November, the queenes maiestie (returning after her progresse) came to her manor of S. Iames, where the citizens of London to the number of 200. the grauest sort in coats of veluet, & chaines of gold on horse backe, and 1000. of the companies on foote (hauing with them 1000. men with torches, ready there to giue light on euery side, for that the night drew on) receiued and welcomed her. And on the 24. day of the same moneth, her maiestie and the lords rode to the parliament, which was that day begun at Westminster. Baron of Denbigh deceased. The Londoners receiue the queene from her progresse. *An. reg.* 27. Parliament at Westminster. 1585.

In the moneth of January, deceased Edward Fines lord Clinton, earle of Lincolne, and lord admirall of England, knight of the garter, and one of her maiesties priuy counsell, a man of great yeares and seruice, as well by sea as by land, he was buried at Windsor. Earle of Lincolne deceased.

The 21. of January, Iesuites, Seminaries, & other malling Priests to the number of 21. late prisoners in the tower of London, marshalsea, & kings bench, were shipped Seminaries and other banished England.

shipped at ỳ tower wharfe to be cõueyed towards France, & banished this realme for euer, by vertue of a commission from her maiestie, as may more fully appeare by the same commission, set downe in my cõtinuation of Reine Woolfes chronicle.

The Earle of Darby his ambassage into France.

Henry earle of Darby, appointed by her maiestie ambassador to Henrie the 3. French king, and to inuest him with the order of the garter, tooke his leaue of the queenes maiestie at Greenewich the 20. of January, and with him such gentlemen as were present were admitted to kisse her highnes hand, M. Cooke Clarenceaux appointed to attend in that voyage in place of Gartar whose roome was voyde, and Robert Glouer Somerset herault, likewise appointed to that iourney noblemen & gentlemen attending on the earle of Darby, the L. Sands, Frederike L. Winsor maister Scrope son and heire to the L. Scrope, maister Windsor brother to the L Windsor, sir Richard Sherborne, sir Ralph Brierton, maister Anthony Cooke maister Gerard son and heire to sir Thomas Gerard, maister Fleetwood, maister Nudigate maister Stallage gentleman vsher, the queenes seruants, maister Crompton, maister Smith, maister Denton, maister Miles, maister Thomas Ardē steward, maister Fox controller, maister Newton gentlemã vsher, maister Philips chaplaine, maister Alexander gentleman of the horse, maister Morecroft phisition: The earles waiting gentlemen, maister Dawnie son & heire to sir Iohn Dawnie, maister Legh son and heire to sir Pierce a Legh, maister Warren, &c. On the 26. of January, the earle with his traine passed from London to Grauelend, where taking post horses, they rid to Sittingborne, and from thence to Douer, where they embarked & landed at Calais on the 1. of Februarie. On the 3. of Februarie, ỳ earle with his whole traine went from Calais to Bologne to bed, where they were very well entertained. On the 4. of Februarie, they rid to Monstrell, on the 5. to Abbeuil, where they were met with 150. shot of harquebussers. On the 6. they tooke their iourney to Amiens, where of monsieur Creuicure accompanied with 100. gentlemen, & best citizens, they were met halfe a mile without the towne, ỳ night the sayd Creuicure presented the earle with great store of very large & good fresh water fish, and the towne with wine of diuers sorts, and the day following being sunday, the sayd Creuicure inuited the earle to dinner, which dinner was highly commended. After dinner, the earle with his traine went to Bethnill to bed, the next night to Clermount, where he staied tuesday and wednesday: the tenth of Februarie he went to Luzarch. On the 11. to S. Denis, where by the way he was met by sir Edward Stafford, her maiesties ambassador resident with the French king, who brought with him diuerse gentlemen of England, to the number of thirty horse, and so accompanied him to Saint Denis, where they kept company all the day following being Friday. On Saterday, his honor made his entry into Paris about two or three of the clocke at afternoone, there being of the lord ambassadors traine more then two hundred horse, and mid way betweene S. Denis and Paris, there met with them sent from the king, the duke of Montpensier a prince of the bloud, the lord of Cauignie, le Chapell aux Vrsius, county de Lude, de Pienne, de Malicorn, de la Mothtemilon, who had sometimes bene ambassadour liger in England, Destrie, Dabin, de Fontaines, de Cormisson, the marques of Curton, the county de Grignan, all counsellers to the counsell, and knights of the holy Ghost. The duke of Tremouille, the counties Brisac, de Creance,

Sancerne,

Sancerre, and of Lazure, with a great number of lords and barons, gentlemen of the chamber. These did accompanie the earle of Darbie vnto Hostell de Longueuill sometime called the Hostell of Aniou, there was his lordship, with the other lords and gentlemen lodged, where was three tables very sumptuouslie furnished for them, all of the kings cost, the one table in the great chamber, for the lords and gentlemen seruants to her maiestie, the other in the hall for the earle of Darbies gentlemen and the third in a gallerie beneath for gentlemens seruants, besides liuerie into euerie chamber, both of ware, wood, wine, and such like, in as great plentie as could be desired. On Sonday the 14 of Februarie, ỳ said earle betwixt the houres of two & three in the afternoone, went from his lodging by a posterne through the garden, accompanied with the said lords, De la Moth Fenelon, de Curton, and Grignan, together with other, and found the captaines of the regiment of the kings guarde, making two ranks on either side of the streete, beginning from the posterne to the Louure gate, who welcommed him in the kings behalfe. Without the gate of the said Louure, he was receiued by the Lieutenants of the great Prouost of France, and his archers. At the Louure gate by the sier de Montegnie, captaine thereof to his maiestie, and his archers, which archers togither with those of the great Prouost made two ranks from the said gate of the Louure, to the foote of the staires: from which foote, his Lordship was receiued by the sier de Perdillon, the French Lieutenant of the Swissers of the Kings guard, which from the foote of the said staires to the dooze of the hall made two rankes, for his lordships passage. At the entrie of the hall, his lordship was recciby the sier de Chasteau Viaux knight of the holy ghost, and captaine of the archers of the Kings guard, who likewise from the said dooze vnto the dooze of the antichamber, made two ranks: from the dooze of the antichamber, his lordship was receiued by sier de Combault of the holy ghost, chiefe maister de Hostel.e to his maiestie, and by his gentlemen waiters: and there in the said antichamber, all the said earle of Darbies officers and gentlemen wearing liueries, were appointed to stay, and the Queenes seruants that proceeded next, went still forward: at the entrie of the chamber of estate, his lordship was receiued by the sier de Liencourt knight of the holy ghost, chiefe escuire of the kings escuire, and the other escuires of the escuir, together with the lieutenant of the hundred, gentlemen of his Maiestie, who made two ranks from that chamber dooze to the chamber of audience. euery of them hauing halbarts in their hands. At the entrance of the antichamber, his Lordship was receiued by the Duke Ioieulx, accompanied with the gentlemen of the kings chamber ordinarie, who made two rankes from that chamber dooze to the dooze of the chamber royall. Into the said chamber royall first entred all the Gentlemen the Queenes Maiesties seruants, the lords that had receiued and accompanied the said earle and Lords: and the said Duke de Ioieulx accompanied the said earle of Darby vnto the bars that stood about the hall pace, or mounting flooze in the said chamber, where the king stood at his beds feete, accompanied without the said barriers, on his right hand with the Cardinals of Bourbon, Vandosme & Ioieulx, & on the left hand with the lords, ỳ princes of Contie, the countie de Soissons, & D. Montpensier, princes of ỳ bloud: the dukes of Neuers, Delbeuse, de la Tremouille, de Retz, Monsier le Châcellor,

sier

fier de Vilequier, du Bonchaſe, de la Valette, Dantragues, de la Chapelle aux Vrſius, Cauignie, la Vanguion, counte de Mawleurier, Clermont, Dantragues, de Larchant, and other knigts of the holy ghoſt, and counſellers of the eſtates in great number. The ſaid earle with the L. ambaſſador ordinarie of England, alonely entred within the ſaid haltpace within the barriers vnto his maieſtie, of whom they were receiued with great curteſie, & as amiable countenance as could be, & the earle deliuered the Queenes maieſties letters vnto the king with great reuerence, & then making rehearſall of that he had in charge to ſay, the ſaid ambaſſador preſented vnto the king the lords Sands and Windſore, and other the Engliſh knights and gentlemen, which all one after another mounted vpon the haltpace, kiſſed their hands, & did their reuerence vnto the king. Then the earle tooke his leaue, and was conducted by all the lords and captaines vnto the place where they had firſt receiued him. Afterward he went to ſalute the queene mother, & at the entrance into her chamber, he was receiued by Monſieur de Lanſac knight of the holy ghoſt, & knight of honor vnto the ſame queene, whom he found accompanied with her neece the princeſſe of Lozaine, ſtanding at her beds head, the princeſſe of Condie and Jontie, and the duches of Neuers ſtanding at the beds feete, the duchelles of Duez, and of Rez, and other ladies & gentlewomen in great number. From thence his lordſhip was conueyed to the queene regents chamber, at the entrance whereof he was receiued by the county de Fieſque knight of the holy ghoſt, and her knight of honor, finding her accompanied with the duchelles of Montpenſier & Ioieulx, who ſtood at her beds feete, the lady of Roiden her lady of honor, and other ladies & gentlewomen in great number, & then returned to ỹ foreſaid hoſtel de Longueuille. On monday the 15. of Februarie, the K. by Monſieur le Mothfenelon told the lord ambaſſador his mind, touching the receit of ỹ order, that he intended to receiue it on Thurſday following in the after noone, at ỹ Auguſtine friers, which was done accordingly, with a mantle of blew veluet, and a hood, & coller of the order, with a booke of the ſtatutes of the order, which all were inueſted vpõ the king, in a place called Maiſon de nautralles, but ỹ oth was miniſtred vnto the king in ỹ friers church, *Magnificat* being ſung. On the 28. of Februarie, ỹ ambaſſador with his traine tooke their leaue, at whoſe returne frõ ỹ court to his lodging, he was preſented ỹ night with a rich cupboord of plate, worth 1200. l. at the leaſt: & vnto maiſter Clarenceaux was giuẽ a chaine of gold, worth 120. l. & better, of 236. linkes, to maiſter Somerſet a chaine of 150. linkes, worth 100. marks, & to Thomas Milles a chaine of the ſame value. On Thurſday next, the earle with his traine ſet forward homewards from Paris vnto S. Denies, & ſo were lodged all the way, in the ſame lodgings that before they had bene receiued in, and arriued proſperouſly in England, from Bologne to Douer the twelfth of March, & on the Tueſday following were brought to the queenes maieſties preſence at Greenewich, who graciouſly welcomed them home.

William Parry executed.

The 2. day of March William Parry, was drawne from the tower through the city of London to Weſtminſter, and there in the palace court, hanged, bowelled and quartered for high treaſon, as may appeare by a booke extant, intituled, A true & plaine declaration of the horrible treaſons practiſed by W. Parry, &c. & I haue ſet downe the ſame booke in the continuance of Reine Woolfes Chronicle.

This

This yeere sir Walter Mildmay knight, Chancelor of the Exchequer, and one of her maiesties priuie councell, founded a colledge in the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, vpon the house and ground of the late frier preachers Dominikes, or blacke friers, in the preachers streete, and named it Emanuell colledge. Emanuell Colledge founded.

The 29. of March, the parliament was dissolued, at the breaking vp whereof, the Queenes maiestie made an Oration in the Parliament house, to such effect as followeth. My Lords and ye of the lower house, my silence must not iniurie the owner so much, as to suppose a substitute sufficient to render you the thanks that my hart yeeldeth you: not so much for the safe keeping of my life (for which your care appeareth so manifest) as for the neglecting your priuate future perill, not regarding other way then my present state, no prince herein (I confesse) can be surer tied or faster bound then I am, with the linke of your good will, and can for that but yeeld a hart and head to seeke for euer all your best: yet one matter toucheth me so neere as I may not ouerskip: religion, the ground on which all other matters ought to take roote, and being corrupted may mar all the tree: and that there be some faultfinders with the order of the clergie, which so may make a slander to my selfe & the Church, whose ouer-looker God hath made me, whose negligence cannot be excused, if any schismes or errors hereticall were suffered. Thus much I must say, that some faults & negligences may grow & be, (as in all other great charges it happeth) & what vocation without? all which if you my lords of the clergie do not amend, I mind to depose you, looke you therefore well to your charges, this may be amended without heedles or open exclamatiō. I am supposed to haue many studies, but most philosophicall: I must yeeld this to be true, ẏ I suppose few (ẏ be no professors) haue read more. And I need not tel you ẏ I am so simple ẏ I vnderstād not, nor so forgetfull, ẏ I remember not, & yet amongst my many volums, I hope gods booke hath not bene my seldomest lectures, in which we find ẏ, which by reason (for my part) we ought to beleeue, ẏ seeing so great wickednes & gricfes in ẏ world, in which we liue but as wai-fairing pilgrimes, we must suppose ẏ God wold neuer haue made vs but for a better place, & of more cōfort then we find here. I know no creature ẏ breatheth, whose life standeth hourely in more perill for it then mine own, who entred not into my state without sight of manifold dangers of life & crown, as one ẏ had the mightiest & greatest to wrastle with. Then it followeth, ẏ I regarded it so much, as I left my selfe behinde my care. And so you see, that you wrong me too much (if any such there be) as doubt my coldnes in that behalfe: for if I were not perswaded that mine were the truth of Gods will: God forbid I should liue to prescribe it to you. Take heede lest Ecclesiastes say not too true: They that feare the horie frost, the snow shall fall vpon them. I see many ouer-bold with God Almighty, making too many subtill seamings of his blessed will, as lawyers do with humane Testaments: the presumption is so great, as I may not suffer it (yet minde I not hereby to animate Romanists, which what aduersaries they be to mine estate, is sufficiently knowne) nor tollerate new-fangledneese. I meane to guide them both by Gods true rule: in both parts be perils, and of the latter I must pronounce them dangerous to a kingly rule, to haue euery man according to his own censure o make a doome of the validitie and priuitie of his princes gouernment, with a common vaile & couer of Gods word, whose followers must not be iudged but by Parliament dissolued. The queenes maiestie her Oration.

priuate mens expolition, God defend you from such a Ruler that so euill would guide you. Now I conclude, that your loue & care neither is nor shall be bestowed vpon a carelesse Prince, but such as for your good will passeth as little for this world as who careth least, with thankes for your free subsidie: a manifest shew of the aboundance of your good wils, the which I assure you, but to be imployed to your weale, I could be better pleased to returne then receiue. Thus much her Maiesties Oration. In this parliament a subsidie of 2. s. 8. goods, and 4. s. lands was granted, and two fifteenes by the laitie.

4000. Londoners trayned vp with shot, &c.

In the month of Aprill about the 14. day, by commandement of her Maiestie, the citizens of London appointed out of their companies of the same citie, to the number of 4000. men, with armor, enlignes, drums, fifes, and other furniture for the wars, the greater part whereof were shot, the other were pikes, and halbards in faire corselets: all those to be trayned vp vnder expert captaines, with sergeants of the bands, wiflers, and other necessary officers, mustered, and skirmished dayly at the Miles end, and in Saint Georges field: and on the 18. of May (hauing ouer night set forward out of S. Georges field) mustered in the parke at Greenewich, and skirmished before the Queenes maiestie, who gaue to them great thanks for their actiuitie and paines.

Earle of Arundell sent to the Towre.

The 25. of Aprill, Philip Howard earle of Arundell was brought prisoner into the tower of London, for attempting to haue passed ẏ seas without licence, &c.

Earle of Northumberland found to haue murdered himselfe.

The 21. of June, Henrie Percy earle of Northumberland, prisoner in the Tower of London, vpon vehement suspition of high treason, was there found dead, and also of his owne diuelish intent, and of his malice before pretended, to haue murdered himselfe, as more at large may appeere, by inquisition made by a substantiall Jurie, taken before the crowner of London, as followeth *verbatim* with the record.

Copie of the inquisition by the crowner.

In inquisition taken at the citie of London, that is, within the Tower of London, in the parish of Alhallowes Barking, in the warde of the Tower of London, on Monday being the 21. day of June, in the yeere of the raigne of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth by the grace of God, Queene of England, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. the 27. before William Squire Gentleman, Cozoner to our said Soueraigne Lady the Queene within the Citie of London and the liberties of the same, vpon the view of the body of Henrie Percie knight, late earle of Northumberland, late prisoner there within the Tower of London aforesaid, for suspitiõ of high treason by him supposed to be done, there lying dead, and slaine: by the othes of Nicholas Wheeler, Simon Horsepoole, T. Gardener, William Leaueson, Owen Morgan, Henry Lodge, William Abraham, William Horne, Thomas Russell, Iohn Porter, Robert Dowe, Anthony Hall, William Curtis, Thomas Wood, Matthew Dolman, Thomas Martin, Richard Sleford, Iohn Trot, Philip Smith, Thomas Tailor, and Henrie Bowdler, of good & lawfull men of the same ward, and of three other wards to the same ward next adioyning, as the manner and custome is in the citie aforesaid, to inquire how, in what manner, and when the said Henrie Percie late earle of Northumberland came to his death. Which Jurie do say vpon their othes, that on the 21. day of this instant moneth of June, in ẏ yeare of the raigne of our soueraigne lady Elizabeth by the

Verdit of the Iurie.

grace

grace of God queene of England, Fraunce and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. The 27. aforesayd, and long before the foresayd Henry late earle of Northumberland prisoner in the tower of London situate in the parish of Alhallowes Barking aforesayd, in the ward of the tower of London aforesayd, for suspition of high treason aforesayd, by him against our soueraigne Lady the Queene supposed to be committed, and the aforesayd earle so remaining prisoner, and being placed in a certaine chamber within the tower of London aforesayd, there prisoner remaining imagining and intending himselfe diuellishly and feloniously to kill & murder before the aforesayd 21. day of June: that is to say, the 16. day of June in the 27. yeare aforesayd, did prepare a certaine dag of iron & steele of the value of .10.s. & with certaine bullets of lead, & a certaine quantity of gunpowder, contained in a small box, & caused the aforesayd gun, the bullets of lead, and the gunpowder to be brought into the foresayd chamber vnto him the sayd earle of Northumberland, & to be deliuered to the same earle then and there by the hands of Iames a Price yeoman to execute his diuelish and felonious purpose and intention, which dag aforesayd, the foresayd earle caused secretly to be hidden in a certaine mattrise vnder the bolster of his bed in the chamber aforesayd, and then and there, the foresaid 21. day of June in the 27. yeare aforesayd, betweene the houres of twelue and one in the night of the foresayd 21. day of June, thinking and intending to prosecute and follow his diuelish intention and purpose aforesayd, did bolt the doore of the aforesayd chamber, and the inner part of his sayd chamber towards himselfe, lest any man should forbeare or withstand his diuelish, felonious, and malicious intent: and the sayd doore of his foresayd chamber being so bolted, the same earle then and there into his bed himselfe did lay, and vpon this afterward, that is to say, the foresaid one and twentith of June, in the seauen and twentith yeare aforesayd, about the houres aforesayd, within the tower of London aforesayd, situate and being in the parish of Alhallowes Barking aforesayd, in the ward of the tower of London aforesayd, not hauing the almighty God or his feare before his eyes, but being mooued and seduced by the instigation of the diuell, of his malice afore pretended, did take vp into his hands the foresayd dagge of yron and steele, then and there made ready, charged with gunpowder and three bullets of lead, and the aforesayd dagge to the left part of his breast neare vnto the pappe of the same part of his breast, then and there feloniously and diuellishly did put, and vpon the same part of his breast the foresayd dagge did discharge, by reason of the violence of which gunpowder, and of the aforesayd three bullets of lead, the foresayd earle into his body and heart, and through his chine bone, euen into his right shoulder, himselfe then and there with the aforesayd bullets of lead, feloniously and voluntarily did strike, giuing vnto himselfe then and there one mortall wound of the depth of twelue inches and of the breadth of two inches: of which mortall wound aforesaid, the foresaid earle within the tower of London aforesaid, the day and yeare, parish and ward aforesayd, instantly died. And so the Iury doth say vpon their oathes aforesayd, that the foresayd earle, the day and yeare, and place aboue written, of his diuelish intent aforesayd, and of his malice before pretended, feloniously and voluntarily himselfe did kill, and murther in manner and

forme

fourme aforesayd, against the peace of our soueraigne lady the queene, her crowne and dignity. But what goods and chattels the aforesayd earle in the time of the felonie and murther of himselfe aforesayd committed, had, or as yet hath, the Jury know not, &c. in witnesse whereof, &c. This was the verdict of the Jurors, whereby it remained to prouide for the bestowing of his wretched carcasse, which on the 23. day of June was buried in S. Peters church within the sayd tower of London. This was the end of that earle, the maner of whose murder, and part of his treasons are dilated, as the same was publikely deliuered in the Star-chamber, and after published in a booke intituled: A true and summarie report of the declaration of some part of the earle of Northumberlands treasons, deliuered, &c. And are set downe in my continuation of Maister Reine Woolfes Chronicle.

Entertainment of the deputies for the States of the Low countries.

On the 26. of June arriued at London, deputies for the States of the Netherlands, or Low countries, who were lodged about the tower streete, and had their diet for the time of their abode here very worshipfully appointed (all at the charges of her maiesty) in the clothworkers hall in Mincheone lane, neare to the sayd tower streete. These on the 29. of June, being the feast of the Apostle Peter and Paule, repaired to the court, then at Greenewich, where by vertue of their commissions from the united countries, they presented to her maiesty the soueraignty of those countries, to wit, of Brabant, but the commission (for the siege of Antwerpe not full authorised, of Guelder, of Flaunders, of Holland, of Zeland, of Utricht, and of Frieseland: for Brabant, Iaques de Grise great baily of Bridges, counseller of the Frankes for Gueldre Rotger of Barfold gentleman: for Flanders, Noell de Garsie lord of Shonewalle: for Holland, Iohn Wanderdoest, lord of Nortwike: Iosse de Menin pensionarie of Dordreght, Iohn of old Barneuelt, pensionarie of Rotradame, and D. Francis Maelio: for Zeland, Iacob Dales counseller and pensionarie of Tergoest: for Utricht, Paulus Buis, D. of the lawes: for Friseland, I. Fritzma gentleman, H. Ansona president of Friseland, and Lads Iangema gentleman. All these falling on their knees before her maiestie, and so remaining for a long space, one of them, to wit, Iosse de Menin counseller and pensionary of Dordreght, one of the commissioners for Holland, made to her maiesty this oration in french: Madam, les Estates des Prouinces Vnies des pais, &c. as I haue set downe in Reine Woolfe, with also the same in English thus: Madam, the States of the united prouinces of the Low countries, most humbly thanke your maiesty for the good affection and fauour, which it hath pleased you to shew to the sayd countries in their necessity, and to confirme the same with so many testimonies, and that lastly, after the execrable assault committed vpon the person of the late prince of Orenge, at what time it pleased your maiesty to let the sayd States vnderstand by your Imbassador maister Dauison, what care you had of our defence and preseruation, and also by Segnieur de Crist, the great displeasure which your maiesty conceiued, to see the States frustrated of the hope which they had founded vpon the treatie of Fraunce. But since the care which your maiesty hath alwayes had ouer our good and conseruation is not thereby any whit diminished, but hath more plentifully increased, according as the necessity

The deputies oration to her maiesty.

the neceſſitie of our affaires required, for which the ſaid countrie in generall, and euery of vs in particular remaine perpetually bound to your Maieſtie, and acknowledge the ſame with all fidelitie and obeiſance. And as the ſaid States (Madame) did conſider that ſince the deceaſe of the Prince of Orenge, they haue ſuſtained the loſſe of diuerſe of their holdes and good townes, and that for the preſeruation of the ſayde Countrie it is needfull for them to haue a Prince and ſouereigne ruler, which may warrant and defend them againſt the tyrannie and vniuſt oppreſſion of the Spaniardes and their adherents, which daily more and more inforce themſelues, by their ſiniſter power, and all other meanes to deſtroy and ouerthrow the ſayde Countries, and reduce this poore people into perpetuall ſeruitude, woorſe then that of the Indians, vnder the importable yoake of the deteſtable Inquiſition of Spaine. Conſidering alſo that the bodie of the Townes and Communalties of the aforeſaid Countries haue a firme hope that your Maieſtie will not ſee them periſh, according to the deſire of their enemies, which make this long and cruell warre, all which outrages, the States of the ſayd Low countries (following the diligence and band which they owe to the Burgeſſes and citizens) are to ſuſtaine, repell, and to turne from them, by reaſon of the manifeſt tyrannie and ſeruitude, which the Spaniards attempt to bring in and to lay vpon the poore people, thereby to preſerue their liberties, rights, priuiledges, and franchiſes, with the exerciſe of the true Chriſtian Religion, whereof your Maieſtie by good right carrieth the title of Protectrice and Defendreſſe, againſt which the ſaid enemies, and their aſſociates alreadie haue and ſtill do make many leagues, deuiſe many ſubtilties, treaſons, and ambuſhes; not ceaſſing daily to practiſe and imagine them againſt the perſon of your Maieſtie, and to the preiudice of the reſt of your realmes and ſtates, whom the good God hath preſerued vntill this preſent, for the wealth of the Chriſtians, and ſuſtentation of their Churches. Wherefore (Madame) it is ſo, that for cauſes, reaſons, and other conſiderations, the ſaid States haue aſſembled and concluded vpon a good and firme reſolution, to haue recourſe vnto your Maieſtie, ſith it is an ordinarie matter amongſt all people, and oppreſſed nations, in their calamities and oppreſſions to craue ſupport, and fauour againſt their enemies, of Kings and Princes neare vnto them, but eſpecially of thoſe who be endued with magnanimitie, pietie, iuſtice, and other princely vertues, to which effect the States haue appointed vs to come vnto your Maieſtie, to preſent vnto the ſame, the Principalitie, Soueraigntie, and iuſt gouernment of the ſaid Prouinces, vnder certaine good and equall conditions, chiefly concerning the preſeruation of the exerciſe of the reformed Religion, and of the ancient priuiledges, liberties, franchiſes and cuſtomes, and next of the adminiſtration of the affaires, politie, and iuſtice of the warres in the ſaid countrie. And although that theſe countries haue ſuſtained much hurt by theſe long and continuall warres, and that the enemie hath taken diuerſe ſtrong places and fortes in the ſame countries: yet there is beſides the ſame in the countries of Brabant, Gelderland, Flaunders, Naimes, and Ouerſet, many good townes and places, which defend themſelues againſt the force of the enemie, and the countries, of Holland, Zeland, Vtrich, and Friſe, be yet (thankes be to God) entire

and whole: in which there be many great and strong townes and places, faire riuers, and deepe Ports and hauens of the sea, out of which your maiestie and your successours may receiue diuerse good seruices, fruites and commodities, whereof it is needlesse here to make any long recitall. Onely this amongst other matters deserueth good and especiall consideration, that the uniting of those countries, of Holland, Zeland, Frisse, and the townes of Sluze, and Ostend in Flaunders, unto the Realmes of your Maiestie, importeth so much as the absolute gouernment of the great Ocean sea, and by consequence, and assurance, and perpetuall felicitie for the subiects of your worthie Maiestie: which we most humbly beseech, that it will please the same to condescend unto us in the said points and conditions, and in that which followeth, which is, that you will for you and your lawfull successours in the crowne of England, be protectours of the reformed religion, as the principall iustycer and soueraigne gouernour of the said countries: and consequently to receiue the people of the same as your most obedient subiects under the protection and continuall safegard of your Maiestie, they being a people assuredly so faithfull and louing to their princes and lords (be it spoken without vaunting) as any other nation is throughout Christendome. In doing whereof (Madame) you shall preserue many goodly churches, which it hath pleased God to assemble in these latter times in the same countries, at this present in many places grieuously afflicted, and you shall deliuer the same countrie and people (of late before the vniuft deeds of the house of Spaine) very rich and flourishing, through the great commoditie of the sea, ports, hauens, riuers, traffique, and marchandize, whereof they be naturally endued: you shall I say (Madame) deliuer them from ruine and perpetuall bondage of bodie and soule, being a worke right royall and most magnificent, acceptable to God, profitable to all Christianitie, worthie immortall commendation, aunswerable to the magnanimitie and heroicall vertues of your Maiestie, and ioyned with the assurance and prosperitie of your dominions and subiects. Whereupon we present unto your Maiestie the said articles and conditions, reuerently praying the King of kings to preserue your maiestie from your enemies, to increase your glorie and felicitie, and for euer to keepe you in his holy protection.

This oration ended, and the summe thereof considered, it pleased the Queenes maiestie, by direction of her wise and politicke Counsell, to incline her heart to the case and reliefe of the said oppressed people. And because her owne subiects should not be vtterly vnacquainted with her highnesse doings in that case, there was published by authoritie a booke intituled, A declaration of the causes mouing the Queene of England to giue aide to the defence of the people afflicted and oppressed in the Low countries. Dated at Richmond the first of October 1585. and the 27. yeare of the raigne of our soueraigne ladie the Queene. This booke was printed in the Latine, Italian, and English toungs. And I haue set downe the same in Reigne Woolfes chronicle.

Charles lord Howard L. Admirall.

The fourth of July, Charles lord Howard late lord Chamberlaine was made lord Admirall, and Henry lord Hunsdon was made lord Chamberlaine of houshold.

The

The fift of July, Thomas Awfield a seminarie preist, and Thomas Welley diar, were arraigned at the sessions hall in the Old baily, found guiltie, condemned, and had iudgement as felons to be hanged: for publishing of bookes containing false, seditious, and slaunderous matter, to the defamation of our soueraigne lady the Queene, these were on the next morrow executed at Tiborn accordingly. Aufield and Welley executed.

On the 16. of July, by the sudden fall of a bricke wall in Thamis streete of London neare vnto Dowgate, fiue persons were ouerwhelmed and slaine, to wit, a man and his wife (the wife being great with child and two children, the one their owne, the other a nurse child, and a poore man that liued by charitie, hauing no knowne dwelling place. Fiue persons slaine by fall of a wall.

On the same fiftenth day of July, was sir Francis Russell knight, lord Russel, third sonne to Francis Russell earle of Bedford, slaine with a dag in the borders of Scotland beside Barwike, by a Scot borne in those parts, as they met vpon a truce day. And on the next morrow, to wit, the 17. of July, Francis Russell earle of Bedford, knight of the garter, and one of her Maiesties priuie counsell (father to the late named sir Francis lord Russell slaine on the borders of Scotland) deceased, and was honorably buried at Cheinies in Bedfordshire, on the eight of September next following. The earle of Bedford and his sonne deceased.

On the three and twentieth of July, certaine souldiers were pressed in the seuerall wards of the citie of London, which souldiers being furnished for the wars, and clothed in red coates, all at the charges of the companies and citizens, set forth toward the seas on the thirteenth of August, and were transported ouer into Holland, Zeland, &c. as other the like souldiers out of other parts of the realme, before had bene transported to serue for the defence of the Low countries vnder generall Norris, and other approued captaines. Souldiers transported into the Low countries.

On the 4. of August, betwixt the houres of foure and fiue of the clocke in the morning, at the end of the towne called Motingham in Kent, eight miles from London, in a lane not farre from the houses, the ground began to sinke, three great elmes being swallowed vp, the tops falling downward into a hole with the rootes vpward, turning round in the falling, and driuen into the earth past mans sight: and before ten of the clocke that present day, the ground and trees were sunke so low that neither the one or other might be discerned, the hole being sometimes filled with water, and other whiles neither bottome, trees, or water may be perceiued. The compasse of this hole was then about fourescore yards, and being sounded with a lead and line of fiftie fadomes, cannot therewith find or feele any bottome. Ground and trees sunke & swallowed vp.

This yeare on the fourteenth of September, sir Francis Drake knight, Generall as well by sea as by land, Christopher Carlile esquire lieutenant Generall, Edward Wintar, Martine Frobisher, Frauncis Knowles, with diuerse other gentlemen, captaines, and two thousand three hundred souldiers and sailers in fiue and twentie ships and pinnesses departed from Plimmouth, and passing by the Iles of Bayon and the Canaries, arriued at Saint Iago, which city they tooke and burned: after they sailed to Saint Domingo, which they spoiled and raunsomed: from thence to Carthagena, which they also with great valour and especiall daunger tooke, spoiled, and raunsomed: and retiring homewards Sir Francis Drake his voiage to Domingo and Carthagena.

raced, and burned the fort and citie of Saint Augustine in Terra Florida: and the seuen and twentieth day of July in Anno 1586. arriued at Plimmouth.

Seminarie and massing priests banished.

On the 15. day of September, to the number of two and thirtie Seminaries, massing priests and others late prisoners in the Tower of London, Marshalsea, Kings bench, and other places, were embarked in the Marie Martine of Colchester, on the southside of the Thamis right ouer against S. Katherines, to be transported ouer into the coastes of Normandy, to be banished this realme for euer, by vertue of a commission from her maiestie before specified. These being safely transported ouer to Boloigne, wrote their certificate thereof as followeth:

Certificate returned by the banished men.

Whereas vpon your Honors commission directed vnto Anthonie Hall, and Thomas Stocker, for the transporting of vs whose names are vnder written, into the coastes of Normandie, who accordingly tooke vs into a barke called the Marie Martine of Colchester, on the southside of the Thamis, right ouer against that part of Saint Katherines next to London bridge, the fifteenth day of September 1585. according to the computation of England: our will is to testifie vnto your good honors, that they the said Anthonie Hall and Thomas Stocker haue generally so well vsed vs in all respects, that we cannot but acknowledge our selues much beholding to so curteous and louing officers: neuertheless comming along the sea, and meeting with her Maiesties Admirall in the Downes, who promising that we should not be disturbed in our course into the Prouince of Normandie, according to your Honours sayde commission, we had not from him departed two leagues, when as a Flushinger with his people suddenly entred vpon vs, being peaceably stowed vnder hatches, and in our quiet rest, with their drawne swords, their caliuers and their matches fiered in their hands, to our great terrour and discomfort, the most of vs being very sore sea-sicke, expecting at that instant nothing but either the rigorous dint of the sword, or bullet of the caliuer. Howbeit, parley being had by our commissioners with them, they departed, after which time, we considering the generall daunger on the seas, besought with one consent your Honours commissioners to set vs on land at Calice: but they in no wise yeelding thereunto, at last by reason of our importunitie in such daunger and weakenesse, yeelded to set vs on shore at Boloigne, partly by reason of the feare we were then put in, and partly for that we feared afterward more vnreasonable measure, but specially the greatest number of vs so sore sicke, that very tedious vnto vs it seemed to beare so long and daungerous a passage. In witnesse whereof to this our certificate we haue all subscribed our names, the nineteenth of September, 1585. William Gimlet, R. Fen, Iohn Nele, Christopher Small, &c.

Fredericke lord Windsor died at Westminster vpon the second of December.

In the moneths of November and December, many horsis and men were shipped at the tower wharfe, to be transported ouer into the Low countries. And on the first of December, the right honorable Robert Dudley earle of Leicester, lord Lieutenant generall (after he had taken his leaue of her Maiestie and the court) with his traine (which was great) entred the towne of Colchester in Essex, where the bailifes and brethren in scarlet gowns and

and multitudes of people met him, & so with great solemnitie entred the towne, where he lodged that night, and on the next morrow set forward to Harwich into the which towne he was accordingly receiued and intertained. On the eight of December, the said earle accompanied with the earle of Esser, the lord North, the lord Audley, sir William Russell, sir Thomas Sherley, sir Arthur Basset, sir Walter Waller, sir Geruais Clifton, & other knights, esquires and gentlemen, to the number of fiue or seauen hundred horse bravely appointed, all voluntaries and of his friends, followers and seruants, Captaines and souldiers, with his traine, to the number of fiftie sailes of ships and hoyes, set forward towards Flushing, with sound of trumpets and drummes, shoutes and prayers of the people for happie and fortunate successe. On the tenth day he arriued at Flushing, where with his whole traine (guarded in his owne person by fiftie archers with bowes and arrowes, fiftie halbarders, and fiftie gunners) he was with the intertainement of souldiers, and shot of the Towne and his noble companie before him, entertained by sir Philip Sidney gouernor vnder her Maiestie of the same towne, by Graue Maurice second sonne to the deceased prince of Orenge, by her Maiesties ambassador ligier there, and by the States of the towne, passing honourably entertained, with ringing of bels, and making of bone-fires after their manner, which is to fire greate pitch barrels on the tops of high poles, and then to fire them. He was there feasted and lodged in the Imbassadors house, where according to his accustomed disposition he demeaned himselfe so humbly, that he purchased to himselfe no lesse loue and good liking than among the English. The next day after a Sermon had, and dinner ended, he tooke shipping, and sailed toward Middleborough: in the mid way betwixt Flushing and Middleborough standeth a strong sconce of Ramikens, furnished with English men, at the which he with some of his speciall traine landed, and viewed the same, who returning againe to their ships, were presented on the top of the wals in the front of the sea with fiftie pike men very bravely furnished, hauing their English enlignes displayed, with triumph of shot, sound of trumpets and drums neere two houres together. In the which honorable triumphes, the whole fleete hauing good winde and faire weather, sailed along to Middleborough, where on the shore side at the landing place, were, vnder nine enlignes displaied with great store of shot, the best States of the countrie attending my lords landing: Ouer the gates by the port was painted the red Crosse of England, her maiesties armes, & the States, through which gates the earle and his traine entring, he was thus from his landing to his lodging garded through a lane of musket shot with the enlignes borne before him, with trumpets and drums very royally, almost a quarter of a mile. In the middle of the market place were the English enlignes aduanced, and deliuered vnto him, with the which and the rest borne before him he came to his lodging, where at the intreatie of the States, he staied more than two houres at the gate to see the souldiers marching and their strengthes: after which, because it was neere night, he entred and made his dinner and supper all one. Three of those nine enlignes were new: In the first were her maiesties and the Emperors armes quartered: In the second the earle of Leicesters and the

Robert earle of Leicester transported ouer sea to Flushing.

The earles garde.

Sir Philip Sidney gouernor of Flushing.

Three enlignes amog the rest.

prince of Orenges armes together: In the third were the seuen prouinces yeelded vnto her maiesty, all very excellently emblasoned. In a large table hanged ouer the gate of the English house in Middleborough, were emblasoned the armes of her maiesty aboue the rest, next vnder that the lord lieutenants armes on the one side at large, hard by the which was set out the armes of the States and their houses: all which artificially by a chaine were linked together, and fastened to the English armes, vnder which was written at the foote of this frame, *Quos Deus coniunxit, homo non separet.* Thus with great ioy & continuall triumph was he entertained on their Christmas eues eue, after the Romish computation, which they in Zeland and Holland obserue in that order.

The Lord lieutenant feasted in the Christmas time, and first on Christmas eue, as followeth.

On Christmas eue, the States of the towne in the States house, which standeth in the midst of the towne or market place, feasted him sumptuously: In the first course of which feast throughout the table was nothing but boiled meates, all flesh most excellent dainty: In the second course was all rost meates that could be thought, pigs serued on their feete, and wild foule part in the feathers: In the third course was all kind of baked meates, as foules in pies with their heads and tailes vnpluckt all beset with pendants of her maiesties, the lord lieutenants, the countries, and diuerse English mens armes on the same. The fourth and last course was a rare banket of incredible workmanship, as a castle of crisstall founded on a rocke of pearle, about the which flowed siluer streames, in which lay foules, fishes, and beasts of all kinds, some hurt, some slaine, and some gasping for breath, on the top of the which was a faire virgin lady leaning, and giuing her hands ouer the castle to succour them, very wonderfully wrought. There was wine in abundance, musicke of all sorts, variety of all things, and wonderfull welcomes. This feast began at eleuen of the clocke before noone, and continued till fiue in the after noone.

Lord lieutenãt feasteth the States on Christmas day.

The next day being Christmas day, the earle to requite the States cost, inuited them all, whom he feasted very royally after the English fashion. On Saint Stephens day he feasted the widow princesse of Orenge, with her second sonne county Maurice, and their traines so sumptuously as beseemed his and their honors. Here dispatching his weighty affaires he continued seuen dayes, after which he determined to saile towards Dort, which by iudgement of the countrie is not past ten houres sailing at the most. On the 17. of December (after the account of England) with faire wind and weather, the whole fleete of Dutch hoies hoised vp saile toward Dort, but on the sudden, being onward on their iourney, the ayre was so ouercast with mists, that they knew not how to saile for succour, neither backewards nor forewards: the reason was this: The riuer they had to saile through, was none other then an ouerflowne country, full of old foundations of houses, churches, and castles, so that the clearest aire did no more then safegard the hoyes from daunger. The 20. day, my lord with some other landed at Williamstate or Rag onhill, where he dined, and went aboord againe. On the one and twentieth of December, diuers ships of men of war and others, with the States of Dort in them, met our fleete on the water, where betwixt their ships and ours was at the meeting of the earle great triumphs with shot, in which came many small scouts of succor to hasten the traines to shore, where in good time they entred

Dort

Dort very royally and triumphantly. On the port to gard his person was set his owne gard of archers, shot, and halbards. And ouer the gate of entrance was her maiesties, the earles and the States armes emblasoned. When he was landed, & conducted by the States, he passed from the port through a lane of musket shot, all Dutch, braue and well appointed, with 8. ensignes displaied before him in the midst whereof was the English ensigne aduanced, whence with 800. shot he was brought to his lodging. After whose entrance they & the great shot continued triumphing an houre and more: here he continued a day and two nights with singular entertainement, and verses which I ouerpasse. On the 23. of December, the earle tooke scouts to passe to Rotherdame by a riuer of fresh water very narrow, where the boates or scouts are some by men, some by horses draggeth along the riuer: but in his passage the night being cleere, suddenly there arose so great a tempest, that it put the small vessels in great daunger, but after an houre the weather waxed calme, and the night cleere, only a Dutch captaine and three or foure of his men were drowned: toward night he drew neare to the towne of Rotherdame, where on the water he was met with three barges of pleasure, in euery of which was 12. sailers, the first all in blew ierkins and venetians, with red caps and whole eyres white satire like. In the second 12. all in buffe. In the third 12. all in shag thrummed silke very braue, with their oares red and white: in these boates were great store of fire workes and rockets to cast into the aire, and at the sterne of euery one were cressets, which towards night were lighted, and on the water made an excellent shew. Thus with trumpets sounding all the way, was he brought to Rotherdame by water to his lodging in the middle of the towne. On the other side of them, on the bankes stood rankes of souldiers all with musket shot, betwixt euery foure of them was placed a torch or cressett burning: & thus he entred his lodging, where the States accompanied him to supper that night. Here the inhabitants were ioyfull of the English mens comming, making much of the traine. The townes men had made very memorably in the middle of the market place, the whole proportion of Erasmus in a pulpet as though he were preaching, holding a booke of the paraphrasis on the Gospels in his hand, vnder whom was written Erasmus Rotherodame. The earle made hast towards Delph, being from thence accompanied with the States, his barges of pleasure, & whatsoeuer was thought honorable. They came late to Delph, somewhat darke, but lighted by cressets along the narrow riuer, on the which many rockets & fire works were shed. On the landing port stood great store of musket shot, with many new ensignes like a lane for him to passe through, all which brought him to his lodging, which was the house wherein the prince of Orenge was slaine, ouer the gate of which house were verses which I ouerpasse. On the 25. of December, the earle was feasted of the States very royally, and on the next morrow the earle feasted them amongst whom was the princesse of Des, with a company of honorable ladies and gentlewomen: at the table was dutch musicke of all kinds. And it is to be noted, that the further the earle went vp into Holland, the brauer the countrey was, and the better was his lordship welcommed, as appeared by his excellent entertainement: from thence he remooued on the 27. of December to Donhage, where he determined to keepe his standing court. In the euening

Lord lieutenant entred Dort.

Lord lieutenant entred Rotherdame

The Lord lieutenants entring Delph.

Lieutenant entreth Dunbage.

the earle by creſſet light, torches, and deuiſes of fire worke, entred into the towne of Dunbage with his traine of Engliſh men, beſides the ſtates of Rotherodame and Delph, with thoſe of Dunbage that met him on the water, with muſket ſhot very many. At the entrance of my lord by water on the riuer met him certaine fiſher men, which preſented Peter, Iames, and Iohn at their harborough: by them Chriſt walking on the water, who commanding them to caſt out their nets the ſecond time, they drew in abundance, wherewith they made ſhew of preſentment to the earle, for the which with thankes he paſſed by. Further on the riuer ſate the repreſentation of Mars and Bellona, who vttered ſpeeches vnto him as he paſſed. At his landing met him a troupe of horſemen, furniſhed and trapped antikely in colours, before whom hauing fetched many courſes, they rode away. At the entrance of the faireſt ſtreete, there were on each ſide of the ſame galleries, raiſed a mans height each againſt other, all hung with blacke baies, on both which galleries on each ſide ſtood fifteene virgins all clad in white, with branches of palme or bore wreathed about, ware candles light in their hands, euery of which did reuerence vnto the earle, theſe ſtood a ſpeares length diſtant each from other. Betwixt euery one hung a looking glaſſe, and betwixt euery glaſſe vpon a prety antike pearch ſtood a ware candle burning, and at each end of the gallerie ſtood a champion, and a blacke Moore, the one ſupporting the armes of England, and the other the armes of Holland. This ſhew was very proper: all the way as the earle paſſed through were artificially made gates raiſed of ragged ſtaues, and vpon euery ſnagge ſtood a ſmall ware candle burning, by which hung the armes of diuerſe crafts men of the towne. The ſtreete all the way was hanged with broade clothes, vpon the which were placed ſtore of red roſes on ſheetes of paper painted. At the next turning he was entertained with this ſhew. Ouer a gate vpon a very high ſcaffold was a conceiued battell fought betweene the Engliſh ſouldiers and the Spaniards, the Engliſh men ſtill preuailing: vnder which were written verſes to that effect. Paſſing forward, was a lofty ſcaffold very faire builded, with her maieſties armes at large placed: on the top ſtood ſeuen virgins, repreſenting the ſeuen prouinces, euery virgin holding a ſpeare, and the armes at large emblaſoned, which prouince ſhe did ſignifie, in the middeſt of them ſtood Minerua armed, incompaſſed about the body with the armes of England, vpon whom all the reſt ſeemed to relie. All which were repreſented vnto her maieſty by neceſſity, an old Champion. The next was on the like ſcaffold, ſeuen perſons preſenting the ſeuen liberall ſciences in their kinds, yeelded to the earle by deſert: out of euery window hung lanthornes and candles, and euery ſtreete was furniſhed with creſſets, torches, and linkes light: one deuice that hung in the middeſt of the ſtreete contained eight and thirty lanthornes and ſeuerall lights burning. Beſides theſe, againſt my lords gate, a barbar had on a wall placed threeſcore or more baſons of bright copper, and in the middeſt of euery one a ware candle burning was placed, in the middeſt of all was painted a Roſe and Crowne, this made a faire ſhew. Ouer the entrance of the court gate was placed aloft vpon a ſcaffold, as if it had bene in a cloud, Arthur of Britaine, whom they compared to the earle, within were hoboyes, cornets, and diuers kinds of muſike: And thus they brought him to his lodging, and after he

A ſhew of barbers baſons.

was

was entred in a great hall of that house, they discharged such volies of shot as was wonderful to heare. In ỹ night they vsed fire works of rockets, squibs, wheels, and bals of fire, with a dragon that continued casting out fire an houre, wonderfull artificially made. The next day, on the riuer adioyning to my lords lodging, they deuised a running as it were at the tilt in boates, which was thus: From each end of the riuer came a boate running with fiue oares, in the sterne of which on the top stood a man armed in a red wastcoate, with a staffe in his rest, hauing a but end of croske: now each meeting other with these staues both fell into the water, where spare boates were ready to succour them, for away went their horses: this sport with fresh men they continued till the earle was weary of it.

On the third day of January, the earle with three hundred horses in their furniture very brauely with his retinue entred Leidon, where by the way he was met by the best of the towne, first by twelue Burgomaisters clad in long blacke gownes, and on their shoulders was the townes name in large letters of siluer: next them twelue of the chiefest Burgesses, and then many on horsebacke, all in blacke veluet. At his entrance into the towne all ouer his head and downe to the ground on each side, was hanged with say of diuers colours to his lodging, himselfe with a canapy caried ouer his head was brought to his seate, against the which was a stage, on the which stood two men like poets, who presented seuerall shewes, as first a woman representing the towne then famine assaulting her, then sicknesse, then Spanish seruitude, then hope to be succoured, ayde promised, and at the last, liberty, victory, and triumph, verses, &c. And after the lord lieutenant had bene there feasted and banqueted, on the 5. of January he came from Leidon to Dunhage. The 10. he mustered part of his horsemen, to the number of 500. or more, & then pointed them into seuerall garrisons, & to seuerall gouernors, the earle of Esser was ỹ day made generall of the horses. The 11. day, the lord lieutenant came from Dunhage to Leidon. The 12. a generall fast was proclaimed through Hollande, Gelderland, and Friseland, which was kept with great zeale, the lord lieutenant spent that day till night with hearing of preaching reading, and singing of Psalmes: neither he nor his eating any thing till night. The 19 of January, he came from Leidon to Dunhage.

1586. Lord lieutenant entreth Leidon.

A generall fast proclaimed.

The 24. of January, the prince of Portingall came to Dunhage. The 25. the lord lieutenant was installed and sworne, & likewise all the States sworne to the queene. The maner of ỹ installing was thus: At Dunhage is a marueilous faire hall, at the vpper end whereof are fiue or six large steps ascending, which do reach to a faire chamber, at the vpper end whereof on high was placed a cloth of estate, in the midst whereof were the armes of England, and against them my lord was seated, on each side of him two steps descending, sate twelue of the principall States, and below them sate the residue, to the number of twenty, right before my lord, but foure or fiue steps descending. On the right hand of my lord did stand the prince of Portingale, next him the lord Morley, next maister Noris gouernour of Munster, next William Russell, and sir Robert Germin, with diuerse men of great accompt. On the left hand of my lord did stand the Graue Maurice, next the earle of Esser, sir William Stanley, sir Robert Stapleton, & sir T. Parrat, with diuerse other of great account. Thus being placed, a dutchman made

The prince of Portingall came to the lord lieutenant.

The earle of Leicester installed, and the States sworne to the queene.

Persons of honour and worship.

a large oration in Dutch, declaring the causes of the matter in hand, with thanks to the Queenes Maiestie, and the lord lieutenant. Then was read in Latine the couenants betweene the States, the Queene and my Lord: this done, the couenants were deliuered to my Lord, which he deliuered to the States, and the States deliuered an other vnto him: then was my Lord demanded to bowe the same by oath, who holding his hand to heauen did sweare to the couenants. The like did the States, holding vp their hands bowe to performe. Then againe were the States sworne to the Queene and my L. her lieutenant in those affaires. This done my Lord gaue to them seuerall thanks, and they seuerally did giue him the like, which being done, my Lord passed through to his chamber, the trumpets all sounding before him. This day my Lord feasted all the States most sumptuously, so that they had their fill both in their bellies, and heads. This day after dinner the souldiers of the Towne, which were three ensignes, came into the court furnished, and did there shew themselues with drum and fife: at night were aboue an hundred fiers brent about my Lords house. The eight and twentith of Januarie, companies mustered by T. Digs, muster maister generall in Guelder, Friesland, and Holland, were as followeth: Maister Noris colonell gentleman, 236. colonell Morgan two hundred & ninetie, Captaine Wotton a hundreth thirtie fiue, Captaine Powle a hundreth and seauenteene, Captaine Baskerfield fourescore, Captaine Yorke fourescore and fiue, Captaine Hummings a hundreth and eleuen, Captaine Vdall seuentie seuen, Captaine Powell ninetie foure, Captaine Hart threescore and eight, Captaine Price a hundreth twentie three. Captaine Wilson, a hundreth foztie fiue, Captaine Blunt a hundreth twentie seauen, Captaine Burrowes a hundreth and ten, Captaine Harstow, a hundreth twentie foure, Captaine Shawe, fourescore & foure, Captaine Enge threescore and nine, Captaine sir Walter Wallar a hundreth thirtie seauen.

The lieutenant feasteth the States.

Captaines with their companies mustred.

The second of Februarie, Captaine Willowby died at Hage, and was there honorablie buried. On the third of Februarie, all the yeomen of the guarde, tooke their oath, whom remitting to the conscience of their charge, we purpose now to touch the peremptorie authoritie committed to the said Lord lieutenant, by common consent of the States, and so by degrees to descend to other occurrents concerning these Nether-lands.

Captaine Willowby died.

A placcard containing the authoritie giuen by the States of the Lowe Countries, vnto the mightie prince, Robert Earle of Leicester, Baron of Denbigh, &c. for the gouernement of the said Lowe Countries: translated out of Dutch into English as followeth.

The generall States of the vnited Prouinces of the Low Countries, to all those which shall see or heare these present writings, health and dilection. Euen as it hath pleased her Maiestie of England mercifully to send ouer into these Countries the high and mightie prince and Lord, Robert Earle of Leicester, Baron of Denbigh, and one of the priuie counsell, knight of the noble order of the Garter, and not onely to admit and institute his Excellencie, as chiefe head aboue all militarie souldiers, on horse or foote, which her Maiestie hath sent, or shall send ouer hereafter into these Countries, and to the end to assist vs with

Title & state of Excellencie giuen to the earle of Leicester.

with counsell and aduise, according to his great experience, policie and wisedome in the direction of publike affaires of the land, as well touching the feates of warre, as otherwise, in conseruation of all that which most tendeth to the profite of the foresaid land, to bring backe and reduce the same into such good order and rule as it hath bene in times past, to the ende that so much the better and orderly, he may resist the force and tyrannie of our enimie, and to frustrate all his practises: but also beside this, to honor and inrich his foresaid Excellencie, with greater authoritie, might and commandement, aboue all her maiesties Admirals and Viceadmirals, and ships of warre, to command them all, and to imploy them to the seruice of these Countries, and in such order as his Excellencie shall finde needefull for the same Countrie: and that his Excellencie following her Maiesties commandement, desirous to shew the effect of the good will and affection which he beareth to these affaires, and to the preseruation of the same, and also of the true Christian Religion, and hath imployed himselfe so willingly in the foresaid matters, that his Excellencie for that onely cause hath left and abandoned his native Countries and goods, and transported himselfe hitherward amongst vs: so that her Maiestie and his Excellencie could neuer haue done or shewed vnto vs a greater benefite than this. Therefore are we resolued with good and ripe deliberation, to certifie all men by these presents, that we haue desired, accepted, and authorised the foresaid mightie and honorable Prince Lord Robert Earle of Leicester, &c. to be our gouernor and generall Captaine ouer all the vnited Prouinces, and associate Cities and members of the same. And we giue vnto his Excellencie, besides the authoritie of hir Maiestie giuen vnto him, the highest and supreame commandement, and absolute authoritie aboue and in all matters of warfare by sea and by land, to execute and administrate the same to the resistance of the enemie, euen as his Excellencie shall thinke most commodious to the preseruation of those Countries: and so further, to do all such things as appertaine to the office of a generall Captaine. And furthermore, we commit the administration and vse of policie and iustice ouer the foresaid vnited Prouinces, and associate Cities and members of the same into his hands, to execute and administrate the same with such power and authoritie, as haue had in times past all the other gouernors of these Lowe Countries before him, and especially, as haue bene exercised, and lawfully administred in the time of Charles the fift, reserued onely the Lawes and priuiledges of the foresaid Countries: also with especiall power to collect profites, and receiue, and administrate all the contributions, which are agreed and condescended, or shall hereafter be consented or agreed, to the maintenaunce of the warres: and also, that which is or shall be deliuered hereafter into his Excellencies hands: and this all according to the vertue of other letters and missiues written more at large touching the same agreement. All which former charge and commission, his Excellencie through our earnest desire hath accepted, and hath deliuered solemne othe and assurance into our hands: First of all, for the preseruation of the true Christian Religion, and maintenance of the priuiledges and rights of these lands and Prouinces, members, and Cities of the same. We therefore ordaine and commaund

maund all gouernours of Prouinces and cities, all Admirals, and Viceadmirals, all officers, Colonels, Captaines, their officers and souldiers by sea and land, and furthermore all other counsellors, officers, treasurers, receiuers, bailifes, Burgomaisters, Marshals, magistrates, gentlemen, burgers, and other inhabitants and subiects of these lands, of what qualitie or condition soeuer, that they and euerie of them do acknowledge his foresaid Excellencie in the qualitie of gouernment and captaine generall ouer the foresaid united prouinces, to honor, respect, and obey him as they ought to do, without making any difficultie in doing the same, vpon paine of falling in the displeasure and anger of his Excellencie, and to be punished according to the heauinesse of the fault, and as reason shall require. And to the end that no body should pretend ignorance, we command expressie to make knowne these ordinances, to proclaime and publish them, where as men are accustomed to proclaime all publications, proceeding, and commaunding to proceede with rigor against all disdainers and neglectors of the same, according to the order of punishment before mentioned, without any fauour or dissimulation to the contrarie, because we haue thought the same to be expedient for the preseruation of the Countrie. Giuen in our congregation and assemblie in the Hage, the 6. day of Februarie, 1586. by ordinance of the foresaid generall States.

This placard thus passed, the Lord lieutenant did ordaine certaine speciall men natiues borne, of the counsell, to the intent that such affaires as chanced to occur, might by them be conueniently managed: the names of which counsellors with the places of their charge I ouerpasse.

Hauing thus far discoursed of the lord lieutenants passing from place to place, and the manner of his entertainment: the obseruation of time doth vrge vs ere we proceede any further, to deliuer a peece of seruice done by colonell Skinke, and then to proceede in the commemoration of the lord lieutenants entertainement in other places.

Skinke tooke the towne of Warle.

On the 21. day of Februarie, Skinke not lying still from indammaging the enemie, did take the towne of Warle, and the castle thereto belonging, the maner whereof was thus: himselfe lying in Vendelo, a towne in part besieged, left his men with the Graue Maurice, charging thē not to depart till such time as they heard from him, which they fulfilled: he came with two or three men from Vendelo to his men, no man knowing his enterprise, caused them in the morning to be readie, and so passed on till mid day, at which time they were not far from Warle: Skinke espying a thirtie wagons, clad certaine of his men in the Bours apparell, sent them into the towne to sell the victuals, which they followed, and one of them brake his wagon in the gate, so that the gate could not be closed: One of them shooting off a dagge gaue Skinke warning, and he sodainely entred the towne without resistance, and tooke both it and the Castell. This towne is thought not so strong as profitable, yet verie strong. In it are diuers saltpits which do make great store of salt, which salt doth serue a great part of the countrie to Cullen, and further altogether serued the enemie of salt, which now he wanteth. About the first of March he left the Towne, burning it and spoyling the Countrey, the cause was this. There was an armie comming to lay his passage,

which

which he hauing 300. horſes did aſſaile, ſlue 1000. ſouldiers, tooke fiue enſignes and ſent to the lord lieutenant. Thus did valiaunt Skinke, whom we will leaue and returne to matter of delight.

On the firſt of March, the lord lieutenant came from Hage to Leidon, and the third of March from Leidon to Harlem, whoſe entertainement there was with orations, repreſentations, verſes, ſhewes, &c. not inferior to thoſe of other townes. On the fourth of March the Lord lieutenant, ſaw the Earle of Eſſex cornell, and ſir William Ruſſell cornell muſter and trayne by Harlem, to the number of two hundred horſe. He was there feaſted and banketted. And on the tenth of March he came from Harlem to Amſterdam, and by the way was met with diuers men of warre well ſhipped, which brought him by a long riuer that went into the Towne, ouer the which riuer were three ſtrong bridges, placed full of armed ſouldiers, on the firſt bridge was planted ten or twelue peeces of ordinance, which after his honor was paſt, were ſhot off, the ſouldiers on euerie bridge diſcharging by volies in braue maner: being paſt theſe bridges, he was met with two great pegeants in this maner: two boates were made in monſtrous greatneſſe, on the one the ſhape of a horſe ſwimming, on the other the likeneſſe of a fiſh, on each of them a man riding, ſignifying the god Neptune: both theſe, one on the one ſide, and the other one the other ſide, did accompanie him to his landing, which was at the market place, where were planted great numbers of armed men with ſhot. Right before him where he landed was a ſcaffold, whereon was placed diuers ſhewes and repreſentations, with verſes, &c. The day and night following fire works, and afterward banketting, &c. The 20. of March, the Lord lieutenant came from Amſterdam to a caſtle called Mullen, 4. miles from Nozden, and there did dine, and from thence he came to Nozden to ſupper and to bed. On the 22. he came from Nozden to Vtricht, where his receiuing was nothing inferior to moſt of the reſt.

The Lord lieutenant came to Harlem.

The Lord lieutenant going to Amſterdam.

The Lord lieutenant came to Vtricht.

On the 26. of March, the Earle of Eſſex went to Leger with his horſemen, where he began a new worke. The 28. the Earle was feaſted by Ezaue Maurice, on the which day in the morning there was charge giuen to all the Engliſh ſouldiers in the towne, that they ſhould march from thence to Hage, which for that they wanted pay they refuſed, and raiſed a mutinie, for the which one of captaine Polles men was taken and put in warde, whereupon the reſt of his followers ſeeing this, came to the gaole, burſt the locks of the doores, and tooke out the priſoner, for the which there was fiue apprehended, and three of them were hanged. On the ſame day was hanged the ſecretarie to the Countie Hollocke, which ſecretarie was a counſeller to the betraying of the Towne of Ezaue. The 30. of March, the Earle feaſted the Nobilitie and Bourgeſſes of Vtricht, where there wanted nothing that might fill their bellies or their heads.

Earle of Eſſex went to Leger.

A mutinie among the ſouldiers.

About the firſt of Aprill, Generall Noris tooke the ſconce called Lite. On the fourth of Aprill, was a hot conflict betweene the Male-contents & the Engliſh, the enimies being foure thouſand were vanquiſhed by Generall Noris with one thouſand men, whereof he loſt a great number, and ſlue 1200. Spaniards. The letter of Generall Noris to the Lieutenant I haue ſet it downe in maiſter Reine Woolfe and Holinſhed.

Generall Noris tooke a ſconce at Lite.

The

Feast of S. George obserued at Vtricht.

The three and twentieth of Aprill, the Earle of Leicester lieutenant, and gouernour generall of her maiesties forces in the Low countries of the vnited prouinces, making his residence at that time in Vtricht (a great and goodly towne vpon the frontiers of Holland) kept most honourably the feast of Saint George therein, the proceedings whereof being so princely performed to the honour of our nation in the view of so many thousand straungers, I could not chuse (hauing gotten the true and faithfull description, by one William Seager *alias* Portcloſe, an officer at armes in that seruice) to make some briefe remembrance of the manner thereof, to wit: The streetes of Vtricht being large and faire, were rankt and set with eight enlignes of Burgesses, richly appointed, wearing scarfes knit like roses white and red vpon their armes, betweene whom from the court of my Lord vnto the cathedrall Church called the Dome, the proceeding was on horse backe. First rode the trumpetters apparelled in scarlet, layd with siluer lace, sounding their trumpets most royally, their banner roles being displayed, and richly limed with my Lords armes: then followed the Gentlemen, Captaines, Colonels, and her Maiesties sworne men to the number of foztie horse, richly adorned in cloth of gold, siluer, and silkes of all colours. After came fiue Knights, foure Barons, with the counsell of Estates, the earle of Esser accompanied with the Bishop of Cullen Prince Elector, and the Prince of Portingale rode by himselfe: next proceeded the Captaine of the gard, the treasurer, and controller of the house hold, bearing their white staues: after whom followed two Gentlemen vshers, and Portcloſe herault in a rich coate of the armes of England: then came my Lord most princelike, inuested in his robes of the order, garded by the principall Burgers of the towne, which offered themselues to that seruice, besides his owne gard, which were a fiftie halbarders in scarlet clokes, garded with purple and white veluet. He being thus honourablie brought vnto the Church, after due reuerence done vnto the Queenes Maiesties state, which was there erected on the right hand, he tooke his owne stall on the left, by certaine degrees lower: then began prayers, and a Sermon made by maister Knewstubs my Lords chaplaine, after which, my Lord proceeded to the offering, first, for her Maiestie, and then for himselfe, the which he performed with such decorum and Princely behauiour, that all generally spake most honourably of him. These solemnities being done, his Lordship returned as he came, leauing behind him the Earle of Esser, and certaine Gentlemen to accompany the Princes and the Ladies of the court. His court was a faire and large house, belonging in times past to the knights of the Rhodes, in which was a very great hall, richly hung with tapistrie: at the vpper end whereof was a most sumptuous cloth and chaire of estate for the Queenes Maiestie, with her armes and stiles thereon, and before it a table couered with all things so requisite, as if in person she had bene there: on the left hand, almost at the tables end, was my Lords trencher and stoole, for he would haue no chaire. The tables being couered, and all degrees assembled, my Lord before the state of her Maiestie, knighted a Dutch Gentleman, called Martin Skinke, for his manifold seruices done to his countrie, the which done,

W. Seager.

Martin Skinke knighted,

done, the vshers marshalled the feast. At the table on the right side of the hall sate the yoong Prince of Portingall, the Prince elector and his wife, the Princes Simeie, the Earle of Esser, the Graue Mures and his Lady, and betwixt euerie Ladie was an English Lord, or knight placed. On the left side sate the States and chiefe Bourgers of the Towne, and the graund prior of Amerfoorde, (who came to see the feast) was by my Lords appointment placed vppermost at that table. Then began the trumpets to sound in the seruice which was most prince-like and aboundant, serued on the knee, carued and tasted to her Maiesties trencher. The side tables being furnished all in siluer plate, and attended on by Gentlemen, sundrie sorts of musickes, continued the entring of the first course, which done and auoyded, the trumpets sounded in for the second, which was all baked meates of beasts, and fowles, the beasts, as lions, dragons, leopards, and such like, bearing phaines or armes, and the fowles, as peacocks, swans, phesaunts, turkie cocks and others in their naturall feathers spread as in their greatest pride, which sight was both rare and magnificent. This seruice being placed on hir Maiesties boord, the beasts on the one side, & fowles on the other, the lion lying couchant at her Highnes trencher, the vshers cried, a hall, which being made, with much a doo (by reason of the multitude) they brought vp betweene them, with three reuerences to the state, Portclose Heralt, imuelled with the armes of England, who in Latine, French, and English, pronounced the Queenes Maiesties vsuall stile of England, France, and Ireland, defendresse of the faith, &c. crying three times, largesse. Then began the trumpets to sound, and the Dutch men to caroule to the health of her Maiestie, the welfare of my Lord, and to the prosperities of the united prouinces, and nothing wanted wherein either estate, magnificence, or ioy might be expressed. To be briefe the feast ended, and tables voyded, there was dauncing, vauting, and tumbling, with the forces of Hercules, which gaue great delight to the strangers, for they had not seene it before, and thus they passed the time, till euensong and then departed. At supper being all assembled againe, great was the feast, and plentifull the cheere: and after supper began the barriers betweene chalengers & defendaunts men of armes, wherein the Earle of Esser behaued himselfe so valiantly, that he gaue all men great hope of his noble prowesse in armes. The Barriers done, and either part retyred with equall praise, (though not with equall blowes) there was a most sumptuous banquet prepared of Suger meates for the men of armes, and the Ladies: which banquet being finished, my Lord wishing them all good rest, tooke his leaue, and so this honourable feast brooke vp about twelue of the clocke at midnight.

who promised to shew Portclose 70. ensignes that he had won in the field.

A sumptuous feast, and full of deuises.

On the 24. of Aprill, our English men that were in the enterprise before Graue retired, hauing set Graue in sufficiencie both of victuals and munition, and in their retrackt set vpon a sconce called Knols sconce, which was yeelded vpon composition. The next day our men or some part of them came before Emple sconce, and presently wan it without the losse of any man.

H. Archer.

Knols sconce won, & Emple sconce.

The 26. of Aprill, the lieutenant of Sir Martin Skinke, his maister being with my Lords Excellencie, knowing of a companie of footemen Spaniards, he with certaine of his horse laid themselues in ambush, set vpon them, killed thirtie of them,

them and tooke 81. and caried them to their garrison.

View of horsemen at Newkirke and boores taken.

The 4. of May, his Excellency did view all his horsemen, being in number about thirteene or fourteene hundred by Newkirke, on a great heath betweene Newkirke & Amerford. And this day his Excellencies gard being sent to Newkirke to keepe the towne, tooke a seuenty boores, that were purposed to haue spoyled Newkirke. The seuenth of May, his Excellencie remooued from Amerford to Arname, and passed through Reine, and Wagonet. Reine is a peper strong towne, situate on the riuer of Reyne, pleasant, and defenceable, roundly compact together. Wagonet standeth by a creeke of water comming fro the Reyne, and within twentie score yeards of the Reyne, this towne is a strong towne, and stands most pleasant, wanting nothing but peace. Arnam is a faire Towne, strongly enuironed with wals, rampiers, and other matter of strength, it also standeth on the riuer of Reyne, on the one side of the towne the ground is most fertile and pleasant, on the other side is a great heath most barren, all the countrey is spoyled, abbeys, faire houses, and dorpes are all wasted, neither any house standing, nor any man there dwelling. Ouer the Reyne against this towne is a sconce, onely for defence of the boores, if the enemy come to destroy and take from them their cattell, to which sconce both the boores runne, and also driue their cattell. Within one mile of this towne is the sconce of Arnam, which our English men won the last yeare, this sconce is wondrous strong, being compassed with such rampired wals, and deepe ditches, that it is almost inuincible. It standeth on the one side of the Reyne. At this sconce was captaine Henings a braue gentleman slaine at the winning of it, and there is buried: of other townes I leaue farther to describe, and turne to the accidents. The 9. of May, the Prince of Parma with others, came to view the towne of Graue, which a canoneere saw, and discharged his canon, wherewith he tooke away the hinder part of his horse, and missed the prince but a little, so that he bruised him sore. The same day they of Graue shot fire bals into the greatest sconce of the enemy, and by good lucke one of them lighted among the powder in the sconce, set it on fire, which with such violence brake foorth, that it blew vp the Spaniards most terribly, and layd the sconce flat. About this time the enemy battered the base towne of Graue, and presently vpon the battery entred, which the souldiers of the towne suffered, but in fine they set on them, slue 400. and purged the towne againe.

Reyne.

Wagonit.

Arnam.

Prince of Parma in great danger.

A great sconce fired.

Enemy repulsed out of Graue.

The 12. of May, sir Martin Skinke obtained a little peece of ground enuironed with water, neare vnto Nemegan, where he intrenched himselfe, so that the towne could not hurt him, and his ships of warre comming downe to him, nothing could passe by the riuer of Reyne to the towne but he commanded it. The 14. of May, our men lying at Nemegan sconce, there reuolted to them out of the towne two boyes. The fifteenth his excellency passed from Arnam to the campe at Nemegan: this day the castle of Lenow was yeelded him, and the same day came fiue boyes to our men from Nemegan. The eighteenth of May, the enemies entring Graue, lost 500. men.

Hemart, for his yeelding of Graue, comming to Vomell was there apprehended and caried to Vtricht, adiudged to dye, and was executed with two other captaines.

The

The 20. of May, early in the morning the strong fort of Nemegan was yeelded to his Excellencie in this fort, to depart like souldiers, which was graunted, and they to the number of 156. souldiers very braue passed by his Excellencies lodging at Brankharst: there was in all at the siege of this sconce of Nemegan slaine about fortie souldiers and pioners, and twenty hurt. Now to returne to other accidents, such as in the meane time happened in England. The strong fort of Nemegan yeelded to his Excellencie.

This yeare the Queenes maiestie tooke order for the peopling and inhabiting of the countries, late belonging to the earle of Desmond and his rebellious companions, to which end diuerse honorable and worshipfull gentlemen prouided to be vndertakers of signories there, whereof some went into the said countrie, others according to order taken, sent their people, amongst which were sir Christopher Hatton, sir Walter Rawlie, sir William Courtney, sir Richard Molineux, sir George Bourcher, sir Edward Fiton, sir Valentine Browne, sir Walter Lulon, Iohn Popham, her maiesties atturney generall and other. Desmond in Ireland peopled of the English nation.

The 19. of Januarie, Nicholas Deuorox was condemned for treason, in being made a Seminarie priest at Rhemes in Fraunce, since the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, in Anno primo of her Maiesties raigne, and in remaining here after the terme of fortie daies after the session of the last Parliament.

Also Edmond Barbar being made priest as aforesaid, and comming into this realme after the said terme of fortie daies, was likewise condemned of treason, and both drawne to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered on the 21. of Januarie. And on the same day a wench was burned in Smithfield for poisoning of her Aunt, and mistresse, and attempting the like to her vncle. Seminarie priests executed.

On the feast day of the purification of our blessed Lady, Doctor Iohn Whitegift archbishop of Canterburie, William lord Cobham, warden of the fiue Ports, and Thomas lord Buckhurst, were chosen and taken to be of her Maiesties priuie councell. Archbishop of Canterburie called to be of the priuy councel.

The 11. of Februarie, Thomas Louelace was brought prisoner from the Tower of London to the starre chamber, against whom her Maiesties atturney did informe, that the same Louelace, vpon malice conceiued against Leonard Louelace, and Richard Louelace his cosin germaines, had falsely and diuellishly contriued and counterfetted a very trayterous letter in the name of Thom. Louelace (another brother of the said Leonard and Richard then resident beyond the seas) purporting, that the same Thomas should thereby incite and prouoke the said Leonard to procure the said Richard to execute her Highnesse destruction with other circumstances of treason. This letter he cast in an open high way, pretending thereby, that vpon the discouerie thereof, his said kinsmen Leonard and Richard should be drawne in question for the treasonable matter against her Maiestie in that bill contained, euen in the highest degree, for which offence her maiesties atturney prayed, that the said Thomas then prisoner, might receiue condigne punishment. Whereupon the court adiudged that he should be carried on horseback about Westminster hall with his face to the horse taile, and a paper on his backe wherein to be written: For counterfetting of false and trecherous letters against his owne kindred, containing most trayterous matter against her Maiesties person. And frō thence to be carried in ẏ manner, & set on ẏ pillory in the palace at Louelace lost his eares for traiterously practising to enioy the goods and lands of his nearest kinne. Praise worthie iustice, the like whereof is to be wished to the like treacherous practiser, and libeller against his eldest brother, after he had defrauded him of his goods and leases.

at Weſtminſter, and there to haue one of his eares cut off: alſo to be carried in like manner into London, and ſet on the pillorie one market day in Cheape, with the like paper. After that carried into Kent, and at the next aſſiſe there to be ſet on the pillorie with the like paper, and his other eare to be cut off. Alſo to be ſet on the pillorie one market day at Canterburie, and an other at Rocheſter in the like manner: and at euery the ſaid places, this order taken touching his offence to be openly read, the ſentence whereof was duly executed in the pallace at Weſtminſter, in Cheape, &c.

Straunge ſicknes and death at Exceſter through ſtench of the priſon.

The 14. of March, at the aſſiſes kept at the citie of Exceſter in Deuonſhire before ſir Edmond Anderſon, lord chiefe Iuſtice of the common pleas, ſergeant Floriday, one of the barons of the exchequer, and other Iuſtices, there happened a ſtrange ſickneſſe, firſt amongſt the priſoners, and then amongſt other perſons, and beſides the priſoners, many of all degrees died thereof, namely ſergeant Floriday, ſir Iohn Chicheſter, ſir Arthur Baſſet, and ſir Barnard Drake knights, Thomas Carew, R. Carie, Iohn Forteſcue, Iohn Waldren, and Thomas Riſdone eſquires, and Iuſtices of peace: of the common people died very many, Conſtables, Rues, Tithingmen, and Iurors, and namely of one Iurie, they being twelue in number, there died 11. of them. This ſickneſſe was imputed to certaine Portingals then priſoners in the ſaid goale. For not long before, one Barnard Drake eſquire had bene at the ſeas, and meeting with certaine Portingals come from new found land, and laden with fiſh, he tooke them as a good prize, and brought them into Dorthmouth hauen, and from thence they were ſent, being in number about 38. perſons, vnto the goale of the caſtle of Exon, and there were caſt into the deepe pit and ſtinking dungeon. Theſe men had bene before long time at the ſeas, hauing no change of apparell, nor lyen in bed, and now lying on the ground without ſuccour or relicke, were ſoone infected, and all for the moſt part were ſicke, and ſome of them died, and this ſickneſſe very ſoone after diſperſed it ſelfe among all the reſidue of the priſoners in the goale, of which diſeaſe many of them died, but all brought to great extremities and very hardly eſcaped. Theſe men when they were to be brought before the foreſaid Iuſtices for their triall, many of them were ſo weake and ſicke, that they were not able to go nor ſtand, but were carried from the goale to the place of iudgement, ſome vpon handbarrowes, and ſome betweene men leading them, and ſo brought to the place of iuſtice. The ſight of theſe mens pitifull cafes, being thought to be hunger ſtarued, rather then otherwiſe diſeaſed, moued many to pitie them, &c.

Powell.

A ſtraunge worm found in the heart of an horſe.

The ſeuenteenth of March, a ſtraunge thing happened, the like whereof before hath not bene heard of in our time. Maiſter Dorington of Spaldwicke in the countie of Huntington eſquire, one of her maieſties gentlemen Penſioners, had a horſe which died ſuddenly, and being ripped, to ſee the cauſe of his death, there was found in the hole of the heart of the ſame horſe a ſtraunge worme, which lay on a round heape in a kall or ſkinne of the likeneſſe of a toade, which being taken out, and ſpread abrode, was in forme and faſhion not eaſie to be deſcribed, the length of which worme diuided into many greines to the number of fiftie (ſpread from the body like the braunches of a tree) was from the ſnowte to

the

the end of the longeſt greine 17. inches, hauing foure iſſues in the greines, from the which dropped foorth a red water: the bodie in bigneſſe round about was three inches and an halfe, the colour whereof was very like a makarell. This monſtrous woorme found in manner aforeſaid, crawling to haue got away, was ſtabbed in with a dagger and died, which after being dried, was ſhewed to many honorable perſons of the realme.

The eighteenth of Aprill, in the aſſiſes holden at London in the Iuſtice hall, William Thomſon alias Blackborne made prieſt at Rhemes, and Richard Lea alias Long made prieſt at Lions in Fraunce, and remaining here contrarie to the ſtatute, were both condemned, and on the 20. day of Aprill drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered. Seminarie prieſts executed.

The firſt of May, deceaſed ſir Henry Sidney knight of the garter, lord preſident of Wales, and was honorably buried at Penſhurſt in Kent on the one and twentieth of June. Sir Henry Sidney deceaſed.

The eight of May being ſonday, in the afternoone, Henry Ramelius chancelor for Germanie, ambaſſador from Fredericke the ſecond king of Denmarke, vnto the Queenes maieſtie of England, came into the riuer of Thamis with his ſhips ſo farre as blacke wall, where he was receiued by Gilbert lord Talbot, and by him conueyed by water along to Greenwich, and ſo to the tower wharfe, where he arriued and was honorably receiued of the lord Cobham, and other great Eſtates, and by them conueyed through the Tower ſtreete, Fanchurch ſtreete, and Grace ſtreete into Biſhopſgate ſtreete, to Crosby place, where he was lodged, and remained till he had finiſhed his ambaſſade at the Queenes charges, and returned on the 30. of May towards Denmarke. Ambaſſador from the king of Denmarke.

The ſeuenteenth of May, Philip earle of Arundell was conueyed from the Tower of London to Weſtminſter, and there in the Starre chamber, by the councell condemned to pay 10000. pound fine for his contempt, and to remaine in priſon at the Queenes pleaſure. Earle of Arundell condemned to pay 10000. pound.

A commiſſion was directed from her Maieſtie, tending to the ratifying of a firme league of amitie betweene her Maieſtie and Iames king of Scots, which league being articuled, commiſſioners were appointed, Edward earle of Rutland, William lord Euers, and Thomas Randolph eſquire, who with their traine came to Berwike on the 19. of June, where the ambaſſadors of Scotland being preſent, they accompliſhed the matter according to the commiſſion, the articles of the ſaid league in all and euery part ſufficiently confirmed on the firſt of July: which being done the ſaid earle of Rutland with his traine returned home, maiſter Randolph went into Scotland to take his leaue of the king, and returned into England about the 15. of Auguſt. League with the Scots.

The 18. of June, Henry Elks clearke and batchelor of art, for counterfetting ẏ D. ſign manuel to the preſentatiõ of the parſonage of Allſaints in Haſtings, directed to the archbiſhop of Canterburie, or to his commiſſarie generall (the dioces of Chicheſter being void) that he might be inſtituted parſon there, was drawne to Tiborne and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered. Elks executed for counterfetting the queenes ſeale.

A lotterie for maruellous rich and beautifull armor, was begunne to be drawn at London in S. Paules churchyard, at the great weſt gate (an houſe of timber & A lotterie at London for rich armor.

boord being there erected for that purpose) on S. Peters day in ỹ morning, which lotterie continued in drawing day and night, for the space of two or three daies.

Thomas Candish his voiage about the world.

This yeare M. Thomas Candish (hauing of his owne proper charges new built from the keele, and furnished with all things necessarie for 2. yeares prouision) a braue ship called the Desire of 140. tuns, and a lesse of fortie tuns named the Content, ioyning thereunto a barke of fortie tuns named the Hugh Gallant, (in which small fleete were 125. men) set saile from Plimmouth on the 21. of July, and began his famous voyage round about the globe of the earth, entring in at the streight of Magellan, and returning by the cape Bona Speranza, which voyage he finished in the space of two yeares, and lesse then two moneths, arriuing at Plimmouth the 9. of September in Anno 1588. of the which voyage & other ye may reade at large in a booke intituled, The principall nauigations, voiages, and discoueries of the English nation made by sea, or ouerland to ỹ furthest distat quarters of ỹ earth, published by Ri. Hakluit mailer of Art in An. 1589.

Seruices in Ireland by sir Richard Bingham against the Burkes.

This yeare (as in the last proceeding) fell great troubles in Ireland in Connaght, which because they are memorable, and no lesse happily then valiantly appeased, I will set downe the causes and foundations thereof, with all the particular seruices and successes, as I haue receiued them, confirmed vnder the hands and testimonies of diuerse captaines and gentlemen employed in the said seruice.

All Cõnaght quiet throgh sir R. Binghams good gouernment

In the moneth of September, in Anno 1585. at a sessions holden at Doonnemony in the county of Mayo, within the prouince of Connaght by sir Richard Bing. knight, chiefe commissioner and gouernour of the said prouince (sir Nichol. White Maister of the rols then being present, and employed with him for the perfecting of the last compolition made within ỹ said prouince) the countie of Mayo, and the whole countrie stood then in generalitie, through the good and politique gouernment, and the iust and vpright dealing of the said sir Richard Bingham on peaceable and quiet termes, without any face of alteration. And the most part of ỹ gentlemen and freeholders of that countrie resorted to the said sessions before: neuertheleslle, when now by meanes of this compolition & agreement betweene her M. and them, they perceiued ỹ the names, titles and superiorities of their chiefe L. and specially of M. W. the chiefest of the septs of that countrie should cease, extinguish, & for euer after be determined: it did not a little grieue them, although some of them not long before had expostulated ỹ like reformation. The plot of this compolition was deuised by sir R. of purpose, to take away the greatnesse of the Irish lords, with their names of Macs & Oes, that the inferiour subiect might be freed from their Irish customes, cuttings and vnreasonable exactions, & (by knowing what was their own) be drawne to depend euer after vpon the state, & not on those Irish lords or gentlemen: which also might not only much auaile her Maiestie in time of any stirs or reuolts (by drawing the common people from following the great & chiefe lords, but also bring a more certaine yearely rent, or reuenue into her highnes coffers then formerly was accustomed. When the people perceiued these their old customes & vlages like to take end, they deuised with themselues for the preuenting thereof, and according to their old customed manner, euer by them vsed in all their discontentments, they tooke vp their weapons, armed them against the state, thinking by stirs and broyles to winne the reuocation of this setled and determined resolution, and so to be left againe in their old customes and vlages.

A wise and politike deuise of sir R. Bingham to strengthen the gouernment and weaken the Irishrie.

The Irish fal into rebellió when they are discontented.

This their purpose appeared in one Thomas Roe Burke, a chiefe gentleman of that sept, who at this very instant, during the sayd sessions at Doonne-mouie, kept himselfe within a strong castle of his, standing in an Iland on Loghe make, euen within the sight of the gouernour and the other commissioners, refusing to come at them, albeit they had seuerall times sent for him. Sir Richard Bingham perceiuing that the coales of troubles were now layd together, and would shortly after kindle and become an angry fire, if the same were not politikely and warily preuented (dissembling the matter as if it were of no moment) he bethought him of the best and safest remedy to meete with this inconuenience. And knowing well that those Burks had euer bene very bad and loose people, such as very hardly continued themselues two yeares together with in a due course or compasse of obedience, he saw that the onely way to stop this gap, was either to cut off or to apprehend and lay vp in durance as pledges two or three of the best of that sept, such as were most dangerous for the inciting of stirs, and the drawing of others into action. And therefore vpon his returne out of that county to Roscomon, he dealt with the sherife of the county of Mayo for the apprehension of the sayd Thomas Roe. The sherife not long after sent his subsherife to put this matter in execution, who being resisted and hurt by the sayd Thomas Roe, and not otherwise able to apprehend him, wounded him in such sort as he therof died. This Thomas Roe, being thus slaine was not much lamented, no not euen of his owne kinded, for he was an oppressor of them, and doubtlesse it was thought by wise men that the death of this man, and the hanging of two others of that surname at Roscomon, which had deuised for the drawing of Scots into the prouince, had preuented the stirs and troubles that after ensued, and at that time seemed to haue a beginning, had not some men depending on the state) through enuy and malice to sir Richard Bingham & his good and happy gouernement) perswaded diuers others of that sept of the Burks to haue a care of themselues to be vpon their keeping, & to trust no officer, nor to come to any such till their pardons should be by them procured from the lord Deputy. These mens names I forbeare to remember, because they haue since that time made it knowne before the lord Deputie and counsell of the realme, that in giuing such caueats to ỹ Burks, they meant nothing lesse then to harten them into rebellion against the state, and to attempt such bad actions as afterwards they did. Of this counsell ỹ Burks (which of themselues were seditious inough, in whose minds did stil sticke the abolishing & taking away of their M.W. with their old Irish customes & cuttings tooke hold and conuerted the same to an apt & commodious occasion offred them, for their better assembling together into a conuenient number. And more effectually to win the harts of many men to follow this their intended enterprise, they made the Clandonnels, the Ioies, & most of the countrey beleeue, that sir R. Bingham hauing already taken from these men their ancient customes & liberties, would also deliuer the like measure to them, & take from them also their liues, if they did not well looke vnto themselues. By this meanes they drew many vnto them, perswading themselues that they might safely assemble together in companies without feare of interruption, for by the friendship of their foresayd counsellors which were in Dublin, their assemblies should there be thought as a thing by the done for their defence & safety. They also knew

Thomas Roe Burke would not come at the gouernour.

Sir Richard Binghams care to preuent a mischiefe.

Thomas Roeburke resisting the sherife is slaine.

These two were Moyler Oge Burke and Thebot Keoghe.

Bad officers vsed by men depending on the state.

The Burks turne the counsell of sir Richard Binghams backe frieds to serue their purpose.

Slanderous lies to set forwards rebellion.

The simple Irishrie are more wiser then we take them to be.

that sir Richard Bingham being restrained from following them in this or other their actions, without direction fro Dublin, could not stop or prevent them in their first beginning, by reason whereof they would in short time draw together & ioyne to them the greatest part of the countrey, whereof some should be drawne to assist them in open hostility, and some others in secret and under-hand dealing, of which sort the latter should still seeme subiects & liue as neare as they could in ỹ bosome of the state. And to make themselues the stronger, and to draw the whole prouince into action with them, they gaue it forth, ỹ their case was euery mans case within the same: And that as their ancient customes & liberties were infringed, and their liues sought to be taken away, so should it also fare with the rest of the said prouince. And here for an entrance into this rebellion, the sons of Edmond Burke of castle Barry being many (which Edmond was an old man, one of the competitors of ỹ M. William hip, & a most bad affected member to the state, and his wife as bad as himselfe, together with Edmód Kerragh Burke, Riccard Burke ỹ Diuels Hookes sonne, Moyler Oge Burke, Walter M. Danie Bane, Cahir M. Connell, and diuers others, associating vnto them many idle persons, entred into a castle in Loghmaske called castle Mccalley, and manned the same together with Thomas Roes castle, whereof mention is made before, which castle after Thomas Roes death, was now in the possession of his brother Riccard Burke called the Pall of Ireland: which castles they kept in rebellious manner against the state, refusing to come at any of her maiesties officers. About this time sir Richard Bingham lay at the siege of Clanowen in Thomond, a strong pile, manned and kept against her maiesty by Mahowne Obrian, a most dangerous enemy to the state, a chiefe champion of the Popes, and a great practiser with forrein powers, for the inuasion of this realme of Ireland. At this siege sir Richard Bingham had but 100. English souldiers, and some few kerne of the countrey, by reason whereof he was driuen to no small paine in skirmishing, watching, and warding with so few men: neuertheless, within seuen dayes after he wan the castle and slue the sayd Mahowne Obrian & the ward within, and rased the said castle, without the furtherance of any great ordinance. After ỹ sir R. marched from this castle to castle Mccalley, within the which the traytors were and inclosed themselues. At his first comming thither he parled with them, aduising them to remember the obedience which they owed to her maiesty, and to yeeld themselues to her maiesties mercie, alluring them that in so doing they should find that fauour in all respects that other her highnesse subiects did. But they (minding nothing lesse then to submit themselues, on any such conditions) sayd they would not do any hurt, but keepe themselues there in safety, for that they were fearefull to trust any Englishman, alleadging many friuolous and impertinent causes mooning them to stand vpon their gard. Hereupon sir Richard proceeded to besiege them in the sayd castle, which was a strong round fortresse erected farre within the Loghe, vpon a small compasse of ground, so scanted by the wall, that scarce a landing place was left vnto it. The siege was all by water in boates, and could not otherwise be attempted. Insomuch that sir Richard going about to burne a boate or two of theirs that they had docked and layd vp vnder the castle wall, to the end they might not escape away, and that also he might watch and ward them with few

Priuy traytors do more hurt then open rebels.

The rebels deuise to make the action generall.

Castle Mccalley manned and kept by the Burks.

Mahowne Obrian besieged in castle Clanowen by sir Richard Bingham.

Mahowne Obrian slain and Clanowen won and rased to the ground.

Sir Richard Bingham offereth mercy to the Burks, but they refuse it.

Castle Mccalley besieged by sir Richard Bingham.

men

men hauing but a small company there, and those also sore wearied, bruised with stones and galled with shot at the siege of Clanowen) was forced by the sudden rising of contrary weather, which much fauoured the enemy, to leaue the attempt with the losse of his boates, and two or three of his souldiers, himselfe and others being in the sayd boate, hardly escaped by the helpe of other boates, which other boates came not in time to his succour, through the negligence of such as he had put in trust with them, and appointed to come, and ioyne with him. The boate which he so lost the enemies gote, in which and in another boate of their owne (before sir Richard could returne to charge them with a fresh supply from his camp lying on the shoare) they shipped themselues, and with great celerity escaped into the woods, fearing that at the next charge, sir Richard would haue won the castle. Captaine Mordant and others had the chase of them by water. These traytours being thus escaped to the woods and mountaines out of the castle Mecalley, their accomplices also fled out of the other castle. Both which and one strong pile of Farrowe M. Donnels, sir Richard raised to the ground, for that they were not fit or stood seruiceable to be kept by the English, and were very dangerous to be in the possession of the Irishrie. Richard Burke *alias* the Pall of Ireland a man of no small account among his sept, and all the ill affected Irishry repaired to sir Richard at his first comming to castle Mecalley, being in deed the chiefe of their confederacy. This man vnder colour of dutifull subiection, intended to haue betrayed sir Richard and all his company: but (intelligence hereof being giuen, and many apparant proofes had of his trayterous intentions and deuises) this Pall of Ireland was soone executed by marshall law: this man was assuredly the most dangerous member in all the county of Mayo, especially for the drawing in of Scots, a thing which sir Richard euer doubted, and which the Burkes vndoubtedly intended.

Sir Richard Bingham frustrated of his purpose.

The traytors flie out of castle Mecalley.

Traytors of Ireland are cunning in running away.

Three strong castles ouerthrowne by sir Richard Bingham.

Sir Richard Bingham in danger to haue bin betraied.

Richard Burke the Pall of Ireland hanged.

After this the gouernour sir Richard Bingham tooke order for the following of those Burkes to the woods and mountaines, which were now growne to be some fourescore swords, he leuied some forces on the countrey, and with them and his owne company of an hundred souldiers, he so hunted them from bush to bush, and hill to hill, that in short time no newes was to be heard where any of them were. After this the gentlemen of the countrey which had not combined with them, seeing the rebels to be driuen to their holes and fastnesse in hiding manner, by meanes whereof the souldiers could do nothing vpon them, offered to sir Richard that if he would draw his forces out of the countrey, they would vndertake the seruice against the rebels, and either kill them, or banish them at their owne cost and charges, without abating any peny of the composition rents due to her maiesty by them in lew thereof: hereunto sir Richard assented, finding it a good policy to set one of them against another. But here hauing these bad Burks at a great aduantage, & in a hard distressed case) when they were thus at ẏ lowest ebbe, sir Richard receiued especiall and straite charge and commaundement from the lord Deputy to protect them, & he receiued also a protection ready signed by the lord Deputy to that end, which thing, though the matter and manner of it much grieued him, he handled it in the best sort he could to saue the credit of the state, and wrought deuises to driue them to seeke their protections, which when they did, he

The Burks were so hunted in the woods and mountaines that no news could bee heard of them.

The gentlemen of the countrey offer to pursue the traytors at their own charges.

The Burks are comforted and reprieued by a protection.

he granted it vnder his owne hand, and the seale of the prouince, as formerly was accustomed, and in such causes ought to be done. But although this was closely handled by the gouernour sir Richard Bingham, yet the Burks had intelligence that the lord Deputy had protected them, and commaunded the gouernour to performe it, which, as is to be gathered, they had learned from some well-willers of theirs out of Dublin: this made the gentlemen very high and hauty minded, and was to them a soueraigne preparatiue, for to vnderstate new and greater stirs and broiles then before they had begun. For the peace being such as the state offered it, and they sought it not, continued but a small time, although they had giuen in a simple pledge for the performance thereof. After the Burks were thus protected, sir Richard Bingham repaired to his dwelling house and from thence (vpon occasions) to Dublin, where he had not long stayed when the Burks reuolted againe now the second time, ioyning vnto them the Clangibbons, the Clandonnels, and the Ioyes in farre greater number then before, which sayd Ioyes, the more to manifest their bad and trayterous intentions, and the better to assure their complices of their fast dealing in this combination, murdered certaine of the officers of Connaught and their men, to the number of fifteene or sixteene. About this time order came from the lord Deputy for the leuying of mē within this prouince for the seruice in the Low countries. The brute thereof and the repaire hither of Francis Barckley sent by the lord Deputy for the leuying of the sayd men, caused many idle men who had no zeale to serue beyond the seas, to ioyne themselues with the sayd Burks then in action against her maiesty. And thus these Burkes hauing had an enterview of peace and a pawling time to gather head againe and increase their forces, stood on very lofty termes, and sayd they would haue a M. William, or else they would go into Spaine for one: also they would haue no sherife within that county, nor be subiect to answer in appearance at any assise or sessions. These points and termes they stood on, and articled the same accordingly, with many other vnreasonable demaunds which they would haue to be granted, or otherwise they wold in no wise yeeld to haue peace with the state. At the beginning of this second reuolt, for that the gouernor was willing to haue drawne them to peace (if by any reasonable meanes he might haue done the same without any indignity to the state) he sent vnto the commissioners, viz. the L. archbishop of Tuam, the L. Bremingham baron of Athency, T. Dillon esquire chiefe iustice of the prouince, Gerrald Comererford esquire atturney of the same, & others to parley with them, and to examine the cause of those their insolent attempts: vnto whom they answered in effect, as is aforesayd, deliuering them the sayd articles in writing. And euen during the time of the commissioners abode in the countrey, they did not forbeare to burne and spoyle the same. All which notwithstanding a time of peace was granted vpon conditions in a sort to their liking for eight dayes by the sayd commissioners, that in the meane time the lord Deputies pleasure might be signified to the gouernor how he would haue them to be proceeded withall, and direction sent accordingly. But (after this also was granted them) the commissioners were no sooner departed out of those parts, then they began to breake downe diuers castles, and to burne many townes in the plaine and champaine baronies. And the more to make knowne their trayterous and wicked purposes

Things closely hādled among the English, are neuertheless knowne to the Irishrie.

The Burks rebell the second time.

The Ioyes in Yrconnaght murder her maiesties officers.

The leuying of men to send into the Low countries, caused many idle persons to resort to the rebels.

The Burks stood vpon vnreasonable termes.

The gouernour willing to haue drawne the Burkes to peace.

purposes, they proceeded against her maiesty in most odious and vndutifull speeches, saying: What haue we to do with that Caliaghe, how vnwise are we, being so mighty a nation, to haue bene so long subiect to a woman? the Pope and the king of Spaine shall haue the rule of vs, and none other. Sir Richard (notwithstanding all this) did forbeare to raise forces, and to serue vpon them (greatly to his disaduantage) for that he had receiued many and earnest cautions from the lord Deputy to forbeare the beginning of any warre against them. But in the meane time the rebels grew to be very strong, and were now increased to the number of seuen or eight hundred men, and had also sent Edmond Kerragh Burke, and Iohn Icleaue brother to Walter Kittagh Burke to practise with the Scots, and to draw them into the prouince to their succour and aide, aduertising the Scots by the said messengers, that the time was then to subdue Connaght, for the queene had few or no souldiers in the realme, they were all imployed into the Low countries. This fire kindled and flamed in such sort that now it was high time to take in hand the quenching thereof: neuertheless sir Richard of himselfe durst do nothing against them, for that he was aduised and willed by the lord Deputy to do nothing in that case without his lordships aduise & direction, which (when he had long looked for) at length he receiued, although somewhat late, the effect whereof was, that the said lord Deputy & the counsell concurred in opinion with sir Richard, that the conditions which the Burks required were so vnreasonable, as neither subiect ought to demand the, ne yet the state (without great indignity) could yeeld vnto them, and therefore resolued and willed sir Richard to prosecute them with such forces as he had or could leauy, except he could find them to stand on more dutifull termes then afore is said. Hereupon the gouernor leuied such forces as he thought might suffice to answer the seruice both effectually and speedily, for he found and saw that lingring seruice could not but greatly charge her maiesty, and much encourage the enemie: (a soft kind of warre that hath bene too too long vsed in this realme.) First, hauing taken order for the assurance of the countrey behind him, he marched towards the countie of Mayo, the 12 of July 1586. with his owne garrison forces which were 100. footemen and 50. horsemen, and came to Ballinroba the 14. day of the said moneth: here he spent sir or seauen daies, as well in parling with the said Burkes, as also in gathering of his whole forces together, hither came to him the earle of Clanrickard with 30. horsemen and one hundred kearne, also many gentlemen of the countrey came hither, namely the L. Bremingham lord baron of Athenrie, sir Hubbert M. Dany knight, Teig Okelley, and diuers others: hither also came in the supply of forces which he had leuied within the prouince, viz. a hundred footemen of captaine Mordants, a hundred footemen vnder captaine Merriman, and a hundred footemen vnder captaine Mostean, besides diuers companies of light kearne to the number of fiue or seuen hundred: & then hauing imployed the earle of Clanrickard, the archbishop of Tuam, the bishop of Kilmore, the lord Bremingham, Thomas Dillon iustice of the prouince and others in parling with the Burkes one day, and finding that no reasons nor perswasions might win them to peace, he executed certaine of their pledges, which they before had put in for their loyaltie and good behauiour (for it appeared to this politique and wise gentleman sir Richard Bingham,

They giue ill speeches of her maiesty.

Sir R. great patience & discretion, more desirous of peace than warre.

The Burkes were growen to seuen or eight hundred men & sent for Scots to aid them.

The much abridging of prouincials doth hinder the seruice.

The L. deputie & counsell directeth sir R. to prosecute the Burkes.

Sir R. soone perceiueth discommodities of lingring wars.

Sir Richard Binghams forces drawe-eth to him.

The gouernor desirous to win the rebels by faire means.

Sir Richard executeth the pledges of the Burkes.

Bingham, that the sparing of rebels pledges heretofore had done no small hurt in this realme by incouraging thē to ill actions, trusting vpon the accustomed mercy shewed to the like pledges: and then he marched to the Abbey of Balleimabber, the two and twentieth of July: and from thence he sent his forces of footemen and kearne into the mountaines and woods to seeke the rebels in their fastnesse, which aforesaid forces was led by Captaine Iohn Bingham, who had the charge of the garrison band, which behaued himselfe so well therein, that within the space of fiue or seuen weekes they all submitted themselues to the state: himselfe with the earle of Clanrickard, and the horsemen kept the champaine and plaine countrey, as well for the defence of her maiesties good subiects in those parts, as also to keepe the enemie from escaping away from the forces sent into their said fastnesse. About this time there came an espiall out of Mounster, being sent, if it were as he said, as a messenger from those parts to Francis Barckley prouost marshall of Connaght. This espiall the more to incourage the traitors, and to animate others to ioyne with them, gaue it foorth, that the earle of Leicester was slaine in the lowe Countries, and the most of the English forces ouerthrowne there: that there were 2. great armies of Spaniards landed in England, and that there was a great nauy of Spanish ships in Baltimore, that the king of Scots was in armes against her maiestie, and that her highnesse was sicke, and in great danger of death: vpon which vntrue seditious rumor and report, sir Richad caused the Author and messenger thereof being a bad runnagate to be executed by martiall law. And now the footemen within the mountaines, and himselfe in the champaine, so hunted the Burkes and their accomplices from place to place, that within the space of three weekes they began to be tame, and they had taken from them in that time the number of foure or fiue thousand head of catteil, whereof sir Richard Bingham reserued towards the defraying of the extraordinarie charges of the iourney the number of one thousand. All the rest were bestowed on the captaines and their companies, and the officers of the field as booties, according to the customs in this countrey seruices, or else giuen to the kearne and light footemen as a consideration of their entertainments, which thereupon were discharged and dismissed from that seruice. Besides the depriuing these rebels of their catteil, as aforesaid, there were slaine of them about the number of fiue or sixe score of all sorts. The rest in short time after diuided themselues, flying from caue to caue, and from one groue of wood to an other, where they might best hide themselues, sending in messengers to the gouernor to beseech him of mercie and pardon, and offering to submit themselues with all humblenesse. Hereupon it was when they were thus broken, that the gouernor discharged the kearne he had, as aforesaid, together with all Irish horsemen of seuerall parts of the prouince, contenting all of them, either with some portion of the praies and booties gotten, or else with his owne money, his owne horsemen and footemen, and the three bands of supplies aforesaid he staied from the seruice for a space, as well to refresh them, as also to giue time and leaue to the enemies to come in freely without feare, which otherwise would haue possessed them, had the forces beene shut vp and downe in the woods. This being done they submitted themselues one after an other in sort following: Videlicet,

The English forces deuided into two companies.

Dangerous news spread in the campe by a Mounster messenger.

The lying messenger hanged.

Foure or fiue thousand head of catteil taken from the traytours.

The booty wisely conuerted to a good vse by the gouernour.

The Rebels are brought lowe, and offer to submit themselues.

Ewster

Ewster M. Donnell chicke of the Gallowglasses came in, submitted himselfe, & put in his sonne pledge for himselfe and his sept, the next Edmond Burke M. Richard Euerrine one of the strongest amongst them sonne to the last M. William came one, came in and submitted himselfe, giuing in his sonne as pledge: after whom William Burke *alias* the Blind Abbot the chicke of that surname, Edmond Burke of Castle Barry being dead, which claimed to be M. William, submitted himselfe very humbly, offering one of his sonnes as pledge. But (for that sir Richard liked not the sonne that he offered, but demaunded his eldest sonne whom he knew to be a good pledge) he departed againe, yet within two dayes after, when he saw the gouernour would haue sent in his forces amongst them againe, he came to him, submitted himselfe, and brought his eldest sonne for a pledge: Moyler Oge Burke submitted himselfe. The Ioies did in like manner submit themselues, and also Riccard Burke *alias* the Diuels Hookes sonne, all these gaue in good pledges for the obseruation of the peace. These men vpon their submission were so pined away for want of foode, and so ghastly with feare within seuen or eight weekes, by reason they were so roundly followed, without any interime of rest, that they looked rather like to ghosts then men. Edmond Burkes sonnes of castle Barry persisted still in the action. Their father was the man whom they sought to haue made M. William, till he was executed by course of the common law. This man was very old, yet was he put to death for these causes ensuing: he was a notable traitor, and the incourager of his sonnes to this action, during whose life, both they, and he, had a hope he should be M. William. To the end therefore they should be carried away no longer with the deceitfull wings of this vaine hope, and so the sooner drawne to submission, he was indicted, arraigned, condemned and executed, as in like cases is accustomed. The gouernor might haue hanged him by martiall law, but rather made choice to haue it orderly done, as aforesaid, to the end her maiestie might haue his lands by escheat vpon his attainder (for he had a good quantitie of land.) After this the said sonnes of Edmond Burke (seeing their father, and in him all their hope dead) offered to submit themselues, so as they might haue enioyed their fathers lands. But herein the gouernor referred them to the resolution of the lord Deputie and councell to be further heard in that point, which they somewhat liked of, and then they offered the eldest brothers sonne as pledge: but the gouernor refused to take any child or other pledge, sauing one of those brethren, which were in number fiue or seuen: but that they vtterly denied to do: whereby it was well perceiued they caried very bad intentions. At this time, whilest these men stood thus vpon the pinch of submitting them, newes came to the gouernor, that 2000. Scots came ouer ỹ riuer of Karne toward Sligo with Edmond Kerragh Burke and Io. Ireleaue, who were sent by the Burkes their kinsmen, as you haue heard before, to draw in those Scots for ỹ better defence of their quarell, which Scots were promised by the Burkes that they should inhabite the countrey, so as they would banish out the Englishmen & defend the said traitors. These newes hindred a thorough pacification within the countie of Mayo: neuertheless this prouident & circumspect gouernor sir Richard Bingham, hauing already reduced and brought things there to so good a state, as before is said, dispatched the earle of Clanrickard

The rebels were so followed, that they looked more like ghosts then men.

Edmond Burkes sons of Castell Barry persisted still in the action.

Edmond Burke of Castell Barry hanged.

The cause why the gouernor did do this execution.

The gouernors purpose in hanging of Ed. Burke tooke good effect.

Newes came that the Scots were entring into the prouince which reports hindred a perfect and finall pacification.

with

with thirtie or fortie horsemen, and two bands of footement, sending also presently after them another band of footemen, all which ioyned with George Bingham, esquier, brother to the said sir R. who was then shirife of the countie of Sligo, and leuied there some shot, and horsemen before the comming of the said forces. These companies being thus united, stood vpon gard and defence of the borders of the prouince, which caused the Scots not to make so much and so great hast to come forwards, as otherwise they would haue done. Sir Richard staied in the countie of Maio a small time after the sending away of his said companies, of purpose to order things there more effectually for the defence of the countrie, & for the prosecution of those few bad Burkes which yet continued in action against her Maiestie: which being done in such good sort as the danger and necessitie of that time could affoord, he then set forwards towards Sligo, with a hundred footemen and fiue and twentie horsemen that were remaining with him: but vpon his setting foorth, he had newes brought him, that the Scots were drawne through ORoweks countrie into the Mawghery or plaines by Roscomon to pray and spoyle the same, by meanes whereof he rode a great daies iourney, and came that night neere to Roscomon, and lay that night foure miles from it, from whence (vnderstanding contrarie that the Scots were betweene Sligo and Boundrois) he rode the next day to the towne of Sligo, being well-nigh three score English miles, but the footemen he left to march away after him with as much conuenient speed as they might. His highway was to passe by the abbey of Boile, where he found sir Thomas Lestrange, and other the risings out of the countrie, whom he had appointed to lie there for the defence of the countie of Roscomon, he left them there for that time, and so came to Sligo the eight and twentieth of August. At his comming thither he was giuen to vnderstand that the Scotes lay still incamped at the Earne, some on the one side, and some on the other side, to the number of so many as he was before aduertised, with some increase of horsemen and footemen, for sir Arthure Oneale, and Hugh M. Gwyer had ayded them with some forces, so as their forces was now about 2000. as it was said, of able men, besides women, boyes, and churles, whereof they had great store, I take it neere as many more, with great store of carriages. The comming of sir Richard so soone to Sligo, and the newes of the pacification within the countie of Maio, made them stay long about the Earne and Boundrois, either to expect more forces to come and ioyne with them, or some new broiles to be raised in the countrey behinde the gouernor by their confederates, which might cause him to deuide his forces, which were then foure hundred English and Irish, and about three score horsemen, besides the risings out of the countrey which were about a hundred horsemen and two hundred kearne: A force far too weake to haue encountred with the Scots, except they might haue bene gotten in a champaine ground. To which like place of disaduantage they had no intention to come. for of the 400. the Gouernor had 300. which were Irish, and for the most part men but newly trained. He wrote to the L. Deputie to send him 2. other bands of 50. horsemen, for that there was no trust in the Irish horsemen, which horsemen & footemen (if they had come sooner than they did) had either cleane discouraged or sufficiently withstood the Scots from comming into the prouince at all. Sir Richard lay at Sligo, & the foote

Sir R. staied himselfe to settle all things in the safest maner.

Newes brought to the gouernor that the Scots were come downe neere to Roscomon.

The gouernor rideth great iorneis for feare his complices & the Scots should meete before his comming.

Sir R. comes to Sligo.

Sir Ar. Oneale, and Hugh Mac Gwier aided the Scots.

The Scots were of all sortes betweene 3. or 4. thousand.

The cause why the Sc. staied about the Earne.

The Scots would not come into champaine ground.

The Scots were the bolder to passe forward into the countrey, because sir R. wanted supply of English forces.

foote of the Curlewes with his said forces fronting the Scots, and withstanding their entrie into the countrey (expecting still a supply from the lord Deputy) the space of fourteene daies: the Scots drawing on by little and little through O Rowrks countrey vpon mountaines, woods and bogs towards the Curlewes, with intention to passe that waies into Mayo, encamped ouer in such saftnesse as he could not by any meanes come at them, without great disaduantage. At the length although sir R. kept the passage straightly vpon them for the watching of which he was driuen to diuide his companies into sundrie places far distant from each other) yet in an exceeding foule, tempestuous & darke night, they deceiued him, for after he had watched & waited for their comming till 10. of the clocke at night, hearing before night ỹ they had remooued their campe, & were rather going backe againe then cõming towards him, he left to watch abroad any longer, & bestowed himselfe and his companies in places of succor, which he did, supposing that (by reason of the abundance of raine which fell that euening, their long absence till that time of the night, and the words of Occonnor Sligo, which assured him that the said Scots had incamped themselues againe for that night. But shortly after this, when the Scots, by reason of some espials of their owne, or some traiterous intelligence out of the gouernors camp, had vnderstanding that sir Richard and his companie had reposed themselues to rest, stale towards the bridge of Kilmowney, neare to which at a castell not far off sir Richard for the defence thereof had placed his footemen, and fiftie Irish horsemen, and so being come priuily to the bridge 3. or 4. hundred of them gate ouer the same before the English footemen came at them: who, as soone as they came in, beat the Scots backe and won the bridge. But here the Irish horsemen did no seruice at all: when the alarum was, sir Richard himselfe was at a place called Knocknulleyn about a mile from the bridge, being also an other passage, where it was thought the Scots would sooner haue passed ouer than at the bridge. At this place the bridge was the onely streight and passage that sir R. knew the Scots could find to passe ouer into the countrey by: but they contrarily waded ouer at a foord not far from the bridge, neuer before knowne by any of the countrey that had or would confesse the same to the English: sir Richard and the horsemen, vpon the alarum hasted with great speed to the bridge and rode ouer the same without danger both of the enemy and his owne companie (for the night was exceeding darke) and the bullets and arrowes flew to and fro, without regard of any man that might march or ride betwixt them, and hauing passed the bridge (although the ground were ill for horsemen to serue on) yet he charged the Scots, and killed and drowned about 40. or 50. of them. The most part of his horsemen here failed him, some, because they were far off, and the said Irish forces he remooued with his owne ordinary companies into the baronie of Tyreragh, which he chiefly did, for to saue the pray of that countrey which was great: he left the great mountaines of Slowgany on the left hand, which were before on his right, and marched downe 8. miles into the said baronie consisting of plaine ground with some bog in it of twenty miles in length, lying all along by the sea. In the same he came to a towne or village called Ardglasse, where he camped the second night, & hauing intelligence by espials that the enemy lay on ỹ other side of the mountaines, not far frõ an Abbey called Banneda

The Scots encampe in O Rowrks countrey.

Sir Richard reposeth him and his company to rest in a sore tempestuous night, the cause why.

The Scots come by stelth to the bridge of Kilyowney.

The English beate backe the Scots from the bridge.

Sir Richard lay at an other straite or passage.

The Scots find an vnknown foord to passe ouer.

Dangerous seruice.

Sir Richard charged the Scots.

Sir Richard doth remoone into Tyreragh to saue the pray of the countrey.

in

in marueilous fast and strong ground, he tooke with him good guides hip, he passed the sayd mountaines with his forces, and encamped that night at Dconron a towne of the bishop of O Hartes. At his being here he gaue it forth in policy, that the enemy was marching vp through Fallen toward the inner and ciuile countries, as the lord Bremingham's country, and the county of Roscomon. And thereupon he hasted by great dayes march to a castle called Moygary, which stood in a streight, and in a fit and apt place to answer the seruice vpon them, if they had passed into the sayd countries. Sir Richard did this, to draw the Scots into an assured beliefe of their owne security, to win such aduantage of ground of them, as afterwards was gotten. For vpon the newes of sir Richards returning backe, they grew somewhat carelesse, and perswaded themselues (as also they were informed) that he was returned home to Roscomon, and durst not by reason of his small forces encounter with them, as after shall appeare well. Lying at Moygary, the monday at three of the clocke afternoone, newes was brought him from his brother George Bingham, that an hundred footemen of maister vicepresident, vnder the conduct of lieutenant Hunt, had passed the Courlews, whereupon the gouernor dispatched messengers to them: whereupon they came vnto him the same night. The morrow after being tuesday, he remooued to a castle called castle Moze, in the barony of Costellogh 5. miles from Moygary, and a place as commodious to answer the seruice as the other was. Here came in to him 100. footemen of sir William Stanleis, vnder ẏ conduct of lieutenant Iaques, & 50. of sir George Bowchers footemen vnder the leading of lieutenant Day, with 25. horsemen of sir Henry Haringtons, & 15. of maister Wingfields. These men were brought in by captaine Gren Omoloy, whom he had sent forth for that purpose fiue or seuen dayes before. Lying here, sir Richard & his company were in some distresse for want of victuals, but he was supplied by captaine Woodhouse, who brought him some beeues out of the plaine and champion countries. At this place sir R. B. with his companies lay tuesday and wednesday till noone, for it was long before the beefe was killed and made ready to sustaine them. By that time the espials which were before sent forth to discouer the enemy, returned, bringing newes ẏ at their last remoone from Clamary, they tooke their way toward Irdnary, a castle neare to Tirawly, and standing on the riuer of Moine, thinking to passe that way into the barony of Tirawly. This being knowne, sir Richard dealt with his guide to bring him the nearest way he could thither. At 12. of the clocke at noone vpon wednesday aforesaid, he remooued frō castle Moze, & marched towards the abbey of Bauned, all vnder the high woods & mountaines, through a place called the Litter, in the barony of Costellogh, & came to the sayd abbey two houres within night. This abbey stands two miles from the woods in a plaine and open place: here the guide whose name was Edmond Mac Costellogh found out a priest which had that day broken from the Scots, with whom he had bene prisoner. The priest the sayd Edmond brought to the gouernour, of whom he learned most assuredly, that the Scots were all encamped at Irdnary, and had there proclaimed, that all the countrey was theirs, that sir Richard was returned to Roscomon, and that all his forces had forsaken him, and therefore whosoeuer would willingly come vnto them, should be friendly receiued to their fauour, and haue no hurt.

A politike deuise of sir Richard to bring the Scots into security.

The supplies sent by the lord Deputy.

Sir Richard in some distresse for want of victuall.

The scarcity of the campe supplied by captaine Woodhouse.

Edmond Mac Costellogh a gentleman of the country.

The Scots proclaime themselues lords of the country.

Sir

Sir Richard dealt with this priest to be his guide to bring him where the Scots were: but the priest durst not undertake it, except a couple of horsemen of the O Haries which he named might be sent with him: the governor willed him to fetch those two gentlemen of the O Haries, which he did, and returned to him againe an houre after midnight. These two gentlemen sent away two espialles to discouer the Scots more certainely, and about three of the clocke in the morning when the moone gaue light, sir R. arose, and addressing himselfe and his company, marched towards Belcleare 4 miles from the Abbey in the highway towards the enemie: here one of the espials came in, bringing newes, that the Scots lay still incamped at Ardnary, which was 12. miles from the aforesaid Abbey of Baundra, and 8. miles from the Abbey of Belcleare. At his marching from hence the night forsooke him and his companie, and they forsooke the highway and marched ouer the mountaines both horsemen and footemen, with all their cariages, carying themselues in a hearce altogether, keeping the bottoms and low places by circumferent waies, with as great silence as was possible. This mountaine was in breadth 4. or 5. miles, which sir R. with his forces past about nine of the clocke. And after he had marched a mile into the hard ground, and were not aboue two miles from the enemie, he made alte to draw all his forces together, & there gaue order & direction for the fight. From whence himselfe with his horsemen rode towards the enemie, and left the footemen to come after, with a speedy march. Sir R. with his horsemē being now come within halfe a mile of the Scots camp, sent out halfe a dozen horsemen as scowts aforesaid to discouer them, & the maner of their camp, which horsemen came euen amongst their cabbins, & gaue them a sodaine & fearefull alarum, & so retired to sir R. who that time came to the top of the hill neare to them, where he might take view of all the ground betwixt him & the castle where the Scots lay. Now he sent away post after post for the battell, and the loose shot to come in to him, for the enemie was risen and arrayed in battell, and made head towards him in their greatest brauerie: sir Richard entertained them with skirmishing to winne time, and draw them vp higher to the hard ground till the footemen might come in, who approched with such silence that the Scots neuer suspected any such companies to be at hand: but when the shot began to approch them, sir Richard charged them roughly, and throughly with his horsemen, beate backe their loose wings to their battell, draue them to a little bogue, and killed many of them. After which he againe retired, and caused some of his shot on horse-backe to alight from their horses, and therewithall entertained them with a second charge, about which time his loose shot, and the whole battell of footemen came in, and then the footemen charged them in the forewarde, and himselfe with his horsemen in the flanke, in such sort, that they soone discomfited and ouerthrew their whole force, and draue them to the riuers side, where he and his companie slue and drowned them all sauing 80. or thereabouts, which stripped themselues, and by swimming ouer the riuer of Boine into Tirawly, saued themselues, leauing their weapons & apparell behind them. There were no more saued of all their forces, and of all sorts of them but these, and a 100. and od that went the day before into Tirawly for a pray with some of the Burkes. But such as swam ouer the riuer, as aforesaid were afterwards killed in

Sir R. marched toward the Scots.

He giueth direction for the fight.

A scoute sent to discouer the Scots.

Sir Richard commeth within view of the Scots.

He skirmisheth with them.

He killeth some with his horsemen.

The Scots killed and drowned.

Scots killed in the county of Sligo by maister George Bingham esquire, and the gentlemen of the countrey.

in their returne and flying towards the north in the county of Sligo, by George Bingham esquire brother to the gouernour, being then chiefe of the county of Sligo, together with the helpe of the gentlemen of the countrey, diuerse also of them which were absent for this sayd pray whilest the battell was fought, and certaine of their horsemen, which were then also forraging abroad for horsemeate, were afterwards slaine in their returne and flying homewards, euen by some such as when they came first forwards and were strong, were their great friends. The number of fighting men slaine and drowned, as hath bene well knowne and tried out, were fourteene of fifteene hundred, besides horse and foote boyes, women, churles, and children were as many more, so as in the whole there died of them that day and the day after in their flying homewards, three thousand persons, and of the English companies were not slaine past two persons, and those also through their owne folly in being too forwards for the spoyle, but many men and horses were hurt and galled. This day the chiefest leaders of them, Iames Mac Connels sons, viz. Donnel Gocum, & Alexander Carragh were slaine, together with all the rest of their leaders, and the chiefest Burks which drew them into the prouince. In this seruice was imployed vnder sir R. Iohn Bingham captaine of 100. footemen, Nicholas Mordant captaine of the like number, captaine Merryman of the like company, William Mollean captaine of the like number, besides the lieutenants afore rehearsed sent from the lord Deputy, and certaine leaders of horsemen. And besides captaine Woodhouse, captaine Greene, which had no charge, and maister Newton, and captaine Betaghe, which had charge of some horsemen, the whole cõpany were in name about 600. footemen, and by poll about 500. besides 90. horsemen, whereof fifty were of the garrison of the prouince, and the other forty were sent by the lord Deputy. This ouerthrow was great, and the paines and policies therein taken and vsed great, but the seruices in Balo, the watching & trauels at the streights before the Scots came into the countrey was much more greater: but the wonderfull care and industry of sir Richard in those seruices, which continued out in it 13. or 14. weekes together, not once comming home to his house in that time, and faring hardly, and lying on the ground and on straw a great part of the sayd time was to be noted, and in him highly commended. Yea ouer and aboue all this, although he erected three seuerall companies of footemen, each of them consisting of a hundred men with their officers, and certaine horsemen which continued in pay during all the sayd time, besides fiue or six hundred kearne, which also had pay ouer and aboue her maiesties allowance, yet he so handled the matter, that with the goods of rebels, which by strong hand he got from them, and with 3. or 4. hundred pound of his mony, he defraied the extraordinary expences of the sayd seruices, not charging her maiesty with any one groate thereof, or any of the subiects of the countrey either for victuals or any other thing, other then some small matter, which the risings out brought, or which souldiers in comming to him or going from him eate, where they came for a night in a place: yea he charged himselfe in this case (that being scanted of powder from her maiesties store in Dublin) he was driuen to furnish himselfe thereof, for his ready mony in Galway. Lastly, this seruice was such as drowned and cut off all the old beaten Scots which vsed to haunt Ireland, insomuch that now (it is sayd) there are not forty such to

Some of the Scots slaine by their old friends.

Scots slaine and drowned 3000.

Two of the Englishmen slaine.

The names of the captaines imployed.

The number of the English forces.

The great troubles and cares taken by sir Richard.

The good husbandry of sir Richard for the queene.

He spared not his owne purse to further the seruice.

Sir Richard forced to buy his powder.

The ouerthrow of the Scots.

beare

such is beare vp head in all that realme of Ireland to the great behooke and comfort of the same, to the great ease and benefite of her Maiestie, and to the eternall commendations of this worthie gentleman sir Richard Bingham for euer.

In the moneth of July, diuerse trayterous persons were apprehended, and detected of a most wicked and detestable conspiracie against her Maiestie, and also of minding to haue stirred vp a generall rebellion throughout the whole realme: for ioy of whose apprehension, the citizens of London on the 15. of the same moneth at night, and on the next morrow caused the bels in the churches to be rung, and bonefires in their streets to be made, and also banquetted euery man according to his abilitie, some in their houses, some in the streetes with singing of Psalmes & praising God, for preseruing her Maiestie and people of this land, which doings of the citizens were so well accepted of her Maiestie, as by her letters to them directed may appeare, the copie whereof being read openly in a great assembly of the commons in the Guild hall of that citie the 22. of August, before the reading whereof, master Iames Dalton one of ỳ Counsellers of that citie, in the absence of ỳ Recorder, made this speech hereafter following. But first her Maiesties letters. Great reioycing for apprehending of traitors.

To our right trustie and welbeloued, the lord maior of our citie of London, and his brethren the aldermen of the same.

Right trustie and welbeloued, we greet you well, being giuen to vnderstand how greatly our good and most louing subiects of that citie did reioyce at the apprehension of certaine diuellish and wicked minded subiects of ours, that through the great and singular goodnesse of God haue bene detected, to haue most wickedly and vnnaturally conspired, not onely the taking away of our owne life, but also to haue stirred vp (as much as in them lay) a generall rebellion throughout our whole realme: we could not but by our owne letters witnesse vnto you the great and singular contentment we receiued vpon the knowledge thereof, assuring you, that we did not so much reioyce at the escape of the intended attempt against our owne person, as to see the great ioy our most louing subiects tooke at the apprehension of the contriuers thereof, which to make their loue more apparant, they haue (as we are to our great comfort informed) omitted no outward shew that by any externall act might witnesse to the world the inward loue and dutifull affection they beare toward vs. And as we haue as great cause with all thankfulnesse to acknowledge Gods great goodnesse towards vs, through the infinite blessings he layeth vpon vs, as many as euer prince had, yea rather, as euer creature had: yet do we not for any worldly blessing receiued from his diuine maiestie so greatly acknowledge the same, as in that it hath pleased him to incline the harts of our subiects euen from the first beginning of our raigne, to carrie as great loue towards vs as euer subiects caried toward prince, which ought to moue vs (as it doth in very deede) to seeke with all care, and by all good meanes that appertaine to a Christian prince, the conseruation of so louing and dutifull affected subiects: assuring you that we desire no longer to liue, then while we may in ỳ whole course of our gouernment cary our selfe in such sort, as may not only nourish and continue their loue and good will towards vs, but also increase ỳ same: we thinke meete, that these our letters should be communicated in some generall assembly to our most louing subiects the commoners of that city. By the Queene to the Lord Maior of of London, her letters.

Giuen vnder our signet at our castell of Windsor the 18. of August 1586. in the 28. yeare of our raigne.

Maister Iames Dalton his oration.

Right worshipfull, my good countrie men and citizens of this most noble citie of London: since the late bruite and report of a most wicked and traiterous conspiracie, not onely to take away the life of our most gracious Soueraigne, (whome God graunt long to liue and raigne ouer vs) but also to stirre vp a generall rebellion throughout the whole realme: the great and vniuersall ioy of you all of this citie, vpon the apprehension of diuerse of that most wicked conspiracie, of late declared and testified by many outward acts and shewes, hath wrought in the Queenes most excellent maiestie such a gracious contentment, that it hath mooued her Highnesse by her letters signed with her owne hand, to signifie vnto my lord maior of this citie and his brethren, her most noble and princely acceptation thereof, and that in such sort as thereby may appeare, that her Highnesse hath not more, no not so much reioyced at the most happie escape of the wicked mischiefe intended against her owne person, as at the ioy which her louing subiects, and namely you of this citie of London tooke at the apprehension of the practisers of that intended treason. By occasion whereof her highnesse brought to a thankfull remembrance and acknowledging of Gods infinite blessings bestowed on her, comparable with any prince or creature in the world, no worldly thing more or like accounteth of, then of the heartie loue of her louing and faithfull subiects many waies and many times before now, but especially by this our great ioy in this sort at this time, and vpon this occasion shewed.

And that her exceeding great loue and acceptation of our reioycing may the more appeare vnto you, it hath pleased her Highnesse in the same letters to declare, that she desireth not longer to liue among vs, then she shall maintaine, continue, nourish and increase the loue and good will of her subiects towards her. And this her Highnesse hath willed to be made knowne vnto you all, with this, that she will not faile with all care, and by all good meanes that appertaine to a Christian prince, to seeke the conseruation of you all so louing and dutifully affected subiects. This her maiesties pleasure in part now declared, and more to be made knowne to you by her owne letters, which you shall heare read: my lord maior and his brethren haue required me to declare vnto you all, that they do highly reioyce and thanke God for the happie day of the good acceptation of this your great ioy, and my lord himselfe hath willed me to giue you all heartie thankes in his name, for that in the time of his seruice your dutifull behauiours haue gotten to the citie so noble and worthie a testimonie of dutie and loyaltie of so noble and worthie a Queene. Now for as much as Gods blessings wonderfully abound, and one ioy comes vpon another, let vs not be vnthankfull to God, but acknowledge his goodnesse, and attribute the same (as indeede we ought) to the sincere religion of Almightie God, most godly established by the Queenes most excellent Maiestie, which hath taught vs to know God aright, our dutie to our Soueraigne, and to loue our countrie, and hath made vs dutifull and obedient subiects, reioycing at all good things happening to her Maiestie, her realme, or to any in her noble seruice, the true effects of a true and good religion: whereas the contemners thereof, and immoderate affecters of the Romish religion, and superstitions,

tions, being voide of the true knowledge of God, haue declined from God, their allegeance to their prince, their loue to their countrie, and haue become inuentors of mischiefes, hunters and spreaders abrode of false and seditious rumours, such as ioy at no good thing, but contrariwise reioyce at euery euill successe, the badges and markes of their profession, who haue before this, in this realme and in other her highnesse dominions, stirred vp rebellion, forraine inuasion, and many times practised the very death and destruction of the Queene her selfe, the ruine and subuersion of the whole realme, the proper effects of their Romish religion. We haue beheld all these things, and seene in our daies the ruine and mischiefes inuented against others, fall vpon the inuentours themselues: and haue knowne the wicked and violent hands of diuerse of them, diuellishly to kill and murther themselues, when most trayterously they would, and most happily they could not slay the Lords annointed. As we haue knowne all these things, so God be thanked, that by a better religion, hauing bene better taught, we haue bene no partakers of their wicked deuises, but haue put to our helping hands as occasion hath serued, and euer readie to ouerthrow the authours and deuisers thereof. And I haue no doubt, but we of this noble citie, who hitherto haue bene alwaies readie dutifully and faithfully to serue her Maiestie vpon all occasions (her Highnesse now so graciously accepting onely of our reioycing at the apprehension of her enemies, euen the least part of the dutie of a good subiect to so good a Queene) will be readie euery one with all that he can make, and with the vttermost aduenture of all our liues, speedily to be reuenged vpon all such as shall diuellishly and traiterously attempt or put in vre any mischiefe to her noble person, and in the meane time will haue a better eye and care to all suspitious and miscontented persons, to their sayings and doings, to their false bruits and reports, to the places and corners of their haunt and resort, to their harborers, companions, aiders and maintainers.

God vphold and continue his religion among vs, and increase our zeale therein, which hath made vs so louing and loyall, and so beloued and acceptable subiects to so worthie a prince, and roote out that wicked and Romish religion, that hath made so many disloyall and trayterous subiects: to whom is both odious and irksome the long life and prosperous raigne of our most noble Queene Elizabeth. God confound all such traitors, and preserue her Highnesse long to liue and raigne ouer vs.

The 7. of September, certaine of these diuellish and wicked subiects were indicted: first, for intending treason against the Queenes owne person: secondly, for stirring ciuill wars within the realme: and thirdly, for practising to bring in forraine power to inuade the realme: seuen of them appeared at Westminster on the 13. of September, who all pleaded guiltie and were condemned, but had iudgement on the next morrow. On the 15. of September, other seuen were likewise arraigned, who pleading not guiltie, were found guiltie by ẏ Jury, & had iudgmẽt. Traitors indicted.

These traytors 14. in number, were executed in Lincolnes Inne fields on a stage or scaffold of timber strongly made for that purpose, euen in the place where they had vsed to meete and to confer of their trayterous practises, there were they hanged, bowelled, and quartered, seuen of them on the 20. of September, to wit, Traitors executed.

I. Ballard priest, Anthony Babington esquire, I. Savage gentleman, Rob. Barnwell gentleman, Chidioke Tichborne esquire, Charles Tilney esquire, Ed. Abington esquire. The other seuen were likewise executed on the 21. of September, to wit, Thomas Salisbury esquire, Henry Dun gentleman, Edward Iones esquire, Iohn Trauerse gentleman, Iohn Charnocke gentleman, R. Gage gentleman, Ierom Bellamie gentleman, &c. as I haue more at large set downe in Reign. Wolfs and Holinsheds chronicle.

The Royall Merchant and other foure ships of London their victory against 13. gallies of Castile and Malta.

The merchants of London being of the corporation for the Turkie trade, intending onely a merchants voyage, prouided and furnished with all things belonging to the seas, fiue tall and stout ships appertaining to London, to wit, ỳ Merchant Royall, the Tobie, the Edward Bonauenture, the William and John, the Susan: these fiue departing from the coast of England in the moneth of November, 1585. kept together as one fleete, till they came as high as the isle of Sicilie within the Leuant, where each ship tooke leaue of the rest, and separated themselues to particular ports, whereunto they were bound, one for Tripolis in Syria, and other for Constantinople, and the rest to other places: but before they deuided themselues they agreed, after the lading of their goods at their seuerall ports, to meete at Zante an yland neare to the maine continent of the west part of Morea. These accordingly (their businesse first performed) failed not to keepe promise, and arriued at Zante within the compasse of the time afore limited, here they staid in this port till the necessities of each ship were supplied, and nothing wanted to set out for their returne. In this port the newes was fresh of two seuerall armies and fleetes lying in await to intercept them, the one consisting of thirtie strong gallies, and that fleete houered about ỳ straits of Gibzaltare. The other army had in it twentie gallies, whereof some were of Sicily, and some of the yland of Malta, vnder the charge of Iohn Andreas Dorea a captaine seruing ỳ king of Spaine. The Merchant Royall was appointed admirall of the English fleete, & the Tobie vice-admirall, by whose orders the rest promised to be directed, and each ship vowed not to breake from the other. Thus in good order they left Zante, & committed themselues to the seas, and proceeded in their course without sight of any enemy, till they came neare to Pantalarea an yland betweene Sicilie and ỳ coast of Affrike, into the sight whereof they came the 13. of July, and the same day they descried thirteene sailes, 11. gallies, and two frigots lying in waite for them. As soone as the English ships had espied them, they made themselues readie to fight, the gallies more and more approched them, and in their banners the armes of Sicilia & Malta: they sent their frigots to our admirall, demaunding of him whence they were: who answered, of England: they asked why they delayed to send or come to Don Pedro de Luna their Generall, to acknowledge their dutie to him in the name of the Spanish king lord of those seas: our men replyed, ỳ they ought no such dutie to him, nor would acknowledge any, &c. Whereupon in the end the fight began betweene them, and continued very hote for the space of fiue houres, what slaughter was made among the Spaniards the English men were vncertaine: but they supposed the same to be so great, ỳ they wanted men to continue ỳ charging of their peeces: whereupon with shame they withdrew themselues, and the Englishmen contented in respect of their deepe lading, rather to continue their

voyage

voyage then to follow the chase, ceassed from further blowes, with the losse onely of two men slaine and one other hurt in the arme, whom maister Edward Wilkenson captaine of the admirall, with his good word did so comfort, that he nothing esteemed the smart of his wound in respect of the honour of such a victorie, and shamefull repulse of the enemie. The English ships proceeded in their nauigation as high as Algier, a port towne vpon the coast of Barbarie, where they refreshed themselues, and tooke such supplie of fresh water and victuals as they needed, and put to the sea looking to meete with the second armie of the Spanish king, which waited for them about the mouth of the streight of Gibraltare, which they were of necessitie to passe: but comming neare to the said streight, it pleased God to raise a very darke fog, so that one ship could not discerne another, by meanes whereof, together with the faire easterne winde that then blew, they passed with great speede through the streight: but yet the Spanish gallies had a sight of them when they were come within three English miles of the towne, & made after them in all hast possible, but in vaine: they shot off their ordinance in the sea, as if they had bene in the midst of them. But thus it pleased God to deride and delude all the forces that the king of Spaine had prouided to distresse the English, who notwithstanding passed through both his armies: in the one little hurt, and in the other nothing touched, and arriued at Crith the 18. of September, in the yeare of our lord, 1586.

H. Archer.

Seruice in the Lowe countries by his Excellencie.

Now to returne to the seruice in the Low countries done by his Excellencie & other vnder his charge, after the yeelding of the strong fort of Nemegan, which was on the 20. of May, as ye haue heard before: it followeth, that on the 21. of May, his Excellency returned to Arnam, and there soiourned. On the 22. of May, there passed towards Barrikes hooke 11. or 12. hundred men most brauely furnished of our English natiō. The 25. of May, was brought before Barrikes hooke sconce two canons, which shot at the sconce that day, & on the next morrow in the morning was the same sconce yeelded to his Excellencie, the soldiers putting themselues to his mercie, who pardoned them, & let them passe with life onely. In this sconce were found aliue about 60. persons, the rest were slaine in the siege. At the yeelding of this sconce coūty Hollocke found one of his cosins, which when he beheld, he said, Ha villaine, art thou become a traitor to thy country & his excellencie? I auouch, ỹ thou art none of my blood, & with his rapier thrust him in & slue him.

Berke hooke woon.

County Hollocke.

The 24. day of May, the enemy played before Graue with their ordinance, and presently assailed it, but they of the towne being led by the county Embrigh did repulse them so sufficiently, that the enemy lost neare a thousand men.

An ouerthrow giuen to the enemie at Graue.

On Whitsunday, Peregrine Bartie, lord Willoughby of Eresbie lying at Berganaplome, vnderstanding of a great conuoy that was comming to Antwerpe, set vpon it, and tooke it, there were of wagons 480. laden with victuals, oyle, salt, and wine taken, which had to draw those wagons a thousand mares and horses, there were 200. men slaine by our horsemen and footemen, and 400. taken prisoners that were sent with the conuoy to haue the defence thereof. The Lord Willoughby tooke a threescore wagons into his towne of Berganaplome, and burned the rest, and for the salt, oile, and wine, he brake vp the heads of the vessels, and let them be spoyled.

Lord Willoughby tooke a conuoy at Antwerp.

Bariks hoofe sconce ouerthrowne.

The 30. of May, sir Iohn Norris was sent to take order for the ouerthrowing of Bariks-hooke sconce, which was done, for that it was thought not meete to be kept with men, his Excellency hauing the sconce at Nemegan that kept the riuer of Wall, and the sconce made by Skinke at Thelhouse kept both the riuer of Wall and the Reine, for that this sconce standeth at the entrance of these two great riuers: And for that his Excellency had Arnam sconce at the ioyning together of Isell, Reyne, and Dowborough riuers. In this meane time, to wit, on the 26 of May, the enemy spared no kind of shot to annoy the towne of Graue, but thundered with canons at it as it had bene musket or caliuer. He had at it 8. canons, 20. smaller peeces, as culuerings and demy canons, &c. The Graue of Embrickeseeing the assault to be so hot, and fearing the event (although he had written to his Excellency that he should not care for Graue, but go about his other businesse) on the 27. of May entred parley with the enemy, and presently let in his souldiers, which seeing certaine English men and others more faithfull then the rest, straight tooke a place of strength, and kept without victuals three dayes in despite of the enemies, and after seeing no way to be releeued, they departed by composition. And thus was the strong towne of Graue lost by the county Embrough, who after came to Hulsdon, sent for foure of the burgesses of the towne, for what purpose was not knowne, but thought to perswade them to betray the towne, but 3. of them returned, the fourth not found, but thought to be with ỹ prince of Parma. As for the county Embrough as he was walking with 3. or 4. other captaines of Graue, he was with 4. other captaines surprised by some of our side, & brought to his Excellency on the 2. of June to Brunkhurst, & were committed to prison.

Graue lost to the enemy.

His Excellency remoueth from Arnew to Nemegan.

The last of May, his Excellency with his whole companies of souldiers and gentlemen passed from Arnew to the campe before Nemegan, where his pauilion was pitched, and presently he sent a 2000. men toward Tille, to keepe the water from the enemies passage.

Tille and the Amon thereof, his strãge dealings with messengers.

The fourth of June, his Excellency first hauing sent Skinke and captain Williams, with diuers other coronets of horse and gentlemen, towards Uendolo (for that the prince of Parma had begun to beliege it) came from the legar at Nemegan to Tille where he rested that night. The gouernour of Tille, called the Amon being a man of great courage, and a protestant, vsed the prince of Parma in this sort, the prince sending a trumpeter to parley with him, he straight mayes without any talke hanged him vp. The prince wondering he heard not of his trũpeter, sent a drumme to know what was become of him, vnto whom the Amon answered, your trumpeter is hanged, and thou shalt be drowned, & so it was done without any more words. This towne is situate in the Betto, whose ground is the most fertile or onely place of fertility in Guelderland. The towne is strong, the one side the Amon may at his pleasure drowne, the other is so strong with rampires, wals, and forters, that the Amon protesteth that he regardeth no prince or princes power in the world. He hath halfe a score ships of war at his appointment, whereby he commandeth all the waters about him, he hath alwayes shewed a singular loue to our nation, especially to his Excellency, insomuch that he vowed to keepe the towne to his vse, so long as he liued.

The 6th of June, his Excellency passed from Tille to Bomell, there was the castle

castle of the Warneborough, and for that he tooke part with the prince of Parma, his house was brent and spoyled. The beauty of the towne of Bomell is in two streetes, crossing one the other, very large and faire, at the crossing of which streete, there is a very faire market place, the towne is strong though little, and sufficiently appointed with ordinance and munition. It standeth in an Iland very fertile and sweete, having such store of orchards, gardens, and other pleasures, as it passeth all others: on the top of the steeple of the church in this towne, the country lieth so plaine about it, that one may see all these townes following, Nemegan, Waganing, Arnam, Reyne, Wicke, Colinborough, Utrike, Viana, Gurcom, Hulson, Fatinghamballe, Graue, Tille, Haorle castle, and Baryn castle. The towne of Bomell. Warneborow castle spoyled.

The 9. of June, his Excellency came from Bomell to Garcome downe the riuer Walle, leauing at Bomell a garrison of three hundred Dutchmen, with those of the towne, who at the first could hardly brooke the garrison, till they were perswaded by county Hollocke passing toward the towne. There was fire or seuen enlignes of his Excellencies souldiers on the banke of the riuer, which did discharge braue bolles of shot, then was there on each side the riuer a mightie sconce full of souldiers, which gaue their bolles of shot, then the ordinance of the towne went off: and entring the towne, he was entertained by the Burgesses, and passing through the towne, on both sides were placed souldiers in great number. On the next morrow his Excellency went into the castle of the towne, which is marueilous strong. This towne is very rich, for there are many rich marchants, which passe to all parts of the world bluall. The riuer Walle runneth through the midst of this towne, and the riuers of Reine and Maze on each side. The towne is very strong, for that round about the country may be drowned. His Excellency with his whole traine were here marueilously welcommed, and well vled, for victuall, lodging, &c. There is by this towne, another towne of great force, called Worcome, by the castle of Lulken, this Worcome is in greatnesse but a village, but in situation and strength, a thing of great importance: it standeth in the same Iland that Lallon standeth in. It is Graue Maurice his towne, and kept his garrison of souldiers. Garcome. Worcome.

The 10. of June, a post came to his Excellency, from coronell Skinke and captaine Williams, with letters: the effect whereof were, that the sayd Sir Martin Skinke, and captaine Williams, staying not farre from Venlo (which the duke as then besieged) and longing to shew the zeale they had to the seruice of her maiesty of England, set out with their horsemen in the night, all the Dutch men for the most part forsaking them, so that with him was not about 160. horses, with these he set forward, killed the still watch, & passing farther killed also two courts of gard fully appointed, and entring by force the quarter that the prince of Parma was in, they killed a number of noblemen and gentlemen: but in the returne the enemy well appointed set on our men, and scattered them, to some losse, but the greater sort escaped: the skirmish being ended, and our men retiring, Captaine Williams was one of the hindmost of them all, and he cried (being yet in the enemies campe) where is Williams, where is Williams, and another answered, before, before, and thus he escaped.

The 13. of June, his Excellency went to Dort with a small traine, where being come about fiue of the clocke in the afternoone, the Burgers made him such great cheere, as was thought to haue bene vnpossible for so short a time of prouision. The 14. he tooke ship towards Vtrike from Dort, being wafted with an hoye full of souldiers of the towne.

Venlo lost to the enemy.

The 22. of June, the enemy attained Venlo, a towne of great importance and strength: there was in this towne, not only the wife of Skinke, and his children, but also the treasure, horse, and (for the most part) the furniture that Skinke had, this towne had in it of souldiers, to the number of fiue or sixe hundred, all of Skinks men well appointed and braue souldiers.

The 23. of June, his Excellencie passed to Colinborough about nine english miles from Vtrike, only to visite the Graue of Colingborough, where hee dined, viewed the towne, and returned to Vtrike, taking with him the saide Earle of Colingborough.

The 29. of June his Excellēcie passed from Vtrike to Dort. The 30. of June, he remooued from Dort, to Williams slate or Ragon hill. The same day County Hollocke ouerthrew a cornet of horse belonging to Breda, with the helpe of Walker Robert Sidneyes cornet, sir Philip Sidneyes cornet and other. The said County Hollocke practised to haue a conuoy passe from out of Brabant, to Berganaplome, which ỹ enimie being warned of by spies, that this conuoy was guarded but with some sixteene or twenty horse, the gouernour of Breda sent out his cornet or strength of horsemē to this exploit: but some few of them, being either afraide to meddle with our men, or doubting the true occasion that happened, staied behind the rest. Captaine Welch an english man, which a great time had serued ỹ enemy, had ỹ leading of ỹ horse at Breda, but passing to this exploite, county Hollocke with maister Robert Sidney beset them round, which the enemy no sooner perceiued, but yeelded, so there was taken captaine Welch and a thirty horse, & as many men. The 31. of June his excellency early in the morning passed from Williams slate to Berganaplome, & about three of the clocke in the afternoone he arriued there, and presently passed to the strong castle of old Wlaw: this towne is in the entrance of Brabant, 20. english miles from Antwerpe, vpon the same riuer that Antwerpe standeth. It is a towne now almost ruinated, though before in the prosperity of it, it was not much inferior to Antwerpe, there are few people but souldiers, the Burgers forsaking their goodly builded houses, are gone to other places. This towne is subiect in two places to hils of firme ground, which are the places that make this towne far weaker then otherwise it would be, yet wonderfully rāpered with bulwarks, wals, and flankers in all places. The L. Willoughby hath wonderfully enlarged the strength of this towne: further he hath made two very strong bulwarks in two places of the towne, at the hauen of the towne, and from the towne a slight shot or more, are 2 mighty sconces, which stand by the riuer side, which indeed are of more strength then the towne, & they are to command the towne: a 2. english miles from the towne standeth a ruinated towne in an Iland, & by this riuer, whose situation is such, as for strength it mought be made a braue place, for aire & otherwise, this towne is called Romars ward, against the which standeth a strong sconce, and so along the riuer to the towne standeth diuerse the like,

Berganaplome.

Romars ward.

like, to command the riur and paſſage to the towne: the caſtle before named, that his Excellency went to view, at his arriuall at this towne, is alſo ſuch as no reaſonable force can win, alwayes once a yeare victualed and manned afreſh, this caſtle regardeth not the canon ſhot, it is ſo rampered. The 1. of July, his Excellency paſſed from Berganaplome to Surickſea, a towne in Zeland, and in an Iland ſo called. In this Iland alſo is another towne called Brewers hauen, a very ſtrong towne, this Iland is moſt fertile. The 2. of July his Excellency paſſed to Dort. And the ſame day paſſed from Berganaplome 3000. men that were there newly arriued, to Stenbergē, a towne greatly noyous to the garriſon of Berganaplome, for when they paſſed into Brabant vpon any exploite, they were letted by the ſoldiers of this towne: this iourney was ſo cloſely kept, that our men ſhot at the wals of Stenbergen ere any of that towne knew for what cauſe ſo great a number of men were gathered. Surickſea. Stenbergen.

The 3. of July, there entred into Flaunders, the Graue Maurice, the prince of Orenges ſonne, and ſir Philip Sidney, lord gouernour of Flulhing, with other, to the number of foure thouſand footemen, and three thouſand horſemen. The fourth of July, Graue Maurice tooke on him to cut the bankes of the ſea, to drowne the land of Waſte, hauing with him two thouſand men, the reſt of the army paſſed with ſir Philip Sidney into Flaunders, and ſurpriſed the towne of Arell, there were ſlaine of ſouldiers of that towne three hundred, beſides the Bourgers that made reſiſtance, which were likewiſe ſlaine. This done, they came to Dorpe, or Drope, a towne of great importance, this they entred and tooke in it fiue hundred boores, which were kept to do ſeruice, and to be ranſomed. Graue Maurice with his two thouſand men ſo plied the bankes, that in ſhort time he had made it ſufficient for the water, not onely to enter, but to drowne all the country, but the wind ſtood ſo contrary, that no water to the purpoſe entred at that time, onely the bankes lay open. In the meane time our men tooke fiue ſconces, and put all to the ſword that they found in them, and this was their entrance into Flaunders. The towne of Arell is not farre from Antwerpe, and about the ſame diſtance from Gaunt, and not fiue engliſh miles from either, the land of Waſte wherein this towne ſtandeth, is the onely paradice of thoſe lands, and moſt fertile place of all other. The eight of July, Graue Maurice returned to Middleborough, leauing all occaſions to ſir Philip Sidney gouernour of Flulhing. The tenth of July, coronell Yorke brought to his Excellency to Dunhage, fiue enſignes of the enemies, all which were taken from the enemy in the towne of Arell, and the ſconces. Sir Philip Sidney entred Flaunders. Axell ſurpriſed by the Engliſh. Drope. Fiue ſconces taken by the Engliſh.

In this meane time, to wit, on the ninth of July was Paulus Buce a great ſtate and a politike man taken at Vtrike and put in priſon, and very ſhortly after was taken another named Peter Fulliſtine, and likewiſe committed to priſon. The 14. of July, his Excellency commanded the gates of Vtrike to be enclоſed, and all the bridges to be drawne, all the men both Engliſh and Dutch ſouldiers to be in armes, and further proclaimed that all men that loued the queene of England, ſhould preſently be armed to the vttermoſt, which being done, the Engliſh ſouldiers were placed on the wals, with commandement, that no Burger whatſoeuer ſhould come thereon, but preſently they ſhould take from them their vpper Vtrike in armes by commandement of his Excellency.

gar-

garments, which if they refused, they should be straight slaine. Also a straight search was made in the Towne for suspitious persons, and there were taken three which were committed to prison. The cause of this stir was this, it was reported, that there were come into the towne 500. of the enemies, in boores apparell to betray the towne, but it was not so.

About this time, sir Philip Sidneys cornet at Houdon, and certaine Dutch cornets, to the number of a hundred horse or more, with a two companies of footemen, entred into Brabant, taking booties, and spoyling the country, which being knowne to the enemies, they sought to intrap our men, and with a three hundred horse, and certaine companies of footemen, they set vpon our horse, put them to retreit, and pursued them far: but our men, by swimming, and goodnesse of their horses, escaped for the most part, onely a cornet of Dutch & one other officer of them were slaine, our footemen brought their bootie into such streights and fens, that the enimies could not indomage them, so that they brought their booties safe to Hudon.

The 15. of July, sir Philip Sidney, Lord gouernor of Flushing, the Lord Willoughby, with those powers they had receiued from the garison of Arel, considering the comming in of the water into the land of Waste, which might sufficiently defend that countrie, remooued the campe. The lord Willoughby to Berganapsome, where he was gouernor, sir Philip Sidney passed the sea with a three thousand men: whose enterprise shall be shewed hereafter. This sir Philip Sidney, at or before the taking of Arel, within an English mile of the Towne, called so many of his souldiers together as could heare him, and there made a long Oration, wherein he declared what cause they had in hand, as Gods cause, vnder, and for whom they fought, for her Maiestie; whom they knew so well to be so good vnto them, that he needed not to shew, against whom they fought, men of false religion, enemies to God and his Church: against Antichrist, and against a people whose vnkindnesse both in nature and in life did so excell, that God would not leaue them vnpunished: further, he perswaded them that they were Englishmen, whose valour the world feared and commended, and that now they should not, either feare death or perill whatsoeuer, both for that their seruice, they ought to their Prince, and further, for the honor of their Country, and credite to themselues. Againe, the people whom they fought for were their neighbors, alwaies friends, and wel-willers to Englishmen. And further, that no man should do any seruice worth the noting, but he himselfe would speake to the vttermost to prefer him to his wished purpose. Which oration of his did so linke the minds of the people, that they desired rather to dye in that seruice, then to liue in the contrary.

Sir Philip Sidney his oration.

The 14. of July, sir William Pellam, lord marshall of the field, came to Dunhage. The 16. of July, his Excellency remooued from Dunhage to Brill, in which passage he tooke to crosse the water at the dorpe of Sluce so called, being passed the water, he entred the land betweene two sconces, a quarter of a mile or more from the towne, where he was entertained with all the sconces shot both of great ordinance and smaller shot, passing by land he came to the towne, where the gouernour sir Thomas Cissell entertained him both with cheare and otherwise, most honorably.

Brill.

honorably. This towne is on the mouth of Maze, where the water is in breadth foure miles English. The Iland of Byll is great, more than twentie miles ouer, in it are Dorps not so well built as rich. On the 19. his Excellencie returned from the Byll to Dunhage.

In this meane space, to wit, on the 16. of July, the enemy entred Neuce, after a long assault, in which assault, he lost three thousand men. This Towne of Neuce was foorthwith burned downe to the ground by the lackies and boyes belonging to our soldiers, there remained whole but eight houses. Nuce burned by the English boyes.

The 23. of July, his Excellency made a banket to diuers great personages of those Countries, as the lady Bredo, lady of Viana, the Palsgraues wife, the county Egmounts daughters, the prince of Orenges daughter, with a number more. In which banquet wanted not what might be had to augment their cheere, either in musicke, dauncing, fire works or otherwise.

The 22. of July, the garison of Sutfin issued out, to the number of neare two hundred, and came to Arnam, tooke some cattell and other things, and returned, whereupon master Anthony Sherley came to captain Wilson gouernor of Arnam, and required that he and his company might issue out and reuenge this iniurie, which at length was granted: then master Sherley chose out to the number of fourescore footemen, and 20. horsemen, and sent them out, which the enimie seeing, to intice our men forward, set the booty not far from Sutfin, on a hill, and laide a fourescore of their men in an ambush, betweene Arnam and the bootie, the twenty horsemen came to them, which they let passe in a streight, but no sooner past but they discharged on them and seeing no more thought to slaie or take them all, but no sooner had they charged the horse, but maister Sherley charging them behinde, the horsemen returned, and so what on the one side, and on the other, they slue of them the number of 80. & tooke 13. prisoners, which with the bootie, they brought againe to Arnam, hauing lost but one man, and two men hurt. Of Sutfin.

About this time, maister Butlers cornet, lying at Deuentrie, issued out and tooke from Suthfield or Sutfin, of cattell to the number of foure hundred Cowes, and sixteene Mares of great price, in this maner. Those of Suthfield had by the riuer side a great marish, all so ditched in, that no horse could passe ouer by any possible meanes: but they of Deuentrie and Campyn consulting together, did one night at a lowe water passe into the marish ouer by the side of the Towne, and brought without losse of any man of our part, foure hundreth and odde Beastes, and sixteene Mares, most of them sold for fiue pound a Mare, amongst the souldiers. This exploit with others did greatly pinch those of Suthfield, for that the milke of those beastes were to them a great relefe.

The 26. of July, maister Robert Sidneis cornet, lying at Gertrenberge passed with some of county Hollockes horse, to the number of an hundred, and passed on purpose onely towards Breda, but being within sight thereof, they espied a number of cattell issuing foorth of the Towne (for feare of our garrisons in those parts) vp towards high Brabant, hauing to conuey them some 300. shot, and a 10. or 12. lances, our men seeing so fit a bootie vnlooked of their part, charged and put to flight the shot and horse, cut betweene the Towne and the cattell, Robert Sidney tooke a bootie.

and

and tooke from them fiue hundred oxen, seauen hundred sheepe, & threescore mares, and some boares, all which they caried to Gertenberge, to the great reliefe of the souldiers there.

The second of August his Excellencie passed from the Hage to Utrike, he dined at Tergowe, from thence he came by Oden water, & from thence to Mountford, a strong towne, at night he came to Utrike, where by the Lord North he was receiued with great store of shot.

Mountford.

Mewes yeelded to the enemie.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 29 of July, the enemy lying part before Berke, the residue came before Mewes, which towne was no sooner summoned, then it yeelded to the enimie, and on the next day they tooke a little Towne called Alpyn, both these townes belonged to the Graue Maurice.

The second of August, the enemy hauing passed by Berke as before, diuers of his company were cut off as straglers, and further a great sort of horse, the men that were taken were hanged: amongst whom a yoong lad which was taken, confessed to Skinke that as the prince passed by Berke, on a hill made this speech, My souldiers (quoth he) you may see here this Towne, neither great nor strong, but so manned, that assure your selues you shall receiue blowes inough, and no wealth, wherefore we may now passe with no dishonor, but if we stay here long, it will be dishonor to passe away, therefore say what you minde to do, and presently they were all contented to depart, and so they passed from the Towne. The third of August, the prince seeing he could not passe any thing by water, but Berke letted it, besides he had a conuoy of venison, wine, &c. which was by them of Berke taken away with fiftie men that had the conducting thereof, the prince noting that the principall men that annoyed him, were there where the prince saw the Towne weake, he returned to it againe: for Skinke had no sooner taken the fiftie men, and others, but asking them whose men they were, and they answering the princes, they were straightwaies hanged, which doings of Skinkes caused the prince to returne his army to Berke, on the said third of August, on which day he passed with three cornets of horse from Alpyn where his munition lay, to Dyson, a Towne of the Duke of Cleues, a small league from Berke, and came with certaine to viewe the Towne of Berke, which Skinke perceiuing, streight issued out of the Towne with certaine horse and foote, and charged the prince which had three cornets of horse, and fiue hundred footemen, yet Skinke put him to the retraite to Alpine to his quarter there.

Berke.

The fourth day he came with his maine battell, and passed on the south side of the Towne, though often times he were charged, and lost many of his men, yet he abode there.

On the third of August, the Lord Marshall, the Generall of the horse, &c. with some thousand horse and footemen passed in the night farre into Brabant, and came early in the morning to the great Dorpe Osell Stiluoringhenke, set it on fire, and burned it to the ground: There was with the Lord Marshall two hundred Kernes, who shewed their courages, for none were so ready to burne, nor so readie to kill all that came in their danger, so that fewe escaped them. Comming further they came to a Dorpe more like a good Towne, not

The Lord Marshall and other entred Brabant.

Irish kernes.

not farre from Sattingam bulle, wherein is a calle, and a ſtrong ſconce, but the wild Iriſh kernes, neither fearing ſhot nor threat, ranne by the ſides of the ſconce, tooke it preſently, and put to the ſword all in it, and tooke the prouiſion to themſelues. Thoſe of the towne had croſſed the way with trees in ſuch ſort, as the horſmen could not paſſe to the towne but with great labour, but the Iriſh entred the Towne onely, and burned it to the ground, ſauing none that came to their hands, ſo our men returned to Gertenberge, not looſing foure of their Iriſh men.

The 6ſt of Auguſt, his Excellency paſſed from Utrike to Tergowe, where he ſtayed till the ſeuenth, being honorably entertained: this towne is very ſtrong, ſituate ſo, that all the countrey round about may ſpeedily be drowned. About this towne is the greateſt nurſeries of fruite that men there preſent had euer ſeene, and by them thought ſufficient to ſerue many countries, with trees of all ſorts, but peares eſpecially. The ground about Tergowe of a 14. ſcore broad, is nought elſe but the moſt braue trees that can be ſeene. This towne hath the moſt faire market place that hath bene ſeene of many, in the midſt whereof ſtandeth a faire State houſe, in the which his Excellency did eate and was lodged. The 7. of Auguſt, his Excellency paſſed from Tergowe to Utrike, by the which he muſt paſſe through Doonwaters, by the Burgers of which towne, he was honorably receiued, all the towne throughout ouer head was hanged with garlands of flowers for his welcome. The 19. he paſſed from Utrike to Reyne, and there ſtayed all night. The next day he paſſed to Arnam. About this time a ſhip was ſent from the biſhop of Cullen to the prince, laden with canon ſhot, and powder, the maiſter of which ſhip, either miſliking the biſhop, the prince, or their religion, ſo ſoone as he came where he might well recouer Bercke, where Skinke and his force lay, he by one meanes or other, ſo opened the ſhip that the water entred, ſo that he and the reſt were forced by that meanes to retire to Bercke. In this ſhip was a commiſſary of good accompt with the Prince, whom the maiſter of this ſhip did conuey to Skinke, who was no ſooner come, but Skinke entred iudgement with him, and he deſiring to be vſed like a gentleman, Skinke anſwered he ſhould be hanged with his face toward the enemies campe, for, ſayth he, I know you deſire to ſee your friends, and ſo it was done. This loſſe of prouiſion made the prince want of his will, for battery of the towne, onely planting fiue canons in two places. Further, at the ſame time, there came newes to his Excellency, that the horſe and footmen of Gelder had often put the enemy to loſſe, and had taken 150. horſes from them, beſides a number of them ſlaine.

Tergowe.

A ſhip ſent to the prince but came to Skinke.

Sir Martin Skinke hanged a commiſſary.

The 17. of Auguſt, ſir Iohn Norris paſſed ouer Iſſell by Arnam ſconce (a bridge of boates being there made) with ſome 3000. engliſh footmen, and 6. or 7. hundred horſe. And about the ſame time, the prince remooued ſome part from Bercke to Alppne, a dutch mile from Bercke. The 21. of Auguſt, the lord marſhall paſſed ouer the riuer by Arnam ſconce, with 3000. footmen, and 600. horſe toward the legar. The 23. of Auguſt, his Excellency paſſed ouer the water by Arnam ſconce with 2000. or more footmen, and 100. or more lances. The Iriſh kernes were no ſooner come to the campe, but that they paſſed neare the enemy, and

Iriſh kernes.

Eltham. and brought from them a 120. cowes. The 24. of August, the leiger rose, and passed to Eltham: there is neather Eltham, and vpper Eltham, both haue bene houses of religious women, most sumptuously built: the neather standeth neare the Reyne: the vpper standeth an english mile from the Reyne vpon an high hill, and in such a place, as few the like for prospect: where a man standing may behold 100. parish churches. This cloister was of such credit and estimation, that none came there by the order of the place, but she was a barons daughter at the least. The lady Anne of Cleue was brought vp in this cloister. The 27. of August, his Excellency passed from Irnam to the campe at Eltham. The 28. he caused all the English to be marshalled into squares, and two preachers made to them 2. sermons in the field by the hill side of Eltham cloister. The 30. of August his Excellency passed from Eltham to Dowsborough with all his army, except only those that the night before were sent to lye about the towne. On the north side was an Iland, to the which was sent the Scots regiment, which ẏ night with their pioners did intrench within 80. yards of the north part: On the west side came the regiment of sir T. Sherley. On the east side was the regiment of sir William Standley & ẏ L. marshall: on the southeast side was his Excellency with the regiment of the L. Audley. All the residue, as sir Iohn Norris, M. Digby, and diuers other regiments as well English as Dutch, were placed betweene these quarters, euery one in part indeuoring to intrench neare the ports, so that the same night, though with some alarums from the towne, were the whole ports of the towne intrenched, so that none could issue without danger. The same night also that his Excellency came before Dowsborough, himselfe in person with the lord marshall in the night, with their gards, went from their tents to view ẏ south trench, being neare the towne, there was a base shot at them, which though all were together, yet rebounding amongst them all, hit ẏ lord marshall on the belly, pierced his buffe ierkin, his dublet, and hurt him somwhat: this shot milling his Excellency, made the returne. The last of August, there was nothing but intrenching, and some bollies of each side, for that the ordinance was not come. The first of September came our ordinance, which being landed, & drawn neare the places of battery, some of the demy canons discharged, to displace the ordinance of the towne, which was in part done, but againe in other places mounted. This day his Excellency remooued from the east or southeast side to the west side into an Iland, the riuer Iskall running by it. The 2. of September halfe an houre before sun-rising, began the battery of Dowsborough, & was so throughly plied, ẏ with 9. battering peeces a maruellous breach was made. In time of which battery captaine Williams was shot through the arme, yet in this siege not 20. men lost, and a 20. hurt. About one of ẏ clocke they agreed to parley, all our battels being ranged in squares before the towne to assault. The souldiers had made ẏ breach more strong then before with feather-beds, dung, timber, &c. & made in ẏ inside a great fight, but fearing an assault, which they knew wold be furious, they (as was said) agreed to parley: the conditions were, that the souldiers should passe away with their liues onely, the Burgers should haue all they had at his Excellencies mercy: these things being agreed, about foure or fiue of the clocke in the after noone, all the souldiers with their wiues passed ouer the breach away. The women that passed with the souldiers, it was a grie-

The English men marshalled.

Dowsborough besieged by his Excellency.

His Excellency in danger, and sir William Pellam lord marshall was hurt.

Dowsborough yeelded to his Excellency.

uous

uous thing to see how they were ransacked till the earle of Essex and diuers other gentlemen came downe the breach, & by smiting & beating the soldiers, made them leaue off rifling them: his Excellencies expresse commandement was, that none should take ought from the towne, but that was not obserued, for much of ỳ goods was spoiled. Captaine Borowes was appointed to keepe the towne, whose ensignes with captaine Prices colors was set in the breach. The captaines & soldiers that were sent to saue the towne from spoile, did to the contrarie, for they made hauocke and most horrible spoile, wherewith his Excellencie was greatly displeased. The 6th of September his Excellencie went into the towne, and there dined, and after viewed the towne. The same day maister Anthony Sherley and other captaines came to the campe, and declared that the enemie came to Wesell, and with a peece of ordinance beate backe our ships wherein our men were, and killed some of them, & further beate them downe the riuer. The towne of Dowsborough standeth by the riuer Issell, an arme or issuing of the Reine by Arnam sconce, & runneth along through the countrey of Ouar Issell, it runneth also by Suthfield, and is in the prouince of Suthfield and fiue English miles from Suthfield, and fiue miles or more from Arnam. It standeth in a most fertile soile, pleasant & fruitfull ground. It is of reasonable strength, hauing high wals, not rampired but in certaine places, hauing a water running round about it, it is about the bignesse of Arnam, nigh an English mile & a halfe compasse. The order of the assault of this towne (as it was determined) sir Iohn Norris had the honor giuen him to enter the great breach, sir William Stanley with his regiment had the seconding of sir Io. Norris, county Hollocke had giuen him the small breach with his regiment. These ranged themselues in the most braueſt maner, but his Excellencie offered parly as ye haue heard. The 9. of September word came, that sir Martine Skinke was gotten frō out of Berke, & the 11. the same Skinke, captaine Thomas with some other braue souldiers lances came to the camp before Dowsborough. The 13. of September his Excellencie with all his forces came from Dowsborough, & that same night incamped himselfe before Suthfield, but he for want of a bridge could not go ouer the water, this night he intrenched himselfe very neare in diuers places, and on the morrow he made a bridge, which passed ouer to the other side. The 15. of September his Excellencie, leauing sir Martine Skinke in his absence passed to Deuentry, but shortly returned, for that he was informed that the prince with his whole force was marching towards Suthfield. This town of Suthfield is very strong, being in diuers places parted, in all which places is such strength, as all must be woon ere the towne be woon. It standeth a good distance from the riuer Issell, but hath a sconce on Issell of incredible strength, for Hollocke with all his force, and our English men a two yeeres since lay at it three quarters of a yeere, but could not win it: but now his Excellencie began to besiege it, and for that his forces were not sufficient to incampe it round about, he framed himselfe to do his best to win the sconce, for by that meanes he might the more easily win the towne. The first night our men intrenched at a Church beside the Towne, but for that they thought after it was not so commodious, they passed not for it, and therefore went on the other side of the water to insconce the sconce, for that out of it there

His Excellencie incamped before Suthfield.

there issued both horse and footemen, which did greatly annoy our camp, for none could passe or repasse from Deuentrie, or otherwise stir from the strength of the camp, but they were taken or in danger, if not rescued. The 18. of September, Skinke tooke on him to make a sconce neare the enemies sconce, which the same night he began, though the towne shot fore at him, & also the sconce, yet he followed his worke, & so fortified it, that it was sufficient for greatnesse to hold men to keepe it, and sufficient for strength to hold out what the enemies shot could do against it, & this sconce Skinke kept on ẏ side the water, that passage could not so well come to the sconce, but he did sinke their boats. His Excellencie the next night caused another sconce to be made iust by the enemies sconce, so that ẏ eninie was by these two sconces so kept in, that they were kept from issuing out for their pleasure. The 20. of September, the enemie lying not far off at Langham a towne of ours, distant from Suthfield an 8. or 9. miles English, sent in the night into Suthfield certaine cornets of horse, which were suffered to enter by our men, and further to passe away againe to the enemies campe, they brought nothing into the towne to relieue it: moreouer, all the whole English camp lay on the other side of the towne ouer the water, so that readily a sufficient power could not be made.

A fight before Suthfield.

The 22. of September, was the most braue fight performed of our side that could be. The enemie this night put into Suthfield some hundred wagons with victuals, which being perceiued, streight waies sir William Stanley went with his owne company, which were some 200. to stand as a buscado, sir Iohn Norris ouertooke him, being sent to the seruice, & said to sir W. Stanley: There hath bene (said he) some words of displeasure betweene you and me, but let all passe, for this day we both are imployed to serue her Maiestie, let vs be friends, and let vs die together in her Maiesties cause. Quoth sir William Stanley, if you see me not this day by Gods grace serue my prince with a valiant and faithfull courage, account me for euer a coward, and if neede be I will die by you in friendship. Thus the long quarrell begun in Ireland was here ended, with such friendship as made all men reioyce: both of them serued so forwardly this day, that the one could not tell how much to commend the other, onely the one serued with footemen, the other with horse: sir W. Stanley marched with his footemen, but the enemy was come to the Church where our men had at the first placed themselues, there was of the enemies 2200. muskets, and 800. pikes, which were now to gard the place of their refuge, (to wit, the intrenched Church.) The Lord Audley with some hundred and fiftie men, by great suite made to his Excellencie, attained at length to go, who made so great haste, that he ouertooke sir William Stanley ere the skirmish began, which was hot, but the Lord Audley and sir William Stanley not liking the hot vollies of musket shot, pressed neare the enemy, and themselues at the pull of the pike with their men, put the whole companie of the enemie to retrait to the holde, which done, they retyred a little backe out of the musket shot, and there made a stand: the Earle of Essex Lord generall of the horse, the lord Willoughby, sir William Russell, and sir Iohn Norris with their cornets came to charge the enemy. There were of the enemy fifteene cornets, of which fiue or sixe were Albanoys, the rest were Spaniards or Italians. The Albanoys issued, which our men charged so furiously, that

Sir William Stanley and sir Iohn Norris became friends that before were enemies.

it

It was thought at the first checke there were a thirtie or fortie of the enemies ouerthrowne, then our men went to the curtelar, which they so furiously plyed, that the enemie after some three quarters of an houre retraited to their pikes, losing of foote and horsemen, as the prisoners since taken confesse, besides hurt, an hundred men of their braueſt, amongſt which was the countie Anoball, also captaine George the commaunder of all the Albanoyses was taken prisoner, besides neare twenty commaunders, some captaines, some ensigne bearers, lieutenants and other officers: but to sir Iohn Noris he gaue the first charge, who with his pistoll in his hand offered to discharge it on a braue man, but his pistoll would not go off, which he seeing, stroke it on the head of his enemie and ouerthrew him. The lord Willoughby with his launce in his rest met captaine George and vnhorsed him, so that he fell into a ditch, and cryed to the L. Willoughby, I yeeld your prisoner, for that you be a seemely knight, (this he spake in French:) the lord Willoughby came not to take prisoners, but passed on with his curtelar in his hand, & his whole cornet after so furiously, that it was wonder to see, ẏ lord Willoughby was so forward, that oftentimes, but twise especially he was like to be taken prisoner, his bases were pulled off from him, but relcued by our side. When ẏ skirmish was done & all retraited, captaine George being in his Excellencies tent, would not graunt to be prisoner to any but to him who vnhorsed him, whome he knew if he saw him in his armor, the L. Willoughby came in armed, this is the knight that I am prisoner to, & I yeeld to him, said he, so the L. Willoughby had ẏ prisoner adiudged to be his. The 3. the earle of Eſſex charged with his cornet, who so encouraged his men, for the honor of England said he, my fellowes follow me, & with that he threw his launce in his rest, and ouerthrew the first man, & with his curtelar so behaued himselfe that it was wonder. Sir William Ruſſell with his cornet charged so terribly, that after he had broke his launce, he with his curtelar so plaid his part, that the enemy reported him to be a diuell & not a man, for where he saw fiue or seuen of the enemies together, thither would he, and so behaue himselfe with his curtelar, that he would separate their friendship. Among the rest sir Philip Sidney so behaued himselfe, that it was wonder to see, for he charged the enemie three in one skirmish, and in the last charge he was wounded with a musket shot through the thigh, to the great griefe of his Excellencie and of the whole campe, who being brought to my lord lieutenant, his Excellencie said: O Philip, I am sorie for thy hurt, and sir Philip answered: O my lord, this haue I done to do your honor and her Maieſtie seruice. Sir William Ruſſell comming to him, kiſſed his hand, and said with teares: O noble sir Philip, there was neuer man attained hurt more honorably then ye haue done, nor any serued like vnto you. He was conueyed to Arnam, where he continued till his end in such kind of godly behauiour, that both the preacher did wonder at it, and the chirurgions admire, the one seeing his wise godlineſſe, the other his valiaunt courage with patience to abide all kind of paines. The cornet of sir Philip Sidney was at this time at Deuentrie, vpon this occasion, his Excellencie feared Deuentrie, for that it had often bene in question of reuolting, but the prince of Parma hauing occasion to be employed other waies, could not come that way: now (as is afore said) his Excellencie fearing that while he were winning one towne he might lose another, the

Sir Philip Sidney had his deaths wound.

prince being so neare, sent sir Philip Sidneyes cornet, his owne cornet, and maister Robert Sidneyes cornet all into Deuentrie, and of foote folke captaine Flud with his souldiers, and captaine Ward with his: this was the cause sir Philip Sidney was alone without his cornet at this seruice. Sir Thomas Parrat also was at this seruice, and serued most brauely. All the time this skirmish was with these cornets, so our footmen were in fight with the enemie, and by fine force made them once againe retire to their safetie. The enemie being retired to his strength, al our horse made a stand by the musket shot, which played on them fore, and braued the enemie, bidding him come forth if he durst, but he would not: which sir Io. Norris seeing, rode to his Excellencie, and bad him be merry, for said he, you haue had this day the honorablest day that euer you had, for a handfull of your men haue driuen the enemie three times to retrait this one day. Further he willed his Excellencie either to send for more strength, or else to sound the retrait, which last request he graunted, for that his strengths were otherwise employed, and so the retrait being sounded both by drum and trumpet, our captaines came backe in good order, euery man to his quarter with great praise and honour. We lost men of account at this fight, captaine Martine, and captaine Thomas Welch is thought to be dead, he came with Skinke from Berke in hope now to be in more safetie: we lost of foote and horse, dead, about forty.

The 25. of September our men seeing ẏ great aduantage that a certaine yland lying in the riuer betweene the sconce and the towne, would do them, and further that there was therein some souldiers of the enemie, which greatly annoyed them in shooting as they passed any way, our men therefore set vpon it, skirmished with the souldiers, and put them to flight, many of them leaping into the riuer were drowned, some were killed, but in fine our men insconced there, and the town shot at them, but did them little hurt.

The 28. of September, his Excellencie with a great part of his campe remoued to the other side of the towne, and there began to intrench: leauing the sconces well manned, it was thought the towne was neuer so well victualled, for by his Excellencie the prouant was cut off, and euery soldier had halfe a crowne a week, which greatly contented them, and this was paid to them truly, so that a souldier might by this meanes be able to pay the victualler, & that made many resort to the campe. Further, Deuentrie was so neare, that by that meanes victuals were brought the more fully to the campe, for at Deuentrie is great plentie of victuals. The horsemen had foure shillings the weeke loane, to find them and their horse, which was better then the prouant: his Excellencie knighted maister William Hatton and maister Henry Vmpton, who were then sent for to returne into England to their friends.

W. Hatton & H. Vmpton knighted.

The 29. of September, our men set vpon the lope sconce of the enemie, which with some difficultie they obtained, but after thinking to win another sconce, there were many of them slaine, as well as on the other side was the like or worse: there were of our men slaine and hurt aboue an hundred. In this lope sconce as was reported, there were fiue sights, which were woon that night, and certaine trenches of the enemie, and further intrenched almost round about the great sconce, so as they of ẏ same could now hardly issue out, or any come in to thẽ.

The

The second of October, in the night there passed into Zutphen fiue thousand of the princes folke, a foure thousand footmen and a thousand horsemen, these passed into the towne all in order untroubled of our campe: these companies brought no carriages into the towne, but all the wagoners were to come after. The victuals which the princes power had gotten in Dient and Twent was conueyed into Zutphen permitted by his excellencie, for that his men were otherwaies employed, those of Longham did cut off some straglers of the princes power as they passed by them. The fourth of October, they of the sconce at Zutphen called for a parley, which was graunted, and countie Hollocke for that he spake Dutch kept out of our sconce, and parled with them, and after long talke, one of the souldiers shot a musket, which as countie Hollocke was speaking, shot into his mouth, and out by his eare, so that it smote away the iewell hanging at his eare. The fifth of October came to Deuentrie many of our horses, and about midnight, taking all the garrison of horses in the towne, passed from thence to Langham, where they also tooke the horses of the garrison, and went about an exploit, which was, they hearing of a conuoy of victuals comming to Suthfield, they determined to haue cut it off, but they could not meete with it. There was of our men at this exploite pretended a fiue or sixe hundred horse, the leader whereof was sir William Russell. The same fifth of October, early in the morning our canons being placed against the lesser sconce, they played at it till three or foure of the clocke, at which time maister Edward Stanley leader of sir William Stanleyes companie came to assault the breach, but before he came to the breach, the enemie had a sight or trench full of souldiers placed there for to offend vs, and defend the sconce, which souldiers all at once discharged their muskets, killing onely one man. Edward Stanley entred the trench with all his men, killing some of the enemies, and the rest fled. In this trench he stayed till our canons had made the breach cleare, then maister Edward Stanley before his men, clambred vp the breach, but a braue man of great stature captaine of the sconce stood alone in the breach with a pike, and thrust at him, which pike with the one hand he defended, and with the other caught hold to get vp, till at the last he was throwne downe by a bullet throwne out of the sconce: the second time he assaulted the breach, but this captaine so defended it, and kept him downe as was wonderfull: and although our men with the canon did play on the breach, yet he still fought, and did not stirre till at the last a canon out of the Iland stroke the ground from vnder him, so that he fell out of the breach into the sconce: but in fine this braue leader of our men led them vp the breach, and first entred the same, then was the fight in the sconce, where at the first our men killed foure or fiue, at the second the like, at the length, they hauing made a traine, three or foure of our men were brent, but the souldiers of the sconce fled out at a little wicket, which our souldiers chaunced to light on, and killed to the number of thirtie, so our men possessed the lesser sconce, with the losse of three or foure of our men, and sixe or seuen hurt. This seruice being done, his Excellencie seeing the valour of maister Edward Stanley, gaue him thankes, and calling captaine Reade knighted them both. This taking of the lesser sconce greatly terri-

County Hollocke shot into the mouth.

The smaller sconce woon

E. Stanley & captaine Read knighted.

terrified them of the greater sconce. The next night the countie Williams men lying neare them, they with a lose bollie of shot did discharge at them, and bad them hanse vp, for said they, you will play but as countie Hollocke did, spend powder and shot, and lose your men, and haunse vp when you haue done. This sudden bolly of shot put Sraue Williams men in doubt that they would issue, wherefore they had thought to haue giuen alarum, but finding them so quiet after, they stayed their enterprise, and listened what would follow, and hearing no noise or shew of souldiers, they passed neare the sconce to see the euent, at length they might see a fire in the sconce which made them to preasse nearer, and at length entred the sconce, where they found a ten or twelue men, which fled (as was thought) into the water and were drowned. Thus had the cowardly praters made a fire, and ranne away by the light thereof. Thus was the great sconce which was so well manned, so well prouided of powder and shot, that they wanted none, yet without assault or charge, breach or any thing to dismay them, they ran away, to their bitter infamy and reproch.

They of the great sconce ran away in the night.

The seuenth of October his Excellencie passed to Arnam, there to visite sir Philip Sidney lying of his hurt receiued as is afore shewed, before whose going he made knights these captaines and gentlemen following: sir Henry Goodyere captaine of the guard, sir Henry Norris, sir Iohn Borowes, sir Iohn Winkfield, sir Roger Williams, sir Robert Sidney, sir Philip Butler. More were knighted, sir Henry North, sir Thomas Dennis, sir William Knowles, sir George Farmer, sir George Digby, sir Steward, sir Bewford: besides these, were made knights banarets these following: the earle of Esser, the lord Willoughby, the lord Audley, the lord North.

Knights made.

There was (saith my cosin Henry Archar) a strange thing happened at Berk in the time of Skinkes gouernment there, which I thought good to impart. As the souldiers were repairing and working to make the towne strong, a souldier comming by said, you worke and worke, but the enemie will haue the towne within this wecke: which words being both noted and taken grieuously that he should so discourage the souldiers, he was taken and carried to Skinke, who without any circumstances condemned him to be throwne off the great staple of the towne into the Reine, which was accomplished. But he falling off from a monstrous height, light in the water, and rising againe, as the nature of the water is, to raise one vp twise or thrise, he had both life and memorie, such as he offered to swim, and scrawling got out of the water: but Skinke had taken such an hatred against him, that he caused him to be bound hand and foote, to haue bene cast againe into the riuer of Reine, sauing that colonell Morgan being there, so perswaded him, that the poore mans life was saued.

A souldier throwne from an high tower into the riuer of Reine.

The ninth of October countie Hollockes cornet of horses lying at Langham, tooke a sixtie wagons, which had carried the conuoy before spoken of, into Suthfield, and a fifteene of them being laden with hurt men that were wounded in the sconce, he put them all to the sword, and tooke the wagons into Langham.

The 15. of October, his Excellencie passed from Deuentrie to Arnam to sir Philip

Philip Sidney there lying ſicke, as is afore ſhewed.

On the 17 of October, the ſaid ſir Philip Sidney, knight, a moſt valiant and
towardly gentleman, ſonne and heire to ſir Henry Sidney (late afore deceaſed) of
his hurt receiued at Zutphen in Gelderland deceaſed, vpon whoſe departure he ſo
vſed his mind and toong, that the preacher that came to inſtruct him in his extre-
mitie, might rather learne of him than teach him his aſſurance in the premiſes of
Chriſt. From thence he was brought by water to Flulhing, where he was kept
eight daies, on the firſt of November he was brought to the ſea ſide by the En-
gliſh garriſon, which were twelue hundred, marching three and three, ſhot, hal-
bards, pikes, & enſignes all trailing, the burgers of the towne following: his body
being imbarked, the ſmall ſhot gaue him a triple volly, then the great ordinance, &c.
On the firſt of November he was landed at the Tower wharfe, and conueyed to
the Minories without Ald-gate, on the eaſt ſide of the citie of London, frō whence
on the fifteenth of Februarie next following, he was conueyed to Saint Paules
Church in London, in order marſhalled by Ro. Cooke *alias* Clarenceaux king at
armes. Inprimis, poore men in blacke gownes 32. for he was ſo many yeares old,
ſargeants of the band, fife and drum, enſigne trailed, lieutenant of footemen, the
corporals, trumpets, Guidon trailed, lieutenant of his horſe, conductors to his
ſeruants, the ſtandard borne by a gentleman, his gentlemen and yeoman ſer-
uants 60. phiſitions and chirurgion, ſteward of houſe, eſquiers of his kindred
and friends 60. knights of his kindred and friends 12. the preacher & chaplaines,
the penone of his armes borne, the horſe for ẏ field led by a footeman, a page riding
with a broken launce, the barbed horſe led by a footeman, a page riding carrying
a battle-axe the head downward, yeomen vshers to the herault, the great banner
borne by a gentleman, Portcloſe bare the gilt ſpurres, Blewmantell the gaunt-
lets, Rouge Dragon bare the helme and creſt, Richmond the ſhield of armes, So-
merſet the coate of armes, Clarenceaux king at armes, gentleman vsher to the
corps, two bannarols, the corps couered with a pall veluet, carried by 14. yeomē,
2. bannarols following, ſir Robert Sidney chiefe mourner, mourners aſſiſtant,
4. knights, two gentlemen vshers to the noblemen, ẏ earles of Huntingdon, Lei-
ceſter, Pembroke, and Eſſex, barons, Willoughby and North, States of Holland
ſeuen, all theſe in blacke, the ſword bearer of London riding on horſeback, the
lord Maior and aldermen on horſeback in murrey: the company of the Grocers
of London in their liuerie 120. Citizens of London practiſed in armes 300. mar-
ched three and three in the forward, the captaine, lieutenant, and three targets,
muſketters foure rankes, drums and fife, ſmall ſhot 20. pikes 20. rankes, hal-
berds foure rankes, chiefe officers of the field, drums, fife, and enſigne. In ẏ rere-
ward, halbards three rankes, pikes fifteene rankes, drums and fife, ſmall ſhot 15.
rankes, muſketters three rankes, &c. And when his corps was thus conueyed in-
to Paules church, where he was honorably enterred, they honoured him with a
double volly of ſhot and ſo departed.

Sir Philip Sidney deceaſed at Arnam.

Sir Philip Sidney buried at London.

Sir Philip Sidney free of the Grocers in London.

The 18. of October, his Excellencie paſſed with great ſorrow, for the loſſe of
his nephew ſir Philip Sidney to Vtrike: and on the ſame 18. and 19. dayes of Oc-
tober, ſir William Standley gaue in charge to his officers, chieftaines & comman-
ders, as alſo to his ſouldiers, that they ſhould go into Deuentry by 15. by tenne,

A politike exploite, atchieued by ſir W. Pelham lord Marſhall.

by fire and by thee, which commandement they did fulfill, so that for the most part they got them into the towne, being nothing mistrusted of the Burgers, they got into harborow and close places, that they were not espied. Also other captaines sayd to their souldiers, if you will go fire or fire, or somewhat more to Deuentry to recreate your selues, take with you store of powder and shot, for feare of the enemy, which liberty they were ready to take, and performed accordingly, so that there was by this meanes gotten into the towne well knowne 1200. english souldiers: on the 19. day in the morning came sir William Stanley with some troupe of his men, and in the afternoone sir William Pelham lord marshall, likewise with his troupe. The counsell of States, with maister Killegrey, maister Kitly, and other were debating of matters all this day with the Burgomaisters, nothing mentioning of the garrison that there should be placed: further those of Suthfield in disdaine, did tel those that passed by their towne to Deuetry, that they should hyre them, or the gates would be shut. The lord marshall being come to his lodging, sent for all the Burgomaisters, which were in the counsell as before, who being come, he told the, that his Excellencie, both for their owne safety, and suppression of the enemy, was fully determined to put in a garrison of men there, and for that before time he had found them strange in granting, he had sent him thither, for that the campe was now ready to breake vp, to know in short their determination, whether they would receiue a garrison or not, and for that his haste required no long stay, they to giue him answer on the next morning by 8. of the clocke, that he might send word to Utrike to his Excellency, which the Burgomaisters promised to answer according to his request: now all this night, did sir William Stanley and others, with the lord marshall take counsell what were best to do, which was agreed that all the souldiers secretly should on the morrow at 7. of the clocke, be in the market place with their furniture: this order being taken, all with quiet rested, but the Burgers which made that night a double watch, and chained all the streetes, made fast all passages, and further did make and man all the ports most strong.

In the morning early, by 6. of the clocke, all the Burgomaisters were assembled in the state house, to agree of this purpose. About 7. of the clocke the L. Marshall came to the state house, with diuers gentlemen, and others, who knocked and were let in, straight sir W. Stanley also entred with his traine al appointed for the purpose, by this time were all our Englishmen assembled in the market place, which the townes men seeing were in piteous feare, the women crying out for feare to be spoiled. The lord Marshall asked them a direct answer, whether they would haue a garrison or not, giue me quoth he, a direct answer, for I must so haue it. One of the principal Burgomaisters rose softly, & stole away, which being told the lord Marshall, he said: fetch me presently him that is gone, or before the liuing God, before whom I stand, you shall all die for it, and delay not sayd he but do it, & straight was he fetched againe. Then demanded he for what cause, that this night ouer all other, they had made so strong a watch, wherefore they had chained their streetes, &c. but they answered not: well sayd he, euerie one of you set his hand to this bill, and deliuer ouer your authority, to these whom his Excellencie hath set downe, or before God you shall all die, you haue not to deale with a nation-

Lord Marshall his courage at Deuentry.

simple,

ſimple, or fooliſh, or ſuch as will be led in this or the like ſort, comming hither to ſpend their goods, toile their bodies, and venture their liues, and now be accounted ſuch as your ſubtilty ſhould ouerreach. They forthwith at his commaund (being ſore afraid) ſet their hands to the bill, and gaue their authority ouer to others, all proteſtants, appointed by his Excellency: well ſaid he, ſend one of you ſtraight to all thoſe Burgers that are on the wals and rampiers, and command them to paſſe to their dwellings, and to let them forthwith be vnarmed, which was preſently done. Then he commanded the, to bring to him the keyes of all the ports or gates, vpon the like paine before ſpoken of, which was alſo done, with ſwearing both the old and new officers to the queene of England. This being done, all that before were ſuſpected to be enemies to the Engliſhmen, were turned out of their places of authority. There was a 4000. ſouldiers, all Burgers in this towne, which for the moſt part watched and warded, beſides a number others, as too rich for ſuch paines, boors, which are all counted to be a 12000. fighting men, wherefore it requireth great care and wiſedome to deale in this ſort. The campe at this time drake for the moſt part vp, to the garriſons, and all thoſe companies that were appointed to the ſconce went from Vtrike on the 22. of October.

The 23. of October the States of thoſe parts came from Deuentry to Vtrike, where with his Excellency they ſate in counſell, of determining all the 24. day from morning till night. The 28. early in the morning, his Excellency paſſed from Vtrike, and came that night late to Rotherdame: On the 29. his Excellency paſſed from thence to the Hauge, where he ſtaied ſome ſmall time. The 8. of November he went to Delph, where he was banqueted, & went that night to Dunhage. On the 16. he paſſed from Hauge to Rotherdame: and on the 17. to Dort. On the 18. he tooke ſhipping to paſſe from Dort to Flu ſhing, and being paſſed a ſeuen Engliſh miles from Dort, the yce was ſo great, and ſo oppreſſed his ſhips that it indomaged the moſt ſtrong ſhip in the fleete, ſo that perforce his Excellency was forced to land at Dzope, a poore billage, and in a wagon to paſſe by land to Rotherdame, and there prepared ſhips, and when the wind ſerued he paſſed towards Flu ſhing, but calmeneſſe of the wind cauſed his ſtay againſt the Iles of Alcoro wherein Flu ſhing ſtandeth, but in the morning he landed at Campheere, and thence in a wagon he paſſed to Middleborough, and from thence to Flu ſhing, where he tooke ſhipping towards England.

The 23. of November, the honorable lord Robert earle of Leiceſter, lieutenant generall of all her maieſties forces in the vnited prouinces of the Low countries, returning from thence, arriued at London, & went late that night to the Court at Richmond, where he was not ſo ſuddenly come, as forwardly welcome of her maieſty, and the reſt: and thus leauing the ſeruice done in thoſe vnited prouinces, the Low countries or Netherlands (whereof thus far I had receiued aduertiſements from my good friend, and neare kinſman Henry Archer, one of his Excellencies gard) I returne to matters at home.

The earle of Leiceſter returneth from the Low countries, and arriued in England.

The 8. of October laſt before paſſed, I. Low, I. Adams, and Richard Dibdale, being before condemned for treaſon, in being made prieſts by authority of the biſhop of Rome, were drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Seminary prieſts executed.

Ludgate of London new builded.

One of the west gates of the city of London, commonly called Ludgate, was this yeare new builded, at the charges of the citizens of the same city, amounting to fifteene hundred pound or more.

Parliament at Westminster.

The 29. of October, the archbishop of Caunterbury, the lord treasurer, and the earle of Darby, representing the queenes maiesties person, began the high court of parliament by prorie, which session of parliament was at this time assembled, for triall of matters concerning Mary the queene of Scots, &c.

An. reg. 29.

The 2. of December, the session of parliament brake vp, and was prorogued vntill the 15. of Februarie, the substance of matter handled in the same session concerning the queene of Scots, is set downe at large in a letter learnedly penned, and published in print, directed to the honorable the earle of Leicester, and as I haue set downe in my continuation of M. Reigne Woolfe, and Holinsheds Chronicle.

Proclamation against the queene of Scots.

The 6. of December, the lord maior of London, assisted with diuers earles, barons, the aldermen of London in their scarlet, the principall officers of the city, the greatest number of the gentlemen of the best account in and about the city, with the number of 80. of the most graue and worshipfullest citizens in coates of velure, and chaines of gold, all on horsebacke, in most solemne and stately manner, by sound of foure trumpets, about ten of the clocke in the forenoone, made open and publike proclamation, and declaration of the sentence lately giuen by the nobility against the queene of Scots, vnder the great seale of England, bearing date at Richmond the fourth of December, being openly read by maister W. Sebright, Towne clearke of London, and with loud voyce solemnely proclaimed by the sergeant at armes of the sayd city, in foure seuerall places, to wit, at the crosse in Cheape, at the end of Chancery lane in Fleete-streete ouer against the Temple, at Leaden-hall corner, and at S. Magnus corner neare London bridge, during which time, like solemne proclamations were made with great solemnity in the county of Middlesex, namely in the palace at Westminster, without Temple bar, and in Holborne, by the sherifes of London and Middlesex, assisted with sundry noblemen and gentlemen of good account, and the Iustices of peace of the sayd county, to the great and wonderfull reioycing of the people of all sorts, as manifestly appeared by ringing of bels, making of bonfires, and singing of Psalmes in euery of the streetes and lanes of the city.

Douer hauen repaired.

The queenes maiestie granted to the towne of Douer toward the repairing of their hauen, the free transportation of 30000. quarters of wheate, 10000. quarters of barley and malt, 4000. tun of beare, without paying custome or impost, this licence or pattent was sold to a couple of marchants of London, named Iohn Bird, and Thomas Wats, after the rate of three shillings and foure pence the quarter of wheate, and 2. s. 8. d. for euery quarter of barley or malt. And the licence for beare being sold to diuers, amounted to 4000. markes at the least: more there was granted by parliament *Anno* 23. Elizabeth, that for euery vessell or crayer whereof her subiects were owners or partners, being of burden twenty tuns or vpward, loading or discharging within this realme, or passing too or fro any forrein countrey during the space of 7. yeares then next ensuing, there should be payd for euery such voyage by the maister or owner of all such vessels, &c. three pence for euery tun of the burthen of such ship, which grew to 1000. pounds yearely at the least.

The

The queenes maiestie foreseeing the generall dearth of graine, and other victuals growne partly through the vnseasonablenesse of ỹ yeares past, partly through the vncharitable greedinesse of such as be great corne maisters, but especially through the vnlawfull and ouermuch transporting of graine into forraine countries, vnder colour of licence granted, by the aduise of her honorable counsell, published a proclamation and booke of orders to be taken by her iustices for relefe of the poore, notwithstanding all which, the excessiue prises of graine still increased, so that wheate was sold at London for 8.s. the bushell, and in some other parts of the realme, for 10.s. 12.s. 13.s. &c. 1587. Proclamation for graine.

The 8. of Februarie, being wednesday (according to sentence lately giuen by ỹ nobility) Mary Steward queene of Scots, about ten of the clocke before noone, was executed, and suffered death, by beheading vpon a scaffold set vp for that purpose in the great hall of the castle of Fodringhay, in presence of George Talbot earle of Shrewsbury, Henry Grey earle of Kent, principall commissioners, and others the gentlemen of the countrey neare adioyning, to the number of about 300. She was (as appertained to a queene) royally buried at Peterborough on the first of August next following. Queene of Scots beheaded.

The 15. of Februarie, the parliament began at Westminster, wherein was granted to her maiestie towards her charges for the defence of this realme, a subsidy by the clergy of 6.s. the l. and of the temporalty 2.s. 8.d. goods, & 4.s. lands, with 2. fifteenes, &c. The 20. of Februarie, a strange thing happened, a man hanged for felonie at S. Thomas Waterings, being begged by the Chirurgions of London, to haue made of him an Anatomy, after he was dead to all mens thinking, cut downe, stripped of his apparell, layd naked in a chest, thrown into a carre, and so brought from the place of execution through the Borough of Southwarke ouer the bridge, & through the city of London to the Chirurgions hall neare vnto Cripplegate: the chest being there opened, and the weather extreame cold, he was found to be aliue, and liued till the 23. of Februarie, and then died. Parliament at Westminster. A man hanged begged for dead, and liued three dayes after.

The same 23. of Februarie, a gun powder house at Radriffe, was blowne vp, about ten of the clocke before noone. Gun powder house blowne vp.

The 12. of Aprill, sir Thomas Bromley knight, lord Chancelor of England deceased, and was honorably buried at Westminster on the second of May. About the same time deceased sir Ralfe Sadler, Chancelor of the Dutchie of Lancaster, and one of her maiesties priuy counsell. Also on the 16. of Aprill, deceased the Dutches of Somerset, at Hanworth, and was buried at Westminster. Item, Edward earle of Rutland, baron Roos of Hamlake, lord of Trusbut and Beauoire, knight of the honorable order of the garter, departed this life at London, on the 14. of Aprill, and according to his desire was honorably conueyed from thence to his castle of Beauoire, and buried in the parish church at Belford, the 15. of May, where many of his noble ancestors and parents are honorably intombed. Lord Chancelor deceased. Chancelor of dutchie deceased. Dutches of Somerset deceased. Earle of Rutland deceased.

The 29. of Aprill, sir Christopher Hatton knight, captaine of the gard, vicechamberlaine, and one of her maiesties priuy counsell, was made lord Chancelor of England at Croydon, in the archbishop of Caunterburies house, where he receiued the great seale in the gallery there. And the third of May, being the 1. day of the terme, he rode from Elie place in Oldborne, to Westminster, there to take his oath, Sir Christopher Hatton Lord Chancelor of England.

oath, before whom went about the number of fortie his gentlemen in one liuerie blew, and chaines of gold, diuers Pensioners, and other gentlemen of the court, vpon foote-clothes, the officers and clarks of the Chancerie, and then the Lord Chancellor, hauing on his right hand the Lord Treasurer, and on the left hand the Earle of Leicester, after whom rode certaine of the Nobilitie, the Iudges of the realme, many knights, and lastly a great troupe of their retinue.

T. Fenner. Seruice of sir Francis Drake at Cales, and Cape S. Vincent.

In this meane time, the most fortunate seruice for England, performed by sir Francis Drake in Cales the 19. of Aprill with his late exploits in Cape S. Vincent, and Cape-saker, done the 21. of May, written by a gentleman of his companie, was such as followeth.

He hauing discouered (by aduise of 2. ships of Middleborough that came from Cales, with whom he met in 40. degrees the 16. of Aprill) and by them vnderstanding that there was great prouision in Cales, and thereabout, appointed to come for Lisbborne, he with all speed possible did bend his force thither, to cut off their power and prouision: so as the 19. of Aprill, an houre before sun setting, he entred the harbour of Cales, & his fleete: there checked with him at the entring thwart the town, 6. gallies: but they in short time retired vnder their fortresses. There fled some 20. French ships to port Royall, & some Spaniards, which could not be hindered of the flight, by reason of the shields. There were sunke by sir Francis, at his comming in with shot, one argosie of 1000. tun, furnished with 30. peeces of brasse, & richly laden. There were to the number of 38. ships vndertaken before night, & victors of the Rode: 30. hulks Hollanders confiscated to the king, and their goods sold to the kings vse, 24. of them were fired, the other 6. were at port Royall laden with wines & bread, & to be presently full laden for Lisbborne. One carrike of 1400. tuns appertaining to the Marques of S. Cruse, fired. Fiue great Biskeis fired, 4. of them lading and taking in of victuall for the kings prouision for Lisbborne, the fift a ship of a 1000. tun, bound for Lisbborne, hauing in her great store of pipes, much yron, nailes, spikes, yron hoopes, and such like, fired. One Shatty laden with wines, of 250 tuns, for the kings prouision, which the English brought to sea, and discharged part of her wines for prouision of the fleete, and then fired her. Three flee boates of about 400. tuns laden with bisket, whereof they fired one, & kept the other two. Ten barkes more laden with wines, raisins, figges, oyle, wheate & such like: they fired, by supposition 38. ships & barks fired, sunke & brought away, amounting in iudgement to 13000. tun of shipping, &c. this was for the first exploit. The second was as followeth, about the 21. of May, they assaulted the castle of Cape-saker, and three other strong holds, all which they tooke, some by force and some by submission. They tooke at seuerall times of shipping, barks, & caruels aboue 100. laden with hoopes, gally oares, pipe staues, timber, and other prouisions of the king of Spaines, for the furnishing of his forces intended against England, which they burned, and consumed all the fisher boats, and nets thereabouts, to their great hinderance. Thence they came before the hauen of Lisbborne, anckoring neare vnto call Cales, where the Marquesse of S. Cruse was with his gallies, and seeing them chase his ships a shore, to take and carry away his barkes and caruels, was content to suffer them there quietly to tarrie, and likewise to depart, and neuer charged them with Cannon shot.

The

The 18. of June Robert earle of Leiceſter, was made L. ſteward of houſhold, & R. Deuereux earle of Eſſex, was made M. of her maieſties horſe. The 25. of June, Robert earle of Leiceſter tooke ſhipping at Margate in Kent towards the Low countries, where he remained not long, but returned. This yeare was a late ſpring and a cold ſommer, ſo that at midſommer peaſen in the cods at London (where they be moſt forward) were ſold for 8. d. the pecke, yet afterward great plenty, & ſold for 8. d. the buſhell, or better cheape, no cheries ripe till S. Iames tide, or Lammas, & then ſuch plenty, that they were ſold for a peny the l. and not aboue. The moneth of September vehement cold, white froſts, winds boyſterous in ỹ north, ſometime haile, ſnow and ſleete, and yet a reaſonable good harueſt for corne, praiſed be God.

Earle of Leiceſter L. ſteward of houſhold.

Earle of Leiceſter went into the Low countries.

A very cold ſpring, ſommer, and harueſt.

The 7. of September. ſir Thomas Hineage was made vicechamberlaine. The queenes maieſty hauing diuers waies vnderſtood the great and diligent preparation of the king of Spaine, in diuers parts both by land and ſea, not onely of the ſtrongeſt ſhips in all places within his dominions, but alſo of all ſorts of prouiſion and munition neceſſarie for a mighty fleete, which was to come from Spaine and Portingale, for the furniſhing & better direction whereof he had drawne together into the places aforeſaid, the moſt principall and ancient captaines and ſouldiers, aſwell of the kingdomes of Naples, and Sicile, as of Lombardy and other parts of Italy, and the more remote parts of India, as by euery one was long before very euidently perceiued, by reaſon that the preparation of theſe things together with the ſhips, mariners, and ſouldiers, the diuers ſorts and quantities of victuall, the great number and diuers kinds of artillery, with the ſumme of euery ſeuerall kind, were ſufficiently ſpecified vnto all countries by certaine pamphlets, laying foorth at large the whole intent, the which pamphlets were printed and publiſhed in Spaine and Portingale, and other prouinces of Chriſtendome, with this title: The moſt puiſſant and moſt happie Fleete of the King of Spaine, againſt the Realme of England: her Maieſty, I ſay, hauing in this manner receiued ſo open and manifeſt information hereof, as alſo certaine intelligence of horſemen, and footemen, ſent in ſo great number, that they were ſufficient for the furniſhing of diuers campes in the Low countries, vnder the gouernement of the duke of Parma his lieutenant generall for thoſe prouinces, and withall knowing the multitude of the ſhips of war, and the poſſibility that the ſayd king had, to tranſport his ſouldiers out of Flanders, & land them in England, not ſparing to giue out thereupon open and free report, that all that prouiſion was for the inuaſion & conqueſt of England: Her maieſty therefore furniſhed her ſelfe by ſea with a mighty fleete, & by land with no leſſe diligence to reſiſt ſuch great forces as by all nations were reported to come againſt her: for it was neuer knowne in the memory of man, that ſo great preparation was euer heretofore at one time made out, either by King Philip himſelfe, or yet by the Emperour Charles the fift his father, although his power were much more, and his occaſions of warre farre greater. The diligence therefore of the Engliſhmen, anſwerable vnto the care of the Prince, was ſuch, and ſo great, that her Maieſtie was prouided of a mightie fleete to defend her by ſea from the enemie, betweene the firſt of November in this yeare 1587. and the 20. of December next enſuing, a time very ſhort for ſuch a prouiſion, moſt excellently furniſhed of all things neceſſary for ſuch a purpoſe. The

Petruccio Vbaldino.

A nauy to the ſeas prepared and furniſhed.

charge

charge of which nauie was commended vnto the right honorable Charles Lord Howard, baron of Effingham, lord high Admirall of England, who for his place and office, noble courage, experience in martiall affaires, and nobilitie of bloud and descent, was thought most fit to be employed in that seruice: he had in his company a sufficient number of honorable, worshipfull, and valiant personages, desirous to serue their prince and countrey in such a cause as this: likewise of seafaring men and priuate souldiers, so competent a number, as might be answerable vnto the power of so great a prince in so weightie a cause. The lord high admirall therefore with those forces keeping for a season the narrow seas, & chanell between England and Flaunders, sir Francis Drake knight, was by the aduise of the lords of the counsell, & his honor so commanding it, sent towards the west parts with certaine of the Queenes ships and others, from certaine ports of England thereabout, being in all about the number of fiftie saile of all sorts, there to attend the lord high admirall his comming with greater forces, if occasion should require. In the meane season the lord admirall, with his vizeadmirall the lord Henry Seymer, kept the narrow seas, accompanied with 20. ships more, very well furnished at the charges of the citizens of London, besides many other from diuers parts on that side the realme, that lieth from the towne of Douer vp to the north-ward, which met altogether in good order, and well appointed for the wars.

1588. Now to speake somewhat more particularly of this preparation, made as well by land, as by sea, to withstand the inuasion intended, (& after attempted) by the Spanish Armado against this realme. The generall forces of the realme were appointed to be mustered, trained, & put in a readines in the seuerall shires, for the defence of the land: there was also a leuie made of 2. seuerall armies, the one to make the body of a camp to reside at Tilbury in Essex, to encounter with the enemy if he should attempt to land in any place in that countrey, whereof the right honorable lord Robert earle of Leicester, L. steward of her Maiesties household, was appointed lieutenant generall, as also of all the armies leuied against forraine inuasion: the other to be employed for the gard of her Highnes person, vnder the charge and gouernment of the right honorable the L. Hunsdon, Lord Chamberlaine to her Maiestie, and appointed by her Highnesse lieutenant of the said armie.

A campe at Tilbury in Essex. The campe of Tilbury vnder the charge and gouernment of the right honorable the earle of Leicester, was consisting both of horsemen and also of footemen, which were raised out of all the shires following.

	Horsemen.		Footemen.	
	Lances.	Light horse.	Bedford	500.
Bedford shire	17.	40.	Buckingham	500.
Buckingham	18.	83.	Hartford	1000.
Harfordshire	25.	60.	Surrey	1000.
Kent	50.	100.	Barkshire	1000.
Suffolke	50.	200.	Oxford	1000.
Essex	50.	100.	London	1000.
Middlesex	35.	83.	Suffolke	3000.
Surrey	8.	98.	Essex	5000.
			Kent	5000.
Summe	253.	769.	Norfolke	3000.
			Summe	22000.

This

This number of footemen was allotted for the campe at Tilbury, but the number assembled amounted only to 16500.

The army for the gard of her Maiesties person vnder the charge of the Lord Chamberlaine, consisting both of horse and foote leuied out of these shires following.

	Horsemen.		Footemen.	
	Lances.	Light horse.	Gloucester	2500.
Gloucester	20.	100.	Somerset	4000.
Somerset	50.	100.	Sussex	2500.
Sussex	20.	100.	Wilton	2300.
Wilton	25.	100.	Cambridge	700.
Barkeshire	10.	85.	Northampton	600.
Oxford	23.	103.	Leicester	500.
Cambridge	13.	40.	Warwicke	500.
Northampton	20.	80.	Huntingdon	400.
Leicester	9.	70.	Dorset	1000.
Warwicke	17.	76.	Suffolke	3000.
Huntingdon	6.	26.	Hartford	500.
Dorset	120.	0.	Surrey	500.
Suffolke	70.	230.	Barkshire	500.
Norfolke	80.	321.	Oxford	150.
Summe	481.	1431.	Worcester	400.
			Southampton	2000.
			Deuon	2000.
			London	5000.
			Middlex	1000.
			Summe	34050.

The Lords and other of her Maiesties priuy counsell, and sundry others of the nobilitie of the realme, being appointed to repaire vnto the court, to attend vpon her maiesties person, of their free and voluntary disposition, furnished, arrayed, and put in very comely order their troupes both of horsemen and footemen, and presented the same vnto her maiesties view at her mannor of Saint Iames.

The. Nany to the seas against the Spanish Armado.

The nauy set foorth and armed to the seas (as ye haue heard) consisted partly of her maiesties ships, partly of the ships of her subiects, which were furnished out of the port townes, whereunto they belonged. Of this nauy the chiefest and greatest part was vnder the charge of the lord Charles Howard lord Admirall, the rest of the ships in great number were assigned vnto the lord Henry Seimer, admirall of that fleete, to gard the narrow seas, and to impeach the issuing foorth of the ships and vessels prepared for the duke of Parma at Dunkirke, &c. to ioyne in the enterprise of the Spanish Armado.

The states also of the vnited prouinces in the Low countries, sent about the number of 40. ships out of Holland and Zeland, well appointed and furnished in warre-

warlike manner, which ioyned with the Englifh fleete, vnder the charge of the faid lord Henry Seimer, playing vpon the coaft of Dunkirke and Flanders.

Ships vnder the lord Admirals charge.

Her maieflies fhips, from Quinborough toward Plimmouth in the moneth of January laft paft, vnder fir Francis Drake.

The Reuenge,
The Hope,
The Nonperill,
The Swiftfure,
The Aide.

From Quinborough toward Plimmouth the 16. of May vnder the L. Admirall.

The Beare,
The Triumph,
The Elizabeth Ionas,
The Victory,
The Arke,
The Bonauenture,
The Lion,
The Mary Rofe,
The Dreadnought,
The Foreſight,
Tho Swallow,
The White Lion.

Pinnaces,

The Charles,
The Moone.

Other fhips of the beſt ſort.

The Galeon Leiceſter,
The Royall Marchant,
The Roe Bucke fir *W. Rawleys*,
The Edward Bonauenture,
The Golden Noble,
The Hopewell of London.

By the Londoners of their charge fhips 16.

The Hercules,
The Toby,
The Sentution,
The Minion,
The Margaret and Iohn,
The Aſſention,
The May Flower,
The Primerofe,
The Red Lion,
The Tygar,
The Gift of God,
The Barke Burre,
The Royall Defence,
The Golden Lion,
The Braue,
The T. Bonauenture.

Pinnaces foure:

The Diana,
The Paſport,
The Moone-ſhine,
The Relief.

Of Briſtow.

The Minion,
The Vnicorne,
The Handmaid,
A pinnace.

Of Barſtable.

The Galeon Dudley.
The God ſaue her,
The Tyger.

Of Exceſter.

The Bartholomew,
The Roſe,
A Pinnace.

Of Plimmouth.

The Minion Elkon,
The Sparke,
The Hope.
The T. Drake,
The Barke Bond,
The Barke Bonnar,
The Barke Talbot,
The Flie-boate,
The White Lion, the Lord Admirals,
A Pinnace,

A pinnace, the lord *Sheffields*.
A pinnace, sir *William Winters*, and sundrie others of the West parts.

Ships vnder the lord Henry Seimers charge.

Her maiesties ships.

The Rainbow,	The Sunne,
The Vantgard,	The Merlin,
The Antilope,	The Signet,
The Bull,	The Spie,
The Tyger,	The Fancie,
The Scowt,	The gally Bona,
The Tremontany,	The Brigandine,
The Achates.	The George a hoy.

Other English ships there were from the ports of the North parts of the realme, besides Flemmish ships of Holland and Zeland, in number fortie. As also ten ships of war, by the Merchants aduenturers of England, at their owne proper costes and charges set out of the citie of London, vnder the charge of captaine Henry Bullengham (ouer and aboue the other sixteene ships, and foure pinnaces, set out at the cities charges) to wit,

The Pansie,	The Dolphin,
The Roselion,	The Iewell,
The Anthony,	The Antelop,
The Salamander,	The Toby,
The Prouidence,	The George noble.

The lord high Admirall with his forces keeping for a season the narrow seas & chanell betweene England and Flanders, sir Fran. Drake knight, mentioned here also in honor of his deserts, was by the aduise of the lords of the councell, & his honor so commanding it, sent towards the west parts, with certaine of the Q. ships, and others frō the ports of England (as is aforesaid) being about 54. or 56. saile of all sorts, there to attend the L. high Admirall his comming with greater forces, if occasion should so require. In the meane season the L. Admirall with his vice-admirall the Lord Henry Seimor kept the narrow seas, accompanied with twentie ships more, very well furnished, at the charges of the cittizens of London, besides many other from diuers parts on that side of the realme, that lieth from the towne of Douer vp to the northward, which met altogether in good order, and well appointed for the warres. *Petruccio Ybaldino.* The Lord Admirall kept the narrow seas.

And here the L. high Admirall vnderstanding for a certaintie, that the fleete of the enemy was already lanched & at the sea, he weyed anker, and leauing the lord Seimor with sufficient forces of the Queenes ships, & other vessels to watch what the Duke of Parma would do, or was able to vndertake by sea, and parting from thence the 21. of May to the westward with her maiesties nauy, and 20. ships of London, with some others, he arriued at Plimmouth the three and twentith of the same month, where sir Francis Drake with more than fifty saile which he had vnder his charge, met with the Lord Admirall in very good order. And then the two nauies being ioyned together into one, the Lord Admirall made

sir

ſir Francis Drake his viceadmirall: he that had ſeene theſe together, would haue commended it to haue bene a moſt royall fleete, about two hundred ſaile, adding nine voluntaries, or aduenturers, furniſhed by the gentlemen of Deuonſhire and fifteene victuallers from London, the leaſt being of one hundred and twentie tun, all very well furniſhed for the fight, and a number of goodly men that were faine to returne home for lacke of entertainement, for there was choiſe both of mariners and ſouldiers.

Arriuing at Plimmouth (as is ſaid) his lordſhip preſently gaue order for prouiſion of victuall for the whole nauy, that it might want nothing that ſhould tend to the neceſſary ſeruice enſuing.

This prouiſion being complete, he reſolued with himſelfe to put forth to the ſea againe about the 30. of May aforeſaid, but the winde not ſeruing his turne, he kept kept himſelfe abroad, ſailing vp and downe within the ſleeue betweene Vſhant and Silly, attending ſome ſight or report of the enemies fleete: where hauing waited a certaine time, ſometimes drawing neare to the coaſt of France, and ſometimes to the coaſt of England, he returned, being thereto enforced by a great tempeſt with his whole nauy into the port of Plimmouth about the firſt of June, to refreſh his company there.

In the meane ſeaſon there were diſcouered betweene Vſhant and Silly certaine ſhips of the Spaniſh fleete, not aboue the number of fourteene, which were knowne to be ſeuered from the whole fleete by violence of the aforeſaid tempeſt: but before they could be encountred withall by any of ẏ Engliſh nauie, the wind came about, whereby they had opportunitie to returne backe againe, ſauing themſelues from all perils in their hauen called the Groine, into the which alſo the reſt of the Spaniſh fleete was put prouide themſelues a new of other thinges which they wanted, and ſpecially of freſh water. Of this thing the Lord Admirall had intelligence and aduertiſement from ſundry parts, as alſo that the Spaniſh fleete was by great fortune diſperſed and ſeuered into diuerſe places, through penury of many and thoſe neceſſarie things, through diſeaſes and mortalitie of men, although the report hereof could not afterwards be verified, whereof the certaine truth was, that being troubled with tempeſt, they were commanded to come a ſhore at the Groine.

The lord Admirall therefore ſeeing the coaſt of England and France cleare and free from all danger, as by diligent ſearch it was vnderſtood, reſolued by the aduice and opinion of his counſell, to take the aduantage of the next winde that ſhould blow from the North, that paſſing to the coaſt of Spaine he might find the enemies fleete ſo diſperſed in the Groine, and in other parts of Galitia where they had driuen by the ſtorme.

This was put in execution betweene the 8. and 10. of the moneth of July, the winde being then at the North, which within a while changing vnto the South, after that he was come within 40. leagues or thereabout, of the coaſt of Spaine, made him to call a doubt of that which afterwards happened indeed. For laying this before him as his principall care, according to the charge laid vpon him by her maieſtie, to be diligent and carefull for the defence of the coaſt of England, and

conſidering

considering that with the wind which was now changed & very good to make for England, the enemie might set out & passe for England without discouery of his fleete, he returned backe with the whole naule, & the 12. of the same month he arriued at Plimmouth there accordingly to prouide himselfe of all that was necessarie.

The Spanish fleete discouered.

The 19. of July, his honor had intelligence by a barke or pinnace, whose captaine was Thomas Fleming, amongst other behind in the fleete for discouerie, that the Spanish fleete in number by estimation 158. sailes, was discouered neare vnto ẏ Lizard, the wind being then south & by west. And therefore albeit that by reason of the great number of English ships which were in Plimmouth, it was with that wind very hard to bring them foorth from thence: (as the militarie art of the sea, and the condition of their affaires required) yet was there such diligence vsed by the L. admirall and the rest by his example, as they indeuoured therein with such aduise and earnestnesse, that many of the ships at the length warped out of ẏ hauen, as if the wind had bene wholly fauourable vnto them: which thing could not haue fallen out, but through the long and certaine skill which ẏ English maisters generally haue in marine discipline. To the which reason this may be added, that they were all of one nation, of one toung and touched with a grieuous and equall hatred toward their enemies, being mightily perswaded of their forces. Wherupon we may in such cases assure our selues of what importance it is in seafaring matters, for a fleete of any prince whatsoeuer, inuading any forraine state or kingdome, to incounter with a fleete ready for defence in such manner as ẏ English naue was, for so much as the fleet inuading being prouided diuerslie of maisters and officers, differing one from another in custome, language & conceit, cannot in any measure giue any assured hope of certaine victorie how honorable soeuer ẏ commander be: many of the ships therefore came foorth, by reason that the men were moued in the foresaid respects to labor diligently, & so much the rather, by how much the captains & chiefe officers both by counsell and hand, shewed themselues more diligent & industrious. By this means ẏ 20. day of July ẏ L. admirall accõpanied with 54. ships, came foorth with the same wind ẏ the enemy had from the southwest, which thing certainly was not esteemed a small thing to be done, in regard as well of the wind as of ẏ narrownesse of ẏ place it selfe. The Spanish fleet being manifestly discouered about 140. miles from Edestõ, & clearely seene of euery one toward the west, & so far off from Foy as the English fleet was, that is, 25. English miles. The next morning being ẏ 21. of July, all ẏ ships which were now come out of ẏ hauen, had got the wind of the Spaniards, & approching somewhat neerer, found ẏ their naue was placed in battell ray, after the manner of a moone crescent, being ready with her hornes & her inward circumference to receiue either all, or so many of the English naue as should giue her the assault, her hornes being extended in wideneſſe about the distance of 8. miles, as was informed. The reason of their arranging in this order, arose vpon the foresight of the D. of Medina Sidonia generall of the Spanish fleet, who approching the coast, sent out a final ship to espy somwhat concerning ẏ English fleet, & hearing by certaine fishermen taken prisoners, ẏ our fleete was in Plimmouth, he prepared himselfe as aforesaid, for the auoyding of all such chances as might after befall: wherupon about 9. of ẏ clock before noone, the L. Admirall commanded his pinnace called the Disdaine,

to giue the defiance vnto the duke of Medina: after which he himselfe in the R. ship called the Ark went formost, as was conuenient, & began hotly to fight with a great ship which was admirall of the Spanish fleete, in which ship he thought by reason of certaine likely coniectures, the duke of Medina to be, considering also the ship was so well accompanied by others. The fight with her continued so long and so hote, that diuerse other ships, yea the most part of the Spanish fleete came to her succour.

In the meane season the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake, with maister Iohn Hawkens, & maister Martin Frobisher, fought with a galeon of Portingal, wherein they thought Don Martin de Ricaldes the vice-admirall to be. This fight was so well maintained for the time it continued, that the enemie was enforced to leaue his place, and to giue way gathering toward the east. In the which point of remouing, a great galeon wherein Don Pedro de Valdes went for captaine, falling foule with another ship of their fleet, was depriued of her fore-mast, so that she could not follow the body of the fleet that forsooke her, to the great marueil of the Englishmen themselues, whereby Don Pedro became prisoner, as after shall be declared. Furthermore also there was at this time a great ship of Biscay about 800. tuns in burthen, sore battered in fight, by casualtie of their owne powder, was set on fire, part thereof blowne vp and their people slaine, and so left to aduenture with the people that remained, so that being vtterly vnable al ỳ night to helpe her selfe, she was succoured by ỳ galliasses, & for ỳ time saued in ỳ body of the fleete.

But to returne to our purpose: This first skirmish continued not aboue two houres, because the lord Admirall considering that he wanted as yet fortie ships, which could not so readily come foorth of the hauen, thought he should do better seruice if he stayed their comming before he proceeded any further, beating behind vpon the enemie, lest he should bring the rest too much in hazard, and therefore he thought it not profitable too much to imbolden and pricke those forward that he had with him, in a matter that was not greatly conuenient, either for the honour of the realme, or his owne person, neither did the militarie discipline of the English nation purchased by long experience at the sea, giue him leaue to do it. And therefore he put foorth his flag to call the other captaines to counsell, who agreeing vnto his determination, receiued instructions concerning the order that they were to keepe in following the Spanish fleete. Then hauing giuen libertie to euery man to returne to their charge, he gaue order likewise to his vice-admirall sir Francis Drake to appoint the watch for that night, and to beare out the light.

The same night the Spanish fleete lay about 14. miles off from the fleet.

The next day following early in the morning it was vnder the wind not so farre off as Berie.

In the meane time the English fleete wanting light, because the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake leauing his place to follow fiue Hulkes, which were discouered in the euening very late, it came to passe that all the other ships stayed behind, not knowing that they were to follow, or whither to direct themselues: so that there mought haue followed some great inconuenience, had they had to do with an enemie more practized in our seas: but as it seemed by report, ỳ said vice-admirall was induced to do this by meanes of a certaine curious diligence, and a

militarie

militarie suspition, growing in his mind vpon certaine and very probable coniectures, grounded on circumstances of matter considered in his mind: and therefore he gaue them the chase, thinking that they had bene enemies. But being ouertaken and their officers examined, and being knowne to be friends, or at the leastwise not enemies, he permitted thē to go their way, returning himselfe vnto the fleete the day following.

The lord Admirall notwithstanding accompanied with the Beare, and the Marie Rose comming a little behind his fleete, by reason of the clearenesse of the aire, followed the enemy all ẏ night within a Culuerin shot. By occasion whereof the rest of the fleete was cast so farre behind, that the morning after the nearest part thereof could hardly descrie the tops of the other ships, and many of thē were cleane out of sight, so that with all the force of their saile they could hardly come all together the whole day following vntill the euening.

The next day the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake being in the Queenes shippe called the Reuenge, hauing also the Roe-bucke, and a pinnace or two in his cōpanie, tooke Don Pedro de Valdes, who, as was said before, had lost the fore-mast of his ship: and hauing receiued the said Valdes as his prisoner, and certaine other gentlemen of most account that were therein, he sent the ship together with ẏ prisoners vnto Dartmouth, vnder the conduct of the Roe-bucke, & he himselfe made toward the lord Admirall, vnder whose lee he came that night. This ship or galeō of 1150. tuns, in which Don Pedro de Valdes Generall of the ships of the army of Andaluzia was, had in it three hundred and foure souldiers, one hundred and eighteene mariners, braſſe ordinance fiue and fortie peeces, shot and bullet 2. thousand and three hundred, powder one hundred and fourteene quintals, lead for the muskets two and twenty quintals, match nineteene quintals, and so euery ship in the fleete according to his burthen had the like prouision, as is set downe in a booke extant in the Spanish toung (which booke I haue seene at the hands of the worshipfull maister Anthony Radcliffe alderman of London.)

A great galeon with Don Pedro taken.

The same day being the 22. of July, a little before the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake was returned vnto the fleete, the Spaniards forsooke the ship which the day before was spoiled by fire: to the which ship the lord Admirall sent the L. Thomas Howard, and with him maister Iohn Hawkens, who being in the cockboat of the Victorie, went aboord her, and there found a lamentable sight, for all the vppermost deckes of her being torne and spoiled by the fire, there were in her fifty men miserably brent with the powder. The stinke in her was so great, and the ship it selfe so filthie, that the lord Howard departed presently from her: and returning with maister Iohn Hawkens to the lord Admirall, they informed him of that they found and saw there: for which cause there was presently commaundement giuen, that the little pinnace of captaine Fleming should conduct her vnto some port of England, where they might most commodiously helpe themselues: whereupon it was carried to Weymouth the next day following. For all the misshap that befell this ship, they vnderstood that the Spaniards had taken out of her all the best things that they could, casting off the bulke of her, together with certaine grosse stuffe therein, as for that time altogether vnprofitable.

A carack taken and sent to Weymouth.

The night last before mentioned there befell a great calme and thereupon foure

Spanish galiasses seuered themselues from ẏ rest of their fleete. This thing made the Englishmen to doubt, that that night they had resolued to giue the onset vpon some of their lesser ships, imagining that they might annoy them the rather, for that they were the rereward of the fleete, but afterwards the galiasses (whatsoeuer the occasion was) enterprised nothing, either for that they saw they could not safely do it, or else because their minds were not throughly fixed vpon that which before they thought to do.

The morning following being the 22. of July, the wind was at northeast, whereupon the Spaniards came backe vpon the Englishmen with the aduantage of the wind, directing their course toward the land: the which course was not profitable for the Englishmen. Therefore to take the aduantage of the enemy, they fell about towards the west with a reasonable compasse, their ships being very good both of saile and stirrage, that they might bring about their purpose. Now ẏ Spaniards to hinder their intent after they perceiued it, offered to come neare aboord to fight with them, trusting in the huge greatnesse and height of their ships: the which offer of theirs the Englishmen refused not, but began presently to bring themselues in battell aray, which the enemie perceiuing, he also did the like. In this case the Arke, the Lion, the Beare, the Elizabeth Ionas, the Victorie, and certaine other ships were content to follow the ship called the Nonpariglia.

In the meane season the Triumph with other fiue ships of London, namely, the Merchant Royall, the Centurion, the Margerie Ioan, the Mary Rose, and the golden Lion were so far to the rereward, and so far seuered from the rest of the fleete, that the galiasses vndertooke to giue them an hard assault: but they were well entertained by the ships for the space of an houre and an halfe, vntill at the length some of the Queenes ships comming to succour the Triumph and the Londoners, dealt so well in the matter, that the galiasses were driuen to retire. The wind came about at this present to the southeast, and afterwards to the southwest and by south, at which time a certaine number or squadron of the Queenes, together with other Merchants ships gaue assault vnto the Spanish fleete, and that so furiously to the westward of them, that the Spaniards were all enforced to giue them way: for which cause the lord admirall considering both the discommoditie and daunger whereinto the Triumph and the other 5. ships were come, he called other of the Queenes ships that were not far off, and gaue them strait commandement to follow him, and to charge the enemies which were to the westward with all their force, giuing further order to them all, not to discharge any one peece of ordinance before they should come within a musket shot of the enemy, in as much as that was the onely way to succour the ships of their friends with the great domage of the enemy. This was well performed by the Arke, the Elizabeth Ionas, the Falcon Leicester, the golden Lion, the Victorie, the Mary Rose, the Dread nought, and the Swallow: which thing the duke of Medina perceiuing, he also came forth with fifteene of his best galeons, to hinder and impeach the Englishmen in the defence of the Triumph, seeming in this case to pretend that the reason of ẏ fight did so require, whereas the regard of his honor did no lesse inforce him vnto it, because it seemed inconuenient ẏ he should in euery thing be inferior to ẏ Englishmen, & therfore he made large promises vnto those by whose meanes ẏ victorie

victorie could be gotten: howbeit the Spaniards in the end were inforced to giue place and to retire vnto their array of battell. In this conflict one William Cox captaine of a little pinnace called the Violet, belonging to sir William Winter, behaued himselfe very valiantly against the enemie in the greatest heate of this incounter: but within a little while after he lost his delight, wherewith he was not very well acquainted, and his life, by a great peece of ordinance.

Toward the euening foure or fiue Spanish ships came out from the rest of the fleete from the southeastward, against whom certaine of the English ships came, and namely the May-flower of London, which discharged certaine peeces vpon the enemie with a very honorable declaration of the marine discipline, & being accompanied by other ships that were there found, they all behaued themselues no lesse diligently (which thing was not at ỹ first hoped for) shewing their desire tempered with a wish of other company. The conflict continued from the morning vnto the euening, the L. Admirall being at all times ready and vigilant in all aduentures that might fall out: and thereupon he was sometimes more, and sometimes lesse egre in the conflict, as necessitie required, giuing thereby euident example how others should behaue themselues. It might well be said, that for the time, it was not possible to see before this battell, in this sea, so hard a conflict, nor so terrible a spoile of ships, by reason of the pellets that flew so thicke euery way: to conclude, there was neuer seene so vehement a fight, either side endeuoring through an head-strong and deadly hatred the others spoile and destruction. For albeit the musquetiers and harquebuziers were in either fleete many in number, yet could they not be discerned or heard, by reason of the more violent and roaring shot of the greater ordinance, that followed so thicke one vpon an other, & played so well that day on either side, that they were thought to be equall in number to common harquebuziers in an hot skirmish. The battell was not onely long, but also neare at hand, within halfe a musket shot, and that to the great aduantage of the English men, who with their ships, being excellent of saile and stirrage, yet lesse a great deale than the Spanish ships, and therefore more light and nimble, sought not at all, (according vnto their manner otherwise) to boord them, but keeping themselues aloofe at a reasonable distance, continually beate vpon the hull and tacklings of their enemies ships, which being a great deale higher, could not so conueniently beate the English shippes with their ordinance.

This long conflict being finished, and euery one retiring vnto his part, the next day following, which was the 24. of July, was passed without any thing done, because, by reason of the fight the day before, there was spent a great quantitie of powder and shot: whereupon the lord Admirall sent diuerse barkes and pinnaces to the shore for a new supplie of such munition. For her Maiestie prudently foreseeing each thing necessarie for her men, ordained that there should be sufficient prouision made, according as should be needfull, as well of victuals as of munition. It seemed moreouer that day, that the Spanish fleete was nothing grieued with that dayes respite, but were all of them indifferently glad of that breathing, in as much as thereby they had good opportunity to looke to their leaks, whereof, no doubt, they had a great number, for they had caried away

many shrewd stripes from their enemies, their hurts being of great likelihood so much the more, in that the Spaniards were pend vp in a narrow roome.

The English fleete deuided into foure squadrons.

This day the lord Admirall for certaine conuenient reasons deuided the whole body of the fleete into foure squadrons, by meanes of which diuision the enemy might be greatly, and more continually troubled. The first squadron he kept for himselfe: the second he assigned vnto sir Francis Drake his viceadmirall: the third to maister Iohn Haukins: the fourth to maister Martin Frobisher, and after noone he gaue order, that in the night fire of the marchants ships in each squadron should charge the Spanish fleete, in as many parts at one & the same time, ỹ at midnight the enemy might be kept occupied. This order taken as it was very likely might haue had as good effect as it was wisely giuen: but by reason of a great calme which fell out, no part of this aduisement could be accomplished, fortune interrupting good counsell.

The next day being the fiue and twentieth day of July, or Saint Iames day, there was a great Spanish galeon left behind her company to the south-ward neare to the squadron of maister Iohn Hawkins, so that the barkes belonging vnto the great ships, were within musket shot of her: by reason hereof three of the galiasses and another ship that was in manner of a galeon, and well appointed, came from the Spanish fleete to succour this galeon. Against whom went out the lord Admirall in the Arke, and the lord Thomas Howard in the golden Lion, and drew so neare being towed by their boates, that they did them much harme, whereby one of them requiring the helpe of the rest, being succoured by them, returned vnto the fleete. And from another, by meanes of a shot comming from the Arke, there was taken away her light and throwne into the sea: the third lost her becke, whereby these two ships, the Arke, and the golden Lion declared this day to each fleete, that they had most diligent and faithfull gunners, desirous as well of the common good, as of the priuate honour of their leaders the lord Admirall, and the lord Thomas Howard which went in them: which commendation might rightly be imparted with them concerning this happy euent, because the calme was so great, that albeit the two fleetes were well able to behold the fortune of each of their friends, yet notwithstanding they could not helpe them at all: at the length the wind beginning somewhat to rise, the Spaniards tooke the opportunity thereof, and put themselues forward to helpe those of their side, and succoured them honorably. After this time the galiasses, in whose puissance the greatest hope of the Spanish fleete was founded, were neuer seene to fight any more, such was their entertainement that day.

The two fleetes notwithstanding approching nigh one vnto another began a conflict, but they continued it but a while, except one ship called the Non-pariglia, and another called the Mary Rose, which hauing taken in their topsailes staied themselues there, to make as it were a certaine experience of their manhood vpon the Spanish fleete, behauing themselues honorably for a season. In which time the Triumph being to the northward of the Spanish fleete, was so farre off, that doubting that certaine of the Spanish ships would assault her to the wind ward, they succoured her with diuers boates that got the wind easily: for the Beare and ỹ Elizabeth Ionas, euen at one instant hauing knowledge of the danger wherein

the

the other were drew neare vnto them, desiring both in regard of the honor of their common wealth, and also for the preseruation of their friends and countrimen, to be partakers of the like danger and difficulty.

Whereupon each ship doing her duty, they ioyntly saued the Triumph from all harme, and recouered the wind. And thus this dayes worke ended: whereof I may say that the conflict was no whit shorter then the day it selfe.

At this present the Englishmen considering the great waste of powder and shot that had heretofore bene made, the lord Admirall determined not to assault the enemy any more, vntill he were come nigh vnto Douer, in which place he should find the fleete vnder the charge of the L. Seimor, & sir Willi Winter, who were ready to ioyne with him, that thereby he might both fortifie himselfe with a great number of ships, and in this manner prouide themselues of munition from that part of the realme. Vpon friday therefore being the 26. of the moneth of July, ceasing from fighting, the lord Admirall (as well for their good deserts and honorable seruice, as also to incourage others to like valor) was desirous to aduance certaine personages to the degree of knighthood, for that behauing themselues manfully, as well with their ships as their good aduise, they were worthie that degree of honour: and so much the more worthie, in that being farre separated from all courtly fauour, which many times imparteth the chiefest honours vnto the least deseruing men, they declared their valour in the eyes of either fleete.

Knights made for seruice.

Therefore the two lords, *viz.* the lord Howard, and the lord Sheffield, Roger Townesend, Iohn Hawkins, and Martin Frobisher, were called forth, and the order of knighthood giuen them by the lord Admirall, as their generall.

This day there came to the seruice of her maiestie in her fleete diuers gentlemen, honourable both by bloud and place, but much more in respect of their courage and vertue, for that in these publike affaires, and so necessary seruice of the warres, they willingly offered their seruice in the defence of their country, and honour of her Maiestie.

This day also, and the next, being the seuen and twentith, the Spaniards followed their course quietly before the English fleete. In which time the earle of Sussex, the lord Buckhurst, sir George Carie knight, & the captaines of the forts and castles thereabout, sent their men with powder, shot, and victuals, to the lord Admirall to assist and helpe the army. The same 27. day towards the euening, the Spaniards drew nigh to Calais vnder the coast of Picardy, and there suddenly cast anker, almost right against the left hand of the hauen to the west-ward, a little lesse then fiue miles from Calais Clewes: the English fleete also cast anker within a culuerin shot of the enemy to the westward.

The Spanish fleete flieth, and is chased by the English.

In the meane season the lord Seimor, and sir William Winter ioyned with the L. Admirall, whereby the English fleete increased to the number of 140. ships of all sorts: but the Spaniards with all speede sent tidings vnto the duke of Parma of their arriuall, who at this present was at Bruges, who hauing retained with him al his seafaring mē many dayes before to this purpose, yet proceeded no further in the matter for that time, although for such time as the king had limited him, he for his part tooke as much care as might be looked for at his hands: for hauing

already imbarked a certaine number of souldiers, he was carefull in like manner to dispatch the rest as soone as they should be ready, that they might take opportunity to come foorth, furnishing them abundantly with victuall and munition. But in the meane time such a chance fell out as made frustrate, not only his, but the conceipt also of the duke of Medina, and wholy ouerthrew their enterprise, for the lord Admirall hauing by certaine notice vnderstood, that the duke of Parma had prepared a great number of tuns of water, and 10000. chosen footemen to be imbarked for the ioyning with the fleete, which could not be auoided, if the duke of Medina were not compelled to auoide that place, knowing also the euident perill that was to be feared, if the Spanish fleete should be suffered to refresh it selfe, and to be furnished with so many souldiers, he applied his wits so in the deliberation of these matters of weight and importance, hauing the consent of others more practised, that no time might be lost for the furtherance of this seruice, and forsomuch as the forces of the enemy were not yet united and ioyned together, therefore the 28. of this moneth at midnight, he prouided 8. small ships dressed with artificiall fire, to the intent to driue the same vpon the Spanish fleete. This thing was diligently & effectually brought to passe vnder the charge of captaine Yong & captaine Prowse, two valiant and couragious men: by reason hereof the enemy was not only inforced to breake his sleepe, but the fire coming so suddenly vpon him, to cut his cables, to let slip his ankers, and to hoyse vp sailes as the only way to saue his fleete from so imminent and vnexpected a mischiefe. Furthermore, by meanes of this tumult & confusion, the chiefe galiasse fell fowle with another ship, vpon the cable of whose anker her sterne was set so fast, that they could not loose her all the night long, so that the next day following she was inforced with her oares to make toward the land, & to draw nigh to the hauens mouth of Calais, to saue her selfe in that place: but not knowing that water, and hauing no profitable and conuenient counsell for the time, she fell vpon a shelfe. This thing being in good time espied by the L. Admirall, he sent thither his greatest boate vnder the charge of Amiens Preston his lieutenant, and together with him Thomas Gerard, sonne and heire to sir Gilbert Gerard maister of the Rowles, & maister Haruy two of her maiesties gentlemen & seruants, and others of the court and of his owne seruants, who fought with her, but vnequally, for that the ship being grauelled could with her force preuaile but little. In this conflict it chanced ỳ a musket shot stroke Hugo de Moncada chiefe captaine of ỳ galiasse, a noble & valiant man, in the head: the which misshap ioyned with the difficulty of stirring themselues in their defence, bred such a despaire in euery man, that the greater sort leapt into ỳ water to saue thẽselues by swimming into the hauen, although many of thẽ perished in the water. By this disorder of the enemy, the Englishmen being more secure, tooke her, and lacked her to their great commodity, about 100. men being entred into her, and their company increasing more and more. Whereupon monsieur Gordon gouernor of Calais, a man of good estimation in respect of his prerogatiue in that place, sent his nephew to giue the Englishmen to vnderstand, that they should content themselues with the ordinary spoile, & that they should leaue behind them the great ordinance, as a thing belonging vnto him by vertue of his office: the which message being sent the second time vnto men more intentiue vnto their pray, then other mens reason, made the gentle-

gentleman to be euilly entertained by our men, in such sort, that they would haue forcibly taken from him some things about him, thinking him to be a Spaniard: whereat M. Gordon being offended, caused certaine peeces of ordinance to be discharged from the towne, and then the Englishmen departed, leauing the galiasse at his pleasure, after the losse of some souldiers, hauing notwithstanding sacked 22000. duckets of gold, appertaining vnto the king, and 14. coffers of mouables of the duke of Medina, with some other both mony and mouables of other particular men, and some prisoners, among whom was Don Roderigo of Mendoza, and Don Iohn Gonzales de Solitzauo vnder-captaine of the galiasse.

During the time of surprising of which galiasse, sir Francis Drake vicеadmirall being in the ship called the Reuenge, accompanied with Thomas Fennar captaine of the Nonpariglia, with the rest of that squadron, set vpon the Spanish fleete, giuing them an hote charge. Within a while after, sir Iohn Hawkins in the Victory, accompanied with Edward Fenton captaine of the Mary Rose, with George Beeston captaine of the Dread nought, and Richard Hawkins in the Swallow, with the rest of that squadron, put themselues forward and brake through the middest of the Spanish fleete, where there began a vehement conflict continuing all the morning, wherein euery captaine did very honorable seruice: among the rest captaine Beeston deserued speciall praise. Vnto this fight came the lord Admirall, accompanied with the earle of Cumberland, the lord Thomas Howard, the lord Sheffield, and in that place where the fight was made, and the victory was gotten, they were publikely commended. Not farre from this place there was a great Spanish galeon seene, which was set vpon on the one side, by the earle of Cumberland, and George Riman in the Bonauenture, and on the other side by the lord Seimor, in the ship called the Rainbow, and sir William Winter in the Vantgard, yet she saued her selfe valiantly, gathering into the body of the fleete, although with ill successe, for she was so beaten and so terribly rent and torne with our great ordinance, ẏ the night following, in ẏ sight of her owne fleete she sunke, her men (as it was thought) being saued. After this, captaine Fenton in the Mary Rose, and a Spanish galeon met together, being east and west one of another, yet no nigher then that their shot might play safely, and flie betweene them without any great hurt. Captaine Fenton notwithstanding, and those that were with him, were worthily commended for their seruice begun and accomplished, with such prosperous boldnesse. The same day the deeds of sir Robert Southwell were seene and worthily commended. Also was praised Robert Crosse captaine, who in the ship called the Hope, gaue a signe of valour to be in him.

It fell out also the same day, that the L. Henry Seimor, & sir William Winter did so throughly beate two Spanish galeons although they were of the chiefest of them, and ẏ best prouided, that they were enforced to withdraw themselues to the coast of Flanders, where forasmuch as they were in a very euill taking, as well in respect of the number of their men, as the manifold leakes of their ships, they were surprised, and without fight rifled by the Zelanders, and with all the men in them caried as prisoners vnto Flushing. Among these the chiefest was Don Diego Pimentello, a man very famous among this countrey people. It seemeth hereby, that in these conflicts many of the Spanish ships perished. After this

battell

battell which was made the 29. of the moneth of July, the Lord Admirall the 30. day ordained, that the lord Seimor and sir William Winter should returne with their fleete vnto their appointed office in the chanell, which was to keepe the coast from the danger that the Duke of Parma seemed to threaten. The which Duke had already lost the opportunitie of being able to do any thing for the accomplishing of the common intention of the Spaniards: because the sodaine and vnlooked for departure of the Duke of Medina with the whole fleete from the coast of Caleis caused the whole care of the aforesaid Duke that he tooke vpon the maine land, to become void, so that he did not imbarke the rest of his men to ioyne with the Duke of Medina.

The Lord Admirall therefore determined to follow the Spanish fleete onely, so long vntill they might be shot vp to the northward, whither the Spanish fleete directed her course, but to what end, it was not knowne. And that he with the same winde might come to the Frith, which is vpon the coast of Scotland, if so be he saw the enemie passe those parts. Whereupon he thought moreouer, that it was good to stay his fleete from attempting ought vpon the Spaniard, vntill he should haue good intelligence of their purpose, thereby to worke a meane vtterly to disperse and ouerthrow them. But the Spaniards kept their course about the Ilands of Orkeney, declaring thereby, that they minded to returne that way into Spaine along by the north coast of Scotland, which as skilfull men coniectured would be to their euident danger, as it fell out afterward: perceiuing therefore the purpose of the enemie when he was shot vp 55. degrees & 13. minutes to the north ward, and 30. leagues off from Newcastle, the L. Admirall resolued with himselfe to let the Spanish fleete keepe on her way. The Spanish fleete therefore as for her owne welfare it was requisite, hauing gone on so far before, the lord Admirall resolued to put into the Frith in Scotland, aswell to refresh himselfe with new victuals as also to dispatch certaine other matters which he thought necessary. But the wind being much westward & against him, the day following he changed his course, and turned into England with the whole fleete the 7. of August, although by reason of a tempest part of the ships put into Douer, part to Harwich, the rest into Yarmouth. And thus much of the seruice by sea, wherein God hath giuen to the English a wonderfull victorie.

The Spanish fleete passing as aforesaid into those seas which for ỹ most part are quiet & calme enough, whether it were driuen to and fro in them with contrary winds, or by some other fatall accident that fell out, it continued therein tossed vp and downe vntill the end of September, with fearefull successe & deadly shipwracke along the whole coast of Ireland: so that the Duke of Medina Sidonia was inforced to leaue there behind him about the nũber of 17. good ships, besides those 15. that were thought to be lost in the moneths of July and August, & so to returne into Spaine. The persons lost in Ireland were esteemed to be about 5500. so that all being accounted together, it is certainely auouched that all the ships that were lost amount to the number of 32. & the men accounted one with an other, arise to the number of 13500. or more. The prisoners also of all sorts in England, Ireland, and the low Countries, arise to the number of 2000. and more. As for the losse of the ordinance, & the commõ or priuate treasure, or whether the

Spaniards ouerthrown in Ireland.

the Duke after he was preserued from the former fearefull & mortall dangers, lost any more ships, or no, or last of all, how many he brought home with him againe into Spaine, I know not, and therefore leaue any further to write of that matter.

Her maiestie went to the camp at Tilbury in Essex.

Now (as you haue heard before) the campe in the meane time, being kept at Tilbury in Esser, vnder the charge of the earle of Leicester L. Steward, &c. the 9. of August, her maiestie repaired thither, where all the whole campe being set in order of battell, both horse and footemen, she passed through euery ranke of them, to their great comfort and reioycing, and was lodged that night and the night next following, in the house of maister Edward Rich, a Iustice of that shire in the parish of Horndon. On the next morrow being the tenth of August, her maiestie returning to the campe, beheld the same, they being all trained in the best order that might be, and on the eleuenth of August returned to Saint Iames, and shortly after the campe was dissolued.

Camp at Tilbury dissolued.

Sermon of thanksgiuing at Paules.

And on the 20. of August, M. Nowell deane of Paules at Paules crosse, in presence of the lord Maior and Aldermen in scarlet, the companies in their best liueries preached a sermon, mouing them to giue laud & praise vnto Almighty God, for the great victory by him giuen to our English nation, by the ouerthrow of the Spanish fleete and our enemies.

6. Seminaries and 8. other executed.

The 26. of August, at the sessions hal without Newgate of London, were condemned fiue persons, for being made priests beyond the seas, and remaining in this realme contrary to a statute thereof made: foure temporall men for being reconciled to the Romane church: and foure other for releeuing and abetting the others. And on the 28. W. Deane and H. Webley were hanged at the Miles ende, W. Gunter at the Theater, R. Moorton and Hugh Moore at Lincolns Inne fields, T. Acton at Clarkenwell, T. Felton and Iames Clarkson betweene Brainford & Hounslow. And on the 30. of August, R. Flower, Ed. Shelley, R. Leigh, R. Martine, I. Roch and Margaret Warde gentlewoman (which Margaret had conueied a cord to a priest in Bridewell, whereby he let himselfe downe and escaped) were hanged at Tiborne.

Robert earle of Leicester deceased.

The 4. of September, deceased Robert Dudley earle of Leicester lord steward of her Maiesties houshold, lieutenant generall and marshall of all England, at Cornebury in Oxford shire, from whence he was conueied to his castell of Kenelworth, & from thence to Warwike, where he was honorably enterred. In which towne of Warwike, he had in his life time, of an olde guilde (giuen him by the townes men for that purpose) founded an hospitall for 12. poore men, indowing the same with lands to the yearely value of 200. l. and better, and 52. loade of wood ready cut and made out of Kenelworth wood, &c.

Ensignes taken from the Spaniards, & shewed at Paules crosse.

The eight of September, the preacher at Paules crosse mooued the people to giue God thanks for the ouerthrow of our enemies the Spaniards, and there were shewed eleuen ensignes or banners taken in the Spanish ships by our men, these ensignes were set vpon the lower battlements of Paules Church, before the preacher and the audience, (which was great) all sauing one streamer, wherein was an image of our Lady, with her sonne in her armes, &c. and this was held in a mans hand ouer the pulpit. And the same banners were on the next morrow hanged on London bridge towards Southwarke,

where

where then was kept our Lady faire, for all beholders to their great reioycing. The 23. of September, a seminarie priest named Flower, was hanged, headed, and quartered at Kingstone.

Seminarie priests executed.

The fift of October, I. Weldon, and W. Hartley, made priests at Paris, and remaining here contrarie to a statute, were hanged the one at the Miles ende, the other nigh the Theater, & Robert Sutton for being reconciled to the sea of Rome, was hanged at Clarkenwell.

An. reg. 31. Sermons & thanksgiuing vnto God for victorie against the Spaniards.

The 17. of November being sunday, D. Cooper bishop of Winchester preached at Paules crosse, at the which sermon her maiestie appointed to haue bene present, for whose receiuing great prouision was made, but her highnesse comming thither was put off till the sunday next following. The 19. of this moneth being Tuesday, was this yeare kept holy day throughout the Realme, with sermons, singing of Psalmes, bone-fires, &c. for ioy, and a thanks giuing vnto God, for the ouerthrow of the Spaniards our enemies on the sea, and the citizens of London assembled in their liueries, had that day a sermō at Paules crosse tending to ỹ end.

Her maiestie came to Paules, and there heard the sermon.

The 24. of November being Sunday, her Maiestie hauing attendant vpon hir the priuie councell and nobilitie, and other honorable persons as well spirituall as temporall in great number, the French Ambassador, the Iudges of the realme, the heraults, trumpetters, & all on horse-backe, did come in a chariot-throne made with foure pillars, behind to haue a canapie, on the top whereof was made a crowne imperiall, and two lower pillars before, whereon stood a lion and a dragon, supporters of the arms of England, drawne by two white horses frō Somerset house to the Cathedrall church of Saint Paule, her footemen and Pensioners about her: next after rode the earle of Esser maister of her horse, leading her Maiesties horse of estate richly furnished: after him a great number of Ladies of honor, on each side of them the garde on foote in their rich coates and halbards in their hands. At what time before she came at the Temple bar, Edward Schets Coruinus an officer of her priuie chamber, gaue her maiestie a iewell containing a Crapon, or Toade stone set in golde, which she graciously accepting, said, it was the first gift she had receiued that day. The same day also her highnes receiued a booke entituled, the Light of Britaine, by the gift of Henrie Lee of Litlecarie gentleman the author thereof. Ouer the gate of the Temple bar were placed the waites of the citie. And at the same barre the Lord Maior and his brethren the Aldermen in scarlet, receiued and welcommed her Maiestie to her citie and chamber, deliuering to her hands the scepter, which after certaine speeches had, her highnesse redeliuered to the Maior, and he againe taking his horse, bare the same before her. The companies of the citie in their liueries stood in their railes of timber, couered with blew cloth, all of them saluting her highnesse as she proceeded along to Paules church, where at the great west doore, she dismounting from her chariot-throne betweene the houres of twelue and one, was receiued by the Bishop of London, the Deane of Paules, and other of the Cleargie, to the number of more than fiftie, all in rich coapes, where her highnesse on her knees made her hartie praiers vnto God: which praiers being finished, she was vnder a rich canapie brought through the long west Ile, to her Trauers in the quire, the cleargie singing the Letanie: which being ended, she was brought to a closet, of

Gifts to her Maiestie.

purpose

purpose made out of the north wall of the church, towards the pulpit Crosse, where she heard a Sermon made by doctor Pierce bishop of Salisburie, and then returned through the church to the bishops palace, where she dined and returned in like order as afore, but with great light of torches, to Sommerset house.

Seminary priests, in the moneth of December, recanted at Pauls crosse, to wit, William Tedder, and Anthony Tirell. Seminary priests recanted.

The 1. of January at night, a great wind in the northeast, untiled many houses, ouerturned trees, and otherwise did great harmes both by land and seas 1589. Tempest of wind.

The 20. of January, the queenes maiestie came from Richmond to Chelsey, & so to Westminster, and was received by the maior, aldermen, and commoners of her city of London, in coates of velvet and chaines of gold, all on horsebacke, with the captaines of the city to the number of forty, betwixt five and six of the clocke by torch-light.

The fourth of February began the parliament at Westminster. Parliament at Westminster.

In this moneth of February, diuers souldiers for abusing their captaines for the Low countries, were punished at London, and elsewhere in other places, some were set on the pillory with their eares nailed, some their tongue pierced with an aule, some hanged on trees, &c. without the city, for example to other.

About this time Francis Ket maister of Art of Wimondham in Norfolke, was conuented before Edmond bishop of Norwich, for holding diuers detestable opinions against Christ our Saviour, and was burnt neare to the city of Norwich. Francis Ket burnt at Norwich.

The 29. of March being Easter eue, the parliament brake vp at Westminster, in the which parliament was granted to her maiestie 2. subsidies of 2. s. 8. d. the pound, and foure fifteenes, and a tenth. Parliament dissolued.

The 14. of April, Philip Howard earle of Arundell was arraigned at Westminster of high treason, and was found guilty by his peeres, and had iudgement accordingly. Earle of Arundell arraigned.

The relation of the whole fleete vnder the charge of sir Iohn Norris and sir Francis Drake, in the moneth of April, for the enterprise of Spaine and Portingale, deuided into fiue squadrons, as followeth.

The first squadron.

The Reuenge of her maiestie.
The Tygre of London.
The barke Reinolds.
The Prudence of Portsmouth.
The Vineyard of London.
The Gift of God of Harwich.
The Daniell of Yarmouth.
The Centurion of London.
The Thomas of Plimmouth.
The Swift of Douer.
The Primerose of Portsmouth.
The Emanuell of Dartmouth.
The Mary flower of Brickelesey.
The Diana of Hampton.
The Greyhound of Plimmouth.
The Aduice of her maiestie.

Dutch ships.

The red Lion of Elsnore.
The blacke Egle of Hamborough.
The Abraham of Olbroke.
The Tobias of Wossepe.
The three Kings of Amsterdam.
The Crab of Memlicke.
The Cat of Memlicke.
The Bonuoce of Hem.
The Swart Horne of Fleland.
The Isager of.
The Isager of Hussen.
The Robert of Memlicke.

The

The Fortune of.
The Greyhound of Baſſe.
The ſecond ſquadron.
The Nonparelle of her maieſty.
The Samaritan of London.
The Roger & Katherin of Newcaſtle.
The Iames of Ipſwich.
The William of Ipſwich.
The May-flower of Yarmouth.
Ehe Golden Noble of London.
The Fortune of Plimmouth.
The Mary Iarmans of Linne.
The Godſpeed of Hampton.
The Gift of Hampton.
The William of Linne.
The Golden Hind.
The Phenix of Dartmouth.
The red Lion of Ipſwich.
The Gregory of London.
Dutch ſhips.
The yong Froe of Hamborough.
The Sea rider of Hamborough.
The Iſager of Huſſen.
The Grondzell of Grotebroke.
The red Lion of Campned.
The Fortune of Waterland.
The Nightingale of Alcumer.
The grey Horſe of Copeman hauen.
The Yegre of Fleland.
The Buronight of Bergho.
The Mermien of Amſterdam.
The Yegar of Horne.
The Angell of Amſterdam.
The Fortune of Baſſe.
The third ſquadron.
The Dread nought of her maieſty.
The Edward Bonaduenture.
The Toby of Harwich.
The Tyger of Plimmouth.
The Pellicane of Alborough.
The William of Wels.
The Creſcent of Dartmouth.
The Salomon of London.
The Suſan of Blackney.
The Bartilmew of Exmouth.
The William and Iohn Linne.
The Antilope of Plimmouth.
The Nightingale of Portſmouth.
The white Lion.
The Reliefe of Portſmouth.
The Mary Katherine, a hoy.
Dutch ſhips.
The Murion of Hamborough.
The white Falcon of Hamborough.
The Baſſe of Horne.
The blacke Rauen of Memlicke.
The Iſagre of Fleland.
The Vnicorne of
The Browne fiſh of Horne.
The Fortune of Palmerin.
The red Hart of Woaring.
The Hope of Seelueling.
The Mole of Horne.
The white Fiſh of Grotebroke.
The fourth ſquadron.
The Swiftſure of her maieſty.
The Toby of London.
The Hopewell of Orford.
The Gift of Dartmouth.
The Greyhound of Alborough.
The Charity of Newcaſtle.
The Minion of Foy.
The Free gift of Linne.
The Valentine of Blackney.
The Barke Slegar.
The Antilope of Linne.
The Iohn of Grelany.
The George Bonauen. of Blakney.
The Handmaid of Briſtow.
The Handmaid of Chicheſter.
The Emanuel of Harwich.
Dutch ſhips.
The Fortune of Hamborough.
The blacke Rauen of Waterland.
The Olephant of Menlicke.
The Iarman of Encuſen.
The red Lion of Edam.
The Pellicane of Hem.
The blacke Rauen of Edam.
The Angell Gabriell of Horne.

The

The Saint Peter of Encuſen.
The William of Encuſen.
The Crab of Horne.
The Yagre of Horne.
The red Lion of Amſterdam.

The fift ſquadron.

The foreſight of her maieſtie.
The Marchant Royall.
The Elizabeth of Yarmouth.
The Minion of Plimmouth.
The May-flower of Linne.
The Stephen of Dartmouth.
The barke Bonner of Plimmouth.
The Robin of Douer.
The Vnicorne of Briſtow.
The Francis of Rie.
The barke Hawkins of Plimmouth.
The William of Plimmouth.
The Barke Parnell of Brikelſey.
The Hart Anne of Chatton.
The Iohn of Newhauen.
The William of Ipſwich, a hoy.

Dutch ſhips.

The Hope of Hamborough.
The Bonner of Grotebroke.
The Chiſtmaker of Skauant.
The Foxe of Elcomoke.
The flying Hart of Horne.
The red Lion of Oldbroke.
The Roſe of Haſter.
The Fortune of Menlicke.
The Popenger of Dongerdan.
The Minion of Warring.
The Iudith of Campin.
The ſwart Rutter of Amſterdam.
The Mill knape of.

Principall officers of the Nauie.

The two Generals: ſir Iohn Norris, ſir Francis Drake.

Viceadmirall captaine Thomas Fenner.

Colonels of the fiue ſquadrons, ſir Francis Drake, ſir Iohn Norris, captaine Thomas Fenner, ſir Roger Williams, ſir Edward Norris.

The Rereadmirall captaine William Fenner.

The Lieutenants coloncls of the ſquadrons, captaine Thomas Drake, captaine Sackfield, captaine Garton, captaine Gorin, captaine Winter.

The Secretarie of the Nauie.

The Surueior generall of the victuals, Marmaduke Dorrell.

The Viccetreaſurer of the naup, maſter Stallenge, & Surueior captaine Flicke.

The Captaine generall of the watch captaine Bowyer, Lieutenant of the ordinance captaine Lancaſter, the Prouoll marſhall captaine Criſpe, Muſter maiſter captaine Delibars, the maiſter of the diſcouerie captaine Foxcroft, Tranſporter captaine Muſgraue.

The Corporals of the ſquadrons, captaine Yoong of the Reuenge, captaine Segar of the Nonperilla, captaine Baker of the Dreadnought, captaine Wilde of the Swiftſure, captaine Criſpe of the Foreſight.

Captaines of the watch, captaine Wall of the Reuenge, captaine Champnell of the Nonperilla, captaine Gifford of the Dreadnought, captaine Norwood of the Swiftſure, captaine G. Drake of the Foreſight.

Clarke of the ſcore, maiſter Iohn Audley.

Principall maiſters, Th. Weſt, Rob. Wignoll, Iohn Bennet, Rob. Hart, Roger Tallent, Richard Burnell.

The 18. of Aprill, ſir Iohn Norris and ſir Francis Drake Generals, with ſixe of her Maieſties ſhips 20, ſhips of war, and 140. fit for burden, hauing in them a choſe Voiage for Portingale.

choise companie of knights, captaines, gentlemen and soldiers, departed from Plimmouth, and on the 23. of the same moneth arriued at the Groine. The 26. they tooke the lower towne by assault, together with great store of ordinance victuals, cables, ropes, and other furniture for shipping.

About the first of May, they fought with the Spaniards at Puente de Burgos Bridge, where the enemy fled with losse of 700. men.

The seuenth of May, the lower towne of Groine was burned, and on the ninth our fleete set saile, the 13. the earle of Essex, with maister Walter Deuereux his brother, sir Philip Butler, sir Roger Williams, and sir Edward Wingfield met with our fleete. The 16. the whole nauie arriued at Penicha in Portingale, where in despite of the enemies, our people were set aland, and the same day wan both the towne and castell of Penicha. After this they diuided the armie, whereof part marched with sir Iohn Norris by land to Lisbone, the rest with sir Francis Drake sailed by sea to Castcales. The 24. our men entred the suburbs of Lisbone, where they obtained rich spoiles, and plenty of euery good thing. The 27. the armie being viewed, was found to be weake, and of small force to sustaine so great a siege as that was like to be, besides the want of powder, and some other necessaries: for which causes, after counsell taken, they left Lisbone, and came to Castcales, without any great fight or skirmish, where they tooke the castell, and thence returned for England. There followed them nine gallies, who fighting with two English marchants ships, by comming of the Queenes ships, discharging but one peece at them, they retired, & so our ships came safely to Vigo, where landing our men the towne was taken, & the countrey wasted, &c. More at large this matter is published in print both in Latine and in English.

The 21. of June, sir Francis Drake arriued at Plimmouth, and on the third of July, sir Iohn Norris with the rest of the fleete arriued there also.

Great lightning and thunder.

The first of August at night, was the greatest lightning and thunder that had at any time bene seene and heard about London, in the memorie of any man liuing, and yet thanks be giuen to God little hurt heard of.

Sir Iohn Norris & sir Francis Drake being returned, as ye haue heard, many of their sailers and soldiers, shortly after their landing, fell sicke, and died of a stanch bred amongst them on ship-boord, other some of the so rudely behaued themselues about the countrey, about the court, & elsewhere, that many men misliked of their doings, and diuers of them being apprehended, on the 27. of August one was hanged on the end of a signe at an Inne doore in the towne of Kingstone vpon Thames, for a terror to the rest. The 29. of August, two more were hanged in Smithfield, two at the Tower hill, two besides Westminster, & on at Tiborne.

Disordered soldiers executed.

About the 21. of September, the citizens of London furnished a thousand men to be sent ouer into France, to the aiding of Henry late king of Nauar, then chalenging the crowne of France, as rightfull inheritor by lawfull succession. Also diuers shires in England sent into France to the same aide, some shire a thousand, as Kent and other shires, and some shires lesse, &c. All which companies were sent ouer into France, vnder the conduction of Peregrine Bartie lord Willoughby and Eresby.

Men furnished into France.

The first of November, Lodowike Griuell of Milcote in the county of Warwike

Warwike esquire, was brought from the Tower of London to Westminster, and there at the kings bench bar, being accessary to murder, wherewith hee was charged, was arraigned and found guiltie: but standing mute, hadde iudgement to be prested to death, and was accordingly executed in the gaole of the Kings bench in Southwarke on the 14. of November, on the which day for committing the murther, as principall, his man was hanged in the Palace court at Westminster. Lodowike Grivell prested to death.

In this moneth of November, the Citizens of London were sundry times frighted by casualtie of fire about New Fishstreete, three times in one weeke, the Citizens raised, lightes hanged out at euery doore, and euery man labouring for his owne safety, as more at large appeareth in my Summarie of the Chronicles. *An. reg. 32.* Citizens of London stirred by fires.

The 5. of January, about fiue of the clock in the euening, before the Twelfth day, began a great and terrible tempest of wind in the southwest, which continued with great vehemencie till about 11. of the clocke of the same night, this in the citie of London blew the tiles off mens houses, ouerthrew many chimneies, and caused manie men feare the ouerthrowe of their houses: one of the three west gates of Saint Paules Church, to wit, that next to the Bishoppes palace was broken, with the bolts, bars, and lockes of the same gate, so that it was blowne ouer. In the countreie, houses and barns were borne ouer, and some of them blowne far from the places wherein they stoode, besides trees in great numbers blowne vp by the roates. On the Seas, no man can tell what harmes were done, by ships and barks cast away. About Southampton the ships and barks riding at anchor, were driuen a land and sunke, the like was neuer seene thereabouts. Tempest of wind great and violent. Southwest gate of Paules blown open.

In this moneth of Januarie, Nicols one of her maiesties purueiors was hanged, for that hee conuerted to his owne vse certaine prouision taken of her subiects for her maiesties vse. Purueior hanged.

The 21. of Februarie, Ambrose Dudley earle of Warwike deceased at his house in Strande streete neere vnto Bue bridge, towardes Westminster, and was honorably buried at Warwike. Ambrose Earle of Warwike deceased.

Christopher Bales made priest beyond the sea, was conuicted of treason, for remaining in this Realme contrarie to a statute. Also Nicholas Horne and Alexander Blage, conuicted of felonie, for relieuing of Bales, contrarie to the like statute, these were all executed on the fourth of March, Bales was hanged, bowelled, and quartered in Fleetstreete, at Fewtar Lane ende, Horne hanged in Smithfielde, and Blage hanged at Grates Inne lane end. Bales and other executed.

The fift of March, a Wench was burned in Saint Georges Fielde without Southwarke, for poysoning of her mistres and other.

The sixte of Aprill about Midnight, deceased Sir Frauncis VValsingham Knight, principall Secretarie to her Maiestie, and Chauncelor of the Dutchie of Lancaster, at his house in Seeding Lane of London, and was about tenne of the clocke in the next night following, buried in Pauls church without solemnitie. 1590 Sir Frauncis Walsingham deceased.

This yeere on the wednesday in Easter weeke, by shoting of a gunne in the

Wolfrun-thampton brent

towne of Wolfrunhampton in Staffordshire about the number of 80. houses were brent.

An. reg. 33. Ambassador to the princes of Germany.

The vicount of Turcine, nowe Duke of Bullon by the late marriage of his wife, was sent in ambassage from Henry the 4. now king of France, vnto her maiestie, to intreate her to interpose her credite with the princes Protestants of Germanie, for the raising and sending of an Armie of Reisters, or horsemen vnto the aide of the saide French king his maister, against those of his owne Subiectes, &c. that doe oppose themselues against him, vnder the name of the Holie League: whereupon her Maiestie addressed Sir Horatio Palauicino knight, with commission to ioine with the saide Princes touching those preparations. In the performaunce of which Ambassage was spent all the Winter season with such good successe, that thereupon this army of the Almaine horsemen was leuied and sent into France about the ende of the sommer following.

1591 Men sent into Brytaine.

In the moneth of Aprill, three thousand footemen were sent from hence into Britaine in France, vnder the conduction of sir Iohn Norris knight, to ioine with the prince Dombes, sonne of the Duke Montpensier, and generall of the French kings forces in that prouince: which companies haue sithence beene from time to time supplied.

Coppinger and Arthington preached on a cart in Cheape

The 16. date of Iulie in the morning, Edmond Coppinger and Henry Arthington gentlemen, repaired to one Walkers house neere vnto Broken wharf of London, where conferring with one of their sect, named William Hacket of Dundale in the County of Northampton yeoman, they offered to annoint him king, but Hacket taking Coppinger by the hand, said: You shall not neede to annoint mee, for I haue beene already anointed in Heauen by the Holie ghost himselfe. Then Coppinger asked him what his pleasure was to bee done. Go your way both (said he) and tell them in the city, that Christ Iesus is come with his fan in his hand to iudge the earth. And if any man aske you where he is, tel them he lies at Walkers house by Broken wharfe; and if they will not beleeue it, let them come and kill me if they can: for as truely as Christ Iesus is in heauen, so truely is hee come to iudge the worlde. Then Coppinger saide it shoulde bee done forthwith: and thereupon went forwarde, and Arthington followed, but ere hee coulde get downe the staires, Coppinger had begun below in the house, to proclaime newes from Heauen of exceeding great mercie: that Christ Iesus was come, &c. with whome Arthington also cried the same words alowde, following him along the streetes from thence by Watling streete, and Olde-change toward Cheape, they both adding beyond their commission these words: Repent England, repent. After they had both thus come (with a mightie concurse of the common multitude) with an vniforme crie into Cheape neere vnto the crosse, and there finding the throng and preasse of people to encrease about them, in such sort as that they coulde not well passe further, nor bee conuententlie hearde of them all as they desired: therefore they gotte them vppe into an emptie cart which stoode there, wherin they stood not onelie vpon the wordes of their former crie, but they reading something out of a paper, went more particularlie ouer the office and calling of Hacket,

Hacket, how he repꝛesented Chꝛist, by partaking a part of his glozified body, by his pꝛincipal spirit, and by the office of seuering the good from the bad with his fan in his hand, and of establishing the Gospell in Europe, &c. telling also the people, where they saw him, where he late and remained: that they were two Pꝛophets, the one of Mercie, the other of Judgement, sent, and extraoꝛdinarilie called by God to assist him in this great woꝛke, and were witnesses of these thinges, &c. And thereupon the one of them pꝛonounced Mercie, great comfoꝛt, and vnspeakeable ioyes to all that shoulde repent pꝛesentlie, bee obedient, and embꝛace this acceptable message, and opoꝛtunitie offered: And the other denounced terrible Judgement if they repented not, which shoulde euen pꝛesentlie (also) fall vpon them, and especiallie vpon the City of London: affirming, that all that beleeued them not, were condemned bodie and soule: with other matter against her Maiestie, and some of her honourable Pꝛiuie Counsaile, which I ouerpasse. And whereas they had purposed to haue gone with the like Crie and Pꝛoclaimation, through other the chiefe partes of the Citie, the pꝛease was so great, as that they were foꝛced to go into a Tauerne in Cheape, at the Signe of the Mermayde, the rather because a Gentleman, beeing of his acquaintance, plucked at Coppinger, whiles hee was in the Carte, and blamed him foꝛ his demeanoꝛ and speeches. From whence they went by back lanes, but yet crying (as afoꝛe) Repent England, repent, &c. to VValkers house at Bꝛoken Wharfe. This strange accident being quicklie blowne through the citie, all was in a buzze, and a kind of astonishment, what to thinke of the matter: and being spꝛedilie bꝛought to hir maiesties eares, two of hir honoꝛable counsaile were pꝛesently dispatched vnto London, to take further notice of the whole matter: so that about one of the clocke in the afternoone, Coppinger was sent foꝛ, whiles Hacket and Arthington were bꝛought befoꝛe those honoꝛable counsellоꝛs and others at the Loꝛde Maiоꝛs to bee examined; whose examinations I ouerpasse: but in the ende it was thought good, that Hacket shoulde come to triall; so that on the twentie fiue of Julie, hee was bꝛought from Bꝛidewell to the Sessions House, neere to Newgate, befoꝛe the Loꝛd Maiоꝛ and other Justices, where being arraigned, hee was by two seuerall inditements founde guiltie; as to haue vttered and spoken diuers most false and traiterous woꝛds against her maiestie, to haue razed and defaced her Maiesties Armes; as also a certaine Picture of the Queenes Maiestie, and did maliciouslie, and traiterouslie thꝛust an yꝛon Instrument into that part of the sayde picture that did repꝛesent the Bꝛeast and heart of the Queenes Maiestie, &c. Hee had iudgement, and on the 28. of Julie, he was bꝛought from Newgate towards the place of execution after ten of the clocke in the moꝛning, albeit by reason of the incredible multitude then in the stꝛeetes, but especiallie in Cheape. All the waie that hee was dꝛagged vpon the hurdle, hee continued his counterfeit paine; one while crying out, Iehouah, Messias; Iehouah, Messias: another while crying out thus, looke, looke, howe the heauens open wide, and the sonne of God commeth downe to deliuer me; when hee came vnder the gibbet (which reared hard by the Crosse in Cheape) hee was exhoꝛted to aske God and the Queene foꝛgiuenesse, and

Hacket arraigned.

Hacket hanged in Cheape.

to fall to his prayers: but he in stead thereof, fel to railing, and cursing of the Q. maiesty, most villanously, and then began a most blasphemous and execrable prayer, against the diuine maiesty God. They had much adoo to get him vp the ladder, where he was hanged and after bowelled and quartered.

Coppinger died in Bridewel.

On the next daie, beeing the nine and twentieth of Julie, Edmond Coppinger, hauing wilfullie abstayned from meate (as was sayde) dyed in Bridewell. And Arthington longe after in the Counter in Woodstreete, was reserued in hope of perfecte repentaunce. More of this yee maie read in a Booke entaunte, intituled, Conspiracie of pretended Reformation, &c.

Earle of Essex sent into France.

In the moneth of Julie, Robert Earle of Esser, Maister of her maiesties horse, a yong nobleman of great valour and expectation, was by her highnesse appointed to haue the charge & conduction, as her maiesties lieutenant generall, of 4000. footemen, and some number of horsemen, and pioners, sent into France, for the assistance of the French king, against the confederates of the league. In which expedition his Lordship was also honourably accompanied, with sundrie Gentlemen and souldiers that voluntarilie followed him in this seruice. During the time that the Earle intended these French warres, Walter Deuereux a young gentleman, and forward in Martiall actions; and brother to the earle, was slaine with a small shot before Roane in Normandie.

Proclaimation against Iesuites and Seminaries.

In the moneth of October, a proclaimation was published, conteining a declaration of the manifest troubles pretended against the crown and estate, by Seminaries and Iesuites, suborned by the pope and king of Spaine, to infect hir maiesties subiects with the poison of their seditious religion, and vnder colour thereof, to traine them vnto their pretended treasons, for the betraying of this estate vnto the Spanish tiranny and inuasion. For the better preuenting of which imminent dangers, a speciall charge was thereby giuen vnto all her Maiesties officers and ministers, vigilantlie to looke vnto their seuerall charges of the forces appointed to be in a readines, for the necessary defence of the realme. And for the better repressing of the fraudulent attempts of those Iesuits, the very seducers of al treasons and rebellions, disguising themselues in their habit and apparell, somtimes like gentlemen, and sometimes like seruing men, and so insinuating themselues into the families and seruices of noblemen, ladies, and gentlemen, to couer themselues from suspition and apprehension: It was by the saide proclaimation prouided, that speciall commissioners shoulde bee appointed in all Shires, Cities, and porte Townes of this Realme, to inquire out this viperous broode, and such as maie bee reconciled by their enchantmentes, thereby farther charging all manner of persons of whatsoeuer degree or condition, to retain none into their houses, without due examination of their conditions, maner of life, & conformitie in the religion, and to keepe thereof a Register, to be shewed vnto the saide Commissioners, if they shall demaunde the same, vppon suspition of the disloialtie of anie such persons.

Not long after the publishing of this proclaimation, her maiesty addressed commissions

commissions vnder the great seale of England, generally into al parts and diuisions of the Realme, for the purposes aforesaide: The faithfull execution thereof, according to the orders prescribed, will in time discouer and vnmaske these Iesuiticall hypocrites, and diminish the ouer great swarmes of them, spreading their secret poison into the hart and bowels of this politicall bodie, indangering the sense, feeling, and life thereof.

Commissions for inquisition to be made of suspected persons.

In the moneth of October, to wit, on the 28. day, Bren O Royrke, a great man of Ireland, was arraigned at Westminster, where he was found guiltie of high treason, and after for the same executed at Tyborne on the 3. of November, as hereafter more at large insueth.

Bren O Roirke of Ireland arraigned.

The articles contained in the inditement against Bren O Royrke, Lorde of a great territorie and countrete in Ireland, named Breny I Royrke, who accounpted himselfe to haue descended of one of the Monarches that were in Ireland heeretofore: at his arraignement at Westminster on S. Simon and Iudes day, Maister Iohn Ly of Rathbride a gentleman out of Ireland, beeing assigned by the lordes of the councell and commissioners to enterpret betwixt the Iudges, and the saide O Royrke, who did expounde and declare in Irishe the Articles ensuing, and also all speeches vttered by the Iudges, and the said O Royrke, to the good liking of all the said Iudges and others that were present.

That the said Bren O Royrke sought the deprivation of hir maiestie from her regal seat, the destruction of hir person, and the ouerthrow of hir realme of Ireland, at Dromaher and other places in Ireland, the 2. of July, in the 28. yere of hir maiesties raigne.

That the said O Royrke stirred vp and procured Alexander Mac Coonel, and Denell, Mac Coonell being enemies to her Maiestie and her saide Realme of Irelande: to raise forces against her Maiestie in Irelande, and after that relieued and succoured them the second of August, the twentie eight of her Maiesties raigne.

That the saide O Royrke at Dromaher aforesayde, caused the Picture of a woman to bee made, setting to her Maiesties name, and caused it to bee tied to an horse taple, and to bee drawne through the mire in derision of hir maiestie. And after caused his Galliglasses to hewe the same in peeces with their axes, vttering diuers traiterous and rebellious words against her maiestie.

That the saide O Royrke, when Sixtus the fift of that name was Pope, and Philip the Spanish King had bent their forces against Englande, and after dispersed by her Maisties fleete, till they came about Scotland, and so to Irelande, and arriuing there, the sayde O Royrke did entertaine, relæue, and succour, at Dromaher aforesaide, and other places, diuers of the saide Spaniards, which were employed to this intended inuasion. And after proclamation being giuen by the lord Deputy vpon paine of death, that no man should keepe anie of the saide Spaniards, but they to bee sent to his Lordeshippe, by a daie limited: yet the sayde O Royrke kept the sayde Spaniardes till the sayde Lorde Deputie went with her Maiesties Forces to the North, at

which time, the saide O Royrke conueied them through the North with a Spanish Frier, and an Irish Frier in their companie, and so to Spaine, without making the saide Lorde Deputie of Irelande acquainted therewith: and after receiued letters by the Frier from the saide King of Spaine, gratulatory for the entertainement he gaue to the saide Spaniards anno 30. of her maiesties raigne.

That the saide O Royrke procured and caused one Thady O Harte and his sect, with diuers others to enter into actuall rebellion against hir maiestie, so that the said Thady and others did burne Ballymote and other places, and after that done, the saide O Royrke did relieue and succor the saide traitors, that were entered into the said rebellion.

That the said O Royrke did enter and burne Ballingalle with diuers other villages in the county of Roscoman, and murthered O Kena at Corlier, Christopher Caddell, and diuers others of hir highnes loiall subiectes, and spoiled and carried away the praies of the said townes.

That the saide O Royrke did violentlie enter into the Towne of Knocke, Mullen, and diuers other villages in her maiesties realme of Irelande, in the barony of Tyrerell in the county of Sligo, and burned the saide Towne, and murthered one Chenem Wood a gentleman, with diuers others of her maiesties loyall subiectes within the said Barony of Tyrerell, and so continued his outrages, vntill he was constrained by her Maiesties forces to fly into Scotland.

That the said O Royrke being fled into Scotland, did stir vp certaine Scots there to insurrection, and to ioine with himselfe their forces against hir maiestie in the Realme of Irelande. And also offered at Glasco vnto the King of Scots, if he would maintaine him and suffer his subiects to go and ioine with him, that he would bring the realme of Ireland to his subiection: contrarie to his duty, and in contempt of hir maiesties lawes, the 9. of March, anno 33. of hir maiesties raigne.

Also it did appeare by the saide Bren O Royrke his speeches made in the tower, where he said, that if the Spaniardes had first come into Irelande, as they did into Englande, that Ireland had beene their owne, and that hee would do them a peece of seruice: which speeches were sufficient proofe of his traiterous mind towards hir graces maiestie.

To conclude, the said O Royrke, after manie speeches by the Judge and him vttered, beeing at the barre, saide, that hee would not consent that anie inquest or Jurie should passe vpon him, vnlesse hee might haue a weekes respite to be giuen him, and all those writings sent by William Fitz Williams, Rysten, Bingham, and others in Ireland to be deliuered him, and a good man of lawe to be assigned vnto him, and the same man of law to be sworne to deale as truelie for him, as hee would do for the Queenes heire apparaunt, if hee were in his place. And besides this, that hee would haue the Queenes maiestie to bee one of the Jurie to passe on him. This his refusall to bee tryed was entered, at the request of her Maiesties learned Councell. And after entrie so made: the saide Iohn Ly, beeing interpreter, was willed by the lord

chiefe

chiefe Iustice to tell him that the law was, if hee woulde refuse to bee tried by twelue men, then iudgement must bee giuen according to the quality of those Articles of treason wherewith hee was charged, and beeing obstinate therein, was guiltie of his owne death, yet that notwithstanding, hee refused tryall. Then the saide Iohn Ly expounded vnto him his iudgement, which was as ensueth.

That the saide Bren O Royrke shoulde bee taken from thence to the place from whence hee came, there to be laide vpon an Hurdle, so to bee drawne to the place of execution, there to bee hanged vntill hee were halfe dead, then to bee let downe, and his members and bowels to bee taken out and burnt in the fire, his heade to bee stricken off, his bodie to bee quartered, and his head and bodie to bee disposed at her Maiesties direction. This beeing expounded to him by the said Ly, he answered nothing, but said, if that were their will, let it be so.

Upon Wednesdaie the 3. of November, Bren O Royrke was drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, his members and bowelles burned in the fire, his heart taken out, and holden vp by the hangman, naming it to be the archtraytors heart, and then did he cast the same into the fire, then was his heade stricken off, and his bodie quartered. But before this was done: the said O Royrke yet standing vpon the cart, Maister Iohn Ly aforesaid, willed him in Gods behalfe to remember the filthy and odious treasons that hee committed against her maiestie, with many other good exhortations, to draw him to repentance, and to aske her maiestie and all the world forgiuenes; and he to forgiue all the world: yet he obstinately answered that he would not, but said, that if the Q. would haue granted him space, and all such writinges, as the officers in Ireland, *viz.* William Fitz Williams, and Dicke Bingham sent against him, to bee giuen him to make answere to them, and also to giue him his life, that then he woulde aske her forgiuenesse, and from henceforth serue her truelie. And further saide, that hee did thinke little that the King of Scottes woulde haue sent him to the queene without safety and good assurance of his life, and remittall of his offences. *Bren O Roirke executed at Tyborne.*

The said Iohn Ly did further vrge and entreat the said O Royrke to repent, and to aske forgiuenes (as afore) and likewise to forgiue, and that, that was the onely way for him to come to the heauenly kingdome; and also told him that all the standers by, requested and praied him so to do: he answered and willed them to make meanes for themselues to come to God, and that hee woulde make meanes for himselfe, but no more coulde bee had of him, but fell to his praiers. The said Ly told him againe, ý he could not lawfully pray being so obstinate, hard hearted, and to die without repentance, but it would not be, and so the carte went from him. Also Meylerns the Lord archbishop of Cashell in Irelande beeing present, was willed by the standers by, to counsaile the said O Royrke, and the saide Archbyshoppe requesting him to call to God, with other good exhortations: The sayde O Royrke turned vpon him and sayde, hee had more neede to looke to himselfe, and that hee was neither heere nor there. *Ann. reg. 34.*

Chriſtopher Hatton Lord Chancellor deceaſed.

The twentieth of November, Sir Chriſtopher Hatton knight, lorde Chauncelor of England, deceaſed at his houſe in Holborne, commonlie called Elie houſe, becauſe it belongeth to the Biſhoppe of Elie. On the firtéenth of December, hee was honourablie buried in Saint Paules Church at London, one hundred poore people hauing gownes and cappes giuen them, going before him, of Gentlemen and yeomen, in gownes, cloakes, and coates, more than three hundred, with lords of the counſell, and other, beſides foure score of the gard that followed, a moſt ſumptuous monument is ſince for him raiſed in Pauls Church.

Order taken for the enſealing of writings in abſence of a Lorde Chancellor.

After whoſe death, none being elected to ſucceede him in that office and dignitie, her Maieſtie committed the charge of the enſealing of all Writinges with the great Seale of Englande (whereunto it ſhall bee requiſite to haue the ſame annexed) vnto the Lorde Burghley Lorde Treaſurer of England, the Lorde Hunſdon Lorde Chamberlaine of her highnes houſholde, the Lord Cobham Lorde Warden of the Cinque Portes, and the Lorde Buckhurſt, being all lords of her priuy counſell. And for ỹ adminiſtration of iuſtice, during the time of this vacancie of the office of the Lorde Chancellour, her Maieſtie likewiſe authoriſed by ſpeciall commiſſion, vnder the great Seale of Englande, Maiſter Clinche, and Maiſter Fraunciſ Gawdy, two of the Iuſtices of her bench, and Maiſter Windam, and Maiſter Piriam two of the Iuſtices of the Court of the Common Pleas, to ſit as chiefe Iudges for the determining of cauſes in the Court of the Chauncerie, and to continue their turnes ſucceſſiuelie during the terme time, according to the order preſcribed in their commiſſion.

Seminaries & their abbetters executed.

The 10. of December, 3. Seminary prieſts for being in this realme contrary to the ſtatute, and 4. other, for releeuing them, were executed, two of them, to wit, a Seminary named Ironmonger, and Swithen Wels gentleman, in Greies Inne fielde, on the North ſide of Holborne, Blaſton and White Seminaries, and three other their abbetters at Tiborne.

Iohn L. Burke murthered.

The fouretéenth of Januarie, Captaine Arnold Cosby an Iriſhman, did forceablie ſet vpon Iohn Lorde Burke (alſo an Iriſhman) neere to the Towne of Wanſworth in the Countie of Surrey, and there vppon a diueliſhe and malicious intent (for they had fallen out twelue monethes before, and fought at Greenewich, but were made friendes) did wilfullie murther him there, giuing him one mortall wound with a Rapier, by meanes whereof, the ſaide Lorde Burke fell downe, and after that the ſaide Arnold Cosby with a dagger gaue vnto the ſaide Lorde Burke, one and twentie or more greeuous and ſeuerall woundes, of the which ſaide great woundes, the foreſaide lorde Burke

Arnold Cosby hanged.

died within two houres after, for the which fact, the ſaide Cosby was hanged on a gibbet neere vnto Wanſworth, where hee had committed the ſaide murther on the 27. of January.

Tho. Pormert executed.

The eighteene of Februarie, Thomas Pormorte was conuicted of two ſeuerall high treaſons, the one for being a Seminarie Prieſt, and remaining in this Realme, and the other, for reconciling Iohn Barwys Haberdaſher againſt the forme of the ſtatute. The ſayde Iohn Barwys was then likewiſe

conuicted

conuicted of high treason, for being so reconciled, and also of felonie, for relieuing the saide priest, against the forme of the statute.

Thomas Pormorte was executed in Paules church yard, on the west ende towards Ludgate, on the 20. of Februarie in the afternoone.

In the moneth of Februarie, Sir Edmond Yorke knight, conducted ouer into France two thousand footmen well appointed, sent from hence for seruice of the French king, which vppon their arriuall, remained vnder the charge of sir Roger Williams, being then generall of the English companies there. Souldiers sent into France.

The 30. of March, certaine saylors, fiue in number were hanged on the Tower wharfe, for stealing of gunpowder, pertayning to her Maiesties seruice. 1592 Sailers executed on the tower wharfe.

The 27. of Aprill, sir Iohn Parrat knight was arraigned at Westminster, found guiltie of treason, & had iudgement in the same place on the 16. of June, he was returned to the tower, wherein he fell sicke and died. Sir Iohn Parrat arraigned.

The fourth of Maie, a Tilt boate of Grauesend hauing in the same boate about the number of fortie persons was ouerrun by an hoy, so that the greater part of those people were drowned ouer against Greenwich, the court then being there. Tilt boate drowned.

The fourth of June, sir Iohn Puckering being made lord keeper of the great seale, rode to Westminster and was there sworne. Sir Io. Puckering L. keeper.

The 21. of June, one Kerby a gentleman in countenance, but a coosoner in quality was set on the pillory without Aldersgate, and lost one of his eares there, and on the 23. of June he was on the pillorie in cheape. A coosoner on the pillorie.

In this month of June, a yong man was hanged in Smithfield, and a woman there burned, both for poysoning of her husband a goldsmith. A woman burne in Smithfield for poysoning of her husband.

The merchant Taylers in London did this yeere founde and builded faire almes houses of bricke and timber, couered with slate, vpon a plot of ground neere vnto East Smithfield by the Tower of London, which plot of ground was giuen to them by Richard Hils sometime maister of that companie, as also one hundred loade of timber by Anthony Ratcliffe of that societie, alderman: In those almes houses, fourteene charitable men brethren of the saide merchant taylers yet liuing, haue placed fourteene poore aged sole women, which receiue euerich of them of their founder, sixteene pence or better weekly, besides eight pound sixteene shillings yearely paid out of the common treasurie of the said companie. Almes houses founded by the merchant taylers.

The fourth of September, a woman was burnt in Smithfield, for poysoning of her husband. A woman burnt in Smithfield.

Wednesday the first of September, the wind west and by south, as it had been for the space of two dates before verie boisterous, the riuer of Thamis was made so voide of water, by forcing out the fresh, and keeping backe the sault, that men in diuers places might go 200. paces ouer, and then fling a stone to the land. A Collier on a mare, rode from the north side to the south, and backe againe on either side of London bridge, but not without perill of drowning both mare. Riuer of Thamis nigh voide of water.

This

The terme kept at Hertford.

This yeare Michaelmas terme was kept at Hertford in Hertfordshire 20. miles from London, and began on *Crastina animarum*.

An. reg. 35.

The third of November at night, deceased sir Iohn Parrat prisoner in the Tower of London.

A butchers daughter whipped, for affirming her selfe to be a kings daughter.

The 13. of December, a certaine gentlewoman by the Councels commandement was whipped through the city of London, for affirming her selfe to be the daughter of Philip king of Spaine, as she had béene perswaded by some accounted southsayers, after praied liers, for she was knowne to be a butchers daughter in East cheape.

One hanged for murthering his master.

The 17. of February, a boy was hanged in Fen-church streete, for murthering of his master.

Parliament.

The 19. of Februarie, the Parliament began at Westminster.

Barrow and Grenewood arraigned.

The 21. of March, Henry Barrow gentleman, Iohn Greenwood clarke, Daniell Studley girdeler, Saxio Billot gentleman, Robert Bowley Fishmonger, were indited of felony at the Sessions hall without Newgate before the maior, the two lorde chiefe Iustices of both benches, and sundry of the iudges and other commissioners of Oyer and determiner: the saide Barrow and Greenwood for writing sundry seditious bookes, tending to the slaunder of the Quéene and state: Studley, Billot, and Bowley, for publishing and setting forth the same bookes, and on the 23. they were all arraigned at Newgate, found giltie, and had iudgment. On the last of March Henry Barrow and Iohn Grenewood were brought to Tyborne in a carry, and there fastened to the gallowes, but being staide and returned for the time, they were there hanged on the 6. of Aprill.

1593

Parliament brake vp.

The 10. of Aprill the Parliament brake vp at Westminster, for the time, wherein was granted three subsidies of 2. s. 8. d. the pound goods, and foure s. lands, and 6. fifteenes.

Oration of her maiesty to the parliament men.

My Lordes, and you my commons of the lower house, were it not that I know no speeches presented by any other, nor wordes deliuered by any substitute, can be so deepely imprinted into your mindes, as spoken by her selfe, whose order and direction was but followed and deliuered by the lord Keeper, I could be content to spare speech, whom silence better pleaseth then to speake: And because much hath béen spoken, much lesse shall I nowe néede to speake of mine owne indisposition of nature, and small desire in priuate respect to be enriched by you present, which wordes shall not witnesse, but déeds by your former experience, hauing expended what I haue receiued, to the preseruation and defence of your selues. And thus much I dare assure you, that the care which you haue taken for my selfe, your selues, and the common weale, that you do it for a Prince, that neither careth for any particular, no, nor for life, but so to liue, that you may flourish. For before God and in my conscience, I protest, whereunto many that know me can witnesse, that the great expence of my time, the labour of my studies, and the trauell of my thoughts, chiefely tendeth to Gods seruice, and the gouernment of you to liue in a flourishing and happy estate, God forbid you should knowe anie change thereof. Many wiser princes than my selfe you haue had, but one only excepted (whom

in

in the duty of a childe I must regard, and to whom I must acknowledge my selfe farre shallow) I may truely say, none whose loue and care can be greater, or whose desire can be more to fathome deeper for preuention of danger to come, or resisting of dangers, if attempted towardes you, shall euer bee found to exceede my selfe: In loue I say towardes you, and care ouer you. You haue heard in the beginning of this parliament, some doubt of danger, more then I would haue you to feare: Doubt only should be, if not preuented; and feare, if not prouided for. For mine owne part, I protest I neuer feared, and what feare was, my heart neuer knew. For I knew that my cause was euer iust, and it standeth vpon a sure foundation, that I should not fayle God assisting the quarrell of the rightwise, and such as are but to defende. Glad mought that king my greatest enemy be, to haue the like aduantage against me, if in truth for his owne actions, he might truely so say. For in ambition of glorie I haue neuer sought to enlarge the territories of my land, nor thereby to aduance you. If I haue vsed my forces to keepe the enemy farre from you, I haue thereby thought your safetie the greater, and your danger the lesse. If you suppose I haue done it in feare of the enemy, or in doubt of his reuenge, I know his power is not to preuaile, nor his force to feare me, hauing so mighty a protector on my side. I would not haue you returning into the countrey to strike a feare into the mindes of any of my people, as some vpon the arriuall of the late nauie, dwelling in a Maritane shire fled for feare farther into the middle of the land, but if I had beene by him, surely I would haue taught him to haue shewed so base and cowardly a courage, for euen our enemies holde our nature resolute and valiant, which though they will not outwardly shew, they inwardly knowe. And whensoeuer the malice of our enemies shall cause them to make any attempt against vs, I doubt not but we shall haue the greater glorie, God fighting for those which truely serue him, with the iustnesse of their quarrell. Only let them know to be wary, and not to be found sleeping, so shall they shew their owne valour, and frustrate the hopes of the enemies. And thus farre let me charge you that be lieutenants, and you that in shires haue the leading of the most choice and seruiceable men vnder your bands that you see them sufficiently exercised and trayned, so oft as neede shall require, that the wantes of any of them be supplyed by others to be placed in their roomes, and that all decaies of armour bee presently repaired and made sufficient. The enemy finding your care such, and so great to prouide for him, will with the lesse courage thinke of your disturbance. To conclude, that I may shewe my thankefull minde, in my conscience neuer hauing been willing to draw from you, but what you should contentedly giue, and that for your selues, and hauing my head by yeeres, and experience better stated, whatsoeuer any shall suppose to the contrarie, then that you maie easily beleeue that I will enter into any idle expences. Now must I giue you all as great thankes, as euer prince gaue to louing subiects, assuring you that my care for you, hath, and shall exceede all my other cares of worldly causes, whatsoeuer.

About the same time Penry a Welchman, a principal penner and publisher of Penry apprehended & hanged.

of bookes, intituled Martin marre prelate, was apprehended at Stebenheth, by the Vicar there, and committed to prison. In the moneth of Maie, he was arraigned at the kings bench at Westminster, condemned of felonie, and after warde sodainly in an afternoone, conuaied from the Gaile of the kings bench to Saint Thomas Waterings, and there hanged, with a small audience of beholders.

Court of assise kept in Saint Georges field for feare of the plague.

The 19. of July, the court of assise for Surrey was holden and kept in S. Georges field, a tent being set vp for that purpose, many prisoners were there arraigned, condemned and had iudgement, ninetéene were brent in the hand, but none executed. This assise was ended the same day, which was thought would haue béene three dates worke, for the Iustices (all duties being paide) made haste awaie for feare of being infected with the pestilence by repaire of people thither.

No Bartholmew faire at London.

This yeere also, no Bartholmew faire was kept at London, for the auoyding of concourse of people, whereby the infection of the rest, or plague might haue increased, which was then verie hot in that citie, so that on the three and twentith of October, deceased sir William Roe then lord maior: The first of Nouember, William Elken alderman: The fift of December, sir Rowland Howard alderman, and the ninth of January, sir Wolstone Dixie alderman. The whole number deceasing this yeere in the citie, liberties, and suburbs adioyning, as well of the plague as of other diseases, from the nine and twentith of December in the yeere 1592. vntill the twentith of December 1593. was as followeth: within the wals of all diseases 8598. where of the plague was 5390. without the walles, and in the liberties 9295. of the plague 5385. so that within the Citie and liberties of all diseases died 17893. where of the plague was 10675.

Number of the plague died in London.

Ann. reg. 36.

A seminary executed.

The 18. of Februarie, one named Harington a seminary priest, was drawn from Newgate to Tyborne, and there hanged, cut downe aliue, strugled with the hangman, but was bowelled and quartered.

Rodericke Loppez arraigned.

The last of Februarie, Rodericke Loppez a Portingale (as it was saide) professing physicke, was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, found guilty, and had iudgement as of high treason, for conspiring her maiesties destruction by poyson.

An Irish man executed.

The first of March an Irish man was arraigned at Westminster, and on the next morning earlie hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Great windes ouerturned trees.

1594

In this moneth of March was many great stormes of winde, which ouerturned trees, steeples, barns, houses, &c. namely in Worcestershire, in Beaudley forrest many Oakes were ouerturned. In Horton wood of the said shire, more then 1500. Oakes were ouerthrowen in one day, namely on the thursday next before Palmesunday. In Stafford shire the steeple in Stafford towne was rent in pieces along through the midst, and throwen vpon the church, wherewith the said roofe is broken, 1000. l. will not make it good. Houses and barnes were ouerthrowen in most places of those shires. In Canke wood more then 3000. trees were ouerthrowen, many steeples more or lesse aboue 50. in Stafford shire were perished, or blowne downe.

The

The 11. of Aprill, a raine continued very sore more then 24. houres long and withall, such a winde from the north, as pearced the wals of houses, were they neuer so strong. Great raine.

The 14. of Aprill, a woman was brent in Smithfield for murthering of her husband. A woman brent in Smithfield.

The 16. of Aprill, Ferdinando Earle of Darby deceased at Latham, whose strange sickenes and death, gathered by those who were present with him al the time thereof, was such as followeth: his diseases apparant, were vomiting of sower or ruffie matter with bloud, the yealow iaundies: melting of his fat, swelling and hardenesse of his spleene, a vehement hichcocke, and foure daies before he died, stopping of his water. Ferdinando earle of Darby deceased.

The causes of all his diseases were thought by the physitians, to be partly a surfet, and partly a most violent distempering himselfe with vehement exercise, taken foure daies togither in the Easter weeke.

The 5. of Aprill about fiue of the clocke at night he fell sicke at Lucwsby, where he vomited thrice.

The 6. he returned to Latham, and feeling his health to sinke more & more, sent to Chester for a doctor of physicke.

The 7. before the comming of the doctor, he had cast 7. times, the colour of his vomits was like to soutie or ruffie yron; the substance verie grosse and fattie: the quantitie aboue seuen pintes, the smell not without offence, his waters were in colour, smell, and substance not vnlike his vomites. The same night he toke a glister to drawe the course of the humors downeward, which wrought fiue times and gaue some ease.

The 8. he toke a gentle infusion of Rubarb and Manna in a draught of chicken broth, which wrought very well nine times.

The 9. because of his continuall bleeding by mouth with his vomits, he was instantly intreated to be let bloud, to diuert and stay the course thereof, but by no meanes he could be perswaded thereunto, wherefore that daie onely fomentations, oyles and plaisters were outwardly applyed, to stay and comfort his stomacke.

The 10. he toke one other glister, which wrought well fiue times.

The 11. he toke one other purge which wrought with great ease 9. times vpon the humors. The same night he toke a little diascordium with the syrope of limons and scabious water, which somewhat staied his stomacke and gaue him some rest.

The 12. because his vomiting continued still, hee was moued to take a vomit, that thereby the bottome of his stomacke might be scoured and cleansed from so vile and lothsome matter wherewith he was troubled: but by no perswasion he would yeelde thereunto, notwithstanding the same daie hee toke a medicine to procure sweat, but preuayled not, the very same night his water staide vpon a sodaine, to the astonishment of all.

The thirteenth, all meanes were offered to prouoke water as glister drinkes, fomentations, oyles, pultises, plaisters and stirrings, but nothing happelie succeeded.

The 14. and 15. was vſed an inſtrument called a Catheter, which being conueyed into his bladder, was ſtrongly ſucked by the Chirurgion but no water followed.

The 16. day about fiue of the clocke at night, he moſt deuoutly yelded his ſoule to God.

In all the time of his ſickneſs, he often toke Bezars ſtone, and Unicornes horne, his pulſe was euer good, his ſtrength indifferent, the number of his vomites were 52. and of his ſtooles 29. his phyſitions were doctor Canon, doctor Ioynar, doctor Bate, doctor Caſe.

A true report of ſuch reaſons and coniectures, as cauſed many learned men to ſuppoſe him to be bewitched.

The firſt of Aprill being the mondaie before his honor fell ſicke, a woman offered vnto him a ſupplication, or petition, wherein her requeſt was, that it would pleaſe him to giue, or aſſigne her a dwelling place neere vnto himſelfe, that ſhe might from time to time reueale vnto him ſuch thinges with ſpeede, which God reuealed vnto her for his good. This petition was thought vaine and therefore refuſed.

On the fourth of Aprill, he dreamed that his ladie was moſt dangerouſly ſicke to death, and in his ſleepe being ſore troubled therewith, he wept, ſodainly cried out, ſtarted from his bedde, called for helpe, ſought about the chamber, betwixt ſleeping and waking, but being fullie awaked was comforted, becauſe he found her well: here we omit ſtrange dreames, or diuinations of diuers graue men, which happened before or about the time of his ſickneſs.

On the fift of Aprill, in his chamber at Kronſley about fiue of the clocke at night, there appeared ſodainly a tall man, with a gaſtly and threatning countenance, who twiſe or thriſe ſeemed to croſſe him, as he was paſſing through the chamber, and when he came vnto the ſame part of the chamber where this ſhadow appeared, he preſently fell ſicke, and there vomited thriſe. After Goborne one of his ſecretaries attending then vpon him ſawe nothing, which more amazed him. The ſame night he dreamed that he was in fighting, and twiſe or thriſe ſtabbed to the heart, and alſo wounded in manie other places of his bodie.

The 10. of Aprill about midnight, was founde in his bed chamber by one maſter Halſall, an Image of ware with haire, like vnto the haire of his honors head, twiſted through the belly thereof, from the nauell to the ſecrets: This Image was ſpotted, as the ſame maſter Halſall reported vnto maſter Smith, one of his ſecretaries, a daie before anie paine grew, and ſpots appeared vpon his ſides and bellie. This Image was haſtelie caſt into the fire by maſter Halſall, before it was viewed, becauſe he thought by burning thereof, as he ſaid, he ſhould relieue his lord from witchcraft, and burne the witch who ſo much tormented his lord, but it fell out contrary to his loue and affection, for after the melting thereof, he more and more declined.

The 12. of Aprill, one Iane a witch demanded of maſter Goborne, whether his honor felt no paine in the lower parts, and whether he made water as yet

or

or no: and at that verie time notwithstanding all helpes, his water vtterlie stopped, and so remained till he died.

Sir Edward Filton, who with other Justices examined certaine witches, reporteth, that one of them being bidden to saie the lords praier, said it well, but being conjured, in the name of Jesus, that if she had bewitched his honor, she should not be able to saie the same, she could neuer repeate that petition, Forgiue vs our trespasses, no not although it was repeated vnto her.

A homely woman, about the age of fiftie yeeres, was found mumbling in a corner of his honors chamber, but what God knoweth. This wise woman (as they termed her) seemed often to ease his honor both of his vomiting and hickocke, but so it fell out, which was strange, that when so long as hee was eased, the woman her selfe was troubled most vehemently in the same maner, the matter which she vomited, being like also vnto that which passed from him. But at the last, when this woman was espied by one of the doctors tempering and blessing (after her maner) the iuice of certaine herbes, her pot where into she streined the iuice, was tumbled downe by the said doctor, and she rated out of the chamber, notwithstanding she did still saie that she would not cease to ease him, although she could not perfectly helpe him, because hee was so strongly bewitched. All physicke wrought verie well, yet had he none or little ease thereby, his diseases were many and his vomits, with stopping his water grieuous, yet euer his pulse remained as good and perfect as euer it did in time of his best health, till one quarter of an houre before he died. He himselfe in all the time of his sickneſſe cried out that the doctors laboured in vaine, because he was certainly bewitched. He fell twise into a traunce, not able to mone, hand, head, or foote, when he would haue taken physicke to doe him good. In the ende, he cried out often against all witches and witchcraft, repoſing his onely hope of saluation vpon the merites of Christ Jesus his Sauiour.

One excellent speech, can not be omitted amongst many in the time of his sickneſſe, especially the day before he departed, at which time he desired one of his doctors, whom he especially loued, to perswade him no longer to liue, because (saieth he) although out of thy loue, thou wouldest stirre vp hope of life, and doest imploie all thy wit, arte, and trauaile to that ende, yet knowing for a certaintie that I must now die, I praie thee cease, for I am resolued presentlie to die, and to take awaie with me onely one part of my armes, I meane the Eagles winges, so will I flie swiftly into the bosome of Christ my onely sauiour, And with that he sent for his Ladie, and gaue her his last Vale or farewell, desiring her to take away and loue his doctor, and also to giue him some iewell, with his armes and name, that hee might be remembred: the which thing, immediatly after his death was most honorably performed. His spirituall physitions, were the bishop of Chester, and master Lee his chaplaine.

In the moneth of May, namely on the second day, came downe great water floods, by reason of sodaine showres of haile and raine that had fallen, which bare downe houses, vpon milles, the prouision of coales prepared for the

Great water floods.

the said milles, it bare awaie cattell, &c. in Sussex and Surrey: to the great losse of manie.

The second of May the new sergeants at law in number tenne, held their dinner or feast (as it hath beene learned) at the newe Temple in Flete-streete.

B. of London deceased.

The third of June, deceased Iohn Elmer bishop of London at Fulham, and on the 26. of June, was solemnly enterred in his cathedrall Church of Saint Paule, before S. Thomas chappell.

Doctor Loppez and other Portingales executed.

The 7. of June, Rodericke Loppez, with two other Portingales, were conuaied from the Tower of London by the lieutenant, vnto the olde swan, and from thence by water to Westminster, where being brought before the kings bench barre, the lieutenant was called to bring in his prisoners, which hee there deliuered, and was discharged of them. Then was it by the court declared vnto them, how they had beene charged with high treason against her maiestie, had beene tried, found guilty and had receiued iudgement; wherefore it was demanded of them, what they could say for themselues, and should not suffer death accordingly: whereunto one of the Portingales began in his language to tell a long tale, but was willed to be short, which he answered could not be done without circumstance, &c. whereupon he was willed to holde his peace. The second answered by writing in his language, which being read by an interpreter, the Quenes attourney had saie, for it was not true. Rodericke Loppez in English made his submission, and affirmed hee neuer thought harme to her maiestie, &c. Then was called the marshall of the kings bench, and appearing, hee was charged with the prisoners, to conuaie them to the prison of the kings bench, and there to deliuer them to the Sheriffes of London, with a writte to see them executed: so were they conuaied by water from Westminster to the bishoppe of Winchesters staires in Southwarke, from thence to the kings bench, there laide on hurdles, and conuaied by the sheriffes of London ouer the bridge, vp to Leaden hall, and so to Tyborne, and there hanged, cutte downe aliue, holden downe by strength of men, dismembred, bowelled, headed and quartered, their quarters set on the gates of the citie.

Ships sent to the seas by the citizens of London.

The 15. of July, by a common councell in the Guild hall was granted (according to precept from her maiestie) that fiue ships, and two pinnaces should be set forth to the seas at the charges of the citizens, the same to be readie with men, munition, and victuals for three moneths, by the last of July. More, on the 17. of July the same common councel according to another precept, granted 450. men on foote to be likewise set out by the citizens, towardes the charges whereof, a fifteene was leuied, and collected.

Souldiers set out by the Londoners.

Great raines.

This yeere in the month of May, fell many great showres of raine, but in the moneths of June and July, much more: for it commonly rained euerie day, or night, till S. Iames day, and two daies after together most extreamly, all which, notwithstanding in the moneth of August there followed a faire harueſt, but in the moneth of September fell great raines, which raised high waters, such as staied the carriages, and bare downe bridges, at Cambridge,

Bridges at Cambridge and at Ware borne downe.

Ware,

Ware, and elſe where, in many places. Alſo the price of graine grewe to be ſuch, as a ſtrike or buſhell of Rie was ſold for fiue ſhillings, a buſhel of wheat for fiue, ſeuen, or eight ſhillings, &c. for ſtill it roſe in price, which dearth happened (after the common opinion) more by meanes of ouermuch tranſporting, by our owne merchants for their priuate gaine, than through the vnſeaſonablenelle of the weather paſſed. Price of graine great, when God ſends plenty.

This yéere Beuis Bulmar Gentleman, ſet vppe an Engine at Brokenwharfe, thereby, from thence to conuaie Thamis water vp into the Citie, ſufficient to ſerue the whole weſt part thereof, being conuaied into mens houſes by pipes of lead. Thamis water conuaied into the citie of London.

The ſame gentleman on the 18. of October gaue vnto ſir Richard Martine then lord Maior of the city of London, and to the citie for euer, one cup of ſiluer with a kiuer waighing 137. ounces of fine, better then the ſterling, the ſiluer of which cup, with other, was by his meanes digged out of the Mine in England, in the moneth of Auguſt laſt before paſſed. A ſiluer Mine found in England.

The 30. of December a woman was brent in Smithfield, for coyning of money. *An. reg. 37.* A woman brent

The ſame 30. day Doctor Fletcher Biſhop of Worceſter, in Paules church was elected biſhop of London. D. Fletcher B. of London.

The 26. of Januarie, the Earle of Darby married the Earle of Oxfords daughter at the court then at Grénewich, which marriage feaſt was there moſt royally kept. Earle of Darby married.

The tenth of Februarie two Souldiers or Captaines named Yorke and Williams, were executed at Tyborne. Yorke & Williams executed.

The 20. of Februarie, Southwell a Ieſuit, that long time had laine priſoner in the Tower of London, was arraigned at the kings bench barre: he was condemned, and on the next morrow drawne from Newgate to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered. Southwell executed.

The 20. of Aprill being Eaſter day in the afternoone about fiue of the clock, it thundered and lightened ſore, with ſome raine, notwithſtanding the weather very colde, and ſo continued the reſt of that moneth, and alſo the moneth of May. 1595 Great thunder and lightning.

This yéere by meanes of the late tranſporting of graine into forraine countries, the ſame was here growen to an exceſſiue price, as in ſome places from fourteene ſhillings to foure markes the quarter, and more, as the poore did féele, for all thinges els, what ſoeuer was ſuſtenance for man, was likewiſe raiſed without all conſcience and reaſon. For remedie whereof, our merchants brought backe from Danſke much Rie, and ſome wheate (not of the beſt) but paſſing deare, yet ſerued the turne in ſuch extremitie. Dearth of corn & other victuall.

Some prentiſes and other yong people about the citie of London, being pinched of their victuals, more then they had béene accuſtomed, tooke from the market people in Southwarke, butter for their money, paying for the ſame but 3. d. the pound, whereas the owners would haue had 5. d. For the which diſorder, the ſaid yong men, on the 27. of June were puniſhed by whipping, ſetting on the pillorie and long impriſonment. Diſordered youths puniſhed.

Coiners hanged.

After the same time certaine men for coining were hanged: Also a seruaunt in Holborne was hanged, bowelled and quartered, for counterfaiting of a new pattent, and setting to the seale of an olde.

Unruly youths on the tower hil apprehended.

The 29. of June, being Sunday in the afternoone, a number of vnrulie youths on the tower hill, being blamed by the warders of Tower street ward, threw at them stones, and draue them backe into Tower streete, being hartened thereunto by sounding of a trumpet, but the trumpeter hauing been a soldier, and many other of that companie were taken by the sheriffs of London and sent to prison. About 7. of the clocke the same night, sir Iohn Spencer lord maior rode to the tower hill, attended by his officers and others, to see the hill cleared of all tumultuous persons, where, about the middle of the hill, some warders of the tower, and lieutenants men being there, tolde the maior, that the sworde ought not in that place to be borne vp, and therefore two or three of them catching hold of the sworde, some bickering there was, and the sworde bearer with other hurt and wounded: but the lord maior, by his wise and discréete pacification, as also by proclamation in her maiesties name, in short time, cleared the hill of all trouble, and rode backe, the sworde bearer bearing vp the sword before him.

Proclamation for staying of vnlawfull assemblies.

The Quéenes maiestie being informed of these, and sundry other disorders committed in & about her city of London, by vnlawful assemblies: And some attempting to rescue out of the hands of publike officers such as had bin lawfully arrested, whereby the peace had bin violated and broken: Her maiestie, for reformation thereof, by proclamation dated the 4. of July, straightly charged all her officers, both in the city, and places néere adioining in the counties of Middlesex, Kent, Surrey and Essex, that had authority to preserue the peace, and to punish offenders, more diligently, to the best of their powers, for the suppression of all offenders against the peace, vpon paine to be not only remoued from their offices, but to be also punished as persons maintaining or comforting such offenders. And because the late vnlawfull assemblies & routs were compounded of sundry sorts of base people, some prentises, and some others wandring, idle persons of condition Rogues & vagabonds, and some colouring their wandring by the name of souldiers, her maiesty, for better direction to her officers of Iustice, and inquisition to be made, notified her pleasure to her councell, to prescribe orders to be published, and straightly obserued, and for that purpose a Prouost marshall with sufficient authority to apprehend all such as should not be readily reformed and corrected by the ordinarie officers of Iustice, and that without delay to execute vpon the gallowes by order of martiall law. The orders prescribed, were the same day also by proclamation published. Sir Th. Wilford knight, was appointed prouost marshal for the time, he rode about, and through the City of London daily, with a number of men on horsebacke, armed, with their cases of pistols, &c. This marshal apprehended many vagrant and idle people, brought them before the iustices, who committed them to diuers prisons. On the 22. of July were arraigned in the Guild hall of London 5. of those vnruly youths that were apprehended on the Tower hill, they were condemned of high treason, had iudgement to be drawne,

Sir Thomas Wilford prouost marshall for London.

Tumultuous youthes executed on the tower hill.

drawne, hanged, and quartered, and on the 24. of the same moneth they were drawne from Newgate to the tower hill, and there executed accordingly.

In this time of dearth and scarcity of victuals, at London, an hens eg was sold for a peny, or three egs for two pence at the most, a pound of sweet butter for 7. d. and so the like of fish or flesh, exceeding measure in price, such was our sins deserving it. Dearth of victuals.

The 17. of November, a day of great triumph, for the long and prosperous raigne of her maiestie, at London, the pulpet Crosse in Powles churchyarde newe repaired, painted, and partlie inclosed with a wall of bricke: Doctor Fletcher bishop of London preached there in praise of the quæne, and praier for her maiestie, before the lord maior, Aldermen, and citizens in their best liueries. Which sermon being ended, vpon the church leades the trumpets sounded, the cornets winded, and the quirristers sung an antheme. On the steple many lightes were burned: the tower shot off her ordinance, the belles were roong, bonefiers made, &c. *Ann. reg. 38.*

The 5. of Februarie, two marshals were chosen and appointed in the citie of London, for the apprehending of vagrant and other disordered persons. Two marshals at London.

The 20. of Februarie fiue men for cosoning and counterfeiting of commissions, were set on the pillorie in west Cheape, some of them had their eares nailed and cut off, other that had before lost their eares, were nowe burnt in their cheekes and foreheads. Cosoners set on the pillorie.

This yeere a certaine Pinnace was made by an house Carpenter, in the great græn yard of the Leaden hal in London, it was of burthen about some 5. tun: this was made to be taken a sunder, & set togither with vices: the same was finished, and launched out of the Leaden hall on the 12. of March in the night, being drawne by strength of men, and of horses on a sled, with wheeles made for that purpose, towards Aldgate, where against the parish church of S. Katherine Christs church, the wheeles taking fier on the axeltrees, were broken about one of the clocke in the morning, where it staied till the next night, and then was drawne to the Tower hill, where the same was calked and pitched. And on the 20. of March drawne and launched into the riuer of Thamis at the water gate by the tower, and from thence by water drawne to Radclife, and there tackled. A pinnace made in the Leaden hall of London.

The 9. of Aprill being good friday, in the afternoone, the lord maior and aldermen of London being in Powles church yard, hearing the sermon at Paules crosse, were sodainelie called from thence, and foorthwith by a precept from her maiestie and counsell, pressed 1000. men, which was done by 8. of the clocke the same night, and before the next morning they were puruied of all maner of furniture for the wars, readie to haue gone towardes Douer, and so to the aide of the French in Calois against the Spaniardes, but in the afternoone of the same Saturday they were all discharged: notwithstanding on the 11. of Aprill being Easter daie, about tenne of the clocke before noone, came a newe charge, so that all men being in their parish Churches readie to haue receiued the Communion, the aldermen, their deputies, constables, and other officers, were faine to close vp the Church doores, till they had pressed so manie men to 1596 Soldiers pressed and discharged. Souldiers pressed on Easter day.

be ſouldiers, that by twelue of the clocke, they had in the whole Citie 1000. men, and thoſe, forthwith furniſhed of armour, weapons and all thinges neceſſarie, were for the moſt part that night, and the reſt on the next morning ſent awaie towardes Douer, as the like out of other partes of the Realme: but about a weeke after they returned backe againe, for the French had loſt Caleis.

Souldiers ſent to Douer to haue bin tranſported ouer to Caleis.

Lord keeper deceaſed.

The laſt of Aprill at night, deceaſed Sir Iohn Puckering Lorde Keeper of the great Seale, he died of a dead palſey, wherewith hee had beene taken on the fire and twentith of Aprill at night, and was buried at Weſtminſter.

A Declaration of cauſes why the Queene ſent her nauy to the ſeas.

About this time was publiſhed a booke intituled, A declaration of the cauſes moouing the Queenes maieſtie of England, to prepare and ſende a Nauie to the ſeas, for the defence of her Realmes againſt the King of Spaines forces, to be publiſhed by the Generals of the ſaide Naute, to the intent that it ſhall appeare to the world, that her maieſtie armeth her Nauie onely to defende her ſelfe, and to offende her enemies, and not to offend anie other, that ſhall forbeare to ſtrengthen her enemie, but to vſe them with all lawfull fauours.

To all Chriſtian people, to whom this declaration ſhall come to be read, or heard greeting. We Robert Earle of Eſſex, and Ewe, vicount Hereford, lord Ferrers of Chartley, Bourgcher and Louane, &c. and Charles lord Howard, baron of Effingham, lord high Admirall of England, &c. hauing the charge of a Royall nauie of ſhips, prepared and ſent to the ſeas, by the moſt excellent Princeſſe, the ladie Elizabeth, Queene of England, France and Ireland, &c. doe giue all men knowledge that the ſaide nauie vnder our charge is by her maieſtie prepared and ſent to ſerue on the ſeas, for defence of her maieſties realmes, dominions, and ſubiects, againſt ſuch mightie forces, as we are aduertiſed from all partes of Chriſtendome, to bee alreadie prepared by the king of Spaine, and by further proviſions of men and ſhips daily ſent for, are to be mightily increaſed, to inuade her maieſties Realmes: as heretofore in the yeere of our Lord 1588. was attempted (euen when there was a Treatie continued by both their Commiſſioners for a Peace) with a greater Army then euer before in his time was ſet to the ſeas: though by Gods goodnes, and the valour and wiſedome of her Noble and faithfull Subiects, the ſame was notably made fruſtrate. And becauſe her Maieſtie hath good intelligence of perfite amitie with all Kings and Princes of Chriſtendome, ſauing with the King of Spaine, who hath this manie yeeres moſt vniuſtly profeſſed openly great enimitie by diuers actions, both againſt her Royall perſon, and her people, and Countries, without anie iuſt cauſe firſt giuen on her Maieſties part. Therefore we ſaide the Earle, and Lorde Admirall, doe aſcertaine all perſons, that wee are moſt ſtraightly commanded by her excellent Maieſtie to forbeare from offending in this our Voyage of anie maner of perſons of what Nation ſoeuer, except the ſaide Kings naturall Subiects, or ſuch others borne Strangers, as ſhall giue to the ſaide King manifeſt ayde, with Men, Shippes, Artillerie, Victuall, and other Warlike proviſions for inua-

ſion

ſion of her Maieſtie. Which her Maieſties commandement we meane dutifullie to obſerue: and doe therefore giue ſtreight charge to all perſons that ſhall ſerue in this Naule vnderneath vs, vpon paine of extreme puniſhment to obſerue the ſame. Yet to auoide all occaſions that maie breede queſtion, who they are, being not the King of Spaines Subiects, that ſhall bee charged by vs to be manifeſt aiders for the furniſhing and ſtrengthening of the ſaid kings forces, prouided either by land or ſea, to attempt anie inuaſion of her Maieſties Countries: We doe for the liquidation of this doubt, earneſtly in Gods Name, require and charge all perſons, that are not the ſaid Kings naturall Subiectes, and yet that haue giuen him aide with their Shippes, Victuall, and Munition, as is aboue ſaide, to withdrawe all their ſaide Shippes prepared for the warre, and all their prouiſions of hoſtilitie out of anie Hauens of Spaine, or Portugale, or from the companie and ſeruice of the Kings Shippes againſt our Naule, and therewith to returne either to their owne Countries, or if they ſo ſhall like to come to our Naule: to whom in the reuerend name of our Soueraigne Ladie the Quéenes Maieſtie, we doe promiſe all ſecuritie, both for their perſons and goods to be vſed and defended as friendes, and to ſuffer all their Shippes and prouiſions, that were either taken by the King of Spaine, or intended for his ſeruice, or that ſhall be by the owners withdrawen from his aide, to remaine in their owne free diſpoſitions, ſo as the ſame be vſed in all ſortes as friendes, and not as enemies to the Quœnes Maieſtie, and to vs her Generalles. And if any ſhall vpon knowledge of this her Maieſties moſt honourable order, and of our promiſe (to obſerue the ſame as fauourably as wee maie) willingly and manifeſtlie refuſe to accept this our offer, and ſhall not endeuour themſelues to performe this reaſonable requeſt, tending to their good and libertie, we ſhall then be iuſtlie moued, as by the lawe of Armes we maie, to take and vſe all ſuch ſo refuſing this our offer, as manifeſt aiders of the King of Spaine, with forces to inuade her Maieſties Dominions, and ſo manifeſt Enemies: and in ſuch caſe of that refuſall, if anie harme ſhall happen by anie attempt againſt their Perſons, Shippes, and Goods by anie our Nauy, for the aiding of the ſaid King: there ſhall be no iuſt cauſe for them hereafter to complaine, or to procure their naturall Princes and Lordes to ſollicite reſtitutions or amends for the ſame. And for the more notification hereof, we haue thought good to haue the Originall hereof to bee ſigned with our hands and with our ſeales, to bee ſeene by anie that will require to reade or ſée the ſame: And likewiſe wee haue put the ſame in Print, in French, Italian, Dutch, and Spaniſh, and haue alſo cauſed the ſame to bee diſtributed into as manie Portes of Spaine and Portugall, as conuenientlie might bee for the better knowledge to be had in the ſaide Portes, as alſo in all other Partes vnder his ſubiection.

R. Eſſex. C. Howard.

On May day Proclamation was made, that all Souldiers appointed to Sea ſhould in all haſte paſſe to Portſmouth, &c. to the Earle of Eſſex, and other the nobilitie there. Souldiers to the Seas.

New lord keeper.

The 6. of Maie, sir Thomas Edgerton maister of the Rols, was made lorde keeper, and had deliuered vnto him the great seale. The 11. he rode (accompanied of the nobilitie and others in great number) to Westminster, and there toke his place.

High waters ouerflowing the banks.

In this moneth of Maie (as afore) fell continuall raines euerie daie, or night, wherethrough the waters growen deepe, brake ouer the high wales, namely betwixt Ilford and Stratford the Bowe, so that market people riding towards London hardly escaped, and some were drowned. Also towards Lambheth in the high wate, people (not on horse backe) were faine to be borne on mens backes, or rowed in wherries.

D. Marbacke.

After that the right honorable, the two generals, Robert Earle of Eſſex, and Charles Howard lorde high admirall of England, were come to Plimmouth, which was about the beginning of May, being accompanied with diuers other noble Peeres, as the Earle of Sussex, the lorde T. Howard, the lord Harbert, the lorde Warden, sir Walter Rawleigh, the lorde Marshall, sir Francis Vere, the lord Burke, Don Christopher yong Prince of Portingale, yong Count Lodowicke Nassaw, and the Admirall of the Hollanders, sir Iohn Vanderford, besides manie other worthy knights, and gentlemen, attending this action, it pleased them there to make their aboade for all that moneth, as well for the new furnishing and victualing of her Maiesties royall naule, as also for the expecting of some other ships, which were to come from diuers places of the realme, and were as yet wanting, making that place, as it should seeme, the Rendeuow for all the whole fleete there to make head, and complet the full number of all such companies, both for sea and land, as was in their deepe wisedomes thought good, and agreed vpon.

The 8. or 9. of that moneth, two offenders were executed a little without the towne, the one for beginning a mutinie in his companie, the other for running away from his colours.

Also in the dutch regiment, one for killing of his companion vpon drinke, was by martiall law tied to the partie murthered, and both of them cast into the sea.

An other for picking from his company in the shippes, was thrise ducked from the maine yarde into the sea: and then with a canne of beere, a pound of bread, and a pound of candles, set vpon the shore, and so suffered to shifte for himselfe.

More about the 28. a certaine lieutenant was by sound of a drumme disgraced and cassered, for bearing any further office at that time, for the taking of money, of certaine souldiers in the countrey, and placing of other vnfit men in their roomes.

The 1. of June they embarked themselues, weighed anchor, and hoysed vp saile onward their iourney. They began from the sound of Plimmouth to make their iourney, the winde at the first seeming fauourable, but in the euening growing verie scant, and all night following more and more against them, and hauing sayled no farther then to Dodman head, were constrained the next daie to returne to the roade of Plimmouth againe, and there in the

the sounds to lie at anchor for that night. In which place came to the hands of mine authour, a praier in English, made by her maiestie, which he setteth downe as followeth.

A praier made by her maiestie.

Most Omnipotent maker, and guider of all our worldes masse, that onely searchest and fadomest the bottom of all our hearts conceits, and in them seest the true originals of all our actions intended. Thou that by thy foresight dost truely discerne, how no malice of reuenge, nor quittance of iniurie, nor desire of bloudshed, nor greedinesse of lucre, hath bred the resolution of our new set out army, but a hedefull care and warie watch, that no neglect of foes, nor ouer surety of harme, might breede either danger to vs, or glorie to them. These being groundes, thou that doest inspire the minde, we humbly beseech thee with bended knees, prosper the worke, and with best forewindes guide the iourney, spede the victorie, & make the returne, the aduancement of thy glorie, the triumph of their fame, and suretie to the realme, with the least losse of the English bloud. To these deuout petitions, Lord giue thou thy blessed grant.

The third of Iune, the LL. generals of the fleete and army, set out of the harborough of Plimmouth, hauing by computation an hundred ships, besides fiftie barkes laden with victuals with them, whereof the Earle of Esser, one of the admirals, the lord admirall principall at the sea, the lord Tho. Howard, sir Walter Rawleigh admirall, and of the dutch ships County Lodowicke admirall, euerie one hauing their squadron and ships appointed to follow them at sea, set forward. The especiall land Commanders and Captaines were as followeth.

The Earle of Esser lord generall, his regiment.

Captaine Sauage, of his owne companie of Kentish 200.
Sir Mathew Morgan, Herefordshire men 150.
Captaine Hanbridge, Herefordshire men 100.
Captaine Lambart, his owne olde souldiers 150.
Sir George Carew master of the ordinance, Herefordshire men 150.
Captaine Mericke, Northampton shire men 100.

Sir Francis Vere lord Marshall, his regiment.

Lord Marshall, his own company old souldiers of Flushing 150.
Captaine Robert Bagnoll Pembrooke shire men 100.
Captaine Constable 100.
Captaine Vpchurch 100.
Captaine Daniell Vere 100.
Captaine Carew 100.

Lord Sussex his owne companie.

Lord Sussex for his owne company Brecknocke & Carmarden shires 150.
Captaine Conway 100.
Captaine Fulke Conway 100.
Captaine Tirrell his olde souldiers of Flushing 100.
Captaine William Williams 100.
Captaine Musfield 100.

Captaine Haruy, Carmarden shire 100.

Sir Iohn Wingfield Campe maister, his regiment.

Sir Iohn Wingfield, Somerset shire 150.
Sir Clement Henningham, Shropshire and Glocster 100.
Captaine Herrington Vere, his owne souldiers 100.
Captaine Laurence, Pongomery shire 100.
Captaine Ashenen, his souldiers of Flushing 100.
Captaine Rushe, his owne souldiers of Flushing 100.
Captaine Charles Morgan, his souldiers of Flushing 100.

Sir Christopher Blunt, his regiment.

Sir Christopher Blunt, his owne companie Stafford shire men 150.
Captaine Charles Blunt, Worcester shire men 100.
Captaine Bret, olde souldiers of Ostende 100.
Captaine Thomas Williams, Shropshire men 100.
Captaine Horcot, Glocester shire men 100.
Captaine Foliat, Worcester shire men 100.
Captaine Bolstre Warwike shire men 100.

Sir Thomas Gerards regiment.

Sir Thomas Gerards owne companie Lancashire 150.
Captaine Throkmorton, soldiers of Ostend 100.
Captaine Flud, Carmarthen and Angleley 100.
Captaine Billings, Cheshire men 100.
Captaine Mulinox, Lancashire men 100.
Captaine Salesbury, Denbigh shire men 100.
Captaine Colliar Cheshire men 100.

Sir Conias Clifford, his regiment.

Sir Conias Clifford, his company 150
Captaine Mericke 100.
Captaine Dauies 100.
Captaine Pulley 100.
Captaine Dansey 100.
Captaine Wetton 100.
Captaine Dolekerne 100.

Sir Richard Wingfield, his regiment.

Sir Richard Wingfield, for himselfe 150.
Captaine Dundid, Shropshire and Warwike shire 100.
Captaine Shackstone 100.
Captaine Smith 100.
Captaine Gifford 100.

Voluntarie Gentlemen.

The Prince of Portingale.
Lord Harbart.
Lord Burke.
Sir Edward Wingfield, sir Thomas German, sir Thomas Wooddowes, sir Robert Currey, sir Charles Percie, sir Anthony Stander.

The

The Countie Lodowicke, his owne regiment 1200.
Captaine Goring, his regiment of voluntarie souldiers 1000.
The 8. regiments in all had as appeared in accompt great horse 120. In all 6100. preſt English.
It was thought that mariners they were able to land of armed men x. or xii. thousand. The foure English squadrons at sea.

Under the Earle of Eſſex.
The New Repulse Admirall
The Raine bow vice Admirall
The Vauntgard
The Charles,
The Lioneſſe
The Minion
The Braue
The Griffon
The Marigolde
The Jonathan
The Peter
The Gamaliell
The Gift of God
The Greene Dragon
The Unicorne of Briſtow
The Barke Rowe
The Phenix
The Poſt horse
The Little John
The Comfort.

Under the Lord Admirall.
The Arke Admirall
The Golden lyon vice Admirall
The Dreade Nought
The True Loue
The Lyons Whelpe
The Swan
The Derling
The Indenor
The Peremaide
The Elizabeth Jonas
The Sandwich Hoy
The Delight
The Centurion
The John of France
The Expedition of Lime
The Joſeph of Hampton
The Vineyard of London
The Deſire.

Under the L. Thomas Howard.
The Honor Admirall
The Non pertilia vice Admirall
The Crane
The Mone
The Aliſander
The Rubin
The Salomon
The Tremontonde
The Violet
The Golden Dragon
The Greedge
The Exchange
The Prudence
The Gift of God of Yarmouth
The Hercules
The Jonas
The S. Jacob
The Joſua
The Roger and Katherine
The Brownie Fiſhe.

Under ſir Walter Rawley.
The Warſpight Admirall
The Swift ſure vice Admirall
The Mary Roſe
The Quittance
The Roe bucke
The Centurion
The Affection
The Victory and great Katherine
The Seraphin
The S. Jacob Ancuſon
The S. Peter
The Mary Margaret
The Faulcon and Jeorie
The Runner
The Spie
The Nicholas.

The

The Dutch squadron.

The Admirall, and gouernour of the dutch ships, was the County Lodowicke, the number of dutch ships in this seruice was 30.

Of Victualers in the fleete, besides others not named which were for carriage, thirtie.

All these on the twentith of June, being sundaie about fiue of the clocke in the morning, anchored before the West end of the rich Towne of Cadiz in Andolesia, where the Generalles determined presentlie to haue landed their men, but the weather grewe so fowle, that being in their barges and boates, they were driuen aboord the Ships againe. Then they determined to haue fought with the Spanish Shippes and Galleies, lying in the baie, but before our Shippes coulde waie in so rough a Sea, the night grewe on; whereupon they came to anchor, not farre from the Spanishe Shippes, determining in the morning to set vppon them, which they did, in such sort, as they obtained of them a great victorie. And also the same daie besieged and wanne the said stronge Towne of Cadiz, whereof I was once minded to haue written more at large, but finding some disagreement in such notes as haue come to my hands, touching the particulars, and for the auoyding of offence in following them, I haue thought good to touch the same in generall as followeth.

Triumph at London for good successe at Sea.

On Sundaie the eight of August, great tryumph was made at London, for the good successe of the two Generals, and companie in Spaine, the winning, sacking, and burning of the famous Towne of Cadiz, the ouerthrowe and burning of the Spanish Naule, and other accidentes. VVilliam Barlow then Batcheler in Diuinitie, and Domesticall Chaplaine to the Archbyshop of Canterburie, by appointment preached at Powles Crosse in the forenoone, a Sermon of thankes giuing, wherein hee declared the aduantage her Maiestie had gotten by that which had beene done at Cadiz, her Maiestie (saide hee) beeing threatened to bee inuaded, hath like a mightie and magnanimous Prince, sent her Naule and Armie to offer her enemie Battayle at his owne doores.

Sermon of thankes giuing

Of honor to the Queene.

Her Maiestie hath defeated the best Fleete the King of Spaine had together in anie place, and amongst those his Shippes of greatest fame, and in which all the pride and confidence of the Spaniards was reposed.

Her Maiestie carrieth home with triumph two of his principall Galleons, whereof the one S. Mathew is thought to bee equall with the S. Philip that was brent.

Her maiestie hath defeated his Fleete of Galleies, with a few of hir ships, and when the Galleies had such aduauntage the Captaines of them confessed aboord the Owe-repulse, that fortie Galleies were not able to encounter one of her maiesties Ships.

Her maiestie hath inforced the Spaniardes to deliuer her poore Subiects that were captiues in the galleies, and of her mercie let go thousands of Spaniards that were captiues, and in her power.

Her maiestie hath taken the strongest and fairest Towne of warre the King of Spaine had in all those parts, and tooke it as soone as her armie was brought to looke vpon it.

Her

Her maieſtie had her Armie thirteene daies on lande, and no armie, nor force of the king of Spaine had in thoſe parts, durſt looke vpon it, no not when part of her armie went to the furtheſt part of the Iland, tenne miles from the towne of Cadiz.

Her maieſty hath gotten two goodly Ships to ſtrengthen her Naule, which were neuer built for foureteene or fifteene thouſande pound. *Profit to the Queene.*

Her maieſtie hath gotten at the leaſt one hundred peeces of Braſſe Ordinaunce.

Her maieſties men of Warre, both Souldiours, and mariners, are made rich, and fit to go into any action or ſeruice, as well with more ability, as with the greater courage.

Hee hath loſt thirteene of his beſt Ships of war, two of the which may ſerue to fight againſt him ſelfe. *Anoſance and loſſe to the enemy.*

Hee hath loſt of the Indian fleete fortie merchants ſhips, moſt biſkains, all Spaniſh, goodly ſtrong and well appointed ſhips.

Hee hath loſt 4. other good merchant ſhips that were in the ſame harbour, and were bound for the Liuan ſeas.

Hee hath loſt a Towne of greater importaunce to him than anie hee hath left, for ſtrength, wealth, the goodneſſe of the Porte, and the fitnes of it to traffike with the weſt Indians.

Hee hath loſt in this Towne, all his ſea prouiſions which were infinite, and will not be gotten together againe in manie yeeres: hee hath loſt all meane to ſuccour his people in Noua Hiſpania this yeere, or to receiue any from thence the next.

His merchauntes haue loſt in the Fleete that was burnt, twelue millions, and ſo much in the towne that almoſt all the great traders to the Indians in thoſe partes will bee banqueroutes.

And aboue all thinges, hee hath loſt moſt in being nowe halfe diſarmed by the Sea, and beeing diſcouered to bee ſo weake at home. Thus much in the ſermon declared.

In the afternoone, Boneffers through the ſtreetes were made, from three of the clocke, till tenne or eleuen drinking, banqueting, and otherwiſe reioicing. *Boneffers made in the ſtreetes.*

In this meane ſpace, to witte, on the fifteenth of June, Richard Fletchar Byſhoppe of London, towardes night deceaſed, at his palace in Pauls church yarde, and was buried in his Cathedrall Church without ſolemne funerall. *Byſhoppe of London deceaſed.*

The 22. of Julie, the right honourable Henry Cary Baron of Hunſdon, and Lorde Chamberlaine to Queene Elizabeth, deceaſed at Somerſet houſe in Strand ſtreete, without Temple bar, and was honourablie buried at Weſtminſter, in the Chappell of Saint Iohn Baptiſt. *Lord chamberlaine deceaſed.*

About the ſame time alſo deceaſed the Right Honourable Sir Frauncis Knoles, one of her maieſties priuie Counſell.

The fifteenth of Auguſt betweene the houres of eight and nine of the clock at night, a houſe of timber, lately ſet vp verie high, & not fullie finiſhed, neere to Saint Brides Church in Fleeteſtreete, ſodainelie fell downe, and with it *Men ſlaine by fall of an houſe.*

ons

one old house adioining, by the fall whereof the good man named Cox, with a man seruant and a child were killed.

Duke of Boloine came into England.

The twentie nine of August, the Duke of Boloine being arriued in England, came to the Court then at Greenewich, and there by her Maiesties othe confirmed the league of amitie and peace betwixt the two Realmes of England and France: and shortlie after soldiers were sent ouer to aide the French, in their wars against the Spaniards.

The Earle of Shrewsburyes ambassage into France.

Presently vpon the departure of the Duke of Bullion, the right honorable Gilbert Earle of Shrewsbury was sent into France to take the oth of Henry the fourth French King, for the confirmation of the saide League, as also to inuest the said king with the order of the Gartar: the manner whereof being carefullie obserued by M. William Segar then Somerset Herault, I haue set downe according vnto his owne description as followeth.

We departed from Douer on Thurday the 16. day of September 1596. and arriued at Dieppe in France.

The Saturdaie seauen night following, there both the Ambassadours, the Right Honourable the Earle of Shrewsburie, and Sir Anthony Myldmay Knight, were verie noblie entertained, and feasted, the first night by the commander of Deepe, Mounsieur de Chaste, who was inuited the next day to dinner and requited by the Earle, and so during the vnshipping of their horse, and other their prouisions, their LL. ships passed the time in hunting for two or three daies.

Mundaie the 27. following, the Earle set forwarde to Roane, the capitall Towne of Normandie, and was mette on the waie by Mounsieur Feruaques, and his traine, who conducted his L. that night to the Castell of Clere, where he lodged.

Tuesdaie his L. proceeding on was encountered within two miles of the Citie of Roane, by the Duke Mountpensier, the Kings Lieuetenant thereof, and about 200. horse, of nobles and gentlemen his attendants, who bringing his Lordshippe to his lodging, after some ceremonies of honourable entertainement, tooke his leaue: his Lordships lodging was in the market place, called Le March Veux, in a very faire house, furnished with rich hangings and tapits, three clothes of estate, and two standing beds.

The Wednesdaie seuenight following, being the fift of October, the king made his roiall entrie into Roane, in which entring sundrie messages passed betweene the King and the Ambassadours, praying them not to thinke the time long of his comming, for that hee was to attende a preparation which the townes men had purposed for his welcome, hauing neuer bin in the citie before: the maner whereof, for it was very princelie, and ful of rare deuises, I haue thought good to insert.

In the suburbes of the towne on the farther side of the riuer, was newlie erected for the King a most stately roome, made of plaister of Paris, where his highnes stode with his Nobilitie to beholde the companies, and seuerall Classes both of horse and foote, and to receiue the townes mens submissions as they passed, which was most humblie performed by three of euerie company,

and

and of his Maieſtie moſt gratiouſlie accepted.

Firſt the Order of the Friers Capuchins followed their Croſſe, being of wood, vpon which a Crowne of Thornes and three great nayles were fixed, their habit was Ruſſet, all bepatched, girt with hempen cordes, ſhirted with haire-cloth, and bare footed, wearing ſandales onely. This order may haue but one habit for a man during his life, they feede ſtanding, and keepe ſitting, they liue by almes, and are much eſteemed of the people.

Secondly, the Gray Friers being Cordelers followed their Croſſe of ſiluer. This order haue a Librarie in their houſe, containing fiue and fiftie paces in length, with three rowes of deſkes all along, replenished with manie excellent bookes both of Philoſophie, and the Fathers, the moſt parte Manuſcript. Large Library of bookes in Roane.

Thirdly followed the Carmelites, and Celeſtins. Fourthly, the Jacobins. Fiftly, the Auguſtins. Then proceeded the Prieſtes, and Chantries of the towne in their Surplices, ſinging, bearing 42. Croſſes of ſiluer, which was the iuſt number of the pariſhes, and chappels in the towne, and euery croſſe had a great banner of a Saint, richly painted thereon, beſides two tapers of white ware in aultar candleſticks, borne by youths, and euery taper armed with an Eſcutchion of the kings armes.

Then followed the Mint-maſters of Normandy, the merchants of the Vicountyſhip of the Riuer, Receiuers, Cuſtomers, Treaſurers, Aduocates, Procurators, and other officers of the palace.

Then came Batchelers, and Maſters of Arte, Doctors of Phyſicke, Ciuill lawe, and Diuinitie. All theſe degrees were clothed in very faire and reuerent garments, of damaſke, ſatten, and blacke veluet, long and large, and for the moſt part riding vpon mules, diſtinguiſhed by virgers that made way before them.

Then followed in Gownes of purple cloth, and hoods of the ſame, with ſquare cappes on their heads, the Officers and Councellers of the Chamber of Normandie, in which is kept their high court of Chancerie, and Parliament.

Then came riding on mules to the number of fortie in Scarlet, called De la robe rouge, being Iudges, and Officers of eſtate, belonging to the ſaide Chamber.

After them toke place, the foure Preſidents of Normandie in Robes of ſcarlet, furred with Calaber, wearing on their heads great caps of maintenance of blacke veluet.

Then proceeded the ſeuerall bandes of the Towne, containing foure regiments of foote, and three coronets of horſe, ſuted in greene, ruſſet, and carnation ſatten, and veluet, garniſhed with ſiluer lace, their hats, plumes, ſcarfes, and ſhoes white: the furniture of their muſkets, feather ſtaues, and partiſans, ſutable to their colours, their enſignes, cornets, and ſtandards all white, emblaſoned with the kings armes, and inriched with his deuiſe, which was a Roman H Crowned, betweene two branches (as I take it) the one an Oliue, the other a Laurell, his motto, or word, *Has dedit, His dabit vltra.*

After

After vpon great Coursers rode fortie enfant d' Honeur or Henchmen, the properest and choisest young men of the towne, suted in greene Uelvet horsemens coates, richlie laced with Siluer, their Caparisons and trappinges answerable, their plumes, scarfs, and bootes white.

Then came all the Gallauntes and young Gentlemen of the French court (couretting and fetching vp their great horse) accompanied with diuers of the Nobilitie, as Barons, Uicountes, and Earles, the Knightes of the Saint Espirite were knowne by their blewe Ribandes, and white Crosses hanging thereat.

The Chauncellor Mounsieur Cheuerny rode alone after his mace.

The Archbishop of Rheimes, did ride betweene the Bishops of Anlow and Eureux.

Then marched the Kinges three guardes after their Drummes and Fifes. The Swissers with shotte and pikes, the Scots and French with Halberds, the Kings Trumpets in horsemens coates of greene Uelvet, and verie well mounted, then tooke they place, and sounded oftentimes, as they passed. Mounsieur Suraine M. of the ceremonies, and one of the Captaines of the guarde rode together, after whome followed three Heraultes, Anlow, Picardie, and Brytaine, inuested in rich coates of Purple Uelvet, embroodered with the Armes of France, each bearing his name in capitall letters of gold vpon the left manch.

Then followed two Sergeants of Armes, carrying maces before the person of the King, who that daie was mounted on a white Courser, his owne apparell plumes, and horses furniture white, wearing the order of the Saint Espirite at a broade blewe Ribande about his necke. About his person were his Guarde of Scottes, and certaine footemen in white. And after him followed the Duke de Neuers, Duke de Namours, Duke Ioyeuse, and others.

Leaue wee the King going to the Citie, and let vs by the waie of preparation know how the same was ordered for his entertainment.

Some fiue or sixe daies before the King made his entrie, the Bailiffes of Roane commanded by sounde of Trumpet that all the stretes through which his maiestie shoulde passe, shoulde be clensed, sanded, and their signes taken downe, hanging foorth their fairest coueringes, and Tapits at their Windowes, and to crie Viue le Roy as hee passed. All which beeing in a readines, the Windowes full of people of all degrees, the stretes garded with certaine ensigns of muskets, and infinite numbers of common people in euery quarter.

His Maiestie by this time was come to an vtter gate betweene the bridge and the Suburbes, which in the late warre had beene more than halfe ruined. This gate in two or three daies with plaister of Paris they had halfe repaired, and the other halfe remained in ruin for explicatiõ of a deuise, which was thus. On the toppe of the Gate were certaine personages made of Plaister, some carrying of stones, some morter, some heauing, some leueling, and al so liuelie, that they seemed to want nothing, but verie motion. Vppon the arche of

the

the part repaired sate Apollo, with his lyre, vnder whome in goulden letters, was written this prophesie.

Henrico totum reparabitur auspice regnum.

And ouer the Portall,

Gallicarum vrbium restitutorem.

The king being past this gate, hee came to the first Gate of the Bridge, which was made of twelue columns about fourteene foote of height, the base bodie, Capitall, Freeze, and Cornish, after the order Ionica. Ouer the Arche whereof in a table of embossed worke sate a personage representing Normandie, resting her backe against two Leopardes (the Armes of the Dutchie) in her left hande, she helde a Hart, her right hande shee put foorth to a figure, resembling the king, who seemed to raise her vp, vnder her was written, Da miseræ dextram, and ouer her certaine droppes distilling from the Heauens. Then in golden letters vnder the kings armes (which was embraced with lowe palmes) were these verses in French thus englished.

O doubled branches, for Conquerors ordaind,
If Henries name, for Crownes hath you not gaind,
Bowing downe your toppes, for to be wrethed
You cannot giue him your honors triumphant,
No more then this streame, can yeeld water currant,
Vnlesse from higher spring it be receiued.

The king hauing viewed the deuice, and read the verses, passing further vnder the rose or vault of the gate, ouer his head certaine cloudes opened, and there descended vpon him the similitude of the holie ghost, and an angell presented vnto him a sword, called the sworde of peace, before the opening of which cloud, a voice was heard, as from God saying:

Heauenly moouing spirits, stable intelligences,
Cleaue through, make way for this sprites descent,
Presenting from one heauen, of thousand influences
To one speciall monarke, one speciall present.

Henries mine annointed, he feares me, I him loue,
Yeeld him due honor, the honor shall be mine:
All kings are Gods, and as my selfe aboue,
Dispose both good and bad, on earthly line.

The Angell descending saith:

Stay mighty monarke stay, the heauenly monarke sends
To thee this sword of peace, with good and happy day:
Take it, but in thy blisse, a modest heart entends,
Himselfe who raiseth, fals; and Gods loue looseth aye.

He hath giuen thee the sword in fields victorious,
And that which to no other could be giuen so:
One more of peace did rest for thy hand glorious,
Receiue it from aboue, for to command below.

Three-

Threefold great by theſe, thou maiſt thrice happy make,
France vnder thee to yeeld, thy ſcepter greatnes bring;
Purſue this good (therefore) the price for gratious take,
The which about thy browes, makes thouſand laurels ſpring.

The Angell aſcending ſaith:

Reioice yee heauens, ſince peace which yor hath leſte
Returned is on earth, to dwell with Henry,
Who for his neighbours good, of ioy bereſte
Merits for his, that men one day be ſory.

Earth do as much, tapet thy ſelfe with flowres
And ſundry fruites, that henceforth may encreaſe,
All things without mans Art, or handy laboures:
For golden age is where there raigneth peace.

Then liue thrice happy, and content this prince,
Who chiefe of world, and peace, is made this day,
Of all the world heele make but one prouince,
If there be kings, theſe kings ſhall him obay.

After theſe wordes deliuered by the angell, the king proceeded ouer the bridge of Roane, which was garded by fiue or ſixe hundred Swiſſers, all in bright armour, and Spaniſh pikes, vntill hee came to the other gate of the bridge, which entered into the towne, the building of which gate was after the order ruſtique, riſing three degrees, hauing vpon the one corner of the firſt degree, a hound with a Cupid riding on his backe, vnder which was written, *Dux Amor eſt fidei.* And on the other corner, an Ore, with another Cupid, ſubſcribed, *Vires fœnantur Amore.* Vpon the corners of the ſecond degree, ſtood foure Tritons, or mare men with trydents in their hands, and aboue them vpon the third degree, was erected a perſonage repreſenting Roane, with a lambe ſtanding, and laying one foote vpon the knee of the figure, ouer which was written, Nowe, it is to be vnderſtood, the lambe is the armes of the Citie, which in an Epigram made vnto the king was thus deſcribed.

O King your lambe before our wretched broile,
Was wont to beare vpon her humble backe
The golden fleece, like that of Colchos Ile,
But certaine newcome Argonauts (alacke)
Haue her oftimes ſo barely cut and ſhorne,
That on her body poore, and all forlorne,
You ſcarce with paine, can find at all to pull
One ſimple fleece, or little locke of wooll.

The king paſſing through this gate, the towne had prepared for him a Canapie of purple veluet, richly embrodered with his armes, and deuice, and flower delices ſtrewed all ouer, which canapie was carried ouer him by ſixe

henchemen apparelled in one suite. From thence he went vp the stréete called La Rue du Pont, where was set vp a very stately Pyramid, about 100. foote of height, on which was set forth in painting of Copper colours the labours of Hercules, on the toppe whereof was a great Sunne of golde, bearing the King crowned H vpon the points of his beames: the Spire of this Pyramid was carried from the Base, or Pedestall by foure Sphinxes guilt, and on the one side of the saide Base, was written Hercules Gallicus, and on the other side in letters of golde vpon sable, French verses thus Englished.

Hercules, and Henry, are semblable
In vertues, wordes, and Actes,
But that Hercules is in the fable,
And Henry in the Factes.

Here the King turned downe the stréete called Ozou, where were set vp two statues of plaister, vpon Antique Bases, both vndernamed in Gréeke characters. The first called stable victorie, held in her one hand a Palme, and in the other an impertall Crowne, and Scepter, treading vpon armour, and other martiall engines. The other figure was quicke sighted Iustice, holding a sword and ballance, and treading vnder her féete a number of visors, or maskes, signifying falsehoods, betwéene them both was written in golden letters vpon Azur, certaine French verses to this effect.

Kings which for honour, bore name of August
(Or happy Cæsars) preserued by History,
Acknowledge Henry more valiant and iust,
Would beare no other but the name of Henry.

So the Kings Maiestie riding through the stréete named Le Rue de la Viscount, at the stréets end opposite his comming forth into the high stréet, there was raised a doricke piller about 30. foote of height, on the top whereof stood Fame, treading downe death, holding a crowned H in one hand, and a trumpet with a banneroll of France in the other, which when the kings trumpets in passing by sounded, Fame raised her trumpet to her mouth, and séemed to sound also, turning her selfe round about, which motion was most cunningly wrought by an engine belowe within the Base. And vpon the out-side of the Base, leaning against the pedestall, sate Pallace, and Peace; treading vpon Enuie, who was set forth like a furie, with haires of Snakes, and a murthering knife in her hand. Ouer these figures sate Historie writing, and loking vp to Fame, vnder whom were written these Latin verses.

Delicium historiæ, & famæ sed vera canentis,
Henricum reges exemplar habete futuri;
Vt fauste populos, & bello, & pace regatis,

O future kings example take by Henry,
Histories delight, and Fames most true report,

That you may rule, and gouerne prosperously,
Your people both in warre and peacefull sort.

Under these verses was painted a Lion breathing forth Bées, but without either motto, or allusion.

The King passing on through the Diall gate, there was an Arbor resembling Apolloes temple curiously wrought of herbage, & fashioned like wreathed pillers; adioyning to which was a little wood, wherein a wall was painted in prospect diuers Metamorphoses, as Daphne pursued by Apollo, & turned to a Laurell: Pan embracing Siringa, as she became Réedes: Europa & Iupiter, & such like. In which Arbor was excellent musique heard, both for voice and instruments. All which being a while listned vnto by his maiesty, he proceeded to the streetes end, turning to our Lady church (called Mollardame) where was erected a most magnificent Arch triumphall of plaister, after the order Corinthique, on the toppe whereof vpon a great Globe of the worlde, stode the Figure of the King in his Royall Robes, supported by two personages, the one Prudentia who crowned him with a crowne of Starres, the other Fortitude, who offered him a scepter wreathed about with Laurell: before him sate Occasion, behinde him Clemencie; and round about him lay armours, ensignes, drummes, trumpets, and other martiall instruments: at eyther corner sate a huge Lyon of golde supporting the armes of France and Nauarre, and on the one side of the gate stode Enuie, bound in chaines féeding of her own hart, and on the other side a man of armes sitting a sléepe on a drummes head, by whome was written Securitie. Ouer the Portall gate, vnder the Globe were written Latin verses thus translated.

To some for feare, to some for Clemencie,
Are prizes giuen; but fourth king Henrie
Excelling other kings in both, and both conioynde
In him by wisedome, hath also adioynde,
Vnto these three, a fourth (occasion)
Which if it stand, with lawes probation,
Hath sworne her selfe to be companion,
Yoaking worlds to France by king Borbonion.

Opposite to this Arch-triumphall, vpon two Rustique pillers (distinguished aboue 20. foote asunder) stood two Figures of plaister, the one of Saint Lewis in his kingly Robes, holding a Scepter in one hand, and a berge in another; on the top whereof was a hand pointing to the king which stode on the Globe, with this verse vnderwritten. *Macte tua virtute mea maxima stirps.* The personage on the other piller, was Sambetha, one of the Sibils, who likewise pointed to the kings proposition, and presented to the beholders a table with this prophesie in Latin, Enlighed thus.

Sambetha I of Sibils chiefe, an Hebrew by ofspring,
Glad Oracles bring to the French, and vnto thee O king:

The

The earth did neuer boaſt her ſelfe of any child ſo much,
As France (O Henry) ſhall reioyce that thou their king art ſuch,
Peace being to the people brought, a thouſand armies ſtrong,
Dreadleſſe ſhall martch and follow fatte thy battailes all along,
Where Tagus, and Durias ſwell, with goodly golden ſand,
And where Idume for thy ſelfe holdes woorthy palmes in hand.
Thou being Captaine, ſouldiers ſhall returne with laden ſpoiles
Of Eaſterne and the Weſterne wealths, and ſhall bring to their foiles,
Triumphant ſignes, and trophies backe; O king their countrey wone,
Fame ſhall eternall crownes thee giue, for that which thou haſt done.
Liue thou therefore now all our yeeres, and Neſtors longeſt date,
Worlds loue, to people giuing lawes, made quiet by thy ſtate.

The king going through this Arch Triumphall, he preſently entred the Cathedrall church of Noſtredame, with all the eccleſiaſticall pompe that might be, from whence, after certaine ceremonies which entertained him for a time, he returned more priuately in his coach to his Court, being ſometimes a Cardinals houſe, adioyning to Saint Owins Church, and thus the kings entrie ended with the day, being performed with great honor, charge, and applaudements of all ſorts of people.

The 7. of October, the right honorable LL. Embaſſadors had audience of the king, who moſt princely receiued, embraced, and welcommed them both, as alſo all other the Lordes, Knights, and Gentlemen their attendants.

Oth of fidelitie taken by the French king.

The 9. of October the fidelitie or othe of confederation betweene the king and the Queenes maieſtie of England, was very ſolemnly taken in the Church of S. Owen, in the preſence of the French nobility, Lords ſpirituall, and temporall, who that day toke the right hand of the quire.

The French king inueſted with the order of the Garter.

Sunday being the morrow after, the order of the Garter was moſt royally performed in the ſaid Church, where both the Princes had their eſtates, and armes erected. The Queenes Maieſtie being Soueraigne of the order had that day the right hand of the quire, & ſo had the right honorable Earle, her maieſties Embaſſador his armes, ſtile, and ſtall accordingly. Before her maieſties eſtate ſate Maſter William Dethicke, Garter principall king of armes in his Robe of the Order. Before the Earle ſtood William Segar Somerſet Herault. Next vnto the Earle ſate the lord Embaſſador Lieger. Then the lord Cromwell, the lord Rich, and all other knights and gentlemen, according to their qualitie. On the left hand ſate the king, betweene the two Biſhops of Aniow, and Eureux. Before the kings eſtate ſate his Chancelor Mounſieur Cheuerny alone. And before him ſtood Aniow, Picardy, & Britaine, heraulds of armes. In the ſtals ſate the knights of the Saint Eſprit, who (as farre as I doe remember) were theſe, Duke Montpenſire, Duke de Neuers, Duke de Namours, the Prince de Vandemont, Duke Montmerancie Conſtable, and his brother the Admirall, Duke Ioyeuſe, Duke de Builion, the Marſhall de Rotz, and the Marſhall Matignon.

All thing being accomplished with much honor, the kings maiestie inuested and sworne, the vespers ended, and the benediction giuen by a bishop in his Pontificalibus, the king taking the Earle by the hand, returned as they came, attended vpon by the nobility, who two, & two proceeded before them. That night the king and the Earle supped togither vnder one estate in the house of Duke Monpensier; where also was a generall feast for all the English.

The 14. of October the king toke the Earle into his coach, and went to the bridge of Roan, to see a sea fight vpon the Riuer, which was performed by two French shippes, against two supposed Spanish, and one Brasilian (large boates armed and prepared for that purpose, with Muskets, Pikes and Hargubuze a Crocke) where after one houres fight, the Brasilian was sunke, and the Spaniards forced to flie, by the French. This pastime was done by the townesmen, for the kings more delight.

The 15. the right honorable Earle with his attendants toke leaue of the kings maiestie, and kissing his hand departed with great loue, honor, and reputation.

The fiftéenth of October, his Lordship set forth of Roan, and came that night to Dépe, being accompanied with the commander thereof, Monsieur de Chaste, where he remained for conuenient passage, ten dayes after.

The 26. of October, the Quéenes maiesties Shippes being come, his lordship embarked himselfe in the Admirall, and arriued at the Downes néere Douer the day next following.

Rewards giuen by the right honorable Gilbert Earle of Shrewsbury in his Embassage of France.

To Monsieur Suraine a Chaine of gold of 100. pound.
To the chiefe Comptroller a Chaine of 80. pound.
To the second Comptroller a Chaine of 62. pound.
To the third Comptroller a Chaine of 58. pound.
To Madam Matrigna a martiall woman, a Iewell of 20. pound.
To Mounsieur Ciuile 100. crownes.
To the Cookes, and other Officers of the Kings, 600. crownes.
To the Musitians 20. pound.
To sir Henry Palmer Admirall of the Quéenes ship, in which his lordship went, a Iewell of the Quéenes picture, and a ring sent to his Lady.
To the Mariners of the Quéenes Shippes in way of largesse amongst them 150. pound.

Rewardes giuen by the King.

To the Earle her Maiesties Embassador, a Iewell with a very rich Diamond therein.
To maister Garter principall of Armes 500. crownes.
To Somerset Heraulde 200. crownes.

This yéere, like as in the moneth of August, so in September, October, and November, fell great raines, whereupon high waters ouerflowing the low-

low grounds; wheate and other graines grew to great price, so that wheate meale was solde at London for ten shillings the bushell, Rie at fiue shillings, Otemeale at eight shillings the bushell, &c.

The 17. of November, a day of great triumph for the long, prosperous, and triumphant raigne of her Maiestie, at the Court, the Earle of Cumberland Champion for the Quéene, the Earles of Ester, Bedford, South-hampton, and Sussex, with other, ran at the Tilt most brauely. *Ann. reg. 39.* *Great triumph for the prosperous raigne of her Maiestie.*

Sunday the fift of December, great numbers of people being assembled in the Cathedrall church of Wels, in Somersetshire, in the sermon time before noone, a sodaine darknesse fell among them, a storme and tempest followed, with lightning and thunder, such as ouerthrew to the ground them that were in the body of the church, all which church séemed to be on a light fire, a lothsome stench following, some stones were stricken out of the bell tower, the wyers and yrons of the horologe were molten, and no timber brent: which tempest being ceased, and the people come to themselues, some of them were found to be marked with sundry figures in their bodies, and their garments not perished. *Tempest in the City of Welles.*

In the Countie of Kent, in the parish of Westram, a mile and a halfe from the towne Southward, not farre from the East side of a common high way, called Dekham-hill, leading from London towards Buckhurst in Sussex, two closes of ground lying together, seperated with a hedge of Hollies ashes, &c. On the 18. of December was found a part thereof for xii. perches long to be sunke vi foote and a halfe déepe, the next morning xvi. foote more, the third morning 80. foote more at the least, and so from day to day, that great trenche of ground containing in length about 80. perches, and in breath 28. began with the hedges and trées thereon to loose it selfe from the rest of the ground lying round about it, & withall to moue, slide, and shoote Southward day and night for the space of xi. dayes. The ground of two water-pites, the one vi. foote déepe of water, the other xii. at the least, and about iiii. perches ouer in breath, hauing sundry tuffes of Alders and Ashes growing in the bottoms, with a great rocke of stone vnder them, were not onely remoued out of their places, and caried towards the South, at the least foure Perches a péece; but withall mounted aloft, and become hils, with their sedge, flagges, and blacke mudde vpon the toppes of them, higher then the face of the water (which they had forsaken) by 9. foote, and in place from which they are remoued, other ground (which lay higher) is discended, receiuing the water lying now vpon it. Moreouer in one place of the plaine fielde there is a great hoale made by sinking of the earth, to the depth of thirtie foote at least, being in breath in some place two Perches ouer, and in length fiue or sixe Perches. Likewise there is a hedge of thirtie Perches long carryed Southward with his Trées, seauen Perches at the least: sundry other sinkings there be in diuers places, one of sixtie and fiue foote, an other of foortie and seauen, and an other of thirtie and foure foote, by meanes of all which confusion, it is come to passe, that where the highest hilles were, there be the déepest dales, and the lowest dales are be- *A strange earth mouing.*

come the highest grounds. The whole measure of the breaking ground was at the least 9 acres, 7 day workes and foure Perches, &c. Eye witnesses for testimony of troth hereof, were Robert Bostocke Esquire Justice of peace, Iames Austin, Sir Iohn Studley Vicar of Westram, Iohn Dawling Gentleman, and many other.

The moneths of December, January and Februarie, continued cold and moyste, also March colde but dry with extreame frosts, Aprill cold showers, May colde and drye, &c. by meanes of which weathering, and provision for at sea, all kinde of victuals kept at an high price, as well fish as flesh, whitmeate and whatsoeuer, Butter was still sold for viii.d. or viiii.d. the pound.

This yeare in the moneth of May, great preparation being made to the Seas, souldiours were pressed in the Citie of London, to the number of 550. and all their furniture was prepared at charges of the Citizens: these were daily for a long time trained in the fields also at the charges of the Citizens, out of which number was picked 400. the residue, were dismissed: these and other like picked men out of diuers shires (besides sailers) consisted of 6000. able men for land seruice, amongst the which were of Knights & gentlemen voluntaries, to the number of 500. or better, very gallant persons, and as brauely furnished of all things necessary (besides superfluitie in golde lace, plumes of feathers, and such like). These commaunders were as followeth, Robert Deuereaux Earle of Esser, aswell Admirall by the sea, as Generall of the army by land, his vize-admirall L. Thomas Howard knight of the order, his rere Admirall sir Water Raleigh knight, captaine of the guard, and L. of the Stanaries. For the land seruice, his lieutenant generall, was Charles L. Mountioy knight of the order: his marshal of the field, sir Frances Vere knight colonell generall of the English forces in the Low countries: maister of the ordinance sir George Carew knight, L. president of Monster: his seriant maior, sir Ferdinando Gorge knight, gouernor of ỳ forts at Plimouth: the treasurer of the armie sir Hugh Beston knight, &c. The whole naute deuided into three squadrons, consisted of 6. score saile, whereof 3. score were good men of war the rest victualers, & ships of transportation: of her maiesties ships, the nũber was 17. or 18. there were of this naute x. saile of good men of war, sent frõ the states of the Low-countries, to attend her maiesties fleete in this seruice, well mand & furnished. The residue of the fleet, consisted of the best shiping of London, & other the port townes, together with sundry vessels belonging to the Lords & gentlemen aduenturers in this voyage. The purpose of this preparation was for the taking of ỳ Ilands of Azores, which was resolued to haue bin taken & possessed by our English men, there to haue placed strõg garrisons. This army & nauy meeting at Plimouth, embarked, & set saile about the ix. of July, but being some 60 leagues on wards their iorney, there sodainly arose a fierce & tempestious storme that against them. & so continued for 4. daies, in so great violence that they were al forced back againe into Plimouth hauen, where they remained vi. weekes, ere al things could be ordred & repaired. On the 17. of August they againe weied ankors, & set saile, meeting with many stormes & foule wethers, wherby they were dispersed, but on the 15. of Sept. they met at the Ilands, where the gouernors of Flores and Euernes came to the

Voluntary gallants to the seas in great bauery.

Note in this fleete. Earles Rutland, & Southampton. lords, Gray Riche, and Cromwell.

A nau'e to the sea, for taking the Iles of Azores.

Flores an Iland, & Euernes.

the Generall and humbled themselues to him, bringing with them fruites and other fresh victuals, craving at his hands safegard from the spoile of his men, which was granted vnder his seale.

At the Iland of Fayall, the rere Admiral tooke a strong towne & forts therof walking the country about, before the cõming of the Generall thether, who refreshing himselfe & his followers there for some 4. dayes or better, he burnt the towne and brought away the ordinance both of the towne and forts. Fayall an Iland.

In the meane time the squadron of Flemings were playing their parts in ỹ Iſle of Pike, ransacking the wines, & burning all ỹ was within their power. Pike an Iland.

The 26. of Septemb. from Fayall the fleet made toward the Iſle of Gratiosa where they cast anchor, & presently came aborde our generall, ỹ chiefe men of that Iland submitting themselues & craving mercy, which they obtained vpõ condition to send refreshing to the fleete, which they willingly performed. Gratiosa an Iland.

From thence our fleete made for S. Michaels Iland, & as they came very nére vnto it, two of the formost ships of that fleet shot of twise or thrise, & bare vp towards the Admirals ship, these brought newes of the Indian fleete, by them discouered, cõming for the road of Gratiosa, which the Generall had so lately left: vpon this intelligence our Admirall shot off a péce, & cast about, ỹ like was done by the vize-admiral, & so through the fleet. Within few houres after, our fleet encountred & tooke the Spanish ships, cõming frõ the Hauana. These ships made relation of 40. sailes of Indian men (whereof some 8. were freighted with the kings treasure) vpon this intelligence of the passing by of those Indian ships, our fleete followed after them to the Terſores, where they were some 6. houres entred before, & had mowred their ships so fast vnder the towne & fort (being one of the best portes of all Europe) that after a long dispute, our generall, and L. Mountioy in the Defiance, & other tall ships bare in as close alongst the shore as they could, exchanging some 15. or 20. great shot with them, & so left the Iſle of Tarsora, & returned againe to S. Michaels Iland, let fall their anchors before the towne, where, after diuers views taken for a conuenient landing place, it was at length agréed that sir Walter Raleigh, should with all the strength of the fleet lie before the towne, whilest the generall, with all the land cõmanders and some 2000. men embarked into small barkes & pinnaſes, secretly in the night did conuey themselues about ỹ point, to land at a towne called Villa Franca, some fiue miles off, where they arriued safe, & were lãded by ỹ next morning, without any resistance. Those left in the best ships before the towne of S. Michael, did all that night vse their alarmes, to giue the land army the better means to go in secret, & to come vnlooked for on the land side of the towne of S. Michael, as was promised. They in ỹ ships looked out all the next day hoping to sée their troopes marching ouer the hils & plaines, but the towne of Villa Franca, being seated in a pleasant soile, full of fruites, vines, and fresh victuals, the sellers stuffed full of Wade and wheate, the army was content there to ingarison six dayes together, feasting themselues and carying aborde of wheate, Wade, and other marchandise, into priuate mens ships, that followed for that purpose, whilest the fleete before saint Michaels, gaped for the comming of their land army. A Brazell-man laden with Sugar and Brazell-wood, let fall his Anchor in the middest of them, whom

S. Michaels Iland.

Terſores an Iland.

Villa Franca, a riche towne of marchandise, and fresh victuales.

A Brazill man let al anchor amongst our fleete.

whom they tooke as prize: and a little after him a mighty Carack followed, thinking (as the Brazill man did) our Fléete to haue béene the Spanish Armado, wherevpon the rere Admirall sir Walter Rawleigh, commanded all the Flags to be taken downe off our ships, that no man should way an Anchor, shoote off a péece, or put off Boate, but by direction; all which time the Carrack bare in with full saile: but suddenly one of the Flemish squadron contrary to all direction giuen before, wayed Anchors, hoysed saile, and made towards the Carrack (now ready to double the point that entred the Roade) and made a shotte at her, wherevpon she discouering our Fléete to be enemies, changed her course, and ranne her selfe a ground hard vnder the Towne and Forte, and there set her selfe on fier in many places at once, she was a ship of 1300. or 1400. tunnes laden with Sugar, and other riche commodities. This tragedie thus ouer past, our fléete againe looked out for comming of our land-armie, but all in vaine, for they neither came, nor sent, and thus was a great péece of seruice, very vnfortunately neglected and lost. The same night the Generall sent to commaund all the fléete to wey, and come for Villa Franco, so left they Saint Michaels good towne: and then approached the time of péere, that brought with it violent stormes, & foule wether to those Ilands, whereof, vpon the méeting of the whole fléete before Villa Franco, a generall commaundement was giuen, that all sorts should with spéede repaire aboorde their ships, for the winde and seas began to rise. Thus on the 9. of October they set saile for England, and landed on the west coasts thereof, about the end of October. There were in this voyage taken, besides Brazeil men, the good prizes that came from the Hauana, laden with Cochinella, and other rich marchandise, besides the siluer, golde, pearles, Ciuit, Muske, and Ambergréece. And these three prizes (whereof one was about 400. tun) by report of those marchants that came in them, were valued to be worth aboue 400000. duckets, and thus much for this voyage to the Iles of Afores, wherof sir Arthur Gorges knight, then Captaine of her Maiesties ship called the Wastespight, hath largely written, and learnedly discoursed, in his Booke, intituled, A plaine and true relation of the voyage made vnto the Iles of the Afores, &c.

And a great Carack followed of 1400. tun.

A rich Carack burned.

Sir Arthur Gorges Knight.

This Summer arriued at London an Orator from the king of Polonia, Sigismond the third, sonne to Duke Iohn of Finland, that after was king of Sweden, and was a long while here in England. This Embassador was named Paulus de Ialine, a Gentleman of that Countrye, he brought letters of credence from the king dated the 19. of May last past, and had audience the 25. of July, at the Court then at Grénewich: whose oration in Latin beginning, *Serenissima princeps, domina Clementissima, sacra Regia maiestas Poloniæ dominus meus clementissimus, &c.* The effect of his spéech after princely congratulations, what good entertainment her Maiesties subiects had in his dominions, as his owne subiects, and contrary to which, his subiects were in England depriued of all their former olde priuiledges, and liberties of trade, graunted them by her Maiesties predecessors, and consequently were depriued of all trade and traffique on her kingdome. And notwithstanding his subiects

An Orator from the King of Poland.

subiects hath made seuerall complaints, of the which he must haue a care, he could not be moued to diminish any part of his good will toward her Maiestie, and her subiects, but there was of late set forth certaine Edicts and Proclamations, by the which contrary to the law of nature, his subiects were forbidden the Nauigation and trade into Spaine, and vnder coulour thereof, diuers ships of his subiects had béene taken at sea, and their goods made prize, and confiscated, with more the like iniuries, all the which were such, that it touched not onely his marchants, of whom he must haue a care, but likwise all the vniuersall nobilitie of his kingdomes and dominions, for that by the trade, doth consist all their liuings and reuenewes, so that no greater iniury can be done to the king his maister, and the states of his kingdomes: yet for his brotherly loue to her Maiestie, he hath suspended those meanes of doing the like to her Maiesties subiects, which meanes her Maiestie doth know, he doth not want: he thought good to procéede with patience, and to aduertise her Maiestie thereof, as a good neighbour, and Princes duty doth require. And for that letters hetherto haue not béene regarded, he had now sent him to require her Maiestie, according to equitie, to make reparation and restitution, and that the trade Westward to Spaine might be frée, as it ought to be to all men, by the law of nations, otherwise the king his maister would no longer neglect his subiects losses, but to take in hand such necessary means as might be required. As for the Quénes warres with Spaine, that ought not to hinder his subiects nauigation, by the common law of nature, and there was very olde and good friendship betwixt the king his maister, and the king of Spaine, and betwixt the house of Austria: the King his maister, hauing now renued the olde amitie, by marriage with a daughter of Austria, so that he is bound to maintaine the friendship with the king of Spaine, as well as with her Maiestie, euer his request bearing such equitie, he doth trust that her maiestie will take regarde of his protestations, and commaund satisfaction, &c. commending withall some particular sutors and causes. This Oration was presently, learnedly, and eloquently answered by her Maiestie, also in Latin: the effect whereof in English followeth.

Answer of the Queene to the Orator of Poland.

Oh, how was I deceiued? I looked for an Embassage, but thou hast brought a complaint vnto mée. I vnderstood by thy Letters, that thou wert a Legate, but I finde thée a Herault, neuer in my life heard I such an Oration. I maruell truely, I maruell at so great and such vnaccustomed boldnesse in a publike assembly. Neither doe I thinke, if the King were present, that he would say so much, but if peraduenture hée hath committed any such thing to thy charge (which surely I much doubt) this is the cause: That where the King is young, and not by blood, but by election, and newly elected, doth not so perfectly vnderstand the cause of handling these businesses with other Princes, which eyther his auncestors haue obserued with vs, or perhaps others will obserue, that afterward shall succéede in his place. For thy part: Thou séemest to mée, to haue read many bookes, but not to haue come vnto the bookes of Princes,

but

but altogether to be ignorant what is conuenient amongſt Kings. For thou that makeſt often mention of the lawe of nature, and nations, know that this is the law of nature and nations, that when warre doth happen amongſt Princes, it is lawfull for the one of them to intercept the warlike helpes of the others, brought from any place, and to beware leaſt they fall to the loſſe. This I ſay is the lawe of nature and nations. Whereas thou doeſt rehearſe a new affinitie with the houſe of Auſtria, which now thou makeſt ſo famous, forget not that there haue bene of the ſame houſe, that would haue bereft the kingdome of Polonia from thy king. But for the reſt, which be not to be ſpoken of, at this place, and time, becauſe they are many, and to bee conſidered of, one after another: Thou ſhalt expect that, which thou ſhalt vnderſtand of ſome of my Counſell, to whom I will aſſigne this matter. In the meane time farewell and be quiet.

Shortly after, the ſayd Orſator, or Poland Embaſſadour, was called before certaine of her Highneſſe honorable priuie counſell, to wit, the Lord Burghley then high Treaſurer, the Lord high Admirall, ſir Iohn Forteſcue, and ſir Robert Cicell Secretary: to whom, after the ſayd Poland Embaſſador had deliuered his ſpeech, which he made before the Queene in writing, and excuſed his rough kinde of ſpeaking, ſhewing that by his Commiſſion ſigned, and ſealed by the King in the aſſembly of the States of Polonia, he was thereunto enioyned; he receiued a large anſwer in the name of her Maieſtie, which properly pertaining to the matter of the Hanſes, and anſwering fully and verie pertinently the queſtion made by them about their olde priuiledges, and is ſet downe to the full, in a Booke intituled, A Treatiſe of Commerce.

Great prices of bread Corne.

In this moneth of Auguſt, the price of Wheate at London fell from xiii ſhillings the buſhell to ten ſhillings: Rie from nine ſhillings, to fiue ſhillings, and ſo to three ſhillings two pence, but then aroſe againe to the late greateſt price.

Embaſſador from Denmarke.

This yeere alſo, Arnald Whitfield Chancellor of the realme in Denmarke Embaſſadour, and Chriſtian Barnikan his aſſiſtant, from the king of Denmarke arriued here, and were lodged in Fenchurch ſtreete: theſe had audience at the court then at Tibals in Eſſex, on the ſeuenth of September, they made certaine requeſts, which her Maieſty preſently anſwered without pauſe, to euery point of their Embaſſage.

Embaſſador.

The firſt, he required that where as there had remained a long league of amitie betweene the two Crownes of England and Denmarke, both in the life of the late deceaſed king and his predeceſſors, that it might pleaſe her maieſtie to confirme and continue the ſame to the king his maiſter, now newly adopted and crowned.

Her Maieſtie.

Her Maieſtie granted thereunto, on condition the king his maſter would prooue no worſe then his progenitors had done, and in all Chriſtian loue accepted thereof.

Embaſſador.

His requeſt was, that whereas there was great and continuall warres betweene

betweene her Maiestie and the King of Spaine, whereby much Christian blood was shed; to the king his maister, and all other Christian Kings great griefe, and to the great damage, and danger of Christendome, that it would please her maiestie, if in her wisedome she did see it conuenient, to giue her consent, that the king his maister might make a motion of peace, and if he found both parties thereto addicted, to proceede further for the effecting thereof.

Her Maiestie. Her Maiesty replying, sayde, she thought the king his maister was too young to knowe the cause of the breach of the league betweene her Maiestie and Spaine, and as it was not broken by her Royall consent, nor by any of hers, so it should not be sued nor sought for by her maiestie, nor any in her behalfe, for sayde she: Know now, and be it knowne to the king your maister, and all princes Christned, or Heathen, that the Queene of England hath no neede to craue peace, for I assure you (sayde she) that I neuer endured one houre of feare, since my first comming to my kingdome and subiects.

Embassador. He was to desire, if it might stand to her maiesties good liking, open traffike with Spaine, and that the goods might not be staide on the narrow seas, as it hath heretofore beene.

Her Maiestie. Here Maiesty said, if any his maisters or subiects goods were so stayed, it was to her vnknowne, but if he had any such iust complaint, he should (the matter being made to her councell knowne) haue such redresse, as should well content his maister, and subiects.

Embassador. He was to returne the Garter that her Maiestie had bestowed vpon the king lately deceased, as the manner of all forraine Princes is to doe.

Her Maiestie. Her Maiestie accepted thereof, but told him she was sorie to receiue it of him, for thereby she was put in minde of the losse of a most honorable brother and louing friend, and so that she were assured of his kings loue & friendship in the like sort, she would hereafter to ỹ king his maister do the like fauour.

The Embassadour hauing his Audience the day that her Maiestie was borne, toke thereby occasion to say, that sithen it had pleased God, on that day (which hee was informed was her Maiesties birth day) to glorifie the world with so gratious a creature, who had brought so great happinesse to the Realme, and the neighbour kingdomes, hee doubted not but that the king his maister should in that happy day, haue an happy answer of his request, &c.

Her Maiestie. I blame you not to expect a reasonable answer, and a sufficient, but you may thinke it a great miracle, that a childe borne at foure of the clocke this morning, should be able to answere so learned and wise a man as you are, sent from so great a Prince as you be, about so great & waighty affaires you speake of, and in an vnknowne tongue, by three of the clock in the afternoone.

And with him more prudent and gratious words she ended, and gaue him leaue to depart.

Earle of Nottingham created. The 23. of October the right honorable Lord Charles Howard Lord high Admirall of England, was created Earle of Nottingham at Westminster.

The

The 24. of October began the Parliament at Westminster: on the which day diuers people were smothered, and crushed to death, pressing betwixt Whitehall, and the Colledge church, to haue seene her maiestie and nobility riding to the said parliament, sir Thomas Gerrard knight-marshall, and his men, making way before them.

The 27. of October, her maiestie went by water to the parliament house and prorogued the said parliament, till Saterday the fift of November.

Anno reg. 40. Pepper 8. shillings the pound.

This yeare against Christmas Pepper was solde at London for eight shillings the pound, a matter then much noted, considering that not many yeares since, a great Carreck richly laden with diuers marchandises, was taken at Sea, brought to our coasts, the goods thereof in smaller vessels conueyed to London, and layde vp in the Leaden hall, where the Pepper by Marchants of the Citie, was valued to be worth one hundred thousand pounds, appointed there to be solde, which was done, with restraint that no Pepper (by way of Marchandise) should be brought into this Realme, before sale of the former. Also Raysens was this yeare solde for fiue pence the pound: Gascoine wine 11. shillings viii. pence the Gallon, sweete wines iiii. shillings, &c.

The 20. of December, being S. Thomas eeue, the parliament was put off till the 11. of January, on the which day they sate againe.

A great frost.

A great frost the ten first dayes of January, so that the riuer of Thamis was at London very neere frozen ouer, but then it thawed.

Embassadours into France.

Sir Robert Cecill principall Secretary, Maister Harbert master of the Requests, sir George Carew Maister of the Ordinance, and others prepared for their Embassage into France, and set saile from Douer about the 19. of February.

Angare hanged for murthering his father.

The 25. of January, one named Ainger was hanged at Tiborne, for wilfully and secretly murthering of his owne father a gentleman and counseller of the law at Graies Inne, in his chamber there.

Parliamẽt dissolued.

The ninth of February, the parliament hauing granted for defence of the realme three subsidies of 4. s. the pound lands, and 2. s. 8. d. the pound goods, and fiue fifteenes; was dissolued and brake vp.

A colde spring after a colde Winter.

In the month of March, the beginning thereof, three or foure dayes together were hot, more then ordinary for that time of the yeare, but the residue of that month, and the next following very bitter colde, with great windes still West with haile snowe, &c.

1598.

Lightning & thonder.

The 26. of March in the afternoone, great lightning, thunder and haile, and the weather still cold.

Twifordtowne burned.

On the third of Aprill, the faire and rich towne of Twifordtowne in Deuonshire was brent by casualtie of fire, beginning in a poore cottage, a woman there frying pancakes with strawe (for lacke of other fewell) the same fired the house, and so the towne about one of the clocke in the afternoone: the rage of which fire, lasting one houre and a halfe, consumed 409. houses, burned downe: one hundred and fifty thousand pound consumed in money, plate, merchandise, houshold-stuffe, and houses, fifty persons, men, women,

and

and children consumed: an almes house preserued with poore men therein, in the midst of the flames: 2000. pound weekely was bestowed there in the market on mundaies, in Deuonshire Barsets: 9000. people maintained by the cloathing of that towne, in Deuon, Cornwall, and Somersetshires. It was the Earle of Deuonshires chiefe seate, where yet standeth his Castle, or court place, thus much of this towne, was certified to her maiestie, and was thought of many to be a iust punishment of God vpon that towne for the vnmercifulnes of the rich, and small regard of the poore, which were daily seene to perish in the stretes of that towne, for lacke of relefe.

Our Embassadors returned out of France.

The first of May, sir Robert Cecill Secretary, Io. Harbert esquire master of Requests, sir George Carew master of the ordinance, and other the Embassadors, returned out of France, and came to the Court.

Calcis returned to the French

About the latter end of May, or beginning of June, Calcis & other townes in France, lately holden by the Spanish nation, were vpon compositions of peace rendred to the French king.

L. Zouche Embassador into Denmarke.

The Queene of England, for the congratulations of the late mariage solemnized at Capinhage the capitall Citie in the Realme of Denmarke, betweene Christian the 4. King of Denmarke, and the daughter of the Marquis of Brandenburge one of the Princes Electors of the Empire: addressed the Lord Zouche thither in Embassage, being assisted by Christopher Parkins Doctor of Lawe, who departed from Lée in Essex the 1. day of June. The second point of this legation, contained the recommendation of certaine complaints exhibited vnto her Maiestie by her Marchants trading into the East parts, touching a late arrest and detencion of their goods in the sound, amounting nére to the value of one hundred thousand Talers, vpon a pretext of false and vntrue entries of their marchandises, to the defrauding of the kings customes. Of which concealements and imputations of fraude, the Marchants neuertheleſſe pretended in themselues a clearnesse, iustifying the making of their entries agréable vnto the custome and vsage in all other places, for marchandises of the like natures. Wherefore it was on her Maiesties behalfe desired, that it would please the King to enter into some indifferent and fauourable considerations thereof, according to equitie, and to extend his clemencie vnto the Marchants in the release and restitution of their goods, if there should not appeare any fraude in them. Vpon some debating of the cause betweene her Maiesties Embassador and his assistant, and some other of the kings counsell appointed to conferre with them thereabouts, and these Danish Commissioners, still insisting vpon the iustice of the confiscations, the King in conclusion condiscended in regarde of her maiestie, to yelde vnto a restitution of thirty thousand Tallers. Of which offer, if it should please her Maiestie to accept, he would expect her resolution, vntill the feast of Saint Michaell the Archangell next. The Lord Zouche and Doctor Parkins hauing receiued this finall answer from the King, departed from Capinhage the 13. of July to Holosnere, where the next morning they set saile for England, and returned to her Maiesties presence the first of August following.

In

D Perkins sent into Denmarke.

In the moneth of September following, Doctor Parkins was againe dispatched in Embassage vnto the king of Denmarke, to demaund a generall restitution of all such goods of her Marchants as had béene arrested and confiscated: for considering that they still complained of the rigor of his confiscation, and aduowed the maner of their entries according to the vsage accustomed both here in her Maiesties Custome house in England, and in all other countries, whether they resort for traffique. The Quéene rested nothing satisfied with the late offer of the thirty thousand Tallers made vnto her by the king. Wherfore in regarde of this her Maiesties second legation, the king added vnto the sayd graunt of 30000. Tallers, other ten thousand, to be restored back, partly in wares yet extant, and partly in ready money, which summe vpon certaine agréed by Doctor Parkins, was afterwards receyued, and distributed among the marchants damnified by the arrests.

Tallars or Dollars.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 1. of July, 19. persons for felony were hanged at Tyborne, and one prested to death at Newgate of London.

A challenger of all men at defence was hanged.

Also Iohn Barrose a Burgonian by nation, and a Fensor by profession, that lately was come ouer and had chalenged all the Fencers of England, was hanged without Ludgate, for killing of an officer of the Citie which had arrested him for debt, such was his desperatnesse, and brought such reward, as might be an example to other the like.

A Seminary priest executed at S. Thomas of waterings.

The 12. of July, one Iones, alias Buckly a Priest made beyond the seas, hauing béene arraigned at the Kings-bench, and there condemned of treason for comming into this Realme, contrary to a statute, was drawne to S. Thomas Waterings, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered, his head set vpon the pillorie in Southwarke, his quarters in the high waies towards Newington Lambheath, &c.

Lord treasurer deceased.

On the 4. of August, sir William Cecill knight of the Order, lord Burghley, maister of the wards and liueries, high treasurer of England, a famous counseller to the Quénes maiesty all her raigne, and likewise had béen to Edward the first, who for his singular wisdome was renowned throughout al Europe, departed this mortall life at his house by the Strand, his body was conueied to Westminster with solemne funerall, and from thence secretly to Stamford, and there buried amongst his auncestors.

Lightning & thunder.

The fift of September, being Tuesday in the afternoone, lightening, and thunder at London, two great Crackes, as it had béene the shoting of great Ordinance, some men smitten at the Posterne by the Tower of London, and one man slaine at the brigehouse in Southwarke ouer against the Tower of London.

Earle of Cumberland returned from the seas.

The 2. of October, the earle of Cumberland came aland about Limehouse or Radcliffe besides London, being returned from the seas, and hauing amongst other valiant actes, made spoile of the strong towne, and Castle of S. Iohn de Porta-rico, &c.

Squire executed.

The 9. of Nouember, Edward Squire of Grénewich was arraigned at Westminster, condemned of high treason, and on the 13. drawne from the Tower to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered.

The

The 14. of Nouember, the Quéenes maiestie came to Westminster, and was there by commaundement from her counsell, most royally receiued by the maior of London, aldermen and sherifs in scarlet, and a great number of the wealthy Citizens in veluet coates, and chaines of gold, all on horsebacke, in the euening by Torch-light.

In the moneth of December great frosts, the Thamis nigh ouer frozen at Londó bridge, but thawed about one weéke before Christmas, & began again to fréeze on S. Iohns day the 27. and a great snow on the 28. so that the Thamis was againe nigh frozen as before, but on Newyéeres day it thawed. *Ann. reg.* 41. Great frosts.

In the beginning of the moneth of Januarie, souldiers in Essex and diuers other shires, as also in the City of London, were pressed, and being furnished of all things necessary for the wars, sent into the low Countries, there to remaine in seruice, and place of olde souldiers, from thence to be transported and sent into Ireland. All subsidy men in the city, were sessed at eight pence the pound goods or lands towards this charge. Souldiers into the Low countries. Souldiers sent into Ireland.

Also in this moneth great loanes of money were demanded, and at length granted by the citizens of London, besides all other charges at that time imposed vpon them.

In the moneth of Februarie about the 28. day, a fiftéenth was granted and paide by the Citizens of London, for the setting forth of more souldiers into Ireland.

The 27. of March, about two of the clock in the afternoone, the right honorable Robert earle of Essex, lieutenant generall lord high marshall, &c. departed from Seding lane, through Fenchurch stréete, Grace stréete, Cornehill, Cheape, &c. towards Iseldon, Highgate, and rode that night to S. Albons, towards Ireland, he had a great traine of Noble men & gentlemen, on horsebacke before him, to accompany him on his iourney, his coaches followed him. He had also (by the pleasure of God) a great showre, or twaine, of raine, and haile, with some claps of thunder as he rode through the citie. Earle of Essex lieutenant generall, rode through the Citie of London towards Ireland.

The months of March, Aprill, & May, cold & dry, but on Whitsunday great raine, and high waters, the like of long time had not béen séene: the months of June, and July, hot and drie for the most part, thus much for weathering.

This yeare in the moneth of August, the beginning thereof, politickly preuenting danger feared to happen, by occasion of some preparation of shipping to haue béen made in Spaine (as was pretended) to the annoyance of this our estate. The honorable Charles Howard Earle of Nottingham Lord high Admirall of England, was by her Maiestie made Lieutenant generall of all England, as well by sea, as by land &c. The Citizens of London were charged with the furnishing and setting forth to Sea, of twelue Shippes, since encreased to sirtéene: Also with 6000 men, and furniture for the warres, which men with all spéede were made in a readinesse; Three thousand of them dayly trained in the fielde vnder Captaines, Citizens of the same Citie, from the first of August, &c. The other three thousand appointed to attend vpon her Maiesties royall person, were also likewise trained vnder Captaines, in braue furniture, for they were houshol- Shipps prepared to the Seas and men trained for the warres by the Londoners.

ders

ders of good accompt, all which charges was partly borne by themselues, the residue performed by subsidies leuied of the Citizens. More by commaundement from her Maiestie, the Chaines were drawne thwart the stréetes and lanes of the Citie, and Lanthorns with lights of Candles hanged out at euery mans doore, there to burne all the night, and so from night to night, vpon paine of death, and great watches kept in the stréetes, which hanging out of lights so continued some fourtéene nights or better.

Horsemen & footemen trained in the shires & mustered in London.

In this meane space, many thousands of horsemen and footemen, chosen persons, well appointed for the warres, trained vp in armour with braue liueries, vnder valiant Captaines, in diuers shires, were brought vp to London, where they were lodged in the suburbes, townes, and villages néere adioyning: from the eight of August, till the twentith, or three and twentith: in which time the horsemen were shewed in Saint Iames field, the footmen trained in other grounds about the City, and then all discharged homewards, with charge to be alwayes ready at one houres warning. And so it followed that on the fiue & twentith of August, being saterday at night, postes were sent after them, to recall the horsemen, presently to returne to London, with all spéed possible: which charge they prepared to performe. But on Munday following the saide postes, were likewise sent to stay them at home, or to returne them backe, whose forwardnesse in seruice of her maiesty was such, as the like hath not béene séene, or heard of, towards any prince of this realme, or other, to the great happinesse, and comfort of her Maiestie, whom God hath blessed with so dutifull, louing, and obedient subiects.

The 26. of August being sunday, before fiue of the clocke in the morning, by commandement from her Maiestie, the 3000. souldiers, trained vp by the citizens, were all in armour in the stréetes, attending on their Captaines till past 7. of the clock, at which time, being throughly wet by a great shower of raine, they were sent home againe for that day.

On the next morrow being the 27. the other 3000. citizens, householders, and subsidie men, shewed on the Miles end, where they trained all that day, and other dayes following vnder their Captaines, also citizens, vntill the 4. of September, and so ceased their training for that time, and whatsoeuer had béene feared (a thing vnknowne to the commonaltie) good peace within this realme hath since followed, which God long time continue and increase amongst vs.

Earle of Essex returned out of Ireland.

On Michelmas éue, Robert Earle of Essex, Lieutenant Generall for Ireland, Lord high Marshall, &c. of late greatly feared, to haue entered England by force of armes, being now vnlooked for, in secret manner returned out of Ireland, came to the Courte, then at Nonesuch, in Surrey, went straight to her Maiestie, and spake with her, by whom he was commaunded to his chamber, there to remaine till he heard further of her Maiesties pleasure: And on the second of October was committed to the Lord Kéeper.

On the 29. of November, the Lorde Kéeper, and other Lordes of the Counsell

Counsell (by commandement of the Quéene) in the starre Chamber, perswaded against rumorous talke of the Earle of Essex.

The 13. of Nouember, the Maior, Aldermen, and Sheriffes of London in Scarlet, and the commons a great number in Veluet coates and chaines of golde, all well mounted on horsebacke, as of late times had béene vsed, for honour of the Quéene, by commaundement, receiued her at Westminster by Torch-light.

On the 17. of Nouember, the day whereon she had béene proclaimed Quéene, and had now reigned 41. yeares, was great tilting and other triumphes, which was not ended in diuers dayes after. *Ann. regni. 42.*

Sunday the 23. of December, winde West and by South, boysterous and great, wherethrough the toppes of many chimneies were ouerthrowne, lead blowne off churches, trées, and barnes blowne downe, and also a Tilt boate from London towards Graues end lost against Woolwich, with 30. persons, men and women whereof eleuen were saued. *Windes boisterous.* *Tilt boat and people drowned.*

The 11. of January, Henry Adlington, a Fencer was hanged without the barres of Aldgate, for killing of a man there, and after hanged in chaines on the Piles end.

The 19. of January 16 Priests and 4. lay men, were remoued out of diuers prisons, in and about London, and sent from thence to the Castle of Wisbeche in Cambridge-shire, whereof one was a Bishop of Ireland, and an other a Franciscan Frier of the rule of the Caputians, which wore his Friers weede all the way he went, a thing not séene in England many yeares before. *Prisoners sent to Wisbeche Castle.*

The 7 of February, the honorable Charles Blunt Lord Mountioy hauing taken his leaue at the Court, departed through Holborne towards Ireland, as Lieutenant there, souldiers out of diuers shires were sent before him, and also after him in this moneth of February, namely the Citizens of London at their owne charges furnished and sent thrée hundred at that time into Ireland. *Charles Blunt L. Mountioy departed towards Ireland Lieutenant there.*

The 23. of March being Easter day it snowed and was extreame colde, and so continued till the last of March. *1600.*

It snowed on the 4. of Aprill, which whole moneth following, with also the moneth of May was colde and drye, frosts euery morning (except some thrée dayes little raine) which coldnesse of the spring, & drinesse of the ground, made men doubtfull of any good harueste to succéede, whereupon, and by meanes of some late transporting ouer the seas, procured by the Iustices of the shires but more by vnconscionable farmers hoording vp their corne, badgers, and other corne-mongers, kéeping the same from the markets, or extorting what price they listed, euen vpon a sodaine, namely, Wheate was raised from thrée shillings to fiue, seauen and eight shillings the bushell, still increasing their price. Vntill the Quéene published by proclamation that her Maiesty had, not onely recommended precisely to her councell and other principall ministers, that all maner of graine might be kept within the Realme, but likewise directed them to punish such ingrocers, and forestallers of corne *Looke the Proclamation.*

as by greedinesse laboured to racke things vp to vnreasonable prices &c.

The 21. of June, Iohn Rigby was drawne from the Kings-bench in Southwarke, to S. Thomas Watrings, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered, for being reconciled contrary to the Statute.

Also in the moneth of July, were drawne, hanged, and quartered at Lincolne, two Priests named Hunt and Sprat for comming into this Realme, contrary to the statute: two other Priests Edward Thing and Robert Nuttar were likewise executed for the like offence at Lancaster. Also Thomas Palafar a Priest executed at Durham, and a Gentleman with him, for releeuing and lodging him in his house.

Soulders sent to Ireland.

In the moneth of July, the Citizens of London set out 500. soulders into Ireland, with their furniture, also out of diuers shires were likewise furnished and set out for the warres.

Bishop of London sent Embassador.

This yeare in the moneth of Aprill, Richard Bishop of London, with two other Commissioners, to wit, Christopher Parkins Doctor of Law, and Doctor Swale, was sent in Embassage to Emden, there to treate with Commissioners from the King of Denmarke, according to appointment, but the Danish Embassadors, hauing beene there, and their commission expired, were returned, whereupon our Embassadors also returned into England the eight of July next following. In which seruice the said reuereno father, so wisely, bountifully and honourably behaued himselfe, that her Maiestie very graciously accepted of his proceedings.

Earle of Essex suspended frō vse of offices.

The fifth of June the Earle of Essex was called before the counsell, at the Lord Keepers, where for matters laide to his charge, he was suspended from vse of diuers offices, and till her Maiesties pleasure to the contrary, to keepe his house as afore, &c.

Tempest of haile.

Vpon Wednesday the 16. of June, in the countie of Norfolke, at a towne called Kysse, and other townes adioyning, a great tempest of haile, most of the stones as great as Walnuts, to be taken vp the Friday following by handfuls, wasted to the bignesse of hasell nuts, many of the stones the length of a mans finger, bent and rugged, the force of the fall of them was so great that they brake the glasse windowes of houses, beate downe the leaues of trees, shore downe the wheat and hempe to a very great quantitie &c.

Conspiracie against the king of Scots.

Tuesday the 5 it of August, Charles Iames king of Scots in Scotland escaped a strange and strong conspiracie, practised by the Earle Gowry and his brother, as at large appeareth in a booke thereof extant, first published and printed in Scotland, and since in England.

Meanes for an intreaty of peace to be had.

A Peace being concluded at Verain in France, in the yeare 1598. betweene Henrie the fourth king of France and Nauarre, and Philip the second king of Spaine: the Queenes Maiestie of England was likewise inuited by the French king, her Confederate and Allie, to dispose her selfe vnto a like treaty of Amitie with Spaine. To the effecting whereof, he had procured the consent of the king of Spaine then liuing. After whose decease, Philip the 3. succeeding his father in the Crowne, the same was againe reuiued and solicited by Andreas of Austria the Gouernour of the low Countries, and the Bi-

shop

shop of Constance, both for the house of Burgundy & kingdome of Spaine, afterwards ratified by the Archduke Albert returned out of Spaine with the Infanta his wife. Upon which former promise made vnto her maiestie, she was at the length induced, to condescend vnto a treatie of peace at Bologne in France, a place chosen by mutuall agreement on eyther side, with the assent and good liking of the French king: whether both Princes sent their Embassadours, furnished with ample power and authoritie in that behalfe, where the English Embassadours arriued the fifteenth day of May in this present yere of our Lord God 1600. being the day prefixed for this assembly, and the Spanish the seuentéenth of the same moneth. The Commissioners on the English side were these: sir Henry Neuill knight, her Maiesties ordinary Embassador resident with the French king, Iohn Harbert Esquire, her maiesties second Secretarie of Estate, Robert Beale Esquire, her Maiesties Secretarie in the North parts, and Thomas Edmonds Esquire, her maiesties Secretarie for the French tongue. The Commissioners for Spaine were Baltazar de Caniga & Fonseca, Embassador resident for the king of Spaine, with the Archduke of Austria in the lowe Countries, and Ferdinando Carillo Doctor of the Ciuill lawe: vnto whom were adioyned on the Archdukes part Iohn Richardot president of the Councell of the sayde Archduke, and Lewis Verreyken the saide Arch dukes Audiencer. The Commissioners on both sides being viewed and considered of, some question for the precedencie and superioritie of place fell into disputation and debate, her maiestie chalenging the same as due vnto her before the time of the Emperour Charles (as appeareth by Volaceran) in the time of king Henrie the seuenth her Highnesse grandfather, when this selfesame difference betweene both these crownes comming into question, the Pope preferred England, and adiudged vnto this crowne the most honorable place. But for as much as the same was contradicted by the Spanish Commissioners, who not onely refused to yéld precancie vnto her Maiestie, but also to admit of an equalitie, or of any other indifferent and middle course, whereby the honor of her Maiestie might be preserued: the present treatie (which hitherto was performed only by some priuate visitations and conferences of some one or two of the Commissioners on either side, without comming to any generall méeting or colloquie) was on the second day of August in the yére aforesaid for this time delaide, and by mutuall assent of the Commissioners on both sides, according to their seuerall authorities respectiuely granted vnto them in this behalfe, suspended, vntill the end of fortie dayes following, in which meane while it might be vnderstode what should be the determination of both Princes for a further procéeding in the said Colloquie of peace, at some other time, and place, wherein as yet no certaine resolution hath béene hitherto taken.

Commissioners sent ouer to intreate of a peace to be concluded.

Our commissioners for peace returned out of France.

About the 8. of August arriued at Douer, certaine Embassadors and assistants, fifteene in number, sent from the King of Maroco in Barbaria: these were by certaine English Gentlemen conducted to Grauesend, and from thence, by sir Thomas Gerrard knight marshall, & other gentlemen, with the

Moorish Embassadors from Maroco & Barbary.

Barbary marchants towards London, where they were landed at the Tower wharffe on the 15. of August, from whence they were conuayed in foure Coaches to the Royall Exchange, and there lodged in the house of Anthonie Radcliffe Esquire, of London merchant taylor.

The 20. of August they rode in Coaches through Cheape, to Westminster, from thence by water ouer to Lambhith, and thence againe in Coaches to the Court at Nonesuch, where they were honourably entertained, and and returned the same night to their lodging at London.

About the last of August the Earle of Essex was set at libertie.

The 10. of September, the said Embassadors of Barbarie were againe conuaied to the Court then at Oatlands, there to take their leaue of her maiestie, but were required to stay to see the Iusting and other triumphes at Westminster on the seuenteenth of Nouember.

Souldiers sent to Ireland. In the moneth of September souldiers prest in, and about the Citie of London to the number of three hundred and fiftie masterlesse men, vagrant persons: and such like out of other parts of this Realme to be sent into Ireland: Diuers of them running from their Captaines and Colours, being afterward taken, were hanged for example to other.

Embassadors from Rowsia & Muscouia. The 18. of September, certaine Embassadors from Muscouie, or Rousia, landing at the Tower wharffe, were there receiued by the Aldermen of London in scarlet, the Muscouie marchants, and a number (about two hundred) of the principall companies, in veluet coates, and chaines of golde, all well mounted on horsebacke, conueyed them riding in eight Coaches, from the Tower vp to Aldgate, from thence to the Leaden hall, downe Grace street, vp Fenchurch street, and then down Rode lane towards Billingsgate, and there lodged in the house sometime pertaining to sir Cuthbert Buckle Maior.

The 14. of October the said Embassadors from Rousia & Muscouia, rode to the Court and had audience before her maiestie.

Trinity hospitall in Croydon founded. This yeere the most reuerend Father Iohn Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterburie, did finish that notable & memorable monument of our time, to wit, his hospitall of the holy Trinitie in Croydon, in the County of Surrey, by him there founded and builded of stone and brick, for releefe and sustentation of certaine poore people, As also a faire schoole-house for the encrease of litterature, together with a large dwelling house for the schoole master his vse, and these premises he through Gods fauorable assistance in his owne life time performed and perfited, for that (as my selfe haue heard him say) he would not be to his executors, a cause of their damnation remembring the good aduise that an ancient father hath left written to all posteritie: *Tutior via est, vt bonum quod quisquis mortem sperat agi per alios, agat dum viuit ipse, per se:* It is a way farre more safe for a man to doe good and charitable deedes by himselfe whilest he liueth: then to hope that others will doe the same for him after his death.

Gregorie.

On Thursday the thirteenth of Nouember, her Maiestie being most honourablie attended on, by the Prelates, Nobles, and Iudges of the Realme, was receiued neere vnto Chelsey, by the Lord Maior of London, with his brethren

brethren the Aldermen all in Scarlet, besides to the number of fiue hundred Citizens, in coates of Veluet, and chaines of golde, on horsebacke, euery of them hauing two staffe torches to attend on them; And they all waited on her, to her royall Pallace at Westminster.

The 17. of November, & the 43. yere of her maiesties raigne, there were most princely Iusts performed at White-hal in honor of the queens holyday, by three earles, foure lords, seuen knights, and nine gentlemen, her maiesties pencioners. At these iusts was so great an assembly of people, as the like hath not bin seen in that place before: There were also present sundry embassadors, as namely from the French king, the king of Barbary & Fez, & the emperor of Russia. There was no great harme that hapned (thanked be God) considering the multitude; but that one arme or branch of a great elme broke, which stood in the Parke, by being ouerladen with people, and from whence there fell three men, that were sore bruised, and dangerously hurt. *Ann. reg. 43.*

The first of February in the morning, being Sunday, a great tempest of wind beyond Saint Giles field without London, towards Tiborne, brake the Wind-mill there, the Miller was throwne one way, an other man an other way, one towards the North, the other Southe, a part of the Mill rose, and halfe the Millstone, on the like manner, throwne one way, the other halfe an other way. Tempest.

The Citizens of London, were by the Queene commaunded, to cause certaine Galleys to be made and furnished to Sea, towards charges whereof three fifteenes, were at that time collected of the Citizens. Galleys prepared by the Citizens of London.

The third of February, the Embassadors from the Emperour of Russia, and other the Muscouites, rode through the Citie of London to Marybone Parke, and there hunted at their pleasure, and shortly after returned homeward. Muscouits hunted in Marybone Parke.

The Crosse in West Cheape of London, was by commaundement of the Queene, and letters from her Maiesties honourable counsell, to sir William Rider, then Lord Maior, partly repaired, the old Crosse on the top being rotted, was taken downe, a new Crosse of timber was framed and set vp, couered with Lead, and guilded, the body of the Crosse downeward, was cleansed of dust, &c. Crosse in Cheape repayred.

Sunday the eight of February, about ten of the clock before noone, Robert Deuereux Earle of Essex, assisted by sundry noble men and gentlemen, in warlike maner, departed from his house by the Strand, and entered the Citie of London, at the Temple-Barre, crying for the Queene, for the Queene, till they came into Fenchurch street, and there entered the house of maister Thomas Smith, one of the Shriues of London, who finding himselfe not maister of his owne house, by meanes of the strength the Earle brought with him, and being ignorant of his intent and purposes, conueyed himselfe out at a backe-gate to the Maior, whereupon the Earle with his troupe returned into Fenchurch street to an Armorours house, where they required Armour, which was denyed them, & then went into Grasse-street, where perceiuing himselfe with his assisters to be proclaimed traytors, as Earle of Essex his rising.

alſo the Citizens to be raiſed in armes againſt him, he with his followers wandring vp and downe the Citie, towards euening, would haue paſſed at Ludgate, which was cloſed and defended againſt them, ſo was he forced to returne to Queene-hith, and from thence by water, to his houſe by the Strand, which houſe he fortified, but vnderſtanding that great Ordinance was brought to haue beat it downe, he yéelded, and was conuayed to the Tower about midnight.

Captaine T. Lee executed.

The xvii. of February Captaine Thomas Lee, was drawne to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered, being before condemned, for conſpiracie againſt the Queene, about deliuerance of the Earle of Eſſex out of the Tower, he toke his death conſtantly, confeſſing he had diuers wayes deſerued it, but to be innocent of that he was condemned for, &c.

John Pybuſh executed.

The 18. of February, Iohn Pybuſhe, a Seminary prieſt, after ſeauen yeares impriſonment in the Kings-bench, was hanged, boweled, and quartered at Saint Thomas Waterings, for comming into England, contrary to the Statute of Anno. 27. of the Queene.

Earle of Eſſex araigned.

The 19. of February, Robert Deuereux Earle of Eſſex, was arraigned at Weſtminſter, and found guilty of high treaſon, as more at large appeareth in Bookes thereof extant, publiſhed by authoritie, wherefore I will forbeare to ſet downe in this place any further of that matter of his araignement.

Earle of Eſſex executed.

The 25. of February, then being Aſhwedneſday, about eyght of the clocke in the morning, was the ſentence of death executed vpon Robert Deuereux earle of Eſſex, within the Tower of London, where a Scaffold being ſet vp in the Court, and a forme nére vnto the place whereon ſat the Earles of Cumberland, and Hartford, the Lord Vice-count Vindon, the Lorde Thomas Howard, the Lorde Darcye, and the Lorde Compton. The Lieutenant, with ſome ſirtéene Partizans of the Guard was ſent for the Priſoner, who came in a Gowne of wrought Veluet, a blacke Sattin ſute, a Felt-Hatte blacke, a little Ruffe about his neck, accompanied from his Chamber with thrée Diuines, Doctor Montford, Doctor Barlow, and Maiſter Aſhton his Chaplaine: them he had requeſted not to part from him, but obſerue him, and recall him, if eyther his eye, countenance, or ſpéeche, ſhould bewray any thing which might not beſéeme him for that time: All the way he deſired the ſpectators to pray for him, and ſo arriuing on the Scaffold, he vailed his Hat, and with obeyſance vnto the Lords, to this effect he ſpake, viz.

T. Mont. W. Barlow.

His confeſſion.

My Lords, and you my Chriſtian brethren, who are to be witneſſes of this my laſt puniſhment, I confeſſe to the glorye of G O D, that I am a moſt wretched ſinner, and that my ſinnes are more in number then the hayres of my head, I confeſſe that I haue beſtowed my youth in wantonneſſe, luſt, and vncleannéſſe, that I haue béene puffed vppe with pride, vanitie, and loue of this worlds pleaſures, And that notwithſtanding diuerſe good motions inſpired into me from the ſpirite of God; The good which I would, I haue not done, and the euill which I

would

would not, that haue I done. For all which I humbly beseech my Saviour Christ to be a mediator to the eternall Maiestie for my pardon: especially for this my last sinne, this great, this bloudie, this crying, this infectious sinne, whereby so many haue for loue to me béene drawne to offend God, to offend their Soueraigne, to offend the world: I beseech God to forgiue it vs, and to forgiue it me most wretched of all: I beseech her Maiestie, and the state, and Ministers thereof, to forgiue it vs, and I beseech God to send her Maiestie a prosperous raigne and a long, if it be his will: O Lorde graunt her a wise and vnderstanding heart: O Lorde blesse her and the Nobles, and the Ministers of the Church and State. And I beseech you and the world to holde a charitable opinion of me, for my intention toward her Maiestie, whose death I protest I neuer meant, nor violence towards her person: I neuer was, I thanke God Athist, not beleeuing the worde and Scriptures: neyther Papist trusting in mine owne merites, but hope for saluation from God onely, by the mercy and merites of my Saviour Christ Iesus. This faith was I brought vp in, and herein I am now ready to dye; beseeching you all, to ioyne your soules with me in prayer, that my soule may be lifted vp by faith aboue all earthly things in my prayer, for now I will giue my selfe to my priuate prayer: yet for that I beseeche you to ioyne with me, I will speake that you may heare me. And héere as he turned himselfe a-side to put off his Gowne, Doctor Montford requested him to remember to pray to God to forgiue all his enemies, if he had any. To whom he answered, I thanke you for it: and so turning himselfe againe to the Lordes and the rest, he sayde: I desire all the world to forgiue me, euen as I doe freely and from my heart forgiue all the world. Then putting off his Gowne and Ruffe, and presenting himselfe before the blocke, kneeling downe, he was by Doctor Barlow encouraged against the feare of death. To whom he answered; That hauing béene diuerse times in places of daunger, where death was neyther so present, nor yet so certaine, he had felt the weakenesse of the flesh, and therefore now in this great conflict desired God to assist and strengthen him: and so with eyes fixed on heauen, after some passionate pawses, and breathings, he began his prayer in effect following.

His prayer.

O God, Creator of all things, and iudge of all men; thou hast let me know by warrant out of thy word, that Sathan is then most busie when our end is nérest, and that Sathan béing resisted will flée. I humbly beseech thée to assist me in this my last combat: and séeing thou acceptest euen of our desires as of our actes: accept I beseech thée, of my desires to resist him, as of true resistance, and perfect, by thy grace, what thou séest in my flesh to be fraile and weake, giue me patience to beare as becommeth mée, this iust punishment inflicted vppon mée by so honourable a tryall: Graunt mée the inwarde comforte of thy spirite: let thy spirite seale vnto my soule an assurance of thy manifolde mercyes:

lift my ſoule aboue all earthly cogitations: and when my life and body ſhall part, ſend thy bleſſed Angels which may receiue my ſoule, and conuey it to thy ioyes in heauen.

Then concluding his prayer for all Eſtates of the Realme, he ſhut vp all with the Lords prayer, reiterating this petition: Lord Ieſus forgiue vs our treſpaſſes, Lord Ieſus receiue my ſoule. Then deſiring to be informed what was fit for him to doe for diſpoſing himſelfe fitly for the blocke, the Executioner on his knées preſented himſelfe, aſking him forgiueneſſe: to whom the Earle ſayd, I forgiue thée, thou art welcome vnto me, thou art the miniſter of Iuſtice. At which time Doctor Montford requeſted him to rehearſe the Créed, which he did, repeating euery article after the Diuines. So opening and putting off his doublet, he was in a Scarelet Waſſecoate, and then ready to lye downe, he ſaid he would onely ſtretch forth his armes, and ſpread them abroade, for then he was ready: ſo bowing towards the blocke, the Doctors requeſted him to ſaye the two firſt verſes of the 51. Pſalme, which he did: and then inclining his body, he ſayd; In humilitie and obedience to thy commaundement in obedience to thy ordinance, to thy good pleaſure, O God, I proſtrate my ſelfe to my deſerued puniſhment, Lord be mercifull to thy proſtrate ſeruant: ſo lying flatte along on the bordes, and laying downe his head, and fitting it vpon the blocke, ſtretched out his armes, with theſe wordes, which he was requeſted to ſay. Lord into thy hands I commend my ſpirit. His head was ſeuered from his body by the Axe at three ſtroakes, but the firſt deadly and abſolutely depriuing all ſence, and motion. The hangman was beaten, as he returned thence, ſo that the Shiriffes of London were called to aſſiſt and reſcue him from ſuch as would haue murthered him.

Prieſts executed. The xxvii. of Februarie, Marke Bakworth, and Thomas Filcoks Seminary Prieſts, were drawne to Tiborne, and there hanged and quartered, for comming into the Realme contrary to the ſtatute. Alſo the ſame day, and in the ſame place, was hanged a Gentlewoman, called Miſtriſſe Anne Line, a widow, for receiuing a Prieſt contrary to the ſame ſtatute.

A gentlewoman hanged.

One hanged for libelling. The laſt of Februarie, a young man named Woodhouſe was hanged in Smithfield, for ſpeaking and Libelling againſt the Queenes Proclamation, and apprehending of the Earle of Eſſex.

Embaſſadors from Scotland. The 5. of March, the earle of Marre, the Lord of Knyntors, Embaſſadors, and others in commiſſion out of Scotland, came to London and were lodged by the Exchange, in the houſe of Anthony Radcliffe late Alderman.

Merike & Cuffe executed. The 13. of March, ſir Gilley Merike knight, and Henry Cuffe Gentleman, were drawne to Tiborne, the one from the Tower, the other from Newgate, and there hanged, boweled, and quartered, as being actors with the late earle of Eſſex.

Dawuers & Blunt executed. The 18. of March, ſir Charles Dawuers, and ſir Chriſtopher Blunt knights, were vpon a new Scaffold ſet vp for that purpoſe, on the Tower hill, beheaded.

1601. In the moneth of May fiue fifténes were ſeſſed in London, towards ſetting

ting out of Galleys to the seas (as was appointed by the Quéene) and charges about the earle of Esser, when he entered the Citie. Galleys set out.

The 20. of June proclamation was made at London, for deliuerance of prisoners, to serue in the Galleys made at charges of the Citizens.

Two men were set on the Pillory in Fléetstréete, whipped with gaggs in their mouths, and their eares cut off, for attempting to haue robbed a Gentlewoman in Fewter-lane, in the day time, hauing put gaggs in the mouths of the seruants of that house, because they should not crie: one of those théeues was afterwards hanged and quartered at S. Thomas Waterings. Men on the pillory with gaggs in their mouthes.

Gilbert Talbot earle of Shrewesbury, Edward earle of Worcester, and sir Iohn Stanhope, were called to be of the Quéenes councell. Earles of Shrewsbury and Worcester of counsell.

This moneth of June was very colde, frosts euery morning.

In the moneth of July 1000. souldiers were prepared and sent to the low countries, set out at the charges of the Citizens of London, three pound ten shillings a man: more 8000. souldiers were set out by the Shires abrode in the countrie. Souldiers into the low countries.

The 17. of August, Desmond and an other knight, sent out of Ireland, were conueyed to the Tower of London. Desmond brought out of Ireland.

About the 5. of September, certaine noble men, and other of France, to the number of 300. persons, arriued at the Tower-wharfe, the chiefe of them were conueyed in coaches, from thence through the City, into Bishopsgate stréete, and there the principall, namely Marshall de Biron, was lodged in Crosby place, the other néere adioyning in Cornehill. The Duke of Biron & other noble men of France.

The principall noblemen and gentlemen of France were these.

Mounsier Duke of Biron Marshall of France, the kings Lieutenant of the countie of Burgon and Brest.

Mounsier the Prince of Auergne, the kings Lieutenant in Auergne, and Limosen, bastard to Charles of Valois late king of France.

Mounsier Duke of Aumont, knight of the order of the Holy-ghost, marshall of the field, and Captaine of 50. men of armes.

Mounsier, Earle of Pauabene, Lieutenant of the Countie of Poicton and Berie.

Mounsier Earle of Croque, Lieutenant of the Countie Valentinois, Captaine of 50. men of armes.

Mounsier Earle of S. Mary, Gouernour of Roane, and Captaine of the kings guards.

Mounsier earle of Vignolet, Campe-maister and Gentleman of the kings Chamber.

Mounsier earle of Guerson, Marques of S. Pont, and Lieutenant of the country of Bourbon.

Mounsier L. Baron of Biron, brother to the Duke of Biron, Campmaster for the king of 1500. footemen.

Mounsier Baron of Tornes, Cornell of all the horsmen in France.

Mounsier Baron of the signorie, viscount of Peaine, captain of 1200. men.

Mounsier Viscount of Sardigne, a gentleman of the kings chamber.

Mounsier

Mounſier Viſcount of Caſſaneule Gouernour of Cinquanteie.
Mounſier Baron of Ferre, Captaine of 50. men.
Mounſier Baron of Panſack, of Ceane vpon Leire.
Mounſier L. Baron de la Barre, Campmaiſter & Captaine of 1000. men.
Mounſier Baron of Rurdire, Campmaiſter of 1000. men.
Mounſier Baron of Cueſſen, Leiutenant of the towne of Feullirs.
Mounſier Baron of Bullogne.
Mounſier Baron of Maralles.
Mounſier Baron of Delbine.
Mounſier de Verdon gouernour of Barrean.
M. de Fraige.
M. de Stroſſe.
M. de Narnes.
M. de Padameſin.
M. de Gattonois.
M. de Peneſte.
M. de Monplaiger.
} Gentlemen of the Kings Chamber.

Beſides 30. Gentlemen attending the Duke Biron, 8. officers, 3. Pages, and 6. laquies.

Ten Gentlemen for euery Duke, and Earle, 4. officers, 2. Pages, and 3. Laquies.

Six for euery Baron, 3. officers. 1. Page, 2. Laquies.

Euery one of the reſt had 3. ſeruants, and 3. Laquies.

The Queenes Progreſſe into Hamſhire.

The ſayd 5. of September, the Queene in her Progreſſe entered into Hampſhire, and vpon Clicheſter-heathe was receiued by the Shiriffe of that ſhire Frauncis Palmes, accompanied by many Gentlemen of accompt in the ſame ſhire, ſo that her Maieſtie ſayde ſhe was neuer ſo honourably receiued into any ſhire, for as Hampſhire is a countrie pleaſant of ſoile, and full of delights for Princes of this land, who often make their progreſſes thether, ſo is it well inhabited by auncient Gentlemen, ciuilly educated, and who liue in great amitie together. Her maieſtie was that night attended on to Baſing, a houſe of the Lorde Marqueſſe, where ſhe toke ſuch great content, aſwell with the ſeate of the houſe, as honorable cariage of the worthy Lady Lucie Marqueſſe of Winchceſter, that ſhe ſtayd there thirteene dayes, to the great charge of the ſaid Lord Marqueſſe. The 4. day after the Queens comming to Baſing, the ſaid Shiriffe was commanded to attend the duke of Biron at his comming into that country: whereupon the next day being the 11. of September, he went towards Black-water, being the vttermoſt confines of that ſhire, towards London, and there met the ſaid Duke, accompanied with aboue 11. of the nobilitie of France, and attended on with about 400. Frenchmen, who were met by George earle of Cumberland, & by him conducted frō London into Hāpſhire. The ſaid duke was that night brought to the Vine, a faire & large houſe of the L. Sands, which houſe was furniſhed with hangings & plate from the Tower, & Hampton-court, and with 7. feare beds, and furniture thereto belonging, which the willing & obedient people

of

of the country of South-hampton vpon two dayes warning had brought in thether to lend the Quéene. The duke abode there 4. or 5. dayes, all at the Quéens charges, & spent her more at the Vine, then her owne court for that time spent at Basen. During her abode there, her maiestie went to him to the Vine, and he to her to Basen, & one day he attended her at Basen-parke on hunting, where the duke staied her comming, and did there see her in such royaltie and so attended on by the nobility, so costly furnished, and mounted, as the like had seldome bin séene: but when she came to the place where the duke staied, the said shiriffe (as the maner is, being bare-headed, & riding next before her, staied his horse, thinking the Quéene would then haue saluted the duke, whereat the Quéene béeing much offended, commanded the shiriffe to go on: the duke following her very humbly bowing low towards his horse maine, with his cap off, about xx. yardes, her maiestie on the sudden toke off her maske, looked back vpon him, & most gratiously and courteously saluted him, as holding it not beséeming so mighty a Prince as she was, & who so wel knew all kingly maiestie, to make her stay directly against a subiect, before he had shewed his obedience in following after her. She tarried at Basen xiii. dayes as is aforesaid, being very well contented with all things there done: affirming she had done that in Hampshire that none of her auncestors euer did, neither that any Prince of Christendom could doe: that was, she had in her prograce, in her subiects houses, entertained a royall Embassador, & had royally entertained him. At her departure from Basen, being the xviii. of September, she made x. knights (hauing neuer in all her raigne made at one time so many before) whose names were, sir Edward Citsell second sonne to the Lord Burley: sir Edward Hungerford, next heyre to the L. Hungerford: sir Edward Bainton of Wiltshire: sir William Kingsmill: sir Frauncis Palmes then shiriffe of the shire: sir Beniamin Tichbourne: sir Hamden Paulet: sir Richard Norton of Hamp-shire: sir Frauncis Stoner of Oxford-shire: and sir Edmond Lutlow of Wiltshire. That day she went frō Basen toward Farnham, a Castle belonging to the sea of Winchester, néere vnto which towne the shiriffe of Hampshire toke his leaue, and the shiriffe of Surrey met her: but the shiriffe of Hampshire, & the gentlemen of that country went to Farnham by command, and there attended the next day, where they were feasted and kindly entertained by the learned Prelate doctor Bilson Bishop of Winchester, vpon whose onely commendation, two auncient & worthy gentlemen of Hampshire, sir Richard Mill, and sir William Vdall, receiued there the dignity of Knighthood. And thus much for that prograce to be noted.

Words of the queene at Basen.

Knights made at Basen.

About the xiii. of October, 400. souldiers were sent out of the Citie of London towards Ireland.

Souldiers sent into Ireland.

The xiii. of Nouember, the Lady Mary Ramsey, widow to sir Thomas Ramsey, sometime Mayor of London, was buried in the parish Church or Hospitall of Christs-Church by Newgate market. A charitable doale or almes, was giuen for her on the same day in the afternoone at the Leaden-hall, where xviii. poore and weake people were among the sturdie beggars, crushed and troden to death.

xviii. poore people crushed to death.

Ann. reg. 44.

The

Parliament dissolued.

The nineteenth of December after the graunting of foure great subsidies, and 8. fifteenes, the Parliament was dissolued.

Lightning & thunder at Christmas.

Lightning and thunder oftentimes before Christmas, and in Christmas holydayes, and an earthquake at London on Christmas eeue at noone.

Victories in Ireland.

Of the late long warres in Ireland vnder the earle of Esser, and then the Lord Moniop, generals, haue I hetherto receiued small intelligence, worthy the noting, and therefore in this place I thinke good to set downe the copie of a letter, from a souldier of good place in Ireland, to his friend in London, touching the notable victory of her Maiesties forces there, against the Spaniards and Irish rebels, and of the yeelding vp of Kynsale, and other places there held by the Spaniards, dedicated to sir W. D. Knight.

Sir in my last of the 19. of December, I wrote to you at large of the arriuall of the new supply of Spaniards at Castel-hauen, Baltemore, & Beerhauen, and of their intents and beginnings to fortifie, in all those three important places. Likewise that sir Richard Leuison towing out of Kinsale-Hauen against winde & weather, fought with them within Castle Hauen most valiantly, and of their ships being fire, sunke and made vnserueiceable fiue: the men being most landed before he could come to them, by reason of the weather, and beating vpon him very dangerously from the land with their ordinance. That they were said to be 2000. in number, with great store of ordinance and munition, & that as they reported, some thousands moe were comming after. That a great part of the Irishry of Munster becommen rebels of new, were reuolted to them, and receiued into the King of Spaines pay. That Odonell with good forces of horse and foote out of the North, by the benefit of the then extreame and sudden frost, gat passage almost vnlooked for by himselfe, and slipping by the Lord President of Munster (who was sent to impeach him) with such forces as could be spared from the Army) was ioyned with them. That Tyrone, with Orourck, Redman Bourck, Mac Guyre, Mac Mahone, Randal Mac Surley, Oconor, Slygoes brother, Tyrrel, the Baron of Lixenho, and the rest of the olde fugitiue Rebels of Munster, with the greatest and choisest force that was euer amassed in Ireland, were drawne neere our Campe. And that these all, together with fiue ensignes of those newly arriued Spaniards, in all to the number of 6000. foote, and 500. horse, by Powle, were on foote ready to march towards Kynsale and our Campe, with intent and most assured confident hope with helpe of them in the Towne, which should haue salyed out on the campe, vpon the attempt of Tyrone and Odonell, and were aboue 2000. Spaniards, almost all old souldiers, aswell to releeue and rescue the Towne, as to remoue our siege, and vtterly to breake, dishonour, and defeate vs. And truely Sir when I did then consider, on the one side this great strenght, the newly ioyned men and horses to bee all fresh, bigorous, and strong, hauing all the country open to them, abounding with victuals, forrages, armies, munition, and all furnitures: those in the Towne, the most of them experienced souldiers, well armed, and in no such want as was supposed: On the other side, our

men

men in numbers scant equall to them, all almost tyred and wearied out with the miserie of a long Winters siege, our horses decayed, leane and very weake, our best meanes of victuals and forrage likely to bee cut from vs, with many other impediments whereof I speake not; When I say, I well waged and pondred with my selfe these points, and laide together withall, this one of great importance, that when we should be forced (as it was likely) to answere two forces at once, one from the Towne, another without, a great part of our men were like enough to shrinke, or at least not to sticke firmely to vs, (which by good conjectures I could make probable to you). Blame me not, if vpon these considerations I wrote to you then somewhat distrustfully of our estate, as taking indeed our liues and honors, this service, and by consequence this whole Country likely to be put to an vnequall iumpe. And so may I well say they were, although by the goodnesse of God especially, & by the most vigilant circumspection and valiant prowes of our worthy Generall, things out of these difficulties haue now forted to so happy successe, as by that which followeth you shall sufficiently perceiue. To continue therefore my accustomed Relation to you, and to begin from that saide day of the 19. of December, It may please you to knowe, that on Sunday the 20. we still plying our attempts to the Towne, with face and shew as though we nothing cared for Tyrone and his company, at night certaine intelligence was brought vs, that he would be the next night within a mile and a halfe of vs, withall the aboue recited Forces. And accordingly vpon Munday the 21. towards night, he shewed himselfe with most part of his horse and foote, on a hill betweene our Campe and Corke, a myle off vs. At which time seeing two Regiments of our foote, and some horse drawne out of our Campe, and making a resolute march towards him, he fell backe to the other side of the hill, where he encamped that night strengthened with a fastnesse of wood and water. Whereby though his retire might be imputed to some touch of credite, yet had hee this aduantage, that he might keepe from our Armie all passages and meanes for forrage: The other side ouer the Riuer of Ownibuoye being wholy at his disposition, by reason of the generall reuolt of those parts.

On Tuesday the 22. some of Tyrones horse and foote made shewe againe in the place where they had done the day before, and that night were some of their horse, and 500. foote discouered, searching if they might finde fit way to the towne.

On Wednesday the 23. aswell by intelligence otherwise as by letters of Don Iohn d'l Aquila, Generall of the Spaniards, and Captaine of the Towne newly intercepted, we found that he had importuned Tyrone and his company very much, to giue an attempt vpon our Campe; intimating vnto them his owne necessitie, and likelyhood to be shortly forced within the Towne, their faithfull promises to succour him; the facilitie and vndoubted successe of the enterprise, he assuring them, that our numbers could not be but much lessened, and those that were remaining, greatly decayed and weakened with the long winter siege, so that it was not possible we should

be

be able to maintaine so much ground as we had taken when our strength was full, if they on the one side, and he on the other put vs well too it: which he for his part promised them assuredly to doo very soundly from the Towne, whensoeuer they should thinke fit to doo the like from their Campe. And it seemeth that vpon this aduise they tooke their determinate resolution for this course, and to put it in execution with all speed, either that night or the next at the furthest. Those of the towne in the meane time gaue vs alarums, made Sallies, and did by all meanes what they could to keepe our men in continuall trauell, that they might be the lesse able for resistance when this attempt should come to be performed. The Lord Deputie till now applyed himselfe in show wholy towards the Towne, but indeed not meaning any forceable effectuall attempt vpon it, til he saw what would become of Tyrone and his forces: And therefore had an especiall eye, by continuall espiall, vpon his mooings, and lest suddaine hurt should be taken from him, or the towne, if both he without, and they within should inuade at once, he made Fortes and Barracadoes, heightned the ditches, deepened the Trenches, stopped & strengthened all the Auenues to the Towne, had the whole Armie in a readinesse vpon euery suddaine warning, and kept strong and watchfull guards alwayes in all places. And now late in the night of this Wednesday, the three and twentith day, being assuredly enfourmed of their intent of attempt vpon his Campe that night, or the morrow after, his Lordship gaue order to strengthen the ordinary guardes, and to put the rest of his Army in readinesse, but not as yet into Armes: commaunding that the Regiment volant, which was a squadron of viii. Companies of foote, selected out of all the olde Bands, conducted by sir Hen. Poore, and appointed to be alwayes in a readines to answere all Alarames, and therefore exempted from all other duties, should draw out beyond the west part of the Campe, and there stand in Armes, not farre from the maine guard of horse.

A little before the breake of day, sir Ric. Greame, who had the guard of horse that night, sent the Lo. Deputie word, that the scouts had discouered the rebels matches in great numbers, whereupon his Lo. caused the armie presently to arme, and 300. choise men to be drawne out of the quarter, where the Earle of Thomond and three other Regiments lay, to make stand betweene that quarter and the Fort vpon the west-hill, himselfe with Sir George Carew, Lo President of Munster, Sir Richard Wingfield, marshall of Ireland, aduanced forward towards the scout, and hauing giuen order to sir Hen. Dauers Lieutenant generall of the horse, for the ordering of those troopes, sent the Marshall, to take view of the Enemy, who sent worde he was aduanced horse and foote neere the top of the hill, where the Earle of Thomond first quartered, within lesse then two Musket shotte of the towne. Whereupon the Lord deputie calling to him sir Oliuer Lambert Gouernor of Connaught, who beeing there without Charge, was commaunded to attend his Lo that day, made choise of a peece of ground betweene that and the towne, of good aduantage, both to embattell, and fight, as hauing on the back a Trench drawne from the Earle of Thomond's quarter, and so secured from

the

the Towne: And on the front, a boggish glyn passable with horse onely at one ford: The ground whereon the enemy must haue drawne in grosse to force the passage flanckfered from the earles quarter by the Canon, and situate in the midst of all our Forces, and returned word to the Marshall, that in that place he was resolued to giue the enemy battell, if hée came forward: commaunding further, the Regiment of Sir H. Folyat and three old Companies of the Regiment of Sir Oliuer Saint-Iohn to bée brought thither, the rest of the Army being already in Armes, together with fiue hundred Seamen, brought by Sir Richard Leueson to attend, when, and what, he should commaund.

But Tirone, whose meaning ouer night, was, to haue béene with vs before day, and as we since learned, to haue put all the Spaniards into the Towne, with eight hundred of the best Irish vnder Tirrell, séeing it now faire day light, and discouering the Marshall and Sir Hen. Dauers to be aduanced with all the horse and Sir Hen. Poer with his Regiment stopt at the foote of the hill, and anon, thinking it to bée no day for him, retired the troopes he had aduanced againe, to the body of his Armie beyond the Ford. Presently the Marshall sent the Lord Deputie word, that the enemy retired in some disorder, whereupon his Lo: commanding the forenamed troopes to follow him with all spéed, aduanced himselfe into the head of all, to sée with his owne eye, the maner of the enemy, and in what sort thereupon he might determine to proceede. But before he could, either well view, or direct, a violent storme, during some quarter of an houer, gaue the enemy opportunitie, not yet perfectly discouered, to drawe off ouer a plaine in three great bodyes of foote, all their horse in the Rere, and the wings with all their other lose men fallen vp into the head. Which the L. Deputie, the day now clearing, perceiuing and discouering, by this their disorderly March, that they were in feare, being certified also, that there was not before them any place of good aduantage to make head on, as those they had passed and quited, resolued to follow, and to sée what profit might be made of an enemy thus troublesly retiring. Wherupon dispatching presently Sir Geo. Carew, Lo. President of Munster with three cornets of horse-backe to the Campe, to attend there against the Towne, and whatsoeuer other attempt, because he was to be the fittest Commaunder in his Lo. absence, and because there had otherwise no horses bene left in the Campe, himselfe hauing with him, in al, betwéene three and foure hundred horse, and vnder 1200. foot, made after the Enemy. And aduancing some mile further on, pressed him so hard, that hée was forced to stand firme in three bodies vpon a forde of a bogge (which bogge to assaile them, wée must of necessity passe) and in all apparance, with a Resolution there to abide vs and fight. They maintained a good skirmith on our side the Bogge, with their lose wings, newly drawne out of their bodies; and hurt some of our men and horses, till with our wings they were at length beaten backe.

The Marshall beeing somwhat aduanced, espied a Ford, a musket shot off on the left hand, neglected by their foote, and onely guarded by their horse:

horſe: whereof aduertiſing the Lord Deputy, with deſire of leaue to force them that way: the Lord Deputy approuing it, and commaunding to draw vp the foote with all expedition, the firſt wings of foote once arriued, ſeconded with ſir Henry Poers regiment, the Marſhall, with the Earle of Clanricard, who neuer ceaſed vrging to fight, taking with them ſir Richard Greame, and other companies of horſe: with them, and thoſe foote, forcing the enemies horſe that kept the paſſage, paſſed ouer, and with that aduantage, finding themſelues ſide by ſide with the enemies battell, and further on then their rere, charged their battell in flanke, but finding them to ſtand firme, wheeled about. At which the enemies taking courage, drew on their horſe, with a cry to a charge, who came on brauely within fiftie or ſixtie paces of our horſe, and there after their country faſhion ſtopped, ſhaking their ſtaues, and railingly vaunting, but durſt charge no further. Which the Lord Deputy ſeeing, ſent preſently ouer the Fourde to them his owne cornet of horſe, vnder ſir William Godolphin, and the Lord Preſidents cornet vnder Captaine Minſhow, (which two cornets he had appointed before, to keepe ſtill a groſſe in the Rere, to anſwer all accidents) together with two of our three bodies of foote vnder ſir Iohn Barkeley Seriant maior of the Campe. Whereupon the Marſhall and Earle of Clanrickard ſeeing a ſecond at hand, vniting themſelues with ſir Henrie Dauers: hauing with him Captaine Taffe, Captaine Flemming, and other companies of horſe, charged againe the Enemies horſe, who not abiding the ſhocke, fled. At the ſight whereof, the battell diſmaying, our men thought it better to charge againe vpon them, then to follow the horſe, and ſo couragiouſly doing, vtterly brake them. The rereward of the enemie in which was Tyrrell, and all the Spaniards, ſtood firme vpon the bogge on the right hand, vnto whom, within caliuer ſhot, the Lord Deputie had drawne vp our Rere, which was Sir Oliuer Saint Iohns 3. companies, commanded by Captaine Roe in abſence of ſir Oliuer, (diſpatched few dayes before by the Lord Deputie, and Counſaile, for ſpeciall affaires to her Maieſty) charging him firſt, not to ſtir, till he receiued direction from him. But ſeeing Tirell, and the Spaniards drawing betweene our horſe, beeing on the execution, and the bodies of our foote, his Lordſhip hauing hitherto, by direction, ſet all other mens ſwords on worke, himſelfe now in the head of our ſaid Rere, where he had before reſolued to fight, charged the Enemy in flancke, and put them to a diſorderly retreate after their fellowes to the top of the next hill, where they made ſtand a little while. But the Iriſh quitting the Spaniards, the Spaniards in ſhort time were broken by the Lord Deputies horſe, commaunded by ſir William Godolphin, and moſt of them ſlaine. The vantgarde of the Enemy, with all the loſe wings, which were many ſeeing what happened, threw away their armes (and all our men being otherwiſe buſie) eſcaped. The chiefe Commaunder of the Spaniards, Don Alonſo d'Ocampo was taken priſoner, with three Captaines, ſixe Alferez, and fortie ſouldiers. Tirone, and Odonell, with the reſt of the Iriſh Lords ran apace, and ſaued themſelues. Thoſe of the battell were almoſt all ſlaine, and there were (of the Iriſh Rebelles onely) found dead in the place,

about

about twelue hundred bodies, and about eight hundred were hurt, whereof many dyed that night: and the chace continuing almost two miles, was left off, our men beeing tyred with killing. The Enemy lost two thousand Armes brought to reckning, besides great numbers imbezeled, all their powder and drummes, and ix. enligns, whereof ó. Spanish. Those of the Irish that were taken prisoners, being brought to the Campe, though they offered ransome, were all hanged. On our side, onely one man was slaine, the Cornet of the sir Richard Greame. sir Henry Dauers was hurt with a sword slightly: sir William Godolphin a little raced on the thigh with a holbert, Captaine Crofts the Skowt-maister with a shot in the back, and not aboue fiue moe common souldiers hurt. Many of our horses were killed, and moe hurt. And thus were they vtterly ouerthrowne, who but the very night before, were so braue and confident of their owne good successe, as that they reckoned vs already theirs, and as wée since haue vnderstood, were in contention whose prisoner the Lord Deputy should bée, whose the Lorde President, and so of the rest. The Earle of Clanrickard carried himselfe this day very valiantly, and after the retreite sounded, was knighted by the Lorde Deputy, in the field amongst the dead bodies. So did all the rest of the Captaines, Officers, and Souldiers, named and vnnamed, and especially the Lo. Deputy himselfe, who brake, in person, vpon the stoure of the army the Spaniards, and omitted no duety of a wise diligent Conductor and valiant souldier. Vpon the fight ended, hée presently called together the Army and with prayers, gaue God thankes for the victorie, A victorie indéede giuen by the God of Hostes, and marueilous in our eyes, if all circumstances be duely considered, and of such consequence for the preseruation and assurance to her Maiestie, of this déepely endangered kingdome, as I leaue to wiser consideration, contenting my selfe with this, that I sée the God of power and might, disposed to protect the iust cause of his seruaunt, our gratious Quéene Elizabeth, against the pride, malice, and powerfull disdaine of the greatest potentates, hir enemies. To him be the glorie. 1200. Irish slaine.

After this glorious victorie thus valiantly atchieued, the Lord Deputy the same day hasted to his campe, lest any thing (in his absence) might happely haue béene attempted there. But, not finding the Enemy to haue made any sally, which indéede had béene but vaine for him, considering the small fruit hée reaped by them heretofore, euery one that he made hitherto redounding still to his owne detriment and losse, and euery place of our Camp, at this time, being so well and sufficiently strengthened and prouided for against him as is sayd before.

The next day his Lordship commaunded Captaine Bodlegh Trenchmaister generall of the Campe, who as well in the fight, as in the workes, had deserued speciall commendation, to sée the formerly begunne Forte and platforms, to be vndertaken againe, and nérer approches to bée cast out towardes the towne. But after fiue or sixe dayes labour Don Iohn'd IAquila, captaine of the Towne and Forces within, offered a parlée, sending the Drumme maior of the Towne with a sealed letter to the Lord Deputy, by

which he required, that some gentleman of speciall trust and sufficiencie might be sent into the towne from his Lordship, to conferre with him, whom he would acquaint with such conditions, as he then stood vpon. His request being assented vnto by his lordship, sir William Godolphin was imployed in the negotiation, which was carried in this sorte, word for word, as it is taken out of the originalls here, viz.

Don Iohn tolde sir William, that hauing found the Lord Deputy (whom he termed the Viceroy) although a sharpe and powerfull, yet an honorable enemy, & the Irish not onely weake and barbarous, but (as he feared) perfidious friends, he was so farre in his affections reconciled to the one, and distasted with the other, as did inuite him to make an ouerture of such a composition as might be safe and profitable for the state of England, with least prejudice to the crowne of Spaine, by deliuering into the Viceroy his power, the Towne of Kynsale, with all other places in Ireland, held by the Spanish, so as they might depart on honorable termes, sitting such men of warre, as are not (by necessity) inforced to receiue conditions, but willingly induced, for sundry respects to dis-ingage themselues, and to relinquish a people, by whom their King and Master had béene so notoriously abused, (if not betrayed) That if the Viceroy liked to entertaine further parley touching this point, he would first be pleased to vnderstand them rightly, and to make his propositions such as might be sutable, to men thoroughly resolued, rather to bury themselues aliue, and to endure a thousand deaths, then to giue way to one Article of accord, that should taste of basenes or dishonour, being so confident of their present strength, and the royall Second of Spaine, that they should make no doubt of yéelding good accompt of themselues and their Interest in this kingdome, but that a full disdaine, and spléne conceiued against the nation, dissuaded them from béeing further engaged for it, then of force they must, sir William Godolphin being commaunded by the Lord Deputie onely, to receiue Don Iohns propositions and demaunds. Hauing made his Lords and Counsell this Relation, was by them returned with the answere following. That howbeit the Lord Deputie hauing lately defeated their succours, did so well vnderstand his owne strength and their weakenesse as made him nothing doubt of forcing them within a short time, whom he did know to be pressed with vnresistable difficulties, how much soeuer they laboured to couer and conceale the same, yet knowing that her sacred Maiestie out of her gracious and mercifull disposition would esteéme the glory of her victorie to be blemished by a voluntary effusion, and an obstinate expence of Christian bloud, was content to entertaine this offer of agréement, so as it might be concluded, vnder such honorable articles for her highnesse as the aduantage she had against them gaue reason to demaund: being the same which are set downe in the Articles of agréement following, signed by the Lord Deputie, and Don Iohn and others: sauing that there was in them besides the leauing of his treasure, munition, artillery, and the Quéenes naturall Subiects to her disposition, all which points he did peremptorely refuse, with constant asseueration that both he and all his would

rather

rather indure the last of misery, then be found guilty of so foule a Treason against the honour of his Prince, and the reputation of his profession, though he should finde himselfe vnable to subsist, much more now, when he might not onely hope to sustaine the burden of the warre for a time, but with patience and constancie in the end to ouercome it. That he tooke it so ill, to bee misunderstood in hauing Articles of that nature propounded vnto him, as were they but once againe remembred in the Capitulation, the Viceroy should from thencefoorth vse the aduantage of his sword, and not the benefite of his former offers: adding, that the Viceroy might rather thinke to haue made a good and profitable purchase for the Crowne of England, if with the expence of 200000. Duckats he had procured Don Iohn to quite his interest and footing but in Baltymore alone, to say nothing of Kynsale, Castell-hauen, and Bérehauen: for (said he) suppose that all we with the rest of our places here had perished, yet would that Pen Insula (béeing strong in it owne nature, bettered by our art & industry, prouided as it is of victuals, munition, and good store of Artillerie) preserue vnto the King of Spaine a safe and commodious port for the arriuall of his Fléet, and be able to maintaine it selfe against a land Armie of ten thousand, vntill Spaine (béeing so déeply engaged) did in honour releéue them: which would drawe on a more powerfull inuasion then the first, being vndertaken vpon false grounds, at the instance of a base and barbarous people, who in discouering their weakenesse and want of power, haue armed the King my maister to relye vpon his owne strength, béeing tyed in honour to releéue his people that are engaged, and to cancell the memory of our former disaster.

But this was spoken (sayd he) in case the Viceroy were able to force this towne, as I assure my selfe he cannot, hauing vpon mine Honour within these walles at this instant, aboue two thousand fighting men, that are strong and able, besides those, which hauing béene sick and hurt, recouer dayly: the greatest part of these, composed of olde Souldiers, which fall not but by the sword, and those that were new, béeing now both trayned to their Armes, and growne acquainted with the Climate, are more able to endure then at the first: our meanes as good as they haue béene any times these two moneths, such as the Spanyardes can well awape with all, and thereof to suffice vs for three moneths more. Wée lodge in good warme houses, haue store of munition, and (which is best of all) stande well assured that our succoures will bée shortlye heere. To bée playne, wée preserue our men, and reserue our strength the best wée may, hoping to front you in a breach, which if our hearts faple vs not, wée haue handes and breasts enough to stoppe against treble your forces: though I will giue the Viceroy this right, That his men are passing good, but spent and tyred out with the misery of a Winter-siege, which he hath obstinately maintained beyond my expectation, but with such caution, and vpon so good guard, as hauing nicely watched all aduantages, I could neuer fasten a Sallie yet vpon him, but with losse to my selfe: wherein I must acknowledge my hopes deceaued,

that grounding on ſome errour in his approches, promiſed my ſelfe the defeate of at leaſt a thouſand men at one blowe. But when we méte on the breach, I am confident on good reaſon, to lay fiue hundred of your beſt men on the earth, and reſt hopefull that the loſſe of thoſe will make a great hole in an armie that hath already ſuffred ſo much extremitie.

But to conclude our buſineſſe, the king my Maſter ſent me to aſſiſt the Condées, Oneale & Odonnell, preſuming on their promiſe, that I ſhould haue ioyned with them within few dayes of the arriuall of his forces. I expected long in vaine, ſuſtained the Viceroyes Armie, ſaw them drawne to the greateſt head they could poſſibly make, lodged within two myles of Kynſale, reenforced with certaine companies of Spaniards, euery houre promiſing to relœue vs, and béeing ioyned together to force your campes, ſawe them at laſt broken with a handfull of men, blowne a ſunder into diuers parts of the world, Odonnell into Spaine, Oneale to the furtheſt of the North, ſo as now I finde no ſuch Condées in rerum natura (for thoſe were the very words he vſed) as I came to ioyne withall, and therefore haue moued this accord, the rather to diſingage the king my Maiſter from aſſiſting a people ſo vnable in themſelues, that the whole burden of the warre muſt lye vpon him, and ſo perfidious as perhaps might be induced in acquitall of his fauour, at laſt to betray him. Vpon relation made by Sir William Godolphin to the Lord Deputie and Councell, of theſe offers of Don Iohn, which at ſeuerall conferences had béene brought to ſuch heads, as are ſpoken of before: it was thought good, for diuerſe important reaſons, to procéede roundly to the agrément. For whereas in the propoſitions by him made, there was not any thing that admitted exceptions on our part, but onely, that he required to carry with him his ordinance, munition, and treaſure, that béeing no way preiudiciall to the maine ſcope or drift of our Treatie, which chiefely reſpected the common good and ſafetie of the kingdome, deſerued not almoſt to be thought vpon. Beſides that, the Treaſure béeing at the firſt but a hundred thouſand Duckats, with foure moneths paiment of ſo many men, and other neceſſary deductions, could not but be very néere waſted; and that little remainder, more fit for a prey to the poore ſouldiour, after his tedious trauell, than for a clauſe in the compoſition. Furthermore, how néedfull it was to embrace this accord, may clearely be ſéene by whoſoeuer conſidereth the ſtate of our Armie, almoſt vtterly tyred: how full of daunger and difficultie it was to attempt a breach defended by ſo many hands: how long time it might haue coſt vs, if we had lodged in the Breach, before we could haue carried the Towne, it béeing full of ſtrong caſtles: how her Maieſties ſhips and others lying in the harbour, ſhould haue béene forced ſpéedily to forſake vs for want of victuals: how by a long contrarietie of winds, our ſelues were not prouided for aboue fiue dayes, at the time of this parley, though within fewe dayes after good ſtore arriued: it béeing indéed worthy of obſeruation, that by her Maieſties great care, and the diligence of her miniſters, ſo good prouidence was vſed, as though this deſcent of Spaniards drew into that quarter all the forces of the kingdome which could be ſpared, all which were onely to

line

liue by prouision out of England; notwithstanding all the difficulties of transportation, in so vnseasonable a time, no notorious wants were found in the Armie, but that which is vnseperable from a Winter siege, in that Climate: that we had neither munition nor Artillerie left but for one batterie in one place at once, fiue of our péces béeing before crazed: and finally, that if we had missed of our purpose, the whole countrey had béene hazarded. Furthermore, that which séemeth of greatest consequence to induce his Lordship to this agrément, was: That the Spaniards in Baltymore, Castlehauen and Béere hauen, by vertue of this contract, were likewise to surrender those places, and depart the countrey, which would haue proued a matter of more difficultie, and haue drawne on a long warre in a corrupted kingdome, to rote them out, béeing strongly fortified and well stored with victuals, munition, and artillerie, for that of necessitie the Armie for some space, must haue rested, and in the end haue béene constrained after a new supply of all necessaries, to her Maiesties intollerable charge, to transport themselues thither by sea, the way by land being altogether vnpassable. In which time, their succours out of Spaine in all likelyhood, would haue béene come vnto them, the king béeing so farre ingaged in his honour to second his enterprise, and we barred of that prosecution of the Rebels, which now by this agrément we may wholy entend.

The Treatie therefore was thus concluded, as by the Articles ensuing, signed on both parts, appeareth.

Mountioye.

IN the towne of Kynsale, in the kingdome of Ireland, the second day of the month of January 1601. betwéene the noble Lords, the Lord Mountioye, Lord Deputie, and Generall in the kingdome of Ireland, for her Maiesty the Quéene of England, and Don Iohn d'L Aquila, Captaine and Campe-maister, Generall and Gouernour of the Armie of his Maiestie the king of Spaine, the said Lord Deputie being encamped, & besieging the said towne, and the said Don Iohn within it, for iust respects, and to auoyde shedding of blood, these conditions following were made betwéene the said Lords Generals, and their campes, with the Articles which follow.

First, That the said Don Iohn d'L Aquila shall quit the places which he holds in this kingdome as well of the towne of Kynsale, as those which are held by the souldiers vnder his commaund in Castle hauen, Baltymore, and in the castle at Béerhauen, and other parts, to the sayde Lord Deputie, or to whom he shall appoint: giuing him safe transportation, and sufficient for the said people, of Ships and victuals, with the which the sayd Don Iohn with them may go for Spaine, if he can at one time, if not, in two shippings.

Item that the Souldiers at this present being vnder the commaund of Don Iohn, in this Kingdome, shall not beare armes against her Maiestie the Queene of England, whersoeuer supplies shall come from Spaine, till the said souldiers be vnshipped in some of the Ports of Spaine, being dispatched as soone as may be by the Lord Deputie, as hee promiseth vpon his faith and honor.

For the accomplishing whereof the Lord Deputie offereth to giue safe passeport to the said Don Iohn and his army, aswell Spaniards as other nations whatsoeuer that are vnder his commaund, and that he may depart withall the things he hath, Armes, Munitions, Money, Enfignes displaied, Artillery & other whatsoeuer prouisions of warre, and any kind of stuffe, aswell that which is in Castlehauen, as Kynsale and other parts.

Item that they shall haue ships and victuals sufficient for their money, according and at the prices which here they vse to giue. That all the people and the said things may be shipped if it be possible at one time, if not, at two: and that to be within the time aboue named.

Item that if by contrary windes or by any other occasions there shall arriue at any Port of these Kingdomes of Ireland or England, any shippes of these in which the said men goe, they be entreated as friends, and may ride safely in the harbor, and be victualed for their money, and haue moreouer thinges which they shall neede to furnish them to their voyage.

Item, during the time that they shall stay for shipping, victuals shalbe giuen to Don Iohns people, at iust and reasonable rates.

Item, that of both parts shalbe cessation of armes, and security that no wrong be offered any one.

Item, That the Ships in which they shall goe for Spaine may passe safely by any other Shippes whatsoeuer of her Maiesty the Queene of England, and so shall they of the said Queene and her Subiects by those that shall goe from hence: and the sayde Shippes being arriued in Spaine, shall returne assone as they haue vnshipped their men without any impediment giuen them by his Maiesty, or any other person in his name, but rather they shall shew them fauour, and helpe them if they neede any thing, and for security of this, they shall giue into the Lord Deputies hands, three Captaines such as he shall chuse.

For the security of the performance of these Articles, Don Iohn offereth that hee will confirme and sweare to accomplish this Agreement: and likewise some of the Captaines of his charge shall sweare and confirme the same in a seuerall writing.

Item

Item that hee in person shall abide in this Kingdome where the Lord Deputy shall appoint till the last shipping vpon his Lordshippes word: and if it happen that his people be shipped all at once, the saide Don Iohn shall goe in the same Fleete without any Impediment giuen him. But rather the Lord Deputie shall giue a good Shippe in which he may goe, and if his said men be sent in two shippings, then he shall goe in the last.

And in like sort the said Lord Deputie shall sweare and confirme, & giue his word in the behalfe of her Maiesty the Queene and his owne, to keepe and accomplish this Agreement, and ioyntly the Lord President, the Lord Marshall of the Campe, and thother of the councell of State, and the Earles of Thomond and Clanrycard shall sweare and confirme the same in a seuerall writing.

George Carew.
Thomond.
Clanrikard.
R. Wingfeild.
Ro. Gardemor.
Geo. Bourcher.
Rich. Lieuson.

I Promise and sweare to accomplish and keepe these Articles of Agreement, and promise the same likewise on the behalfe of his Maiestie Catholique the Kinge my Maister,

Don Iohn d'l Aquila.

And so is this troubled cloud, of most likely perillous danger for this time dissolued, to her Maiesties most singuler renowne; Not so much for the glory of the euent, as for her owne Magnanimity and Princely resolution, to leaue nothing vndone which might preserue that Crowne, how deare soeuer it cost her; to the great honour of our generall, Leaders, and Souldiers by land and Sea actors therein, who, if it be well considered, that after the Enemies arriuall xviii. September, it was xvi. October before they could get all things ready to sit downe nere the Towne: xxix. October before their Ordinance could play, And that by i. Nouember. they had gotten Ricorren castle, And then vj. Nouember were driuen shrewdly to diminish their strength by sending the L. President from them with two Regiments of foote and 325 horses against Odonell, That he returned not till xvi. Nouember, his Companies 26. And then that the Supplies of Spaine were landed. That the most of our shipping that did vs special seruice were gone towards them, that Odonell was already come, Tyron shortly after and xx December all in sight: 4. beaten: That xxvij December the Parley begunne, ij. Ianuarie the Articles were sworne: ix. the Towne yelded. &c.

The xviii. of January at night, bone-fiers were made at London, with ringing and otherwise reioysing, for the newes out of Ireland, the victory of our English-men obteyned there, as is before declared.

1602. Execution. The moneths of February, and March warme, and dry this yeare.

The xviii. of Aprill Peter Bullocke Stationer, and one named Ducket, for printing of bookes offensiue, were hanged at Teyborne.

Seminaries executed. The xx. of Aprill, Stichborne, W. Kenson, and Iames Page, Seminarie Priests, were drawne to Teyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered, for comming into this Realme, contrary to ỹ Statute of Anno 27. &c.

Souldiers sent into the Low countries. In the moneth of May great pressing out of Souldiers was made about London, to be sent into the Low countries.

A man lost his eares. The xii. of May, a man was set on the Pillorie, and lost one of his eares at Westminster, and the other at Chauncerie lanes end, by the new Temple, for giuing false witnesse and false othe in an inditement against an other.

Lady Walsingham deceased. The xix. of June, the Lady Walsingham widow to sir Frauncis Walsingham late Secretary, deceased at Barne-Elmes in the countie of Surrey, and was the night next following buryed at London, in the Cathedrall Church of S. Paule, by her late husband: likewise secretly without any funerall pompe or solemnitie.

Proclamation against late buildings and Inmates. The xxii of June Proclamation was made for the pulling downe of late builded houses, and voyding of Inmates in the Cities of London, and Westminster, and for the space of three miles distant of both those Cities, but little was done, and small effect followed, more then of other the like Proclamations before time made, and also an acte of Parliament to that purpose: these Cities are still increased in buildings of Cottages, and pestered with Inmates, to the great infection, and other annoyances of them both.

Men set on the pillory. The last of June Atkinson a Customer of Hull, was set on the Pillory in Cheape, and with him three other, to wit, Wilkinson, Alson, and Cowley, brought thether on horsebacke, with their faces towards the horse tailes, and papers on their heads. They were there whipped on the Pillory, and lost their eares by iudgement giuen in the Starre Chamber, for slanderous words by them spoken and written against the Lord Treasurer, and other of the counsell.

Tempest of thunder & haile. The same last of June, in the after-noone, fell great lightning, and thunder, with haile-stones in many places of nine inches compasse, which at Sandwitch in Kent lay a foote deepe on the ground, brake the glasse windowes of their Churches, and tyles off their houses, some Barnes were fiered by the lightning.

Souldiers to Ireland. *Ann. regni.* 45. About the first of August, the Citizens of London, were caused to set out and furnish 200. souldiers towards Ireland.

Citizens of London charged with ships. In the moneth of January the Citizens of London were charged with ships to sea, they to lye before Dunkerke, two ships and a Pinnesse furnished, manned and maintained with the charges of 6000. pounds the yeare.

The

The xvii. of Februarie, W. Anderson a Seminary Priest was drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered, for being found in England contrary to the Statute of Anno 27. A Seminarie executed.

In the moneth of Marche the Quéene lodging at Ritchmond, and lying dangerously sicke, straight watches were kept in the Citie of London, with warding at the gates, Lanthorns with lights hanged out to burne all the night. Straight watches.

Thursday the viii. of Marche, about two of the clocke in the morning, deceased Quéene Elizabeth, at her Manor of Ritchmond in Surrey, she being then aged lxx. yeares, and had raigned 44. yeares, 5. moneths, and odde dayes, whose corps was privily conveyed to White hall, and there remained till the 28. of Aprill, and was then buryed at Westminster. Queene Elizabeth deceased.

It is a note worthy to be remembred, that Thursday hath béene a fatall day to King Henry the eyght, and all his posteritie, for himselfe dyed on Thursday the 28 of January, King Edward on Thursday the first of July, Quéene Mary on Thursday the 17. of November, and Quéene Elizabeth on Thursday the 24. of March.

On the sayd Thursday the 24. of Marche, the Lordes spirituall and temporall of this Realme, assisted with those of her late Maiesties privie counsell assembling themselues together, toke order, that with the publishing of the Quéenes departure, should also be declared to the comfort of the whole Realme, her lawfull successor. And about vii. of the clocke at none of the same day, which was (after the accompt of the Church of England) the last day of the yeare of Christ 1602. hauing proclaimed King Iames at the Court gate, entered the Citie of London, by Ludgate, where finding Robert Lee, Lord Maior of that Citie, the Aldermen, and Citizens; they all together, with a multitude of other good subiects rode to the Crosse in West-Cheape, and on the West-side thereof, with sounding of Trumpets, caused to be proclaimed, Iames King of Scotland, the first of that name in Scotland, and of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the Faith, the first, as lawfull heire, lineally descended, from Margaret eldest daughter to Henry the seuenth, and Elizabeth his wife, eldest daughter to Edward the fourth, marryed to Iames the fourth, King of Scotland, in the yeare 1503, (one hundred yeare since) who had issue Iames the fift, Father to Mary the first, mother to Iames the first, now King of this whole Iland, England, Scotland, and Wales, with the Realmes of France, Ireland, &c. Sir Robert Cicell principall Secretary, red the Proclamation, William Dethike, alias Garter, principall King at Armes pronounced it with an audible voyce. From thence they rode into Milke-streete, to the house of Iames Pemberton, one of the Shiriffes of London, where they dined, and after sate in Counsell.

1603.

That morning was dispatched in post, sir Robert Carie knight, towards Scotland, to signifie, what had béene done héere, which he performed to the king at Edenborow in Scotland, on Saterday at night next following, which 3. dayes. Sir Robert Carie rode 300. miles in lesse then

was the 24. of March, and the first newes to the king of his sisters death. This change was very plausible or well pleasing to the Nobility and Gentrye, and generally to al the commons of this realme among whom the name of king was then so strange, as but few could remember, or had seene a king before, except they were aged persons, considering that the gouerment of the Realme had continued nere the space of fiftie yeares, vnder the raigne of two Queenes which is the farre greater part of a mans age, but tydings hereof being brought to the king in Scotland, he called a councell to him, and taking order for setting all things in his Realme of Scotland, began his voyage towards England, and did so much that after many dayes iourney, and lodging in the howses of sondry Noble men, Gentlemen, and Townes, he arined at London the seuenth of May, and was lodged at the Charterhouse making manie Knights by the way as he came.